THEORY *in* SOCIAL *and* CULTURAL ANTHROPOLOGY

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA

R. JON McGEE ▪ RICHARD L. WARMS EDITORS

THEORY *in* SOCIAL *and* CULTURAL ANTHROPOLOGY

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA

Editors

R. Jon McGee
Texas State University

Richard L. Warms
Texas State University

Editorial Board

Regna Darnell
University of Western Ontario

F. Allan Hanson
University of Kansas

J. Stephen Lansing
University of Arizona

Robert Launay
Northwestern University

Herbert S. Lewis
University of Wisconsin, Madison

George E. Marcus
Rice University

Deborah Pellow
Syracuse University

Robert Rotenberg
DePaul University

David Zeitlyn
Wolfson College, University of Oxford

THEORY *in* SOCIAL *and* CULTURAL ANTHROPOLOGY

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA

EDITORS

R. Jon McGee

Richard L. Warms

Texas State University

1

SAGE reference

Los Angeles | London | New Delhi
Singapore | Washington DC

SAGE reference

Los Angeles | London | New Delhi
Singapore | Washington DC

FOR INFORMATION:

SAGE Publications, Inc.
2455 Teller Road
Thousand Oaks, California 91320
E-mail: order@sagepub.com

SAGE Publications Ltd.
1 Oliver's Yard
55 City Road
London, EC1Y 1SP
United Kingdom

SAGE Publications India Pvt. Ltd.
B 1/I 1 Mohan Cooperative Industrial Area
Mathura Road, New Delhi 110 044
India

SAGE Publications Asia-Pacific Pte. Ltd.
3 Church Street
#10-04 Samsung Hub
Singapore 049483

Copyright © 2013 by SAGE Publications, Inc.

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

Printed in the United States of America.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Theory in social and cultural anthropology : an encyclopedia / edited by R. Jon McGee and Richard L. Warms, Texas State University.

pages cm

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 978-1-4129-9963-2 (hardcover)

1. Ethnology—Encyclopedias. I. McGee, R. Jon, 1955–

GN307.T54 2013
306.03—dc23

2013016332

Acquisitions Editor: Jim Brace-Thompson
Developmental Editor: Sanford J. Robinson
Production Editor: Jane Haenel
Reference Systems Manager: Leticia Gutierrez
Reference Systems Coordinators: Laura Notton and Anna Villasenor
Copy Editors: QuADS
Typesetter: Hurix Systems Pvt. Ltd.
Proofreader: Susan Schon
Indexer: Jeanne Busemeyer
Cover Designer: Glenn Vogel
Marketing Manager: Carmel Schrire

13 14 15 16 17 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Contents

Volume 1

List of Entries *vii*
Reader's Guide *xi*
About the Editors *xxiii*
Contributors *xxiv*
Introduction *xxxi*

Entries

A	*1*	G	*297*
B	*39*	H	*371*
C	*101*	I	*425*
D	*165*	J	*429*
E	*219*	K	*435*
F	*251*	L	*449*

Volume 2

List of Entries *vii*
Reader's Guide *xi*

Entries

M	*501*	S	*729*
N	*575*	T	*853*
O	*603*	U	*877*
P	*609*	V	*889*
Q	*665*	W	*901*
R	*669*		

Chronology of Theory in Anthropology *949*

Index *953*

List of Entries

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Action Anthropology. *See* Applied Anthropology
Alliance Theory. *See* Alliance-Descent Debate
Alliance-Descent Debate
Althusser, Louis
American Anthropological Association
American Museum of Natural History
Anderson, Benedict
Animism, Animatism
Anthropological Society of London. *See* Royal Anthropological Institute
Appadurai, Arjun
Applied Anthropology
Area Studies
Aristotle
Asad, Talal
Autoethnography

Bachofen, Johann J.
Bailey, Frederick G.
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barth, Fredrik
Barthes, Roland
Bastian, Adolf
Bataille, Georges
Bateson, Gregory
Baudrillard, Jean
Benedict, Ruth F.
Benjamin, Walter
Binford, Lewis R.
Biography/Life Writing
Bloch, Maurice
Bloomfield, Leonard
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Bourdieu, Pierre
Burke, Kenneth
Butler, Judith

Cambridge University
Carneiro, Robert L.
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)
Childhood
Chodorow, Nancy
Chomsky, Noam
Clifford, James
Cognitive Anthropology
Columbia University
Communitas
Comparative Linguistics
Comparative Method
Componential Analysis. *See* Ethnoscience/New Ethnography
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Critical Theory
Cultural Ecology
Cultural Materialism
Cultural Relativism
Cultural Transmission
Culture and Personality
Culture Area Approach

Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Deconstruction
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Dependency Theory
Derrida, Jacques
Descent Theory. *See* Alliance-Descent Debate
Descriptive Linguistics
Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*
Discourse Theory
Douglas, Mary
Du Bois, W. E. B.
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis

Dundes, Alan
Durkheim, Émile

Economic Anthropology
Emics and Etics. *See* American Anthropological Association; Cultural Materialism; Pike, Kenneth
Ethnography of Speaking
Ethnohistory
Ethnological Society of London. *See* Royal Anthropological Institute
Ethnomethodology
Ethnoscience/New Ethnography
Ethology, Human
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Evolutionary Anthropology
Evolutionary Psychology

Face-to-Face Interaction
Fanon, Frantz
Feminist Anthropology
Ferguson, Adam
Firth, Raymond
Fischer, Michael
Formalism/Substantivism
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Foster, George M.
Foucault, Michel
Frankfurt School
Frazer, James G.
Freud, Sigmund
Fried, Morton
Frobenius, Leo

Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Game Theory
Geertz, Clifford
Geffray, Christian
Gender and Anthropology
Gender Diversity
Gene-Culture Coevolution
Generative Grammar
Gennep, Arnold van
Gift Exchange
Gillen, Francis James. *See* Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Girard, René
Globalization Theory
Gluckman, Max
Godelier, Maurice
Goffman, Erving
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goodenough, Ward H.
Goody, Jack
Graebner, Fritz
Gramsci, Antonio
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Greenberg, Joseph
Griaule, Marcel
Gumperz, John J.

Habermas, Jürgen
Habitus
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hall, Edward T.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Harris, Marvin
Harvey, David
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Hermeneutics
Herskovits, Melville
Hertz, Robert
Historical Particularism
Hobbes, Thomas
Hocart, Arthur M.
Human Behavioral Ecology
Human Relations Area Files, Cross-Cultural Studies
Human Universals
Humanistic Anthropology
Hurston, Zora Neale
Husserl, Edmund
Hymes, Dell

Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)

Jakobson, Roman O.
Jameson, Fredric

Kardiner, Abram
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.

Labov, William
Lacan, Jacques
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Lamphere, Louise
L'Année Sociologique

Latour, Bruno
Leach, Edmund
Leacock, Eleanor
LeVine, Robert
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey
Linton, Ralph
London School of Economics
Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Lubbock, John
Lyotard, Jean-François

Maine, Henry James
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Manchester School
Marcus, George
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Mauss, Marcel
McLennan, John
Mead, George Herbert
Mead, Margaret
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Mobility
Modernism
Montesquieu, Comte de
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Murdock, George Peter
Musée de l'Homme
Myth, Theories of

Nader, Laura
Nash, June
Nationalism, Transnationalism
Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist
Needham, Rodney
Neo-Boasianism
Neo-Kantianism
Neo-Whorfianism. *See* Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Network Theory/Social Network Analysis
Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology

Ortner, Sherry
Oxford University

Parsons, Elsie C.
Parsons, Talcott
Phenomenology
Pike, Kenneth
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Plato
Polanyi, Karl
Political Economy
Popper, Karl
Postcolonial Theory
Postmodernism
Poststructuralism
Practice Theory
Prague School of Linguistics
Psychological Anthropology
Public Sphere

Queer Theory

Rabinow, Paul
Race
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Radin, Paul
Rappaport, Roy
Rational Choice Theory
Redfield, Robert
Religion
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute
Richards, Audrey
Rites de Passage
Rivers, W. H. R.
Rivet, Paul
Rockefeller Foundation
Róheim, Géza
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Rouch, Jean
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Royal Anthropological Institute

Sacrifice
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Sapir, Edward
Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Saussure, Ferdinand de

Scapes
Schapera, Isaac
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Schneider, David M.
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Semiotics
Service, Elman R.
Simmel, Georg
Smith, Adam
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Smith, Neil
Smith, William Robertson
Smithsonian Institution
Social Constructionism
Social Evolutionary Theory, 20th-Century. *See* Carneiro, Robert L.; Comparative Method; Fried, Morton; Murdock, George Peter; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie
Social Studies of Science
Sociobiology. *See* Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution
Sociolinguistics
Soviet Anthropology
Spencer, Herbert
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Sperber, Dan
Spiro, Melford
Srinivas, M. N.
Steward, Julian
Strathern, Marilyn
Structural Functionalism
Structural Marxism
Structuralism
Subaltern Studies
Subjectivity
Sustainability
Swadesh, Morris
Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology
Symbolic Interactionism
Systems Theory

Tambiah, Stanley
Tax, Sol
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Thick Description
Torres Straits Expedition
Turner, Victor W.
Tyler, Stephen A.
Tylor, Edward Burnett

University of California, Berkeley
University of Michigan
Urban Studies
Utilitarianism

Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Visual Anthropology
Voltaire

Wagley, Charles
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Weber, Max
Wenner-Gren Foundation
Westermarck, Edward
White, Leslie
Whorf, Benjamin Lee
Wilson, Edward O.
Wilson, Monica
Wittfogel, Karl
Wittgenstein, Ludwig
Wolf, Eric
World-Systems Theory
Wundt, Wilhelm

Reader's Guide

American Anthropologists and Anthropology

Abu-Lughod, Lila
American Anthropological Association
American Museum of Natural History
Applied Anthropology
Benedict, Ruth F.
Binford, Lewis R.
Bloomfield, Leonard
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Burke, Kenneth
Butler, Judith
Carneiro, Robert L.
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)
Chodorow, Nancy
Chomsky, Noam
Clifford, James
Columbia University
Culture Area Approach
Du Bois, W. E. B.
DuBois, Cora
Dundes, Alan
Fischer, Michael
Foster, George M.
Fried, Morton
Geertz, Clifford
Goffman, Erving
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goodenough, Ward H.
Greenberg, Joseph
Gumperz, John J.
Hall, Edward T.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Harris, Marvin
Herskovitz, Melville
Hurston, Zora Neale
Hymes, Dell
Jameson, Fredric
Kardiner, Abram
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Labov, William
Lamphere, Louise
Leacock, Eleanor
LeVine, Robert
Lewis, Oscar
Linton, Ralph
Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Marcus, George
Mead, George Herbert
Mead, Margaret
Mintz, Sidney
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Murdock, George Peter
Nader, Laura
Nash, June
Ortner, Sherry
Parsons, Elsie C.
Parsons, Talcott
Pike, Kenneth
Rabinow, Paul
Radin, Paul
Rappaport, Roy
Redfield, Robert
Rockefeller Foundation
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Sahlins, Marshall
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Sapir, Edward
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Schneider, David M.
Service, Elman R.
Smithsonian Institution
Spiro, Melford
Steward, Julian
Swadesh, Morris

Tax, Sol
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Tyler, Stephen A.
University of California, Berkeley
University of Michigan
Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Wagley, Charles
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Wenner-Gren Foundation
White, Leslie
Whorf, Benjamin Lee
Wilson, Edward O.
Wolf, Eric

Biological and/or Social Evolutionary Perspective

Bastian, Adolf
Carneiro, Robert L.
Comparative Method
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Cultural Transmission
Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Ethology, Human
Evolutionary Anthropology
Evolutionary Psychology
Freud, Sigmund
Fried, Morton
Gene-Culture Coevolution
Human Behavioral Ecology
Human Universals
Lubbock, John
Maine, Henry James
Malthus, Thomas R.
McLennan, John
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Murdock, George Peter
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Service, Elman R.
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Spencer, Herbert
Sperber, Dan
Spiro, Melford
Steward, Julian
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Wallace, Alfred R.
Westermarck, Edward
White, Leslie
Wilson, Edward O.
Wittfogel, Karl

British and Commonwealth

Bailey, Frederick G.
Bateson, Gregory
Cambridge University
Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Douglas, Mary
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Ferguson, Adam
Firth, Raymond
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Frazer, James G.
Gluckman, Max
Goody, Jack
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Haddon, Alfred C.
Harvey, David
Hobbes, Thomas
Hocart, Arthur M.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Leach, Edmund
Lienhardt, Godfrey
London School of Economics
Lubbock, John
Maine, Henry James
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Manchester School
McLennan, John
Needham, Rodney
Oxford University
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute
Richards, Audrey
Rivers, W. H. R.
Royal Anthropological Institute
Schapera, Isaac
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Smith, Adam
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Smith, Neil

Smith, William Robertson
Spencer, Herbert
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Strathern, Marilyn
Turner, Victor W.
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wilson, Monica

Concepts, Locations, Events, and Organizations

Alliance-Descent Debate
American Anthropological Association
American Museum of Natural History
Animism, Animatism
Applied Anthropology
Area Studies
Autoethnography
Biography/Life Writing
Cambridge University
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)
Childhood
Columbia University
Communitas
Comparative Method
Cultural Relativism
Cultural Transmission
Deconstruction
Descriptive Linguistics
Ethography of Speaking
Ethnomethodology
Formalism/Substantivism
Gender and Anthropology
Gender Diversity
Generative Grammar
Gift Exchange
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Habitus
Human Relations Area Files, Cross Cultural Studies
Humanistic Anthropology
Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)
L'Année Sociologique
London School of Economics
Manchester School
Mobility
Modernism
Musée de l'Homme
Myth, Theories of
Nationalism, Transnationalism
Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist
Oxford University
Prague School of Linguistics
Public Sphere
Race
Religion
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute
Rites de Passage
Rockefeller Foundation
Royal Anthropological Institute
Sacrifice
Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Scapes
Smithsonian Institution
Social Studies of Science
Soviet Anthropology
Subjectivity
Sustainability
Thick Description
Torres Straits Expedition
University of California, Berkeley
University of Michigan
Urban Studies
Utilitarianism
Visual Anthropology
Wenner-Gren Foundation

Economic and Ecological Perspective

Binford, Lewis R.
Bloch, Maurice
Bohannan, Paul
Bourdieu, Pierre
Carneiro, Robert L.
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Cultural Ecology
Cultural Materialism
Dependency Theory
Economic Anthropology
Fanon, Frantz
Ferguson, Adam
Formalism/Substantivism
Fried, Morton
Game Theory
Gift Exchange
Globalization Theory

Godelier, Maurice
Gramsci, Antonio
Harris, Marvin
Herskovits, Melville
Human Behavioral Ecology
Leacock, Eleanor
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Mauss, Marcel
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Nash, June
Polanyi, Karl
Political Economy
Rappaport, Roy
Rational Choice Theory
Richards, Audrey
Sahlins, Marshall
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Scheper Hughes, Nancy
Service, Elman R.
Smith, Adam
Smith, Neil
Steward, Julian
Structural Marxism
Sustainability
Systems Theory
Tax, Sol
Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Wagley, Charles
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Weber, Max
White, Leslie
Wittfogel, Karl
Wolf, Eric
World-Systems Theory

Ethnography

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Asad, Talal
Bailey, Frederick G.
Barth, Fredrik
Bateson, Gregory
Benedict, Ruth F.
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Douglas, Mary
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Face-to-Face Interaction
Firth, Raymond
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Foster, George M.
Frobenius, Leo
Geertz, Clifford
Gluckman, Max
Godelier, Maurice
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goody, Jack
Griaule, Marcel
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Herskovits, Melville
Hocart, Arthur M.
Hurston, Zora Neale
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Leach, Edmund
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey
Lowie, Robert
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Mead, Margaret
Murdock, George Peter
Parsons, Elsie C.
Radin, Paul
Redfield, Robert
Richards, Audrey
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Schapera, Isaac
Scheper Hughes, Nancy
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Spiro, Melford
Srinivas, M. N.

French

Alliance-Descent Debate
Althusser, Louis
Barthes, Roland
Bataille, Georges
Baudrillard, Jean
Bloch, Maurice
Bourdieu, Pierre
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Dumont, Louis
Durkheim, Émile
Foucault, Michel
Geffray, Christian
Gennep, Arnold van
Girard, René
Godelier, Maurice
Griaule, Marcel
Hertz, Robert
Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)
Lacan, Jacques
Lafitau, Joseph-François
L'Année Sociologique
Latour, Bruno
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Lyotard, Jean-François
Mauss, Marcel
Meillassoux, Claude
Montesquieu, Comte de
Musée de l'Homme
Rivet, Paul
Rouch, Jean
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Sperber, Dan
Voltaire

Gender

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Alliance-Descent Debate
Butler, Judith
Childhood
Chodorow, Nancy
Cultural Transmission
Feminist Anthropology
Gender and Anthropology
Godelier, Maurice
Hurston, Zora Neale
Lacan, Jacques
Lamphere, Louise
Leacock, Eleanor
Material Production, Theories of
Mauss, Marcel
Mead, Margaret
Nash, June
Ortner, Sherry
Parsons, Elsie C.
Queer Theory
Race
Religion
Richards, Audrey
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Strathern, Marilyn
Subaltern Studies
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Wolf, Eric

German

Bachofen, Johann J.
Bastian, Adolf
Benjamin, Walter
Frankfurt School
Frobenius, Leo
Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Graebner, Fritz
Habermas, Jürgen
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Husserl, Edmund
Marx, Karl
Müller, Max
Simmel, Georg
Weber, Max
Wittfogel, Karl
Wundt, Wilhelm

Globalization

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Anderson, Benedict
Appadurai, Arjun
Applied Anthropology
Area Studies
Asad, Talal
Barth, Fredrik
Critical Theory

Dependency Theory
Economic Anthropology
Fanon, Frantz
Globalization Theory
Harvey, David
Jameson, Fredric
Lamphere, Louise
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Mintz, Sidney
Mobility
Nash, June
Nationalism; Transnationalism
Polanyi, Karl
Political Economy
Postcolonial theory
Race
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Scapes
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Smith, Neil
Subaltern Studies
Tambiah, Stanley
Urban Studies
Wagley, Charles
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Wolf, Eric
World-Systems Theory

Linguistics

Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barthes, Roland
Bloomfield, Leonard
Chomsky, Noam
Comparative Linguistics
Descriptive Linguistics
Ethnography of Speaking
Face-to-Face Interaction
Generative Grammar
Goodenough, Ward H.
Greenberg, Joseph
Gumperz, John J.
Hymes, Dell
Jakobson, Roman O.
Labov, William
Lounsbury, Floyd
Müller, Max
Pike, Kenneth
Prague School of Linguistics
Rivet, Paul
Sapir, Edward
Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Saussure, Ferdinand de
Semiotics
Sociolinguistics
Swadesh, Morris
Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Literary and Interpretive Perspective

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Bailey, Frederick G.
Bataille, Georges
Benjamin, Walter
Boas, Franz
Burke, Kenneth
Clifford, James
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Douglas, Mary
Du Bois, W. E. B.
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Fortes, Meyer
Foster, George M.
Foucault, Michel
Frankfurt School
Frazer, James G.
Frobenius, Leo
Geertz, Clifford
Geffray, Christian
Gennep, Arnold van
Gluckman, Max
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goody, Jack
Graebner, Fritz
Griaule, Marcel
Hallowell, A. Irving
Humanistic Anthropology
Hurston, Zora Neale
Hymes, Dell
Jameson, Fredric
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Leach, Edmund
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey

Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Müller, Max
Nader, Laura
Needham, Rodney
Neo-Boasianism
Ortner, Sherry
Phenomenology
Postmodernism
Practice Theory
Rabinow, Paul
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Radin, Paul
Redfield, Robert
Rouch, Jean
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Sapir, Edward
Schneider, David M.
Semiotics
Smith, William Robertson
Srinivas, M. N.
Strathern, Marilyn
Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology
Symbolic Interactionism
Tambiah, Stanley
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Thick Description
Turner, Victor W.
Voltaire
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wilson, Monica

Marxist and Neo-Marxist Perspective

Althusser, Louis
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Baudrillard, Jean
Benjamin, Walter
Bloch, Maurice
Bourdieu, Pierre
Critical Theory
Dependency Theory
Fanon, Frantz
Frankfurt School
Godelier, Maurice
Gramsci, Antonio
Harvey, David
Jameson, Fredric
Lacan, Jacques
Latour, Bruno
Leacock, Eleanor
Lyotard, Jean-François
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Smith, Neil
Structural Marxism
Wallerstein, Immanuel
White, Leslie
Wittfogel, Karl
Wolf, Eric

Nineteenth Century and Earlier

Animism, Animatism
Aristotle
Bachofen, Johann J.
Bastian, Adolf
Comparative Method
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Darwin, Charles
Ferguson, Adam
Frazer, James G.
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Hobbes, Thomas
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Lubbock, John
Maine, Henry James
Malthus, Thomas R.
Marx, Karl
McLennan, John
Montesquieu, Comte de
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Plato
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Smith, Adam
Smith, William Robertson
Spencer, Herbert

Torres Straits Expedition
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Voltaire
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wundt, Wilhelm

Other National Traditions

Anderson, Benedict
Appadurai, Arjun
Asad, Talal
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barth, Fredrik
Fanon, Frantz
Freud, Sigmund
Gramsci, Antonio
Jakobson, Roman O.
Polanyi, Karl
Popper, Karl
Prague School of Linguistics
Róheim, Géza
Said, Edward
Saussure, Ferdinand de
Soviet Anthropology
Srinivas, M. N.
Tambiah, Stanley
Westermarck, Edward
Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Philosophers and Philosophies

Aristotle
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barthes, Roland
Bataille, Georges
Baudrillard, Jean
Burke, Kenneth
Comte, Auguste
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Habermas, Jürgen
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Hobbes, Thomas
Husserl, Edmund
Latour, Bruno
Lyotard, Jean-François
Marx, Karl
Mead, George Herbert
Montesquieu, Comte de
Plato
Popper, Karl
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Simmel, Georg
Smith, Adam
Spencer, Herbert
Utilitarianism
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Voltaire
Weber, Max
Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Postmodern Perspective

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Anderson, Benedict
Asad, Talal
Autoethnography
Barth, Fredrik
Barthes, Roland
Baudrillard, Jean
Bourdieu, Pierre
Burke, Kenneth
Clifford, James
Critical Theory
Deconstruction
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Discourse Theory
Fischer, Michael
Foucault, Michel
Geertz, Clifford
Girard, René
Jameson, Fredric
Lacan, Jacques
Latour, Bruno
Lyotard, Jean-François
Marcus, George
Postmodernism
Poststructuralism
Practice Theory
Rabinow, Paul
Rosaldo, Renato
Said, Edward
Scapes
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Strathern, Marilyn
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Tyler, Stephen A.

Psychological and Sociological Perspective

Bateson, Gregory
Benedict, Ruth
Chodorow, Nancy
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis
Dundes, Alan
Durkheim, Émile
Fanon, Frantz
Fortune, Reo
Freud, Sigmund
Girard, René
Goffman, Erving
Hall, Edward T.
Hertz, Robert
Kardiner, Abram
Lacan, Jacques
L'Année Sociologique
LeVine, Robert
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Linton, Ralph
Malinowski, Bronisław
Mauss, Marcel
Mead, Margaret
Parsons, Talcott
Rivers, W. H. R.
Róheim, Géza
Weber, Max
Westermarck, Edward
Wundt, Wilhelm

Theoretical Approaches

Alliance-Descent Debate
Cognitive Anthropology
Comparative Linguistics
Critical Theory
Cultural Ecology
Cultural Materialism
Culture and Personality
Culture Area Approach
Dependency Theory
Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*
Discourse Theory
Economic Anthropology
Ethnohistory
Ethnoscience; New Ethnography
Ethology, Human
Evolutionary Anthropology
Evolutionary Psychology
Face-to-Face Interaction
Feminist Anthropology
Game Theory
Gene-Culture Coevolution
Globalization Theory
Hermeneutics
Historical Particularism
Human Behavioral Ecology
Human Universals
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Neo-Boasianism
Neo-Kantianism
Network Theory/Social Network Analysis
Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology
Phenomenology
Political Economy
Postcolonial Theory
Postmodernism
Poststructuralism
Practice Theory
Psychological Anthropology
Queer Theory
Rational Choice Theory
Semiotics
Social Constructionism
Sociolinguistics
Structural Functionalism
Structural Marxism
Structuralism
Subaltern Studies
Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology
Symbolic Interactionism
Systems Theory
World-Systems Theory

Theorists

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Althusser, Louis
Anderson, Benedict
Appadurai, Arjun
Asad, Talal
Bachofen, Johann J.
Bailey, Frederick G.
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barth, Fredrik
Barthes, Roland
Bastian, Adolf

Bataille, Georges
Bateson, Gregory
Baudrillard, Jean
Benedict, Ruth F.
Benjamin, Walter
Binford, Lewis R.
Bloch, Maurice
Bloomfield, Leonard
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Bourdieu, Pierre
Burke, Kenneth
Butler, Judith
Carneiro, Robert L.
Chodorow, Nancy
Chomsky, Noam
Clifford, James
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Douglas, Mary
Du Bois, W. E. B
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis
Dundes, Alan
Durkheim, Émile
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Fanon, Frantz
Ferguson, Adam
Firth, Raymond
Fischer, Michael
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Foster, George M.
Foucault, Michel
Frazer, James G.
Freud, Sigmund
Fried, Morton
Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Geertz, Clifford
Geffray, Christian
Gennep, Arnold van
Girard, René
Gluckman, Max
Godelier, Maurice
Goffman, Erving
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goodenough, Ward H.
Goody, Jack
Graebner, Fritz
Gramsci, Antonio
Greenberg, Joseph
Griaule, Marcel
Gumperz, John J.
Habermas, Jürgen
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hall, Edward T.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Harris, Marvin
Harvey, David
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Herskovits, Melville
Hertz, Robert
Hobbes, Thomas
Hocart, Arthur M.
Hurston, Zora Neale
Husserl, Edmund
Hymes, Dell
Jakobson, Roman O.
Jameson, Fredric
Kardiner, Abram
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Labov, William
Lacan, Jacques
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Lamphere, Louise
Latour, Bruno
Leach, Edmund
Leacock, Eleanor
LeVine, Robert
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey
Linton, Ralph
Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Lubbock, John
Lyotard, Jean-François
Maine, Henry James
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Marcus, George
Marx, Karl

Mauss, Marcel
McLennan, John
Mead, George Herbert
Mead, Margaret
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Montesquieu, Comte de
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Murdock, George Peter
Nader, Laura
Nash, June
Needham, Rodney
Ortner, Sherry
Parsons, Elsie C.
Parsons, Talcott
Pike, Kenneth
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Plato
Polanyi, Karl
Popper, Karl
Rabinow, Paul
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Radin, Paul
Rappaport, Roy
Redfield, Robert
Richards, Audrey
Rivers, W. H. R.
Rivet, Paul
Róheim, Géza
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Rouch, Jean
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Sapir, Edward
Saussure, Ferdinand de
Schapera, Isaac
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Schneider, David M.
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Service, Elman R.
Simmel, Georg
Smith, Adam
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Smith, Neil
Smith, William Robertson
Spencer, Herbert
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Sperber, Dan
Spiro, Melford
Srinivas, M. N.
Steward, Julian
Strathern, Marilyn
Swadesh, Morris
Tambiah, Stanley
Tax, Sol
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Turner, Victor W.
Tyler, Stephen A.
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Voltaire
Wagley, Charles
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Weber, Max
Westermarck, Edward
White, Leslie
Whorf, Benjamin Lee
Wilson, Edward O.
Wilson, Monica
Wittfogel, Karl
Wittgenstein, Ludwig
Wolf, Eric
Wundt, Wilhelm

About the Editors

R. Jon McGee received his PhD from Rice University in 1983. He is currently Professor of Anthropology at Texas State University, where he has taught since 1985. His research has focused generally on anthropological theory and the anthropology of religion. More specifically, he has conducted extensive studies on the religion, language, and culture of the Lacandon Maya. Among the many books he has written or edited are *Watching Lacandon Maya Lives* (Allyn & Bacon) and *Life, Ritual and Religion Among the Lacandon Maya* (Wadsworth). With Richard L. Warms, he is coauthor of *Anthropological Theory: An Introductory History* (McGraw-Hill), now in its fifth edition; and with Warms and James Garber, of *Sacred Realms: Readings in the Anthropology of Religion,* now in its second edition (Oxford University Press). McGee also leads an annual summer study abroad program in Canterbury, England.

Richard L. Warms received his PhD from Syracuse University in 1987 and is currently Professor of Anthropology at Texas State University, where he has taught since 1988. His research has focused on the history of anthropological theory, on commerce, religion, and ethnic identity in West Africa, and on African veterans of French colonial armed forces. With Jon McGee, he is coauthor of *Anthropological Theory: An Introductory History* (McGraw-Hill), now in its fifth edition; and with McGee and James Garber, of *Sacred Realms: Readings in the Anthropology of Religion,* now in its second edition (Oxford University Press). With Serena Nanda, he has coauthored the best-selling textbooks *Cultural Anthropology,* now in its eleventh edition, and *Culture Counts,* now in its third edition (Cengage Learning).

Contributors

Patricio N. Abinales
University of Hawai'i, Manoa

Abigail E. Adams
Central Connecticut State University

Augustine Agwuele
Texas State University

N. J. Allen
Institute of Social and Cultural Anthropology, University of Oxford

Lars Allolio-Näcke
University of Erlangen, Nuremberg

Michael Angrosino
University of South Florida

Rina Arya
University of Wolverhamptom

Florence E. Babb
University of Florida

William W. Baden
Indiana University–Purdue University, Fort Wayne

Liza Bakewell
Brown University

Daniela S. Barberis
Shimer College

Jerome H. Barkow
Dalhousie University

Stanley R. Barrett
University of Guelph

Ira Bashkow
University of Virginia

Kara Becker
Reed College

Joshua A. Bell
National Museum of Natural History, Smithsonian Institution

Janet E. Benson
Kansas State University

Amy Bentley
New York University

Cato Berg
University of Bergen

Laurent Berger
École des Hautes Études en Sciences Sociales, Paris, and Laboratoire d'Anthropologie Sociale, Collège de France

Magdalena Bielenia-Grajewska
University of Gdansk, Poland, and International School for Advanced Studies (SISSA), Italy

Stephen P. Borgatti
University of Kentucky

Dominic Boyer
Rice University

Daniel R. Braun
Princeton University

Simon J. Bronner
Pennsylvania State University

Cecil H. Brown
Northern Illinois University

Donald E. Brown
University of California, Santa Barbara

Julie K. Brown
National Museum of American History, Smithsonian Institution

Ian Buchanan
University of Wollongong

Morgan Buck
City University of New York Graduate Center

Allan Burns
University of Florida

Julia Cassaniti
Stanford University

William Chapman
University of Hawai'i, Manoa

Christopher Chase-Dunn
University of California, Riverside

Sally Cole
Concordia University

Gene Cooper
University of Southern California

Jeremy Coote
University of Oxford

Raymond Corbey
Leiden University

William Croft
University of New Mexico

Lee Cronk
Rutgers University

Jonathan Culp
University of Dallas

Talia Dan-Cohen
Washington University St. Louis

Eliza Jane Darling
Independent Scholar

Regna Darnell
University of Western Ontario

Veena Das
Johns Hopkins University

Rosa De Jorio
University of North Florida

Thérèse A. de Vet
University of Arizona

Mathieu Deflem
University of South Carolina

Daniela di Piramo
Griffith University

Lise M. Dobrin
University of Virginia

Virginia R. Dominguez
University of Illinois, Urbana-Champaign

Susan Drucker-Brown
Cambridge University

Alessandro Duranti
University of California, Los Angeles

Libuše Dušková
Charles University

Ute Eickelkamp
University of Sydney

Omnia El Shakry
University of California, Davis

Justin A. Elardo
Portland Community College

Alexei Elfimov
Institute of Ethnology and Anthropology, Russian Academy of Sciences

Thomas Hylland Eriksen
University of Oslo

Gillian Feeley-Harnik
University of Michigan

Richard Feinberg
Kent State University

Pamela L. Feldman-Savelsberg
Carleton College

Chris Fleming
University of Western Sydney

James J. Fox
Australian National University

Alex François
Le Centre national de la recherche scientifique

Elliot Fratkin
Smith College

Jonathan Friedman
University of California, San Diego

Gérald Gaillard
Universite des Sciences et techniques deLille 1

Jean-Claude Galey
École des Hautes Études en Sciences Sociales

Chris Garces
Cornell University

María Luz García
University of Kentucky

Robert Owen Gardner
Linfield College

Dustin Bradley Garlitz
University of South Florida

Volney P. Gay
Vanderbilt University

Haidy Geismar
New York University

David N. Gellner
Institute of Social and Cultural Anthropology, University of Oxford

Jerry Gershenhorn
North Carolina Central University

Frederic W. Gleach
Cornell University

Zoltan Gluck
City University of New York Graduate Center

Donna M. Goldstein
University of Colorado, Boulder

Alex Golub
University of Hawai'i, Manoa

Robert Gordon
University of Vermont

Anthony Grant
Edge Hill University

Travis J. Grosser
University of Kentucky

Gregory S. Gullette
Santa Clara University

Jane I. Guyer
Johns Hopkins University

Hans Peter Hahn
Goethe Universitat Frankfurt Am Main

Thomas D. Hall
Depauw University

Edmund T. Hamann
University of Nebraska, Lincoln

Richard Handler
University of Virginia

Michele Hanks
Case Western Reserve University

F. Allan Hanson
University of Kansas

Michael E. Harkin
University of Wyoming

Anthony Kwame Harrison
Virginia Tech

Faye V. Harrison
University of Florida

Keith Hart
University of Pretoria

Thomas N. Headland
SIL International

Anita Herle
University of Cambridge

Jacob R. Hickman
Brigham Young University

Mathieu Hilgers
Universite Libre de Bruxelles

Lawrence A. Hirschfeld
New School for Social Research

Brian A. Hoey
Marshall University

Hiroko Inoue
University of California, Riverside

Gwyneira Isaac
Smithsonian Institution

Cindy Isenhour
Centre College

Ira Jacknis
University of California, Berkeley

Wendy James
Oxford University

Daniel Ezra Johnson
Lancaster University

Michelle C. Johnson
Bucknell University

Ana M. Juárez
Texas State University

Don Kalb
Central European University

Sergei Kan
Dartmouth College

Malav Kanuga
City University of New York Graduate Center

Martha Kaplan
Vassar College

Tim Kaposy
George Mason University

Frédéric Keck
Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique

Ian Keen
Australian National University

Alice Beck Kehoe
University of Wisconsin, Milwaukee

Robert V. Kemper
Southern Methodist University

Jeremy R. Kendal
Durham University

Virginia Kerns
College of William and Mary

R. S. Khare
University of Virginia

Robert D. King
University of Texas

Frederick Klaits
University at Buffalo, State University of New York

Bruce M. Knauft
Emory University

Conrad Phillip Kottak
University of Michigan

Sina Lucia Kottmann
Martin Luther University

Udo Krautwurst
University of Prince Edward Island

Shepard Krech III
Brown University

Jens Kreinath
Wichita State University

David B. Kronenfeld
University of California, Riverside

Paul V. Kroskrity
University of California, Los Angeles

Donald V. Kurtz
University of Texas, San Antonio

Darrell La Lone
DePauw University

Olli Lagerspetz
Åbo Akademi University

Michael Lambek
University of Toronto

Frederick P. Lampe
Northern Arizona University

J. Stephen Lansing
University of Arizona

Andrew Lass
Mount Holyoke College

Robert Launay
Northwestern University

Christine Laurière
École des Hautes Études en Sciences Sociales

Daniel Law
Vanderbilt University

Murray J. Leaf
University of Texas, Dallas

John Leavitt
Université de Montréal

Winnie Lem
Trent University

Rebecca J. Lester
Washington University St. Louis

James W. Lett
Indian River State College

Herbert S. Lewis
University of Wisconsin, Madison

Victor Lidz
Drexel College of Medicine

Debra Lieberman
University of Miami

Thomas Looser
New York University

Mazyar Lotfalian
University of California, Irvine

Tommy Lee Lott
San Jose State University

Ian Lowrie
Rice University

Scott A. Lukas
Lake Tahoe Community College

Nancy Lutkehaus
University of Southern California

Wendy Luttrell
City University of New York Graduate Center

Michael E. Lynch
Cornell University

Andrew Lyons
Wilfrid Laurier University

Harriet D. Lyons
University of Waterloo

Judith Macdonald
University of Waikato

Thomas Malm
Lund University

Marc Manganaro
Gonzaga University

Maxine L. Margolis
University of Florida

Jonathan Marks
University of North Carolina, Charlotte

Jocelyn Marrow
Stanford University

Keir Martin
University of Manchester

Richard Joseph Martin
Princeton University

Bill Maurer
University of California, Irvine

Stephen McFarland
City University of New York Graduate Center

R. Jon McGee
Texas State University

Eric McGuckin
Sonoma State University

Elizabeth Mertz
American Bar Foundation, University of Wisconsin Law School

Lisa R. Messeri
University of Pennsylvania

Dale E. Miller
Old Dominion University

Dan E. Miller
University of Dayton

David Mills
University of Oxford

John H. Moore
University of Florida

Mary H. Moran
Colgate University

John Morton
La Trobe University

Muhammad Aurang Zeb Mughal
Durham University, UK

Serena Nanda
City University of New York

Edmund Neill
University of Oxford

Isak Niehaus
Brunel University

Charles W. Nuckolls
Brigham Young University

Stephen Nugent
Goldsmiths, University of London

Elisabeth Oberzaucher
University of Vienna

Rick O'Gorman
University of Essex

Sean O'Neill
University of Oklahoma

Jürgen van Oorschot
University of Erlangen-Nuremberg

Andrew Orta
University of Illinois, Urbana-Champaign

Alan J. Osborn
University of Nebraska

Keith F. Otterbein
University at Buffalo, State University of New York

Richard Pace
Middle Tennessee State University

Sam Pack
Kenyon College

Karthik Panchanathan
University of Missouri

Robert Parkin
Institute of Social and Cultural Anthropology, University of Oxford

Alejandro I. Paz
University of Toronto

William J. Peace
Independent Scholar

Eric J. Pedersen
University of Miami

Peter N. Peregrine
Lawrence University

Daniel Peretti
Indiana University

Alison Petch
Pitt Rivers Museum, University of Oxford

Maja Petrović-Šteger
University of Cambridge

Josipa G. Petrunic
University of Toronto

Paul Petzschmann
Carlton College

Anastasia Piliavsky
King's College, Cambridge

Sidney Plotkin
Vassar College

Maïa Ponsonnet
Centre de Recherche et de Documentation sur l'Oc, Australian National University

David H. Price
St. Martin's University

Naomi Quinn
Duke University

Sadiah Qureshi
University of Birmingham

Nigel Rapport
University of St. Andrews

Douglas Raybeck
Hamilton College

Deborah Reed-Danahay
University at Buffalo, State University of New York

Luke Rendell
University of St. Andrews

Camille Robcis
Cornell University

Stuart Rockefeller
Columbia University

Lars Rodseth
Syracuse University

Noel B. Salazar
University of Leuven

John A. Saliba
University of Detroit Mercy

Mahir Şaul
University of Illinois

Jane Schneider
City University of New York Graduate Center

Helen B. Schwartzman
Northwestern University

Robert Segal
University of Aberdeen

Ullica Segerstrale
Illinois Institute of Technology

David Shankland
Royal Anthropological Institute

Hidetada Shimizu
Northern Illinois University

Moshe Shokeid
Tel Aviv University

Samuel J. Sholtis
Pennsylvania State University

Amy Shuman
The Ohio State University

Salma Siddique
Edinburgh Napier University

Jack Sidnell
University of Toronto

Sydel Silverman
Wenner-Gren Foundation

Kimberly Eison Simmons
University of South Carolina

Adam Smith
University of Miami

Charles H. Smith
Western Kentucky University

Eric Alden Smith
University of Washington

Richard G. Smith
Swansea University

Claudio Sopranzetti
Harvard University

Graham St John
University of Queensland

Justin Stagl
Universität Salzburg

Anthony Stavrianakis
University of California, Berkeley

Paul Stoller
West Chester University

Ted Stolze
Cerritos College

H. Stephen Straight
Binghamton University, State University of New York

Marilyn Strathern
Cambridge University

Claudia Strauss
Pitzer College

Pauline Turner Strong
University of Texas, Austin

Thomas Strong
National University of Ireland, Maynooth

Constance R. Sutton
New York University

Raja Swamy
University of Arkansas

Arpad Szakolczai
University College, Cork

Stephanie Takaragawa
Chapman University

Barbara Tedlock
University at Buffalo, State University of New York

C. Jason Throop
University of California, Los Angeles

Bram Tucker
University of Georgia

Greg Urban
University of Pennsylvania

John van Willigen
University of Kentucky

Ulrich Veit
University of Leipzig

Elaine W. Vine
Victoria University of Wellington

Bradley B. Walters
Mount Allison University

Huon Wardle
University of St Andrews

Richard L. Warms
Texas State University

Alisse Waterston
City University of New York

Jack Russell Weinstein
University of North Dakota

Cameron Wesson
Lehigh University

Clifford Wilcox
Independent Scholar

Rafael Wittek
University of Groningen

Todd Wolfson
Rutgers University

Robert E. Wood
University of Dallas

Kevin A. Yelvington
University of South Florida

Katharine Young
University of California, Berkeley

Michael W. Young
Australian National University

Virginia Heyer Young
University of Virginia

Juwen Zhang
Willamette University

Introduction

Social and cultural anthropology are concerned with understanding the cultures, societies, and behaviors of people around the world. Typically social or cultural anthropologists study the behavior, beliefs, history, and lifestyles of people in other cultures or subcultures. However, the approaches anthropologists take are as diverse as the people who are studied. This encyclopedia summarizes some of the essential ideas, lives, and works of many of the key people who have built or had a major impact on the disciplines of social and cultural anthropology over the last several hundred years. Anthropological theory is of critical significance because it helps us think about who and what we are as human beings. At its most basic level, anthropology challenges us all to understand our own and other societies and cultures in the world. This encyclopedia highlights many of the ways that anthropologists have sought to do this.

Why an Encyclopedia of Social and Cultural Theory?

Theory is an essential component of social science in general and of anthropology in particular. Anthropologists collect data through fieldwork, but both the data they choose to collect and their interpretations of it are driven by their theoretical perspectives, whether these theories are held implicitly or explicitly. Theories are the tools that anthropologists use to explain what they observe and sort information they believe is significant from that which they think less important. For example, an anthropologist who takes a materialist perspective may focus on production technologies and their relation to the distribution of power within a society. An anthropologist who takes an interpretive perspective is more likely, however, to focus on the ways in which people understand their world and their position within it. The materialist might collect data about economic flows and manufacturing or farming techniques. The interpretivist might study a symbolic system, religious ritual, or artistic expression. The most important data for the one may be virtually irrelevant to the other.

In the last half century, understanding theory in anthropology has become both increasingly important and increasingly difficult. It has become important as anthropologists have more frequently considered the nature of anthropological knowledge and debated the importance of different, often mutually exclusive understandings of culture. It has become increasingly difficult as the number of theoretical trends within the discipline has increased and as many of these have developed specialized vocabularies that are opaque to outsiders. Although almost all anthropologists have well-developed understandings of some theoretical positions, few are masters of all. This encyclopedia is intended to serve as a guide to critical theoretical positions and their most important exponents. It presents state-of-the-art entries that are detailed and informative enough for professional anthropologists but are written in language that is accessible to undergraduates. The entries present the critical aspects of the thinking of major theorists and schools of thought and place both theories and theorists in historical context. Although encyclopedia entries are certainly no substitute for detailed study, the entries presented here allow readers to access the most pertinent facets of anthropological theory and provide information that is authoritative but avoids the simplistic formulations often found in reference works.

Although this is an encyclopedia of theory in social and cultural anthropology, anthropologists have always freely borrowed ideas from each other and from other disciplines. An understanding of critical aspects of philosophy, sociology, history, literary criticism, psychology, biology, and other fields has become essential to an informed reading of much of current day anthropology. As you will see, these

volumes include essays about many scholars who did not consider themselves anthropologists but who had an important influence on the development of anthropological theory.

At some level, all theory in social cultural anthropology, whether written in the eighteenth century or the twenty-first, addresses basic issues of how humans understand each other and the world around us. As you read multiple entries in these volumes you'll quickly come to understand that anthropological theory is not a more or less consistent body of information that can be reduced to a series of rules about why and how to do anthropology. Instead, anthropological theory is a body of more-or-less irreconcilable ideas about humans and their social, cultural, and physical worlds. Both in the past and in the current day, anthropological theorists have disagreed about virtually everything: from what anthropologists should study, to the ways in which they should study it, and what the goals of such studies should be. Herein lies the joy and the passion of anthropological theory: to engage in studying, thinking about, and writing anthropological theory is to join a centuries-old debate. It is to engage with and grapple with scholars from the classical world to the present day. It is to walk in the company of Kant and Boas, of Husserl, Foucault, and Geertz. On the one hand, this debate is truly hopeless: it is extremely unlikely that the diverse intellectual strands that make up anthropology will ever coalesce into a single authoritative "unified field" theory of anthropology. On the other, the debate has been enormously productive, generating new ways to think about ourselves and others; new ways to understand the world. It is also profoundly important. Although the ideas discussed in these volumes may at times seem extraordinarily abstract, even obtuse, they have practical consequences. The ways in which we understand the logic of, the motivations for, and the results of human social and cultural behavior has a deep influence not only on our daily behavior toward others, but on the ways that groups and nations treat their own members, wield power, exchange goods and information, write laws, conduct international relations, and make art.

Creating the Encyclopedia

With more than 300 entries by over 250 authors in more than a dozen nations, this encyclopedia covers the most influential theories and scholars in the history of anthropology. The list of entries selected for the encyclopedia was chosen by an international editorial board from diverse backgrounds within social and cultural anthropology. Many took time from their own work in places like India and Bali to guide us in the selection of entry topics. The theoretical entries have been written by leading experts in the field. Many biographical entries are authored by former students of the men and women who are the subjects of the entries. Almost all authors have previously published, often extensively, on the topics they were assigned for this work. We are profoundly pleased and grateful to present here new works by some of the best known anthropologists working today including Florence Babb, Donald Brown, Christopher Chase-Dunn, Sally Cole, Lee Cronk, Regna Darnell, Veena Das, Alessandro Duranti, Jonathan Friedman, Jane Guyer, Allan Hanson, Faye Harrison, Keith Hart, Wendy James, Bruce Knauft, Conrad Kottak, Stephen Lansing, Herbert Lewis, Nancy Lutkehaus, Andrew and Harriet Lyons, Jonathan Marks, Serena Nanda, Keith Otterbein, Robert Parkin, Peter Peregrine, David Price, Naomi Quinn, Moshe Shokeid, Sydel Silverman, Paul Stoller, Marilyn Strathern, Claudia Strauss, Barbara Tedlock, Greg Urban and many, many others who are equally illustrious.

The entries were chosen by McGee, Warms, and the editorial board. As the project progressed we often wished for the space to add many more entries. We apologize in advance for important theories and theorists we've missed but also acknowledge that any encyclopedia will be incomplete, not least because theory itself is growing, changing, and being reimagined. Entries are listed in alphabetical order and range in length from under 1,000 to more than 5,000 words. The lengths of the entries were determined following a rubric provided by SAGE and with extensive advice from the members of the editorial board. Each entry opens with a concise statement of the importance of its subject. In cases where the topic is a person, critical biographical details are discussed. Essays close with a brief recapitulation of the general contribution of the subject to anthropology. Essays are accompanied by a list of cross-references that direct readers to other related entries in the encyclopedia, and a list of suggested readings. These readings were selected by entry authors to guide readers to further works that will provide them with a deeper understanding and appreciation for the entry topics.

Acknowledgments

Although Warms and McGee are the authors of several textbooks, including a book on sociocultural theory, this is the biggest project either of us has worked on. A project of this magnitude cannot be completed without the guidance and assistance of a great many people. First we would like to acknowledge the guidance of Jim Brace-Thompson, Senior Editor at SAGE, who first approached us with this project and provided initial guidance in its planning. We are also indebted to Sanford Robinson, Senior Developmental Editor at SAGE, who provided us with timely assistance, answers to questions, and project schedules that he helped make sure we kept. We also must thank Laura Notton, Reference Systems Coordinator, and Leticia Gutierrez, Reference Systems Manager, for their invaluable technical assistance guiding all contributors through the Sage Reference Tracking System that made a project of this size possible. We would also like to thank our Production Editor, Jane Haenel, who is one of the most organized people we have ever worked with. Finally, and most importantly, we would like to thank the hundreds of colleagues around the world who contributed entries, helped us find authors for entries, provided critical reviews, and answered questions of all types. All graciously shared their time and knowledge with us. We have been humbled by the generosity and the depth and breadth of knowledge of our colleagues around the world. We set out to edit a reference work for students of social and cultural anthropology and ended up becoming students again ourselves.

R. Jon McGee

Richard L. Warms

Texas State University

A

Abu-Lughod, Lila

Lila Abu-Lughod, a prominent and prolific American anthropologist, has been a leading figure in the field of Middle East anthropology and in women and gender studies. Trained in anthropology, first at Carleton College and then at Harvard University, her writings have been strongly focused on in-depth ethnographic research, theoretical innovation, and attentiveness to the craft of writing. Widely read both within and outside of Middle East studies as an exemplar of engaged and feminist ethnography, the corpus of her works includes three single-authored ethnographies, *Veiled Sentiments: Honor and Poetry in a Bedouin Society* (1986), *Writing Women's Worlds: Bedouin Stories* (1993), and *Dramas of Nationhood: The Politics of Television in Egypt* (2004), in addition to numerous edited volumes. Her ethnographies, in particular, have focused on marginalized or subaltern communities, such as the Awlad 'Ali Bedouin of Egypt and rural Upper Egyptians, all the while remaining attuned to gender inequities.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Culture, Ideology, and Discourse

Abu-Lughod's first two ethnographies, *Veiled Sentiments* and *Writing Women's Worlds*, focused on the Bedouin community of the Awlad 'Ali, who reside in Egypt's western desert along a coastal strip on the northern edge of the Libyan Desert, and concentrated on women's worlds. Both ethnographies exhibited an extreme sensitivity to the dynamics between the anthropologist and the host community, not just in the well-worn concern for power imbalances but also in the focus on the dynamics of the intersubjective encounter between the researcher and her anthropological subject. Thus, she recounts her initial introduction to the community both as a guest and as a daughter accompanied by her father, an academic and social scientist, the late Ibrahim Abu-Lughod, an introduction that greatly facilitated her place in the Bedouin community as an adoptive daughter. Such narrative retellings are indicative of her concern for positionality, a lesson she both draws from and imbues with feminism. Indeed, in her interaction with the Awlad 'Ali, she refers to her situation as that of a "halfie," half-Arab and half-American, and to the insider-outsider status this bestowed on her, thereby avoiding the reification of the self/other distinction so common to reflexive anthropology.

The central question that animated *Veiled Sentiments* was the relationship between Bedouin poetic discourse and the discourse of ordinary life. Focusing on the *ghinnawas* or lyric poems of the Awlad 'Ali, she analyzed the disjuncture between the dominant cultural ideology of honor and the emotive poetic discourse of sentiment to explore the relationship between ideology and human experience. Rather than view the disjuncture as indicative of a separation between an ideological or sociocultural self and an emotively expressed "real self," she framed poetry and ordinary discourse as existing side by side in juxtaposition, the former as a shadow commentary on the latter. Poetic discourse, which often expressed

vulnerability and other socially devalued sentiments, thus functioned as a culturally sanctioned dissident discourse and was itself a declaration of autonomy from the system. Theoretically, what *Veiled Sentiments* accomplished was a more nuanced and less reconciled view of culture and of the relationship between ideology and experience. In contrast to the ethnographic work of Clifford Geertz, which tended to view culture as a unified coherent whole that could be read as a text, or the work of Pierre Bourdieu, which presented a totalizing view of culture as superstructural ideology, Abu-Lughod's work remained ever attuned to contradictions and ambiguities and the coexistence of contradictory discourses, in keeping with the work of Michel Foucault.

The Politics of Knowledge and Representation

Abu-Lughod has been extremely attentive to the politics of scholarship, and this was especially reflected in the experimental ethnographic form of *Writing Women's Worlds*. In that ethnography, each chapter heading marked an anthropological theme on women and the Arab world, such as patrilineality, polygyny, and honor and shame, while each chapter deconstructed these concepts as part of the project of writing *against* culture. By writing against the culture concept, she sought to work against the tendency of social science scholars to generalize by destabilizing the idea of cultures as ahistorical wholes and critiquing the anthropological overinvestment in ethnographic typification and otherness. It must be noted that she did not destabilize these conventions simply by avoiding them. Thus, in discussing the concept of honor among the Awlad 'Ali, she viewed it not as the sole purview of men but rather as a moral ideal for both men and women. In sum, rather than emphasize holism and coherence, her subsequent narratives focused on individuals, mobilizing what she felicitously termed a *tactical humanism*. In the motivated tellings and partial perspectives of her storytellers, the reader emerged with a distinct sense of the everyday fabric and quality of "life as lived." In this, her consummate abilities as a storyteller echoed the narrative craft of her ethnographic protagonists.

This theme of writing against culture reverberated in her third ethnography, *Dramas of Nationhood*, in which she turned to that quintessential icon of modernity, television. Television as an ethnographic object was instructive, as it enabled a rethinking of the complexities of nationalism in a late-20th-century context, while refracting everyday life as portrayed in the ever-ubiquitous television serials and as inhabited by its viewers. Moving beyond Benedict Anderson's notion of the nation as an imagined community, she explored the fault lines and frictions of nationalism, its social inequalities as manifested in hegemonic cultural forms, while arguing that the nation-state remains a powerful frame of reference. This methodologically sophisticated multisited and multilevel ethnography included an examination of the elite cultural producers of Egypt's television serials and the subaltern audiences, in both rural Upper Egypt and Cairo, who watch them. Significantly, it was not a literary but an ethnographic and social analysis that took media content and textual analysis seriously.

Thus, in all three of her ethnographies Abu-Lughod has returned to an issue she raised in her groundbreaking 1989 article "Zones of Theory in the Anthropology of the Arab World," namely, the prevalence of theoretical metonyms in the study of the Arab world, clustered around segmentary lineage theory, harem theory, and Islam. Through her own scholarship, she has greatly augmented this theorizing by writing against the "culture concept" and by engaging with topics previously thought to be of little import in the study of the Arab world, namely, the anthropology of emotions and the study of mass media and national politics. Throughout this work, she has sought to situate cultural forms within their larger historical and sociopolitical contexts, without dispensing with the thick description and the anthropological endeavor to capture the poetics of everyday life.

Omnia El Shakry

See also Anderson, Benedict; Autoethnography; Bourdieu, Pierre; Foucault, Michel; Geertz, Clifford; Gender and Anthropology; Postcolonial Theory

Further Readings

Abu-Lughod, L. (1986). *Veiled sentiments: Honor and poetry in a Bedouin society.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1989). Zones of theory in the anthropology of the Arab world. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 18,* 267–306.

———. (1993). *Writing women's worlds: Bedouin stories*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (Ed.). (1998). *Remaking women: Feminism and modernity in the Middle East*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
———. (2004). *Dramas of nationhood: The politics of television in Egypt*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Action Anthropology

See Applied Anthropology

Alliance Theory

See Alliance-Descent Debate

Alliance-Descent Debate

The alliance-descent debate was concerned with the relation between kinship and social organization. It was one of two prominent theoretical developments in the 1960s and 1970s that significantly discouraged anthropological interest in kinship analysis.

Origin of the Name

The contrast between alliance theory and descent theory was first offered by Louis Dumont in 1961 to characterize an argument that had been going on for 4 years between E. R. Leach (alliance) and Meyer Fortes and others (descent). Dumont described alliance as the structural theory of kinship; descent was defined as the theory of lineage or political systems. In a 1971 monograph, Dumont described descent theory more fully as the English theory of groups by filiation that had developed from A. R. Radcliffe-Brown and E. E. Evans-Pritchard through Fortes and Jack Goody, as against the theory of Claude Lévi-Strauss, which was oriented toward marriage alliance, as the latter was accepted, critiqued, and stated more generally by Leach and Rodney Needham.

Dumont recognized that the two theories did not fully exclude one another. Alliance theory was a better fit for South Asian ethnography; descent theory better described African social organization. So he described them as "mid-abstract." In fact, neither was a single theory but rather a cluster of claims. Some were complementary, while others were opposed. Topics at issue ran from the interpretation of the rule that one should marry one's mother's brother's daughter to the general goal of social theory and the nature of objectivity.

Descent Theory

Descent theory as represented by Radcliffe-Brown, Evans-Pritchard, Fortes, and Goody combined a conception of the goal of social analysis drawn from French social positivism with a conception of objectivity drawn from logical positivism. The goal was to describe each society as a "total system" of corporate groups that determined individual behavior. The idea of objectivity was that an objective explanation had to refer to things that were "concrete" in some definite, material, sense. It could not refer to thought, which is subjective.

Radcliffe-Brown's first major work was an extensive monograph on the Andaman Islanders. It reassessed an earlier study by E. H. Man and focused entirely on beliefs and ceremonies, not social organization. Radcliffe-Brown announced his characteristic theoretical orientation only in the Preface, which he wrote years after the original study. Subsequently, however, he sought to apply it to a wide range of topics that ultimately figured in the alliance-descent arguments, including the mother's brother's relation, joking relationships, and kinship terminologies.

In Africa, Evans-Pritchard, Fortes, and Goody applied the same philosophical assumptions to what were commonly described as "segmentary societies." Since these involved a hierarchy of social units from tribe through clan, lineage, and household, they were more readily seen as total-system accounts. Relations between individuals were seen as determined by the corporate groups they were members of. Marital relations were relevant but not central. Rather, what was most important was the definition and juridical character of whatever groups held land or the material artifacts that were involved in the control of land, such as houses, cattle, and tools. Since these were descent groups, it was reasonable to call this perspective descent theory.

As a model for social analysis, in general, many ethnologists saw such accounts as artificially seeking to "objectivize" what was often subjective, intersubjective, or conceptual. Since the 1980s, this

approach has been replaced in African ethnography by various social constructionist perspectives focusing on colonialism and postcolonialism.

Alliance Theory

In contrast to the efforts in descent theory to describe social organization as "concrete," alliance theorists commended their approach as "idealistic." This meant two different things. First, it was more explicitly concerned with symbols and meanings. Second, it self-consciously drew on the tradition of philosophical idealism for its epistemology. Lévi-Strauss's basic explanatory mechanism was not the assignment of people to material objects in physical space but "certain fundamental structures of the human mind."

Alliance theory began in 1949 with the publication of Lévi-Strauss's *Les Structures Elémentaires de la Parenté*. An English translation was published in 1969 under the editorship of Rodney Needham as *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*. The argument was clearly intended to update and supersede Émile Durkheim's *Elementary Forms of the Religious Life*. Both claimed to describe the simplest form of society, and both held that it was a total system of solitary kinship groups linked to one another by marriage and sharing an all-encompassing worldview. But Durkheim's argument was evolutionary: The elementary form was also the first form. This is no longer believable. Lévi-Strauss did not argue that the elementary forms were the original forms of society but rather that they were the "basic units."

The elementary form of kinship, for Lévi-Strauss, was prescriptive matrilateral cross-cousin marriage (mother's brother's daughter [MBD] marriage). "Prescriptive" means that the choice of a spouse is absolutely specified in terms of a kinship category, in contrast to systems that are "preferential." Figure 1 represents the logic of the MBD prescription.

A triangle indicates a male, a circle a female, a line a connection by descent, and an equals symbol a connection by marriage. The lettered columns represent lineal descent groups. It does not matter whether succession is through males or females. Either way, every male marries his MBD.

With MBD marriage, there can be regular cycles of "marriage in a circle" for all the lineal groups or any subset, and the system will be self-replicating. Moreover, since women are always part of a larger flow of female goods balanced by a flow of male goods going the opposite way, the result is a cycle of "prestations" linking all the groups in the society. The logic is not the same for patrilateral cross-cousin marriage (father's sister's daughter [FSD] marriage), in which a male chooses a wife from among his father's sister's daughters. Here, the women would go one way in one generation and the opposite way in the next. So there would not be a flow of prestations throughout the society but only back-and-forth exchanges of the same prestations between the same groups.

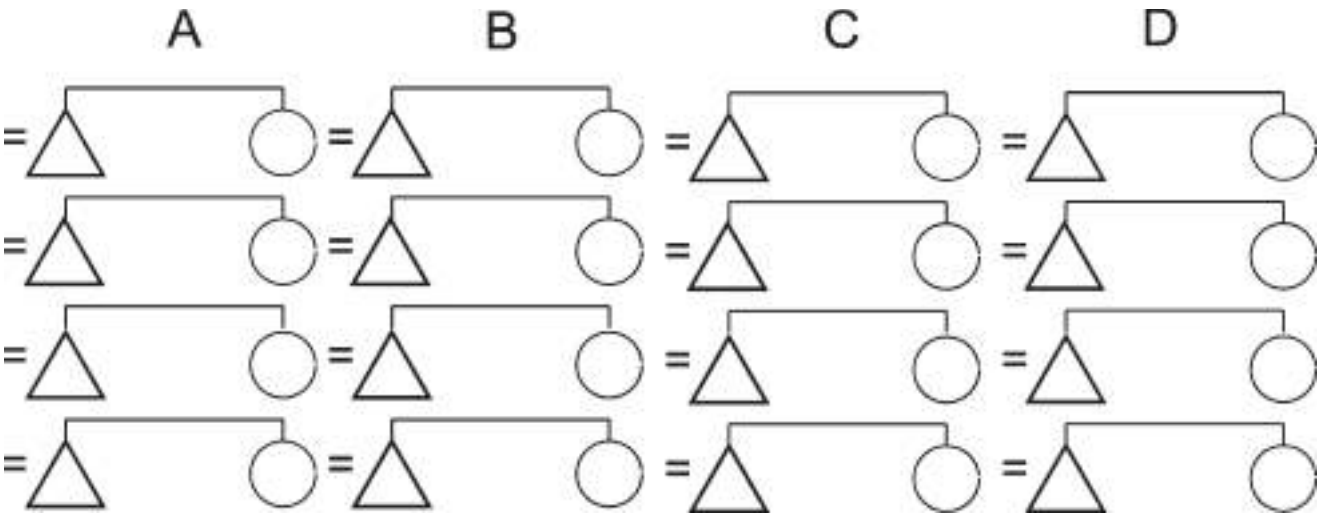


Figure 1 Logic of MBD Marriage

Note: MBD = mother's brother's daughter.

MBD marriage rules occur in a wide variety of historically unrelated societies. Unilateral FSD marriage is rare or nonexistent, depending on how tightly one defines it. Lévi-Strauss argued that the reason for this is that MBD marriage produced an "organic" social structure that was integrated and stable. FSD marriage, in contrast, produces a structure that is inherently fragmented.

An ethnographic problem with the idea of marriage in a circle is that actual MBD marriage systems often associate wife-giving status with a difference in social rank. Logically, this should create anomalies at the ends of the cycles. If wife givers are different in rank from wife takers and men of Lineage A take wives from Lineage B, and if men of Lineage B, in turn, take wives from Lineage C, then men of Lineage C should not take wives from Lineage A. But a man of Lineage C has to have a wife, and often does take a wife from A. The explanation was that while the cycle would be triadic in such a case, the relationship that it is based on is dyadic. Wife givers are separate from wife takers for any one group, and that is what matters. This dyadic opposition reflects a fundamental proclivity of the human mind, and it is the combination of the MBD logic and dyadic thought that provides the total social analysis.

As the alliance-descent argument was expanded by Leach, Dumont, Needham, and others, the list of anthropologists who disagreed in one or another expanded well beyond those who supported "descent theory" as Dumont had originally described it. So while the "alliance" side of the debate continued to be fairly well defined, the anti-alliance side became increasingly heterogeneous.

The Expanded Argument: From Fortes to Homans and Schneider

Some parts of alliance theory were readily accepted by other anthropologists, and some were not. The main controversies concerned the characterization of marriage patterns in terms of exchanges of wives by men, the association with dyadic ideational systems, and the claim that such dyadic systems reflected a fundamental proclivity of the human mind.

Lévi-Strauss also did not produce a comprehensive description of a community with the kind of "organic" unity that, as his theory said, MBD marriage gave rise to. There were no descriptions of such a community by others either for Lévi-Strauss to cite. This was a serious defect, which subsequent proponents tried to overcome.

In 1951, Leach argued for structural analysis in Lévi-Strauss's sense in the "The Structural Implications of Matrilateral Cross-Cousin Marriage." This compared the social structures of the Kariera, Kachin, and Trobriand as variations on the logic of mother's brother's marriage but did not claim to provide a "total" societal analysis. Leach repeated the structural analysis in *Political Systems of Highland Burma* in 1954, but while his analysis of the marriage system was straightforward, he had a great deal of trouble with the larger society it should have structured. People did not report just one such larger system but three, which were very different from one another: Kachin Gumsa, Kachin Gumlao, and Shan. So the systems could not possibly have been the kinds of all-encompassing wholes that people were "in," as both Lévi-Strauss and his descent theory opponents imagined. One cannot be "in" three separate "total" structures at once. They could only have been cultural models that people used. Yet Leach did not conclude that the positivist goal of total-system analysis should be rejected. He concluded only that theory was necessarily different from description and that there should be more recognition of change.

A very different difficulty was raised by George Homans and David Schneider's 1955 *Marriage, Authority, and Final Cause*. Their argument was psychological, a cross-cultural variant of the Oedipus complex. They argued that in cultures where the father was the warm and supportive parent and the mother's brother was the harsh disciplinarian, boys would be sentimentally inclined to seek their wives through father's sisters and avoid relations through mother's brothers. This would happen with matrilineal descent, where the boy would be the heir of his mother's brother rather than of his own father. It followed that among societies with unilineal descent and unilateral marriage rules, one should expect MBD marriage where the descent rule was patrilineal and FSD marriage where it was matrilineal. Homans and Schneider located 33 societies with unilineal descent and unilateral marriage rules, of which 6 did not conform to the prediction. Two had FSD marriage and patrilineal succession, and 4 had MBD marriage and matrilineal succession. They then refined their original hypothesis to make the predictive factor not the system of inheritance but

the location of the *potestas*, "disciplinary power." This left only one possibly anomalous case. It followed, they argued, that Lévi-Strauss's theory was superfluous. Furthermore, it was an appeal to final causes. It assigned the cause of the marriage choice to a future condition, in this case social integration. Real causes can only be "efficient causes." They also asked what kind of efficient cause would have been consistent with Lévi-Strauss's argument if he had proposed one. Their answer was rational purpose: Members of a society rationally or consciously arrange their organization to bring about successful evolutionary adaptation. They rejected this idea on the ground that people consider their own interests, not the interest of the society at large.

Reviews of *Marriage, Authority, and Final Cause* were generally favorable, although Fred Eggan noted that it seemed to have not fully appreciated Lévi-Strauss's explanation of the inherent conflict between FSD marriage and system integration, and he observed that there were no "fully functioning" systems of patrilateral cross-cousin marriage. A review by Rodney Needham conceded that Homans and Schneider had established the connection between potestality and MBD marriage "beyond a doubt," but it entirely rejected their criticism of Lévi-Strauss.

Needham followed with *Structure and Sentiment: A Test Case in Social Anthropology* (1962). About two thirds was a rebuttal of *Marriage, Authority, and Final Cause*. One third was the "test case," restating an analysis of Purum society that Needham had first published in 1958.

Needham argued that Homans and Schneider misunderstood Lévi-Strauss's argument, including the basic distinction between prescriptive and preferential marriage and the fact that Lévi-Strauss's analysis applied to lineal descent groups, not individualized genealogical relationships. Second, they also misunderstood much of the ethnography. And third, Needham argued that Lévi-Strauss's argument was not a final-cause argument, nor was Homans and Schneider's an efficient-cause argument. Instead, he argued, Lévi-Strauss's argument was structural while Homans and Schneider's was psychological, and psychological arguments were illegitimate.

Needham's Purum analysis utilized a 1945 monograph by Tarak Chandra Das. The Purum are culturally related to the Kachin. They numbered 303 people living in four villages. Das described them as organized into four patrilineal "sibs" that crosscut the four villages. Men married women from the sib of their MBD and did not marry women from their FSD. Das also described a series of rituals, including weddings and funerals, that displayed the status of a man, described by the kin term *apu*. The high status of the *apu* was symbolized in these rituals by the lower status of a group of relatives termed *maksas* and *ningans*, who always served rice beer and cooked pig. *Ningan* is a reciprocal female consanguine of *apu*, and *maksa* is her husband. So the exact glosses of these terms are important. The genealogical relations referred to as *apu* included mother's brother and mother's father, which was consistent with Lévi-Strauss's theory. However, they also included father's father and father's father's father, which contradicted the theory and which Needham did not mention. Das also explicitly described *ningans* as "married daughters of the patriline" (not of the sib), which Needham also does not mention. Needham interpreted all ceremonies with the *maksas* and *ningans* as involving prestations between sibs in exchange for wives, male goods for female goods, in a total system of triadic marriage cycles unified by the dyadic *maksa-apu* relation. Das makes it clear that the groups of *maksas* and *ningans* form only in relation to the *apu* as an individual, and the group dissolves on his death.

Most responses to Needham focused on the ways the actual Purum marriage patterns departed from the supposed MBD rule. Schneider, however, responded with a critical review of the entire alliance-descent debate, titled "Some Muddles in the Models, or How the System Really Works." He pointed out numerous problems of arbitrary interpretation on both sides and argued that neither Needham nor anyone else had provided a convincing test case because the theories were too muddled to admit of one, although alliance theory seemed to do a better job of recognizing the importance of symbolism. He also rejected "total-system models" in favor of "partial-system models." General interest in the debate ended soon thereafter.

Conclusion

Kinship systems involve ideas, organizations of many kinds, rituals, ideologies, mythologies, and sentiments. Alliance theory and descent theory each focused on just one aspect and claimed that it determined the rest.

When their arguments failed, some of the participants blamed the failure on kinship itself. In 1971, Needham argued that the term *kinship* had no meaning. In 1972, Schneider argued that kinship was a non-subject. Yet anthropologists continue to study it, and several recent approaches have been much cleaner and better grounded empirically than any argument in the alliance-descent debate. For a recent assessment that relates the alliance-descent issues to more recent approaches, see especially Richard Feinberg and Martin Ottenheimer's *The Cultural Analysis of Kinship*.

Murray J. Leaf

See also Dumont, Louis; Godelier, Maurice; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Needham, Rodney; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Schneider, David M.

Further Readings

Barnes, R. H. (2006). Maurice Godelier and the metamorphosis of kinship: A review essay. *Comparative Studies in Society and History, 48*(2), 326–358.

Feinberg, R., & Ottenheimer, M. (Eds.). (2001). *The cultural analysis of kinship: The legacy of David M. Schneider*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Fortes, M. (1972). Kinship and the social order: Current anthropology book review. *Current Anthropology, 13*(2), 285–296.

Leaf, M. J. (2006). Experimental analysis of kinship. *Ethnology, 45,* 305–330.

Schneider, D. (1965). Some muddles in the models. In M. Banton (Ed.), *The relevance of models for social anthropology*. New York, NY: Taplinger.

Althusser, Louis

Louis Althusser (1918–1990), a French Marxist philosopher, was a major intellectual figure during the 1960s and 1970s and significantly influenced the rereading of Marx and the development of a distinctive critical approach to Marxist theory and practice.

Biography and Major Works

Louis Althusser was born in 1918 in the city of Birmandreïs, a suburb of Algiers, Algeria. His father, Charles-Joseph Althusser, was a banker, and his mother, Lucienne Marthe Berger, was a schoolteacher and a devout Catholic.

Althusser lived in Algeria until 1930, when his father was reassigned to Marseilles, France. While living in Marseilles, Althusser studied at the Lycée Saint-Charles. In 1936, his family moved to Lyon, where Althusser attended the Lycée du Parc and prepared for the national entrance exam to the prestigious École Normale Supérieure (ENS). He joined the Catholic youth movement in 1937.

Althusser was successful in his 1939 ENS admissions exams but was called up for military service before the start of the academic year. In June 1940, he was captured by the Germans and spent the rest of the war in a prisoner-of-war camp in Schleswig-Holstein, Germany. This experience contributed to his loss of religious faith, his political development as a communist, and the onset of his lifelong struggles with clinical depression.

After the war ended, in October 1945 Althusser returned to the ENS but struggled to readjust to academic life after a 6-year interruption in his studies; he began to suffer from depression and was admitted to a psychiatric hospital. While convalescing in a small town in the French Alps, Althusser eventually completed his studies and received a Diplôme d'études supérieures for his thesis on Hegel, written under the direction of the notable philosopher Gaston Bachelard.

In 1946, Althusser had struck up a close friendship with Jacques Martin, a translator of Hegel, who later committed suicide and to whom Althusser's book *For Marx* is movingly dedicated. Under Martin's influence, Althusser had begun to read Hegel seriously. At the ENS, Althusser also befriended the young philosophers Michel Foucault, Jean-Toussaint Desanti, and Tran Duc Thao. He played an active role among progressive Catholic youth and helped organize the student union.

Most significantly, in 1946 Althusser met Hélène Legotien (née Rytman), who was 8 years his senior and a communist dissident. Hélène had taken part in the French Resistance and later became a distinguished sociologist. She and Althusser became lifelong companions and eventually got married in 1976.

In 1948, Althusser joined—and never left—the French Communist Party (*Parti Communiste Français*, PCF). He also passed his *agrégation*, a competitive examination (in which he ranked first in the written and second in the oral components) that provided him a license to teach philosophy in French secondary schools. However, Althusser instead

accepted a position at the ENS of *agrégé-répétiteur* or, in the student slang, *caïman*. As *caïman*, he helped prepare students for the *agrégation*, and he remained in this position until 1980. In addition to his regular duties as a philosophy tutor, Althusser had a profound influence at the ENS because of his ability to organize official conferences and guest lectures by important figures in France such as Jacques Lacan, Gilles Deleuze, and Michel Foucault.

When his seminal works *For Marx* and *Reading Capital* were published in 1965, Althusser was thrust from a previously marginal position in the PCF into a position of being one of the party's leading public intellectuals.

In 1956, at the Twentieth Party Congress of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union, First Secretary Nikita Khrushchev had given a famous speech in which he denounced and criticized crimes committed by his predecessor Joseph Stalin and initiated a process of "de-Stalinization." For many Marxists, including Eric Fromm, Jean-Paul Sartre, and the PCF's leading theoretician Roger Garaudy, this provided an opportunity to rediscover the humanist roots of Marx's thought and to engage in a fruitful dialogue with non-Marxists. Althusser, however, opposed this trend, defended a "theoretical anti-humanism," and sympathized with criticisms made by the Chinese Communist Party—but he was careful not to identify himself openly with Maoism.

Although many of his students were involved in the tumultuous events of May–June 1968, Althusser himself was not supportive. As a result, he was rebuked by some of his former supporters, notably the philosopher Jacques Rancière. In response, Althusser engaged in a searching "self-criticism."

By the mid-1970s, Althusser and his supporters publicly contested the PCF's leadership over matters such as the contemporary relevance of the Marxist notion of the "dictatorship of the Proletariat." This struggle ultimately resulted in the publication in 1978 of his pointed challenge: *What Must Change in the Party.*

In 1975, Althusser defended a Doctorat d'État thesis for his published body of work, at the Université de Picardie, which later appeared in English as "Is It Simple to Be a Marxist in Philosophy?" (Althusser 2011, pp. 203–240).

Althusser's life took a tragic turn in November 1980 when, in a delusional state, he strangled his wife, Hélène, to death. After a lengthy psychiatric examination, Althusser was declared unfit to stand trial and committed to the Sainte-Anne psychiatric hospital. He was also compelled by the ENS administration to retire.

Until 1983, Althusser lived in various public and private clinics in the Paris area, initially under administrative detention, then as a voluntary patient, and finally, from 1984 to 1986, at some distance from the ENS, at an apartment in the north of Paris. Treated by various doctors, he was regularly visited by close friends. Althusser died on October 22, 1990, of a heart attack at the age of 72 at the Denis Forestier Geriatric Center.

Critical Contributions to Marxism

During the 1950s, Althusser gradually abandoned his youthful philosophical and political orientations. The high point of his writing during this period of rupture with the official Stalinist Marxism, to which he had been introduced in the PCF, was a short book on the 18th-century French political theorist Montesquieu, which appeared in 1959. In 1960, Althusser also translated, edited, and published a collection of writings by Ludwig Feuerbach, the 19th-century German materialist philosopher, who was a crucial philosophical influence on the early Marx and Engels.

Althusser's mature works include *For Marx* and *Reading Capital*, both of which appeared in 1965. The former is a collection of essays in which Althusser—borrowing a term from Bachelard—famously argued that there exists an "epistemological break" between Marx's early and his later "mature" writings. The latter collective work gathered seminar presentations given by Althusser and his students as they engaged in a detailed philosophical rereading of Marx's *Capital*. In *For Marx* and *Reading Capital*, Althusser argued that the works of the young Marx were largely confined to the categories of German philosophy and classical political economy, but with *The German Ideology* (1845), there was a profound shift toward a fundamentally different "problematic." Although Marx himself never fully grasped this theoretical reorientation, Althusser sought to reveal it by means of a careful and sensitive "symptomatic reading."

Other significant texts by Althusser during his mature period were his 1967 lecture series on "Philosophy and the Spontaneous Philosophy of the

Scientists" (Althusser, 2011, pp. 69–165) and his 1968 lecture "Lenin and Philosophy" (Althusser, 2011, pp. 167–202). In these lectures, Althusser broke with what he called his earlier "theoreticism" and advanced a new, practical conception of philosophy as the representation of class struggle in theory. Althusser's rethinking of philosophy as a dialectical struggle of idealist and materialist "tendencies" stimulated creative research and publications by his associates, such as Pierre Macherey, Pierre Raymond, and Dominique Lecourt.

In his highly influential 1969 essay "Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses" (excerpted from a longer manuscript that was only posthumously published and has not yet been translated into English: *Sur la reproduction* [On Reproduction]), Althusser sought to reframe Marx's account of ideology not as a set of false beliefs but as a complex, and contradictory, assemblage of social practices through which every individual is transformed into a "subject" (Althusser, 2008, pp. 1–60). In other words, individuals do not originate as, but become, self-conscious and responsible agents through the interplay of a wide variety of "ideological state apparatuses," such as family, mass media, religious organizations, and especially the educational system. There is no single ideological state apparatus that produces in us the belief that we are self-conscious, responsible agents. Instead, we derive this belief in the course of learning what it means to fulfill the role of a parent, child, teacher, student, administrator, worker, citizen, religious believer, and so forth. Althusser never underestimated the significance of what he called the "repressive state apparatus," whose underlying violence is supplemented by the everyday social reproduction carried out by ideological practices. Nor did he deny the possibility of resistance to dominant ideologies through the establishment of counterideologies.

In the late 1970s and early 1980s, Althusser entered the final phase of his intellectual development. He acknowledged a "crisis of Marxism," rejected all orthodox versions of dialectical materialism as a broad worldview, and pursued instead what he called a "philosophy for Marxism," to be situated within what he variously called a "philosophy of the encounter" or "aleatory materialism" (Althusser, 2006). Although this later material is fragmentary, it makes explicit certain themes that were already implicit in Althusser's mature writings of the 1960s. Althusser contended that there is a long materialist countertendency in the history of philosophy—which is predominately idealist—that has run its course through philosophers who are otherwise as different as Epicurus, Machiavelli, Spinoza, Hobbes, Rousseau, Marx, Heidegger, Wittgenstein, Foucault, Derrida, and Deleuze.

Influence on Anthropology

Althusser's direct contributions to anthropology were limited (see Resch, 1993, pp. 111–135). However, an interesting, but only posthumously published, text is "On Lévi-Strauss" (Althusser, 2003, pp. 19–32), which was originally written as a long critical letter that began to circulate widely during 1966. Although Althusser offered a few favorable remarks on Lévi-Strauss and his scientific approach, the bulk of the letter criticized not just "structuralist anthropology" but anthropology itself. According to Althusser, Lévi-Strauss misunderstood Marx, was guilty of methodological formalism, and wrongly conceived of "primitive societies" as existing outside history—as primitive, not simply in a relative but in an absolute or "originary" sense. From a Marxist perspective, however, there can be no such originary societies but only historical social formations. Althusser argued that Lévi-Strauss did not adequately understand the concept of a "mode of production" and, as a result, failed to grasp that kinship structures are relations of production that operate only within a given mode of production. The anthropologist Emannuel Terray acknowledged "On Lévi-Strauss" in his book *Marxism and "Primitive" Societies* (1972), which was originally published in a series edited by Althusser. The latter had initially proposed to include "On Lévi-Strauss" as an appendix to Terray's book, which, however, ultimately appeared without it.

Althusser's Legacy

Althusser was a central figure in the post–World War II renewal of Marxist economics, social theory, philosophy, and cultural studies. He drew from a wide variety of non-Marxist sources—Spinoza, Rousseau, and Montesquieu, the philosophy of science, and psychoanalysis—as well as from key thinkers in the classical Marxist tradition, such as Lenin and Gramsci, to move away from the intellectual isolation of Stalinist-influenced "official" Marxism.

Although commonly referred to as a "structural" Marxist, Althusser was in fact highly critical of most aspects of structuralism (see Montag, 2013).

Althusser's work has enjoyed multidisciplinary influence. His effort to reconstruct historical materialism was a stimulus for Anglophone analytic philosophers such as G. A. Cohen and Andrew Levine. His emphases on contradiction, immanent causality, and overdetermination have appeared in the analyses of social class developed by Nicos Poulantzas, Erik Olin Wright, and Richard Wolff and Stephen Resnick. Althusser's reformulation of the Marxist theory of ideology has been the point of departure for Judith Butler in gender studies, Slavoj Žižek in politics, and Michael Sprinker and Terry Eagleton in literary and cultural theory. Althusser's work has influenced new materialist approaches to biblical scholarship and innovative Latin American directions in "liberation theology." Finally, Althusser has inspired two generations of scholarship on the 17th-century philosopher Baruch Spinoza, by writers such as Étienne Balibar, Pierre Macherey, Pierre-François Moreau, and André Tosel.

Althusser's work has been criticized in various ways, perhaps most famously by his former student Jacques Rancière, the Polish philosopher Leszek Kołakowski, and the British historian E. P. Thompson. All disputed what they regarded as Althusser's wrong-headed scientific aspirations and his failure to break theoretically and politically with Stalinism. What is striking in such objections, however, was their reliance on summary or paraphrase and avoidance of close, contextualized readings of Althusser's works and their historical development. Indeed, these often strident criticisms appear today to be superficial and dated, especially in light of the posthumous publication of numerous texts—especially those concerning aleatory materialism—that have stimulated an international resurgence of interest in Althusser's thought, which is likely to continue for many years to come (see Diefenbach et al., 2012).

Ted Stolze

See also Barthes, Roland; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Foucault, Michel; Gramsci, Antonio; Lacan, Jacques; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Poststructuralism; Structural Marxism

Further Readings

Althusser, L. (2003). *The humanist controversy and other writings (1966–67)* (F. Matheron, Ed., G. M. Goshgarian, Trans.). New York, NY: Verso.

———. (2005). *For Marx* (B. Brewster, Trans.). New York, NY: Verso. (Original work published 1969)

———. (2006). *Philosophy of the encounter: Later writings, 1978–87* (F. Matheron & O. Corpet, Eds., G. M. Goshgarian, Trans.). New York, NY: Verso.

———. (2008). *On ideology*. New York, NY: Verso.

———. (2011). *Philosophy and the spontaneous philosophy of the scientists* (G. Elliott, Ed.). New York, NY: Verso.

Althusser, L., & Balibar, É. (2009). *Reading capital* (B. Brewster, Trans.). New York, NY: Verso. (Original work published 1970)

Diefenbach, K., Farris, S. R., Kirn, G., & Thomas, P. (2012). *Encountering Althusser: Politics and materialism in contemporary radical thought*. New York, NY: Bloomsbury Academic.

Elliott, G. (2009). *Althusser: The detour of theory*. Chicago, IL: Haymarket Books.

Montag, W. (2013). *Althusser and his contemporaries: Philosophy's perpetual war*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Resch, R. P. (1992). *Althusser and the renewal of Marxist social theory*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Terray, E. (1972). *Marxism and "primitive societies": Two studies* (M. Klopper, Trans.). New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.

Website

Décalages: An Althusser Studies Journal: http://scholar.oxy.edu/decalages/

American Anthropological Association

The American Anthropological Association (AAA) is the largest association of anthropologists in the world. Its membership includes professional and student anthropologists from the United States and abroad, both academic anthropologists and applied or practicing anthropologists. While anthropologists and social scientists recognize the successes of the AAA in representing anthropology to the media and the government, it is also important to note that the AAA has played a significant role in shaping anthropological theory. Over the years, the AAA has

(a) defined the scope of professionalism; (b) provided a vital space to foster, perform, and enact anthropological identities; and (c) offered explicit valuation of good anthropological scholarship in the forms of prizes, awards, and fellowships. In each of these endeavors, the AAA's approach to anthropology has been marked by a commitment to intellectual and geographic holism, including work in four broad areas of anthropology identified throughout much of U.S. anthropological history as "the four subfields" of anthropology (archaeological anthropology, biological/physical anthropology, linguistic anthropology, and sociocultural anthropology/ethnology). Through its actual organization, large and small conferences, and policies and practices, the AAA has demonstrated an ideological commitment to research, teaching, and writing, and engagement with all of humanity's past and present. This "big tent" approach has practical implications for the practice of the profession, especially in the United States, but it is useful as well to note that it rests on a particular conception of the field of anthropology that has developed over the years in the United States.

Professionalism: Defining Anthropology as an Expert Domain

Since its founding in 1902, the AAA has been instrumental in defining anthropology as an academic discipline characterized by theoretical rigor, academic research, and writing. Prior to 1902, there were numerous other organizations dedicated to anthropology in the United States, such as the Anthropological Club of New York and the Women's Anthropological Society of America. These clubs and societies, however, were far from uniform in their goals or practices, and many consisted largely of amateurs and enthusiasts. The tension between amateur and expert anthropologists came to a head during the founding of the AAA in the first few years of the 20th century. At that time, William John McGee, a self-trained ethnologist who led the U.S. Bureau of American Ethnology, and Franz Boas, an academically trained anthropologist, engaged in a series of heated debates and political maneuverings to determine the nature of membership in the nascent society. McGee favored an inclusive model that incorporated amateurs and enthusiasts, while Boas preferred a far more exclusive one. Although Boas's model never entirely succeeded, professional/expert anthropologists became the primary force and face of the emerging AAA.

The common factors binding AAA members together were training and expertise rather than geographical focus or subdisciplinary orientation. Despite their disagreement over the emphasis to be placed on training and expertise, McGee and Boas shared an inclusive understanding of anthropology as a discipline that encompassed archaeological, physical, linguistic, and ethnologic research. Indeed, in 1904, they explicitly stated that the AAA was dedicated to the biological, linguistic, archaeological, and ethnological components of humanity. This early commitment to four subfields of anthropology has remained a persistent component of the AAA's organizational contribution to anthropology. Few anthropologists personally engage in research encompassing the four named subfields as seamlessly as earlier anthropologists such as Boas did, yet the AAA remains organizationally dedicated to including each vein of research.

Conferences

The AAA and its 38 current sections organize and host 7–10 conferences each year, ranging from a few dozen participants to some 6,500. Best known are the megaconferences known as the annual meetings of the American Anthropological Association. These meetings act as opportunities for anthropologists to present their research, meet other anthropologists, and learn about the AAA's plans and business. While some researchers have questioned the scholarly merit of academic conferences, noting that they rarely result in peer-reviewed publications, these conferences play an important role in fostering and developing theory, nonetheless. As many scholars have noted, academic conferences constitute a performative space in which researchers enact their professional identities and new members are socialized into disciplinary norms of professional behavior. The organization and content of the meetings reveal the tacit intellectual values and disciplinary commitments of the AAA. The AAA meetings have historically included research papers and reports from each of anthropology's subfields. Increasingly, over the past few decades, they have also included films and other audiovisual presentations and, more recently, poster sessions. This act of inclusion alone speaks to the role of the AAA in fostering a disciplinary commitment to theoretical holism.

Of course, size matters. In the early years of the AAA, the annual meeting occurred over the course of a day, and all anthropologists present were able to attend all papers since it was held in a single room. For example, 42 people attended the 41st annual meetings, which were held at the Cosmos Club in Washington, D.C., in December 1942. By the 1961 annual meeting, attendance had grown to 1,117 people. This bred a sharp awareness of the new trends and developments across the subfields. Indeed, in her 1967 AAA presidential address, Frederica de Laguna reminisced about this time, when anthropologists would listen to all papers regardless of area of knowledge, subfield, or geographic base. By 1967, the AAA membership and scale of the annual meetings had grown enough to make such intimacy impossible. She noted that as the discipline grew, and journals and more specialized anthropological communities proliferated, such collectivity became impossible, yet, importantly, she implored the membership of AAA to retain their commitment to disciplinary holism.

Today the AAA meetings are far larger than they were in the 1960s and apparently growing. For years attracting some 4,500–5,000 participants, the meetings reached 6,000 in 2010 in New Orleans and more than 6,500 in 2011 in Montreal. Featuring at least 300 panels over a 5-day period, plus films, posters, as well as distinguished lectures and business, board, and committee meetings of multiple sorts, the annual meetings enact the "big tent" approach and the AAA's continued effort to be there for all anthropologists and to represent the entire field. Papers are included from each subfield of the discipline, and individual panels may include anthropologists from each of the subfields. Although social/cultural anthropologists (and newer configurations such as medical anthropologists) attend in larger numbers than archaeological and biological anthropologists, the AAA continues to promote, and stress its commitment to, the inclusion of all types of anthropologists. Despite the increased specialization among anthropological subfields in recent decades, the AAA Annual Meeting serves symbolically and practically as a site where anthropologists experience and celebrate the breadth of the discipline.

In relatively recent years, the annual meetings of the AAA have featured particular themes as an overarching form of meeting organization intended to foster collaboration across differences. With the growth of the discipline and increased specialization, it became more important and useful by the mid-1980s to have themes capable of uniting varying interests. This is especially apparent in the two themes for the 1984 annual meeting: "Biocultural Dimensions of Anthropology" and "Economic and Social Roles for Anthropologists in the 1980s." A major reorganization of the AAA had just taken place, driven by the need to maintain its tax-exempt status in the eyes of the U.S. government, and organizations that had maintained their separate legal standing had chosen to strengthen the AAA by fully joining it. Official AAA meeting themes helped signal the desire to proclaim and embrace the "big tent" approach quite openly, so it was not a surprise when Lynne Goldstein, the 1984 program chair, noted that she intended the themes for the 1984 AAA annual meeting to cut across boundaries within and beyond anthropology. More recent past themes have persisted in showing inclusiveness. They have included "Precarious Planet: Earth and Human Landscape" (1993), "The Public Face of Anthropology" (2000), and "Traces, Tidemarks, and Legacies" (2011), to name only a few. The themes of past meetings share a broadness intended to invite and foster interdisciplinary collaboration across subfields. Here, again, the AAA's commitment to disciplinary holism is apparent.

Geographic and topical openness remain the hallmarks of AAA's conception of anthropology and, hence, of theory in anthropology. For example, AAA sections focusing on particular areas of research or approaches to research, teaching, engagement, or analysis, such as the Society for Medical Anthropology or the Association for Feminist Anthropology, organize panels that typically include presentations drawing on research conducted in different regions, countries, or cultural groups. It is not uncommon to observe a panel with papers focusing on Latin America, Europe, and Asia. While such combinations are unlikely to surprise anthropologists, they reveal a persistent and ongoing disciplinary commitment. Indeed, the construction of the AAA annual meetings emphasizes the need to engage in comparison, even if individual anthropologists work in only one area or with a named group of people. Participants are surrounded by anthropological work on multiple issues based on research in places beyond their own experience or expertise. They may mostly attend certain panels or spend time informally talking with anthropologists whose work most closely resembles their

own, but they will still be surrounded by many other anthropologists. Tacitly reinforcing the notion that all of humanity, past and present, deserves anthropological attention, the AAA's annual meetings are officially open to all theoretical persuasions and orientations. Yet this commitment is, in itself, a theoretical position and arguably the central theoretical contribution of the AAA.

Of course, in its official openness to all types of anthropological work, the AAA has also acknowledged, enabled, and at times fostered direct debate on timely questions of method, ethics, human rights, or theory. For example, in 1988, the General Anthropology Division hosted an often cited debate on the history of emics and etics between Kenneth Pike and Marvin Harris, well-known supporters of these two positions, and the numerous citations that followed show a broad level of anthropological engagement in matters of method, theory, and ethics. Over the past decade, discussions and debates about ethics in anthropology have grown in number and substance, as have arguments about advocacy, human rights, anthropologists in the military, and public engagement. Most recently, discussion about anthropology as science, or anthropology and its relationship to science, began online after the 2010 AAA Annual Meeting held in New Orleans, continued in both new and traditional media, was included in issues of *Anthropology News*, and was given space on the conference program of the 2011 AAA Annual Meeting in Montreal.

Presidential Addresses

AAA presidential addresses offer other revealing glimpses of the AAA's theoretical commitments. Over the years, AAA presidents have been markedly concerned with (a) disciplinary holism and (b) the ability of anthropologists to communicate anthropological understandings to a broader public. Some, like Louise Lamphere and Virginia Dominguez, have tried to call internal professional attention to areas of unfortunate inattention, or even tacit exclusion, in U.S. anthropological practice, including within the AAA.

Published presidential addresses show that many AAA presidents have been concerned with the nature and tenor of collaboration within anthropology, both among anthropology's named subfields and across geographic areas of expertise. Many AAA presidents have reiterated de Laguna's urge to maintain the discipline's commitment to a holistic approach to the field. For instance, in the mid-1990s, Annette Weiner implored anthropologists to collaborate among the four subfields as a key part of their work. Anxiety about disciplinary fragmentation has not been limited to the (perceived) widening of the gap between archaeological anthropology, biological anthropology, linguistic anthropology, and sociocultural anthropology; it has also included regional foci. For instance, in his 1965 address, Alexander Spoehr worried that anthropologists' geographical and topical research was dividing them, and he reminded AAA members that cross-cultural comparison had to be the central feature of the discipline. AAA presidents' regular calls for disciplinary holism reveal a persistent dedication to the idea that anthropology is, and ought to be, a collaborative, cross-cultural, and cross-subfield discipline. They also, however, reveal concern that such collaboration happens less and less.

Past AAA presidential addresses also reveal a persistent concern about the relationship between anthropologists and the wider public. Some demonstrate a concern that the broader conditions of academic labor will negatively affect or curtail anthropological scholarship. For example, Don Brenneis's 2004 address examined the rise of private capital and managerialist ideologies in the academy and their potential consequences for anthropological scholarship, while James Peacock worried in 1995 about the persistent sense that anthropology was a noncore field that might eventually disappear from U.S. universities.

The addresses also reveal an ongoing belief that anthropological theorizing is important not just to anthropologists but to the broader public as well. Presidents such as Walter Goldschmidt, James Peacock, and Leslie White have all considered research and writing strategies to help anthropologists better communicate their ideas to the public and foster public interest in anthropology. These concerns demonstrate the degree to which the AAA sees anthropology as developing ideas that should be shared with the broader public.

Prizes

Scholars have argued that the awarding of prizes by academic and literary societies plays an important role in the disciplining and bounding of a field,

and the AAA is a good example of that. The AAA awards a number of prizes to anthropologists for their scholarship, commitment to the discipline, and public outreach. In so doing, the AAA reveals its commitment to excellence across a number of professional arenas and its openness to work drawing on a range of theoretical paradigms. While the awarding of prizes to colleagues known for advancement of particular theoretical paradigms periodically raises eyebrows in certain parts of the broad membership and profession, it is interesting to note that multiple awards exist and winners can represent significantly different, even competing, theoretical paradigms in anthropology.

The AAA's own awards committee handles nominations for some AAA awards, works with certain AAA units to process and give AAA awards, and selects winners of a number of prizes presented by the sitting AAA president each year at the AAA awards ceremony. These now include the David M. Schneider Award, the AAA Minority Dissertation Fellowship, the Franz Boas Award for Exemplary Service to Anthropology, the Anthropology in Media Award, and the Alfred Vincent Kidder Award for Eminence in the Field of American Archaeology, to name but a few. It is noteworthy that many AAA prizes focus on anthropologists' contributions to the public, whether in awareness, preventive action, or applied research.

Interestingly, these awards cut across subfields, demonstrating that these values are common denominators capable of uniting scholars across subfield orientations. In addition, most of the formal sections of the AAA also award prizes of their own, and these too reflect an emphasis on quality and excellence in more specialized areas but usually likewise stress anthropological research based on participant observation, engagement with past and present scholarly communities, readability, and past or potential influence. Examples include prizes given by the Society for Cultural Anthropology, the Society for the Anthropology of Europe, the Society for Medical Anthropology, the American Ethnological Society, and the Society for Psychological Anthropology, just to name a few.

Policy

A recurrent theme through much of the history of anthropology in the United States (and, therefore, the AAA) is how anthropologists should best communicate their ideas to the broader public, influence public debate and discussion, and even engage with U.S. government policies and practices. Formal AAA resolutions and executive board motions have over the years condemned military activity, which is seen as contrary to the anthropological appreciation for social, cultural, linguistic, and historical diversity; anti-immigration legislation, seen as targeting ethnic and racial minorities; the exploitation of groups seen as geopolitically vulnerable; and systemic discriminatory practices both in the United States and elsewhere. Some resolutions have addressed practices outside the United States, although most have concentrated on U.S. actions and anthropologists' responses to those actions.

Over the years, the AAA has also made a point of advocating for anthropology with all known public and private funding agencies. Most significant here is the AAA's efforts to protect (and increase) funding for anthropology within the U.S. National Science Foundation, the U.S. National Endowment for the Humanities, the U.S. National Institutes of Health, and the large U.S.-based foundations. In its actions, the AAA leadership and staff clearly view some anthropological work as more humanistic than scientific, other work as more scientific than humanistic, and still other work as squarely within the arena of applied medical research. Arguably, the AAA then takes the stance that anthropology as a discipline spans the full range of knowledge-based professions located in higher education and research and that individual practitioners (and segments of the profession) are both grounded in anthropology and able to work collaboratively and substantively with colleagues and professionals outside of anthropology—crossing disciplinary lines with relative ease.

Internal Groupings and Sections

Fragmentation and unity are evident as well in the very structure of the AAA, including in its publications program. In 1984, following a proposal from the Board and a general vote, the AAA was restructured to resemble the organization it is today. The reorganization entailed the creation of sections dedicated to archaeology, linguistic anthropology, biological anthropology, practicing anthropology, and general anthropology, while also allowing for the possibility that new interest groups and sections would emerge in the future. Many have. The AAA is currently divided

into 38 sections and just under 10 interest groups, and altogether, the AAA (and its sections) publishes nearly two dozen academic journals, annuals, and substantive newsletters. Many of the sections are thematically oriented, others are geographically oriented, and some are demographically, socially, or institutionally oriented. Their membership ranges in size from around 2,000 to around 200.

The AAA publishes six quarterly scholarly journals and multiple journals published two to three times each year. The oldest and best known is the *American Anthropologist*, often referred to as the flagship journal of the discipline (at least in the United States) and committed to publishing across all fields and subfields of the profession. That breadth of commitment is interestingly not present in most of the AAA's other journals, even the other prestigious quarterlies—the *American Ethnologist,* the *Medical Anthropological Quarterly, Cultural Anthropology, Ethos: The Journal of the Society for Psychological Anthropology*, and the *Anthropology and Education Quarterly*—all of which welcome manuscripts that advance anthropological research and thinking regardless of an author's training but not an author's type of work. Together, AAA's journals cover a great many topics and concerns but tend to do so as a stable of journals rather than as individual journals. This pattern parallels the "big tent" approach of the AAA as a whole—its commitment to intellectual diversity within the profession just as much as to human diversity overall.

Virginia R. Dominguez and Michele Hanks

Further Readings

Darnell, R., & Gleach, F. (2002). *Celebrating a century of the American Anthropological Association: Presidential portraits*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press and the American Anthropological Association.

Engle, K. (2001). From skepticism to embrace: Human rights and the American Anthropological Association from 1947–1999. *Human Rights Quarterly, 23,* 536–559.

Lewis, H. S. (2009). The radical transformation of anthropology: History seen through the annual meetings of the American Anthropological Association, 1955–2005. *Histories of Anthropology Annual, 5,* 200–228.

Stocking, G. W. (1960). Franz Boas and the founding of the American Anthropological Association. *American Anthropologist, 62,* 1–17.

American Museum of Natural History

The anthropology department at the American Museum of Natural History (AMNH) is one of the oldest, largest, and most important such departments in America. The museum itself achieved prominence at a time when the dominant institutional home of American anthropology was in museums, and during its long history, the anthropology department has made many critical contributions to sociocultural theory or ethnology (an older term still used in museums). Its greatest period of national influence came during the years when the department was chaired by Franz Boas and Clark Wissler, ca. 1895–1920. Its centrality to the discipline has declined since then due to factors internal to the museum as well as to the changing institutional context of American anthropology.

The Early Years (1869–1894)

Founded in 1869, the AMNH is one of the several museums in New York City characterized by joint ownership and control: The city owns the land and its building and supplies operating funds, and a private board of trustees owns the collections and is responsible for curators and scientific staff.

Although the department was not formally established until 1873, the museum held anthropological collections from the beginning. However, unlike Harvard's Peabody Museum and the Smithsonian, the anthropology department at AMNH was not a leader in the early years of the field in America. While the accumulation of collections was largely haphazard, some outstanding artifacts were acquired during these years, most especially from the Tlingit and other Northwest Coast peoples, purchased from the naval officer and amateur ethnologist George T. Emmons.

The Franz Boas Years (1894–1905)

The professional importance of the department effectively dates to 1894, with the appointment of Frederic W. Putnam (1839–1915) to lead the department. Serving simultaneously as director and professor of anthropology at Harvard's Peabody Museum, Putnam resigned from the American Museum in

1903. Following an initiative fostered by the museum's president Morris K. Jesup, Putnam based the department's collections and displays on expeditions carried out by museum scientists. In New York, Putnam focused on archaeology, especially in the American Southwest and Mexico.

Franz Boas (1858–1942) was hired by the museum in 1895, first to curate a diorama based on his previous fieldwork in British Columbia, and then as curator of North American ethnology from 1896 to 1905. Boas, a German immigrant, was famed for his reorientation of American anthropology. His theories of cultural relativism supplanted the then dominant theories of social evolutionism. Many of the theoretical innovations associated with Boas—for example, the geographic distribution of culture traits or the separation of race, language, and culture—were first worked out in Boas's own museum practice.

As always, but especially important during these years, private donors were responsible for the funding of field expeditions, most notably the president, Morris K. Jesup (Northwest Coast and Plains), the brothers B. Talbot Hyde and Frederick E. Hyde Jr. (Southwest), Archer M. Huntington (Southwest), and the Duc de Loubat (Mexico).

Boas was director of the influential Jesup expedition to the Northwest Coast and Siberia (1897–1902). While ostensibly predicated on tracing the peopling of the Americas, the expedition is now valued for its fundamental collecting and ethnographies and for exploring the role of the geographical distribution of culture traits. Boas, however, was never able to write a final, summary volume.

During his tenure, Boas made an attempt to extend the scope of the department beyond the Americas by including Siberia on the Jesup expedition and by beginning an Asian initiative with Berthold Laufer, who collected in Siberia for the Jesup—along with Vladimir Jochelson and Vladimir Bogoras—and then in China (1901–1904); but he found little support for this program.

The exhibit halls were arranged principally by subdiscipline (but combined for the Southwest and Mesoamerica, and South America), and then by region, with a focus on North American ethnology, the main interest of Boas and Wissler. Boas derived this geographical schema—which contrasted with the typological displays of the Smithsonian—from both of his museum mentors, Adolf Bastian and Frederic Putnam. In turn, his regional approaches became the norm in American anthropology museums.

Franz Boas also established the department's close relationship with Columbia University, which, through ups and downs, has remained to the present day. The great shift of the dominant institutional home of American anthropology from museums to universities, which occurred in the early 20th century, was symbolized by Boas's departure for Columbia in 1905.

The Clark Wissler Years (1905–1945)

Although not as renowned as his predecessor, Clark Wissler (1870–1947) was chair of the anthropology department for a much longer period (retiring in 1942), an important period of accomplishment and transition. Wissler certainly had a greater impact within the museum and a significant, although largely unacknowledged, one on the discipline at large.

As an ethnographer, Wissler is best known for his work among the Blackfoot as well as for the more general ethnographic survey of the Plains that he supervised. Wissler's greatest theoretical contribution generated by the survey was the salience of environmental factors in the formation of culture areas, but he also formulated the age-area concept as a basis for historical reconstruction. Although he derived his basic methodologies from the Jesup expedition, Wissler, unlike Boas, was able to effectively systematize them.

Robert H. Lowie (1883–1957), another Boas student, was a curator at the museum from 1909 to 1921. Known for his work with the Crow people of Montana and many other groups of western America, he also curated the museum's first halls for Africa, the Philippines, and Oceania. Lowie made important theoretical contributions to the study of social organization.

The Huntington expedition to the Southwest (1909–1922) innovatively combined archaeology and ethnology. Wissler was able to expand the expedition's scope beyond collecting to a double theoretical focus: (1) kinship and social organization and (2) the formulation of a regional chronology (based on stratigraphic excavations by Nels Nelson, pottery seriation by Alfred Kroeber, and tree-ring dating).

After Boas, Margaret Mead (1901–1978) was the most famous anthropologist ever associated with the museum. Serving as curator of Pacific

ethnology from 1926 until 1969, she did important ethnographic research in the South Pacific (especially Samoa, the Admiralty Islands, New Guinea, and Bali). Mead, however, spent relatively little time with museums and material culture. Instead, she used her position as an independent base for her extensive research, writing, and lecturing. Mead was noted for her work on culture and personality, culture change, visual anthropology, and the general role of anthropology in American society.

During the 1920s, the importance of the department declined, at least in sociocultural anthropology, as curators left and were not replaced. By 1930, Mead and Wissler were the only ethnologists, and Wissler spent much of his time with administration. These personnel shifts coincided with a general stasis of the department's exhibits, which lasted until the early 1960s. Anthropology during the Wissler years was circumscribed by the museum's administration. The museum's president, Henry Fairfield Osborn, had little use for anthropology. A vertebrate paleontologist as well as a member of New York's social elite, Osborn collaborated with the museum's trustee Madison Grant, a leading eugenicist, to minimize the anthropological focus of the museum. Following Wissler as departmental chair, the physical anthropologist Harry L. Shapiro served for nearly 3 decades (1942–1970). During his tenure, he continued to emphasize archaeology as well as his own subdiscipline. Although he developed several innovative plans for comparative exhibits, Shapiro was unable to realize these due to the museum's continuing financial problems.

A Period of Transition (1945–1970)

After the challenge of the Depression and World War II, it took a while for the department to recover. Wissler's curatorial successor, Harry Tschopik, responsible for both North and South American ethnology, died prematurely, serving only from 1947 to 1956. However, paralleling the national trends, the Department of Anthropology underwent a revival in the 1960s. With an expanding economy and the Cold War support for science education, the museum was able to hire several new curators and began to renovate most of its exhibitions in advance of its centennial in 1969.

Stanley A. Freed (b. 1927) served as curator of North American ethnology from 1960 until 1999. While he curated new exhibits for the Eastern Indians, the Plains, and the Eskimos, most of his research has been done in India; Freed is noted for his empiricism and wide-ranging ethnography. As one of the founders of the Council for Museum Anthropology, he was also active in the revival of museum anthropology in America.

Robert L. Carneiro (b. 1927) was the curator for South American ethnology from 1957 to 2010. Having trained with Leslie White at the University of Michigan, Carneiro is known for his contributions to materialist anthropology, especially cultural ecology, cultural neo-evolutionism, and the processes of state formation.

A much more humanistic kind of anthropology was represented by Colin Turnbull (1924–1994), an Oxford-trained African curator who served the museum from 1959 through 1969. Like Mead, Turnbull was a popular writer. His fieldwork with the Mbuti pygmies of the Congo resulted in *The Forest People* (1961), and his experiences with the Ik of Uganda are described in *The Mountain People* (1972).

Recent Years (1970–Present)

The role of sociocultural theory in the department has been revived since the 1970s, accompanied by a gradual diminution of the traditional museum functions of collection and exhibition. In this period, the department revived its program in Old World ethnology by appointing a long-term curator for Africa, Enid Schildkrout (curator, 1973–2005), and its first full-time curator in Asian ethnology, Laurel Kendall (curator, 1983–present). Schildkrout focused on the art of Central Africa, ethnicity and Islam in Ghana, and women and children in Nigeria. Kendall has worked mainly in Korea and more recently in Vietnam, contributing to the study of shamanism and culture change.

Since 2001, Peter M. Whitely has been the curator of North American ethnology, noted for his work on Hopi social structure and history. During the 1990s and the early 20th century, the curatorial positions in Africa and Oceania have changed frequently.

Since the passing of the national repatriation legislation in 1990, the museum has developed better relations with the Native American community. The museum organized a series of innovative exhibits focusing on the historicity of the museum collections: Carolyn Gilman and Mary Jane Schneider

on Gilbert Wilson's Hidatsa collections (1987), Schildkrout on the Congo (1990), and Aldona Jonaitis, an art historian and former museum vice president, on the potlatch of the Kwakw*a*k*a*'wakw of British Columbia (1991).

Following the lengthy tenures of Franz Boas, Clark Wissler, and Harry Shapiro as departmental chairs, the museum has introduced a system of revolving and limited chairmanships. Anthropology has not been as favored as some other departments, such as paleontology and astronomy, with the notable exception of the repeated renewal of the Human Evolution Hall. The department has expanded its ties to local universities, with a joint graduate program in museum anthropology at Columbia University and relations with the departments of anthropology and museum studies at New York University and, more recently, at the Bard Graduate Center.

Legacy

As in many museums, there has been a great deal of curatorial stability at AMNH. The curators, who often serve for several decades, are treated like academic faculty. With the freedom to choose their own topics of research, their research often has no clear relation to museums or material culture. Nevertheless, curators at the AMNH are among the leaders in their field. Coupled with its great historical legacy, the anthropology department of the AMNH remains important to the discipline in America.

Ira Jacknis

See also Boas, Franz; Carneiro, Robert L.; Columbia University; Lowie, Robert; Mead, Margaret; Smithsonian Institution

Further Readings

Freed, S. A. (2012). *Anthropology unmasked: Museums, science, and politics in New York City: Vol. 1. The Putnam-Boas era*. Wilmington, OH: Orange Frazer Press.

———. (2012). *Anthropology unmasked: Museums, science, and politics in New York City: Vol. 2. The Wissler years*. Wilmington, OH: Orange Frazer Press.

Hellman, G. (1969). *Bankers, bones, and beetles: The first century of the American Museum of Natural History*. Garden City, NY: Natural History Press.

Jacknis, I. (1985). Franz Boas and exhibits: On the limitations of the museum method of anthropology. In G. W. Stocking (Ed.), *History of anthropology: Vol. 3. Objects and others: Essays on museums and material culture* (pp. 75–111). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Jonaitis, A. (1988). *From the land of the totem poles: The Northwest Coast Indian art collection at the American Museum of Natural History*. New York, NY: American Museum of Natural History.

Kennedy, J. M. (1968). *Philanthropy and science in New York City: The American Museum of Natural History, 1868–1968* (Unpublished doctoral dissertation). Yale University, New Haven, CT.

Regal, B. (2002). *Henry Fairfield Osborn: Race, and the search for the origins of man*. Aldershot, UK: Ashgate.

Weitzner, B. (1952). *A year by year summary of the Department of Anthropology, 1871–1952* [Manuscript]. Department of Anthropology Archives, American Museum of Natural History.

Anderson, Benedict

Benedict R. O'Gorman Anderson (1936–) is Aaron L. Binenkorb Professor Emeritus of International Studies, Government, and Asian Studies at Cornell University. He is best known for his book *Imagined Communities: Reflections on the Origins of Nationalism* (IC), which was published in 1983, revised, republished twice (1991 and 2006), and translated into 31 languages, most recently Thai. IC explores the relationship between technology, capitalism, and the role of languages in the birth of the nationalist imagination. The book has likewise introduced concepts that are now part of the social science and humanities lexicon: nationalism as imagined instead of invented; the contradictory nature of print capitalism, or the growth and marketing of indigenous newspapers; the modularity of the nationalist imagination and the ease with which it can be pirated; and the intimate and unbreakable links between nationalism and internationalism.

Indeed, IC's longevity has a lot to do with how these themes remain unchallenged. (The initial commentaries came mainly from literary criticism and anthropology, followed by sociology and history. Anderson's discipline, political science, was the last to recognize the book's significance.) The continuing engagements with the book by different scholars coming from disparate disciplines and fields could be said to constitute a narrative in itself and remain

ongoing. This essay, however, focuses more on topics that have received lesser attention and the accompanying methodologies mustered by Anderson.

The first has to do with comparison. Although Anderson's formal training is in comparative politics, his way of looking at societies emphasizes differences rather than similitudes. This *negative comparison* (Anderson's term), as he suggested in an acceptance speech after being awarded the Albert O. Hirschman Prize for innovative cross-disciplinary studies by the American Social Science Research Council in 2011, is "not scalar, [does] not rotate around well-known norms, and [asks] questions that a good deal of political science is not well equipped to answer." It asks the question "what if" and "demands the help of many different sources and outlooks as well as languages." The results are a series of remarkably different ways of looking at the world.

Second, Anderson deftly shifts the centers of analyses away from where the prevailing scholarship expected these would be located, toward the margins, and then turns these into powerful hubs from which fundamental rethinking and reconsideration of the existing theory could be made. IC's bibliography is a good example of this. It confers equal status on Third World and Western sources. The French author Ernest Renan's *Qu'est-ce qu'une nation?* (1882) shares the limelight with Filipino José Rizal's two novels, *Noli Me Tangere* (Touch Me Not, published 5 years after Renan's) and *El Filibusterismo* (*The Subversive*, 1891), both groundbreaking texts on the rise of nationalism in the colonial world.

Official nationalism—a term borrowed from the historian Hugh Seton-Watson to describe reactionary attempts to expropriate nationalism, eliminate its progressive soul, and turn it into a state project—need not only be associated with philosophers like Carl Schmitt, who supported Nazi Germany. It would have found similar explanations among those supporting the monarchs and militaries of Japan and Thailand. And to make things more interesting and controversial, the chapter "Creole Pioneers" challenges the notion, popular especially among political scientists, that the critical ideas of nationalism came from Europe and argues that it was in the colonies—in North and South America as well as Asia—that the nationalist imagination developed.

Third, Anderson's unusual approach is made possible because of his extraordinary flair for languages and his extensive fieldwork. He learned some German and Russian in high school and was formally schooled in Latin, French, and Greek at Cambridge. At Cornell, where he studied under the eminent Southeast Asianist George McTurnan Kahin and where he subsequently taught after completing his dissertation, he added—with variations in fluency—Bahasa Indonesia, Filipino (Tagalog), Javanese, Thai, Dutch, and Spanish. In today's academic world, language learning is often narrowed as much as possible to one's favored region and/or country. Rarely does one learn other languages that may initially be tangential to one's concerns.

Beyond these formal languages Anderson taught himself the argot of the streets. He learned *prokem*, the language of Indonesian thieves, through his conversations with old communists who had shared jail cells with the former. In the Philippines, his encounters with street-smart teenagers enabled him to learn *Tondo Tagalog*, the Filipino spoken in the poor areas, and the lingo of the *bakla* (Filipino gays). Daily conversations in Thailand made him aware of *pasaa wairun* (teenager language), *pasaa tamluat* (police argot), and *pasaa nakleng* (the language of goons and local thugs).

His knowledge of language was made possible by his extensive fieldwork experience dating back to Indonesia under President Sukarno's "guided democracy" of 1957–1966, the democratic interregnum in Thailand in the early 1970s, and the post-Marcos period in the Philippines. Even though he was banned from entering Indonesia by that country's military government for 25 years, Anderson has spent more time in Southeast Asia than most of his colleagues and his cohort group.

Linguistic synchronicity with ordinary people and frequent sojourns in his countries of study (along with his long-term stay in Thailand) explain the ease with which Anderson combines literature, history, and ethnography with his formal training in political science and affinity toward (structural) Marxism. IC and works less well-known outside Southeast Asian studies—notably *Language and Power: Exploring Political Cultures in Indonesia*; *In the Mirror: Literature and Politics in Siam in the American Era*; *Why Counting Counts: A Study of Forms and Consciousness and Problems of Language in the Noli Me Tangere and El Filibusterismo*; and, of late, *The Fate of Rural Hell: Asceticism and Desire in Buddhist Thailand*—are fine examples of a fieldwork-driven, multidisciplinary approach. Like the

sources he cites and the languages he deploys, one finds in Anderson's works literary allusions weaving themselves seamlessly into historical exegeses and the argot of political science, comparative sociology, and economics.

This idiosyncratic methodology—negative comparisons; centering marginal zones like colonies and peripheries while showing how often the purported centers of modernity and progress can become parochial; complementing comparative ethnography with Marxist structuralism; and blending language, literature, history, and sociology—is what makes Anderson's writings extremely attractive as well as challenging to scholars and public intellectuals. It is also what underpins the durability of his ideas and analyses.

Patricio N. Abinales

See also Abu-Lughod, Lila; Appadurai, Arjun; Nationalism, Transnationalism; Postcolonial Theory; Subaltern Studies

Further Readings

Anderson, B. (1965). *Mythology and the tolerance of the Javanese*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Southeast Asia Program.

_____ (with Mendiones, R.). (1985). *Literature and politics in Siam in the American era*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Southeast Asia Program.

_____. (1990). *Language and power: Exploring political cultures in Indonesia*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University.

_____. (1998). *The spectre of comparison: Nationalism, Southeast Asia, and the world*. New York, NY: Verso.

_____. (2006). *Imagined communities: Reflections on the origins of nationalism* (Rev. ed.). New York, NY: Verso.

_____. (2007). *Under three flags: Anarchism and the anti-colonial imagination*. New York, NY: Verso.

_____. (2009). *Why counting counts: A study of forms and consciousness and problems of language in the Noli Me Tangere and El Filibusterismo*. Quezon City, Philippines: Ateneo de Manila University Press.

_____. (2012). *The fate of rural hell: Asceticism and desire in Buddhist Thailand*. Kolkatta, India: Seagull Books.

Cheah, P., & Culler, J. (Eds.). *Grounds of comparison: Around the work of Benedict Anderson*. London, UK: Routledge.

Kahin, A. R., & Siegel, J. T. (Eds.). (2003). *Southeast Asia over three generations: Essays presented to Benedict R. O'G. Anderson*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell Southeast Asia Program.

Animism, Animatism

The words *animism* and *animatism* are derived from the Latin word *anima*, which has a variety of meanings, including "air" or "wind," the "vital principle of life," and "soul" or "spirit." In anthropological, sociological, and religious literature, they are used to refer especially to those ancient (primitive) religious systems in which the belief that natural phenomena, animals, and all living things, including human beings, have a spiritual life force is central to a culture's worldview. In animism, everything is animated by personal "spirits," while in animatism all objects and beings are imbued with an impersonal power, often referred to as "mana."

The word *animism* was adopted by E. B. Tylor in *The Origins of Culture*, while animatism was coined later by R. R. Marett in *The Threshold of Religion*. Both anthropologists used the terms to explain the origin of religion and to describe the first stage in its development. Tylor argued that the first humans, reflecting on their dreams, concluded that souls or spirits pervaded all nature; Marett postulated that there was an earlier stage in the history of religion, a kind of "prereligion," which he labeled *preanimism* or *animatism*. While Tylor's theory assumed that human beings thought that everything in nature, especially living beings, had an individual "soul" or "anima," Marett insisted that this "anima" was neither an individualized power nor a separate entity but was rather some sort of impersonal force that could be controlled. From these early stages, both anthropologists developed elaborate theories of the development of religion in line with the then current theories of evolution.

Critique of Tylor and Marett

The theory of Tylor in particular influenced Western scholarship for three quarters of a century but, together with Marett's, has been largely abandoned. Criticisms of both Tylor's and Marett's views have come from both philosophers and social scientists. One of the most comprehensive critical overviews is that of the late anthropologist E. E. Evans-Pritchard, who in his work *Theories of Primitive Religions* referred to the many theories of the origin of religion as "just-so theories" that cannot be proved or disproved. The historian Kees Bolle remarked that these theories tend to reveal the mental attitudes of the researcher rather

than the mentality of those being studied. Both Tylor's and Marett's theories postulated that the first human beings, whom they called "primitives" or "savages," were intellectually inferior and/or infantile and hence their deductions were either illusionary and/or the result of a not fully developed mind.

But while the theories of the origins of religion are no longer tenable and have been relegated to historical interest both in the social sciences and in the field of religious studies, the concept of animism as formulated by Tylor is still in use in anthropological textbooks, in ethnological studies, and in encyclopedias of religion and has become part of the English vocabulary. *Merriam-Webster's Collegiate Dictionary*, for example, defines *animism* as follows: "1: a doctrine that the vital principle of organic development is immaterial spirit; 2: attribution of conscious life to objects in and phenomena of nature or to inanimate objects; 3: belief in the existence of spirits separable from bodies."

Rethinking Tylor

Recently, several anthropologists have been rethinking Tylor's theory, questioning previous understandings of it, expanding on it, and rebutting the arguments that have been brought against it. Stewart Guthrie, for example, is still interested in the origins of religion, but, unlike Tylor, he stresses cognition, rather than experience, and even suggests that animals themselves can be said to be animists. Martin Stringer, on the other hand, reinterprets Tylor's *Primitive Culture* and concludes that he is not really proposing a theory of origins but rather offering a "plausible explanation" of the data he had amassed with great care. Moreover, he argues that Tylor's emphasis is not on "animism" as the primal religion but rather on the different elements of religious beliefs that are of the same kind in all levels of culture. Springer refocuses the reading of Tylor on myth and maintains that Tylor is interested in myth not because it shows how early humans thought but rather because it reveals the structure of the human mind. Nurit Bird-David takes a cognitive approach and reformulates animism as a "relational epistemology." She argues that the universal tendency to imbue things with a soul or spirit is brought about by cognitive skills, which humans acquire socially. For her, animism is not a religion but rather a way of relating to the nonhuman world.

Most scholars have affirmed that animism as a belief system is present in most societies. Tylor himself saw an affinity between the animism in early societies and the spiritualism of his era. Others have seen it as a natural religious form that is still manifest in current religious trends, like the New Age Movement. Contemporary Paganism has also been linked to animism. Graham Harvey, for instance, has pointed out that many Pagans describe themselves as animists and see animism as the theoretical background for environmental activism.

While Marett's view of religion and his formulation of animatism seem to have been relegated to the annals of history, Tylor's reflections on animism have continued to stimulate scholarly discussions. And some contemporary men and women have incorporated the concept of animism in their religious worldview.

John A. Saliba

See also Comparative Method; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Myth, Theories of; Religion; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Bird-Davis, N. (1999). "Animism" revisited: Personhood, environment, and relational epistemology. In Culture: A second chance? [Special issue]. *Current Anthropology, 40*(S1), S67–S91.

Bolle, K. W. (2005). Animism and animatism. In S. Young (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of religion* (2nd ed., pp. 362–368). Detroit, MI: Gale.

Guthrie, S. (2002). Animal animism: Evolution roots of religious cognition. In I. Pyysiainen & V. Anttonen (Eds.), *Current approaches in the cognitive science of religion*. London, UK: Continuum.

Harvey, G. (2009). Animist paganism. In M. Pizza & J. R. Lewis (Eds.), *Handbook of contemporary paganism* (pp. 393–411). Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.

Stringer, M. G. (1999). Rethinking animism: Thoughts from the infancy of our discipline. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, 5,* 541–555.

Anthropological Society of London

See Royal Anthropological Institute

Appadurai, Arjun

Arjun Appadurai (1949–) is an anthropologist whose writings, editorial work, and collaborative projects have had a major impact on conversations in the social sciences about globalization, nation-states, commodities, identity, and civil society. His work has played an important role in anthropology's growing engagement with talk about large-scale, even global social phenomena. Currently, he is Goddard Professor of Media, Culture, and Communication at New York University.

Born in 1949 in Bombay (now Mumbai), Maharashtra, India, Appadurai was educated at the elite Elphinstone College; he then studied in Brandeis University, where he received his BA in 1970. He went on to study with the Committee on Social Thought at the University of Chicago, where he received his MA (1973) and his PhD (1976), for a dissertation on the Parthasarathi Temple in Madras (now Chennai), Tamil Nadu. In the same year, he took a job teaching anthropology at the University of Pennsylvania. In 1986, he edited and wrote the introduction for *The Social Life of Things*, a collection of articles on material culture. Two years later, he and his late wife Carol Breckenridge founded *Public Culture*, a cross-disciplinary journal of cultural criticism. He left Pennsylvania for the University of Chicago in 1992, where he was the founding director of the Chicago Humanities Institute and director of the Globalization Project. While at Chicago, he published *Modernity at Large*, a collection of his own essays on globalization and nationalism, and later edited a book, *Globalization*, to which he contributed an important article; during this time, he also cofounded the Interdisciplinary Network on Globalization, a scholarly collaborative project. In 2001, he founded PUKAR (Partners for Urban Knowledge, Action, and Research) in Mumbai, a research collective dedicated to doing research in support of disenfranchised groups dealing with issues of urbanization and globalization. He moved to Yale University in 2002, where he was director of the Cities and Globalization Initiative, and in 2004, he became the Provost of The New School, where he also held the John Dewey Distinguished Professorship in the Social Sciences. In 2006, he published *Fear of Small Numbers*, a study of the connection between globalization, nationalism, and ethnic violence. He left The New School in 2008, taking up his current position at New York University. His most recent collection of articles, *The Future as Cultural Fact*, appeared in 2013. Appadurai has received numerous awards and honors, and lectures frequently throughout the world.

Contributions to Anthropology

In his introduction to *The Social Life of Things*, Appadurai adopted some positions that have had long-lasting impacts on how anthropologists think about commodities and that informed his later work on globalization. He drew on Georg Simmel and on Jean Baudrillard to develop a post-Marxist and post-Maussian perspective on commodities, arguing that the value of goods arises from the way they circulate. In addition, he introduced the concept that goods may be transformed as carriers of value as they move among different "regimes of value," or social conjunctures that value objects in different terms (e.g., as a commodity, heirloom, gift, or sacred object).

Appadurai's most far-reaching influence has been on thought about globalization, due primarily to a series of articles he wrote from the late 1980s to the mid-1990s and that were collected in his book *Modernity at Large*, notably "Disjuncture and Difference in the Global Cultural Economy," "Global Ethnoscapes: Notes and Queries for a Transnational Anthropology," and "The Production of Locality." Adapting Benedict Anderson's work on the centrality of collective imagination to nation-states, he argues that imagination underlies not only nations but all sorts of shared worlds of meaning and action. Cultural imaginaries are increasingly unconstrained by the logic imposed by nation-states, and the imaginaries associated with various realms of activity may not be isomorphic but disjunctive. The persistent disjunction among imaginative realms, he argues, is a defining characteristic of globalization.

This decentered, imagination-based model of globalization gives Appadurai a way to discuss what he calls "alternative modernities": the recognition that modernization is not a uniform process identical with progress or Westernization. On the one hand, power and cultural influence are no longer imposed on global peripheries by the traditional modernizing centers. For example, to people in Irian Jaya, it is the ways of Indonesia, more than America, that

represent modernity and threaten to replace local mores. At the same time, the people once seen as recipients of Western cultural and political influence are increasingly able to indigenize outside influences in areas as varied as music, political ideology, technology, and even science. Where modernity was once seen as a threat to all sorts of local traditions, now, Appadurai claims, it increasingly offers freedom from the constraints of nationalism and offers the material for creative improvisation.

As an alternative to a state-based, center-periphery model of global order, Appadurai proposes that we look at the world in terms of the interaction and disjunctures among what he calls the "five dimensions of global flows": *ethnoscapes*, *technoscapes*, *financescapes*, *mediascapes*, and *ideoscapes*. Modeled on "landscape," these terms denote the ways in which *flows* of people, technology, money, media images, and political ideas are increasingly unconstrained by national policies or spaces; they are *deterritorialized*. For instance, today many people, due to massive migration and other forms of population movement, are members of ethnic groups that are no longer contained, or even defined, by an actual or potential national territory. At the same time, the complex ethnic worlds created by mass migration are in part products of the mobility of capital, and their cultural implications would be very different in the absence of the global distribution of media images. Yet the imaginaries projected by the financial world (financescapes) do not align with those articulated by the movement of populations and the politics of identity and belonging (ethnoscapes) or by the mediascapes of Hollywood, let alone Bollywood. The substance of these *scapes* is not only objective materials and relations but also their imagining; like landscapes, they are views of a part of the world and are organized in part through the gaze that beholds them. Appadurai is often credited with a major role in making possible discussion of globalization as a cultural, not just a political and economic, phenomenon. The notion of *public culture*, which he developed along with Breckenridge and fomented through the eponymous journal, was important here, signaling a concept of culture that was not attached to bounded communities, be they villages, tribes, or nations.

One of Appadurai's signature positions is skepticism, even antagonism, to the modern nation-state, and the sort of bounded territoriality that it embodies and propagates. Much of his work on globalization can be understood as the construction of a vocabulary for understanding identity, community, and the production of value that does not rely on the nation-state's spatial imagination. He regards the nation-state's claims to primordiality as a major source of ethnic violence. This critique of the nation-state leads to his skepticism of spatial analysis in general. In the Bergsonian tradition, he strongly distinguishes the spatial and temporal dimensions of social life, privileging the latter over the former. Here, he draws (at times obscurely) on the work of Gilles Deleuze, in particular his use of the terms *deterritorialization* and *flow*. Along with Manuel Castells and Ulf Hannerz, Appadurai played a leading role in the introduction of this last term into discussions of globalization. For Appadurai, ours is a "world of flows," which is to say that lived reality is constituted not by things and places but by the incessant movement of people, goods, information, and technology. The various scapes can be understood as articulations of "flows" of people, money, goods, images, and ideas. This in turn means that the supposedly traditional anthropological conception of culture and identity, as grounded in and defined by places, stands revealed as a colonialist imposition of the spatial logic of the nation-state. In Appadurai's view, community and identity (as well as commodities) are *deterritorialized*, which is to say that they are produced and experienced translocally and cannot be identified with any given place or territory. In a similar vein, Appadurai develops the terms *locality* and *context* into ways to understand the processes whereby people and communities are produced that do not depend on place or other spatializing concepts.

Appadurai is unusual in the extent to which his impact on anthropology and beyond has arisen from his work as an editor and collaborator. Two of his major publications are edited volumes, the journal he cofounded has proven hugely influential, and he has organized multiple cross-disciplinary centers and scholarly collaboratives. This aspect of his work is entirely consistent with the claim he made in the influential essay "Globalization and the Research Imagination" (which appeared in *Globalization*) that what determines whether and how subaltern people will be able to benefit from scholarly research is not primarily the issue of what is studied but of how the production and distribution of knowledge

are organized. This analysis has also led him to an increasing interest in civil society organizations as a means by which the disenfranchised can attain agency in a globalizing world.

Critical Responses

One indication of the impact Appadurai's work has had on how social scientists think about globalization is the way other scholars have developed alternative approaches in part by critiquing his work; his writings and vocabulary have become defining features of the intellectual terrain, in relation to which others can locate themselves. Perhaps the most common caveat is that he neglects the evidence that many of the patterns of mobility and long-distance connection that we now associate with globalization have existed for decades, if not for centuries. A complementary complaint is that he puts too much weight on anthropology's past dependence on restrictive notions of the local and on its ahistoricism, ignoring, for instance, the centrality of diffusion to Boasian theories of culture.

Many social scientists reject Appadurai's turn away from place as a key element of social reality, particularly as this approach is manifested in the Deleuzian terminology of *flow* and *deterritorialization*. Others have been critical of the way he deploys the term *flow*, arguing that the concept tends to mask the agency of individuals and small-scale social formations in favor of the large-scale formations.

The articles in *Modernity at Large* have been criticized as suffering from an idealized vision of globalization: variously as being too blithe about colonized peoples' abilities to resist and reinterpret global economic and cultural forces, as waxing too enthusiastic about the emancipatory potential of capitalist globalization, and as exaggerating the decline of nation-states in the face of globalization. Appadurai claims some of these criticisms as a motivation behind writing *Fear of Small Numbers*, in which he explores interethnic violence as one of the darker aspects of globalization, even while extending his critique of the nation-state.

Other critics contend that Appadurai is vague about the theoretical significance of his arguments and often unclear about what theory he is drawing on. A related concern is that he bases his globalization work on very little ethnographic or other empirical information and that he offers little clarity as to how it might be developed into a research project. Andrew Jones, for instance, argues that putative global flows are likely impossible to measure and claims that neither Appadurai nor any of his readers has tried to develop the terminology of scapes into a real model of how global flows work.

These last caveats reflect Appadurai's chosen discursive genre: Even more than Clifford Geertz, Appadurai is an essayist. After his early ethnographic work, he adopted a style that is not strictly theoretical yet not ethnographic, or even heavily empirical, but characterized by relatively short pieces that articulate a synthetic vision of apparently disparate phenomena. His style has been called prophetic, and much of the influence of his writings is due to his ability to evoke new paradigms of thought in a highly sophisticated yet clear, even inspiring, fashion. These interventions have proven extremely fruitful in advancing and molding various anthropological conversations.

Stuart Rockefeller

See also Anderson, Benedict; Baudrillard, Jean; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Globalization Theory; Scapes; Simmel, Georg

Further Readings

Appadurai, A. (1981). *Worship and conflict under colonial rule: A South Indian case*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1992). Introduction: Commodities and the politics of value. In A. Appadurai (Ed.), *The social life of things: Commodities in cultural perspective* (pp. 3–63). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (Ed.). (1992). *The social life of things: Commodities in cultural perspective*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1996). *Modernity at large: Cultural dimensions of globalization*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

———. (2002). *Globalization*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

———. (2002). Grassroots globalization and the research imagination. In A. Appadurai (Ed.), *Globalization* (pp. 1–21). Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

———. (2006). *Fear of small numbers: An essay on the geography of anger*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

———. (2013). *The future as cultural fact: Essays on the global condition*. New York, NY: Verso.

Jones, A. (2010). *Globalization: Key thinkers*. Cambridge, MA: Polity Press.

Rockefeller, S. (2011). Flow. *Current Anthropology, 54*(4), 557–578.

Sen, A. (2010). Review of *Fear of small numbers: An essay on the geography of anger*. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute (N.S.), 16,* 439–440.

Applied Anthropology

Although applied anthropology has a variety of meanings, generally the term refers to what professionally trained anthropologists do when they are involved in solving practical or policy problems found in society at large. This problem solving can be done either indirectly in support of an agency or sometimes directly. This is accomplished mostly through research and by direct involvement in the policy formation process or direct action, usually as an employee of a client organization on a contract or a direct-hire basis. The client organizations include not-for-profit agencies, governmental organizations, educational institutions, and business firms. In contrast to general anthropologists, their emphasis is not on the production of cultural description or theory for its own sake, although this may be incidental to their work. The primary goal of applied anthropology is to have an impact outside the discipline itself. Applied anthropology occurs in all the four subfields of anthropology (i.e., sociocultural, biological, archaeological, and linguistic anthropology). Marietta Baba, among others, has advocated that application and practice be regarded as a fifth subfield of the discipline.

When viewed in the most general terms, the phrase *applied anthropology* includes a wide variety of activities covered by what anthropologists have called practicing anthropology, public anthropology, advocacy anthropology, collaborative anthropology, cultural brokerage, and action anthropology. That said, it is not uncommon for some to contrast the idea of applied anthropology with the content associated with these other terms. For example, practicing anthropology is presented by some as an artifact of one's employment status apart from being a faculty member of a college or university and applied anthropology as a label that is appropriate for what certain kinds of academically employed anthropologists do. The term *practitioner* is often used to depict someone who is not a higher education institution faculty member but uses anthropological concepts and methods as an important basis for their work. In actual practice, these terminological contrasts do not hold up very well in reality. Also the self-labeling used may relate to cohort effects rather than specific differences in career orientation or strategy. That is, to an extent it depends on where and when you were "imprinted."

Certainly research services are an important component of applied anthropology as it is more common for applied anthropologists to be involved in research rather than direct action or policy making. The research tools of the applied anthropologist are similar to those found in general anthropology but are often supplemented by research practices that include rapid survey or assessment methods or the research methods structured by specific agency policies and requirements. Many applied anthropologists make use of quantitative methods. Associated with applied anthropology's research program is the goal of having an impact through one's research. This need goes far beyond publication in disciplinary journals to include multifaceted interaction with both community and agencies. As Barbara Rylko-Bauer and John van Willigen point out, effectiveness as an applied anthropologist requires the development of a complex of knowledge utilization strategies. In addition to being a researcher, applied anthropologists may engage in many other roles. These include evaluator, impact assessor, needs assessor, planner, advocate, trainer, expert witness, administrator, as well as others. With some exceptions, these roles are not consistently addressed in the existing training opportunities for application and practice.

History

Historically, the relationship between applied and general anthropology reflects the tension between the academic world and the practical world within which the applied anthropologist works. The term *applied anthropology* was first used in print in 1906 by C. H. Read and referred to an elite university program for training colonial administrators at Oxford University in Great Britain. Clearly, the need for trained applied anthropologists to serve the colonial administration helped create a funding base for one of the elite academic departments that continues

to serve as the backbone of British academic anthropology today. In the United States, the Bureau of American Ethnology was created in the early 1880s as a policy research organization primarily dealing with the administrative-cum-military conflicts the United States had with Native Americans. The Bureau referred to this policy research as applied ethnology. The Bureau of American Ethnology quickly devolved into an apolitical, basic ethnographic research organization, eventually merging, in 1965, with the Department of Anthropology of the Smithsonian Institution. The point is that the earliest academic and research organizations in the United States and Great Britain were organized to serve the goal of application.

From these early developments, applied anthropology grew in the United States because of federal government programs associated with Franklin D. Roosevelt's New Deal in the 1930s. Many anthropologists became federal employees in the era of the Great Depression. Employment of applied anthropologists also increased during World War II. During that war, in the United States, almost all professionally trained anthropologists were working as applied anthropologists, some in uniform. These employment opportunities led to a professional awareness of common interests in application that led to the organization of the Society for Applied Anthropology in 1941. Following the war, there was an increase in college enrollments, which resulted in exponential growth in the number of academic positions, and interest in applied anthropology waned. However, concern for applied anthropology began to increase in the late 1960s with the increase in the supply of trained anthropologists and decreases in the academic job market. Starting at this time, a number of departments started graduate programs specifically focused on careers outside academic institutions.

Applied Anthropology in the Discipline

Clearly, applied anthropologists have had considerable impact on the development of the discipline, although, as Rylko-Bauer, Merrill Singer, and van Willigen point out, this impact is muted in the historical record. This muting is probably caused by the relatively low prestige of applied work compared with academic scholarship. Nevertheless, there have been significant impacts. As stated earlier, the potential for concrete application of anthropological research has always provided a rationale for funding academic departments and basic research organizations. Another important impact is that applied anthropologists have pioneered many areas of anthropological research. Early work in medical anthropology, legal and political anthropology, urban anthropology, population anthropology, and nutritional anthropology was stimulated by the need for application. Without the incentive associated with the needs of policymakers and administrators, these important topical areas would not have existed. Interestingly, work in these topical areas was often criticized as nonanthropological at the onset but has become mainstream today. A third area is that application contributed to the development of methods, especially through research practices such as various rapid assessment practices.

Domains of Application

Applied cultural anthropologists work in a wide array of fields, such as health and medicine, business, aging, agriculture, education, evaluation, agricultural development, nutrition, environment, cultural resource management, historic preservation, social work, and community development, among others. Those trained in archaeology work in cultural resource management. Some biological applied anthropologists are forensic scientists or experts in skeletal biology, among other areas. Within these contexts, effective applied anthropologists require the development of in-depth knowledge beyond what is usually associated with basic disciplinary training. Mastery of this field includes knowledge of the legal context of work in the area, the theory and methods of other kinds of practitioners in related areas, the domain-relevant scholarly literature beyond the anthropological work specific to the area, and its organizational structure.

Training Requirements

Effective preparation for a career in applied cultural anthropology includes substantial training in both qualitative and quantitative research methods. This includes survey methods and statistics as well as the ethnographic skills typically associated with research in cultural anthropology. These should be supplemented with preparation in research design and proposal development.

Unfortunately, many graduate departments do not offer an adequate course of study in research methods. Beyond a broad knowledge of research practices, applied anthropologists also make use of collaborative research and action strategies. These include approaches from within the discipline, such as action anthropology, collaborative anthropology, and empowerment evaluation, as well as approaches developed outside the discipline, such as action research, participatory action research, conscientization (Freirean method), community-based social marketing, and the other community-based approaches to action. While these modes of operation are thought of as being from outside the discipline, they are all congruent with the concepts valued by anthropologists and have strong family resemblances to anthropology. Careful consideration of the history of these extradisciplinary approaches usually shows that anthropological ideas and anthropologists have influenced their development. Furthermore, it is essential to experience and have the capacity to work in multidisciplinary teams and in various applied work settings, such as public agencies, nongovernmental organizations, or consulting firms. For this reason, field placements associated with practice or internships are important in the training process.

Role of Theory

The role of theory in applied anthropology is quite different from its role in general anthropology. While theorizing or theory production is not the primary task, it is an essential component of the process of application. Theory is required to function in the realm of application. Theory is a mechanism for the extension of observation and serves as the basis for understanding what is going on that is essential for acting in applied situations. That said, there is a strong tendency toward theoretical eclecticism. Simply put, there is much use of theory and concepts from other disciplines. Furthermore, there is an emphasis on theory and concepts that can be acted on rather than those on the cutting edge of disciplinary theoretical discourses. Theory is a tool rather than a product. There is some irony there because the work of applied anthropologists has great potential for the production of theory. The reason for this potential is that often the work of the applied anthropologist takes the form of natural experiments that allow one to test interpretations or hypotheses about reality. This may include theoretical interpretations that are derived from the direct experience of the work itself, not in the sense of testing theory. At a basic level, the methods of theorizing in basic anthropology and applied anthropology follow similar intellectual methodological processes, in which observations are used to derive concepts and theories about reality. They differ in that basic research is referenced to truthful depictions of that reality, whereas applied work is more referenced to effectiveness rather than truth. What is now a foundation principle in applied anthropology is that practical problem-solving work with a community is more likely to proceed effectively if it is based on extensive collaboration between the practitioner and members of the community. This conception is important because it allows the applied anthropologist to be effective.

Organizations

The professional association most directly associated with applied anthropology is the Society for Applied Anthropology (SfAA). The SfAA serves applied anthropology and its members through an annual meeting and through the journal *Human Organization*, the career-focused publication *Practicing Anthropology*, and its *Newsletter*. Interestingly, the SfAA published what seems to be the first "ethics statement" by an anthropological learned society in 1949 under the leadership of Margaret Mead. Other organizations that serve the associational needs of applied anthropologists include the National Association for the Practice of Anthropology, which is a section of the disciplinary apex organization; the American Anthropological Association; and a number of regional or local practitioner organizations, such as the Washington Association of Professional Anthropologists, the Southern California Applied Anthropology Network, the Chicago Association of Practicing Anthropologists, and the High Plains Society for Applied Anthropology, among others. Organizations of local practitioners serve to provide a support group for maintaining the skills and knowledge of the discipline as well as a context for career development and job hunting. The Washington Association of Professional Anthropologists and the High Plains group are especially robust. The Washington Association of Professional Anthropologists serves the

discipline by sponsoring the biennial Praxis Awards to recognize effective projects of practice and application, besides having a more locally focused program. High Plains supports the discipline through the publication of its journal *The Applied Anthropologist*, as well as by organizing an annual meeting and retreat. All the applied anthropology–oriented organizations have very prostudent programs. SfAA offers reduced dues rates for students as well as subsidies for student participation in annual meetings.

John van Willigen

See also Critical Theory; Dependency Theory; Foster, George M.; Mair, Lucy; Mead, Margaret; Oxford University; Royal Anthropological Institute; Tax, Sol

Further Readings

Baba, M. L. (1994). The fifth subdiscipline: Anthropological practice and the future of anthropology. *Human Organization, 53*(2), 174–186.

———. (1998). Theories of practice in anthropology: A critical appraisal. In C. Hill & M. Baba (Eds.), *The unity of theory and practice in anthropology: Rebuilding a fractured synthesis* (pp. 17–44). Washington, DC: National Association for the Practice of Anthropology.

Kedia, S., & van Willigen, J. (2005). *Applied anthropology: Domains of application*. Westport, CT: Praeger.

Read, C. H. (1906). Anthropology at the universities. *Man, 38, 56–59*.

Russell, B. H. (2011). *Research methods in anthropology* (5th ed.). Walnut Valley, CA: Altamira Press.

Rylko-Bauer, B., Singer, M., & van Willigen, J. (2006). Reclaiming applied anthropology: Its past, present, and future. *American Anthropologist, 108*(1), 178–190.

Rylko-Bauer, B., & van Willigen, J. (1993). A framework for conducting utilization-focused policy research in anthropology. In D. M. Fetterman (Ed.), *Speaking the language of power: Communication, collaboration, and advocacy*. Washington, DC: Falmer Press.

van Willigen, J. (2002). *Applied anthropology: An introduction* (3rd ed.). Westport, CT: Bergin & Garvey.

Area Studies

Area studies is an interdisciplinary effort to develop knowledge of different world regions, typically from a vantage point situated, implicitly or explicitly, outside those regions. There are a variety of area studies configurations specific to distinct national academic traditions. Similarly, the history of specific regional studies within any given national academic context varies. Finally, the significance of area studies for the various core disciplines (anthropology, history, political science, etc.) is different for each discipline. This entry focuses primarily on area studies in the United States, emphasizing the period since the Second World War, when the trajectories of the various area studies projects came into closer institutional coordination. The focus here is on both the role of anthropology within area studies and the implications of changes in area studies for theory in anthropology.

Background

The study of different world areas includes distinct genealogies reflecting distinct historical circumstances. Latin American area studies in the U.S. context, for instance, dates to the turn of the 20th century. Its foundations reflect the emerging hemispheric ambitions of the United States within the long arc of the Monroe Doctrine (1823), the Spanish-American War (1898), and the "Good Neighbor Policy" of the 1930s. However, the various area studies stories in the United States converged during and after the Second World War through a set of efforts by the federal government and private agencies to encourage the systematic study of world areas for purposes framed explicitly as deriving from national strategic interests.

Beginning in the 1940s, through academic conferences, commissioned publications, and funding for new academic programs, foundations such as Ford, Rockefeller, Carnegie, and the Social Science Research Council sought to identify a new task for research in the social sciences and humanities in the United States. The call to develop international knowledge of the world was in part a response to a growing recognition of the United States as a "world power," for which continued and increasing international engagement would be inevitable. The postwar period, of course, was also the dawn of the Cold War, and the impetus to develop international knowledge was at the same time a strategic effort to learn more about the Soviet Union and about the terrain thought to be at stake in the Cold War, the newly conceived "Third World."

These strategic ambitions were also modular and modernist: aligning the study of different world regions as tokens of a single type and endorsing the promise of increasingly perfect knowledge of different areas and the challenges they faced and posed through the interdisciplinary coordination of specialist research. Earlier efforts, such as those of the the American Universities Field Staff, which sought to enlist the experience of country specialists to brief U.S. business faculty and managers, or Ruth Benedict's work on Japan for the War Department, offer a hint of the ethos of the time regarding the strategic use of knowledge of other places and the modernist faith in the possibility of decoding the secrets of the life ways of other cultures. The postwar period took this to another level, culminating in Title VI of the National Defense Education Act of 1958 (later continued as Title VI of the Higher Education Act of 1965). The Title VI, or National Resource Center, program linked the production of specialist knowledge of other world areas with the systematic production of area specialists, funding area centers in a range of research universities across the country through periodic multiyear grant cycles. Alongside the Title VI programs were a set of other federally funded initiatives—such as Fulbright-Hays (1961) and the International Research and Exchanges Board (1968)—promoting international expertise by supporting research and study-abroad opportunities for faculty and students.

Institutionalization

The area centers established by this postwar institutionalization of area studies focused on a standardized suite of salient world regions and comprised an equally standardized suite of disciplinary specialists from anthropology, history, languages and literature, political science, and so on. Area studies training stressed fluency in local languages and fieldwork experience in-country. One component of the National Resource Center (NRC) initiative is the FLAS (Foreign Language and Area Studies) program supporting instruction in "less commonly taught languages" deemed to be in the strategic interests of the United States. This combined focus on language and culture was especially congenial to the methods of anthropology, and anthropologists such as Julian Steward, Charles Wagley, Wendell Bennett, and Clyde Kluckhohn played key roles in a number of the founding studies and conferences that gave shape to the area studies initiative. The prominence of anthropologists in this project also built on a midcentury enthusiasm for the concept of culture, which served both as a framework for marking difference in increasingly spatialized ways and as a promise of the possibility of understanding and assimilation through an extension of the sort of melting pot experience that had only recently come to shape American national self-consciousness.

This moment of "modern" area studies entailed a set of assumptions about the world and about knowledge production. At the core of these was a taxonomic claim that the world could be decomposed into a set of regions and that those regions were at once distinct enough from one another and each internally similar so as to warrant their development as discrete objects of expertise. The rationale for this division of the world—the histories that shaped the conditions that made regional claims plausible—was not absent from area studies scholarship. However, the divisions and not their production were the starting point of the area studies model, and this facilitated some streams of scholarship focused rather insularly on a particular region as an object of study coherent unto itself. Another powerful dimension of the institutionalized area studies project is the largely implicit assumption that the areas of area studies are all "other" to the United States. Despite the recognition in some of the founding documents of the area studies era that the United States is itself a world area, as it was institutionalized, areas studies fostered a vantage on the world looking out from the United States. Funding priorities of the Title VI programs discouraged research focused on migration to the United States as well as other phenomena blurring the distinctions between the West and other parts of the world. In these regards, area studies constituted a worldview, indeed, a worldview with funding, and as such it had a strong impact on the constitution of anthropology departments and other programs making up the core interdisciplinary area studies team. Anthropology departments founded or expanded during the postwar period were often shaped by the accumulation of faculty positions defined by their regional expertise; the map with stickpins marking the regional coverage of a department is a potent icon of this era.

The strategic Cold War context of the institutionalization of area studies in the United States also created political entailments for the project.

This cut both ways. On the one hand, much as the Office of Strategic Studies recruited social scientists during the Second World War, intelligence agencies were connected to the work of some area centers during the Cold War period. At the same time, regionally focused scholarship sometimes became the *object* of investigations by federal agencies concerned about the content and political sympathies of teaching and scholarship on, for instance, the Soviet Union, China, or Latin America. The first comprehensive code of ethics adopted by the American Anthropological Association in 1971 was spurred in part by the complex politics of area studies in the 1960s, as some anthropologists were connected to U.S. counterinsurgency efforts in Vietnam, Latin America, and other parts of the world.

A Critical Turn

The 1970s marked the start of a more critical turn in anthropological theory and practice, with important implications for area studies. As anthropologists came increasingly to critique static models of societies studied in isolation, the bounded, place-based, and essentialist character of area studies was called into question. As anthropologists wrestled with the implications of the colonial history and power dynamics of anthropological research and sought new models of collaborative knowledge production, the Western vantage of area studies and the close connection between the area studies project and the strategic interests of the U.S. government discredited it in the eyes of many scholars. As a growing number of anthropologists turned from community-based research to examine migrant and diasporic populations and ethnic groups in the United States, the limitations of the area studies model became increasingly apparent. And as the globalization of cultural phenomena came, by the 1990s, to be seen as among the most pressing questions for anthropological theory and practice, area studies seemed a pre-Copernican model of scholarship, better suited to a world that, if it ever existed, had now been essentially eclipsed.

Alongside a set of influential critiques of modernist midcentury anthropological theory and practice and a growing set of anthropological scholarship focused on globalization came a sustained critique of area studies over the 1980s and 1990s. In a world increasingly cast as "flat" and without borders, where the significance of national boundaries was being questioned and where the constitution of area studies scholarship was itself an object of study, the project of area studies was cast as a Tylorian survival—having outlived the era in which it once made sense. The apparent end of the Cold War in 1989 further marked an epochal shift, rendering area studies obsolete.

Area Studies for the 21st Century

However, the past decade has been marked by something of a renaissance of regionalism and a complex new dawn of area studies. This was impelled in part by the attacks of September 11, 2001, and a heightened sense of the strategic importance of cultural, linguistic, and contextual knowledge of a range of places around the world. New counterinsurgency models, including the U.S. Military's "Human Terrain System Program," have similarly sought to link regionally specific social science knowledge with military activities, embroiling anthropologists and other scholars once again in sharp debates about the politics and ethics of knowledge production. Somewhat less controversially, the Title VI program has expanded, beginning in 1988, with the addition of Centers for International Business Education and Research to the National Resource Center program. Guidelines from recent Title VI funding rounds make it clear that the transfer of area knowledge to professional fields in universities is a priority of the program, reflecting renewed strategic concerns with the international and global context of business competitiveness.

For anthropology, this long arc of the area studies project makes area studies an important reference point—good to think for contemporary anthropological theory. Area research was always an implicit theory of the nature of global interconnections; that was the foundation of the strategic utility of area studies. That the global ecumene announced in the late 20th century has not come to pass, that regional units continue to matter, offers an important insight into the texture of globalization, where global processes, local specificities, and the continuing production of local and regional differences within global contexts are interlocked topics of investigation for anthropologists today. Similarly, as the discipline of anthropology is increasingly focused on defining a public or engaged anthropology and exploring the

application of anthropological knowledge to "real world" issues, the history of area studies offers cautionary and exemplary lessons. The current return of regional scholarship presents an opportunity to redefine the role of anthropology as part of an interdisciplinary social scientific engagement with policy and practice in the world. Finally, the institutional format of area studies served as a channel for collaborations between the United States and international scholars. At a time of growing awareness of the importance of a "world anthropology" incorporating research questions generated from an inclusive range of global positions, area studies and the regionally focused international professional social networks it gave rise to may be an important setting for future directions in anthropology as a global endeavor.

Andrew Orta

See also American Anthropological Association; Applied Anthropology; Benedict, Ruth F.; Globalization Theory; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Modernism; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Alvarez, S. E., Arias, A., & Hale, C. R. (2011). Re-visioning Latin American studies. *Cultural Anthropology, 26*(2), 225–246.

Bennett, W. C. (1951). *Area studies in American universities*. New York, NY: Social Science Research Council.

Cahnman, W. (1948). Outline of a theory of area studies. *Annals of the Association of American Geographers, 38*(4), 233–243.

Escobar, A. (1995). *Encountering development*. Princeton, NJ: University of Princeton Press.

Hall, R. B. (1949). *Area studies: With special reference to their implications for research in the social sciences*. New York, NY: Social Science Research Council.

Hegeman, S. (1999). *Patterns for America: Modernism and the concept of culture*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Miyoshi, M., & Harootunian, H. D. (Eds.). (2002). *Learning places: The afterlives of area studies*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Pletsch, C. (1981). The three worlds, or the division of social scientific labor, circa 1950–1975. *Comparative Studies in Society and History, 23,* 565–590.

Rafael, V. (1994). The culture of area studies in the United States. *Social Text, 41*, 91–111.

Steward, J. H. (1950). *Area research: Theory and practice*. New York, NY: Social Science Research Council.

Szanton, D. (2004). *The politics of knowledge: Area studies and the disciplines*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Wagley, C. (1948). *Area research and training: A conference report on the study of world areas*. New York, NY: Social Science Research Council.

ARISTOTLE

Aristotle (384–322 BCE) was born in Macedonia. His father was a physician at the Court of Alexander the Great's grandfather, and Aristotle himself became tutor to Alexander. He dedicated himself to the careful study of nature, aided by the specimens Alexander sent back to him during his widespread military conquests. Of him, Charles Darwin said, "Linnaeus and Cuvier were my gods; but they were as schoolboys compared to Aristotle."

For 20 years, he studied at Plato's Academy. He developed the formal logic presupposed by mathematics and turned more toward nature, systematically carving out the spaces for the major fields of intellectual inquiry: physics, psychobiology, astronomy, ethics-politics, and metaphysics. Aristotle is known to have written some 200 treatises, of which, unfortunately, only 41 survive.

Philosophical Anthropology

In his psychobiological treatise *On the Soul*, Aristotle presented the theoretical understanding of the specimens Alexander had gathered. He distinguished three types of life, hierarchically arranged in the structure of the human being and found separately in different species: the *nutritive* level by which the organism grew, sustained itself, and provided organs for the next level, the *sentient*, which, in turn, provided material for the *intellectual* level, which disengages universal types from the sensory instances in the environment and thus grounds ordinary language and the various sciences.

Organisms involve four causal factors: (1) the materials that compose them; (2) the structure that organizes them; (3) the efficient causality that generated, built, and sustains them; (4) and the ends each of the organs served. Full maturity, the overall end of organic functioning, is indicated by the ability

to reproduce. This fourth cause is the *teleological* or goal-oriented cause. The formal principle is the *psyche*. It is the formal, efficient, and final cause of life-forms that works materials into an integrally functioning whole. Aristotle defines it as "the first act of a body furnished with organs." "First act" indicates the type of organism and its basic powers. The second act is the movement of the powers from potency to act in development and adult functioning.

The development of *animal* forms involves organs for sentient awareness. Each sense is differentiated by the features of things manifest to awareness: color, sound, smell, flavor, and tactile features. The common root of these senses is a center, aware of itself through its appetites, that synthesizes the various features in a *phantasm*, or mode of appearance of the differing types to the perceiver. The goal of the synthesis is to present opportunities and threats in the environment for organic flourishing.

Human awareness presupposes both organic and sentient functions but rises above them to apprehend the universal form that Plato called the *eidos*, whose place is in the mind. The senses present the individual and actual; the intellect presents the universal and potential. The intellect has a receptive facet in relation to phantasms and an active facet, the *nous poietikos* through which the sensory is raised to the level of universality. Through both senses and intellect, human awareness is "in a way, all things," oriented toward the cosmic Whole. From this height, Aristotle turns to locomotion and ends with touch, for the point of intellectual activity is to be actively engaged with a world of physical things.

Ethico-Political Theory

Aristotle examined more than 100 examples of constitutions for which he developed a normative ethico-political structure. His ethics was the first part of the *Politics*, his most extensive reflections on human social life. Indeed, all human study is subsumed under the art of politics, which orders individuals and communities toward the good life. He considered several variants of monarchy, aristocracy, democracy, oligarchy, and tyranny and examined what tends to preserve and to destroy them. Description is in the service of the normative: the determination of what is the best constitution absolutely and what is best under various circumstances.

The *Politics* begins with an ideal-typical account of human sociopolitical evolution. According to Aristotle, human beings are both naturally social and naturally political. Human sociality is rooted in the fact that humans are not naturally self-sufficient but are naturally driven to form communities to meet their needs; they are innately gregarious, and they are rational or speech-using animals. Communities are thus based, not merely on instinct or desire, but more importantly on shared understanding—especially of what is good or bad, just or unjust, as embodied in social customs, laws, and constitutional forms.

Human sociopolitical development occurs in three stages: the household, the village, and the *polis* or city. The later stages subsume the prior. Thus, a village is a multitude of households, and a city comprises households and villages. The household (a family and its slaves and dependents) exists to meet the need for material preservation and reproduction. Villages are assemblages of families (often with a common ancestry) that exist to meet unspecified "nondaily needs." The city is an assemblage of households and villages, organized under a ruling body and capable of complete "self-sufficiency." Only in the city are human communities capable (in principle) of meeting all natural human needs. Although the city comes into existence for the sake of living, it stays in existence for the sake of living well.

While every good city must provide military security and material sufficiency, its proper end is the cultivation of virtue. Aristotle usually has in mind prudence, temperance, courage, and justice as the primary virtues. A life of virtue is the highest end for the city because it is the highest end for human beings. The fostering of virtue comes through the influence of unwritten customs and promulgated laws that encourage good habits. Because most human beings can only come to virtue through good, publicly enforced habits, it is the duty of the city to enforce such habits. The best constitution for a city then would be an aristocracy, where the wealthy, the educated, and the virtuous few rule the community through law. In this way, the naturally superior, who are most capable of contributing to the proper end of the city (virtue) are given power, proportional to their abilities, to further the common good. However, although virtue *ought* to be the end of the city, almost no existing city consistently attends to

this goal, and a genuine aristocracy (where virtue counts for more than wealth or family connections) is exceedingly rare.

Besides his analysis of politics proper, there is Aristotle's analysis of the household, comprising the relations of husband and wife, parents and children, and master and slaves. Aristotle gives a normative account of each of these relations, where authority is rooted in the relation of natural superior to natural inferior. Thus, Aristotle stands near the origins of the way of thinking that justifies various social hierarchies because they reflect natural hierarchies. However, social hierarchies are criticized when they do *not* reflect natural ones. Thus, although Aristotle defends patriarchy and slavery, he sets clear limits to the authority of the superior in both relations.

This patriarchal view of the family considers the father as naturally superior to his children and his wife, rightfully exercising authority over them. However, patriarchy is not unqualified. Every natural community, based on natural needs, is good for all members. In the case of the family, patriarchal authority carries with it the responsibility of seeing to the good of the wife and children, their material security, and their education in virtue. Thus, in his rule over his household, a man must always rule with a view to the cultivation of virtue in those he rules. Hence, Aristotle pointedly criticizes non-Greeks for treating their wives as slaves. Though the natural authority of men over women is never explicitly questioned, a true husband would rule over his wife by persuasion and common understanding.

Aristotle notoriously offers a qualified defense of slavery but only insofar as it is "according to nature." This occurs when the enslaved person is capable of following commands and doing chores but is mentally deficient insofar as he is incapable of guiding his own affairs and thus requires a master. Here, slavery is good for both master and slave, and the hierarchy involved corresponds to a natural hierarchy of intellect. But slavery is not according to nature if the enslaved person is capable of responsible freedom. Then slavery rests on violence and law rather than nature, good for the master but not for the slave. Most slaves in Aristotle's time were not "natural" in this sense. However, Aristotle never condemns the slavery around him, and he appears to endorse the enslaving of non-Greeks, since barbarians were considered to be naturally fit for slavery. This may not have been Aristotle's considered opinion, since enslavement of Asian barbarians was due to their lack of courage and not to mental deficiency. Furthermore, Aristotle praises the "barbarian" city of Carthage as one of the three best governed in his time. In sum, Aristotle neither decisively condemns nor decisively endorses the slavery of his time.

Robert E. Wood and Jonathan Culp

See also Habitus; Hegel, Georg W. F.; Hermeneutics; Hobbes, Thomas; Montesquieu, Comte de; Neo-Kantianism; Plato; Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism

Further Readings

Barnes, J. (Ed.). (1984). *The complete works of Aristotle*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

———. (Ed.). (1995). *Cambridge companion to Aristotle*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Shields, C. (2007). *Aristotle*. London, UK: Routledge.

Asad, Talal

Talal Asad (1933–) is a social anthropologist and social theorist at the City University of New York. He has made major theoretical contributions to the study of Christianity and Islam, postcolonialism, secularism, and forms of violence under modernity.

This entry discusses three critical areas of Asad's contribution to anthropology:

1. *The artifacts of anthropology:* How anthropological theories and methods have produced the very objects they set out to discover
2. *Categories of modernity and other forms of reason:* The ways in which we can critique the categories of thought that are taken for granted under modernity by bringing other modes of reasoning into our apparatus of thinking
3. *Tradition and genealogy:* The methods by which the past might be rearranged in relation to the competing concepts of tradition and genealogy

A critical underlying method that joins these three issues is that of finding the right distance and scale at which objects might be apprehended or disclosed.

The Artifacts of Anthropology

A critical contribution of Asad to anthropological rethinking of its own apparatus was to show that the methodological instruments for collecting data in anthropology, such as recording of genealogies and tracking kinship relations, could themselves produce or change the objects of investigation. Thus, he showed that within the pastoral ecology of the Kababish Arabs he studied for his doctoral dissertation, the techniques of investigation made lineages appear to have much greater solidity than they possessed in reality. He then theorized that it was the complex conditions created by colonialism that had allowed certain strategically placed individuals and groups within the colonized societies to claim a new relation to history that had, in turn, been crucial in generating categories for rendering colonized societies knowable.

Following Michel Foucault, Asad's work has helped redefine our understanding of power, shifting the focus from the regulative aspects of power to its constitutive aspects. For example, in his analysis of the disciplines in medieval Christianity, Asad shows that power is not simply the means to impose one's will on another, as Max Weber had conceived it, but rather that it is a potential, the ability to *enact* something. Later, Asad came to think of power as "inner binding"; it emanated not only from outside but also from a willingness by subjects to be reshaped by authoritative discourses of the tradition to which they had voluntarily bound themselves.

Asad is probably most famous for his questioning of the concept of religion as a universal category. In his second book, *Genealogies of Religion*, he offered a sustained critique of Clifford Geertz's famous but somewhat glib formulation of religion as a "model *of* and a model *for* reality." Instead, Asad shows systematically how religion as a category emerged within modern Christianity by the imperative to identify and define practices that were encountered in other places as "religion" and by the gradual shift to "belief" as the defining element of a religion. Marshaling evidence from the particular and the concrete, he demonstrated how the idea of religion as a universal category emerged in early-modern Christianity and the concomitant shift to defining religions in terms of meaning and symbols rather than the cultivation of bodily dispositions.

In contrast to Geertz and many others, Asad does not think of discourse, first, as a system of meanings to which use (or metapragmatics) is then added, but rather, after Ludwig Wittgenstein, he thinks of body and language, and meaning and use, as constitutive of each other. Thus, he is more attuned to thinking of the individual as embedded in traditions, which form dispositions—the inner binding through which authoritative discourses are able to perform transformative work on individuals in reorganizing desires, passions, and memories.

Asad's critique of religion as a universal category is not an attempt to claim that no such thing as religion exists outside the Christian world (that would be patently nonsensical) but to show that apparently innocent-sounding ideas in anthropology, such as the definition of religion as affirming some aspect of reality (a model of reality), coincided neatly with missionary attempts to judge other people's practices as either "religion" or mere "superstition"—the former being attuned to a true Christian reality while the latter was to be condemned for affirming a false reality as evident in idolatry and superstition. Although Asad has mainly demonstrated the process wherein categories of one religion are generalized to create concepts that claim universality within the context of Christianity, he allows for the possibility that one could see different configurations of knowledge and power, say in Islam's rendering of itself as the final revelation that seals off the possibility of future prophecy or Hinduism's notion that the other religions can be assimilated within its theory of time as moving on a downward spiral. The student of any particular religion, he argues, must begin by unpacking the comprehensive concept, which he or she translates as "religion," into the heterogeneous elements that can be placed within a historical trajectory.

Categories of Modernity and Other Forms of Reason

Many scholars have seen Asad as primarily a critic of modernity, with its imperatives of sovereign, freely choosing individuals and the rearrangement of the private and public domains through notions of secularism and application of deliberative reasoning in the public sphere. In fact, Asad is much more interested in exploring the historical conditions that enabled the constellation of ideas and practices that constitute secularism. His most important move is

to think of secularism, in his book *Formations of the Secular*, as emerging differently in different parts of Europe and the United States. What we have under the rubric of secularism, he contends, is not a single structure of signification but developments with historical breaks—a constant sliding of categories of religion and categories of secularism that come to define not only the structure of law but also the sensorial regimes through which a new kind of "common sense" is generated. Thus, for instance, Asad examines questions such as the constitution of the secular body, the picture of the "human" that underlies the discourse on human rights, and why modern sensibilities are horrified by a suicide bombing but not by the horrors inflicted by cluster bombing. In each case, he shows that there are specific modes of reasoning particular to modernity that are taken to be universal but that attention to breaks in history as well as to reasoning on these very questions from within other traditions destabilizes our commonsense conceptions of these issues. For example, it is taken for granted in discourses of modernity (whether philosophical, therapeutic, or popular) that all human beings want to avoid pain and increase pleasure. From this perspective, practices such as those of medieval monks who submitted their bodies to punishment in order to cultivate humility or Islamic warriors who seek martyrdom might appear to be cases of individual or cultural pathology. Yet a different theory of the person or the cultivation of the self might regard the acceptance of such pain as a voluntary binding to a tradition. Asad also draws attention to the contradictory attitudes to pain in secular regimes, which might declare the self-inflicted pain of medieval monks or Shia mourners as pathological but the pain of sadomasochism as an expression of freely chosen sexuality. The fundamental point in all these cases is Asad's ethical sensibility that no single form of life might be said to have a purchase over history.

Tradition and Genealogy

The idea of tradition animates much of Asad's work despite his early fascination with the work of Karl Marx and of Louis Althusser. Asad does not conceive of tradition either as one term in the tradition/modernity dichotomy or as primarily an intellectual lineage to which one owes allegiance. What interests him is the way individuals come to embody traditions through bodily dispositions, on the one hand, and submission to authoritative discourses by allowing themselves to be shaped by the disciplines that are instituted within the tradition, on the other. Tradition then is not so much about arguments or worldviews but about reshaping or reorganizing the desires of individuals. This conception of tradition allows Asad to think of his work as incorporating both the concept of tradition as inheritance and an application of the concept of genealogy through the concentration on discipline. He has applied this double notion to particular religions, namely, Christianity and Islam; to secularism and the constitution of modernity; and to anthropology as a disciplinary formation.

The conjoining of the concepts of tradition and genealogy is important because that is what allows Asad to critique the textualization of practices as well as the simultaneous elevation of meaning as the defining concept through which culture can be comprehended. In other words, Asad contests the notion that culture is like a text and that living entails first deciphering the meaning of the symbols through which culture is constituted and *then* acting in accordance with these meanings. He avers that this is a misleading picture of how human beings inhabit their worlds as beings steeped in history. While foregrounding the historical in his analysis, Asad deepens the idea of history by placing it within the larger problematic of how different societies relate to their past. He renders change through the imagery of glacial shifts, showing how slow shifts in subjectivities, and the accumulated weight of small changes, add up to create change. Asad does not deny the importance of large cataclysmic events but cultivates his own disciplinary practices to track these slow shifts by which the taken-for-granted assumptions about modernity and secularism come to define contemporary times. All through his writing, it is clear that the modern West is the main protagonist of his story, and he tells a compelling story about it by showing us its impact on all others. Like in a Henry James plot, where we learn about the protagonist by learning about the ripples and storms her character creates in all others around her, so might we learn about the West through the ripples created by colonialism and other forms of Western domination in the rest of the world.

A distinctive feature of Asad's methodology is the way in which he finds the right scale and distance for constituting his theoretical objects. Thus, for instance, to show that secularism does not pertain

only to official policies of managing religious difference or the institution of new laws but implies changes in sensory regimes in the constitution of the subject, Asad needs to take the timescale through which slow shifts in subjectivities can be discerned with regard to our commonsense assumptions about pain. Like Foucault, Asad's thinking is constituted both through focalization of experience and its dispersal over time and space—a process that requires not only the right scale on which phenomena can be studied but also the right distance from what is being observed. Largeness or smallness of scale here is not a matter of simply multiplying a smaller scale to yield a larger one but of constituting the object through a language particular to each scale of the phenomenon.

Veena Das

See also Althusser, Louis; Foucault, Michel; Geertz, Clifford; Postcolonial Theory; Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Further Readings

Asad, T. (1970). *The Kababish Arabs: Power, authority, and consent in a nomadic tribe*. London, UK: Hurst.
———. (Ed.). (1973). *Anthropology and the colonial encounter*. London, UK: Ithaca Press.
———. (1993). *Genealogies of religion: Discipline and reasons of power in Christianity and Islam*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.
———. (2003). *Formations of the secular: Christianity, Islam, modernity*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
———. (2007). *On suicide bombing*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.
Foucault, M. (1980). *Power/knowledge: Selected interviews and other writings, 1972–1977*. New York, NY: Random House.
Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures*. New York, NY: Basic Books.
Scott, D., & Hirschkind, C. (Ed.). (2006). *Powers of the secular modern: Talal Asad and his interlocutors*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Autoethnography

Autoethnography is a qualitative research and writing methodology that incorporates the self-conscious voice of the researcher in the course of producing and representing ethnographic fieldwork and writing. The term *autoethnography* signals key aspects of the method, that which is personal to the researcher ("auto") and that which relates to a larger cultural or social group ("ethno"), and the ways in which these aspects are historicized, theorized, interpreted, and depicted ("graphy"). Autoethnography brings to the fore the emotional, intellectual, and social positionality of the ethnographer. In doing so, it directs theoretical attention to historically constituted subjectivities, cultural meanings, and social dynamics. It also raises important ontological, epistemological, and ethical questions about authoritative knowledge and anthropology's historical and contemporaneous role as a colonialist or neocolonialist, exploitative enterprise. The term, and practice of, autoethnography has given legitimacy and helped institutionalize alternative forms of ethnographic research and writing, including life histories and personal narratives.

This essay offers a brief history of autoethnography, its key proponents, and examples of autoethnographic texts. It also outlines major problems with the approach and highlights the method's potential for knowledge production.

Roots of Autoethnography

Autoethnography opens up an epistemological space to question the assumptions that underlie normative social science frames, explanations, understandings, and representations. Directly or indirectly inspired by the reflexive turn in anthropology, postcolonial and feminist studies, and other related disciplines (cultural studies, memory studies, and sociology), autoethnography emerged in the late 1980s and early 1990s. Some of its main proponents are Deborah Reed-Danahay, Carolyn Ellis, and Arthur Bochner. Autoethnography encourages the articulation of the self and personal reflection as an anthropological project, allowing for new ways of reading and writing ethnography and for considering the worlds within which ethnographers and cultural others are situated. Autoethnography emerges from and builds on the critique of empiricism that emerged in the late 1960s from postcolonial and feminist political projects and critiques of hegemonic models such as positivist science, value-free social science, and White, Western, male frames and representations. The postmodern effort to deconstruct established paradigms has led to new recognitions of earlier forms of what we might now call autoethnographic writing and encouraged new forms of ethnographic research,

writing, and representation. In anthropology, the relationships among writers, readers, and subjects were no longer assumed but were problematized. Autoethnography came of age in this context.

Autoethnography privileges process and dynamic interaction as a means toward understanding and insight. It resists accommodating to a prescriptive mode of gathering and presenting ethnographic information and is uninterested in discovering universal truths. As such, there is no formula for "doing" autoethnography other than the presence of the ethnographic self in some way, the acknowledgment of the subjective, even emotional aspects of the enterprise, and the open acceptance of alternative narrative forms or experimental writing. The genre of autoethnography helps facilitate recognition of formerly marginalized scholarship and encourages scholars to break free from the constraints of standardized methods. Thus, there are multiple examples of works that may be classified in the genre, ranging from classics such as Zora Neale Hurston's *Dust Tracks on a Road* and Paul Friedrich's *The Princes of Naranja: An Essay in Anthrohistorical Method* to more recent efforts such as Ruth Behar's *Crossing the Border With Esperanza*, Carolyn Ellis's *The Ethnographic I*, and Christopher Poulos's *Accidental Ethnography: An Inquiry Into Family Secrecy*.

Contributions and Critiques

The past several decades have seen the publication of new, innovative ethnographies that are more reflexive, more engaging, and accessible to wider audiences than was the case with traditional, canonized anthropological writing. Autoethnography is open to a broad range of research objectives and techniques, narrative strategies, and even contributions by scholars from disciplines outside anthropology (e.g., communications, education). However, the very openness that is characteristic of the approach makes it difficult to locate specific works in the genre and threatens to dilute its meaning. As a result, there are new efforts to define subgenres within the category "autoethnography" (e.g., analytic autoethnography, subjectivist experiential autoethnographic writing, and postmodern/poststructuralist autoethnography"), though this endeavor does not necessarily address the core problem. Critics also raise questions about the potential in indigenous or native ethnographies to essentialize one's own culture. For the method as a whole, questions remain as to how to assess the validity, reliability, and generalizability of findings. The greatest critical challenge facing autoethnography is the tendency among its practitioners to be or appear to be excessively self-centered and to write stories that too easily lapse into solipsism. Autoethnography is vulnerable to the charge of failing to adequately draw relevance to larger social, cultural, and political and theoretical issues.

Autoethnography's great contribution is in liberating social scientists from the constraints of traditional scholarly dictates. It has helped usher in the personal, the emotional, and the reflexive "I" in ethnographic encounters, whether in familiar places (at home; among one's own group) or in the traditional settings of anthropological research (away; among an "other" group). As such, autoethnography provides an important corrective to positivist models of research and writing and offers an honest appraisal of how knowledge gets produced. The challenge in autoethnography is to balance that honesty by presenting relevant and adequate information while refraining from irrelevant and excessive self-disclosure. Nevertheless, autoethnography encourages anthropologists to confront the silences and secrets concealed beneath the generalizations associated with traditional ethnographic practice. In doing so, it has the potential to contribute to the production of nuanced and politically informed knowledge that extends beyond scholar-readers to reach broader audiences.

Alisse Waterston

See also Abu-Lughod, Lila; Biography/Life Writing; Fanon, Frantz; Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist; Postmodernism; Subjectivity

Further Readings

Buzard, J. (2003). On ethnographic authority. *Yale Journal of Criticism, 16*(1), 61–91.

Chang, H. (2008). *Autoethnography as method*. Walnut Creek, CA: Left Coast Press.

Ellis, C., Adams, T. E., & Bochner, A. P. (2011). Autoethnography: An overview. *Historical Social Research, 36*(4), 273–290.

McLean, A., & Leibing, A. (Eds.). (2007). *The shadow side of fieldwork: Exploring the blurred borders between ethnography and life*. Malden, MA: Blackwell.

Reed-Danahay, D. (1997). *Auto/ethnography: Rewriting the self and the social*. Oxford, UK: Berg.

B

Bachofen, Johann J.

Johann Jakob Bachofen (1815–1887) was the scion of a very wealthy patrician family of Basel, Switzerland. On his return to Basel in 1841, after brilliant studies in law and archaeology abroad, an equally brilliant career seemed to open up for him. He was within a short time elected to the Great Council and to the chair of Roman Law at the university and was also appointed judge of the Court of Appeal. Yet this was a time of political unrest for Switzerland. After a fierce and sometimes violent struggle between the democratic and conservative factions, Switzerland got a modern constitution in 1847, which turned the ancient federation of almost independent city-states into a federal state according to the pattern of the United States. Bachofen owed his early advancement to the hopes the conservative faction had pinned on him. Yet he turned out to be a diehard, unable to compromise. He despised his fellow patricians for their concessions to the liberal zeitgeist. After short incumbencies, he resigned his political mandate and his chair. He retained the judgeship, then an honorary part-time place in Basel, until 1866, when on his marriage to a lady of equal station, he finally retired to a life of scholarly leisure.

After the defeat of his faction, Bachofen abandoned his legal studies, which had brought him wide acclaim and calls to other universities, which he refused. Instead, he turned to archaeological studies, which were being increasingly seen as eccentric. He rejected the current method of philological source criticism as the worship of the letter in place of the spirit and stubbornly followed the guidance of the Romantic archaeologists Friedrich Creuzer and Joseph Görres, whose methods had focused on the interpretation of symbolism. He spent 20 years traveling all over Europe, visiting archaeological sites and museum objects and reading all extant classical sources. After this, he recommenced his best known work, and the one for which he is famous in anthropology. *Das Mutterrecht* (*Mother Right*) appeared in 1861. In more than 1,000 pages, it explored the earliest stages of religion, culture, and society. It identified the struggle between a female and a male principle as the moving force in life. The female principle predominated in the early stages of history, as it predominates in the early life of every human being. Yet, according to Bachofen, this predominance is not destined to last. It is superseded in the end by the male principle. The bulk of the book deals with myths and social institutions of preclassical antiquity, scrutinizing them for traces of an earlier predominance of women. It is not well organized and sometimes makes for dry reading. Yet this is occasionally relieved by flashes of insight clothed in forceful, compelling language.

This coexistence of two styles is not the least among Bachofen's attractions. It points to struggles within the breast of this staid and pious Calvinist. On the surface, he expounds a doctrine of progress, of the spiritualization of female earthiness by the dynamics of the male principle. Nevertheless, his most glowing and heartfelt passages evoke a lost paradise under the care of the mothers. Bachofen seems to regard the male principle as unstable, tending toward artificial construction, which withers away when

losing contact with the female side. However, he does not spell this out. He had joined the Pythagorean-Neoplatonist-Gnostic tradition, which is reticent about its innermost thought. Thus, his book leaves plenty of scope for interpretation. Its main argument was summarized by Adrien Turel in 1939:

> *1st stage*, mother right I ("hetaerism"): no marriage, sexual love, *ius naturale* ("natural law")—preculture, prehistory—food gathering—anarchy—cult of the earth—primitive fullness—symbolism
>
> *1st transition:* abuse of women—reaction of female piety against male brutality
>
> *2nd stage*, mother right II ("gynaecocracy"): marriage under female ascendancy, maternal love, *ius civile* ("civil law")—culture, prehistory—agriculture and handicrafts—tribal communities and city-states—cult of the moon and the night—preference for the left side—mythology
>
> *2nd transition:* oppression of men ("amazonism")—male reaction by means of all-male, nonkin organizations—orgiastic ("Dionysian") religiosity
>
> *3rd stage*, "father right": marriage under male ascendancy, paternal love, *ius civile* ("civil law")—culture, history—agriculture and industrialism—states and empires—cult of the sun and the day—preference for the right side—rational discourse—restrained ("Apollonian") religiosity.

Thus, Bachofen's plan looks like one of the three-stages schemes common in 19th-century evolutionary thought. Yet in examining his private papers, it is evident that he also contemplated a third transition and a fourth state. This third transition would lead via the contemporary triumph of liberalism and materialism and the concurrent desiccation of religiosity to imperialism, to revolutions, and finally to anarchy. What the fourth state would be Bachofen never spelled out. It could be either the end of mankind or its reinvigoration.

In his later years, Bachofen found a disciple in Alexis Giraud-Teulon, through whom he influenced "matriarchal theories" in anthropology, in particular those of John Ferguson McLennan and Lewis Henry Morgan. He corresponded with Morgan and studied anthropological literature (*Antiquarische Briefe* [Rare Letters], 1880–1886). Today, he is recognized, together with Joseph-François Lafitau, as the discoverer of the cluster of women-centered institutions and myths called the "matrilinear complex." However, this is no longer regarded as a general stage of evolution. The "patriarchal theory" of Sir Henry Maine, which accounts for matrilineality as a special development connected with elementary forms of agriculture, prevails in modern anthropology. The "matriarchal theory" lingers on in feminism.

Giraud-Teulon was also read by Friedrich Engels and Sigmund Freud, and thereby, Bachofen influenced both Marxism and psychoanalysis. In Germany, after the defeat in World War I, a host of intellectuals and artists, neo-Pagans, and anti-Semites turned to Bachofen for spiritual and stylistic guidance. The best known figure in this "Bachofen renaissance" is the philosopher-psychologist Ludwig Klages. The same spiritual and stylistic influence was also visible in the area of feminism. Some feminist authors still believe in a matriarchal epoch in human history. Others make as much as they can of matrilineality. Yet Bachofen's importance for the feminist movement transcends such rather shaky historical constructions. His is the first theory that interpreted all history and society through the opposition of the sexes. He therefore can be seen as the Marx of feminism.

Justin Stagl

See also Freud, Sigmund; McLennan, John; Morgan, Lewis Henry

Further Readings

Bachofens, J. J. (1943–1967). *Gesammelte werke* [Collected works] (Vols. 1–10; Karl Meuli, Ed.). Basel, Switzerland: B. Schwabe.

———. (1967). *Myth, religion, and mother right: Selected writings of J. J. Bachofen* (R. Manheim, Trans.). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Hildebrandt, H.-J. (1988). *Johann Jakob Bachofen: Die primar und sekundar literature—mit einem anhang zum gegenwartigen stand der matriarchatsfrage* [Johann Jakob Bachofen: A bibliography of the primary and secondary literature—with an appendix on the present state of the matriarchal question]. Aachen, Germany: Dietrich Reimer.

Stagl, J. (1989). Notes on Johann Jakob Bachofen's *Mother Right* and its consequences. *Philosophy of the Social Sciences, 19,* 145–156.

Turel, A. (1939). *Bachofen-Freud: Zur emanzipation des mannes vom reich der mütter* [Bachofen-Freud: The emancipation of man from the realm of mothers]. Bern, Switzerland: Huber.

Bailey, Frederick G.

Frederick G. Bailey (1924–) launched his career with the publication of three splendid monographs based on his research in India in the 1950s. Over the decades, he published 15 additional books and 40 scholarly papers and emerged as one of the outstanding political anthropologists of his era.

Born into a lower-middle-class family in Liverpool, Bailey was awarded an Open Scholarship to study Classics at Oxford in 1942, where he became aware that (like the Beatles) he spoke a working-class dialect called "Scouse." The Second World War was then in full swing, and in 1943, he joined the British army, resuming his studies at Oxford in 1946. After graduating with an MA and BLitt in 1950, he enrolled as a doctoral candidate in social anthropology under the supervision of Max Gluckman at Manchester University, at the time probably the leading center of anthropology in Britain. He received his PhD in 1955 and joined the faculty of the School of Oriental and African Studies at the University of London. In 1964, he founded the anthropology program at the University of Sussex. In 1971, he accepted a professorship at the University of California at San Diego, where as emeritus professor he has continued to produce influential books at a remarkable pace.

Bailey's work can be divided into three categories: the early Indian phase, his theoretical volumes, and his eventual turn toward anthropology at home. Probably the best known of the Indian monographs is *Tribe, Caste and Nation* (1960). This was a challenging project because it dealt with caste competition across an entire region. To cope methodologically, Bailey organized the study around 38 pivotal disputes, which he argued were "diagnostic" of the causes and directions of social change. The author's rich data revealed how ambitious individuals advanced their interests by manipulating the rival political structures of tribe, caste, and the modern state.

If the three Indian monographs made Bailey's name as a gifted ethnographer, his next book, *Stratagems and Spoils* (1969), confirmed his stature as an innovative theoretician. Drawing on the work of several prominent predecessors, such as Fredrik Barth, Edmund Leach, Raymond Firth, and Bronisław Malinowski, Bailey sketched out the essence of what became known as the transactional, interactional, or processual model, sometimes also called action or agency theory. This new perspective, set in a broad and imaginative comparative framework, amounted to a massive attack on structural functionalism. Rather than assuming a close correspondence between the normative order and behavioral patterns, as Émile Durkheim had done, it painted a picture of inconsistent and contradictory norms and of choice-making individuals manipulating the norms and deviating from them in the pursuit of self-interest. As Bailey put it, in everyday life, most of us thread our way between the rules of society, seeking the most advantageous route.

In *Stratagems and Spoils*, Bailey distinguishes between normative and pragmatic rules. Normative rules are formal or ideal rules, guides to how we ought to behave. Pragmatic rules consist of the tactics and strategies that reflect actual behavior. Bailey's argument that human interaction is dominated by pragmatic rules is consistent with one of his most significant generalizations: Whether the focus is on politics or some other dimension of social life, an examination of institutionalized roles and formal rules will only afford a partial explanation because the causal core of human interaction is embedded in the informal realm.

Stratagems and Spoils has been criticized for promoting a cynical view of the human condition, but it also has been praised as the contemporary version of Machiavelli's *The Prince*. With its rejection of the rule-bound robot associated with structural functionalism, and its portrayal of social life as messy and constantly in flux, the transactional model has impressed many anthropologists as the field-worker's perspective par excellence.

Morality and Expediency (1977), an expanded version of the Louis Henry Morgan Lectures delivered at the University of Rochester in 1975, is Bailey's first major publication based on research in his own society. It really does represent anthropology at home because its subject matter is the politics of university life, especially in Britain and the United States. This book tracks the behavior of the self-interested, manipulative actor portrayed in *Stratagems and Spoils* into even murkier corners. The focus of *Morality and Expediency* is on the unprincipled side of human interaction, on "institutionalized facades, make-believe and pretence, lies and hypocrisy," on what "every public figure pretends does not exist."

Bailey's analysis of how decisions are made in committees, which as subsections of the bureaucracy should be (but are not) governed entirely by rationality and impersonality, and his imaginative reduction of the political machinations of his colleagues to 10 analytic constructs called *masks*, are worth the price of admission; indeed, the book as a whole provides a remarkable insight into the workings of universities that may well be generalized to other types of formal organizations. Yet *Morality and Expediency* did not have the same impact on the discipline as his previous books, and the reason is not difficult to discern. Anthropology at home still plays second fiddle to the discipline's historical focus on so-called exotic societies.

Over the years, Bailey has modified his position regarding some of the fundamental issues in the discipline, the obvious example being the shift from the focus on social structure in the Indian monographs to the transactional model in *Stratagems and Spoils*. In his early work, the basic methodological unit was the observable event or act; eventually, he began to assign analytic priority to ideas, to what goes on in people's heads and how it influences behavior. In a more recent study, *Treasons, Stratagems and Spoils* (2001), room is made for emotion, spontaneity, and duty alongside rational calculation and self-interest. As Bailey's conception of the actor and the social realm became more complex, his faith in underlying order, and thus in science, might have been eroded. Yet he never rejected the comparative method, nor did he disavow one of his most inspiring claims: Beneath the veneer of cultural variation, political activity everywhere, whether in tribal, peasant, or industrial societies, exhibits a common set of principles.

Stanley R. Barrett

See also Barth, Fredrik; Firth, Raymond; Gluckman, Max; Leach, Edmund; Manchester School

Further Readings

Barth, F. (1959). *Political leadership among Swat Pathans* (London School of Economics Monographs on Social Anthropology, No. 19). London, UK: Athlone Press.

Boissevain, J. (1974). *Friends of friends.* Oxford, UK: Basil Blackwell.

Fortes, M., & Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (Eds.). (1967). *African political systems.* London, UK: Oxford University Press. (Original work published 1940)

Kurtz, D. V. (2001). *Political anthropology: Paradigms and power.* Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Leach, E. R. (1965). *Political systems of highland Burma.* Boston, MA: Beacon Press. (Original work published 1954)

Bakhtin, Mikhail M.

Mikhail Mikhailovitch Bakhtin (1895–1975), the Russian literary critic, semiotician, and philosopher, is widely recognized as one of the central figures in social theory, and his influence has been felt in fields as diverse as anthropology, history, psychology, sociology, communications, rhetoric, comparative literature, and the philosophy of language.

Early Life: The Russian Revolution and the Bakhtin Circle

Born into an aristocratic family in Orel, Russia, at the end of the 19th century, Bakhtin came to champion those who were less fortunate than himself, always maintaining a sense of the broad scope of human life as he undertook his many theoretical projects. Coming of age at the time of the Russian Revolution, he attended the University of Saint Petersburg during the First World War, where he specialized in the study of classical literature and philosophy, while maintaining a lifelong interest in language and politics.

During the 1920s, Bakhtin came into contact with fellow intellectuals Valentin Voloshinov and Pavel Medvedev, now known collectively as the Bakhtin Circle, who were working as instructors for the People's Educational Department in Vitebsk. In time, they came to share a deep commitment to the philosophy of language as a key to social interaction, human psychology, and larger political processes. Though some have credited the works published under Voloshinov's name to Bakhtin as the sole author, it now appears that the influence may have been mutual. In contrast to the structural linguistics of the time, as exemplified by the writings of Ferdinand de Saussure, Bakhtin and his colleagues maintained that language was first and foremost a product of social interaction. This sense of language was often lost when studying formal features such as phonology or syntax in isolation, following the model of examining the records of dead languages (like Latin) with no living speakers. In looking closely at the social foundations of language,

Bakhtin identified a short list of major philosophical principles that are now standard in the social sciences and humanities, including dialogism, voice, heteroglossia, ideology, speech genres, the utterance, polyphony, double-voiced discourse, intertextuality, the chronotope, and the carnival.

The Dialogic Principle (or Dialogism)

A central image that recurs throughout Bakhtin's work is that of the simple act of engaging in face-to-face dialogue. Throughout his vast corpus of theoretical writings, this fundamental human context of communication was never far from view—an image that appears even in one of his first essays, "The Author as Hero in Aesthetic Activity," originally written in the 1920s. By starting with this basic image of the face-to-face encounter, Bakhtin was able to confront the profound asymmetry of communication, given that each person in an exchange inherently sees things from a very different point of view, literally seeing what is behind the other person's head or, more generally, what the other person may not even begin to see because it is beyond his or her direct experience. For Bakhtin, dialogue does not imply a conversation among equals but refers simply to the social nature of speaking, where one "aims" one's word at an audience, even in situations where there are substantial differences in power—where one party refuses to listen. Thus, for Bakhtin, communication is a double-sided act and the audience holds as much power as the author when it comes to shaping the meaning of a text.

In the *Dialogic Imagination* (1981), Bakhtin establishes a general case for a principle of *dialogism*, which captures the sense in which language emerges from the inherently social process of aiming one's words at an audience. This principle applies even to cases of *inner dialogue*, where one responds to oneself while thinking or where the author gauges the potential reactions of some imagined audience, not yet present. As a general process, the dialogical principle can even be extended to more remote cases, such as the extended "dialogue" between authors writing at different times—a concept now known as *intertextuality* among Bakhtinian scholars such as Julia Kristeva.

The Place of Ideologies in Society

Another central idea for Bakhtin was the concept of *ideology*, which was inspired by the works of Karl Marx, particularly Marx's emphasis on the false consciousness of the proletariat, who accepted a religious worldview that kept them from seeing the conditions of their oppression. From these political and religious roots, Bakhtin extended Marx's concept of ideology to encompass any "system of ideas" that served as a basis for arriving at a shared understanding—from scientists and their models to authors and their distinctive visions. In this way, Bakhtin observed, social interaction is necessarily charged with ideology, since a backdrop of common assumptions is a precondition for engaging in communication—even if these views are challenged and refined in the course of an exchange. This image of ideologies entering into conflict sets the stage for one of the maxims of Bakhtinian studies—the idea that dialog is *unfinalizable*, given that communication is fundamentally about the exchange of opposing points of view, which can never be fully resolved.

Utterance, Voice, and Double-Voiced Discourse

Staying close to the interactive source of discourse, the *utterance* occupied a place of central importance in social theory for Bakhtin—as an instantiation of language use, or a given person's *word*, as it is embedded in a particular context, including the submerged ideologies used by the actors to interpret those words. Thus, a simple color word like "black" or "white" can take on racial overtones and even incite a riot when uttered in an ideologically charged moment, such as a rally. A closely related concept is that of *voice*, or variable ability to be heard when communicating, based on the speaker's relationship to the audience, including the actor's power or lack thereof. Both concepts—utterance and voice—flow from the dialogical principle, given that the word is embedded in social interaction and charged with ideologies. In *Problems of Dostoevsky's Poetics* (1983), Bakhtin introduces the concept of *double-voiced discourse*, where a person speaks through someone else's words—as an author imbues the speech of a character with intentions of his or her own.

Speech Genres

Just as recognizable ideologies and voices permeate spoken discourse, utterance is composed of familiar *speech genres*, based on expectations for the structure and style of the utterance. This principle is developed in *Speech Genres and Other Late*

Essays (1986). Though derived from literary studies, which is filled with genres like epic poetry or political satire, Bakhtin saw this general concept as one of the organizing principles of all discourse, where one encounters relatively stable expectations regarding the character of a narrative, from greetings to conversations, oratory, storytelling, or sung performance. The concept has been especially influential among anthropologists and folklorists, such as Richard Bauman, who specialize in oral performances, framed by local standards, where organizing principles may include expectations concerning the pace, length, and tone of delivery, as well as the nature of the participation.

Heteroglossia

Given that speech emerges from social actors, each with their own intentions and distinct points of view, Bakhtin argued that language itself embodies inherent diversity at every level of structure and practice. Among Bakhtinian scholars, this principle is known as *heteroglossia* (a translation from the Russian *raznorečie*), or the internal diversity of all languages, which can be illustrated in terms of their many dialects, registers, and speech genres, each reflecting a segment of society, from class to ethnicity to the professions and age grades. While recognizing that the opposite, *monoglossic* trend is often at work, given the prevalence of efforts to enforce standards in language, Bakhtin is optimistic that diversity will prevail, in accordance with the dialogic principle. Drawing on the language of physics, he compared the monoglossic trend to a *centripetal force*, based on efforts to move toward a common center; similarly, he compared the heteroglossic trend to a *centrifugal force*, with a movement away from the standardization, toward internal diversity. With these two forces present, everyday speech becomes the site where these competing forces collide, with *heteroglossia*, or internal diversity, often winning out—as a by-product of the dialogical nature of language.

For Bakhtin, tensions are present at every level of language and society, starting with the word, which can convey multiple ideologies while simultaneously appearing neutral (such as "black" or "white"). In a similar way, even the individual becomes a site where this social diversity plays out, given that we all "live in a world of others' words." Thus, even when listening to a single person speaking, we hear echoes of other voices, including multiple dialects, speech genres, and ideological constructs. The same is true of texts, where these multiple voices become central to the task of alternating between characters—as Bakhtin observed in *Problems of Dostoevsky's Poetics*, where he praised Dostoevsky for writing *polyphonic* novels, with a range of voices. In this sense, perceptive novelists and ethnographers alike strive to capture a sense of ideological diversity, not assuming, as was the trend in Saussurean structuralism, that language (or culture) is uniform.

The Carnival

Nowhere does the clash of ideologies stand in greater relief than in Bakhtin's extended examination of the *carnival*, which he explores through the lens of medieval literature, in *Rabelais and His World* (1965), rather than confronting 20th-century political struggles head-on. There, beyond the direct control of governing bodies, subversive folk genres flourish and rise up to contest official hegemony, which often includes the appearance of the grotesque, to offset the everyday disciplines imposed by standards of piety or etiquette. Bakhtin's fascination with the carnival—and the *carnivalesque*—has been influential among anthropologists who study counterhegemonic movements as well as the classic rituals of inversion widely described in ethnographic writings.

The Chronotope

As a literary theorist, Bakhtin originated many concepts that dealt with the contours of the social imagination, or the way the audience comes to picture a similar mental image when in the presence of a narrator, such as a novelist, poet, or speaker. Even here, Bakhtin identified dialogical principles, such as the *chronotope*, or the relationship between space and time in imagination, given that these dimensions enter into a kind of dialogue in consciousness. The concept was inspired by a lecture Bakhtin attended on the four-dimensional space-time of Einstein's physics, which Bakthin applied to the philosophy of language, like the centripetal and centrifugal forces of ideology. Bakhtin recognized that authors often vary the ratio of space and time in crafting a story line, making time stand still, perhaps, or using space itself to measure the flow of time as the plot progresses. In early Greek romance novels, such as

An Ethiopian Tale, Bakhtin noted, there is almost an empty quality to the adventure time: Things happen, and time progresses, but without any movement in physical space and without any profound changes to the personalities of the characters. Bakhtin's concept of the chronotope has become a powerful trope for anchoring social events in a sense of socially constructed space and time, as told in narrative.

Broader Impact

Bakhtin's writings on the philosophy of language have had an enormous impact on the social sciences and humanities since his death in 1975—ironically achieving international acclaim after their author's life of relative obscurity. Since the rise of the postmodern critique in the 1980s, ethnographers have been influenced by the principles of *polyphony* and *heteroglossia*, striving to write works that capture a sense of diversity rather than uniformity in society. Performance theorists, in folklore, linguistics, ethnomusicology, and expressive culture, have found a central place for concepts like *speech genres*, *voice*, and *intertextuality* in their work. Linguistic anthropology has also been transformed by the pervasive use of the *dialogical principle* and the close examination of *ideologies* in language use, alongside now common tropes like *double-voiced* discourse and the *chronotope*. Though Bakhtin was almost silenced by Stalin for his religious views and political dissent, his voice continues to resonate with scholars in a wide range of fields, including major figures like Michael Siverstein and Jane Hill, among linguistic anthropologists, and Richard Bauman and James Clifford, among the theorists of cultural anthropology.

Sean O'Neill

See also Marx, Karl; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Sociolinguistics; Structuralism

Further Readings

Bakhtin, M. M. (1981). *The dialogic imagination: Four essays* (M. Holquist, Ed.; C. Emerson & M. Holquist, Trans.). Austin: University of Texas Press.

———. (1984). *Problems of Dostoevsky's poetics* (C. Emerson, Ed. & Trans.). Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press. (Original work published 1929)

———. (1984). *Rabelais and his world* (H. Iswolsky, Trans.). Bloomington: Indiana University Press. (Original work published 1965)

———. (1986). *Speech genres and other late essays* (C. Emerson & M. Holquist, Eds.; V. K. McGee, Trans.). Austin: University of Texas Press.

———. (1990). *Art and answerability: Early philosophical essays by M. M. Bakhtin* (M. Holquist & V. Liapunov, Eds.; V. Liapunov, Trans.). Austin: University of Texas Press.

———. (1993). *Toward a philosophy of the act* (V. Liapunov & M. Holquist, Eds.; V. Liapunov, Trans.). Austin: University of Texas Press.

Morris, P. (Ed.). (1994). *The Bakhtin reader: Selected writings of Bakhtin, Medvedev, and Voloshinov* (with a glossary by G. Roberts). London, UK: Edward Arnold.

Volosinov, V. N. (1986). *Marxism and the philosophy of language* (L. Matejka & I. R. Titunik, Trans.). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. (Original work published 1929)

Barth, Fredrik

Fredrik Barth is a Norwegian social anthropologist, born in 1928 and educated at Chicago and Cambridge Universities. He was originally a student of Raymond Firth and Edmund Leach, and he maintained a long-term friendship with Leach, who is acknowledged as a reader of several of his manuscripts. Barth was successful in founding a modern Norwegian anthropological tradition during the 1960s, which continues today, with emphasis on intensive fieldwork and the study of social organization. Barth's legacy includes research on pastoralists (herders) like the Kurds and Pathans (Pashtuns), who are very much in the news today; but he has also worked in a wide variety of other cultures. Barth is perhaps best known for his path-breaking approach to ethnicity in the introduction to the edited volume *Ethnic Groups and Boundaries*. Later, in a departure from his earlier focus on the political and social organization of groups in the Middle East and Pakistan, Barth turned to the study of knowledge in a nonliterate society. He undertook intensive fieldwork in an isolated New Guinea group to produce *Ritual and Knowledge Among the Baktaman of New Guinea*, a complex analysis of male initiation; this was later followed by comparative research on interior New Guinea groups. Barth and his wife, Unni Wikan, also an anthropologist, produced complementary volumes on the Omani trading town of Sohar. Barth also published a fascinating autobiography of the

ruler of a Pathan kingdom in northwest Pakistan, *The Last Wali of Swat*. Barth's most recent fieldwork in Bali and Bhutan attempted a new approach to the study of complex societies.

Continuities and Changes Over Time in Barth's Theoretical Focus

Barth's early work, in the 1950s and 1960s, is similar in some ways to much of British social anthropology of the time: The author emphasizes social organization rather than culture; analyzes kinship systems, household forms, and political organization; and says little about history or the relation of groups to colonial authorities or newly independent states. Also, contrary to the expectations of research today, description and analysis are almost entirely from the male point of view. This is not surprising, for a variety of reasons, including cultural limits on the interaction of male researchers with women in Islamic societies. Barth is, however, very concerned with processes, particularly actors' decision-making processes, in contrast to other social anthropologists of the 1950s and 1960s, who emphasized group behavior. For Barth, social life consists largely of transactions between individuals seeking to further their interests through strategic choices, an approach known as *transactionalism*. Barth feels that a focus on the individual level can help anthropologists understand change in social systems. Earlier social anthropologists, according to Barth, had placed too much emphasis on how societies were maintained, which seemed to leave little room for the study of change. Barth views individuals as constantly adapting to both physical and social environments, a perspective basic to his approach to ethnicity in *Ethnic Groups and Boundaries*.

In Barth's introduction to *Ethnic Groups and Boundaries*, the outcome of a symposium for Scandinavian social anthropologists at the University of Bergen in 1967, he poses the problem of explaining ethnic group persistence. Until then, most anthropologists had assumed that distinct cultures were simply the product of social and geographic isolation. But Barth argues that boundary maintenance must be *explained* rather than taken for granted. Different ethnic groups may share cultural features, while boundaries do not disappear when people cross them: for example, when a child adopted from a foreign group or a household cannot maintain a certain way of life and "drops out" to join another population. Important relationships may also exist between members of different ethnic groups, such as trade partners. Barth wants to observe the processes that create and maintain boundaries. His main point is that the relation between "ethnic group" and "culture" is not as obvious as we often assume. Ethnic boundaries are maintained using only a few cultural markers, and tracing the history of an ethnic group is not the same as describing the history of its culture. Cultural details change over time, but the particular type of social organization he calls the "ethnic group" persists. To use an American example, the Cheyenne of 1850 and the Cheyenne of the 21st century are culturally very different, but the Cheyenne *identity* has endured over time.

According to Barth, ethnic groups are a form of social organization based on self-identification and identification by others. Identity is indicated by cultural signs like language and dress and by loyalty to particular values, but the only cultural markers that matter are those that are significant to the actors themselves. To consider another person a member of one's own ethnic group involves common understandings about evaluation. Individuals are judged, and are willing to be judged, by agreed-on standards if they want to be considered members of a particular ethnic group.

Barth considers the circumstances under which ethnic distinctions emerge. First, population groups must develop that see themselves, and are seen by others, as distinct. Second, people must accept the idea that these categories should be judged by different standards. The greater the difference in values, the more limited the interaction between ethnic groups. In terms of ecology, the groups may control different niches or territories or be closely interdependent, but usually, the situation is a complex one.

Systems of stratification may or may not involve ethnic groups. If the groups are characterized by differences in the control of assets, then they make up a stratified multiethnic system. Barth considers the Indian caste system a special case, since caste boundaries are defined by ethnic criteria like marriage customs, funeral rituals, and polluting occupations. Ethnic group identity is conditional on performance, which often requires assets; in a stratified system, differences in access to assets (e.g., land) maintain the system.

In explaining why people change their ethnic identities, Barth argues that self-identity is a key

component of ethnic identity, and if people cannot meet the performance expectations of their ethnic group, they may attempt to enter another one rather than face humiliation. Barth feels that a certain amount of variation and ambiguity should be expected in social life. He rejects the "ideal versus real" dichotomy, often used by anthropologists to discuss discrepancies between values and behavior, arguing that values become visible only through action. In spite of this normal variation, people try to keep their conventional stereotypes of ethnicity in everyday interactions, since they are useful in making sense out of experience and in relating to others.

Barth's comments on cultural contact and change are particularly interesting because they foreshadow much anthropological work of the past 4 decades. By the late 1960s, anthropologists could no longer treat non-Western societies as if they were isolated and unchanging. Western goods and institutions were spreading around the world, and colonial powers had been replaced by independent governments. Even though cultural differences have been reduced, Barth warns that ethnicity may still be important and boundary-maintaining processes will continue to operate. Barth examines the strategies of influential elites, members of ethnic groups in multiethnic states: These strategies include "passing" into industrial society, the acceptance of minority status while minimizing or hiding cultural differences, and emphasizing ethnic identity to create new movements. The political use of ethnicity is very common in today's world, and Barth sees it as just another way of making cultural differences relevant. Barth warns against the tendency of some anthropologists to take for granted the peaceful conditions that often obtained in societies under colonial rule. Life in many settings was previously less secure, and insecurity itself would have limited relations between groups due to fear and lack of opportunity for interaction. Following Barth, anthropologists have increasingly turned to the study of ethnic groups in multiethnic societies, and often to research on the politics of ethnicity, as states have universally imposed their rule on local populations. Barth feels that a focus on individual decision making can help one understand the processes of change in a way that more traditional social anthropology, with its emphasis on the stability of groups, cannot.

Because of the importance of the Pathan material in Barth's writings, this group is worth discussing in some detail. The Pathans, or Pashtuns, are a large ethnic group found in Afghanistan and western Pakistan, organized patrilineally (with group membership traced through males from a male ancestor) and spread over an ecologically diverse region. Barth examines the processes of boundary maintenance and political organization among Pathans in several early writings. His account deals specifically with so-called traditional organization rather than a change taking place at the time of his fieldwork (1954). In his chapter in *Ethnic Groups and Boundaries*, Barth describes three major institutions central to Pathan identity: (1) *melmastia* (hospitality), (2) *jirga* (councils and involvement in public affairs), and (3) *purdah* (female seclusion). In the ideal setting, special men's houses exist where leaders can demonstrate hospitality and create followings; councils allow men who are supposed to be independent equals to make group decisions; and the separation of men and women allows men to *appear* to act independently of women. (In reality, of course, men and women depend on each other, as they do elsewhere.)

Unlike Pathans, the Baluch, on the southern border of Pathan territory, try to absorb people from other groups as commoners under subchiefs and chiefs. If Pathans have to leave their own society due to war, crime, or loss of herds, they can join the Baluch, but they must do so as clients and are not allowed to speak in council. Loss of independence is considered a failure among Pathans but not among Baluch; therefore, people lose their Pathan identity and become Baluch. In western Pathan country, by way of contrast, where Pathans settle among the Persian-speaking Hazara in Afghanistan, the newcomers can become rich landowners and patrons. However, if they lose their land, they can be denied rights as Pathans; this is also true of the Swat in northwest Pakistan. On the Indus plain in Pakistan, where the centralized government discourages independence and aggression, they become Panjabis. In the far northwest, where poorer agricultural yields make it impossible to maintain men's houses, with their associated hospitality, Pathans become Kohistani. In all these cases, Barth stresses individual *choice* of identity, a recurring theme throughout his work.

In an earlier article on Pathans, "Segmentary Opposition and the Theory of Games: A Study of Pathan Organization," and in his influential *Political Leadership Among Swat Pathans*, Barth analyzes

the Pathan political organization from the viewpoint of individual strategic choices. As mentioned above, Pathans reckon kinship through patrilineal descent. However, closely related people (fathers and sons, and brothers) are rivals for land and power; Pathan leaders therefore try to build up a following of distant or nonrelated men to support them in disputes over land and other matters. Pathan politics is summed up in the saying (actually used by Pathans), "The enemy of my enemy is my friend." As a result of these struggles, the whole Swat Valley of Pakistan was divided into two different political blocs at the time of Barth's fieldwork. His argument, then, is that individual strategies based on self-interest actually *create* what earlier social anthropologists called the social structure.

Following the production of *Ethnic Groups and Boundaries*, Barth's research changed as he explored different topics and new areas of the world. His post-1960s work can be characterized as a striving to keep up with current trends in theory and to analyze more and more complex situations. In his next major research, Barth turned to the study of meaning, or rather, as he prefers it, "knowledge," since it is easier to show how information is transmitted and exchanged than it is to show the same for "meaning." Wanting to experience a society completely different from anything he had previously known, he moved his field research to Papua New Guinea. His book based on this research, *Ritual and Knowledge Among the Baktaman of New Guinea*, has the theoretical goal of analyzing ritual as a type of communication and as a way of thought. He sees ritual as embodying a tradition of knowledge and a particular worldview and wants to know what information is needed to participate in it. Barth's methodology, which is by no means easy to achieve, is to focus on what an initiate learns step by step, in this case by participating himself as much as possible in seven stages of male initiation. Because each stage reveals new information kept secret from all but the appropriate initiates (and all women), the meaning of rituals, artifacts, certain colors, sacred animals, and so on, varies greatly from person to person and is sometimes at risk of being lost altogether. A particular ritual like the rite of sacrifice can be viewed as a transaction between the one conducting the sacrifice and the god, but it signifies other things at the same time; to understand its "meaning," we must view it holistically, in all its aspects. Barth categorically rejects the structuralist methodology of the 1970s, particularly that of Claude Lévi-Strauss, in which folk categories of the natural world are taken to reflect "native" thought about social categories. He criticizes this approach for its lack of fit with the real world, its inability to prove or disprove claims of fact, and its failure to ask whether the people involved have ever actually thought this way. Barth argues that it is simplistic to assume that religion consists of a neat, logical package of folk categories, ritual, and indigenous thought. He prefers to see cultural creativity at work, as people use familiar animals or objects as metaphors in ritual; that is, meaning is derived from the analogy between a symbol and what it symbolizes. Ritual events must be seen in context, and what people say about their purpose is important. Rather than impose his own logical structure on events, Barth takes pains to present the understandings of informants as carefully as possible, even to the point of avoiding questions that would introduce an outsider's perspective. Barth suggests that "native explanations" in anthropology are often just a product of the anthropologist's own curious mind.

During the 1980s and 1990s, Barth's research ranged from the Middle East and Pakistan back to New Guinea and then to Bali and Bhutan. His book on Sohar, an old trading community in Oman on the east coast of the Arabian Peninsula, both describes life in the town and attempts to explain how cultural pluralism—that is, a situation where a society contains multiple ethnic groups—is maintained. Together with his later fieldwork in Bali, it marks a turn in his research toward the challenge of describing and analyzing the culture of complex societies with a variety of religious traditions and ethnic groups. A major problem in the case of Sohar is determining the "parts" or groups that, for social anthropologists, are supposed to make up the social structure. Barth feels that the town cannot easily be described in terms of kinship groups, class, or even ethnic groups, which come and go. Returning to the level of the individual, he sees "structure" in values and ideas about interpersonal relationships. Ultimately, Sohar's cultural pluralism is based on tolerance, embodied in rules and institutions that allow diversity to flourish. *Balinese Worlds* (1993) attempts to describe and analyze a complex society and culture with ancient traditions of knowledge (Islam and Balinese Hinduism) and daunting local

variation. Again, Barth argues that order is based on processes, that multiple realities exist (variation in occupation, traditions, historical context, statuses, etc.), and that anthropologists should not expect to find a neat, coherent whole.

Barth's transactional approach has been criticized by a variety of researchers. At one time it was considered an exciting new perspective because it promised a way of understanding how societies change, which early social anthropology did not. However, objections quickly arose. For one thing, it is not always clear that people have a choice. Also, their behavior may not always be rational, and they may not realize its implications. Barth views social structure as emergent, the result of many individual decisions; but most anthropologists today would argue that social systems have their own powerful limiting and even determining effects on individuals. Still, though later anthropologists gave relatively more importance to the very real constraints of society, by the 1980s, "practice theory" was reworking some of Barth's central points: the individual as strategic decision maker and his or her role in change. Because of Barth's work, in the work of others, anthropology is better equipped today to analyze a rapidly transforming and highly diverse world.

Janet E. Benson

See also Firth, Raymond; Leach, Edmund; Practice Theory; Structural Functionalism; Structuralism

Further Readings

Anderson, R. (2005). *Interview with Fredrik Barth*. Cambridge, UK: University of Cambridge. Retrieved from sms.cam.ac.uk/media/1112380

Barth, F. (1959). *Political leadership among Swat Pathans* (London School of Economics Monographs on Social Anthropology, No. 19). London, UK: Athlone Press.

———. (1959). Segmentary opposition and the theory of games: A study of Pathan organization. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, 89*(1), 5–21.

———. (1961). *Nomads of south Persia: The Basseri Tribe of the Khamseh Confederacy.* Oslo, Norway: Oslo University Press.

———. (1964). *Models of social organization* (Occasional Papers, No. 23). London, UK: Royal Anthropological Institute.

———. (1969). *Ethnic groups and boundaries.* Oslo, Norway: Oslo University Press.

———. (1975). *Ritual and knowledge among the Baktaman of New Guinea.* Oslo, Norway: Oslo University Press.

———. (1983). *Sohar: Culture and society in an Omani town.* Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

———. (1985). *The last Wali of Swat.* Oslo, Norway: Oslo University Press.

———. (1993). *Balinese worlds.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (2007). Overview: Sixty years in anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 36,* 1–16.

Sperschneider, W. (1999). *Fredrik Barth: From fieldwork to theory* [DVD]. Gottingen, Germany: IWF Knowledge and Media and the Danish Film Institute Workshop.

Barthes, Roland

Roland Barthes (1915–1980) was a unique, idiosyncratic, and, at times, contradictory thinker, who was nonetheless deeply influential in the formation of trends central to postwar social sciences and humanities. Especially for the trajectory of anthropology and social theory, his most lasting and important legacy may derive from the ways in which he put the field of semiology into practice. The themes and tensions seen in his writings on semiology, however, carry through much of his quite diverse career.

Biography and Major Works

Barthes was born in 1915 in the provincial town of Cherbourg, France. His father, a naval officer, was killed in battle when Barthes was only 1 year old, and he and his mother moved first to Bayonne and then to Paris, where Barthes attended secondary school. Viewed as a student with promise, Barthes spent his twenties studying for a license in classical letters at the Sorbonne; he then went on to earn degrees in philology and Greek tragedy. He also suffered from serious bouts of tuberculosis, which twice necessitated stays in a sanatorium and hindered his procurement of a stable academic teaching position. Barthes continued to write in the 1930s and 1940s, while taking occasional teaching roles in Biarritz, Bayonne, Paris, Romania, and Egypt. By 1952, Barthes found a permanent position at the Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique, and in 1960, he took on a directorship of studies at the École Practique des Hautes Études; finally, from

1976 to 1980, he was chair of Literary Semiology at the Collège de France; he also held an invited position at Johns Hopkins University. Barthes died in 1980 after being struck by a car.

Barthes kept an early distance from more orthodox institutional placements for intellectual reasons as well as practical ones. He was nondisciplinary as much as he was interdisciplinary in his thought. His preference for short essays, too, was part of his refusal of any "doctrinal" approach, and he denied having any audience in mind at all for any of his writing. Over the course of his career, Barthes wrote on literature for a variety of academic, popular, and political contexts (he was an influential contributor to the journal *Tel Quel*), but he also studied and wrote works of sociology; he held teaching positions at some of the world's best universities; but he also wrote for the underground wartime resistance newspaper *Combat* and founded his own theatrical group.

If Barthes is thus difficult to classify in terms of discipline, he is often more simply framed as a formative figure in the development of both structuralism and poststructuralism: He has been labeled as one of the seminal "gang of four" of structuralism, which also included Claude Lévi-Strauss, Jacques Lacan, and Michel Foucault, and along with Lacan and Foucault is also then typically associated with the emergence of poststructuralism. This biographical narrative of a general shift from structuralism to poststructuralism is ultimately a simplification. If anything, Barthes might more productively be read as working through an ongoing tension between structuralist understandings of social life as a set of underlying systems of relation and a materialist emphasis on social forces that can ultimately be explained as outcomes of political-economic conditions.

Barthes is perhaps most clearly and rigorously structuralist in the *Elements of Semiology* (1964); much of it reads like classic linguistic structuralism. Barthes draws heavily on Ferdinand Saussure's formulation of the sign as made up of signifiers and signifieds, systematically related into a larger order. And while Barthes placed real emphasis on the notion that structuralism implied a diachronic level of connection between elements of meaning, he argued in *Elements of Semiology* that the corpus of signs one analyzes should as much as possible be a synchronic set—a purely synchronic cross section of history. This looks a lot like the static, subject-less structuralism for which even Lévi-Strauss was criticized. But there are hints of critique within *Elements of Sociology*, too. Barthes, for example, raises the possibility that systems of meaning can have their own "controlling groups," or social spheres of influence, that have greater sway in forming a discursive system—with the implication that while all structures of meaning are collective, there might be hierarchies of production and control. One can begin to see, in other words, a notion of agency and social critique.

The most important shift away from neutral structuralism, however, lies in Barthes's turn to an emphasis on connotation within signifying systems. In Barthes's scheme (drawing loosely on the work of the Danish linguist Louis Hjelmslev), connotation is like a second-tier system of signs, built on top of our everyday meanings. This is important because, it seems, the first order of signs is where history, knowledge, and culture enter; connotation, on the other hand, helps naturalize those signs as beyond culture or history. Thus, connotation is where Barthes locates ideology.

With this, Barthes returns the study of signs, and structuralism, to social, historical, and political relevance. In effect, cultures are understood *as* ideologies, which are historically specific formations that nonetheless work to naturalize the systems of meaning on which they are built. This is quite far from the universal, ahistorical structures of human mentality that Lévi-Strauss eventually described, and from structural anthropologists' general aversion to looking closely at societies undergoing radical change. Barthes may have thought it appropriate to focus on synchronic slices of historical moments, but these *were* nonetheless historical moments that he was getting at.

In *Elements of Semiology*, it is never quite clear how the analyst is able to critique or objectively stand apart from these ideologies—whether structuralist analysis in itself, for instance, can objectively penetrate the naturalizing effects of connotation. In an essay written just a year earlier ("The Structuralist Activity," 1963), Barthes somewhat strikingly argued that structural man *is* a real thing, but only for a specific historical moment (so structuralism is appropriate only as a particular stage in the history of method). As he put it, structural man at once helps create the idea of an abstracted system

of signs, even while also revealing the functioning of that system—showing how signs do get naturalized and abstracted from history. Structural man has his place, therefore, and helps build a new language of criticism, but this is only one possible (and necessary) language of criticism, so once it has served its role, another will emerge. This too shifts the very idea of structuralism away from the universal role of the analyst indicated by Lévi-Strauss's approach. It also begins to show the ways in which Barthes looked for real material grounds for social analysis and historical critique while yet embracing what might be thought of as a more poststructuralist view that life (and therefore criticism) is made up of an open and changing plurality of views.

Empire of Signs (1968) can be read as the most poststructuralist of Barthes's books. It is of course about a real place, written during and after his trip to Japan. Numbers of anthropologists have taken it to be an accurately descriptive work on Japan. But Barthes also defined it as a fantasy about a system of signs *he* called Japan. In many ways, this system of signs is a vision of poststructuralism. Where elsewhere Barthes had said that difference arises out of distance from a center (or a general equivalent that gives central order to things), in this case he says that there is no center at all; Japan is therefore made up of empty signs. The analysis or interpretation of these signs is thus necessarily more uncertain.

This is a radicalization of Barthes's turn away from the idea of an author. Where at other points Barthes was more interested in the ways in which cultural systems ideologically imprisoned specific meanings, here his emphasis turned to the ways in which one might imagine a creative and productive relation to all signs, without being tied to prior certainties.

This might be called poststructuralism, but it is the type that sees signs as almost infinitely polysemic and open to new possibilities (signs as positively "disseminating" meaning rather than relationally pulling themselves apart). This, of course, would return agency to the idea of structural meaning in a strong way (presumably, everybody could find their own "Japan"). It is also a poststructuralism that anthropology never fully embraced.

Barthes's "empty signs" are not, however, postmodernist. For him, Japan may be composed of empty signs, but these signs nonetheless are real and there is still a real place that Barthes was reacting to. Rather than arguing for a sign that had lost its referent, or lost its real (he has been read this way, too), Barthes instead was attempting to return to a kind of materiality of the sign. No longer interested in the meaning behind signs or objects, he was by this time more focused on objectness. In Japan, he found not just different meanings for objects but a different kind of object—what he called the "Japanese thing." The Japanese "object" was different because of context (e.g., the flexible space of a Japanese house), but this also meant that the very materiality of a "Japanese thing" was more open-ended and flexible. In these latter considerations, Barthes might be located with more recent trends toward radical empiricism, and the interest in emergent singularities that have been invoked by theorists as diverse as Gilles Deleuze and Alain Badiou.

On the one hand, then, Japan is a real site of difference for Barthes in more typically anthropological ways. It is also utopic. Barthes truly found a different kind of cultural language there, but he was also creating a polemic; Japan embodied the ideal opposition to the fixed meanings of Western bourgeois culture (it is almost as if Barthes was setting up two fundamentally different poles of culture and sign in general). Difference, for Barthes, thus emerges in part out of real, material, ethnographic contact with different languages, and different worlds, but also in part out of an oppositional relation.

Arguably, Barthes's most clearly articulated analyses, with greatest ongoing importance for anthropology, are already articulated in the brief essays on mythology written during the 1950s (compiled as *Mythologies*, 1957). A case for the openness of the sign is already made here, and for an interest in signs and meanings more generally, but Barthes clearly and consistently also desires to get back to the surface of social materiality. The images Barthes gives us in *Mythologies* are fragments, both in the sense of material positivities, material embodiments of mass cultural life—a plastic toy, for example, or a popular wrestler—and as fragments that (as with Benjamin) hold and reveal a whole world of relations. As he uncovers the historical specificity of these, he shows mythology to be in this case a fully modern construct (it is a mythology of mid-20th-century modernity). And myths are ideologies in the fundamental sense of laying out the structures by which we pursue our lives—somewhat like Geertz's idea of culture as a story we tell ourselves about ourselves, but closer to

Althusser's vision of ideology as the real, practical "imaginary" relation we have to the world. Modern myths are thus both the means by which our culture "captures" us into a determined, closed set of meanings and the material site of critique and change.

Contribution to Anthropology

As much as any writer of his time, Barthes in many ways laid out the groundwork for an anthropology of modern life. At a time when mass culture was concretizing itself as a new order of culture more generally, Barthes provided the means by which to analyze the objects—neither just visual nor just linguistic—that animate mass culture and the large-scale societies of which mass culture is a part. Even in his more text-based studies, Barthes remained a sociological thinker, and yet he never formalized his views into the kind of dogmatic approach that often came to define the field of cultural studies. These traits may allow for the ongoing influence of Barthes within the social sciences, as mass culture continues to evolve into new forms.

Thomas Looser

See also Althusser, Louis; Benjamin, Walter; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Foucault, Michel; Lacan, Jacques; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Semiotics; Structuralism

Further Readings

Barthes, R. (1967). *Elements of semiology* (A. Lavers & C. Smith, Trans.). London, UK: Jonathan Cape. (Original work published 1964)

———. (1967). *Writing degree zero* (A. Lavers & C. Smith, Trans.). London, UK: Jonathan Cape.

———. (1972). *Mythologies* (A. Lavers, Trans.). New York, NY: Hill & Wang. (Original work published 1957)

———. (1975). *S/Z* (R. Miller, Trans.). New York, NY: Hill & Wang.

———. (1977). *Image music text* (S. Heath, Trans.). New York, NY: Hill & Wang.

———. (1982). *Empire of signs* (R. Howard, Trans.). New York, NY: Hill & Wang. (Original work published 1968)

———. (1986). *Grain of the voice* (L. Coverdale, Trans.). New York, NY: Hill & Wang.

Knight, D. (Ed.). (2000). *Critical essays on Roland Barthes.* New York, NY: G. K. Hall.

Bastian, Adolf

Philipp Wilhelm Adolf Bastian (1826–1905) was a lifelong world traveler, undertaking a total of nine voyages throughout the world. In the 1860s, Bastian single-handedly founded German anthropology as an academic discipline. He held the first professorship in ethnology and founded a professional organization and a publication venue, both of which still exist today. Additionally, he established the Royal Ethnological Museum in Berlin, gathering on his own most of its collection during his voyages. In light of this, Bastian founded ethnology on the basis of the analysis of empirical material as a key to understanding social thoughts and human cultures. His analyses of these were built around his ideas about the psychic unity of humankind.

Life

Bastian was born in Bremen, Germany, on June 26, 1826. He was the second oldest of nine children of Friedericke Augusta Christine Krafft and Hermann Theodor Bastian, who had inherited the trading ship company J. W. Bastian & Sons from his father. Adolf Bastian was the only one of his siblings who received higher education, preparing him for his academic career. First Bastian graduated in 1845 from the School of Scholars (Gelehrten Schule), where he studied Latin, Greek, Hebrew, French, and English. Then, he received his first academic training in law at the University of Heidelberg. From 1847 on, he studied natural sciences and medicine at the universities of Berlin, Jena, Würzburg, and Prague, completing in 1850 his studies in Würzburg with a state examination and a doctorate in medicine.

In the same year, Bastian made his first world voyage, serving as a ship's physician. Using the contacts of his father's trading company, he first went to the Americas and South Asia. From there he continued his voyage to the South Seas, Australia, and around Africa. The 8 years of his first voyage initiated Bastian's lifelong passion for other cultures, determining his plans to pursue a career in ethnology. His first major publication, *Der Mensch in der Geschichte: Zur Begründung einer Psychologischen Weltanschauung* (The Human in History: The Foundation of a Psychological World View, 1860), gave a comprehensive theoretical

account synthesizing the major insights gained on his first voyage. This book was the first anthropological account based on a thorough description of different cultures and witnessed through firsthand observations, establishing Bastian as an astute observer. Between 1861 and 1865, he made his second voyage to South and East Asia, where he engaged in the study of Buddhism. Subsequently, he returned to Bremen by crossing through Mongolia and Siberia. This voyage laid the foundation for the five volumes of *Die Völker des Östlichen Asiens: Studien und Reisen* (The People of East Asia: Studies and Voyages, 1866–1871).

After moving to Berlin in 1867, Bastian obtained his habilitation (an advanced academic degree) from the Friedrich-Wilhelm University with a thesis on history and geography, which qualified him for a tenured position in ethnology, to which he was appointed in 1868. At that time, he became president of the Gesellschaft für Erdkunde (Geographical Society). One year later, Bastian established with Rudolph Virchow the Berliner Gesellschaft für Anthropologie, Ethnologie und Urgeschichte (Berlin Society for Anthropology, Ethnology, and Prehistory) and cofounded the *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie* (Journal of Ethnology) as its publication organ. At that time, Bastian also became assistant to the director of the ethnological department of the Royal Museum in Berlin. From June to December 1873, he made his third voyage, which took him to the Loango coast (today, the Republic of the Congo). During his fourth voyage, to South and Central America, Bastian acquired large archaeological collections and excavated mummies at Ancón in Peru. This voyage provided the foundation for his major book *Die Culturländer des Alten America* (The Cultural Lands of Ancient America, 1879). In 1876, he was appointed director of the ethnological and prehistorical collection of the Royal Museum of Berlin, and 2 years later, he became executive board member of the Deutsche Afrikanische Gesellschaft (German African Society). On his fifth voyage, between 1878 and 1880, Bastian went to Persia, India, Indonesia, Australia, and Oceania and continued his travels with a trip to North and Central America.

Bastian's voyages provided him with the experiences of different cultures that laid the groundwork of his theoretical approach to ethnology, a field of research focusing on cross-cultural comparison for the pursuit of general knowledge. In 1881, Bastian published his most important work, *Der Völkergedanke im Aufbau Einer Wissenschaft vom Menschen und seine Begründung auf Ethnologischen Sammlungen* (The Folk Ideas in Building a Science of Man and Their Grounding in Ethnological Collections). In 1886, he became the general director of the Königliches Museum für Völkerkunde (Royal Ethnological Museum). From 1889 to 1891, Bastian conducted his sixth voyage, which took him to Russia, Asia Minor, Egypt, and East Africa. From there he departed to India, Australia, and Oceania.

After his 70th birthday, Bastian concentrated on the study of Buddhism and organized his subsequent voyages accordingly. His seventh voyage from 1896 to 1898 took him to Java, Bali, and Lombok and his eighth voyage from 1901 to 1903, to India and Ceylon. At the age of 77, he made his ninth and last voyage, which took him to the West Indies to investigate a cave on a prehistoric site in Jamaica while pursuing further travels to Venezuela and Trinidad. On February 3, 1905, Bastian died after a brief illness in Port of Spain, Trinidad, and was buried there; his remains were later transferred back to Berlin to the graveyard in Berlin-Schöneberg.

Work

Bastian's work evolved around many integrally related topics and has many facets. The following account focuses on his program of ethnology as a science based on inductive methods, his concept of the psychic unity of humankind and his notions of elementary and folk ideas, his cross-cultural comparison of ethnographic collections, and his concepts of geographic regions and provinces.

Ethnology as a Science and the Method of Inductive Reasoning

Bastian founded ethnology as a natural science. Presuming positivism as a scientific paradigm, he expected to derive universal scientific laws from his collections of ethnographic material. To ensure the empirical foundation of ethnology as a science, Bastian used quantitative methods to establish what he called a thought statistic (*Gedankenstatistik*). This thought statistic could be launched by collecting cultural artifacts, including myths and folktales, as expressions of social thoughts. He saw the purpose of ethnology primarily grounded in the collection of

ethnographic data and aimed at cross-cultural comparison. To achieve this, he used what he conceived as a method of "logical arithmetic," which served as a mathematical model of inductive reasoning.

In his academic program, he distinguished between anthropology, ethnology, and ethnography. He confined anthropology to the study of the biological and physical foundation of humankind, and he defined ethnology as the study of human culture and society. In contrast to ethnology, ethnography is defined as the descriptive and most detailed account of a single culture. In so doing, Bastian primarily stressed the methodological independence of ethnology as an academic discipline, considering ethnography as an integral part of it. The paradigmatic method employed in ethnology was psychology, which allowed him to study the social thoughts (*Gesellschaftsgedanken*) of different ethnic groups from their point of view. Bastian applied psychological methods to the study of cultures to prove what he called the psychic unity of humankind.

Psychic Unity of Mankind and the Distinction Between Elementary Idea and Folk Idea

For Bastian, ethnology is first and foremost the study of the social thoughts of ethnic groups as they manifest in folk traditions. Bastian urged that these social thoughts be studied with respect to the total environment of an ethnic group, leading to the comprehension of the local psychic perspective. Within this theoretical framework, Bastian studied humans as social beings and conceived all kinds of cultural phenomena, material or immaterial, as collective ideas that can be studied as cultural forms, being manifestations of the psychic unity of humankind (*psychische einheit der menschheit*). Bastian viewed all cultural phenomena therefore as products of the human mind, which is socially shaped by collectively shared thoughts. His theory of psychic unity proposed that the same dispositions can be found in all humans across cultures. That is to say, for Bastian, all humans have the same capabilities and dispositions in adapting to their respective environments. By employing inductive methods, he searched for universal features of humankind that could be found in all cultures, despite the variations and differences of cultures.

Bastian divided human social thought into two categories: (1) elementary ideas and (2) folk ideas. Elementary ideas (*Elementargedanken*) are common to all cultures, whereas folk ideas (*Völkergedanken*) are the manifestations of elementary ideas in individual cultures. For example, according to Bastian, the incest taboo is an elementary idea found in all cultures. However, the particular form it takes, which may depend on specific social rules, is a folk idea. Although all societies attempt to classify social relations, which is an elementary idea, the ways in which age, gender, and other roles are classified are particular to individual cultures and are therefore folk ideas. Although Bastian aimed to establish his notion of the psychic unity of humankind as based on these elementary ideas, he argued that folk ideas emerge out of the elementary ideas due to geographic and historic factors like climate, disasters, cultural contacts, or wars, to which people adapt differently in different geographical regions and periods of time.

Ethnographic Data Collections and Cross-Cultural Comparison

Bastian was the first anthropologist to leave his armchair with the purpose of collecting data firsthand and establishing a scientific program on the basis of ethnographic fieldwork. He saw a long-term study of a single ethnic community that produced a written ethnography as desirable, but he made no such studies. Driven by the fear that cultures would vanish instantly after contact, Bastian collected as much data as possible, practicing so-called salvage ethnography with the aim of assembling a comprehensive inventory of social thoughts. Bastian's collections were compendious since he hoped not only to establish a universal archive of humanity, including all forms of folk ideas, but also to discover universal laws to determine the elementary ideas. Bastian hoped to demonstrate the psychic unity of humankind by finding parallels in the viewpoints of the natives of many different places.

The theory of the psychic unity of humankind was based on the massive collection of ethnographic material. As the ethnographic museum collection rapidly increased with each voyage, Bastian needed to systematize and classify it. Applying methods of inductive reasoning, the cultural artifacts were classified into ethnological types on the basis of cross-cultural comparison and conceived as elementary ideas. Avoiding the preexisting evolutionary

classification systems, he took the geographic region as the foundational unit to serve as a criterion for his categorization of ethnographic material.

Theory of Geographic Regions and Provinces

Although Bastian chiefly intended to show the psychic unity of humankind, he was also interested in explaining the reasons for the differences among cultures and considered history and geography for these explanations. For this purpose, he gave priority to the investigation of cultural techniques leading to survival and adaptation in different environments. The determination of these factors was foundational for Bastian's theory of geographical regions and cultural evolution, which helped explain the differences in languages and ideologies across cultures. In this sense, Bastian drafted one of the first maps of geographical regions and provinces.

Bastian claimed that the evolution of cultures within a geographic region was based on climate, environment, and history. This included the study of local developments and the historical processes unique to each geographic region prior to European contact. He argued that geographic regions were relatively independent of one another. Although Bastian assumed interethnic contact zones, he emphasized independent development and stressed that historical processes play a more important role in the formation of geographic regions than does contact with other cultures. To further refine his ideas, Bastian introduced the notion of the geographic province to delineate cultural circles, units that were bigger than geographic regions and allowed him to account for the possible contact zones through exchange, trade, and migration.

Contribution to Anthropology

Despite the often incomprehensible style of his later writings, Bastian gained worldwide recognition through his vast collections and extensive publications (about 10,000 total pages). His ethnographic accounts were frequently quoted by Victorian anthropologists like Edward B. Tylor and James G. Frazer. In the later stages of his career, he fought bitterly with Ernst Haeckel about evolution and with Friedrich Ratzel about the theoretical foundations of diffusion and acculturation. Among his students were Karl von der Steinen, Albert Grünwedel, and Felix von Luschan; the last was the teacher of Fritz Graebner and Leo Frobenius. Bastian had a considerable impact on the South American research of Karl Theodor Preuss and Paul Ehrenreich. Moreover, his influence on Franz Boas's notion of historical particularism was substantial and sustainable; Boas received his training mainly under the guidance of Bastian, working closely with him at the Royal Ethnological Museum. Bastian's approach to the fields of study, including physical anthropology, archaeology, and prehistory, as well as ethnology and ethnography, with a recognition of the importance of language, prefigured Boas's idea of the four-field approach in the foundation of American anthropology.

Jens Kreinath

See also Boas, Franz; Frazer, James G.; Historical Particularism; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Bastian, A. (1860). *Der mensch in der geschichte: Zur begründung einer psychologischen weltanschauung* [The human in history: The foundation of a psychological world view] (3 vols.). Leipzig, Germany: Verlag von Otto Wigand.

———. (1871). *Beiträge zur ethnologie* [Contributions to ethnology]. Berlin, Germany: Wiegandt und Hempel.

———. (1881). *Der völkergedanke im aufbau einer wissenschaft vom menschen und seine begründung auf ethnologischen sammlungen* [The folk ideas in building a science of man and their grounding in ethnological collections]. Berlin, Germany: Verlag von Ferdinand Dümmler.

———. (1884). *Allgemeine grundzüge der ethnologie: Prolegomena zur begründung einer naturwissenschaftlichen psychologie auf dem material des völkergedankens* [General principles of ethnology: Prolegomena to the foundation of a scientific psychology on the material of folk ideas]. Berlin, Germany: D. Reimer.

Fischer, M., Bolz, P., & Kamel, S. (2007). *Adolf Bastian and his universal archive of humanity: The origins of German anthropology.* New York, NY: G. Olms.

Köpping, K.-P. (1983). *Adolf Bastian and the psychic unity of mankind: The foundations of anthropology in nineteenth century Germany.* New York, NY: University of Queensland Press.

Preuss, K. T. (1926). Adolf Bastian und die heutige völkerkunde: Zum gedächtnis seines hunderjährigen geburtstages am 26 Juni 1926 [Adolf Bastian and the

modern ethnology: In memory of his birthday on June 26, 1926]. *Baessler-Archiv, 10,* 2–15.
Tylor, E. B. (1905). Professor Adolf Bastian: Born June 26, 1826; died February 3, 1905. *Man, 5,* 138–143.

Bataille, Georges

Georges Bataille (1897–1962) was an essayist and novelist who had an eclectic outlook and wrote on different subject areas, including art history, theology, anthropology, and economics. He is regarded as a philosopher of transgression who explored the consequences of thinking about the extreme. He has exerted an influence on poststructuralist thinking, including the work of Jacques Derrida, Michel Foucault, Jean Baudrillard, Roland Barthes, and Julia Kristeva, and on avant-garde publications such as *Tel Quel.*

Born in Billom, Puy-de-Dôme, to secular parents, Bataille initially wanted to be a priest and converted to Catholicism in 1914, which he later renounced in 1920. In 1918, he began training at the École des Chartes in Paris to become a medievalist librarian. In 1922, he gained a position at the Bibliothèque Nationale in Paris, where he worked until he resigned because of ill health (tuberculosis) in 1942. Seven years later, he resumed work as a librarian at Carpentras (1949–1951) and Orleans (1951–1961).

It is difficult to categorize Bataille's writings because he was interested in different areas of thought and worked across disciplines. However, his writings revealed certain preoccupations that were central to his thought. These included the concepts of the sacred and transgression. He was interested in exploring the limits and boundaries of social, anthropological, and economic systems, thereby moving beyond order, normalcy, and the profane into the exuberance of the sacred and the sovereign. Bataille proposed that it was in extreme states beyond the limit that opposites meet and that life opens up onto an experience of death and nothingness. This was explored in different works, such as the post-Marxist *The Accursed Share* (1949), which discusses the economics of exuberance, and *Eroticism* (1957), which examines the centrality of death in human experience.

In the formation of his thinking, Bataille was influenced by various philosophers, including Hegel, Nietzsche, and Sade. He attended Alexander Kojève's seminars on Hegel's philosophy (from 1932 to 1933); wrote a tribute to Nietzsche in the form of his book *On Nietzsche* (1945) and a volume of Nietzschean maxims, *Mémorandum* (1945); and identified with the Marquis de Sade's interpretations of eroticism, which exceeded the boundaries of normalcy, strove toward a sense of freedom that was unrestrained by law and morality, and emphasized the importance of violence, criminality, and transgression in their formulation. Another key influence was Marcel Mauss's notion of *The Gift* (1923), which examined the potlatch festival—which involved the ritual of gift giving that focused on expenditure and exchange—and formed the basis of Bataille's unconventional theory of economics, which emphasized excess over acquisition.

Bataille was also the pseudonymous author of erotic novels, including *Story of the Eye* (1928) and *Madame Edwarda* (1941), which are regarded as fictional studies of transgression. The inclusion of nonfictional elements in his novels, namely the preface and critical essays in *Story of the Eye* and the preface in *Madame Edwarda*, connects these projects to his central preoccupation with *jouissance* (which means a bliss without limits) and explores modes of communication that exceed language.

In addition to his writings, Bataille also remained active in a host of different political organizations, especially in the lead-up to the Second World War. He was associated in 1924 with the surrealists, together with figures such as Michel Leiris, but was later excluded from the International Surrealist Exhibition by André Breton, who (in his *Second Manifesto of Surrealism*) denounced him as excremental because of his preoccupation with the ignoble. He was the de facto editor of *Documents*, an art and ethnographic maverick journal that explored non-Western culture and that collapsed the distinction between high and low culture. The journal, which ran for 15 issues from 1929 until 1931, espoused the Bataillean notion of base materialism, which was a radical materialism that interrogated the bodily and formless origin of organic forms, thus undercutting the idealism of formalistic surrealism and the purity of modernism. Bataille was particularly drawn to aspects of the body that were commonly hidden from the public gaze, such as orifices, and discussed how these were channels to sacred expression.

In the 1930s, Bataille advocated an anti-Stalinist Marxism, which he expressed in his contributions to various journals, such as *La Critique Sociale*. In 1935, he founded the political group Contre-Attaque, which presented an antifascist stance to the Popular Front and united the intellectual community. The group was short-lived and dissolved in 1936. That year, Bataille established *Acéphale*, a review and a secret society that aimed to exercise the workings of the sacred through ritual transgression. This was followed by the formation of the College of Sociology, which he cofounded with Michel Leiris and Roger Caillois. The group, which brought together intellectuals such as Alexandre Kojève and Jean Wahl, explored their views on the Durkheimian sacred, the role of violence, and the formation of community. With the advent of the war, Bataille's thinking shifted from the outer manifestations of the sacred in everyday life to a more internalized experience of the sacred in *Inner Experience* (1943). In 1946, Bataille founded the anti-existentialist journal *Critique*.

During his lifetime, Bataille was a contradictory figure whose public persona as a librarian contrasted with his virulent and obsessive mental states. Since his death, he has enjoyed a revival in critical and cultural theory because of the 12-volume publication of his *Oeuvres Complètes* (Complete Works, 1971–1988) and translations of his works into English. Furthermore, the interdisciplinary nature of his work lends itself to art criticism, sociology, cultural studies, and theology and has established him as a key thinker of the 20th century.

Rina Arya

See also Barthes, Roland; Baudrillard, Jean; Derrida, Jacques; Foucault, Michel; Hegel, Georg W. F.; Mauss, Marcel

Further Readings

Botting, F., & Wilson, S. (1997). *The Bataille reader.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

———. (1998). *Bataille: A critical reader.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell, 1998.

Surya, M. (2002). *Georges Bataille: An intellectual biography* (K. Fijalkowski & M. Richardson, Trans.). London, UK: Verso Books.

Bateson, Gregory

Gregory Bateson (1904–1980) was a multifaceted scholar who embraced fields as diverse as anthropology, linguistics, semiotics, systems theory, and cybernetics. He was an original thinker whose work influenced the growing environmental movement of his day, contributed to the emergence of new fields of investigation, and continues to exert an influence in a variety of disciplines, including ecological and environmental anthropology.

Life and Work

Bateson was born on May 9, 1904, in Cambridgeshire, England, as the third son of Beatrice Durham and the distinguished geneticist William Bateson. Bateson studied biology with a focus on zoology and natural history at St. John's College at Cambridge. After completing his BA in 1925, he visited the Galapagos Islands. Bateson began studying anthropology at Cambridge after being introduced to Alfred Haddon in 1926. In January 1927, he went for ethnographic fieldwork to New Guinea. Due to problems of communicating and interacting with the local people, Bateson left the field after a year. He returned to Australia and taught Pacific languages for a semester at the University of Sydney under Alfred R. Radcliffe-Brown. In February 1929, Bateson became interested in the Iatmul on a trip to the Sepik River in New Guinea. He conducted a year of fieldwork there with Haddon and Radcliffe-Brown as advisors.

In 1931, Bateson became a fellow of St. John's College, where he received funding for his ongoing research on the Iatmul. On his return to New Guinea, he met Reo F. Fortune and Margaret Mead, who were conducting fieldwork on a tribe on Manus Island. Bateson's extended conversations with them influenced his theoretical approach and subsequent analysis of his ethnographic data; even though he was supervised by Radcliffe-Brown and Malinowski, his thesis became a methodological criticism of functionalist theory. In January 1936, Bateson completed his study *Naven*. In the same year, Bateson and Mead married and started conducting their collaborative fieldwork in Bali. During the first 2 months, they coproduced the film *Trance*

and Dance in Bali, before they moved to Bajoeng Gede, where they carried out extensive fieldwork on child-rearing practices, using film and photography as their primary research tools. As the world turned toward war in 1938, Bateson and Mead left Bali to return to New Guinea. After another year, they left for New York, with Mead already pregnant with their first and only daughter, Mary Catherine Bateson. During the subsequent years, Bateson continued working with Mead on previously collected Bali material.

In the 1940s, Bateson developed an interest in the study of system theory and cybernetics after being invited by Robert Wiener to attend the conferences of the Josiah Macy Jr. Foundation. In collaboration with Wiener and Mead, Bateson elaborated on the application of cybernetics to the social and behavioral sciences. At this time, Bateson was also involved in founding the Institute of Cultural Studies, which facilitated anthropological research on national character, including on Germany and Japan. In this context, Bateson carried out research on the Nazi propaganda film *Hitlerjunge Quex* (Hitler Youth Quex). In 1943, he started working for the Office of Strategic Services and spent about 20 months in Ceylon, India, and China; he also investigated the impact of a Japanese radio station on Burma and Thailand.

In the fall of 1947 and spring of 1948, Bateson taught first at the New School of Social Research in New York and then at Harvard University. In late 1949, after being divorced from Mead, Bateson moved to Palo Alto, California. He taught medical anthropology on a 2-year appointment at the Langley Porter Neuropsychiatric Clinic in San Francisco. This allowed him to study psychiatric communication in an ethnographic context by using mathematical theories of communication and language. In 1950, Bateson accepted a visiting professorship in anthropology at Stanford University, with main institutional ties to the Veterans Administration Hospital. During that time, he started his communication research on alcoholism and schizophrenic behavior with residents of the hospital.

In 1952, Bateson extended his research interests to the play behavior of otters at the Fleischhacker Zoo in San Francisco. Subsequently, he received a grant from the Rockefeller Foundation on the Paradoxes of Abstraction in Communication, which became a major point of departure for his subsequent contribution to anthropological theory. He proposed a theory of play that addresses the different levels of abstraction involved in human and animal communication. In 1956, Bateson started filming forms of nonverbal communication, with a focus on schizophrenic behavior among children. Examining schizophrenia as a learned behavior in processes of family communication, Bateson focused on the principles of family organization, using game theories as his major paradigm. Supported by numerous grants, he continued to study animal behavior in the hope of integrating the patterns of dolphin ethology into the study of patterns in human social interaction.

Bateson elaborated on the idea of an "ecology of mind," reflecting his doubts about the reductionisms of the natural sciences while advocating a holistic and integrative approach. In 1968, he organized a conference of the Wenner-Gren Foundation on the Effects of Conscious Purpose on Human Adaptation. In 1970, he also gave the honorary Alfred Korzybski memorial lecture in New York, titled "Form, Substance, and Difference," where he proposed a new scientific paradigm: the science of metacommunication. Stimulated by its success, Bateson put together an anthology of his lifework, titled *Steps to an Ecology of Mind*. With its publication in 1972, Bateson received worldwide recognition and exerted a wider impact on the environmental movements of his time.

In 1973, Bateson became affiliated with Kresge College at the University of California, Santa Cruz. There he held a lectureship to explore innovative research with a focus on human relational approaches to ecology. During this time, the journal *CoEvolution* was founded to honor his work. In 1975, he revisited his field study on Balinese trance for a special issue of *Ethos* in honor of Mead's work, whom he met with in March 1976 to continue their conversation on visual methods in cultural anthropology. During that time, Bateson became a fellow of the American Academy of Sciences and was appointed to the Board of Regents of the University of California. In his subsequent book, *Mind and Nature: A Necessary Unity* (1979), Bateson aimed to elaborate his ideas on the coevolution of natural and cultural processes. Mary Catherine Bateson helped him finalize the manuscript after he was diagnosed with cancer. Bateson died on July 4, 1980, at the age of 76, at the guesthouse of the Zen Center in San Francisco.

Work

The work of Bateson is highly original, although the thematic fields it addresses may appear unrelated. His impact on anthropological theory is not readily identifiable because his most original ideas were often articulated in abstract terms and published in places where they could not immediately be recognized as part of the anthropological endeavor. Bateson's legacy lies in the formation of new analytical concepts and theoretical approaches. While his early work in New Guinea was dedicated to the study of the dynamics of cultural change, which he called schismogenesis, his subsequent work in Bali focused on nonverbal communication, leading him to theorize about play, framing, and forms of metacommunication. His idea of the ecology of mind was elaborated on the application of cybernetics to the study of social systems and expanded on related notions of feedback processes and the double bind, a situation in which a person cannot succeed or win no matter what he or she does.

Schismogenesis and the Dynamics of Cultural Change

In his first and only ethnographic study, *Naven*, Bateson conceptualized individual behavior and social structure in Iatmul culture as a dynamic system based on interdependent and mutually reinforcing relationships. Bateson rejected reductionism and avoided deducing individual behavior from social structure or inducing social structure from individual behavior. He conceived both individual behavior and social structure as embedded in mutual relationships and viewed social interactions as leading toward a provisional equilibrium of social relationships that always has the potential for immediate change. Bateson conceptualized the dynamics in social relations in terms of *schismogenesis*, the process of differentiation in social groups resulting from continuous interactions. Bateson conceived the formation of social structure and the configuration of social relations as emerging from social interactions.

Bateson understood schismogenesis as a conceptual scheme for analyzing cultural change, suggesting that anthropologists should not limit the study of cultural change to effects that are determined by external factors. He argued that the analysis of change within a single culture required the examination of cases of contact between different groups within the culture and that age, sex, social status, and kinship were key markers of different group membership. He considered the possible resolution of disturbances resulting from the interaction of different groups as a merely temporary equilibrium in an ongoing chain of reactions to reactions. In this way, he understood social structure as always having an inherently temporal dimension.

Bateson proposed that the outcome of disturbances in social relations was either complementary or symmetrical schismogenesis, the former resulting in unequal and the latter resulting in equal relationships of the social groups involved. In the complementary form of schismogenesis, two groups mutually provoke and reinforce reactions with each other. The inequalities in gender relations, parent-children relations, or class struggle are examples of mutually reinforcing patterns of dominant-submissive behavior. In the symmetrical form of schismogenesis, the interaction of the groups provokes similar forms of behavior. Some examples are arms races, public contests, or sporting events. Both forms of schismogenesis lead to a temporary balance through the subordination or competition of the groups involved, but they can also lead to conflict, fissures, and sometimes disastrous outcomes.

Framing, Play, and Metacommunication

Based on his research on nonverbal communication in child-rearing practices and his visual material on rituals of spirit possession in Bali, Bateson proposed a systematic approach to the study of personality and culture. In this context, he also inquired into the formation of moral behavior and national ethos by taking theories of frustration and aggression as a reference point for studying the cultural formation of ethos. Subsequently, he utilized these theoretical insights to develop his theory of framing, play, and metacommunication. In his 1955 article "A Theory of Play and Fantasy," he introduced the notion of framing as a form of metacommunication and addressed "framing" as a marker in social interaction that nonverbally changes the meaning and context of social interaction, as exemplified in the distinction between play and nonplay. The messages communicated within the play frame are metacommunicative and have a different meaning from those communicated outside the frame.

Bateson theorized that metacommunication was about social relations. Metacommunicative

statements establish the relationship between interacting persons. The main feature with which Bateson distinguished communication from metacommunication was the difference between sign and signal that, he proposed, was recognizable in nonverbal communication. While Bateson conceived signs as unintentional and involuntary and therefore indexical (indicating some state of affairs), he defined signals as intentionally and voluntarily used and therefore conventional. The difference between the sign and the signal can be exemplified by the distinction between a twitch of an eyelid and a wink, the former being unintentional, while the latter may carry a clear message. This difference between sign and signal, according to Bateson, coincided with the evolution of human communication. Working on the hypothesis that metacommunication is integral to the growth of the human species prior to language, Bateson studied primate behavior at San Francisco's Fleishhacker Zoo in 1952. This research provided him with evidence that the predominant ways in which primates recognize the difference between signs and signals is play. Bateson took this ability to make such distinctions as a precondition for the differentiation of levels of abstraction in human communication.

Bateson conceived of play as a metacommunicative phenomenon of its own kind, bringing to the fore categorically different levels of abstraction established through the play frame. He argued that play involves forms of metacommunication through which organisms differentiate between play and nonplay. The distinction between sign and signal in metacommunication is exemplified by different types of messages transmitted in play behavior: (1) messages used as signs to express moods, (2) messages used as signals to simulate moods, and (3) messages used to distinguish between the first two types of message. For Bateson, the metacommunicative message, like "This is play," is of the last type, allowing the distinction between expression (i.e., the twitch or bite as a sign) and simulation (i.e., the wink or playful nip as a signal). These different messages are pertinent to play between, for example, children who pretend to act as parents or dogs who pretend to fight. The ability to perceive the difference between play and nonplay leads to higher levels of abstraction consisting of the metacommunicative message "This is play." Bateson perceived play as a form of learning that leads to higher levels of abstraction.

Using threat, theatrical behavior, and deceit as examples of metacommunication, Bateson argued that play implies a peculiar form of metacommunication. In framing, the metacommunicative message sets up hierarchical relationships between different levels of abstraction. Irony, teasing, or joking relationships may serve as further examples for the different frames of reference used in play behavior, where the interactive sequences of actions transmit signals that are "similar" to but "fundamentally different" from those they usually denote. Because the play frame transmits metacommunicative statements on different levels of abstraction, the respective frame creates the self-referential paradox. For Bateson, the message "This is play" is paradoxical because it is a negative statement that itself contains a negative metastatement. The metacommunicative message transmitted applies to different categorical orders depending on whether it is transmitted from inside or outside the frame. These statements are self-reflexive and context dependent as they refer back to the position from which they are made and exclude the possibility that they can transmit metacommunicative statements independent of the frame.

Cybernetics, Feedback Processes, and the Double Bind

Bateson elaborated on forms of metacommunication in relation to theories of codification and abstraction. He primarily used cybernetics and system theories to develop a theoretical model to distinguish between different forms of codification in animal and human communication. Employing mathematical information theory and cybernetics, Bateson furthered a framework that allowed him to conceptualize the self-referential paradoxes in metacommunication. Although *cybernetics*, coined after a Greek term, broadly refers to various kinds of automatic control systems, Bateson was particularly interested in its application to the social sciences and the evolution and forms of animal and human communication. He conceived of cybernetic circuits primarily as systems of communication. Such systems of communication respond to the information they receive from their environment. Bateson employed cybernetic models in the codification and transmission of information. Such information makes a difference between the real and the ideal state of affairs and transforms the system of communication by

adjusting to the difference between the real and the ideal state. As a result, the process of communication between the real and the ideal leads to a temporary homeostasis, or the steady state.

Elaborating on the cybernetic insights as proposed by Wiener, Bateson analyzed systems of nonverbal communication within the framework of positive and negative feedback by applying them to situations of social interactions. Positive feedback refers to messages that communicate change, whereas negative feedback refers to messages that communicate control. In this respect, the cybernetic model stipulates the explanation of transformation in terms of serial and reciprocal cause-and-effect chains. Bateson argued that forms of metacommunication occur in organisms that are capable of establishing a higher level of abstraction by giving negative feedback to their immediate environments through means of control or self-regulation. The metacommunicative message establishes the rules that govern the subsequent behavior of the participants, and negative feedback means the enforcement of changes in social relationships.

In using his ethnographic material from New Guinea and Bali and expanding his concept of schismogenesis, Bateson further elaborated on the cybernetic model. His main contribution is his theory of the double bind as a way to explore forms of systemically distorted forms of communication and interaction. According to Bateson, the double bind can be explained in reference to misled forms of learning, namely to distinguish different levels of abstraction. Bateson defined double bind as a sequence of messages, in which the messages communicated lead to a paradox where the verbal message contradicts the nonverbally communicated message and where the one who is in a subordinate position can only lose. In his research on schizophrenia, the codification of a message is altered, and the form of learning is distorted, leading to an inability to discriminate different contextual cues, because what is said persistently contradicts what is done. In the study of alcoholism, Bateson exemplified his insights in the alcoholics' unwillingness to acknowledge the fact that they are alcoholics.

Contribution to Anthropology

Bateson's contribution to anthropology and his impact on the formation of theoretical approaches to anthropology have been significant, and his form of engagement in using system theory and cybernetics for analyzing cultural practices has proven fruitful. The most important contributions of Bateson can be seen in his theory of framing as well as his contribution to the study of play as forms of metacommunication. His studies in nonverbal communication led to the field of kinesics and proxemics, and symbolic interaction, as the studies of Ray Birdwhistell and Erving Goffman demonstrate. His considerations of play had a significant impact on the formation of ritual theories as proposed by Roy Rappaport, Don Handelman, and Michael Houseman.

Bateson had also a more direct impact on anthropological research, inspiring Clifford Geertz's system-theoretical approach to religion and culture as related to the study of Balinese rituals, and laid some theoretical groundwork for Geertz's method of thick description. Steven Feld and Deborah Tannen adopted Bateson's theory of schismogenesis for the anthropological study of ethnomusicology and sociolinguistics, and Rene Girard used Bateson's notion of the double bind in his theory of sacrifice. Bateson's use of film and photography helped facilitate the methodological enhancement of visual anthropology, and his impact can be seen in the work of Maya Deren and Jean Rouch and their participatory approach to visual anthropology. Besides that, Bateson's approach to the ecology of mind had a lasting impact on ecological and environmental anthropology that approaches ecology from system theory.

Jens Kreinath

See also Culture and Personality; Geertz, Clifford; Malinowski, Bronisław; Mead, Margaret; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Rappaport, Roy; Visual Anthropology

Further Readings

Bateson, G. (1936). *Naven: A survey of the problems suggested by a composite picture of the culture of a New Guinea tribe drawn from three points of view.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1979). *Mind and nature: A necessary unity.* New York, NY: Dutton.

Bateson, G., & Bateson, M. C. (1987). *Angels fear: Towards an epistemology of the sacred.* New York, NY: Macmillan.

Bateson, G., & Mead, M. (1942). *Balinese character: A photographic analysis.* New York, NY: New York Academy of Sciences.

Handelman, D. (1979). Is *Naven* ludic? Paradox and the communication of identity. *Social Analysis, 1,* 177–191.
Harries-Jones, P. (1995). *A recursive vision: Ecological understanding and Gregory Bateson.* Toronto, Ontario, Canada: University of Toronto Press.
Heims, S. J. (1977). Gregory Bateson and the mathematicians: From interdisciplinary interaction to societal functions. *Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences, 13,* 141–158.
Houseman, M., & Severi, C. (1998). *Naven, or, the other self: A relational approach to ritual action* (Studies in the History of Religions). Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.
Kreinath, J. (2012). *Naven*, moebius strip, and random fractal dynamics: Reframing Bateson's play frame and the use of mathematical models for the study of ritual. *Journal of Ritual Studies, 26*(2), 39–64.
Levy, R. L., & Rappaport, R. R. (1982). Gregory Bateson 1904–1980. *American Anthropologist, 84*(2), 379–394.
Lipset, D. (1980). *Gregory Bateson: The legacy of a scientist.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.
Marcus, G. E. (1985). A timely rereading of *Naven*: Gregory Bateson as oracular essayist. *Representations, 12,* 66–82.
Nuckolls, C. W. (1995). The misplaced legacy of Gregory Bateson: Toward a cultural dialectic of knowledge and desire. *Cultural Anthropology, 10*(3), 367–394.

Baudrillard, Jean

Jean Baudrillard (1929–2007), French philosopher, lapsed sociologist, critic of modernism and postmodernism, photographer, and public intellectual, was one of the founders of poststructuralism.

Baudrillard was born in the cathedral town of Reims, a major city to the northeast of Paris, in July 1929; he died on March 6, 2007, in Paris at the age of 77. In his youth, Baudrillard was interested in poetry (see *L'Ange du Stuc* [The Stucco Angel], published in 1978, a collection of his poems from the 1950s) and a science of the imaginary known as pataphysics (to which he had been introduced by one of his schoolteachers—see *Pataphysics* [2005]). Both interests influenced his subsequent writing and his philosophy throughout his adult life. However, it was his interest in German language and culture that he was to pursue in his undergraduate studies at the Sorbonne in Paris.

After graduation, Baudrillard began, in 1956, to teach German and sociology at a secondary school, during which time he also completed, in 1966, his doctorate at the University of Paris X-Nanterre. Indeed, it was in the 1960s that Baudrillard began to meaningfully participate in French intellectual life by, among other things, writing literary reviews of fiction by Uwe Johnson, Italo Calvino, and William Styron for Jean-Paul Sartre's *Les Temps Modernes* (Modern Times) and translating from German to French, between 1956 and 1969, works by several major figures—Bertolt Brecht, Peter Weiss, Wilhelm E. Mühlmann, Karl Marx, and Friedrich Engels—on the intellectual left.

After defending his doctoral thesis in March 1966, Baudrillard taught sociology at the University of Paris X-Nanterre and was involved—alongside his mentor, the urban sociologist Henri Lefebvre—in supporting the Movement du 22 Mars at Nanterre, which sparked the events of May 1968 that erupted in Paris and across France. It was in 1968 that Baudrillard published his doctoral thesis as his first book, *The System of Objects*, a text that was followed up, over (and beyond) his lifetime, by the publication of more than 50 books, hundreds of articles, and dozens of interviews the style, content, and translation of which led him to be fêted both in France and across the world for his conceptual inventiveness and audacity.

Major Works

Overviews of Baudrillard's many writings typically discuss them in a chronological fashion, seeking to explain the evolution of his ideas over time as one narrative—most commonly by erroneously dividing his writings into two periods to describe an "early, Marxist Baudrillard" and a "later, postmodern Baudrillard." However, this is not the way to grasp the dual topology of Baudrillard's oeuvre, into which his major (and minor, for that matter) works must be located to be properly understood. In 1987, Baudrillard revealed that his corpus of writings should be understood as a "double spiral," a Möbius strip that traces not only the destruction of symbolic orders (primordial cultures) by semiotic ones (modern cultures) but also how the symbolic (ambivalence) cannot be completely erased by the signs and simulations (equivalence) that constitute modernity, precisely because the fundamental and radical form of modern cultures is ultimately still

that of challenge and potlatch: the negation and sacrifice of value. Thus, while Baudrillard's many publications are all concerned with both condition (semiotic) and critique (symbolic), some of his works are predominantly concerned with theorizing the dominant semiotic order—a form of organization of opposed terms between which a dialectic can be established to create an irreversible, linear, and unidirectional system—while others are focused on the symbolic order—an alternative form of organization based on a circular form, a circuit, and reversibility, which has no separate terms and therefore calls into question the idea of value and the supposed dialectic that underpins all market societies.

The semiotic spiral—the mediatization and virtualization of modern capitalist societies—is explained across Baudrillard's oeuvre as the "code of social standing" in *The System of Objects* (1968); as the "code" in *The Consumer Society* (1970); as "sign value" in *For a Critique of the Political Economy of the Sign* (1972); as the "structural law of value" in *Symbolic Exchange and Death* (1976); as "hyperreality" in *Simulacra and Simulation* (1981); as the "vanishing point" in his experiential account of *America* (1986); as the "nonevent" and the "end of history" in *The Gulf War Did Not Take Place* (1991) and *The Illusion of the End and Events on Strike* (1992), respectively; as *The Perfect Crime* (1995); as "cloning" in *The Vital Illusion* (2000); as "virtual reality" in *Screened Out* (2000); and as "integral reality" in *The Intelligence of Evil or the Lucidity Pact* (2004) and *Why Hasn't Everything Already Disappeared?* (2007). In contrast, the symbolic spiral as critique and as a challenge to the semiotic order is similarly theorized across his works, predominantly as "symbolic exchange" in *Symbolic Exchange and Death* (1976); as *Seduction* (1979); as the "fatal" and "reversibility" in *Fatal Strategies* (1983); as "doubling" in *Suite Vénitienne/Please Follow Me* (1983); as *Impossible Exchange* (1999); as the "hostage" beyond the normal rules of exchange in *The Gulf War Did Not Take Place* (1991); and as "terrorism" in *The Spirit of Terrorism and Requiem for The Twin Towers* (2002). Thus, the overall shape of Baudrillard's oeuvre as a "double spiral" needs to be understood not only as a reaction to the failures of May 1968—and Baudrillard's subsequent rejection of Marxism (see *The Mirror of Production*, 1975) as no more than a simulacrum of capitalism—but also as the eclipse of critical theory and sociology by fatal theory and anthropology as the basis for truly radical anticapitalist thought.

Baudrillard and Anthropology

The influence of anthropological theory and the study of indigenous "primitive" societies on Baudrillard's thought is particularly marked with regard to his conceptualization of symbolic exchange (1976) as a critique against the "perfection" of modern capitalism as hyperreal, as an integral or absolute reality where all illusion—evil, negativity, death, and so on—has been expurgated in the perfect crime of transforming the world into a simulacrum of limitless exchange.

Symbolic exchange as anthropology understands it (compare the work of the psychoanalyst Jacques Lacan on the "symbolic") is fundamental to Baudrillard's philosophy and oeuvre, serving as the basis for his critique of the disappearance of illusion in capitalist societies and cultures, which, through mass consumerism and the transition of the commodity into the commodity-sign, have been transformed into totalizing hyperrealities. Symbolic exchange was first explicitly presented as exterior to the commodity-sign or "code" in Baudrillard's third book, *For a Critique of the Political Economy of the Sign* (1972), before subsequently becoming the central theme and theorization of his fifth book—widely regarded as his *chef d'oeuvre*—just a few years later, *Symbolic Exchange and Death* (1976).

Baudrillard's understanding of the practice of symbolic exchange is shaped by his reading of anthropological studies on the gift and gift exchange in primordial—so-called primitive—societies, where gift exchange is understood to be central to social life. Specifically, Baudrillard's usage of symbolic exchange draws on anthropological theory—especially the work of Émile Durkheim, Marcel Mauss, Georges Bataille, and Bronisław Malinowski—and its studies of the circulation of gifts and countergifts in tribal societies—the potlatch and the Kula—as sumptuary and noneconomic, and thus beyond the use, exchange, and sign values of the commodity-sign that governs exchange in modern societies. Indeed, it is clear that Baudrillard's critique of contemporary societies and cultures is founded on abandoning sociology, which he considers, like Marxism, to

be trapped in the "real" (the semiotic order)—see *In the Shadow of the Silent Majorities or the End of the Social* (1978)—in favor of an anthropological framework that offers an oppositional stance to commodity exchange, which, while perhaps utopian, has nevertheless been a living practice in other cultures.

Symbolic exchange is important for Baudrillard because it describes how gift giving in tribal societies is obligatory, ritualistic, and therefore reversible. That is to say that, while the giving of a gift creates empowerment through obligation and debt, any notion of power or accumulation is consequently undone by the countergift. Thus, Baudrillard is interested in how forms of symbolic exchange haunt contemporary societies, which are beholden not only to accumulation through commodity exchange but also to a "structural law of value" in general—a system of equivalence—that permeates beyond the economy. Indeed, while symbolic exchange is posited as an alternative to accumulative economic exchange whereby gift and countergift forge a more profound relation between participants, it is also Baudrillard's argument that symbolic exchange is, in fact, everywhere today because capitalist economic exchange would not be possible without a symbolic order that goes beyond the rational commerce of things or bodies.

Baudrillard's Legacy

Anthropology, among many other things, was influential in the development of Baudrillard's thought, especially in the 1970s when he was formulating his conceptualization of symbolic exchange as the opposite of commodity exchange. However, although there has been considerable exegesis of Baudrillard's works, especially of those published before the turn of the millennium, commentators have overwhelmingly focused on discussing Baudrillard's theorization of the semiotic through notions such as simulation and hyperreality (often to incorrectly label him as a "postmodernist"). The anthropological basis of Baudrillard's parallel focus on the symbolic throughout his oeuvre has been relatively ignored in comparison. Not only has a detailed study of Baudrillard's debts to anthropology not been undertaken but also far too little attention in general has been given to Baudrillard's attempts throughout his writings to bring into play that which the virtualization of the world has attempted to disavow and displace: symbolic exchange, seduction, reversibility, catastrophe, fatality, absolute evil, impossible exchange, the irreducible, and the singular, to mention just a few.

Richard G. Smith

See also Bataille, Georges; Durkheim, Émile; Lacan, Jacques; Malinowski, Bronisław; Marx, Karl; Mauss, Marcel

Further Readings

Baudrillard, J. (1993). *Symbolic exchange and death*. London, UK: Sage. (Original work published 1976)

Clarke, D. B., Doel, M. A., Merrin, W., & Smith, R. G. (Eds.). (2009). *Jean Baudrillard: Fatal theories*. London, UK: Routledge.

Gane, M. (1991). *Baudrillard: Critical and fatal theory*. London, UK: Routledge.

Hefner, R. (1977). Baudrillard's noble anthropology: The image of symbolic exchange in political economy. *SubStance, 17,* 105–113.

Lane, R. J. (2000). *Jean Baudrillard*. London, UK: Routledge.

Smith, R. G. (Ed.). (2010). *The Baudrillard dictionary*. Edinburgh, UK: Edinburgh University Press.

Smith, R. G., Clarke, D. B., & Doel, M. A. (2011). Baudrillard redux [Special issue]. *Cultural Politics, 7* (3), 325–476.

Benedict, Ruth F.

Ruth Benedict's first book, *Patterns of Culture* (1934), deeply influenced all the social sciences. The book argued that culture members integrated their shared customs and values, and psychological dispositions into a configuration, a pattern. Her book also argued for cultural relativism—that is, the equal valuing of all cultural patterns. These themes were from the great storehouse of Franz Boas, her teacher and later her senior colleague in the Department of Anthropology at Columbia University. To her selection and elaboration of Boas's themes, she added ideas from psychiatry.

Benedict next turned to the investigation of cultures that had diversity in patterning, and to a new problem, the morality of societies. This work was interrupted by widespread concern about German racism and conquests in the late 1930s.

She responded with a book to combat racism, coauthored with Gene Weltfish, *Race: Science and Culture* (1940). When the United States entered the war, she was recruited, along with many other social scientists, to study the expected behaviors of enemy and allied nations. In the analysis of these modern-state societies with concepts worked out in the study of tribal societies, Benedict developed new formulations for the relation of the individual to culture. These were employed in her third and last book, *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword* (1946), which described Japanese culture as highly integrated yet offering diverse avenues of life. Two years later, in a peak of new activity, Benedict died suddenly of a heart attack at age 61.

Early Life and Work

Ruth Fulton was born in 1887 to a schoolteacher mother and a physician father. After growing up on her grandparents' farm in upstate New York and graduating from Vassar College, she turned to writing poetry and biographies of 19th-century feminists. She married Stanley Benedict, a professor of biochemistry at Cornell University Medical School. At age 33, she began studying anthropology at Columbia University with Franz Boas. His earlier students Alfred Kroeber, Robert Lowie, and Edward Sapir were only several years older than Benedict but had become, by the time she entered anthropology, influential in broadly developing Boas's paradigm. Benedict brought new ideas and was soon critiquing their work and rivaling it. Her early interest was in the psychological aspects of religious practices. She first compared vision experiences in "The Vision in Plains Culture" (1922) and next wrote "The Concept of the Guardian Spirit in North America" (1923), which was her PhD dissertation. Both were based on fieldwork and on a culling of the extensive ethnographic literature. Benedict did fieldwork in, and published on, four Southwest Indian tribes, Pima, Zuni, and, more briefly, Serrano and Cochiti. In 1928, 1932, and 1934, she published three articles foreshadowing her new approach, which she would soon elaborate in *Patterns of Culture*. Between 1930 and 1934, she also wrote seven entries for the *Encyclopedia of Social Science*—Animism, Child Marriage, Dress, Folklore, Magic, Myth, and Ritual—showing her engagement with traditional areas of ethnography. Boas liked her work and hired her to teach in the graduate department at Columbia as soon as she completed her dissertation.

Patterns of Culture (1934) was written for a broad academic and general audience. This book described the cultural configuration, pattern of ideas, social organization, customs, and behaviors in three tribal societies and argued that the configuration shaped personality. The three societies described were the Zuni Pueblo Indians, the Kwakiutl of the northwest coast of Canada, and the island horticultural community of Dobu in Melanesia. Benedict wrote that the Zuni enacted and affirmed their gods' calendrical control of nature through traditional dances and ceremonies and enacted their cooperative kinship and community codes of an orderly and interwoven social structure. In strong contrast, Kwakiutl clan chiefs, bolstered by their kinspeople's high productivity of foods and arts, contested and shamed each other in lavish competitive gift giving; and their shamans, for their part, challenged their gods' supposed control of nature. In their less highly organized society, Dobuans practiced magic to protect their crops and their lives from the thefts and poisoning they believed their neighbors and kinsmen would inflict on them, while at the same time keeping a quiet balance of wariness and caution. Benedict saw each cultural pattern as an integrated whole. Tribal members behaved and believed, for the most part, within their cultural pattern. It shaped their psychic self, except for a few "misfits" always to be found in any culture, yet managing to live within ongoing practices. These misfits were of particular interest to Benedict because they showed the boundaries of each culture's ideas. The elements of the culture were selected by the group piece after piece, gradually integrating and reinforcing the pattern and eliminating discordant elements.

In *Patterns of Culture*, Benedict characterized Zuni culture as Apollonian in contrast to neighboring Plains Indian cultures, which she described as Dionysian, and she wrote that the Kwakiutl were megalomaniacal and the Dobuans were paranoid. She also wrote that culture was "personality writ large." This phrase and the designations of culture types were often taken to signify her whole meaning, by both critics and admirers, inviting nonengagement with the book's analytic depth. She did not again write these phrases or similar labeling of cultures. She commented in a letter to Margaret Mead that Raymond Firth, the noted British anthropologist, had written

> a very satisfactory review of my book. . . . His criticisms were ones I myself feel to the full—"tabloid" naming of cultures, animistic phrasings of how culture acts—though he mentions that I call attention to these phrases as verbal devices. (February 14, 1936, Mead Papers S5, Library of Congress)

Patterns of Culture made the idea of cultural diversity attractive to a Western-centered academic establishment. It became the subject of debates about the relativity of cultures, the integration of cultures, and the relation of personality to social analysis, retaining centrality in these arguments for at least a decade, and George Stocking may be correct in writing that it remained the most influential anthropological book for more than 3 decades.

Benedict's Elaborations on Her First Book

The widespread discussions of *Patterns of Culture* were for the most part strongly positive. A principal criticism was that she had misrepresented the Zuni by overlooking discordant elements, but this was shown to be incorrect and valid only for the neighboring Hopi pueblo Indians. During these discussions, she turned to deeper inquiries into two of the fundamental points of the book, one of which concerned variation in the degree of consistency in culture, which she discussed in her 1938 article "Continuities and Discontinuities in Cultural Conditioning." This point may have been inspired by Margaret Mead's fieldwork in Manus, New Guinea. Mead had been Benedict's student, and Benedict greatly admired her innovative and extensive fieldwork. In Manus culture, children were entirely exempt from the sorcery-driven culture of adulthood and learned none of its anxieties. Benedict took as examples of discontinuity not this case but the many societies with age grades. Each age grade—starting usually in late childhood, and graduating to youth, to warrior, to tribal elder—held ceremonies that taught initiates its new requirements, its privileges, and its secret knowledge. Even with radically different behavior requirements, from industry, to aggression, to sacred leadership, over a lifetime, most preliterate societies conducted their members successfully through the changes.

Benedict's second addendum to *Patterns of Culture* turned to research on the opposite side of the coin of relativity—that is, its nonjudgmental stance. In granting respect to any and all cultural arrangements, the concept of cultural relativity logically requires tolerance of many societies which caused suffering to those who had to live within them. For example, some hierarchical societies deprived subordinate members of a sense of worth. By no means did all hierarchies do so: Polynesian, African, and Polish hierarchical cultures each had its particular form of reciprocal behavioral obligations between aristocrats and commoners. An example of culture imposing anxiety was the belief in rampant sorcery in several North American Indian cultures, along with the absence of institutions to control sorcerers. Several more highly organized African societies, she wrote, brought sorcerers into courts and forced confessions. Benedict thought that extensive study of the ethnographic record could show which aspects of cultures supported and benefited their members and which caused a sense of repression, fear, or other detrimental effects that the society did not constructively cope with. She worked out comparisons of these factors in several cultures already well described in the ethnographic literature in these dimensions, making her comparisons in articles in *Frontiers of Democracy* (1941, Volume 7, pp. 110–112), *American Scholar* (1942, Volume 11, pp. 243–248), and *Atlantic Monthly* (1942, Volume 169, pp. 756–763) and in unpublished lectures of the same period, which are now accessible in her archived works at Vassar College. The social condition elaborated most she called "a sense of being free." She did not write of freedom itself, which is difficult to define in social dimensions given the ubiquitous constraints of social life. A "sense of being free," she wrote, could be achieved in many diverse types of society. Indeed, democracy, often characteristic of small societies, was not a guarantee of a sense of freedom if the society lacked institutions to control an internal aggressor. A level of institutionally developed social control was necessary to generate and protect the sense of being free.

Benedict's writings on the protections of freedom and security long predated the current related research topic, violations of human rights, and her method differed from the particularistic approach taken currently. Her research was comparative and universalistic, and more distanced from policy. It would be a good framework for the particularistic studies.

National Cultures

In the early 1940s debates about postwar political policies, Benedict began thinking in terms of national

cultures. She warned against trying to democratize Eurasian countries because they typically had effective local governance exercised by clan leaders and supported by strong clan loyalty, institutions that could effectively resist intrusion from national-level organization. North Atlantic political institutions for achieving national policies by means of majority and minority negotiation and compromise, in contrast, were not challenged by strong community organization as in many Eurasian societies. Benedict's examples of the Eurasian pattern were from ethnographies of Chinese counties, where the system extended to quite large units, from Indian and Polish villages, and from the traditional Russian *Mir*, or village council. The Eurasian pattern is evident currently in tribal activism in Middle Eastern conflicts. Here again, her thinking was broadly comparativist and holistic. It was presented in an article in *Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Sciences* in 1943.

Before World War II, the fields later called area studies and national culture hardly existed, and they were created as disciplines of research largely by the wartime need for information about enemy and allied cultures. Engagement with allies required more knowledge about their mores, and enemy cultures had to be understood to propagandize, conquer, and occupy them and to design workable military government during occupation. The Office of War Information (OWI) assigned Ruth Benedict to research reports on the local customs of Germans, Italians, and Netherlanders. She was assigned larger scale studies of Romania and Thailand. Her major assignment was Japanese culture. Her library sources were histories, ethnographies, folklore collections, literary works, and traveler's accounts. A rich resource in the literature on these European and Asian societies was collections of their proverbs, a folk form found widely in Old World cultures. Wartime allowed no fieldwork, the usual tool of the anthropologist, because of travel restrictions and the urgency for analysis. However, Benedict interviewed nationals of these countries who were living in the United States, and she was credited especially for insights from her Japanese American interviewees.

In her analysis and advice, Benedict argued for retaining the office of emperor as a locus of stability in Japanese society. She showed how their culture honor bound all Japanese in duty to their parents and beyond them to the emperor, and thus knit together the hierarchical social fabric. The emperorship was a deeply embedded institution in the culture, integrated into local social structures and customs as well as in people's sense of duty. Militarism had been a late imposition on it, not an outgrowth. Retention of the office of the emperor was a position many other influential advisers shared, and it became the basis of the U.S. government's eventual surrender and occupation policies.

She published her final OWI report on Japan as *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword* (1946), adding explanations for general readers about the circumstances of her research and prospects for constructive American Japanese relations. The book was quickly translated into Japanese and was widely admired as self-revelatory in Japan. It helped correct American public opinion about "our erstwhile enemy" and about Japanese Americans, whose civil liberties had been violated by rounding them up in internment camps during the war.

Benedict's depiction of Japan showed a high degree of cultural and social integration in a large nation. Nations had been little analyzed anthropologically, but deep integration was not thought expectable in them. Her study was important in this respect and also in being a refinement of her ideas about the relation of individuals to culture. It presented a new model of the "self" in culture. She found that after fulfilling their duty to the emperor and to their parents, and after the heavy obligation of "clearing one's name" from insult, Japanese persons could move on to other "circles" of behavior of enjoyable experience. Japanese childhood was outside the adult obligations, was a time for exuberance and free expression, and set a model for later behavior—"getting the taste out of life," a phrase used by the Japanese. This image of an individual savoring the culture's pleasures after fulfilling obligations described a "self" who learns culture but also uses culture and may manipulate it for benefits, not the earlier idea of culturally imprinted selves. This image could have been cited as a model for the developments of the idea of self that became common in the 1980s and 1990s, but Benedict's model was seldom noted. Furthermore, her analytic use of childhood illustrates a significant difference from many psychological anthropologists: Childhood in Japan, and in Thailand and Romania, cultures she also analyzed for OWI, was a period in a structured life cycle rather than a set of determinative experiences.

Postwar Work

After the focus on political and social values employed in OWI objectives, Benedict next turned to America. She saw deep egalitarianism, not just in the Bill of Rights, but originating in colonists' flight from rigid class systems in Europe to become egalitarian homesteaders here and their reining in of local governmental interference in defense of their independence. Later immigrants used the "liberty and opportunity" deriving from egalitarianism as a means to achievement and to becoming equal Americans. But this young democracy had problems too: "Intolerance of cultural pluralism" was one. Furthermore, children had to learn to act with initiative and independence to become achievers, yet they could not learn these qualities in childhood, when they had to accept the authority and moral judgments of parents. Women had greater freedom than in any other culture, partly because the nuclear family was unencumbered by wider kin ties and so mobile as to seldom have kinsmen nearby. But with such freedom, women neglected potentially useful community roles. This, along with the weakness of local government, meant that constructive social change was not undertaken. In this wide open system, secret societies and, later, interest groups promoted their own benefits and were hard to rein in. Benedict wrote elaborations of these points for diverse forums, including the *Saturday Review of Literature* (1948, Volume 31, Issue 52, pp. 5, 26–28), a proposed Grolier Press encyclopedia that never came to publication for lack of funding in the postwar slump of 1946–1948, and in a paper delivered to a Columbia University faculty symposium in 1948.

In addition to these writings, and to resuming teaching in 1946, she undertook directing a large project, Research in Contemporary Cultures, funded by the Department of Naval Research. In this project, she and numerous colleagues applied Benedict's and her colleagues' methods of analysis to six cultures: Russia, Czechoslovakia, France, East European Jews, China, and Syria. In addition to these two full-time jobs, she addressed several academic conferences in significant papers that are preserved in her archives. She also outlined for her publisher a book to include her Romanian and Thai analyses as well as the very interesting findings already emerging in Research in Contemporary Cultures. At this peak of activity, Ruth Benedict died. Research in Contemporary Cultures had been in full swing for a year and a half under her direction. The work was funded for 3 more years, and numerous project papers were brought to publication.

In her first book, Ruth Benedict had described three cultures that were highly integrated. She acknowledged that this degree of integration was not usual, and she studied cultures that had diverse themes, showing how they could also integrate their more diverse experiences. The integration of ideas and customs was always her cue in analyzing cultural patterns. Overall, she thought of societies as bounded wholes more than many anthropologists did. After her first book, most of her work attempted to bring insights to postwar world problems. She had great hopes for the United Nations and went so far as to write, in a 1942 issue of the *American Scholar*, that the United Nations should have an army and all member nations should disarm and support its negotiating and armed apparatus. She was both an idealist and an acute analyst.

Virginia Heyer Young

See also Boas, Franz; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lowie, Robert; Mead, Margaret; Psychological Anthropology; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Benedict, R. (1934). *Patterns of culture*. New York, NY: Houghton Mifflin.

Benedict, R. (1946). *The chrysanthemum and the sword: Patterns of Japanese culture*. Boston, MA: Houghton Mifflin.

Caffrey, M. M. (1989). *Ruth Benedict: Stranger in this land*. Austin: University of Texas Press.

Kent, P. (1996). Misconceived configurations of Ruth Benedict. *Japan Review, 7,* 33–60.

———. (1999). Japanese perceptions of *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword*. *Dialectical Anthropology, 24*(2), 181–192.

Mead, M. (1959). *An anthropologist at work: The writings of Ruth Benedict*. Boston, MA: Houghton Mifflin.

———. (1974). *Ruth Benedict*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Modell, J. S. (1983). *Ruth Benedict: Patterns of a life*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

Young, V. H. (2005). *Ruth Benedict: Beyond relativity, beyond pattern*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Benjamin, Walter

Walter Benjamin's contribution to the discipline of anthropology is perhaps, given the content and scope of this volume, comparatively large. This is not because Benjamin (1892–1940) was an anthropologist by training or by academic association in any recognizable way, nor is it because his *Gesammelte Schriften* (*Collected Writings*, 1972–1989) addresses the profession of anthropology in any systematic, historical, critical, or even occasional way. Rather, following his own characterization of the work of the 19th-century French poet Charles Baudelaire, we might say that Benjamin preserves the incognito of his own anthropological project so keenly as to render its influence at once everywhere and nowhere at all. Benjamin's enormous body of work takes seriously the etymological meaning of the term *anthropology*: the study of the human in its species being. Indeed, Benjamin's disciplinary contributions might be more readily observed in the fields of literary study and literary theory, media studies, philosophy of language, Jewish theology, or architectural theory, fields in which his work is routinely cited. However, his theories of modernity, his analysis of technology's relation to art and culture, and his contribution to the history of the senses take the emic view of collective life. Benjamin's idiosyncratically conjunctivist methods are meant to picture life under conditions of capitalism from the vantage of a participant observer.

Born on July 15th, 1892, into an assimilated German Jewish family, Walter Bendix Schönflies Benjamin enjoyed the privileges of a fin-de-siècle bourgeois Berlin family lifestyle. Benjamin's father, Emil, a businessman, and mother, Pauline Schönflies, the descendant of a merchant family of the Rhineland, came from relative affluence. The young Benjamin, an invalid and an unremarkable student, attended the Prussian-style gymnasium Kaiser-Friedrich-Schule in the Charlottenburg district of Berlin. In 1904, at the age of 12, Benjamin's parents removed him from school due to his continuing poor health. The mature critic would reflect on this period of quarantine with a sense of wonder and terror in his *Berliner Kindheit um neunzehnhundert* (*Berlin Childhood Around 1900*), published posthumously in 1950. Subsequently, Benjamin spent 2 years attending a rural boarding school) in Thuringia, central Germany. He returned to the Kaiser-Friedrich-Schule and earned his *Abitur* (high school certificate) in 1912. In April of the same year, Benjamin began his studies at the University of Freiburg. There, he would receive his early training in German literary study, psychology, and philosophy. Later, during his studies at the University of Munich, among the Marburg school of neo-Kantian philosophers, Benjamin would develop an interest in Husserl's phenomenological program, philosophy's claims to science, and the study of formal logic, interests that, along with his participation in Germany's national youth movement, would cast a great influence on his early writings.

The Anthropology of Language

Perhaps the most recognizable connections to anthropology, at least in its early disciplinary history, are developed in an unexpected place, Benjamin's language theory. The 1916 text *Über Sprache überhaupt und über die Sprache des Menschen* (On Language as Such and on the Language of Men), written during a course of study with the philologist and scholar of Andean art Walter Lehman, offers the most comprehensive account of the origin of language as it relates to the divine acts of naming in Genesis, the cultural conventions of early Judaism, and the animistic beliefs of primitive cultures. Benjamin suggests that "language as such" does not serve an agenda of rational communication: Rather, it communicates, and can only communicate, itself. The formulation is no less striking than it is obvious: Man must transmit language to himself. Indeed, the persistence of "languages of man" bears perpetual witness to a fact of "language as such." Linguistic being is in this way made to coincide with species being: "Language as such" names nothing other than this tradition, a language that no one *speaks* per se and yet is *spoken* everywhere. That "language as such" is conceived of as a tradition means that generations of speakers must each pass through the alembic of acquisition. In a suite of essays, "Doctrine of the Similar" and "On the Mimetic Faculty," Benjamin develops in detail the nature of this passage. Following the intuitions of Lucien Lévy-Bruhl's *Les fonctions mentales dans les societies inférieures* (*How Natives Think*), Benjamin turns to primitive forms of ritual, dance, and play, and early-childhood forms of imitation to better understand how man first did, and continues

to, acquire language. It is in this pursuit of nonlinguistic modes of being and behavior that Benjamin discovers a strikingly original onomatopoetic relation to the world; the language of man, Benjamin asserts, translates natural, spontaneous, and magical signs into those that are repeatable, conventional, and arbitrary. Indeed, the language of man renews the primitive act of interpreting and imitating nature, only now by a set of codes that render it the mimesis of something entirely nonsensual. This original insight is communicated across a range of contexts that exceed its linguistic source. Indeed, the hermeneutical analysis to which Benjamin submits a whole variety of cultural phenomena might be described as an effort to discern the secrets of their fundamentally obscure presentation.

The Concept of History

The majority of Benjamin's wildly diverse writings saw publication only in posthumous form: first, in the incomplete edition of his *Schriften* (*Writings*, 1955) and, later, in the influential collection *Illuminationen: Ausgewählte Schriften* (1961), translated into English by Harry Zohn and published with an introduction by Hannah Arendt as *Illuminations: Reflections and Essays* in 1968. Benjamin's acclaim as a major intellectual of the 20th century was, likewise, only really achieved posthumously. Theodor Adorno's edition of the collected writings helped bring to Benjamin some of the recognition his work now enjoys, but his infamous failure to obtain an academic position, and later his piecemeal work for Frankfurt's Institute for Social Research, rendered marginal his contributions to the intellectual program of the Weimar republic and the Marxist theory of culture for which the Frankfurt school would become known.

Indeed, in 1926, early in his own career, Max Horkheimer, soon to be chair of Frankfurt's department of social philosophy, was asked by the professor of aesthetics, Hans Cornelius, to review the young Benjamin's *Habilitationsschrift* (the second dissertation, which qualifies one for academic appointment in Germany), *Ursprung des deutschen Trauerspiels* (published 2 years later, in 1928, and translated into English as *The Origin of German Tragic Drama* in 1977). Horkheimer read the document but refused to give it a positive recommendation. In a historical irony that Benjamin no doubt would have enjoyed, the spurned text would come to be considered one of his most important contributions to literary study. The book offered a theory of the baroque German *play of mourning* and its relation to the figure of allegory, a symbolic mode in which, as Benjamin suggests, "any person, any object, any relationship can mean absolutely anything else." The study examines the representations of this original undecidability as they are played out by a genre that, distinct from tragedy, offers no necessary resolution to the conflicts it stages. Rather, *Trauerspeil*'s characters wander the densely bureaucratic labyrinth of its productions with but only the faintest hope of an end.

Benjamin (2004) says in a later essay derived from the Trauerspiel book, *Trauerspiel und Tragödie* (Play of Mourning and Tragedy), "Historical time is infinite in every direction and unfulfilled in every moment. This means we cannot conceive of a single empirical event that bears a necessary relation to the time of its occurrence" (p. 55).

The same can be said of artifacts of culture and, in particular, works of art. The consequences of this insight for the practice of criticism are extraordinary. Benjamin at once affirms the necessity of exploring the historical forces and networks in which works of art are composed and yet simultaneously suggests that contextual analysis can never exhaust or give any total meaning to its objects, simply because it could never determine what counts as their "particular historical situation." The infinite task of criticism is then to discover the elements of the new, the *Wahrheitsgehalt* ("truth content"), as they repeat and reformulate themselves across texts in subtle variations. The *Trauerspiel* book constitutes perhaps the most dramatic example of this thesis. Its epistemocritical prologue, written after the study had been completed, reflects on the historical alignment of the 17th and 20th centuries. The critical reading of this set of historical plays, Benjamin claims, should reveal features of our own social and political situation, otherwise entirely opaque to us moderns. The functionaries and sovereigns in the world of the *Trauerspiel* are and are not our own allegorical doubles. We recognize in them the lineaments of our own existence, as if such a future nested intentionally in the plays themselves.

Literature and Media

With the scholarly climate too conservative for his radical thought, and the world of academic appointment

closed after the rejection of his habilitation, Benjamin sunk into a deep depression. The would-be scholar, who was susceptible to lengthy bouts of melancholy throughout his life, spent the winter of 1928 traveling in Russia. The trip yielded the impressionistic essay "Moskau" (Moscow) and other fragments that dramatize the experience of a tourist who could neither speak the language of the city nor interpret its social semiotics.

Alienation and marginality would become central themes in Benjamin's work, along with the consideration of forgotten, deserted, or otherwise unvalued cultural phenomena: including children's books (of which he was an avid collector), defunct optical technologies, and the products of American mass culture. In the discards of Europe, Benjamin discerned the faintly utopian promise of another mode of life beyond the current, depraved state of capitalist development. The fragmentary, seemingly ad hoc manner of composition that would become a signature style of Benjamin's later writing was meant to yield up the flashes of this general insight in truly surprising ways. Perhaps the most accomplished example of this sort of prose collage is Benjamin's book *Einbahnstrasse* (*One Way Street*, 1979), published in the same year as the essay "Moskau." The text, remarkable for its promiscuity of range (it offers acute analyses of topics like the cultural history of German inflation and the detective genre in American letters), attempted to introduce its audience to a new kind of reading experience, less linear than compositional—a practice that must take its bearings from the work's own difficult, antisequential format. In this way, *Einbahnstrasse* takes up a central imperative of Benjamin's career, the innervation and recalibration of the human sensorium, the reconfiguration of its ways of interpreting the world.

The mid-1920s through the early 1930s were enormously productive for Benjamin. In addition to major essays on a range of German authors, from Karl Kraus to Franz Kafka, Benjamin undertook a series of studies in modern and contemporary French literature. This work included a translation of Charles Baudelaire's poem cycle *Tableaux Parisiens*, published with the remarkable essay "Die Aufgabe des Uberstzers" ("The Task of the Translator") as its preface in 1923; an unfinished translation of the first two volumes of Marcel Proust's *In Search of Lost Time*; and essays on French surrealism. He also published, in 1931, "Eine kleine Geschichte der Photographie" (A Little History of Photography). The essay at once gives an overview of the generic and technical histories of the medium. Benjamin relates the art form to the collective impulses and procedures of archivization, memorialization, and reproduction and to the contingency of detail that always permeates any such efforts. But Benjamin does not rest there. Indeed, he argues that the medium furnishes us with an *Optisch-Unbewußt* ("optical unconscious"); that is, it frames and brings to light the heretofore inaccessible image worlds that dwell in the smallest features of our experience.

By 1933, Benjamin had begun to write in an adjunct capacity for the Frankfurt Institut für Sozialforschung (Institute for Social Research), which, along with its principal members, Horkheimer and Adorno, had officially relocated to New York to escape the hostile political climate that had emerged in the wake of Hitler's election to chancellor of Germany. One of Benjamin's earlier studies of French literature, "Zum gegenwärten gesellschaftlichen Standort des französischen Schriftstellers" (The Present Social Situation of the French Writer), written in 1934, appeared in the institute's principal organ, *Zeitschrift für Sozialforschung*, along with two of his most important essays, "Das Kunstwerk im Zeitalter seiner technischen Reproduziertbarkeit" and "Eduard Fuchs, der Sammler und der Historiker" (The Work of Art in the Age of Its Technological Reproducibility and Eduard Fuchs, Collector and Historian, respectively). In 1935, Benjamin became the journal's official "Paris Correspondent for French Literature," a position that defrayed some of the costs of his exile in France and provided him with a venue for his work.

Indeed, Benjamin spent most of the period between 1935 and 1940 in exile in Paris, attending to his massive, and ultimately unfinished, research project, *Das Passagen Werk* (The Arcades Project). The work was to be an extensive montage of high-capitalist culture, which took its principle of composition from the great steel and glass arcades of 19th-century commercial Paris. At the center of the work were Benjamin's studies of the ur-modernist poet Charles Baudelaire. What Baudelaire's poems ask in their splenetic mode—and Benjamin's work as a whole might be said to ask in an even more extreme fashion—is "What can culture do?" "How can it even survive?" "Why make art in such depraved circumstances?" and "What might a tolerable life be?" The social types who give

voice to these questions, and for whom Benjamin is perhaps best known, the *flaneur*, the sandwich man, the whore, and the gambler, find their fullest articulations in the major work on Baudelaire: "The Paris of the Second Empire in Baudelaire," "Central Park," and *Charles Baudelaire: Ein Lyriker im Zeitalter des Hochkapitalismus* (Charles Baudelaire: A Lyric Poet in the Age of High Capitalism). The anthropology of this work, we might say, consists in Benjamin's imperative to treat his own moment as something no less strange, barbaric, or primitive than his object of historical analysis, the continua of the 19th and 20th centuries, the capitals of France and of Germany.

In June 1940, Nazi forces occupied Paris. Benajmin and his sister escaped to Lourdes, where they made preparations, with the help of Horkheimer and the Frankfurt cum New York Institute, to obtain a visa for emigration to the United States. Benjamin, however, never made it safely out of France. Having failed to obtain a visa in Marseille, from where he was to cross the Pyrenees into Spanish territory, Benjamin attempted to cross the border illegally. On September 25, 1940, the group of refugees with whom he was traveling discovered that the Spanish border town of Port Bou, where they were set to cross into safety, had been closed just days earlier. Fearing extradition to Germany by the French collaborationist authorities and internment in a concentration camp, Benjamin took the lethal dose of morphine he had been carrying with him for emergency use. He died the next morning, September 26, 1940. Soon after his death, the Port Bou border was reopened, and European refugees from the Nazi campaign were once more permitted to cross into Spain.

The great unfinished Arcades Project, entrusted to the French philosopher and librarian Georges Bataille by Benjamin before he fled Paris, to be hidden away in the recesses of the Bibliothèque Nationale, memorializes a set of long-standing concerns for the anthropological: man's particular, historical, and species life. The project's final, fragmentary form at once gives expression to the radical aesthetic intentions of Benjamin's work, to his effort to defamiliarize and resensitize the phenomenology of modernity, and to the dangerous, interruptive, and exigent circumstances of his own life.

Daniel R. Braun

See also Critical Theory; Cultural Materialism; Modernism; Phenomenology; Semiotics

Further Readings

Benjamin, A., & Osborne, P. (Ed.). (1994). *Walter Benjamin's philosophy: Destruction and experience.* New York, NY: Routledge.

Benjamin, W. (2004). *Selected writings: Vol. 1. 1913–1926* (M. W. Jennings & M. Bullock, Eds.). Boston, MA: Harvard University Press.

Ferris, D. (Ed.). (1996). *Walter Benjamin: Theoretical questions.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Jennings, M. (1987). *Dialectical images: Walter Benjamin's theory of literary criticism.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Menninghaus, W. (1980). *Walter Benjamins theorie der sprachmagie* [Walter Benjamin's theory of linguistic magic]. Frankfurt on the Main, Germany: Suhrkamp.

Nägele, R. (Ed.). (1988). *Benjamin's ground: New readings of Walter Benjamin.* Detroit, MI: Wayne State University Press.

Nordquist, J. (1989). *Walter Benjamin: A bibliography.* Santa Cruz, CA: Reference and Research Service.

Redslob, B. (1992). *Auswahlbibliographie* [Selective bibliography]. In U. Steiner (Ed.), *Walter Benjamin 1892–1940* (pp. 401–422). Bern, Switzerland: Lang.

Richter, G. (2000). *Walter Benjamin and the corpus of autobiography.* Detroit, MI: Wayne State University Press.

Special Benjamin issues: *New German Critique, 17* (1979); *34* (1985); *39* (1986); and *48* (1989)

Binford, Lewis R.

Lewis Roberts Binford (1931–2011) was perhaps best known for his profound impact on the discipline of archaeology. He played a key role in the transformation of archaeology from a particularistic study of select artifacts and human constructions to a holistic and scientific examination of past human behavior. Binford's epistemological approach essentially expanded the scope of social and cultural anthropological theory to encompass the entire span of human evolution. In fact, a portion of his archaeological research examined the very origins of "culture" itself. The following discussion, however, focuses primarily on his contributions to anthropological theory.

Biography and Definitive Works

Binford was born in Norfolk, Virginia, in 1931. During the Depression, he spent many hours hunting, fishing, and canoeing with his father in the Dismal Swamp near Norfolk. It was here that he learned about the wildlife, archaeology, and Native American history of this diverse region. Binford started college at Virginia Polytechnic Institute before enlisting in the U.S. Army. He was assigned to an army language school in California, where he completed an intensive course in Japanese. He then served as an interpreter in Japan and was assigned to work alongside several anthropologists who were involved in a large resettlement program on the Ryukyu Islands. Through this experience, Binford became interested in anthropology and archaeology. He went on to work in Okinawa, coordinating the remuneration of local communities, studying traditional house construction, and carrying out "rescue archaeology," when he assisted in relocating tombs that were being moved for military construction.

After his discharge, Binford completed college at the University of North Carolina (BA in 1957) and went on to pursue graduate studies at the University of Michigan (MA in 1958 and PhD in 1964). After completing his degree, Binford went on to have a distinguished teaching career at numerous universities, including the University of Michigan (1960–1961), the University of Chicago (1961–1965), the University of California–Santa Barbara (1965–1966), the University of California–Los Angeles (1966–1968), the University of New Mexico (1968–1991), and Southern Methodist University (1991–2003). While at the University of Chicago, Binford assembled his first cadre of graduate students, including Mel Aikens, Les Freeman, James Hill, Kent Flannery, Richard Gould, Bill Longacre, Tom Lynch, Christopher Peebles, Bob Whallon, Henry Wright, and others. Binford ultimately served as dissertation advisor for more than 79 students. His epistemological perspective and the results of his research are presented in 23 authored and coedited books and monographs, as well as in 141 journal articles, book chapters, reviews, and comments.

Two of his earliest publications, *Archaeology as Anthropology* (1962) and *Archaeological Perspectives* (1966), laid the groundwork for reorienting American archaeology and the discipline of archaeology in general. Binford forcefully argued that archaeologists should abandon the idealist concept of culture based on "shared ideas, norms, and traditions." He chose to adopt the anthropologist Leslie White's view that culture was a nongenetic means of responding to the challenges posed by both the biophysical and the social environment. White had also emphasized the thermodynamic, systemic nature of culture and the significance of energy capture for understanding cultural evolution and complexity. Binford saw that this perspective possessed considerable explanatory power and would serve anthropological archaeology quite well.

Previously, archaeologists and other social scientists had assumed that much of the past was unknowable. Binford, on the other hand, argued enthusiastically that all cultures are systems within which food getting, technology, social and political organization, trade, religion, and ideology are all intricately interconnected. Change within any one subsystem reverberates through all of the other, interrelated subsystems. Given this view, artifacts and associated materials could then be seen as the material correlates of a full range of past human activities. The major challenge that then confronted all archaeologists was to utilize the static remains that exist in the present to evaluate their arguments about the behavioral dynamics of past societies.

Theoretical Contributions to Anthropology

During the 1960s, American archaeology began to undergo a fundamental shift. The traditional working definition of culture and the "space-time" taxonomic systems for ordering archaeological information were recognized as inadequate. Archaeology, at this point, was like a language with an ever-expanding vocabulary but without a grammar! A significant paradigm shift was required to make more effective, and more productive, the use of archaeological "facts." It was time for a new synthesis, and Binford led the charge.

Binford's first major step toward building anthropological theory and reshaping American archaeology was his doctoral research. His dissertation, *Archaeological and Ethnohistorical Investigations of Cultural Diversity and Progressive Development Among Aboriginal Cultures of Coastal Virginia and North Carolina* (1964), focused on the South Atlantic Slope Culture area defined by the anthropologist A. E. Kroeber in 1939. This region lay between

the Blue Ridge Mountains and the coastal plains and had been occupied historically by the Nottaway, Powhatan, Nansemond, Chowan, Tuscarora, and Meherrin. This culture area was both culturally and ecologically diverse. Native populations made use of a variety of food-getting technologies to obtain their food by means of hunting, gathering, fishing, and cultivating domestic crops. These Native American groups were also organized into a diverse array of sociopolitical systems.

Binford set out to make use of historical records and on-the-ground reconnaissance in order to identify archaeological sites that could be linked reliably to known tribal or ethnic groups in the region. The methodology is known as the *direct historical approach*. His ultimate goal was to study Native American cultural complexity and its causal linkages to the productivity of natural food resources such as plants, deer, bear, and migratory or anadramous fish throughout the piedmont region. This approach reflects a significant departure from the idealist view of culture (i.e., ideas drive and shape behavior) used by both anthropologists and archaeologists at that time because it causally linked the variation in biotic variables to the levels of complexity in cultural systems recorded in historic documents. Binford then used rich ethnohistorical literature to develop quantitative measures of cultural complexity based on tribal territory size, population density and distribution, settlement types and patterns, and degree of subsistence specialization. He found, for example, that the numbers of status positions as well as the population densities within these societies were highly correlated with fishing efficiency (the numbers of fish caught with devices and nets). Furthermore, Binford found that the Powhatan, who were characterized by the most complex sociocultural organization, had established clusters of villages and hamlets within the productive transition zone between freshwater and brackish-water habitats.

Much of Binford's research and writing to follow were devoted to constructing the epistemology and methodology for anthropological archaeology. He proceeded to develop research methods for archaeologists, involving statistical analyses, sampling, site survey and research designs, actualistic or experimental studies, and ethnoarchaeology (archaeologists studying the material remains generated by contemporary groups). It was also during this time that Binford began to give greater attention to the philosophy of science and to deal with questions like "How do archaeologists know what they know?" and "How do they gain greater confidence in our knowledge about the past?" Binford cautioned, for example, that archaeologists must make careful use of ethnographic information and analogies. Once formal similarities are recognized between certain archaeological observations and relevant ethnographic records, archaeologists should then deduce a series of interrelated hypotheses that can be tested using archaeological data. In addition, archaeologists should expect to find patterns of past human behavior that are not represented by ethnographic analogs. During the 1970s, Binford began a long-term ethnoarchaeological study of caribou exploitation among the Nunamiut Eskimo of the Brooks Range in northern Alaska. One of the ultimate goals of this field research was to understand the behavioral dynamics that generated bone assemblages in the archaeological record. This investigation is also a very significant contribution to the anthropology of Arctic hunters. It provides invaluable insights into the exigencies of human adaptation to extreme environmental conditions, and it isolates the underlying reasons why a given behavioral strategy is employed in a given situation. Should caribou be butchered to derive select anatomical parts, or should the hunters strive to make use of the entire animal? What anatomical elements of the caribou provide the greatest amount of fat and therefore the greatest number of food calories? Under what environmental conditions do hunter-gatherers implement food storage? These are anthropological insights that are frequently not documented in traditional ethnographies.

In 2001, Binford published a major synthesis of his global study of hunter-gatherers, titled *Constructing Frames of Reference: An Analytical Method for Archaeological Theory Building Using Ethnographic and Environmental Data Sets*. This monumental study mirrors the general questions and rudimentary methods utilized in his dissertation nearly 4 decades earlier. Yet this research was conducted on a global scale, and it involved analyses of a comprehensive, comparative database, including 339 hunter-gatherer groups from the Americas, Greenland, Africa, India, Siberia, Japan, Southeast Asia, and Australia. These contemporary ethnographic cases were used to project estimates of population size and density for major biomes throughout the world. He concluded that the earth could have

supported about 7 million hunter-gatherers prior to the appearance of farming and herding. Binford then constructed a "terrestrial model" that utilized measures of plant and animal productivity to calculate independent estimates of population sizes and densities for any given location on the earth. Additionally, 15 variables related to demography, subsistence, group size, and mobility derived from the historical and anthropological variables were, in turn, analyzed in relation to a diverse array of climatic and ecological variables (e.g., latitude, longitude, mean annual temperature and bio-temperature, mean annual rainfall, net annual plant productivity, and water balance). These variables had been calculated for 1,429 weather stations around the world.

Binford utilized the terrestrial model to generate 21 "empirical generalizations" about hunter-gatherer adaptations. Yet it should be emphasized that the relevance of the variables initially used by Binford was grounded in ecological and anthropological theory. He found, for example, that sedentary groups do not rely on terrestrial game animals. This is understandable given the high energetic costs of meat transport in the absence of dogs, sleds, watercraft, or horses. He was then in a position to generate expectations about resource intensification and transitions from preferred ungulate hunting to more intensive food-getting strategies based on plant gathering and processing, aquatic resources, plant cultivation, or pastoralism. By extension, Binford's terrestrial hunter-gatherer model possesses sufficient power to explain behavioral shifts toward other food-getting strategies.

Conclusions

Binford challenged anthropologists and archaeologists to expand the scope of their research, to develop more rigorous methodologies for data collection and analysis, and to think more critically. Science is a marathon without a finish line. Our understanding of past and present human behavior and cultural systems does not come easily. Social scientists can produce reliable knowledge by means of an iterative process that involves generating, testing, and refining (or rejecting) explanatory models. These models are, then, combined to construct scientific theories. The robust consequences of these theories are then continually scrutinized and evaluated. Binford continually made use of the complex web of what we know to define better what we do not understand about the external world. He demonstrated how social scientists should make use of models and theories to identify productive anthropological and archaeological research questions, to construct causal arguments, and to evaluate those arguments by means of rigorous, structured observation and analysis. And he reminded us later in his life that theory building is not for the timid or faint of heart.

Alan J. Osborn

See also Cultural Ecology; Sahlins, Marshall; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Binford, L. R. (1980). Willow smoke and dogs' tails: Hunter-gatherer settlement systems and archaeological site formation. *American Antiquity, 45,* 4–20.

———. (1983). *In pursuit of the past: Decoding the archaeological record*. London, UK: Thames & Hudson.

———. (2004). Beliefs about death, behavior, and mortuary practices among hunter-gatherers. In J. F. Cherry, C. Scarre, & S. Shennan (Eds.), *Explaining social change: Studies in honour of Colin Renfrew* (pp. 1–15). Cambridge, UK: University of Cambridge.

———. (2004). Niche: A productive guide for use in the analysis of cultural complexity. In A. Johnson (Ed.), *Processual archaeology: Exploring analytical strategies, frames of reference, and culture process* (pp. 297–314). Westport, CT: Praeger.

Johnson, A. L. (Ed.). (2004). *Processual archaeology: Exploring analytical strategies, frames of reference, and culture process*. Westport, CT: Praeger.

Meltzer, D. J. (2011). *Lewis Roberts Binford, 1931–2011: A biographical memoir.* Washington, DC: National Academy of Sciences.

Biography/Life Writing

Among other forms of life writing—autobiography, autoethnography, personal narratives, and life histories—biography (*bios graphia*) has long been a key method in writing anthropology. Biography examines the relationship between life and theory, the intersections of ideas with lives. Sources include letters, diaries, memoirs, field notes, and ethnographic writing. Biography also incorporates an oral dimension: conversations with the subject and with others about the subject to record memories and anecdotes.

Biography explores anthropology's foundational ideas through case studies of individual lives, situating them in broad historical currents and cultural movements. Franz Boas's discovery of the paradox of human sameness amid the plurality of cultures has, for example, been biographically traced to his personal experiences—of Inuit communality, of 19th-century German anti-Semitism, of American anti-immigration—and linked to his affinity for the aesthetics and politics of Romanticism and his revolt against Enlightenment universalism. Virginia Kerns, in her biography of Julian Steward, uncovered the roots of Steward's theory of the patrilineal band—as the primordial unit of human social organization—in his autobiographical memory of adolescence as a member of a band of boys at the Deep Springs Valley residential school in the California desert, a masculine sociality he reproduced in the student circles of male veterans who dominated post–World War II American universities. Pierre Bourdieu's theory of habitus and his idea of reflexivity have been biographically traced, through his own autobiographical writing, to his experiences of culture and class as his life trajectory took him from rural France, to postcolonial Algeria, to the Paris academy.

The biographical method illuminates anthropological thought and practice through its application not only to central figures in the discipline but also to those who led careers at its margins. Examples here are studies of the work of scholars such as Arnold Van Gennep and Ruth Landes. Van Gennep's idea of rites of passage is central in anthropology, but he remained self-employed outside the discipline; Landes, whose early-20th-century experiments in autoethnographic writing were at the time critiqued as unscientific, may now be seen as a pioneer of the self-reflexivity that has become an expected component of ethnography since the 1980s. Biography of lives lived on the edges of anthropology reveals ways in which professionalizing anthropology in the university created a canon of thought through processes of inclusion and exclusion. Boas and Ruth Benedict, based at Columbia University, strategically expanded the influence of Boasian anthropology by selecting their students' dissertation topics and placing the students at key institutions on graduation—Alfred Kroeber at Berkeley, for example. Biographical research documents how anthropologists located at those universities that train cohorts of PhD students have also played determining roles in the directions the anthropological canon has taken.

Biography and nation is another important intersection. Nancy Lutkehaus's biographical study of Margaret Mead as an American icon analyzes the central themes of Mead's writing—nurture and nature, the search for a better life—as reflections of 20th-century American values. Biographical writing by indigenous anthropologists and by anthropologists in Brazil, Mexico, Japan, India, and elsewhere further reveals the role national and/or postcolonial locations play in defining anthropology and sparks debate about the possibility of world anthropology or other anthropologies.

Gender and biography intersect in anthropology. Career stability makes building a personal archive possible. More men than women anthropologists have held secure academic positions, and wives have often worked as assistants, editors, and managers of archives, creating more extensive primary sources for future biographers of male anthropologists. Mead's curation of Benedict's archive (and of her own) is an exception. Feminist scholars have consciously chosen to work with the fragmented assemblages of women's biographical materials, analyzing those fragments as autobiographical.

Anthropology's central method—participant observation—is itself a biographical experience. Anthropologists record moments of epiphany during fieldwork in memoirs, diaries, fiction, and ethnography. In a diary kept during 1883–1884, the year he lived with Inuit on Baffin Island, Boas marveled at the "civilized" communal sharing of meat after the hunt, behavior that in his view contradicted the then prevailing ideas of primitivism and cultural evolution. Raymond Firth's extensive ethnographic record based on long-term fieldwork in Tikopia traces his move to humanism away from Malinowskian functionalism. Biography also reveals how autobiographical experience may overrule empirical evidence: Kerns writes that although Steward was never able to find the patrilineal band in field research, his autobiographical memory led him to continue to argue its centrality in the history of human social organization.

Life writing through the "life history" method has also long been a feature of ethnography. Boas established the recording of oral narratives of Native American elders as a central method in both field research and writing. Life histories remained

important throughout 20th-century anthropology. Examples include Sidney Mintz's biography of a Puerto Rican migrant worker, Oscar Lewis's life histories of Mexican families, and Ruth Behar's life of a Mexican market woman. Barbara Myerhoff pioneered dialogical life writing, intertwining her telling of the life of a Jewish American immigrant tailor with reflections about her own relationship to Judaism. To write about the lives of Yukon aboriginal women, Julie Cruikshank experimented with writing oral forms of storytelling. Serving as scribes of marginalized lives, Nancy Scheper-Hughes has narrated the lives of mothers in a Brazilian shantytown who delay bonding with newborns, and Philippe Bourgois has recorded the narratives of crack dealers in Harlem.

Finally, the critical reflexivity of postcolonial anthropology has renewed interest in biography. To transcend self/other dichotomies, phenomenological approaches focus on lived experience, and ethnography locates once others as subjects—placing anthropologists in relation to, not outside, their object of study. In the 21st century, as anthropology seeks new knowledge through collaboration and cotheorizing, life writing as reflexive practice is key to its realization.

Sally Cole

See also Autoethnography; Boas, Franz; Bourdieu, Pierre; Firth, Raymond; Mead, Margaret; Mintz, Sidney; Scheper-Hughes, Nancy; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Cole, S. (2003). *Ruth Landes: A life in anthropology.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Gordon, R., Lyons, A. P., & Lyons, H. D. (Eds.). (2011). *Fifty key anthropologists.* London, UK: Routledge.

Kerns, V. (2003). *Scenes from the high desert: Julian Steward's life and theory.* Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Lutkehaus, N. C. (2008). *Margaret Mead: The making of an American icon.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Bloch, Maurice

Maurice Bloch (1939–) has worked mainly in religion, rituals, power, cognition, and economic exchange. He is among the pioneers of the French Marxist tradition in British anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

Bloch was born in 1939 in Caen, France. He had a mixed family background as his great-grandfather was a miller from Lorraine while his grandmother's family were Sephardic Jews, originally from Portugal, who lived in Bordeaux. His mother's mother was a niece of Émile Durkheim as well as a first cousin of Marcel Mauss. Bloch had a chance to meet Mauss near the end of Mauss's life. During World War II, Bloch's father was arrested and killed by the Nazis, and his mother, a marine biologist, was held in Auschwitz along with other scientists and forced to do laboratory research for the Nazis. Bloch was protected by one of his father's friends during this period. After the war, his mother married John S. Kennedy, a British biologist.

Bloch attended Lycée Carnot in Paris but moved to Britain at the age of 11 along with his parents and joined the Perse School in Cambridge. At the Perse, he was inspired by his history teacher John Tanfield and by Douglas Brown, who taught him English literature. He also developed an interest in classical music, with Olivier Messiaen and Benjamin Britten being among his favorites. He entered the London School of Economics to study anthropology as an undergraduate, where he was inclined toward Maurice Freedman and Burton Benedict, who worked on the cultures of China, and Mauritius and Seychelles, respectively. During this period, he was also inspired by Mary Douglas at University College London and Adrian Mayer at the School of Oriental and African Studies, where he had gone to study linguistics. In addition to academics, he also acted in plays, usually French, at the university. Bloch was also involved in politics during his time at university, supporting the anticolonial struggles in Algeria, India, and China. After completing his undergraduate studies in 1961, he went to France to oppose the Algerian and Vietnam wars.

Bloch attended Cambridge University for his PhD, initially working with Meyer Fortes and the French anthropologist Germaine Dieterlen. Bloch was interested in working in India due to his earlier inspiration from Adrian Mayer's work, but his funding required that he work in Africa, and he decided to work in Madagascar. He conducted his

field research in Madagascar from 1964 to 1966. Initially, Bloch carried out his research under the supervision of Audrey Richards, who had experience working with sub-Saharan African communities. At a later stage, he was supervised by Stanley Jeyaraja Tambiah, a specialist on Thailand and Sri Lanka. Bloch also had a chance to discuss his work with other pioneering social anthropologists at Cambridge like Edmund Leach and Raymond Firth. Caroline Humphrey, Marilyn Strathern, Andrew Strathern, Adam Kuper, Jim Faris, and Jonathan Parry were among his fellow PhD students.

Bloch completed his PhD in 1967. His doctoral thesis, *The Significance of Tombs and Ancestral Villages for Merina Social Organization*, focused on the tombs and kinship organization in Madagascar and was later published by Seminar Press as *Placing the Dead: Tombs, Ancestral Villages and Kinship Organization in Madagascar*. He was a lecturer at the University of Wales, Swansea, in 1967 and 1968, but in 1969, he accepted a lectureship at the London School of Economics, where his colleagues were Maurice Freedman, Lucy Mair, Jean La Fontaine, Ioan Lewis, and Peter Loizos. Bloch developed friendships with Alfred Gell and Olivia Harris, who were graduate students at the LSE at that time. In 1970, Bloch moved to the University of California at Berkeley, where he became interested in the work of linguists and of philosophers such as John Searle, leading him to study cognitive sciences. Not comfortable in the United States because of his Marxist links in France, Bloch returned to the LSE, where he continued to work on language and cognition. His article "Symbols, Song, Dance and Features of Articulation" (1974), on the criticism of semantics, has been widely read.

Bloch returned to Berkeley in 1974–1975, where he was influenced by cognitive anthropologists such as George Lakoff and Paul Kay. He was visiting professor at the Johns Hopkins University in Baltimore and the New School for Social Research in New York, but since 1976, his career has been almost entirely at the LSE, where he was promoted to Reader in 1976. Bloch has also taught and has been an occasional visiting professor at Paris West University Nanterre La Défense, University of Stockholm, and National Ethnology Museum of Japan, among others. He was appointed as full professor at the LSE in 1983 and elected a fellow of the British Academy in 1990.

Currently, Bloch is emeritus professor at the LSE and an associate member of the Institut Jean Nicod of the École Normale Supérieure in Paris. In addition to the many students he has supervised, his writings have been translated into at least 12 different languages.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Bloch has published books in both French and English and more than 100 articles relating to ritual, power, kinship, economics, religion, and money.

French Marxism and Structuralism in British Anthropology

Although Bloch was educated in the British anthropological traditions, he has long been connected with French Marxist movements. On the one hand, he was interested in the structuralism of Claude Lévi-Strauss, while on the other, he was influenced by several French Marxist writers with whom he had personal relations, including Maurice Godelier and Emmanuel Terray. Bloch organized a session at the conference of the Association of Social Anthropologists in 1973, in which French Marxists and British anthropologists discussed various theoretical interests. He tried to use the approaches of Marxist anthropology and Lévi-Strauss's structuralism alongside the then dominant paradigms in Britain, like methodological individualism and structural functionalism. The influence of Lévi-Strauss is particularly strong in *Placing the Dead*, where Bloch interpreted kinship organization as a schema of elementary structures. Anthropologists have different responses toward Marxism and Marxist analyses depending on the traditions they were trained in or the communities they have been working with, as Bloch demonstrated in his detailed description of Marxist analysis, *Marxist Analyses and Social Anthropology* (1975), and in *Marxism and Anthropology: The History of a Relationship* (1983). Marxist tradition was declining in France when Bloch was initially working through a French Marxist approach in British anthropology. However, Bloch persisted in a Marxist approach in his work on the representation of money and economic exchange, particularly in his book *Money and the Morality of Exchange*, coedited with Jonathan Parry, and the article "Zafimaniry Debt and Credit."

Ritual and Power in Madagascar

Bloch worked with two communities in Madagascar: a rice cultivating peasant community in central Imerina and the forest people of Zafimaniry. In *Placing the Dead: Tombs, Ancestral Villages and Kinship Organization in Madagascar*, Bloch presented the reinterpretive power of rituals in relation to ancestral tombs in central Imerina. Later in 1983, in *Death and the Regeneration of Life*, a volume of essays he coedited with Jonathan Parry, he discusses the role of women in funerary practices, in particular the dominant role of women in mourning and death rituals. Although Bloch worked on various topics ranging from linguistics to cognition and from money to morality, the study of rituals, religion, and power has been the focus of most of his works. In *From Blessing to Violence: History and Ideology in the Circumcision Ritual of the Merina of Madagascar* (1986), Bloch offered a concrete and influential neo-Marxist theory of ritual and power. He describes that, on the one hand, the circumcision ritual starts with blessings from God but ends with symbolic and physical violence and, on the other, at times, it symbolizes the mystic transmission of the moral identity from the descent group and then is used to legitimize and celebrate the dominance of one group of Merina over other Merina or non-Merina groups. He developed this theory further in *Ritual, History and Power: Selected Papers in Anthropology* (1989). As a further development in his approach toward ritual and violence, he synthesized a radical theory of religion in *Prey Into Hunter: The Politics of Religious Experience* in 1992, interpreting rituals as a denial of the transience of life and human institutions through sacrifice. Bloch published several articles, like "'Eating' Young Men Among the Zafimaniry," to further explain his ideas on power, rituals, and violence.

Bloch continuously used a historical approach of studying rituals and religion. In his article "Why Religion Is Nothing Special but Is Central" (2008), Bloch challenged the popular notion in anthropology that religion evolved as it promoted social bonding. He, instead, stressed that the development of brain architecture and power to imagine nonexistent things and beings transformed the nature of society, including religion. His stance was debated in anthropological as well as other intellectual spheres, since many anthropologists have been stressing the evolution of religion alongside technological or cultural development primarily for social bonding.

Cognition, Memory, and Culture

Bloch developed an interest in studying language and cognition at a very early stage during the time he spent at Berkeley. In that era, due to the works of scholars such as George Lakoff and Noam Chomsky, new dimensions in linguistics and cognitive psychology were being studied. Bloch's interest in child development also drew him closer to psychologists like Susan Carey, Dan Sperber, and Paul Harris. Bloch wrote *Political Language, Oratory, and Traditional Society* in 1975, which is considered one of the landmark books on political language in non-Western cultures.

Many anthropologists focus on the role of culture in studying language, while psychologists give primary importance to cognition and memory. Bloch, however, tried to balance the role in both disciplines of culture and cognition in understanding language. He has dealt with memory and cognition from a variety of theoretical and methodological perspectives. In "The Past and the Present in the Present" (1977), Bloch examined the cultural as well as the cognitive aspects of language while studying the temporal expressions of memory. In 1991, in "Language, Anthropology, and Cognitive Science," he advocated interdisciplinary approaches in the social and cognitive sciences. *Essays on Cultural Transmission* (2005) was another provocative work because of its call for a partnership between anthropology and cognitive psychology. In his recent works, like *The Blob* (2011) and *Reconciling Social Science and Cognitive Science Notions of the "Self"* (2010), Bloch reasserted this position. Bloch's approach, particularly in the studies of rituals, language, and cognition, has had a continuing influence in different domains of anthropological queries.

Muhammad Aurang Zeb Mughal

See also Cambridge University; Cognitive Anthropology; Godelier, Maurice; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; London School of Economics; Marxist Anthropology; Structuralism

Further Readings

Bloch, M. Interview by Alan Macfarlane on 29th May 2008 (S. Harrison, Ed.). DSpace at Cambridge,

University of Cambridge. Retrieved from http://www.dspace.cam.ac.uk/bitstream/1810/198365/1/bloch.txt

Boden, M. A. (2006). *Mind as machine: A history of cognitive science* (Vol. 2, p. 526). Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Houtman, G. (1988). Interview with Maurice Bloch. *Anthropology Today, 4*(1), 18–21.

Kaaristo, M. (2008). The reluctant anthropologist: An interview with Maurice Bloch. *Eurozine*. Retrieved from http://www.eurozine.com/articles/2008–02–28-bloch-en.html

Kuper, A. (1983). *Anthropology and anthropologists: The modern British school*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Bloomfield, Leonard

Leonard Bloomfield (1887–1949) was an American pioneer of structural linguistics. Bloomfield came from a high-achieving intellectual family of Austrian Jewish origin and grew up in the hotel business. He was educated at Harvard and first specialized in Germanic languages, writing about Germanic secondary ablaut for his PhD. He continued to work on these topics through his career, teaching German at the University of Illinois, later teaching Germanic philology at Ohio State University and the University of Chicago, sometimes writing articles in German, and writing a textbook of Dutch (Bloomfield, 1944). He was later to turn his flair for practical linguistics to the U.S. war effort, producing a textbook and a grammatical sketch of Russian for the Army Specialist Training Program. He taught for most of his career at the University of Chicago, moving to Yale as Sterling Professor in 1940. Bloomfield wrote the *Call*, the academic proclamation that led to the founding of the Linguistic Society of America in 1925, publishing the first article in its journal *Language*. A paralyzing stroke in 1946 ended his career; and he died in New Haven, Connecticut, in 1949. His student Bernard Bloch published Bloomfield's obituary in the journal *Language* in 1949.

Cautious, reserved, uncharismatic but kindly (and with a whimsical and occasionally scabrous sense of humor), Bloomfield made quiet but massive contributions to general linguistics, and Austronesian and Americanist linguistics, all written in immediately comprehensible prose. His work in general linguistics includes two introductions to the field, *An Introduction to the Study of Language*, published in 1914, and the much longer *Language*, published in 1933; the latter work is still in print, and its account of processes in historical linguistics was long taken as the best introduction to the field. Bloomfield's earlier work reflects his interest in the psychological theories of Wilhelm Wundt; his later philosophical position was less dogmatic, and he showed much interest in behaviorism as posited by A. P. Weiss. Bloomfield's cautiousness about describing the semantics or system of meaning of a language with the same degree of scientific rigor as its grammatical structure was often misunderstood by critics as perpetuating an antimentalist view of language, in which semantics was excluded. This was not the case. He spent much time putting his ideas to practical effect, employing linguistic methods in attempts to enable English-speaking children to learn to read effectively.

His Austronesian works are few, principally comprising some work on Ilocano of the northern Philippines and a collection of texts, with grammatical description and glossary, of Manila Tagalog. Like the Ilocano sketch, this was based on fieldwork with a consultant, in this latter case a trainee architect at the University of Chicago, who dictated these texts to Bloomfield, and it achieves the linguistic ideal of descriptive adequacy because the use and sense of every form found in the text is accounted for and every feature of the grammar of the language attested in the text is explained. As a model of descriptive work, it has few equals.

From the 1920s, Bloomfield did much work on the Algonquian languages of Canada and the Great Lakes, producing an impressive collection of work, including texts, grammar, and dictionary materials, on Menominee, the Native American language once spoken around Elkhart Lake, Wisconsin, where he had grown up (until then it had barely been documented). His major work on this subject is *The Menomini Language*, which was published in 1962, 13 years after his death. Bloomfield also visited Saskatchewan, collecting two volumes of texts of Plains Cree, which he published in 1934. His 1958 study of an idiolect of eastern Ojibwe, *Eastern Ojibwa: Grammatical Sketch, Texts and Word List*, ranks with his Tagalog work as an intellectual accomplishment of high descriptive adequacy. Bloomfield also did secondary work on the conservative Algonquian language Fox (Mesquakie),

from the analysis of texts collected by Truman Michelson, and he later reconstructed much of the Proto-Algonquian language's sound system and morphological structure, although his construction of a Proto-Central Algonquian language, including Ojibwe, Cree, Fox, Nenominee, and Potawatomi (and Miami-Illinois and Shawnee), has not withstood the test of time.

Bloomfield's best work tends to be of considerable length, and much of this appeared posthumously or is still only accessible through the Human Relations Area Files. Charles Hockett, Bloomfield's literary executor and fellow Algonquianist, produced an anthology of his work in 1970, which contained most of the important short pieces but omitted much good work (e.g., almost all his Austronesian work). This was often due to its bulk, though the anthology's contents show Bloomfield as deeply humane. In 1990, Robert Hall also published an interesting volume about Bloomfield and his achievements, including memoirs by former students and colleagues and younger scholars in his specialty areas. His collected works remain to be assembled under one imprint.

Bloomfield's main contribution is the scientific systematization of linguistic study and the presentation of rigorous models for linguistic description, from phonetics and phonology to syntactic and sociolinguistic matters; his writings, especially his 1933 volume *Language*, provided the means with which to study linguistics (both descriptive linguistics and topics in more strongly historical, sociological, and psychological aspects of the field, and as a scientific subject at the university level). The Bloomfield Prize recognizes especially great achievements in linguistics.

Anthony Grant

See also Wundt, Wilhelm

Further Readings

Bloomfield, L. (1914). *An introduction to the study of language*. New York, NY: Holt.
———. (1917). *Tagalog texts with grammatical analysis* (Vol. 3, Pts. 2–4). Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
———. (1933). *Language*. New York, NY: Holt.
———. (1934). *Plains Cree texts* (Vol. 16). New York, NY: Stechert.
———. (1942). Outline of Ilocano syntax. *Language, 18,* 193–200.
———. (1946). Algonquian. In C. Osgood (Ed.), *Linguistic structures of Native America* (pp. 85–129). New York, NY: Viking Fund.
———. (1958). *Eastern Ojibwa: Grammatical sketch, texts, and word list*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.
———. (1962). *The Menomini language*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
Hall, R. A., Jr. (Ed.). (1990). *Leonard Bloomfield: A life for language*. Amsterdam, Netherlands: Benjamins.
Hockett, C. F. (Ed.). (1970). *A Leonard Bloomfield anthology*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Boas, Franz

Franz Boas (1858–1942), the German-born American anthropologist, was the predominant intellectual and organizing figure in the professionalization of anthropology in the United States in the late 19th and early 20th centuries. His efforts throughout a long lifetime gave American anthropology its shape and character. Boas arrived in the United States from Germany before there were anthropology departments or PhD degrees anywhere in the world; and through his research, writings, organizing and editorial activities, and training of generations of students, he created the field as it existed throughout most of the 20th century. He was also the leading moral figure in anthropology and its public face until his death in December 1942.

Biography

Franz Boas was born in Minden, Germany, in 1858, into a Jewish family influenced by the *Haskalah* movement, or the Jewish Enlightenment. Without denying their Jewish identity, such families abandoned most of the practices and beliefs of Judaism to become secular and "free-thinking" Germans. Young Franz was brought up in an atmosphere of science, art, and liberal politics; his feminist mother founded the first kindergarten in their hometown and was associated with political radicals.

From his childhood, Franz Boas had an insatiable appetite for learning—not only for all the sciences and mathematics but for philosophy, literature, folklore, geography, and cultural history as well. After graduation from Gymnasium, he attended the universities of Heidelberg, Bonn, and Kiel, where many of his teachers were among the world leaders in their

fields. He completed his PhD in physics in 1881 with a dissertation in psychophysics (the forerunner of experimental psychology) titled "A Contribution to the Perception of the Color of Water."

After 6 months of compulsory military service, during which time he published seven scientific papers, Franz Boas turned in a new direction, undertaking a hazardous expedition almost single-handedly to Baffinland to study the Eskimos (Inuit) and their harsh environment. Geography and ethnography had long been among his interests; when he was 13 years old, he wrote of his desire to do research in "all the unknown lands" to know the customs and habits of the peoples there. Boas intended to study the relationship of a people who were as dependent on their natural environment as the Eskimos. During the year 1883–1884 on Baffin Island, he carried out research in geography, cartography, hydrology, meteorology, ethnography, and linguistics, and in 1888, he published one of the first scientific ethnographies, *The Central Eskimo*. As Cole noted in his 1983 article on Boas's diary from his Baffin Island work, for Boas, perhaps the most significant results of his experience among the Inuit were his realization of the common humanity and intelligence of his hosts, the *strengthening* (his word) of his view of the relativity of all culture, and his recognition "that the evil as well as the value of a person lies in the cultivation of the heart which I find or do not find here just as much as amongst us."

Boas returned confirmed in his belief that to serve humanity a man had to work to promote the truth and that science would be his way to the truth.

During the year 1885–1886, Boas completed the rigorous qualifications for a full-time academic position in geography at the University of Berlin, and he studied physical anthropology with Germany's leading physician-pathologist-proto-anthropologist, Rudolf Virchow, whose ideas and character greatly influenced Boas. Other important influences on Boas's ideas about race, culture, and language were Theodor Waitz, Moritz Lazarus, and Hermann Steinthal. He also worked as an assistant curator and studied ethnography with Germany's leading ethnologist, Adolf Bastian, at the Royal Ethnographic Museum. At the museum, he was inspired by what he learned of Northwest Coast culture, and he spent time with nine Bella Coola Indians who were visiting Berlin with a Wild West show, demonstrating aspects of their culture. During the summer of 1886, he began his lifelong field research with the native peoples of the Canadian Pacific Northwest.

In 1887, Boas married Marie Krackowizer, who had grown up in New York, and made the decision to immigrate to the United States. He was discouraged by Germany's rigid academic system and disaffected with the illiberal and anti-Semitic political climate there, and he believed that in America he would be freer, both politically and academically, to seek the truth as he understood it.

His first job in the United States, in 1887–1888, was as an associate editor of the new journal of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, which gave him an excellent platform for the publication of many short articles that displayed his depth and range as a scientist. From 1889 to 1892, he taught at Clark University, established 2 years before as a research institution. Although Boas and eight other distinguished faculty members resigned because of a dispute with the university's founder, during his brief stay at Clark, he was able carry out pioneering research in physical anthropology and publish a great deal of material from his Northwest Coast fieldwork. From 1892 to 1894, he served as "chief assistant" anthropologist for the World's Columbian Exposition in Chicago and helped establish anthropology at the new Chicago Natural History Museum (later the Field Museum).

In 1896, Boas began work at the American Museum of Natural History and teaching physical anthropology at Columbia University. While at the museum, he continued his pioneering work on the "life group," full-size dioramas representing people in action, and he conceived, organized, and directed the Jesup North Pacific Expedition, whose purpose was to explore the relationships between peoples and cultures of Siberia and their connection to the Native American cultures on the American side of the Bering Strait. Boas resigned his position at the American Museum in 1905, but he continued his career at Columbia University, where he had become professor of anthropology in 1899. Franz Boas formally retired from Columbia in 1936 but was active in anthropology and as a social and political critic until his death from a heart attack in the Columbia University faculty dining room on December 21, 1942.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Franz Boas arrived in the United States at a crucial moment, just as specialized scientific disciplines and societies were being formed, when generalist amateurs who ranged over various fields were increasingly

being supplanted by scientists and scholars trained in specialized disciplines. Prior to this time, research into American Indian cultures, languages, and archaeology was the province of devoted amateurs. The physical anthropology of that era was primarily concerned with proving polygenesis and the inferiority of "the Negro" and was based on the ideas of a physician (Samuel George Morton) and a geologist (Louis Agassiz). Boas, however, had the benefit of specialized training and experience in human geography, ethnography, anthropometry, and other aspects of physical anthropology in Germany, whose science was much admired at that time. For Boas, the subject matter of anthropology included all human social life around the world and throughout time. With his background, he was uniquely placed to contribute to all aspects of the developing "four-field" approach in American anthropology, uniting cultural and physical anthropology, and linguistics and prehistoric archaeology into one program for the study of humanity.

Cultural Evolutionism and Race

Two major ideas dominated social thought when Boas arrived in America: (1) cultural evolutionism and (2) racial determinism. Evolutionary thought, following Lewis Henry Morgan, E. B. Tylor, and Herbert Spencer, viewed human history as the unfolding of an inevitable process of progressive development from simple to complex manifestations of culture. Accordingly, peoples could be ranked depending on where they were thought to fall on this great ladder of advancement. The idea was favored by both the political left and the political right: Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels interpreted this as a promise of a still more advanced future of egalitarian communism, while for the Social Darwinists and the prophets of colonialism and unrestricted capitalism, it proved that the wealthy and the powerful were in their positions by natural right as representatives of the most advanced stage of civilization.

Racial determinism was founded on the belief that cultural, historical, moral, and behavioral differences could be explained by heredity and that there were fixed biological entities called "races" that could be ranked as higher and lower on the scale of evolution. Generally, these rankings fit very nicely with those of the evolutionists, to the disadvantage of the poor, the colonized, and especially the peoples they called "Negroes." Franz Boas questioned both of these hegemonic paradigms, and in 1911, he published *The Mind of Primitive Man*, the single most important work for those who disagreed with evolutionism and racial determinism. This book gave a scientific basis to those who questioned those dominant ideas.

Attacking both paradigms on many fronts, Boas offered evidence that the culture of a people did not depend on their biology, that a simple culture did not mean simple minds, and that all humans are basically equal in their mental powers. He demonstrated that there was no inherent connection between a feature like skin color and a particular type of culture but that the culture of a people depended on multiple factors, including its natural environment, its location relative to that of other cultures as a source of new ideas and resources, and the accidents of individual innovations and creative reinterpretations of borrowed ideas throughout its history. Above all, he argued that cultures and learned behaviors are not functions of biology but depend on the complex past histories of peoples. Boas's arguments were consonant with his own values: his fervent belief in equality, the imperative to treat individuals according to their own qualities and not as members of a class to which they are assigned, and his insistence that one should avoid an exaggerated opinion of one's own culture and consider other cultures objectively. The implications of the arguments and demonstrations in that book for the new science of anthropology in the United States are incalculable.

Culture, Ethnography, and Psychology

Boas put the notion of culture and cultures at the center of American anthropology. He located culture within communities, lived and acted out by individuals in groups. Beyond his concern with the history and development of cultures, however, he emphasized the individuals who lived within these systems and the conscious and unconscious impact of their cultures on their psychology. Franz Boas's approach to the study of a culture is exemplified by his work with the indigenous peoples of the Northwest Coast, especially those he called the "Kwakiutl" (today they are known as the Kwakwa'wakw). He made 12 field trips to the area between 1886 and 1931. Because of the brevity of many of his summer visits and because so much of the "traditional" culture had already been abandoned, less of the material was collected through participant observation than through interviews with informants. From this

research came an enormous volume of publications reporting on Boas's experiences at feasts, ceremonies, potlatches, and interviews. However, Boas also published many texts in the languages of each of the peoples (Kwakwa'wakw, Tsimshian, Bella Coola, Chinook, Bella Bella, etc.), with translations. These were mostly collected by Indian collaborators, then edited and published by Boas as part of his effort to capture for posterity everything of the language and culture that was available before it was lost forever. He hoped to present "the culture as it appears to the Indian himself," his "world view."

Boas contended that the habits and patterns of behavior imbibed by an individual from his or her culturally constructed childhood and environment became largely unconscious. Speakers of a language are usually not aware of the rules and peculiarities of their speech, and so it is with members of a culture; we frequently act automatically in conformity with tradition. Anyone, even trained anthropologists, may have strong emotions and irrational reactions when confronted with another culture. Boas hoped to avoid the unconscious subjective views of the ethnographer by having the Indians record their own texts. (Pursuing this method, Boas trained and worked with a number of Indians, including his third PhD student, William Jones, and Ella Deloria.)

Boas gave anthropology its picture of the Kwakiutl, their potlatch, and the wealth of their ceremonial and material life. Today, more than a century later, the Kwakwa'wakw are proudly undertaking a reconstruction of their old culture, drawing in large measure on the materials that Boas and his Indian collaborators made available through their linguistic and ethnographic research.

The Study of Languages and Linguistics

From his first published piece in *Science* in 1886 until his last completed manuscripts 56 years later, Boas was concerned with documenting American Indian languages. Many Indian languages were on the verge of extinction, and he worked tirelessly to have them recorded, training his students and Indian collaborators to collect language materials. He spent much of his life seeking funds for researchers and publishing the results of their work and was the moving force behind the *Handbook of American Indian Languages* and a founder and editor of the *International Journal of American Linguistics*. His importance for linguistics more generally went far beyond these efforts, especially for the study of unwritten languages.

Boas's aim was to present these languages from the point of view of their speakers and to avoid analyses of them based on the categories of Indo-European or other classical languages. While discerning that all languages are built on the same general principles, he taught that each language had its own distinctive ways of looking at the world. (This is the same principle that Boas preached to his students regarding other aspects of the cultures.) His work ranged widely over the problems of language, and it also led to the study of phonetics by his student Edward Sapir, and the founders of structural linguistics built on his work on morphology.

Physical Anthropology

Boas made vital contributions to the related question of "race" and human variation, to studies of growth, and to research on hereditary and environmental influences on humans. Boas found the physical anthropology of his day to be little more than static taxonomy, anthropometrics, and speculation about race and character, but he left it as the modern study of human biology. His work lay behind the development of "the new physical anthropology" in the late 1940s.

Boas has been wrongly accused of insisting on the primacy of environment in an effort to discredit heredity as a factor in human behavior, well-being, and achievement. On the contrary, he repeatedly proposed and carried out studies seeking to determine to what extent and under what circumstances both heredity and environment operated and what was the relation between the two in various circumstances. He and his students made studies of human growth, intergenerational modifications of form, the impact of interbreeding, the plasticity of the human body under different environmental conditions, and so on.

Growth and Change

In 1890, Boas started the first longitudinal study of growth in America, measuring schoolchildren in Worcester, Massachusetts. The implications of this research were far-reaching, both methodologically and in substance. His work produced the first growth

standards for height and weight for American children, and he introduced the notion of "tempo of growth"—showing that individuals vary in their *pace* of physical and mental development, slow at first and faster later, or vice versa, and partly dependent on environment as well as heredity. Focusing on the matter of pace, he introduced the terms *advanced* and *retarded* in place of *bright* and *dull*.

In 1908, Boas began a massive study of recent immigrants to New York City and their children, undertaken for the U.S. Immigration Commission. He and his assistants took measurements of stature, weight, length and breadth of heads (cephalic index), and facial index for 18,000 individuals. While they found some differences in stature and weight to the advantage of the American-born children—what might be expected from better nutrition and conditions in the new country—the finding with the greatest impact was that there was some tendency for the American-born children to differ slightly but definitely in head shape from their parents. The cephalic index had previously been considered both stable and a reliable marker of "race"—a vital factor in classification and the historic tracing of peoples. The finding that the cephalic index could respond to environmental differences, that there is a degree of plasticity in the expression of this trait, had a powerful impact on the field of physical anthropology and its position on race.

Race

Franz Boas is the most influential figure in the history of the debate over racial determinism and its inevitable accompaniment, racism. Although he began his work on human variation before the rediscovery of Gregor Mendel's research into genetics, using new measurements and observations, the biostatistical methods that he had developed, and his ability to rethink old problems, he stated a number of propositions that contradicted the tenets of the racial determinists. The fundamental elements of his critique were presented in *The Mind of Primitive Man* in 1911. Boas did not argue outright that "races" do not exist—which is the present consensus among physical anthropologists—instead he had a dynamic populational view, focusing on individuals and family lines and their histories, which contradicted the traditional static view. By insisting that "race," language, and culture are three distinct phenomena, varying independently, he clarified many aspects of cultural history and made a convincing case that "race" cannot be correlated with historical success. Following various lines of evidence, Boas declared that there was no convincing evidence that differences in the mental behavior of people were due to physical differences. Boas inspired and guided the work of the social psychologist Otto Klineberg, whose research challenged the validity of intelligence quotient and other tests meant to prove the inferiority of Negroes and others. The findings of Boas and his followers directly countered the claims of the racial determinists, who rightly saw the Boasians as their most significant opponents. To some extent, this is still true in the 21st century.

The Influence of Franz Boas

Boas's influence and leadership were manifest as early as the 1890s through his research, publishing, editing, and organizing (associations, publications, and research projects), but once he began training doctoral students at Columbia University, he became central to the developing discipline. By 1920, 13 students of cultural anthropology and linguistics had received doctorates under Boas at Columbia, while the other seven PhDs in these fields in the United States at that time were deeply influenced by him. (Harvard had been producing PhDs in archaeology and physical anthropology since 1894.) His first Columbia PhD was A. L. Kroeber in 1901, and his last students got their doctoral degrees in 1940. Many of his students went on to be leaders in the field themselves, a number of them founding departments of anthropology at leading universities. His early PhDs included the most important figures in the intellectual development of cultural anthropology: A. L. Kroeber, Frank Speck (Pennsylvania degree), Robert H. Lowie, Edward Sapir, Alexander Goldenweiser, Paul Radin, Fay-Cooper Cole, and Leslie Spier. Students of a later generation included Ruth Benedict, Margaret Mead, Melville J. Herskovits, Gladys Reichard, Ruth Bunzel, Melville Jacobs, Ashley Montagu, and Ruth Landes. From 1914 onward, more than half of his students who were granted PhDs were women. His international reach was great as well. Among other activities, he spent the year 1911–1912 in Mexico helping establish the basis for stratigraphic work in archaeology in the country, working with Manuel Gamio,

and he was an important influence on Gilberto Freyre, one of Brazil's most influential social theorists and intellectuals.

Boas was a political activist until his dying day, speaking out and organizing for freedom of thought and speech and the rights of individuals and groups. He fought prejudice, racism, and chauvinism wherever he encountered it, even at considerable personal cost and despite reprisals against his department. Many of the students who were attracted to him at Columbia had the same values, and this imparted to Columbian anthropology—and to some extent American anthropology—a distinctly liberal stance.

The author of six books and more than 700 monographs, articles, and other published pieces, Franz Boas touched every aspect of anthropology; his range of interests and expertise was enormous, and his legacy is anthropology as it exists in the United States—even with all of the changes in the field since his death. He was recognized and honored throughout the world for his scientific contributions; and although he and his work have often been challenged, his legacy is currently being rediscovered with a new appreciation early in the 21st century.

Herbert S. Lewis

See also American Museum of Natural History; Bastian, Adolf; Benedict, Ruth F.; Columbia University; Mead, Margaret; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Sapir, Edward; Spencer, Herbert; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Boas, F. (1888). *The central Eskimo*. Part of the sixth annual report of the Bureau of Ethnology, Smithsonian Institution, Washington, DC.

———. (1911). *The mind of primitive man*. New York, NY: Macmillan.

———. (1928). *Anthropology and modern life*. New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

———. (1940). *Race, language and culture*. New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1966). *Kwakiutl ethnography* (H. Codere, Ed.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Oewaa.

Cole, D. (1983). "The value of a person lies in his Herzensbildung": Franz Boas' letter-diary, 1883–1884. In G. W. Stocking (Ed.), *Observers observed: Essays on ethnographic fieldwork* (pp. 13–52). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

———. (1999). *Franz Boas: The early years, 1858–1906*. Seattle: University of Washington Press.

Goldschmidt, W. (Ed.). (1959). *The anthropology of Franz Boas* (Memoir No. 89). Menasha, WI: American Anthropological Association.

Lewis, H. S. (2001). Boas, Darwin, science, and anthropology. *Current Anthropology, 42,* 381–406.

———. (2001). The passion of Franz Boas. *The American Anthropologist, 103,* 447–467.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1968). *Race, culture, and evolution: Essays in the history of anthropology*. New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (Ed.). (1974). *The shaping of American anthropology, 1883–1911. A Franz Boas reader*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

Bohannan, Paul

Paul Bohannan (1920–2007), a prodigious representative of post–World War II anthropology, created, jointly with Laura Bohannan, an ethnographic corpus on the Tiv of central Nigeria that stands out as a unique achievement. The Bohannans conducted their Nigerian fieldwork between 1949 and 1953. Paul published in 1954 a description of Tiv farm life and in 1957 *Justice and Judgment Among the Tiv*, which is discussed below. With Laura Bohannan, he published *The Tiv of Central Nigeria*, five source books on Tiv religion and three source books on Tiv ethnography for the Human Relations Area Files, and *Tiv Economy*. In 1955, the Bohannans went for a second period of fieldwork among the Bantu Baluiya of western Kenya, an outcome of which was one of the four chapters Paul wrote in a book he edited in 1968, *African Homicide and Suicide*. From the 1960s through the 1990s, Paul Bohannan published several popular textbooks and edited or coedited high-profile volumes. This entry focuses on the areas of economic and legal anthropology, where Paul Bohannan exerted his greatest influence, although he also contributed theoretical ideas on religion, warfare, African homicide and suicide, and divorce in the United States.

In economic anthropology, Bohannan is known for the notion of "spheres of exchange." In two articles (published in 1955 and 1959), he explained that before the colonial period, Tiv exchanges fell into three categories. The first included locally produced foodstuffs, small livestock, household utensils, tools,

and raw materials, all normally bartered in marketplaces. The second consisted of cattle, slaves, brass rods, and a locally woven cloth. The third had a single item, rights in marriageable young women, because the giving of a bride could only be compensated by the return of another marriageable woman to her guardian.

The first article was "Principles of Exchange and Investment." Tiv men strove to convert subsistence goods to higher category wealth and were scornful of a person rich in food and livestock but unable to turn them into prestige valuables, but these very values made conversions difficult. Those who converted down, meaning from prestige goods to food, had to invoke catastrophic circumstances or the need to help kinsmen to explain their actions and avoid humiliation. People converted up with the ultimate aim of accumulating dependents and power.

The term *spheres of exchange* was adopted from Raymond Firth's 1939 book on Tikopia, an island in the Pacific Ocean (precedents are W. E. Armstrong's description of Rossel Island shells as nonconvertible exchange media and Bronisław Malinowski's contrast between Trobriand food exchanges and the reciprocal gifting of *kula* valuables). Although the Pacific islands had nothing like the trade and currency traditions of the African savanna, Bohannan followed Firth closely, save for accentuating "marriageable girls," which for Firth was only a tentative category. He also elaborated on the ranking of the spheres, which became an indirect expression of the competitive ambitions of Tiv men. Bohannan presented the spheres model as his own "systematization" but consistent with the Tiv covert ideology; even so, generations of Africanists not familiar with economic anthropology or Pacific ethnography believed that the Tiv thought explicitly in terms of spheres of exchange as delineated by Bohannan and searched for similar kinds of thinking elsewhere in Africa.

Bohannan's second paper focused on money and introduced *special purpose money*, a term that Karl Polanyi had borrowed from brokerage firms' practices to explain aspects of ancient Babylonian economy in a 1957 coedited book. In some societies of antiquity, Polanyi wrote, money could be used only to pay taxes or in noncommercial obligations such as blood compensation or bride wealth; or one kind of money served to make such payments and another kind to buy and sell stuff in the marketplace; or things were valued in a notional money that did not exist physically, while actual transactions took the form of barter. Polanyi argued that currencies such as these, fulfilling only one function, differ fundamentally from that found in our monetary system; the impression that these remote societies had a commercial life like ours is an illusion, because with no "general purpose money" economic integration could only be achieved by political decisions. Bohannan now reasoned that Tiv brass rods, which were exchanged against all other goods within the second sphere but not very frequently against food, should be considered more like special-purpose money. He thus modified Polanyi's idea of "special purpose," which was connected to the functions of money and not to the range of goods it could buy. According to Bohannan, Tiv economy was "multicentric" in the sense that barriers to exchange insulated different sectors from feedback effects. In the 20th century, however, colonial administration had introduced European coins and the obligation to pay taxes in them, and new commodities that could not be assigned to any sphere had flooded the markets. Women and junior men sold crops to outside merchants and used the proceeds to purchase local and imported goods. The administration also intervened to ban bride exchanges, encouraging instead the payment of bride wealth, which junior men favored. These developments had eroded the sphere boundaries and dissolved the multicentric economy, a source of great worry to community elders. The notion of spheres of exchange became one of the organizing principles in the book *Tiv Economy*, which Laura and Paul Bohannan coauthored in 1968.

D. C. Dorward and J. H. Latham, historians of Nigeria, criticized this abridged account of economic history that Bohannan provided. It was also said that it misleads about the precolonial West African savanna economy, which was one of the most monetized in the premodern world and made room for strong drives to self-actualize, as evident from subsequent ethnographies of Nigeria and prefigured also in the Bohannans' own. But those who popularized Bohannan's ideas should share the blame; reduced to caricature and reproduced endlessly as a textbook vignette, Bohannan's spheres of exchange were distorted beyond recognition to suggest almost the opposite of what he had meant by them.

In the 1960s, Bohannan, along with fellow economist at Northwestern George Dalton, became

known as a promoter of Polanyi's ideas and, in the great rift that divided economic anthropology, a prominent substantivist. Their collaboration produced a book called *Markets in Africa*, which included 28 essays by acclaimed anthropologists. The introduction stressed, following a lead by Polanyi, that the marketplaces observed in many parts of Africa did not indicate a market principle–based economy. In those markets, women traded small amounts of perishables, or people sold one thing only to buy another, while households produced the bulk of their subsistence; more substantial exchanges materialized as gifts or obligations; land was allocated within household and kinship groups; and a king could administer trade in valuables. If these marketplaces manifested fluctuating prices and the play of supply and demand, these reflected only temporary scarcities and had no bearing on production decisions. Land and labor were not sold, and the market process did not serve to allocate resources, as it did in commercial economies. It is unclear how much these sound comparative economic systems ideas (which Polanyi highlighted in polemics against Central European opponents who were hostile to government regulation and planning) were understood among other substantivist or formalist anthropologists, mostly trained in the empiricist Boasian tradition. The downside was that these ideas downplayed, once again, West African long-distance trade connections to the Mediterranean and, from the 16th century onward, to the Atlantic. The introduction provided a typology for nonmodern economies: marketless (the Pacific), peripheral market (much of precolonial Africa), and peasant, where export crops sales had become indispensable for farmers, forcing other changes (20th-century colonial situations).

Bohannan's legal anthropology was built on litigation cases in Native Authority courts, which the British had introduced in their African colonies and on which the discipline of legal anthropology flourished in the United Kingdom and the United States. Bohannan aimed to understand Tiv ways of looking at disputes and their settlement, their "folk theory," which differs from "law," the folk theory of the Western world. He presented his project as the translation of Tiv categories of thought and action into those of the English language, to allow readers to make sense of them. But the influence of linguistic philosophers at Oxford, where he was trained, added a level of subtlety to his idea of "translation," and Bohannan set forth something more complicated than simple juxtaposition. First of all, not all Tiv notions are articulated or even "conscious"; the anthropologist needs to make explicit what was not said, discover premises, deduce ideas from behavior, and sometimes construct elaborate representations that hopefully correspond to Tiv agency but that were not verbally communicated by them. This "folk model" is a product of ethnographic theory, not a plain transcription of observations. Second, the English terms that are solicited for this task come loaded with meanings deposited by European institutions and culture history, which the anthropologist needs to strip away, or at least make manifest, in order to convey the Tiv mindset rather than distort it with unwarranted projections. This necessitates a double movement: As Tiv principles are interpreted, English legal terms also need to be explicated with an eye toward Tiv institutions. Bohannan conceived of a comparative jurisprudence, which would be based on the work of scholarly predecessors and remain distinct from the English folk model of law; Tiv material could illuminate analytic comparisons to build such a comparative discipline, but the idea remained embryonic in his writing.

Native Authority courts were a colonial innovation. Tiv built them into their culture by using the framework and vocabulary of *jir*, proceedings among kinsmen. Bohannan arranged his cases to explain how a complaint is brought; the behavior of defendants, judges, and witnesses; and how settlements were reached. He privileged Tiv expressions, because the language in which the process is conducted is key to the folk system. Bohannan also discussed substantive law as applied to marriage and debt. Tiv courts did not proceed by reference to a set of distinct rules and precedents. The Tiv also did not distinguish between tort, contract, and property, treating them all as forms of debt. Decisions depended on what was right in particular cases, to counteract the damage done by the breach of proper behavior. The plaintiff could also resort to self-help, and occasionally court settlements allowed for that. Yet the *jir* restored social relations, whereas in former days, self-enforcement could lead to revenge, which is not a jural mechanism. Tiv also sought redress by composing scandalous songs about a wrongdoer, which then turned into a contest and, in former times, often ended in a violent showdown between two groups.

Bohannan last presented proceedings that he called "moots," where neighbors and kinsmen decided disputes following death, illness, or an evil omen within the group under the guidance of community elders. These involved a different idiom and a set of images from Native court disputes. Eliciting the cosmology and mystical human agency underlying these proceedings, Bohannan rose to the summit of his ethnographic powers. The reparative actions following a moot were not secular but ritual, made to stand for many individual corrections of social relations.

Both court cases and moots made communities run smoothly. Bohannan displayed little interest in social alignments and causes, or in the conflicts that generated the cases he studied. His analyses open with the plaintiff bringing a grievance, the eruption of disorder, and end when the disturbance abates, at least temporarily, with the judges' settlement or the ritual concluding a moot. Durkheimian interest in cohesion subtends the analysis.

The term *folk system* perhaps conceals difficulties in Bohannan's work. Like the Tiv, most Euro-Americans do not distinguish between tort and crime; lawyers' language differs from common English speech; the boundary between lawyers' categories and comparative jurisprudence remains elusive. Max Gluckman complained that Bohannan's emphasis on Tiv culture made their proceedings look too different. On the one hand, a legal expert could identify many categories of action in Tiv proceedings that they do not recognize, as is true of British and American publics. On the other, Edmund Leach had already indicated that among the Kachin of Burma as well, "debt" subsumed multiple social relations; furthermore, the connection between debt and other social obligations survives also in some expressions of the English language.

Elsewhere, Bohannan generalized about law. Social institutions involve norms everywhere, but only some societies restate these norms as rules intended for a special institution that applies justice. When such a legal institution exists, trouble situations are disengaged from their social matrix and brought to the court to be handled according to this body of rules. Where "law" exists as a separate body, it can modify other social institutions because it can be out of phase with them, either because it lags behind changes in customs or because it is used for innovating. Bohannan noted, as did other legal anthropologists, that Tiv court cases did not end with a verdict but with compromise, where parties concurred in the principles and provisions of the settlement. Multicentric situations with multiple judges, moots, contests, oracles, and self-help lead not to neat systems of law and formal *corpus juris* but to less precise restatements of norms. Bohannan's legal anthropology does point to generalizations beyond the rich description of Tiv culture, although perhaps not as boldly as his economic anthropology.

Mahir Şaul

See also Durkheim, Émile; Firth, Raymond; Gluckman, Max; Polanyi, Karl

Further Readings

Bohannan, L., & Bohannan, P. (1968). *Tiv economy.* Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.

Bohannan, P. (1957). *Justice and judgment among the Tiv.* London, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (1965). The differing realms of the law. *American Anthropologist, 67*(6, Pt. 2), 33–42.

Bohannan, P., & Dalton, G. (Eds.). (1962). *Markets in Africa.* Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.

Bourdieu, Pierre

With more than 35 books and a considerable number of scientific papers to his credit, Pierre Bourdieu (1930–2002) is regarded as one of the most important social scientists of the 20th century. His key concepts (habitus, field, capital, symbolic violence) and his analyses have had a decisive impact on all disciplines in the humanities and the social sciences.

Brief Biography

Pierre Bourdieu grew up in a small village in a remote area of southern France (Béarn). The son of a post office clerk, he was first sent to high school in the closest city and then to Paris to study philosophy at the renowned École Normale Supérieure. Coming from a lower class background, during his school trajectory, Bourdieu was subjected to "symbolic violence" that deeply affected his perception of social life and later his work, as he explained in his "non-autobiography." He did military service in Algeria for 2 years and then taught for another

2 years (1958–1960) at the University of Algiers, where he was engaged in an empirical study of labor, economy, and social change in Algerian society. This period inspired several books on Algeria and numerous case studies, subsequently integrated into his more general and seminal works. Returning to France in 1960, Bourdieu was assistant to the philosopher and sociologist Raymond Aron until 1964, when he was briefly an assistant professor at the University of Lille and then at the École Pratique des Hautes Études, where he became the youngest director of studies since the school's founding.

On his return to France, Bourdieu took his own childhood village in Béarn as an object of study and analyzed the restructuring of the peasantry. He showed that the transformation of the system of matrimonial exchanges resulted from a restructuring of society around the opposition between the outlying villages (*hameaux*) and the central township (*bourg*), which progressively acquires a monopoly of urban functions. Right from these early works, in his analyses of the peasantry, Bourdieu brings to light the impact of changes in sociological configurations on the techniques of the body (*hexis)* and on perception.

At the same time, Bourdieu embarked on a long-term reflection on culture, education, and inequalities that stresses the weight of social and cultural inequalities in educational systems. These inequalities enable the most privileged to reproduce their positions at the top of the hierarchy and block the social mobility of the most underprivileged. These works brought him to public attention, especially after the widespread protest movements of 1968.

In 1981, after the publication of two major works, *Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgment of Taste* and *The Logic of Practice*, Bourdieu was appointed to a chair at the Collège de France, the country's most prestigious research institution. He carried on his research there for 20 years. In the 1990s, Bourdieu spoke out strongly and conspicuously against the ravages of neoliberalism and the erosion of the welfare state. Throughout his career, Bourdieu deployed very effective strategies to diffuse his works. He edited a collection for Editions de Minuit from 1964, then for Editions du Seuil in 1992. In 1975, he founded his own journal, *Actes de la Recherche en Science Sociales*, which stood apart from other academic journals in its format and layout, and in 1995, he created his own publishing house, Raisons d'Agir. He also edited a number of works that aimed to give an accessible overview of his work and gathered a large team of collaborators, who continue to develop his arguments in the most varied areas. Bourdieu died in 2002.

Empirical Diversity and Theoretical Unity

The extreme diversity of the objects of Bourdieu's empirical research, ranging from the peasant world to education, culture, science, and politics, finds its unity in a theoretical system that has had a decisive impact on the social sciences and has contributed to the exceptional productivity of its author. This theoretical elaboration was built up, on the one hand, through ethnographic fieldwork, participant observation, surveys through questionnaires, and statistical analysis, and, on the other, through rigorous discussions with many disciplines—mainly anthropology, sociology, philosophy, linguistics, history, and literature. Bourdieu was also remarkable for his great capacity to synthesize, putting forward a coherent combination of the contributions of a wide range of authors—often regarded as incompatible—and striving to move beyond a series of canonical oppositions (subjectivism/objectivism, micro/macro, etc.). His theoretical model is characterized by its epistemological foundations, the praxeological approach, and the articulation of two main concepts—*habitus* and *field*—and many auxiliary concepts including participant objectivation, symbolic violence, *doxa* cultural capital, and *hysteresis*.

Epistemology, Reflexivity, and Method

Bourdieu's work contains a considerable number of methodological and epistemological reflections. Drawing on the philosopher Gaston Bachelard, he declares that the sociological object must be built up through a succession of three epistemological acts. It must be *won* against common sense and the illusion of immediate knowledge, *constructed* rationally and through an adequate theoretical apparatus, and *confirmed* in experience—that is, tested against reality. To this end, scientific practice, like all practice, must be objectified by scientific analysis. The reflexive return to the tools of analysis is a precondition for scientific knowledge. To achieve this break with common sense, according to Bourdieu, the researcher must perform a twofold objectivation: (1) objectivation of the social conditions of

production of the researcher—of his trajectory and the configuration and functioning of the field in which his work is embedded and the fields that influence his work—and (2) objectivation of his own work of objectivation—of the hidden interests invested in it and the profits they promise. This *participant objectivation* has also a profoundly political and liberatory aim, since the only true freedom is in the knowledge of constraints.

This epistemological vigilance at the heart of the work of inquiry is accompanied by the theoretical ambition of moving beyond the oppositions that structure the social sciences. According to Bourdieu, three main types of theoretical knowledge have been developed to study the social world. The first is phenomenological knowledge, which, as he conceives it, is a set of primary experiences of the social world. For Bourdieu, the problem with the phenomenological perspective (i.e., ethnomethodology or symbolic interactionism) is that it sets up no critical distance either from its own conditions of possibility or from the presuppositions that underlie the intuitive and spontaneous apprehension of the social world that it delivers. Second, objectivist knowledge starts out from the presupposition that the truth of the social world is not accessible from a primary, phenomenological experience and endeavors to construct the objective relations that structure representations and practices. Structuralism is a particular form of this second mode of theoretical knowledge. Bourdieu retains from it, essentially, the determination to break with native theories and above all with a substantialist mode of thought in favor of a relational thinking by which he intends to grasp each element analyzed by considering the system of relations within which it takes place and from which its meaning derives. However, this mode of knowledge is also limited, since by inquiring into the conditions of possibility of phenomenological knowledge, it moves away from primary experience. Objectivism proves incapable of developing a theory of practical knowledge of the social world, because it apprehends practices from outside without trying to reconstruct their generative principle. The third mode of theoretical knowledge, the praxeological mode (from *praxis* and *logos*) moves beyond these limits. It aims to grasp the dialectical relations between the objective structures and the structured dispositions that internalize these structures, actualize them, and contribute to their reproduction.

The praxeological mode of knowledge subsumes the objectivist approach by inquiring into the conditions of possibility of primary experience and by considering that the scientific object is *constructed*—but goes beyond it by giving its full weight to that experience. It aims to escape the opposition between objectivism and subjectivism by addressing practices and their mode of production through the dialectical, interdependent relationship between subjective and objective structures.

The Dispositionalist Approach and Habitus

To grasp practices and the unity of their diversity from a praxeological standpoint, Bourdieu mobilizes a concept that derives from a long philosophical tradition but that he makes profoundly sociological: the *habitus*. According to Bourdieu, the habitus is a system of transposable and durable dispositions: "structured structures predisposed to function as structuring structures." Habitus is the principle of the generation of practices and representations. It works as a matrix of perceptions, appreciations, and actions that integrates past experiences and lead agents to develop a regular and regulated behavior without being the result of obedience to rules. The habitus shapes not only a "predisposition," a "tendency," a "propensity," or an "inclination" to act but also a *conatus*, an agent's tendency to persist in his social being because he perceives the world through a system of dispositions—in other words, a set of schemes of perception, appreciation, and action that result from his socialization and that he transposes analogically from one experience to another. Habitus constitutes a generative principle that shapes a regulated improvisation that bears within it a *telos*, a finality, and an *amor fati*, the "love of destiny" that often leads individuals to act in conformity with the economy of the system of constraints and demands of which their dispositions are the product and to "make a virtue of necessity," in other words, to convert constraint into desire.

The dispositionalist theory is a theory of practice, and as such Bourdieu used it to study many objects. For example, he shows the importance of the system of dispositions and therefore the weight of social origin in educational choices, in the capacity to succeed in one's studies or to grasp the implicit principles that govern the production of teachers' judgments. Social inequalities have all the more impact when they are

masked by the ideology of taste, of the natural gift (the prodigy, precocity), or of the vocation, which presents social differences as natural differences. The dispositionalist approach brings to light the weight of social differences in the appropriation of academic culture. Social origin plays a decisive role in the acquisition of the codes that make it possible to appreciate encoded works, such as works of art, and thus to succeed in the educational system. Inequality in access to legitimate culture led Bourdieu to study the symbolic dimension of relations of domination. The concept of *symbolic violence* designates the imposition of a cultural arbitrariness (i.e., the teacher's discourse) in the name of a social legitimacy (i.e., his or her status) that masks the power relations on which it is based (i.e., the asymmetrical relationship between teacher and pupil).

The habitus is a system of dispositions produced by internalization of the objective conditions. In so far as the members of the same class share their class experiences and situations, they will have distinctive habitus and lifestyles, which Bourdieu describes in particular in *Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgement of Taste* (1979). This major work reexamines the Kantian question of the faculty of judging to build up a radical critique of modern esthetics by showing the weight of socialization in the development of the judgment of taste. The spontaneity of such judgments creates the illusion that they spring from free choice and often leads to denial of their social character. Developing a genetic structuralism that aims to analyze the genesis of mental structures and the genesis of social structures and their relations, Bourdieu shows that oppositions in cultural matters reappear at all levels of social life: in food, cosmetics and dress, musical preferences, interior decoration, and so on. These oppositions make it possible to establish emic systems of classification and to show that "taste classifies and it classifies the classifier." The agent's esthetic disposition constitutes the expression of a social position in relation to other positions in the social space. Tastes are the expression of a social difference, referring to an "art of living" that presents social differences as natural difference.

The strength of the dispositionalist analysis is in showing that the most spontaneous or involuntary behaviors, like the most considered behaviors, spring from a matrix of representations and practices that constitutes a system of durable, transposable dispositions acquired by an individual in the course of his socialization. Some socializing agencies exert a decisive influence on this process of incorporation, in particular the family, the school, the state, and the autonomized domains of activity that Bourdieu calls fields.

The Social Space and Social Fields

The singularity of social trajectories, experiences, and their chronology particularizes individuals. Each individual system of individual dispositions constitutes a structural variant of the others, but sociological analysis also establishes that a set of agents placed in similar conditions of existence that imposes a similar type of socialization produce homogeneous systems of dispositions that generate more or less similar practices, a set of common properties, and unquestioned shared beliefs (*doxa*) expressed into a lifestyle and a class habitus. Class habitus is produced through the internalization of the conditioning induced by a class social condition. So there is a correspondence between the objective divisions of the social world, the social structures and the mental structures that agents mobilize to act in a world structured in this way.

The correspondence between social structures and mental structures comes through the mediation of symbolic systems. On the basis of an analysis of French society, Bourdieu described a topology of the social space structured by classes and class relations. He retains from Marx the idea that the distribution of capital defines objective positions, but he expands the notion of capital by considering, in addition to its economic aspect, social, cultural, and symbolic dimensions. For Bourdieu, position in the class structure is therefore not limited to the position occupied in the relations of economic production. From Weber, he retains the idea that membership of a status group, and the lifestyle that this membership implies, affects the class situation. The lifestyle associated with a class conditions its symbolic status.

According to Bourdieu, in France, the social space is marked by a distribution of economic capital symmetrical but opposite to the distribution of cultural capital. Thus, for the upper and middle classes, the distribution is chiastic: Those richer in economic capital are poorer in cultural capital, and vice versa. On the basis of this distribution of capital, Bourdieu reconstructs the positions of groups

and individuals in social space. These positions are established according to the volume of their capital and the structure of this capital, mainly the relative weights of economic and cultural capital. The latter is composed of objectivated properties (possession of goods and objects), incorporated properties (dispositions, schemes of perception and action, savoir faire, and competences), and institutionalized properties (qualifications, titles, and marks of recognition). The distribution of capital in its various forms determines the structure of positions in the social space with which lifestyles are associated.

Capital volume and structure determine the amplitude of the trajectories possible for an agent. A seemingly miraculous adjustment often leads agents to occupy a place that seems made for them. The homogeneity of the dispositions associated with a position and the coincidence of dispositions with positions result from the socializing mechanisms that, from primary socialization, orient agents toward positions adjusted in advance to them and for which they are themselves adapted. Nonetheless, this preestablished harmony is epistemic, and at the empirical level, it is often subject to many micro maladjustments. In practice, many discrepancies cause the adjustment of dispositions and positions to be less than entirely successful. Bourdieu noted the social suffering that could arise from substantial discrepancies, the sense of being "out of place," the effects of the progressive disjuncture between dispositions and positions that were initially aligned, the lags between settled dispositions and changing objective structures (*hysteresis*), or the tensions resulting from dispositions capable of entering into mutual contradiction (*cleft habitus*).

Within the social space, Bourdieu distinguishes autonomized domains of activity, which he calls fields (the political, literary, scientific, journalistic fields, etc.). The growing differentiation of the domains of human activity that accompanies the modernization of societies engenders the creation of social spaces endowed with a legitimacy and a functioning of their own. The theory of fields belongs to the development of a long tradition of analysis of the process of modernization and explicitly refers to Durkheim as regards the historical constitution and autonomization of fields, to Marx for the interpretation of the effects of this autonomization, and to Weber for the construction of the autonomy of a field or its internal struggles.

Like the habitus, for Bourdieu, the concept of the field is also a means of clarifying an epistemological and theoretical position that seeks to move beyond the classic oppositions that structure the social sciences. One of his objectives was to escape from the forced choice between internal interpretation and external explanation prevalent in sociology, which flows, in part, from the opposition between the phenomenological approach and the objectivist approach. The first of these privileges the internal coherence of the object studied, independently of its insertion in a precise social context. External explanation, for its part, characterizes representations and practices only by relating them to an overall system of relations within which they fulfill specific functions that transcend individual intentions. The theory of social fields constitutes a new way to move beyond the limits of each of these levels of analysis by articulating them. It is based on a relational epistemology that underlies the whole of Bourdieu's work: "The real is relational"; in other words, social interaction is constituted as a space of relationships that give things their properties (rather than things having properties in and by themselves).

A field responds to rules of functioning and institutions that are specific to it and that define the relations among the agents who compose it. Each field has rules of its own, but beyond the variations that distinguish each of the fields and their specific rules of functioning, it is possible to bring to light the invariants that shape and structure them. Bourdieu applied, developed, and nurtured his theory, confronting it with a multiplicity of apparently unrelated domains united only by the fact of their being specialized: religion, education, science, culture, the economy, fashion, bureaucracy, law, politics, journalism, power, and so forth.

A field is a space of relative positions within which actors and groups think, act, and take a place (*position*). Beyond their differences, agents are bound by a common *doxa*, a set of shared and unquestioned beliefs, specific to the field. Agents' positions within the field are defined by the volume and structure of their capital (including the form of capital specific to the field). In taking their "positions," persons and groups pursue interests linked to their field positions, which may consist in preserving or transforming the position they occupy and the resources associated with it. What is ultimately at stake in the struggles is the maintenance

or transformation of the social structures and/or the structures of the field, the orders of legitimacy that prevail there. The principle of correspondence or homology between social structures and symbolic structures and the many phenomena of reproduction that Bourdieu describes have often led his work to be used to explain permanence and reproduction. However, the theory of fields offers useful theoretical tools and rich empirical descriptions for observing and analyzing social change, at three levels in particular: (1) that of the genesis of a domain of activity as it grows in autonomy, (2) that of the relations between more or less autonomous domains and their relationship with the state, and (3) that of the internal functioning of such domains, notably the revolutions in the field.

In the course of studies devoted to particular domains and more general formulations, the fields became more refined. However, Bourdieu's death left his work on fields unfinished and did not give him the opportunity to clarify the imprecisions, modifications, or contradictions in the uses he made of it.

Public Commitment

This overview would be incomplete without mention of Bourdieu's political and social commitment and in particular his public interventions in the 1990s. Denouncing the sufferings induced by condition and position, supporting the movement of the unemployed in France in 1995, pointing out the collusion between the field of power and the journalistic field, and condemning neoliberalism, Bourdieu placed himself on the left of the left. He engaged in reflection on the role and place of intellectuals in public debate. He remained convinced that the freedom of agents will come through knowledge.

Bourdieu fought for the constitution of a "collective intellectual," produced in particular through the grouping of specific intellectuals in networks capable of forming a critical mass and creating "the social conditions for the collective production of realistic utopias." The collective intellectual transcends the opposition between pure science and committed science. It should be able to organize collective research and stimulate and produce new forms of action, mobilization, and joint projects. Around the journal *Liber: Revue internationale des livres*, Bourdieu invited researchers, and also artists and writers, to overcome their internal boundaries and enter into interaction with other domains of activity in order to promote a "scholarship with commitment."

Mathieu Hilgers

See also Critical Theory; Habitus; Social Constructionism; Structuralism

Further Readings

Bourdieu, P. (1977). *Outline of a theory of practice*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (with Passeron, J.-C.). (1977). *Reproduction in education, society and culture*. London, UK: Sage.
———. (1984). *Distinction: A social critique of the judgement of taste*. Boston, MA: Harvard University Press.
———. (1987). *Questions of sociology*. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press.
———. (1990). *In other words. Essays towards a reflexive sociology*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
———. (1990). *The logic of practice*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
———. (1991). *Language and symbolic power*. Cambridge, UK: Polity.
———. (with Wacquant, J. D.). (1992). *An invitation to reflexive sociology*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
———. (1996). *The rules of art: Genesis and structure of the literary field*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
———. (1999). *Pascalian meditations*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Burke, Kenneth

Kenneth Burke (1897–1993) was an American social and literary theorist who began his career as a novelist, poet, and music critic.

Biography and Scholarly Career

Kenneth Burke's career did not follow a traditional academic path. After a brief undergraduate period at Ohio State and Columbia, he left academia to devote his energies to writing in the bohemian subculture of Greenwich Village. After working as a translator, magazine editor, and music critic, and producing several works of literature, Burke turned his attention to the philosophical study of language and the literary form. He served as a visiting or part-time

professor, including positions at the University of Chicago, Harvard, The New School for Social Research, and Bennington College (Vermont), where he spent most of his teaching and writing life. Burke raised three daughters, one of whom was the Marxist-feminist anthropologist Eleanor Leacock (1922–1987).

Theoretical Contributions to Anthropology

Burke's broad, cross-disciplinary approach, and idiosyncratic rhetorical style makes his scholarly work difficult to categorize, but his legacy is far-reaching. In anthropology, his work is especially relevant to the fields of symbolic and interpretive anthropology, sociolinguistics, and performance studies. His most notable theoretical influence can be seen through the work of Clifford Geertz, Victor Turner, and Erving Goffman, among various others. Burke appeared to be equally influenced by anthropology, as he frequently references Bronisław Malinowski, Franz Boas, and Margaret Mead while integrating anthropological studies of ritual, magic, religion, and sacrifice throughout his writing. Following is a brief summary of his major contributions to anthropological theory.

Definition of Man

In his famous essay "Definition of Man," found in his *Language as Symbolic Action: Essays on Life, Literature, and Method*, Burke creates a definition of man (sic) as first and foremost the "symbol using animal." In his definition, the first clause identifies humans' capacity for symbolic action as distinct from the mere "motion" of nonhuman animals. This distinction highlights humans' unique capacity to use, reflect on, and generate new symbols while misusing (and often abusing) these symbols and their meanings in the process. Through his concept of the *negative*, Burke draws our attention to the moralizing capacity of language. He argues that the idea of "not something" is a purely human construction absent from the natural world. Through the symbolically constructed concepts of "not" and "thou shalt not," the negative allows for the formation of hierarchies and stratified forms of social order. Additionally, humans' capacity to use symbols allows us to transcend the conditions of our basic survival by making a largely taken-for-granted "second nature." In the last clause, Burke points out that an honorific search for worldly perfection is an underlying motive of human action, though often falling victim to the ironies and dichotomies of imperfection implied by its search.

Language as Symbolic Action

As his career progressed, Burke devoted considerable energy to examining the power of language and literature to shape attitudes and direct human behavior. He expanded his analysis beyond the literary text to explore how language functioned to frame social experience by drawing examples and data from fields as diverse as psychology, economics, politics, sociology, anthropology, and biology. He viewed language not simply as a tool for communication but as a dramatic and dynamic social process that constitutes purposeful social action.

In developing his constructivist approach, Burke explains how language works to filter and frame our experience. Through his concept of *terministic screens*, Burke demonstrates how words have a way of both revealing and concealing aspects of our reality, thus shaping the frameworks through which we make meaning and act in the world. Humans tend to interpret the world through the lens of their particular symbol systems. Burke reminds us, however, that while our terminologies provide a way of seeing the world, they also create a way of *not* seeing.

Burke developed this insight into a critical method he called *perspective by incongruity*. Using this method, the writer, rhetorician, or social or literary critic can force new interpretations by pairing seemingly incongruous or incompatible words, concepts, or ideas. For example, Burke used Thornstein Vebelin's notion of "trained incapacity" to illustrate how a person's training and education can create a certain blindness. This "verbal atom cracking" uncovers the multiple meanings, interests, and voices operating below the surface of our communication and illuminates the give-and-take of situated social action.

Because of the multiple meanings conveyed through our symbol systems, Burke argued, language is never neutral. Words carry the weight of their past and present uses, users, contexts, and connotations and therefore contribute dramatic tension to any interpretation. Despite the best intentions of the author to "fix" meaning in a particular choice of words, their relationship and proximity to other words, including their dialectical opposites, give rise to novel and often conflicting meanings.

Rhetoric

Burke's rhetorical theory provides an understanding of how power operates in and through language to create action and human cooperation. In *A Rhetoric of Motives* (1945), his definition of rhetoric moves beyond the ancient art of persuasion to focus on the concept of *identification*. Identification implies the process of both naming something and bringing people or things together through a shared interest, or "substance." Individuals create identification through a strategic use of a language of shared values, meanings, connotations, or attitudes about the world. While rhetoric can unite individuals symbolically, as a dialectical term, identification implies its opposite, division. Just as language can unite people by creating a rhetorical "us," it simultaneously generates a division by creating a necessary "them" or "other."

Dramatism

Burke did not simply view drama as a useful metaphor for understanding social life. He viewed social life as inherently dramatic. His theoretical system, *dramatism*, provides a complex and critical method to uncover the motives, attitudes, and relationships of power that underlie all symbolic interaction, and therefore all human relationships. For Burke, "motives" represent the linguistic springboards for action and provide "shorthand terms for situations," thereby providing valuable empirical data. Examining people's accounts of behavior provides rich "vocabularies of motive," illuminating the various ways individuals frame and understand situated social action.

In his *A Grammar of Motives* (1945), Burke explains his dramatistic *pentad*, a method used to analyze and uncover human motives in the language of art, literature, politics, or social interaction. He divides social action into five essential parts: *act*, *scene*, *agent*, *agency*, and *purpose* (he also adds attitude, which refers to an incipient or latent act). By examining the language operating in a given situation, the pentad helps us discover the relationships or the "ratios" between the *what*, *where*, *who*, *for what*, and *why* of a symbolic act. Through pentadic analysis, one can analyze these relationships or "ratios" by focusing on the clustering of key terms. For example, a *scene-act ratio* may examine the background setting of an act to explain the act itself, or how the act itself might suggest why it appeared in a particular situated context.

Robert Owen Gardner

See also Sociolinguistics; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology; Symbolic Interactionism

Further Readings

Burke, K. (1945). *A grammar of motives*. Berkeley: University of California Press. (Reprinted in 1969)

———. (1950). *A rhetoric of motives*. Berkeley: University of California Press. (Reprinted in 1969)

———. (1966). *Language as symbolic action: Essays on life, literature, and method*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Gusfield, J. R. (Ed.). (1989). *Kenneth Burke: On symbols and society.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Overington, M. (1977). Kenneth Burke and the method of dramatism. *Theory and Society, 4,* 131–156.

Rueckert, W. H. (1982). *Kenneth Burke and the drama of human relations* (2nd ed.). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Butler, Judith

Judith Butler (b. 1956) is a U.S. philosopher and critical theorist. She received her BA and PhD degrees in philosophy from Yale University and has taught at several U.S. universities, principally at the University of California, Berkeley, where she has been a professor in the Department of Rhetoric from 1993 to the present.

Butler rose to international prominence following the 1990 publication of her book *Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity*, which synthesized a new language and analysis for understanding gender and sexuality as socially constituted, contingent, and contestable phenomena. Her theory of "gender performativity" influenced developments in feminist politics and theory in the 1990s and onward, and it came to be a touchstone for the then nascent field of "queer theory," an area of inquiry focused principally on critiques of coercive social norms related to sexual practice and personhood. She has published prolifically in areas related to the philosophy of language and hate speech laws; the cultural construction of the body; sovereign violence and the politics of grief; secularism; U.S. foreign

policy in the 2000s; the legal framings of kinship and marriage; and more. Known for dense and careful scholarship, Butler has been an outspoken activist as well, lending her support to gay and lesbian causes, antiracist actions, contestations of neoliberal market fundamentalism, and critiques of state-sponsored violence in the Middle East and elsewhere.

Theory of Gender Performativity

Butler's work has always gestured toward anthropological theory. In developing her theory of gender performativity, she drew substantially on the work of Claude Lévi-Strauss (even while criticizing his structuralist account of meaning and the putative inevitability of heterosexuality in his analyses of kinship), as well as on Mary Douglas's analysis of body symbolism in varied sociocultural orders; Gayle Rubin, Esther Newton, Clifford Geertz, and other anthropologists are also cited. Butler's theory of gender performativity is meant to unsettle (to "trouble") various kinds of essentialism that have, in her view, dogged feminist analyses. Even while showing that gender could be various and that gender asymmetries in society were not inevitable by-products of sexual inequalities in nature, Butler felt that feminist scholarship sometimes reified a unitary notion of "woman" or "the feminine," often in an attempt to recuperate these as against the social orders in which they were marginalized. For example, when accounts of the "social construction of gender" refer to cultural meanings layered "on top" of naturally sexed bodies, they assume what they need to explain: the way sexed bodies are rendered intelligible through the gendered grid that creates (interprets and interpellates) them. Categories of "woman" and "man" are not the cultural construction of "female" and "male." Rather, binary gender, and the compulsory heterosexuality it supports and necessitates, constitutes the sexes as discrete and disguises itself in so doing. Sex appears to stand before gender, even though it is gender that has created sex.

To understand this process, Butler draws on the philosophy of language, in particular the notion of the "performative" speech act, extending this theoretical construct as a powerful metaphor for how persons and relations are brought into being in a general sense. A performative in speech act theory is that which enacts what it says: most classically, and tellingly, the pronouncements of the marriage ceremony. The statement "I now pronounce you man and wife" creates the marriage in the act of saying. Crucially, in Butler's analysis, the performative gains its constitutive force only by re-creating and complying with prior instances of iteration. These instances accumulate into discursive conventions that authorize some statements (and the persons making them) to designate what is true, or even what simply is, to the extent that they conform to standards of intelligibility (e.g., norms).

By analogy, gender is performative insofar as it consists in accumulated acts that "cite" culturally conventional forms of conduct associated with men and women. In Butler's account, people do not "express" their genders when they act in the world; rather, their actions in the world create genders, through a kind of citational practice. If genders do not underlie (and thereby account for) the acts that instance them but instead are constituted by those very acts (acts such as particular forms of sexual practice or the sexed aesthetics of bodily comportment), it follows that the acting subject itself cannot be seen to stand apart from these forms of conduct either. Indeed, gender is coercive in society precisely in the way in which the "self" can be intelligible as an acting subject or a social person only to the extent that it conforms to the norms and forms of conventional gender identities. An ungendered person seems to be unthinkable, or in Butler's terms, impossible to perform. Butler's critique however suggests that the coherence of selves and sexes that culturally conventional appearances of accumulated acts attain is an illusion aiding and abetting hegemony, or gender inequality.

However, if the normative force of "gender" coerces conduct, it is not therefore uncontestable. Precisely because gender is elicited through citation (rather than expression), precisely because gender occurs in time as a residue of repeated acts of bodily style or comportment, its "necessity" is negotiable. Repetition in time opens the possibility for deformation, for what Butler calls "resignification"—performances that, in citing differently the conventions they enact, thereby expose their contingent character and in fact begin to change them. The political import of this theory is that gender is contestable because it is citational; Butler's is concomitantly a politics of the parodic.

Drawing on theories of language, discourse, psychoanalysis, and phenomenology, and often basing

her accounts of the cultural "scripting" of gender in readings of literature (e.g., the writing of Willa Cather, Antigone), Butler's rhetorical emphasis on "performance" is understandable. But it has also persistently led to some misreadings and misunderstandings, above all to the misconception, which Butler had suggested, that all gender is "drag," a kind of costume or ornament that subjects adorn as they go through life. Gender, especially as it is linked to sexual norms, is in her view a form of coercive social reproduction; gender is one way in which the historically contingent and the socially varied come to appear necessary, natural, and therefore normative. In this sense, Butler's notion of gender performance bears fruitful comparison to the anthropological accounts of practice that gained prominence throughout the 1970s; if Butler had perhaps adopted a language of "practice," she might have avoided accusations that her theory was a voluntarist account of gender construction or a dematerialized critique of its politics.

In fact, Butler's notion of performativity is very close in conception to the idea of "practice" as adumbrated by anthropologists in the 1970s and 1980s, that is, as historically determined and culturally meaningful social action that brings subjects into being even as subjects are the instruments of its "logic" (e.g., Pierre Bourdieu, 1977, *Outline of a Theory of Practice*). Moreover, Butler's emphasis on "intersectionality"—the ways in which gender, sexuality, race, class, and so on must be understood together—resonates strongly with practice theory's accounts of society's mutually ramifying forms of hierarchy, and above all with its analysis of society as a pervasive system of domination. Finally, Butler's emphasis on "parody" and "resignification" bears fruitful comparison to the notion of "tactics" in practice theory, and its emphasis on the strategic negotiation of social structure in action. Most especially in Butler's emphasis on the socially constituted body as the site for the reproduction of schemas of perception and action, and in her critique of structuralist accounts of meaning, her work might have drawn more directly on practice theory; yet this is a possibility that remained largely unrealized in Butler's work and in derivatives thereof, as noted by Didier Eribon in *Insult and the Making of the Gay Self* (2004).

Alongside its unacknowledged resonances with practice theory, Butler's work bears fruitful comparison to a number of anthropological debates with which it was roughly coeval. In particular, within feminist anthropology, Butler's critique of both essentialism and social constructionism recalls Marilyn Strathern's rethinking of the presuppositions of feminist accounts of gender inequality across cultures in *The Gender of the Gift* (1988).

Style, Identity, and Abjection

These resonances notwithstanding, the anthropological reception of Butler has been patchy, in part because Butler's own use of anthropological theory has been patchy. Her influence is most pronounced in anthropological accounts of gender and sexuality. However, anthropologists have been more likely to quibble with some of the implications or intimations of Butler's work than to adopt a theory of gender performativity whole cloth. Anthropologists and others have suggested that Butler's critique of a self-authoring subject that stands before or outside the norms and forms that govern its intelligibility, and therefore constrain (and create) its possibilities for action, has sometimes been undermined by its own language. For example, in describing performativity as the citational reinscription of social convention through "stylized performance," Butler's reliance on theatrical metaphors belies a principal orientation to the constraints that coercive gender norms place on individuals. If gender is created through "style" (cultural convention), Butler's work sometimes gives the impression that gender is simply about style—the aesthetic or the formal, especially as these shape personal comportment. This tendency is most visible in her evident admiration for the ways the drag queens of gay culture ironize the putative certainties of gender and sex. In Butler's writing, gender often appears only as "style," as the formal or aesthetic shaping of efficacious social action.

Her critiques of the notion of an internally coherent and perduring "identity" notwithstanding, critics argued that her work is principally about the stultifying effects gender norms place on the creative self-expression of individuals, though Butler herself has had to correct this impression, especially in her 1997 work *The Psychic Life of Power*. Her critics have concomitantly suggested that the parodic politics of the performative that Butler theorizes inevitably seems to sideline questions of material inequality, or the empirical asymmetries characterizing relations

between actually existing men and women. The shortcomings of Butler's language may be an artifact of its reliance principally on high theory (philosophy, critical theory, and psychoanalysis). Though amenable and open to anthropological work, Butler has mostly read rapidly through its empirical (ethnographic) basis to divine its theoretical insights. This is most pointed in the way she has largely avoided reading and writing about contemporary ethnographic work on non-normative gender and sexuality.

Criticisms of an overemphasis on language, on comportment and personal gender expression, and so on, notwithstanding, the evolution of Butler's work has more and more made explicit the stakes of her critique. Beyond her work on gender, Butler has criticized the ways in which sociocultural orders render some forms of life "thinkable," indeed "livable," and have relegated other forms of life to the unthinkable, and therefore "abject" (a term she mainly borrows from Julia Kristeva and that she used more frequently following the publication of her 1993 work *Bodies That Matter: On the Discursive Limits of "Sex"*).

Butler has thus focused her work more centrally on the forms through which some people and relations are "abjected" in hegemonic sociocultural orders. This abjection is most visible when some losses of life are grievable both personally and collectively, whereas others have been rendered ungrievable. They are ungrievable because they are fundamentally illegible (invisible) or unintelligible. These would include all those forms of non-normative sexuality or gender that are subject to pervasive forms of symbolic and social violence, whether that violence consists of hate crimes (physical assault, everyday epithet) or in the violence attendant on epidemics that may motivate little in the way of social concern (AIDS).

Extending this line of thinking, from 2001 onward, Butler has been concerned to understand the sociocultural logic underlying the collateral damage visited on populations that are subject to forms of state violence. In *Precarious Life: The Powers of Mourning and Violence* (2004), Butler asks, "Why are some lives (in rich and powerful countries, e.g., the United States) grieved when they are lost, while the killing that is done in the names of those lives remains invisible (as in the case of victims of the ongoing U.S. drone attacks in the Middle East)?" In bringing her account of the cultural constitution of the body round to the question of the very value of life itself, Butler has shown that her work has always been about the most intractable and important, indeed the most troubling, dynamics that characterize contemporary social life.

Thomas Strong

See also Feminist Anthropology; Poststructuralism; Practice Theory; Queer Theory

Further Readings

Butler, J. (1990). *Gender trouble: Feminism and the subversion of identity.* New York, NY: Routledge.

———. (1993). Critically queer. *GLQ: A Journal of Lesbian and Gay Studies, 1*(1), 17–32.

———. (1997). *The psychic life of power: Theories in subjection.* Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (2004). *Precarious life: The powers of mourning and violence.* London, UK: Verso.

Eribon, D. (2004). *Insult and the making of the gay self.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Mahmood, S. (2004). *Politics of piety: The Islamic revival and the feminist subject.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Strathern, M. (1988). *The gender of the gift: Problems with women and problems with society in Melanesia.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

C

Cambridge University

A major U.K. university, widely known for its formative contributions to the British School of Social Anthropology in the 20th century, Cambridge has a long history of training practicing anthropologists.

The University and the Department

Cambridge University, founded in 1309, today combines two institutional elements. Departments (amalgamated into faculties) are teaching and research establishments supported by the state and its research councils; colleges are independently governed teaching and residential establishments with private as well as state funding. Relations between them fluctuated considerably over the 20th century. It was as a collegiate university that Cambridge nourished three early scholars who, apart from Robertson Smith, each put their stamp on anthropology: James George Frazer (Trinity College), W. H. R. Rivers (St Johns), and Rivers's student Radcliffe-Brown (Trinity) were primarily supported by college positions. St Johns later funded Gregory Bateson's first fieldwork. However, departments, regulated by the university's educational boards, were essential for attracting a critical mass of students. Here, Cambridge was slow to recognize anthropology.

This did not prevent collaborative research: Witness the second Cambridge Torres Straits expedition (1898), which, with Frazer's support, included two experimental psychologists, William McDougall and Charles Samuel Myers, and their teacher W. H. R. Rivers, and a physician, Charles Gabriel Seligman, who were all converted by their experience. The one who did the most to give anthropology at Cambridge a departmental presence had been its leader, Alfred Cort Haddon.

From ad hoc teaching in comparative anatomy and physical anthropology, Haddon became university lecturer in ethnology in 1900 (with crucial financial support from a fellowship at Christ's College), for a long time the only such post at Cambridge. (Rivers held a university position in experimental psychology; like Frazer, he lectured intermittently in ethnology.) No other full-time staff was appointed until the late 1920s. A university chair of social anthropology was created in 1932, its foundation funding coming through Trinity College from Frazer's associate, William Wyse. Appointed to the William Wyse chair were T. C. Hodson (1933–1936), J. H. Hutton (1936–1950), Meyer Fortes (1950–1973), Jack Goody (1973–1984), Ernest Gellner (1984–1992), Marilyn Strathern (1993–2008), Henrietta Moore (2008–). "Social anthropology" had been the rubric under which Rivers taught and which Radcliffe-Brown promoted as the comparative study of institutions.

When a Board of Anthropological Studies was created in 1904 for a postgraduate program, it drew in lecturers from archaeology, physical (now biological) anthropology, the Museum of Archaeology and Ethnology (later, Archaeology and Anthropology), Anglo-Saxon, Assyriology, and Egyptology, as well as ethnology; an undergraduate program mooted in 1913 was delayed by the war. The subsequent Board of Archaeological and

Anthropological Studies set the tone for several decades, with archaeology and the two anthropologies, social and biological, acting as a single department, but in 1970 each became an autonomous department within what was now a wider Faculty of Archaeology and Anthropology. The faculty was administratively reorganized as a single department again in 2010, the three subdisciplines now being divisions within it. In U.K. terms, the Social Anthropology Division is medium sized; in 2012, there were 18 core teaching/research staff (university and college), although the larger community included another 35 social anthropologists resident in Cambridge.

The Cambridge system focuses on the individual supervision of undergraduates as well as postgraduates; while many Cambridge BAs go on to do further studies elsewhere, before a master's became a requirement, undergraduates could proceed directly to the PhD. (Since the Cambridge MA originates in a BA, present-day master's degrees are known as MPhil.) Between 1933 and 1993, Cambridge PhDs—some with Cambridge first degrees, others from elsewhere—included Ray Abrahams, Debbora Battaglia, Marcus Banks, Fredrik Barth, Geoffrey Benjamin, Nurit Bird-David, Maurice Bloch, Barbara Bodenhorn, Lynne Brydon, Susan Drucker Brown, Anthony Carter, Jeremy Eades, Colin Filer, Derek Freeman, Takeo Funabiki, Esther Goody, Jack Goody, Kathleen Gough, Sarah Green, Ralph Grillo, Stephen Gudeman, Chris Hann, Keith Hart, Paul Henley, Polly Hill, Steven Hooper, Stephen Hugh Jones, Caroline Humphrey, Tim Ingold, Michael Jackson, Elizabeth Kennedy, Christopher Fuller, Heonik Kwon, Adam Kuper, James Laidlaw, Jean La Fontaine, Robert Launay, Peter Lawrence, Tanya Luhrmann, Henrietta Moore, Martha Mundy, Colin Murray, Christine Oppong, Jonathan Parry, Peter Rigby, Enid Schildkrout, Paul Sant-Cassia, Paul Sillitoe, Raymond Smith, David Sneath, Derrick Stenning, Roderick Stirrat, Andrew Strathern, Gillian Tett, Maya Unnithan, Michel Verdon, Piers Vitebsky, Monica Wilson, Peter Wade, Wiliam Watson, Harvey Whitehouse, James Woodburn, Nur Yalman, David Zeitlyn, and many others. It has been computed that at the end of the 20th century (1999), 24% of academic anthropologists employed in British departments had received their postgraduate training at Cambridge, the highest proportion of any U.K. university.

Three temporal-spatial horizons are of note:

1. *1898 to the late 1920s:* Research in Oceania led to a small stream of Melanesianist students, and also arguably a paradigm for emergent anthropological professionalism (solving a puzzle in kinship terminology).

2. *1950 to the late 1970s:* The turn to Africa, begun elsewhere in the 1930s, was consolidated through a cohort of West and East Africanists and their several students. The African Studies Centre, first under Audrey Richards, dates from this time.

3. *1990 onward:* South Asia long had a presence; Central and East Asia came into its own with an explicit focus on Mongolia, and its Russian and Chinese neighbors, institutionally recognized in the Mongolian and Inner Asia Studies Unit, founded by Caroline Humphrey with Urgunge Onon in 1986. Regionalism had once been controversial (Fortes apparently regarding himself an "anthropologist," not an "Africanist"), but the unit is an important focus for scholars from these areas.

Present-day undergraduate teaching at Cambridge takes such areas as opportunities for intense scrutiny, crosscutting them with theoretical developments in, for example, art, ethical systems, gender relations, globalization, law and the state, medicine and science, and world religions.

Major Theoretical Orientations

Anthropology did not develop at Cambridge in isolation from the London School of Economics, Manchester, Oxford, and University College London. Tracing its distinctive contributions forms but one thread among many.

Comparative Method and Fieldwork

Two concepts deployed by Frazer and Haddon became absorbed into the later self-definition of British social anthropology, although with radically different connotations. With the unit of knowledge a "custom," Frazer's *comparative method* consisted of classifying customs—whether burial rules or kin terms—by the (remote) inspection of similarities and differences. Haddon took this in another direction; the ecology of a region and data treated as a related set revealed development between types. Introducing

the concept of *fieldwork* from biology (his expedition colleagues were "field anthropologists"), he had hopes for a Cambridge school of ethnology defined by "the intensive study of limited areas." The fieldwork that had been an implicit adjunct to Frazer's enquiries came to be an explicit focus, posing different problems. Fieldworkers entered into relationships with people, which is why Rivers recommended long-term stay, although present-day understandings of "intensive fieldwork" had to wait until Bronisław Malinowski.

In Haddon's Cambridge, training was given to probationers in the colonial civil service about to be thrown "into the field"; such "practical anthropology" was later of particular interest to Richards. Debate can still be generated over the theoretical status of fieldwork carried out under conditions of colonization.

British Social Anthropology: Defining Social Structure

Intensive fieldwork was a necessary but not sufficient condition for the theorizing that characterised British social anthropology in the mid-20th century. With a tension between holistic and systematic schema, laying out a structural basis for social life realized a Durkheimian vision of "society." Kinship systems (see the entry on Lewis Henry Morgan) provided the defining momentum. Whatever one thinks of the scholarly genealogy for the "British style of structural anthropology" that Fortes proposed, linking himself to Morgan via Rivers and Radcliffe-Brown (and Robert Lowie), the period following his appointment endorsed a strong model of societal structure that was equally strongly opposed (see the next section). Alongside building up a body of research students, significance has been put on Fortes's bringing to Cambridge a particular kind of seminar culture; certainly, the role that open controversy played in the theoretical development of the 1950s and 1960s cannot be overestimated. The previous 25 years, during which anthropology at Oxford came to rival that at the London School of Economics, are generally regarded as a period of doldrums for Cambridge. This was to change.

Fortes's genealogy, traced long after his own foundational work at the London School of Economics and Oxford, linked two Cambridge figures. Rivers's interpretation of kinship as a "principle of social organization" arose from the "genealogical method," a tool intended to provide an accurate record of interpersonal relationships that yielded all kinds of information on social life, including how certain relations were valued over others. Radcliffe-Brown's structuralist theorizing was to develop its own trajectory, entailing an idea of social order as a system, with kinship structures exemplifying how people regulate their relations to one another.

This later model became taken for granted; collaboration between Fortes and E. E. Evans-Pritchard, especially in the new ethnography of political systems (1940), threw up the role played in certain polities by "segmentary lineages." If kinship and society sometimes seemed coterminous, elsewhere descent groups took their place in Fortes's analytical distinction between political-jural and domestic-familial domains. (The term *kinship* might encompass both or be restricted to the latter.) Social structure understood in terms of social order allowed colonial subjects their own quasi-legal forms. If structure was the subject of study, its key analytic was relations. The study of kinship afforded insight into fine discriminations in behavior and practice that had major structural consequences. At Cambridge, this theoretical emphasis lay alongside a detailed focus on familial dynamics. The *Developmental Cycle in Domestic Groups* (1958), edited by Jack Goody, was the first of a new Cambridge series of papers. Goody's comparative approach to inheritance and succession stimulated the examination of corporate descent groups as property-holding entities.

Alternative Anthropologies

When modeling becomes explicit, questions arise about the interests at stake, the relationship between anthropological and folk models, and what is happening "on the ground." This became the empiricist terrain to which Edmund Leach, appointed a lecturer in 1953, brought a sceptical anthropology derived from his Burmese observations, and a semiotic/transformational one developed from his interest in mathematics (and subsequent reading of Claude Lévi-Strauss and Roman Jakobson). The fieldwork he carried out from Cambridge was the vehicle for one among many attacks on descent theory, open debate with Fortes making a heady intellectual cocktail for students. The challenge of

an Asiatic perspective was underlined by Stanley Tambiah's appointment in 1964.

Fortes himself dealt with anomalies and contradictions in the descent group paradigm; Leach's assault raised quite different foundations for the study of social life (not equitable in any simple way with "alliance theory"; see the entries on descent theory and alliance theory). All this laid the ground in Cambridge for receiving theories originating in the general rejuvenation of Marxism and the rise of feminist anthropology in the 1970–1980s.

Internal debate was never all-consuming. Leach stimulated interest in the broad field of religion and ritual, alongside innovative approaches to economic anthropology. He also gave the discipline unprecedented exposure in his public broadcasts (the BBC *Reith Lectures*), addressing himself to big themes and a broad audience. Over his long writing career, Goody, who preferred the term *comparative sociology* to *anthropology*, has ranged across a vast interdisciplinary literature to answer world-scale questions about social transformation, challenging many myths about the West's uniqueness. His successor, the social philosopher/philosophical sociologist Ernest Gellner, brought in the whole sweep of civilization and modernity, to which Alan Macfarlane was already making his own historical-anthropological contribution.

World Affairs

When interests become explicit, so does the ethnographer's role; an implicit assumption about the international nature of anthropology turns into a substantive topic. Flatten the relationship between observer and observed, and an encompassing "world" comes into view. As elsewhere, Cambridge social anthropology has been drawn into world affairs, where the theoretical driver is comprehension of the complexities and specificities of life as it is lived under conditions assembled by global interests, new knowledge practices, burgeoning religions, political-economic disenfranchisement, environmental and other disasters, and unprecedented forms of citizenship.

A long-standing Cambridge contribution has come through the study of societies under socialist and post-socialist regimes (especially by Caroline Humphrey and her many students), where part of the strength has been the coherence of comparative interests shared with national scholars. "Collaborative anthropology" is a description of contemporary anthropological practice, as well as the rubric under which a second Cambridge chair (established in 2005–2006) was initially held by Humphrey.

Marilyn Strathern

See also Barth, Fredrik; Bateson; Gregory; Bloch, Maurice; Comparative Method; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Fortes, Meyer; Frazer, James G.; Goody, Jack; Haddon, Alfred C.; Leach, Edmund; London School of Economics; Manchester School; Oxford University; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Richards, Audrey; Seligman, Charles Gabriel; Smith, William Robertson; Strathern, Marilyn; Tambiah, Stanley; Wilson, Monica

Further Readings

Goody, J. R. (1995). *The expansive moment: Anthropology in Britain and Africa 1918–1970*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Kuper, A. (1996). *Anthropology and anthropologists: The modern British school* (3rd ed.). London, UK: Routledge.

Spencer, J. (2000). British social anthropology: A retrospective. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 29,* 1–24.

Carneiro, Robert L.

Robert Leonard Carneiro, an American anthropologist, is best known for his contributions to scientific theories of the state and evolutionary perspectives in anthropology. His theoretical writings are based on comparative-historical data covering extremely long periods of time and involving a multitude of societies from across the world and are additionally supported by his own fieldwork among the Kuikuru of Brazil, the Amahuaca of Peru, and the Yanomamö of Venezuela.

Carneiro was born in New York City on June 4, 1927. He studied at the University of Michigan, where he received a BA in political science (1949) and an MA (1952) and PhD in anthropology (1957), the latter on the basis of a dissertation that offered an ecological study of the subsistence economy of the Kuikuru Indians. Carneiro completed his doctoral work under the supervision of the noted anthropologist Leslie White, whose evolutionary perspective greatly influenced Carneiro's thinking.

After a 1-year stay at the University of Wisconsin, Carneiro moved to the American Museum of Natural History, where he has been employed as curator since 1957. He presently serves as curator emeritus and professor emeritus of anthropology. Carneiro has additionally taught as visiting and adjunct professor at various universities. In the realm of anthropological theory, Carneiro is best known for his innovative theory of the state and his defense of evolutionism in the anthropological study of culture.

Carneiro's theory of the state was first published in the journal *Science* in 1970 and has since been refined, though not substantially altered, in additional writings. The theory holds that warfare directed at the conquest of land will lead to the formation of states under three material circumstances. First, the ecological condition of *environmental* circumscription has to be met so that the availability of agricultural land is confined. As additional land becomes unavailable due to environmental constraints (such as high mountains or broad waterways that cannot be traversed with available technologies), warfare will ensue, resulting in the conquest of accessible land and bringing about the political subjugation of once autonomous groups. Thus, there occurs a gradual formation of ever-growing unified political communities, which eventually reach the level of large and highly centralized states. Second, warfare will bring about state formation as *resource concentration* occurs, in which case, the availability of food is restricted, again bringing about war and political subjugation. Third, *social* circumscription refers to the fact that population pressure—that is, the density of a population relative to the available land—can reach a point whereby warfare will ensue as a result of a quest for territorial expansion. States grow in size by unifying once autonomous, smaller political communities until the point where they reach other large states—formed under similar conditions—and state borders among them are established.

Carneiro's interest in state formation is part of a more comprehensive interest in evolutionism and the need to develop a scientific theory of culture, especially to explain the development from relatively small-scale and autonomous communities (e.g., bands, villages) to more complex communities (e.g., chiefdoms) and large and highly differentiated societies (e.g., states, empires). Carneiro's interests are thereby radically scientific in seeking to develop theories that can account for the variation in evolutionary development by identifying relevant conditions in the social and natural environment. His interests are fundamentally oriented toward developing a very general theory of culture. This ambition already formed the foundation of Carneiro's theory of state formation, which seeks to account for the formation of states in light of the observation that states of comparable degrees of complexity have evolved across the world at different periods of time. For Carniero, the development of complex political systems is of special relevance because the process mostly took place over the past 10,000 years after a period of about 2 million years of human existence when all social life was concentrated in autonomous bands and villages.

Methodologically, Carneiro attempts to uncover regularities in the evolution of culture by means of scaling the order in which certain traits of development have emerged over time, thereby relying on available archaeological and ethnographic data. These traits can be of various kinds, such as political, economic, legal, and symbolic, developing at various points over long periods of historical time. Carneiro thereby defends a unilinear perspective of evolution that seeks to establish general patterns (laws) of cultural development. Formulating an explanation for uncovered patterns of cultural evolution, Carneiro holds on to the idea of causation and places central importance on nonvoluntaristic explanations of warfare, which dispense with any factors related to the human will and instead emphasize materialist causes, especially ecology and demography, while minimizing any influence of myth, ideology, and other systems of ideas.

Developing his perspective on evolution, Carneiro has also contributed to theoretical discussions about other evolutionist perspectives on culture and society to highlight the variations, limitations, and strengths of various modes of evolutionary thinking. He has particularly contributed to the understanding and continued relevance of classical thinkers such as Herbert Spencer, Edward Tylor, and Lewis Morgan, as well as modern scholars, most notably Leslie White as well as Elman Service and Marvin Harris. Carneiro's discussions are not mere metatheoretical excursions but form a necessary component to delineate his particular perspective of evolutionism and to defend evolutionist anthropology in general

from currents in anthropological theorizing that seek to dispense with the need for a general theory, especially under the influence of cultural relativism, historicism, and postmodernism.

The work of Carneiro enjoys considerable influence in the field of anthropology and beyond. Despite having elicited criticisms and surely not being considered the one final chapter in theoretical work on state formation, Carneiro's theory of the state is arguably the best known and most influential theory of the state developed in the social sciences. Carneiro's contributions to evolutionism in anthropology, which are generally of a more recent date, are as yet somewhat less known, though they can serve as an important antidote, among other perspectives, against the humanistic and antiscientific currents that occasionally mark the discipline of anthropology.

Mathieu Deflem

See also Cultural Materialism; Evolutionary Anthropology; Spencer, Herbert; Tylor, Edward Burnett; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Carneiro, R. L. (1970). A theory of the origin of the state. *Science, 169,* 733–738.

———. (2003). *Evolutionism in cultural anthropology: A critical history.* Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

———. (2010). *The evolution of the human mind: From supernaturalism to naturalism. An anthropological perspective.* New York, NY: Eliot Werner.

Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)

The 1893 World's Columbian Exposition was held in Chicago from May to October; it occupied 686 acres of land, and its estimated 65,000 exhibits attracted more than 21,480,000 paying visitors. The fact that the event fell between the financial panic of 1893 and the Pullman strike of 1894 indicates the unsettled character of the period and the artificiality of the vision of unity the event embodied. International expositions were, as Burton Benedict has argued, mammoth rituals in which all kinds of power relations were expressed, and the 1893 Chicago Exposition was no exception. Each of the various exposition exhibition sites illustrated a particular dimension of how anthropology was understood and practiced in this period.

The exhibits in the exposition's uniquely named Anthropological Building mirrored the important transition in anthropology occurring in this period, when traditional ethnology was refashioning itself into a broader, academic, multifaceted endeavor with the appropriation of scientific tools and pervasive collecting activities. Located in the southeast section of the exposition, the building was specifically named by Frederick Ward Putnam, who was in charge of the official Department M (Ethnology), and encompassed both historical archaeology and traditional ethnology as well as the newer work in physical anthropology. This diversity reflected how Putnam, as curator of Harvard University's Peabody Museum and Anthropology Department, and his exposition assistant, Dr. Franz Boas, understood the newer integrative processes involved in anthropology in this period.

Among the Anthropological Building's exhibits were artifacts, casts, and models made from a series of special ethnographic research projects directed by Putnam in the United States (Ohio, New Jersey) as well as in Mexico, Central and South America, and Northwest coast (under Franz Boas). Putnam had been able to finance these research projects with the use of exposition funds beginning in 1891. Alongside these collections were a diverse range of independently submitted exhibits from various individuals and state agencies, which, although their labeling and presentation were uneven, represented a cross section of collecting activities across the country.

On the upper-gallery level of the Anthropological Building, the physical anthropology section, under Boas's direction, was organized in a series of three laboratory spaces. Physical Anthropology occupied three rooms, the first showing the latest tools for recording, testing, and calculating physical information on large groups of people, including the results of Boas's recent measurement surveys of 17,000 North American Indians and 90,000 schoolchildren. Adjacent to these rooms was the Neurological Laboratory, supervised by the Chicago neurologist Henry H. Donaldson. On display were a series of models and casts of human brains and those of lower animals, showing brain structures,

localization of functions, and modes of preservation. The next two rooms were of the Psychological Laboratory, managed by Professor Joseph Jastrow (Wisconsin), which showed various experimental psychology tests and instruments for the study of touch, color, and hearing and the recording and timing of reflexes. A separate room provided space where on-site anthropometric measurement and psychophysical data from volunteer exposition visitors were taken.

Just outside the Anthropological Building stood the monumental reconstructed replicas made from original molds of five key Mesoamerican archaeological ruins, including Uxmal and Labná in the Yucatán. Adjacent to these were a series of traditional American Indian homes and native encampments, including the bark longhouse of the Iroquois, the birch bark of the Penobscot Indians of Maine, and the skin-covered teepee of the Plains Indians. Beside the plank-covered house and totem columns of the Northwest Coast Indians of British Columbia (arranged for by Franz Boas), the Kwakiutl Indians from Vancouver Island performed their illusionist stage-crafted dances and ceremonial performances for the exposition spectators.

A distance beyond these outdoor traditional American Indian encampments was the modest display of the U.S. government's Bureau of American Indian Affairs. Its model schoolhouse display was initially created to stand for the future of Native American Indians rather than their past, featuring students from various boarding schools throughout the country, who were expected to perform their regular classroom activities before an audience of exposition visitors. This effort was both chronically underfunded compared with the Anthropological Building and undermined by disagreements with officials of the Carlisle Indian School, who had more ambitious goals of their own. Its presence, however, dramatized the tension between the well-supported efforts and growing popularity of academic anthropology and the official government policies of cultural and social assimilation for native populations.

On the famed mile-long thoroughfare of Midway Plaisance on the exposition's opposite northwest section, visitors encountered various national groups in their respective displays. Within this informal, confusing atmosphere of voyeuristic entertainment, brusque commercialism, and high-pitched popularization, the traditional cultural boundaries between spectators and ethnic groups were temporarily erased. These experiences and the daily parades by Dahomeyans, Samoans, Arabs, Sioux Indians, and camel-riding Egyptians from their respective village displays, however, accelerated the solidifying of ethnic biases and cultural stereotyping implicit in the tactics of displays of living people within this kind of artificial setting.

Finally, the powerful role of museum-based anthropology was on show in the official exposition exhibits of the Smithsonian Institution in the U.S. Government Building, centrally located in the exposition. Here, the work of the U.S. National Museum's Ethnology Division (under Otis T. Mason) and the Bureau of American Ethnology (under John Wesley Powell) was on view. Powell's linguistic map of North American tribes had provided the nexus for the selection of representative native groups for display. In addition to the display of well-documented artifacts, there were a series of life-size glass-cased manikins designed by Frank Hamilton Cushing that included female Navaho weavers, Zuni pottery makers, and a Hopi basket maker. With their accurate environmental settings and realistic poses, the idea of the "life group" was a substantial visual and technical exhibit innovation over the more static presentations of evolutionary artifact sequencing used previously, and it provided an important precedent for subsequent museum exhibit–making methodology.

Finally, the International Congress on Anthropology, held in conjunction with the 1893 Chicago Exposition from August 28 to September 2 ensured a powerful platform and attendance by leaders in academic and museum anthropology with the subsequent publication of their papers. In addition, a number of exhibits and collections from the Anthropological Building were later transferred to the newly created Field Columbia Museum (name changed to Field Museum of Natural History in 1905), originally housed in the Fine Arts Building after the close of the exposition. Although Frederick Putnam had expected to be named director of the new museum and Franz Boas served as curator for 2 years following the exposition, the directorship instead went to Frederick J. V. Skiff, previously in charge of the mining exhibits at the 1893 Chicago Exposition.

Julie K. Brown

See also Boas, Franz; Culture Area Approach; Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace); Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Race

Further Readings

Benedict, B., & Lowie, R. H. (1983). *The anthropology of world's fairs: San Francisco's Panama Pacific International Exposition of 1915*. Berkeley, CA: Scolar Press.

Brown, J. K. (1994). *Contesting images: Photography and the world's Columbian exposition*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press.

Hinsley, C. M. (1991). The world as marketplace: Commodification of the exotic at the world's Columbian exposition, 1893. In I. Karp & S. Lavine (Eds.), *Exhibiting cultures: The poetics and politics of museum display* (pp. 344–365). Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Jacknis, I. (1991). Northwest coast Indian culture and the world's Columbian exposition. In D. H. Thomas (Ed.), *The Spanish borderlands in Pan-American perspective* (pp. 91–117). Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Rydell, R. W. (1984). *All the world's a fair: Visions of empire at American international expositions, 1876–1916*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Trennert, R. A., Jr. (1987). Selling Indian education at world's fairs and expositions, 1893–1904. *American Indian Quarterly, 11*(3), 203–230.

Childhood

For most of the 20th century, anthropologists relied on theories from psychiatry and psychology to set the frameworks and questions for their studies of children, childhood, and socialization. Margaret Mead demonstrated this approach in her early work by calling for anthropologists to use their field sites as laboratories for putting Western theories of child training and personality development to the ethnographic test. Her overall goal was to demonstrate the malleability of human nature by showing that "cultural rhythms" were stronger than "physiological rhythms." Mead used her research in Samoa to challenge the theories of G. Stanley Hall, who assumed that adolescents everywhere experienced their stage of life as a time of storm and stress. Similarly, her fieldwork among the Manus in Papua New Guinea was, in part, designed to investigate whether animistic thought in children was due to their intellectual immaturity, as Jean Piaget had argued, or was determined more by their sociocultural context. Not surprisingly, Mead suggested that her research proved that it was the latter. However, even while calling for critiques of Western theories of child development, Mead incorporated some of these models into her own studies, as she did using Erik H. Erikson's theories of psychosexual development as a way to interpret the research she conducted with Gregory Bateson on Balinese childhood. Only later in the 20th century did anthropologists begin to break away from the frameworks established by psychologists, as they turned their attention to more explicit models of language and communication as well as to social theorists such as Pierre Bourdieu, Michel Foucault, and Anthony Giddens. This important shift in orientation situates children within the micro- and macrolevel sociocultural and political economic processes that shape, and in turn are shaped by, the localized patterns of interaction that play such an important role in the lives of children everywhere.

Culture and Personality

From 1930 to 1960, the approach known as "culture and personality" dominated research on children and childhood in anthropology. The research questions in this field were generated by the psychological theories in vogue at the time, and this was the case whether anthropologists were seeking to "prove" or "disprove" these theories. There was great interest in examining the relationships between particular societal types (e.g., hunters and gatherers vs. agricultural groups), specific child-rearing patterns (e.g., toilet training, or the presence or absence of initiation ceremonies), and the formation of behavioral and personality characteristics believed to be typical of individuals in a particular culture. In the 1950s, a landmark project, known as the Six Cultures Study, was formulated and led by John Whiting and Irvin L. Child. The goal of this study was to collect comparative ethnographic information that would make it possible to test specific hypotheses derived from a psychocultural model of child rearing that posited causal relationships between economic/ecological and sociopolitical systems, child-rearing practices and

the development of specific child and adult personality types. Research was conducted in six different areas of the world: Okinawa, India, the Philippines, Mexico, Kenya, and the United States. Not surprisingly, this study generated a large amount of data that has enabled researchers to look at a variety of issues, such as differences across societies in terms of training for responsibility or expectations for obedience, socialization for aggression, or the effect of schools on children's behavior. Unfortunately, there are a number of limitations to this material, especially because of the somewhat narrow focus on a predetermined set of "behavioral systems" (e.g., succorance, nurturance, self-reliance, and achievement) coupled with questionable assumptions about cultures as uniform and homogeneous entities. In addition, researchers were operating with a theory of language that conceptualized it as a *tool* for communicating, gathering, and extracting information but, in itself, playing no role in the constitution of this information.

The Interactional Turn

A turn toward a more explicit study of language and communication occurred in the 1960s and 1970s with the development of "ethnography of speaking" studies, especially as inspired by the work of Dell Hymes and John Gumperz. This approach opened up new theories and methods for studying children and socialization processes as illustrated by the work of Elinor Ochs, Bambi Schieffelin, and Jenny Cook-Gumperz, among others. Central to these studies was the collection and analysis of richly detailed interactions between children and their caregivers and children and their peers. The important role of language in constituting social and cognitive worlds led to studies of language acquisition and language socialization across multiple cultures. A range of issues overlooked by culture and personality researchers emerged in these studies. Most important, instead of taking the existence of a "social world" for granted, these studies started with questions about how social worlds are constructed out of everyday talk and interactional routines. By paying attention to the role of everyday discourse in the production of these social worlds, researchers were also able to understand and examine the interpretive processes participants themselves used to make sense of their interactions.

During this same time period, researchers in sociology, in the field known as ethnomethodology, were asking similar questions and also developing important critiques of the "developmental perspective" as applied to the study of children. In an important, but neglected, article from 1973, Robert W. Mackay argued that this developmental model views children as "incomplete beings"—immature, acultural, asocial, and incompetent individuals—who must be "filled up" by proper guidance and child-training practices. Similarly, in 1976, Matthew Speier called attention to the way these kinds of assumptions represent the "adult ideological viewpoint" that, he suggested, is embedded in almost all theories of child development. Understanding the role that a researcher's own folk model of childhood may play in the development of specific theories of socialization is now an important component of anthropological theorizing, but at that time, the influence of these ideologies was not widely recognized.

This work in the 1970s and 1980s is especially significant because it prefigured a series of publications, all of which surprisingly appeared in the same year (1990), that had a transformative effect on anthropological and sociological theorizing about children and childhood. Three books in particular illustrate this break with the previous theoretical models that had mostly dominated researchers' thinking about children and childhood. The important book *Constructing and Reconstructing Childhood: Contemporary Issues in the Sociological Study of Childhood*, edited by Allison James and Alan Prout, is significant because of its argument, as is evident in the title, that childhood is a social construction that must always be considered in relation to specific historical and cultural contexts. Equally important are two ethnographies that appeared at the same time: Bambi Schieffelin's *The Give and Take of Everyday Life*, reporting on her fieldwork examining the language socialization of Kaluli children in Papua New Guinea, and Marjorie Harness Goodwin's *He-Said-She-Said: Talk as Social Organization Among Black Children*, based on research conducted in an African American neighborhood in Southwest Philadelphia.

Most significantly, the James and Prout volume presents a sustained challenge to the dominant account of children in the research literature that conceptualizes development as a natural,

continuous, and directional process that manifests itself in an orderly sequence of stages. In their words, the standard model of development

> is essentially an evolutionary model: the child developing into an adult represents a progression from simplicity to complexity of thought, from irrational to rational behavior. . . . Children's activities—their language, play and interactions—are significant as symbolic markers of developmental progress. (Prout & James, 1990, pp. 10–11)

This model of unilineal stages of development naturally unfolding in a predetermined sequence is very familiar to anthropologists as it replicates assumptions embedded in the models of human evolution put forward by scholars such as E. B. Tylor and Lewis Henry Morgan in the early years of the discipline. In part, this was the model that Mead was questioning in her early work, and it supports an ideology of childhood that is not attentive to social and cultural variation because the focus is on "childhood" as a natural, biological, and universal period of life. What makes this an especially powerful and effective ideology is that it appears as if it is *not* an ideology at all—because, of course, it is natural, inevitable, and universal.

The ethnographies by Schieffelin and Goodwin show us how important it is to examine the diversity that exists both within as well as across groups in terms of socialization practices and interactional routines. In *He-Said-She-Said*, Goodwin uses detailed transcriptions of interactions to illustrate how "situated activities" (e.g., "telling stories") shape the ways participants, who in her case varied by age and gender, are oriented toward each other, and the particular forms of speech and interaction that this produces. An earlier study by Shirley Brice Heath (*Ways With Words: Language, Life and Work in Communities and Classrooms*, 1983) demonstrated the importance of recognizing differences across race, class, geographic region, and social setting (e.g., classrooms in schools or family interactions at home) in examining patterns of language use across three different communities in the Piedmont Carolinas in the United States. These studies illustrate the ways richly detailed ethnographies can challenge the ongoing tendency to interpret differences in language use and literacy practices as deficiency, deficiencies that are almost always located *in* the child or *in* the child's family.

Globalizing Childhood

The studies from the 1990s discussed here also ushered in another transformation in anthropologists' theorizing about children and childhood. Here, the focus was not on microlevel interactions but rather on research examining the relationships between the child, the state, and global economic and political forces. In the mid-1990s, researchers such as Sharon Stephens and Nancy Scheper-Hughes began to argue for the importance of considering children and childhood within the context of global political-economic transformations. This challenge to place children in the context of "world systems" has been taken up by many researchers in the 21st century who are examining how children are affected by shifting labor markets; migration and immigration patterns; health crises such as the HIV/AIDS epidemic as well as endemic health problems associated with poverty and hunger, wars, and political turmoil; natural disasters and forced relocations; and the influence of global media and markets and technologies such as the Internet.

The Anthropology of Childhood

It may be too soon to articulate a specific "anthropological" theory of children and childhood, but the parameters of the one that is currently taking shape would certainly include the following assumptions. First and foremost is the view that children are active (not passive) participants in social life and, as actors, they both shape and are shaped by the opportunities and constraints they confront (which are themselves shaped by gender, age, class, and race/ethnicity differences). Instead of viewing socialization processes as hierarchical and centered on the ways adults "train" or "rear" children, socialization is seen as a process of give-and-take (negotiation and interpretation) between children and adults as well as between children and other children. At the same time, there is a recognition that children can only be understood in relation to the broader social, political, and economic contexts that impinge on their lives, but now researchers are not just concerned with the effects of these global forces on children but also with how children understand, adapt to, challenge, and even change these processes. The influence of what is often referred to as a practice-theoretical perspective makes understanding the relationship between agency and structure a central goal of research studies, and with

this, as has already been discussed, attention is focused on the role and influence of specific practices or routines in a child's life while at the same time attention is drawn to issues of power and authority and the way cultural systems are produced and reproduced.

This approach presents researchers with a model that eschews either/or arguments (*it's nature*, *no it's nurture*; *it's micro processes*, *no it's macro processes*) and instead highlights the advantage that anthropology has always had, which is to recognize and celebrate the value of bringing multiple perspectives to bear on a specific topic without assuming that there will ultimately be "one truth." There is also the important acknowledgment that anthropologists, just like children, are not "acultural" and therefore are likely to be influenced by their own ideologies of childhood and that as researchers we need to be aware of how these ideologies may influence the development of specific theoretical models.

What is particularly exciting about this framework is that it is stimulating and supporting research on children in all of the subfields of anthropology. New attention to the study of children by archaeologists is providing much greater depth to our understanding of the role of children in historic and prehistoric societies (an especially important topic to pursue since archaeologists have suggested that children constituted more than 50% of prehistoric populations). Cultural and linguistic anthropologists are developing innovative frameworks for linking micro- and macrolevel studies, while biological anthropologists are combining research that is sensitive to cultural, political, and economic contexts with methodologies that enable researchers to examine changing biological processes in relation to changing environments. All of these studies are generating new topics for analysis (e.g., the biology of inequality) as well as challenging taken-for-granted assumptions about children's behavior (e.g., the idea that children "naturally" play in gender-segregated groups).

In this brief essay, what may fairly be seen as two important shifts in the discipline have been sketched: one is topical and the other theoretical. In the first case, it is exciting to see how the anthropology of children has moved out of the margins and is now recognized as an important topic for understanding the diversity of cultures around the world and across time. The second change is the one documented here: namely, the shift from relying on the theoretical frameworks of psychology and psychiatry to the development of a perspective stimulated by work in sociology but also uniquely anthropological in its comparative focus and integration of perspectives from archaeology and biological, cultural, linguistic, and applied research on children. Given these two important shifts in the discipline, perhaps it is now time to say that theories of childhood have finally "come of age" in anthropology.

Helen B. Schwartzman

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Culture and Personality; Ethnography of Speaking; Foucault, Michel; Hymes, Dell; Mead, Margaret; Scheper-Hughes, Nancy

Further Readings

Goodwin, M. H. (1990). *He-said-she-said: Talk as social organization among Black children.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

James, A., & Prout, A. (Eds.). (1990). *Constructing and reconstructing childhood: Contemporary issues in the sociological study of childhood.* London, UK: Falmer Press.

Miller, P. J., Fung, H., Lin, S., Chen, E. C-H., & Boldt, B. R. (2012). How socialization happens on the ground: Narrative practices as alternate socializing pathways in Taiwanese and European-American families. *Monographs of the Society for Research in Child Development, 77,* 1–140.

Montgomery, H. (2009). *An introduction to childhood: Anthropological perspectives on children's lives.* Chichester, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.

Schieffelin, B. B. (1990). *The give and take of everyday life: Language socialization of Kaluli children.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Schwartzman, H. B. (Ed.). (2001). *Children and anthropology: Perspectives for the 21st century.* Westport, CT: Bergin & Garvey.

Chodorow, Nancy

Nancy Chodorow (1944–) is an internationally acclaimed feminist theorist, sociologist, and psychoanalyst. The impact of her work crosses the boundaries of social science and the humanities. Chodorow studied anthropology at Radcliffe College (1966), received her PhD in sociology from Brandeis University (1975), and later trained as a clinical

psychoanalyst at the San Francisco Psychoanalytic Institute. Her melding of these disciplines is unique, as is her theory building, which over the years has shaped key developments in feminist theory, gender studies, psychoanalysis, psychological anthropology, and psychoanalytic practice. Chodorow is regarded as a founding scholar of second-wave feminist theory based on her groundbreaking book *The Reproduction of Mothering* (1978), an account that set the stage for a new psychology of gender. Although she first made her mark in gender studies, Chodorow's enduring contribution is her complex understanding of individual subjectivity, whether she is writing about social theory, gender inequality, sexual identity, mother-child bonds, psychoanalytic theory and practice, or clinical and ethnographic encounters. Although she is perhaps best known for *The Reproduction of Mothering*, it is her book *The Power of Feelings* (1999) that has most relevance for the field of anthropology.

The Power of Feelings develops the idea that people are shaped not only by outside forces (culture, power, and discourse) but also by forces within. By providing clinically informed examples, she elaborates and extends the claims made by psychoanalytic anthropologists about the intermingling of cultural and psychic forces as constituting human subjectivity and agency in the world—that we make the world and we are made by the world.

Chodorow argues that individual feelings, fantasies, and unconscious conflicts are bound up in but not reducible to cultural mandates about gender and sexuality and that efforts to explain gendered patterns in psychological life need not be at odds with what she calls clinical individuality. In *Individualizing Gender and Sexuality: Theory and Practice* (2012), Chodorow charts the development of her thinking and her stance toward theory building and clinical treatment as dependent on close listening to individuals who have distinctive, rich inner worlds and who live in a particular place and at particular historical moments in time.

The seeds of her focus on the individual subjective experience of gender and sexuality are found in *Reproduction of Mothering*, where she challenged two key notions: first, that there is a generic mother-child relationship and, second, that boys and girls learn to take on masculine or feminine traits by imitating others or because they are forced to do so. Instead, borrowing from object relations theory, she argued that early mother-child relationships of attachment and separation result in distinct gendered identities and personalities. She claimed that whereas girls establish their sense of self in connection with their female caregivers, boys establish their sense of self through separation. Girls' sense of self and identity is continuous with this early feminine identification, while boys must secure their masculine identity by rejecting or repressing what is feminine in themselves as well as by denigrating it in women. This fraught feature of masculine identification, achieved through a break in connection between self and (m)other, proved especially useful to feminist theorists who sought to account for the persistence of men's derogation and domination of women. Meanwhile, Chodorow noted that feminine identity is more continuous and complete than masculine identity but it too is fraught with boundary confusion. Rather than defining the self in opposition, women generally tend to arrive at a sense of themselves in relation to others. This emblematic feature of femininity can be self-sabotaging, and women may fail to claim enough autonomy or agency. Chodorow's revaluation of mother-daughter relations and connectedness rather than separation became the springboard for decades of research on girls' and women's development. Her insights about the fragility of masculinity also paved the way for new approaches in "masculinity studies" and understandings about homophobia and men and violence.

By suggesting that women's experience of mothering boy children is distinct from their experiences mothering girl children, Chodorow made the topic of maternal subjectivity a cornerstone of feminist theorizing. Given that Western idealizations of motherhood deny other parts of women's lives and identities in favor of their children's (insatiable) needs, this feature of her work on mothers as subjects rather than objects in relation to their children helped redefine debates on women, motherhood, and work. Chodorow's insistence that women bring distinctive desires, meanings, and motives to their experiences of mothering and sense of themselves in relation to their children (including generational, cultural, race, and class distinctions) challenged universalist theories of mother and child development. Her 1982 essay with Susan Contratto, *The Fantasy of the Perfect Mother*, set the stage for feminist inquiry into the cultural specificities of motherhood as an ideology, cultural practice, and personal experience.

Another facet of Chodorow's work has featured the role of relational family dynamics and early gender identifications in shaping adult sexual lives. Joining other psychoanalysts, Chodorow expands on Freud's legacy, particularly his *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality* (1905), to argue that sexuality is far more complicated and comprises more than one's choice of sexual object. In her 1994 book, *Femininities, Masculinities, Sexualities: Freud and Beyond*, she argues that like gender identity, sexual identity is highly individual, conflict-ridden, and constructed as a "compromise formation" between what is culturally and psychologically posed in binary terms ("heterosexuality vs. homosexuality," "masculinity vs. femininity," "activity vs. passivity"). Again, she identifies universal elements of sexuality that are taken up and combined by individuals in unique, idiosyncratic, and nonsingular ways, including one's experiential sense of one's own body, such as pleasure and arousal; one's internal world and mental representations about self in relation to the other; one's sense of feminine and masculine identity; one's sense of adequacy or conflict about one's sexual desire; and one's personal sexual fantasies (often filtered but not determined by culture).

Chodorow's contribution to psychoanalysis also crosses the usual disciplinary boundaries. She has added to the sociology and history of psychoanalysis as a field through her work on the lives of women analysts across generations. The clinical dimension of Chodorow's work has focused on the subjectivity of both client and clinician and the formative role that transference and countertransference plays. All the while, her persistent search is to identify patterns in how individuals make meaning, thus enriching our understanding of the powerful links between psyche and culture.

Wendy Luttrell

See also Feminist Anthropology; Freud, Sigmund; Psychological Anthropology

Further Readings

Chodorow, N. (1989). *Feminism and psychoanalytic theory.* Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

———. (1989). Seventies questions for thirties women: Gender and generation in a study of early women psychoanalysts. In *Feminism and psychoanalytic theory* (pp. 199–218). Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

———. (1994). *Femininities, masculinities, sexualities: Freud and beyond*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky.

———. (1999). *The power of feelings: Personal meaning in psychoanalysis, gender, and culture*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

———. (2000). *Foreword to three essays on the theory of sexuality, Sigmund Freud*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

———. (2012). *Individualizing gender and sexuality: Theory and practice*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Chodorow, N., & Contratto, S. (1982). The fantasy of the perfect mother. In B. Thorne & M. Yalom (Ed.), *Rethinking the family: Some feminist questions* (pp. 54–57). New York, NY: Longman.

Paul, R. (1990). What does anyone want?: Desire, purpose and the acting subject in the study of culture. *Cultural Anthropology, 5*(4), 431–451.

Chomsky, Noam

Avram Noam Chomsky (1928–) is an American linguist, anarchist, political theorist and activist, a leading thinker of our times, and, according to the *New York Times*, arguably the most important intellectual alive. Chomsky's approach to linguistics has become known as the Chomskyan revolution and has earned him the title of "father of modern linguistics." Chomsky attracts both passionate disciples and antagonists. He bridges disciplines, yet some consider him extremely divisive. There is no doubt that the academic world has never been quite the same since Chomsky first published the now famous sentence "Colorless green ideas sleep furiously." This entry will focus on Chomsky's contribution to linguistics, which has exerted a strong influence in other disciplines including anthropology.

Biography and Scholarship

Noam Chomsky was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, on December 7, 1928. He was the first of the two children of William Chomsky and Elsie Simonofsky, Lithuanian and Russian émigrés, respectively. The Chomskys were Hebrew teachers. They were scholarly and politically active, involving their children in their passions, including the revival of Jewish language, cultural activities, and Zionism. Chomsky grew up to become a public intellectual and activist.

In 1945, Chomsky enrolled in the general studies program at the University of Pennsylvania as an undergraduate. Most accounts of Chomsky's life note his aversion to institutional structures, especially instructional adherence to standardized and structured curricula, which he believes stifles creativity and independent thinking. His scholarship and politics would eventually be dedicated to advocacy for creativity and freedom. In 1947, Chomsky met Zellig Harris, a linguistics professor at the University of Pennsylvania, who inspired him professionally and politically. According to Chomsky, Harris introduced him to linguistics by giving him the page proofs of his work *Methods in Structural Linguistics* to read. Subsequently, he enrolled in linguistics, studying with Harris while also studying philosophy and mathematics. Through Professor Harris, Chomsky joined a student organization called Avuka, which consisted of young Zionists who identified with Kibbutzniks.

In 1949, Chomsky received his BA degree in linguistics, philosophy, and logic, and he married Carol Schatz, with whom he later had two daughters and a son. In 1951, Chomsky received his MA in linguistics and began conducting research for his PhD at Harvard, where he became a junior fellow of the Harvard University Society of Fellows. With this prestigious position, Chomsky became financially secure, joined the intellectual elites of the time, and was able to completely devote himself to research. In 1955, Chomsky received his doctorate from the University of Pennsylvania, after submitting only one chapter of his dissertation, titled *Transformational Grammar*. This work, eventually published in 1975 as *The Logical Structure of Linguistic Theory*, was to mark irrevocably his break with the existing views and to revolutionize linguistics. In 1955, Chomsky became an assistant professor of foreign languages and linguistics at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. In 1958, he became associate professor. Together with Morris Halle, Chomsky established a graduate program in linguistics at Massachusetts Institute of Technology, and in 1962, he was promoted to full professor. In 1976, he was appointed Institute Professor. He is currently emeritus professor of the Department of Linguistics and Philosophy.

Chomsky's Linguistic Revolution

The three dominant and cooperative theories during Chomsky's student days were structuralism in linguistics, behaviorism in psychology, and positivism/empiricism in philosophy. Chomsky was to challenge the basic tenets of these theories. Linguistic structuralism, led by Leonard Bloomfield, assumes that human behavior, including language, is a self-contained system of interrelated signs that can be analyzed by resolving the logical structures of its parts. By knowing and classifying these parts, the whole could be understood. To perform a structural linguistic analysis, utterances are collected, and the sound system (phonemes), the most basic element of the language, is delineated. Phonemes combine to form the smallest meaningful unit of speech: a morpheme. For instance, the word *cat* is a morpheme; it consists of three distinctive phonemes [k-æ-t]. *Cats* consists of two morphemes, [k-æ-t] + [s] (plural morpheme). Morphemes form the building block for the next level, such as phrases and invariably different sentences. Linguistic structuralism was bolstered by the philosophical perspectives of positivism and empiricism, championed in part by Franz Boas and Bronisław Malinowski, and artfully implemented by adherents through fieldwork and documentation of different languages. Language learning during this era was explained using behaviorism, the leading exponent of which was B. F. Skinner. Skinner's theory was derived from the stimulus-response process of conditioning animals used in the lab. It considered the human mind a blank slate and argued that behaviors—including language, that is, verbal behavior—result entirely from training and reinforcement from the environment. This view, relying on empiricism, rejects any appeal to mental and other unobservable spheres through either introspection or conjecture.

Through a series of arguments and carefully chosen examples, Chomsky argued successfully against these theories. First, he objected to the goal, focus, and method of linguistic structuralism by showing that it only explains morphology but not syntax, which he considers the crux of language. He argued that the structural approach had no way to account for the infinite number of sentences in a language or the internal relations in a sentence, nor could it resolve syntactic ambiguities. He suggested that all languages are far more overwhelmingly similar than they are different; as such, there was no value in the endless collection of data, which he compared to the collection of butterflies. He believed that no amount of collected data can reveal the underlying principles

involved in language, its acquisition, or its use. With this, he rejected empiricism, and in its place he proposed innateness, preferring to pry into the mind rather than rely on field observations. Consequently, he separated *competence* (internalized knowledge, assumed to be uniform among speakers) from *performance* (the actual use of language). He suggested a focus on the (internalized) knowledge of language, which makes it possible for speakers to create and understand new sentences, rather than on its overt manifestations. Furthermore, Chomsky strongly refuted the behaviorist theory of language acquisition in a now famous critique of Skinner in 1959. He suggested that it is impossible to link behavior to its immediate antecedent, because doing so consigns human behaviors to "conditioned responses," which negates the creativity, freedom, and complex consciousness of the human mind. For instance, he envisaged the response of a person looking at a painting. This person might say, "Dutch, I thought you liked abstract painting," "Hanging too low," "Remember our camping trip," "Hideous," or any number of things. A stimulus can incite multiple, and even conflicting, responses. Chomsky's *Syntactical Structures* (1957) followed by *Aspects of the Theory of Syntax* (1965) heralded his "revolution" in linguistics.

Critical Contributions to Linguistics

Chomsky has made vast irreversible and seminal contributions to the sciences and humanities in general, and particularly to linguistics, psychology, and philosophy. His theories have been an unremitting presence in the field of linguistics concerning the nature of language, its acquisition, and the method for studying it.

The Nature of Language

Departing from behaviorists' and structuralists' view of language as behavior, Chomsky concludes that language is a form of knowledge, a cognitive capacity, uniquely and equally shared by humans as part of their biological endowment. He terms this the *language faculty*, which is an autonomous area of the mind primarily devoted to language knowledge. Chomsky in 1976 referred to it as a mental organ. Thus, Chomsky understands the mind as compartmentalized into separate modules, such as vision, logic, or language. To Chomsky, language cannot consist of observable responses to stimuli as its use differs remarkably from all other means of communication in terms of its creativity and productivity. Speakers of any language are able to understand novel grammatical utterances and can recognize them as such even when they appear meaningless (e.g., *Colorless green ideas sleep furiously*). Chomsky developed a nativist theory of language, shifting attention to the nature of linguistic knowledge, how it is acquired, and how the mind works. Over the years, Chomsky has introduced several research concepts, such as the *universal grammar* (UG), a theory of the language faculty; *competence and performance*; *deep structure* versus *surface structure*; *initial state* versus *final state* of the language faculty; *internal language* (*I-language*) versus *external language* (*E-language*); and *Principles and Parameters*, all in an effort to distinguish the knowledge of language from its use or manifestations, characterize the properties of linguistic knowledge, and articulate a theory of the mind that is biologically endowed to derive the grammar of a language from brief exposure and use the derived grammar creatively to generate an infinity of expressions.

Language Acquisition

How do children become speaking beings? How do they progress from an initial state, in which they have no language, to a final or steady state, in which they are avid users of their language? Consider that children live in different cultures with different child-rearing practices. Some people speak to their infants, while others don't; yet all healthy children become competent language users. Children "learn" language rapidly; they make systematic errors that they could not have derived from the things they hear from adults (e.g., a 3-year-old who says "Mommy *drived* to the store" instead of "Mommy *drove* to the store"), yet they end up with abilities that remarkably transcend the limited experience of language that they received; all children go through the same processes and similar stages of language acquisition. Underscoring further the uniqueness of this process to humans, Chomsky observed that both children and kittens or puppies are capable of induction. However, when they are exposed to the same sets of linguistic data, children end up acquiring language, but kittens and puppies do not. Consequently, he concluded that there must be an

innate mechanism that makes it possible for children to acquire language and be able to comprehend and produce novel utterances. Chomsky distinguished language acquisition from language learning. Language grows in the mind. It is not a function of training and practice; rather, it unfolds along predetermined lines. Chomsky argued that every child is endowed with a UG that is aided by an innate ability, which he called the "language acquisition device," that makes it possible for children to use the cues from the language of their environment to construct its relevant grammar. In the 1980s, he introduced Principles and Parameters to further explain UG. He argued that UG is the innate principles that underlie languages, whereas the differences between languages are parameters set by the brain. Language acquisition involves a child acquiring lexical items from his or her linguistic environment and setting the relevant parameters so that he or she speaks Yoruba, Igbo, German, English, or some other language. In the 1990s, Chomsky refined this approach with the Minimalist Program. The aim was to devise more optimal grammatical rules toward the generation of infinite speech.

The UG, according to Chomsky, is fundamental to all languages and specific to humans. What is not clear, however, is how the UG could have been evolutionarily selected for in humans. In response to the problem of the biological origin of language and its diversity, Chomsky has often suggested that questions on the function of language be separated from those on the computations that underlie the system.

Study of Language

For Chomsky, the language faculty is an innate, biological endowment that underlies the productivity and creativity of language. Linguistics, he believes, should focus on making sense of this unique faculty; it should formulate abstract grammatical rules that reflect this state of the mind. To do this, Chomsky makes use of native speakers' intuition to study how language works and to gain insight into the mind. Using physics as a model for scientific inquiry, Chomsky proposed three levels of adequacy for linguistic research: (1) observational adequacy (focus on data from adult users), (2) descriptive adequacy (focus on speakers' competence), and (3) explanatory adequacy (explanation for why linguistic competence is as observed). Thus, he seeks explanation rather than description or a catalog of examples. He relies on abstraction and construction of models rather than depending on mere observations. For instance, his earliest approach was to develop sets of rules that can generate all possible utterances from limited linguistic forms. Using these rules, he hoped to model speakers' knowledge of language, its productivity, and its creativity. Chomsky's method distinguished between deep structure (speaker's intent) and surface structure (utterance). These two grammatical levels are mediated by a process of transformation through which the surface structure is derived from the deep structure.

In 1986, Chomsky proposed a distinction between I-language and E-language (analogous to his deep structure and surface structure and, perhaps, his competence and performance distinctions). I-language (knowledge of language) is in the brain and should be the object of investigation. E-language is a socially informed object. Chomsky has continued to revise the tenets of his theory: The transformational generative grammar of the 1960s was replaced with Principles and Parameters, later rephrased as Government and Binding Theory in the 1980s. He introduced the Minimalist Program in 1995.

Chomsky's theories have been dynamic; they have received inputs from diverse collaborators and have led to vigorous cross-disciplinary debates on language, its nature, the nature of humanity, and scientific processes in general. While there are serious challenges to his views, their historical and contemporary roles in advancing linguistics cannot be overstated.

Augustine Agwuele

See also Bloomfield, Leonard; Dundes, Alan; Ethnography of Speaking; Generative Grammar; Greenberg, Joseph; Hymes, Dell; Labov, William; Sociolinguistics; Sperber, Dan; Structuralism

Further Readings

Barsky, R. (1997). *Noam Chomsky: A life of dissent*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Cook, V. J., & Newson, M. (1995). *Chomsky's universal grammar: An introduction* (2nd ed.). Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Coswell, D., & Gordon, P. (Illustrator). (1996). *Chomsky for beginners*. Danbury, CT: Writers & Readers.

George, A. L. (1990). *Reflections on Chomsky*. New York, NY: Wiley Blackwell.
Harman, G. (1974). *On Noam Chomsky: Critical essays*. New York, NY: Anchor.
Lyons, J. (1991). *Chomsky*. London, UK: Fontana.
Mayer, J., & Groves, J. (2004). *Introducing Chomsky.* London, UK: Icon Books.
Otero, C. (Ed.). (1994). *Noam Chomsky: Critical assessment* (4 vols.). New York, NY: Routledge.
Pinker, S. (1994). *The language instinct: How the mind creates language*. New York, NY: Harper Perennial Modern Classics.
Searle, J. R. (1972, June 29). Chomsky's revolution in linguistics. *New York Review of Books, 18*(12), 16–24.

Website

The Noam Chomsky website: http://www.chomsky.info/

Clifford, James

James Clifford (1945–) was educated at Haverford College (BA, 1967), Stanford University (MA, 1969), and Harvard University, where he earned his PhD (1977) in European intellectual and social history. In 1978, he joined the faculty of the History of Consciousness Program at the University of California, Santa Cruz, where he has remained till date. His work has been recognized in history, literature, cultural studies, and museum studies, as well as in anthropology, where he has been an important theoretical influence since the 1980s.

Throughout his career, Clifford has been engaged with, and by, the crisis of cultural representation that marked anthropology and related disciplines in the late 20th century. That crisis concerned both the identity of cultures, depicted as coherent objects by and in the science of anthropology, and the identities (political, personal, and scientific) of anthropologists, whose careers required them to produce cultural objects (which represented colonized peoples) out of difficult colonial and postcolonial situations. Those situations were anything but settled in terms of the possibilities for identity and representation they offered to the "natives" and the Westerners (and others) engaged within them.

"Representation" here refers to both political and aesthetic-scientific processes. That ethnographic writing is largely bound by certain generic conventions dictating what professional anthropologists can and *cannot* say, especially about the processes of field research, was an unsettling proposition when Clifford and George Marcus brought it to the attention of their colleagues in an important edited volume, *Writing Culture: The Poetics and Politics of Ethnography* (1986). And the control of cultural representation has become increasingly contested as anthropologists have lost the right they once had (guaranteed by the colonial order) to describe other people's culture without first obtaining their explicit permission. The moments and movements in which once colonized peoples have regained their voices, and a public right to protect, preserve, and re-create their cultures, are a central focus of Clifford's work.

Influential Works

Clifford's first book, *Person and Myth: Maurice Leenhardt in the Melanesian World* (1982), offered a template for the intellectual project he would develop over the next 30 years. Leenhardt went to New Caledonia as a Protestant missionary in 1902, where he stayed until 1920. What was unique about Leenhardt, as Clifford shows, was his commitment to translation as a two-way process, one in which, Leenhardt learned, Melanesian concepts taught him new understandings of his own beliefs. He held what today would be seen as advanced views about the dignity of indigenous culture (in the face of colonialist violence) and the importance of indigenous control over processes of cultural adaptation; early in his career, he came to realize that the New Caledonians, to whom he was ministering, "needed to find *new* ways *not* to be white" (Clifford, 1982, p. 45). Clifford's subsequent work, brought together in three volumes of essays, has been animated by a similar problematic. How, he has asked, can indigenous peoples around the world maintain or renew their cultural vitality even as they participate fully in the life of the nation-states of which they are citizens?

The Predicament of Culture (1988) included seminal essays on the relationship between anthropology and modern art, both treated as modernist modes of representing otherness. Clifford analyzed the literary construction of modern "ethnographic authority" as it was initially codified in Bronisław Malinowski's report from the Trobriand Islands, *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* (1922). Before Malinowski, anthropological field research had been carried out as part

of the work of scientific teams or by "amateurs" such as colonial officers and missionaries. In the late 19th century, professional anthropologists were "armchair scholars" responsible for the theoretical synthesis of data that came to them from both scientific expeditions and amateurs who were long-term residents among "primitive" people. Field-workers such as missionaries often had years of experience, but they were not credentialed as anthropologists. The Malinowskian model brought together the armchair scholar and field-worker in the same person, by privileging the theoretically informed research of scientifically trained anthropologists, whose experience in the field guaranteed the authority of their writings. Ironically, as Clifford showed, the anthropologist-writer's authority was grounded on the assertion of having "been there," among the people studied; but in classic modernist ethnographies, little was said about the details of being there—that is, the political and social dynamics of the research process. As in modernist fiction, the narrator became an omniscient observer, while the people of the study became at best the author's characters and at worst scientific objects to be analyzed but not engaged.

In the last quarter of the 20th century, after decolonization and with renewed efforts worldwide by indigenous peoples to assert themselves politically, the omniscient anthropologist became suspect, both as a literary persona and as a real person carrying out research. Clifford documented, and influenced, various kinds of "experimental" anthropological writing that attempted to turn anthropological objects into speaking subjects. Such "dialogical" narration had its own difficulties, as it is one thing for anthropologists to stage a dialogue in texts they control and quite another to cede control over the final product to the people they are studying among, or at least share it with them. But in general, the "reflexive" turn in Anglo-American ethnographic writing of this period, in which anthropologists considered both the politics of fieldwork and the epistemological implications of their literary conventions, converged on the issue of cultural representation. Anthropologists questioned the right they had come to presuppose of representing others' cultures (without their permission, in most cases). And they analyzed the relationship between their theory of culture (in which the world is imagined to be made up of distinct cultural groups, clearly delineated) and the literary tropes they used to write such worlds into existence.

In his analysis of anthropological modernism as it developed over the course of the 20th century, Clifford brings to light the discipline's ambivalence concerning the kind of playful cultural deconstruction it had sometimes inspired in modernist painters and writers. Anthropology was, or at least wished to be, a science, and as such, it disciplined itself to present its results as serious, scientific objects—that is, as cultural wholes, scientifically described. While doing so buttressed anthropology's scientific status, there was also a price to be paid, as the final essay of the volume, the influential piece titled "Identity in Mashpee," suggests. In the late 1970s, in a land claims case on Cape Cod, the Mashpee Wampanoag Tribal Council was unable to convince a court of law of its continuous existence as an authentic Indian tribe. Courts of law, Clifford shows, can understand scientific descriptions of bounded cultures and identities, but they cannot give standing to what they saw (in this case) as the deeply compromised (polluted, diluted) Indian identity of the claimants. Anthropological expert witnesses were willing to testify on behalf of the Indians, but anthropology's traditional culture concept won the day; hence, the culture concept had become, for Clifford and many anthropologists at the end of the century, a "predicament."

Routes: Travel and Translation in the Late Twentieth Century (1997) turned our attention to pathways through and between cultures—to the ways in which people from different cultures travel to and engage or make contact with people from other cultures, and to the ways in which cultural materials travel between locations and peoples. Continuing his historical critique of anthropological practices, Clifford argued that modernist ethnographies erased travel, focusing instead on "dwelling." Professional anthropologists derived their scientific authority from being there, in "the field," which was "defined as a site of displaced dwelling and productive work" (p. 22). The field site was treated as the home of the people being studied, and such natives were imagined as purely local people. Given such assumptions, fixed by the conventions of ethnographic writing, natives were not depicted as travelers, and the anthropologist's travels—to and from the metropole, the university, the colonial capital, or the missionary's station—were left out of the picture. One result of these modernist conventions was the erasure of colonialism as an intrusive force in

the ostensibly out-of-the-way places where anthropologists worked. Native cultures were depicted as temporal and spatial isolates, despite the easily observed facts of cultural contact, borrowing, and adaptation, not to mention the constant travel of local people to work at colonial plantations, mines, and homesteads.

Clifford then turned his attention from the travels of people to those of things: cultural objects and artifacts. In four essays on museums as "contact zones," Clifford began the analysis of an emergent trend in the world of "cultural property," as nation-states, responding to newly galvanized indigenous groups, began revising the laws governing the ownership of heritage objects. The ethnographic collections of metropolitan museums and archives came to be seen as the result of several centuries of looting: a process in which explorers, colonial officials, missionaries, art dealers, and anthropologists had illicitly acquired a people's material heritage. Museums in particular acquired a new burden—to negotiate the ownership and control of ethnographic objects now being reclaimed by indigenous people around the world. Ethnographic collections were "repatriated," often with provisos stipulating that returned objects be placed in local museums. Clifford's essays explored the ways in which a hegemonic cultural institution, the museum, could be bent to new purposes, specifically the cultural-political needs of native peoples who had traditionally been the objects, but not the authors, of ethnology and museology. These essays have been as influential in anthropology, museum studies, and art history as "Identity in Mashpee" has been to scholars who study the politics of cultural identity.

In *Returns: Becoming Indigenous in the Twenty-First Century* (2013), the term *returns* has several implications. On the one hand, the essays discuss the return of indigenous peoples in the Pacific, in California, and in Alaska to openly avowed native identities they can now construct with a renewed degree of political-cultural power that could not have been imagined 50 years ago. These returns are in one sense renewals, the return to a "traditional" identity, but in another sense, these returns are alternative routes through modernity. Here, the term *routes* implies more continuity through history than terms like *the invention of tradition* have allowed. Clifford (2013) articulates what he calls a "realist" history that takes account of the continuing presence of indigenous peoples in settler and colonial societies—peoples who were supposed to disappear or assimilate but who remain culturally alive and who see their own histories as ongoing and continuous. As he puts it,

> indigenous ways of being "historical" presume complex temporalities of transformation and conservation, looking back while moving ahead. It will be necessary to imagine looping paths, detours and pauses rather than direct lines of development—historical paths that turn and return, going somewhere neither past nor future. (p. 14)

At the center of *Returns* is "Ishi's Story," an extended analysis of cultural continuity in relationship to the politics of cultural representation in 20th-century California. Ishi was a Yahi Indian of California who came to public attention at the beginning, middle, and end of the 20th century. After Ishi's "discovery" in 1911, his life as a semi-public person, resident at the anthropology museum of the University of California at Berkeley, and his death of tuberculosis in 1916, "the last wild Indian in North America," was brought to the attention of a new public by the 1961 publication of *Ishi in Two Worlds*, written by Theodora Kroeber, widow of the anthropologist Alfred Kroeber, who had been Ishi's patron in the museum. Daring for its time was the book's depiction of the extermination of California Indians by Anglo-Californians. More typical of its time was its romanticized presentation of California Indians as authentic cultures that were doomed to disappear. But for Clifford, the book is the central document for an analysis of contested cultural representation. Ishi's people didn't disappear, and with the "return" to the assertion of Indian identities, they demanded and won the right, at the turn of the 21st century, to repatriate and properly bury his remains. Thus, Clifford recontextualizes Theodora Kroeber's famous midcentury statement as part of a different political story, the story of persistence, return, and regeneration, not that of assimilation and death.

Conclusion

The work of James Clifford has at once documented the changing trends in ethnographic writing and culture theory and influenced anthropologists struggling with those changes. Clifford's unique contribution has been to make explicit the deep

historical connections between anthropology, art, and literature in several national and regional contexts. Through his scholarship, anthropologists have acquired new ways to understand their discipline as a culturally contingent set of practices and ideas.

Richard Handler

See also Barthes, Roland; Marcus, George; Modernism; Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist; Postmodernism; Tyler, Stephen A.; Visual Anthropology

Further Readings

Clifford, J. (1982). *Person and myth: Maurice Leenhardt in the Melanesian world*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1988). *The predicament of culture: Twentieth-century ethnography, literature, and art*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (1997). *Routes: Travel and translation in the late twentieth century*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (2013). *Returns: Becoming indigenous in the twenty-first century*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Cognitive Anthropology

Cognitive anthropology is a relatively new subfield, not only in cultural anthropology but also within the social sciences more generally. It represents a turn away from the earlier interest of anthropologists in the cross-cultural study of social structure, and a still older anthropological preoccupation with material culture, to a new emphasis on the way shared practices and cultural institutions and made objects are conceptualized and organized in the minds of those who use them, live them, and reproduce them. This new emphasis did not come out of nowhere: It was sparked by the cognitive revolution that emerged from the brain sciences and had a profound effect on several disciplines at mid-20th century.

This new subfield was initially known as *ethnoscience*. As it evolved, it tried on successive names, reflecting the growing pains of a new intellectual venture. By the end of the 1960s, however, the field marked its maturity by positioning itself in parallel to other related fields such as cognitive psychology and cognitive linguistics, and that label, *cognitive anthropology*, has stuck.

The Influence of Linguistics

In theory, the new field of cognitive anthropology was to be about all kinds of cultural knowledge—about all the knowledge, it was said, necessary to behave in a way expected and appropriate for a member of a given culture. However, for the first several decades after that expansive goal was enunciated in the 1950s, actual efforts were narrowly delimited to describing and ordering knowledge of kinship systems, ethnobotanical systems, and other systems of classification such as those for color or spatial orientation—that is, how these things were categorized and how such systems of categorization varied cross-culturally. This narrower project of the cross-cultural study of objects and their categorization reflected the particular formal methods at hand, which were drawn from the linguistics of the day.

The Model From Phonology

The linguistic theory responsible for the way cognitive anthropologists initially thought about cultural knowledge was drawn from the study of phonology in linguistics in what is known as the Prague school. Phonology is the study of the sounds that the human voice can produce, only a subset of which, called *phonemes*, are meaningful in any given language. Thus, for an example, in English, the phonemes *b* and *d* contrast with *p* and *t*, the first two being voiced, while the second two are not. At the same time, *p* and *b* contrast with *d* and *t* along a second dimension, the first two phonemes being pronounced with what is called a bilabial stop and the second two with an alveolar stop—that is, the air is stopped either by closing the lips or by placing the tongue behind the upper teeth (against what is called the alveolar ridge). The four phonemes can be said, then, to form a *contrast set* made up of four sounds intersected by the two dimensions, voiced/voiceless and bilabial/alveolar. An explanation for why phonemes evolve to capitalize on such binary oppositions is that in this way contrasts between sounds are accentuated, so they will be as unambiguous as possible to the ear.

Linguists extended this theory to word meaning. Thus, to take one famous example, a *bachelor* was defined as an unmarried man, one of four terms defined by the intersecting dimensions male/female (contrasting with *spinster*) and married/unmarried (*bachelor* and *spinster* contrasting with *married man* and *married woman*, respectively). Anthropologists found this approach especially handy for analyzing small, bounded lexical sets such as pronoun sets or kin term systems. The study of kinship, of course, had a very long tradition as a subject of anthropological inquiry. Kin term systems were found to be composed of crosscutting dimensions such as generation, elder/younger, male/female, and lineal/collateral. This kind of analysis came to be called *componential analysis*, and the products of such analyses, *paradigms*. Other terminological systems, notably ethnobiological terms, were also of interest to cognitive anthropologists, growing out of American anthropology's earlier interest in recording everything that native people knew about their natural worlds (hence the initial label, ethnoscience). Native or folk systems of ethnobiological terms were found to be differently organized than kin terms, being structured by *taxonomies*, trees hierarchically organized by successive relations of inclusion—X is a kind of Y.

Such analyses made possible cross-cultural comparison of terminological systems. Perhaps, the most stunning findings to emerge from this approach to word meaning were cross-culturally universal features of ethnobiological taxonomies and of color terms. Folk ethnobiological taxonomies were shown to be typically limited to five levels: (1) unique beginner (e.g., plant), (2) life-form (e.g., tree), (3) genera (e.g., cherry), (4) species (e.g., flowering cherry), and (5) variety (e.g., Japanese flowering cherry). One theory is that this five-level maximum has to do with the limit of human working memory to a small number of items, since every added taxonomic level adds another feature dimension and a taxonomy with more than five or six levels would require remembering, at the lowest level, more than five or six distinguishing features. Also important to systems of categorization such as folk taxonomies is the apparently innate human pattern-recognition ability that makes some configurations of features particularly salient and hence readily classifiable.

In the domain of color, it was shown that basic color terms (which are monolexemic, not included in any other term, and adhering to several further criteria) evolved in a nearly universal sequence: Two-term systems have basic names for *light-warm and dark-cool*; three-term systems split off *red* from *light-warm*, leaving *white*; four- and five-term systems split off *green-blue*, leaving *black*, and split *red* into *red* and *yellow*, in one or the other order; systems with six terms further distinguish *blue* from *green*; with more complex systems making further distinctions. To date, the fullest explanation for this universal sequence has been the irregularity of the color space, which is not perfectly spherical but has an unusual shape, with a number of "bumps" and "indentations" making certain "focal" colors visually more salient to the human eye.

In the end, however, these analyses of kin, ethnobiological, and color terms were analyses of language and, specifically, of how lexical (word) systems were structured and had evolved. They captured only a sliver of what people in any society had to know in order to behave in an expected, appropriate way. This limitation became obvious when some analysts began to argue about which of the alternative componential analyses of kin terms were more psychologically "real." It was not even clear what psychological reality would mean when applied to a componential analysis of kin terms. Systems of linguistic terms, however they had evolved, were external to the brain, structures that scaffolded and constrained thinking but did not hold the key to *how* people thought.

Beyond Paradigms and Taxonomies

During the 1970s, more and more cognitive anthropologists tried to move beyond mere words for things, and the relations of opposition or inclusion that grouped them together linguistically, to describe larger understandings involving, for instance, relations of function, causality, logic, or convention, which underpinned knowledge and the use of these words. Some cognitive anthropologists described routine events such as those structuring ceremonies or everyday conversational exchanges. These various efforts were all signs of frustration with a linguistic model so exclusively concerned with words, the objects that the words named, and the paradigmatic and taxonomic relations among sets of these words.

In the 1970s, too, a new way of thinking about categories from the field of psychology, prototype

theory, overtook cognitive anthropology. In this theory, categories were more than members of contrast sets; they were internally structured by prototypical instances. Prototype theory was a step toward weaning cognitive anthropologists away from their older linguistic models. Yet this theoretical development was still focused on the structure of objects.

The Influence of Cognitive Science

It took the arrival from cognitive science of an altogether new way of thinking about the organization of knowledge to redirect cognitive anthropology. This emerging new paradigm generated a flurry of new terms such as *frames*, *scenes*, *scenarios*, *scripts*, and *plans*. These terms reflected a general, cross-disciplinary recognition in the fields touched by the cognitive revolution that some such conceptual entity was needed to capture the way human knowledge was organized. The cognitive sciences of the day, especially artificial intelligence and cognitive psychology, were rife with such concepts and with efforts to work out their theoretical implications.

These related fields eventually settled on the term *schema* (pluralized either with an English *-s* or a Greek *-ta*) to designate the units into which knowledge was thought to be organized. A schema is an abstract representation of regularities in the world, built up over recurring experience of these patterns. It includes cultural and natural regularities in the world external to the person; labeling and other features of language describing these regularities; knowledge conveyed secondhand, linguistically or otherwise, by other people; and all the inner felt experience, such as bodily sensations, emotions, and motivations, that ordinarily accompanies any experience. Schemas can and do change over time to reflect changing experience, but they have a good deal of resilience, too, owing to how they frame new experience in terms already given by prior experience, filling in missing information on the basis of already existing schematic knowledge.

Linguists taken with this new concept began to see a problem with defining a word by merely contrasting it with other words in the same lexical set. The word *bachelor* illustrated the problem. Defining a bachelor as an unmarried man left out a great deal of what gave this word its meaning. (Characterizing a bachelor simply as an unmarried man, cognitive linguists pointed out, failed to explain why it did not sound right to call the pope a bachelor, for one anomaly.) Instead, word meaning was said to depend on the "scene" or "simplified world" (or, in newer parlance, the schema) that formed the assumed background for a given word (in the case of bachelor and spinster, a very different world from today's, which is why we don't hear these terms, especially *spinster*, used very much anymore). A bachelor, in this simplified world, was a man who had exceeded the typical age for getting married without doing so. He could be, if not too far along in age, an "eligible bachelor" or, if older, a "confirmed bachelor" (or, euphemistically in a day when homosexuality was not spoken of outright, a gay man).

Cultural Models/Schemas

For linguists, reconceptualizing the meaning of words in this new way settled the matter of word definition with which they were concerned. For cognitive anthropologists, it was just a start, opening the question of how such simplified worlds themselves were organized and could be described. This was a radical move beyond how objects were categorized. To take one then current example, one could compile a list of all the diseases that Americans knew, and all the properties of these illnesses, and (because these properties across these illnesses were more complex than either a taxonomy or a paradigm could capture) use cluster analysis to show what diseases and what disease properties went together. But, still, one did not know how Americans *understood* illness—what schema or schemas they invoked when they thought about given diseases so that, for example, they could answer novel questions about them.

In cognitive anthropology, the recognition was that many, many schemas were shared, or cultural. The term of choice on which these anthropologists settled was *cultural models*. Indeed, the idea of cultural models, if not always its cognitive basis, has been widely adopted in cultural anthropology, especially since it has found use in applied fields such as medical and ecological anthropology. Secondarily, and increasingly over time, cultural models also came to be called cultural schemas. (Some cognitive anthropologists prefer to reserve the term *cultural models* for larger clusters of interrelated cultural schemas.)

Cultural Schemas and the Brain

A subsequent turn in cognitive anthropology has been an interest in how cultural models/schemas might be represented in the brain. This new theoretical concern was motivated by the advent of connectionist modeling in artificial intelligence. While earlier ways of thinking about the organization of knowledge were more computer inspired, conceptualizing this organization in terms of propositions and rules, connectionism models knowledge as networks of associations (and for this reason is also called parallel distributed processing). Although early connectionist modelers refrained from explicit claims of this sort, it has become clear that this associationist way of thinking about knowledge organization is quite faithful to a very general neural process known as synaptic plasticity, described as early as the mid-20th century but better understood as neuroscience has advanced. By this process, more or less strong clusters of synapses in a person's brain come to fire together, representing what has co-occurred in that person's experience. Cognitive schemas are simply relatively strong clusters of such associated synapses. The deceptively simple but strikingly novel translation of connectionism into cultural terms by cognitive anthropologists has been to recognize that to the degree two or more individuals share the same or similar experience, they end up with the same or similar schemas in their brains. In this way of thinking, "culture" is shared only to the extent that the experience that led to given associations has been shared, and only by those who have shared this experience. Culture conceptualized in this way is not sharply bounded or homogeneous or unchanging, nor is it a reified something outside of individuals—all difficulties with older conceptions of culture.

Contemporary Trends

This theoretical borrowing from cognitive science has fostered, in cognitive anthropology, a continuing alertness to new approaches from the young fields of cognitive and developmental neuroscience. Such advances promise to shed light on questions such as how cultural schemas might be organized to take advantage of the way the brain works, how the brain's design to make sense and coherence of experience might explain both universals and cross-cultural variation in cultural notions of the self, or how cultural defense mechanisms might be understood in neural terms.

In the wake of cultural schema theory, too, cognitive anthropology has pursued a number of efforts, initiated by largely separate schools of thought, that reflect the new theoretical questions and methodological challenges provoked by this broader conception of cultural knowledge. One issue is how such shared knowledge is distributed. For example, one new endeavor, known under the label of distributed cognition, explores how much scaffolding of individual task performance is provided by the external world, and especially by the tandem efforts of teams of individuals, each possessing only a part of the knowledge needed to perform a given task. Practitioners of another new subfield called consensus analysis explore the cultural competence or expertise of individual members of a group, as reflected in how much cultural knowledge of a given domain each possesses. Another new question about the distribution of knowledge is how individuals come to assemble just some attitudes and opinions out of a vaster pool of available cultural materials and how they manage the inevitable conflicts among the attitudes and opinions that they do hold.

Cognitive anthropologists are also developing a variety of methods for pursuing such questions. Some examples are formal methods for the measurement of cultural consensus; reconstruction of widely shared cultural models and exploration of their variability through analysis of discourse such as interviews and narratives; scalar analysis of the clustering of beliefs, allowing for a much less time-consuming reconstruction of cultural knowledge than does discourse analysis; and simulation of complex interactions among the cultural knowledge on which individual decisions are based, and the external constraints on these decisions, to evaluate how well the simulation model reproduces the observed cultural patterns.

Finally, a renewed interest in the internalization of culture—in how cultural schemas are learned and become motivating—has led some cognitive anthropologists to the work of other psychological anthropologists—those who conduct child development studies cross-culturally and those who study psychodynamic processes. This convergence of interests might be said to represent the revival of an older endeavor, culture and personality, which distinguished American anthropology in the 1930s and 1940s. Cognitive anthropologists have come to recognize that cultural schemas learned in infancy

and earliest childhood are highly motivating and lifelong, shaping the culturally distinctive kind of adult person that results. This has led these researchers to an interest in parental ethnotheories of child rearing, the cultural models of the virtuous person (the person that parents are trying to raise their children to be) that these embody, and the psychodynamic processes, such as intrapsychic autonomy and culturally constituted defenses, that are implicated in them. The result has been a cognitively grounded reconceptualization of the relation, originally posed by culture and personality studies, between cultural patterns of child rearing and culturally distinctive adult personality traits.

Naomi Quinn

See also Culture and Personality; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Prague School of Linguistics; Psychological Anthropology

Further Readings

Berlin, B. O., & Kay, P. D. (1969). *Basic color terms: Their universality and evolution.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Casson, R. W. (Ed.). (1981). *Language, culture, and cognition: Anthropological perspectives.* New York, NY: Macmillan.

D'Andrade, R. G. (1995). *The development of cognitive anthropology.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

D'Andrade, R. G., & Strauss, C. (Eds.). (1992). *Human motives and cultural models.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Dougherty, J. W. D. (Ed.). (1985). *Directions in cognitive anthropology.* Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Fillmore, C. (1975). An alternative to checklist theories of meaning. In C. Cogen, H. Thompson, G. Thurgood, K. Whistler, & J. Wright (Eds.), *Proceedings of first annual meeting of the Berkeley Linguistics Society* (pp. 123–131). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Holland, D., & Quinn, N. (Eds.). (1987). *Cultural models in language and thought.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Quinn, N. (Ed.). (2005). *Finding culture in talk: A collection of methods.* New York, NY: Palgrave Macmillan.

Strauss, C., & Quinn, N. (1997). *A cognitive theory of cultural meaning.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Tyler, S. A. (Ed.). (1969). *Cognitive anthropology.* New York, NY: Holt, Rinehart, & Winston.

Columbia University

Franz Boas established anthropology at Columbia University at the turn of the 20th century, and his many PhD students carried his principles and teachings to other universities and colleges in the United States. They set the agenda and the tone for the developing field for much of that century.

Anthropology During Boas's Tenure

The appointment of Franz Boas to the Faculty of Philosophy at Columbia University was emblematic of the attempt of Columbia's leaders to build a graduate school based on the style of doctoral education in Germany. Boas brought to Columbia his broad and deep training in the sciences and his vision of a new science of anthropology, uniting cultural anthropology, physical anthropology, and linguistics, with due respect for archaeology. Boas began teaching anthropology as a lecturer in 1896; he was named professor of anthropology in 1899, and in 1902, anthropology became an independent department. There seem to have been only two faculty members at that time, Boas himself and Livingston Farrand, a physician turned psychologist turned anthropologist and, soon after, the university president (the University of Colorado and then Cornell).

Little is known about the undergraduate program that Boas established beyond the fact that he hoped to offer one that stressed "what is valuable in foreign cultures" and "those elements in our own civilization that are common to all mankind" (Stocking, 1974, p. 291). The first Columbia doctorate in anthropology was awarded in 1901 to Alfred L. Kroeber, who then went west to found the Department of Anthropology at the University of California, Berkeley. The second recipient, in 1904, was William Jones, a member of the Mesquakie Fox tribe, whose dissertation was a linguistic study of Algonquian. (Tragically, he was killed in 1909 while doing fieldwork in the Philippines.) The next notable anthropologist, Robert H. Lowie, got his PhD in 1908, followed by Edward Sapir (1909), whose impact on linguistic anthropology was incalculable. Sapir also played a role in the development of the departments at the University of Chicago (as did another Boas student, Fay-Cooper Cole [1915]) and at Yale. Alexander Goldenweiser (1910) and Paul

Radin (1911) were important figures in the development of anthropological theory, and Leslie Spier (1920) established anthropology at the University of New Mexico. In 1914, Laura Benedict was the first of many women to earn a PhD under the tutelage of Franz Boas, for her research among the Bagobo of Mindanao.

In addition to students who received Columbia doctorates, Boas played a significant role in the advanced education of other important early anthropologists who got their degrees elsewhere. These include Frank Speck (University of Pennsylvania) and John R. Swanton, Alfred Tozzer, and Roland B. Dixon, all from Harvard. He was instrumental in the conversion of two psychologists (Livingston Farrand and Clark Wissler) and one sociologist (Elsie Clews Parsons) to anthropology. Manuel Gamio, who played a central role in the development of anthropology in Mexico, received his PhD from Columbia in 1922. Boas was responsible for training 30 of the 54 anthropologists with doctorates in the United States in 1932.

A major concern during the first 2 decades of anthropology at Columbia was the problem of cultural evolutionism, the long-reigning perspective on human culture at the turn of the century. The Boasian answer to the conjectural basis of evolutionism was to attempt to reconstruct actual histories of peoples and elements of culture. During that period, the stalwarts of evolutionism (e.g., J. Wesley Powell and Daniel G. Brinton) insisted that independent invention was the key to culture history and rejected diffusion as an explanation. On the other hand, the "diffusionists" of the Austrian-German and British school, represented by Fritz Graebner and G. Elliot Smith, respectively, insisted that diffusion alone was the key to culture history. The Columbia (and Berkeley) anthropologists carried out distributional studies of art forms, mythologies, rituals, and other aspects of culture, and their results undermined and discredited evolutionism. At the same time that they produced critiques of "diffusionism," they tried to understand the dynamic processes involved in the all-important phenomenon of diffusion—as well as independent invention. Edward Sapir's publication *Time Perspective in Aboriginal American Culture, A Study in Method* (1916) was a key document for those days, presenting methods for a cultural anthropology that the Boasians saw as a "historical science." But underlying the worldview that Boas imparted to his students was what Robert Lowie wrote in his 1956 essay "Reminiscences of Anthropological Currents in America Half a Century Ago" was "the necessity of seeing the native from within" and the "anachronistic naivete" of "moral judgments of aboriginal culture." And, of course, they all had contempt for the racial determinism and "Nordic superiority" notion then rampant in the United States.

Boas trained his graduate students in physical as well as cultural anthropology, and many of his early students were recruited to the task of describing and analyzing the rapidly disappearing Indian languages. Although most of his students carried out ethnographic research, a good deal of their work depended on "memory culture," carried out almost exclusively among North American Indian groups. Their primary concern in the early years was to record as much as possible of the languages, mythologies, arts, and customs of these groups before they disappeared. During their careers, however, Kroeber, Lowie, Radin, Sapir, and Goldenweiser contributed to the growing field in various ways, building on the Boasian basis and moving far beyond questions of diffusion and evolution to deal with many aspects of theory and substance in ethnography and linguistics.

Boas didn't consider historical reconstruction to be the ultimate aim of their work but was concerned with problems of culture and psychology and the relation of the individual to his or her culture. By the 1920s, he increasingly stressed problems of cultural change and the role of individuals, with their varying experiences and personalities, in processes of change. His students turned to studies of acculturation and to work stressing the individual in culture. Leading students from the 1920s, whose influence continued well into the 1960s, were Gladys Reichard (who taught at Barnard), Ruth Benedict, Margaret Mead, whose work pioneered the "personality and culture" approach, and Melville J. Herskovits, the moving force behind studies of Africa and African American culture in American anthropology. Another significant figure from the 1920s was Otto Klineberg, a psychologist who under Boas's influence became the leading critic of intelligence tests and the attempt to use them to compare "racial" other groups.

Ruth Benedict became Boas's informal assistant in the late 1920s, and he finally succeeded in having her appointed assistant professor in 1931. She was important in the administration of the department

and as an advisor to students, as well as being a teacher and a writer. The department continued to produce PhDs from the Boas-Benedict department through the early 1940s—over half of them women. These included Ruth Bunzel, Reo Fortune, Alexander Lesser, Gene Weltfish, Melville Jacobs, Frederica de Laguna, Jules Henry, Ashley Montagu, Ruth Underhill, Ruth Landes, Marian W. Smith, Irving Goldman, E. A. Hoebel, Charles Wagley, Oscar Lewis, and Gordon Willey.

From Boas's Retirement Until 1968

When Nicholas Murray Butler, the president of Columbia, who had hired Boas in 1896, forced him to retire in 1936, Columbia hired Ralph Linton to head the department—over the head of Ruth Benedict and despite the objections of Boas. There, he joined Benedict, George Herzog (a linguist and ethnomusicologist), and W. Duncan Strong (an archaeologist). Harry L. Shapiro began teaching physical anthropology in 1938. Columbia at that time, and for many years more, was devoted to the four-field approach, and students were required to be examined in them all. Margaret Mead's primary appointment was at the American Museum of Natural History, but she frequently taught courses and directed students at Columbia. Three more Columbia PhDs joined the department in the early 1940s: Charles Wagley (a pioneer in the anthropological study of Brazil, who would remain at Columbia until he retired), Gene Weltfish (denied tenure by Columbia because of her leftist political activities), and Marian W. Smith.

Through the 1940s, those who completed dissertations at Columbia were generally in the broader tradition of Boas and his students. Some were more historically oriented, while others studied change and acculturation, often with a stress on economics and political change. The politics of many of the graduate students in the 1930s were also in the Boasian tradition—from liberal to distinctly left, and this showed in many of their works. (Boas himself became increasingly politically active in the 1930s and until his death, fighting racism, Nazism in Germany, America-first chauvinism, limitations on free speech, and economic injustice.) The intellectually left perspective at Columbia was continued after World War II, in 1946, with the entry into the department of a group of veterans, mostly New Yorkers who had grown up with the deprivations of the Great Depression. A number of these ex-GIs met periodically to discuss the ideas of Karl Marx, and when Julian H. Steward came to Columbia in 1946—replacing Ralph Linton (who had left for Yale)—the meeting of Steward and those students produced the closest approximation to a "school" that Columbia anthropology had seen since the early days of the century.

Julian Steward (PhD, University of California, Berkeley, 1929) had been developing a view of the evolution of complex societies based on his research in the "Greater Southwest Culture Sphere," which emphasized the resources in a people's environment, the technology available to them, and the work necessary to exploit those resources. He referred to his method as "cultural ecology" and was working toward a materialist approach to cultural dynamics that would produce "laws" of development. The 6 years of Steward's tenure at Columbia had far-ranging consequences for the field because it matched the concerns and inclinations of the group of students prepared to work to develop these ideas together. These students included Robert A. Manners, Sidney Mintz, Elena Padilla, Eric R. Wolf, Pedro Carrasco, Stanley Diamond, Morton Fried, Elman R. Service, Betty Meggers, Robert F. Murphy (a slightly later addition), and John Murra (enrolled at the University of Chicago). Later, Marshall Sahlins and Marvin Harris were influenced by Steward's work but were not his students.

Manners, Mintz, Padilla, and Wolf were recruited by Steward for his "People of Puerto Rico" study. This was pioneering research in cultural ecology and involved a controlled comparison of four different regions of the island, each with a distinctive combination of environment, crops, and institutional arrangements. It was a study of a complex society embedded in the modern "world system."

This group of anthropologists had a considerable impact during the 1950s and 1960s, and Columbia and the University of Michigan (home of Leslie White and, for a while, Service, Sahlins, and Wolf) were associated with their approach. But by no means did every student or faculty member at Columbia subscribe to the complex of materialism, neo-evolutionism, and cultural ecology that emerged from their early work. On the contrary, Columbians demonstrated a wide range of interests and approaches. Although Morton Fried and

Marvin Harris carried the flag for the materialist-evolutionist-ecological perspective, the range of interests and research at Columbia in this era was broad and varied. It was actually quite eclectic, despite Marvin Harris's ringing condemnations of eclecticism as "effete bourgeois mystification."

Julian Steward left Columbia in 1952 for a position as research professor at the University of Illinois and was replaced by Conrad Arensberg, a sophisticated scholar of considerable learning and original ideas and a leading theorist of community studies, who guided many students to their PhD degrees. The Columbia department enjoyed a brief era of relative stability in the 1950s (despite the death of Duncan Strong and the loss of Joseph H. Greenberg to Stanford and Harold C. Conklin to Yale) and then a period of great growth. American academia was expanding from the late 1950s, and Columbia anthropology, including Barnard College and Teachers College, expanded with it. In 1962, there were approximately 10 regular faculty members and 4 adjuncts (including Margaret Mead and Harry Shapiro), but by 1969, the department had grown to 26 full-time staff, plus the 4 part-time adjuncts. Columbia continued to stress the four-field approach and remained a major producer of PhD degrees, the graduate students working under a number of different advisors. Columbia's undergraduate programs, including Barnard College, continued to recruit students to graduate schools of anthropology.

In general, the prevailing underlying attitude at Columbia, at least through the 1980s, was more likely to emphasize the "praxis of everyday life," the material and down-to-earth rather than the symbolic, structural, interpretive, or literary side of the field. Columbia's anthropology students and faculty tended to be politically aware and, above all, ready to criticize biological determinism in its various forms (notions of racial inferiority, eugenics, and the cruder versions of sociobiology) whenever they arose. Leaders in this enterprise throughout the decades included Boas himself, Otto Klineberg, Ruth Benedict, Ashley Montagu, Morton Fried, Marshall Sahlins, and Marvin Harris.

1968 and After

Columbia anthropology underwent two crises after 1968. During the campus rebellions of the late 1960s and early 1970s, anthropology students and several faculty members found themselves on the frontline of political battles, placing a great strain on the community of scholars and sometimes incurring the wrath of the administration. By the end of the decade, there were a series of resignations, retirements, illnesses, and death, which hit the department hard and led to a difficult period with considerable turnover of personnel.

Despite the many changes in individuals, theories, fashions, and times, the Department of Anthropology at Columbia University maintained a remarkable continuity of tradition and tone throughout its first 90 years or so. (Robert Murphy called it an "essential style and aroma.") This was true even in the 1950s and 1960s, when Franz Boas was generally considered worse than old-fashioned and to have been an impediment to the development of "true science." The department was remarkably inbred, from the earliest days until the late 1960s. In 1962, 11 of 14 full- and part-time faculty had Columbia PhDs! (The count was only down to 13 of 26 by 1969.) But the whole field of anthropology has undergone revolutionary transformations since the 1970s, and by now that continuity has been broken. In 2011, only 3 of the 37 full-time faculty members in the department had doctorates from Columbia. In the 21st century, the Columbia Department of Anthropology evinces considerable political concern, but that would seem to be the only connection to the earlier tradition. In 1991, Robert Murphy had written, "Boas is much more than a dead ancestor, an ancient giver of now defunct laws. To the contrary, he has always been, and still is, a very live Pied Piper." This is no longer the case.

Herbert S. Lewis

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Cultural Ecology; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Harris, Marvin; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Radin, Paul; Sapir, Edward; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Lewis, H. S. (2009). The radical transformation of anthropology: History seen through the annual meetings of the American Anthropological Association, 1955–2005. *Histories of Anthropology Annual, 5,* 200–228.

Lowie, R. H. (1956). Reminiscences of anthropological currents in America half a century ago. *American Anthropologist, 58,* 995–1016.

Mead, M. (1959). Apprenticeship under Boas. In W. Goldschmidt (Ed.), *The anthropology of Franz Boas* (Memoir No. 89). Menasha, WI: American Anthropological Association.

Murphy, R. F. (1981). Julian Steward. In S. Silverman (Ed.), *Totems and teachers: Perspectives on the history of anthropology* (pp. 171–204). New York, NY: Columbia University.

———. (1991). Anthropology at Columbia: A reminiscence. *Dialectical Anthropology, 16,* 65–81.

Stocking, G. (Ed.). (1974). *The shaping of American anthropology, 1863–1911: A Franz Boas reader.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Communitas

As outlined in essays published in *The Ritual Process* (1969) and *Dramas, Fields, and Metaphors* (1974), communitas was a core concept in Victor Turner's anthropology of ritual and religion. The term was borrowed from Paul and Percival Goodman's 1947 book *Communitas: Means of Livelihood and Ways of Life*. For Turner, communitas signifies "a relatively undifferentiated community, or even communion of equal individuals"; designates a feeling of immediate community and synchronicity; and may involve the sharing of special knowledge and understanding. Critical to Turner's theory of religion, communitas was thoroughly grounded in experience, receiving its most effusive application in the study of Catholic pilgrimage based on fieldwork conducted in the 1970s with his wife, Edith, in Mexico and Ireland. While retaining general use in studies of religion, the concept has attracted considerable controversy.

Turner proposed three forms of communitas: *spontaneous*, *ideological*, and *normative*. In *spontaneous communitas*, individuals, often strangers to one another, interrelate relatively free of any expectations associated with role, status, reputation, class, caste, or gender, and other sociocultural expectations and structures. Turner defined it as an "I-thou" relationship of the kind identified by the theologian Martin Buber. This interaction, characterized by personal honesty, openness, and unpretentiousness, occurs between members of fixed social categories (under specific ritual conditions), among those on the edges of structured social life (in marginality), and among those at the bottom of the social structure. The concept was developed metaphorically to cover themes such as the relationship between those undergoing ritual transition, the "religions of humility" (e.g., members of the Franciscan order in Catholicism), institutionalized poverty (such as that taught by the Buddha or Mohandas K. Gandhi) and other monastic and mendicant states, the middle-class countercultural movements of the 1960s and 1970s, the status of autochthonous people, and Christian pilgrimage. In *normative communitas*, resources are mobilized and rules and judicial structures are established to organize communitas into a perduring social system (e.g., a religious order like the Dominicans, the Puritan settlement in New England, or hippie communes). Finally, *ideological communitas* is a reformative process and is applied to a host of utopian models inspired by spontaneous communitas (e.g., Marxian communism).

As a social experience, communitas has a 1960s countercultural bearing to it, and it can be regarded as liberation from conformity, norms, and rules. Turner argued that normal structural activity becomes "arid" and a source of conflict if people are not periodically immersed in the "regenerative abyss of communitas." However, this leads to communitas becoming prescriptive, institutionalized, or "normative," replicating the aridity it seeks to transcend. When this happens, detractors within organizing bodies (i.e., churches, sects) often seek to revive the original spontaneity, starting the cycle anew. It was also observed by Turner that pathological manifestations of communitas "outside or against the law" (e.g., rebellion) can transpire if structure (institutionalism, repression, etc.) is exaggerated. And, if communitas is itself exaggerated, in, for instance, religious or political movements, there may ensue despotism, over-bureaucratization, and other modes of structural rigidity, like that found in totalitarianism.

The origins of Turner's idea of communitas can be found not only in his fieldwork (1950–1954) among cults of the Ndembu tribe in Northern Rhodesia (now Zambia), in the impact of the American counterculture of the 1960s, and in later Catholic pilgrimage research, but also in Turner's literary and poetic background, the camaraderie he experienced in the Royal Engineers defusing unexploded bombs with fellow conscientious objectors during World War II, and the life experiences

he shared with Edith Turner. It is clear from interviews with Edith conducted by Matthew Engelke (2004) that the long and intimate dialogue between the Turners (who shared a marriage, parenthood, fieldwork, and a religion) was indispensable to the forging of theory.

Communitas has had a troubled existence. Critics have held that spontaneous communitas seemed more a utopic description of being than a heuristic device. Echoing Mikhail Bakhtin's utopianism, social liminality acquired a transcendent value, but in this case one that was influenced by the Turners' Roman Catholic faith, fueling their approach to Christian pilgrimage. According to critics, the Turners' analysis of the communitas of Christian pilgrimage emphasized an ideal and homogeneous experience at the expense of complexity and power contestations. According to John Eade and Michael Sallnow's influential approach in *Contesting the Sacred* (1991), a pilgrimage may accentuate prior distinctions between pilgrims as much as it dissolves differences, an approach developed in subsequent research on pilgrimage and festivals, such as that taken up by St John in a 2001 article published in *The Australian Journal of Anthropology*.

Others, notably Don Handelman in a 1993 article in *Journal of Ritual Studies*, expressed reservations about the "ontological implications" of communitas, the potential dark side of which (e.g., Nazism) he thought frightened Turner, who "avoided confronting" such implications. In a 1995 article in *American Quarterly*, Donald Weber pointed out that the potency and ambiguity of the "border" (and those subalterns occupying it) has, within American studies at least, made the transcendent and apolitical social liminality of communitas controversial. Indeed, the elective marginality implicit in Turner's later digressions became ill suited to perspectives on colonial history and gender politics. Yet, while the transcendence of the social was unsuited for those concerned with identity politics, communitas continues to provide a highly pertinent conceptual framework for illuminating rock concerts, folk and countercultural gatherings, rave and other electronic dance music events, and other extraordinary social experiences.

Graham St John

See also Bakhtin, Mikhail M.; Manchester School; Religion; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Coleman, S. (2002). Do you believe in pilgrimage? Communitas, contestation, and beyond. *Anthropological Theory, 2*(3), 355–368.

Eade, J., & Sallnow, M. (1991). "Introduction." In J. Eade & M. Sallnow (Eds.), *Contesting the sacred: The anthropology of Christian pilgrimage* (pp. 1–29). London, UK: Routledge.

Engelke, M. (2004). "The Endless Conversation": Fieldwork, writing, and the marriage of Victor and Edith Turner. In R. Handler (Ed.), *History of anthropology: Vol. 10. Significant others. Essays on professional and interpersonal relationships in anthropology.* (pp. 6–50). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Goodman, P., & Goodman, P. (1947). *Communitas: Means of livelihood and ways of life*. New York, NY: Vintage Books.

Handelman, D. (1993). Is Victor Turner receiving his intellectual due? *Journal of Ritual Studies, 7,* 117–124.

Jencson, L. (2001). Disastrous rites: Liminality and communitas in a flood crisis. *Anthropology and Humanism, 26*(1), 46–58.

Maxwell, I. (2008). The ritualisation of performance (studies). In G. St John (Ed.), *Victor Turner and cultural performance* (pp. 59–75). New York, NY: Berghahn.

Sallnow, M. (1981). Communitas reconsidered: The sociology of Andean pilgrimage. *Man, 16,* 163–182.

St John, G. (2001). Alternative cultural heterotopia and the liminoid body: Beyond Turner at ConFest. *Australian Journal of Anthropology, 12*(1), 47–66.

Turner, V. (1969). *The ritual process: Structure and anti-structure.* Chicago, IL: Aldine.

———. (1973). The center out there: Pilgrim's goal. *History of Religions, 12*(1), 191–230.

———. (1974). *Dramas, fields, and metaphors: Symbolic action in human society.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Turner, V., & Turner, E. (1978). *Image and pilgrimage in Christian culture: Anthropological perspectives.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Weber, D. (1995). From limen to border: A meditation on the legacy of Victor Turner for American cultural studies. *American Quarterly, 47*(3), 525–536.

Comparative Linguistics

Approximately, 6,000 languages are currently spoken. One approach to studying them is to compare them for similarities and differences. This can yield

insights into the history of the people who speak the languages and into the nature of the human language faculty. Linguists recognize three major structural components of language: (1) phonology (the sounds of language), (2) grammar (the formation of words from sounds and sentences from words), and (3) lexicon/semantics (words and their meanings). Some languages are more similar to one another than to other languages with respect to some or all of these features. Four possible explanations for the observed similarities are recognized: (1) genetic relationship, (2) borrowing, (3) universal tendencies, and (4) chance.

Genetic Relationship

Languages are genetically related when at least some similarities among them are due to inheritance of those features from a common ancestral or parent language (protolanguage). For example, languages of the Romance family, such as modern French, Italian, Spanish, and Romanian, all developed from Vulgar Latin, the spoken language of the Roman Empire. As a consequence, these languages show various similarities inherited from Latin, involving sounds, grammar, and words. For most of its history, the field of historical/comparative linguistics has primarily focused on similarities due to genetic relationship. This emphasis has been largely motivated by the very early recognition by comparative linguists that the sounds of related languages typically correspond in a highly regular manner.

Two sound segments correspond when they occur in cognate words of genetically related languages. Cognates of two or more languages are words similar in sound and meaning due to their development from the same word of a common protolanguage. For example, the K'iche' *raš* ("green") and the Huastec *yaš* ("green") are cognate words since both are descendant forms of a word for "green" in their common ancestor, Proto-Mayan (Mesoamerica). Corresponding sounds in this example are *r:y*, *a:a*, and *š:š*. Sound correspondences always occur in at least two cognate sets for genetically related languages, typically in far more than two. For example, *r:y* is also apparent in the K'iche' *war* ("sleep"):Huastec *way* ("sleep") and in the K'iche' *ra:h* ("spicy"):Huastec *yah-* ("spicy"). Because of recurrence, such matches are dubbed *regular* sound correspondences, typically shortened to just sound correspondences. Sound correspondences are the products of the ways in which the sounds of languages change over time. For example, the *r:y* correspondence recognized for K'iche' and Huastec is the result of a Proto-Mayan sound segment **r*, which developed in different ways in the two daughter languages: maintained as *r* in K'iche' and shifted to *y* in Huastec.

The existence of sound correspondences in two or more languages is a strong, if not definitive, indication that the languages are genetically related and, hence, that they form a language family. Languages of a family can be subgrouped according to the number of shared correspondences, those languages sharing more correspondences being more closely genetically related within the family than those sharing fewer. Recognition of sound correspondences allows identification of cognate words and the possibility of using them to reconstruct vocabularies of protolanguages that typically, unlike Latin, are prehistoric and unrecorded. For example, Proto-Mayan was last spoken in Mesoamerica more than 2,000 years ago, considerably before the development of hieroglyphic writing in the area. Nevertheless, identification of cognate words for the 30 or so modern Mayan languages permits recovery of at least part of the vocabulary of Proto-Mayan. Based on the sound correspondences described above and other information, scholars reconstruct **ra'š* ("green"), **war* ("sleep"), and **ra'h* ("spicy"), and many other words as well, for the Proto-Mayan vocabulary.

Borrowing

When compared languages are not genetically related but, nonetheless, show similarities, the most likely explanation is that resemblances are due to language contact and borrowing, especially when the languages are not too distantly removed from one another geographically. When the genetic relatedness of two or more compared languages is unclear, it is sometimes difficult to distinguish words similar in sound and meaning due to borrowing (loan words) from cognates. If the similar words do not participate in regular sound correspondences, then they are probably loans rather than cognates. Sometimes, loans are readily identified. For example, many Native American Indian languages have words for the nonnative things, such as apple, clock, and Saturday, introduced by the intrusive Europeans.

In Tzotzil, a Mayan language of Mexico, the names for these items are *mantsana*, *reloho*, and *savaro*, respectively. These words are unambiguously loaned into Tzotzil from the Spanish language, in which the words for these items are *manzana*, *reloj*, and *sábado*, respectively.

Comparative linguists have focused on borrowing in the study of the phenomenon of *Sprachbund*, or linguistic area. This is apparent when geographically contiguous languages, some of which are not genetically related to one another, share linguistic features, and also when feature sharing is largely explained by areal diffusion (i.e., borrowing) rather than by factors such as inheritance from a common ancestor, universal tendencies, or coincidence. A number of linguistic areas have been identified, including the Balkans, the Indian subcontinent, Mainland Southeast Asia, Mesoamerica, and others. A possible explanation for most, if not all, recognized linguistic areas is that diffusion was strongly influenced by the past use of a lingua franca or lingua francas in these regions. A lingua franca is a language used, typically in trading or other economic settings, by people who do not share a mother tongue. The most widespread modern lingua franca is English.

Reconstruction and Protolanguages

Identification of language similarities due to genetic relationship and borrowing can contribute substantially to historical interpretation. The reconstruction of words of a prehistoric protolanguage is a clue to the location of the homeland of a language (where it was spoken) and what items were of importance to its speakers. For example, reconstructed words for flora and fauna can help pinpoint a protolanguage's homeland since different biological species are usually fairly circumscribed in geographic distribution. Thus, if a word for orangutan were to reconstruct for a protolanguage, it would be very likely that the ancestral language was spoken in Southeast Asia, a region to which the hominoid in question has been restricted in occurrence since prehistoric times. While a single biological reconstruction can be helpful in locating the general region of a prehistoric homeland, a suite of reconstructed names for plants and animals can narrow homeland areas down to very specific regions. For example, based on reconstructed terms for several crops (avocado, cacao, common bean, cotton, maize, squash, and sweet potato) and other information, the homeland of the New World's oldest noncontroversial protolanguage, Proto-Otomanguean, is determined to have been a relatively small area located in or near the Tehuacán Valley of central Mexico.

The social interaction of prehistoric peoples can be recovered through attention to loan words. The sharing of many words by borrowing between languages is indicative of intense past contact among different groups. Often the degree of intimacy of a contact situation can be determined by the nature of the words borrowed. For example, languages sharing loans for kinship relationships such as uncle, aunt, and grandchild were likely used by peoples speaking different languages that intermarried to a significant extent. Even more specificity can be contributed to historical analysis when comparative study can determine the direction of word borrowing, such as in the Tzotzil/Spanish example mentioned above.

Universal Tendencies

While language similarities resulting from universal tendencies may contribute little if nothing to historical understanding, they can be important guides to the nature of the human cognitive faculty underlying language. A universal tendency is apparent when a linguistic feature occurs across languages that cannot be explained by genetic relationship, language contact (borrowing), or chance. A well-known grammatical example involves word order in the main clause of declarative transitive sentences. All languages have a preferred word order for subject (S), verb (V), and object (O). In English, for example, the normal order is SVO, as in "The dog bit the cat" or "Paul loves Mary." Of the six logically possible word-order types, the patterns SVO, VSO, and SOV, where S precedes O, are found most frequently across the languages of the world. On the other hand, OVS, OSV, and VOS—where O precedes S—are extremely rare. If some kind of human cognitive constraint on basic word order did not exist, each of the six possible types would statistically be expected to occur at about the same frequency. Comparative study brings such constraints to the forefront for scientific explanation.

Examples of universal tendencies occur in phonology and the lexicon as well. One phonological tendency involves nasal consonants. The most

common of the latter in the world's languages are n (alveolar nasal), m (bilabial nasal), ñ (palatal nasal), and ŋ (velar nasal). Some languages possess only one of these sound segments, some two, some three, and some all of them. However, if a language has only one nasal, it is always n; if two, always n and m; and if three or four, always n, m, ñ, and/or ŋ.

The lexicon provides some striking examples of universal tendencies. Languages that are neither genetically related nor affiliated through contact often show names concocted for certain objects in very similar ways and at frequencies not compatible with random variation. Figurative labels for body parts are illustrative of this phenomenon. Globally distributed, unrelated languages show the use of complex labels for pupil of the eye, thumb, and limb muscle that literally translate as "baby of the eye," "mother of the hand," and "mouse of the arm/leg," respectively, or very similar expressions. Each of these figurative labels occurs in at least one fifth of the world's languages. Recurring polysemy, where the same two referents are noted by the same word, is also common, for example, eye/face, fruit/seed, hand/arm, finger/hand, sun/day, sun/moon, and wood/tree. These reoccurring nomenclatural associations suggest that humans everywhere perceive some aspects of their environments in very similar ways. Also fitting into the category of universal tendencies is onomatopoeia, that is, the naming of objects through the use of words that phonologically resemble sounds associated with the objects. For example, the nasal sounds mentioned in the above paragraph tend to be found in languages as constituents of words for the body part nose far more frequently than can be expected by chance.

Chance

Some similarities revealed through comparative analysis are indeed coincidental, since they are not explained by genetic relationship, language contact, or universal tendencies. Such chance resemblances while very rare are nonetheless often surprising when encountered. For example, English and Spanish words meaning "much" are *much* and *mucho*, respectively. Since these two languages are both members of the Indo-European family, the obvious similarity of the words might be presumed to result from a common development from a word in their common ancestor, Proto-Indo-European, but no such prehistoric word existed in the language. Another possibility is that the word has diffused, either from English to Spanish or vice versa, but such a transfer is not documented. However, it has been documented that the developmental histories of these two words are totally independent. The English *much* has developed from the Old English *micel* ("big"), and the Spanish *mucho* has developed from the Latin *multus*, both cases involving well-understood sound changes for these languages. It is purely coincidental that the modern words came to resemble one another.

Automated Aids to Language Comparison

With the advent of computer applications, some comparative linguists have sought to automate their methods. This is understandable since comparative possibilities involving 6,000 contemporary languages are enormous and, furthermore, the number of scholars currently researching such analytical possibilities is, unfortunately, not at all large. Typically, computer approaches have focused on the comparison of languages of individual families such as Indo-European, Austronesian, and Bantu, and are usually designed to automate cognate identification or language-family subgroup recognition. A comprehensive approach has recently been developed by the Automated Similarity Judgment Program, an international consortium of scholars whose goal is to develop a database consisting of computer-readable word lists from all the world's recorded languages. This permits the possibility of comparing all possible pairs of languages. The database has been used thus far to produce, through automation, the dates at which protolanguages ancestral to all the world's language families were last spoken, the geographic coordinates for the location of homelands of most protolanguages, an inventory of most of the sound correspondences with their frequencies found for genetically related languages of the world, and a worldwide survey of sound symbolism tendencies.

Cecil H. Brown

Further Readings

Brown, C. H. (1981). Figurative language in a universalist perspective. *American Ethnologist, 8,* 596–615.

———. (1999). *Lexical acculturation in Native American languages.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Campbell, L. (1999). *Historical linguistics: An introduction*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
Haspelmath, M., Dryer, M. S., Gil, D., & Comrie, B. (Eds.). (2005). *The world atlas of language structures*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.
Haspelmath, M., & Tadmor, U. (Eds.). (2009). *Loanwords in the world's languages: A comparative handbook*. The Hague, Netherlands: De Gruyter Mouton.
Holman, E. W., Brown, C. H., Wichmann, S., Müller, A., Velupillai, V., Hammarström, H., . . . Egorov, D. (2011). Automated dating of the world's language families based on lexical similarity. *Current Anthropology, 52,* 841–875.
Wichmann, S., Holman, E. W., & Brown, C. H. (2010). Sound symbolism in basic vocabulary. *Entropy, 12,* 844–858.
Wichmann, S., Müller, A., & Velupillai, V. (2010). Homelands of the world's language families: A quantitative approach. *Diachronica, 27*(2), 247–276.

Comparative Method

The comparative method was a research practice used by 19th-century evolutionists who focused on the evolution of human society. It was based on the notions of psychic unity and unilineal evolution. The anthropologists who used this method saw many customs and practices from different societies as similar to the point of being identical. They concluded that the existence of identical customs in different societies expressed the working of the uniform laws governing the human mind, an idea often called psychic unity. (This idea seems similar to the modern-day theory known as evolutionary psychology, an approach seen by many to be as flawed as the comparative method.) They then argued that because all human minds were governed by uniform laws, all human societies must traverse the same evolutionary trajectory. Differences between human societies resulted from their different positions on this trajectory. Customs could thus be traced from their origins to the present. The comparative method was used by 19th-century theorists such as Lewis Henry Morgan and Edward Burnett Tylor in their attempts to reconstruct the evolutionary stages of human society. Ethnographic information on indigenous societies was central to these reconstructions because evolutionists believed that non-Western indigenous peoples were living fossils representing earlier stages of human evolution. Although the evolutionary theorists of the 19th century were often critical of their own society, they uniformly believed that the northern European and North American societies they came from were the most evolved human societies and that, in the future, all societies, including their own, would progress further.

In England, Tylor published *Primitive Culture* in 1871. On the basis of comparative data from around the world, he arranged religious beliefs and practices in a unilinear sequence. Tylor argued that *animism* lay at the origins of religion and that religion evolved through a developmental sequence that went from polytheism to monotheism, and then to rationalism. For Tylor, the comparative method was critical since it provided the assurance that the evolutionary history of human society could be determined through the study of "survivals." These were cultural practices that were remnants of past customs and beliefs that no longer had apparent utility. However, their existence provided clues to a society's past and its location on the evolutionary scale. According to Tylor, one could study survivals in the same way a paleontologist studies fossils.

One of the best known practitioners of the comparative method was the American Lewis H. Morgan (1818–1881). In *Ancient Society* (1877), Morgan proposed an evolutionary sequence that went from savagery through barbarism to civilization. Morgan argued that subsistence, technology, and marriage and kinship practices could be used to locate the evolutionary stage of each society. Morgan's use of the comparative method focused particularly on family and property. He understood these as progressing from broader to more restrictive forms. In *Ancient Society*, he attempted to set out his comparative scheme ranking societies from around the world.

The arrangement of artifacts in museum exhibits of the 19th century both reflected and promoted the comparative method. In the early 19th century, Christian Jürgensen Thomsen arranged artifacts in the Danish National Museum according to the "three-age" typology of Stone Age, Bronze Age, and Iron Age. In the years that followed, artifacts were most often grouped by type and function, to demonstrate a supposed evolutionary progression. The Crystal Palace Exhibition of 1851 in London is one of the great examples of the comparative method in the 19th century.

The comparative method was named, analyzed, and interpreted by one of the main critics of the approach, Franz Boas. In a paper read at the 1896 meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science at Buffalo, Boas set forth what he called "The Limitations of the Comparative Method of Anthropology." Boas criticized Morgan, Tylor, and others who used the comparative method for tautological reasoning, charging that their methods of data collection and argumentation assumed their conclusions and made disproof impossible. He argued that many factors could explain the presence of similar social forms and artifacts in widely separated societies and that these could not be arranged into a single evolutionary sequence. Boas instead proposed what he referred to as the "historical method" and argued that cultural traits could be understood only within their specific historical and ethnographic context. A particular target of Boas was the arrangement of ethnographic artifacts at the U.S. National Museum, done under the direction of the curator of ethnology, Otis T. Mason. Following accepted practice, Mason had arranged artifacts of particular types, such as cooking pots or weapons from different regions of the world and different cultures, in evolutionary sequences based on their use or function. Boas challenged this notion, arguing that such developmental sequences were unproven and that artifacts from the same culture should be arranged together, not torn from their cultural context.

The comparative method, as described thus far in this essay, included both a powerful ethnocentrism and a belief that, for reasons that were ultimately biological, every human society would evolve in the same way. Thus, because all human minds grew in the same fashion and solved problems in the same ways at the same points in their evolutionary growth, all societies would follow precisely the same stages and produce almost exactly the same material artifacts at these stages. For example, given the right conditions for growth, Australian Aborigines would eventually, and inevitably, acquire the social forms and aesthetic tastes of Victorian Englishmen. These beliefs did not survive the Boasian critique or the data brought back by anthropologists in the early 20th century. However, both the idea of cross-cultural comparison and the idea of evolution remain part of anthropology to this day.

Although Boas rejected the comparative method, he and his students were very much engaged in cultural comparison. Many of their studies involved diffusion, cultural borrowing, and innovation, and these necessarily required a comparison of cultures. This was particularly evident in the culture area approach of Boas's students Clark Wissler and A. L. Kroeber. Furthermore, much, perhaps most, of the work of Boasians held the customs of other cultures up for comparison with those of White, Protestant Europeans and Americans for implicit comparison and cultural critique.

Although almost all of Boas's students rejected the very idea of cultural evolution, by the 1930s, it reemerged with great vigor in the work of Julian Steward and Leslie White. Both cross-cultural comparison and evolutionism were strong elements in the work of George Peter Murdock and other scholars involved with the Human Relations Area Files project at Yale. Murdock in particular used techniques similar to those of Tylor, comparing a large sample of societies and seeking correlations between cultural traits. Murdock even argued that "cultural lag" resulted in the presence of "survivals" from previous forms of organization in most social systems.

In 1962, Elman Service's *Primitive Social Organization: An Evolutionary Perspective* established the "band, tribe, chiefdom, state" model of social development that has been deeply influential and is taught in one form or another in many introductory anthropology courses today. Although the evolutionary aspects of this typology are perhaps rarely stressed by anthropologists, Service clearly understood bands as evolving into tribes, then chiefdoms, and then states. More recently, Keith Otterbein has used Service's types to classify cultures but has never linked a particular band with a particular tribe. In his 2004 *How War Began*, he created a seven-step sequence that applied to the four primary states of Mesopotamia, north China, the Zapotec of Mexico, and the Moche of Peru and argued that these states follow the same trajectories and that their "processes of growth" are identical.

Keith F. Otterbein

See also Boas, Franz; Evolutionary Anthropology; Historical Particularism; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Murdock, George Peter; Neo-Boasianism; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Service, Elman R.; Spencer, Herbert; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Boas, F. (1940). The limitations of the comparative method in anthropology. In *Race, Language, and Culture* (pp. 240–280). New York, NY: Macmillan. (Original work published 1896)

Fuller, D. Q. (2010). An emerging paradigm shift in the origins of agriculture. *General Anthropology, 17*(2), 1, 8–10.

Otterbein, K. F. (1972). A typology of evolutionary theories. *Behavior Science Notes, 7,* 237–242.

———. (2004). *How war began.* College Station: Texas A & M Press.

———. (2009). *The anthropology of war.* Long Grove, IL: Waveland Press.

Tylor, E. B. (1888). On a method of investigating the development of institutions: Applied to the rules of marriage and descent. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 18,* 245–270.

Componential Analysis

See Ethnoscience/New Ethnography

Comte, Auguste

Auguste Comte (1798–1857) was a French philosopher who gave *sociology*, a term coined by Bishop Sieyès in the 1780s, its definition among other human sciences. After his studies at the École Polytechnique in Paris, he worked as a secretary for Count Saint-Simon. He then gave a philosophy course for scientists, the *Cours de Philosophie Positive*, starting in 1826 and published between 1830 and 1842. After several personal crises (he spent 8 months at a psychiatric hospital in 1826) and a passionate engagement in the 1848 Revolution, he founded a "religion of humanity," described in his *Système de Politique Positive*, published between 1851 and 1854.

Reorganizing Society: Positivism as a Basis for Social Order

Comte's main problem was the reorganization of French society after the revolution. He rejected the liberal position that modern societies should be founded on individual rights and the laws of the market. He held the conservative view of society as a specific order, but he did not want to go back to the social order prior to the revolution. He referred to the new sciences, particularly biology and medicine (as he was close to the Medical School of Montpellier), to argue that the social order must be based on scientific conceptions, not on theological abstractions.

For Comte, sociology was to follow the model of biology as a science based on specific laws. His first law was the law of the three stages, according to which every society passes from a theological stage (when humans think through divinities, as in fetishism, polytheism, and monotheism), to a metaphysical stage (when humans think through abstractions, e.g., individual rights or natural finality), to a positive stage (when humans think through laws based on observations).

For Comte, the French Revolution of 1789 was the moment of crisis during which European societies passed from the metaphysical stage to the positive stage. As he saw it, the role of sociology was to accelerate this change by extending positivism not only to scientific thought but also to politics. Comte believed that this gave French society a position in the avant-garde of humanity, as it experimented on itself this extension of positivism to every thought and action before bringing it to the rest of the world.

Positivism is defined by Comte as a method to make ideas clear, precise, and accurate. It involves observing phenomena to draw relations between them, instead of speculating on confused abstractions. Positivism is relational: "Il n'y a que du positif, voilà le seul principe absolu" (Since relations are the only things that can be observed, it is useless to look for an absolute term behind them). Hence, Comte's rejection of the psychology of consciousness that was developed by Maine de Biran and followed by the philosophical trend called "spiritualism." It was impossible, for Comte, to find in one's own mind an idea on which to base the relations observed in the world. For Comte, what we call "mind" is the way humanity relates to its environment by observing it in order to act on it.

Comte classified the sciences to show how positivism has progressed from one science to others. For him, astronomy was the first domain where observations became positive: It replaced astrolatry, the worship of heavenly bodies. Instead of conceiving of stars and planets as divinities endowed

with intentions, men started observing the relations between them. Mathematics came out of this observation, as a science of relations for themselves. This resulted in the birth of property and agriculture, when the relations observed in the sky were applied on earth. Then came physics and chemistry, when mathematical relations were applied to surrounding objects at different levels of visibility. This was followed by biology and sociology, when living beings took themselves as objects of observation.

The progress of the observation of relations in all other sciences was necessary to create sociology as a science. It was the last science to become positive because humans spontaneously think of society as a collective will. Sociology is a reflexive science because society, being in relation to the rest of the world, is itself made of relations. Thus, society, first conceived of as a will or an intention, and then projected onto the world, could only be the object of the final science, a science of relations between relations.

Comte defined society by the notion of consensus. He used the model of the biological organism: Every part of society found its meaning only in relation to the whole. But Comte approached this social totality from two perspectives, the static and the dynamic, modeled on the distinction between anatomy and physiology. Static sociology analyzes the levels of organization of society, starting from the family and proceeding to industrial relations and government. Comte did not believe that the individual was an element of society, and he rejected the idea that organisms were made of cells: He thought that they were made of tissues that relate to each other without closing on themselves. It was then the task of dynamic sociology to show how society developed through time. The law of the three stages was therefore the first law of dynamic sociology. For Comte, it was only when society was analyzed as an organism that its historical development using the law of the three stages could be properly described. Progress through these three stages is what Comte called the "march of humanity."

Comte's perspective makes a distinction between society and humanity. Society is a being determined by its relations with the outside world and within itself. But humanity is the development of these relations through historical temporality. Humanity is constituted, therefore, by the pressure of one generation on the other: "L'humanité est faite de plus de morts que de vivants" (Humanity is made up of the dead more than the living). For Comte, this historical pressure produces a memory that does not determine societies' historical development but, on the contrary, allows for variations. The more humanity develops itself through time, says Comte, the more it becomes modifiable. The great political question for Comte then becomes this: How can humanity be modified without triggering crises?

The French Revolution of 1789 was interpreted by Comte as a modification that went too fast: All the relations were modified at the same time by juridical abstractions, whereas positive observation allows us to see which relations can vary, to what extent, and at which speed. Positivism is not a deterministic view of the world: It enables a politics of variations. If humanity is conceived of as a relation of relations, then it becomes possible to foresee which relations can be modified and to act on them. Human sciences are thus techniques of government because they allow people to act on a reality made up of social relations. "Science d'où prévoyance, prévoyance d'où action" (Science gives prevention, prevention gives action): This motto coined by Comte became the phrase for French reformism.

Yet for Comte, it would be impossible to act on relations if there was not a point in society where they are concentrated. This is the place of the subject or, in other terms, of affectivity. When Comte built his "religion of Humanity" in his *Système de Politique Positive*, he proposed that action should occur where relations are most densely expressed. This is the family, and even more the woman, who acts as a guardian of family, not because she produces children but because she expresses love. Love is defined by Comte as the principle of humanity, in the sense that without love it is impossible to conceive of order and progress, which are the two components, static and dynamic, of humanity. "*L'amour pour principe et l'ordre pour base; le progrès pour but*" ("Love as a principle and order as the basis; progress as the goal.") is the last motto of positivism. By stressing the role of affects in mental life, Comte thus opened the way for a description of moral subjectivities, particularly as they appear in primitive religions. This is the object of his final work, titled *Synthèse Subjective* (1856).

Comte's Legacy

Comte's philosophy has profoundly influenced the development of social sciences and politics,

especially in France. Among his early readers, Emile Littré and John Stuart Mill wanted to distinguish between Comte's scientific method and his religion of humanity—as many positivist sects were developing in France, England, and Brazil, and with them many eccentricities and divisions. Littré played a role in setting Comte's "law of the three stages" as one of the dogmas of the Third Republic. When Jules Ferry imposed compulsory education as a way for schoolchildren to learn about the progress of humanity, it seemed that France had reached the positive stage of equilibrium after a century of revolutions. But Littré also read Comte's positivism as a justification for French colonialism, whereas Comte had criticized the conquest of Algeria and defended the "affinities between fetishists and positivists." Mill was instrumental in developing the positive method in the British "moral sciences" at the time when Herbert Spencer was using Comte's notion of "static and dynamic sociology." But Mill rejected what he perceived as Comte's authoritarian politics, and he developed his own psychology and logic on liberal bases that were counter to Comte's principles.

The first thinker who read Comte's work in its totality was Lucien Lévy-Bruhl. He stressed that no clear-cut separation could be traced between Comte's scientific method and his religion of humanity, because both derived from his idea of reorganization after the revolution. But reorganization appears as a contradictory idea: It supposes that society is organized, which means that it is determined, but that it can be changed since it has been disorganized. Lévy-Bruhl thus showed the proximity between Comte and Immanuel Kant: Both of them had constituted humanity as a subject that is both empirical and transcendental, that can observe itself and act on itself (this was later stressed by Georges Canguilhem in his reading of Michel Foucault's *Order of Things* in 1966). Lévy-Bruhl's work on "primitive mentality" is deeply influenced by Comte's idea that humanity's self-reflection can be expressed as a "logic of affects."

Lévy-Bruhl wrote that Émile Durkheim was the most eminent representative of Comte's sociology. However, Durkheim was often critical of Comte: He wanted to give sociology a method that would define clear-cut facts, whereas for Comte it was more a philosophy of history. Durkheim criticized the notion of humanity as too abstract and proposed to analyze "collective representations" as they are expressed in law and religion.

Comte's work largely fell into disfavor in the 1930s, as it was read by nationalist thinkers. However, Claude Lévi-Strauss taught Comte's *Cours de Philosophie Positive* in Brazil in 1935 and praised his views on totemism in the *Savage Mind* (1962). In the 1990s, he discovered Comte's *Système de Politique Positive*, and rewrote the pages on Comte for the edition of *Savage Mind* in the Bibliothèque de la Pléiade, praising Comte's description of fetishism as anticipation of his interest in the "first arts."

In North America, Comte's influence was diminished by that of logical positivism, an understanding of philosophy that started from entirely different assumptions and only shared with Comte his criticism of metaphysics. A new appraisal of Comte has been made possible by the recent revival of pragmatism. The most promising domain is the connection between Comte's view of the social sciences and a theory of action.

Frédéric Keck

See also Durkheim, Émile; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien; McLennan, John; Structural Functionalism

Further Readings

Canguilhem, G. (1994). *Etudes d'histoire et de philosophie des sciences* [Studies of the history and philosophy of science]. Paris, France: Vrin.

Charlton, D. G. (1959). *Positivist thought in France during the Second Empire, 1852–1870*. Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Delvolvé, J. (1932). *Réflexions sur la pensée comtienne* [Reflections on Comtian thought]. Paris, France: Alcan.

Gouhier, H. (1997). *La vie d'Auguste Comte* [The life of Auguste Comte]. Paris, France: Vrin. (Original work published 1931)

Karsenti, B. (2006). *Politique de l'esprit. Auguste Comte et la naissance de la science sociale* [Politics of spirit: Auguste Comte and the birth of social science]. Paris, France: Hermann.

Keck, F. (2011). *La Pensée sauvage* aujourd'hui: D'Auguste Comte à Claude Lévi-Strauss [*La Pensée Sauvage* today: Of Auguste Comte and Claude Lévi-Strauss]. In P. Maniglier (Ed.), *Le moment philosophique des années 1960 en France* [The philosophical moment of the 1960s in France] (pp. 113–124). Paris, France: Presses Universitaires de France.

Lévi-Strauss, C. (2008). *La pensée sauvage* [The savage mind]. Paris, France: Gallimard. (Original work published 1962)

Lévy-Bruhl, L. (1900). *La philosophie d'Auguste Comte* [The philosophy of Auguste Comte]. Paris, France: Alcan.
Littré, E. (1862). *Auguste Comte et la philosophie positive* [Auguste Comte and the positive philosophy]. Paris, France: Hachette.
Macherey, P. (1989). *Comte: La philosophie et les sciences* [Comte: Philosophy and the sciences]. Paris, France: Presses Universitaires de France.
Pickering, M. (1993). *Auguste Comte: An intellectual biography* (2 vols.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Scharff, R. C. (1995). *Comte after positivism*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Stuart Mill, J. (1865). *Auguste Comte and positivism*. London, UK: Trübner.

Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat

Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat, Marquis of Condorcet (1743–1794), was born in Ribemont in northern France. As an adolescent, he demonstrated a remarkable and precocious talent in mathematics. By the age of 20, he moved to Paris to pursue his mathematical studies and began to publish in that discipline. His friendship with the prominent *philosophe* Jean-Baptiste le Rond D'Alembert introduced him to many of the leading figures of the French Enlightenment, notably the economist Anne-Robert-Jacques Turgot. When Turgot took over the finances of France in 1774, Condorcet was named inspector of the Mint. In 1776, he was elected perpetual secretary of the Academy of Sciences, and when Turgot was dismissed the following year, Condorcet gave up his political career for the time being and devoted himself more fully to mathematics and science, though he continued to write on social issues, as well as editing the complete works of Voltaire. When the French Revolution broke out in 1789, he participated actively, writing pamphlets before being elected in 1791 to the Legislative Assembly, where he was an ardent republican, though he did not vote for the execution of Louis XVI. In 1793, he was denounced as an enemy of the revolution, and a warrant was issued for his arrest. While he was in hiding, he wrote his most famous work, the *Sketch for a Historical Picture of the Progress of the Human Mind*. Arrested in 1794, he died in prison the following day, either from illness or by committing suicide. The *Sketch*, a remarkable tribute to optimism, written in what could only have been his darkest hour, was published posthumously in 1795.

The *Sketch for a Historical Picture of the Progress of the Human Mind* is a testament to Condorcet's unwavering faith in the triumph of human progress. Condorcet identified 10 epochs or stages in the course of human development. The first, situated in the remote past, was when individual families of hunters united to form peoples. The second stage was characterized by the development of pastoralism and the third, by agriculture. All subsequent stages were exclusively European: Greece until the division of the sciences around the time of Alexander; Greece and Rome until the decline of scientific knowledge, the Dark Ages until the Crusades, the beginnings of the renewal of knowledge up to the invention of printing, from printing to the triumph of science and philosophy under Descartes, and, finally, from Descartes until the French Revolution. The 10th stage was reserved for the future progress of the human mind.

Condorcet's scheme is as idealist as it is idealistic, a narrative of the struggle of reason (generally science) against obscurantism (generally religion). He conceded to Rousseau that, at least in the short run, the progress of the mind was not invariably accompanied by moral progress. Even so, he saw counterexamples as temporary setbacks—that is, momentary triumphs of obscurantism over reason—which would ultimately give way to moral as well as intellectual improvement. His scenario is also wildly Eurocentric, far more so than that of Voltaire, whom he had visited at Ferney and whose writings he edited. After the stages of hunting, pastoralism, and agriculture, the entire course of progress of the human mind takes place in Europe. The first three stages were not Condorcet's original contribution but had been sketched out much earlier by his mentor, Turgot, as well as by Scottish thinkers such as Adam Smith and Adam Ferguson. Unlike the Scots, Condorcet's account of the earliest stages was entirely untainted by the inclusion of any ethnographic detail or evidence whatever.

Theoretically, Condorcet's elaboration of the stages of human progress is far less nuanced and theoretically interesting than the slightly earlier work of Smith and Ferguson. However, its unabashed optimism, its diehard faith in the ultimate triumph of moral as well as intellectual progress, set an

important precedent for evolutionary thought in the latter half of the 19th century.

Robert Launay

See also Ferguson, Adam; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques; Smith, Adam; Voltaire

Further Reading

Condorcet, J. A. N. (1955). *Sketch for a historical picture of the progress of the human mind* (J. Barraclough, Trans.). London, UK: Widenfeld & Nicolson.

Critical Theory

Since its professional inception as an academic field during the latter part of the 19th century, anthropology has been influenced by a progressivist tendency to understand and defend the integrity, significance, and viability of human cultures in alternative world areas. Though crosscut by competing influences, orientations, and historical conditions, the anthropological impetus to vouchsafe the value of cultures and of cultural diversity has continued to the present.

During the first decades of the 20th century, anthropologists such as Franz Boas, Bronisław Malinowski, and Margaret Mead were critical of a common tendency by Western scholars to theorize individuals, society, and their relationship in terms heavily based in, and uncritically biased by, Western frames of reference. During the 20th century, anthropologists intertwined this sensibility increasingly with explicit developments in anthropological theory. In a weaker form, which has been common in much of cultural anthropology, *critical theory* may be taken to indicate theorizations of cultural and social relativity that throw into question the naturalness (or the correctness) of Western orientations. In a stronger form, *critical theory* can be taken to refer more specifically to the theorization of how cultural, social, and status differences are created and developed to generate, reinforce, and maintain relations of dominance, inequality, or disenfranchisement—either within societies and cultures or between them.

Emergence and Early Development

This latter sense of *critical theory* is reflexively historical and is itself best described in a historical context. The term *critical theory* itself derives from the so-called Frankfurt school, which included erudite German scholars strongly influenced by Marxism but disillusioned by the way Karl Marx's ideas had been narrowly applied, politically twisted, and made dogmatic, including via the spread of communism, during the early decades of the 20th century. As against this, they wanted the deeper potentials of Marx's own thought, and of social and cultural theory generally, to work against approaches that tended to justify, maintain, and reinforce social and political inequality. The Frankfurt Institute for Social Research, inaugurated in 1923, was the first Marxist-oriented research center at a major German university. With the rise of German nationalist socialism and Nazism, the institute fled to Geneva and then in 1935 moved to New York City, where it associated with Columbia University. The institute remained in the United States until the end of World War II and finally reestablished itself at Frankfurt, Germany, in 1953. Though the members of the Frankfurt school were not anthropologists, they tended to be brilliant interdisciplinary scholars and theorists influenced by the intellectual sensibilities of Marx and with wide-ranging interests that spanned—and interconnected—history, culture, philosophy, art, sociology, and psychology.

In 1937, the head of the institute, Max Horkheimer, published an article titled "Traditional and Critical Theory," which effectively coined the latter term. On Horkheimer's characterization, critical theory was designed to galvanize, crosscut, and integrate the social sciences by critically going beyond, and against, theories that assumed the propriety and functional value of Western structures of politics, economy, and social organization. In the work of Horkheimer and his colleagues, such as Theodor Adorno, culture was not ancillary but central to inequality. This was the case since cultural ideologies, including modern ideologies promoted through vehicles such as propaganda and advertising, easily skew social, political, and economic organization to promote the interests of elites. Non-elites are penalized but are not in a position either objectively or in their subjective orientation to effectively oppose or resist inequality or disempowerment.

As against this, critical theory was critically reflective or "reflexive" in considering the historically

bequeathed workings of power and domination in the casting of ideas and of theories themselves.

In opposition to "pure" theory in an academic sense, critical theory in the Frankfurt school was intended, following Marx, to provide understandings that could ultimately change conditions in the world for the better—and not simply to understand or justify them on existing terms. Finally, critical theory according to Horkheimer was against the academic detachment of topical specialization, in which diverse social phenomena were considered separately; instead, it viewed these amid larger or totalizing patterns and structures of domination or inequity.

Drawing variously on the preceding philosophy and social theory of Immanuel Kant, Georg Hegel, and Max Weber—in addition to Marx—Horkheimer argued that ideas and subjectivity in general, including Western culture, had to be continually pushed by critical theorization to provide for the material and social betterment of all in society and in the world. As such, critical theory was concerned with material forces and factors in relation to subjective understanding, and it employed conceptual and theoretical rigor—often at a high or abstract level—to provide intellectual tools that could expose and in principle be used to ameliorate or abolish social injustice.

Putting this formulation in a larger context, critical theory in its stronger form can be seen to connect Marx's notion of historical materialism with current conceptualizations of culture that have been highly germane to anthropologists. Marx's materialism tended to posit that the tensions and, ultimately, contradictions between forces of material production and relations of inequality provide conditions for social transformation—and the potential for disempowered peoples and classes to recast society for the benefit of all. Since Marx's work in the mid-19th century, however, leftist political revolutions in France, Russia, and other countries seldom produced such optimistic results. Increasingly, then, the intellectual Marxists of the 1920s, 1930s, and since have considered how culture and ideology operate amid political and economic inequality to reinforce class and status inequity through dominating systems of belief despite social upheaval and change. The 1930s and onward also saw the publication and dissemination of Marx's early writings of the 1840s, which explored in greater depth issues of human subjectivity and consciousness.

Critical Theory in the Latter Half of the 20th Century

These issues remained largely refractory to and outside of anthropology until the mid-20th century, though they have affected the discipline strongly since that time. In Anglo-American and French anthropology from the late 19th through the mid-20th century, critical theory in its strong form was typically absent. During this period, anthropologists' pragmatic concerns to appreciate, vouchsafe, or appreciatively support alternative ways of cultural life were seldom able to be explicitly addressed or theorized in professional academic terms. Instead, the desire was to make anthropology objectively scientific and for it to be perceived as free of predisposing values. These tendencies became merged with the strong Western stigma against communism, Marxism, and associated theories of inequity in order to keep the theorization of disempowerment—including the domination of Western imperialism and colonialism—largely out of anthropology through the early 1950s.

During the 1960s and the 1970s, however, more explicit awareness of critical theorization, drawing on the writings of Marx, increasingly influenced a range of anthropological concerns. American, English, and French anthropology were significantly influenced during this period by activist social movements, including the civil rights movement and political opposition to the U.S. war in Vietnam and to Western imperialism generally. Social and cultural awareness was heightened by the civil rights movement, feminism and the women's movement, the Watergate scandal, and the increasing awareness of issues such as environmental pollution, the growth of urban ghettos, racism, and wealth and health disparities between the rich and the poor. In the mix, students and faculty of anthropology, especially in the United States, increased greatly in numbers, and many new departments of anthropology were established at American colleges and universities.

During the 1960s and 1970s, intellectual figures such as Marx and Weber began to be central to anthropology's sense of its own theoretical ancestry—though these thinkers had not themselves been anthropologists. As evident in the work of prominent

anthropologists such as Eric Wolf, anthropologists since the 1960s have taken significant interest in critically and explicitly theorizing the relationship between material, economic, and political inequality, and culture. More recently, the early writings of Marx—and of Marxist critical cultural theorists from the first half of the 20th century, such as Antonio Gramsci, Walter Benjamin, Georg Lukács, Mikhail Bakhtin, and others—have exerted significant influence among professional anthropologists.

Sometimes associated with designations such as "political economy" or "culture/history/theory," explicitly critical theorizations in anthropology have given rise to large bodies of literature since the 1970s and 1980s. These have prominently and variously addressed issues of class inequality, gender domination, racial inequality, colonialism, sexual inequity and discrimination, and regional or global patterns of political and economic imperialism, both historically and in the present. Critical theorizations have also addressed issues such as disparities of health and medical care, education, environmental quality, and employment or employability. These interests in anthropology have been diversely influenced and broadened by international and interdisciplinary influences that are likewise theoretically "critical" but developed by scholars who are not necessarily anthropologists. Prominent exemplars during the 1960s through 1980s include the work of critical theorists such as Immanuel Wallerstein in the area of world economic development and underdevelopment, Pierre Bourdieu concerning the politics and culture of everyday practices, and Michel Foucault with respect to large-scale and intimate regimes of Western knowledge, power, and subjectivity. More generally, critical theories in anthropology have been strongly influenced by interdisciplinary trends of the 1970s, 1980s, and 1990s that have been variously developed through poststructuralism, cultural studies, postcolonial studies, subaltern studies, feminism, Black cultural criticism, post-Marxism, and practice theory, among others (see overviews vis-à-vis anthropology in Knauft, 1996).

Amid these myriad developments, what counts or may be designated as "critical theory" has become diffuse rather than well defined, including within anthropology. So, too, in a number of humanities fields, less explicit forms of critical theorization have intertwined with literary or hermeneutic orientations concerned with literature and the problems of critical discourse. More poignantly, transdisciplinary critiques beginning especially during the 1970s and 1980s have criticized the idea of "theory" in general, including in anthropology. These critiques suggest that theory harbors a general tendency to overgeneralize and essentialize its own terms—and that it is uncritical of its own conceptual rigidity and pretense to scholarly authority. Along with a critique of so-called master narratives within Western scholarship generally, critiques of "high theory" or modernist theory have been strongly evident in so-called postmodern orientations, including in anthropology, since the 1980s and 1990s. At the same time, as described and analyzed by the critical theorist David Harvey in 1990, the postmodern condition can itself be seen in significant part as a cultural product of the political, material, and economic conditions and crises of inequality bequeathed by Western capitalism. In this view, postmodernity is itself a manifestation or symptom of Western political economy during the late 20th century—that is, its inequities, excesses, and failure of self-justification.

Recent Trends and Future Directions

In the wake of these developments, theoretically and otherwise, anthropology since the 1990s has continued to be informed by many aspects of critical theory, including as originally set forth by Horkheimer and as more generally informed by Marxist-influenced forms of critical analysis. At the same time, *critical theory*—like other theoretical designations in social and cultural anthropology—is less often used as an explicit label to categorize a particular school of contemporary anthropological thought or scholarship. This is consistent with a general tendency in social and cultural anthropology in recent years to use less grandiose or "middle-level" terms and topics of designation, rather than "high theory" labels, to describe its orientations and fields of study (see the discussions in Knauft, 2006, 2013).

More recently, since about 2000, the legacy of critical theory has informed an increasing and increasingly explicit emphasis in anthropology on what is alternatively called *engaged anthropology*, *practicing anthropology*, *activist anthropology*, or *public anthropology*. While these terms and their respective approaches and practitioners admit of various definitions and distinctions, they emphasize in different ways the link between the

scholarly work of anthropologists and the exposition, understanding, critique, and amelioration of human inequity, discrimination, domination, and disempowerment. This trend and its sensibilities are in significant ways consistent with strains that have been evident in anthropology since its professional inception during the 19th century. Since that time, the ability of anthropologists to openly describe and conceptualize the linkage between their scholarship, their activism, and their theorization of inequality has grown, including in relation to our own cultural and conceptual suppositions. The degree to which these developments are explicitly linked to *critical theory* is variable. But the sensibilities of critical theorization that inform them arguably continue to be important, including the refusal, as Horkheimer emphasized, to let the important power of conceptual thinking and theoretical formulation become detached from our awareness of social injustice and our commitment to expose and help alleviate it.

Amid its key and continuing contributions, activist or applied anthropology faces difficulties that critical theorization helps identify and resist or counteract. This includes the risk of practical anthropology becoming influenced or co-opted by organizational or commercial interests, with vested interests that take precedence over those of the people who are being studied or ostensibly served. As such, practical initiatives by anthropologists and others benefit from the critical conceptualization and theoretical analysis of the larger context of political economy and cultural influence within which the effects of this practice are located. In this sense, intellectual independence of academic thought and critical theorization help make contemporary anthropological engagement more effectively reflexive, as well as exposing how culture and power—even when well intentioned—easily work to the detriment of disempowered peoples. Arguably these strands of anthropology—the critically theoretical and the engaged or activist—are best served by being linked together rather than separated or divorced from each other. In this and other respects, the past and present legacy of critical theory has a key practical as well as conceptual role to play in anthropology and, more generally, in engaging problems of human inequity and social injustice in the 21st century.

Bruce M. Knauft

See also Benjamin, Walter; Bourdieu, Pierre; Foucault, Michel; Frankfurt School; Harvey, David; Marxist Anthropology

Further Readings

Harvey, D. (1990). *The condition of postmodernity: An enquiry into the origins of culture.* Cambridge, UK: Blackwell.

Horkheimer, M. (1975). Traditional and critical theory. In *Critical theory: Selected essays* (pp. 188–243). New York, NY: Continuum International. (Original work published 1937)

Horkheimer, M., & Adorno, T. (1969). *Dialectic of Enlightenment.* New York, NY: Continuum International. (Original work published 1944, revised 1947)

Knauft, B. M. (1996). *Genealogies for the present in cultural anthropology.* New York, NY: Routledge.

_____. (2006). Anthropology in the middle. *Anthropological Theory, 6,* 407–430.

_____. (2013). Issues in sociocultural anthropology since the sixties. In J. Carrier & D. Gewertz (Eds.), *Handbook of sociocultural anthropology* (pp. 229–238). London, UK: Bloomsbury.

McClelland, D. (Ed.). (2000). *Karl Marx: Selected writings.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Wolf, E. R. (1959). *Sons of the shaking earth.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

_____. (1982). *Europe and the people without history.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Cultural Ecology

Cultural ecology is a theoretical approach that seeks to explain cultural similarity and diversity as resulting from technological and social adaptations to environmental challenges. It is the predecessor to most current approaches in ecological anthropology. The U.S. anthropologist Julian H. Steward developed cultural ecology between the 1930s and 1950s as a way to explain the similarity and diversity in the subsistence behaviors and social organization of hunter-gatherers, horticulturalists, farmers, and industrialized nations. Before Steward's time, scholars explained cultural differences using either unilinear evolutionary schemes that proved to be ethnocentric and inaccurate or Boasian historical particularism and diffusionism, which asserted that

culture was only influenced by other cultures rather than by outside forces. Cultural ecology is significant because it offers a *causal* explanation for cultural diversity and uniformity based on adaptation; it argues that we should expect similar cultural solutions to similar environmental challenges in different parts of the world. Steward was wary of determinisms (theories employing singular causes, e.g., environment or biology). His cultural ecology tempered environmental causation with culture history and a multilinear view of social evolution, and he avoided biological determinism by divorcing cultural ecology from Darwinian principles. The principles of cultural ecology live on in allied approaches, including human behavioral ecology, political ecology, the ecosystems approach, ethnoecology, and cross-cultural comparison. This entry continues with a brief history, followed by a description of the key concepts, some case studies, and critiques. It concludes with a summary of how cultural ecology is practiced in allied approaches today.

Historical Context

Among the central missions of cultural anthropology is to describe and explain cultural diversity. Why, for example, are some people on earth hunter-gatherers, while others are farmers? Throughout the 19th century, the major explanation was progress: Hunter-gatherers were thought to be less evolved than farmers or industrialists. Franz Boas and his students created modern American anthropology by their efforts to demonstrate that unilinear evolution was both scientifically inaccurate and politically motivated. Boas and students such as Alfred Kroeber and Robert Lowie argued instead that anthropologists should understand cultural differences as resulting from dissimilar cultural histories. Some people are hunter-gatherers because they were born into hunter-gatherer cultural traditions, while others were born into traditions that include agriculture.

When Steward pursued his PhD under Kroeber and Lowie at the University of California, Berkeley, anthropologists were mapping the distribution of cultural traits among Native North Americans and classifying these distributions into "culture areas." They explained regional similarities as being due to diffusion: the spread of culture as small populations share information with each other. Steward, who had a background in biology and geology, noticed that these "culture areas" often corresponded to environmental features. He became dissatisfied with historical particularism and diffusionism and what he saw as circular reasoning that culture is caused by culture. In 1938, he published a data-rich work titled *Basin-Plateau Aboriginal Sociopolitical Groups*, in which he concluded that Native Americans living throughout the Great Basin (an area stretching from Idaho to southern California and including most of Nevada and Utah) shared similar cultural traits such as mobility and nuclear family organization because they were adapted to environments that were similarly characterized by widely dispersed resources.

Steward's cultural ecology was not the first theory to posit that human behavior varies in response to the environment. Scholars like Ellsworth Huntington proposed that climate determined cultural traits such as ingenuity and industriousness, inspiring ambition and civilization in residents of temperate climates and sloth among tropical peoples. This perspective is appropriately labeled today as environmental determinism. One of Steward's instructors at Berkeley, the geographer Carl O. Sauer, founded an approach analogous to cultural ecology called cultural geography, which examined cultural influences on landscape in prehistory and today. Contemporary with Steward were "social ecologists" like August B. Holingshead and Amos Henry Hawley, who considered human communities among those of other animals and plants in a local ecology but who, from Steward's perspective, underplayed the significance of culture in human adaptation.

Steward's Cultural Ecology

Steward offered cultural ecology as both a problem and a method. The problem is to determine under what conditions human societies tend to make similar behavioral "adjustments" or "adaptations" to similar environments. Whereas his predecessors thought that the environment had a limiting or permissive effect on the cultural behaviors a population could practice, Steward argued that adaptation is a "creative process" that generates cultural features. To Steward, it was culture rather than individuals who adapted to environments, where culture is assumed to be superorganic (greater than the thoughts of singular individuals) and to have history.

Because culture is very complex, Steward did not think that all elements of culture were equally likely to be influenced by the environment. This led him to propose the concept of the "cultural core." The first step in Steward's method is to examine the relationship between the natural resources a human population needs to survive and their technology for exploiting these resources. The second step is to investigate the behaviors associated with these exploitive technologies, including labor processes and the organization of labor. The third step is to examine whether the subsistence behaviors influence other aspects of culture, including social institutions and beliefs. The term *cultural core* refers to those aspects of culture that are most directly associated with subsistence, including technology, environmental knowledge, labor, and family organization. Steward argues that the core aspects of culture are most likely to respond to changes in the environment. Beyond the core are secondary aspects of culture, including social institutions and religious beliefs, which are less likely to have adaptive significance and more likely to vary according to culture history.

Steward proposed that cultural change may be described as multilinear evolution (in contrast to the unilinear approaches of the 19th century). As subsistence challenges change, due to either natural or human causes, people will adjust their tools and behaviors in step. Because subsistence challenges do not always change in predictable ways, cultural evolution does not follow a single direction; dissimilar cultures may become similar if exposed to a similar change in the natural or human-influenced environment.

While Steward applied cultural ecology primarily to hunter-gatherers, horticulturalists, and farmers, he insisted that it could also be applied to industrial societies, although he posited that the cultural core of adaptive behaviors would be less significant in societies with a more complex social organization and greater control over the natural environment.

Cultural Ecology Case Studies

In the aforementioned work, *Basin-Plateau Aboriginal Sociopolitical Groups*, Steward describes in great detail the climate, topography, and distribution of natural resources throughout the vast and heterogeneous region of the Great Basin, as well as the subsistence behaviors, movements, and aggregations of the Shoshoni, Ute, and Paiute Native Americans living there. The most important natural resources for these hunter-gatherers were wild grains, roots, and berries, collected by women, and small game, hunted by men. Most of these resources were highly dispersed across the landscape. Steward demonstrated that the most efficient way to harvest these resources was by solitary individual foragers. As a result, the Native Americans of the Great Basin tended to live in dispersed nuclear families. Nuclear families joined together in somewhat larger groups occasionally for brief periods when resources could be more efficiently harvested by cooperative groups—including antelope hunts, jackrabbit drives, and harvesting pine nuts. With high mobility and flexible band membership, no formal leadership positions developed.

In a comparative study of hunter-gatherers from the Great Basin, Kalahari, Central African rainforests, and the Western Desert of Australia, Steward argued that many hunter-gatherer societies shared a patrilocal, patrilineal, and territorial cultural adaptation to the hunting of dispersed, nonmigratory animals. In all of these societies, hunting was the work of men. Hunting required detailed knowledge of the terrain, which hunters learned as boys. Thus, it was more efficient for boys to remain in their home region after marriage and for women, who gathered stable, predictable, plant resources, to leave their natal villages to live with their husband's family (patrilocality). Because wild game populations were prone to overexploitation, related men cooperated to exclude outsiders from hunting territories. The activity of defending territories unified men into socially cohesive groups, encouraging the formation of patrilineal clans.

Steward and Robert Murphy's comparative study of Montagnais fur trappers in northeastern North America and Mundurucú rubber tappers of Amazonian Brazil exemplifies multilinear evolution and adaptation to human-made environments, particularly new export markets. Before they were dependent on trade, Montagnais and Mundurucú practiced very different cultural patterns, but they converged on a similar cultural pattern when faced with the similar challenges of market production. Before the fur trade, Montagnais hunted mobile herds of caribou in winter and exploited fish and small, stationary game in summer. Because caribou

were hunted cooperatively by a small team of men, Montagnais lived in multifamily groups in winter. They assembled in larger groups for fishing in summer. There was no formal ownership of territory or formal leadership. The fur trade changed the structure of the resource base. Multifamily groups dissolved into autonomous nuclear families, which relocated to be close to the most important stationary resource, the company store, where they purchased much of their food. As demand for fur-bearing mammals increased and their wild populations diminished, men claimed ownership of private hunting territories. Among the horticultural Mundurucú before the rubber boom, men practiced solitary hunting of small game and cooperated to clear fields and make war, while women worked together to cultivate manioc. The result was a matrilocal family structure (organized around cooperative-farming women) and a patrilineal political structure (organized around cooperative male warriors) headed by a traditional village chief, and a village structure consisting of one large house for men and many smaller houses for women and children. As rubber tapping replaced hunting and gardening, the social structure dissolved into nuclear families. Men defended private lines of rubber trees that they worked alone, while families became more dependent on purchased foods.

A somewhat more recent application of Stewardian cultural ecology is the so-called wild tuber debate started by the anthropologists Thomas Headland, Robert Bailey, and Nadine Peacock in the 1980s. They argued that it is unlikely that hunter-gatherers have ever lived in tropical rainforests without access to cultivated foods. As with Steward's studies, the argument begins with the structure of the environment. The edible biomass of tropical rainforests is low. Most of what humans can eat in the forest comes in the form of meat from wild animals. This meat tends to be very lean, for without a prolonged cold or dry season, animals do not experience seasonal fat deposition. The major source of edible calories is wild tubers. Because rainforest tubers have many natural predators, they tend to be highly toxic and cannot be consumed by humans unless processed. In short, the rainforest does not offer enough food to support a full-time forager. They note that nearly all ethnographically described rainforest foragers exchange wild foods for farmed staples like grain and domesticated tubers with lower toxicity. Detractors argued that not all tropical rainforests are alike. Some are more calorie rich, with resources like freshwater fish and palm starch.

Critiques

The ecological anthropologists Andew P. Vayda and Roy A. Rappaport, in an essay published in 1968, criticized Steward's cultural ecology on the following grounds. First, while Steward argued that there exist regular correlations between environmental challenges and cultural solutions, his analyses involve case studies chosen specifically because they demonstrate these correlations. Thus, it is not clear how frequently the same environment triggers different cultural adjustments or the same cultural adjustment results from a different environment. Because Steward does not test hypothetical correlations with a large, statistically valid sample of human populations, it is difficult to tell how general these correlations are and if they really exist. Second, the cultural core model implies a causal chain that links resources, tools, labor, and social organization, in that order. Yet it is not clear whether causality proceeds in this singular trajectory or whether there are causal feedbacks. Third, Vayda and Rappaport criticize the cultural core model's assumption that religion and other "secondary components" of culture are generally not adaptive. They cite several case studies where religious rituals appear to have adaptive significance, including from their own research on ritual functioning to regulate pig and human populations in highland New Guinea. Fourth, they accuse Steward of conflating biology with genetics and, on the basis of a fear of genetic determinism, rejecting the possibility of biological adaptations. Throughout their essay, they argue that Steward's attention to ecology was limited to the availability of natural resources and ignored the greater subject matter of ecology (which at the time was dominated by the ecosystems approach). Since Vayda and Rappaport's essay, other researchers have criticized cultural ecology for taking a limited view of the role of political structures in the limits of human adaptation.

New Directions

Interestingly, Steward wrote about evolution and adaptation, yet he denied the influence of Darwinian forces. He described what could be called means of production and social relations of production, yet he

denied any similarities of his approach to Marxian perspectives. His research focused on environment, but only to the limited degree that nature supplies resources to human populations. And he considered culture to be superorganic but avoided discussions of cognition. Ecological anthropology since Steward's time has expanded cultural ecology along these multiple lines.

Human behavioral ecology applies Darwinian theory to cultural ecology's mission of explaining behavioral diversity and employs Steward's method of starting analysis with the structure of the environment. This is perhaps most obvious in optimal foraging theory research. Environmental variables such as the patchiness of resources, travel time to prey and patches, prey size and abundance, and probability of encounter are used to predict foraging strategies, sexual division of labor, food sharing, and prestige-enhancing activities. Unlike cultural ecology, behavioral ecologists assume that natural selection has honed human decision-making skills over time, so that individuals rather than populations adapt by using near-optimal decision-making skills rather than by using culture. Concepts from sociobiology, like reciprocal altruism and kin selection, are used to explain cooperation. Increasingly, human behavioral ecologists are adopting concepts from gene-culture coevolution theory, particularly social learning of cultural information, which may be reintroducing a concept of culture that Steward, Kroeber, and Lowie would have recognized.

The cultural core model bears resemblance to Marx's mode-of-production model, in which resources are transformed into commodities by labor processes, including human labor power, the means of production (tools), and the social relations of production (rules and social institutions). Marvin Harris claims in his book *The Rise of Anthropological Theory* that his cultural materialism approach is a descendant of Steward's cultural ecology, which makes more explicit the material objects that connect humans with the environment.

A more orthodox application of mode of production is employed by Eric Wolf, a student of Steward's, in *Europe and the People Without History.* Wolf presents a history of the world economy in which different populations exploit and manage resources through kin-based rules, tributary rules, or capitalist rules. These populations interact through conquest and domination to create the system of global inequalities that we have in the world today. Wolf's political economy approach starts with cultural adaptation to the environment but adds to it the history of political subjugation and structured inequality. More recently, political ecologists have examined human-environment interactions within the lens of political power differences.

Among Vayda and Rappaport's main criticisms of cultural ecology was that it employed a very limited concept of ecology. They urged anthropologists to embrace the work of ecologists, which at the time was largely focused on ecosystems. The 1960s version of the ecosystem concept held that interactions among plant and animal populations and abiotic resources functioned to maintain biotic populations in a stable equilibrium. Rappaport argued that culture could function as a homeostatic mechanism to regulate this equilibrium. Using ecological data from highland New Guinea, he argued that Mae Enga people practice a *kaiko* ritual roughly once per decade when warring communities declare peace and feast on a large portion of the pig population. The decadal cycle of war and pig slaughter prevents either humans or pigs from surpassing the region's carrying capacity. His method is essentially Steward's, but the adaptive behavior, the *kaiko* ritual, is not within the cultural core as Steward conceived it.

Ethnoecology attempts to understand the cognitive components of cultural adaptation to the environment. Culture is superorganic, but it plays out in the thoughts, words, and actions of individuals. Ethnoecologists study the relationships among linguistic categories (words) for plants and animals and the resource management choices people make.

Finally, while not strictly an ecological approach, the cross-cultural studies that began with George Murdock's *Ethnographic Atlas* and continue today with statistical analyses of the Standard Cross Cultural Sample and Human Area Relations Files owe a debt to Steward's cultural ecology, for they test hypotheses about adaptive similarities using representative data sets of world populations.

Bram Tucker

See also Cultural Materialism; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Harris, Marvin; Historical Particularism; Human Behavioral Ecology; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Murdock, George Peter; Rappaport, Roy; Steward, Julian; Vayda, Andrew P.

Further Readings

Bailey, R. C., & Headland, T. N. (1991). The tropical rain forest: Is it a productive environment for human foragers? *Human Ecology, 19*(2), 261–285.

Helms, M. W. (1978). On Julian Steward and the nature of culture. *American Ethnologist, 5*, 170–183.

Murphy, R. F. (1977). Introduction: The anthropological theories of Julian H. Steward. In J. C. Steward & R. F. Murphy (Eds.), *Evolution and ecology: Essays on social transformation by Julian H. Steward* (pp. 1–39). Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Steward, J. H. (1936). *The economic and social basis of primitive bands*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1938). *Basin-plateau aboriginal sociopolitical groups*. Washington, DC: Bureau of American Ethnology.

———. (1955). *The theory of culture change*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Steward, J. H., & Murphy, R. F. (1956). Tappers and trappers: Parallel processes in acculturation. *Economic Development and Culture Change, 4,* 335–355.

———. (Eds). (1977). *Evolution and ecology: Essays on social transformation by Julian H. Steward*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Vayda, A. P., & Rappaport, R. A. (1968). Ecology, cultural and noncultural. In J. A. Clifton (Ed.), *Introduction to cultural anthropology* (pp. 477–497). New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

Cultural Materialism

The term *cultural materialism*, a major theoretical model and research strategy in anthropology, was coined by Marvin Harris and first introduced in his book *The Rise of Anthropological Theory* in 1968. This paradigm awaited its full elaboration in *Cultural Materialism: The Struggle for a Science of Culture* in 1979. The term *cultural* denoted the association with anthropology, and *materialism* indicated the priority accorded to the material conditions of human existence. As a research paradigm, cultural materialism provides a framework for analyzing the organization of societies both past and present. It also provides a guide for understanding contemporary social life.

A commitment to scientific principles is intrinsic to cultural materialism. It is a generalizing research strategy dedicated to the explanation of sociocultural differences and similarities around the world. Its ultimate goal, then, is to *explain*, not merely describe, cultural variations in the way people live. Or, as Harris (1979) succinctly wrote, "Cultural materialism is based on the simple premise that human social life is a response to the practical problems of earthly existence" (p. ix).

Basic Tenets

Cultural materialism rejects the timeworn adage that "ideas change the world." Instead, a basic tenet of cultural materialism is *infrastructural determinism*, which assumes that explanations for cultural similarities and differences ultimately lie in the material conditions of human life. In other words, the essence of this approach is that the infrastructure is, in almost all circumstances, the most significant force behind the evolution of a culture.

To operationalize this research paradigm and provide a method for studying societies around the world, cultural materialism proposes that all social systems consist of three levels: (1) infrastructure, (2) structure, and (3) superstructure. The *infrastructure* is viewed as the foundation or base of society for within it lie the material conditions of human existence. The infrastructure of a society is its system of production and reproduction, which is determined by a mix of ecological, technological, environmental, and demographic variables. In sum, the study of a society's infrastructure investigates how people acquire food and shelter, how a population maintains itself in a given environment, and how basic human biological needs and drives are satisfied.

The second level is a society's *structure*, which comprises its domestic economy; its social organization; its kinship system, including marriage patterns; its division of labor; and its political economy, political institutions, and class and other social hierarchies. A society's *superstructure* consists of the ideological and symbolic areas of culture: its religious, symbolic, intellectual, and artistic efforts.

Cultural materialism hypothesizes that all three levels are functionally related, with predictable and significant associations between them. It also suggests that changes in a society's infrastructure—its material base—are mainly the result of shifts in a human population's relationship to its environment. This paradigm further posits that over time and in the long run changes in a society's infrastructure will lead to functionally compatible changes in its social

and political institutions (its structure) and in its religious and secular ideologies (its superstructure), all of which enhance the continuity and stability of the system as a whole. To Harris, the study of infrastructure should be a strategic priority because it is the main interface between nature and culture. If the goal of science is to establish lawlike generalizations, then one should begin by studying those aspects of sociocultural systems under the most direct restraints from the givens of nature.

It is crucial to point out that cultural materialism does not suggest a simplistic, mechanistic correspondence between material conditions and structural and ideological phenomena. Structure and superstructure are not considered unimportant, epiphenomenal reactions to infrastructural forces. The structure and the symbolic or ideational aspects of a culture act as regulating mechanisms within the system as a whole. Nor does cultural materialism posit that *every* change in the system under *all* circumstances arises from shifts in infrastructure. In fact, it suggests that there may be a time lag before social and political institutions and ideologies evolve that are compatible with changed material conditions. It proposes a probabilistic relationship between these three levels of society, while also insisting that the primary sources of change are found in the material conditions of human life. As such, when changes are noted in a society's structure or superstructure, we must *first* look to its infrastructure as the likely source of these changes. Then, too, though its critics say otherwise, cultural materialism does *not* claim that structure and superstructure are simply passive entities that have no impact on a society's material base. Still, if structural or superstructural changes are not compatible with the existing modes of production and reproduction, they are not likely to spread and be amplified.

Value of the Model

This paradigm has practical value as well as scientific value. Cultural materialism can be a vehicle for understanding, even solving, contemporary social problems, including poverty, racism, sexism, and oppression of many kinds. After all, before such problems can be solved, they must be understood. If anthropology can struggle against the mystification of the causes and consequences of inequality and exploitation, it is well that anthropology does so.

American society following World War II illustrates how this model can help illuminate societal change. It also provides an example of time lag between shifts in material base and ideology. The "feminine mystique," an ideology celebrating the joys of domesticity, was said to characterize the United States during the 1950s. American women, especially married women, according to the feminine mystique, were said to be content with hearth and home, raising healthy children, and shunning paid employment. But during the same decade, record numbers of married women were, in fact, leaving home to take up jobs. Because of this, the ideology of the feminine mystique did not mesh with what was actually happening in American society. But it was not until a decade later that the infrastructural change of women's large-scale employment resulted in the rise of feminist ideology. Thus, from the perspective of cultural materialism, the rebirth of feminism and the growth of the women's liberation movement were ultimately the *results* rather than the *cause* of women's massive entry into the labor market. Women did not take up jobs because a feminist ideology "liberated" them to do so. Rather, the reason why so many married women sought jobs lay in changes in material conditions in the postwar period in the United States, including a specific demand for *female* labor and inflation, which put a premium on a second family income to maintain a middle-class standard of living, a standard of living that now included a suburban house, two cars, and myriad appliances.

A related social issue that a cultural materialist analysis can shed light on is about reproductive patterns and practices in contemporary American society. While some argue that the rising rates of abortion and contraception point to a failure of moral values and a concomitant weakening of the American family, cultural materialists look to a changing material base as an explanation for the increased use of techniques that led to a decline in fertility over the course of the 20th century. As the United States shifted from a primarily agrarian society, in which having a large number of children was advantageous, to one based on an industrial and service economy, not only did the need for many children decrease, but having a large number of children actually became a drain on a family's economic well-being. Here, cultural materialism suggests that ideal family size is an ideological construct that waxes and wanes with the material costs and benefits of raising children.

Cultural materialism has, in fact, been used to illuminate several riddles of culture, cultural practices that on the surface seem irrational or downright counterproductive. These include materialist explanations for the sacredness of the cow in India as well as other puzzling cultural phenomena such as religious dietary restrictions, including the Jewish and Muslim prohibitions against eating pork. From a materialist perspective, such food taboos can be best understood by seeing animals first as nourishment for the body rather than for their symbolic or ideational value.

Cultural materialism also provides a guide for the ways anthropologists collect and organize data. It distinguishes emic and etic approaches to the study of cultural institutions. In an *emic* approach, the observer attempts to learn the rules and categories of a culture from the native's perspective. As such, emic analyses depend on informants' explanations, and if informants agree on a description or interpretation of data, the data are considered accurate. In contrast, in an *etic* approach, the observer does not use native rules or categories but, rather, those derived from independent observers using agreed-on scientific measures. Quantifiable measurements such as fertility rates, caloric intake, or average rainfall are employed to develop general theories of culture without regard to whether those measurements mean anything to the native populations themselves. Cultural materialists insist that a science of society cannot be based solely on informants' interpretation of their own behavior. Emic and etic analyses can be used to study both thought and behavior, and both are important for an understanding of cultural phenomena.

Cultural materialism evolved from and was influenced by a number of theoretical currents, including evolutionary theory, cultural ecology, and Marxist materialism, and Harris acknowledges his debt to all of them, most especially the latter. Thus, much as in earlier Marxist thought, material changes are seen as largely determining patterns of social and political organization and ideology. However, while acknowledging the debt owed to the economic theories of Karl Marx and Frederick Engels, cultural materialists seek to improve Marx's original strategy by rejecting the Hegelian idea that all systems evolve through a dialectic of contradictory negations. This new paradigm also adds reproductive pressure and ecological variables to the conjunction of material conditions studied by Marx and Engels. Harris himself emphatically separates his own model from *dialectical* materialism as well as from the program for political action that is so closely associated with Marxist materialism.

Cultural materialism as a research paradigm is not limited to cultural anthropology. Strongly convergent research strategies began developing in anthropological archaeology during the 1960s under the rubric "The New Archaeology." The principle of infrastructural determinism serves as a grounding for modern archaeology, especially North American archaeology. Moreover, about half of all practicing American archaeologists consider themselves to be, at least to some degree, cultural materialists. Today, despite a surge of anti-scientism in the guise of "postmodern" and "interpretationist" approaches, cultural materialism is a flourishing research strategy for anthropology and contemporary social science in general.

Maxine L. Margolis

See also Carneiro, Robert L.; Cultural Ecology; Harris, Marvin; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Material Production, Theories of; Vayda, Andrew P.

Further Readings

Harris, M. (1974). *Cows, pigs, wars, and witches.* New York, NY: Random House.

———. (1977). *Cannibals and kings.* New York, NY: Random House.

———. (1979). *Cultural materialism: The struggle for a science of culture.* New York, NY: Random House.

———. (1981). *America now: Why nothing works.* New York, NY: Simon & Schuster.

———. (1985). *Good to eat.* New York, NY: Simon & Schuster.

———. (2001). *The rise of anthropological theory.* Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira Press. (Original work published 1968)

Headland, T., Pike, K., & Harris, M. (1990). *Emics and etics: The insider-outsider debate.* Newbury Park, CA: Sage.

Murphy, M., & Margolis, M. L. (Eds.). (1995). *Science, materialism and the study of culture: Readings in cultural materialism.* Gainesville: University Press of Florida.

Cultural Relativism

Cultural relativism is the doctrine that the standards that ground knowledge and morality are cultural in nature and vary between different societies.

Absolute standards for judging the institutions of one culture as superior to those of another are lacking, and ideas, beliefs, and ethical judgments should be understood in terms of the culture in which they are found. Cultural relativism is the antithesis of ethnocentrism: the practice of understanding and evaluating the beliefs and values of other cultures against the standards of one's own culture.

Relativism has two prongs. Epistemological relativism holds that human knowledge—about nature, religion, society, or anything else—is conditioned by (relative to) the cultural context within which that knowledge is developed. Moral or ethical relativism claims that convictions about what is good or evil, proper or gauche, are likewise conditioned by their cultural contexts.

Relativism in Anthropology

Relativist ideas have been in the air at least since Herodotus and were articulated subsequently in various ways by Michel de Montaigne, Montesquieu, and the pragmatists William James and John Dewey, to name just a few. Anthropological relativism, developed most notably in the early and mid-20th century by Franz Boas's students Margaret Mead, Ruth Benedict, and Melville Herskovits, is one of the discipline's signature concepts. One reason why many anthropologists are attracted to it is their research method of fieldwork by participant observation. Anthropologists live for extended periods in the societies they study, striving to grasp alien ways of thinking and behaving by sharing in their lifeways as much as they can. This is often an unforgettable experience in an anthropologist's life. Empathy and appreciation for the people and their culture are almost inevitable as the field-worker comes to value them as friends and finds their way of life to be a viable and rewarding way to be human. This intimate and powerful experience is far more conducive to a relativist attitude of appreciative understanding than to a detached and judgmental one.

The Dangers of Relativism

Outside anthropology, relativism is often seen as a threat that must be resolutely resisted. Defenders of religious absolutes are seriously offended by relativism. Pope John Paul II decreed in his encyclical *Fides et Ratio* (1998), "Every truth—if it really is truth—presents itself as universal, even if it is not the whole truth. If something is true, then it must be true for all people and at all times" (para 27). Protestants, particularly those of a fundamentalist stripe, are of the same mind.

The secular world contributes its share of virulent critics of relativism. In his post-9/11 tirade *Why We Fight* (2002), William Bennett excoriates the efforts of relativism and its evil twin postmodernism to keep our children from being taught "the superior goodness of the American way of life" (p. 47). In his 1996 book *Slouching Towards Gomorrah: Modern Liberalism and American Decline*, Robert Bork scorns relativism for combining the radical individualist notion that there should be no restraint on personal gratification with a radical egalitarianism that looks to equality of outcomes rather than equality of opportunity and treats everyone the same regardless of merit.

What really bothers most people about relativism is its implication that if there are no objective standards of truth and knowledge, or of moral right and wrong, then one proposition or ethical judgment is as true or good as another and one is free to believe and do whatever one likes. This, they argue, leads to hedonism, libertinism, and nihilism, all of which are destructive to the possibility of an ordered society.

Developments within anthropology over the past 3 decades or so have rendered cultural relativism less palatable than it previously was. Relativism's basic premises that beliefs and values are products of culture and that they vary between cultures are most perfectly realized when different societies are isolated from each other and when the members of each uniformly hold the beliefs and values of their culture. Neither of these conditions has ever existed, but it was much easier to imagine them in the early days of anthropology than it is now.

Whatever validity the assumption of cultural isolation ever had was already being eroded by Marco Polo and the voyages of discovery of the 15th through 18th centuries, and it has been completely set to rest by contemporary globalization. And anthropologists have come to realize that human cultures are not homogeneous. Stemming from the theoretical claims of Karl Marx, and abetted by Antonio Gramsci and Michel Foucault, the interests of many anthropologists have shifted from what people in single societies have in common to what divides them. It is now generally recognized that far from enjoying consensus, society is a field of conflict and domination.

The news of all this reached anthropology fairly late because of its traditional focus on small-scale, exotic cultures. But by the 1960s, we were running out of those, and anthropologists turned to studies of communities embedded in or influenced by large-scale nation-states. Scholars such as Eric Wolf and Sidney Mintz employed Immanuel Wallerstein's world-systems theory to demonstrate how even the smallest and most remote societies were affected by events taking place half a world away. The 1960s also produced a generation of anthropologists whose experience made it natural to extend Marx's ideas about the exploitation of one class by another to a much wider range of conflicts: between races, as in the civil rights movement; the repression of women and gays as addressed by feminism and sexuality studies; and the view that there could be an ideological counterculture within, and opposed to, a dominant culture.

Not content with just documenting internal diversity and conflict, many anthropologists have been moved by a moral imperative to take sides, making common cause with those who were being dominated and exploited. This is perhaps especially true of feminist anthropologists, for many of whom empowering the women with whom they work is at least as important as framing a social scientific analysis.

Even if weakened, however, relativism is far from dead, and the issues it poses remain critically important to doing anthropology and, indeed, to living in general. If the choice is between pure absolutism and pure relativism, neither one is acceptable. One recoils at the sheer hubris of claiming that one has the absolute truth about everything and that everyone with a different opinion is at best wrong and at worst downright stupid or depraved. But the potential libertinism and nihilism springing from the notion that any practice or any idea is as good as any other is scarcely a viable alternative. A more moderate view is methodological relativism. As depicted by Michael Brown and Elvin Hatch, this counsels withholding judgment about beliefs and practices until their full context is known. That does not give a blank check to all alien beliefs and practices, some of which may still be judged intolerable or irrational.

Methodological relativism is a promising approach, but saying only that much arms it with little more than a recommendation for tolerance and open-mindedness. It does not provide explicit justification for judging which practices in other cultures are tolerable and which are not, nor does it explain just what might be good reasons for rejecting some concepts and beliefs as false or irrational. Therefore, it is important to probe more deeply into how methodological relativism might address the ethical and epistemological problems that vex the whole idea of relativism.

Ethics

The basic issue posed by ethical relativism is this: If morality is grounded only in culture, is it necessary to approve or disapprove of behaviors in other societies on the basis of their own standards? Must we judge Aztec human sacrifice by Aztec standards and therefore conclude that it is morally justified? The issue is well posed by Richard Shweder, probably the most thoroughgoing ethical relativist in anthropology today. In a 2006 article, he tells the story of a "tough-minded" anthropologist who achieved such a degree of acceptance in the African community he was studying that the headman invited him to act as one of the three judges in a trial of a man accused of murder by witchcraft. The anthropologist accepted. By the local standards of what witches do and how they are identified, the evidence against the defendant was overwhelming. Although the anthropologist was uncomfortable and did not really believe that the death was caused by witchcraft, he concurred with the other two judges and voted for a verdict of guilty. Going beyond just evaluating the behavior in question by local standards, he also took an active role in applying those standards.

Presumably, Shweder has no problem with what the anthropologist did, for in an earlier article, he argued that one is under no moral obligation to refrain from this type of activity. If you lived in 19th-century China, for example, there would be no moral obligation to prevent you, if you could bring yourself to do it, from eating with chopsticks, binding your young daughter's feet, and wearing Chinese clothes. But what would happen if, after a period of some years in China, you returned to the United States? By the same reasoning, there would be no moral obligation to prevent you from replacing the chopsticks with knife and fork, unbinding your daughter's feet, and wearing Western clothes.

Most people from our culture would see no moral problem with the food and the clothes but would find the foot binding morally repugnant or

offensive. They would judge people who do not bind their daughter's feet before moving to China, bind them while living in China, and then unbind them on return to the United States as moral hypocrites who are doing their own daughter serious harm. Something similar might be said of an anthropologist, no matter how tough minded, who agrees to be a judge in a witchcraft trial and concurs in a guilty verdict when he does not believe in witchcraft.

Why does foot binding appear to Americans as immoral? Clearly, there is nothing in the practice itself that is intrinsically repugnant or offends universal moral principles, for millions of Chinese routinely engaged in it. Perhaps it is immoral by some absolute standard. It would then be necessary to identify the source of that absolute standard, and no candidate seems to be forthcoming other than God. If one is not prepared to concede that, the only remaining possibility is culture: the conventions that define proper and improper behavior in a human community.

If that is the case, however, why didn't 19th-century Americans routinely bind their daughters' feet when they would go to China, leaving the zone of American morality and entering that of the Chinese? Because moral codes are inscribed not in geography but in human beings. Moral persons do not cease observing the standards in which they have been enculturated simply by moving away.

The upshot of all this is captured by the simple proposition that understanding does not entail agreeing. It is entirely possible to know what the moral code of another culture is, to understand the relation between its principles and its practices, and, often, to appreciate it as a means of achieving a socially viable and individually fulfilling strategy for living. But that does not oblige one to agree with practices that one finds repugnant and offensive or with those that strike one as entirely benign, no matter how consistent with cultural presuppositions they may be. In many cases, one might refrain from evaluating behaviors in alien communities at all, but in some cases (Aztec human sacrifice, Chinese foot binding, Polynesian fostering of needy children), it is difficult not to make judgments, be they positive or negative. The crucial point is that such judgments are inevitably based on a moral code derived from one's own culture, often with modifications from personal associations and experience. After all, it cannot be *my* evaluation unless it is based on my standards.

This position is deeply disturbing to those who believe that the only reason to adhere to any moral standard is that it is absolute. The relativist would reply that there simply is no such absolute. Anything more than a cultural basis for morality is lacking. This does not mean that the moral standards held by each culture are unique. Many are widely shared among different cultures, and some may even be universal. But one thing it does mean is that people's commitment to their own moral standards is in no way weakened by the fact that they are rooted in culture rather than in the absolute. And another is that the methodological relativist defers evaluation of alien practices until careful study has been conducted to ascertain the meaning of the belief or behavior in the larger context of its moral code and culture in general. Often this process produces a very different conclusion from the ethnocentrist's rush to judgment.

Epistemology

Epistemological relativism has to do with truth and knowledge. It's necessary, then, to know what we mean by those terms. A statement is true if it is an accurate description of some state of affairs. "That's a pear tree" is true if it is in fact a pear tree and false if it is some other kind of tree or not a tree at all. Knowledge refers not to states of affairs themselves but to a person's relation to them. "She knows that's a pear tree" means she is in possession of true information about the tree.

The truth of propositions made in different cultural contexts and the knowledge of those who propose them depends on the theory of truth one applies. The correspondence theory holds that true propositions correspond to the actual state of affairs in the world and that we can know them only through direct observation. This means that there can be one and only one true statement about any particular state of affairs in the world. Proponents of this theory of truth typically insist that the best available method of observation is that of Western science. This view is often called positivism.

Another candidate is the coherence theory of truth. This holds that statements are true when they are logically entailed by some specified set of general presuppositions. Under the coherence theory, different sets of assumptions can generate different truths about the same state of affairs in the world. Thus, in

the context of one set of presuppositions, it is true that there are no witches, but it is also true in the context of another set that there are witches. This theory suits the pure version of relativism.

From the point of view of anthropologists interested in cross-cultural studies, neither of these theories of truth is satisfactory. The correspondence theory is highly ethnocentric. To apply it would amount to the dreary task of cataloguing the vast number of errors that have been made in most cultures throughout most of human history. The coherence theory does encourage understanding and appreciating alien beliefs and practices in their own cultural contexts, but it removes truth from any connection with external reality. A proposition is true because people say it is, with no need for further evidence. With no tether in the empirical world, different cultural epistemologies might be incompatible. In that event, if the very concept of understanding is radically different, there could be no meaningful communication between members of such cultures. They would live in different worlds. Among other things, this would render anthropology itself pointless. But this view is clearly absurd, because people from different cultures communicate with and understand each other all the time.

A way out of the dilemma is to recognize that both correspondence and coherence are single-contingency theories of truth. Truth in the correspondence theory rests on facts alone, while in the coherence theory, it depends exclusively on prior general assumptions. But truth is better understood as doubly contingent, resting on both the object of knowledge and the knowing subject. This perspective has a distinguished pedigree, beginning with Immanuel Kant's view that knowledge of the world consists of sense impressions as these are conditioned or ordered by certain a priori categories such as cause and effect. The a priori categories are not given in sensory experience but are products of the mind.

Kant assumed the a priori categories to be identical for all humans, but later philosophers such as C. I. Lewis argued that they were variable. As Arthur Danto summarized it in his 1968 book *Analytical Philosophy of Knowledge*, truth refers neither to the world alone nor to the prior assumptions that we have about the world. Rather, it concerns the *relation between* the world and those assumptions. If one recognizes that the assumptions are cultural in origin, it is possible to affirm that statements about the world made in the context of a body of culturally grounded assumptions may be true, while different statements made about the same element of reality in the context of other bodies of assumptions may also be true. Again, consider witchcraft. Certain objective events in the world—blighted crops, the illness of children, getting killed by a wild animal, or an accident—are understood by people on the basis of certain cultural assumptions. The objective events are the same, but they are interpreted according to different assumptions. On the basis of one set of assumptions, it is true that the cause of the event is witchcraft, while on the basis of another set of assumptions, that conclusion is false.

This way of construing things gets one away from the narrowness of the correspondence theory of truth. But what of the corollary of the coherence theory that reality does not exist independently but only in what people think about it? That too is avoided because the theory of truth discussed here is doubly contingent, concerned with the relation between the world and how people think about the world. Events in the world—snow, the phases of the moon, an uttered prayer, a scientific paper, or a philosophical treatise—are what they are regardless of what anyone may think about them. They are objects of knowledge available for public inspection. But the knowledge people acquire of them—that is, their interpretations—depends also on their prior assumptions. As an analogy, humans, flies, and octopi have differently structured eyes. They look at the same thing, but what they see is radically different. Those differences have nothing to do with the viewed object and everything to do with the optical apparatus.

This does not mean that the anthropologist is bound to affirm that every statement about the world is true simply because someone says it is. We do not extend this luxury to others in our own society, and we do not owe it to members of other societies. Every cultural mode of discourse has its criteria for determining if a statement is true or false. These criteria vary from one mode to another, and therefore, what makes a statement true or false also varies between them. Assessing the truth of a statement amounts to our own determination as to whether the criteria of that mode of discourse have been correctly applied to the relevant facts. To make such assessments, within one's own culture or mode of discourse or with reference to any other, requires a clear understanding of the assumptions that prevail

and the criteria for determining truth and falsity in that setting. That one can do this successfully is strong evidence that ways of knowing in that culture have been accurately understood. Achieving such understanding is the ultimate goal of methodological relativism and the anthropologists who practice it.

F. Allan Hanson

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Herskovits, Melville; Human Universals; Mintz, Sidney; Postmodernism; Wallerstein, Immanuel; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Benedict, R. (1934). *Patterns of culture*. Boston, MA: Houghton Mifflin.

Brown, M. F. (2008). Cultural relativism 2.0. *Current Anthropology, 40*(3), 363–383.

Gairdner, W. D. (2008). *The book of absolutes: A critique of relativism and a defence of universals*. Montreal, Quebec, Canada: McGill-Queen's University Press.

Hanson, F. A. (1975). *Meaning in culture*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Hatch, E. (1983). *Culture and morality: The relativity of values in anthropology*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Herskovits, M. (1972). *Cultural relativism: Perspectives in cultural pluralism*. New York, NY: Random House.

John Paul II (Pope). (1998). *Fides et ratio* [Faith and reason; Encyclical]. Vatican City: Libreria Editrice Vaticana.

Perusek, D. (2007). Grounding cultural relativism. *Anthropological Quarterly, 80,* 821–836.

Renteln, A. D. (1988). Relativism and the search for human rights. *American Anthropologist, 90,* 56–72.

Shweder, R. A. (2006). John Searle on a witch hunt: A commentary on John R. Searle's essay "Social Ontology: Some Basic Principles." *Anthropological Theory, 6*(1), 89–111.

Ulin, R. C. (2007). Revisiting cultural relativism: Old prospects for a new cultural critique. *Anthropological Quarterly, 80,* 803–820.

Wilson, R. A. (1997). *Human rights, culture and context: Anthropological perspectives*. London, UK: Pluto Press.

Cultural Transmission

Cultural transmission is a broad term meaning not only the passing of cultural information from one generation to the next but also our conveying it to one another within a generation. It is what allows the perpetuation of culture over time, such that the French traveler Alexis de Tocqueville's insights into American culture remain startlingly apt today, though he visited during the first half of the 19th century. We will first have to untangle whether this term refers to a unitary process, as in electrical transmission, or whether it is fundamentally more complex. In this essay, we consider cultural transmission through the prism of a simple question: Are the new mass media subverting cultural transmission in ways we should worry about?

When Grandparents Were Wise

Grandparents used to be the go-to people in times of trouble, the respected sources of valuable, practical knowledge. For most of human history, parents could reasonably assume that their children would want to be like them, or at least like some other members of the local community. Change did happen: Wars and plagues and famines at times made for major dislocation, but in general, the pace of social cultural change was sedate. For most of the 20th century, anthropologists studying the cultures of the smaller scale societies of the world took continuity to be the norm. Often ignoring current events, they would write in what was termed the *ethnographic present*, the present tense suggesting an unchanging timelessness. Anthropologists today are very much aware of the rapid cultural change to which we are all witnesses, and so they no longer do this. Indeed, nowadays it is more often the change than the continuity that we take for granted.

Our contemporary stereotype is of the young teaching their seniors how to navigate a world of new media, new music, and new vocabulary. Ours, after all, is a time of worldwide movement from rural to urban areas, a period in which languages spoken by small populations are frequently in danger of extinction, an age in which technological innovation is rapid and training to earn a livelihood is almost always sought outside the home. But if parents are now learning from their children rather than the other way around, does this mean that the long chain of cultural transmission from parents to children has been broken?

Are the Mass Media Subverting Cultural Transmission?

Cultural transmission requires learning from members of our own community, especially from those

older than ourselves. Travelers and immigrants have always been agents of change from whom the young could learn new ideas, new ways of doing things, and perhaps even new languages. Relationships with these strangers have also, however, always been much less common than relationships with those we live our lives alongside. This probably remains true even today, when modern transportation makes such contact more common. But the influence of actual people entering our communities is probably very small compared with the impact of the mass media and, increasingly, the new, electronic interactive media.

We tend to learn primarily from those with whom we have social relationships. The mass media create a special form of relationship: *parasocial* or one-way relationships. We often think of the figure on the screen as a friend, a rival, a mentor, or a sex object. We exchange gossip about celebrities much as we do about relatives and people with whom we work. We may even gossip about and follow the lives of entirely fictional characters, such as those whom we meet in drama series or soap operas. Whether these individuals are corporeal or not, our relationships with them are parasocial because we know everything about them and they, even when we follow them on Twitter, know nothing about us. We can learn from these people just as we would from those we meet face-to-face, and they may serve as our role models or as sources of new ideas, values, styles, or goals. Justin Bieber or James Bond, Madonna or Wonder Woman, Kanye West or Conan, for example, are alternatives that may profoundly influence our behavior and aspirations. Thus, it is that talented and ambitious people from Kansas to Kazakhstan write rap songs and dream of achieving fame and wealth by becoming celebrities as professional entertainers, that is, "stars." That their parents may be farmers or goat herders or factory workers may seem irrelevant to them. Media and Internet celebrities can displace not just parents but also influential locals as sources of cultural information. Should we fear this process breaking the chain of cultural transmission, because learning from media figures may replace learning from our own elders? The current state of theory and research on cultural transmission leaves this argument more a possibility, illustrated by plausible examples, than a well-established phenomenon solidly supported by research findings.

Can We Theorize Change Without Theorizing Continuity?

The very rapid pace of contemporary cultural change challenges older social science theories. A major problem is that while some theories seek to explain cultural continuity, others focus on change: Few have dealt with both. The theories of social cultural change most frequently met with emphasize technology as the driver, as in the case of ideas of the influential sociologist William F. Ogburn. Ogburn, however, had little interest in societies in which cultural change is slow. Those who are interested in the apparently slow (or no) cultural change case tend to invoke the vague processes of "enculturation" and "socialization" to account for cultural continuity. These labels have been used in the past (and continue to be used) by thinkers who implicitly assume that cultural transmission ordinarily is unproblematic, except for those aspects of culture that are expressly taught to the child by parents or others. While some anthropologists associated with the fields of psychological anthropology and culture and personality, such as Robert A. LeVine, Margaret Mead, Abram Kardiner, and Ruth and Robert Munroe, have indeed paid attention to the socialization process, their emphasis has been on how psychological traits, personality traits, and values, in particular, are stable from generation to generation. They have not been primarily interested in the transmission of the information pool of which a culture is composed. Current theorists of cultural transmission believe that no theory that fails to encompass both change and continuity can be complete: A single theory that encompasses both is needed.

Gene-Culture Coevolution Theory: Transmission Theorists

An important present-day approach to cultural transmission is represented by the *gene-culture coevolution*, or "dual inheritance," school of thought. This approach involves the construction of mathematical models that simultaneously track both genetic and cultural transmission. All models are meant to be simplified representations of more complex realities, and in cultural transmission models, it is human cognition and social learning that are stripped down. For example, the effect of the choices of others on our own decisions becomes a "frequency-dependent" mathematical bias, and the

influence of the relative standing of a possible role model becomes a "prestige bias." The mathematical models generally do not specify what kind of information is being transmitted or by whom; nevertheless, it is likely that these issues are of considerable importance. Except for physical objects, a culture can usefully be thought of as a pool of information, and cultural transmission, therefore, requires the acquisition of informational items from others. The types of information are myriad. Presumably, different kinds of information are acquired through different cognitive processes: It is doubtful that we learn religious values, language, cooking skills, etiquette, or subsistence techniques all in the same way. Quite possibly, different domains of knowledge are learned in different ways, ways that may alter throughout the lifespan. Young children do not learn languages in the way adults do, and the acquisition of core values and the process of moral development have their own trajectory. There may also be both gender and cultural differences in the various culture acquisition processes. That is, part of a culture's information pool may involve rules for who should be learning which information items from whom. Thus, a mathematical model of cultural transmission raises the question of what informational domains the model is relevant to, and to which ages, genders, and cultural groups. An additional complication arises from the fact that a participant in a culture is always a member of a society, and different social classes and other societal segments may have differential exposure to the informational components of the culture. Some groups are deliberately resistant to borrowing practices and values from neighboring cultures (e.g., the Amish). Dual-inheritance theorists are mindful of these challenges, and perhaps we will eventually see different models for different informational domains and social structures.

In the meantime, there is no need to wait for transmission theorists to develop better mathematical models. One of their most powerful ideas—that of the *prestige bias*—both antecedes their mathematical models and lends potential insight into entirely verbal theories of cultural transmission.

Michael Chance's Argument That Primates Preferentially Learn From the High in Rank

It was the ethologist and primatologist Michael Chance and his collaborators who first observed that primates (both human and nonhuman) learn preferentially from those to whom they pay attention and that they pay attention to those who are high in relative standing. Chance believed that there were two modes of attention to the high in status, each associated with a different kind of learning. Agonistic attention is fear-based attention and is associated with constricted learning, as in rote memory. Hedonic attention is a relaxed mode in which a broad range of learning is possible. Though Chance presented his two modes as distinct, it is more likely that they represent the end points of a continuum. The "prestige bias" of the transmission theorists is in effect a simplified version of Chance's approach in that it lacks the agonistic component. Chance's theory may help us understand much of human behavior, including our tendency to pay scant attention to those less fortunate than ourselves, while being captivated by the activities of those with wealth, power, or celebrity. It is also compatible with the anthropological inference that pride in one's own culture, as with the Tewa or the Amish, appears to confer resistance to acculturation (borrowing from the cultures of neighboring peoples). Presumably, resistant societies are those in which young people in each generation are convinced that prominent members of their own community are more worthy of respect than are outsiders. In the present context, his ideas may help us understand why the mass media are associated with apparent discontinuities in cultural transmission.

How the Mass Media May Be Debasing the Coin of Local Prestige

Earlier, we discussed how, everywhere, people often seem to be learning from media figures rather than from those in their own communities or even in their own families. Chance explains how we learn preferentially from those to whom we pay attention, the high in status in particular. In a world of modern media, who has more prestige, the local business success or the international billionaire? Who gains more attention, the high school athlete or the Olympic gold medal winner? Who is more attractive, your parents or Hollywood and Bollywood celebrities? Who is more frightening, an anthropology professor or Count Dracula? The apparent prestige, power, attractiveness, and even fearsomeness of local figures are devalued by those presented to us by the media and with whom we form parasocial relationships. But it is the local figures who participate

in our local culture: If we learn from media figures rather than from those actually around us, then we may learn the almost random informational items associated with these individuals, at the expense of the cultural information of our grandparents. This may be why a young person may wish to seek an identity totally unfamiliar to an older generation by becoming a rap singer or a warlord rather than, say, a respected farmer or factory worker or clan elder: The coins of status and attention have been debased. Worse, by paying attention to local figures, we can learn the cultural steps toward achieving their success, but when we emulate media figures, we do not know how to get there, and we may therefore experience frustration or perhaps even resort to violence. Economics further complicates the picture because many (though perhaps not all) cultures give prestige to the wealthy, and the media figures have more apparent wealth than local figures. In some cases, however, attention to media figures may lead young people to forsake economic pursuits in order to join social, political, or religious movements. This reasoning is no doubt more applicable to some cultural informational domains and age-groups than to others, and it omits the effects of direct tuition in, for example, both secular and religious schools (e.g., madrassas). Nevertheless, debasement of the coin of local prestige and attention is likely to be playing at least some role in the current rapidity of cultural change.

Cultural Transmission Requires a Multilevel Approach

If the term *cultural transmission* were not so well established, there would be a good argument for discarding it. Our understanding of the transmission of electricity is quite complete, and even the complex operations of genetic transmission are well known. In contrast, cultural "transmission" may be more of a metaphor than a clearly analyzed process: By using the term, we risk bringing along an undeserved connotational aura of comprehension. It has been suggested that the terms *cultural acquisition* and *editing* are better tropes than the transmission metaphor because they carry less baggage.

No one type of analysis or even academic discipline will ever account for the complexities of cultural transmission. Different models may be needed for different kinds of information and also for people of different ages and genders. As in the case of the Amish, it is likely that there are cultural differences in readiness to accept new knowledge (or at least role models). Economic circumstances and social disorganization no doubt influence an individual's readiness to forsake the older practices, values, and religion. Planned communities, totalitarian societies, and deliberate religious and ideological proselytizing all involve purposeful attempts to control cultural transmission. But marked cultural continuities may be present even in areas of great social disruption. Language, dress, food, music, religion, kinship systems, and values can be remarkably persistent. For the social and behavioral scientist, multilevel accounts of cultural transmission are clearly necessary: Sociological, economic, technological, and environmental factors all impinge on the individual, affecting the cognitive processes involved in acquiring and editing cultural information. While we are far from fully understanding the various processes of cultural transmission, much interdisciplinary research and collaboration is in progress.

Jerome H. Barkow, Rick O'Gorman, and Luke Rendell

Authors' note: This work was sponsored by the Air Force Office of Scientific Research, Air Force Material Command, USAF, under grant numbers FA8655-10-1-3012 and FA8655-09-1-5067. The U.S. government is authorized to reproduce and distribute reprints for governmental purposes, notwithstanding any copyright notation thereon. During the preparation of this article, Barkow was visiting professor at the Department of OTANES, University of South Africa. Barkow thanks Peter M. Hejl for his contribution to the development of the core ideas that ultimately led to this article.

See also Culture and Personality; Gene-Culture Coevolution; Kardiner, Abram; Psychological Anthropology

Further Readings

Barkow, J. H. (1989). *Darwin, sex, and status: Biological approaches to mind and culture*. Toronto, Ontario, Canada: University of Toronto Press.

Barkow, J. H., O'Gorman, R., & Rendell, L. (2012). Are the new mass media subverting cultural transmission? *Review of General Psychology, 16*(2), 121–133. doi:10.1037/a0027907

Boyd, R., & Richerson, P. J. (1985). *Culture and the evolutionary process*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Chance, M. R. A., & Larsen, R. R. (Eds.). (1976). *The social structure of attention.* London: Wiley.
Ogburn, W. F. (1964). *Culture and social change: Selected papers.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Richerson, P. J., & Boyd, R. (2005). *Not by genes alone: How culture transformed human evolution.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Tocqueville, A. de, Crăiutu, A., & Jennings, J. (2009). *Tocqueville on America after 1840: Letters and other writings.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Culture and Personality

"Culture and personality" was a movement within American anthropology that sought to understand the relationship of individuals to culture. The culture and personality movement broadly spanned the first half of the 20th century and had a lasting impact on subsequent developments in cultural anthropology. This was not an organized movement with leaders, central theoretical propositions, and scholarly training institutions. This entry describes the basic ideas involved in the culture and personality approach to anthropology, discusses the impetus for its emergence, highlights key scholarly developments within the field, presents the standard criticisms of the approach, and outlines the impact of the movement on subsequent developments in anthropology.

Culture and personality scholars hold that the institutions, meanings, values, and practices of a culture are learned by individuals, which then come to shape the way in which such individuals perceive the world. In turn, persons thus socialized produce particular cultural practices, including religious and ritual practices, art, theories, and institutions that bear the imprint of their upbringing in a specific culture. Similar to how it had been claimed that language structures individuals' understanding of their world (the Sapir-Whorf hypothesis), it was argued that early infant and child socialization provided a template for individual behaviors, personal agency, social practices, science, and religion. Scholars who are now grouped together under the rubric of "culture and personality" were interested in developing a set of claims linking the individual to society. They believed that "cultural patterns" undergird all adult behavior in society and that practices related to infant care and child socialization were included in these cultural patterns, ensuring the transmission of the unconscious and conscious aspects of culture to the next generation.

Culture and personality studies emphasized culture as a system of beliefs, ideas, behaviors, practices, values, and material artifacts that are related to each other. Culture is patterned, as opposed to being a collection of unrelated separate elements; elements are linked in relationships with each other to form a gestalt: a whole. The set of symbols, meanings, and practices in a given culture are consistent—they form an integrated set. So, for example, an early culture and personality scholar, Ruth Benedict, argued that beliefs and practices pertaining to gardening among the Dobuan Islanders displayed the same paranoid *ethos* (emotional style) as practices surrounding marriage. Ideas about whether or not divinity is approachable and merciful may be related to cultural expectations regarding human authority. Patterns of behavior forced on infants and children (e.g., rigid infant feeding schedules or swaddling) may be correlated with patterned behaviors among adults.

Development of Culture and Personality

The group of scholars associated with culture and personality were among the first Americans to regard themselves as anthropologists by discipline—namely, Edward Sapir, Ruth Benedict, Margaret Mead, and A. Irving Hallowell. The first three scholars (Sapir, Benedict, and Mead) were students of Franz Boas at Columbia University. Boas emphasized careful, lengthy fieldwork in the society under investigation, the development of relationships with informants in the field, and a process of rigorous collection of ethnographic data, which set the professional standards for subsequent anthropological work. Boas also vigorously argued against the racism of the anthropological work of his day. At the time he was trained, all societies were thought to exist on a continuum from savage to civilized. The job of the anthropologist was to specify where on the continuum the culture in question fell. Boas, instead, argued that the histories of societies were not a universal narrative of progress toward Western democracy and industrialization. He laid the groundwork for the cultural relativism of his students. In addition to Boas, other crucial influences on the development of culture and personality included psychoanalysis, especially

the work of Sigmund Freud and Carl Gustav Jung on the relation of the individual to society, and the work of Bronisław Malinowski, the British-trained Polish New Guineaist, whose ethnographic monograph *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* involved understanding the motivation, emotional conflicts, and values of his Melanesian interlocutors.

Key Scholarly Contributions

Cultural Holism

Sapir's work on language, spanning the early 1920s to the late 1940s, developed the argument that the categories and concepts implicit in language determine the kinds of concepts that speakers hold. Speakers internalize a language, which then shapes the kinds of thoughts they may have. Likewise with culture, argued Benedict. Benedict's most influential book on the emerging discipline of anthropology, *Patterns of Culture*, published in 1934, made two related arguments. First, culture is internally coherent, meaning that all aspects of life—moral values, beliefs, kinship, practices related to work, political structures—are related. The only way to understand religious beliefs, for example, is against the background of other, more mundane practices and values of the society. Second, Benedict argued that culture functions like a personality; culture produces behavior, values, and ideas that bear its particular cultural stamp.

Mead's contribution to the field was to be the first by an anthropologist to investigate how culturally specific parenting and socialization practices in infancy and childhood relate to the development of adult personalities, practices, motivations, and values. Mead's most well-known book, *Coming of Age in Samoa*, published first in 1928, was based on her investigation of the impact of cultural patterns of child socialization on adolescent and adult development among rural Samoans subsisting through fishing and gardening, who had yet to be successfully converted to Christianity. The book described the characteristics of Samoan child rearing, including the practice of having elder siblings care for younger children and preferences for avoiding strong expressions of affect. She persuasively argued that child socialization practices related to attachment and affect were related to the absence of adolescent angst and crisis in Samoan society. Her main contribution to culture and personality was to posit that what children learn unconsciously and nonverbally from their caretakers distinctively shapes their adult behavior and preferences.

Child Socialization and Personality

In the 1930s and 1940s, scholars associated with the culture and personality movement, namely Abram Kardiner, Ralph Linton, Cora DuBois, and, subsequently, John W. M. Whiting, became interested in demonstrating causality between infant and child-rearing practices and the development of adult personality. Kardiner developed the concept of the basic personality structure (BPS), which he postulated as representative of most, if not all, individuals of a culture. Primary institutions, defined as the practices and ideas related to child rearing (e.g., nursing habits, ideas about authority and discipline, expectations for sibling relationships, etc.), determined adult personality. Adult personality, in turn, determined the types of secondary institutions present in the culture, such as beliefs about divinity, spirits, sin, taboos, moral transgressions, law, politics, exchange, and ideas about personal deportment and conduct.

Subsequent modifications to, and developments of, Kardiner's schema sought to eliminate some of the circularity of the argument (i.e., primary institutions lead to the formation of secondary institutions mediated by BPS) and the arbitrariness of the distinction between primary and secondary cultural institutions. Whiting, working in the 1950s, proposed distinguishing "maintenance systems," such as political and economic systems, and also environmental and geographical factors, such as temperature, soil quality, and vegetation, from child socialization practices. Whiting argued that temperature, for example, might affect infant-parent sleeping practices, which then will have an influence on adult personality. What is significant about both Kardiner and Whiting's contributions to culture and personality studies is that they sought to operationalize and empirically test the central tenets of the culture and personality approach that link child-rearing practices to adult behavior and personality.

DuBois's 1944 *The People of Alor* put forth the concept of the modal personality, a modification of Kardiner's BPS. DuBois's fieldwork in the Dutch East Indies (now Indonesia) among the Alorese involved careful collection of biographies from eight

key informants and projective psychological test data, most notably the Rorschach. DuBois's work represented the demand for empirical rigor within anthropology; she presented ample psychological test data, recorded dreams, and autobiographical accounts for each individual described in her book. The plentiful material she had available made it clear to her that she could not defend the concept of a BPS underlying each Alor case. Instead, DuBois argued that there is a type of Alor personality that is the "most frequent" type (modal), yet this "modal" type may not represent the majority of Alorese personalities.

National Character Studies

The beginning of World War II enlisted anthropologists in preparing research for government policy purposes and for the purpose of morale building among Americans. Ruth Benedict, Margaret Mead, Geoffrey Gorer, Gregory Bateson, Erich Fromm, Walter C. Langer, and others produced monographs and articles arguing that members of nations (Nazi Germany, interwar Japan, Britain, and the United States were the nations of interest) have particular psychological and emotional styles in common with their fellow citizens. Benedict's 1946 *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword*, a study of Japanese culture as reported to her by Japanese Americans, is representative of the genre of national character studies. Benedict and others were struck by the behavior of Japanese prisoners of war, who appeared to eagerly change allegiance from Japan to the United States and who had little interest, once captured, in communicating with their families and communities. Benedict's work sought to explain how these phenomena were related and the logics, ethics, and commitments that underlay these astonishing (from the U.S. perspective) behaviors. With *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword*, Benedict began enduring conversations within anthropology of shame versus guilt cultures, situational versus absolute ethics, and collective versus individualistic societies.

Criticism

A primary criticism of work emerging from the Culture-and-Personality school was that not all individuals who identify as participating in a particular nation, culture, or society exhibit the psycho-emotional style that the theorists associated with it. Members of the movement themselves recognized and accounted for this. For example, Benedict argued that for reasons of temperament or idiosyncratic personal history, some individuals will exhibit personality characteristics that are not suited to unproblematic existence in their society. She suggested that these individuals will constitute a subset of individuals with mental disorders in the culture.

Another issue had to do with the difficulty in empirically demonstrating the link between culture and personality. Beginning in the late 1940s and into the 1970s, much effort went into quantitatively demonstrating culture and personality theories, such as the integration of social institutions and personality variables. Other problems with work emerging from the culture and personality movement had to do with the extent to which some monographs could be read as pathologizing the society under investigation.

Some of the less rigorous and careful work spawned by the culture and personality movement ignored important circumstances and events that had a far-reaching impact on the society under study, such as poverty, war, famine, colonialism, and forms of inequality. Such work was rightly criticized as focusing on practices related to child rearing, kinship, religion, and ritual while remaining blind to the tremendous impact of macrolevel events and structures on life within the society under study. Hence, a widespread criticism of culture and personality scholarship is that it is insensitive to the larger sociopolitical and economic influences on society.

Impact on the Discipline

The culture and personality movement was formed in reaction to the racist implications of American evolutionary anthropology of the early 20th century, which sought to position all cultures on a continuum, with Western societies representing the pinnacle of achievement. As such, its practitioners inaugurated an era of cultural relativism in anthropology, which has made a lasting impact on the practice of the discipline. Fieldwork methods, under the tutelage of scholars such as Boas and, later, Kardiner and Whiting, were elaborated and expanded to include long periods of fieldwork on site, intense and prolonged communication with research subjects, reflexive attention to the impact

of the ethnographer on the anthropological project, and rigorous qualitative and quantitative methodologies. Contemporary anthropologists interested in psychological phenomena refer to themselves as psychological anthropologists, to distinguish themselves from the culture and personality movement. However, contemporary anthropological works dealing with moral values, aspirations, psychiatry, human behavior, emotion, and mental health and mental illness are heir to the precedents set by the culture and personality movement.

Jocelyn Marrow

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Kardiner, Abram; Mead, Margaret; Psychological Anthropology; Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism

Further Readings

Benedict, R. (2005). *Patterns of culture*. New York, NY: Houghton Mifflin. (Original work published 1934)

Bock, P. K. (1999). *Rethinking psychological anthropology: Continuity and change in the study of human action*. Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.

DuBois, C. A. (1960). *The people of Alor: A social-psychological study of an East Indian Island*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. (Original work published 1944)

LeVine, R. A., (Ed.). (2010). *Psychological anthropology: A reader on self in culture*. Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.

Mead, M. (2001). *Coming of age in Samoa: A psychological study of primitive youth for Western civilization*. New York, NY: First Perennial Classics. (Original work published 1928)

Stocking, G. W. (Ed.). (1986). *Malinowski, Rivers, Benedict and others: Essays on culture and personality*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

———. (Ed.). (2003). *American anthropology, 1921–1945: Papers from the American anthropologist*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Culture Area Approach

A culture area is defined as a more or less contiguous ethnogeographic area inhabited by peoples who share cultural traits to an extent that distinguish them significantly from other societies. Some scholars distinguish a culture area by mapping the distribution of a single cultural trait, whereas others group societies together into more complex clusters sharing a number of cultural traits. The concept was developed in the early 20th century, with particular reference to Native American peoples. Although often criticized, the culture area approach is still frequently used in the comparative study of cultures.

Early Steps Toward Conceptualizing Culture Areas

The idea of distinguishing regions according to how people live in different environments is perhaps as old as humankind itself. It can, at least, be traced to the philosophers of antiquity, who described the "barbarians" of western Europe as different from the Greeks and Romans. However, as an anthropological concept, *culture area* has to be understood against the background of the rise of anthropology in the 19th century.

Many archaeologists and social scientists during the 19th century had the goal of grouping local societies into higher units of classification, applying the typological perspectives of Linnaean taxonomy—that is, every society more or less perfectly exemplified an essence, a certain "type." A tenacious Linnaean legacy was to apply the typological concept in mapping the world according to "race." Whereas the Swedish naturalist Carl Linnaeus (1707–1778) had classified all human "varieties" (he never used the word *race*) as belonging to the same species, it was also evident that they originally occurred in different regions of the world. In the first edition of his *Systema Naturae* (Systematic Nature, 1735), he listed four human varieties, each representing the then known continents: *Europaeus*, *Americanus*, *Asiaticus*, and *Africanus*.

Throughout the 18th century and well into the 20th, the concepts of *race* and *culture* were intertwined. For example, in 1832, the French explorer Dumont d'Urville (1790–1840) proposed that the Pacific Islands, or Oceania, consisted of three major areas: *Polynesia* ("many islands"), *Melanesia* ("black islands"), and *Micronesia* ("small islands"). At the beginning, these terms had more to do with racial characteristics and geographical proximity than with culture, but they have often come to refer to culture areas, even though each one of them (especially Melanesia) is quite diverse culturally and at the same time has a lot in common with the others.

An important step to apply the typological concept within cultural analysis was taken by a Danish archaeologist, Christian Jürgensen Thomsen (1788–1865), who in 1818 introduced the terms *Stone Age*, *Bronze Age*, and *Iron Age* for prehistoric Nordic material, thereby connecting typology, time, and geographic area. His chronology was soon used by other scholars for linking cultures not with reference to cultural borrowing or common origins but to the stage of technological development.

It was, however, not until the typological cultural/racial concept and perceived laws of cultural evolution merged with geography that further steps were taken toward the culture area approach.

After Darwin published *On the Origin of Species* in 1859, the typological concept was coupled with an aim to define general laws of cultural evolution as parallel to those of organic evolution. All societies, or cultures, it was often argued, would eventually go through the same evolutionary transformation, following a general pattern from simple to more advanced levels.

In Germany, the geographer and anthropologist Friedrich Ratzel (1844–1904) founded an anthropogeographical school, where he elaborated his ideas about human migration, cultural borrowing, and the relationship between humans and their physical environments. He is perhaps most of all remembered for coining the concept *Lebensraum*, or "living space," which was used for relating groups of people to their spatial units.

Ratzel argued that people were strongly attached to their traditions and were only seldom able to invent something radically new. Similarities were therefore the result not of a more or less determined development but of cultural contact and borrowing. His fellow countryman Adolf Bastian (1826–1905) became the most influential proponent of the German-Austrian so-called *Kulturkreise* ("cultural circle") school, a continental European version of the diffusionist school, by attempting to reconstruct how cultural traits had spread from a limited number of cultural clusters.

A *Kulturkreise* was not necessarily a geographically contiguous cultural area, because migration and other prehistoric processes could have separated groups of people. The Central African Pygmies, the Andaman Islanders, the Semang and Senoi of Malacca, the Negritos in the Philippines, and the Vedda of Sri Lanka were dispersed over a large, noncontiguous area but nevertheless exemplified the "exogamous, monogamous *Kulturkreise*."

Ahistoric and Historic Culture Area Approaches

By the end of the 19th century, anthropologists had increasingly come to realize that there was a need for a historical approach to explain why certain ideas associated with cultural development—for example, the wheel, metallurgy, or monotheism—were distributed unevenly in time and space. Biologists had shown that species that were not closely related but were separated by time or space could develop similar adaptations under similar environmental conditions. The implication of this for cultural studies was that the notion of a general, linear evolutionary pattern was no longer tenable.

So far, evolutionary approaches to cultural similarities and differences had been both ethnocentric and ahistoric. In the 1880s, however, Otis T. Mason (1838–1908), at the Smithsonian Institution (who was probably the first one to use the term *culture area*), argued that a new taxonomic approach was needed that would make it possible to ascertain, without any reference to the environment and culture at large, whether a certain cultural trait had spread through processes of diffusion or originated independently. According to him, cultures evolved stepwise, and technology was a marker of a culture's stage of development. For this, he was strongly criticized by Franz Boas (1858–1942), who held the view that cultures should be described, not ranked or seen as exemplifying a stage in an evolution. They were all products of particular historic events, hence the term *historic particularism*.

At this time, Boas and his students, as well as other scholars working in North America, had already collected a lot of data about what they perceived as disappearing native cultures. Obviously, a theoretical framework was needed for the information assembled.

Boas's former assistant at the American Museum of Natural History, Clark Wissler (1870–1947), a specialist on Native American cultures of the Plains, took the stance that the emphasis on culture as something unique to a society was ascientific and did not help researchers uncover more general principles, or "laws." One had to define *culture* so that the term could be used comparatively, thereby

ensuring anthropology its rightful place among the sciences. He also found *culture area* to be a useful concept and redefined it to use it analytically. It was not to be understood simply as an area inhabited by a certain "race" that exemplified a stage in evolution but as a well-defined geographical area within which one found cultures that shared many features.

By focusing on environment, resources, population size, and other variables through which culture was conditioned, systematic comparisons could now be made. He also applied statistics—more precisely, the Pearson correlation coefficient formula—for testing the correlation of certain artifacts with specific sites.

In *The American Indian* (1917), Wissler based his description of Native American culture areas on 13 major categories, from food and domesticated animals to arts, social organization, mythology, language, and even physiology. In North America, he distinguished 7 culture areas: (1) woodsmen of the east, (2) hunters of the plains, (3) Navaho shepherds, (4) Pueblo farmers, (5) desert dwellers, (6) seed gatherers, and (7) northern fishermen. Altogether, there were 15 culture areas throughout the Americas.

The question of how culture traits spread and why certain ones were more likely than others to do so fascinated Wissler. He concluded that novel ideas were quite likely to spread to groups that had the same "culture pattern" and were less likely to be adopted by people who were more different in cultural respects. Barriers were not only cultural, however, because environmental factors could also be of crucial importance. Bison hunters and salmon fishers were, for example, inhabiting the bordering areas, but the Rocky Mountains were a barrier to the animals on which their subsistence was based.

A major problem in culture area studies was the difficulty in dating archaeological material and ascertaining the age of a certain element of the material culture. Wissler suggested an approach that became known as the "age-area hypothesis." Since innovations were historically particular and had a potential to radiate in all directions from their point of origin, those that had the widest distribution were most likely the oldest. If that was true, one could argue, for instance, that a Coca-Cola bottle must be one of the world's oldest artifacts. Consequently, Wissler's age-area hypothesis was taken as a logical fallacy and never gained high popularity among scholars. However, even Boas promoted the culture area approach, not the least, perhaps, because he was an authority on the Northwest coast, which remains one of the most classic examples in anthropology of a culture area.

Later Development of the Culture Area Approach

By the 1930s, American anthropology—including archaeology—was relying heavily on the culture area approach. Alfred L. Kroeber (1876–1960), a prominent disciple of Boas, now developed Wissler's culture area approach further. As Wissler had previously noted, two problems were involved in the culture area concept: one was ecological, and the other was about how the people in question functioned in the area.

Kroeber stressed the importance of understanding the ecological correlates and technologies of culture areas along a time axis, an important step toward a human ecological paradigm. The culture area approach was also taken up within other disciplines, most notably perhaps by the geographer Carl Sauer (1889–1975).

Together with their students, several of whom became influential, Kroeber and Sauer continued for many years to apply the concept of culture area to the ever-growing body of ethnographic and archaeological data worldwide. Julian Steward (1902–1972), for example, at one time a student of Kroeber's, edited the volumes of *Handbook of South American Indians* (1940–1947) systematically along the lines of the culture area approach.

Subsequent anthropologists have, however, often criticized the culture area approach for its tendency to portray people in a static and environmentally deterministic way and for being ethnocentric and founded on an essentialist conception of culture. Another point of critique has been that scholars who apply a culture area approach have not only ignored factors such as human creativity and local variation but also been so selective about which and how many traits they focus on (sometimes only one) that the classification has become entirely arbitrary. Contesting its essentialism, recent research in Amazonia suggests that ethnolinguistic identities and boundaries there have been continuously generated and transformed by shifting conditional factors, including economic specialization, trade routes, warfare, political alliances, and demography.

Despite such criticism, however, *culture area* has proven to be a practical concept that is almost as useful in ordering ethnographic variation as the Linnaean system in ordering organisms. It is often used in museum exhibitions, in systematic geography, for setting themes at conferences, and for discussing relationships between neighbor societies. Whereas the concept tends to divide anthropologists theoretically, it may thus also unite them for practical reasons.

Thomas Malm

See also Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Historical Particularism; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Race

Further Readings

Buckley, T. (1988). Kroeber's theory of culture areas and the ethnology of northwestern California. *Anthropological Quarterly, 61,* 15–26.

Hornborg, A., & Hill, J. (Eds.). (2011). *Ethnicity in ancient Amazonia: Reconstructing past identities from archaeology, linguistics, and ethnohistory.* Boulder: University Press of Colorado.

Kroeber, A. L. (1939). *Cultural and natural areas of native North America.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Murphy, A. B., Jordan-Bychov, T. G., & Jordan, B. B. (2008). *The European culture area: A systematic geography* (5th ed.). Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield.

Sauer, C. O. (1952). *Agricultural origins and dispersals.* New York, NY: American Geographical Society.

Thomas, N. (1989). The force of ethnology: Origins and significance of the Melanesia/Polynesia division. *Current Anthropology, 30,* 211–213.

Wissler, C. (1927). The culture-area approach in social anthropology. *American Journal of Sociology, 32,* 881–891.

D

Darwin, Charles

Charles Robert Darwin (1809–1882), the British naturalist, is the founder of modern evolutionary biology theory. His influence is not limited to biological anthropology; anthropologists in areas such as cognitive anthropology and evolutionary psychology also find inspiration in his work. The notion of a naturalistic explanation for the origin of all species, including humans, and the clarity and depth of his presentation transformed our view of ourselves and continue to provide the basis of modern studies of human evolution.

Biography and Major Works

Early Years and Education

Darwin was born in Shrewsbury, England, on February 12, 1809, into a wealthy and influential family. His father, Robert Waring Darwin, was a well-known physician, and his mother, Susannah, who died when Darwin was 8 years old, was a member of the famous Wedgwood pottery family. His grandfather, Erasmus Darwin, was an influential physician and poet whose work *Zoonomia* (1794–1796) presented an early, if naive, version of evolution. Charles was the fifth of six children. Following a classical education at Shrewsbury School, Darwin followed his elder brother Erasmus Alvery to Edinburgh to study medicine. Medical studies did not suit Darwin; he famously could not stomach the surgical theater and the screams of the unanesthetized patients, and he spent his time collecting beetles and learning taxidermy from a freed slave rather than attending classes. Unable to continue in the family medical tradition, Darwin was directed by his father into studies to become a country parson (one of the few other respectable choices for an English gentleman) at Christ's College, Cambridge; he completed his bachelor of arts degree in 1831.

The Voyage of the HMS Beagle

While at Cambridge, Darwin impressed several of his professors with his acumen for natural history and his keen powers of observation. He assisted Adam Sedgwick on a geological survey in Wales and was mentored by the botanist John Stevens Henslow. Following Darwin's graduation in 1831, Henslow recommended Darwin to be the gentleman companion of Captain Robert FitzRoy, who had been ordered to take HMS *Beagle* on a voyage to survey the South American coastline and set up weather stations in the South Pacific. Although Darwin had a difficult time convincing his father that the experience would be worthwhile, his time on the *Beagle* and the naturalistic observations he made over the course of the 5-year voyage became the basis of his greatest achievements in the natural sciences. Frequently seasick during the journey, Darwin took up the unofficial role of ship's naturalist. Darwin spent as much time as possible on land, where he managed to collect huge numbers of specimens of animals and fossils, identify and describe new species, and make geological observations, including experiencing a major earthquake in Chile. His now famous observations on the Galapagos Islands of finches and other fauna have become the standard

example of adaptive radiation and evolution by natural selection in modern textbooks. Darwin's specimens were distributed to experts, whose work he collected and edited into the *Zoology of the Voyage of the HMS Beagle* (1838–1843). He further published, and was brought considerable fame by, his *Journal and Remarks* (1839), also known as *The Voyage of the Beagle*. Containing both travel log and scientific observations, the *Journal* was widely read and bought Darwin a reputation as one of England's premier naturalists.

The Origin of Species

Based on his observations during his time on the *Beagle*, Darwin began to formulate his theory of evolution by natural selection. In South America, he had found fossils of extinct animals that closely resembled modern species, had seen closely related species adapted to individual niches on island archipelagos, and had noted the variation of individuals within a single species. To Darwin, these observations pointed toward a naturalistic, rather than divine, explanation for the origin of species through descent with modification. He was heavily influenced in this regard by reading Charles Lyell's *Principles of Geology* (1830–1833). Lyell, a Scottish lawyer and geologist, was a proponent of uniformitarianism, the idea that the geological processes that shaped the earth are the same as those observable in modern times. Those processes acted slowly and thus required the earth to be incredibly old. This, of course, contradicted the biblical interpretation of the age of the earth but provided sufficient time for species to change by natural causes. During the formulation of his ideas, Darwin also read Thomas Malthus's *An Essay on the Principles of Population* (1798). From Malthus, Darwin took the idea that population growth would always outstrip resources, leading to a struggle for existence. Because the individuals of a species varied and more offspring would be produced than could survive, individuals more suited to survive in their environment would be "selected." Over geological time, members of a species with traits better suited to their environment would increase in numbers, and the process would inevitably lead to the transmutation of species.

Darwin began to record these ideas in his journals shortly after returning from the journey of the *Beagle* but was hesitant to air them publicly because of the obvious implications for the widely held religious beliefs of the time. He continued to gather evidence for 20 years, performing experiments at home and communicating with scientists and animal breeders across Europe. Darwin was not idle during these years, publishing major works on topics as varied as volcanoes, the formation of coral reefs, and barnacles. He was finally goaded into publication when he received a manuscript for review from the naturalist Alfred Russel Wallace in 1858, 21 years after his earliest notes on the transmutation of species. Wallace had independently developed a theory nearly identical to Darwin's based on his experiences as an explorer and naturalist in the Amazon basin and Malay Archipelago. Shocked by Wallace's letter, Darwin was afraid that he would be accused of stealing Wallace's work; however, Darwin's friends Lyell and the botanist Joseph Dalton Hooker arranged for Darwin's and Wallace's papers to be read jointly before the Linnean Society and established the primacy of Darwin's work.

Darwin then went quickly to work preparing an "abstract" of his ideas, which was published in 1859 as *On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection, or the Preservation of Favoured Races in the Struggle for Life*. In the *Origin of Species*, Darwin combined evidence from embryology, his own observations of animal variation and the inheritance of traits, artificial selection by animal breeders, and the fossil record to build a convincing argument for the transmutation of species by natural selection. Darwin was not the first to propose a naturalistic explanation for the origin of species. His grandfather Erasmus, Jean-Baptiste Lamarck (*Philosophie Zoologique*, 1809), Robert Chambers (*Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation*, 1844), and Wallace had all put forth theories, but none had gone the lengths Darwin had. He had gathered vast amounts of data, had an established reputation built on the prestige of his previous works, and had developed an argument too convincing for the scientific community to dismiss. For the remainder of his life, Darwin mainly relied on others, including Thomas Henry Huxley and Ernst Haeckel, to fight the public fights that his controversial ideas generated. Secluded in his country estate in Downe, Kent, Darwin continued his researches, wrote revised editions of the *Origin of Species* to answer the criticism of his detractors, and published his first works that broached the subject of human evolution.

The Descent of Man *and Later Life*

As evidenced by his hesitation to publish his ideas on the transmutation of species, Darwin was timid. He had avoided addressing the notion of human evolution in the *Origin of Species* nearly completely, saying only that based on his ideas, "light will be shed on the origin of man, and his history." Darwin's supporter, Thomas Henry Huxley, was brasher, and in 1868, he published *Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature*, where he laid bare the anatomical similarities of humans and other apes and the obvious implications. Darwin did not weigh in on the subject of human evolution until 1871. In *The Descent of Man, and Selection in Relation to Sex*, Darwin made his case for a naturalistic origin of humans from preexisting forms. In doing so, he used embryological evidence to demonstrate the relation of humans and apes, identified Africa as the likely geographical birthplace of humans, discussed the evolution of human mental faculties, made cogent arguments about racial differences, and developed his idea of sexual selection based on what appeared to be nonadaptive traits. Darwin followed this with *The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals* (1872), where he dealt more directly with adaptive explanations of behavioral traits.

Outside his scientific work, Darwin lived the privileged life of an English gentleman at Down House. He married his cousin Emma Wedgwood in 1839 and was reportedly a devoted husband and father. Emma was a deeply devout Christian, and although Charles had been raised in the Anglican Church, his work and the deaths of 3 of his 10 children caused him to lose his faith. This caused a rift between them that was deeply distressing to them both, but Darwin was always conscientious of Emma's beliefs and relied on her to read early drafts of his manuscripts. Additionally, Darwin was frequently ill after his return from the voyage of the *Beagle* and unsuccessfully sought treatment most of his adult life. There has been much speculation regarding the cause of his symptoms, ranging from nerves to a mysterious tropical disease. He died on April 19, 1882, and although he wished to be buried in the village churchyard at Downe, his stature in English science was so great that he was buried at Westminster Abbey.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Darwin's contributions to physical or biological anthropology are obvious and incredibly important. Modern understanding of human evolution relies directly on Darwin's seminal research. Darwin's ideas have also been adopted into realms other than biology. Here, his contributions to anthropology are less direct, but understanding them is equally important.

Human Evolution

The modern study of human evolution by biological anthropologists looks at several lines of evidence. Anthropologists compare humans with our primate relations both anatomically and behaviorally. They look to fossil remains of human ancestors both within and outside Africa. They study embryonic development to search for clues to when, where, and how traits evolved. They study human variation and our relationship to other species. They follow the inheritance of traits through pedigrees. They examine population dynamics through studies of birth, death, and migration. Amazingly, although the technology has changed (the structure of DNA, the cellular mechanism of heredity, was not described until 1953, long after Darwin's death), all these methods were also used by Darwin in formulating his arguments to demonstrate the process of evolution through natural selection. All modern biological anthropologists are Darwinians, and Darwin himself may be considered the first modern biological anthropologist.

Having focused on Darwin's impact, there is also a negative aspect to the power of Darwin's ideas. For example, it is all too easy to ascribe value judgments to differences both between and within species. There is also a tendency among evolutionary biologists and biological anthropologists to ascribe adaptive value to any and all traits. It is important to keep in mind that demonstrating adaptations requires a huge burden of proof. Because something exists today does not necessarily mean that it is adaptive now or even that it was in the past.

Social "Darwinism"

The idea of natural selection is so simple and so powerful that it has been applied to fields as divergent as quantum physics, computation, art, music, and the cosmos. It is no surprise then that many have applied Darwin's ideas to social issues. The term *Social Darwinism* describes the ideology that societies change over time through much the

same processes as species do. In fact, the term is something of a misnomer. These ideas existed before Darwin; Herbert Spencer described such a process in his *Progress: Its Law and Cause* (1857), 2 years prior to the publication of the *Origin of Species*. It was Spencer who coined the phrase "survival of the fittest" (Darwin adopted the term as a synonym for natural selection in later editions of the *Origin of Species*). Unfortunately, this notion was used as a justification for social inequalities and as an argument against social reform. According to this formulation, social progress is achieved through elimination of the unfit and serves mainly to maintain the status quo of social stratification. Mainly a 19th-century phenomenon, social Darwinism has not disappeared and is not likely to do so. Although Darwin certainly held the paternalistic views of an upper-class Englishman at the height of colonial expansion (he was repulsed, however, by the idea of slavery), any appropriation of his ideas into social issues cannot be pinned on Darwin himself.

Darwin's Legacy

Darwin's name is synonymous with evolution, and despite the rocketing advances in the field since the publication more than 150 years ago of the *Origin of Species*, his work remains relevant. Although many of the details were wrong (he was unable to solve the problem of the mechanism of inheritance), his basic notion of descent with modification remains the modern paradigm and has been confirmed again and again with multiple lines of evidence. No fossils of human ancestors existed in Darwin's time, yet his predictions of both the relation of humans to other apes and the location of the cradle of human existence in Africa proved accurate. Modern DNA evidence supports and reaffirms this. The fact that his name has surpassed many of his contemporaries, including Wallace, is a testament to his clear thought and presentation, and the persistence with which he championed his ideas. The *Origin of Species* and many of his other works continue to be published and are considered required reading for anyone interested in the life sciences. His influence on modern evolutionary biological theory can hardly be overstated. In fact, the only negative may be that his ideas are sometimes held in too high esteem. Darwin has reached the status of a deity among scientists, and questioning his ideas is often seen as blasphemous. This of course is no fault of Darwin's and would be anathema to his scientific character. Nonetheless, Darwin will always have a central place in the history of evolutionary thought and our understanding of our own evolution.

Samuel J. Sholtis

See also Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution; Malthus, Thomas R.; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Spencer, Herbert; Wallace, Alfred R.

Further Readings

Berra, T. M. (2009). *Charles Darwin: The concise story of an extraordinary man.* Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Browne, J. (1995). *Charles Darwin: A biography.* New York, NY: Knopf.

Darwin, C. (1958). *The autobiography of Charles Darwin.* New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

———. (1859). *On the origin of species by means of natural selection.* London, UK: Murray.

———. (1871). *The descent of man and selection in relation to sex.* London, UK: Murray.

Dawkins, Richard

Richard Dawkins (1941–), the British evolutionary zoologist, ethologist, atheist, and author, is one of the leading evolutionary theorists of the late 20th and early 21st centuries; he is also a staunch supporter of science and reason and a persistent critic of religion and irrationality.

Biography

Dawkins spent his early childhood in Africa. His father, Clinton Dawkins (1915–2010), was a British agricultural officer working in what is now Malawi (then called Nyasaland). Dawkins was born in Kenya in 1941, where his father was temporarily stationed during World War II. The family returned to Nyasaland in 1943 and remained there until Dawkins was 8 years old; at that point, they moved to England to live on a farm in Oxfordshire that had been in the Dawkins family since 1726.

Dawkins received his undergraduate and graduate degrees from Balliol College at Oxford University, earning his doctorate in zoology under the direction of the Nobel Prize–winning ethologist Niko Tinbergen (1907–1988). After a brief stint as assistant professor at the University of California at Berkeley from 1967 to 1969, Dawkins returned to England to take the first of several academic positions at Oxford. In 1995, he was appointed the first Charles Simonyi Professor for the Public Understanding of Science at Oxford University, an endowed chair that was created expressly for him. Dawkins retired from that position in 2008.

Since his retirement, Dawkins has devoted much of his time to running the Richard Dawkins Foundation for Reason and Science, a nonprofit scientific and educational organization dedicated to supporting critical thinking and to opposing religious fundamentalism, superstition, and intolerance (the Foundation maintains a website at www.richarddawkins.net).

Dawkins has enjoyed a remarkably successful career. His books have sold millions of copies and have been translated into more than 30 languages, and he has garnered a long list of prestigious honors, including election in 2001 as a fellow of the Royal Society.

With regard to his personal life, Dawkins's first two marriages, to Marian Stamp and Eve Barham, respectively, ended in divorce (Dawkins and Barham had a daughter together, Juliet Dawkins, born in 1984). In 1992, Dawkins married his third wife, the British actress and artist Lalla Ward (1951–).

Principal Works

Dawkins's 11 major books can be divided into two somewhat overlapping categories: (1) those that deal with evolution and (2) those that deal with science, skepticism, and religion.

Evolution

Theodosius Dobzhansky famously observed that nothing in biology makes sense except in light of evolution. Dawkins would certainly agree. He has acknowledged that many of his books return again and again to the theme of evolution, but he is unapologetic about the continuity, saying that he considers Darwinian evolution to be a large enough subject for a lifetime's work.

The Selfish Gene (1976)

This was Dawkins's first book, and it remains his most important and influential work (subsequent editions with additional material appeared in 1989 and 2006). Beginning in the 1960s, a number of scientists on both sides of the Atlantic developed revolutionary new ideas that constituted a breakthrough in the modern understanding of evolutionary processes. Prominent among these innovative theorists were the British biologists William D. Hamilton (1936–2000) and John Maynard Smith (1920–2004) and the American scientists George Williams (1926–2010) and Robert Trivers (1943–). The new concepts they introduced included kin selection, inclusive fitness, reciprocal altruism, and the application of game theory to evolutionary analyses. Collectively, these ideas provided a corrective to the notion of "group selection" that was common at the time (i.e., the notion that a species may survive at the expense of rival groups if the individuals within that species behave altruistically toward each other). The new theorists maintained that natural selection is a matter of differential survival and reproduction of *individuals*, not groups, populations, or species, and therefore, altruistic behavior could be explained at the individual level in terms of kinship (i.e., since individuals and their close kin share many of the same genes, individuals who sacrifice themselves for the sake of their relatives can still propagate their genes if those relatives survive and reproduce as a consequence).

The concepts of kin selection, inclusive fitness, and reciprocal altruism all entailed or implied a *gene-centered* view of evolution. Dawkins synthesized these ideas in *The Selfish Gene* and conveyed them in lucid, eloquent language using original and compelling metaphors (e.g., he described the body as a mortal throwaway receptacle for the immortal genes). Today, the gene-centered view of evolution dominates biology, and Dawkins is primarily responsible for having given the idea wide currency among other scientists (as well as the general public).

The Extended Phenotype (1982)

This book, which is addressed primarily to professional biologists, is essentially a sequel to *The Selfish Gene*. It explores the logical implications of the gene-centered view of evolution: If some genes are favored over others because of their phenotypic effects, those effects would include not just their

consequences for the physical attributes of individual organisms but also their consequences for all their extended effects on the world (e.g., things such as beaver dams and termite mounds, which alter the ecosystem for other species).

***The Blind Watchmaker* (1986)**

The title of this book alludes to a famous argument for the existence of God by the 18th-century theologian William Paley, who offered an analogy between a watch and living organisms. Paley argued that just as the intricate complexity of a timepiece allows us to infer that it must have been deliberately and consciously designed, so too the complexity of the living world necessarily implies a designer. Dawkins counters that Paley's argument, despite its eloquence and popularity, is utterly wrong. Natural selection is responsible for the illusion of design that we observe in the living world, and natural selection is a blind, automatic process with no conscious awareness or forethought. This book, like most of Dawkins's later work, is aimed primarily at a popular audience. The book's subtitle summarizes its theme: *Why the Evidence of Evolution Reveals a Universe Without Design.*

***River Out of Eden* (1995)**

The five chapters in this short book describe life on earth as a river of DNA flowing through geological time (of particular interest to anthropological readers will be Dawkins's discussion of the African Eve hypothesis). Dawkins explains that nature is neither cruel nor kind but only pitilessly indifferent, and he speculates about the probable similarity of potential evolutionary processes in other planetary systems.

***Climbing Mount Improbable* (1996)**

This book is devoted to the topic of evolutionary design (it is, in essence, a continuation of *The Blind Watchmaker*). *Climbing Mount Improbable* explains phenomena such as the origins of flight and the evolution of various forms of eyes in the animal kingdom. Like *River Out of Eden*, *Climbing Mount Improbable* is illustrated by Dawkins's wife, Lalla Ward.

***The Ancestor's Tale* (2004)**

This book is a comprehensive history of life on earth; Dawkins described it as the largest and most demanding writing project of his career. *The Ancestor's Tale* is written in emulation of Chaucer's *Canterbury Tales*, with each individual traveler on the journey having a particular tale to tell—but in this case, each individual traveler is a single species, and the tale it has to tell is the story of its evolution.

***The Greatest Show on Earth* (2009)**

The publication of this book was deliberately timed to coincide with the 200th anniversary of Charles Darwin's birth and the 150th anniversary of Darwin's 1859 book, *On the Origin of Species*. Just as Darwin had done in his magnum opus, Dawkins lays out the evidence for the *fact* of evolution; in the process, he covers much the same ground that Darwin had previously explored, including plant and animal domestication, comparative embryology, the geographic distribution of species, skeletal homologies, and vestigial organs.

Science, Skepticism, and Religion

Dawkins has remarked that his interest in debunking the supernatural claims of religion is not as detached from his scientific career as many people might imagine. For Dawkins, the scientific principles of evidential reasoning that illuminate the evolution of life on earth can be applied equally well to questions such as the existence of God; furthermore, Dawkins believes that there are compelling intellectual and moral reasons to subject religious claims to scientific scrutiny. In addition, as an evolutionary theorist, Dawkins is committed to refuting the pseudoscience of creationism (also known as intelligent design) and other similar forms of nonempirical beliefs.

***Unweaving the Rainbow* (1998)**

Subtitled *Science, Delusion and the Appetite for Wonder*, this book addresses a number of paranormal claims, including astrology, telepathy, precognition, and the Loch Ness monster. The book's primary title comes from Keats, who believed that Isaac Newton had destroyed the poetry of the rainbow by explaining its optics. Dawkins argues in rebuttal that science is or ought to be the *inspiration* for great poetry, not its enemy, because science adds to our sense of wonder and awe at the beauty and majesty of the universe.

***A Devil's Chaplain* (2003)**

This book is a compilation of essays most of which had been previously published elsewhere over

the preceding 25 years. *A Devil's Chaplain* touches on a wide range of issues, including science, evolution, religion, morality, and justice. Some of the book, Dawkins admits, is passionate and angry—but, he maintains, there is a lot to be passionate about.

***The God Delusion* (2006)**

This compelling book established Dawkins as one of the preeminent atheists of his time (it has sold well over 1 million copies worldwide). Dawkins argues that religious belief is both thoroughly irrational and inherently dangerous. He reviews the traditional arguments for the existence of God, exposing their myriad fallacies, and catalogs the many ways in which religion inspires violence, instills bigotry, and abuses children. Dawkins also elucidates the intellectual and moral advantages of atheism for both the individual and society.

***The Magic of Reality* (2011)**

This book is intended primarily for young people, with lavish illustrations on every page. In relatively simple language, Dawkins explains the fundamental epistemology of science (hence the subtitle, *How We Know What's Really True*) and then offers scientific explanations for various natural phenomena. The word *magic* in the book's title refers not to *supernatural* magic or *stage* magic but to *poetic* magic, the deeply moving, exhilarating sense of awe and wonder that we experience when we encounter great works of art or sublime scenes of natural beauty.

Influence on Anthropology

For the majority of anthropologists, it is probably fair to say that the influence of Dawkins has been fairly minimal (this is certainly true if measured by the quantity of references to Dawkins in the overall anthropological literature). A recent survey of introductory textbooks, for example, reveals that Dawkins is cited only infrequently in works on biological anthropology, and he is almost never mentioned in works on cultural anthropology. Among anthropologists who are interested in the application of evolutionary theory to the analysis of human nature and human behavior, however, the situation is strikingly different: In works dealing with evolutionary psychology, for instance, references to Dawkins are virtually ubiquitous. The past couple of decades have seen an enhanced interest in evolutionary theory within anthropology, as illustrated by the recent formation of the Evolutionary Anthropology Society, a section of the American Anthropological Association devoted to promoting the application of modern evolutionary theory to the analysis of human behavior and culture. If that trend continues, it is reasonable to presume that the work of Dawkins will become more widely appreciated within anthropology.

James W. Lett

See also Darwin, Charles; Ethology, Human; Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Religion

Further Readings

Barkow, J. H., Cosmides, L., & Tooby, J. (1992). *The adapted mind: Evolutionary psychology and the generation of culture*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Boyer, P. (2001). *Religion explained: The evolutionary origins of religious thought*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

Buss, D. M. (1999). *Evolutionary psychology: The new science of the mind*. Boston, MA: Allyn & Bacon.

Coyne, J. A. (2009). *Why evolution is true*. New York, NY: Viking.

Dennett, D. C. (1995). *Darwin's dangerous idea: Evolution and the meanings of life*. New York, NY: Touchstone.

———. (2006). *Breaking the spell: Religion as a natural phenomenon*. New York, NY: Viking.

Grafen, A., & Ridley, M. (Eds.). (2006). *Richard Dawkins: How a scientist changed the way we think*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Pinker, S. (2002). *The blank slate: The modern denial of human nature*. New York, NY: Viking.

Stenger, V. J. (2007). *God, the failed hypothesis: How science shows that God does not exist*. Amherst, NY: Prometheus Books.

Deconstruction

Deconstruction is a term that represents a particular approach to analysis in contemporary theory in the humanities and social sciences. Developed in the writing of the philosopher Jacques Derrida in the mid-1960s, deconstruction is among the

most influential cultural movements of the past half-century. Tracing its roots back in literature to Laurence Sterne, James Joyce, and, more recently, Thomas Pynchon and its philosophical roots to Georg W. F. Hegel, Friedrich Nietzsche, and Martin Heidegger, the deconstruction movement began in France in the 1960s amid deep social questioning of traditional institutions, and it enjoyed its greatest popularity in the 1970s and 1980s. The term became associated with (and sometimes was used interchangeably with) poststructuralism, a development that Derrida never accepted.

Theory of Deconstruction

In general, deconstruction involves the process of unraveling meaning in texts. Deconstructionists argue that the meaning of language employed in texts is constantly changing and the meaning that readers derive from a text is outside the control of the author. Thus, the process of deconstruction entails a double movement, the rigorous engagement with a text involving the simultaneous engagement with and undoing of its meaning. Derrida developed the notion of *différance* to accommodate the numerous features that govern the production of such textual meaning. *Différance*, a term Derrida created, is a homophone with the word *différence*, and it implies both "to defer" and "to differ." His intent with this wordplay was to show that words never fully represent what they mean. Consequently, according to Derrida, meaning is forever deferred. Derrida had a mistrust of the metaphysical language commonly associated with phenomenology but decided to work within the language itself to dismantle its entire conceptual structure. Thus, his deconstructive reading of a text conveys a shifting of meanings that have been attached to signs and what they are intended to signify in language and thought. The term *différance* represents the possibility of a void or absence appearing in the very core of a text.

In the traditional Kantian sense of the philosophical term *synthesis*, deconstruction and its antistructuralist approach to the semiotics of texts stands for a movement characterized by the conditions for the possibility of experiencing the absence or presence implicit in the signified and in the act of signification itself. Derrida finds that Western metaphysics attempts to reduce to speech the free play of language found in writing, and he argues that speech is no better than writing in that it suffers from the same inherent flaws. Derrida's strategy of deconstruction in *Of Grammatology* (1967) is to show that writing has emerged within the discourse of language and the dissemination of texts that intend to sustain and replicate stability of meaning. In its perpetual deferment and postponement of textual meaning, the strategy of deconstruction in effect serves as the vindicator of a repressed but already intelligible discourse of writing. As Derrida argues throughout *Of Grammatology*, especially in his essay on the Enlightenment philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau, "There is nothing outside the text."

What Deconstruction Is Not: Derrida's Negative Definitions of the Term

Derrida's core writings reject any philosophical analysis that proceeds from fixed, nonspontaneous concepts that are discursive in the traditional Kantian sense of ability to confirm stable conclusions. Derrida downplays any suggestion that deconstruction is the general name for an intellectual practice or technique. He does not accept the idea that deconstruction names an essence or a procedure, much less a particular method. In fact, Derrida constantly asserts that deconstruction is not to be understood as a philosophical method because he believes that there is no one correct, systematic way to perform deconstruction.

Derrida also does not intend deconstruction to represent or form an intellectual niche. Derrida believes that deconstruction cannot be truly named or signified. For Derrida, concepts, including the concept of the sign itself, can only be understood within texts and then with reference to specific contexts. Deconstruction of a text in this way is both an action and a process. It is the transcendental source of our conceptuality. In this sense, Derrida emphasizes that deconstruction is inescapable and necessary.

The Role of Husserl's Phenomenology in the Development of Deconstruction

In Derrida's early writings, deconstruction marked a break from phenomenology. Derrida's philosophical orientation begins in an argument with Edmund Husserl's phenomenology. In terms of philosophical lineage, deconstruction has its precedent in *Destruktion*, a term coined by Husserl's student

Heidegger. Heidegger's use of *Destruktion* presupposed that metaphysics was not simply the esoteric concern of philosophers far removed from the world but rather that it gave shape and grounded the historical epoch in which we live. Heidegger used the term to indicate taking apart in a way that reveals something's essential structure. Disassembling the metaphysical tradition in this way is a way of overcoming it, but for Heidegger, *Destruktion* also has a positive role: It displays the materials we have from our heritage with which we can build a new beginning. It is the primordial source of all possible meaning.

Derrida's deconstruction is intellectually indebted to Husserl's phenomenology. Derrida portrays himself as developing deconstruction to go beyond phenomenology, which he sees as a philosophical system trapped in a commitment to self-identical truths, true by virtue of the logical operations that produce them. Derrida argues that phenomenology was originally intended to serve as a criticism of traditional metaphysics and that it aimed to reawaken and restore metaphysics to its most authentic and original purpose. In the typical deconstructive sense, Derrida's intellectual debt to phenomenology takes the form of a subversive rewriting of Husserl's and phenomenology's premises. His deconstruction of phenomenology primarily rests on Husserl's treatment of language in relation to thought.

The first of Derrida's full-length philosophical studies, *Speech and Phenomena*, published in 1967, was devoted to Husserl's phenomenology and its theory of signs. In this early application of deconstruction, Derrida attempted to deconstruct Husserl's "pure" philosophical theories of being. Once he did so, Derrida believed that he had liberated any notion of fixed or stable meaning entailed in these theories. For Derrida, this signaled that he had made an intellectual advance that had gone beyond the tradition of phenomenology.

Contextualizing Deconstruction's Departure From Structuralism

Deconstruction arose in the context of the structuralism of Claude Lévi-Strauss and Ferdinand de Saussure. However, Derrida soon broke with this structuralism. Saussure and Lévi-Strauss created systems of binary analysis in speech, linguistics, and culture. Derrida reinterpreted these and ultimately moved beyond them. For instance, in *The Savage Mind* (1962), Lévi-Strauss used the term *bricolage* to characterize a process of thinking. In his employment of the term, Lévi-Strauss is referring to the process of myth making and mythological thinking. In "Structure, Sign, and Play in the Discourse of the Human Sciences," Derrida deconstructs Lévi-Strauss and expands the usage of *bricolage*, suggesting that it is not only relevant to mythological thinking but is in fact related to all thinking and all text. Derrida's radical argument in the strategy of deconstruction involves the idea that even detailed knowledge of context cannot decide the multiple meanings of the language found in texts. This is so because Derrida holds that context is itself no more stable than the things it ostensibly frames. Context is also "textual."

Deconstruction represents a fundamental departure from structuralism. Where structuralism was built around identifying oppositions and keeping them separate, a priority of deconstruction is to show how oppositions complement each other in a subversive sense where meanings of text are overridden and transformed. Derrida's mission is to demonstrate that there are no pure meanings written in texts. In this sense, Derrida argued in "Structure, Sign, and Play in the Discourse of the Human Sciences" that deconstruction is the rigorous pursuit of a tension embedded deep in the structure of a text that leads to the text's unraveling.

Of Grammatology's Deconstructive Readings of Saussure, Rousseau, and Lévi-Strauss

In *Of Grammatology*, Derrida deconstructs readings of the linguist Ferdinand de Saussure, the Enlightenment philosopher Jean-Jacques Rousseau, and the anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss.

In his deconstructive reading of Saussure's posthumously published *Course in General Linguistics*, Derrida demonstrates that Saussure treats writing as a merely derivative form of linguistic notation, secondary and always dependent on the primary reality of speech and the sense of a speaker's presence behind his words. Derrida finds a dislocating tension here. He refuses to accept the paradox of language and speech as part of a larger, encompassing project of semiology (the study and language of signs). He believes that semiology is not able to identify a stable, consistent meaning in speech and writing. Derrida finds that there is a primary blindness

in Saussure's text: the failure to think through the problems engendered by Saussure's own mode of discourse resting on the idea of language as a signifying system. For Derrida, Saussure's text contains an argument built around the binary opposition of speech and language, one with a form that intrinsically lent itself to a deconstructive reading. Derrida argued that once this identification had been made via a rigorous reading of the text's premises, the text deconstructed itself.

In Derrida's deconstruction of Rousseau's "Essay on the Origins of Languages," he demonstrates that Rousseau contradicts himself at various points, to the extent that far from proving speech to be the origin of languages and writing merely linked by contagion, Rousseau's text confirms the priority of writing and the illusory character of all such myths of origin.

In Derrida's deconstruction of Rousseau's text, writing rather than speech emerges to represent the center of all intelligible discourse and comes to define its very nature and condition. Derrida shows that Rousseau's essay submits to this reversal of the roles of speech and writing, even as Rousseau condemns the subversive influence he attributes to writing. Derrida's strict, deconstructive reading of Rousseau demonstrates that Rousseau cannot possibly mean what he says, or say what he means. Derrida perceives such discrepancies at every turn of Rousseau's argument. Wherever the primacy of nature (represented by speech) is opposed to the debasements of culture (embodied in writing), an aberrant logic emerges, inverting the opposition and cutting away the very ground of its meaning.

Derrida extends this deconstructive reading to Lévi-Strauss, where he finds the same issues of nature and culture that he found in Rousseau. Derrida sees Lévi-Strauss as employing a metaphor loaded with contradictions and antagonisms of the same magnitude as the one Rousseau employed in writing about the speculative science of the early-modern period. Derrida shows that the nature/culture opposition deconstructs itself even as Lévi-Strauss claims to achieve Rousseau's dream of studying the language and culture of a tribal community untouched by the evils of civilization. For Lévi-Strauss, the themes of exploitation and writing go naturally together, as do those of writing and violence. Derrida's critique of Lévi-Strauss follows much the same path as his deconstructive readings of Rousseau and Saussure.

Deconstruction Besides Derrida and Anthropological/Cultural Applications

Clifford Geertz is generally acknowledged to have started the move toward understanding culture as text. Once culture was understood as a kind of text, deconstruction was increasingly used by anthropologists, and this paved the way for its becoming a critical aspect of the literary turn/postmodernism in anthropology in the 1980s and 1990s. In 1977, Paul Rabinow published *Reflections on Fieldwork in Morocco*, which examined the experience of ethnography through a deconstructive lens. In 1978, Edward Said published *Orientalism*, which applied deconstruction to Western understandings of the Middle East. In 1986, James Clifford and George Marcus published *Writing Culture*, which was a series of examples of the use of deconstruction in various aspects of anthropology. Together, these were among the most influential books in anthropology in the late 1970s and early 1980s, and they had a profound effect on anthropology in the 1980s and 1990s. In this era, the vast majority of work published in anthropology had at least some aspect of deconstruction.

In addition to Derrida, the literary critics of the Yale school, including Paul de Man, Geoffrey Hartman, and J. Hillis Miller, were key practitioners of deconstruction. Miller later moved to the University of California, Irvine, with Hartman a frequent guest in seminars devoted to deconstruction there. The postcolonial theorist Homi Bhabha at Harvard University studied social subordination and the location of culture through the lens of deconstruction. Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak of Columbia University, the translator of Derrida's *Of Grammatology*, is the most prominent postcolonial theorist to apply deconstruction to subaltern studies. Judith Butler has employed deconstructive themes in her theory construction, encompassing a number of cultural issues.

Although they have had a huge impact on anthropology in the past quarter-century, postmodernism in general and deconstruction in particular have created a strong backlash. Philosophers including John Searle took aim at deconstruction. In 1992, when Cambridge moved to award an honorary degree to Derrida, 18 prominent philosophers wrote a letter of protest calling Derrida's work a semi-intelligible attack on truth,

reason, and scholarship. Anthropologists including Marvin Harris, James Lett, Roy D'Andrade, and many others argued, sometimes polemically, against deconstruction. In anthropology, conflicts between postmodernists located largely in cultural anthropology and scholars doing what they believed to be positivist science in archaeology and biological anthropology led to the breakup of major departments and the creation of separate departments of cultural anthropology in many important universities around the United States.

Dustin Bradley Garlitz

See also Butler, Judith; Clifford, James; Derrida, Jacques; Geertz, Clifford; Husserl, Edmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marcus, George; Phenomenology; Postcolonial Theory; Postmodernism; Poststructuralism; Rabinow, Paul; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques; Said, Edward; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Structuralism

Further Readings

Culler, J. (1982). *On deconstruction: Theory and criticism after structuralism*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Derrida, J. (1978). Structure, sign, and play in the discourse of the human sciences. In *Writing and difference* (pp. 278–293; A. Bass, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

_____. (1981). *Positions* (A. Bass, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

_____. (1998). *Of grammatology* (Corrected Ed.); G. C. Spivak, Trans.). Baltimore, MD: John Hopkins University Press.

Leitch, V. B. (1983). *Deconstructive criticism: An advanced introduction*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Moran, D. (2000). Jacques Derrida: From phenomenology to deconstruction. In *Introduction to phenomenology* (pp. 435–471). London, UK: Routledge.

Norris, C. (1991). *Deconstruction: Theory and practice* (Rev. ed.). London, UK: Routledge.

Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari

The work of Gilles Deleuze (1925–1995) and Félix Guattari (1930–1992) has influenced virtually every field in the humanities and social sciences. This is reflected in the secondary literature on their work, which is extensive, stretching to more than 300 monographs as well as a journal and literally thousands of articles and book chapters. Two things are striking about the reception of Deleuze and Guattari's work: First, it is interdisciplinary, encompassing both practice-based disciplines like architecture and design and the more abstract and formal disciplines like philosophy, with room in between for the practically oriented disciplines like anthropology and sociology, including variants like health promotion; second, there is relatively little agreement as to what the basic terms created by Deleuze and Guattari actually mean. This fluidity in their concepts has undoubtedly been an enabling factor in the interdisciplinary spread of their readership.

The Partnership

Deleuze and Guattari's backgrounds could not have been more different. Yet somehow it was that very difference that made their working relationship so fruitful. Borrowing one of their own images, Deleuze and Guattari's partnership has often been described as being like that of the wasp and the orchid—two very different species that nonetheless need each other to thrive.

Deleuze's background was solidly philosophical (he studied at the Sorbonne and the University of Lyon), but he forged his own path through the history of philosophy by focusing on figures his teachers had either discounted as antiquated (David Hume, Baruch Spinoza) or, worse, treated with outright suspicion (Henri Bergson, Friedrich Nietzsche). He also wrote about literary figures (Lewis Carroll, Marcel Proust, Leopold von Sacher-Masoch), which further clouded the issue as far as his philosophical peers were concerned. While Deleuze was completing his doctoral work at the University of Lyon in the late 1960s, he became interested in schizophrenia as a particular kind of creativity or production of sense. Alongside the two works he was required to submit for his Doctorat d'État—*Différence et Repetition* (1968; *Difference and Repetition*, 1994), and *Spinoza et le Problème de l'Expression* (1968; *Expressionism in Philosophy: Spinoza*, 1990)—Deleuze also wrote *Logique du Sens* (1969; *The Logic of Sense*, 1990), which tackled the difficult problem of the distinction between sense and nonsense, paying particular attention to the poetic works of Lewis Carroll and Antonin Artaud. It was this

"minor" project that was to have the greatest effect on his life and career because it brought him into contact with Guattari and sparked one of the most productive collaborations of the 20th century.

In contrast to Deleuze, Guattari's background was eclectic. He did not hold a university post. He was a hospital administrator and a psychotherapist. His formal university training was as a pharmacist, but he also received training in psychotherapy from Jacques Lacan, France's leading interpreter of psychoanalysis. Guattari attained the status of *analyste membre* (member analyst) in Lacan's school, the École Freudienne de Paris, licensing him as a pyschotherapist. Guattari's relationship to Lacan and Lacanian psychoanalysis was, however, at best ambivalent. Guattari's notebooks, *The Anti-Oedipus Papers* (2006), make it clear just how strained relations were between them, especially after the publication of *Anti-Oedipus*. Guattari wanted to work with Deleuze precisely because he thought Deleuze could help him resolve a number of theoretical impasses he encountered in Lacan's work. In particular, Guattari rejected the idea that the unconscious is structured like a language, which is the cornerstone of Lacan's structuralist reinterpretation of Sigmund Freud. This is why Deleuze's book *The Logic of Sense* interested him so much; it offered a much richer account of the relationship between language and the unconscious than Lacan's work did.

Deleuze and Guattari were introduced by Deleuze's former student from the University of Lyon, Jean-Pierre Muyard, a psychiatrist at the private psychiatric clinic La Borde, about 120 miles southwest of Paris, where Guattari also worked. Deleuze was in touch with Muyard because he was interested in following up on the theoretical speculations he'd made about how schizophrenics use language in *The Logic of Sense*, and as fate would have it, Guattari had recently given a lecture on that topic (later published as "Machine and Structure"), drawing on Deleuze's *Difference and Repetition* and *The Logic of Sense*. Both men were at turning points in their lives—Guattari was restless and dissatisfied with psychoanalysis, while Deleuze was casting about for his next project. In their different ways, both felt that psychoanalysis had made a fundamentally wrong turn when Freud "discovered" Oedipus.

Their Work

Together, Deleuze and Guattari wrote four books in a period of just over a decade: *L'Anti-Oedipe* (1972; *Anti-Oedipus*, 1977), *Kafka: Pour une Literature Mineure* (1975; *Kafka: Towards a Minor Literature,* 1986), *Mille Plateaux* (1980; *A Thousand Plateaus*, 1987), and *Qu'est-ce que la Philosophie?* (1991; *What Is Philosophy?* 1994). As the already established professor of philosophy, Deleuze is generally credited with the "senior" role in their collaboration, with Guattari consigned to a junior, helpmeet role when not ignored altogether. That the truth was very different from this is not hard to see if one simply reads their work attentively.

After their first meeting, Deleuze and Guattari agreed to work together, and over the next several months, they met and shared ideas and developed a work that was simultaneously a critique and a rethinking of both Karl Marx and Freud (particularly the Lacanian interpretation of the latter) and a synthesis of a new methodology they proposed to call "schizoanalysis." In developing schizoanalysis, which was intended to be a whole new theory of social and cultural behavior, Deleuze and Guattari drew extensively on anthropology. In their first book, there is a very long chapter titled "Savages, Barbarians, and Civilized Men," which attempts to reconstruct the history of the capture of desire through the formation of different types of government. By scouring the anthropology of so-called primitive peoples, Deleuze and Guattari wanted to demonstrate that the "Oedipus complex" was a historical phenomenon of quite recent origin. In writing this section, Deleuze and Guattari worked closely with the psychoanalytically trained anthropologists Alfred Adler, Michel Cartry, and Andras Zempléni. Under their guidance, Deleuze and Guattari read Gregory Bateson, Marcel Griaule, Meyer Fortes, Pierre Clastres, and Victor Turner, among many others. They spliced this with archaeology, history, philosophy, and several other disciplines, so the resulting synthesis doesn't necessarily resemble anthropology as it is traditionally understood.

It is difficult to summarize the synthesis of theories Deleuze and Guattari called schizoanalysis. Deleuze and Guattari wanted to reengineer psychoanalysis, not depart from it. This entailed jettisoning the idea that the "Oedipus complex" can be used to explain all social and cultural behavior. But in reality, the changes Deleuze and Guattari wanted to make to psychoanalysis were far more complex than that. First of all, Deleuze and Guattari reject Freud's economic model of desire, which holds that the ultimate goal in life is to minimize unpleasure

by limiting stimulation. What Deleuze and Guattari reject is the idea that desire is a kind of undifferentiated energy buzzing through our body and prompting us to act. The most basic form of this idea is the notion of the instinct as an unignorable internal force driving us to eat, sleep, procreate, and so on. Deleuze and Guattari instead frame desire as a creative force that gives rise to ideas, thoughts, concepts, dreams, and fantasies. Its ultimate creation is, of course, the human subject, the self. In *Anti-Oedipus*, they refer to this creative force as "desiring-production"; in subsequent work, they would simply call it "desire."

There are a lot of what might be called received misunderstandings of Deleuze and Guattari's work—that is, misunderstandings that have become so entrenched that they are no longer perceived as misunderstandings. One such received misunderstanding is the notion that Deleuze and Guattari reject the idea of the subject or the self. This is false. But one can see how this misunderstanding arises. In the opening chapter of *Anti-Oedipus*, Deleuze and Guattari provide what effectively amounts to a phenomenology of the experience of schizophrenia. They speculate that for the schizophrenic in the full flight of his or her deliria, the self is relatively unimportant; it basically gets crowded off stage by a range of agents and entities that consume the psyche's attention. When the schizophrenic ceases fighting to maintain the central position of the self, there ensues a kind of relief, a feeling of freedom, which many of Deleuze and Guattari's readers have interpreted as a positive affect. But this interpretation forgets that this relief is pathological; it amounts to a kind of surrender whereby the self agrees to and acknowledges its redundancy. Elsewhere in their work, Deleuze and Guattari discuss the different ways by which this self might be restored.

Probably of the greatest interest to anthropology is Deleuze and Guattari's concept of the assemblage, which should be understood as a kind of psychic accommodation a subject makes with his or her environment. This creates a vocabulary for analyzing the intersection of desire in both its conscious and its unconscious forms relative to the context in which a particular subject finds himself or herself. Here, Deleuze and Guattari revive and expand Freud's topography of the psyche. Many of the concepts invented in the course of their collaboration can be understood in this way—they provide a map of the psyche. Not surprisingly then, many of their concepts are spatial in origin: plane of immanence, smooth and striated, deterritorialized and reterritorialized, to name just a few.

The field of anthropology has been relatively slow to embrace Deleuze and Guattari's work, but it has not ignored it. Monographs influenced by their work are starting to appear, and it is clear that Deleuze and Guattari have something to offer even to field anthropologists not particularly interested in theory. Some examples of anthropological works incorporating this perspective are Arun Saldhanha's *Psychaedelic White: Goa Trance and the Viscosity of Race* (2007), Julia Mahler's *Lived Temporalities: Exploring Duration in Guatemala* (2008), and Konstantinos Retsikas's *Becoming: An Anthropological Approach to Understandings of the Person in Java* (2012). Probably the fullest assessment of Deleuze and Guattari's work from an anthropological perspective is the long essay in *Current Anthropology* by João Biehl and Peter Locke, "Deleuze and the Anthropology of Becoming" (2010). It is not without its flaws or misunderstandings, but it nevertheless offers a comprehensive account of Deleuze and Guattari's thought and seems likely in time to prove something of a touchstone for the field.

Ian Buchanan

See also Bateson, Gregory; Fortes, Meyer; Freud, Sigmund; Griaule, Marcel; Lacan, Jacques; Marx, Karl; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Biehl, J., & Locke, P. (2012). Deleuze and the anthropology of becoming. *Current Anthropology, 51*(3), 317–351.

Buchanan, I. (2008). *Deleuze and Guattari's Anti-Oedipus*. London, UK: Continuum.

Colebrook, C. (2002). *Gilles Deleuze*. London, UK: Routledge.

Deleuze, G. (1995). *Negotiations* (M. Joughin, Trans.). New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Dosse, F. (2010). *Gilles Deleuze and Félix Guattari: Intersecting lives* (D. Glassman, Trans.). New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Guattari, F. (1984). *Molecular revolutions: Psychiatry and politics* (R. Sheed, Trans.). London, UK: Peregrine Books.

Hughes, J. (2012). *Philosophy after Deleuze*. London, UK: Continuum.

Watson, J. (2009). *Guattari's diagrammatic thought*. London, UK: Continuum.

Dependency Theory

Dependency theory was an approach to understanding economic development in terms of historical and economic relations between the developed, industrial countries of the North and the poorer, developing countries of the South. It argued that poverty in the countries of the Third World, or the South (Africa, Asia, and Latin America), was due to their exploitation by the colonial and neocolonial powers (European countries, the United States) for their natural resources and cheap labor, which had created these countries' dependence on the North for manufactured goods. Dependency theorists argued that the wealth of the capitalist powers derived from the "underdevelopment" of the developing countries, and they recommended that Third World countries cut off ties with the industrialized nations and become economically independent by developing their own industries and controlling their surplus production. Several dependency theorists, including Andre Gunder Frank, promoted socialistic revolution as a solution to Third World poverty, pointing to Castro's Cuba as a model to emulate.

Dependency theory offered a counterargument to modernization theory, which held that the poverty in the developing world was due to intrinsic factors, including a conservative traditionalism and lack of entrepreneurial spirit, and that these countries needed to emulate the economic behavior and values of the developed countries. Where modernization theory corresponded with the mainstream and, later, neoliberal policies of the Northern, capitalist countries, dependency theory offered a radical and revolutionary alternative explanation of development. While many anthropologists agreed with the premise of global inequality, they were as a whole reluctant to accept either modernization or dependency theory's holistic and externally driven framework, preferring to focus on the particular social relations and human agency observed in the communities they studied.

The Development of Dependency Theory

Dependency theory developed in the late 1950s following the writings of the liberal economist Raúl Prebisch, who was the director of the United Nations Economic Commission on Latin America. Prebisch and his colleagues suggested that poverty in the developing world was not due to intrinsic conditions of those particular countries but resulted from the rich countries' benefiting from the unequal terms of trade. Poor countries purchased manufactured goods, which had high profit margins, from the developed countries in exchange for exports of raw materials, including agricultural and mineral products, such as coffee and copper, respectively, which had low profit margins. He advocated import substitution, which is the manufacture of goods by the developing countries themselves, and urged these countries to continue to export raw materials but not to use their foreign earnings to purchase manufactured goods from the North.

Building on Prebisch, Marxist writers described dependency as the product of the expansion of capitalism to capture producers and markets in the developing world. This theory was based on Lenin's *Imperialism: The Highest Stage of Capitalism*, which posited that the superprofits acquired in the colonies allowed the capitalist countries to improve wages for their own working class and postpone the inevitable socialist revolution predicted by Karl Marx. Writings in the 1950s and 1960s, including Paul A. Baron's *The Political Economy of Growth*, Andre Gunder Frank's *Capitalism and Underdevelopment in Latin America*, and Walter Rodney's *How Europe Underdeveloped Africa*, described the unequal relationship between the industrial North and the undeveloped South as "underdevelopment," pointing to an impoverishment of the Southern countries in terms of minerals, forestry, and agricultural crops that benefited the North. They also argued that the structures of dependency were repeated internally in the developing world, where local elites exploited their own poor and took profits out of the country for their personal gain.

Dependency theory stood in stark opposition to modernization theory, which held that poverty in the less developed countries resulted from economic institutions that were constrained by "traditional beliefs and irrational practices." Modernization theory, proposed in Walt W. Rostow's 1960 essay "The Stages of Economic Growth: A Non-Communist Manifesto," described development as a series of stages through which a poor country could progress from a "traditional" to a highly industrialized, "mass-consuming" society. It advocated the

adoption of Western values of individual entrepreneurship and capitalist investment, which would drive the transition from a traditional to a modern society. Modernization theory was the product of the Cold War, wherein the United States sought to prevent the poor countries of the developing world from engaging in communist-led revolutions that would, as in the case of Cuba or Vietnam, lead them into the Soviet Union's sphere of influence. Modernization sought instead to capture these developing countries into the capitalist economy of the United States and other Western industrialized countries. In contrast, dependency theorists sought to disengage the developing world from the grasp of the core capitalist producers and promote their self-reliance and independence.

Dependency theory was further modified by world-systems theory, proposed by Immanuel Wallerstein in *The Modern World System*. Where dependency theory saw history as the unfolding of relationships between nations and their colonies, world-systems theory argued that the rise of European capitalism in the 17th century had created an integrated international economy through a complex hierarchy of the world's countries into core, semiperiphery, and periphery. This theory was influential in later discussions of globalization characterized by the movement of capital, technology, and migration of people in an integrated but unequal world economy.

Although there were different schools of dependency theory, the concept of dependency was broadly used to understand an international system comprising states in dyadic relationships variously described as core-periphery, dominant-dependent, or metropolitan-satellites. Moreover, dependency theory assumed that the external forces—multinational corporations, international markets, foreign aid—were the main determinant of the economic activities within the dependent states. Dependency theories converged around the idea that relations between dominant and dependent states were an ongoing process of exploitation that continues into the present era.

Criticism of dependency theory came from both the conservative right and the progressive left. From the right, critics argued that dependency was a circular argument—that dependent economies were not autonomous because they were dependent. Some, including World Bank proponents, argued that modernization led not to exploitation but to growth of infrastructure, education, and healthcare, all beneficial to a developing country. Others asked that if the relationships between the core and the periphery were static, how did one explain the industrial growth of formerly poor countries such as Mexico, Brazil, or Taiwan? Neoliberal critics argued that participation in the global economy, even if unequal, would lead to economic growth for all. Dependency theorists counterargued that the semiperipheral countries were still dependent on multinational corporations, had strong autocratic governments, repressed labor unions, lacked environmental safeguards, and were still dominated by a small elite.

Orthodox Marxists criticized dependency theory for ignoring the positive aspects of capitalism that would create a wage-earning working class that could mature and overthrow their own capitalist elite. French structural Marxists argued against the rigidity of the dependency framework, pointing out that precapitalist subsistence modes of production remained viable and continued to resist capitalist penetration. Non-Marxists argued that it was not just capitalism that exploited developing countries but also the formerly socialist Soviet Union with its own satellites, including Cuba and Eastern Europe.

Anthropologists and Dependency Theory

Anthropologists have long recognized the existence of global poverty and inequality because the societies that cultural anthropologists studied were typically small scale, rural, and poor while situated in larger state systems. Following World War II, anthropologists increasingly looked at issues of social change and inequality in the less developed countries where they researched. British anthropologists who had conducted research for colonial offices in Africa and South Asia developed critical perspectives and looked at contemporary issues of urbanization, migrant labor, and social change. Dependency theory was popularized by the anthropologist Peter Worseley's *The Third World*, which introduced the term to a wider audience. Eric Wolf's *Europe and the People Without History* examined the impact of European commerce and colonization on Africa, Asia, and the New World, but unlike the dependency theorists, it showed the unevenness and particularity with which these relations were carried out by different powers (e.g., Spain, Holland,

England) on populations who reacted in a variety of ways, some with great resistance.

Many cultural anthropologists were reluctant to embrace dependency theory wholeheartedly. While acknowledging the economic and political domination of the Northern industrial countries on the less developed countries, anthropologists were less likely to focus on the role of external forces and looked more closely at social relations and agency in the local communities they studied. James Ferguson's *Anti-Politics Machine* examined how international development efforts in Lesotho failed because donors characterized the country as a traditional, subsistence-based society, ignoring local conditions, attitudes, and a long history of migrant labor to South Africa. Rather than improve agricultural production or alleviate poverty, these development programs reinforced and expanded the bureaucratic Lesotho state, suppressing active politics in the country. Jean Comaroff's *Body of Power, Spirit of Resistance* sought to understand the complexity of responses by the Tshidi of Botswana to modern life but found no single theory adequate for the task. She found little use for dependency theorists who regarded world capitalist penetration as the driving force of a country but ignored the "material, ideological and moral relations" of these local societies.

Medical anthropologists utilized dependency theory during the 1980s, arguing that capitalism's primary goal of profit was incongruent with the goal of health in the developing and developed worlds. Paul Farmer's *Pathologies of Power* and Nancy Scheper-Hughes's *Death Without Weeping* spoke of the "structural violence" of poverty that resulted in malnutrition, high risk of infectious disease, and poor healthcare. Several medical anthropologists, including Scheper-Hughes, rejected the dominance of political-economic explanations for neglecting the subjective content of illness, suffering, and healing as lived events and experiences.

Applied anthropologists who engaged directly in development projects found little help in dependency theory to solve practical problems. Where dependency theory saw socialist revolution and independence from the West as the only solution to poverty, it offered little material for programs combating HIV/AIDS, improving agricultural production, or working toward women's rights issues. Applied anthropologists found themselves struggling with policymakers while simultaneously consulting with and representing the interests of the target beneficiaries. James Ferguson's essay "Anthropology and Its Evil Twin" pointed to the substantial differences in approaches between "development anthropology," which engaged in development projects, and the "anthropology of development," which presented critical approaches to applied anthropology and the practice of development.

Postmodernist approaches emerging in the 1980s and 1990s rejected both dependency and modernization theories as ethnocentric paradigms promoting Western ideals of progress, scientific thinking, and power. Arturo Escobar's *Encountering Development: The Making and Unmaking of the Third World* described the development process as a Western discourse aimed at managing the Third World by imposing a strong bias for urban, industrial, and World Bank financial policies.

Rather than give way to Western frameworks, Escobar called for more "endogenous discourses." Other postdevelopment writers, including Vandana Shiva and Frederique Marglin, promoted alternative development that privileged local and grassroots autonomy rather than a larger, globalized economy. Nevertheless, several postmodernist and postdevelopment arguments accepted the dependency theory premise that the former colonial powers sought to keep developing countries poor and dependent, as Escobar acknowledged.

Conclusion

Dependency theory offered an explanation for the development and underdevelopment of countries in the context of the rise of capitalism as a world system. It demonstrated that poverty and underdevelopment are rooted in history and political economy, where powerful nation-states and multinational corporations came to dominate and exploit less powerful nations and where the local elite in those underdeveloped countries profited from the exploitation of their own country's people. Anthropologists, while critical of the external, hierarchical, and universalistic framework of both modernization and dependency theories, continue to utilize some of their insights in understanding social relations and processes in the local communities they study. Dependency theory continues to

guide understandings of development and global poverty, including issues of sweat shop and child labor practices, the resistance by African farmers to subsidized production in the North preventing fair competition, and peasant rebellions in Mexico and India against the impoverishment caused by global capitalism.

Elliot Fratkin

See also Marxist Anthropology; Postmodernism; Scheper-Hughes, Nancy; Wallerstein, Immanuel; Wolf, Eric; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Amin, S. (1976). *Unequal development: An essay on the social formations of peripheral capitalism*. New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.

Cardoso, F. H., & Faletto, E. (1979). *Dependency and development in Latin America*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Ferraro, V. (2008). Dependency theory: An introduction. In G. Secondi (Ed.), *The development economics reader* (pp. 58–64). London, UK: Routledge.

Frank, A. G. (1967). *Capitalism and underdevelopment in Latin America: Historical studies of Chile and Brazil*. New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.

Friedmann, H., & Wayne, J. (1977). Dependency theory: A critique. *Canadian Journal of Sociology, 2*(4), 399–416.

Gardner, K., & Lewis, D. (1996). *Anthropology, development, and the post-modern challenge*. London, UK: Pluto Press.

Morgan, L. M. (1987). Dependency theory in the political economy of health: An anthropological critique. *Medical Anthropology Quarterly, 1*(2), 131–154.

Rostow, W. W. (1960). *The stages of economic growth, a non-communist manifesto*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Scheper-Hughes, N., & Lock, M. (1987). The mindful body: A prolegomenon to future work in medical anthropology. *Medical Anthropology Quarterly, 1*(1), 6–41.

Derrida, Jacques

Jacques Derrida (1930–2004), the Algerian-born French philosopher and literary theorist, is among the most influential—and controversial—thinkers of the 20th century. Although his work drew most of its concepts from philosophy, its impact on the humanities, including social theory and anthropology, has been profound.

Biography and Major Works

Derrida was born on July 15, 1930, in El-Biar, Algeria, into a Sephardic Jewish family. At the age of 19, he left for France and then, in 1952, entered the École Normale Supérieure in Paris. Here, he focused on the work of G. W. F. Hegel, Martin Heidegger, and Edmund Husserl. The influence of the last of these in Derrida's development is worth stressing; as appreciative as he was, Derrida came to see certain problems in the phenomenological approach—problems that, although they were represented differently in different eras and traditions, were deeply woven into philosophical history.

In his first published work, "'Genesis and Structure' and Phenomenology" (1959), Derrida takes up a detailed discussion of certain aspects of Husserl philosophy. Husserl advanced the idea that what we call "experience" is not simply given to consciousness, awaiting discovery by the human mind. He contends, rather, that things appear to the human mind by virtue of a definable horizon of perceptual expectations and conceptual matrices. Husserl specifies two tasks that need to be undertaken in order to provide an understanding of how human experience is constituted: first, that we provide an account of experiential phenomena in objective, structural terms and, second, that we explicate our experience of the phenomena with reference to the shifting horizon of our consciousness (through which the phenomena appear). Derrida points to a constitutive paradox in Husserl's schema, where the rigid distinction between the objective manifestations of phenomena and the shifting horizons of constitution cannot, in the final case, be upheld. Derrida contends, very simply, that every shift in horizon will alter the ostensible "objective" description of the constituted phenomenon, thereby rendering the distinction between objective and subjective markers of the constituted object unsustainable.

In 1962, Derrida translated and wrote an introduction to Husserl's 1939 text *The Origin of Geometry*. Just as Husserl took geometry as paradigmatic of Western conceptuality, an ideal of knowledge, Derrida saw Husserl's text as *itself* paradigmatic of certain oversights that constituted Western knowledge from the ancient Greeks onward.

Unlike other contemporary French philosophers like Michel Foucault, Derrida possessed as such no "methodology" that could be specified in advance. His analyses are invariably predicated on meticulous readings of the texts under consideration rather than examining them by reference to external criteria; he proceeds via a strict, albeit provisional, adherence to the concepts and logic of a host text to excavate what the text excludes (historically and conceptually) in order to constitute itself. That, in a nutshell, is what is called "deconstruction." Deconstruction is a kind of critique that is simultaneously immanent and transcendental: It is *immanent* in the sense that it draws its analytic resources largely from the text under consideration; it is *transcendental* in the Kantian sense of being a kind of analysis that attempts to show the conditions under which a certain form of thought or conceptuality is made possible in the first instance.

Deconstructive readings typically begin by rendering explicit conceptual oppositions on which a particular text is predicated; they move on to show a kind of precedence—*temporal* or *ontological*—where one term is supposedly prior. These oppositions are then shown to be fundamentally confused in some way—that what first looked like metaphysically grounded opposites end up being nothing of the sort. Derrida works to draw out *aporiae* (Greek for "impasses"), where concepts cannot be figured in terms of stable binary oppositions. So a text that repudiates a particular notion is "always already" unraveling; the axes of any analysis demand that an ostensibly repudiated term be thematized, and as soon as this is done, the repudiation is tacitly withdrawn.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology (Social Thought)

Although Derrida's disciplinary training and orientation was philosophical, his work has not been without significance for anthropology and sociocultural theory more generally. It is worth stressing that from his first series of publications, Derrida was preoccupied with anthropological literature and concepts, and many of his major texts reflect that fact—from a consideration of Claude Lévi-Strauss's conception of language and orality (in *Of Grammatology*) and ideas of kinship and genealogy (in *Glas*) to the idea of "the gift" (in *The Gift of Death* and *Given Time*).

In *Of Grammatology*, Derrida engages with a number of issues that have traditionally been within the disciplinary ambit of anthropology: issues of nature and culture, the relationship between language and prohibition, ethnocentrism, and the question of oral and literate cultures. Most apposite here was his influential discussion of Lévi-Strauss's account of the Nambikwara, an Indigenous people of Brazil. In *Tristes Tropiques*, Lévi-Strauss's self-declared Rousseauism leads him to a lamentation about the ruinous consequences of Western culture—perhaps even culture per se—on Indigenous peoples, whose natural existence has been corrupted by the imposition of alien forms of life and conceptuality, including that introduced by Lévi-Strauss himself. The anthropologist's elaboration of his own discomfort focuses on the issue of writing, and the implication of writing *itself* in colonial exploitation. While Derrida is careful to give credence to Lévi-Strauss's claims about the relationship of culture and writing to the exercise of violence, he detects in the anthropologist's musings itself a form of unwitting ethnocentrism that requires further examination: In his efforts to vindicate his subjects, Lévi-Strauss figures the Nambikwara as an absolute "Other." Furthermore, Lévi-Strauss's opposition between oral and literate culture—on which much of his analysis hangs—is constitutionally unstable: All of the features that he describes as being essential to writing (reproducibility, symbolism, etc.) are present in Nambikwara culture, including their *speech*. In this sense, Derrida contends, they are as possessed of "writing" as the culture that produced the printing press.

Later, in *Given Time: 1. Counterfeit Money*, Derrida took up an issue that had been central to anthropology, at least since the time of Marcel Mauss: the question of the gift. For Derrida, perhaps predictably, the gift becomes the sign under which certain analyses of *aporiae* appear; the gift here becomes a figure of the impossible. The essence of what we call a "gift" is that which is given without desire or expectation of reciprocation. That is, the gift is that which excepts or exempts itself from the economy of exchange, the logic of quid pro quo. Derrida maintains that although the idea of the gift animates the act of giving, the gift per se can only ever exist as a potential. The gift, as such, cannot exist but only ever assume the role of a kind of promise, as something *to be*. As soon as the gift is given and appreciation is expressed or pleasure

taken, it is inscribed in an economy of exchange. In "real time," Derrida argues, the gift "annuls itself." The gift is characteristic of a more general pattern of analysis and thematization that Derrida often undertook: It is one of those ideas that functions to actualize things without itself ever becoming actual—it animates something that it cannot, in principle, ever bring into existence.

Of course, these two areas of focus—writing and the gift—are not the only ones apposite to a consideration of the relevance of Derrida's work to social theory in anthropology. He has written, in various places, on racism, on the role of the humanities and philosophy, on forgiveness and cosmopolitanism, and on ideas of political sovereignty and animality. However, it is not just in these directly sociocultural and political areas that his work is or should be of interest to cultural theorists. Derrida's exhaustive and ongoing engagements with structuralism, phenomenology, and empiricism are highly relevant. In one form or another, anthropology and cultural theory have been—and continue to be—predicated on epistemologies that take one or more of these intellectual orientations as fundamental. And to the extent that this is the case, his work has relevance to sociocultural theory.

Derrida's Legacy

As should be expected, Derrida's early interventions were heavily shaped by the climate of French intellectual life in the 1960s. This was a time when structuralism was beginning to establish itself as a new paradigm of thought, a viable successor to phenomenology. Where phenomenology had tied knowledge to experience, structuralism had claimed that what we call "experience" is always mediated by the conceptual structures that precede it. In this sense, structuralism asserted that structure was prior to (experiential) phenomena. Derrida's sympathies with structuralism were real but were invariably tempered with a conceptual inheritance and mindset that owed much to Husserl and Heidegger, both of whom still accorded experience a primary place in their philosophical systems.

Given this imperative, one interpretation of Derrida's work is preeminently negative—he is conceived of as a undoer of ideas rather than as a maker of them. This is a complex issue that cannot be properly considered here; suffice it to say that part of how one sees the nature of Derrida's work depends on a cultural and intellectual context. Where in France he was seen as a philosopher writing in the phenomenological tradition, his work was picked up in the United States and became a key influence on the so-called Yale school of literary criticism in the late 1970s and early 1980s. The form of deconstruction in the United States was centered on questions of textual interpretation and not on either his phenomenological investigations or the explicitly ethical and political questions that came to characterize Derrida's thought from the 1980s onward. At the same time, another uptake of his work occurred in the United States. Gayatri Chakravorti Spivak, who had translated Derrida's *Of Grammatology*, wrote a foundational essay titled "Can the Subaltern Speak?" in 1988, which was deeply indebted to deconstructive themes and became foundational to postcolonial theory.

Derrida's legacy is one that is heavily contested and has been subject to fierce debate, sometimes even in the popular press. This seems unusual for a thinker whose writings demand a high degree of philosophical training—and undoubtedly patience—to follow. This, perhaps, has been itself one of the sources of controversy. The notorious conceptual density of his work, a digressive style, and a propensity to utilize forms of wordplay such as puns has polarized the intellectual community and, to some extent, the media.

For better or worse, Derrida's name has become synonymous with the noun *deconstruction*. Although there are worse metonyms, the reduction of a highly complex body of work to a single term is, in the case of Derrida, both ironic and unfortunate. By the time of his death, he had written well over 30 books. Furthermore, seminars of his are now in the process of translation. The legacy of his thought is very much an open question, as reliant on fluctuations in intellectual fashion as on any scale of inherent merit. Consistent with the tenor of his thought, there is good reason to believe that, about his own work at least, Derrida himself will not have the last word.

Chris Fleming

See also Foucault, Michel; Gift Exchange; Hegel, George W. F.; Husserl, Edmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Mauss, Marcel; Phenomenology; Structuralism

Further Readings

Derrida, J. (1973). Speech and Phenomena *and other essays on Husserl's theory of signs* (D. Allison, Trans.). Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.
———. (1976). *Of grammatology* (G. C. Spivak, Trans.). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.
———. (1978). *Edmund Husserl's "Origin of Geometry": An introduction* (J. P. Leavey Jr., Trans.). Pittsburgh, PA: Duquesne University Press. (Original work published 1962)
———. (1978). *Writing and difference* (A. Bass, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
———. (1981). *Dissemination* (B. Johnson, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
———. (1986). *Glas* (J. P. Leavey Jr. & R. Rand, Trans.). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.
———. (1992). *Given time: 1. Counterfeit money* (P. Kamuf, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago.
———. (1995). *The gift of death* (D. Wills, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Fleming, C., & O'Carroll, J. (2005). In memoriam: Jacques Derrida (1930–2004). *Anthropological Quarterly, 78*(1), 137–150.
Morris, R. C. (2007). Legacies of Derrida: Anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 36,* 355–389.

Descent Theory

See Alliance-Descent Debate

Descriptive Linguistics

Descriptive linguistics (henceforth DL) is the scientific endeavor to systematically describe the languages of the world in their diversity, based on the empirical observation of regular patterns in natural speech.

Definitions

The core principle of DL is that each language constitutes an autonomous system, which must be described in its own terms. Modern descriptive linguists carry out detailed empirical surveys on a language. After collecting language samples from speakers, they analyze the data so as to identify the components of the system and the principles that underlie its organization. Through its commitment to the empirical description of speakers' actual practices and to the diversity of languages as creations of linguistic communities, DL is closely allied with the social sciences.

The research agenda of DL can be contrasted with a number of related yet distinct approaches to language. *Anthropological linguistics* and *sociolinguistics* study, each in its own way, the interaction between cultural or social factors and language use; by contrast, DL focuses on the structural properties of the languages themselves. *Historical linguistics* studies the diachronic processes of language change, whereas DL focuses on the synchronic forms taken by a particular language at a given point in its development. The endeavor to compare individual languages, and the search for potential universals, is known as *linguistic typology*. DL may be understood as the preliminary step in the typological effort, the stage during which the facts of each individual language are established, before comparison can take place.

These subdisciplines of linguistics differ in their scientific goals, yet they essentially share with DL the same fundamental principles, including the emphasis on a bottom-up, empirical approach: All these approaches are complementary components of a single scientific agenda. By contrast, the principles of DL conflict more frontally with those of *formal linguistics*. Formal linguists—particularly proponents of generative grammar—claim that the facts of language are best explained by resorting to an apparatus of theoretical principles that are defined a priori, independently of the facts of particular languages. Descriptivists reject these aprioristic assumptions and require that all results be derived from the observable structures of the languages themselves.

History

A Long History of Language Description

The earliest known attempts to describe a language in a systematic way originated in ancient northwestern India, where the desire for a faithful transmission of the sacred scriptures known as the Vedas brought about the need to describe Sanskrit. The best known member of that grammatical tradition, commonly dated 5th century BCE, is Pānini—arguably the first descriptive linguist. Similar grammatical traditions were later established in other civilizations and gave birth to the first

grammars of Greek, Latin, Tamil, Chinese, Hebrew, and Arabic.

Due to the dominance of Latin in medieval Europe, most modern languages had to wait until the Renaissance to be described for the first time—for example, Spanish in 1492, French in 1532, and English in 1586—whether in the form of grammars or lexicons. At the same time, the languages spoken in the newly discovered Americas also became objects of description—often as a result of missionaries' religious agendas. Nahuatl, the language of the Aztecs, had its first grammar written in 1547 and Quechua, the language of the Inca Empire, in 1560.

While the discovery of new languages should have raised awareness of the world's linguistic diversity, such a realization was hampered by the persistent tendency to base grammatical descriptions on the categories that had been established for languages then deemed more prestigious. A good example is Diego Collado's explicit attempt in 1632 to describe Japanese, following the linguistic categories of Latin. Well into the 19th century, many languages were described using the terminology and grammatical concepts of European languages. As more and more languages of the world were explored and as the new discipline of linguistics started to develop in the mid-19th century—following the groundbreaking work of Alexander von Humboldt and the Brothers Grimm—a new approach to language description became necessary.

The Structuralist Revolution and the Theorization of Descriptive Linguistics

The main turning point in the history of DL was the structuralist revolution. During the first decade of the 20th century, the Swiss linguist Ferdinand de Saussure articulated a theory whereby a language is essentially a system of meaningful oppositions. Contrasts between forms (*signifiants*) are paired with contrasts between meanings (*signifiés*). For instance, "I feed my cat" and "I feed my dog" differ by the segments "cat" and "dog"; this contrast in form corresponds to differences in meaning. In English, the meanings of *cat* and *dog* are also defined by the set of words they compare with: *Cat* differs from *dog* but also from *tiger*, *lion*, *kitten*, and so on. Each segment gains meaning by virtue of its contrasts with other elements within the system of the particular language. Saussure's insights inspired the new methodological principle of DL: that each language be described on its own terms, based on the empirical observation of contrasts—or "structures"—internal to its system, rather than on categories imported from other languages.

During the same decade, anthropologists developed a sustainable interest in languages and their descriptions. The American Franz Boas placed the description of local languages at the core of his research on American peoples, initiating a long-lasting tradition in which linguistic description forms an integral part of ethnographic description. Boas also articulated a question about language that linguists had not raised: that of the relation between language and culture. Similar issues were later tackled by Boas's student Edward Sapir, who formulated the famous "linguistic relativity hypothesis," later consolidated by Benjamin Whorf. The Sapir-Whorf hypothesis, which concerns mutual influences between language, thought, and culture, still constitutes a significant domain of research.

It took a little longer before linguists followed ethnographers in their interest for human diversity. Saussure's theories had freed linguistic description from the mould of Indo-European patterns, yet Saussure himself worked on Indo-European languages. In the wake of Boas and Sapir, the attention to language diversity became central to another prominent figure of linguistic structuralism, the American Leonard Bloomfield. While Bloomfield became famous for fully developing structuralist theories, he also dedicated his work to American languages, particularly Ojibwe and the Algonquian family, based on firsthand data collected in the field.

Equipped with the appropriate theories and methods, increasingly aware of the scientific and human heritage embedded in linguistic diversity, descriptivists undertook to study as many languages as possible, across all continents. With about 6,000 languages in the world today and only a fraction of them adequately described, the task is colossal—but urgent. Colonization and globalization have already sealed the fate of thousands of languages, and it is estimated that half of today's languages will disappear in the 21st century. In response to this threat, some linguists have developed thorough techniques of language documentation. They emphasize the need for extensive corpora and high-quality sound and video recordings, so as to keep a sound print

of each threatened language. The *documentation* of languages does not, however, replace the scientific insight provided by their *description*.

Principles and Methods of Linguistic Description

The first step toward describing a language is data collection. Most descriptive linguists carry out fieldwork in a linguistic community and record samples of speech from different speakers, embodied in different speech genres: narratives, daily conversation, poetry, and so on. Although spontaneous, naturalistic speech is the ideal, in practice, linguists also carry out *elicitation*, by asking speakers for translations, testing specific sentences, and checking pronunciation or grammar rules.

This patient process can span several years and results in the creation of a corpus, a body of reference materials, against which hypotheses can be tested. Eventually, this analysis results in a published grammar, which spells out most of the rules of the language. Following the "Boasian trilogy," a complete language description includes a grammar, a dictionary, and a collection of texts.

In line with the structuralist agenda, the linguist analyzes the corpus in such a way that the language's own structures emerge from a system-internal analysis rather than being imported from another language or imposed via theoretical assumptions. These internal structures define *emic* categories: categories whose identification is based on the internal properties of a particular system. The terms *etic* and *emic*, whose contrast is central to structural linguistics and to structuralism in general, originate in the study of phonology; they allude to its central contrast between *phonetic* and *phonemic*. While phonetics deals with sounds and how they are produced, phonology deals with the way sounds are grouped together as meaningful, contrastive units (phonemes) in a given language.

Thus, consider the three different sounds noted, [t], [ɾ], [ʔ], in the International Phonetic Alphabet. In English, these sounds are three dialectal variants of a single consonant spelled *t*. Thus, in the word *better*, British Received Pronunciation has a sound [t], [bɛtə]; but American and Australian dialects typically pronounce this word with a "flap," [bɛɾə]; and the modern dialect of London has a "glottal stop" (the sound in *uh-oh*), [bɛʔə]. In spite of their phonetic difference, in English, these three sounds constitute variants of a single phoneme, which linguists will represent as /t/. The phonetic variation between [t], [ɾ], and [ʔ] does not affect the meaning of the word *better*; all three pronunciations can be subsumed under a single underlying form, /bɛtə/. In other terms, even though they differ from the (*phon*)*etic* point of view, these three sounds all instantiate a single (*phon*)*emic* category in the system of this particular language.

Crucially, while this analysis is correct for English, it may not hold for another language. For example, Tahitian contrasts the meanings of *pata* [pata] "sling," *para* [paɾa] "yellowed," and *pa'a* [paʔa] "carapace"; these oppositions are evidence that within the Tahitian system, the three *etic* units (sounds) [t], [ɾ], and [ʔ] reflect three separate *emic* units (phonemes), /t/, /ɾ/, and /ʔ/, each endowed with its own contrastive value. Every system cuts up the phonetic space differently: Where English has a single category, Tahitian has three.

A similar approach governs the exploration of semantic categories. Every word in a lexicon constitutes an *emic* category—that is, a set of potential referents—and this category is language specific. This is well exemplified by kin terms. In English, *father* refers to F alone, while *uncle* groups together FB (father's brother) and MB (mother's brother). But in Dalabon, an Australian language, *bulu* groups together F and FB, while *kardak* refers to MB. Similar observations would apply to other words in the lexicon; words cut up the semantic space in different ways across languages. The structural analysis of the lexicon parallels the one illustrated above in phonology.

Finally, the same structuralist method applies in the realm of grammar. To take a brief example, one must not take it for granted that all languages distribute their words into the same syntactic categories or "word classes"—such as nouns, verbs, and adjectives. In Teanu, a language of the Solomon Islands, the word meaning "beautiful" is an adjective, but "clever" is a verb, despite its English translation, because it behaves like other verbs of the system. Some languages do not even have a separate "adjective" class, because in their systems, the equivalent of English adjectives consistently behaves like verbs (e.g., Northern Iroquoian languages) or like nouns (e.g., Warlpiri, central Australia). While some languages have three major word classes, others may have

fewer or more. Languages cut up the "grammatical space," as it were, along different lines.

Just like the units of phonology or of the lexicon, the categories of grammar can only be described accurately by observing how they behave within their own system. The same principles and methods apply throughout language description, whether to establish the units of the system (the categories) or their behavior (the rules).

Conclusion

Every language embodies a different way to perceive and categorize reality. The aim of DL, as a discipline, is to capture that linguistic diversity before it can be explained and interpreted. Of course, this diversity is in turn balanced by a number of properties that are shared by many or even all languages. Based on the description of individual languages, it is then the task of *linguistic typology* to gauge empirically how similar and diverse our languages can be.

Alex François and Maïa Ponsonnet

See also Bloomfield, Leonard; Boas, Franz; Comparative Method; Generative Grammar; Sapir, Edward; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Sociolinguistics; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further reading

Ameka, F. K., Dench, A., & Evans, N. (Eds.). (2006). *Catching language: The standing challenge of grammar writing* (Trends in linguistics: Studies and monographs). Berlin, Germany: Walter de Gruyter.

Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*

The term *diffusionism* normally is used to characterize a paradigm within anthropology and the social sciences that aims at writing a history of (early) mankind by reference to similarities between the present cultures of different regions. This approach rests on the assumption that cultural innovations have been rare in the past and their occurrence in distant regions normally is caused by culture contact and associated processes of diffusion that bridge even long distances. Diffusionists thus deny that parallel evolution or independent invention took place to any great extent throughout history. The term *hyperdiffusionism* designates an even more radical position characterized by the idea that all cultures originated only from a single culture. Furthermore, the adherents to the "culture circle" theory (*Kulturkreislehre*) of German ethnology assumed that the complex cultural picture of the present is the result of the continuous intermixture of a small number of "primary cultures."

The relevance of this complex of theories for the present debates, for reasons that are discussed below, is rather limited. By World War I, diffusionism had been challenged by the newly emerging functionalist school of thought of Bronisław Malinowski (1884–1942) and Alfred R. Radcliffe-Brown (1881–1955). In the 1890s, Franz Boas (1858–1942) rejected the great narratives of both evolutionists and diffusionists. He argued that cultural change had been influenced by many different sources. The critique of Boas and his followers was compelling enough so that most of these concepts lost credibility and ultimately were abandoned. Nevertheless, at least in the German tradition of ethnological research, certain elements of this kind of thinking have survived until the present. And with the more recent "spatial turn" and globalization studies during the past 2 decades, at least some of the elements of this paradigm have been revived.

Diffusion and Diffusionism

Hardly any other theory in anthropology and in the social sciences has such a bad reputation as *diffusionism*. Indeed, the term is used in a pejorative sense by many scholars. This comes as a surprise since diffusion itself, which means the transfer of ideas (technologies, languages, religions) and objects between different places and cultures, is a process familiar to all societies, ancient and modern, and as such is largely uncontroversial. In cultural anthropology, (trans) cultural diffusion was conceptualized by Alfred L. Kroeber, among others, as a process involving three successive phases: (1) the presentation of a new element, (2) its acceptance, and (3) its integration into the new culture, which may be combined with a modification of that element. Diffusion in this sense, which may be caused by exchange/trade, war, or other forms of intercultural contact, is opposed to *migration*, which means the transfer not only of ideas and objects but also of people

themselves. In a broader sense, the term *diffusion* sometimes also is used to include migration as well. Migration is the main process in what L. Cavalli-Sforza has called "demic diffusion."

The problem started with the shift from diffusion to diffusionism. The diffusionists among the early anthropologists claimed to be able to reconstruct the history of mankind mainly by reference to the processes of diffusion. They held that innovations of all kinds normally were made only once (or at least only at a small number of different places) and that these innovations later on were transferred to other places and cultures. In this way, starting from the study of the modern spatial distribution of culture traits, it should be possible to reconstruct human history—that is, to write a history even for those periods for which written sources were not available. The basic idea behind this concept was that cultures permanently influence each other and the amount of similarities between them can be taken as a measure for the intensity of the contact. The direction of the influences thereby has often been regarded as a function of the complexity of the cultures involved: More developed cultures influence and ultimately transform less developed cultures.

Diffusionism's bad reputation stems from the fact that its proponents today are regarded as armchair anthropologists, who spent most of their lifetime at home studying travel reports and museum objects collected by others. This is not true in all cases, but there is no doubt that the kind of anthropology that was practiced in the late 19th and early 20th centuries was, on the one hand, strongly object oriented and, on the other, with regard to the value judgments communicated, at least implicitly racist. With regard to the subsequent developments within anthropology, which were characterized by a shift toward contextual analyses of rather small groups that were based on long and intensive field studies, this kind of anthropology quickly came to look rather old-fashioned.

Historical Ethnology in Germany

One other important point about diffusionism worth mentioning is that no other theory in anthropology is so strongly connected to Germany and the German-speaking countries. It is mainly the product of a school of historical ethnology that developed around the turn of the 19th century in Germany. It was scholars such as Friedrich Ratzel (1844–1904), Leo Frobenius (1873–1938), and Fritz Graebner (1877–1934) who developed the terminology and the methodical principles of the approach, which later became known as *Kulturkreislehre* (culture circle theory).

By challenging the dominant evolutionary thinking of their time, these scholars ultimately aimed at a universal history. Older research focused on a "natural history" of man, which included the search for universals. This was replaced by a new kind of historicism. This has to do with the fact that "historiography" in Germany during the 19th century had become a leading academic discipline that exercised an important influence on the academic debates even in other fields. But the subjects in this new kind of historical enquiry were not important rulers and dynasties, as in the work of Leopold von Ranke (1795–1886), for example, but "cultures" and "culture circles," understood as specific historical combinations of a number of culture traits. Furthermore, despite a critical distance from evolutionist ideas, some of the elements of evolutionary thinking were retained, such as the postulate of growing complexity and the existence of cultural strata.

An early proponent of this kind of thinking was Friedrich Ratzel (1844–1904), who was trained as a zoologist and a geographer before he entered the field of anthropology. With his *Anthropogeographie* (Anthropogeography, two volumes, 1882 and 1891), he aimed at creating a science dealing with the conditional nature of man. Influenced both by Charles Darwin's (1809–1882) theory of evolution and by Ernst Haeckel's (1834–1919) ecology, he was interested in explaining cultural constellations from the perspective of their natural and geographical conditions. He regarded mankind similarly to plants and animals as dependent on adaptation to the environment.

At the same time, Ratzel was interested in cultural processes on a global scale, with special reference to spatial processes like migration and diffusion. Therefore, he looked for regularities ("laws") in the culture process and thus became the founder of "geopolitics" (*geopolitik*). He looked at world history as a process of the development and displacement of centers and peripheries and thereby anticipated ideas quite similar to those expressed in the world-systems theory of the American sociologist Immanuel Wallerstein in the 1970s. Furthermore,

given his basic idea that one could read time (history) in the spatial distributions of cultural elements, Ratzel anticipated a central idea of the later *Kulturkreislehre* school of diffusionism. However, culture circle scholars ignored Ratzel's ecological ideas insofar as its members regarded "culture" as something independent from the natural world.

Inspired by Ratzel, the German ethnologist Leo Frobenius (1873–1938), who was involved in extensive research in Africa in 1897–1898, delineated several *Kulturkreise* (culture areas) exhibiting similar traits. These traits he supposed to have been spread by diffusion or invasion. Frobenius saw cultures as living organisms and tried to reconstruct their worldview, which he saw as primarily determined by economic factors.

November 19, 1904, is often regarded as the birthday of the *Kulturkreislehre*. On this day, Fritz Graebner (1877–1934) and Bernhard Ankermann (1859–1943) presented two related papers, "Kulturkreise und Kulturschichten in Ozeanien" (Culture Circles and Culture Layers in Oceania) and "Kulturkreise und Kulturschichten in Afrika" (Culture Circles and Culture Layers in Africa), at a meeting of the Berliner Gesellschaft für Anthropologie, Ethnologie, und Urgeschichte (Berlin Society for Physical Anthropology, Ethnology, and Prehistory), in which they demonstrated the principles of what later became known as the "culture historical method." In the following years, it was especially Graebner, trained as a historian, who tried to refine the methodological principles of this new paradigm. In his influential 1911 book *Methode der Ethnologie* (Method of Ethnology), he formulated the central principles of the so-called culture historical method. Three criteria were central to Graebner's method to determine the historic-genetic relationship between distinct cultures:

1. *The criterion of form (Formkriterium):* The occurrence of the same forms of objects in different regions points to a common origin of the respective cultures.
2. *The criterion of quantity (Quantitätskriterium):* The more formal the correspondences between two cultures, the stronger is their historic-genetic connection.
3. *The criterion of continuity (Kontinuitätskriterium):* A historical connection between two distant cultures with a number of similarities is even more probable if the cultural elements characteristic of them are also found in the spaces between both cultures, as if a *Kulturbrücke* (culture bridge) existed.

From Ethnology to Prehistoric Archaeology

Larger syntheses of universal history that depended on these methodological principles were published by Fathers Wilhelm Schmidt (1868–1954) and Wilhelm Koppers (1886–1961), the main representatives of the so-called Vienna school. Both were members of the Catholic monastic order Societas Verbi Divini (Divine Word Missionaries). Because the Societas Verbi Divini had representatives all over the world, Schmidt and Koppers were able to use cross-cultural data collected by members of their order. Their ideas were carried on by the prehistorian Oswald Menghin (1888–1973), who in his *Weltgeschichte der Steinzeit* (World History of the Stone Age), from 1931, aimed to prove the validity of the historical reconstructions of Schmidt and Koppers by reference to archaeology. He connected special complexes of prehistoric material with special culture circles on a worldwide scale.

Methodologically, Menghin relied on the work of the German prehistorian Gustaf Kossinna (1858–1931), who parallel to and independently of Graebner had developed a concept of archaeological culture areas (*Kulturprovinzen*). For Kossinna, spatially delimited "archaeological cultures" represented ancient peoples, like the Germans or Celts.

Despite the strong nationalistic and even racist undertones in his writing, Kossinna's ideas were later introduced to the Anglophone world by the prehistorian V. Gordon Childe (1892–1957), who in his syntheses of Old World archaeology combined elements of diffusionistic and evolutionistic thinking. Contrary to Kossinna, Childe promoted the idea of *ex oriente lux* ("light from the East"). He believed that the early civilizations of Western Asia and Egypt had a deep influence on the prehistoric cultures of Europe. The central motive in his book *The Dawn of European Civilization* (1925) is the inspiration of European barbarism by Oriental civilization. But, contrary to other diffusionists, Childe always emphasized the creative way in which innovations had been adapted in new contexts.

For Childe, no contradiction exists between evolution and diffusion. Diffusion is not an automatic process comparable to the spread of infectious disease. Instead, he thought of diffusion as possible only when the receiving society has reached a comparable stage of development as the giving society, a point that was made by some of the 19th-century founders of evolutionism, such as Lewis Henry Morgan (1818–1881) and E. B. Tylor (1832–1917).

From "Culture History" to "Ethnohistory"

Unlike archaeologists such as Kossinna, German ethnologists even under the influence of the "volkisch movement" did not adopt the search for ethnic individualities. Instead, their focus of interest rested mainly on "culture" as a reality by itself. The immediate causes of cultural phenomena were thought to be other cultural phenomena. Convergent developments in different cultures were regarded as theoretically possible, but in practice, scholars remained cautious. In case of doubt, they were inclined to think that the relevant historical connections responsible for formal correspondences had not yet been detected.

After 1930—apart from Schmidt and Koppers—most German ethnologists abandoned the ideas of the *Kulturkreislehre*, but they retained a general historical-diffusionist orientation. Thus, "ethnology" continued to be regarded as that part of history that focused on primitive people. In practice, however, scholars were more cautious and avoided larger syntheses. Instead, the focus shifted to smaller regions with good ethnographic documentation. Methodology and source criticism were refined. Consequently, attempts at writing a universal history were replaced by a so-called ethnohistorical approach (*Ethnohistorie*). By reference to literary sources, pictures, oral traditions, as well as objects, ethnohistorians aim to reconstruct cultural change on a local or regional basis.

Hyperdiffusionism

"Hyperdiffusionism" is represented mainly by the work of Grafton Elliot Smith (1871–1937) and that of his pupil William James Perry (1869–1949). Neither were anthropologists or archaeologists. Smith was an anatomist who in 1900 took the Chair of Anatomy at the Government Medical School at Cairo, where he extensively studied prehistoric and historic skeletal materials. Later, he returned to England, where he held chairs at Manchester and at University College London. Two things most interested Smith: (1) mummification and (2) megalithic monuments. Smith became obsessed with the idea that the pyramids and mastabas of ancient Egypt were the prototypes of the megalithic monuments found all over the world. He could not believe that mummification and megalithic architecture could have been invented more than once. So he concluded that both practices had diffused from ancient Egypt all over the world. Perry, professor of comparative religion at the University of Manchester, used ethnographic data to elaborate these ideas. Thus, Smith and Perry saw small groups of people setting out, mainly by sea, from Egypt and colonizing and civilizing the world. Unlike the German diffusionists, the hyperdiffusionists did not care very much about method but tried to make all the historical facts fit their theory.

Today, scholars agree that, since human minds tend to work in a similar manner regardless of context, many cultural innovations, such as agriculture, monumental architecture, and writing, probably developed independently in various parts of the world. To amateur archaeologists all over the world, on the other hand, hyperdiffusionism still remains attractive mainly due to the simple explanations it offers for cultural change. For example, the Norwegian adventurer Thor Heyerdahl (1914–2002) gained huge popular and commercial success by sailing from Peru to Easter Island on an Inca-style raft to prove that Polynesia could have been settled from South America and by crossing the Atlantic Ocean on an Egyptian-style raft to prove the Egyptian origins of a pre-Columbian civilization.

Diffusionism in America

Diffusionism in America was centered on the "culture area" concept. The term refers to relatively small geographical regions containing the contiguous distribution of similar cultural elements. It was first used by O. T. Mason, who identified 18 American culture areas. His ideas were elaborated by scholars such as Alfred Kroeber, Robert Lowie, and Clark Wissler (1870–1947). In *The American Indian* (1917), Wissler explored the regional clustering of cultural traits and the relation between culture and the physical environment. As a curator

at the American Museum of Natural History in New York City, Wissler arranged collections and exhibits according to this spatial classification.

An important difference with the German diffusionists is that in Wissler's culture area concept the distribution of cultural traits is primarily seen as the result of an adaptation to environmental conditions. This idea became important to much subsequent anthropological and archaeological research in America, especially the New Archaeology founded in the 1960s by Lewis Binford (1931–2011). At the same time, Binford and his school criticized diffusionists for their atomistic view of culture—the idea of diffusion was replaced in European archaeology by systems thinking as represented, for example, in Colin Renfrew's "culture process model." Despite an interest in spatial patterns, the emphasis of the culture process model was on local evolution in explaining cultural change. In the 1990s, scholars like Andrew Sherratt (1946–2006) developed the idea of "punctuation," or rapid, revolutionary change, and the associated notion of "centricity," a concept that includes the idea of diffusion. More recently, the poststructuralist rediscovery of the significance of materiality and interculturality has opened up new perspectives for dealing with such issues, without repeating the earlier mistakes.

The flaws of the diffusionist approaches consisted, above all, in the object-like approach toward culture, an obsession with origins, and the concentration on abstract "influences" and "flows" of cultural traits. But combined with the more recent concepts of agency and of practice, these flaws may be overcome. They may help direct our interest to the actual contextualization of cultural forms and to possible shifts of meaning.

Ulrich Veit

See also Binford, Lewis R.; Cultural Transmission; Culture Area Approach; Ethnohistory; Frobenius, Leo; Graebner, Fritz; Historical Particularism; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lowie, Robert; Smith, Grafton Elliot; Wallerstein, Immanuel

Further Readings

Ankermann, B. (1905). Kulturkreise und kulturschichten in Afrika [Culture circles and culture strata in Africa]. *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie, 37,* 54–90.

Binford, L. R., & Binford, S. R. (1968). *New perspectives in archaeology.* Chicago, IL: Aldine.

Childe, V. G. (1957). *The dawn of European civilization* (6th ed.). London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul. (Original work published 1925)

Daniel, G. (1964). *The idea of prehistory.* Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin Books.

Graebner, F. (1905). Kulturkreise und kulturschichten in Ozeanien [Culture circles and culture strata in Oceania]. *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie, 37,* 28–53.

———. (1911). *Methode der ethnologie* [The method of ethnology] (Kulturgeschichtliche Bibliothek, Series 1, Vol. 1). Heidelberg, Germany: Winter.

Kroeber, A. L. (1940). Stimulus diffusion. *American Anthropologist, 42*(1), 1–20.

Menghin, O. (1931). *Weltgeschichte der steinzeit* [World history of the stone age]. Vienna, Austria: Schroll.

Schmidt, W., & Koppers, W. (1937). *Handbuch der methode der kulturhistorischen ethnologie* [Handbook on the method of the culture-historical ethnology]. Münster, Germany: Aschendorff.

Sherratt, A. G. (1997). Climatic cycles and behavioral revolutions: The emergence of modern humans and the beginning of farming. *Antiquity, 71,* 271–287.

Wissler, C. (1917). *The American Indian: An introduction to the anthropology of the New World.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Discourse Theory

Discourse theory denotes broadly the study of aspects of language and communication distinct from linguistic structure. Most theories of discourse nonetheless examine the relation of language to structure. In fact, during the 20th century, many debates in anthropology, and the social and human sciences more generally, centered on the relation between the discursive and structural aspects of social life. Through these debates, and especially through the scholarship that critiqued structural anthropology and linguistics, poststructural approaches to discourse have taken root in anthropological theory and methodology. Poststructuralist approaches continue to influence the trajectories of anthropological thinking about discourse. This entry first describes the structuralist account of signs, associated especially with Ferdinand de Saussure, and then recaps some poststructuralist critiques. The critiques reviewed are from influential French theorists, and

then from the linguistic anthropological tradition that maintains closer ties to linguistic structuralism.

Discourse in Structural Linguistic Theory

Until the 1980s, the term *discourse* was used in anthropology with the same meaning common in structural linguistic analysis. Linguistic theory takes the sentence as the limit of grammatical relations and, in contrast, uses discourse to denote the manner in which words, expressions, and sentences are put to use in a particular context to produce meaningful communicative behavior. "Sentences" here are understood as abstracted from their context, while the use of linguistic units in context is generally called an "utterance." The utterance can be a single word or a sentence long, or a very long, complex communicative form, like a whole book. Discourse utterances are understood to have principles of coherence that are distinct from the grammatical coherence of sentences. Understanding how an utterance coheres involves considering how the parts of an utterance relate to each other and the context. In linguistics, the terms *discourse analysis* or *discourse function* are generally used for these issues.

The distinction between grammatical sentence and discourse utterance is based on the highly influential work of the Swiss linguist Ferdinand de Saussure. Saussure's final courses were published posthumously by his students in 1916 as the *Cours de linguistique générale* (*Course in General Linguistics*). These lectures are still considered essential for understanding language as an abstract structure (*langue* in French), including the symbolic quality of producing meaning. Saussure distinguished the study of linguistic structure from speaking in context that uses the signs of language (*parole* in French). The theoretical dualism of *langue* and *parole* (or structure and use) is one of many dualisms that were then incorporated into anthropology's interpretation of structuralism. Another of Saussure's important dualisms is the idea that, when abstracted from contexts of use, a language can be described as a stable and closed system, a state that exists at a single point in time or "synchrony." Synchrony is opposed to "diachrony"—that is, the changes that happen to that language between different synchronic states. For Saussure, modeling a language's structure as a synchronic system is an analytic construct. He characterized this construct as "virtual," meaning this state does not exist in sociohistorical reality, where change and variation are constant.

A final important dualism for Saussure was that linguistic structure is a bipartite system of differences, with basic units he called signs. Each sign involves a form, or signifier, and a related concept, or signified. The English phonic form *tree* is an example of a signifier, while its signified is found by seeing how this form functions in sentences (not in utterances). In linguistic analysis, the signified is very different from a dictionary definition of a word. In fact, in this abstract analysis, the signified is discovered by finding the difference marked by the sign, in its ability to combine with other forms. For instance, the signified of "tree" might be roughly expressed as "common noun, count noun, inanimate," and so on. Saussure was interested in debunking various theories that posited that signifiers were somehow naturally related or determined by what they signified, which led him to emphasize that the relation between signifier and signified is "arbitrary." By "arbitrary," he meant that the system of differences between signifier and signified is entirely a social convention, one that works because there is a group of speakers that continue to use it in their daily discourse. Due to the complexity of the system, Saussure doubted that the group of speakers could actually gain awareness of it in such a way as to change it intentionally. In his analytical construct, human intentionality and agency, like concrete events of interaction (*parole*), remained outside the description of linguistic structure proper. This way of constructing the object of linguistics meant that discourse remained a residual or external phenomenon.

In anthropology, the question has been whether these dualistic assumptions for modeling a synchronic structure can be applied to the study of other salient cultural patterns, including discursive ones. Saussure himself thought that his theory of abstract *langue* could be a model for studying utterances. Most famously, in the mid-20th century, Claude Lévi-Strauss applied some of Saussure's methodology to analyze myth (as well as to analyze kinship). With myth, Lévi-Strauss recognized that he was dealing with an object distinct from *langue*, and yet he sought to set out the basic units of myth as a system of differences. Such studies became a touchstone for structural anthropology. An early

critic of this structural anthropology was Clifford Geertz, who sought to consider "symbols" and their signification within a thicker description of action in context. Although Geertz did not explicitly theorize "discourse," in a famous article on the Balinese cockfight, he argued for interpreting cultural performances like scholars view a text (like a work of literature). This symbolic anthropology came just as the poststructural notion of discourse was to introduce a wholesale critique of how structuralism posited the relation between *langue* and *parole*. Geertz's arguments about symbols were themselves critiqued by others using French poststructural theories of discourse, notably Talal Asad, for insufficient attention to power and for circumscribing the symbolic realm of culture to a limited set of phenomena. Geertz's approach to text was also critiqued by linguistic anthropologists, notably in a book called *Natural Histories of Discourse* (1996), for ignoring cultural notions of how texts are constituted and how such notions are related to discursive interaction and language.

Poststructuralist Approaches to Discourse

Part of the goal of poststructuralist critiques and the turn to writing about "discourse" instead of "language" (as a structure) is to develop an approach to communicative practice that does not assume that the speaker, or speaking subject, is autonomous and self-constituting. In discourse theory, attributing many voices to social groups and even individuals, and arguing that these voices are constituted socially, seeks to replace the premise that speakers have an interior self from which they draw their intentions, and that this self is fully constituted prior to the act of communication. This premise is often traced back to philosophical traditions associated with René Descartes and Immanuel Kant, among others. In such philosophies, language could provide a model of the rationality (or logos) that distinguishes humanity from other beings.

Structuralism, including its linguistic and anthropological versions, already moved away from some of these assumptions by suggesting that communication is shaped by a social rather than an individual phenomenon, namely, the system of *langue*. However, structuralism also reiterates other assumptions, by treating an abstract system as the key rationality to understanding the discursive production of meaning. Furthermore, structuralism tends to depict this abstract system as homogeneous across the social or cultural group under study.

In the 20th century, several critiques of these structuralist assumptions took root. Poststructuralist critiques generally question what allows sign systems to exist, and emphasize a greater degree of heterogeneity in how meaning is produced. They promote a view of speakers or participants not solely as initiators but also as the results of discourse. Such a change in analytic perspective has led to new theories of power and polity, as well as to new discussions of how various social categories, like gender, sexuality, race, ethnicity, and class, become palpable in and through discourse. In anthropology, French poststructuralism and linguistic anthropology have both been used to tap into such changes in the study of discourse.

Perhaps the scholar with the greatest influence on anthropological theories of discourse is the French poststructuralist philosopher and historian Michel Foucault. Foucault's work explores how discourse is embedded in sites of knowledge production and helps produce subjects. He argues against conceiving of the history of knowledge-production as a result of the actions of scientists and scholars. He insists instead that subjects are an effect of discourse and that they are produced in a set of historically coalescing sites, or discursive formations. This approach underlies Foucault's concept of power. He moves away from stating that power is in the hands of a sociological group (e.g., economic or political elites) or a social organization (e.g., the police). Instead, he understands power as diffuse, stabilized through the discursive formation of knowing subjects and their known objects. Probably his most famous example is the confession, a discursive practice where a person must tell all his or her transgressions to a confessor; both confessor and confessing subject are formed in the act of giving the confession. The confession as a type of communicative act is very important to Foucault's theory of contemporary sexuality. Although the confession started as a religious institution, according to Foucault, it was dispersed, and now versions are found in psychological and medical institutions, as well as at other powerful sites. This dispersion creates ever more situations where speakers must produce such knowledge of themselves. Foucault posited that the increasing discourse about sexuality in the 19th century was part of this

process of disseminating the confession as a way of knowing ourselves as sexual subjects.

The confession is an example of what Foucault calls, in *The Archaeology of Knowledge* (*L'Archéologie du Savoir*, 1969, in French), a "statement." In explaining the statement, Foucault shows that his concept of discourse is developed under a structuralist influence. Just as Saussure sought to produce the concept of *langue* by setting out certain methodological premises (like the abstraction from context and synchrony), Foucault also seeks to describe discourse as an analytic construct. Roughly, a statement is a repeated kind of act that relates subjects and objects, and it can be detected (not unlike *langue*) by looking for regularities in discourse across multiple kinds of powerful institutions. In *The Order of Things* (*Les Mots et les Choses: Une Archéologie des Sciences Humaines*, 1966, in French), for example, he finds such regularities in the way three fields of knowledge—(1) grammar, (2) natural history, and (3) political economy—describe and classify their objects in the emergence of the human sciences. Even though these fields of knowledge do not necessarily refer to each other explicitly, the forms of the statements made within them are comparable. Foucault is then interested to show the rules that allow for the formation of a statement—that is, what can be said, what cannot be said, who can and cannot do the saying, and so forth. Eschewing narrating history as cause and effect, his description produces the effect of making his object seem outside specific events, in ways that are analogous to the description of *langue*.

Another influential French poststructuralist, whose impact on anthropology is more muted, is the philosopher Jacques Derrida. He critiques Saussure's structuralism by questioning the stability of the meaning of a sign, given that it is always available for use in another event of communication. Derrida calls the signifier's unstable quality *iterability*, by which he refers to the impossibility of establishing what is both unique about a singular use of a sign and the potential for its repetition. His methodology for producing an analysis of the inherent instability of signs is called deconstruction, and it is widely influential in arguments about why a text can never achieve a truly stable meaning. Derrida is also influential in debates about *performativity*—that is, the theory associated with the philosopher John Austin that an utterance does not simply reflect a preexisting world but actually helps create social worlds.

A final influential French poststructuralist is the anthropologist and sociologist Pierre Bourdieu. He famously critiqued the structuralist emphasis on communicative behavior that can be described by formal rules, which he felt gave way to a misrecognition of the social fields that regulate discursive practice. Preferring to speak of embodied dispositions rather than rules, Bourdieu emphasized the social process by which a standard language arises, conferring legitimacy on the actors who can speak it, while excluding others. Despite this social process of producing legitimacy, Bourdieu described how many powerful social institutions, and especially educational institutions, misrecognize the standard as the "correct" or "efficient" way of speaking rather than a variety of speaking that is associated with powerful speakers.

The work of Foucault, Derrida, and Bourdieu—and others of their time—has affected the work of many anthropologists interested in discourse. This work helps anchor anthropological approaches to discursive phenomena and enables an examination of shifting and complex signifiers in their fields of communicative practice.

Another tradition of studying discourse in anthropology is linguistic anthropology, which generally maintains a much closer dialogue with linguistic structuralism. Sometimes also engaging with French theories, linguistic anthropology has produced its own version of poststructuralism, attempting to both integrate and question the assumptions of Saussure's theory of *langue*. Much of this critique has been developed through a careful reinterpretation of the writings of the Russian literary critic and philosopher Mikhail Bakhtin, as well as a reevaluation of sign relations in light of the work of the American philosopher Charles S. Peirce.

Prior to the Second World War, in American cultural anthropology, linguistics was seen as a key but separate area of the study of humanity. The program for the study of language was initiated by Franz Boas and his students, who developed ideas about structure similar to Saussure's. Boas's students were generally occupied with the description of lesser studied languages, especially those of the Indigenous peoples of the Americas. In these investigations, the Boasians also contributed to the question of how linguistic structure can bias perception of the world. Such a bias was linked to what Boas called "secondary rationalizations"—that is, native explanations that

are insufficient to account for linguistic (or other) facts. Apart from this, they attended to discourse mostly through producing collections of texts, such as myths.

After World War II, criticism of the basic assumptions of linguistics led to new directions within linguistic anthropology. Quantitative sociolinguistics, associated especially with William Labov, an American linguist, studied the demographic variation in speaking across populations, especially in industrialized and postindustrialized societies. This school continues to challenge the idea of a unified grammar within a "language," by showing the complex heterogeneity of social and regional dialects that direct structural change. At the border of sociology and anthropology, Erving Goffman helped initiate the study of the small-scale dynamics of interpersonal interaction. His work explores how participants produce particular social identities, and even shift between identities, as they interact with one another. From within anthropology, Dell Hymes and John Gumperz spearheaded a cross-cultural examination of how utterances are shaped by rules different from those of grammar, a project that focused attention on the relation of discourse to its context. In this vein, Michael Silverstein introduced the tripartite sign theory of Peirce as the basis for the study of language, which folds into it insights developed under Saussure's bipartite theory of signs, which points or shows contiguity to its object. This theory has been enormously influential in reframing the study of how signifiers relate to one another and to their context. The study initiated by these postwar figures has led to a careful analysis of transcripts of discursive interaction, both everyday and ritual, as a means to deepening our understanding of how signs function.

These traditions point to the difficulty of theorizing discourse due to the variation found in language use, and in the social and cultural conditions that inform context. Once linguistic structure or analogous theories are shown to be insufficient to account for the "structures" found in the empirical analysis of discourse, the questions that emerge are what stabilizes the sign relation and how to account for the social variation in the use of signs. Two significant trends in linguistic anthropology seek to answer these questions and undermine basic structuralist dualisms. First, linguistic anthropologists consider how rationalizations about language, called language ideologies, constitute one means by which conscious, directed social projects affect sign relations. No group of speakers is without ideologies about how they and others speak, and these ideas mediate social relations that are crystallized and transformed through language use. This reflexive attention to signs can lead to attempts by powerful organizations to control the parameters of meaning, as (to draw on the above example from Bourdieu) in the dissemination of a prestigious linguistic standard through schooling. Linguistic anthropological studies of nationalism, gender, race, and other social categories consistently show the importance of language ideologies in the functioning of institutions. Structuralist dualisms like *langue* and *parole*, or language structure and use, are thus shown to be in relation with a third dimension, ideology. These studies also challenge Saussure's notion that structure remains out of the realm of conscious social action. Many have shown, for example, that grammatical elements of languages—although imperfectly understood by speakers—have nonetheless changed along grooves that are shaped by consciousness. A brief example is the elimination of the informal "thou"/formal "ye" distinction for singular referents that once was found in England, which functioned in parallel ways to the French *tu*/*vous* or, to a lesser extent, the Spanish *tú*/*Usted*. As Silverstein discusses, this distinction was ended in part due to 17th-century religious movements that emphasized equality, including in forms of address. The leaders of these movements argued that using the plural form "ye" for a single referent was a category mistake. This argument can be shown to be a language ideology that misinterprets the grammatical categories of person as well as person address in discourse. Yet partially under influence of this ideology, and the shifts in practices undertaken by its adherents, the distinction was eliminated.

A second trend in linguistic anthropology is the broadening use of Bakhtin's framework for studying sociolinguistic variation, interdiscursive relations between utterances, and the social qualities of discursive coherence (or textuality). Bakhtin criticizes Saussure for starting the analysis of language with the abstract sentence rather than with the concrete event of interaction, the utterance. By reversing this starting point, Bakhtin moves toward a social analysis of form and function. For Bakhtin, what enables an utterance to appear coherent is not only the

structural aspect (as with grammar) but also the way in which the utterance brings together participants in an activity. A second important contribution from Bakhtin is that participants never only speak as a single unique self; rather, they always draw on, invoke, and position their discourse in terms of sociolinguistic variation. For example, to speak in highly formal English (using "big words") in the middle of a casual conversation with friends might be construed as being pretentious, because the varieties of formal English bring to mind the stuffy contexts where that register is typically used (e.g., in the university or in law courts). Participants perceive and respond to discourse as signaling certain types of people from the sociolinguistic world of "voices" with which they are familiar, and this allows them to make sense of the discourse. This approach frames current research on register, style, genre, and textuality.

The past 100 years have seen a decided shift in anthropological theories of language and communication, from frameworks that produce a formal analysis of linguistic structure to an emphasis on social analysis of the participants or subjects that are constituted through discourse. Many of the insights generated in this shift are a product of the wide-ranging critique about the extent to which structuralist models could account for the regular patterns or norms of discourse in social life. Debates still continue on how best to integrate structuralist insights, if at all, and how best to describe the many ways discourse can index and thus produce the categories of subjects and objects that make up our shifting social worlds.

Alejandro I. Paz

See also Bakhtin, Mikhail M.; Bourdieu, Pierre; Derrida, Jacques; Foucault, Michel; Goffman, Erving; Gumperz, John J.; Hymes, Dell; Labov, William; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Poststructuralism; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Structuralism

Further Readings

Dreyfus, H. L., & Rabinow, P. (1982). *Michel Foucault: Beyond structuralism and hermeneutics*. Brighton, UK: Harvester.

Hanks, W. F. (1989). Text and textuality. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 18,* 95–127.

Morris, R. C. (2007). Legacies of Derrida: Anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 36,* 355–389.

Schieffelin, B., Woolard, K. A., & Kroskrity, P. V. (Eds.). (1998). *Language ideologies: Practice and theory.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Silverstein, M., & Urban, G. (Eds.). (1996). *Natural histories of discourse*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Todorov, T. (1984). *Mikhail Bakhtin: The dialogical principle* (W. Godzich, Trans.). Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Douglas, Mary

Mary Tew Douglas (1921–2007), the well-known British social anthropologist, contributed widely to 20th-century anthropology, the social sciences, and the humanities, including African ethnology, the anthropology of diverse social/religious rituals, symbols and food taboos, and social-moral solidarity–oriented critiques of modern economics, politics, and risk-blame issues in mass societies. While her "cultural theory" tackled such concerns, Douglas also offered distinct anthropological interpretations of Old Testament texts.

Early Influences and Education

Margaret Mary Tew at birth, Douglas was born on March 25, 1921, in San Remo, Italy, as the first child of Phyllis Margaret Twomey and Gilbert Charles Tew, employed in the Indian Civil Service in Burma. Closer to her mother and maternal grandfather, Douglas, an English Catholic of part-Irish descent, attended the Sacred Heart Convent in Roehampton (southwest London) for secondary education as a boarder on scholarship. Douglas was an outstanding student, and her Catholic convent girlhood was to have a deep, lifelong influence on the anthropologist's intellectual convictions and scholarly trajectories. The convent life, hierarchical, committed, and closely rule governed, had awarded the teenage girl a sense of belonging and security, albeit within a secluded women's world. Familiar with both the quick rewards and the censures from the church authorities in a minutely ordered daily life, Douglas grew up mostly protected from the harsher surrounding world.

After leaving the convent at her grandmother's suggestion, Douglas spent 6 months in Paris getting a *Diplõme de civilization française* at the Sorbonne

in 1938. On return, she passed her Oxford entrance examinations to study for her BSc in philosophy, economics, and politics and rendered war service during 1943–1947 in the British Colonial Office. She had come in contact there with anthropologists. Intrigued, she returned to Oxford in 1946, and after completing a conversion course, she registered for a doctorate in anthropology in 1949. Impressed by its leading light, E. E. Evans-Pritchard, and thus Émile Durkheim, Douglas took to the dominant intellectual ethos of diverse Oxford anthropologists of the 1940s, including Franz Steiner and M. N. Srinivas. Though Douglas remained largely silent about her early struggles to reconcile Catholicism with anthropology, she nevertheless remained anchored lifelong in her Catholic upbringing as surely as she was intellectually rooted in anthropology.

As a doctoral student, Douglas conducted her first extended anthropological fieldwork (1949–1951, and 1953) among the Lele in Belgian Congo (now the Democratic Republic of Congo) and was awarded her DPhil in 1952 on the monograph *A Study of Social Organization of the Lele of Kasai* (published in 1963). She married James A. T. Douglas, a Catholic and a policy researcher for the Conservative Party, in 1951.

Academic Profile

Douglas taught anthropology at the University College, London, from 1951 to 1977 and was made professor of anthropology in 1971. She moved to the United States to work at the Russell Sage Foundation in New York (1977–1981), was at Northwestern University as Avalon Professor of Humanities and Religious Studies during1981–1985, and was a visiting professor at Princeton University from 1985 to 1989. She returned to London in 1989 and had a distinguished fellowship at the University College in 1994. Though professional honors had come to her late in life, she was elected fellow of the British Academy in 1989, became a Companion of the Order of the British Empire in 1992, and was made a Dame Commander of the Order of the British Empire in 2007.

Douglas's theoretical approach remained firmly grounded in different formations of socioreligious cohesion and in the knowledge, action, and identity "the social" à la Durkheim produces. Evans-Pritchard's important works on Africa, on social structure, religion, and moral accountability, were her early inspiration. An agile, curious mind and a wide-ranging analyst, she pursued her cultural theory by showing how social-moral interconnectivity appeared across all manners of nonmodern, modern, and intramodern human differences, conditions, and issues. Since all thought, for her, was social, her explanations had no room for solipsist self-locations or related philosophical speculations.

The 1950s were the time of Douglas's Africanist phase. While raising her three children (a daughter and two sons) in north London, she published her first paper, "A Form of Polyandry Among the Lele of Kasai," in 1950 and her first ethnographic monograph, *The Lele of Kasai*, in1963. She accounted for the Lele's lack of hierarchy and authority in terms of their economic backwardness as well as major historical changes in Africa. Notably, Douglas's anthropology had already begun tackling classifications amid the exotic, the anomalous, and the mundane (e.g., raffia cloth being akin to ration coupons) in social symbolic terms.

Major Publications and Contributions

Douglas's most widely known publication is *Purity and Danger: An Analysis of Pollution and Taboo* (1966). Imbibing the Oxford anthropological ethos of the time, especially the influence of the French *Année Sociologique*, it vigorously tackled cultural classifications and their anomalies, illustrating them centrally with the well-known Jewish dietary prohibitions and behavioral norms (as given in Leviticus). This study has long instigated distinct anthropological and comparative religious research initiatives, applications, and critical debates. Exploring comparative social/religious ritual classificatory schemes of purity, pollution and taboos, and related anomalies, Douglas compared the status of pigs for the Jews and of pangolin for the Lele, not only illustrating a cogent anthropological research problem and explanation but also arguing how such a study communicates *across* the us versus them (or the modern and nonmodern) divide. Inspired by Robertson Smith's and Evans-Pritchard's approaches to the study of the religious, she sought to explicate the deeply embedded religious symbolic classificatory schemes and anomalies in terms of the surrounding socially systemic, culturally deeply symbolic, and ritually routinely evident issues.

The esoteric, the anomalous, and even the most mundane were thus rendered socially meaningful. Even dirt carried its social framing; it is not an isolated event but rather a part of a cultural system. Douglas incorporated this distinct approach, one way or another, in all her subsequent major research studies, rendering major religious, ritual, cultural, and modern economic, philosophical, and political problems in their crucial *social* forms, forces, and explanations. This was so whether it was a risk-and-blame issue or the deciphering of borders, fences, and boundaries between, for example, dirt and holiness; favored and tabooed foods; impurity, hygiene, and purity; and economic-rational and social ritual consumption patterns.

Douglas's next major publication, *Natural Symbols* (two editions, 1970 and 1973), launched the signature grid and group comparative sociological method for constructing her cultural theory, influenced by the work of Basil Bernstein, a sociologist of education: *grid* stood for the rules that relate one person to others in an ego-centered basis, and *group* drew on a bounded social unit. Her book passionately argued for the importance of ritual to social life, underscoring the larger deductive cultural axiom that rendered man into a ritual animal. Douglas did so with an implied allusion to the Bog Irish labor class in London. She did so to show how social cohesion required both modality (local community) and sodality (specialized, nonlocal associations). Similarly, if the book dealt comparatively with relevant African (often her Lele) materials, it also took on the modern Western socioreligious debates of the 1960s, arguing distinctly against the antiritual, individualistic trends. Douglas argued that modern anthropology must address the condition of humans in common. In doing so, she perhaps also reflected her Catholic inspiration. Widely read and reviewed, if often critically by anthropologists, *Natural Symbols* raised lasting major issues. They were taken up again in *How Institutions Think* (1986), for showing better how indexes of social cohesion and institutional accountability interrelated in social life (see below).

Douglas as an engaging essayist was in evidence in *Implicit Meanings: Essays in Anthropology* (1975). Here, she argued not only that knowledge was a product of social behavior but also that meanings closely depended on interpreting social contexts and sociological classifications. Widening her circle of readers, she tackled diverse cultural classifications, showing how they were not as much about arid logic as about culturally and religiously constituted classificatory categories, groups (e.g., the Israelites) and their meaning-making rituals, boundaries, and relationships. Illustratively, whether it was the animals of the land, air, or water or food in distinctly well-knit groups, a congruent ritual-religious-symbolic "calculus" appeared to regulate the borders, the boundaries, and the outside. For Levites in the Promised Land, such a social ritual calculus ran through the livestock, foods, meals, and people.

Douglas moved to the United States around this time. As noted earlier, she was at the Russell Sage Foundation, New York, during 1977–1981 and in the United States until 1989. She published prolifically, beginning with establishing a social basis for consumption theory in economics and simultaneously writing on foods, meal structures, food ways and habits, and food problems. She occasionally commented on food policy–related issues and participated in activities of the emerging anthropology of food subspecialty. Although food was not her full-time research topic, her related publications had an impact, whether it was her 1972 "Deciphering a Meal" or 1974 "Taking the Biscuit: The Structure of British Meals" (with Michael Nicod), or her 1984 studies of "high or low culinary complexity" in American communities.

Douglas's *The World of Goods: Towards an Anthropology of Consumption* (1978), written in collaboration with Baron Isherwood, an econometrician, explicated what buying, and buying and sharing meant to people in widely different economic systems. An anthropological critique of neoclassical economics, it also criticized anthropology's blinders and biases against mainstream economics. The book, representing economic anthropology for many, showed how goods socially rank, include, or exclude people; how they identify; and how they, consciously or not, always socially communicate, interrelating different social groups, near and distant. To understand consumption in this social way is to open up the rational decision-making individual of neoclassical economics. It is also to get into the black box of economics—how human social values and tastes influence/control consumption and how people consuming goods enter a ritual process of connecting with other people through things. Here, spending, sharing, and saving appeared against

needs, wants, and wishes, expanding on the social ritual cultural contexts, tastes, and meanings the goods forge as they course through families and communities. The consumption rituals, she argued, required wider sharing even in industrial societies, including the poor, emphasizing once again her Catholic, collective we.

Risk and Culture (1982) concerned a research project on American environmental and cultural issues, done in collaboration with Aaron Wildavsky, an American political scientist. Tackling cultural perceptions of environmental risk amid American environmental politics, Douglas explicitly expanded on her cultural theory, employing her style of both analyses and syntheses around identified exemplary social forms. She argued that risk perception in any society turned on some basic social forms and closely related institutions. In American culture, for example, social "hierarchy, frontiers and individualism" identified environmental risks and controlled their dynamics for most Americans. Thus, the prevalent American cultural notions of pollution and danger explained risks far more than did the technical probabilistic chance theory of risk analysts.

Dangers and risks always entail cultural biases, while the social blame and accountability issues are framed by a society's self-image, and its center, borders, and peripheries. Risks reveal not simply the roles of certain and uncertain knowledge but also how the forces of strengthening social cohesion and its hierarchies (e.g., bureaucracies) intersect with the individualist options (e.g., markets) and related contestations. Engaging such social, economic, and political classifiers, Douglas developed a "cultural theory" showing how culture is a way of social thinking that draws "the social environment systematically into the picture of individual choices." She continued her risk and culture studies in *Risk Acceptability According to the Social Sciences* (1985) and *Risk and Blame: Essays in Cultural Theory* (1992). Her sparkling essays in *Risk and Blame*, whether on witchcraft, stigmas, the historical Jesus, a credible biosphere, women priests, or even the Swedish and British trade unions, creatively argued how social institutions, groups, symbolic statements, and individual positions meaningfully intersected, explicating the mundane, anomalous, and profound.

Douglas's *How Institutions Think* (1986), while refining the operation of the strong/weak grid group control markers of *Natural Symbols*, examined modern Western institutions for their social assumptions, debates, and problems, alongside the implied Judeo-Christian values and worldview. The ambiguities were better identified, diagrammed, and visualized against the gradation of social coherence, especially with a socially inclusive and morally sharper focus. Thus, for instance, Douglas specifically addressed the ideas and issues of justice, solidarity, and collective provision for individual needs in modern societies, which were very often critical of social control.

Still, as Clifford Geertz (1987) remarked, Douglas vacillated "between hard and soft versions of Durkheimian sociologism" particularly as individuals, social conditions, thoughts, and institutions interpenetrate the mass societies (p. 36). A similar question was at the center in *Missing Persons* (1998), a book Douglas wrote with Steven Ney on the sociological critique of economic personhood, or *Homo economicus*, in modern economics. Criticizing the solipsist self and any objectivity framing such a person, Douglas had argued for reinstating the social person in economic rationality by letting cultural bias and open political dissent play their due roles, notwithstanding the sway of modern economic rationality centered on the individual.

On the Biblical Studies

A focused interest in an anthropological reading and explication of selected biblical texts distinctly engaged Douglas during her last decade. Started in *Purity and Danger*, she returned to the study of the Old Testament. Her three main studies of the Old Testament were (1) *In the Wilderness: The Doctrine of Defilement in the Book of Numbers* (1993), (2) *Leviticus as Literature* (1999), and (3) *Jacobs Tears: The Priestley Work of Reconciliation* (2004). Approaching anthropologically, she explicated the selected biblical texts for what was often textually indecipherable and taxonomically anomalous or redundant to biblical scholars. Douglas's cultural theory helped explicate the "meaning structures" hidden in the texts behind the several anomalous classifications and reclassifications, while also deciphering some exclusive or inclusive liberal moral meanings and messages. Her first two biblical publications attracted wide attention in the biblical study circles.

In *In the Wilderness*, for instance, Douglas showed how the poet of *The Book of Numbers* attempted to explain through ring composition how a local community (modality) must cohere with specialized, nonlocal social forms (sodality), even in Jerusalem ca. 500 BCE. The book in its modern rendering underscored not only a liberal theology of the biblical texts but also a commentary on today's world split by steep inequalities, religious fanaticism, and fragile nation-states. A similar inclusive, timely message emerged in Douglas's interpretation of *Jacob's Tears*, showing how a political and religious protest against Judah's exclusionary politics was integral to the editors of Pentateuch, stressing the inclusion of all the descendants of Jacob, including the sons of Joseph. As *Leviticus as Literature* identified the literary merits; it uncovered structural plots of the religious text, corresponding to the three parts of the desert tabernacle. Such a new, inclusive reading transformed not only the reading of purity-impurity laws but also the message that all God's creatures command the same respect, emphasizing justice and compassion.

Douglas's last publication, *Thinking in Circles: An Essay on Ring Composition* (2007), focused on figuring out the ancient, antique texts written in a circular rather than a linear pattern, putting the central meaning in the middle of the text. Found not only in the Bible but also in texts from Egypt, China, Greece, and Russia, she asked, does this style of writing derive from the way the human brain works?

Legacy: Centering the Social-Moral for Modernist Anthropology

Douglas occupies a distinct position in 20th-century anthropology. Creatively pursuing Durkheim and her Oxford guru Evans-Pritchard, she viewed undiminished foundational roles of the social, moral, and religious in all human, including modern, life. She repeatedly expanded and refined her cultural theory to be morally inclusive of and politically and economically responsive to the diverse, unequal, restive world. In such a pursuit, her Catholic upbringing and conservative modernist Western self-location mutually extended each other. Her studies examined modern structures of self, society, economics, risks, and politics, showing how different forms of knowledge arose from—and returned to—distinct "archetypical forms" of religious moral reasoning and sociality, enriching them in the process. For her, there was no cognition, context, agency, meaning, or knowledge system totally independent of foundational sociality. Her anthropological modernism and humanism thus rested on inclusive moral, religious, and sociological imagination. Her writings, particularly the essays, showed how a dazzling, challenging intellect was at work.

Douglas's legacy is distinct in 20th-century anthropology for showing how a woman anthropologist vigorously intertwined her early religious influences into diverse scholarly trajectories. If this seed was firmly planted in *Purity and Danger*—expanding the scope of the anthropological—then there was also no looking back after *Natural Symbols*. All the subsequent modern moral, economic, and political studies, issues, and problems tackled by Douglas had to have her anthropological imprint. Whether she was recognized or not by other anthropologists, even the British, did not detain her. She went about transforming and re-etching in her way the direction and scope of sociocultural anthropological methods, research issues, and interpretations. Thus, a fuller intellectual impact might yet emerge. Douglas, along with Victor Turner, today exerts worldwide influence on anthropological research and teaching, especially when comparative religious/social ritual structures and symbolism are juxtaposed with the modern mind, rationality, and material-technological forces. In addition, Douglas today commands a vigorous and expanding following in comparative religious and in biblical studies.

R. S. Khare

See also Durkheim, Émile; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Geertz, Clifford; Oxford University; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Douglas, M. (1978). *Purity and danger: An analysis of concepts of pollution and taboo.* London, UK: Routledge. (Original work published 1966)

———. (1986). *How institutions think* (Frank W. Abrams Lectures). London, UK: Routledge.

———. (1994). *Risk and blame: Essays in cultural theory.* London, UK: Routledge.

Fardon, R. (1999). *Mary Douglas: An intellectual biography.* London, UK: Routledge.

Geertz, C. (1987, May 25). The anthropologist at large. *The New Republic*, pp. 36–37.
Richards, P. (2008). Mary Tew Douglas (1921–2007). *American Anthropologist, 110*(3), 404–407.

Du Bois, W. E. B.

William Edward Burghardt (W. E. B.) Du Bois (1868–1963) was one of the most prominent scholar-activists of the 20th century. Born in Great Barrington, Massachusetts, Du Bois became the first African American to receive a PhD from Harvard University. As a scholar, he published numerous influential works and gave lectures around the United States and the world on issues of race and the Black experience. He was also one of the founders of urban sociology, and he had an impact on early anthropologists of color and urban anthropology.

In the seminal book published in 1903, *The Souls of Black Folk*, Du Bois stated that the "problem of the twentieth century is the problem of the color line." More than 100 years later, scholars are still raising questions about the color line—exploring issues of race, lived experience, and social inequality within and across national boundaries. The color line has taken on new meanings in a globalized world, but for Du Bois, the color line represented a Black/White dichotomy of varied experiences of inclusion and exclusion understood by his lived experience and research. His scholarship and activism gave voice to these experiences, with a rallying call for justice and social change.

Du Bois lived during a time when there was a struggle for justice surrounding opportunities, access to resources, and full citizenship. Born in the North, he experienced different racialized laws and realities when he attended college at Fisk University in Nashville, Tennessee. Unlike New England, Fisk represented a new, "Negro world." It was during this time, and later when he was a teacher in Nashville, that Du Bois began to have a fuller understanding of the Southern Black experience. He was not only able to reflect on his early experiences of growing up in integrated schools, where he was in the minority and excelled, but also on the experiences of people around him who were less fortunate. In Tennessee, he witnessed the circumstances that many Black people faced postemancipation. As a teacher, he began to understand firsthand the oppression of Black people and the lingering detrimental effects of slavery.

Much of Du Bois's scholarly work centered on the Black experience, in terms of researching and documenting the lives of Black people in the North and the South based on what he had witnessed and experienced in both contexts. In *The Souls of Black Folk*, Du Bois advanced the idea of African Americans having a double consciousness in the United States—a "twoness"—being an American and a Negro. The idea of double consciousness has been applied cross-culturally to represent being "both/and" or "bi" in different situations (binational, bicultural, etc.). For Du Bois, the notion of twoness captured the experience of Black people who were coming out of slavery and the Reconstruction and had to navigate different racial terrains.

Du Bois, the "Talented Tenth," and Racial Uplift

Du Bois was part of the Black elite that sought to bring about change—on the intellectual and activist fronts. He was a scholar-activist who called on the "talented tenth" to give voice to the experiences of Black folks and to help bring about radical change in American society. The talented tenth represented a segment of the Black community—of highly educated professional people—who would become leaders in the community. The idea was that these leaders could help "lift" the majority by paving the way, by providing opportunities, and by example. Mary Church Terrell, one of Du Bois's contemporaries, who also helped establish the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), embodied the idea of the talented tenth in her community outreach and work. Terrell was president of the National Association of Colored Women, whose motto was "Lifting as We Climb." The main idea is that everyone could not climb at the same time but those who made it and were successful could give a hand and help lift others to the top. For Du Bois and Terrell, this was necessary to "lift the race." However, Du Bois was criticized by some of his other contemporaries with respect to his idea of using the talented tenth and other positions to "lift the race." Booker T. Washington, for example, became one of Du Bois's most outspoken critics.

While Du Bois and Washington were working to bring about change, they differed in their approaches for racial uplift. Both of their positions seemed to come out of self-reflexivity, with a simultaneous connection to the community. Both men proposed change that grew out of their own personal experiences (Du Bois promoting education and Washington supporting agriculture/trades). In many ways, their experiences set them apart as visionaries and leaders. Both men were "mulatto," or biracial (both of their fathers were White), but their experiences were different. Du Bois was often the only student of color in his classes in New England, but he received tremendous support from his teachers during his school years. Du Bois was born in the North and was never enslaved, while Washington was born into slavery in the South. Washington's autobiography, *Up From Slavery*, examines his life and path to leadership. Over time, Du Bois became associated with the Black elite, and Washington was associated with the masses.

While an undergraduate student at Fisk, Du Bois encountered the Jim Crow laws and came into contact with Black men, women, and children not too far removed from slavery. This was part of a racial awakening for him as he witnessed tremendous social inequality and racism, especially exemplified by lynchings. At the same time, there was the idea of promise (the hope that things would be better) as well as calls for civil rights and change. Based on what he saw and experienced, Du Bois set out to challenge the Jim Crow laws and push forward with a radical agenda for change, including cofounding the NAACP. On the other hand, Washington, the founder of Tuskegee Normal and Industrial Institute (now known as Tuskegee University), suggested that Black people could build on their strengths in agriculture and trade skills. In his Atlanta Compromise speech in 1895, Washington called on Black people to "cast down your buckets where you are." In other words, his vision was based on knowing and understanding the skills that Black people had acquired during slavery. Du Bois charged the talented tenth with helping to bring about change (education, professional jobs, organizations, etc.), while Washington charged people to "go with what they knew" and build from there. Du Bois wanted radical change, and he often critiqued Washington for what he considered to be his accommodation of segregation. The critiques went back and forth. One of Washington's critiques of Du Bois was that he was elitist. It is clear from their speeches and publications that Du Bois and Washington disagreed about the path for Black people in the United States. Both men were highly respected public figures and intellectuals—each with his own "camp" and legacy.

Du Bois: Pan-Africanism, Anthropology, and His Legacy

Over his lifetime, Du Bois was at the forefront of Pan-Africanism, supporting African liberation movements and helping organize several Pan-African Congresses. He was also a member of Alpha Phi Alpha Fraternity, Incorporated (a public service fraternity established at Cornell University in 1906). It was the first intercollegiate Greek-letter organization established for African Americans. While at the NAACP, Du Bois served as editor of *The Crisis* magazine, which gave him a platform to challenge prevalent ideas and to have critical and engaged conversations not only about issues of race but also about other pressing issues of the day.

In addition to *The Souls of Black Folk*, some of his most influential books include *The Philadelphia Negro* (1899), still heralded as one of the first most comprehensive sociological studies of Black people in an urban setting, and *Black Reconstruction in America: 1860–1880* (1935), which provides an in-depth account of the role that Black people played during the Reconstruction following the Civil War. In the book, he discusses relationships, social class and race, societal structures, and some of the challenges of the Reconstruction. Numerous volumes have been published from his essays. Du Bois's scholarship and activism have had an impact on social scientists and historians alike. Faye Harrison (1992) discusses the Du Boisian legacy in anthropology by pointing to vindicationist anthropology and Du Bois's attempt to shed light on and highlight the contributions of Black people in various situations and contexts. Vindicationist scholars work to correct distorted interpretations of the African and African American past and often develop counterpositions. Harrison considers Du Bois to be in that tradition and also considers his work in *The Crisis* as anthropological texts in which he communicates his position not only to a community of scholars but also to the community at large. Much of Du Bois's work is anthropological in scope, and he influenced a number of

anthropologists. Harrison identifies the following anthropologists as part of the Du Boisian legacy in African American anthropology: Caroline Bond Day, Irene Diggs, Allison Davis, and St. Clair Drake. Along these same lines, another impact that Du Bois had on anthropology is that of activist anthropology.

In 1906, at the invitation of Du Bois, Franz Boas gave a commencement address at Atlanta University. Du Bois was teaching history there at the time. In *Black Folk Then and Now*, Du Bois reflects on Boas's speech and the awakening he had as a result of what Boas discussed. Boas told the graduates that they did not have to be ashamed of their African past. He then went on to talk about Africa and its history. That speech left a lasting impression on Du Bois. Boas became involved in the NAACP in its early years, and in 1910, he wrote "The Real Race Problem" (published in *The Crisis*). Over the course of his life and career, Boas encouraged the study of African and African American culture and corresponded with many Black intellectuals, including Booker T. Washington, Carter G. Woodson, Alain L. Locke, and Zora Neale Hurston, as well as W. E. B. Du Bois, about the study and importance of African American history and culture.

Du Bois was one of the most preeminent scholars and activists of the 20th century. His work is still relevant today, and many anthropologists and other scholars cite his groundbreaking work on the Black experience, social inequality, and social change. Later in life, Du Bois returned to Africa—to Accra, Ghana—where he died while working on an encyclopedia on the African diaspora experience. He is buried in Accra on the grounds of a memorial center named in his honor—The Du Bois Memorial Center for Pan-African Culture.

Kimberly Eison Simmons

See also Boas, Franz; Hurston, Zora Neale

Further Readings

Baker, L. D. (1998). *From savage to Negro: Anthropology and the construction of race, 1986–1954*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Du Bois, W. E. B. (1899). *The Philadelphia Negro*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

_____. (1965). *Souls of Black folk: Essays and sketches*. New York, NY: Fawcett. (Original work published 1903)

Harrison, F. V. (1992). The Du Boisian legacy in anthropology. *Critique of Anthropology, 12*(3), 239–260.

Harrison, F. V., & Nonini, D. (1992). Introduction to W. E. B. Du Bois and anthropology. *Critique of Anthropology, 12*(3), 229–237.

Harrison, I. E., & Harrison, F. V. (1998). *African American pioneers in anthropology*. Champaign: University of Illinois Press.

Lewis, D. L. (1994). *W. E. B. Du Bois, 1868–1919: Biography of a race*. New York, NY: Macmillan.

_____. (Ed.). (1995). *W. E. B. Du Bois: A reader*. New York, NY: Macmillan.

_____. (2001). *W. E. B. Du Bois, 1919–1963: The fight for equality and the American century*. New York, NY: Macmillan.

_____. (2009). *W. E. B. Du Bois: A biography*. New York, NY: Henry Holt.

DuBois, Cora

Cora DuBois (1903–1997) became a leading figure in early culture and personality studies and allied fields over a long and rather adventurous career. She also received several awards for her applied work during World War II.

Biography and Major Works

DuBois was born in New York City to the Swiss immigrants Mattie and Jean DuBois. The family then moved to New Jersey, where Jean obtained employment in a chemical company in Perth Amboy. In 1921, DuBois graduated from public high school in Perth Amboy. Interestingly, her first academic attraction appears to have been library science, which she studied at The New York Public Library from 1922 to 1923, before taking a degree in history from Barnard College in 1927. The concern with organization and detail that characterizes library science was to appear in her most important professional contribution.

There was little initial evidence that DuBois would become a major figure in anthropology, as her concentration in history, first a BA at Barnard and then an MA at Columbia, focused on Hellenistic Greece. Not until her senior year at Barnard did she elect a course in anthropology. Franz Boas and Ruth Benedict, two of the major figures in the field, taught that impactive course. Benedict's presence as

a prominent woman in this field may have encouraged DuBois to move to California, where she began postgraduate studies in anthropology under Alfred L. Kroeber and Robert Lowie.

Under Kroeber's mentorship, DuBois carried out fieldwork among the Wintu in northern California. She published several articles on the Wintu and two books, *The Feather Cult of the Middle Columbia* (1938) and *The 1870 Ghost Dance* (1939). She received her PhD in cultural anthropology from Berkeley in 1932. Due to the scarcity of academic positions, DuBois remained at Berkeley for 3 years as a research associate. During this period, she appears to have developed an interest in psychoanalysis, which, in 1935, led her to spend 6 months at the Boston Psychopathic Hospital, gaining clinical training and investigating the possibilities of employing a psychoanalytic approach to anthropological materials. These interests led her to the New York School of Psychoanalysis, where, in 1935, she co-taught a course on psychoanalysis and culture with Abram Kardiner. With Kardiner's support and encouragement, and funding from Columbia's Social Science Research Council, DuBois traveled to the island of Alor in the Netherlands East Indies (now Indonesia), to carry out 18 months of fieldwork.

From 1938 through much of 1939, DuBois undertook what can only be regarded as very demanding fieldwork. In addition to withstanding the rigors of a tropical climate, and having little contact with the outside world, DuBois had to learn a language that had never been studied and had no written form. She termed the language *Abui* and mastered it well enough to translate song lyrics, interview a range of informants, and compile several autobiographies. The purpose of her research, in addition to doing ethnography of Alor, was to collect life histories and employ projective materials such as the Rorschach tests, Porteus Maze Test, Draw-a-Person Test, and other devices designed to gain insights into the Alorese personality.

DuBois analyzed these materials, as did Kardiner and Emil Oberholzer, two significant figures in Freudian psychology. The latter was particularly important, as his analysis of the Rorschach material was done blind, while Kardiner dealt with the life histories containing a good deal of cultural information. The result of these efforts was a classic contribution to anthropology and to culture and personality studies, *The People of Alor: A Social-Psychological Study of an East Indian Island*, originally published in 1944 in two volumes comprising more than 600 pages. While some of DuBois's assertions about Alorese parenting have been called into question, the general reception of the book has been quite positive.

Prior to her fieldwork and with the support of Benedict, Kardiner, and others, DuBois obtained a teaching position at Hunter College (1936), where she taught courses in Southeast Asia and cultural anthropology. On her return from fieldwork, she received a teaching position at Sarah Lawrence College (1939–1942). Her teaching duties were interrupted by other involvements during the war. Like many other anthropologists, she was recruited by the Office of Strategic Services, where she joined the Research and Analysis Branch as chief of the Indonesia section.

Later, in 1944, while traveling to Ceylon, she met other Office of Strategic Services employees, including Julia McWilliams, later Julia Child. Child was initially put off by DuBois's perceived lesbianism, but they went on to become lifelong friends. In Ceylon, DuBois headed the Southeast Asia Command, where she directed and assisted resistance movements in Southeast Asian countries under Japanese occupation. For these efforts and others, the army awarded DuBois the Exceptional Civilian Award in 1945. Shortly afterward, she was awarded the Order of the Crown of Thailand for her work with the Free Thai underground movement through the Office of Strategic Services.

Following the war, DuBois continued her applied anthropology interests and worked for the State Department, where she headed their Southeast Asia research section until 1950. She then spent a year working for the World Health Organization. At the World Health Organization, she once again focused on Southeast Asia, doing research on educational and health needs in the area.

During this busy period, DuBois continued to publish articles and, in 1949, published *Social Forces in Southeast Asia*, a collection of three essays she had delivered 2 years before at Smith College. This thin, 78-page volume was very well accepted and has been remarkably durable. It is still available, with the most recent printing occurring in 2009. The book gives a short but trenchant overview of Southeast Asia and briefly discusses the European colonial and Japanese impacts on the area. It also describes the traditional class structure characteristic of several of the countries.

In 1954, Cora DuBois left the employ of the State Department to accept an endowed chair at Harvard, with a joint appointment to Radcliffe. Her courses focused on Southeast Asia and India, with seminars on social change. In 1961, on leave from Harvard, she traveled to India to study value confrontations, comparing a traditional town with a nearby modern one. She worked on this project on and off for 6 years. She also introduced some of her graduate students to her Orissa field sites, so that they might carry out dissertation research.

DuBois remained at Harvard until her retirement in 1969. Later, she was honored as Professor-at-Large at Cornell University, to which she was lured by its excellent Southeast Asia Program and its Echols Collection, an unparalleled library of Southeast Asian source materials, many in the original languages. Adding to her store of honors, DuBois received two honorary doctorates, one from Mills College and one from Wheaton College in Massachusetts. Among the prominent positions she held, DuBois was president of the American Anthropological Association in 1968–1969 and president of the Association for Asian Studies in 1969–1970.

During her many years of teaching, publishing, and accruing honors, there was only one significant negative development. The late 1940s, 1950s, and early 1960s were characterized by a national paranoia about communism, most manifest in the efforts of Senator Joseph McCarthy and the House Un-American Activities Committee. J. Edgar Hoover and the Federal Bureau of Investigation observed and investigated many U.S. citizens who they thought to be subversive. Many of the most prominent anthropologists, ranging from Oscar Lewis to Margaret Mead and a host of others, including Cora DuBois, found their classrooms infiltrated by students trained to record "subversive" utterances. The most common link among these anthropologists was that they were deemed subversive social activists, largely because they had written and/or spoken out on behalf of racial equality. While DuBois suffered no ill consequences at Harvard or at Cornell, in 1949 she did have to decline a faculty position at Berkeley because she refused to sign the California Loyalty Oath. The concerns about DuBois and several other anthropologists are particularly ironic as she and others were conspicuous for their service to this country during and after World War II.

In her later years, between the ages of 72 and 78, she encountered serious health problems, necessitating three operations. Despites these difficulties, she remained, with her long-term companion, Jeanne Taylor, socially and professionally active. As late as 1976, DuBois participated in a major conference that reviewed the past and present condition of anthropology in the United States. She died in Brookline, Massachusetts, in 1991 at the age of 88. Most of DuBois's collected papers and field notes are at Harvard's Tozzer Library, and some are at the University of Chicago's Regenstein Library.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Fieldwork Methodology

Cora DuBois compiled a detailed ethnography of the Alorese, describing elements that range from residence rules, quarrels, wealth contests, and sex to mythology and religion. The strong organization of the book and the meticulous attention to ethnographic detail may well be a reflection of her early interest in library science, or both may simply be a reflection of her nature. This information was collected in 1938–1939, before the Japanese occupation of the island and before subsequent modernization greatly affected the traditional culture. Consequently, her work remains relevant to anyone who hopes to work in or understand the history of the area.

The approach that DuBois developed for her study was to significantly advance the role of psychological anthropology in fieldwork. Not since W. H. Rivers and Alfred C. Haddon's expedition to New Guinea's Torres Straits had an anthropologist employed psychological methods in an ethnographic setting as thoroughly as did DuBois. Her use of psychoanalytic projective methods, such as the Rorschach tests, while not unprecedented, did include an important advance: the blind analyses of her results by an external authority. This safeguard has since been adopted in the great majority of psychological anthropological research.

Theory Advances

DuBois is best known and most respected for the theoretical advance she made in her book on Alor. Classical Freudian approaches to culture always displayed the same shortcoming: Symbolic interpretations allowed Freudians to find the same pattern

no matter how seemingly different cultures might be. Kardiner, a major figure in the field of culture and personality, labored with Ralph Linton and others to make the classical Freudian "instinctive" model of personality subject to cultural variation. The resulting instrument was called the Basic Personality Structure, and it held that a culture's shared childhood-training practices (primary institutions) created a distinctive personality formation, differing from culture to culture. Utilizing Freudian assumptions, it was argued that the personality type then projected itself into distinctive cultural content (secondary institutions).

DuBois presented an important modification of Kardiner's Basic Personality Structure, the chief shortcoming of which was that it allowed for little personality difference among the cultural populace. It tended to stereotype culture participants, leaving little room for variation. Thus, to engage in hyperbole, all Italians were emotionally expressive, Germans punctual, and French passionate. DuBois's research among the Alorese impressed her with the strength and individuality of many of the people with whom she dealt, from some of whom she collected autobiographies. Her experiences with the Alorese persuaded her that childhood institutions did affect personality formation but that there could still be significant variation among members of the adult population. Thus, she recommended replacing the rather rigid Basic Personality Structure with a more statistical approach, the Modal Personality Structure, emphasizing the most common personality structure rather than making sweeping generalizations about a populace. This refinement gave room for individual differences, without weakening the argument that each culture can produce a distinctive personality type. Her contribution was well received by most scholars of the Culture-and-Personality school, including Kardiner. It was to have an impact on later studies of child rearing by researchers such as Beatrice and John Whiting and on studies of national character by Margaret Mead.

Douglas Raybeck

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Culture and Personality; Freud, Sigmund; Kardiner, Abram; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Linton, Ralph; Mead, Margaret; Psychological Anthropology

Further Readings

DuBois, C. A. (1932). Tolowa notes. *American Anthropologist, 34*(2), 248–262.

———. (1970). Studies in an Indian town. In P. Golde (Ed.), *Women in the field: Anthropological experiences* (pp. 221–236). Chicago, IL: Aldine.

LeVine, R. A. (2007). Ethnographic studies of childhood: A historical overview. *American Anthropologist, 109*(2), 247–260.

Price, D. H. (2004). *Threatening anthropology: McCarthyism and the FBI's surveillance of activist anthropologists*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Tozzer Library, Harvard College Library. (2004). *Cora Alice DuBois papers* [Online] (Vol. SPEC.COLL. ETHG. D 852 c). Retrieved from http://oasis.lib.harvard.edu/oasis/deliver/~toz00001

Dumont, Louis

Louis Dumont (1911–1998) was a French anthropologist who specialized in the study of systems of social morphology and ideology, particularly in India and Europe. Born in Thessaloniki, Greece; educated in Paris and later a student of Marcel Mauss and Louis Renou; politically engaged during the Front Populaire; prisoner of war in Germany between 1940 and 1945; assistant at the Musée de l'Homme; lecturer at Oxford; and directeur d'études at the École Pratique des Hautes Études VIth section, Dumont also held many visiting fellowships and professorships in the United States and Germany.

The sociological humanism of the works of Dumont ultimately defends and illustrates the results from 50 years of an enduring and inductive attention. Dumont's considerable achievement renewed ethnographical and theoretical approaches to society. Well placed within a French heritage and anthropological tradition, the descriptive and comparative method he designed is deeply indebted to Mauss, who believed that the study of ideas was inseparable from that of institutions. Implicitly inspired by a Tocquevillian spirit of comparison, Dumont also benefited, while in Oxford, from a close association with E. E. Evans-Pritchard, from whom he derived an appreciation for the challenge of translation that ethnography entails and the need to take history into account.

The result of Dumont's formative years and initial experiences in the field led to two critical notions he pursued throughout his career: (1) *holism* and (2) *hierarchy*. He first noted them while observing

and collecting data, before he used them as the referent concepts to articulate an attempt at a critical and comparative analysis as well as a highly original epistemology. In Dumont's view, comparison entails a strict methodological dualism, an attitude that implies the necessity of separating the observer from those he or she observes. The picture thus delivered is always a picture seen by someone, but by someone who has internalized the cultural terms and categories of his or her own upbringing. The matter here is not so much to see and understand others through one's own grid and ourselves through their own as it is to combine them both by keeping them joined and contrasted in comparative perspective. Seeking what corresponds on the observed side to what is considered from an internal view, the observer thus strives to construct comparable facts through a higher level of abstraction. Enlarging the scope of comparison, the venture would in the end imply a critical return.

Successively maneuvering across different disciplinary fields and cultural areas, Dumont's sturdy and resolute positionings, at times strongly challenged by their respective experts, never actually departed from their socio-anthropological priority. This disposition led him to a theoretical engagement that questioned the various answers cultures mobilize when confronted and interacting with a dominant ideology.

Dumont conducted several extended periods of fieldwork. He began with a scrupulous description of a regional religious and urban festival in Provençal France. This was followed by a highly detailed monograph of a rural South Indian subcaste. Both case studies described the presence of complementary, interdependent, and unequal forms of ordered relationships. Taken together, the two works challenged the analytical tools, as well as the individualistic premises, that observers bring to the field and use in their interpretations. Dumont's work made it clear that theoretical principles were implicit in descriptions of culture and should be made explicit.

Dumont's own approach to structuralism left a lasting impression on the theory of kinship and particularly on the understanding of the Dravidian and Australian systems of affinity. In these works, he proposed an original structural conception of symbolic systems grounded in the idea of a *distinctive* opposition (as between the complementary terms in a couple) and a *hierarchical* opposition (between a whole and its parts).

Homo hierarchicus and *Homo aequalis*

With *Homo hierarchicus*—a synthetic and provocative study of the caste system of India—Dumont established himself as a leading authority. By virtue of its encompassing attempt to fit a number of classical and contemporary works into a consistent scheme, the book marked a break in Indian studies, departing from Orientalist creeds and blending textual erudition with field experience and expertise. Controversial at its publication, *Homo hierarchicus* established itself as a classic and continues to be discussed today.

In his own words, Dumont, in a series of articles published in *Contributions to Indian Sociology*, an academic journal he founded and coedited with David Pocock, positioned his work at the "confluence of Indology and sociology." This positioning ultimately allowed him to simultaneously apprehend the ritual nature and implications of a shared morphological order of status groups interrelated through relative purities. Dumont argued that in India a hierarchical disjunction between authority and power subordinates the logics of power and politics to a superior and encompassing set of religious values.

From the mid-1960s, Dumont undertook to reverse perspectives, attempting to describe the main features of modern Western society in contrast to those discovered in the Indian case. The three volumes devoted to the study of *Homo aequalis* articulated, first, the long historical process of differentiation that characterizes modernity—where political domains and territorial sovereignty have become emancipated from the values of religion—and, second, how the economic domain gained its autonomy from the political, which had previously controlled it. Dumont's ambition was to put modern ideology, individualism, and equality in anthropological perspective using the Indian hierarchy as a tool for a critical reappraisal of Western society itself. This approach was intended to distance scholarship from the implicit way our scientific modes of thought and ideas blind us to the exceptional character of the mental universe from which they sprang. Dumont's *Essays on Individualism* and *German Ideology* further refine this analysis by

recapturing the historical and ideological stages that shaped Christian and European modernities, their specific nationalist and identitary logics, and their sometimes totalitarian outcomes.

Conceptually, Dumont based his theoretical understanding of human beings around social variation and differentiation (regional configurations, national variants, cultural loyalties). He argued that society invariably entails some form of hierarchy even when ideology denied its presence and silenced its understanding.

Dumont increasingly sought a means to redirect and complement an approach that ultimately relied on differentiation and comparison. He aimed to reveal the significant and constitutive distinctions within an ultimately unified humanity, rather than focusing on collecting distinct and separate units that fragmented and relativized it both empirically and theoretically. Far from ever relativizing, Dumont's central idea remained grounded by the conviction that each civilization, each society, if properly considered, delivers in its own right some conclusion of general use. His overall approach thus celebrates diversity and enforces a human and/or humanistic design that, while distinct and plural, precisely demonstrates the unity of humanity because of its different and indefinite social manifestations and not despite them.

Holism and Hierarchy

The concepts of *holism* and *hierarchy* chart Dumont's entire agenda. One should briefly recapture what both precisely reflect in Dumont's undertakings, as they should not be mistaken for or conflated with Weberian axioms or ideal types. As a principle, *holism* constitutes, enfolds, unfolds, and defines the relative and relational position an element occupies in a given set as well as the priority the set commands over such an element in its encompassing framework. Yet from within the set, the ordered relations between elements could be inverted, even allowing some to appear to challenge the overall ordering, though still by reference to it. No sociological fact in this view ever exists or stands apart from a reference to the entirety of society to which it belongs. Here, the whole encompasses the individual rather than the other way around. Therefore, inquiries that lack reference to a social whole stumble and err. Besides, a holistic system attaches its referent values to the social as a totality rather than to the individual we commonsensically conceive as the only meaningful agent.

While holism expresses and justifies the existing society by reference to its encompassing values, individualism claims to posit its own independently of society as it finds it. However, holism and individualism, as opposed as they might appear, never correspond to either a system closed in on itself (in the case of holism) or a system of universal and exclusive relevance (in the case of individualism).

Dumont's argument further explores the continual interaction of holism and individualism. Not only has individualism been shown historically to be unable to substitute for holism wholesale and rule everywhere in society, but it was actually never able to function (or operate) without an unperceived contribution to holism. A similar statement equally validates the interrelated presence of the two, when within its own cultural singularity the figure of the ascetic-renouncer in the Indian case reveals individualist features.

Strictly respecting the etymological definition of *hierarchy* (a mode of ordering whose meaning depends on the relationship it has to the sacred), Dumont first applied the term to the irreducible presence of difference in the Indian paradigm, making of it a specific cultural principle. But he was later to promote the notion of hierarchy and expand it as a more general, if not universal, scheme that he would use as one of the constitutive dimensions of his comparative theory.

Within a holistic universe, hierarchy implies an outside and superior order through which internal social relations are arranged. Any differentiation implies a distinction between a superior and an inferior level. If any form manifests selectivity, any function thus implies hierarchy.

Dumont argued that a series of logical operations allowed contextual or situational potentialities to overturn any specific hierarchical order without challenging the principle behind it.

Hierarchy is for Dumont at the heart of the "unthought" of modern ideology. The word commands profound aversion in our present world of immanence, economic rationality, and exclusive logics of power. It is wrongly equated with social stratification, inequality, and discrimination. By contrast, Indian society seemed to have best exemplified Dumont's approach to hierarchy and teaches

us to recognize it in vivo in all its connections and applications.

Dumont's use of hierarchy has been criticized, often without understanding what it actually aimed to accomplish. Often judged as a too formalist, essentialist, conservative, or even reactionary figure in his formalized translation of the Indian stage, where he discovered the concept, Dumont has frequently been interpreted as voicing literary and Brahmanical views, if not denounced for his propensity to favor Gallic forms of abstractions.

There remains for Dumont the conviction that, when analyzing society, one can never neglect the presence of a transcendental dimension that hierarchy precisely displays. Institutions, in his view, always refer the authority or legitimacy they claim to something beyond themselves. Society, like any other logical system, can never find within itself the rule from which it operates (something that Kurt Gödel demonstrated for all systems of logic). Any society thus depends on a principle necessarily external to it. Every human order derives its meaning from what it conceptualizes as beyond, above, or even in a future state. Likewise, modern society, branded by immanent, individualist, and egalitarian values, nonetheless continues to operate under implicit schemes of holism and hierarchy.

In Dumont's approach, modern civilization is at the same time a culture like any other and a sort of metaculture imposing itself everywhere as such. Still, to the extent that the individual values of Western postindustrial society are now spreading worldwide, they locally undergo modifications and engender new forms. These new modified forms, in their turn, can pass back into the dominant culture and operate there in their own right. The contemporary ideological world is like a fabric woven by the continuing interaction of cultures. Under the impact of modern civilization, a given culture may disappear or conversely reject contact with others and close in on itself. Most often it adapts to the dominant culture, and in so doing, it justifies itself in relation to the dominant culture by constructing ad hoc representations that are often more adaptable and even stronger through their associations. The new hybrid representations, compared with the notions from which they proceed, appear as intensified and hardened forms.

In its own dramatic way and from within the world of modernity itself, totalitarianism illustrates the presence of such interactive ideological processes by combining an all-powerful individualism, on the one hand, and, on the other, one that is perpetually and irremediably haunted by its opposite, aspiring to a totality that only reveals a pseudoholism.

Dumont thus invites social scientists to confront and analyze these more or less hybrid representations and institutions, following the course from which they sprang and that of their subsequent destiny. And he compels us to study the history of ideology in intercultural perspective.

A Reflexive Epistemology

Dumont regularly came back to the evidence that the social creature does not like society to be understood and that there is more in the culture or society than the ideology tells. Therefore, to avoid misleading and alternative explanations that would involve the role of a conscious will, of mere happenstance, or even of a subjective or psychic unconscious of the kind resorted to by Sigmund Freud or Claude Lévi-Strauss, Dumont suggested that we acknowledge the matter as an invariant illustration of a "social inarticulate."

Thus, for Dumont, the issue is not to study the cohesive integration of different groups within society—as the functionalists previously wished and as a current empiricist sociology continues to emphasize—but rather to apprehend in an almost Hegelian fashion the coherent conditions of the integration of ideas in the mind (*l'esprit*).

The legacy Dumont has left us is the knowledge that the social history of the categories of the human mind still remains the order of the day, only that it now seems more multiplex than it originally did for the Durkheimian enthusiasts of the early 20th century. Yet the program he designed was one that involved both personal and professional commitments, and he believed that these could not be separated. Consistently pursuing the daunting task of understanding more fully the momentous and at times tragic events of his century always remained for Dumont a matter of social commitment and ethical obligation. His resolute attempts at understanding and his austere style of teaching never ceased to articulate deep existential and phenomenological concerns.

Widely acknowledged among English-speaking anthropologists such as Clifford Geertz, Marshall Sahlins, and Bruce Kapferer, and still considered

a reference landmark for South Asian specialists, Dumont's legacy remains significantly influential within the French-speaking milieux of historians, political philosophers, and specialists on social thought, such as François Furet, Pierre Rozanvallon, Claude Lefort, Marcel Gauchet, Giorgo Agamben, Vincent Descombes, Jean-François Billeter, and François Jullien.

Jean-Claude Galey

See also Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Geertz, Clifford; Mauss, Marcel; Musée de l'Homme; Oxford University; Sahlins, Marshall

Further Readings

Descombes, V. (1996). *Les institutions du sens* [Institutions of meaning]. Paris, France: Minuit.

Dumont, L. (1951). *La tarasque* (The tarascan). Paris, France: Gallimard.

———. (1957). *A South Indian sub-caste: Social organization and religion of the Pramalai Kallar*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

———. (1962). *La civilisation indienne et nous* [Indian civilization and us]. Paris, France: Armand Colin.

———. (1970). *Homo hierarchicus: The caste system and its implications*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1971). *On putative hierarchy and some allergies to it* (Contributions to Indian Sociology, New Series, No. 5; pp. 58–81). Noida, India: Vikas.

———. (1975). On the comparative understanding of non-modern civilizations. *Daedalus, 104*(2), 153–172.

———. (1978). *From Mandeville to Marx: Genesis and triumph of economic ideology*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1983). *Affinity as a value*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1991). *Essays on individualism*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1994). *German ideology: From France to Germany and back*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Galey, J. C. (1991). Louis Dumont. In P. Bonte & M. Izard (Eds.), *Dictionnaire de l'ethnologie et de l'anthropologie* [Dictionary of ethnology and anthropology] (pp. 204–206). Paris, France: Presses Universitaires de France.

———. (2005). Louis Dumont. In M. Borlandi (Ed.), *Dictionnaire de la pensée Sociologique* [Dictionary of sociological thought] (pp. 441–443). Paris, France: Presses Universitaires de France.

———. (2010). Louis Dumont et la religion [Louis Dumont and religion]. In D. Hervieu-Léver (Ed.), *Dictionnaire des faits religieux* [Dictionary of religious facts]. Paris, France: Presses Universitaires de France.

Ortigues, E. (1962). *Le discours et le symbole* [Discourse and symbol]. Paris, France: Beauchesnes.

Dundes, Alan

The American folklorist Alan Dundes (1934–2005) was a major figure in shaping the discipline of folkloristics and made significant theoretical contributions to structural, comparative, and psychological approaches to culture.

Biography and Major Works

Dundes was born on September 8, 1934, in New York City to the lawyer Maurice Dundes and the musician Helen Rothschild. While he was still an infant, the couple moved the family to Patterson, New York. The family had Central and Eastern European Jewish roots, but the children (his sister Marna was born in 1936) were raised in a secular environment. Dundes entered Yale University in 1951, majored in English, and joined the Naval Reserve Officers Training Corps. After serving military duty for 2 years, he returned to Yale in 1957 to complete his Management Aptitude Test in English. After marrying a fellow Yale student Carolyn Browne in 1958 and spending a year in France teaching conversational English, Dundes entered the doctoral program in folklore at Indiana University, which he completed in 1962, with a groundbreaking dissertation applying a structural analysis to North American Indian folktales.

Dundes's experience in France resulted in his first publication, a linguistic study of French tongue twisters collected from children in his class, in the *French Review* (1960). The publication set the stage for a lifelong interest in folk speech, humor, and children's folklore. He followed this research with a string of influential journal articles on the structural definitions of folkloristic genres (superstitions, riddles, games, folktales, and proverbs), psychological analyses of cultural practices and forms (ritual fasting, wishing wells, earth-diver myths, and elephant jokes), and a group-based rather than a class-based modernistic method and theory of folklore. Dundes was a prolific author, publishing eight volumes of essays and five

thematic books. He edited numerous book series and textbooks.

Dundes's first college teaching position was in the English department at the University of Kansas in 1962. In 1963, he joined the anthropology department at the University of California, Berkeley, as an assistant professor, and as a result of his productivity and rising influence, he was promoted quickly to full professor in 1968. He additionally became the founding director of a master's degree program in folklore in 1965 and stayed in the post until his death in 2005. Among his accolades were receiving the Giuseppe Pitrè Prize for lifetime achievement in folklore; a distinguished teaching award from the University of California, Berkeley; election to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences; election to the Fellows of the American Folklore Society; and fellowships from the Guggenheim Foundation and the National Endowment for the Humanities.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Dundes's ideas on the pivotal role of folklore in modern everyday life and the symbolic content of folklore as a projection of anxieties are among his most lasting contributions. These concepts can be organized under the following headings: "Grouping Interpretation," "Deep Meaning," and "Merging Psychoanalysis and Structuralism."

Grouping Interpretation: The Definition and Significance of Folklore

Dundes operationally defined folklore as *expressive material that repeats and varies*. This characterization allowed for visual humor produced by photocopiers and, later, word processors to be viewed as folklore, along with other nonoral forms. In an expansive definition proposed by Dundes (1965), a folk group was "*any group of people whatsoever* who share at least one common factor" (p. 2). This modern, elastic definition of "folk" differed from prior European-driven concepts of a lower or peasant stratum of society. Taking away a connection to the land or a lack of learning emphasized that all people by the nature of their social interaction use folklore as an instrumental, communicative device. It can therefore emerge anew or adapt old forms with different social associations, whether in conventional ethnic, occupational, and regional categories; among a temporary group of friends; or in an organization. Dundes implied agency in the groups' production of folklore, rather than the groups passively following or blindly receiving tradition, which he criticized as a "superorganic" model of culture.

Dundes was also influential in codifying the method of folkloristic research as *identification and interpretation*. The terms came from the folklorist Archer Taylor's comparison of mid-20th-century literary and folkloristic methods, but Dundes did not limit interpretation, as Taylor did, to literal readings, using historical and formalistic background as the source of meaning. Interpreted meaning, according to Dundes (1992), involved "plumbing the depths to explore the latent (as opposed to the manifest) content of folklore" (p. xxii).

Deep Meaning: The Projection and Symbolism of Folklore

Dundes cited Sigmund Freud's idea of projection as the cognitive transposition of repression in the statement "I hate him" to "He hates me." Dundes argued that the label "projective inversion" for transposition is more appropriate since desires are not only inverted but also externalized. In a Dundesian perspective, Freud's projection can be read as symbolizing "I hate him" with slurs or stories in which the object of hate is victimized. Dundes (2007) defined projective inversion this way: "a psychological process in which A accuses B of carrying out an action which A really wishes to carry out him or herself" (p. 395). Dundes distinguished this kind of transposition from the transference of feelings onto an external object, which he called projection. Dundes often presented examples of projection in jokes and rituals, such as "dead baby jokes," which expressed anxiety over abortion; "light bulb jokes," which showed the importance of social organization through the double entendre of technology and sex, expressed by "screwing in a light bulb"; Jewish American Princess jokes, which projected unease over the independence of women generally through the stereotype of the self-centered Jewish daughter; and "Bloody Mary rituals," expressing fear of menstruation among preadolescent girls in rituals with representations of blood in the name of the girl and the act of drawing blood.

Dundes found that projective inversion is especially prevalent in folktales and legends, suggesting that their narrative elaboration relates a heightened level of taboo. Examples include the themes of incest and infanticide evident in a classic Oedipal plot in which a father-king attempts to kill his newborn son, a projective inversion of the son's wish to kill his father. Dundes proclaimed that early Freudians were mistaken in assuming that this merely reflected a father's wish to marry his own daughter. He asserted instead that the daughter would like to marry her own father.

Another of Dundes's provocative reinterpretations used projective inversion to analyze the "blood libel" or "ritual murder" legend, a source of European anti-Semitism. In the legend, a Christian child is killed to furnish blood for consumption during Jewish rites. The story has been recognized as one of the most persistent anti-Semitic narratives among European Christians since the 12th century. As a legend, it is frequently told as a true event, in spite of its implausibility, since consumption of blood by humans is forbidden in Jewish law (Genesis 9:4; Leviticus 3:17, 17:12). Dundes purports to solve this puzzle by noting its context in the Easter-Passover season, and pointing out the *projection* of guilt to another group through the *projective inversion* of Christians committing murder.

Taking a cue from the dualism between manifest and latent meanings in "depth" psychology, Dundesian analysis uncovers "deep" meaning in the sense of something being about something that turns out to be something else. The way to get to the "underlying" structure, the "hidden" meaning, or the "unstated" reason is through the identification and comparison of ciphers. Rather than being revealed in observable behavior (what Dundes called "descriptive data") in the field, symbolic meaning is discerned "beneath" the surface and traced to the mind.

Merging Structuralism and Psychoanalysis

In Dundes's view, deriving the meaning of folklore requires more than a literal reading of the text; it calls for contextualizing the expression in behavioral and social conditions. He emphasized this by referring to folklore as a form of sublimation: "Folklore offers a socially sanctioned outlet for the expression of taboo and anxiety-provoking behavior. One can do or say in folkloric form things otherwise interdicted in everyday life" (Dundes, 2005, p. 359). To grasp why folklore is needed as an expressive outlet, one therefore needs to know the cultural values, taboos, anxieties, and beliefs of the society in which individual tradition bearers operate in everyday life.

By analyzing folklore, Dundes wrote, the scholar discovers "general patterns of culture" and raises "levels of consciousness." The assumption in this statement is not just that folklore can be ordered according to form but also that it is cognitively patterned (e.g., through linear, circular, or binary thinking). Another presupposition is the existence of an unconscious—a part of the mind containing repressed instincts and their representative wishes, ideas, and images, which are not accessible to direct examination.

Folklore is especially important in making the unconscious conscious, Dundes affirmed, because it appears to be a "safe" fictive or ritual space in which to symbolize, and thereby control, anxiety or ambiguity, but if the realistic basis of the symbolism is exposed, repression recurs in another form. This transformation accounts for Dundes emphasizing the observer's "analytical" rather than native posture in assessing meaning, although he urged analysts to collect "metafolklore," tradition bearers' comments on their own traditions. These comments are in themselves part of belief, he observed, or else rationalizations for the need for expression. The analyst is essential in the Dundesian process of deriving meaning; an outside eye is necessary to discern the inside, or hidden codes of meaning. Some observers, Dundes understood, would have the tradition bearers' explanation of an event to be sufficient, viewing the role of the folklorist as facilitating self-reflection by natives. But in a Dundesian perspective, the analyst needs to maintain a detached vantage point rather than a position of advocacy, precisely because folk material involves personal and societal anxieties that are repressed or avoided and, when expressed, typically disguised. For example, in a 1978 book with Pagter that discussed humor, full of scatological and sexual references, Dundes argued that humor was the concealed expression of many major problems facing contemporary American society. Dundes linked dualism, particularly the importance of "double meaning," in psychoanalysis with the binary basis of structuralism. The pivotal structuralist approaches of Vladimir Propp (syntagmatic, relating to a sequential pattern of plot functions) and Claude Lévi-Strauss

(paradigmatic, relating to a thematic set of contrasting relations) are unified by Dundes to reveal the mental processes underlying the structural patterns of fantastical expressions. The point is that binary structure is basic, whether as the basis of a story (something missing for something found), as a method (identification and interpretation), as the formation of a group (requiring at least two persons), as the authenticity of an item (confirmed by two or more versions), or indeed in the concept of folklore (uniting the social "folk" and the expressive "lore"). The binary is significant in this perspective not just as a framework but also as a representation of the way the mind works—as a psychological concept—and also as the social basis of transmitting, or sharing, folklore.

Aware of the criticism that symbolist interpretations of texts are difficult to empirically verify, Dundes responded with the concept of "symbolic equivalence," using units of analysis he called *allomotifs* and *motifemes*. These terms refer to the actions, or "functions," of a story arranged within a structural system that could replace the prevalent literary or nonstructural classification of motifs as minimal units in a narrative. Applying a linguistic analogy, Dundes offered that allomotifs are to motifemes in narrative as speech allophones (any of various acoustically different forms of the same phoneme) are to phonemes (speech sounds designated by speakers of a particular language) and allomorphs (variant phonological representations of a morpheme) are to morphemes (minimal meaningful language units).

Dundes asserted that an ethnographic goal of folklore research is geared toward situated communication or context. Separating himself from other contextualists, however, Dundes warned against confusing surface *use* and disguised *meaning*. He inferred meaning from symbolic clues that might be outside the awareness of the speaker and not apparent from the context. Use is observed or collected from natives, while the interpretation, he insisted, is inevitably made from the analyst's viewpoint.

Dundes's Legacy

Dundesian analysis identifies basic patterns or concepts and consequently arrives at interpretations of their associations through symbolic equivalences (allomotifs) and social outlooks (worldviews). Dundes's goals were to centralize folklore studies as an academic discipline and disrupt the social hierarchy of "modern/elite and folk" by conceptualizing tradition as a human necessity.

Dundes's most sweeping influence into the 21st century has been in his definitions of folk group and genres of folklore. They have been instrumental in the formation of a modern, flexible concept of folklore as evidence of and commentaries on culture. Dundes's demonstration of structural analysis as a prelude to content interpretation has been important, along with his introduction of the terminology of allomotif and motifeme, which is still applied in anthropological scholarship. His methodological suggestion of emphasizing identification and interpretation, with attention to texture (performance, practice, or style) and context, is standard in anthropological approaches to folklore. His psychoanalytical perspectives have been less pervasive among performance-oriented folklorists, although his ideas on the projection of anxiety in folklore are essential to interpretative strategies in psychological ethnology and questions of cultural cognition and the rationale for cultural practice.

Simon J. Bronner

See also Freud, Sigmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Pike, Kenneth; Saussure, Ferdinand de; University of California, Berkeley

Further Readings

Bronner, S. J. (Ed.). (2007). *The meaning of folklore: The analytical essays of Alan Dundes*. Logan: Utah State University Press.

Dundes, A. (1965). What is folklore? In A. Dundes (Ed.), *The study of folklore*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

———. (1975). *Analytic essays in folklore*. The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

———. (1980). *The interpretation of folklore*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

———. (1987). *Parsing through customs: Essays by a Freudian folklorist*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

———. (1989). *Folklore matters*. Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press.

———. (Ed.). (1992). Introduction. In G. Róheim, *Fire in the dragon and other psychoanalytic essays on folklore* (pp. ix–xxvi). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

———. (1997). *From game to war, and other psychoanalytic essays on folklore*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky.

———. (2002). *Bloody Mary in the mirror: Essays in psychoanalytic folkloristics*. Jackson: University Press of Mississippi.

———. (2005). Afterword: Many manly traditions—a folkloristic maelstrom. In S. J. Bronner (Ed.), *Manly traditions: The folk roots of American masculinities* (pp. 351–364). Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

———. (2007). The ritual murder or blood libel legend: A study of anti-Semitic victimization through projective inversion. In S. J. Bronner (Ed.), *The meaning of folklore* (pp. 382–409). Logan: Utah State University Press.

Dundes, A., & Pagter, C. R. (1978). *Work hard and you shall be rewarded: Urban folklore from the paperwork empire*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Durkheim, Émile

David Émile Durkheim (1858–1917), the French philosopher, and founder of the French school of sociology and of the journal *L'Année Sociologique*, made significant contributions to the anthropology of religion and developed the structural-functional approach to society.

Biography and Major Works

Durkheim was born in Eastern France, the youngest of four children. His father was a rabbi, as was his paternal grandfather. The young Émile appeared destined to follow this family tradition but had a change of heart while still a schoolboy and abandoned all religious belief by the time he left his home town of Épinal to prepare for the entrance exam to the École Normale in Paris.

By the time he passed his *agrégation* (the examination required one to be eligible to teach in state secondary schools), Durkheim had decided that the topic of his doctoral dissertation in philosophy would be the relations between individualism and socialism. The problem he was concerned with was the development and maintenance of social cohesion in the face of the conflicting demand of modern life toward increasing specialization and individualization. This concern with the glue that held society together was a driving issue for Durkheim and stemmed in part from the social situation of France in the 19th century, a period rife with recurrent political crises. He refined his conception of this work throughout 1884–1886, during which period he visited Germany and studied with the pioneering psychologist Wilhelm Wundt, among others. Durkheim's interest at this point was clearly directed toward the creation of a science of ethics, which was to be part of sociology.

On his return from Germany, Durkheim wrote several articles on social science in Germany, which attracted the attention of Louis Liard, the director of Higher Education at the Ministry of Public Education, and in 1887, he was appointed *chargé de cours* (junior lecturer) of social science and pedagogy, a post especially created for him, at the Faculty of Letters of Bordeaux. It was under this guise that sociology first entered the French university system.

Durkheim's Bordeaux period (1887–1902) was extremely productive. He completed his doctorate and published his two doctoral theses, *La Division du travail social* (1893; translated as *The Division of Labor in Society*) and a Latin dissertation on Montesquieu (1892). He further published *Les Règles de la Méthode Sociologique* (1895; translated as *The Rules of Sociological Method*), *Le Suicide* (1897; translated as *Suicide*), and articles studying specialized social phenomena including social solidarity, family and kinship, incest, totemism, suicide, crime, religion, and law. In 1898, he founded the journal *L'Année Sociologique* around which gathered, over time, an impressive team of collaborators, including Durkheim's nephew, Marcel Mauss, and Henri Hubert, Robert Hertz, Célestin Bouglé, and Maurice Halbwachs. This journal provided an annual survey of the field of social sciences and related fields and published a series of original monographs, allowing Durkheim and his collaborators to exercise considerable influence.

In 1887, Durkheim married Louise Dreyfus, the daughter of a successful businessman, whose family was originally from the Alsace region. According to all accounts, theirs was a happy marriage, and Durkheim's wife made possible his intense work both by removing domestic cares and by taking on administrative and editorial work on his behalf. They had two children, Marie and André.

The Division of Labor

Durkheim, wishing to establish social science on a scientific footing, argued in *The Division of Labor* that it was time to leave behind philosophical systems such as those of Auguste Comte and

Herbert Spencer and to engage in specialized studies of particular social phenomena from the point of view of their functions, asking how and to what extent they perform them. When reviewing German works of social science in the 1880s, Durkheim had praised them for their concreteness and contrasted them to the "French" tendency to deal in generalities. Durkheim shared many of the concerns of the Germans he reviewed: He also wanted to establish the reality of society, its complexity, the fact that it was a natural entity, and the possibility of its scientific study. He made free use of the organic analogy in his early works, although he sometimes emphasized that he did not advocate the identity of society and organism but simply found the analogy useful. It was fundamental, in his view, that people realize the impossibility of altering society at will, its power of constraint over the individual, and its existence apart from individuals—in short, what he called its sui generis nature. He also emphasized the determinism of social phenomena, a determinism that he believed was necessary for sociology to be a science. Durkheim believed in the methodological unity of the social and the natural sciences.

The Division of Labor argued that the real social function of the division of labor was not economic but moral. Its true function was to create the feeling of solidarity among individuals. Because the division of labor obviously increased the productive force of the worker and was thus the necessary condition for the material and intellectual development of societies, it had been assumed that this was its function. But, Durkheim argued, there was nothing obligatory in furthering the economic development of society: If that were the only result of the division of labor, it would have no moral character. Social solidarity, however, was the fabric of society itself as it ensured the cohesion of its members.

Mechanical solidarity was characteristic of simpler, "segmental" societies, where all social units operated similarly—that is, individuals held the same beliefs and performed the same actions. The individual conscience was not very differentiated; it contained the same beliefs, mores, and customs as that of other members of the society. Organic solidarity, on the other hand, was developed by the division of labor and left room for individuality—or rather, made individuality possible in society. As the "collective conscience" decreased in breadth and intensity, it was the division of labor that took over its role and kept together the higher forms of social aggregates. It thus had a moral importance that the economists and utilitarian philosophers had never realized.

Durkheim introduced here his conception of the essentially double nature of human beings: *Homo duplex*. Humans have two *consciences*, one that they share with their entire group, which, in consequence, is society living and acting within them, and the other, which, on the contrary, represents only that which is personal and distinctive to each, which makes them individuals. For Durkheim, the development of the individual personality and the division of labor are inextricably linked and not in opposition to each other. It was the division of labor, with the new kind of solidarity it created, that allowed for the emergence of individuals.

Although normally the division of labor produced solidarity, there were abnormal cases in which this did not occur. In the third part of *The Division of Labor*, Durkheim first introduced his influential conception of *anomie*, a conception he would further develop in *Suicide* (1897). Anomie was to be found in industrial or commercial crises and in the conflict between labor and capital. It was due to the lack of a body of rules governing the relations between social functions. The lack of rules was, in its turn, due to the absence of sufficiently frequent interactions between the members of society. The sets of rules or laws developed as a "crystallization" of social interaction when these interactions had become solidified by their repetition over time. This process was akin to that of habit formation in the individual. If for some reason, this process of repeated contact did not take place, an anomic form of the division of labor arose.

Durkheim saw social facts as forming a continuum that went from morphological, or structural, social phenomena to "free currents of social life" that were not yet solidified into any particular form. Between one end of the spectrum and the other, there was only a difference in the degree of consolidation of the phenomena, not a difference in nature. In *The Division of Labor*, Durkheim had given structural phenomena the most significant explanatory role. This was qualified in the *Rules* (1895), and in later works, structural facts would be given less importance in relation to the more fluid *collective representations*.

In *The Division of Labor*, Durkheim had explained that the *collective consciousness* included the judicial, governmental, scientific, industrial, and other special functions, which consisted of systems of representations. Although the notion of collective representations can be traced to Durkheim's earliest works, it only gained a central role in his sociology after *Suicide* (1897). Durkheim concurrently scaled down the use of the concept of collective conscience.

Rules of Sociological Method and Suicide

The methodological principles presented in the *Rules of Sociological Method* were, Durkheim wrote, the practical results of his sociology course at Bordeaux and were implicitly contained in *The Division of Labor*. The book opened with a definition of "social fact," possibly its most controversial content. Offering definitions of the subject one wished to treat was standard practice in academic philosophy textbooks, with which it is certain Durkheim was thoroughly familiar. Thus, Durkheim was conforming to standard philosophical practice and could reasonably expect that philosophers would appreciate his logical rigor. Social facts were ways of acting, thinking, and feeling exterior to the individual and imbued with the power to impose themselves on him or her. Durkheim's point was to offer a definition that clearly set social facts apart from both organic and psychological facts, giving sociology a kind of "fact" of its own to work with, thereby guaranteeing its autonomy from other sciences.

The first and most fundamental methodological rule that Durkheim advanced was to consider social facts as things. He criticized various predecessors in sociology (Auguste Comte, John Stuart Mill, and Herbert Spencer) for having dealt with concepts rather than with objective realities. What made social facts "things" was that they were the *data* of sociology. A thing, he specified, was anything that offers itself to observation. This rule derived directly from one of the characteristics of social facts as defined by Durkheim: their "exteriority" to the individual. These rules were controversial even at the time Durkheim proposed them. They are sometimes seen as establishing Durkheim's social realism. It is certainly true that Durkheim always held that society was a part of nature and that he was critical of views that did not consider society as resistant to change as material conditions are. The notion that individual will or reason could in any direct way alter social institutions seemed clearly untrue to him.

Durkheim's emphasis on "things" was directly connected to a less studied aspect of his work, his concern with the reconstruction of a secular, scientific morality for the French republic and its diffusion through education. As Robert Jones and others have shown, Durkheim's desire to communicate the reality of the social realm was due to his belief that individuals needed to find their place in society and that their self-fulfillment depended on recognizing a force greater than themselves that gave meaning to their actions. One could not expect individuals to sacrifice for a mere idea rather than a concrete reality. In *Suicide*, Durkheim had shown the nefarious consequences of unlimited desires and of the lack of social rules on individuals. Only society, in his opinion, could offer satisfying goals and limits to an individual's ambition, while making possible individuality itself through the division of labor.

The Elementary Forms of the Religious Life

Durkheim described his intellectual development as marked by the realization, in 1895, of the foundational role played by religion in social life. He attributes this insight to reading the works of British anthropologists and British and American ethnographers, especially those of Robertson Smith and his school. This led to the publication of a number of articles in the *Année* dealing with various aspects of primitive religion—most notably "Primitive Classification," with Mauss—and eventually culminated in the publication of *The Elementary Forms of Religious Life* in 1912. Three propositions are put forth in this work: (1) that religion is society becoming aware of itself, although in a symbolically altered form; (2) that the representations created in religion are thus the initial source out of which all later forms of human thought have become differentiated; and (3) that as creations of that superior being which is society, religious symbols are "sacred"—that is, they are treated with a special respect or veneration denied to the profane world. The definition of religion offered at the beginning of *The Elementary Forms* presents it as a set of symbolic beliefs relative to sacred things. But religion is not just belief, it is also *practice*: There is no religion without ritual, without a community.

Individuals derive their religious beliefs from the way in which the sacred force is created in rituals. The sentiment of the divine is produced in collective ceremonies during which, as a result of the intense emotionality and interconnection generated, the individual feels overcome by an entity superior to himself. Durkheim called such moments "collective effervescence." The force emanates from the collective assembly, and thus, the individual feels it to be both immanent within him and transcendent over him. Rites play a fundamental role in generating and rekindling periodically the feeling of the sacred.

In a manner reminiscent of Kant's distinction between the sensible and intelligible worlds, Durkheim argues that the individual gets from society the best part of himself or herself, all intellectual and moral culture, and all that makes him or her truly human (in contrast to purely animal). On the other hand, society exists and lives only through individuals. If individuals did not hold social beliefs, traditions, and so on, in their individual minds, society would die. As Durkheim puts it, the gods cannot do without their worshippers any more than they can do without their gods. It is in this dynamic sense that the equation between society and god must be understood: The divine power is the symbolic representation of the creative capacity of the collectivity, a capacity rekindled through social rituals and practices.

The Elementary Forms investigates the origins of the categories or fundamental notions that dominate our entire intellectual life. These categories of understanding were like solid frames that confine thought: They were the notions of time, space, number, cause, substance, and personality (not the Kantian categories but those taken from Aristotle). These categories, Durkheim concluded, were embedded in religious thought, which itself was a social phenomenon. Religious representations were collective representations that expressed collective realities, and so already contained the principal categories. The categories were born in and from religion; they were a product of religious thought. But if they were of religious origin, the categories must share what was common to all religion: They must be social things, products of collective thought. In general, *concepts* were completely social things: One only emerged from the domain of fleeting individual impressions and sensations when human association resulted in the creation of a defined set of categories, which were fixed because they were shared. Even the notion of contradiction emerged from social conditions, since its predominance varied according to the societies and the times. The principle of identity (one of the fundamental laws of logic, which states that for all propositions p, it is impossible for both p and not p to be true) dominates current scientific thought, but there were vast systems of representations, namely mythologies, where it played a minor role. Another indicator that the categories were of social origin was their necessity; that is, the set of elementary categories was invested with an authority that one could not avoid at will.

The Social Life and the Universalization of Concepts

Durkheim believed that science brought our system of representations into a growing harmony with nature through the social process of verification. Collective representations undergo tests that are repeated indefinitely. Logical thought progressively purges itself of the subjective elements that it had from its origin. This was due to the development of a new kind of social life, of the internationalization of social life, which produced the universalization of concepts. As a consequence of this internationalization, Durkheim believed that things can no longer fit within the social frames in which they were originally classified; they must be organized with principles of their own; logical organization thus differentiates itself from social organization and becomes autonomous. Thought that is truly and peculiarly human is not a given, therefore, but a product of history; it is an ideal limit to which we come ever closer but in all probability will never attain. There is a continuous growth of the fit between knowledge and the world. Durkheim considered categories as not arbitrary because the social was part of the natural and the natural yielded to the human mind, over time, a natural classification—that is, one based on reality. Durkheim believed that science was a necessarily collective enterprise, and the *Année Sociologique* group's work can be fruitfully understood through this lens.

Later Years

In 1902, Durkheim successfully applied for an appointment as *chargé de cours* (junior lecturer) to the chair in the Science of Education at the Sorbonne, and he was made professor 4 years later. In 1913, the chair was renamed "Science of Education and

Sociology." Durkheim was required to lecture on the theory, history, and practice of education throughout his career. While Mauss has presented this required teaching as a burden, there were significant relations between Durkheim's pedagogical enterprise and his sociological interests, especially regarding the development of moral education.

On August 1914, Germany invaded Belgium and northern France, starting the first Great War. Durkheim became involved in the war effort, writing patriotic pamphlets to counter German propaganda and devoting himself to the cause of national defense. In 1916, Durkheim suffered a great blow: His son, a linguist and a member of the younger *Année* circle, was killed in the war. Durkheim was devastated by the death of his son and suffered a stroke from overwork and grief. He recovered sufficiently to take up his work on his final book, *La Morale* (*Ethics*), but in November 15, 1917, he died at the age of 59.

Daniela S. Barberis

See also Aristotle; Hertz, Robert; *L'Année Sociologique*; Mauss, Marcel; Neo-Kantianism; Smith, William Robertson; Spencer, Herbert; Structural Functionalism; Wundt, Wilhelm

Further Readings

Barberis, D. S. (2002). Moral education for the elite of democracy: The classe de philosophie between sociology and philosophy. *Journal of History of the Behavioral Sciences, 38,* 355–369.

Besnard, P. (Ed.). (1983). *The sociological domain: The Durkheimians and the founding of French sociology.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Borlandi, M., & Vogt, P. (Eds.). (1993). *Durkheim et de la division du travail social* [Durkheim and *The Division of Labor in Society*]. Paris, France: Presses Universitaires de France.

Brooks, J. I., III. (1990). Analogy and argumentation in an interdisciplinary context: Durkheim's "individual and collective representations." *History of the Human Sciences, 4,* 223–259.

Clark, T. N. (1968). The structure and functions of a research institute: The *Année Sociologique*. *European Journal of Sociology, 9,* 72–91.

Jones, R. A. (1999). *The development of Durkheim's social realism.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (2005). *The secret of the totem: Religion and society from McLennan to Freud.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Lukes, S. (1973). *Émile Durkheim: His life and work, a historical and critical study.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Pickering, W. S. F. (2009). *Durkheim's sociology of religion: Themes and theories.* Cambridge, UK: Lutterworth Press.

Pickering, W. S. F., & Martins, H. (Eds.). (1994). *Debating Durkheim.* London, UK: Routledge.

Schmaus, W. (1994). *Durkheim's philosophy of science and the sociology of knowledge: Creating an intellectual niche.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

E

Economic Anthropology

Economic anthropology is a distinctive field at the interface between anthropology and economics. It achieved a measure of success in the 3 decades after World War II but has been less prominent since then. Free market orthodoxy lent some unity to the past 3 decades, a period now framed in retrospect by the global economic crisis since 2008. Economic anthropology was dominated in the 20th century by fieldwork-based ethnography, but now it should open up once more to world history and to a more critical perspective on economy.

Three Phases of Economic Anthropology's Formation

The development of economic anthropology may be divided into three stages. From the 1870s to the 1940s, most anthropologists were interested in whether the economic behavior of "savages" manifested the same "rationality" that was taken to motivate Western actors. They assembled compendious accounts of world history conceived of as an evolutionary process. After World War I, the practice of fieldwork became more dominant, and ethnographers sought to engage the propositions of "neoclassical" economics with their findings about "primitive societies." They failed, mainly because they misunderstood the economists' epistemological premises.

The purpose of economic anthropology in the 19th century was to ask whether the world economic order must be founded on the principles that underpinned Western industrial society. The search was on for alternatives that might support a more just economy, whether liberal, socialist, anarchist, or communist. Since society was understood to have not yet reached its final form, there was a great interest in origins and evolution. Anthropology was thus the most inclusive way of thinking about economic possibilities. The universities expanded in the 20th century, and knowledge was compartmentalized into many impersonal disciplines modeled on the natural sciences. Anthropology found itself pigeonholed as the study of those parts of humanity that the other disciplines could not reach. The profession became fixed in a cultural-relativist paradigm, by definition opposed to the universalism of economics.

From 1945 to 1975, economic anthropologists argued among themselves about the theories and methods needed to study their special preserve, which now included peasants as well as tribesmen. "Formalists" held that the tools of mainstream economics were adequate to this task, while "substantivists" claimed that institutional approaches were more appropriate. By this, they meant that economic life in societies lacking impersonal markets was always "embedded" in other social institutions, ranging from the household to government and religion. Karl Polanyi was the principal source for the substantivist approach, first in his antimarket polemic, *The Great Transformation*, and later when he inspired a team of ethnographers, archaeologists, and historians to investigate nonindustrial societies. This debate ended in a stalemate, opening the way

for Marxists and feminists to dominate for a while, but they too mainly drew on the traditional subject matter of exotic ethnography.

The third stage takes us from the watershed of the 1970s through 3 decades of neoliberal globalization. Anthropologists now expanded their inquiries to address the full range of human economic organization. The question remains, "Do capitalist markets rest on universal human principles or not?" The focus of this entry is mainly on this last period. While a rapidly urbanizing world was consumed by war and economic disaster in the 20th century, anthropologists published monographs on remote peoples presented as living outside of modern history. The period after World War II saw the rise of economics to the public prominence it enjoys today. The neoliberal era was not kind to economic anthropology, which became fragmented and incoherent. We all now live in a world driven by capitalism, so anthropologists have studied it. There has been a marked shift back to the Western heartlands, but the palpable sense of a shrinking world encouraged anthropologists to develop new ways of studying "globalization" everywhere.

Between the Cultural Turn and Hard Science

By the 1980s, many anthropologists had abandoned economics to its own entropy. Marshall Sahlins, after publishing *Stone Age Economics*, denied the value of a comparative "anthropological economics," since material life everywhere was structured by local symbolic orders, of which bourgeois economics was one. This "cultural turn" has both subverted and invigorated economic anthropology in recent decades. Arjun Appadurai drew attention to the complex "biographies" of consumer goods. Such goods might acquire a commodity form but might then leave that sphere to become heirlooms or community sacra. The bourgeois separation of persons (subjects) and things (objects) was deconstructed by new work on personhood, led by Marilyn Strathern. But these approaches often led away from economic anthropology's central concerns.

The substantivist division between industrial and nonindustrial economies lives on in an opposition between "commodities" and "gifts," which represents a contrast between the capitalist West and the rest of the world. Marcel Mauss wrote his classic essay "The Gift" to refute the bourgeois opposition of individual commercial self-interest to the altruism of the gift. Market contracts and gifts, according to him, could both be shown to combine self-interest with social obligation as part of a universal logic of exchange; neither could be said to be "free." Yet a strong opposition between them was later projected onto Mauss's text as a basis for contrasting whole economies, the West versus the rest. Unlike the substantivists, proponents of the gift/commodity pair write about both types of economy, while generally keeping the same moral distance from "capitalism."

Stephen Gudeman's cultural approach to the economy stands out as a good example of this approach. He began by applying a "local models" perspective to some aspects of Western economics as well as to the peasant economies of the non-Western world. He challenges anthropologists to combine fieldwork with serious exposure to the history of economic ideas. His recent overviews build on an opposition between "community" and "market," the former focusing on activities performed and valued for their own sake, primarily within households, and the latter on means-ends relations, typically found in trade. This dialectical framework in principle could be applied anywhere.

Anthropologists who follow the new institutional economics do not always see themselves as "formalists," but they share a commitment to "hard science" and predictive models. Whereas Polanyi regarded markets as one kind of economic institution among several, they view all economic institutions as markets. They incorporate institutions into formal models through an underlying logic of rational choice consistent with neoclassical economics. The new institutional economics approach defines institutions as "the rules of the game." Their favorite example is property, which is often taken to provide the incentive structure for all economies. For example, Jean Ensminger's study of northern Kenyan pastoralists showed how markets transformed local lives, mainly for the better. New institutions emerged to reduce uncertainty and actors' transaction costs. Considerable benefits accrued to individuals following the breakdown of collective land tenure.

The Informal Economy

Ethnographic study of Third World cities generated the principal contribution made by anthropologists to economics. Clifford Geertz wrote about development questions in Indonesia during the 1950s.

He found that the majority of a Javanese town's inhabitants were occupied in a street economy that he labeled "bazaar-type." The "firm-type" economy consisted largely of Western corporations that benefited from the protection of state law. These had *form* in Max Weber's sense of "rational enterprise," being based on calculation and the avoidance of risk. National bureaucracy lent these firms a measure of protection from competition, thereby allowing the systematic accumulation of capital. The "bazaar," on the other hand, was individualistic and competitive, so that accumulation was impossible. Geertz pointed out that modern economics uses the bazaar model to study the decisions of individuals in competitive markets, while treating as anomalous the dominant monopolies protected by the state bureaucracy.

The global crisis of the early 1970s raised fears concerning urban unemployment in the developing countries. Cities were growing rapidly but without a comparable growth in "jobs" conceived of as regular employment by government and corporations. The question was "How are 'we' (the bureaucracy and its academic advisors) going to provide the people with the jobs, health, and housing they need?" The specter of urban riots and even revolution raised its head. This story didn't square with Keith Hart's fieldwork experience in Accra, Ghana, so he tried to persuade economists to abandon the "unemployment" model and consider hitherto invisible aspects of the grassroots economy.

The conceptual pair "formal/informal" grew out of analyzing migration to cities whose markets were only weakly organized by industrial capitalism. The two sides are linked, since "informality" is entailed in the institutional effort to organize society along formal lines. "Form" is *the rule*, an idea of what ought to be universal in social life; and for most of the 20th century, the dominant forms have been those of national bureaucracy. "The informal sector or economy" became a keyword in the development industry, referring as it did to all the economic activities that avoid regulation by the state.

A mania for deregulation of the "free market" from the 1980s led national economies and even the world economy itself to become progressively informal. Not only did money management go offshore, but corporations outsourced, downsized, and casualized their labor forces; public functions were privatized, often corruptly; the drugs and illicit arms trades took off; the global war over "intellectual property" assumed central place in the drive for profits; and whole countries abandoned any pretense of formality in their economic affairs. It has consequently become hard to tell the legal and illegal forms of capitalism apart.

One-World Capitalism

The shift of industrial production to countries with cheap labor has been a consistent feature of recent decades. At home, the political power of labor was undercut, and the Western masses now participated in capitalism, primarily as consumers rather than as producers. Anthropologists have flocked to the study of consumption, often with a perspective drawn from "material culture" rather than economic anthropology. Historians and ethnographers traditionally studied the artifacts of local peasantries that were made by hand. This approach could not easily be applied to the city, since urban domestic interiors are often furnished with artifacts of similar function with only minor formal differences. French sociologists and the anthropologist Mary Douglas took an oversocialized view of consumption, claiming that consumers could not express a distinctive identity through mass-produced commodities. It was assumed that every individual shares the same abstract code of meaning for these object-signs and that this is imposed from the outside. A later generation of anthropologists showed that consumers of mass-produced objects build up a universe that has personal meaning and expresses their social identity. The Hegelian concept of "appropriation" seeks to capture how commodities are made inalienable property as part of a home universe unique to their owner. Daniel Miller has taken this approach to shopping, the Internet, mobile phones, and clothing, from blue jeans to saris.

The process of getting people to spend money—the art or science of marketing—is also a rapidly expanding field of anthropological investigation. Kalman Applbaum argues that modern marketing has absorbed moral criticism into its own quasi-religious system. Whereas an earlier generation of ethnographers highlighted the devastating consequences of capitalist development for local cultures, he shifts the culture contact model to one more suited to the globalizing present. The emergence of consensual meanings and goals in economy is due to

corporations' success in controlling every aspect of the social life of the commodities they sell.

The basic capitalist institution is the firm. Small businesses often remain important, but they have long been overshadowed by organizations with a global reach. Of the 100 largest economic entities on earth, corporations now outnumber nations by more than 2 to 1. They are extremely flexible and overlap with governments. Alexandra Ouroussoff shows that the distribution of wealth between shareholders and managers of corporations is contentious. Since the 1980s, the rating agencies have supervised what they take to be investment risk on shareholders' behalf. They imagine that they can calculate and minimize future losses. Corporate executives tend to consider profit and loss to be subject to unpredictable contingency. They have muted their public criticism of the agencies because of their need for investment capital, and they modify their reports of company activities accordingly. An economic collapse was the inevitable result. Yet academicians, politicians, and journalists attribute the crisis to personal moral failure rather than institutional contradiction.

We still think of private property as belonging to living persons and oppose private and public spheres on that basis. This possessive individualism also allows abstract entities like governments and corporations to hold exclusive rights in something against the world. At the same time, corporations have retained their legal privileges, such as limited liability for bad debts. The focus has also shifted from "real" to "intellectual" property, from material objects to knowledge. The digital revolution in communication has allowed for the reproduction and transmission of information services to become increasingly costless, exerting a downward pressure on prices. The social effort needed to maintain high prices in a world where "information wants to be free" is the principal source of economic conflict today.

Money and Financial Crisis

The anthropology of money has enjoyed a revival of late. Anthropologists have long rejected the impersonal approach to money and markets offered by mainstream economics. Ethnographers have found that non-Western peoples tend to take modern money in their stride, turning it to their own social purposes. Money has acquired in Western economies a social force all of its own, but it has not elsewhere. Money is the principal means for us all to bridge the gap between everyday personal experience and a society whose wider reaches are unknowable. As a token of society, it must be impersonal to connect individuals to the universe of their relations. But people make everything personal, including their relations with society. This two-sided relationship is universal, but its incidence is highly variable. Money is both the principal source of our vulnerability in society and the main practical symbol allowing each of us to make an impersonal world meaningful.

Hart identified two strands of Western economic theory that explained money either as a *token* of authority issued by states or as a *commodity* made by markets. The coin is a metaphor for these two sides of money. One carries the virtual authority of the state (*heads*). The other treats the money medium as a *commodity* (*tails*). Rather than acknowledge the interdependence of "heads *and* tails," economic policy swings wildly between the two extremes.

The modern money system provides a wide repertoire of instruments to help people keep track of their exchanges with the world and to calculate the current balance of their worth in the community. So the chief function of money is *remembering*. If personal credit today points toward greater humanism in the economy, it also entails increased dependence on impersonal governments and corporations, on impersonal abstraction of the sort associated with computing operations, and on impersonal guarantees for contractual exchange. We may become less weighed down by money as an objective force, more open to it as a way of keeping track of the complex social networks that we each generate. It is not enough for anthropologists to emphasize the personal controls that people already impose on money in practice. That occurs in the everyday world as most of us know it. We also need ways of reaching the parts of the macroeconomy that we don't know, if we wish to avert the ruin it could bring down on us.

The failure of the New York investment bank Lehman Brothers in September 2008 triggered a financial collapse, the ramifications of which are with us still. One victim of the crisis has been free market economics. It is hard to assert now that economies will prosper only if markets are freed from political bondage. The conditions for proposing alternative approaches to the economy are now more favorable. This may help explain the

runaway success of David Graeber's historical and comparative synthesis *Debt: The First 5,000 Years*.

Future Prospects

The early ethnographers did not understand the economists' aims and methods and settled for a straw man, *Homo economicus* (Economic Man). Then, for a time, the formalist-substantivist debate drew the attention to some fundamental questions of method. But this argument went unnoticed by economists, and it did not leave behind a robust intellectual community of economic anthropologists. Echoes of the debate may be seen in the positions taken by neo-institutional and cultural anthropologists. Economists, policymakers, and the media have found it easy to ignore what anthropologists have to say.

The global crisis has opened up a new space for critical approaches to the economy. We cannot afford to neglect world history. Attempts to match the findings of exotic ethnography to a narrow utilitarian creed are bound to fail; both anthropology and economics were inadequate to our common human purposes.

There is much to recommend a renewed engagement with Mauss and Polanyi. Mauss's key modification of Émile Durkheim's legacy was to conceive of society as a historical project of humanity whose limits were extended to become ever more inclusive. Society cannot be taken for granted as a preexistent form. It must be made and remade, sometimes from scratch. Heroic gift exchange is designed to push the limits of society outward. No society is ever economically self-sufficient. So to the need for establishing local limits on social action must always be added the means of extending a community's reach abroad. This is why markets and money in some form are universal, and any attempt to abolish them must fail.

Polanyi drew attention to a plurality of distribution mechanisms that, in the modern world, affect the lives of millions of people who have no measure of control over them. He highlighted the inequality they created, as they swing between the poles of society's external and internal relations, market and state. The immediate reaction to the financial collapse was to flip the coin from tails to heads. Polanyi's call for a return to social solidarity, drawing on the voluntary reciprocity of associations, reminds us that people must be mobilized to contribute their energies to the renewal of society. It is not enough to rely on impersonal states and markets.

The cultural turn of the neoliberal era has buried the economy from view or allowed it to appear only as consumption or exchange. In addition to marginalizing the many concrete ways ordinary people make economic life their own, economists' focus on individual private property has obscured the role of governments and corporations. Any attempt to build society exclusively on private or common property is doomed, since human beings must combine self-reliance with belonging to each other in society. Ethnographers have shown this over and over again, but our myopic preoccupation with local complexity has prevented our engagement with larger questions of world history.

Markets are indispensable to a viable economy, but as critics have pointed out, unlimited markets threaten democracy itself. Economists disagree among themselves on how far to extend market principles. Some might now take an interest in what anthropologists have discovered. Mauss and Polanyi, by providing the missing link between everyday life and the world at large, offer continuing inspiration for the renewal of economic anthropology as a field.

Keith Hart

Author's note: This entry draws heavily on the author's collaborative work with Chris Hann.

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Douglas, Mary; Geertz, Clifford; Mauss, Marcel; Polanyi, Karl; Sahlins, Marshall; Strathern, Marilyn; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Applbaum, K. (2004). *The marketing era: From professional practice to global provisioning*. London, UK: Routledge.

Geertz, C. (1963). *Peddlers and princes: Social development and economic change in two Indonesian towns*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Graeber, D. (2011). *Debt: The first 5,000 years*. New York, NY: Melville House.

Gudeman, S. (2008). *Economy's tension: The dialectics of community and market*. Oxford, UK: Berghahn Books.

Hann, C., & Hart, K. (2011). *Economic anthropology: History, ethnography, critique*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Hart, K. (1986). Heads or tails? Two sides of the coin. *Man, 21*(3), 637–656.

———. (2005). *The hit man's dilemma: Or business, personal and impersonal*. Chicago, IL: Prickly Paradigm.
Hart, K., Laville, J., & Cattani, A. D. (Eds.). (2010). *The human economy: A citizen's guide*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.
Mauss, M. (1990). *The gift: Form and reason of exchange in archaic societies*. London, UK: Routledge. (Original work published 1925)
Ouroussoff, A. (2010). *Wall Street at war*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.
Polanyi, K. (2001). *The great transformation: The political and economic origins of our times*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press. (Original work published 1944)

Emics and Etics

See American Anthropological Association; Cultural Materialism; Pike, Kenneth

Ethnography of Speaking

The ethnography of speaking and the related ethnography of communication embody the dance between anthropology and linguistics that has existed since the two were established as academic disciplines in the United States. At its core, the ethnography of speaking is the attempt to grapple with the relationship between language and culture in a systematic way through a focus on language use in context. To meet this challenge, the approach has interwoven theory and methodology from multiple disciplines, most notably anthropology, linguistics, sociology, and, to a lesser degree, psychology. Many of the foundational ideas of the ethnography of speaking provide the basis for the ways in which linguistic anthropology is practiced in the United States today, and only a consideration of the ethnography of speaking within the context of the development of the disciplines of linguistics and anthropology reveals the ways in which it has been innovative as well as the ways in which it has been contested.

Precursors to the Ethnography of Speaking

Initially, the study of linguistics and the study of anthropology were joined in the United States in the work of Franz Boas. Boas viewed language as a necessary part of the study of culture because grammars and lexicons could give insight into native systems of classification and serve as a window on culture, even if language and culture could not be directly correlated. The field of anthropology included the practice of descriptive linguistics, which provided a means of studying social practices that had a fundamental concern with the relationship between language and culture. However, as linguists sought to define their discipline as independent of anthropology, the form that the study of the relationship between language and culture should take became a question, and the ethnography of speaking arose as an attempt to answer that question.

Early Development of the Approach

Although it has roots in the work of Boas, the start of the ethnography of speaking as a distinct approach is attributed to a 1962 essay by Dell Hymes, written during a period when the disciplines of both linguistics and anthropology were searching for more scientific paradigms. Noam Chomsky had introduced generative grammar as a way to control for factors seen to be external to the grammatical system of a language, thus further distancing linguistics from anthropology as a separate discipline. This approach was a radical turn away from the anthropological beginnings of linguistics, as variation and performance were factored out in favor of a focus on the notion of an "ideal speaker" and on native speaker intuitions about meaning, grammaticality, and usage. Meanwhile, Hymes saw that much of the work in anthropology was focused on the comparative study of cultural themes such as kinship and religion, while language was either ignored or studied only as an instrument, without careful attention to its own patterning. Hymes proposed that ethnographies of speaking should include what had been excluded from grammars and ethnographies—a close examination of language in its sociocultural context. Rather than trying to control for variation, ethnographers of speaking were to make the variation that exists both within and among communities of speakers the focus of study. They would study the act of speaking as a cultural system, thereby providing a theoretical framework that could account for variation and linguistic coherence simultaneously. This understanding could not be accomplished through additive means, that is, by adding social context to a grammatical description of a language or by considering language within contexts of social analysis. It required ethnographic study of language

use as a social act with its own internal patterning. Bronisław Malinowski had developed ethnography as a methodology in anthropology and had underscored the importance of language in context. Now Hymes, inspired by Malinowski, detailed the framework within which in-depth ethnographies of the patterns of speaking in different societies could be written and eventually compared to generate a body of theory.

Hymes, by himself and then in collaboration with John Gumperz, laid out guidelines for how the ethnography of speaking would be practiced. In the future, as their independent and collaborative work continued, Hymes would primarily influence the development of linguistic anthropology as a subdiscipline of anthropology, while Gumperz's work would lay the groundwork for sociolinguistics as a subdiscipline of linguistics. In their work together, Gumperz and Hymes emphasized looking for commonality with other disciplines, maintaining the community of use rather than the language as code as the point of departure. Nonetheless, they urged a mutual focus on both the means and the ends of communication. Hymes formulated the notion of the speech economy of a community as the area of focus of study. The speech economy is composed of speech events—the native designations of activities that are defined through the use of speech. In identifying the important components of speech events, Hymes initially drew heavily on the work of Roman Jakobson, to whom he dedicated the original 1962 essay outlining the ethnography of speaking. After several years of work within this paradigm, Hymes summarized the heuristic for investigating the speech event, also referred to as the communicative event, with what became the well-known mnemonic—SPEAKING: **S**etting, or Scene; **P**articipants, or Personnel; **E**nds (both goals/purposes and outcomes); **A**ct Characteristics (both the form and the content of what is said); **K**ey (the tone, manner, or spirit in which an act is done); **I**nstrumentalities (channel and code); **N**orms of Interaction and of Interpretation; and **G**enres (categories or types of speech act and speech event). Hymes proposed that these components of speech events, always defined by native categories, were the elements that ethnographers should be attuned to.

Within sociology, Erving Goffman and Harold Garfinkel also contributed to the methodology of ethnography of speaking in their work to examine how we use language to make sense of the world we live in, especially in face-to-face interaction. Garfinkel pointed out that indexical language and actions are continuously established through everyday activities. Garfinkel's work also inspired later, more detailed work on social interaction within the field of conversation analysis, most directly influencing the work of Harvey Sacks and Emanuel Schegloff. This work, though, differed from the ethnography of speaking in its approach to context. Conversation analysts limited context to that which was directly evoked by participants within the text of a conversation. Ethnographers of speaking took an ethnographic approach that defined context more broadly as situated within participants' social and cultural environments.

The Ethnography of Speaking Today

By the 1980s, the ethnography of speaking had begun to produce a substantial body of empirical work to push the approach forward. The volume *Explorations in the Ethnography of Communication* by Richard Bauman and Joel Sherzer and *Explorations in the Ethnography of Speaking* by the same authors brought together analyses of communicative events across a range of cultures and speech communities. In 1983, Joel Sherzer, a student of Dell Hymes, published the first full-length ethnography of speaking, *Kuna Ways of Speaking: An Ethnographic Perspective*, followed by *Verbal Art in San Blas: Kuna Culture Through Its Discourse*, a book that reflected the importance given to verbal art in the ethnography of speaking. At the same time, the anthropological orientation of the ethnography of speaking gained strength as linguistic anthropology once again became more firmly established as one of the four subdisciplines of anthropology. In 1983, Hymes became the president of the American Anthropological Association, and the association was reorganized into separate sections, resulting in the creation of the Society for Linguistic Anthropology.

As a result of these developments, much of the approach to studying language and culture in linguistic anthropology today can be traced to the theoretical interventions of the ethnography of speaking or ethnography of communication. Underlying much of the current work in linguistic anthropology are the core principles of the ethnography of speaking, which are that language is both constitutive and reflective of social realities, that speaking has

a patterning of its own, and that ethnography is a necessary methodology for discovering that patterning. However, the degree to which contemporary work exemplifies these principles in the spirit of the ethnography of speaking varies.

Some of the works in which this influence is most clearly identified focus on communicative situations that have immediate social consequences. From its inception, the application of the ethnography of speaking was envisioned as a way to analyze inequality, particularly in institutional settings. In his seminal 1962 essay, Hymes cites applications to studies of the socialization of children, the identification of subcultures, and the recognition of internal stratification within a group. Hymes conducted research in the field of education in addition to his more broadly theoretical expositions, but work on the linguistic socialization of children was given prominence by Bambi Schieffelin and Elinor Ochs. Shirley Brice Heath gave particular attention to the language of socialization and issues of inequality in public schools. Recently, much work in the ethnography of speaking has focused on issues of racial and economic inequality and how relevant categories are constructed and reflected through language use.

Although it has been argued that much work in linguistic anthropology has moved away from the Boasian tradition of linguistic description, much contemporary work in the ethnography of speaking continues to include grammatical description of a language while discussing how linguistic resources are brought to bear in areas of interest in social anthropology. This line of research has had a particularly strong influence on literature about the Indigenous people of the Americas. Inspired by Boas's work on North American Indian languages, Hymes's own work on Chinook led him to a more discourse-centered approach. Since then, work on Native American poetics and work on Latin American verbal art have been inspired by the ethnography of speaking. Much work in the Americas also engages the ethnography-of-speaking approach, as developed primarily by Richard Bauman's work on performance, which was also influenced by studies of folklore in anthropology.

Ethnographies of speaking and communication have focused on a broad range of topic areas. In the face of criticisms that the field of ethnography of speaking had no unifying thread, those who worked to develop the approach argue that it is united around the principle that both society and culture are constituted through communication, most especially through the use of language. For these reasons, they do not see the ethnography of speaking as a separate subdiscipline within linguistic anthropology but rather as an approach that considers an understanding of the linguistic resources available to a speaker to be important to the understanding of any given interaction. These resources and, therefore, each interaction are viewed as being fully situated in a larger social context. It is in this way that the ethnography of speaking offers a theoretical and methodological framework for the relationship between language and culture within the discipline of anthropology.

María Luz García

See also Boas, Franz; Chomsky, Noam; Discourse Theory; Goffman, Erving; Gumperz, John J.; Hymes, Dell; Jakobson, Roman O.; Malinowski, Bronisław

Further Readings

Basso, K. (1979). *Portraits of the Whiteman: Linguistic play and cultural symbols among the Western Apache*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Bauman, R., & Sherzer, J. (1989). *Explorations in the ethnography of speaking*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Gumperz, J., & Hymes, D. (1964). The ethnography of communication [Special issue]. *American Anthropologist, 66*(6, Pt. 2).

Heath, S. (1983). *Ways with words: Language, life and work in communities and classrooms*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Hill, J. (2011). *The everyday language of White racism*. New York, NY: Wiley.

Hymes, D. (1962). The ethnography of speaking. In T. Gladwin & W. Sturtevant (Eds.), *Anthropology and human behavior* (pp. 15–53). Washington, DC: Anthropological Society of Washington.

———. (1972). Toward ethnographies of communication. In P. P. Giglioli (Ed.), *Language and social context* (pp. 21–44). Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin Books.

Paredes, A., & Bauman, R. (Eds.). (1972). *Toward new perspectives in folklore*. Austin: University of Texas Press.

Schieffelin, B., & Ochs, E. (1987). *Language socialization across cultures*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Sherzer, J. (1983). *Kuna ways of speaking: An ethnographic perspective*. Austin: University of Texas Press.

Sherzer, J., & Urban, G. (1986). *Native South American discourse*. Berlin, Germany: Mouton de Gruyter.
Webster, A. (2009). *Explorations in Navajo poetry and poetics*. Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press.

Ethnohistory

In its most general sense, *ethnohistory* refers to a body of scholarship that attempts to bridge the disciplines of anthropology and history—a domain also terminologically covered by other phrases, including historical anthropology and anthropological history—and is often understood as the history of peoples more typically studied by anthropologists than by historians. While this broad sense is still encountered, it is problematic, in part due to the diversification of those disciplines. A more specific and increasingly formalized sense is one that developed initially through Indian rights work in North America and one that is related to theoretical movements referred to as ethnomethodologies or ethnoscience: ethnohistory as a mode of writing histories that respects and reflects the historical perspectives and consciences of the people involved. In this framework, it is not sufficient to simply write a history of an "Other"; rather, one must grapple with the often disparate understandings of historical processes that pertain in situations where different cultures come into contact.

Western scholars have written histories and other accounts of different ethnic groups from the dawn of history, from Greek accounts of barbarians, to European explorers' seeking to understand the origins of the different peoples they encountered and sometimes subjugated, to modern ethnographic and historical studies of particular ethnic groups and of processes of cultural interaction. Ethnohistory, however, is a relatively recent development. The term was perhaps coined by the anthropologist Clark Wissler in 1909, referring to the documentary sources on indigenous groups, which might be used together with archaeological data to understand the pasts of the American Indians being studied ethnographically by anthropologists. The more specific sense emphasized here also derives from American Indian scholarship, but in this case, it derives from the legal cases heard under the Indian Claims Commission beginning after the Second World War, in which scholars testified as to the underlying facts of cases involving land rights of indigenous people. These cases often turned on questions of interpretation, both of specific documents and of more ephemeral matters, like whether a particular group was properly identifiable as descendant from historical treaty signatories. A variety of forms of evidence—some of them new to Western courts and others requiring defense, challenge, and interpretation—became relevant, including archaeological evidence and oral traditions. The classic anthropological subject of kinship took on a significant role in determining meaningful and valid lines of descent. Linguistic interpretation was involved, but other dimensions of culture also needed to be explicated for the courts. Perhaps most critical was unpacking the documentary record as depicting only one of the two (or more) perspectives in situations of cultural interaction, typically representing the Western view to the detriment of understanding the positions of others.

In the mid-1950s, many of the scholars involved in this legal scholarship, and others interested in "Indian history," began to come together for scholarly conferences, particularly the American Indian Ethnohistoric Conference and the Ohio Valley Historic Indian Conference. Those conferences developed into the American Society for Ethnohistory (ASE), which began the publication of its flagship journal *Ethnohistory* in 1954. The ASE also sponsors an annual conference, typically drawing several hundred scholars; its membership includes primarily individuals trained in the larger, more traditional disciplines of anthropology and history, but there are also art historians, geographers, linguists, and others—reflecting the interstitial or liminal disciplinary position that still characterizes ethnohistory. Indeed, a shared sense of marginality has contributed to the camaraderie of the ASE from its inception.

In the 1980s, the scholarship of French historians such as Marc Bloch, Fernand Braudel, Lucien Febvre, François Furet, and Paul Ricoeur, began to be more widely influential in the United States, particularly among anthropologists who were interested in thinking about historical processes in colonial situations. Bernard Cohn, Greg Dening, Nicholas Dirks, William Roseberry, Marshall Sahlins, Eric Wolf, and others worked toward what Cohn referred to as a rapprochement between history and anthropology, and while most would question whether that was truly achieved—and while most of these individuals

never identified strongly as ethnohistorians—there at least developed a disciplinary climate that was more hospitable toward ethnohistory.

While American Indian studies had provided the main force in the development of ethnohistory, works examining other parts of the world were a part of the discourse from the very beginning. The 1990s saw an explicit move by the leaders of the ASE and the editors of *Ethnohistory* to institutionalize this greater breadth with outreach to scholars working in other areas and increased non–North American content in the journal, notably including special issues on Papua New Guinea (2000), Madagascar (2001), and Latin America (1995, 2000, 2001) and a special issue on violence and warfare (1999) that drew on cases from around the world. This pattern, a strong core focused on Native American studies with increasing participation from other parts of the world, continues to develop and characterize the field, and works in ethnohistory are often published in other venues as well, particularly in journals of regional or "area studies" focus.

The usual product of ethnohistorical scholarship is a narrative history; while quantitative data, sociocultural theory, textual analysis, and other methodologies and data sets often figure in its production, most practitioners find that the narrative structure best accommodates the felt need to fairly represent different cultural perspectives. Within that genre, there is considerable variety. Some studies seek to depict a particular event or series of events from the various perspectives of participants. Some explore the historiography, or historical consciousness, of a particular group. Typically, documents and other materials are read "against the grain," seeking to see through the constraints of those who produced the records to hidden or unrecognized perspectives of others who did not produce a record in their own voices. Scholars often use "upstreaming"—taking the more recently observed practices that are better documented to understand past practices—and also "downstreaming"—for example, using archaeological findings to interpret later periods. These kinds of interpretive reconstructions have been criticized for not necessarily reflecting the reality of a given moment but are seen by many as valuable tools for fleshing out incomplete records. Comparative cases may also be employed, raising questions of just how comparable, or how different, the examples may be.

In recent years, as increasing numbers of indigenous people have themselves pursued higher education and entered into academic discourse, they have often criticized the fact that Westerners are still constructing and disseminating the histories of indigenous peoples. Indigenous scholars such as Devon Mihesuah and Linda Tuhiwai Smith have sought to "decolonize" historical methods, to formulate "indigenous methodologies," and to raise the awareness of these issues among nonindigenous scholars. Although some might argue that it is not possible to "know" another, others see the attempts to bridge difference as important, even if perhaps inevitably flawed. While occasionally confrontational in nature, for the most part this process has fostered a discursive relationship, with greater awareness of the challenges and differences involved in writing histories, resulting in the production of more interesting and more accurately and fully representative histories.

Frederic W. Gleach

See also Bloch, Maurice; Ethnomethodology; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Sahlins, Marshall; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Galloway, P. (2006). *Practicing ethnohistory: Mining archives, hearing testimony, constructing narrative*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Gleach, F. W. (2003). Controlled speculation and constructed myths: The saga of Pocahontas and Captain John Smith. In J. S. H. Brown & E. Vibert (Eds.), *Reading beyond words: Contexts for native history* (2nd ed., pp. 40–42). Peterborough, Ontario, Canada: Broadview Press.

Harkin, M. (2010). Ethnohistory's ethnohistory: Creating a discipline from the ground up. *Social Science History, 34*(2), 113–128.

Hill, J. D. (Ed.). (1988). *Rethinking history and myth: Indigenous South American perspectives on the past*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Krech, S., III. (1991). The state of ethnohistory. *Annual Reviews of Anthropology, 20,* 345–375.

Mihesuah, D. A. (Ed.). (1998). *Natives and academics: Researching and writing about American Indians*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Tuhiwai Smith, L. (1999). *Decolonizing methodologies: Research and indigenous peoples*. London, UK: Zed Books.

Wilson, S. M. (1999). *The emperor's giraffe, and other stories of cultures in contact*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Ethnological Society of London

See Royal Anthropological Institute

Ethnomethodology

Ethnomethodology is one of the more recently developed fields in social science. Founded in the 1960s as an alternative to the positivist and functionalist approaches that dominated North American sociology, ethnomethodology draws on phenomenology and the philosophy of ordinary language and focuses intensively on practical action and social interaction in everyday settings. Together with the spin-off program of conversation analysis, ethnomethodology has become a familiar perspective in several fields besides sociology, including anthropology, linguistic pragmatics, communication and information studies, science and technology studies, education studies, and workplace studies. Although ethnomethodologists sometimes investigate everyday and professional quantitative practices (including those in the social sciences), with few exceptions they pursue an observational and descriptive approach to the activities they study.

Origin and Meaning of the Term

The term *ethnomethodology* was coined in the 1950s by Harold Garfinkel (1917–2011) to describe a distinctive orientation to the production of social order, although it was not until the 1967 publication of Garfinkel's *Studies in Ethnomethodology* that the word became familiar in the social sciences. The word is now in the *Oxford English Dictionary*, although its meaning continues to be a source of confusion and consternation. The word is a compound of the Greek *ethnos*, meaning "people," and the neo-Latin term *methodologia*, meaning the general study of disciplinary principles or procedures (methods). Garfinkel linked the term to previously established "ethnoscience" fields in anthropology, such as ethnobotany, ethnomathematics, and ethnomedicine, which investigated and recorded native classifications, methods of reckoning with numbers, and healing practices. The domain of ethnomethodology is much broader than those of ethnobotany, ethnomathematics, and the other ethnosciences as its scope includes methods in any organized practice. Moreover, with some notable exceptions, ethnomethodologists focus on practices in the same societies in which they live. Sometimes they investigate specialized activities in law courts, scientific laboratories, and other settings, but often they study ordinary conversations and routine practical actions that rarely are graced by the term *methods* but nevertheless exhibit methodic organization.

Endogenous and Academic Methodologies

Compared with other social sciences, ethnomethodology takes an unusual stance toward methodology. As usually defined, a methodology is a *system* of rules, postulates, and general principles for regulating the procedures of a discipline. In a more general sense, methodology is the *analysis* of the extant principles and procedures of a discipline. In the philosophy of science, the analysis of methodology covers all of science and not only the technical methods of a single discipline. The most ambitious analyses of method prescribe criteria—such as Sir Karl Popper's falsifiability—for demarcating science from nonscience. In the social sciences, methodology is important both for establishing disciplinary techniques and as a basis for claiming scientific legitimacy.

Émile Durkheim's *The Rules of Sociological Method* (originally published in 1895) is an especially clear example of a classical sociological text that treats abstract rules and principles as the fundamental grounds for securing sociology's status as a science. In the *Rules*, Durkheim presents a positivistic vision of society as an objective reality constituted by social facts. For Durkheim, social facts are systematic organizations of actions. Although produced by individuals, social actions are reproduced throughout a coherent society and across generations. In Durkheim's view, societal members whose actions produce orderly arrangements rarely attain a comprehensive understanding of the causal regularities that govern and shape those actions; hence, sociological methods are required for observing and describing those regularities. Durkheim's 1897 study

Suicide exemplifies this distinction between ordinary social action and professional sociological analysis. Durkheim explicitly turns away from biographical reasons for specific suicides, as expressed, for example, in suicide notes, and turns instead to statistical rates of suicide. The rates are his social facts, and he explains them causally by reference to variations in nationality, religious affiliation, and social integration. Although Durkheim makes it clear that social facts are methodically produced, he insists that a comprehensive scientific analysis of those facts can only be attained through a detached analysis that adheres to a scientific methodology. Simply put, for Durkheim, ordinary members of a society collectively produce social order by acting *methodically*, but the structured causal relations that govern those actions remain implicit and unknown until the sociologist deploys the appropriate scientific *methodology*.

In many of his ethnomethodological writings, Garfinkel invokes Durkheim's *Rules*, but he argues that actors are not "cultural dopes" who act without comprehending the methodical grounds of their actions. This does not mean that ordinary social actors have a scientific understanding of the social world. Instead, it means that their understandings—regardless of how they are attained and regardless of how adequate or inadequate they appear to be from a detached observer's point of view—are *endogenous* to the practices sociologists study and thus cannot be contained within the precepts and principles of an abstract social science methodology. Garfinkel thus collapses the difference between members' methods and sociological methodology, which is fundamental to Durkheim's program. For Garfinkel and ethnomethodology, both the production of particular actions and the analytical investigation of the systematic organization of such actions constitute the field that sociologists study. This conception of the social field leaves unsettled what ethnomethodology's own "methodology" could possibly be and how it relates to the many varied methods and methodologies at large in society.

In many of the natural and social sciences, methodology is an explicit and fundamental aspect of the discipline's pedagogy, organization, and public presentation. Although they are not usually called "methodologies," the pedagogies and techniques in many legal, clinical, and artistic specialties also include explicit analyses, rules, principles, and examples. In both scientific and nonscientific domains of practice, it is widely recognized that practical mastery requires the development of tacit knowledge or practical know-how, not just formal prescriptions. For some specialties, accredited mastery can be gained only after years of practice under the guidance of experienced practitioners. The mastery of a natural language, driving in traffic, and many other commonplace practices also involve formal and informal pedagogies, analyses, rules, tests of competency, and know-how gained through practice. The balance between formal methodology and tacit know-how varies from practice to practice, but even the most formal disciplines require improvisation and situated practice, while the most commonplace practices have their pedagogies, rules of thumb, and maxims. Given the assumption that rules and other formal prescriptions do not, and cannot, give adequate sociological descriptions of the practices through which they are used, ethnomethodologists closely examine singular situations of practice in great detail, using participant observation and often audio and video recordings to gain firsthand access to those situations.

Ethnomethodology's treatment of methods as phenomena makes no exception for social scientific methods. Instead, ethnomethodologists treat social surveys, statistical techniques, interviews, ethnographic observations, and even their own procedures as *topics* of investigation rather than *resources* for securing reliable scientific knowledge. Some of Garfinkel's earliest studies delve into social science research practices such as coding interview responses and analyzing official records. These studies demonstrate that ad hoc judgments grounded in commonsense knowledge of the social world are crucial for constituting data points, assigning instances to nominal categories, and interpretatively relating observational data to relevant social contexts. Such a treatment of methods as topics does not mean that ethnomethodologists themselves eschew all established methods for collecting, organizing, and analyzing social phenomena but that they are attuned to the necessity of adapting methods to specific social situations and are indifferent to the special truth status assigned to results derived from any particular formal methodology, regardless of its scientific pedigree.

Conversation Analysis

In the late 1960s and early 1970s, Harvey Sacks (1935–1975), along with Emanuel Schegloff

(b. 1938) and Gail Jefferson (1938–2008) developed a distinctive line of ethnomethodological research, which came to be known as conversation analysis (CA).

CA has become a robust mode of analysis in its own right. Consistent with ethnomethodology's treatment of methodology as being reflexively part of the production of social order, as opposed to being an exclusive resource for professional investigators, CA identifies a *phenomenon* of interest. The idea is that the participants in a conversation "analyze" an ongoing conversation while producing it. Accordingly, an utterance placed in a conversational sequence displays an "analysis" of the interactional situation—a situation that importantly includes prior utterances by other speakers—and provides a relevant contribution to that situation as well as a condition for any actions that follow. Even an expression as simple as a beeping automobile horn provides an occasion for drivers and pedestrians in the vicinity to engage in an instant analysis of the immediate situation to determine whether the beeping horn is marking an offense, warning of a hazard, or expressing a greeting. Such "analysis" is displayed in responsive actions and nonactions in the unfolding scene.

In the 1970s, CA began to acquire an identity of its own, distinct from that of ethnomethodology. Leading figures in CA deliberately pursued a technical direction, elaborating on specific sequential and interactional organizations of talk and gesture in "ordinary" conversations and in specific institutional settings, such as courtroom tribunals, clinical diagnoses, classroom lessons, political debates, and survey interviews. One of the valuable lessons from such studies is that interaction in institutional settings is largely made up of "ordinary" interactional exchanges. This focus on the ubiquity of "ordinary" interactional routines in specialized activities has much to recommend it, but it does not delve very deeply into the many and varied repertoires that distinguish specific cultivated practices from one another.

Studies of Work

Starting in the 1970s, Garfinkel and some of his students turned their attention to the work accomplished in various arts, professions, and sciences. Although such work included paid employment in organizations, Garfinkel used it more broadly as a term for the achievement of specialized activities of all kinds. These studies made significant contributions to social studies of science, particularly ethnographies of scientific laboratories that began to be published at the end of the 1970s. They also contributed to the development, starting in the 1980s, of ethnographic research programs of technology design, use, and management, which became known as "workplace studies" or "computer-supported cooperative work."

Ethnomethodological studies of work in the professions and sciences often employ audio recordings of instances of activity, but the main task and challenge is to come to terms with distinctive competencies for playing music, constructing mathematical proofs, conducting litigation, or demonstrating scientific lessons. Depending on the case, it may be necessary to *become* a mathematician, lawyer, or musician and to use the skills and materials of the relevant practice to display and analyze its social organization.

Ethnomethodology's Status as a Theory or Method

Ethnomethodology is not a social scientific theory or method, as such. Because methods of all kinds make up its subject matter, it is necessary for ethnomethodologists to learn the methods studied as a precondition for analyzing them. However, ethnomethodologists also make use of some common research practices, and the field has developed a distinctive set of analytical themes and terms. The primary reason for employing such practices and terms is to elucidate how various plans, rules, algorithms, recipes, maps, guidelines, maxims, protocols, proverbs, and so on, are used in actual conduct. Ethnomethodological methods are thus subordinated to the task of disclosing other methods (and methodologies). For the most part, they are procedures for gaining insight into taken-for-granted organizations of practice, rather than verifying or falsifying scientific inferences about the social world.

Michael E. Lynch

See also Durkheim, Émile; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Phenomenology; Popper, Karl; Sociolinguistics; Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Further Readings

Button, G. (Ed.). (1991). *Ethnomethodology and the human sciences*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Garfinkel, H. (1967). *Studies in ethnomethodology*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

———. (2002). *Ethnomethodology's program: Working out Durkheim's aphorism*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield.

Heritage, J. (1984). *Garfinkel and ethnomethodology*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Livingston, E. (1987). *Ethnographies of reason*. Aldershot, UK: Ashgate.

Lynch, M. (1993). *Scientific practice and ordinary action: Ethnomethodology and social studies of science*. New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

Sacks, H. (1992). *Lectures on conversation* (2 vols.). Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Sacks, H., Schegloff, E. A., & Jefforson, G. (1974). A simplest systematics for the organization of turn-taking in conversation. *Language, 50*(4).

Suchman, L. (2007). *Human-machine reconfigurations: Plans and situated actions*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press. (Original work published 1987)

Sudnow, D. (1991). *Ways of the hand*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press. (Original work published 1978)

Ethnoscience/New Ethnography

Ethnoscience was a method of data collection by which anthropologists hoped to document how the people they studied thought about and organized their worlds. Because of a strong linguistic influence, those who practiced ethnoscience conceptualized culture as a mental model and, in this way, turned dramatically away from the evolutionary and material theories of culture that were popular at that time. Although anthropologists since Bronisław Malinowski and Franz Boas claimed that their work should reproduce native reality, the ethnoscientists were the first to outline a concrete method by which they hoped to accomplish this goal.

Beginning in the mid-1950s, some American anthropologists began to critique the discipline's previous methods of conducting ethnographic research. These critics argued that ethnographic studies were idiosyncratic, unscientific, and produced data that were not comparable with the data from other ethnographic research. They further claimed that earlier ethnographic studies distorted their data by forcing them into Western conceptual categories. The answer to these issues, the critics claimed, was to conduct ethnographic research in a new way. They called this new method ethnoscience, or the new ethnography. The followers of ethnoscience argued that to make ethnographic research more accurate, anthropologists should follow a specific methodology, taking what the linguist Kenneth Pike called an *emic* approach. That is, they should attempt to reproduce cultural reality as it was perceived and lived by the members of the societies they studied.

For ethnoscientists, culture consisted of all of a given society's conceptual categories; thus, they argued that ethnographies should describe the folk classifications of native thought. The ideal ethnography in this view would include all the principles that natives must know to think and act appropriately in the social situations within their cultures. Consequently, practitioners of this type of ethnography should be able to think like a native. Furthermore, ethnoscientists believed that research and writing conducted in this manner were scientific in that the validity of one's data was testable (you could ask a native if your work was correct) and that different ethnographers following the prescribed research methods should, in principle, get the same results.

Ethnoscience and Linguistics

Ethnoscientists assumed that native understandings and systems of classification were embedded in language. This idea was in part a result of the popularity of a linguistic theory called the Sapir-Whorf hypothesis, named after the linguists Edward Sapir and Benjamin L. Whorf. Sapir and Whorf were interested in the relationship between language and thought, and in the 1930s, they proposed that language shaped people's perceptions of the world. Whorf especially tried to illustrate this linguistic determinism in his analysis of the conceptual world of the Hopi as illustrated by their language. This emphasis on the influence of language on thought led ethnoscientists to see a close connection between language and culture. They reasoned that replicating the classification system of a language would

give an ethnographer the ability to understand the world in the same way as did native speakers of that language.

The method by which one conducted an ethnoscientific analysis was based on insights derived from the study of phonology by members of the Prague school of linguistics. Phonology is the study of the sounds used in language. The particular perspective of the Prague school of linguists was that the sounds of a language, called *phonemes*, were identifiable only when contrasted with other sounds. For example, the phonemes /b/ and /v/ are separate phonemes in English but variations of the same phoneme in Spanish. These can be identified by contrasting words where the only change is in the one sound. In English, /b/at and /v/at are different words. In Spanish, /v/oy and /b/oy mean "to go." The two phonemes thus form a contrast set in English but not in Spanish, and in this way, linguists identified the phonemes and re-created the emic use of the two sounds.

The particular insight of the ethnoscientists was to extend this linguistic theory to cultural patterns of meaning. To elicit native mental models, practitioners of the new ethnography depended heavily on eliciting information through highly structured interviews, using sets of contrasting items that were designed to highlight the essential features of conceptual categories such as kinship, illness, plants, color, or animals. For example, to try to better understand the Lacandon Maya ethnic identity, Jon McGee once presented a series of Lacandon Maya men and women with a set of physical and cultural contrasts he thought would be significant in determining "Lacandoness." This included features such as light or dark hair, light or dark skin, speaking Maya or not speaking Maya, and numerous other contrasts. He discovered that the primary marker of Lacandon identity among the people he questioned was having a Lacandon father. In ethnoscientific terms, McGee replicated the conceptual model of Lacandon ethnic identity.

Basic Principles of Ethnoscience

The fundamental principles of ethnoscience were outlined by Ward Goodenough in his 1956 article "Componential Analysis and the Study of Meaning" and William Sturtevant in his 1964 article "Studies in Ethnoscience." According to these works, the key instrument in fieldwork was a highly structured interview designed to elicit native conceptual categories, which ethnoscientists called *domains*. Once a domain had been identified, the researcher then tried to identify the objects that populated that domain, which they called *lexemes* or *paradigms*. For example, the domain of animal contains classes of objects such as dogs and cats. However, anthropologists should not assume that they understand how or if natives conceptualize the differences between dogs and cats. Both dogs and cats are furry, four-legged animals and have tails. Following the Prague-school linguistic model, ethnoscientists used a technique called *componential analysis* to identify contrast sets. They maintained that by conducting a componential analysis, using a box diagram such as the one in Table 1, a researcher could identify the specific characteristics that a native used to distinguish one object from another. In this instance, having four legs and a tail are not characteristics that distinguish dogs from cats among American pet owners, but having long whiskers, purring, and having retractable claws are components of the conceptual model of cats that separate them from dogs. In theory, data collection in this manner is more systematic and replicable and thus, followers claimed, more scientific. Furthermore, ethnoscientists of the 1950s and 1960s claimed that once a researcher understood a people's conceptual categories, he or she could think like a native member of that culture.

Table 1 A Componential Analysis of Dogs and Cats

Items of Contrast	*Fur*	*Four Legs*	*Tail*	*Retractable Claws*	*Long Whiskers*	*Purrs*
Dogs	Yes	Yes	Yes	No	No	No
Cats	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes	Yes

Early attempts at this form of research picked discrete phenomena for analysis, such as Floyd Glenn Lounsbury's analysis of Pawnee kinship or Harold Conklin's 1955 study of Hanunóo color categories. However, ethnoscientific methods are easily applicable to other topics, and researchers have applied them to a wide variety of situations, including J. P. Spradley's 1971 analysis "Beating the Drunk Charge"; Brent Berlin, Dennis Breedlove, and Peter Raven's 1974 analysis of Tzeltal Maya plant classifications; and Dorothy Holland and Debra Skinner's 1987 study of the cultural models behind American gender terms.

Although claiming to be a scientific method for conducting ethnography, ethnoscience required a level of cultural relativism that made cross-cultural comparison virtually impossible. After all, if each culture has a unique way of conceptualizing the world and could only be described in its own terms, how could cultures be compared? Furthermore, critics argued that it was impossible for ethnographers to get inside another's head and replicate their thought processes. A researcher had to rely on what people said, and much of human behavior is nonlinguistic. A further problem concerned variation within society. When ethnoscientists said that they were trying to re-create a native's cultural reality, an obvious question was "Which native?" Ethnoscientists typically dealt with phenomena in which there was a high degree of consensus, such as kinship terms or names of plants where identification was fairly simple (as in the example of dogs and cats above). However, the total ethnoscientific analysis of a culture would be unbelievably complex. In fact, such a thing was never attempted. Because of these difficulties, the early promises of ethnoscience were never fully realized. However, following developments in psychology and linguistics over the past several decades, ethnoscience led to the development of the field of cognitive anthropology, which has a much stronger emphasis on brain function and neurology.

R. Jon McGee

See also Boas, Franz; Cognitive Anthropology; Ethnomethodology; Goodenough, Ward H.; Lounsbury, Floyd; Malinowski, Bronisław; Pike, Kenneth; Prague School of Linguistics; Sapir, Edward; Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Berlin, B. O., Breedlove, D., & Raven, P. (1974). *Principles of Tzeltal plant classification*. New York, NY: Academic Press.

Conklin, H. C. (1955). Hanunóo color categories. *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology, 11*(4), 339–344.

Frake, C. O. (1961). The diagnosis of disease among the Subanun of Mindanao. *American Anthropologist, 63*(1), 113–132.

———. (1962). The ethnographic study of cognitive systems. In J. P. Spradley (Ed.), *Culture and cognition: Rules, maps, and plans* (pp. 191–205). Long Grove, IL: Waveland Press.

Goodenough, W. H. (1967). Componential analysis and the study of meaning. *Language, 32*(2), 195–216.

Holland, D., & Skinner, D. (1987). Prestige and intimacy, the cultural models behind Americans' talk about gender types. In D. Holland & N. Quinn (Eds.), *Cultural models in language and thought* (pp. 78–111). New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

Sturtevant, W. C. (1964). Studies in ethnoscience. *American Anthropologist, 66*(2), 99–131.

Whorf, B. L. (1941). The relation of habitual thought and behavior in language. In L. Spier, A. I. Hallowell, & S. S. Newman (Eds.), *Language, culture, and personality: Essays in memory of Edward Sapir* (pp. 75–93). Menasha, WI: Sapir Memorial Fund.

Ethology, Human

Follow the duck, not the theory of the duck!

—William C. Charlesworth

Human ethology is the study of human behavior from an evolutionary perspective. It is a comparably young scientific discipline dating back to the 1960s. While Konrad Lorenz and even Charles Darwin already had some thoughts about the origins of human behavior, the systematic research of evolved behavioral patterns in humans gained momentum through the works of William Charlesworth, Irenäus Eibl-Eibesfeldt, and Detlev Ploog. The background of those three—developmental psychology, biology, and psychiatry—is an early indicator of the multidisciplinary nature of this research field. The idea of applying evolutionary ideas to human behavior was a novel one and inspired many new questions among scientists from different backgrounds.

Today, scholars with different scientific backgrounds continue to contribute to the understanding of the manifold aspects of human behavior from an evolutionary viewpoint. Evolutionary theory unifies them and thus creates a metadiscipline. The strength of this discipline is at the same time its greatest weakness: Evolution creates a common ground and forms a theoretical basis on which to build a research field, but at the same time, the multitude of disciplines that engage in ethological research have different histories and often use different methodological approaches. For example, evolutionary psychology and ethology base their research on evolutionary theory; both investigate human behavior in a broad sense. But in the European tradition, human ethology descended from ethology as a biological discipline, while in the United States the psychological disciplines were the first to apply evolutionary theory to behavior-related questions. In human ethology, observing behavior is central. In evolutionary psychology, the emphasis lies more on using questionnaires to conduct research.

Additionally, these approaches may alienate scholars who are not open to evolutionary ideas. This is especially true when the research topic is humans and even more so where human behavior is concerned. Bill Charlesworth wrote that his biological approach to the study of children was not welcomed warmly by his colleagues, while the use of animal models was state of the art.

Origins and Methods

Human ethology draws its inspiration from ethology, both in methodological and in theoretical respects. The great ethologist Nikolaas Tinbergen developed four questions that guide ethological research today. These questions illustrate a fundamental perspective of ethology, that is, it integrates evolutionary knowledge with interspecific comparisons, endocrinology, and neurology as well as developmental biology to create a whole picture of behavior. Tinbergen asked the following questions:

- What is the evolutionary function of a behavior, that is, its adaptive value?
- How did this behavior evolve in phylogeny?
- What are the proximate causes for the behavior, that is, the underlying brain functions, hormones, and so on?
- How does this behavior develop during ontogeny, that is, how do genes interact with the environment to manifest it in the organism?

Tinbergen's demand that all four questions be addressed emphasizes the need for ethologists to work in a multidisciplinary context.

Human ethology approaches behavior from three complementary angles: observations of behavior in real-life settings, experiments, and behavior simulation. Observation of behavior in real-life settings is the most basic method, with the advantage that the behavior occurs unencumbered by experimental devices or experimenter and observer effects. The great shortcoming of this approach is that in natural settings the number of intervening variables is large and cannot be controlled. The only way to circumvent this problem is having large data sets, which it is difficult and time-consuming to collect. In the early days of human ethology, in the search for universals in human behavior, observation in natural settings was the method of choice. Early ethologists, such as Rudolf Pöch or Irenäus Eibl-Eibesfeldt, employed special cameras to film behavior without their subjects being aware of it. Certainly, data collected this way do not meet the ethical standards for working with humans delineated in the Helsinki protocol. Nowadays, cameras have become much smaller and almost noiseless, so hiding them is not a great issue, but subjects have to provide informed consent before they can be filmed.

Behavioral observations—whether carried out in natural or experimental settings—are not an easy task, especially when the subjects are of the same species as the observer. It comes naturally to us to assign emotions and intentions to the behaviors of others. While this is adaptive in real life, it poses a problem for the scientist. Therefore, behavioral observation has to follow a number of rules to create a database that is as unbiased as possible. The human ethogram (i.e., the repertoire of all behaviors of humans) is by far larger than that of other animals, like the greylag geese made famous by the pioneering studies of Lorenz. Therefore, scientists have to limit their observations to behaviors relevant to their research question. These behaviors have to be described as behavior categories that are unambiguous and objective. The development of reliable behavior catalogs is tedious but necessary to ensure the quality of the research. Behavior annotation is

time-consuming and challenging, but the insights promised through this approach can be far more valuable than mere questionnaire data. Asking direct questions might be easy, but the answers you get this way might not hit the core of your question.

In their attempt to create unbiased categories and achieve detailed description of behavior, behavior categories tend to atomize human behavior into its parts. The development of behavior catalogs for facial expressions, namely, the Facial Action Coding System, by Paul Ekman and Wallace Friesen (1978) and the Bernese System for annotation of body postures by Frey and Pool (1976) are examples of detailed descriptions of very low levels of behavior. The large number of codes necessary to describe a single facial expression or posture guarantees the objectiveness of the system but at the cost of highly time-consuming annotation.

The experimental approach offers the advantage that intervening variables can be controlled but at the cost of making the observations under lab conditions, which might be quite different from natural surroundings. Because the experimental approach usually requires less money and time to carry out experimental studies, it has become more and more popular in current research.

Recent developments in computer science have opened new ways of conducting ethological analysis. Behavior simulation makes use of the aforementioned behavior catalogs for the implementation of behaviors in avatars. Then behaviors, for example, facial expressions or postures, can be generated in the avatar, and the parameters of the behaviors can be modulated. The stimuli thus generated can be evaluated by subjects for their communicative meaning. This allows isolating the meaning of single behaviors from other intervening factors. This approach is also called reverse engineering, which is generating understanding of behavior from the bottom up. The needs of the game industry and man-machine interfaces have created a demand for in-depth understanding of communicative behavior so that these behaviors can be simulated in avatars and virtual agents. This has opened a new field of research in human ethology, which is strongly applied but in itself contributes to the understanding of communicative behavior.

Computer vision methodologies make behaviors accessible to research that are not measurable with traditional methods. For example, Wolfgang Schleidt proposes in his tonic communication model that signals may be sent repeatedly at a level below the perception threshold. These signals are likely motion quality, sounds, and odors. Computer vision is a useful tool for measuring motion quality. Indeed, the interplay between ethology and computer vision creates new research possibilities. While computer vision researchers have made use of guidance from ethology, which helps interpret their findings and guide their research, ethology itself might profit at some point from this synergy; algorithms developed based on video analytics could help ethologists automatize at least parts of their annotation tasks.

Conclusion

The theoretical framework of human ethology is framed by evolutionary theory and biological constraints. Human behavior is thus not arbitrary but shaped by evolutionary history. When a behavior is said to have evolved, this does not equal genetic determinism. All behaviors, like physical features in the phenotype, develop in complex gene-environment interactions. Genes alone never suffice to create a phenotype, while the environment needs a substrate to work with. While human ethology makes use of evolutionary theory to explain the origins of behavior tendencies, and to understand the reasons why this is so, it does not justify behavior in any way. There might be behaviors that make perfect sense in biological terms (furthering the individual fitness) but violate legal, ethical, or social rules. It is not the goal of ethology to make biological usefulness the norm for our ethics. Humans are biological organisms, but they are also sociocultural beings. Therefore, biology and ethology can contribute to an understanding but can never completely decode human behavior.

Elisabeth Oberzaucher

See also Darwin, Charles; Human Behavioral Ecology

Further Readings

Charlesworth, W. R. (1986). Darwin and developmental psychology: 100 years later. *Human Development, 29,* 1–35.

Eibl-Eibesfeldt, I. (1967). Concepts of ethology and their significance in the study of human behavior. In H. Stevenson, E. H. Hess, & H. Rheingold (Eds.), *Early*

behavior: Comparative and developmental approaches (pp. 127–146). New York, NY: Wiley.

Ekman, P., & Friesen, W. (1978). *Investigator's guide: Facial action coding system*. Palo Alto, CA: Consulting Psychologists Press.

Frey, S., & Pool, J. (1976). *A new approach to the analyses of visible behavior* (Research Reports of the Psychological Institute). Bern, Switzerland: University of Bern.

Grammer, K., & Oberzaucher, E. (2006). The reconstruction of facial expressions in embodied systems: New approaches to an old problem. *ZIF Mitteilungen, 2,* 14–31.

Lehner, P. N. (1998). *Handbook of ethological methods* (2nd ed.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Ploog, D. (1964). Verhaltensforschung und Psychiatrie [Psychiatry and behavioral science]. In H. W. Gruhle, R. Jung, W. Mayer-Gross, & M. Mueller (Eds.), *Psychiatrie der Gegenwart* [Psychiatry at the present]. Berlin, Germany: Springer-Verlag.

Schleidt, W. M. (1973). Tonic communication: Continuous effects of discrete signs in animal communication systems. *Journal of Theoretical Biology, 42,* 369–386.

Voland, E., & Grammer, K. (Eds.). (2003). *Evolutionary aesthetics*. New York, NY: Springer.

Evans-Pritchard, E. E.

Edward E. Evans-Pritchard (1902–1973) was one of the outstanding anthropologists of the 20th century. Known best for his field studies in northeastern Africa, especially among the Azande and Nuer of southern Sudan (now Republic of South Sudan), he also wrote extensively on the history of anthropology and its philosophical background. He held the Chair of Social Anthropology at Oxford from 1946 to 1970, becoming a key architect of British social anthropology and developing fruitful links with neighboring disciplines.

Biography

Evans-Pritchard was born in Sussex in 1902. His father, an Anglican clergyman, was from Caernarvon and spoke Welsh; his mother's family was from Liverpool. In 1939, he married Ioma Heaton Nicholls. Knighted in 1971, he eventually died in Oxford in 1973 and is survived by three sons and two daughters.

After Winchester School, the young Evans-Pritchard read history at Exeter College, Oxford, where R. R. Marett had already established a focus on anthropology, mostly devoted to armchair theories of "primitive" society and religion. Evans-Pritchard was tired of the standard kings-and-battles type of history he had to study, and though interested in Marett's lectures, he was curious to meet anthropologists who actually did fieldwork. On graduating in 1924, he moved to the London School of Economics to study with C. G. Seligman and Bronisław Malinowski. From there he proceeded to the Sudan in Seligman's footsteps. After initial research in the southern Funj region of the Blue Nile in 1926, he settled for the first time in the centralized kingdom of the Azande of southwestern Sudan in 1927, completing a London PhD on the Azande later that year. The next 3 years were spent mainly in Zande country, though, at the request of the Anglo-Egyptian Government of the Sudan, he embarked on a series of visits to the cattle-herding Nuer of the Upper Nile. He then taught anthropology from 1932 to 1934 at Cairo University before returning to the Sudan, supplementing his research among the Nuer and beginning fieldwork among the Anuak. Further plans to extend his fieldwork to western Ethiopia were ruled out because of the Italian occupation, but by 1940, he had begun military duties and was soon operating with Anuak irregulars on the frontier. During the Second World War, Evans-Pritchard also saw service in Syria and in post-Italian Libya, particularly in Cyrenaica, which provided an opportunity for further fieldwork.

After a brief postwar appointment in Cambridge, Evans-Pritchard became professor of social anthropology at Oxford and a fellow of All Souls College in 1946. From this base, until his retirement in 1970, he extended a network of worldwide contacts, particularly through graduate students (in which the Oxford Institute of Social Anthropology specialized) and visiting scholars. He himself spent various periods of leave as a distinguished visitor at the University of Chicago, at the Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences at Stanford, California, and as an educational advisor to the Government of Ghana.

Influence

Evans-Pritchard's scholarly achievements were both deeply personal and of his time, in the relatively liberal climate for fieldwork in the middle years of

British imperial rule in Africa. He bridged the gulf between an older anthropology, which concerned itself almost exclusively with objectifying "the primitive" and a newer version, which extended its horizons to all humanity, thus capturing the attention of scholars in neighboring disciplines. From the 1950s onward, he devoted much of his energy to excavating anthropological themes from writings in European history and philosophy (an interest in his predecessors was evident even from his teaching days in Cairo). He was keen to reach a wide audience; he took on a variety of public speaking roles and accepted invitations from the BBC to deliver radio lectures. He established good connections with journals such as *The Listener* and the *Times Literary Supplement*, both of which carried regular articles and reviews concerning anthropology during his time. He served as president of the Royal Anthropological Institute (1949–1951) and was a founder, with Meyer Fortes, of the Association of Social Anthropologists (1946).

Evans-Pritchard gave encouragement to many younger scholars who were taking forward the project of developing social anthropology as a rich interdisciplinary field of academic study. Their contribution is now reflected in the range of *festschriften* and other tributes, such as editions of his unpublished lectures, articles, and books about his work, ethnographic films about peoples such as the Azande and the Shilluk, and online presentations of his photographs and material culture collections (through Oxford's Pitt Rivers Museum). There is also a very substantial body of literature commenting on, critically engaging with, and building on his ethnography, particularly about Azande rationality and about Nuer political order and religion.

A Humanities Approach

It is sometimes said that Evans-Pritchard moved away from previous conceptions of anthropology as a natural science (specifically Radcliffe-Brown's vision) toward a view of its place among the humanities. But it would be more accurate to see the marks of the humanities scholar from the start: an acceptance of human intellectual and aesthetic agency behind things that are said and done in the making of history and a view of social life as arising from culturally patterned forms of communication and interaction between people. Malinowski had spoken of individuals and the way they were shaped by custom and culture, but "functionalism" was an abstraction partly fashioned by its critics. The same could be said of Radcliffe-Brown's notions of social form and structure, which, while derived from the Durkheimian school, scarcely had the same depth. "Structural-functionalism" emerged more or less as a target for criticism at a later date, with the advent of fashions for Claude Lévi-Strauss's linguistics-derived structuralism, for neo-Marxist analysis, and for phenomenology. Evans-Pritchard refrained on the whole from criticisms of the work of his immediate predecessors in anthropology. But it is worth noting that in a very early article on Zande dance (1928), he focused not only on the art, music, and enjoyment of dancing but also on its rivalries and divisive politics—as a way of ridiculing Radcliffe-Brown's portrait of dance among the Andaman Islanders as bringing individuals together in a simple, bodily, expression of social solidarity.

The ways in which Evans-Pritchard incorporated the methods of humanities research into his ethnographic projects are easily summarized. His collections of material culture and photographs are quite substantial. He recorded Zande music on wax cylinders. He took down or had written for him texts and stories, songs, and proverbs, mainly in the Zande language (though this kind of work was much more difficult in the restricted circumstances of his Nuer research). He collected, translated, and published Zande language materials throughout his life. His understanding of their idioms led to subtle observations on the veiled, irony-laden, allusive ways of communicating of the Zande, which the people called *sanza*; and from there, he went on to discuss their views on the inner self-consciousness of the human person. In 1964, he founded, with Wilfred Whiteley and Godfrey Lienhardt, the Oxford Library of African Literature, which produced 26 volumes of linguistic, literary, and artistic significance, including several by African authors.

Evans-Pritchard was one of the first English-language anthropologists to extend the scope of anthropology to those regions of the world where historians had long acknowledged sophisticated civilization. In this, he was following the lead of the Durkheimian school. While Durkheim himself remains famous for his library-based work on the aboriginal peoples of Australia, a good proportion of the reviews and essays published in the journal

L'Année Sociologique from 1898 onward were concerned with the Indian subcontinent, China, the ancient worlds of Greece and Rome, and the Middle East, including the Judaic heritage. It is well-known that he arranged for the translation of many essays from this journal, personally introducing several of these. Evans-Pritchard himself was particularly interested in Islam; following his 2 years of teaching Egyptian students at Cairo, he had a working knowledge of Arabic and was attracted to Sufi poetry. His posting to Libya in the 1940s gave him the opportunity to produce the first modern anthropological study of a Muslim, Arabic-speaking society in the context of its political and religious history.

A Historian With a Philosophical Bent

Evans-Pritchard was never trained as an anthropologist in any formulaic way, and he was not equipped (as today's students often are) with ready-made notions of social structure, culture, ethnicity, or identity. But, as a historian with a philosophical bent, he did come ready to take up some older and very general questions about the remoter regions of the world and their peoples, who had scarcely entered the existing historical record. In his later years, Evans-Pritchard devoted much time to the systematic excavation of post-Enlightenment sources for ideas about the place of what were seen as key achievements of civilization—such as the exercise of reason—in the longer history of human life and society. Ernest Gellner provided a guide to this project in introducing Evans-Pritchard's posthumous collection, *A History of Anthropological Thought*. Here, we see the direction of his quest for predecessors who had pondered such general questions about human history; not that any of them called themselves "social anthropologists," but from Aristotle through Montesquieu to Adam Ferguson, he shows their curiosity to have foreshadowed his own. We might group these recurring questions under three main heads: the place of reason in human life, the place of the state, and the place of religion.

Reason

Perhaps the book Evans-Pritchard is best remembered for is his *Witchcraft, Oracles, and Magic Among the Azande* (1937, later abridged). Written against the background of both popular stereotypes and academic theories concerning the mentality of primitive peoples, swayed as they were supposed to be by impulse and emotion, this whole book points to the doggedly rational way in which the Azande diagnose the presence of *mangu* ("witchcraft substance") in people's bodies and deal with its ill effects on others. The argument is so thoroughly documented for the Azande that no people since has been assumed to lack an ability to reason. And more recently, of course, plenty of doubt has been thrown on the extent to which "our own" behavior is dictated by reason (especially in the domain of illness and misfortune).

Evans-Pritchard's early articles on the Nuer, too, emphasize the strings of reasoning behind their migration with the cattle to seek new pastures as the floods recede and retreat to patches of dry land for cultivation as the rains come on again. He was the first to use the term *oecology* for such an analysis of what we might today call the "rationality of indigenous knowledge."

The State

Under this head, too, we need to start with the Azande. The royal houses and elite of the Zande constituted an imperial system on their own terms in precolonial times, and even today, their political legacy is found across Zande-speaking regions spanning South Sudan, the Democratic Republic of Congo, and the Central African Republic. Evans-Pritchard wrote extensively on the Zande State, on Zande political institutions and history, on Zande warfare and the rise of their political elite largely through conquest, and on the rise of "secret societies" and other changes during the colonial era. He also contributed a late volume of essays on *Man and Woman Among the Azande*—refreshingly not just a standard study of kinship but closer in spirit, perhaps, to questions raised by modern gender studies. He also gave detailed attention to the forms of political organization among the Anuak, including the kingship, and based his Frazer Lecture of 1948 on the divine kingship of the Shilluk.

The main concern of Evans-Pritchard's first book on the Nuer (1940) is to identify—in this context apparently lacking a political center or traditional government—the nature of what political order did indeed exist. Over the wide Nuer-speaking areas, there were mutually understood principles of political agreement. Communities separated during

the floods would regularly meet up during the dry season and compete for pastures, and exchanges of cattle were organized according to widespread convention, crucially in cases of marriage transfer or in the settlement of feuds. On marriage, women joined their husband's group; these communities defined themselves around a core of male patrikin but often included other individuals, such as sisters' children, adopted refugees, or conquered assimilees. Relations between such lineage-based groups were represented according to their relative position within a patrilineal genealogy, branching out from early times to include all. Extended forms of this model were used to explain and justify wider conflicts between brotherly groupings, who could nevertheless find a common cause at the appropriate segmentary level and a mediator from the special lineages of leopard-skin chiefs.

There were also outstanding individuals remembered as prophetic leaders, who were potential peacemakers capable of bringing sections and tribal groups together, even non-Nuer peoples. Evans-Pritchard was asked to start work in Nuerland at a difficult time; a British-led military patrol had recently been on a punitive campaign, publicly hanging a son of the key 19th-century prophet Ngundeng. But his ethnographic analysis was far from being simply an intelligence report useful to the government. Overall, his account of Nuer politics, while it became a type case of the "stateless society," remains an astonishing portrait of the resilience of forms of political cooperation that have over time proved their effectiveness against easy co-option by any state or empire.

An important point to note is Evans-Pritchard's insistence on a distinction between patrilineal descent as the essentially *political* idiom of Nuer conflict and reconciliation, on the one hand, and the *personal networks* of kinship created through marriage and the rearing of children, on the other. His second book on the Nuer (first published 1951, though written as early as 1942) makes this clear and was intended to be read in conjunction with the first. His later analysis of the social history of Cyrenaica (1949) owes much to the insights of his earlier work on the Nuer, drawing attention as it does to the unifying potential of the religious order of the Sanusiya among the dispersed clans of the Bedouin, especially in the context of Italian colonial rule.

Religion

Evans-Pritchard's concern with the presence and place of religion among the peoples he had studied emerged a little while after his fieldworking days and his conversion to Roman Catholicism in 1944. It became explicit only with his book *Nuer Religion* (1956). His younger colleague Godfrey Lienhardt, who had by this time carried out his own research on Dinka religion, encouraged him, supplying a number of insights into commonly held notions among the Nilotic-speaking peoples. Broadly, Evans-Pritchard starts with an acceptance that when the Nuer speak of *kwoth* in the most general way, pray to this presence in the Above, and offer sacrifices, the translation "God" can be used. In the circumstances of local peacemaking, where specific lineages or clans hold ceremonies, various species that are held to have helped the parties in the past—such as giraffes—may be named and appealed to. However, what are here still called "totems" are presented as "refractions" of the particular relationship that God might have with a given group. Interestingly, Evans-Pritchard did not find—or perhaps did not look for—much evidence of formal religious cosmology and ritual among the Azande or the Anuak; but then, the Old Testament parallels with the cattle-herding Nilotes are very striking and positively invite theological analysis.

A New Genealogy for Anthropology

In the course of his later writings on social anthropology and theories of "primitive religion," Evans-Pritchard linked his own position very clearly with the school of the *Année Sociologique*. He also acknowledged sympathy with the ideas of the fieldworking archaeologist and philosopher R. G. Collingwood (who himself was independently developing an interest in anthropology by the late 1930s). Like Collingwood, Evans-Pritchard was conscious of the long genealogy behind the way scholars had tackled their own place in the human story. But one had to venture beyond the standard texts and explore outside the library. Direct encounter and engagement was called for; the study of savages (those who could not reason) or barbarians (those outside the state) or Pagan nonbelievers (those as yet unreached by the world religions) was recorded only in caricature form in most of the early sources.

Fieldwork had already been pioneered as *the* mode of anthropological research by Boas in America and Malinowski in Britain, but it was Evans-Pritchard who introduced into field research itself some of the perennially important historical and philosophical questions about the long-term nature of human reason, the sources of political agreement, and the central standing of religion, ritual, and ceremony in human life. Current research in evolutionary psychology and on the beginnings of language and social organization is taking up these old questions once again, though from a complementary perspective on what many today would agree is a coherent field of anthropological study.

Wendy James

See also Durkheim, Émile; Fortes, Meyer; *L'Année Sociologique*; Lienhardt, Godfrey; London School of Economics; Malinowski, Bronisław; Oxford University; Royal Anthropological Institute; Seligman, Charles Gabriel

Further Readings

Beattie, J. H. M., & Lienhardt, G. (Eds.). (1975). *Studies in social anthropology: Essays in memory of E. E. Evans-Pritchard by his former Oxford colleagues*. Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Beidelman, T. (Ed.). (1971). *The translation of culture: Essays to E. E. Evans-Pritchard*. London, UK: Tavistock.

———. (1974). *A bibliography of the writings of E. E. Evans-Pritchard*. London, UK: Tavistock.

Burton, J. W. (1992). *An introduction to Evans-Pritchard* (Studia Instituti Anthropos, Vol. 45). Fribourg, Switzerland: Fribourg University Press.

Cunnison, I., & James, W. (Eds.). (1972). *Essays in Sudan ethnography: Presented to Sir Edward Evans-Pritchard*. London, UK: Hurst.

Douglas, M. (1980). *Edward Evans-Pritchard*. Brighton, UK: Harvester Press.

James, W. (2007). "A feeling for form and pattern, and a touch of genius": E-P's vision and the Institute, 1946–72. In P. G. Rivière (Ed.), *A history of Oxford anthropology* (pp. 98–118). Oxford, UK: Berghahn Books.

Johnson, D. (1982). Evans-Pritchard, the Nuer, and the Sudan political service. *African Affairs, 81,* 231–246.

Kenny, M. (1987). Trickster and mystic: The anthropological persona of E. E. Evans-Pritchard. *Anthropology and Humanism, 12,* 9–15.

Lienhardt, R. G. (1974). E-P: A personal view. *Man (n.s.), 9,* 299–304.

Morton, C. (2009). The initiation of Kamanga: Visuality and textuality in Evans-Pritchard's Zande ethnography. In C. Morton & E. Edwards (Eds.), *Photography, anthropology and history: Expanding the frame* (pp. 119–142). Farnham, UK: Ashgate.

Singer, A., & Street, B. (Eds.). (1972). *Zande themes: Essays presented to Sir Edward Evans-Pritchard*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Evolutionary Anthropology

Evolutionary perspectives have been part of anthropology since its beginnings, but their content and prominence have shifted dramatically. In contemporary anthropology, evolution plays a much more prominent role in biological anthropology, and even in archaeology, than in sociocultural anthropology. However, there is an active set of researchers applying modern evolutionary theory to many facets of human social behavior; this research is the focus here. This entry begins by delineating different approaches or paradigms in evolutionary anthropology: behavioral ecology, cultural evolution, and evolutionary psychology. It then turns to an outline of key topics and research findings.

In contrast to classical evolutionary approaches in anthropology, current research draws much more explicitly on evolutionary biology for both substantive and methodological elements. This creates tension with mainstream views in cultural anthropology, where "biological determinism" is seen as misguided and dangerous, as discussed briefly in the final section on controversies.

Paradigms

Contemporary evolutionary behavioral anthropology clusters around three distinct but overlapping perspectives or paradigms: behavioral ecology, cultural evolution, and evolutionary psychology. Each of these is treated elsewhere in this encyclopedia, but a summary and comparison are warranted here.

Human Behavioral Ecology

Human behavioral ecology (HBE) draws directly on the methods and theory in evolutionary biology that analyze behavior as adaptive responses to

natural and social elements of the environment. In essence, behavioral ecology posits that individuals make decisions that maximize fitness-correlated outcomes, given the ecological constraints and opportunities they encounter. These decisions need not be conscious ones (although with humans that may be more likely), and behavioral ecology tends to be quite agnostic about the actual mechanisms (genetic, cognitive, cultural, etc.) underlying adaptive choices. The overall research strategy involves developing mathematical models that provide a deductive basis for hypotheses about adaptive behavioral variation. Under what conditions will monogamy be more adaptive than polygyny? When should a forager seek prey alone versus cooperating in group foraging? Under what conditions will political hierarchy emerge in an egalitarian group? The models attempt to capture the most important variables that affect the costs and benefits of alternative strategies, and empirical applications then evaluate how accurate the derived predictions are, using quantitative data. For example, if wealth (e.g., land or livestock) is a primary factor that brides (or their families) use in choosing grooms, then polygyny will be more likely when wealth is unequally distributed. More precisely, this "polygyny threshold" model predicts that brides will be willing to be a second or third wife if their share of the groom's wealth exceeds that which they can get by marrying monogamously; as a result, wealthy men will end up with more wives, and many poor men with none.

HBE studies began to appear in the late 1970s and initially focused primarily on hunter-gatherer resource choice and land use (foraging strategies), an interest that remains strong in archaeology. In the 1980s, evolutionary studies of human reproductive behavior and social organization became much more prominent and continue to do so today. Most HBE research has focused on "small-scale societies"—hunter-gatherers, horticulturalists, and pastoralists—but recently, a growing number of studies have examined the behavioral ecology of large-scale agrarian or industrialized societies.

Cultural Evolution

Cultural evolution (CE) research (sometimes called "dual transmission" research, as it posits inheritance and evolution in both genetic and cultural channels) also began in the late 1970s, most prominently with the writings of Robert Boyd and Peter Richerson. Unlike the classic evolutionism of Leslie White, this paradigm is explicitly neo-Darwinian and relies on formal mathematical models (mostly drawn from population genetics but adapted to fit cultural transmission). Unlike genetic inheritance, cultural transmission is not limited to inheritance from mother and father, and can involve horizontal transmission (from peers), one-to-many transmission (from teachers or religious leaders), conformist transmission (adopt local norms and practices), and prestige-based transmission (imitate the successful). The resultant models are diverse, and the predicted outcomes myriad. In many cases, CE models predict that CE can diverge from what would be genetically adaptive and that group benefits (in competition with other groups) can override the interests of individuals or kin groups.

Although CE offers intriguing links to longstanding interests in sociocultural anthropology, it has had difficulty attracting followers within anthropology. This is partly because of the complexity of the theory and because, until recently, there were very few empirical applications. Recent work has begun to remedy the latter problem, with empirical analyses of food taboos, ethnic boundaries, cultural complexity, religious belief systems, and even large-scale social evolution. In addition, CE researchers regularly conduct experimental evaluations, usually in computerized lab settings but sometimes in the field.

Evolutionary Psychology

Evolutionary psychology (EP) is the most well-known (some would say notorious) of the three paradigms. EP analyzes psychological mechanisms as "Darwinian algorithms" or evolved cognitive modules. Although primarily based in psychology, EP has a prominent set of anthropological practitioners, including John Tooby, Donald Symons, and Jerome Barkow. A key tenet of most EP researchers is that human decision making is guided by distinct, domain-specific cognitive modules rather than by more general mechanisms that work across multiple domains. In contrast with HBE, EP practitioners tend to favor the view that adaptive strategies are less opportunistic and flexible; many argue that modern environments will produce much maladaptive behavior, since conditions are so radically different

from the "environment of evolutionary adaptedness" in which our species evolved. In essence, EP posits that we are adapted to the past and that we should not expect fitness-maximizing strategies in modern contexts.

The bulk of EP work has focused on mate preferences, but a body of work with more anthropological relevance concerns the psychology of cooperation, coalitions, and conflict. The great bulk of EP research takes place in experimental contexts, generally in industrial societies (often with college students), but various researchers have applied the paradigm in field settings, including small-scale societies.

In sum, the three paradigms differ in origins, assumptions, methods, and practice. However, these distinctions are not hard and fast, and recently the boundaries between the paradigms are becoming less defined, with some researchers adopting quite pluralistic approaches.

Key Topics

This section summarizes some key topics and research findings in evolutionary anthropology.

Resource Ecology and Land Use

Anthropologists have long studied the variation in how people make their livelihoods and how this variation tracks ecological conditions. Evolutionary perspectives link this variation to evolved preferences and decision rules, on the one hand, and to consequences for survival and reproduction, on the other.

Hunter-gatherer foraging strategies were an early focus in modern evolutionary anthropology and link it to Julian Steward's cultural ecology. Prey choice models predict the animal and plant species that foragers will choose to harvest, out of the set of available prey; similar models apply to patch (resource area) choice and time allocation. The currency in these models is usually return rate (food harvested per unit foraging time, often measured in calories per hour). When prey types with high return rates are abundant, foragers are predicted to specialize in these and ignore lower-return types, but they have to broaden their choices when high-ranked types are less available. Given the careful measures of time and energy, very precise predictions can be made about variation in prey choice as a function of seasonal (or shorter or longer) changes in prey abundance, changes in technology (which can alter the return rates and encounter rates of different prey), or individual abilities. Tests in a wide variety of environments with foragers from diverse cultural backgrounds have generally found rather close agreement with these predictions. Similar models have been developed to predict production decisions in pastoral and agricultural economies. People everywhere seem to be quite sensitive to variation in the efficiency with which their labor produces food, even in cultures that lack systems of counting, let alone concepts like caloric value or precise gradations of time.

But research has also revealed some complexities. For example, men and women often engage in very different subsistence tasks or make systematically different choices even when engaged in the same general task; for example, women rarely hunt large, mobile game, and men often pass up productive plant resources while foraging. Researchers disagree about why this occurs. Some argue that this results from child care constraints, especially nursing, and is an efficient division of labor given those constraints. Others argue that men are motivated to take more risks in production (even in contexts where child care is not constraining) and that this differential risk preference is due to the greater potential gains in status and mating success available to males. Much current research and debate focus on these issues.

Another complexity concerns resource depletion. Efficient foraging in the short run, or even over a person's lifetime, does not guarantee that resources will be conserved; similar concerns apply to pasture among pastoralists or forests among swidden ("slash-and-burn") farmers. In these cases, it may not be individually rewarding to safeguard resources for future generations if they are open access (available to all members of a population) or even communally owned—the infamous "tragedy of the commons." Again, researchers disagree about the solution to this problem. Some point to ways in which efficient production can yield sustainable harvests as a by-product; for example, switching to more productive "patches" when the current one becomes less productive will not only increase labor efficiency but also allow depleted areas to recover—something observed in foraging, pastoral, and swidden systems alike. Other researchers argue that local norms and institutions are designed to prevent overharvesting; these vary from informal understandings to formal

rules with strict enforcement. Evidence indicates that such regulations frequently exist but often increase harvest amounts or efficiency, making their rationale unclear. In any case, habitat degradation and extinction of prey have occurred repeatedly in human history, particularly in newly occupied regions.

One solution to conservation dilemmas is land ownership, so that the benefits of conservation fall on those who conserve (or on their immediate descendants). Models of the conditions favoring ownership (often termed *territoriality*) predict that resources must be sufficiently dense and predictable to offset the costs of defending property claims. This "economic defensibility" model has been successfully applied to a variety of foraging, pastoral, and agricultural societies and can explain the variation in land ownership between societies, the historical shifts over time, and even the microvariation within societies (family vs. communal ownership, why some areas are open access while others are owned, etc.).

Reproductive Strategies

Natural selection is driven by differential survival and fertility linked to heritable variation. This makes the study of reproductive strategies central to evolutionary anthropology, and research over the past 3 decades demonstrates this. Reproductive strategies can be subdivided into mating effort (attracting and retaining mates) and parental effort (providing offspring with the resources and care to ensure their own reproductive success). For humans, we must distinguish between mating systems and marriage systems, though these overlap greatly. Furthermore, human parental investment continues long past the weaning or even sexual maturity of offspring, often extending beyond the life of the parent via wealth inheritance. These facts offer opportunities and challenges for research in evolutionary anthropology.

Humans are mammals, and mammalian reproductive biology creates some important constraints. In preindustrial conditions, only women can be certain that a child is their own (no DNA testing for paternity), women cannot produce offspring more often than about once a year, and only mothers can safely and successfully feed nursing infants. As a result, men can potentially benefit more than women from mate guarding as well as from multiple mates (through polygyny, extramarital affairs, serial monogamy, and concubinage). Accordingly, evolutionary models predict greater investment in mating effort, lower parental investment, and higher variance in reproductive success among men than among women. Mating effort takes many forms, from direct competition with other men, to resource accrual to attract more mates, and even arguably to striving for status, political power, and ritual renown.

Evolutionary models of mating systems generally differentiate between resource-defense polygyny (using control of resources to attract more mates) and mate-defense polygyny (coercing women into marrying or mating with a man and threatening anyone who challenges this). Evidence for resource-defense polygyny is quite detailed, including cases such as East African pastoralists who acquire additional wives with bride price paid in livestock. Evolutionary arguments for coercive mating effort are less carefully documented and raise many political objections (see the "Controversies" section), yet it is hard to deny that raiding for mates, coercive mate guarding, and rape occur (though they are not necessarily condoned) in a wide variety of cultures and are perpetrated almost exclusively by men.

On the other hand, women may also benefit from multiple mates. Polyandry can ensure more male labor to support offspring, and data from Tibetan-speaking areas indicate that women with multiple husbands do have higher reproductive success (surviving offspring) than monogamously married women. As Sarah Hrdy suggested, women can also use ambiguous paternity to convince multiple men to provide some resources in the hope that a child is theirs. Evidence from some South American Indian groups supports this hypothesis up to a point. Finally, in situations where male income is highly unstable, women can increase resource access by shifting between mates according to their current income; this appears characteristic of the urban poor, as documented by many sociologists as well as anthropologists.

Once mating (through marriage or otherwise) has produced offspring, they must be raised. Human children are highly dependent, and researchers have documented that they do not "pay their own way" (in food production) until late adolescence. This creates various adaptive dilemmas: how often to produce a new child, how to feed and care for multiple young ones, how much to invest in offspring based on their quality or gender, and when to cease

producing offspring. Much research by evolutionary anthropologists focuses on these questions.

Cooperation, Collective Action, and Hierarchy

The evolution of cooperation is a central focus of modern evolutionary thought. Humans are unique in the degree to which they cooperate in large groups with low relatedness and solve collective action problems that thwart other species. Much research in evolutionary anthropology is concerned with applying evolutionary models of reciprocity, kin selection, group selection, and costly signaling to explain cooperation.

The basic logic of reciprocity is that of mutual aid: Help me when I'm in need, and I'll reciprocate when conditions reverse; we will then both benefit. The problem is that free riders who accept help but don't return the favor can benefit even more. Indirect reciprocity adds reputation to the mix, allowing third parties to shun free riders without being suckered; human language (gossip) is invaluable here, as various theoretical and empirical studies have shown.

The logic of kin selection is expressed in Hamilton's rule: Help relatives as long as the benefit they gain, devalued by degree of genealogical closeness, exceeds the cost to the helper. This is commonly misunderstood as a rule to always help close relatives; but the benefits and costs are critical and vary according to ecological and social factors, independently of relatedness. In fact, close relatives can be one's closest competitors, and Hamilton's rule can readily predict when evolution favors being nasty toward relatives.

But what about large groups with low relatedness? Direct reciprocity fails if one can't exclude free riders from public goods (such as defense against enemy attack). Furthermore, experimental economic games reveal that people often contribute to public goods or punish free riders, even when behaving selfishly would yield higher gains. Some researchers propose that group selection (cultural or genetic) is responsible for such phenomena and that culturally transmitted norms reduce within-group variation in payoffs and increase the differences between groups enough to drive this evolutionary process. Others argue that such costly group cooperation represents misfiring of the cognitive mechanisms that evolved in the past, when small, intimate groups meant that reputations for free riding were impossible to hide. Still others suggest that mechanisms such as indirect reciprocity or costly signaling (indicating one's superior abilities or commitment by freely contributing to collective action, thereby gaining alliances or mating opportunities) can solve this problem. This debate is currently unresolved.

Two important topics in the evolution of human cooperation are ritual and religion, and the emergence of political hierarchy and economic inequality. All of the explanations just outlined are actively employed by anthropologists analyzing these phenomena. Again, consensus on the main forces shaping them is yet to be achieved.

Controversies

Many sociocultural anthropologists are hostile to evolutionary explanations of human social behavior, believing that these are misguided and dangerous. One concern is that such explanations entail biological or genetic determinism, which are inflexible patterns of behavior that deny agency or cultural meaning. However, most current evolutionary anthropologists are well aware of the pitfalls of simple determinisms and provide ample room for the agency (intentionality), cognition, and cultural variation characteristic of our species. As noted above, most explanations advanced in this research focus on decisions—hardly a form of simple genetic determinism.

Another concern is that evolutionary explanations provide justifications for the status quo and, in particular, for oppressive phenomena, such as racism, sexism, or ethnocentrism. Researchers usually respond to such critiques by noting that attempts to understand phenomena do not entail attempts to morally or politically justify them; furthermore, correct understanding should actually aid attempts to counteract pernicious social phenomena. This does not usually mollify critics who view evolutionary accounts as ideology masquerading as science, and indeed, nothing can mollify such critics, not even evidence recently published that demonstrates that evolutionary anthropologists have liberal social views indistinguishable from those of other anthropologists. In any case, such critiques of evolutionary research seem to be declining in anthropology and the other social sciences as the theory becomes more nuanced and the empirical confirmation more extensive.

Eric Alden Smith

See also Cultural Transmission; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution; Human Behavioral Ecology

Further Readings

Barkow, J. H., Tooby, J., & Cosmides, L. (Eds.). (1992). *The adapted mind: Evolutionary psychology and the generation of culture*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Barrett, L., Dunbar, R., & Lycett, J. (2002). *Human evolutionary psychology*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Cronk, L., Chagnon, N., & Irons, W. G. (Eds.). (2000). *Adaptation and human behavior: An anthropological perspective*. Hawthorne, NY: Aldine de Gruyter.

Gangestad, S. W., & Simpson, J. (Eds.). (2007). *Evolution of mind: Fundamental questions and controversies*. New York, NY: Guilford Press.

Laland, K. N., & Brown, G. (2002). *Sense and nonsense: Evolutionary perspectives on human behavior*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Mace, R., Holden, C., & Shennan, S. (Eds.). (2005). *The evolution of cultural diversity: A phylogenetic approach*. London, UK: University College London Press.

Richerson, P. J., & Boyd, R. (2005). *Not by genes alone: How culture transformed human evolution*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Shennan, S. (Ed.). (2009). *Pattern and process in cultural evolution*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Smith, E. A., & Winterhalder, B. (Eds.). (1992). *Evolutionary ecology and human behavior*. Hawthorne, NY: Aldine de Gruyter.

Summers, K. (2005). The evolutionary ecology of despotism. *Evolution and Human Behavior, 26,* 106–135.

Voland, E. (1998). Evolutionary ecology of human reproduction. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 27,* 347–374.

Winterhalder, B., & Smith, E. A. (2000). Analyzing adaptive strategies: Human behavioral ecology at twenty-five. *Evolutionary Anthropology, 9,* 51–72.

Evolutionary Psychology

Evolutionary psychology integrates principles from a wide range of fields to study the evolved psychological architecture of the human mind. Rather than functioning as a subfield within psychology, evolutionary psychology is an *approach* that can be applied to any area of psychology: developmental, cognitive, social, clinical, and so on. At its core, evolutionary psychology is based on a simple principle: The human brain, like every other organ in the body, evolved over millions of years of natural selection; to understand the functional design of the mind/brain, as with other organs, one must consider the recurring sets of selection pressures that existed over the course of human evolution. Each recurring selection pressure, that is, each feature of the world that influenced survival and reproduction (e.g., disease-causing organisms and predators), created an adaptive problem (e.g., avoiding contact with contaminated substances and avoiding predators, respectively). Evolutionary psychology considers the adaptive problems humans likely faced and generates models of the possible mechanisms that evolved to solve them. So, for instance, research and theorizing on disgust suggest that this emotion is a panhuman system that evolved in response to the selection pressures posed by disease-causing organisms and motivates the withdrawal from substances possessing cues to contamination.

Importantly, evolutionary psychology entails descriptions at multiple levels of analysis, most notably, ultimate and proximate levels of analysis. An ultimate level of analysis explains why a particular system exists—that is, how it would have promoted survival and/or reproduction in ancestral environments. For instance, an ultimate explanation for the disgust system is that it promoted survival by motivating the withdrawal from substances associated with disease-causing organisms. By contrast, a proximate level of analysis details how the system operates and executes its function in an individual. With respect to disgust, a recent proximate model suggests that cues associated with bodily fluids, feces, and rotting meats and fruits are taken as input to generate an index of pathogen presence, which then motivates withdrawal. Additional proximate explanations include neuroscientific analyses of where the system is located and development analyses that specify how the system is calibrated over the life span.

Advancements in many disciplines, including evolutionary biology, cognitive science, and anthropology, have helped establish the field of evolutionary psychology. Evolutionary biologists have a long history of talking about the functional features of nonhuman organisms. Specifically, biologists use the term *adaptation* to refer to structures or behaviors that evolved to perform a specific function in response to a recurring selection pressure. Evidence

that a particular feature is an adaptation comes from examining its structure and operation—the more the feature shows evidence of functional specialization and complex organization and possesses properties that are unlikely to have arisen by chance alone, the greater the likelihood that the feature is an adaptation to a particular aspect of the social, biological, or physical world. In addition to the theory of natural selection and the concept of adaptation, evolutionary biology also has developed the principles of kin selection, sexual selection, and parental investment—all foundational theories that constitute the field of evolutionary psychology.

Cognitive science is another important pillar within evolutionary psychology, and it is what distinguishes evolutionary psychology from sociobiology. The cognitive revolution of the 1960s developed a new language for describing mental phenomena. By introducing the concept of computation, this discipline paved the way for a richer description of internal, unobservable psychological processes. One main goal of evolutionary psychology is to provide, in rich information-processing language, the set of computational systems that generate human behavior and that constitute our evolved psychology. Cognitive science also opened discussions of modularity. Evolutionary psychologists maintain that for many of the adaptive problems humans faced, natural selection has led to the evolution of specialized systems tailored to solving specific problems. This has led to heated debate regarding whether the mind is composed of many functionally specialized systems (i.e., it is massively modular) or a few more general-purpose systems. Basic engineering principles suggest that, to solve multiple problems, one device rarely outperforms multiple, functionally specialized devices. However, whether natural selection engineered our psychological architecture using this principle is certainly an empirical matter.

Anthropology has also made invaluable contributions to evolutionary psychology, particularly as a result of ethnographies of the remaining hunter-gatherer groups. Because a fundamental aspect of the evolutionary analysis of human psychology is the environment—physical, social, and otherwise—in which humans evolved, modern hunter-gatherer groups can provide us with clues to the types of selection pressures that might have been relevant over the course of human evolutionary history. Additionally, because evolutionary psychologists propose that psychological adaptations are human universals, cross-cultural research in anthropology has been instrumental in the investigation of the consistency of this proposal.

Evolutionary Psychology: An Empirical Science

The application of evolutionary principles to the study of cognitive mechanisms provides a powerful two-pronged approach of hypothesis generation and hypothesis testing to uncover the functional architecture of the human brain. The first, which can be considered a reverse-engineering approach, examines known psychological processes and their resulting behaviors or tendencies and applies evolutionary reasoning to generate predictions regarding their functional structure: Were they adaptations to specific adaptive problems? For example, the known sex differences in sexual promiscuity and features deemed attractive have led to a very fruitful body of research that has incorporated principles of parental investment and sexual selection to shed light on many intricacies of mate choice and of sexual and emotional jealousy and to establish them as cross-culturally consistent. The second approach, which can be considered prospective, starts from reasoning about likely adaptive problems to derive novel predictions about psychological adaptations. For example, navigating the social realm to find trustworthy exchange partners has undoubtedly been a recurrent adaptive problem over the course of human evolution. From this starting point, evolutionary psychologists have discovered that humans are remarkably good at detecting cheaters in social interactions and have shown that the mechanism(s) involved in this detection are very sophisticated: They do not apply to general logic problems that take the same structure (i.e., they are specific to social interactions), and they account for intentionality (i.e., accidental "cheaters" are not flagged as such), and the resulting behavior is the avoidance of poor social exchange partners. Thus, the application of evolutionary principles to psychology helps both to elucidate the functions of known phenomena as well as to discover novel ones.

Evolutionary Psychological Approaches to Culture

Most accounts of evolutionary psychology usually describe the field as antithetical to cultural explanations. Yet, one of evolutionary psychology's

founding works, *The Adapted Mind*, by Jerome Barkow, Leda Cosmides, and John Tooby, represents the first full-fledged introduction of the field of evolutionary psychology and has as its subtitle *Evolutionary Psychology and the Generation of Culture*! From day one, evolutionary psychologists have been interested in how culture arises and how individuals are influenced by and act within those cultures. Rather than viewing culture as an amorphous, external force that magically organizes the human brain, evolutionary psychologists argue vehemently that culture is a product of the human mind and that the human mind consists of many psychological adaptations that evolved to perform tasks that aided in survival and reproduction. On this account, cultural elements can be linked to specific psychological systems.

Evolutionary psychology maintains that there is a universal human nature but that within-group similarities and between-group differences can emerge. One way differences can emerge is if psychological adaptations develop in different ways in different environments. A thought experiment, known as the "jukebox metaphor," illustrates how this could work. Imagine that, instead of humans, the world is populated by jukeboxes: Every jukebox in the world is constructed in exactly the same manner and contains (a) the same musical tracks, (b) a Global Positioning System device that detects latitude and longitude, and (c) a clock. Furthermore, the mechanism that selects which song to play does so based on the time, date, and location of the jukebox. Thus, jukeboxes in Las Vegas would all be playing the same song, which would be different from the song played by all jukeboxes in Barcelona, and so on. As a result, there would be between-group differences and within-group similarities in the songs played simultaneously by jukeboxes, as with the differences and similarities we observe among cultures. Furthermore, because the mechanism that decides what song to play incorporates the time and date, the song played in any one area would change over time, akin to the way cultures change over time. Additionally, if a jukebox were moved from one "culture" to another, it would play the same song as every other jukebox in its new location, since the mechanism choosing the song does so based on the time, date, and location, which the jukebox now shares with the others in the new area—it has adopted the local "culture." While obviously simplified, this metaphor makes an important point: Jukeboxes (or humans), while sharing an identical underlying architecture can nonetheless express different characteristics in response to the local environment. Thus, the mere presence of between-group differences and within-group similarities does not imply that the underlying species-typical psychological architecture is different. The jukebox metaphor illustrates what evolutionary psychologists refer to as *evoked* culture, which results from the interaction of species-typical psychological mechanisms and the local environment. Evolutionary psychologists distinguish evoked culture from *transmitted* culture, or social learning. Ultimately, both evoked and transmitted cultures arise by virtue of the collection of human psychological adaptations, and one goal of evolutionary psychology is to describe and explain cultural phenomena in terms of their underlying psychological mechanisms.

Areas of Study Within Evolutionary Psychology

Evolutionary psychologists have been investigating a range of phenomena. Here, we provide a small sampling of areas of inquiry within evolutionary psychology.

Attention: To what extent does human attention reflect adaptive design? Are evolutionally relevant dangers attended to more quickly and efficiently than evolutionarily novel ones? Are there differences in facial recognition based on group membership?

Coalitional psychology: How should in-group and out-group members be treated relative to each other? Are there adaptations for categorizing people by coalitional membership? Are out-group members avoided for reasons of pathogen avoidance?

Cooperation: With whom should one cooperate and direct benefits to? Who should be avoided or punished? How does cooperation in dyads differ from that in groups?

Emotion: What are the evolved functions of the various emotions? Do some psychopathologies have roots in the adaptive functions of some emotions?

Mate choice: What constitutes an attractive mate? Are the criteria different for men and women?

How do asymmetries in parental investment affect mate choice preferences?

Morality: What is the evolutionary basis for morality? Do expressed moral beliefs help one's own reproductive success by restricting that of others?

Social status: To what extent do physical attractiveness and formidability lead to increased social status? Does social status influence reproductive success?

Kinship: How do humans categorize others according to genetic relatedness? Does degree of relatedness affect altruistic behavior? Does degree of relatedness affect sexual attraction?

A Case Study: Incest Avoidance and the Incest Taboo

One area of study within evolutionary psychology has been on inbreeding avoidance. There are sound biological reasons why humans, like many other species, avoid mating with close genetic relatives. Specifically, the effects of deleterious recessive mutations and complications associated with pathogen transmission render the offspring of close genetic relatives less healthy than the offspring of unrelated individuals. This has led to multiple mechanisms across a variety of taxa for detecting close genetic relatives and avoiding them as sexual partners. But how do humans figure out who counts as a close genetic relative, and how does a sexual aversion develop? These questions have sparked a long-lived controversy, but today we are learning more about how human inbreeding avoidance works and its relationship to the cultural incest taboo.

At the end of the 19th century, Edward Westermarck, a Finnish social scientist, proposed an explanation for the commonplace observation that family members rarely find one another sexually appealing. Having noted the injurious effects of inbreeding in many species, Westermarck hypothesized that early-childhood association, which typically occurs among genetic relatives, serves as an inbreeding avoidance mechanism by triggering the development of a sexual aversion that becomes manifest later during adulthood. This has come to be known as the Westermarck hypothesis.

In addition to proposing a specialized mechanism that reduces the probability of choosing a close genetic relative as a sexual partner, Westermarck also proposed an explanation for the origin of the incest taboo. He claimed that the biological systems responsible for the development of sexual aversions between close kin were also responsible for the culturally expressed incest taboo. That is, the explicit cultural prohibitions regarding incest were hypothesized to be an expression of the natural sexual disinclination that develops between near relatives. Westermarck's explanation of the incest taboo differed drastically from the reigning social learning theories of his day, which privileged the cultural incest taboo as the *origin*, not the consequence, of sexual avoidance behaviors.

Though initially well received, the Westermarck hypothesis and Westermarck's explanation of the incest taboo gradually fell into disfavor, mainly due to arguments posed by popular social scientists of the day (e.g., Sigmund Freud, Leslie White, and Claude Lévi-Strauss). However, in the past decade, evolutionary psychologists have started to uncover the mechanisms responsible for generating sexual aversions toward close genetic relatives, and it appears that Westermarck was correct.

To avoid incest, two basic systems are needed: one that detects kin—that is, estimates the probability that another is kin—and one that uses this probability to regulate sexual avoidance. Regarding sexual avoidance, researchers have identified disgust as the emotion that functions to avoid biologically costly sexual partners, such as close genetic relatives. But how does kin detection operate? Kin detection requires learning which individuals—of all the people in one's social environment—have a high probability of being a close genetic relative. At first, acquiring this information might seem to require no special systems because throughout childhood the people around us use language that implies relatedness (e.g., "Share your cookie with your brother," "Don't tease your sister"). Why did natural selection not simply use the kinship inferences that these sentences make possible as the primary input for sibling recognition? One reason is that linguistic information might not be the most reliable way to learn about relatedness. Kin terms are commonly used to refer to individuals who are not blood relatives, thus blurring genetic boundaries. For instance, "aunt" can refer to a parent's brother's wife (a nongenetic relative), and "brother" can refer to an unrelated coalition member. Furthermore, nonhuman species

without the capacity for language also categorize individuals according to relatedness, suggesting that more primitive mechanisms exist. It is unlikely that evolution would have jettisoned prior functional mechanisms in favor of less reliable cultural and linguistic information.

Instead, similar to many nonhuman animals, humans likely rely on ecologically valid cues that correlated with genetic relatedness in human ancestral environments. To the extent that different cues correlated with an individual being a particular type of relative (e.g., a parent vs. a child vs. a sibling), different detection mechanisms might exist. Researchers have identified a short list of candidate cues that might govern the detection of siblings. Specifically, recent findings indicate that different cues are used to detect younger versus older siblings. For instance, seeing one's own mother caring for (e.g., breast-feeding) a newborn is a reliable cue to siblingship. However, as potent a cue as this might be, it is available only to older siblings; younger siblings must rely on other cues to identify probable older siblings.

One solution is for younger siblings to track parenting effort. Because parents are motivated to differentially invest in their own genetic offspring, monitoring which children regularly receive care from one's own parents would reliably identify probable older siblings. For instance, observing one's parents feeding or protecting another child provides evidence that this child might be a sibling. Moreover, the longer the duration of care observed, the more likely it is that the individual in question would have been a sibling under ancestral conditions. This cue—duration of shared parental care—is what Westermarck meant by coresidence duration.

Various anthropological and psychological investigations provide evidence that the human mind uses these cues in the development of sibling-directed sexual aversions. The first investigations were on the "natural experiments," social arrangements created by cultural institutions that caused genetically *unrelated* children to be raised together throughout childhood. One natural experiment was created by the communal practices of Israeli kibbutzim; another was the Taiwanese custom of minor marriage. These investigations found that when unrelated individuals coreside throughout childhood, there are lower marriage rates, as in the case of the kibbutzim; and in the case of the Taiwanese minor marriage, in which the coreared teens are forced to marry, there are decreased rates of fertility and increased rates of divorce and extramarital affairs.

In modern-day families, researchers have found that coresidence duration and observations of infant-directed care (e.g., breast-feeding) continue to operate as cues to siblingship and predict the intensity of sexual aversions. Additional research has investigated whether the strength of personal inbreeding aversions shape moral views regarding incest. Indeed, the strength of one's personal sexual aversions toward one's own opposite-sex siblings influences the strength of moral opposition to third-party sibling incest. These findings suggest that cultural phenomena relating to incest might be governed by systems that evolved to regulate personal decisions regarding the avoidance of close genetic relatives as sexual partners.

In closing, human inbreeding avoidance is one area of research within evolutionary psychology that serves as a good example of how evolutionary psychologists start with selection pressures and from there posit information-processing systems that would have enabled an adaptive solution. The topic of inbreeding avoidance also illustrates how evolutionary psychology can be used to understand cultural phenomena.

Eric J. Pedersen, Adam Smith, and Debra Lieberman

See also Evolutionary Anthropology; Westermarck, Edward

Further Readings

Barrett, H. C., & Kurzban, R. (2006). Modularity in cognition: Framing the debate. *Psychological Review, 113*(3), 628–647.

Cosmides, L., Tooby, J., & Barkow, J. (1992). Introduction: Evolutionary psychology and conceptual integration. In J. Barkow, L. Cosmides, & J. Tooby (Eds.), *The adapted mind: Evolutionary psychology and the generation of culture* (pp. 3–18). New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Tooby, J., & Cosmides, L. (1992). The psychological foundations of culture. In J. Barkow, L. Cosmides, & J. Tooby (Eds.), *The adapted mind: Evolutionary psychology and the generation of culture* (pp. 19–136). New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Face-to-Face Interaction

Though rarely discussed explicitly in anthropology, face-to-face interaction (FFI) is a primordial site of social and cultural life. Consider that human infants are treated as possible co-interactionalists from birth (indeed, in some cases, before birth!), and there is evidence, in various forms, that they are capable of intentionally contributing to such interactions within the first few months (and perhaps the first hours) of life. Moreover, everywhere we look, society "on the ground" is, in large part, constituted through the coordinated activities of individuals and groups in direct FFI. Inuit song duels, Wolof greetings, and Iatmul Naven are just a few of the anthropologically more famous forms that human social interaction takes. When seen in comparison with more familiar forms such as those found in English courtrooms, American presidential press conferences, and French family dinners, we may be impressed by the apparently limitless diversity. However, underlying such diversity is a robust, universal, generic infrastructure that exploits a range of species-specific cognitive abilities and prosocial motivations. It is this infrastructure that will be briefly sketched here.

Significant contributions to current thinking about FFI have come from a variety of sources, including linguistic pragmatics, the semiotics of Charles Sanders Peirce, as well as studies in anthropology, psychology, and other disciplines. This brief sketch, however, focuses on an approach to FFI that emerged in the work of Harvey Sacks, Emanuel Schegloff, and Gail Jefferson and has come to be known as conversation analysis. Both Sacks and Schegloff were students of Erving Goffman—a transdisciplinary scholar who, though trained as a sociologist, had a major impact on, and indeed was himself strongly inspired by, anthropology. Goffman was perhaps the first and certainly the most eloquent defender of the view that FFI constituted its own phenomenon—that it had properties that were sui generis and not reducible to individual psychology or broader social processes. Sacks, Schegloff, and Jefferson incorporated this idea, and it may be understood as the first pillar of conversation analysis.

While Sacks and Schegloff were studying with Goffman at Berkeley, they were influenced by the highly original studies of Harold Garfinkel and the approach he developed known as *ethnomethodology*. The goal of Garfinkel's early studies was to uncover the underlying practices of reasoning that members of a society use in accomplishing everyday activities and that make society possible. A major part of Garfinkel's investigations was taken up with the question of how one person makes sense of another's conduct, including their talk. This concern was incorporated into conversation analysis, the second pillar of which is the idea that participants in social interaction engage in practical reasoning both to produce their own talk and to understand the talk of others. Both Goffman and Garfinkel thus provided inspiration for a new and distinctive approach to the study of ordinary social interaction. Sacks, Schegloff, and Jefferson were left though with the task of inventing a method by which it might be systematically studied.

Sacks, Schegloff, and Jefferson began their study of social interaction by looking at audio recordings

of telephone calls as well as copresent interaction and found there to be a locus of intricate order. Early studies showed that any given interaction could be broken down into parts and that these parts consisted of orderly practices of speaking that issue in orderly consequences and that together form orderly sequences of action in interaction. Moreover, this order is not the product of statistical regularities or of categorical imperatives but rather of a persistent and pervasive orientation by the participants to a set of structures or norms. Like any set of norms or rules in this sense, those that organize social interaction do not determine conduct but rather provide a framework through which it is intelligible. That is, participants in interaction can be seen by others as following a rule, deviating from it, attempting but failing to follow it, or simply violating it flat out—these various alternatives generating further informative inferences about what a participant "means" by behaving in a particular way. The orderliness of interaction then is a product of a member's methods that is brought off by participants in interaction in each and every one of its local instantiations through the application of regular practices of reasoning.

The structures or norms of FFI—the largely universal and generic underlying infrastructure alluded to earlier—are organized into partially independent or semiautonomous domains or systems. Three of these domains can be briefly sketched here.

Domains of FFI

Turn Taking

First, there is an organization of turn taking that provides for the orderly distribution of opportunities to participate in talk-in-interaction. Sacks, Schegloff, and Jefferson described a system having two components: (1) a *turn constructional component*, which defines the units out of which a possible turn can be constructed and, by extension, allows participants in interaction to anticipate the possible/probable extent and shape of any actual unit and thus to project its completion, and (2) a *turn allocation component*, which specifies an organized set of practices by which transition from the current speaker to the next speaker is managed. Together, these two components and the rules that organize their relation provide for the detailed orderliness of turn taking in interaction. It can be seen, for instance, that overwhelmingly self-selecting next speakers target possible unit completion points as places at which to start their own talk. In Figure 1, it can be observed that Parky twice attempts to begin his turn "That changed it," before it is eventually produced at line 06. Note the split-second timing evidenced here, with Parky attempting to come in at just those points where Old Man has reached possible (though obviously not actual) completion of his current turn. Clearly, to come in at just these points, Parky must have anticipated where Old Man would reach possible completion of his current turn. Examples are presented using the transcription conventions originally developed by Jefferson. For present purposes, the most important symbols are the period ("."), which indicates falling and final intonation; the question mark ("?"), indicating rising intonation; and brackets ("[ ]"), marking the onset and resolution of overlapping talk between two speakers. Equal signs, which come in pairs—one at the end of a line and another at the start of the next line or one shortly thereafter—are used to indicate that the second line followed the first, with no discernible silence between them; in other words, it was "latched" to it. Numbers in parentheses (e.g. "(0.5)") indicate silence, represented in 10ths of a second. Finally, colons are used to indicate prolongation or stretching of the sound preceding them. The more the colons, the longer is the stretching.

An important and widely underappreciated point is that this turn-taking system operates independently of whatever actions are being accomplished in and through the talk it organizes—that is, whether persons are requesting, inviting, questioning, answering,

```
01 Tourist: Has the park cha:nged much,
02 Parky:   Oh:: ye:s,
03          (1.0)
04 Old man: Th'Funfair changed it'n [ahful lot [didn'i
05 Parky:                           [Th-       [That-
06 Parky:   That changed it,
```

Figure 1 Parky

Source: From Sacks, Schegloff, & Jefferson, 1974.

agreeing, disagreeing, complaining, excusing, insulting, or whatever else, they do it in turns at talk constructed and distributed through an orientation to the turn-taking system.

Arrangement of Actions into Sequences

The arrangement of actions into sequences represents a second domain of organization in interaction. A very basic observation is that many—though not all—actions in talk in interaction come in pairs, for example, request and granting (or rejection), invitation and acceptance (or refusal), complaint and excuse (or denial), and so on. These pairs are linked together by a relation of conditional relevance whereby, to paraphrase Schegloff, given a first action (such as a request, invitation, or complaint), a second is made expectable. On the occurrence of a second, it can be seen to be a second item to the first (rather than an independent turn), and on its nonoccurrence, it can be seen to be absent (where an infinite number of other things did not occur but were not "absent" in the same way). Conditional relevance thus establishes a relation between a first and a second action that has both a prospective and a retrospective dimension. The prospective dimension ensures that the doing of a first action will activate a norm, making the doing of the second action relevant and noticeably absent if not produced. The retrospective dimension allows the speaker of the first action to see if and how she was understood—for example, the production of a turn recognizable as an excuse in response will reveal to the first speaker that she was heard to be complaining or accusing, whether that was her intention or not. Thus, the production of actions within sequences constitutes an "architecture of intersubjectivity" by which understandings are publicly displayed and ratified incarnately, en passant in the course of whatever business the talk is occupied with.

Repair

The third and final domain of organization to be described here is the system of repair. Troubles of speaking, hearing, and understanding are endemic to all forms of human interaction. The organized set of practices of repair constitute a natural, interactive system by which such troubles may be addressed at or near their point of production (or manifestation) and potentially resolved more or less immediately. The practices that make up the domain of repair are described in terms of *personnel* (self = *speaker of trouble source*, other = *any other participant*), *component* (trouble source vs. initiation vs. repair proper, etc.), and *position* (same turn, transition space between turns, next turn, third turn, third position). Consider, for instance, the case in Figure 2 excerpted from a talk show in which Ellen Degeneres is interviewing Rashida Jones.

```
01 El:       Al:right tell people about this hilarious
02           show. It's Parks and Recreation an' you
03      A->  an' Amy Poehler how- How great is that.=
04 Ra: B->   =It's pretty great=
05 El:       =mm mh[m.
06 Ra:             [It's- uhm- it- I just mean it- ek-
07           experientially for me it's pr(h)etty
08           [gr(h)ea(h)t(h) [heh heh ha (    )
09 El: C->   [yeah.          [no. an' but I mean it's
10      C->  a- I ah- know what you mea[nt. But I: say
11 Ra:                                [hih huh ha hah h
12           [huh huh .hh hah
13 El: C->   [it's really great. The two of you.=
14 Ra:       nyeah.
15 El:       yeah. [an' it's about,
16 Ra:             [(it is)
```

Figure 2 Rashida Jones on *Ellen*, April 2009

Where this fragment begins, DeGeneres is raising the topic of Jones's new television show with the comedian Amy Poehler, *Parks and Recreation*. DeGeneres initiates the topic by inviting Jones to tell the audience about the show. She then gives the title, before concluding the turn with "an' you an' Amy Poehler how—How great is that." Note then that this final part of the turn can be heard as a real information question—a request for Jones to specify how great "that" is. At the same time, the construction "How X is that?" is a familiar, idiomatic expression that, by virtue of the presupposition it carries, conveys that "it's X" or, in this case, "it's great." So here the talk at line 03 (the A arrow) takes the form of a wh question ("How great is that"), and Rashida Jones treats it as one by answering, "It's pretty great" (at the B arrow). This response, by treating "How great is that=" as an information-requesting question, reveals a problematic understanding, which Ellen subsequently goes on to repair in lines 09–10 and 13 (the C arrows). By saying, "I: say it's really great," Ellen indicates that "How great is that=" was not in fact meant as a question but rather as an assertion (or, more specifically, an assessment). We call this repair in third position for the following reason. A first-position utterance ("How great is that") has been produced, and the response to it, in second position, "It's pretty great," reveals a problematic understanding of it. This problematic understanding is then repaired in third position by the speaker of the first-position utterance when she clarifies that she was asserting or assessing and not asking.

Note that we can distinguish such cases from instances of third-*turn* repair, as exemplified in Rashida Jones's talk at lines 04–08. Here, the speaker originally produces the turn "It's pretty great," and this is treated as a trouble source when she repairs it by inserting the phrase "experientially for me," resulting in the repaired utterance "I just mean experientially for me it's pretty great." In this case, the repair might have been produced in the transition space between turns but has been "pushed" into third turn by Ellen's "=mm mh[m." at line 05. In contrast to the instance of third-position repair we just considered from this same fragment, here Ellen's "=mm mh[m." does not reveal a problematic understanding of what the prior speaker has just said and thus does not prompt the repair that is eventually produced.

A very important initial step in developing a rigorous account of interaction involves determining the different systems or domains out of which talk-in-interaction is composed. Though obviously interrelated in multiple ways, these domains have their own distinctive properties and operate to some extent independently of one another—so, for instance, it may have been noted that the turn-taking system underlies all the practices of repair just described but does so indiscriminately, irrespective of whether it is a repair or something else that is being done.

Language and the Structure of Interaction

Recent work from an anthropological and crosslinguistic perspective has begun to ask whether the particular language being spoken has consequences for the organization of interaction as described here. That study is still in its infancy, but initial results suggest that the underlying, generic structures of interaction may be inflected or torqued by the particular semiotic structures through which it is accomplished as well as the local circumstances within which it operates.

Jack Sidnell

See also Ethnomethodology

Further Readings

Enfield, N. J., & Levinson, S. C. (2006). Introduction: Human sociality as a new interdisciplinary field. In N. J. Enfield & S. C. Levinson (Eds.), *Roots of human sociality: Culture, cognition and interaction* (pp. 1–35). Oxford, UK: Berg.

Levinson, S. C. (2006). On the human "interaction engine." In N. J. Enfield & S. C. Levinson (Eds.), *Roots of human sociality: Culture, cognition, and interaction* (pp. 39–69). Oxford, UK: Berg.

Sacks, H., Schegloff, E. A., & Jefferson, G. (1974). A simplest systematics for the organization of turn-taking for conversation. *Language, 50*(4), 696–735.

Schegloff, E. A. (1968). Sequencing in conversational openings. *American Anthropologist, 70*(6), 1075–1095.

———. (2006). Interaction: The infrastructure for social institutions, the natural ecological niche for language, and the arena in which culture is enacted. In N. J. Enfield & S. C. Levinson (Eds.), *Roots of human sociality: Culture, cognition, and interaction* (pp. 70–96). Oxford, UK: Berg.

Sidnell, J. (2009). *Conversation analysis: Comparative perspectives*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (2010). *Conversation analysis: An introduction*. Oxford, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.
Tomasello, M. (2008). *Origins of human communication*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Fanon, Frantz

Frantz Omar Fanon (1925–1961) was a Martinique-born, French-trained activist, philosopher, and psychiatrist whose theorization of the psychosocial elements of the colonial encounter in metropolitan France and colonial Algeria shaped late-20th-century critical anthropology in Europe and North America.

Biography and Major Works

Born in the city of Fort-de-France, Martinique, a French territorial possession in the Caribbean, Fanon and his brother were raised in relative middle-class comfort. In the lycée (secondary school), he was taught for a time and was befriended by the anticolonial poet-activist Aimé Césaire (known for his endorsement of *negritude*), which contributed significantly to his awareness of racial and colonial inequalities. In the midst of World War II, he opposed the Vichy French government in several French-administered Caribbean islands, before joining the anti-Nazi resistance in France. Despite being decorated for his wartime efforts, the direct encounter with metropolitan racism deeply affected Fanon.

Not long after the war, he was awarded a scholarship to study psychiatry, a field still dominated by psychoanalytic techniques at the time. While obtaining his degree, he met, and came to marry in 1952, Josie Dublé, a French woman who shared similar moral and political attitudes to issues of race and colonialism. This was also the year he published *Black Skin, White Masks* (1952), his first sustained examination of the effects of racism and colonialism on the colonized. The book also included numerous reflections on growing up in Martinique.

The postwar intellectual climate in France tolerated open discussion of leftist ideas in a manner not as possible elsewhere in the West during the Cold War. It was an environment of cross-pollination in theory and practice. Fanon participated in dialogues occurring between and among Marxian-influenced activists and progressive thinkers from Africa and France, existential and phenomenological philosophers such as Jean-Paul Sartre, and psychoanalysts, like Jacques Lacan, refashioning their practice under the influence of structural linguistics. These ideas supported his ever-growing conviction to contest colonialism and racism. In 1953, he enthusiastically accepted a job managing the psychiatry unit of the Blida-Joinville Hospital in Algiers.

Fanon's clinical practice at the hospital was directed toward reform of the institution's policy and practices, leading some to refer to him as the Phillipe Pinel of Algeria, in reference to the reformist physician who, in the wake of the French Revolution, unchained patients in asylums. In particular, Fanon aimed to be culturally and religiously sensitive to those in his care. The political climate in the colony at this time was tense, and in 1954, the National Liberation Front (Front de Libération Nationale, FLN) began its guerrilla campaign to establish Algeria's independence from France. The number of patients increased in the psychiatric unit, many suffering from the effects of sustained interrogations, harassment, and physical and mental torture. Several cases appear in *The Wretched of the Earth* (1961), in the chapter "Colonial War and Mental Disorders." By 1955, Fanon had joined the FLN while continuing to work at the hospital. He began to travel widely throughout Algeria, partly in an effort to extend his understanding of the social and psychic life of rural Algerians and partly to conduct covert activity for the FLN.

Fanon resigned his post in 1956 to distance himself from the French government and to protest the manner in which the war was being conducted by the French troops. The letter of resignation is reprinted in *Toward the African Revolution* (1964). From that period onward, he no longer defined himself as French or Martiniquan, but as Algerian. Expelled from Algeria by the French authorities in 1957, Fanon made his way to Tunis, Tunisia, where he continued his activities with the FLN.

The brief period in Algeria, spanning 1953–1957, provided the experiences and observations that formed the essays collected in *A Dying Colonialism* (1959) and *The Wretched of the Earth* (1961). *Toward the African Revolution*, published posthumously in 1964, consists of a few brief essays written

in the 1950s and primarily short pieces written for the FLN broadsheet *El Moudjahid*.

Reception in Anthropology of Fanon's Major Works

Although not formally trained in ethnographic techniques, Fanon's ethnographic sensibilities and empathy for marginalized others made him a sensitive observer of social relations of inequality in context. The three major works he published in his lifetime have had rather different receptions within anthropology. This is partly a consequence of the different intellectual traditions and inflections that inform his works (Marxian anticolonialism, existentialism and phenomenology, and psychoanalysis) and partly a consequence of the social, political, and intellectual milieu in which English-speaking anthropologists adopted his writings. Generally speaking, Anglophone anthropology focused especially on *The Wretched of the Earth* from the mid-1960s into the 1970s and *Black Skin, White Masks* from the mid-1980s into the 1990s, leaving *A Dying Colonialism* less well incorporated, though not altogether neglected.

The Wretched of the Earth

Although this was the last book he published in his native French, released just weeks before his death from leukemia in 1961, it was the first to be translated into English in 1963. In the context of the uneven but steady wave of formal political decolonization globally and the growing civil rights movement in the United States, *The Wretched of the Earth* found a ready audience. This was a period when many anthropologists more openly expressed their support of the colonized populations they studied. In the wake of a receding McCarthyism, this book, among the works of other colonial intellectuals, enjoined anthropologists to take account of the colonial and neocolonial situation, in contrast to the common ahistorical treatises of the day seeking to describe pure and distinct cultures.

Fanon's writing served as an inspiration to many anthropologists of the time, but among the Marxian "New Left" both inside and outside of anthropology it was also considered too simplistic in its Manichean alternatives. This simplicity, however, has also been argued to be a consequence of a translation lacking the nuances expressed in the original French. Contentious too was Fanon's call for colonized people to respond to colonial violence with counterviolence as a means to overcome colonially generated feelings of inferiority and redefine personal and group identity positively.

Nonetheless, Fanon's text made a substantial contribution to anthropology as the discipline grappled with how to "reinvent" itself in a manner that more directly considered how the "colonial encounter" shaped fieldwork and disciplinary ethics. Despite the charge of oversimplified Manichean racial categories, his call to pay closer attention to (Marxian inspired) class dynamics among colonized and colonizers alike promoted a complexity and fragmentation of the social dynamics most anthropologists faced. The previous bounded and integrationist approaches in ethnography excluded the variety of colonials and their conflicting interests in shaping the sociocultural context. These functionalist ethnographies also paid insufficient attention to the dialectics of inter- and intra-ethnic social relations among colonized groups. In the 1960s and 1970s, *The Wretched of the Earth* was also a source of inspiration for intellectuals and academics, including anthropologists, from Western minority groups in metropolitan centers and in new or emergent postcolonial states, where their critiques of previous representations of colonial life reshaped the direction of Anglophone anthropology.

Black Skin, White Masks

Of Fanon's three major works, this was the first written but the last to be translated into English, in 1967. With its greater theoretical emphasis on existential, phenomenological, and psychoanalytic themes, this work was not as strongly taken up initially by an anthropology rethinking and reinserting historical materialism into its analyses in the 1960s and 1970s. As the discipline's focus shifted to the politics of representation, discourse theories, and identity politics, *Black Skin, White Masks* drew more attention. This was partly in response to a reexamination of the book in feminist, cultural, and postcolonial studies.

Written initially under the title "Essay on the Disalienation of the Black," the analytic focus on the construction of a racially inflected identity always had a practical and clinical goal of achieving psychosocial health for those labeled racially inferior.

As such, Fanon was broadly attuned to cultural context. Methodologically, the work has characteristics similar to what has come to be known as autoethnography, in that many elements of his personal experiences in Martinique and France, such as a White child's automatic fear of his black body, are taken as indicative of racialized colonial situations. Such processes of racial alienation are historical constructions that are specific to time and place. Disalienation, he concludes, requires recognizing that the "Other" of the (black) "Other" is not the (white) "Self."

Because of his style of writing, Fanon's analysis has been criticized on the grounds of overgeneralization. Even though his insights on colonial identity formation were recognized in anthropology at the time, there was also criticism of his not being able to substantially address the dynamics of identity formation among women of color or homosexuals, even as he incorporated them within his schema.

As Foucauldian conceptions of discourse became more widespread in anthropology, the psychoanalytic currents within Fanon were increasingly disregarded as a form of essentialism and reductionism, even though his use was far from orthodox or mechanical. A theme more resonant within the anthropology of the 1980s, and the intellectual climate broadly, was his concern to reestablish the study of bodies and corporeality in analysis in order to disrupt what many considered the undue privileging of the Cartesian ego, or mind over body, in the ethnographic writing of culture. The consolidation of a historical anthropology of colonialism as a subfield during this period also selectively drew inspiration from Fanon's publications.

A Dying Colonialism

The five essays that make up *A Dying Colonialism* are arguably Fanon's most ethnographic writings. It is perhaps because of this that this work has not been as closely scrutinized in anthropology. Unlike the overtly geopolitical and nationalist concerns of *The Wretched of the Earth*, these essays span a variety of different topics loosely threaded around a theme of changes in social and cultural institutions in an anticolonial war of independence. Based on his 4 years of observations in Algeria as a clandestine operative for the FLN, the essays all consider an element of society undergoing redefinition. In doing so, he challenged the assumption, frequent among Euro-Americans, of tradition and custom being static and repetitive practices rather than dynamic ones. Nonetheless, since this is not fieldwork in any usual ethnographic sense, the essays have an idealistic, and sometimes superficial, character.

The opening essay uses the redefinition of the meanings associated with veils and veiling practices to challenge both colonial assertions of unchanging tradition and women's inferiority. The following essay considers the adoption of the radio by Algerians and generally serves Fanon as a metaphoric instrument to suggest that non-indigenous technologies are adopted or rejected according to the social, political, and economic context. The essay on the family in a situation of anticolonial war traces redefinitions in social relations of age and generation toward greater egalitarianism and personal independence as a result of resisting French colonialism. "Medicine and Colonialism" parallels, in the realm of knowledge and epistemology, what the radio stood for in terms of the adoption of technology according to circumstance. Last, Fanon addresses the political and economic heterogeneity of Algeria's Jewish and European minorities, emphasizing that further stereotypes should not be the response to colonial stereotypes.

An issue Fanon could not address, due to his early death, was the extent to which the transformations he observed in the context of war mostly did not become embedded and normalized in the postcolonial independence period. Fanon's attention to changes in meaning and practice in the revolutionary period prefigures the theme of violence re-creating identity, found in *The Wretched of the Earth*.

Fanon's Influence on Anthropology

Engaging two generations of anthropological thinking, the reception of Fanon's works has always been shaped by the larger political milieu within which anthropology operates and also by the major theoretical and methodological concerns predominating any given moment in the discipline. His appeal over time is connected to his political and ethical commitment toward undoing colonialism and racial oppression as well as his early use of intellectual currents that later became widespread in Anglophone anthropology. Fanon's version of historical materialism in colonial contexts was considered, if not always fully adopted,

by anthropologists such as Eric Wolf and Bernard Magubane in the 1960s and 1970s. As the discipline shifted to postcolonial approaches to racism, culture, and identity, his works were critically engaged by Stephan Feuchtwang and Ann Stoler, for example, in the 1980s and 1990s. Despite their not always being directly named, Fanon's works have exerted a pressure within anthropology to pay attention to the psychocultural effects of cross-cultural encounters marked by economic and racial inequalities.

Udo Krautwurst

See also Postcolonial Theory

Further Readings

Fanon, F. (2008). Foreward to the 2008 edition by Ziauddin Sardar. In *Black skin, white masks* (pp. vi–xx). London, UK: Pluto Press.

Feuchtwang, S. (1985). Fanon's politics of culture: The colonial situation and its extension. *Economy and Society, 14*(4), 451–473.

Fuss, D. (1994). Interior colonies: Frantz Fanon and the politics of identification. *Diacritics, 24*(2–3), 20–42.

Geismar, P. (1971). *Fanon.* New York, NY: Dial Books.

Julien, I. (Director). (1996). *Frantz Fanon: Black skin, white mask* (70 minutes). UK: Normal Films.

Read, A. (Ed.). (1996). *The fact of blackness: Frantz Fanon and visual representation.* Seattle, WA: Bay Press.

Feminist Anthropology

Feminist anthropology takes as its subject women, men, and gender as a social relationship that is generally marked by inequality and difference or, in short, by power. Feminist anthropologists direct attention to all manner of research questions, but what they have in common is that they bring knowledge of the history of such power relations to bear on their scientific and interpretive work. While feminist anthropology embraces all the traditional subfields of anthropology (sociocultural, linguistic, and biological anthropology, as well as archaeology), this entry will be limited to the largest domain in the discipline, sociocultural anthropology. Moreover, the focus will be on developments in American anthropology, as a discussion of feminist anthropology in Europe and elsewhere in the world would require considerably more space than this entry allows.

Precursors to what we today call feminist anthropology date back to the late 19th century, and some analysts would include among them towering figures in anthropological history such as Lewis Henry Morgan, who revolutionized the understanding of kinship and social organization. Most of the discussion of feminist anthropology, however, begins with early-20th-century pioneering women in the discipline who, often based on their own experience in challenging gender norms, inquired into social relations marked by gender in ways few of their male counterparts had done. Several students of the acclaimed father figure in U.S. anthropology, Franz Boas, were among these now heralded women: Elsie Clews Parsons, Ruth Benedict, Margaret Mead, and Zora Neale Hurston, to name several of the best known. In their day, these women rarely held full-time academic positions—and Hurston never completed a graduate degree—despite their marked intelligence and exceptional talents in research and writing. The social climate of the early 20th century offered little support for women scholars, who might become celebrated authors without becoming established members of the professoriate in anthropology.

Notwithstanding such obstacles to women's entry into the profession, Mead and Benedict were to become widely known as public intellectuals, their writings reaching beyond academia to a large number of readers. Hurston, who faced greater challenges as a woman of color, achieved greater fame only after her own lifetime and is more often recognized as a folklorist and writer than as an anthropologist. As a group, these and other female anthropologists in the early to mid-20th century were notable for recognizing women as protagonists in their own lives, whereas in the past, male scholars frequently overlooked women or relegated them to the sidelines of culture and history. These pioneering women moreover contributed significantly to schools of thought such as historical particularism, culture and personality, and race and identity-based anthropology.

By the late 1960s and early 1970s, the second wave of the women's movement in the United States had inspired a new generation to look to anthropology to answer enduring questions regarding women's status and the origins of women's subordination across societies. Feminist activists hoped that anthropology might explain how women came to be the second sex, carrying the main responsibility for

family and household, and earning less than men in the workplace. Activist anthropologists responded by developing research that documented or questioned the universality of women's secondary status. Some argued that it came about historically with the rise of social classes in state societies, when men gained ascendency as property owners, seeking to pass on their wealth to male heirs. Women thus provided the support services for men in the home and in the workplace, and this came to be seen as part of the natural order of things. By the mid-1970s, the "anthropology of women" was born as academic feminists laid claim to a new paradigm that would fundamentally challenge male-centered, or androcentric, anthropology for its flawed conceptualization of culture and society.

The Anthropology of Women

Two landmark edited volumes appeared at this time, Michelle Rosaldo and Louise Lamphere's *Woman, Culture, and Society* (1974) and Rayna Rapp Reiter's *Toward an Anthropology of Women* (1975). While the former tilted toward a more symbolic perspective on the asymmetrical gender relations found in nearly all societies, the latter emphasized the historical emergence of gender inequality in what had been more egalitarian societies of the past. Taken together, the two collections had considerable impact on the thinking in anthropology and beyond, as they made a compelling case that gender arrangements are diverse in form and are not set in stone. Instead, they showed that cultures and societies are malleable and are always undergoing construction—in fact, the evidence suggested that gender itself was socially constructed. Contributors to these volumes and several others around this time upheld the feminist position that anatomy is not destiny and that difference need not always mean inequality. One frequently quoted essay by Gayle Rubin was hailed as a brilliant retheorization of the ideas of Karl Marx, Sigmund Freud, and Claude Lévi-Strauss to account for the remarkably diverse ways in which a "sex/gender system" pervades cultures and creates different expectations for women and men in society.

Scholars of this generation called on anthropology as a discipline to bring women into the picture and not view them simply as pale reflections of their male counterparts. Indeed, they claimed that properly understanding women as occupying central roles across cultures could shake the foundation of anthropology and transform the field. Some set out to show that while "man, the hunter" was lingering to find food in foraging societies, "woman, the gatherer" was providing the bulk of band societies' diets and also meeting other family needs. The new evidence prompted many in the discipline to revise their understanding, and this was reflected in new and more accurate language to describe both hunting *and* gathering in foraging societies. Such revisionist work lent credence to those who posited that just as present-day foraging societies depend mightily on women's work and value their contributions, so too were women in earlier periods of human history and prehistory likely to have held more prominent positions than had heretofore been understood.

The same attention to reexamining the gender division of labor and gender ideologies in foraging societies was taken to agrarian peasant societies, where it was found that women's labor and household contributions were widely underestimated. Just as anthropologists were considering the inputs of women in rural societies and their decision-making participation there, other scholars too were advancing critiques of Western notions of gender and development. These analysts converged in their discovery that women often played more substantial roles than had been previously documented by researchers. New data collection spurred new theorization about women's agency, or active participation, in agricultural and herding societies and called on development agencies to cease the colonialist practice of favoring men for "modernization" and undermining women's "traditional" roles in supporting families and households. At the same time, others pointed to the ways in which some Western-oriented programs overlooked the superexploitation of women who carried both traditional responsibilities and new burdens of structural adjustment in contemporary neoliberal contexts.

The Anthropology of Gender

By the early 1980s, there was a shift from a central focus on women to a more dynamic attention to gender relations in society, with a recognition that feminist analysis is needed to understand not only women's role in society but also men's and that ultimately the objective is to more fully account for the constitution of gender as a social process always in

flux. This decade was also shaped by a broad critique by women of color in the feminist movement and in feminist scholarship, calling for recognition of the intersectionality of gender in relation to race as well as class, sexuality, and other social vectors. Feminist anthropologists who had long studied women of diverse cultural backgrounds nonetheless needed to contend with their own blind spots relating to the profound inequalities among the peoples with whom they conducted research. A more complex and robust anthropology emerged from such critical discussion. It was far from sufficient to "add women and stir" to bring about a transformed anthropology, but rather it would be necessary to decolonize knowledge by recognizing the unearned privileges of certain groups in society—including many women—and the exclusion of others for whom the multiple subjectivity of race, class, and nationality produces positions of subalternity.

An increasingly vibrant feminist anthropology emerged to embrace work that examined masculinity, femininity, and persistent social inequalities at the same time that it recognized the need for research on forms of political resistance, cultural expression, and economic resilience that successfully sustained communities and populations. The 1990s saw collections by Micaela di Leonardo (1991) and Louise Lamphere, Helena Ragoné, and Patricia Zavella (1997) and essays by Sherry Ortner (1996) that brought together critical approaches to gender, culture, and political economy, and sought to situate and deepen our understanding of the contingencies that shape complex lives. The questions they addressed ranged from conceptions of the body to reconceived family forms, from symbolic structures of dominance to the gendered politics of violence in times of economic crisis and national conflict.

An influential collection by Ruth Behar and Deborah A. Gordon (1995) also appeared during this time in response to the postmodern cultural turn in anthropology, whose advocates had often failed to acknowledge the contributions of women writers and theorists. Their work delved into anthropological history to uncover innovative yet nearly forgotten scholars of the past, some of them women of color, calling for a challenge to the canon that favors those with gender and racial privilege. The anthology incorporated fiction and other forms as well as more conventional essays to make a case for new means of conveying new knowledge. A few years later, a collection on Black feminist anthropology edited by Irma McClaurin (2001) made its mark on the field, offering a rich account of the often obscured Black feminist tradition in anthropology along with exemplary contemporary research. This work inspired feminist anthropologists to reexamine "official" histories and received wisdom in order to be better scholars and produce more adequate and just frameworks of analysis.

Feminist Anthropology

The past decade has witnessed a continued trajectory from an anthropology of women and gender toward a still broader feminist anthropology. It would be incorrect to suggest that there has been an inevitable movement toward an ever more liberated practice in the field, and one could certainly point to setbacks, yet feminist anthropology has become quite firmly established in the field. Some might justifiably claim that the passion that fueled feminist analysts in the past is more muted now that feminist anthropology appears to be here to stay. They would be right to caution scholars about complacently resting on laurels when the wider society shows signs of pulling back on the gains women have made over the past decades. Even so, it is safe to say that anthropology today looks substantially different from the way it looked 40 years ago thanks in no small part to the feminists who challenged the discipline to become more inclusive and to better represent all members of societies, women and men alike. Here, let us consider some of the most productive areas of current debate and discussion in feminist anthropology.

Just as feminist anthropologists have sought to understand the diverse part played by women and men across societies, they have also sought to consider the positionality of researchers themselves in the field. They have suggested that men and women in the field may have different degrees of access to the subjects of their research: While men may have privileged access to those (often men) holding power and authority, women may often have the confidence of women and others who are in less central social positions. Moreover, feminist anthropologists today tend to be mindful of the differences among women, whether cultural, racial, or by social class or sexuality, and the implications these differences may have for their research and their analysis. This is not to say that researchers should only study those who are

like themselves, but rather that a recognition of one's own position in relation to those one studies may enrich and deepen understanding of world cultures and societies. In the case of anthropologists who are members of the cultures they study, we may expect somewhat different "insider" perspectives, which complement and enhance the perspectives offered by "outsider" anthropologists.

Relatedly, feminist anthropologists have been among the scholars who bring to their written work significant attention to modes of representation of their research. Thus, they are often particularly attuned to the politics of language, the nuance of description, and the importance of giving voice to the subjects of research, so that those studied do not come across as passive victims, no matter how subordinated they may seem, but as active agents in their own lives. While feminist writers are not the only ones to experiment with form and genre, they have in some cases written autoethnography, collaborative works, fiction, or poetry as alternative means to convey ethnographic insights. This commitment to represent others fairly and accurately is guided by the abiding concern of many feminist anthropologists not only to do no harm but also to reciprocate with their research communities. Sharing knowledge, making work available in the languages of their areas of research, and leaving behind archives for local scholars are all ways in which they may seek to give back to those they study. Engaged anthropologists, feminists among them, have also contributed royalties from their publications, helped establish libraries and clinics, and in other ways tried to leave more than they have taken away. Some would consider themselves "public anthropologists" who are committed not only to the pursuit of knowledge but also to the broad circulation of their findings to inform a wider public on issues such as gender and reproductive health, double standards in paid employment, and race and sexual orientation in identity formation.

The Future of Feminist Anthropology

From feminist anthropology's past as a "squeaky wheel" that called on the discipline to include women more prominently in its analysis, it is fair to say that it has now succeeded in transforming thinking in the field. A gendered perspective is widely considered essential to a comprehensive understanding of human history and contemporary social processes. Today, those who overlook the significance of gender may do so at the risk of being criticized for generating flawed scholarship. Feminist inquiries into areas including gender and the body, identity, sexuality, and materiality are now considered part of the anthropological canon. This has not come easily, and it has taken several decades to achieve the gains that have been made to date. The Association for Feminist Anthropology, a section of the American Anthropological Association, was formed in 1987 to address the underrepresentation of women and gender in scholarly analysis, and it gave support to a broad curriculum development project to transform the discipline. Since then, the Association for Feminist Anthropology has published the journal *Voices*, supported feminist scholarship, and established an archive of the first 20 years of the association's history, now housed in Washington, D.C., in the National Anthropology Archives. A great number of universities in the United States (and elsewhere) offer courses in feminist anthropology, and the wide literature in the field includes many books, journal articles, and films. One recent survey of anthropology courses taught in U.S. colleges showed that courses on gender topped the lists, signaling the desire of a new generation of anthropologists to take women and gender seriously.

A vibrant feminist anthropology now under construction seeks to advance theory and practice in the service of academics and activism, to create more inclusive societies and a more just world. Critiques within feminist anthropology as well as anthropology more generally are sparking efforts by both women and men to further decolonize anthropology, encouraging greater attention to difference and inequality by race, class, sexuality, and nation along with gender in the present era of increasing globalization. Sociocultural anthropologists often work collaboratively with their colleagues in the other subfields of anthropology as well as in related disciplines to better respond to new research questions as they emerge and to generate rich new knowledge for the future in feminist anthropology.

Florence E. Babb

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Butler, Judith; Chodorow, Nancy; Gender and Anthropology; Hurston, Zora Neale; Lamphere, Louise; Leacock, Eleanor; Mead, Margaret; Modernism; Nash, June; Ortner, Sherry;

Parsons, Elsie C.; Postmodernism; Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist; Sanday, Peggy Reeves

Further Readings

Babb, F. E. (Ed.). (2007, April–November). Engendering anthropology. *Anthropology News*.

Behar, R., & Gordon, D. (Eds.). (1995). *Women writing culture*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Brettell, C. B., & Sargent, C. F. (Eds.). (2001). *Gender in cross-cultural perspective*. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Di Leonardo, M., (Ed.). (1991). *Gender at the crossroads of knowledge: Feminist anthropology in the postmodern era*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Lamphere, L., Ragoné, H., & Zavella, P. (Eds.). (1997). *Situated lives: Gender and culture in everyday life*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Lewin, E. (Ed.). (2006). *Feminist anthropology: A reader*. Malden, MA: Blackwell.

Lugo, A., & Maurer, B. (Eds.). (2000). *Gender matters: Rereading Michelle Z. Rosaldo*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.

McClaurin, I. (Ed.). (2001). *Black feminist anthropology: Theory, politics, praxis, and poetics*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

Morgen, S. (1990). *Gender and anthropology: Critical reviews for research and teaching*. Washington DC: American Anthropological Association.

Ortner, S. B. (1996). *Making gender: The politics and erotics of culture*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press.

Reiter, R. R. (Ed.). (1975). *Toward an anthropology of women*. New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.

Rosaldo, M. Z., & Lamphere, L. (Eds.). (1974). *Woman, culture, and society*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Ferguson, Adam

Adam Ferguson (1723–1816) was a prominent member of a circle of Scottish Enlightenment thinkers that included David Hume and Adam Smith. Born in the village of Logeirat, Perthshire, on the fringes of the Scottish highlands, he was the only highlander in the group. Son of a Presbyterian minister, he initially followed his father into the church, serving as chaplain to the Black Watch regiment. He resigned from the ministry and from the army in 1754 and was appointed to a chair at the University of Edinburgh in 1759. He was the author of several books and pamphlets, including a relatively undistinguished history of the rise and fall of the Roman Republic, but his major contribution was *An Essay of the History of Civil Society* (1767). The *Essay* is primarily known as one of the earliest expositions of the stage theory of human progress from "savagery" through "barbarism" to "civilization," very roughly corresponding to different means of subsistence—hunting, pastoralism, agriculture, and commerce. Ferguson's writings directly or indirectly influenced major 19th-century evolutionary thinkers, most notably Karl Marx and Lewis Henry Morgan.

The stage theory of progress had already been formulated slightly earlier by Smith in his unpublished lectures on jurisprudence at the University of Glasgow in 1762 and 1763. Both Smith and Ferguson based their accounts of "savages" on descriptions of the Iroquois by French Jesuit missionaries, the ethnographer Joseph-François Lafitau, and the historian Pierre de Charlevoix. Smith was particularly concerned with the ways in which changes in the means of subsistence affected deep changes in legal notions of property as well as in systems of government. Unlike hunting, he argued, herding allowed the development of relatively permanent forms of inequality, a gap, however moderate, between those who owned a few animals and those who owned many. Moreover, because ownership was transmitted from one generation to another, these inequalities became hereditary and spilled over into the political domain. Such inequalities, only nascent in pastoral societies, grew with the development of agriculture and commerce.

Ferguson's *Essay*, presenting the stage theory in great detail and in published form, is generally regarded as a landmark in European theories of human progress. In fact, Ferguson was by no means guilty of unbridled optimism. Much of the book is devoted to a consideration of decline and decay. Like Smith, he was preoccupied with the moral, social, and political implications of progress that rested on the growth of the division of labor. He was less concerned than Smith with the origins of inequality in pastoralism than with the contrast between humanity in the states of "savagery" and "civilization."

Ferguson's paradigm of "savagery" was Iroquois society as depicted by Lafitau and Charlevoix. He was well aware that Iroquois subsistence was not restricted to hunting but also included horticulture. Rather, their "savagery" depended on the relatively

restricted development of property rights. They were highly egalitarian, with no division into rich and poor. This had important consequences for their system of government, which centered on councils where all adult men, and often women, had a voice and a stake. Their conduct of warfare demonstrated that, conversely, the group was concerned with the fate of each individual. The death of even a few warriors in a campaign was considered a calamity given that such small groups could ill afford any losses at all. The Iroquois closely resembled Comte de Montesquieu's paradigm of republican government, which depended on "civic virtue," the close involvement of the individual in the affairs of the whole.

Like Montesquieu, Ferguson was also afraid of the prospect of the decline of European societies into systems of authoritarian rule. The very engine of progress, the division of labor, was also the mechanism that posed the greatest threat to individual liberty. In the first place, the development of specialization radically narrows the scope of the intellectual, not to mention the economic and political interests of the average citizen. Second, inequalities of wealth and power give some individuals a much greater stake, not to mention influence, in the affairs of the state as a whole. Finally, the very progress that develops the minds and capacities of the few actually impoverishes the development of the majority. The officer may have a sophisticated understanding of military matters; however, the common soldier is cannon fodder, whose only responsibility is to obey orders mindlessly. By contrast, the ordinary Iroquois warrior has a far superior grasp of any campaign. In a passage approvingly cited by Marx, Ferguson compares the industrial workshop to a vast machine whose parts are human beings.

Without sharing Jean-Jacques Rousseau's deep pessimism, Ferguson still shows a deep ambivalence toward human progress and a real respect for the qualities of "savages" like the Iroquois, as individuals and as a society. His hope rested in the cultivation of civic engagement, in each citizen's concern for the well-being of society as a whole.

Ferguson's stage theory of progress had a deep impact on 19th-century evolutionary theorists, in particular Morgan, whose personal library reflected his deep interest in the thinkers of the Scottish Enlightenment, not to mention Marx, who admired both Ferguson and Morgan. His vision of civil society has also found contemporary admirers, notably Ernest Gellner.

Robert Launay

See also Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat; Lafitau, Joseph-François; Marx, Karl; Montesquieu, Comte de; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques

Further Readings

Ferguson, A. (1995). *An essay of the history of civil society* (Fania Oz-Salszburger, Ed.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press. (Original work published 1767)

Gellner, E. (1996). *Conditions of liberty: Civil society and its rivals*. Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin Books.

Meek, R. L. (1976). *Social science and the ignoble savage*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Firth, Raymond

Raymond (later Sir Raymond) Firth was an important contributor to the British school of social anthropology in the early 20th century. His exemplary fieldwork in Polynesia, as well as later work in Malaya and London, provides useful ethnographic records that are supplemented by his more theoretical works.

Biography

Firth was born in south Auckland, New Zealand, in 1901. As a schoolboy, he became interested in the Maori, the indigenous inhabitants of New Zealand. Some of his childhood friends were Maori, but his interest also came from reading Frederick Maning's *Old New Zealand* (1863), an account of an Englishman's relationship with Maori in the early years of colonization. While still a schoolboy, Firth discovered the *Journal of the Polynesian Society* and became a regular reader and, later, a contributor. This laid the basis for his interest in the Polynesian peoples of the Pacific and their languages and customs.

For his undergraduate degree at Auckland University College, Firth studied economics. His master's thesis was based on the economics of the local kauri gum industry. Finding no statistics on earnings in the industry, he went to the north of

New Zealand, where the industry was based, and interviewed kauri gum miners, many of whom were Maori, about their lives, working conditions, and earnings. This was an unusual approach in economics at the time, but it was also, in effect, his first fieldwork and foreshadowed his later theoretical stance about the importance of multiple individual actions contributing to social organization. In 1924, he went to the London School of Economics (LSE) to work toward a doctorate on the economics of the frozen meat industry in New Zealand. However, he came under the influence of the distinguished anthropologist Bronisław Malinowski, which changed the direction of his work. His doctoral thesis, *Primitive Economics of the New Zealand Maori*, was published in 1929. This thesis was largely historical, based on the writings of earlier anthropologists such as Elsdon Best and Peter Buck. In this thesis, his sympathy for the Maori was evident: He showed that he was aware of the effect of colonization on the Maori and the immorality of the expropriation of their land. He also showed how the loss of their forest and land had limited their economic choices.

Firth was raised as a Methodist but later experienced a crisis of faith and became a humanist. He defined his humanistic rationalism as recognizing that human society exists and that people must take account of those by whom they live, which leads to a morality in which the supernatural is not required. After his anthropological fieldwork in Tikopia, a Polynesian outlier in the Solomon Islands, he wrote that he regretted the proselytization of the Tikopians by Christian missionaries, asking what justification there could be in breaking down the customs of a people simply because their gods differed from those of the missionaries.

These elements—the formal training in economics, a recognition of the interrelationship between individual and collective knowledge, and humanistic rationalism—provided a basis for his development as an anthropologist.

Intellectual Journeys and Fieldwork

Anthropology in Britain in the first few decades of the 20th century was moving away from the evolutionist and diffusionist approaches of earlier decades. Under Malinowski, the functionalist perspective became the dominant paradigm, and its emphases included extensive fieldwork. During the 1920s and 1930s, many distinguished anthropologists were trained by Malinowski at LSE, Firth among them. This period could be seen as one that defined modern *British* anthropology, especially as distinct from Boasian anthropology in the United States.

Firth's fieldwork in Tikopia took place in 1928–1929. Malinowski hoped that Firth would write a full and straightforward account of Tikopian culture: It was important to Malinowski that his student present the theoretical point of view, which, by then, was being labeled *functional*. Essentially, this meant that customs should be presented as having a purpose; they are the means by which people fulfill their needs. Firth's grasp of the Tikopian language (cognate with Maori) was very good, and he collected rich and detailed descriptions of Tikopian life. His first book about the island, *We, the Tikopia* (1936), can be seen as Malinowskian in perspective, concentrating on family life through an economic functionalist lens. The word *function* occurs often in this ethnography, as in statements such as "In Tikopia the function of each of these elements [of marriage exchanges] can be clearly seen" (572–573). Firth believed that it was important for the anthropologist to throw light on the natives' fundamental beliefs behind their economic behavior. Here, Firth was looking at the "calculating man," to use Gregory Bateson's phrase. His interest, based on the pre-Keynsian economics he had studied, was on individual choice making, a perspective Malinowski would have contested, holding that individuals were mainly of interest as members of society, not as individuals per se.

By the late 1930s, Firth and others of his generation explicitly recognized the weaknesses of the purely functional approach, asking if everything is related to everything else, where then does description stop? Members of this group were reworking their theoretical perspectives in Britain, with some, though not Firth, later flirting with the French structuralism of Lévi-Strauss. Their marked divergence from American cultural anthropology had become evident. The American anthropologist G. P. Murdock criticized the British school of anthropology for its concentration on kinship and British colonial dependencies. He suggested that British anthropologists were not interested in the theoretical writings of their colleagues elsewhere, or in history, culture change, or psychology. In fact, he suggested that they had become old-fashioned sociologists. Firth

accepted Murdock's critique but said that the British had limited resources and therefore were concentrating on a limited set of issues with some success. In effect, the debate, and the divergence, was between British social anthropology and American cultural anthropology and its four-field approach.

Firth and other anthropologists, many of them not British although trained in England, were developing alternative paradigms to that of their teacher, Malinowski. Although the Malinowskian emphasis on participant observation remained a hallmark of British anthropology, Firth had been moving away from the purely functionalist approach for some time. He believed that to concentrate on structure alone obscured the role of the individual, that individual divergences and social change were more interesting than narrow descriptions of collective behavior and culture. His humanism, his warm understanding of the people of Tikopia, and his obvious affection for some of them, made his ethnography unusual at a time when much of British anthropology aspired to a generalized scientific detachment. It was said of Firth that he made his exotic informants both human and comprehensible and that 5 centuries of European colonial condescension were expunged in Firth's insistence on Polynesian rationality.

The importance Firth placed on individuals and social change was the reason for his interest in social organization rather than social structure. In his 1954 article "Social Organization and Social Change," he defined the two fields. He saw social structure as the major patterns of existing social relations that constrained the possibilities of future interactions. Social organization, by contrast, was the constant process of responses to fresh situations by adopting appropriate strategies. The study of social organization reveals how people make decisions or accept the responsibility expected of them by virtue of their position in the social system. This emphasis on the patterns *of* observable human behavior rather than the underlying patterns *for* behavior was paradigmatically the difference between British social anthropology and American cultural anthropology and the basis of Murdock's charge of old-fashioned sociology.

Firth's fieldwork in Tikopia in 1928–1929 and his subsequent visits in 1952 and 1966 produced a corpus of work that is probably unrivaled as an ethnographic record of a society. In addition to *We, the Tikopia*, his major works about the island include discussions of spiritual beliefs and practices in *The Work of the Gods in Tikopia* (1940/1967), *Tikopia Ritual and Belief* (1967), and *Rank and Religion in Tikopia* (1970); change in *Social Change in Tikopia* (1959); language in *Taranga fakatikopia ma Taranga Fakainglisi* (Tikopia-English Dictionary, 1985); and songs and stories in *History and Traditions of Tikopia* (1961) and *Tikopia Songs* (1991). He also wrote numerous articles about material culture, kinship, dreams, and authority structures as well as economic analyses of everyday life (notably in the monograph *Primitive Polynesian Economy*). His book *Human Types* (1938), in which he sets out the main principles of social anthropology, can perhaps be seen as the first textbook on anthropology.

Firth and the Wider Discipline of Anthropology

After his first period of fieldwork in Tikopia, Firth became acting professor at Sydney University 1930–1932, after which he returned to LSE where he became a lecturer (1932–1935), a reader in 1935, and a professor in 1944, inheriting Malinowski's position. He remained there with brief interruptions until his retirement in 1968. Social anthropology was not recognized as a separate discipline in the earlier part of the 20th century, and Firth worked to change this perception as one of the founding members of the Association of Social Anthropologists, inaugurated in 1946. He was also associated with a distinguished group of anthropologists who trained at LSE in the years before and after World War II: Edward Evans-Pritchard, Meyer Fortes, Edmund Leach, Audrey Richards, and Jomo Kenyatta. Under Firth's aegis, important research projects were carried out in East Africa, South America, Oceania, southern Europe, Malaysia, and Japan. He also trained people from related disciplines, for example, Ernest Gellner and Percy Cohen.

Firth's own field research had continued in 1939 and 1940 when he and his wife, Rosemary, also an anthropologist, worked in what was then Malaya on the economy of a fishing village. Firth said he chose this topic because he wanted to do some quantitative work on systematic trading in the fishing industry. This resulted in his book *Malay Fishermen: Their Peasant Economy* (1946). During the war years, Firth served with the Naval Intelligence Division at the Admiralty, writing handbooks about the Pacific Islands, until 1944. In the following year, he was

involved in setting up the Colonial Social Science Research Council and in the establishment of the Australian National University. Firth later went on to show the value of the anthropological approach in studying the kinship patterns of both the working and middle classes in London.

By the 1970s, there was a crisis in anthropology, to use Adam Kuper's term—feminist and Marxist critiques and the postcolonial world required a new anthropology. Firth by this time had retired, but he continued to write and contributed to seminars in many parts of the world. Students recalled that Firth rejected and continued to eschew sloppily constructed arguments, thoughtless use of terms and catch phrases, analogical thinking, and speculative generalizations that had no evidential underpinning. The core of his practice and belief as an anthropologist—that the variation in individual knowledge is central to both social organization and social change—remained undiminished to the end, and his pragmatic humanism diffused everything he did.

Firth's influence on British social anthropology has been immense both through his writings and in the effect he had on his many students. His contributions were recognized in a knighthood bestowed in 1973 and in his appointment as a Companion of the New Zealand Order of Merit in 2001. In 2002, the British Academy announced that it was awarding him the first Leverhulme medal to be given to scholars of exceptional distinction, in recognition of his outstanding and internationally acknowledged contributions to 20th-century anthropology. Firth died in 2002, a month before his 101st birthday.

Judith Macdonald

See also Barth, Fredrik; Bateson, Gregory; Biography/Life Writing; Bohannan, Paul; London School of Economics; Mair, Lucy; Malinowski, Bronisław; Murdock, George Peter; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Firth, R. (1936). *We, the Tikopia*. London, UK: Allen & Unwin.

———. (1954). Social organisation and social change. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 84*(1–2), 1–20.

Kuper, A. (1973). *Anthropologists and anthropology: The British school 1922–1972*. London, UK: Penguin Books.

Fischer, Michael

Michael M. J. Fischer (1946–) is the coauthor of *Anthropology as Cultural Critique* and a contributor to *Writing Culture*, seminal works that set a new path for the discipline of anthropology in the mid-1980s. In the postcolonial condition where anthropological authority is challenged as the gaze of the empire, these works set out to bring the work of anthropology back home as cultural critique. Anthropological authority thus becomes an emergent form of knowledge that depends on dialogical formation processes composed of multiple voices and experiences.

Fischer first studied geography at Johns Hopkins University. He continued his studies in social anthropology at the London School of Economics and earned a PhD in cultural anthropology from the University of Chicago. His early work focused on social change and religion, first in Jamaica and then in Iran (*Zoroastrian Iran Between Myth and Praxis*, 1973). Fischer's ethnographic studies of Zoroastrians, Jews, and Baha'is in the city of Yazd in Iran (and in western India), in the context of the developmental discourses of the time, hinted a decade early at the Iranian revolution of 1979. He also conducted comparative work on religious communities (Muslims, Baha'is, Zoroastrians, and Jews) as well as merchant communities in both Iran and India (Jains and Parsis). Fischer first taught at Harvard and then at Rice University, where he became an active member of an intellectual circle whose work had a significant impact on the field of anthropology in the 1980s. In the 1990s, he began teaching at Massachusetts Institute of Technology, with a new research focus on science, technology, and medicine.

Two discursive formations emerged out of anthropology after World War II. First, there were the discourses of development. In anthropology, these generated debates about language and culture in the context of emerging "new nations." Second, there were comparative fieldwork practices that were set up by universities and foundations to understand and measure the ways in which development models were received by and affected the lives of people. In the 1960s and 1970s, Fischer was part of a larger group of American anthropologists who began a new era of empirical studies in linguistics,

comparative religions, folklore, and urban anthropology. There were two countries in the Middle East that attracted in-depth work in this period, Iran and Morocco. Fischer and several colleagues from the University of Chicago focused on Iran. This undertaking was especially significant because their anthropological method provided a grounded understanding of language and culture that countered the existing body of work done by Orientalists.

Studies of Social Transformation in Pre- and Postrevolutionary Iran

Fischer, along with his cohort, was engaged in comparative studies of cultural and economic transformations in Iran in the face of the development projects of the 1960s and 1970s. These projects often involved displacements of local cultural ways of life. For example, the construction of dams displaced villagers along their basins, and the application of agribusiness models to older agrarian communities displaced impoverished farmers, stimulating migration to the rapidly growing urban areas. The growing numbers of displaced populations as a result of these large development projects fueled the social and economic discontent that led to the revolution of 1979. Fischer interprets the revolution in *Iran: From Religious Dispute to Revolution* by pursuing a central question of the time: the relationship between the economic and the cultural causes of the revolution.

The Iranian revolution caught most scholars by surprise. While scholars were looking for social and structural changes to usher Iran from a patrimonial agrarian country into a developing modern one, an emergent social movement reframed the political stage. Ayatollah Ruholla Khomeini led religious leaders to gain power in this social movement. Islam no longer remained at the margins of the society. Rather, it became central to politics, culture, knowledge production, and civic life. Fischer's work traced these changes in urban politics.

Fischer's next book on Iran shifts from a focus on how religion was used to mobilize and achieve the revolution to the construction of a new religious identity in the midst of various possible religious interpretations. Coauthored with Mehdi Abedi, *Debating Muslims: Cultural Dialogues in Postmodernity and Tradition* followed the work that Fischer started in small-town Iran to major cosmopolitan areas in the United States. Published 2 decades after the revolution of 1979, this work provides detailed autobiographical accounts of actors in the revolution and the formation of their religious discourses, contextualizing them in a multisited global context.

There are perhaps three important arenas of cultural analysis for Fischer in his post–*Anthropology as Cultural Critique* work: (1) the working of posttraumatic society, (2) the role of media subjectivities, and (3) anthropological understandings of science, technology, and medicine. These arenas of analysis are vital for understanding contemporary culture in a global context.

In the early 1990s, with the fall of the Soviet bloc, new and emerging nations had to cope with the loss of a "socialist" identity and remake new forms of national identities. By then, Iranian society had been going through a similar posttraumatic experience for a decade. For Fischer, the work of posttraumatic society was hinted at in Iranian films and other forms of popular culture since the 1980s. For example, he pointed at the ways in which Iranian writers progressively adopted Western-style modern novels in the 20th century and how this genre in turn was adopted by filmmakers in both the pre- and the postrevolution era. The works of posttraumatic society depend on hybrid forms of culture making.

Fischer's work on Iranian cinema is both about visual culture and about media/mediation, in that he explores how Iranian oral traditions and modern genres borrowed from the West are reframed in new technological possibilities. *Mute Dreams, Blind Owls, and Dispersed Knowledges: Persian Poesis in the Transnational Circuitry* was published in 2004, but the work had begun more than 20 years earlier. Fischer asserts that the Islamic world may be a key place where, in the context of a globalized Euro-American cultural onslaught, the work of critical commentary is still possible. He suggests that Iranian films have been produced through the creative reckoning of cultural memory, contemporary politics, and global processes and have offered spaces for alternative commentary.

If the pathbreaking work of *Anthropology as Cultural Critique* in the 1980s tried to find a place for anthropology in the postcolonial world, in the 2000s, Fischer redefines this position in relation to biotechnologies, information technologies, and environmental concerns. These important

instances of technoscience will define the future of life and are therefore posing domains of new ethical challenges to the contemporary condition, such as emergent biological sciences' definition of what constitutes a human. He calls these challenges *ethical plateaus*. The anthropological voice, he argues, is best suited to engage in empirical work to elucidate new understandings of such ethical plateaus and to facilitate public engagement in these emergent forms of life.

The Complexity of the Social and the Redefinition of Culture

The anthropological voice, in this moment of Fischer's career, is performed in a "third space" where differences are mediated and translated. The anthropological voice makes these differences and mediations or translations visible. In a multicultural world, they appear both as specific experiences and as multiple epistemologies generating alternative knowledge systems. The critique of modernity as a metanarrative of the contemporary, in *Anthropology as Cultural Critique*, was precisely about the details, conflicts, and alternative perspectives that the metanarrative leaves out. Fischer, in *Emergent Forms of Life and Anthropological Voice*, argues that the ethnographic and anthropological voice in the 21st century is about the complexity of the social. Social classes, gender differences, and the inequity in the formation of capital do not disappear, but they interact in the multilayered space of the contemporary in much more complex ways than can be represented by traditional ethnography. Therefore, the work of the anthropological voice is not a once-for-all description but an ongoing resource and method for social repair and for the growing of flexible and robust institutions for the changing times. Because there are multiple models originating in many disciplines, such as law and the sciences, that have claims over understanding and defining life, complexities and multiple claims over the definition of the good life (*bios* and *polis*) have serious consequences for social and political actions. It has become much harder to ground these understandings for the ground has become more fleeting. This is where Fischer calls for an ethics that unfolds in third spaces beyond older simple dichotomies such as individual and society or medical ethics and biopolitics.

Fischer gives a more complex meaning of culture in his recent book, *Anthropological Futures*. He suggests that emerging scientific knowledge on nature, culture, and body is shifting the anthropological understanding of culture. Emerging forms of knowledge such as molecular biology, environmental studies, and computer science define the meaning of culture in a way that engenders anthropological understanding. The definition of culture in anthropology has gone through several historical changes in meanings. Culture was first a complex interrelated whole, next it was something that was mediated through power and symbols, and then it was conceived as phenomena whose symbols can be shifted by alternative positions of the participant or observer. Symbols that were once maintained through negotiated acts are currently being reworked through emergent technosicences, media, and biotechnical relations, once again redefining culture. Fischer anticipates that this shifting terrain will continue and that it will frame the work of anthropology to come, or anthropological futures.

Mazyar Lotfalian

See also Marcus, George; Postmodernism

Further Readings

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. E. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Fischer, M. M. J. (1973). *Zoroastrian Iran from myth to praxis.* Doctoral dissertation, University of Chicago, Illinois.

———. (1974). Value assertion and stratification: Religion and marriage in rural Jamaica. *Caribbean Studies, 14*(1–2).

———. (1980). *Iran: From religious dispute to revolution.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (2003). *Emergent forms of life and the anthropological voice.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

———. (2004). *Mute dreams, blind owls, and dispersed knowledges: Persian poesis in the transnational circuitry.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

———. (2009). *Anthropological futures.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Fischer, M. M. J., & Abedi, M. (1990). *Debating Muslims: Cultural dialogues in postmodernity and tradition.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Good, B. J., Fischer, M. M. J., Willen, S., & DelVecchio Good, M.-J. (Eds.). (2010). *A reader in medical anthropology: Theoretical trajectories and emergent realities*. Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.

Marcus, G. E., & Fischer, M. M. J. (1986). *Anthropology as cultural critique: An experimental moment in the human sciences*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Formalism/Substantivism

During the 1960s, the formalist/substantivist debate, often referred to as the "Great Debate," shaped the subdiscipline of economic anthropology. The principal contributors to the debate were categorized by their willingness to accept either Karl Polanyi's substantive definition of economics or, alternatively, the neoclassical choice-theoretical model. By the close of the 1960s and the beginning of the 1970s, the formalist/substantivist debate passed unresolved.

The anthropologist Keith Hart has argued that the issue for anthropology is to discover the principles that might animate economic organization at every level. Practitioners of Hart's perspective are often classified as economic anthropologists.

Throughout its history, the study of economic anthropology has maintained a process of continuous evolution. During its infancy, economic anthropologists tended to perceive culture as the primary lens from which the choices and actions of human beings could be understood. Anthropologists such as Bronisław Malinowksi often concluded that much of human activity, including economic activity, is a social phenomenon. The introduction of a formal, neoclassical economic theory to the study of economic anthropology caused a theoretical metamorphosis. An early example of an anthropologist applying traditional neoclassical economic-theoretical tools to anthropological analysis is that of Raymond Firth. As the use of formal economic techniques infiltrated anthropological studies, the theoretical understandings of human behavior changed. The differences between those anthropologists who used anthropological techniques synonymous with inductive analysis and those anthropologists and economists who used more formal deductive economic techniques caused a rift. The epistemological conflict elicited the formation of two unique theoretical camps, the formalists and the substantivists.

Karl Polanyi, Conrad Arensberg, and Harry Pearson, incorporating many of Malinowski's ideas, generated the initial thrust of the substantivist analysis. Polanyi, Arensberg, and Pearson argued that self-regulating markets are a relatively recent phenomenon, therefore it is not plausible to apply the same techniques used in the study of capitalist economies to the study of economic behavior in noncapitalist societies. From the substantivist perspective, directing the tools used in describing capitalism toward the description of noncapitalist social relationships was akin to using the concepts embedded in Christianity to study the religions of indigenous peoples.

The basis for the substantive argument originated in the substantive definition of economics as proposed by Polanyi. From Polanyi's perspective, the meaning of economics is derived from the human being's dependence for his living on nature and other human beings. Substantivists viewed their definition as providing a universally applicable point of departure. All societies must in some way provide for their material well-being. At the same time, different societies will employ different techniques for fulfilling material well-being. Therefore, every economic system must also be understood within its own specific terms. From the substantivist perspective, the formal neoclassical definition of economics was too narrow because it refers only to a definite situation of choice in which economic agents always confront scarcity. As such, the tools of formal economics were specifically oriented toward the study of capitalism and were unsuitable for analyzing noncapitalist economies.

Chronologically, joining Polanyi, Arensberg, and Pearson as main contributors to the substantivist argument were Marshall Sahlins and George Dalton. Providing a more anthropologically advanced analysis, Sahlins built on Polanyi's depictions of reciprocity, redistribution, and market exchange. Sahlins argues that exchange ultimately depends on the type of social relations that exist between trading partners and that those social relations are strongly influenced by the distance between the actors: The greater the distance between economic agents, the more impersonal and self-serving the exchange relationship will be. Consistent with the substantive theme, Sahlins argued that the human-economic interaction, as well as the meaning of the term *economic*, may be different depending on social, cultural, and institutional structures.

George Dalton focused on the limits of formalism. He maintained that there are two definitions of the term *economic*, formal and substantive, and he focused on the limits of formalism. Dalton posits that the only way the formal definition of economics may be applicable within a society is after the institutional conditions that incentivize maximization and minimization have been established.

The formalists were unconvinced. For the formalists, the substantive definition unnecessarily submerges the individual beneath social structures. As a result, the central proponents of the formalist argument, Robbins Burling, Edward LeClair Jr., Scott Cook, and Frank Cancian, advocate the use of the neoclassical choice-theoretical model as a means of elevating the role of the individual in anthropological theory, a view previously minimized in anthropology. The application of neoclassical theory alters the starting point of analysis within anthropology. By assuming the universality of maximization, neoclassical economic theory makes the (isolated) individual its primary catalyst of action.

As is typical of a heated controversy, the debate triggered a large influx of contributions into a field that had previously languished in relative obscurity. Despite this energy, the formalist-substantivist debate became the equivalent of a shooting star. In the 1970s, the debate quickly faded without resolution as both sides remained uncompromising and unable to reach a consensus on methodology. In the immediate aftermath, Marxists came to dominate the field of economic anthropology, and several prominent formalists and substantivists began to identify with Marxist positions. Over the longer term, given the unresolved nature of the debate, points of disagreement that were evident during the original debate occasionally reignite.

Justin A. Elardo

See also Economic Anthropology; Firth, Raymond; Malinowski, Bronisław; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Polanyi, Karl; Rational Choice Theory; Sahlins, Marshall

Further Readings

Dale, G. (2010). *Karl Polanyi.* Cambridge, UK: Polity.

Hann, C., & Hart, K. (2011). *Economic anthropology: History, ethnography, critique.* Cambridge, UK: Polity.

Hart, K. (2000). Comment on Pearson's "homo economicus goes native." *History of Political Economy, 20,* 1017–1025.

Isaac, B. L. (1993). Retrospective on the formalist-substantivist debate. In B. L. Isaac (Ed.), *Research in economic anthropology* (pp. 213–233). Greenwich, CT: JAI Press.

Polanyi, K. (1968). The economy as an instituted process. In E. E. LeClair Jr. & H. K. Schneider (Eds.), *Economic anthropology: Readings in theory and analysis* (pp. 122–143). New York, NY: Holt, Rinehart & Winston.

Wilk, R. R. (1996). *Economies and cultures: Foundations of economic anthropology.* Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Fortes, Meyer

Meyer Fortes (1906–1983) was one of the pioneering generation of scholars who established the discipline of social anthropology in Great Britain. Fortes received his PhD degree in psychology from University College, London, in 1930. He then worked at the Emanuel Miller Child Guidance Clinic, sponsored by the Jewish Health Organization, in London's East End. From 1931, he attended the seminar organized by Bronisław Malinowski at the London School of Economics; he also counted among his teachers Charles Seligman, Raymond Firth, and, most important, A. R. Radcliffe-Brown. His close friendship with E. E. Evans Pritchard, established at this time, was extremely important to both men. Fortes's work among the agricultural Tallensi, in what is now northern Ghana (between 1934 and 1937), developed aspects of Evans-Pritchard's earlier work with the pastoral Nuer of the Sudan. After his return to London in 1937, he lectured part-time at the London School of Economics and became a reader in anthropology at Oxford in 1946. From 1950 to 1973, he was William Wyse Professor of Social Anthropology at Cambridge University and a fellow of Kings College Cambridge. Fortes became a fellow of the British Academy in 1967 and an honorary foreign member of the American Academy of Science; he received honorary degrees from Chicago, Belfast, London School of Economics, and Kings College Cambridge. He died in 1983.

Born in 1906 in rural South Africa, Fortes grew up speaking Yiddish, English, and Afrikaans and no doubt was familiar with the African language

spoken by his neighbors. He studied psychology and English at Cape Town University; he arrived in London at the age of 20, supported by a scholarship, and registered for a PhD degree in psychology. He hoped his research would lead to the creation of an intelligence test, free of cultural influences. Though his work was eventually used to produce the Raven Matrices IQ test, Fortes became convinced that a culture-free test could not be constructed. His psychological research was grounded in statistical data, and simple statistics are crucially important in some of his later kinship studies. However, in most of his anthropological research, the qualitative results of intensive fieldwork predominate.

Fortes always emphasized the paramount importance of knowing and using the local language in research. His field notes are a superb blend of careful observation, precise description, records of conversation, and interaction with the people of the communities in which he lived and worked. Many of his notes are in the Tallensi language. Fortes also recorded his own emotional reaction to the events he witnessed and participated in.

Fortes is probably best known for his study of kinship systems and the family. However, his concern with kinship in the context of diverse patterns of political and religious organization, as well as his interest in the psychological aspects of explicitly social behavior, give his work a much wider relevance. At the level of psychological data, his work contrasts with the orientation of research in the United States. While American anthropologists usually presented the relationship between culture and psychology using the individual life cycle as a framework, Fortes was concerned with understanding behavior and emotion without an exclusive focus on the individual. His analysis of the individual's role in kinship, politics, religious belief, and the world of economics examined norms of behavior and customary practice as derived from social structure and explored the interdependency of social structure, behavior, and emotion.

The study of kinship among the Tallensi people provided the basic evidence Fortes used in many different contexts and led to a theory of a particular form of kinship structure: the *unilineal descent group*. Fortes found groups of Tallensi households linked to one another through kinship ties traced among men who were patrilineal descendants of common ancestors. Within the households, constituent families were similarly related so that both the widest and the smallest social groupings depended on the recognition of patrilineal kinship ties. It also emerged that no overarching political or judicial system existed to regulate the relationships among households or wider neighborhoods. Fortes drew a distinction between kinship in the "domestic domain" and its function in the "politico-jural domain." All human societies, Fortes argued, have kinship systems that regulate marriage, procreation, child rearing, death, and the resulting processes of inheritance and the succession of generations. In the Tallensi case, where no centralizing polity existed, the patrilineal kinship system also provided a framework for peaceful coexistence and collaboration in a range of social, ritual, and economic activities.

Fortes's later fieldwork with the matrilineal Ashanti people of what was then The Gold Coast provided a major contrast to the patrilineal Tallensi. Unlike the Tallensi, the Ashanti had an elaborate political system involving kingship and royal courts. Fortes pursued the problems that emerged from the contrast of matrilineal and patrilineal descent systems but also developed the concepts that emerged originally from the Tallensi data.

Important among these was the treatment of the temporal aspect of kin group organization. The "developmental cycle" is mentioned in his Tallensi work, where he notes that a varying composition of household units occurs due to the changes through time as children mature, reproduce, and replace their parents. Among the matrilineal Ashanti, Fortes deals with these repetitive, cyclical processes of change, using statistical data on age, residence, and kinship connections for men and women. He constructs a model that shows how recognition of the unifying principal of matrilineal descent underlies the apparent diversity in Ashanti forms of residence.

Fortes's later work deals often with identity, selfhood, and religious belief. Contrasting Tallensi concepts of fate and ancestorhood are presented as parallel to the relationship of Oedipus to fate and of Job to God. The Tallensi concept of fate is similar to the notion of fate presented in Oedipus. Destiny is a predetermined series of events, essentially amoral and unaffected by the fated person's chosen behavior. By contrast, Tallensi ancestors are similar to the Judeo-Christian God and, depending on the choices made by individuals, may intervene to support moral behavior and authority.

Fortes was much concerned with the bearing of anthropological knowledge on race discrimination, which he considered to be as distinctive an invention of Western civilization as the atom bomb—disastrous for millions and based on absolutely no shred of anthropological evidence. He felt that anthropology had a duty to confront the assumptions on which racial discrimination is based.

Though he considered the study of simpler, (i.e., small, nonindustrialized, and, usually, nonliterate) societies to be ideal for the holistic methods of anthropology, he regarded the results of empirical field research as demonstrating that every human society, no matter where it is located or how peculiar it is, is a paradigm for all human society. Anthropologists, he argued, now know enough to know that they recognize themselves in every human society.

Susan Drucker-Brown

See also Alliance-Descent Debate; Bloch, Maurice; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Firth, Raymond; Goody, Jack; Leach, Edmond; London School of Economics; Maine, Henry James; Mair, Lucy; Malinowski, Bronisław; Oxford University; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Seligman, Charles Gabriel; Structural Functionalism

Further Readings

Fortes, M. (1949). *The web of kinship among the Tallensi*. London, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (1959). *Oedipus and Job in West African religion*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1969). *Kinship and the social order: The legacy of Lewis Henry Morgan*. Chicago, IL: Aldine.

———. (1970). *Time and social structure and other essays*. London, UK: Athlone Press.

Fortune, Reo

Reo Franklin Fortune (1903–1979) was a brilliant and iconoclastic ethnographer whose major works of the 1930s made a lasting contribution to Melanesian linguistics and anthropology.

Fortune grew up in the New Zealand countryside, the son of a farmer who had left the clergy. Despite financial hardship, Fortune managed to attend Victoria University College in Wellington. His outstanding academic performance and research on the psychology of dreaming earned him the opportunity to continue his studies at the University of Cambridge in 1926, and in 1927, he published his first book, *The Mind in Sleep*. Using his own dreams as data, and writing in dialogue with the psychoanalytic theories of Sigmund Freud and W. H. R. Rivers, Fortune proposed that dreams express ideas or feelings that the waking person has repressed or rejected, especially when the individual's personal commitments are at odds with those prevailing in society. The problems created for individuals in such situations, or when different expectations of society are in conflict, is a theme that recurs throughout Fortune's work.

Fortune is often recalled in relation to his first wife, the American anthropologist and icon Margaret Mead. Fortune met Mead on board the ship he took to study in England, and due in part to her influence, his attention soon turned from psychology to anthropology. In 1927–1928, he conducted fieldwork on Dobu and the surrounding Melanesian islands. The product of this field trip was *Sorcerers of Dobu* (1931), the classic ethnographic description of Dobuan culture for which he is probably best known. A selection from this work served as Fortune's PhD thesis at Columbia, where he had developed good relations with Franz Boas and Ruth Benedict and where he ultimately received his degree. Benedict adapted *Sorcerers* for presentation as one of three case studies in her book *Patterns of Culture* (1934), thereby popularizing (though in Fortune's eyes regrettably oversimplifying) the image of "paranoid" Dobuans as dour sorcerers living in suspicion even of their close kin.

Fortune and Mead married in 1928, and the couple immediately set off for the first of three field trips they undertook together over the next 5 years: Manus, Omaha, and the Sepik district of New Guinea. Fortune wrote one book based on each of these field trips. Two were ethnographies, *Manus Religion* (1935) and *Omaha Secret Societies* (1932); the third, *Arapesh* (published in 1942 but compiled in the mid-1930s), was a masterful grammar of the Arapesh language complemented by a collection of glossed texts. In 1933, Mead separated from Fortune to pursue a relationship with the anthropologist Gregory Bateson, whom she and Fortune had met in the Sepik. Fortune spent the next year in London applying unsuccessfully for academic

positions; he then returned to New Guinea for an exceedingly difficult period of fieldwork among the warring Kamano people in the Eastern Highlands. There followed a series of short-term teaching positions in Canton, China; Toledo, Ohio; and Toronto, Canada. These were interspersed with further periods of frontier fieldwork, first in southwestern China and later in Burma. The harrowing violence, harsh conditions, and severe illnesses that Fortune endured during these field trips left him permanently scarred. Fortune's second marriage, to Eileen Pope, was a long and happy one, and he finally received a permanent lectureship at Cambridge in 1948. But by the end of the 1930s, Fortune's real scholarly production had ceased. The few minor publications of his later years are eccentric, convoluted, and ponderous.

It is thus his major works of the 1930s that constitute Fortune's lasting contribution to anthropology. Focusing on culturally defined social roles and the emotions they evoke at various stages of the life cycle, Fortune dramatized the characteristic predicaments created by contradictory features of the society he aimed to describe. In his analysis of Dobuan social organization, the central tension is that felt by the nuclear family in light of the cultural prominence of the property-owning matriline. A Dobuan man finds himself torn between his affection for his own children and his duty to favor his sister's children; similarly, once the period of mourning has passed, a widower is barred from entering his deceased wife's, and hence his children's, village, while his children are reciprocally barred from entering his village as it belongs to another matriline. The consequences of marriage in matrilineal kinship systems was also the subject of Fortune's 1933 article "A Note on Some Forms of Kinship Structure," which explored the asymmetrical implications of prescriptive marriage rules for kin groups of different types. The abstract method of modeling social structure that Fortune developed in this article was groundbreaking, prefiguring Claude Lévi-Strauss's *Elementary Structures of Kinship* (1969).

In part because his writings reflect the influence of A. R. Radcliffe-Brown and Bronisław Malinowski, Fortune is sometimes characterized as a functionalist in his theoretical orientation. To a limited extent, this is correct: He was interested in the way social customs play out in the working of a society. But Fortune was strongly averse to reductionism of any kind, and he occasionally rejected others' generalizations outright, most notably in the work of Malinowski and in efforts by Mead and Benedict to treat culture as "personality writ large." Fortune's inclination was to take a historically situated and particularistic view of each culture he studied. This approach, closely associated with Boas, was in decline by the 1930s, as other styles of anthropology came to be seen as more scientific. Paradoxically, the enduring value of Fortune's work derives in part from his particularistic commitment to understanding each culture on its own terms.

Fortune was an outstanding language learner, developing considerable skill in the local vernacular wherever his research took him. His ethnographic descriptions reflect this, giving prominent voice to local modes of speech and frequently presenting data in the form of texts. His approach to participant observation emphasized an empathetic identification with the people he was studying; this gives his ethnographic descriptions an intimate, emic quality, with his own perspective and basis for knowledge integrated into the finished account. In *Sorcerers*, for example, he describes gardening with an immediacy that derives from his own experience of making a garden (at a time when it was highly unusual for an ethnographer to grow his own food according to native custom). Fortune also experimented in his approach to ethnographic writing. In *Manus Religion*, which centers on the use by the living of the spirits of the deceased, his observations are organized in the form of a "diary of events," illustrating the religious system in action in the villagers' daily lives and his own experience.

The last substantial piece Fortune wrote was the article "Arapesh Warfare" (1939), which took issue with the way Mead represented Arapesh culture in her famous book *Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies* (1935). Based on direct native accounts, Fortune argued that Arapesh men were not gentle, cooperative, and "feminine," as Mead had described them, but before pacification had engaged in woman stealing and warfare. Many of Fortune's obscure later writings can be seen as attempting to discredit the psychologistic terms in which *Sex and Temperament* was couched. Fortune's exasperation with what he saw as an inappropriate "bending" of ethnography to theoretical ends goes some way toward explaining why the

insightful and hardworking ethnographer wrote so little in his later years.

Ira Bashkow and Lise M. Dobrin

See also Godelier, Maurice; Historical Particularism; Mead, Margaret; Structural Functionalism

Further Readings

Dobrin, L. M., & Bashkow, I. (2006). "Pigs for dance songs": Reo Fortune's empathetic ethnography of the Arapesh roads. In R. Darnell & F. Gleach (Eds.), *Histories of anthropology annual* (Vol. 2, pp. 123–154). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

———. (2010). "The truth in anthropology does not travel first class": Reo Fortune's fateful encounter with Margaret Mead. In R. Darnell & F. Gleach (Eds.), *Histories of anthropology annual* (Vol. 6, pp. 66–128). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Lohmann, R. I. (2009). Dreams of fortune: Reo Fortune's psychological theory of cultural ambivalence. *Pacific Studies, 32*(2–3), 273–298.

McLean, A. (1992). In the footprints of Reo Fortune. In T. E. Hays (Ed.), *Ethnographic presents: Pioneering anthropologists in the Papua New Guinea highlands* (pp. 37–67). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Foster, George M.

George McClelland Foster was one of the leading social cultural anthropologists of the second half of the 20th century and remains one of the most cited scholars of his generation. He was committed to the highest standards of ethnography and became a pioneer in long-term research in a single community. He spent more than half a century doing research in Tzintzuntzan, Mexico, where he gathered data that led to important contributions to the study of peasant societies; the role of pottery and technology in traditional societies; the relationship between economy, personality, and social structure; and changing ideas about health and illness. In addition to his fundamental contributions to anthropology theory, especially his well-known ideas about the "dyadic contract" and "limited good," Foster also was active as an applied anthropologist. He was invited to Latin America, Asia, and Africa on consulting assignments for the World Health Organization and other international agencies. Foster's career is a model of intellectual accomplishment blended with a strong sense of service to the academy, the profession, the Berkeley community, and the wider world.

Biographical Data

Born in Sioux Falls, South Dakota, on October 9, 1913, Foster died on May 18, 2006, at his home in the hills above the campus of the University of California, Berkeley. Foster arrived in Berkeley in mid-August 1935 to begin his graduate studies, received his PhD there in 1941, and taught there as a professor from 1953 until his retirement in 1979, when he was awarded the title of professor emeritus. His years at and beyond Berkeley are well documented in the autobiographical volume *An Anthropologist's Life in the Twentieth Century: Theory and Practice at UC Berkeley, the Smithsonian, in Mexico, and With the World Health Organization.* Assembled from an oral history conducted in 1998 and 1999 by Suzanne B. Reiss of the Regional Oral History Office of the Bancroft Library at University of California, Berkeley, this 413-page volume is remarkable for the candor, modesty, and detail with which Foster tells the story of his personal life and professional career.

Training in American Historical Anthropology

After an undergraduate career studying with Melville Herskovits at Northwestern University, Foster entered the University of California at Berkeley in the depths of the Depression in 1935. He took classes primarily from A. L. Kroeber, Robert Lowie, and Edward Gifford. After a summer trip in 1936, Foster already had become interested in Mexico and made plans to do his dissertation work there. Nonetheless, at Kroeber's suggestion, in the summer of 1937, he did his first fieldwork—among the Yuki Indians living in Round Valley in northern California. He and his wife (Mary LeCron Foster, whom he married in 1938) went to Mexico City in 1940, where they remained from January to May, before traveling to Veracruz, where, at the suggestion of Roberto Weitlaner, they studied the Sierra Popoluca from November to May 1941. The Fosters returned to Berkeley, where, during the summer of 1941, George wrote his dissertation on the Sierra Popoluca, published as an American Ethnological Society monograph in 1942.

Moving From the University to Government Service

In 1941, it was difficult for anyone to find academic work. After a 1-year stint at Syracuse University and the following academic year at University of California, Los Angeles, Foster was called to Washington, D.C. In the process, he went from being an ethnographer in the tradition of Kroeber, Lowie, and Gifford to becoming an analyst and interpreter of culture and behavior in contemporary societies, especially Mexico and Latin America.

This transformation did not occur intentionally but through serendipity. After being declared ineligible for the military draft (because of allergies), Foster was the first anthropologist hired by Julian Steward (whom Foster knew because both had been at Berkeley in the 1930s) to go to Latin America as a representative of the new Institute of Social Anthropology (ISA), created in 1942 within the Smithsonian Institution with special responsibilities for Latin America. Sent to Mexico City to train students at the Escuela Nacional de Antropología e Historia, in 1945 Foster took a group of students to the Tarascan region in the State of Michoacán. After a bumpy start, Foster, his assistant Gabriel Ospina, and several students embarked on their field project in the small town of Tzintzuntzan. At that time, in 1945–1946, Foster had no idea that his long-term ethnographic work would enhance Tzintzuntzan's fame or that Tzintzuntzan would provide him with the source of some of his best ideas.

Doing Field Research in Spain

In 1949–1950, Foster took a leave of absence from the ISA and, with funds from a Guggenheim Fellowship, went to Spain to carry out a detailed study of acculturation. This field research served as the basis of his well-known book *Culture and Conquest: America's Spanish Heritage*, published in 1960, in which he elaborated the important concepts of "conquest culture" and "cultural crystallization." In Spain, he also developed his long-term interest in tracing the impact of Hippocratic medical theories from the Old World to Latin America, which he elaborated in his 1994 book *Hippocrates' Latin American Legacy: Humoral Medicine in the New World*.

Returning to Washington: A New Focus on Public Health

When Foster returned to Washington, he realized that congressional funding for the ISA was no longer a national priority. In response, he refocused the research being done in Mexico, Guatemala, Colombia, Peru, and Brazil from traditional ethnology to the study of health systems. In 1951, Foster assembled a 104-page mimeographed report titled "A Cross-Cultural Anthropological Analysis of a Technical Aid Program." Subsequently, in June 1952, Foster presented the ISA research results. In his autobiographical memoir, he recalled the occasion as one of the great days of his life. In reconfiguring the ISA, Foster transformed his own vision of the world. Always the ethnographer, he saw how bureaucracies had their own cultures and, what later he would call, their own "implicit premises."

Moving to Berkeley

Foster returned to Berkeley in 1953 as a visiting lecturer, hoping to land a permanent job—designed to be split one third and two thirds between public health and anthropology, respectively—but the arrangement never came to fruition. Fortunately, it happened that Gifford retired soon after Foster's arrival and there was a need for a new director of the Museum of Anthropology. As a result, Foster was appointed to Gifford's position. After a 3-year stint as acting director at the museum, Foster moved into the Department of Anthropology on a full-time tenured appointment in 1955.

Returning to Tzintzuntzan, Mexico

With a large grant from the National Science Foundation, in 1958, Foster returned to Tzintzuntzan, where he initiated an innovative long-term study of sociocultural change, economics, personality, and health. This research resulted in many important contributions to the understanding of peasant life, including his oft cited and controversial works on "the Image of Limited Good," "the dyadic contract," and "hot-cold" theories of illness. Foster's goal was to develop models to explain how villagers' traditional worldviews (emphasizing balance, harmony, and reciprocity) were being transformed as the national and international political-economic system increasingly influenced local culture.

Building Medical Anthropology

Apart from restarting his field research in Tzintzuntzan, Foster also took advantage of the opportunity to develop a major grant with the NIGMS (National Institute for General Medical Sciences). Over a period of 15 years, from 1965 to 1979, the grant brought in some $3,000,000 to support about 100 students in the Berkeley doctoral program. Eager to institutionalize training in medical anthropology, Foster established and directed the joint PhD University of California, Berkeley/University of California, San Francisco, program from 1972 until his retirement in 1979. In 1978, Foster coauthored (with Barbara Gallatin Anderson) *Medical Anthropology*, the first textbook in the field.

Applying Anthropology

Although Foster said that he was trained by Kroeber and Lowie to "despise" applied anthropology, Foster's experience in the ISA and with other government assignments led him to recognize the importance of understanding how traditional cultures respond to technological change. Between 1951 and 1983, Foster accepted 36 international consulting assignments related to public health and community health. Through his travels to Latin America, Africa, Asia, and Europe, Foster came to appreciate the importance of the "interaction setting" between "innovating organizations" and "target groups" in determining the success or failure of development projects. His consulting experiences informed his most successful (more than 100,000 copies sold) textbook, *Traditional Cultures and the Impact of Technological Change* (1962; reissued as *Traditional Societies and Technological Change*, 1973), and *Applied Anthropology* (1969), the first textbook in the field.

Summing Up a Career

On June 16, 1979, Foster was presented with a Festschrift volume titled *From Tzintzuntzan to the "Image of Limited Good": Essays in Honor of George M. Foster*, which contained congratulatory letters from numerous colleagues and former students, a dozen articles written by former students, and a comprehensive bibliography of Foster's publications from 1939 to mid-1979.The most important piece in the *Festschrift* has proven to be an essay by Eugene Hammel and Laura Nader, titled "Will the Real George Foster Please Stand Up? A Brief Intellectual History." In their appreciation of Foster's work, they argued that Foster's career is a challenge to anthropologists who believe that specialization is incompatible with breadth, that scientific and applied work cannot be linked, and that long-term fieldwork in the same community and region tends to narrow our comparative vision.

Foster's contributions to anthropological theory and practice still challenge us. In more than 300 publications, he wrote about acculturation, long-term fieldwork, peasant economies, pottery making, public health, social structure, symbolic systems, technological change, theories of illness and wellness, and worldview. The quantity, quality, and long-term value of his scholarly work was extraordinary; virtually all of his major publications have been reprinted and/or translated.

During his long career, Foster's accomplishments were recognized with many honors and awards. He was elected to the National Academy of Sciences and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, served as President of the American Anthropological Association during the Vietnam years of 1969–1970, and was awarded the Association's Distinguished Service Award (1980). He received the Malinowski Award from the Society for Applied Anthropology in 1982 and an honorary Doctor of Humane Letters degree from Southern Methodist University in 1990. In 1997, the Berkeley Anthropology Library was renamed in honor of the Fosters. Finally, in 2005, Foster was awarded the Society for Medical Anthropology's first Lifetime Achievement Award (renamed in his honor in 2006).

Robert V. Kemper

See also Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lowie, Robert; Nader, Laura; Steward, Julian; University of California, Berkeley

Further Readings

Foster, G. M. (1942). *A primitive Mexican economy* (Monographs of the American Ethnological Society, V). New York, NY: J. J. Agustin.

———. (1948). *Empire's children: The people of Tzintzuntzan* (Institute of Social Anthropology Publication, No. 6). Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution.

———. (1960). *Culture and conquest: America's Spanish heritage* (Viking Fund Publications in Anthropology, No. 27). New York, NY: Wenner-Gren Foundation for Anthropological Research.
———. (1962). *Traditional cultures, and the impact of technological change.* New York, NY: Harper.
———. (1967). *Tzintzuntzan: Mexican peasants in a changing world.* Boston, MA: Little, Brown.
———. (1969). *Applied anthropology.* Boston, MA: Little, Brown.
———. (1973). *Traditional societies and technological change.* New York, NY: Harper & Row.
———. (1994). *Hippocrates' Latin American legacy: Humoral medicine in the new world.* Langhorne, PA.: Gordon & Breach Science.
———. (2000). *An anthropologist's life in the twentieth century: Theory and practice at UC Berkeley, the Smithsonian, in Mexico, and with the World Health Organization* (An oral history conducted in 1998 and 1999 by Suzanne B. Riess). Berkeley, CA: University of California, Regional Oral History Office, Bancroft Library. Retrieved from http://content.cdlib.org/xtf/view?docId=kt7s2005ng&brand=calisphere
Foster, G. M., & Anderson, B. G. (1978). *Medical anthropology.* New York, NY: Wiley.
Foster, G. M., & Kemper, R. V. (Eds.). (1974). *Anthropologists in cities.* Boston, MA: Little, Brown.
Foster, G. M., Scudder, T., Colson, E., & Kemper, R. V. (1979). *Long-term field research in social anthropology.* New York, NY: Academic Press.
Kemper, R. V., & Brandes, S. (2007). George McClelland Foster Jr. (1913–2006). *American Anthropologist, 109,* 427–433.

Foucault, Michel

Paul-Michel Foucault (1926–1984), French philosopher and historian, was one of the most original and dynamic thinkers of the post–World War II period. He established powerful approaches to the analysis of discourse and opened up paths of critical historical inquiry into the politics and ethics of truth.

Biography and Major Works

Born into a medical family in Poitiers, Foucault's upbringing was highly cultured and bourgeois. Sent from the provinces to Paris in his late teens, he began his intellectual preparations for France's most prestigious institution of tertiary education, the École Normale Supérieure (ENS). At the ENS, he shone scholastically; however, attempts at suicide clearly indicated that he was also struggling with existential problems. Foucault's emerging capacity to analyze the experiences that concerned him, through historical research conducted in archives, was to become characteristic of his work. He graduated from the ENS in 1952 in both philosophy and psychology.

Between graduating and defending his doctoral dissertation at ENS in 1961, he taught at the University of Lille and spent several years in cultural diplomatic positions in Uppsala, Warsaw, and Hamburg. He defended his dissertation, *Folie et déraison: Histoire de la folie à l'âge classique* (*Madness and Unreason: A History of Madness in the Classical Age*), in 1961. According to the unsurpassed biography by Didier Eribon, his passage into the history of madness began in the course of a sleepless night at the *Maison de France* in Uppsala, an institutional setting where he had access to a veritable trove of archival material, offering him a historical substrate for his philosophical vigor. About the thesis, an examiner's report noted several of the elements that would become signatures of Foucault's studied manner of work: the interplay of extensive and painstaking archival documentation and works of doctrine, ignited by the spark of a philosophical problem. The examiner, Georges Canguilhem, an important historian and philosopher of biology, would become a key intellectual interlocutor for the young Foucault. The thesis was not guided by the desire for a reconstituted history of an idea; rather, it was a historical analysis and philosophically oriented synthesis of the concrete practices of "reason," which determined "madness" as a specific object of thought and intervention in what Foucault would call the Classical Age—the period extending from the end of the 16th century to the beginning of the 19th century.

During his tenure at the University of Claremont-Ferrond (1960–1966), he produced three major works: (1) *Naissance de la clinique: Une archéologie du regard medical* (*Birth of the Clinic: An Archeology of the Medical Gaze*, 1963), which continued his historical-philosophical analysis of medicine; (2) *Raymond Roussel* (*Death and the Labyrinth: The World of Raymond Roussel*, 1963), which explored the thresholds of thought in life; and (3) *Les Mots et les choses: Une archéologie*

des sciences humaines (*The Order of Things: An Archaeology of the Human Sciences*, 1966), which catalyzed his reputation and was his most synthetic work, bringing together his multiple inquiries into the human sciences.

The Order of Things revisited concerns first introduced in his "minor" thesis, which was a translation from German to French of Kant's *Anthropology From a Pragmatic Point of View*, with an extended critical essay, "Introduction à l' Anthropologie de Kant," published in English as "Introduction to Kant's Anthropology" in 2008.

Foucault relocated to Tunisia during 1966–1968, teaching at the University of Tunis. While observing the protests of May 1968 in France from afar, he had firsthand experience and was affected by the risk men and women in Tunisia took to protest and demonstrate against the forms of power they experienced in daily life. In 1969, he published *The Archaeology of Knowledge* (*L'Archéologie du savoir*) and returned to serve as director of the philosophy department at the experimental University of Paris, Vincennes, created in the wake of the May 1968 uprisings.

In 1970, he was awarded a chair at the Collège de France, which he named the History of Systems of Thought. This was a position Foucault had campaigned energetically to achieve. It was, however, constraining as an institution. He had no formal students, and there was a ritualized performance of weekly public lectures, with little possibility for intellectual exchange. He characterized the experience as that of an acrobat performing in solitude before a stunned audience. Foucault traveled frequently during this period, arguably to escape the burden of his growing reputation and to find a different way of work and life. He cultivated working relationships in the United States, especially at the University of California, Berkeley.

In the period 1970–1984, Foucault published four major works: *Surveiller et punir: Naissance de la prison* (*Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison*, 1975), a monograph on the emergence of forms of incarceration and discipline, and three volumes of *Histoire de la sexualité* (*The History of Sexuality*). He wrote numerous essays and articles and published many interviews during this time, as ways of experimenting with genres and avenues of thinking. He died in 1984 from a septicemia characteristic of AIDS.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Foucault's contribution to contemporary anthropology can be divided between his archaeological inquiry into the human sciences, his genealogical inquiry into the emergence of discipline and biopower, and his problematization of truth and subjectivity.

Archaeology of the Human Sciences

In his *Introduction to Kant's Anthropology*, Foucault reworked this neglected text to investigate the relations of psychology and anthropology to Kant's critical philosophy. The problem Foucault begins to articulate is how it is possible to engage in an empirical analysis of the multiple forms of the human being on the basis of an object of knowledge, "Man." Such an object was fundamental for the human sciences that emerged in the Classical Age. Foucault showed that this object has a highly problematic double status: "Man" is supposed to be simultaneously a natural creature conditioned by physical forces and a subject capable of "freedom" through self-knowledge and intervention in the conditions of this subject's being.

This core problem was extended and catalyzed in *The Order of Things*, whose subtitle is *An Archaeology of the Human Sciences*. An archaeology of knowledge was the manner in which Foucault excavated the forms, conditions, and practices through which the possibility of this paradoxical double was constituted: a subject of knowledge becoming the object of knowledge. His analysis is of the epistemic conditions and changes necessary to make possible sciences of life, language, and labor in the 19th century, in the form of economics, biology, and linguistics. Foucault analyzed how discursive regimes gave rise to a corpus of knowledge having the status and effects of a science.

One effect of his archaeology of knowledge was to show how the emergence of this figure of "Man" made possible novel forms of intervention through the creation of new social institutions; he had worked already on studies of the asylum and the clinic and would carry on this work by analyzing penal institutions.

Genealogy of Discipline and Biopower

In the 1970s, Foucault forged a genealogical transformation of his archaeology-of-knowledge

research into the substrata of the forms of knowledge in the human sciences. Genealogy, in Foucault's hands, became a means of modifying his work on the systematic formation and productivity of discourse. It was a way of intensifying the problematic interconnection among and between historical artifacts so as to destroy the mystifying primacy of origins and of claims to unchanging truths. Foucault calls this genealogical strategy a way of writing a "history of the present." Such history begins with a diagnostic question: How did we get to a situation in the present where a specific mechanism of power functions the way it does? Genealogy works by isolating the components of political technologies and tracing the conditions of their historical emergence.

Discipline and Punish shows how the institutionalization of disciplinary reforms, including the emergence of imprisonment as a form of punishment in the 18th and 19th centuries, took on a self-evident character. Foucault showed at the level of practices, visible in their banality, how such a solution first had to be constituted by a problem of deviance from both a normal and a normative figure of the productive human being. The space of confinement was rendered as a productive space through discipline—forms of enclosure and exercise rendering the persons enclosed visible, knowable, and transformable. His insight was to show, with respect to the transformation in the exercise of confinement, how power requires a field of knowledge to operate. Furthermore, and internal to this field, knowledge requires a subject and object of knowledge, which involves a relation of power.

If discipline operates on the deviance of the maladapted individual, Foucault crafted a further concept—biopower—to show how the specific techniques of discipline were part of a much larger general reconfiguration of power relations since the end of the Classical Age. Until approximately the beginning of the 19th century, power was exercised by and for a sovereign, either in the person of the ruler or diffused into the state. Foucault shows how a new relationship between the individual body and the population of which it is a part becomes the object of intervention for the techniques and strategies of those who are able to exercise power. These interventions have as their aim the vitality of bodies and populations, visible in the emergence of diverse domains of governance and knowledge, such as public health. The concept of biopower, introduced in *The History of Sexuality*, Volume 1, enlarged the range and scope of his analyses of the rationalities through which power over life could be exercised and administered.

Subjectivity and Truth

In the late 1970s and 1980s, Foucault turned with regularity to the theme of ethics, the subject and truth, and in October 1980, he gave the Howison lectures at Berkeley under the title "Truth and Subjectivity." One can see by the distance and change from his Tanner lectures at Stanford in the previous year (an investigation of pastoral power and modern political reason) a movement toward a different problematization of knowledge, ethics, and power. During this period, and especially in the last 3 years of lectures at the Collège de France (1981–1984) and the last two volumes of *The History of Sexuality*, Foucault concentrated on two terms: (1) the neglected ancient Greek maxim *epimeleia heatou*, care of the self, which he took up within the broader problem of the way in which persons govern themselves and others, and (2) the ancient Greek practice of *parrhēsia*, which means "to say all," or freely and frankly speaking the truth. Foucault was thus beginning a line of inquiry into ethics, understood as how a subject becomes a subject capable of claiming to speak the truth. Furthermore, he was asking what difference such speech makes to the situation in which subjects govern themselves and others by way of their claims to truth. Foucault's working sessions with Paul Rabinow and Hubert Dreyfus in Berkeley, published as *On the Genealogy of Ethics*, indicate that the object of the general ancient Greek problem of ethics was not primarily the self, or subject, but rather *technē tou biou*, or "arts of living"; Foucault's entrance into the genealogy of ethics asked how the question of how to live came gradually to be subsumed within techniques and practices of the self.

Foucault's Legacy

Foucault is sometimes referred to as a "theorist," offering a relativist "theory" of knowledge, with antihumanist consequences. As he explains in several of his essays, rather than theory his objective was to write critical histories of the ways through which human beings are made subjects. His relation to the dominant philosophical schools of the 20th century

was an abutting one. With respect to Marxism and phenomenology, he showed the historical conditions for knowledge about particular subjects and their histories at the level of concrete practices. By so doing he undermined theoretical pretense to universal knowledge of a subject of history, which was foundational to these theoretical traditions. With respect to structuralism, he showed how the positing of a relation of a subject to an object of knowledge is not only a matter of defining the formal conditions of a relationship, it is also a matter of how a subject becomes a legitimate subject of a type of knowledge. When analyzed at the level of practice, such research opens up diverse modes of (what he called) *subjectivation*.

Foucault's archaeological and genealogical manners of inquiry, as well as his attention to the force fields of power-knowledge, have become cornerstones of research, where science, ethics, and politics intersect. His nascent explorations of truth and subjectivation opened up a vast terrain of problems for further inquiry, which were cut short by his untimely death.

Anthony Stavrianakis

See also Abu-Lughod, Lila; Althusser, Louis; Asad, Talal; Critical Theory; Derrida, Jacques; Discourse Theory; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marxist Anthropology; Neo-Kantianism; Postcolonial Theory; Postmodernism; Poststructuralism; Queer Theory; Rabinow, Paul; Race; Structuralism; Subaltern Studies

Further Readings

Burchell, G., Gordon, C., & Miller, P. (Eds.). (1991). *The Foucault effect: Studies in governmentality*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Dreyfus, H., & Rabinow, P. (1983). *Michel Foucault, beyond structuralism and hermeneutics*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Eribon, D. (1991). *Michel Foucault* (B. Wing, Trans.). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Faubion, J. D. (1998). Introduction. In J. D. Faubion (Ed.), *Essential works of Foucault (1954–1984): Vol. 2. Aesthetics, method, and epistemology* (pp. xii–xliv). New York, NY: New Press.

Foucault, M. (1976–1984). *The history of sexuality* (Vols. 1–3). New York, NY: Vintage Books.

Gros, F. (2005). Course context. In M. Foucault (Ed.), *The hermeneutics of the subject: Lectures at the Collège de France 1981–1982* (G. Burchell, Trans.; F. Gros, Ed.). New York, NY: Palgrave Macmillan.

Rabinow, P. (1994). Introduction: The history of systems of thought. In P. Rabinow (Ed.), *Essential works of Foucault (1954–1984): Vol. 1. Ethics* (pp. xi–xlii). New York, NY: New Press.

Frankfurt School

Founded in 1923 by Felix Weil and his students Max Horkheimer and Friedrich Pollock, the Institut für Sozialforschung (Institute for Social Research) in Frankfurt am Main was a network of intellectuals whose studies of political economy, cultural analysis, and critical sociology generated some of the 20th century's most influential interventions into Western capitalist society.

With their personal origins in the crises of the Weimar Republic, its primary members—Theodor Adorno, Erich Fromm, Horkheimer, Leo Lowenthal, Herbert Marcuse, Franz Neumann, and Pollack—were raised in assimilated Jewish families and educated in rigorous philosophical traditions. This philosophical training extended from Plato and Aristotle's antiquity through the Enlightenment epoch, culminating in the modern era, as exemplified in the writings of G. W. F. Hegel. Despite this pedigree, members identified themselves as outsiders within the German bourgeoisie, due in part to rampant anti-Semitism in the 1930s. As a result, the institute became an unflinching critical voice in the decades that were to follow. The unimaginable catastrophe, subsequent collective trauma, and attempted political reparations following World War II—events without precedent in German history—were among the foremost problems grappled with by this prodigious group of researchers.

Critical Theory

The enduring relevance of the institute resides, however, in their genesis of "critical theory." The term was coined by Horkheimer in a 1937 article, "Traditional and Critical Theory." Faced with this unique mix of influences and problems, its members engaged in precise studies of their cultural past and economic realities, leading them to examine the meaning of *intellectual praxis*. The division between "traditional" and "critical" theory was based on whether intellectual

activity reproduced status quo social relations or subverted them. Although the institute emerged at a time of growing national conservatism, it nonetheless became most productive from 1930 onward, when Horkheimer became its director. Horkheimer maintained an ambitious plan for the institute: to create a shared engagement with the fundamental myths and invidious structures that shaped contemporary Europe. Whereas many theorists in the 1930s were content to specialize and narrow the scope of their investigations, institute members consistently defied the insularity of provincial academic scholarship to instead enlarge the scale and complexity of what constituted thought. For example, in 1944, Adorno and Horkheimer published *The Dialectic of the Enlightenment* (written during the war and circulated furtively beforehand). A seminal text representative of the institute's challenge to the illusions of modern rationality, the authors drew from *The Odyssey*, Hebrew scripture, modern philosophy, and popular culture to question how the practice of modern science and industry promised to liberate people from ignorance, disease, and exploitation and yet catalyzed a culture in which people adhered to fascist ideology and xenophobia, killed one another on a large scale, and practiced mass deception in the face of lived reality. If one of the promises of the Enlightenment was to foster independent thought and intellectual maturation, Adorno and Horkheimer argued that the myths implicit in various technological advancements had, in fact, renewed Western civilization's barbaric and regressive traits.

In its early formation, the institute showed an affinity for thinkers who contested the legitimacy of the European Enlightenment. This is not to say that the institute outright rejected the epoch's tenets. Instead, their interest in Enlightenment critique raised urgent questions that were left unaddressed by their religious cosmologies and philosophical training. These questions concern a broad swath of detailed topics: the nature of freedom and necessity, the dialectical tension between rationality and irrationality, the meaning of a "disenchanted" natural history, and the politics of critical thinking threatened by the modern calamity of calculation, profit, and pleasurable immediacy. Predicated by the complex sociological shifts occurring after Weimar, members employed techniques of critique developed by a series of thinkers who defy simple categorization. These included Sigmund Freud, Georg Lukács, Karl Marx, Friedrich Nietzsche, and Max Weber.

Influences

From Freud, members became attuned to unconscious aspects of the self—its repressions and dreams, the gendered antagonisms of familial life (often envisioned archetypally), the stultifying norms of bourgeois conduct, and a largely tragic view of social life. In particular, Marcuse and Fromm saw psychoanalysis as a demystifying mode of sociology. Freud, they thought, was willing to employ innovative hypotheses and narratives against the commonly held belief that humans are rational actors and have control over their own destiny. Psychoanalytic theory thus proved to be an invaluable counter to the epistemologically limited and empirically based psychologies and cognitive theories (e.g., Jean Piaget, B. F. Skinner) that grew within the postwar academy.

From Lukács, especially his late work *History and Class Consciousness* (1923), the institute grasped how commodification, the effects of mass production in cultural realms, came to mediate a subject's consciousness and unwittingly acclimatize one to the struggles of socioeconomic disparity. "Reification," the reduction of human relations to relations between things, became a hallmark concept for the group, and it signaled their contention with the subject's estrangement from the past and from his or her community. Although Lukács was never associated with the institute, both he and the Frankfurt school are credited with the rise of "Western Marxism." This term is associated with scholars who include cultural phenomena in their interpretation of and struggle within the political economy. Unlike Lukács, the Frankfurt school dissociated its leftist politics from the German Social Democratic Party and from the German and Soviet Communist party's rigidly deterministic policies.

Similar to Lukács, Marx's work on the capitalist political economy gained an axiomatic place in the institute's understanding of historical events. For many of the institute's contemporaries, capitalism was deemed a natural or merely incidental part of social problems. For the Frankfurt school, the reproduction of capitalist social relations through decades of needless poverty, capitalism's power to shape large-scale populations, and its crisis-prone contradictions provided fecund material for the

members' critiques. The ideological dimension of culture, whose influence was often difficult to imagine in purportedly "freethinking societies," gained greater intelligibility and force with texts such as Marcuse's *Reason and Revolution* (1940) and *One Dimensional Man* (1964). Marcuse argues here and in the essay "The Affirmative Character of Culture" (1937) that the objects of critical social theory are the seemingly innocent "tolerant" or "positive" attitudes that reproduce larger structures of domination, such as class, ethnic, and gender inequalities.

Nietzsche's fragmented and aphoristic writing style and his genealogical studies of Judeo-Christian morality were taken up as modes of expression and itineraries for the group's readily secular interpretations of contemporary life. No idol was too sacred for scrutiny, and much like Nietzsche's meditations on interpersonal hostility, the institute's members learned from Nietzsche the psychosocial scapegoating inherent to struggles for power. Nietzsche's influence also led to a reckoning with Martin Heidegger and existentialist strains of thought circulating prominently throughout interwar Europe. Adorno's *The Jargon of Authenticity* (1964) is a polemic opposing the nativist and mystifying tendencies in Heidegger's thought.

Finally, Weber's deft account of the rational mechanization of social institutions—that is, the management and structure of bureaucracies—is expanded by Adorno and Horkheimer in texts such as *The Dialectic of Enlightenment* and Adorno's collaborative empirical study *The Authoritarian Personality* (1950). Neumann's *Behemoth: The Structure and Practice of National Socialism* (1941) stands as the work from the institute that is most indebted to Weberian sociology. This study made a great impact on the thought of the sociologist C. Wright Mills.

Walter Benjamin was the most influential fellow traveler of the institute. After rescinding his application to teach aesthetics at Goethe University in 1924, Benjamin worked as an independent literary critic for nearly a decade thereafter and was funded intermittently by the institute until his death in 1940. Renowned for his 1936 essay "The Work of Art in the Age of Technological Reproducibility," Benjamin's focus on aesthetic perception, formed by the changing conditions of mass-produced art forms (i.e., film and photography), fascism, and urbanization, had a lasting influence on Adorno, Horkheimer, and Marcuse. A revealing correspondence between Adorno and Benjamin remains one of the most instructive documents of intellectual discourse in the institute's history—especially their discussion of the relevance of Marx for their work.

In contrast to the practice of philosophy, then, "critical theory" became the name associated with the institute's integrated engagement with a constellation of intellectual resources (not to mention their extensive studies of film, classical and popular music, literature, advertising, etc.). The initial generation of research associated with "critical theory" represents an instructive overturning of the usual ways rationality, freedom, culture, power, and the material necessities of thinking and action are interpreted and represented. Although Horkheimer proposed an entirely new mode of intellectual practice, tracing its antecedents is essential for a grasp of its thought.

Exile

The institute became known as "The Frankfurt school" only after its members fled the Third Reich in 1936 and regrouped in New York City at Columbia University. Surprised that the German proletariat were unwilling to oppose the Nazi party, members learned firsthand how fascism was an extension (and not anomalous) of industrial parliamentary political culture. This prolonged exile splintered the group as some remained in the United States after the war, but the relocation failed to temper the members' incisive work. Adorno, in particular, became a prolific writer on everything from phenomenology to jazz. He contributed to Paul Lazarsfeld's Princeton University Radio Research Project, continued to publish the institute's writings in *Zeitschrift fur Sozialforschung* (*Journal for Social Research*, which produced eight volumes between 1922 and 1939), and wrote innumerable essays. The Frankfurt school's transition to North America also saw many of the members change their research focus to class issues and the "culture industry," with many of their examples drawn from the United States.

In 1941, Adorno and Horkheimer moved to Los Angeles to join other émigrés, including Bertolt Brecht and Thomas Mann. Adorno published one of the most severe indictments of Western culture ever written, *Minima Moralia: Reflections From Damaged Life*, in 1951. Consisting of hundreds of essayistic fragments (a form borrowed from Benjamin), the text is a prime example of his synthetic

interest in literature, classical music, and other facets of German culture. Despite the increased circulation of his and other member's texts after their move to the United States, Adorno's work would not attract substantial attention in North America for almost 20 years. The translation of ideas, problems, and methods between Germany and the United States is one of the most interesting issues facing Frankfurt school scholars today.

Continued Relevance

A second generation of the school emerged in the mid- to late 1950s when the institute officially reopened in Frankfurt (in 1950), and Adorno became director in 1958. Jürgen Habermas is associated with the reformation of the Frankfurt school after Adorno's death in 1969. Mentored in the tradition of German philosophy and sociology, Habermas's habilitation, *The Structural Transformation of the Public Sphere: An Inquiry Into a Category of Bourgeois Society* (1962), is a landmark account of the historical shifts in the notion of the public sphere, from the Renaissance in western Europe to the revolutionary United States. Habermas thus shifted the school's stance on a number of core methods of inquiry. Perhaps the most significant is his reconciliation with positivist sociology (e.g., those advocated by August Comte and Talcott Parsons), pragmatist political science (his most lucid writings concern the 1990 German reunification process), and discourse ethics (see his theory of "communicative action"). Horkheimer would have deemed these methods "traditional theory." Nevertheless, Habermas has claimed fidelity to the projects of the Enlightenment and of modernity, calling both "unfinished projects" and insisting on opposition to "postmodern" and "antimodern" philosophies.

The operations of the institute continue today, and its legacy of critical engagement with a sociological focus is evident in the work of Karl Löwith, Oskar Negt, and Axel Honneth. The school's work has been translated into numerous languages and is taught in universities worldwide. Today, many of the most influential "critical theorists" have no direct affiliation with the school but instead examine its vast archive for lessons on contemporary theoretical and sociological problems. In the United States, Susan Buck-Morss, Fredric Jameson, and Martin Jay (among many) employ the school's teachings and have undertaken landmark studies of Benjamin, Adorno, and the history of the school (until 1950), respectively; in Brazil, Roberto Schwarz and Paolo Freire (d. 1997) engage with contemporary culture, with a focus on culture industries, literature, and pedagogy; in Sweden and England, Göran Therborn and Terry Eagleton are two of the school's most astute interlocutors; and in Slovenia, Slavoj Žižek's dialectical investigations into topics both popular and specialist have gained wide reception. In this sense, the practice of "critical theory" lives on beyond the Frankfurt school.

Tim Kaposy

See also Benjamin, Walter; Critical Theory; Habermas, Jürgen; Hegel, Georg W. F.; Jameson, Fredric; Marx, Karl; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Buck-Morss, S. (1977). *The origin of negative dialectics: Theodor W. Adorno, Walter Benjamin, and the Frankfurt Institute*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Eagleton, T. (2000). *The idea of culture*. London, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.

Honneth, A. (1996). *The struggle for recognition: The moral grammar of social conflicts*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Jameson, F. (1990). *Late Marxism: Adorno, or, the persistence of the dialectic*. London, UK: Verso.

Jay, M. (1973). *The dialectical imagination: A history of the Frankfurt school and the Institute of Social Research, 1923–1950*. Berkeley: California University Press.

Therborn, G. (1970). The Frankfurt school. *New Left Review, 63,* 75–96.

Wiggershaus, R. (1995). *The Frankfurt school: Its history, theories, and political significance*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Frazer, James G.

James George Frazer, classicist, anthropologist, and trained lawyer, helped found British anthropology in the 19th century.

Biography and Major Works

Frazer was born in Glasgow on January 1, 1854. Frazer was one of four children. He grew up in Helensburgh, a small town on the west side of

Scotland, located at the mouth of the Gare Loch. Frazer's father, Daniel, and his mother, Katherine, had moved the family there to avoid the industrialization in Glasgow. The Frazers lived a middle-class Presbyterian existence, devoting themselves to the Free Kirk movement—an evangelical and puritanical religious movement that rebuffed efforts by the state to interfere in the governance of the Church of Scotland. The Free Kirk movement attracted lower-middle-class merchants who espoused the value of individualism. As a pharmacist (known in Scotland as a "chemist"), Daniel represented the Free Kirk's base of support. Katherine was also a devout Presbyterian, who ensured that her children never left the house on Sunday other than to attend church twice.

Daniel was keen to advance his children's scope of learning. He chose their schools with care. Frazer attended Larchfield Academy, a Presbyterian school for nonconformist, middle-class families. Under the tutelage of his headmaster, Alexander Mackenzie, Frazer studied the classics. When his ability became evident, he was sent to the University of Glasgow to complete an undergraduate liberal arts degree. Frazer studied classics and Latin under George Gulbert Ramsay, professor of humanity; history, philosophy, and literature under John Veitch, professor of logic and metaphysics; and physics under William Thomson (later Lord Kelvin), professor of natural philosophy. By the time he graduated, Frazer had adopted the belief that through science humanity can discover the universal causes of physical and social phenomena.

Frazer attended the University of Cambridge, which had gained a reputation for matriculating Scottish (Free Kirk) Presbyterians and other dissenters (i.e., Quakers, Unitarians, and Methodists), as well as Roman Catholics and Jews. By the time Frazer arrived at Cambridge in 1873, he had already read the classics, including Plato, Euripides, and Pindar, and he had studied a long lineage of Scottish philosophers, including Thomas Reid and William Hamilton. Frazer finished with first class in 1875, 1876, and 1877 and graduated second in his class in the 1878 Classics Tripos examination. In 1879, Frazer submitted a dissertation titled *The Growth of Plato's Ideal Theory* for a fellowship application to Trinity College. Frazer argued that Plato had misunderstood Socrates in interpreting the latter's theory of knowledge (i.e., epistemology) as a theory of being (i.e., ontology). Frazer received the fellowship, which was later renewed for life.

Frazer's reading list at Cambridge included books by scientific naturalists and social evolutionists, such as Herbert Spencer. Scientific naturalists had argued that there was no place for the supernatural in the explanation of physical and social phenomena. In this view, science is preferred to intuition as it offers objective accounts of cause and effect. Likewise, social science ought to avoid appealing to intuitions for causal explanations and should focus instead on empirical evidence that demonstrates the evolution of society. Frazer adopted this scientific naturalist philosophy and began to interpret changes in rituals and religious customs as the outcome of immutable and universal evolutionary progress.

Taking a break from his academic studies, Frazer sought to please his father by getting admitted to one of the Inns of Court in London, where he studied law and passed the exams set by the Council of Legal Education. He was called to the bar in 1882, but he never practiced, choosing instead to return to academic life in Cambridge.

Frazer first became interested in anthropology after reading E. B. Tylor's *Primitive Culture* (1871). In 1884, Frazer befriended William Robertson Smith, who had recently lost his academic post at the Free Church College at Aberdeen due to his unconventional (some claimed "heretical") views of the Bible's authoritativeness. At the time, Smith was serving as assistant editor of the *Encyclopedia Britannica* (he became editor in 1887). Smith asked Frazer to write articles on taboo and totemism for the encyclopedia. The research Frazer carried out to complete the articles whetted his appetite for historical and comparative treatments of ritual and myth. In 1885, Frazer delivered his first lecture to the Anthropological Institute in London on the topic of burial customs and primitive theories of the soul. Motivated by his research on totems and taboos, he began to amass a large repository of anthropological material, including letters from missionaries, archaeologists, and other colonialists who had traveled abroad and encountered new societies and customs.

Frazer's first anthropological manuscript was an extension of his encyclopedia entry "Totemism." Published as an 87-page book, *Totemism* (1887) was one of the smallest books Frazer ever produced. He later expanded it to a 2,000-page, 4-volume

series titled *Totemism and Exogamy* (1910). Frazer also used his repository of anthropological notes and correspondences to forge his most famous book, *The Golden Bough*. First published in 1890 in 2 volumes, the book was republished in 3 volumes in 1900 and reissued in 12 volumes between 1911 and 1915, with a 13th volume, *Aftermath*, added in 1936. Meanwhile, *Immortality and the Worship of the Dead* (1913) and *Folklore in the Old Testament* (1918), for which Frazer learned to read and speak Hebrew, both courted controversy, although they also gained him a reputation in comparative anthropology.

Frazer contributed to classical studies as well. His most extensive contribution was a translation and annotation of *Pausanias's Description of Greece* (1898), which still serves as a leading source of knowledge about ancient Greece. Frazer's edition of Ovid's *Fasti* (published in five volumes in 1929) made a hefty contribution to classical studies as well.

Despite the seemingly steady stream of publications, Frazer's finances were rarely constant. Frazer avoided lecturing at Cambridge, choosing instead to live on his fellowship salary and the small amount of money he received annually from his father's business. Once Frazer married, his bills became untenable, and he had to appeal for occasional grants from the Literary Fund to pay his debts. Although Frazer had developed a friendly relationship with the publisher George Macmillan, he was inclined to expand his works without concern for the needs of the publishing industry or Macmillan's profitability. Books that were originally meant to be 1 volume, such as *The Golden Bough*, grew to 2, then 3, and then (eventually) 13 volumes. By the turn of the century, Macmillan had come to know Frazer's style well—lengthy, elaborate, and always overdue. Despite strong reviews of both *The Golden Bough* and *Pausanias*, Frazer's early works failed to produce much by way of profits for Macmillan or the author.

Frazer's second edition of *The Golden Bough* was a stronger sell, and his third edition became so popular that by 1922 more than 36,000 copies of all 12 volumes had been sold. Later in his career, Frazer was able to live comfortably from his royalties. He also delivered a set of 20 paid Gifford Lectures on the topic of immortality at Scottish universities between 1911 and 1912 (later published as *The Belief in Immortality*, 1913). Meanwhile, Frazer's wife, Elizabeth Grove Frazer, published children's books and worked as a French translator during World War I to supplement the household income.

Frazer's marriage had caught his friends and family by surprise. In 1894, Frazer was introduced to Elisabeth Grove (née de Boys Adelsdorfer). Grove had traveled the world and raised two children with her late husband, the mariner Charles Baylee Grove. Following her husband's death, she took up writing to pay the bills. Grove was commissioned to write an article on "primitive dancing" for the Badminton Library's survey of dancing traditions when she met Frazer in Cambridge. The couple married in 1896, when both Frazer and Grove were in their 40s (having been born in the same year). Lilly, as she was known, moved to Cambridge to join Frazer with her teenage children.

By all accounts, Lilly managed her husband's financial affairs. She disliked the quiet, rural life of Cambridge and often pressured Frazer to move to London or travel to France. In 1908, Frazer was offered the position of professor of social anthropology at the University of Liverpool, the first professorship of its kind in the world. Lilly encouraged the move to Liverpool for both financial and personal reasons (she had lived in that city with her previous husband and was more comfortable in the bustling industrial town). Five months after arriving in Liverpool, however, Frazer promptly quit his position and headed back to Cambridge, citing his misery amid the industrial development as a reason for his return. The move was costly and encumbered the couple with a debt that lasted years.

Despite financial hardship, Frazer was ultimately rewarded for his long and arduous publications. In 1914, he was knighted, becoming Sir James Frazer. In 1920, the Royal Society made him a fellow, and the University of Cambridge honored him with a DLitt degree. In 1921, colleagues and supporters made donations to a fund for the Frazer Lectureship on Social Anthropology, hosted at Oxford, Cambridge, Glasgow, and Liverpool. In 1925, Frazer's name was added to the Order of Merit, an honor shared by only a handful of people in Britain.

Frazer went blind in the 1930s. Subsequently, he relied on aides who would read for him and take dictation. His wife monitored the aides tightly, even though she herself had long suffered from deafness. R. Angus Downie was one of the people to aid Frazer

at this time. While authoring Frazer's biography, *Frazer and the Golden Bough* (1941), Downie recollects Lilly redacting every portion of the book. Not surprisingly, the manuscript presents Frazer as an unassailably studious and prolific academic; it fails to mention any serious criticism or controversy his work caused. As a result of Lilly's insistent lobbying, Macmillan printed a series of small books by Frazer after his reputation and marketability had waned. Those books included *Creation and Evolution in Primitive Cosmologies and Other Pieces* (1935), *Aftermath* (1936), and *Totemica* (1937). Frazer died on May 7, 1941, in Cambridge. Lilly died a few hours later. They were buried together at St Giles's cemetery in Cambridge.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Frazer's primary contributions to anthropology took the form of comparative studies of folklore and mythology.

Taboo and Totemism

Frazer's first significant contribution to the emerging field of anthropology appeared as two articles on taboo and totemism, published in the *Encyclopedia Britannica*. In those articles, Frazer argues that taboos are sets of religious prohibitions generated to maintain order in primitive tribes, while totemism involves a relationship between a group of kindred people and a species of natural or artificial objects. Over the course of his life, Frazer proposed multiple theories of totemism by linking them to taboo. He proposed that totems serve a religious purpose as repositories of the external soul (i.e., of the person or animal). Tribe members gain union with the sacred and divine by envisioning the totem as the physical embodiment of the soul they worship. Frazer also proposed that totems serve a social purpose. They ensure sharing and trade among tribe members by virtue of taboo. Because it is taboo in a totemic tribe to kill or eat one's own totem plant or animal, members of the tribe must engage in sharing and trade to survive (since hunters can eat the totem animals of other hunters). In *Totemism and Exogamy*, Frazer further relates totems and taboos to fertility and reproduction. Frazer hypothesizes that members of the totem clan believe that conception occurs when the spirit of the totem plant or animal impregnates a woman. Thus, it becomes taboo to kill or eat the plant or animal that constitutes a physical representation of one's spiritual self.

The "Dying King" and The Golden Bough

Frazer is perhaps best known for the concept of the "dying king." The story of the priest-king who is slaughtered by a member of his own tribe and is then reborn in the shape of the slaughterer serves as the foundation for Frazer's three editions of *The Golden Bough*. The book starts with the ancient myth of the King of the Wood, Diana's priest at Nemi. A runaway slave breaks a golden bough from the sacred tree in the wood and uses it to kill the priest-king. The killer then takes the king's place. From the point of view of the tribe, the priest-king is killed and reborn in the form of the younger slave.

Frazer argues that the ritual of the dying king relates to the tribe's desire to encourage fecundity and fruitfulness in nature. The King of the Wood is intimately connected to Diana, Queen and Goddess of the Wood and Trees. The priest-king's aging and degradation over the years implies a corresponding decay of the sacred spirit that maintains the natural world. As the king ages, his death and renewal (through the ascendancy of a younger surrogate) become necessary. The evils of society are transferred to the king. Through his death, evil spirits are extinguished and the tribe is saved.

Starting with the myth from Nemi, Frazer expands his work to include a massive archive of examples from around the world and antiquity. Frazer contends that there are many myths in which kings are slain and reborn or scapegoats are slain in their stead. In some tribes, he notes, festivals take place to reenact the proverbial death and rebirth of the king.

Frazer's comparative method assumes that social rituals between societies develop along similar evolutionary paths. As a result, Frazer strings together disparate gods and kings to develop theories as to why similar priest-king myths emerge in different societies. In the first edition of the *Golden Bough*, Frazer starts from a historical standpoint, hypothesizing that stories about the gods are based on real people. Myths about dying kings are accounts of actual people who have lived and who had been killed as leaders or priest-kings in the past. Frazer believes that his theory demonstrates that religion is nothing but a set of false claims pertaining to human priest-kings and the gods they claim to represent.

However, in his second edition of *The Golden Bough* (1900), for which Frazer changed the subtitle from *A Study in Comparative Religion* to *A Study in Magic and Religion*, Frazer defends a different theory of myth based on cognitivism. Here, myths are failed attempts to rationalize natural phenomena through proto-scientific accounts. Proto-scientific myths evolve over time from primitive magical beliefs to sophisticated religious worship to progressive scientific theories. Societies are first observed to express awe at nature. Tribes perform magical rituals in attempts to avoid catastrophes and destruction. When magic fails, the tribe evolves further as elite members convince the group to make religious sacrifices. This is evident in the worship of the priest-king. Because the priest-king personifies the gods of nature, reviving the king through a sacrifice (or surrogate sacrifice) is believed to revive nature itself. This religious stage in social evolution involves building a sacred relationship with the gods to encourage the gods to do as the tribe bids. When religious worship and sacrifice fail to produce the desired results, highly evolved individuals then attempt a new means of controlling nature—namely, science. Frazer contends that the advent of science hearkens a new era in belief, one in which humans attempt to force nature to do as they bid through technology and scientific practice.

In the third edition of *The Golden Bough*, Frazer returns to his earlier historical theory of myth, using three gods—Adonis, the god of beauty and desire; Attis, the god of death and resurrection; and Osiris, the god of the afterlife—to argue that myths originate from real-life events. Frazer compares Adonis, Attis, and Osiris with the myths of Jesus, Buddha, and the Ugandan king Kibuka, for whom Frazer believed there was physical evidence of existence. Frazer contends that the latter three gods existed as living priest-kings within their respective communities at some point. Their deaths were the result of superstitious religious worship, and their godliness was abstracted from a belief in the necessary renewal of the priest-king.

Although Frazer's theories evidently changed over time, his methodology did not. He held unswervingly to the *comparative method* as the best means of discovering universal truths about the evolutionary development of human societies. Frazer's comparative methodology caused him to clash with Andrew Lang, an anthropologist who defended an orthodox interpretation of monotheism. Lang contended that primitive tribes and early humans had partaken in divine revelation. They had all started from a monotheistic belief structure rather than from the polytheistic worship of various gods of nature. Lang used evidence from Australian aboriginal tribes to defend his argument. Frazer countered Lang's evidence, arguing that it was nothing other than Christian ideology masquerading as anthropology. Frazer deemed Lang's work an unscientific attempt to promote Christianity through the misinterpretation of comparative anthropological data.

Frazer's Legacy

While Frazer was a central figure in anthropology in the late 19th and early 20th centuries, his influence waned significantly in the post–World War II era. Frazer's works were revivified in the 1960s to justify the theories of the Cambridge Ritualists, including Jane Ellen Harrison, Gilbert Murray, F. M. Cornford, and A. B. Cook, who believed that all myth was preceded by rituals whose meaning had been lost (a view that Frazer had held briefly and that he later rejected). Frazer's legacy was bolstered in the first half of the 20th century by the recognition Bronisław Malinowski accredited him in citing *The Golden Bough* as an original inspiration to study anthropology (Frazer later wrote the preface to Malinowski's *Argonauts of the Western Pacific*, published in 1922).

However, anthropologists and historians today reject Frazer's evidence, his theories, and his methodology, viewing him as the quintessential armchair anthropologist—a researcher who never generated raw data and who relied on ethnocentric accounts provided to him by colonial observers, missionaries, archaeologists, and explorers. Although Frazer traveled to Greece to collect archaeological data for his translation of *Pausanias*, he never traveled elsewhere for anthropological purposes, and he never sought to observe rituals directly.

Frazer is remembered in anthropology, literature, and classical studies as one of the last remaining rationalists of the 19th century—one whose explicit goal it was to relegate the Church to a peripheral position in society.

Josipa G. Petrunic

See also Bastian, Adolf; Comparative Method; Freud, Sigmund; McLennan, John; Modernism; Smith, William Robertson; Spencer, Herbert; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Ackerman, R. (1987). *J. G. Frazer: His life and work*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Besterman, T. (1934). *A bibliography of Sir James George Frazer and a note by Sir J. G. Frazer.* London, UK: Macmillan.

Downie, R. A. (1940). *James George Frazer: The portrait of a scholar.* London, UK: C. A. Watts.

———. (1970). *Frazer and the golden bough*. London, UK: Gollancz.

Freud, Sigmund

Sigmund Freud (1856–1939) was an Austrian physician and the founder of psychoanalysis. His discoveries about the mind and his clinical investigations shaped how Western peoples conceive of human beings, their personal and collective histories, and their role in the universe. According to Freud, no matter how mature or sophisticated persons are, their infancy and childhood experiences undergird their adult lives. Poets had long noted that the "child is father to the man." Through brilliant clinical reports and a lifetime of writing, Freud showed how this was true. After him came generations of child psychiatrists, psychologists, counselors, teachers, and others who charted the subtle ways in which developmental histories shape adult character. Because each culture tells its members how to raise children, how to control sexuality, and how to become an adult, Freud's discoveries intrigued anthropologists who had long studied these features of culture. For these reasons, Freud influenced the past 100 years of anthropology. While contemporary anthropologists cite him less frequently than did their counterparts from the 1930s to the 1980s, Freud remains an essential figure in the history of anthropology.

Freud's Psychoanalytic Theory

Trained as a neurologist in Vienna, Austria (then the center of the medical world), Freud took up the study of mental illness around 1890. Treating upper- and middle-class Viennese men and women (mainly Jewish, like himself), Freud initially studied what the physicians of the time labeled "hysteria." Patients had problems like sudden fainting, loss of speech, or paralysis, which were not caused by identifiable medical conditions. In the language of 19th-century medicine, their problems were not caused by lesions—visible scars or damage—in their brains or their bodies.

If these problems were not caused by brain lesions, Freud and other physicians deduced that they must be caused by "mental lesions"—that is, by conflicts in their patients' minds. From around 1890 to around 1980, psychiatrists and psychologists studied hysteria and other maladies (like drug and alcohol addictions, sexual problems, obsessional actions, and numerous other disorders) as manifest behaviors whose latent causes were to be found in the early-childhood experiences of their patients. Therapists tried to discover patterns between these symptomatic actions and their patients' early experiences. For example, do women who manifest hysteria around sexual matters have developmental histories in which sexual contact between them and older people occurred? Do men who stutter and are afraid to speak in public have problems controlling their private sexual lives, especially the urge to masturbate? Do religious and ethical strictures on adolescent sexuality, a dominant theme of late-19th-century European and American education, cause what Freud called "modern nervous illness"?

Jean Charcot, an influential French physician, had shown that not only were psychiatric symptoms "lesion-less"—that is, not caused by anomalies in the brain—but that they could be induced or produced in normal subjects. Using hypnosis, Charcot demonstrated that otherwise healthy people would manifest hysterical blindness or paralysis if he suggested these behaviors to them. This meant that mere "ideas" could produce physical maladies. Charcot asked, "How did this leap from the psychical to the physical occur?" If mere ideas could cause hysterical symptoms in normal people, did similar, unconscious ideas cause hysterical symptoms in his clinical patients? Freud assumed that if psychiatric symptoms could be produced in normal subjects—who had neither physical lesions nor traumatic histories—then perhaps the patients who came to him had a psychological basis for their symptoms. In other words, perhaps persons diagnosed as

"hysterical" suffered real pain but their pain was based on memory or other psychological processes. In Freud's terms, hysterics suffer from ideas (or more accurately, fantasies). How was this possible?

Freud's answer was that the mechanisms that produced hypnotic phenomena and hysterical symptoms were unconscious and not controlled by conscious reasoning. Joining philosophers like Friedrich Nietzsche and Karl von Hartmann, Freud reasoned that a large part—perhaps the largest part—of the human mind was unconscious, shaped by preverbal experience, and could be known only by its emanations. Because normal subjects could manifest the same (or similar) behaviors seen in his neurotic patients, he held that everyone had a similar psychological structure—that we are as a species united in our psychological organization.

Nineteenth-Century Social Thought and Dreams

Freud's notion that all humans had a similar psychological structure was in line with the cultural anthropology of his day. Freud considered himself an "archaeologist of the mind," and he was familiar with the work of prominent evolutionists such as E. B. Tylor and L. H. Morgan, whose unilineal theories of evolution were based on the doctrine of psychic unity.

The Interpretation of Dreams (1900) was Freud's most important book. In it, he extended clinical models generated in his work with psychiatric patients to study dreaming. In *Dreams*, Freud published a 15-page interpretation of one of his own dreams that he called "Analysis of a Specimen Dream" (pp. 106–121). The promise and limitations of Freud's theory originate in this notion of *specimen*. Specimens are things, like fossils or tissue samples or pottery shards, with material histories and more or less fixed structures. If we find specimens of bone, teeth, and tools, we can deduce a great deal about the lives of people who came before us. Similarly, Freud saw dreams as artifacts from peoples' earlier lives. The dreams in Freud's 1900 book are illustrations of how he (and his patients) talked and thought about behavior we call "dreaming." As clusters of behavior, dreams are products of an individual's body, mind, culture, and unknown random elements. Freud created brilliant ways to "read" dreams as the products of mental mechanisms he called the "dream work." This is the set of devices the mind uses to create the dream; among them are condensation, displacement, and symbolization. If I dream about my father as a policeman who looks like the U.S. president, I am *condensing* my thoughts and feelings about all three men into this one image. If I dream about the smell of gasoline and through associations come to feelings about my father (who worked on gasoline engines), I am *displacing* my complex story and feelings about him onto this simpler item. If I dream about a huge bison about to run me over and my associations take me to images and feelings of my father as a "force of nature," I am *symbolizing* my father and my feelings about him. Thus, for Freud, dreams demonstrated an essential kinship between moderns and primitives and between normal people and psychiatric patients. In this sense, dreams are specimens of a universal human psychology. Mid-20th-century anthropologists such as A. L. Kroeber, who rejected Freud's attempts to reconstruct actual human history, found value in Freudian concepts such as repression, regression, and the centrality of childhood experience, dream symbolism, and similar clinical generalizations.

Freud's brilliance as a writer and his ability to give scientists and humanists new ways to read old texts, current dreams, and neurotic patients' actions, and to discover their hidden meanings, excited generations of intellectuals. Freud led the way by interleaving his works with illustrations taken from European classics, especially the Greeks, Shakespeare, the Bible, and folklore, because in his view these illustrated earlier stages of human psychology and psychological development.

In these literatures, he found support for his clinical theory that sexuality in its various modes, ranging from intense "libidinal" sucking in newborns to adult sexual intercourse, provided a motive force for culture, and at the same time, culture—represented by paternal, religious, and governmental authorities—sought to control it. This dialectic seemed revelatory to people who read him in the early part of the 20th century. In many ways, Freud and his followers championed the possibility of a new kind of freedom of sexual life and sexual honesty. He contributed to the modern view that sexuality is not inherently evil, dangerous, or to be controlled at all costs.

From these clinical observations, Freud derived the psychoanalytic technique. Deformations of memory weaken the ego; it loses sovereign access

to each of its domains. Once the ego is weakened, patients live a divided life. Rather than know their wishes and make conscious, mindful choices, patients act them out. The technique provides methods with which we help patients repair the rent in their memory. By studying the manifest effects of unconscious processes, we help them discover, name, and confront their actual wishes with increased self-knowledge and deliberation.

Freud and Anthropology

Anthropology plays at least three roles in Freud's thought. First, anthropology and its affiliated discipline, archaeology, gave Freud a model for investigating the prehistory of his patients. Just as archaeologists uncovered evidence of past civilizations and groups, so too did psychoanalysts investigate the origins of their patients' lives in hidden, what Freud called "repressed," fantasies. Second, anthropologists' findings about nontechnological peoples (whom 19th-century authors called "primitives") offered to Freud and other psychoanalysts test cases against which they could compare clinical discoveries made with European and American patients. In this regard, Freud was particularly interested in indigenous religions. Third, Freud felt that his hard-won insights into childhood and its aftermath pertained to children of all groups and all cultures.

Psychoanalysis as Archaeology of the Mind

Educated people were fascinated when Heinrich Schliemann (1822–1890), an amateur archaeologist, uncovered convincing evidence that Troy, the ancient city described in the Homeric epics, the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, was real, not merely a legend. These discoveries, much commented on by breathless reporters in the 1870s, excited Freud when he read about them as a boy. Thirty years later, when he began to probe his patients' memories for their "buried past," Freud felt that he was repeating, in a way, Schliemann's great adventure. This analogy became more than a metaphor. By the late 1890s, and ever afterward, Freud wrote extensively about psychoanalysis as an archaeological investigation.

In more technical terms, Freud used archaeology as a model. It helped him describe both his subject matter (repressed, long-buried personal secrets) and his method (the slow digging, recovery, and reconstruction of personal narratives and memories.) By 1889, he was describing his work with patients as analogous to Schliemann's discovery of Troy. Because he hoped to make psychoanalysis a general psychology, and not merely a method of medical treatment, Freud needed to show its applicability to anthropology, literature, theater, and religion. The latter became especially important. In Freud's words, religion alone was the great antagonist to psychoanalysis. Religious authorities that dominated European history, shaped its politics, and sought absolute control of human sexuality were squarely opposed to Freud's discipline and his philosophy.

Freud and Indigenous Religion

From 1907 onward, Freud expended a great deal of his intellectual capital investigating religion in so-called primitive groups and in its contemporary instances. The first appeared in *Totem and Taboo*, a set of articles that Freud published in 1912 and 1913. Its subtitle declares Freud's thesis: "Some Points of Agreement Between the Mental Lives of Savages and Neurotics." In brilliant, often persuasive accounts, Freud shows surprising parallels between the beliefs and actions of his Viennese patients and those reported by anthropologists working in various contexts. Freud's terms, such as *savages*, offends modern ears because it evokes for us the horrific facts of European crimes against indigenous peoples. However, Freud was no fan of war or crimes against defenseless peoples. On the contrary, his more radical thesis is the psychic unity of human beings—that the sophisticated European is not "higher" or superior to persons and groups dominated by European armies and navies. The refined German banker, for example, had aggressive and sexual wishes that so-called savages enacted, or at least were said to enact according to Western anthropologists.

Freud also examined contemporary religious institutions, such as the German Catholic and Lutheran churches, as organizations designed to "sublimate"—that is, channel—an individual's aggressive and sexual forces, what Freud called the libido. He called this an "economic" tax that civilizations extract from their subjects. Like income tax, this libidinal tax must be paid to fund the efforts and ambitions of the modern state. However, it can be burdensome and so onerous for some that it results in neuroses, as he argued in *Civilization and Its Discontents* (1930).

In his last major work, *Moses and Monotheism* (1939), Freud summarized his clinical and

anthropological theories by seeking to uncover the long-buried truth of Moses, who legend said rescued his fellow Hebrews from the Egyptians, crossed the Red Sea, and led them to the Promised Land. Using an assortment of texts drawn from highly selected histories of Egypt as well as the Hebrew Bible, Freud argued that the latter was like a manifest dream about a traumatic and long-denied past. While he noted that his efforts to discover this supposed trauma were novelistic, he did not waiver. Few professional historians and Egyptologists agreed: Like Kroeber, they found Freud's "reconstructions" of what might have happened to Moses unscientific poetry. Alongside these faults, Freud's stubborn, brilliant, and courageous virtues as investigator and observer appear in this last great book.

Conclusion

Freud was prominent in anthropology from the 1920s until finally losing favor with the national character studies of the 1950s. However, during that period, anthropologists at Harvard, Yale, the University of Chicago, and similar American research universities used versions of psychoanalytic theory to study how child-rearing techniques produced "modal personalities." For example, Erik Erikson, at Harvard, studied how one American Indian group produced warriors while another group produced quiet farmers. Other anthropologists, like Margaret Mead at the American Museum of Natural History and Columbia University, examined Pacific Island groups that produced adolescents and young adults whose notions of sexuality and ethics differed markedly from those of middle-class, midcentury Americans. Similarly, Mead's colleague Ruth Benedict examined the personality characteristics of the Japanese during the Second World War.

Some anthropologists became clinicians and did psychotherapy with their subjects. Going the reverse direction, some argued that native cultures had their own versions of psychoanalysis. Claude Lévi-Strauss, for example, argued that the shamans of South American cultures were structural equivalents to New York City psychoanalysts. Freud would have affirmed Lévi-Strauss's claim. He believed that his insights into the ubiquity of repression, sublimation, and other unconscious devices pertained to each of these domains: societal, group, and personal. He generalized his clinical model of the mind to the study of groups—historical and prehistorical societies—and so-called higher civilizations, like those of 20th-century Germany and the United States.

Looking at Freud 100 years later, this may seem commonplace. We live in a world saturated with sexual jokes, movies, TV shows, and a nearly infinite supply of pornographic narratives and images. Freud became world famous because he forced medical experts and lay persons alike to see more clearly that sexuality is central to human development, to culture, to ethical discourse, and especially to religious instruction. Complex historical events, such as the rise of industry, urbanization, increasing freedom for women, mass communication, the demise of traditional powers, and World War I, among others, created a context in which Freud's ideas were exciting, revolutionary, and persuasive. By the 1920s, anyone with claims to intellectual sophistication, whether in Europe or the United States, talked about Freud and his creation, psychoanalysis.

Volney P. Gay

See also Bachofen, Johann J.; Benedict, Ruth F.; Chodorow, Nancy; Culture and Personality; DuBois, Cora; Dundes, Alan; Frankfurt School; Frazer, James G.; Hall, Edward T.; Kardiner, Abram; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Lyotard, Jean-François; McLennan, John; Mead, Margaret; Myth, Theories of; Psychological Anthropology; Sacrifice; Smith, William Robertson; Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen; Spiro, Melford; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Erikson, E. (1963). *Childhood and society* (2nd ed.). New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

Frank, J. (1991). *Persuasion and healing: A comparative study of psychotherapy* (3rd ed.). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Freud, S. (1953–1974). *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud* (J. Strachey, Trans. & Ed.). London, UK: Hogarth Press/Institute of Psychoanalysis. (Original work published 1886–1939)

———. (1900). The interpretation of dreams. In J. Strachey, Trans. & Ed., *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud* (Vols. 4–5, pp. 1–628). London, UK: Hogarth Press/Institute of Psychoanalysis. (Original work published 1886–1939)

———. (1913). Totem and taboo: Some points of agreement between the mental lives of savages and neurotics. In J.

Strachey, Trans. & Ed., *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud* (Vol. 13, pp. 1–164). London, UK: Hogarth Press/Institute of Psychoanalysis. (Original work published 1886–1939)

———. (1930). Civilization and its discontents. In J. Strachey, Trans. & Ed., *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud* (Vol. 21, pp. 59–148). London, UK: Hogarth Press/Institute of Psychoanalysis. (Original work published 1886–1939)

———. (1939). Moses and monotheism: Three essays. In J. Strachey, Trans. & Ed., *The standard edition of the complete psychological works of Sigmund Freud* (Vol. 23, pp. 3–140). London, UK: Hogarth Press/Institute of Psychoanalysis. (Original work published 1886–1939)

Mead, M. (1928). *Coming of age in Samoa*. New York, NY: William Morrow.

Fried, Morton

Morton Herbert ("Mort") Fried (1923–1986) was a central member of the cohort of students of Julian H. Steward at Columbia University in the years after World War II and an important contributor to the neo-evolutionary and materialist theory of the 1950s and 1960s.

Biography and Major Works

Fried was a quintessential New Yorker (even though he lived across the Hudson River in Leonia, New Jersey, with many of his Columbia colleagues). Born in the Bronx, and coming of age during the Great Depression, he was educated at The City College of New York and Columbia University and spent almost his whole career teaching at the latter institution. He began graduate study at Columbia in 1946 after serving in the U.S. Army during World War II, and there he found a number of like-minded fellow students from similar backgrounds. Among these were Stanley Diamond, Robert A. Manners, Sidney Mintz, Elman R. Service, Eric R. Wolf, and John Murra (a student at the University of Chicago). This group of friends, who called themselves the Mundial Upheaval Society, studied the literature of political economy and Marxism; in various ways, this experience would color their subsequent work and was the basis for one of the major trends in American anthropology in the following decades.

The major faculty influence on Fried and his fellow students was Steward, who arrived to teach at Columbia in 1946. There was a synergistic outcome, as Steward and the students mutually educated each other, resulting in the complex of ideas and studies that characterized the Stewardian version of neo-evolutionism, materialist-based approaches to anthropology, and cultural ecology. Another significant influence on Fried was the work of Karl Wittfogel, the Sinologist, whose study of the Hsiung-nu Empire (Liao Dynasty) and "hydraulic theory," as presented in *Oriental Despotism*, played an important role in Fried's teaching and writings on the state.

Fried studied the Chinese language while he was in the army, and although he ranged widely in his scholarship, Chinese cultures and history was his special area. He used his language skill for his dissertation research and first book, *Fabric of Chinese Society.* Fried carried out the research in 1947–1948 under difficult conditions, in the aftermath of China's war with Japan and until Mao Zedong and the communists took power. He carried out a community study in a complex society in which kinship (still) played a major role but was superseded by a variety of nonkin and "civil" actions. *The Fabric of Chinese Society* deals with kinship and other behaviors, in families and in clans, in both agricultural and urban contexts, and among farmers, merchants, artisans, and the gentry. It was the first of his works centered on the problem of the evolution of political institutions—his lifelong interest.

Most of Fried's publications in political anthropology derived from his concern for Jean-Jacques Rousseau's statement "Man was born free and everywhere he is in chains." Stimulated by the writings of Lewis Henry Morgan, Karl Marx, and Friedrich Engels, but not satisfied with their ethnography, ethnocentrism, and solutions to major questions, he devoted major efforts to problems related to the growth of economic stratification, class, political power, and the origin of states—or, borrowing from Morgan, "political society." Fried wanted to understand the processes that led from kin-based egalitarian societies—as he presumed all of them must once have been—to ranked societies, then stratified ones, and, finally, "the state." And once the state exists, how does it deal with challenges to its sovereignty and authority, and what is its impact on its neighbors? Toward this end, he joined like-minded colleagues writing about the evolutionary paradigm of band-tribe-chiefdom-state (e.g., Elman Service, Marshall Sahlins, Lawrence Krader). He was particularly exercised by what he called "the notion of

tribe," the idea that there were discrete, organized, political units before the development of states. He argued, on the contrary, that what anthropologists (and others) call tribes are secondary formations produced by the actions of states and colonialism. This idea gained some currency, especially with respect to Amazonian ethnography.

Fried taught at Columbia from 1950 until his death in 1986. He was an engaging and witty lecturer and was devoted to teaching. He twice published volumes of readings in anthropology noted for their sophistication. His *The Study of Anthropology* is an unusual work intended to give the student both an overview of the field and a guide to studying anthropology at the undergraduate and graduate levels and to choosing it as an occupation. Fried also took seriously the Boasian-Columbian tradition of speaking out to counter racial determinism when it arises—as it did a number of times during his career.

Herbert S. Lewis

See also Columbia University; Harris, Marvin; Marx, Karl; Material Production, Theories of; Mintz, Sidney; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Rappaport, Roy; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Fried, M. H. (1953). *Fabric of Chinese society: A study of the social life of a Chinese county seat.* New York, NY: Praeger.

———. (1957). The classification of corporate unilineal descent groups. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 87,* 1–29.

———. (1967). *The evolution of political society: An essay in political anthropology.* New York, NY: Random House.

———. (1972). *The study of anthropology.* New York, NY: Crowell Press.

———. (1975). *The notion of tribe.* Menlo Park, CA: Cummings.

Service, E. R. (1988). Morton Herbert Fried (1923–1986). *American Anthropologist, 90,* 148–152.

Wittfogel, K. (1957). *Oriental despotism: A comparative study of total power.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Frobenius, Leo

Paradoxically, one of the most important figures for the process of anthropology's becoming a science proper in the German-speaking countries at the turn of the past century was an academically marginalized figure who failed to get a doctoral degree and hardly ever conformed to scientific etiquette, Leo Frobenius (1873–1938). In spite of these particularities, Frobenius was widely acknowledged as an outstanding personality who efficiently promoted ethnology in Germany. Although he was one of the most controversial anthropologists of his time, he is also the most frequently quoted Germanophone ethnologist.

Life and Intellectual Roots

Born in Berlin, Frobenius spent his youth in different garrison towns in Germany, where his father, a Prussian army officer, was assigned. Soon after graduating from high school, he developed an interest in ethnographic studies and travel reports. As it was not possible to study anthropology at a German university at that time, he sought museum employment and managed to get different short-term contracts at the Bremer Überseemuseum. This allowed him to expand his studies, and he published several short articles on masks and secret societies in Africa and Oceania. In 1898, he published his first theoretically oriented article titled "The West African Culture Circle." It was well received and much debated among his fellow museum anthropologists.

"The West African Culture Circle" is simultaneously an expansion of the theories of Adolf Bastian and a long-term research agenda for German anthropologists. The central argument refers to the methodology of culture history. It is best described through the example of one of the cultures under consideration, the "malayo-nigritic" culture. Frobenius was convinced that there was no common origin of African cultures. He argued that the different cultures in Africa are heirs to quite different influences from the various continents. Contemporary cultures that show congruent cultural influences are defined by Frobenius as "culture circles" (*Kulturkreise*). A culture circle does not so much reflect actual cultural relations among the cultures subsumed under its label as it refers to a historically antecedent diffusion of cultures. For example, Frobenius argued that the West African culture circle is an outcome of the diffusion of the so-called malayo-nigritic culture.

By using the term *culture circle*, Frobenius adopted a concept that had been used some years earlier by Friedrich Ratzel in a much looser, more

commonsensical manner. For Ratzel, culture circles were simply areas with similar cultures. By narrowing the definition, Frobenius assigned a much more specific historical meaning to the term. Culture circles, according to Frobenius, originate from much older, currently invisible cultures, and it is the task of the trained ethnologist to identify these ancient cultures by documenting so-called cultural complexes. Cultural complexes consist of a number of unrelated yet concurrent cultural phenomena. These can be objects of material culture, principles of ornament, myths, or forms of social organization.

The idea of seeking shared roots in extinct basic cultures comes from Adolf Bastian, one of the founders of anthropology in Germany. Bastian distinguished between the visible phenomena of culture, which he called "flowers of culture" (*Kulturblüten*), and culture's more fundamental traits, assumed to represent a hidden cultural level that can only be identified by ethnologists.

Defining the Agenda of Cultural-Historical Anthropology

By presenting this theory, Frobenius suggested a scientific agenda for the discipline in the moment of its birth. His concepts of culture circles and culture complexes contain a theoretically grounded objective and a far-reaching research question about the identification of ancient cultures. Frobenius also proposed a method: a close examination of museum collections, which should lead to the identification of culture complexes as indicators of ancient cultures. He had himself presented the first example of such an analysis: the history and diffusion of the West African culture circle and its origin, through the diffusion of the malayo-nigritic culture.

In Frobenius's view, the key to understanding culture circles lay in the hypothetical reconstruction of the diffusion of culture complexes. However, the precise historical reconstruction only plays a minor role. History was not so much a sequence of dates and events as a question of identifying the essence or the nucleus of an actual culture.

Frobenius is representative of diffusionist anthropology and is among the many anthropologists of his time who supported this view. However, additional elements in his approach should also be highlighted. His key terms have a particular relation to the idea of fertility of cultures. According to Frobenius, cultures have the potential to generate other cultures. Not only did he attribute this particular capacity to cultures, he also insisted that cultures must be understood in their historical and geographical context. In an obituary, the Austrian anthropologist Robert Heine-Geldern praised Frobenius for overcoming the "anxiety of space." Frobenius transformed the romanticist and idealistic ideas about cultures as unchangeable (as per Bastian) into a pragmatic research program. He was interested in the origins of culture, which he sought in remote historical eras.

A shortcoming of Frobenius's approach is that even a brief glance at a world map raises some doubts about the formation and diffusion of culture complexes. How is it possible to trace the diffusion of the malayo-nigritic culture, composed of particular wooden drums, knives, bodily adornments, and other elements from Malaysia, to both West Africa and Papa New Guinea? Frobenius did not appear to be preoccupied with documenting the diffusion of such traits. He acknowledged that in his time such diffusion would hardly be possible. But he assumed that at the time of the original diffusion, there must have been several intermediate cultures (e.g., in southern India), which have since disappeared.

Culture, Essence, and a Culture's Soul

By delineating such huge cultural units, Frobenius sketched a global anthropology long before the advent of globalization. In his time, the idea of huge cultural units quickly found many adherents. Two of them were Fritz Graebner and Bernhard Ankermann, who presented an outline of the culture circles in Oceania in 1904. Frobenius was present at the oral communication, on the occasion of the annual meeting of the anthropological society of Berlin. At the same meeting, he argued against the concept of culture circle and the methodology of using dominantly museum objects, which he himself had presented only 6 years earlier, criticizing the methodology as too "mechanistic." Renouncing his own approach, he urged the anthropologists present at the meeting to include mythology and tales into their consideration of cultural relations. He criticized the objective of identifying patterns of diffusion as too narrow and mechanistic. As Frobenius said, a proper understanding of "the essence" of a culture (*das Wesen*) and of its "soul" (*die Seele*) is more important than identifying its origins. To identify these aspects, he

started to organize "Africa Expeditions" and thus proceeded to fieldwork. Between 1904 and 1934, he undertook no fewer than 20 expeditions, some lasting more than 12 months.

As Frobenius did not hold any academic position and had no support from any university, he organized his own fund-raising. The archives of his institute contain many of his letters in which Frobenius pressed his sponsors to provide financial means for his travels. Among his most important donors were ethnographical museums in Germany. Some of them prepared a general agreement that identified a fixed price for any ethnographic object he could collect. Some museums, like the one in Hamburg, ran into serious economic trouble when Frobenius delivered an unexpectedly high number of artifacts from Africa.

Meanwhile, Frobenius created a private "Africa Archive" in Munich. In 1925, he managed to sell this archive to the city of Frankfurt and to establish at the university an institute of the morphology of cultures. In 1932, he finally was appointed honorary professor at the university and thereby gained the right to teach there. Of even greater importance were his connections to powerful individuals in the realm of politics. As early as 1912, he had an audience with the German emperor. It marked the beginning of an ongoing relationship that was to intensify after World War I. The emperor's interest in Frobenius and his work was related to his enthusiasm for culture history and his empathy with the idea of the cyclic development of cultures. Wilhelm, by then no longer the emperor, and living in exile in the Netherlands, perceived his own destiny as an outcome of a period of decline within the logic of a cyclic evolution of cultures.

Influence and Followers

To the present day, the idea of a culture circle is still the most popular aspect of Frobenius's oeuvre. However, by the 1920s, he had become less interested in this term, and during his Frankfurt period, he dedicated his scientific work to what he called a "look at the people's soul" (*Seelenschau der Völker*). In his polemical manner, which included self-irony, Frobenius claimed to have found a way to recognize the "thou" (personal address) of cultures. He intended to understand cultures by intuitive observation of their articulations. He competed with Oswalt Spengler, the author of the monumental study *Der Untergang des Abendlandes* (The decline of the West), for the honor of having coined the metaphors of adolescence, adulthood, and old age as distinguishing stages of vitality of cultures. Frobenius's demand that culture not be described in a mechanical way and his delineation of cultures' stages according to age outline the contours of his own approach to cultures as living beings.

Frobenius used the new metaphors to describe the different levels of creativity of African cultures. For example, he identified several cultures in Africa that he considered very old and identifiable only as fragments. Frobenius explicitly claimed that an objective of his work was to return to Africans what is their possession, namely the reconstruction of old cultures. He considered that ethnologists had the exclusive capacity to identify such cultures in spite of their fragmentation.

Frobenius's analysis of such cultures, including the *paideuma* (the creative mental nucleus), can be perceived as a criticism of other social theories of his time. Frobenius rejected scientific approaches that referred only to empirical and statistical data. He defended his approach by underlining the moral superiority and authenticity of African societies. He thereby joined the widespread criticism made by intellectuals of his time such as Georg Simmel. For them, Africa was not just an ethnographic field but an antidote to the decline of European cultures. The latter were part of his model, as he explained the antagonism between French and German cultures as an outcome of different cultural souls.

Frobenius's ideas about the vitality of cultures at different moments in the time depth of history, which were metaphorically expressed through age differences, and the idea that cultures act like living beings according to their own logic, found some resonance in France, particularly in the context of Henri Bergson's vitalist philosophy. Furthermore, in the 1930s, African intellectuals studying in Paris became fascinated by Frobenius's idea of the creativity and age of African cultures. The most famous of them was Leopold Senghor, who later became the president of independent Senegal. They referred to Frobenius's work to stress the cultural autonomy of African societies and argue for the independence of African nations. Frobenius himself did not consider colonialism to be relevant, because he did not believe that the vitality of cultures could be deeply

influenced through such ephemeral phenomena. For the young African elite, however, the encounter with Frobenius constituted an important support for the African peoples' political struggles.

Another feature of Frobenius's theory is the idea that every culture is the outcome of a configuration. Cultures are autonomous, at least in the sense that they represent a mixture of different influences of ancient cultures. Like Ruth Benedict, Frobenius conceived of cultures as having a specific "gestalt." Recognizing the gestalt of present-day cultures as an outcome of diffusion and the influences of ancient cultures was a way of historicizing anthropology. It therefore can be considered as an attempt to rescue the approach of culture history after the notion of culture circles had lost its initial appeal in anthropology.

Antimodernism, vitalism, and the idea of the gestalt of cultures may be considered as key elements in Frobenius's culture theory, after he had articulated his critique of culture circles. Each of these terms may have little plausibility from today's perspective. However, against the background of the anthropology of his time, they indicate the originality and insightfulness of Leo Frobenius.

Hans Peter Hahn

See also Bastian, Adolf; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Graebner, Fritz; Simmel, Georg

Further Readings

Fox, D. C. (1936, September 3–October 25). Frobenius' Paideuma: A philosophy of culture. *The New English Weekly*, pp. 1–7.

Frobenius, L. (1933): *Kulturgeschichte Afrikas: Prolegomena zu einer historischen Gestaltlehre* [Cultural history of Africa: Prolegomena to a doctrine of historical form]. Zurich, Switzerland: Phaidon Press.

Haberland, E. (Ed.). (1973). *Leo Frobenius 1873–1973: An anthology.* Wiesbaden, Germany: Steiner.

Hahn, H. P. (2010). Leo Frobenius in West Africa: Some remarks on the history of anthropology. In R. Kuba & M. Hambolu (Eds.), *Nigeria 100 years ago: Through the eyes of Leo Frobenius and his expedition team* (pp. S27–S32). Frankfurt, Germany: Frobenius Institut.

Heinrichs, H.-J. (1998). *Die fremde Welt, das bin ich. Leo Frobenius: Ethnologe, Forschungsreisender, Abenteurer* [The alien world that I am. Leo Frobenius: Anthropologist, explorer, adventurer]. Wuppertal, Germany: Hammer.

Jahn, J. (1974). *Leo Frobenius, the demonic child* (Occasional publication, 8). Austin: University of Texas, African and Afro-American Studies and Research Center.

Kalous, M. (1968): Review article: Frobenius, Willett and Ife. *Journal of African History, 9,* 659–663.

Marchand, S. (1997). Leo Frobenius and the revolt against the West. *Journal of Contemporary History, 32*(2), 153–170.

Streck, B. (1989). *Kultur als Mysterium? Zum Trauma der deutschen Völkerkunde* [Culture as a mystery? The trauma of German ethnology]. In H. Berking & R. Faber (Eds.), *Kultursoziologie: Symptom des Zeitgeistes?* [Cultural sociology: Symptom of the Zeitgeist?] (pp. S89–S115). Würzburg, Germany: Königshausen & Neumann.

Zwernemann, J. (1969). *Leo Frobenius et la recherche scientifique sur les civilisations africaines* [Leo Frobenius and the scientific research of African civilizations]. *Notes et Documents Voltaïques, 2,* 27–42.

G

Gadamer, Hans-Georg

Hans-Georg Gadamer was a long-lived (1900–2002) German philosopher, best known as a student of Martin Heidegger. He developed an account of philosophical hermeneutics in his magnum opus *Truth and Method*.

Biography and Major Works

Gadamer was born in Breslau in 1900, the son of a chemist, Johannes Gadamer. The elder Gadamer was prominent in Breslau, where he served as an academic researcher and administrator as well as a chemist in Germany's rapidly industrializing chemical industry. As a child, Gadamer resisted his father's strict discipline and insistence on a career in science and became interested instead in philosophy and the classics.

Gadamer's interest in philosophy led him to Marburg, where he wrote a dissertation on Plato under the direction of Paul Natorp, a leading exponent of the Marburg school of neo-Kantian philosophy. This school was noted for its Kantian approach to the philosophy of science, as well as for work on epistemology and logic. In particular, Marburg philosophy acknowledged the power of modern experimental science but resisted the idea that it was the epitome of all knowledge, arguing instead for the continued relevance of the humanities. The Marburg school produced many influential students, such as the philosopher Ernst Cassirer.

The decisive event in Gadamer's intellectual life, however, was not his dissertation in 1922 but his postgraduate studies. Introduced to phenomenology by Natorp, Gadamer moved to Freiburg in 1922 to study under Heidegger, and he followed him back to Marburg when Heidegger received an appointment there. As a result, Gadamer participated in a remarkable intellectual period when Heidegger trained a cadre of young scholars, including Karl Lowith, Leo Strauss, and Hannah Arendt. The lectures Heidegger gave at the time led to the publication of his *Being and Time* in 1928, which would become recognized as one of the most important philosophical works of the 20th century.

This period was decisive for Gadamer in two ways. First, Heidegger's existential phenomenology, not Neo-Kantianism, became the fundamental framework for Gadamer's thought. Second, during this time, Gadamer began in-depth philological training with Paul Friedländer. The result of both these influences was Gadamer's 1928 habilitation, later published as *Plato's Dialectical Ethics*. In this work, Gadamer proved himself to be a specialist in classics even as he maintained a broad philosophical viewpoint and avoided the narrow focus that sometimes accompanies philological work.

The next few decades were tumultuous for Germany but remarkably quiet for Gadamer. In 1929, he received an appointment at Marburg, and he then went on to teach at other German universities—first Kiel in 1934 and then Leipzig in 1939.

During this period, German academics approached Nazism in a variety of ways, ranging from collaboration to resistance to emigration. Heidegger, famously, was receptive to Nazism, but Gadamer was not. His extremely erudite focus on

ancient philosophy removed him from politics and life outside the academy, and after the fall of the Reich, the Allied occupation considered him uncontaminated by Nazism. As a result, he was appointed rector at Leipzig, where he became active in rebuilding the university there.

During the late 1980s and 1990s, revisionist historians discovered that many academics had been more sympathetic to Nazism than was previously realized: Prior to 1987, for instance, it was not widely known that Heidegger had embraced Nazism. Although one author has attempted to demonstrate that Gadamer's interpretation of Plato implicitly supported Nazi policies, few have found this view compelling, and the bulk of scholarly opinion concurs that Gadamer was free from the taint of Nazism. Communism also had little appeal for him, and as the Iron Curtain closed over Leipzig, Gadamer moved west, eventually taking a position at Heidelberg. Finally, in 1960, Gadamer published *Truth and Method*, the book that would come to define his career.

In the 3 decades prior to the publication of *Truth and Method*, Gadamer lectured regularly and gave public speeches, but he had not published extensively. *Truth and Method*, then, represented the first and main statement of Gadamer's thought. Published when he was 60 years old, it seems likely that Gadamer imagined this to be the summation of his career. As it happened, he would continue to live and publish for another 4 decades.

The critics lauded *Truth and Method*, and Gadamer soon became an internationally known philosopher. His work on hermeneutics appeared at a time when continental philosophy was read and taken up in the United States among not only humanists but social scientists as well. As a result, Gadamer became very influential, and he published many books of interviews, essays, and speeches after *Truth and Method* appeared. In addition to these secondary works, which grew out of, amplified, and explained *Truth and Method*, Gadamer was engaged in several other scholarly activities in the second half of the 20th century.

First, *Truth and Method* dealt with ethics, aesthetics, and interpretation in the context of the Western canon. After its publication, Gadamer turned his focus to modernism and modernist writing, in particular to the works of the poet Paul Celan. The slim volume by Gadamer on Celan is a central intellectual contribution to Gadamer's project because it extends the range of his hermeneutic work beyond its narrow focus on "classic" texts.

Second, Gadamer engaged in a series of well-known debates with other intellectuals that touched on central issues in the interdisciplinary realm known as "theory," which developed in the 1970s, 1980s, and 1990s. His most famous debate occurred with Jürgen Habermas, in which the two argued about the possibility of objective knowledge—Habermas arguing that such a thing was possible and Gadamer arguing for the situatedness of all understanding. Gadamer was also well-known for his encounters with Jacques Derrida. Although Derrida and Gadamer had many similarities, their different approaches and personalities meant that their debates, published as *Dialogue and Deconstruction*, would be widely read even though the two authors often talked past one another.

Finally, Gadamer engaged in a series of smaller projects—on the concept of health and aging, autobiographical writings about his own career, as well as that of Martin Heidegger, and on his relationship with Nazism.

Overall, Gadamer was a remarkable figure of extraordinary longevity who witnessed the most important events of the century and became one of the world's most prominent intellectuals. And yet Gadamer personally lived a quiet, even primitive, existence. He was late for his dissertation defense, for instance, because his overcoat had frozen to the door of his unheated house. During a trip to the United States, he watched the American election results on television, fascinated by the democratic system he had heard so much about, but he was unable to turn off the television because he had never used a remote control before. His impressive intellectual accomplishments were counterbalanced by a quiet, mundane family existence despite the remarkable times he lived through.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

The Limitations of Science

Throughout his career, Gadamer argued against the idea that modern experimental science ought to be taken as the purest, most primary, or most important form of knowledge. Today, such positions are often associated with "postmodernism" and skepticism regarding the claims of science and reason. Gadamer,

in contrast, came of age in the first half of the 20th century, when industrialization was still occurring in Germany, and *Truth and Method* was written in the postwar period, when technocratic confidence was at its peak. His critique, rooted in his classical training, was a conservative one: Gadamer opposed the idea that science could provide us with ethical guidance, was skeptical about narrowing the definition of truth to include merely instrumental knowledge, and decried the narrow education of technical specialists. He attempted to demonstrate the fundamental legitimacy of philosophy, literature, aesthetics, and religion, even as modern science was slowly becoming the sole form of modern knowledge. In contrast to a postmodern position skeptical of the possibility of transcendent truth, Gadamer argued consistently for truth in its traditional mode, and rooted its claims to adequacy in prescientific forms of knowledge.

The Universality of the Hermeneutic Problem

Hermeneutics is the art of interpreting messages. Typically, it concerns deciphering difficult, obscure, or ancient texts. Traditionally, interpretation of texts was the central activity of the university and in the pursuit of knowledge more generally. In *Truth and Method*, Gadamer takes the process of hermeneutics and elevates it to the level of a universal problem. That is, Gadamer argues that our existence and understanding of the world operate on the same principles as those of textual interpretation.

Thus, while some would argue that science is true knowledge and aesthetic judgment is subjective, Gadamer argues that the scientific method is just one subset of human understanding encompassed by our more general experience of reality. For Gadamer, life itself is a process of interpretation within which methodical science is an important but limited source of knowledge whose value should not be overestimated. In sum, Gadamer argues that truth is opposed to method and that we as humans experience the world through an interpretive process. For this reason, he felt that "objectivity" was a goal that is both impossible and undesirable.

Practical Knowledge and the Rehabilitation of Prejudice

The process of arriving at truth is a very general one that follows the course of a *hermeneutic circle*: Initial presumptions are tested against the world and then revised in light of what one encounters. For this reason, Gadamer believed that it is possible to speak about the correct interpretation of meaning without relying on a scientific method of interpreting texts or on notions of objectivity.

Central to his argument is the *rehabilitation of prejudice*. In English, the term *prejudice* has a negative connotation because it implies that one is not free to judge a case on its own merit. But for Gadamer, prejudice is not an impediment to objectivity but an inevitable and essential part of understanding. Gadamer believed that it is only by bringing our prejudices to light, becoming aware of them, and using them as the initial departure point for an act of interpretation that we can truly understand the world.

Historically Effected Consciousness

One of Gadamer's best known concepts is *wirkungsgeschichtlichess Bewußtein*, a term that is perhaps best translated into English as "consciousness affected by history." Gadamer argues that prejudice is a result of our consciousness and the way it has been affected by history.

People often speak of a difference between the "human sciences" or "social sciences," on the one hand, and the natural sciences, on the other. On this account, the human sciences deal with the realm of meaning and intention and involve interpretation, while the natural sciences deal with natural facts and do not attend to meaning. This distinction can be traced back to Wilhelm Dilthey, who argued that understanding a text involved understanding the intention of the author who wrote it and imaginatively participating in the lived experience of the author. How one can be objectively empathetic is something Dilthey never definitively solved, and this issue remains a contentious topic in the philosophy of social science to the present.

Gadamer attempts to solve the problem by breaking from this tradition altogether. He argues that Dilthey's concept of "lived experience" (*erlebnis*) assumes a primacy of experience unmediated by culture and tradition. Following Heidegger, Gadamer argues that human beings are, in contrast, fundamentally linguistic beings, shaped to their very core by the tradition and culture into which they are born. They have, in other words, a consciousness that is affected by the history of the traditions and culture

they inherit. Gadamer thus argues for the primacy of *erfahrung*, experience interpreted through a cultural lens, and against *erlebnis*, or a fundamentally raw, unprocessed, and acultural experience.

Gadamer thus argues that understanding in the social science does not involve recovering the intention of the author. Rather, it means realizing the history of the effect that the text has had on one's consciousness, a process that Gadamer calls the "fusing of horizons between one's own work and the original." Understanding a text, according to Gadamer, means understanding how the text has, in some small way, become part of the social and historical context in which the reader lives. It is a process of self-understanding in which we recognize the way in which we ourselves are shaped by the world that the text helped create.

Aesthetic Truth

It is in this light that we can understand Gadamer's defense of aesthetics. For him, art has a "truth" as important as (or more important than) scientific truth. Again, context is important: Gadamer wrote at a time when people believed judgments of beauty to be completely subjective and when the classical tradition of fine arts was challenged by avant-garde and modernist forms. While Gadamer's greatest concern is with the truth revealed in poetry, theater and the experience of play are central to his aesthetic theory. Just as we lose ourselves in the moment of a drama or in the flow of playing a game, so too, Gadamer argues, artistic truth reveals itself to us as we experience ourselves merging, or perhaps dissolving, into it. Thus, for Gadamer, artistic truth is derived from our deeper involvement in communities and traditions of meaning of which we are only a part—not from a subjective sense of the beautiful.

The Dialogue That Is Ourselves

Overall then, Gadamer viewed people as always engaged in dialogical relations with others. Indeed, as beings born and socialized into a world not of our own making, we are ourselves a sort of dialogue: a location through which broader forces of history and tradition move. Understanding is self-understanding, and truth the recognition of this fact. In this light, it is easy to understand why Gadamer was not convinced by claims that humans can, or ought to, be guided by disinterested, objective scientific reason.

Gadamer's Legacy

Despite his importance in the tradition of continental philosophy, Gadamer has not had a great impact on anthropological thought. The reception of Gadamer's work in anthropology began in the late 1960s and early 1970s with the rise of interpretive or symbolic approaches, such as the work of Clifford Geertz. These authors were more theoretically sophisticated and interdisciplinary than the previous generation, and they drew on a wide variety of thinkers outside of anthropology for inspiration, such as Paul Ricoeur and Ludwig Wittgenstein. Gadamer was one of the thinkers cited by these early authors.

In the 1980s, the next generation of anthropological theorists extended this tradition. Some, such as Paul Rabinow, had deeper and more thorough engagements with continental philosophy as they articulated the philosophical grounding of interpretive social science. Others sought to radicalize interpretive anthropology's concern with rhetoric as they sought to experiment with anthropological genres. The flurry of "dialogical anthropology" produced in the 1980s by authors such as Kevin Dwyer and Barbara and Dennis Tedlock often cited Gadamer—a major theorist of dialogue—as an inspiration. The "Writing Culture" group also included him on their theoretical horizon. In the late 1980s, James Peacock also pondered, only somewhat successfully, the potential influence of Gadamer on ethnographic practice.

None of these streams of thought, however, engaged deeply with Gadamer's work. While thinkers such as Michel Foucault and Pierre Bourdieu became the topic of intense scrutiny, Gadamer (like Ricoeur) remained on the periphery of these projects, cited but never truly used to build anthropological theory.

There are many reasons for this: Anthropology came to "theory" in the course of its increasing politicization, and Gadamer was not a political thinker. Gadamer's work is highly technical and often takes the form of commentary on other thinkers. As a result, it requires deep immersion in Western philosophical traditions, which is not necessarily a requirement of anthropological training. Even those who do have a background in philosophy are more familiar with the French traditions rather than the German ones that influenced Gadamer.

Indeed, in many ways, Gadamer lacks elective affinity with anthropological theory: His commitment to Heidegger makes him an opponent of the neo-Kantian traditions in which he was initially trained—the same traditions that informed Franz Boas and the first generation of American anthropologists. A conservative, he uses Heidegger to ground and validate the Western canon. In contrast, most anthropologists read French "poststructuralism," where Heidegerian thought is put in the service of politically leftist and progressive causes that seek to question the legitimacy of inherited notions of truth, reason, and beauty.

Finally, because Gadamer's work is a purely philosophical clarification of the grounds of understanding, it does not provide concrete analytic tools for anthropology but merely claims to describe what all human beings already do. Although Gadamer's work has serious implications for anthropology, they must be drawn out, and unfortunately, few have attempted to do so to date.

Alex Golub

See also Boas, Franz; Derrida, Jacques; Geertz, Clifford; Habermas, Jürgen; Hermeneutics; Rabinow, Paul; Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis; Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Further Readings

Gadamer, H.-G. (1976). *Philosophical hermeneutics*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1999). *Truth and method*. New York, NY: Continuum.

Grondin, J., & Plant, K. (2003). *The philosophy of Gadamer*. Montreal, Quebec, Canada: McGill-Queen's University Press.

Grondin, J., & Weinsheimer, J. (2003). *Hans-Georg Gadamer: A biography*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Hoy, D. C. (1978). *The critical circle: Literature, history, and philosophical hermeneutics*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Game Theory

In much of social life, the best course of action depends on what others do. For example, choosing to commute by car rather than by train depends on traffic, and traffic depends on how many other commuters choose to drive. Finding a spouse depends on what you want and how attractive you are, and how attractive you are depends on what your potential spouses want. Game theory provides a powerful language to model social phenomena like these, in which people respond to the choices of others.

The game theorist builds simple mathematical models to understand the complex dynamics linking individual choices and group-level properties, dynamics difficult to predict without mathematics. Consider residential patterns. Do segregated neighborhoods imply that people are racist? Perhaps. But, as Thomas C. Schelling has noted, segregation can also emerge even if people want to live in integrated neighborhoods, as long as they slightly prefer being in the majority. The problem is that everyone can't simultaneously live in integrated neighborhoods and be in the majority. As individuals move to relatively integrated neighborhoods in which they are in the majority, neighborhoods can become more and more segregated. It's hard to predict this kind of dynamic without building a model.

There are two traditions in game theory: classical and evolutionary. Classical game theorists assume that people are "rational" in the sense that choices maximize "utility," which might be anything from money to leisure. After setting up the model, the game theorist seeks the *Nash equilibrium:* a set of strategies, each of which is a best response to the other strategies. At the equilibrium, no one can improve by acting differently. For example, when neighborhoods become totally segregated in the residential choice model, no one can do better by moving.

Fredrik Barth's 1959 study of competition between Pathan tribesmen in the Swat Valley of northern Pakistan represents a well-known anthropological application of classical game theory. Barth examined competition between lineage segments over land using the concepts of zero sum games and positive sum games outlined in John von Neumann and Oscar Morgenstern's 1944 *Theory of Games and Economic Behavior.* In a positive sum game, winnings can be increased by cooperation, whereas in a zero sum game, the reward is fixed and thus leads to competition between players over how the winnings are distributed. In Barth's view, relations in the Swat Valley were best explained as a zero sum game because Pathan lineage mates were competing for control of a fixed amount of land. The result was fierce competition between members of

the same lineage segments. Today, game theory in anthropology is applied to a variety of areas including economics, politics, hunting, and the evolution of social behavior.

Evolutionary game theorists assume that individuals follow a specific "strategy," a behavioral prescription that doesn't imply that individuals strategize in a rational manner or that they strategize at all. The modeler also specifies the pattern of interaction. The simplest assumption is *random interaction,* meaning that an individual's strategy doesn't influence the kinds of opponents she or he encounters. Interactions can also be *assortative* (i.e., interactions are nonrandom with respect to strategy). Evolutionary forces, be they natural selection or cultural processes, change the frequencies of different strategies, favoring those with higher "fitness," which might be the genetic or cultural contribution to future generations. The game theorist seeks the *evolutionarily stable strategy* (ESS), a strategy that, when common, has higher fitness than any other strategy occurring at low frequency.

Evolutionary game theory originated in biology and is now popular in the social sciences. Classical game theory is a "static" framework in the sense that individuals are assumed to consider all possibilities, including others' deliberations, resulting in everyone simultaneously playing his or her best response. One problem is that games often have *multiple equilibria*. Societies can, for example, be organized in either an egalitarian or a hierarchical manner. The static framework of classical game theory cannot explain how and why societies transition from one arrangement to another. Evolutionary game theory provides a *dynamic* framework, explaining not only best responses ("equilibria") but also how social institutions change ("equilibrium selection").

The *Hawk-Dove* model provides an introduction to evolutionary game theory that illustrates the way game theorists approach problems and offers insight into the logic of conflict. In the 1960s, biologists puzzled over animals engaging in low-cost, ritualized contests over resources. Such ritualized contests contradict the caricature of natural selection as a "survival of the fittest" in which the strong triumph over the weak. Many biologists championed *group selection*, arguing that groups in which animals fought to the death would go extinct, leaving behind only groups that resolve conflict through ritual. The problem is that natural selection usually acts at the level of individuals, not groups. The Hawk-Dove model provided conceptual clarity, showing how ritualized contest can result from *individual selection*.

The model assumes that pairs of individuals meet at random and allocate some resource. There are two strategies: "Hawk" always contests the resource and "Dove" shares with another Dove but concedes to a Hawk. Since a Hawk always beats a Dove, it's tempting to predict that Hawks will replace Doves in the population. But the outcome is not that simple. If the resource benefit exceeds the fighting cost, Hawks will indeed replace Doves. But if the resource cost exceeds its benefit, the population settles down to a mix of Hawks and Doves. When Doves are common, Hawks mostly meet Doves and do well. However, as the population of Doves decreases, Hawks increasingly meet other Hawks and engage in costly contests. Doves do better by avoiding costly fights.

At the "mixed equilibrium," fights erupt whenever two Hawks meet. Even though everyone would be better off if everyone played Dove, selection acting on individuals favors a mix of Hawks and Doves. This illustrates an important lesson. Self-interested behavior can lead to collectively bad outcomes. Such "social dilemmas" characterize many of our pressing problems, like corruption, overharvesting of natural resources, and pollution. The *Prisoner's Dilemma* is the canonical game to model social dilemmas. The outcome of these dilemmas depends on the pattern of interaction. With assortative interaction (e.g., Doves selectively interacting with Doves), group benefit can trump self-interest because cooperation is channeled to cooperators and denied to free riders. Assortment, which can be generated through kin-biased interaction (i.e., *kin selection*) or behavior-biased interaction (e.g., *reciprocity*), is the key to understanding the evolution of cooperation.

Returning to conflict, game theory models assume that some individuals fight and others do not. But resource conflicts seem to be resolved by ritualized contest. When a model's predictions match reality, the hypothesized process may explain the pattern observed in the real world. However, when the predictions are way off, something important has been left out of the model. The Hawk-Dove game, for example, assumes symmetry between players. However, if individuals vary in fighting ability, then the "Assessor" strategy is an ESS. Assessors size up their opponents and fight only when they are sure to win. Fighting ability, an asymmetry correlated with contest

outcomes, provides a convention that efficiently allocates resources with few fights. The Assessor, arising through individual selection, achieves a higher average payoff than a mixture of Hawks and Doves.

A convention that privileges bullies isn't the only possibility. Ownership, an asymmetry uncorrelated with contest outcomes, is another. The "Bourgeois" strategy plays Hawk when finding the resource first and Dove when second. Like the Assessor, the Bourgeois is an ESS that efficiently allocates resources without fighting. This result may explain the origin of informal property rights and some forms of cooperation. But the model has another ESS, one in which individuals play Dove when owner and Hawk when intruder! According to the model, this anti-Bourgeois strategy is as likely an outcome as the Bourgeois strategy. In nature, the Bourgeois strategy seems common; the alternative convention does not. What might be missing from the model?

Karthik Panchanathan

See also Barth, Fredrik; Economic Anthropology; Evolutionary Anthropology; Gene-Culture Coevolution; Human Behavioral Ecology; Rational Choice Theory

Further Readings

Gintis, H. (2009). *Game theory evolving: A problem-centered introduction to modeling strategic interaction* (2nd ed.). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

McElreath, R., & Boyd, R. (2007). *Mathematical models of social evolution: A guide to the perplexed.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Neumann, J. von, & Morgenstern, O. (1944). *Theory of Games and Economic Behavior.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Schelling, T. C. (2006). *Micromotives and macrobehavior.* (Rev. ed.). New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

Skyrms, B. (1996). *Evolution of the social contract.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Sugden, R. (1986). *The economics of rights, cooperation and welfare.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Geertz, Clifford

Clifford Geertz (1926–2006) was easily the best known American cultural anthropologist of his generation, both greatly admired and a lightning rod for criticism. He resisted being identified with any particular school of anthropology, insisting, "I don't do systems," yet many anthropologists of his generation came to identify themselves as Geertzian. In *Available Light* (2001), his last book, he describes himself as an ethnographer who investigated the role played by ideas in human behavior, the meaning of meaning, and the judgment of judgment. In a career that spanned half a century, he spent almost 3 years doing fieldwork in Java, 1 year in Bali, and nearly 3 years in Morocco; he authored or coauthored 10 books stemming from his ethnographic research, observing that fieldwork did more to nourish his soul than the academy ever did. Intertwined with these ethnographies, Geertz regularly produced what he once described as "cliff-hanging" essays on the concept of culture.

Biography

Geertz opens his final book, a collection of essays titled *Available Light*, with an intellectual autobiography. After serving in the navy in the Second World War, he studied philosophy at Antioch College. On graduation, he took the advice of a philosophy professor who advised him to try anthropology because philosophy had fallen into the hands of Thomists and technicians. Encouraged by a serendipitous encounter with Margaret Mead, in 1950, Geertz began graduate studies in the new, interdisciplinary Department of Social Relations at Harvard, where Talcott Parsons presided over a vigorous effort to construct a common language for the social sciences (Geertz recalls that someone helpfully suggested English). Parsons launched the Social Relations program to embody his vision of an integrated social science, where psychologists would study individuals and sociologists, the functioning of social systems, leaving culture to the anthropologists.

This division of academic labor put Parsons in conflict with the dominant Boasian school of American anthropology, the issue turning on the meaning of culture. The issue came into sharp focus with the publication of Parson's *The Social System* in 1951. Parsons argued that to become an analytical empirical science, anthropology needed to take as its subject a restricted view of culture that was independent of both sociology and psychology. The same year, two leading anthropologists, Alfred Kroeber and Clyde Kluckhohn, expressed their dissatisfaction with the idea that social systems could

be separated from culture. Kluckhohn argued that social structure is a part of the cultural map and that social systems are built on a framework of explicit and implicit culture. To this, Kroeber and Kluckhohn soon added an evolutionary postscript, arguing that culture originated with early man's facultative abilities to use symbols, generalize, and make imaginative substitutions.

At Harvard, Geertz was assigned to study and comment on the draft of Kluckhohn's and Kroeber's *Culture: A Critical Review of Concepts and Definitions*, which aimed at a definitive compilation of all the prevailing definitions of culture. Geertz seized on this question and pursued it for more than 50 years. When he was a beginning professor at Chicago in the 1970s, his students recall, the reading list for his signature course on "Theories of Culture" included 277 items, drawing from philosophy, literature, religion, and psychology, as well as anthropology. In *Available Light*, Geertz reflected that in the history of the concept of culture—its drift toward and away from clarity and popularity over the next half century—could be seen both his own intellectual biography and that of anthropology itself.

But in 1951, resolving—or at least working through—these conflicting ideas about culture still lay in Geertz's future. In 1952, Clifford and Hildred Geertz began doctoral fieldwork in a small town in east Java, joining a team that Geertz described as the very stamp and image of the Social Relations idea as conceived by Parsons: a long-term, well-financed, multidisciplinary field project focused not on a small tribal culture but on a 2,000-year-old civilization in the midst of revolutionary change. Geertz's task in the team was to study Javanese religion. His approach was to try out a Weberian hypothesis, that the strongly Muslim sector of Javanese society would be functionally equivalent to Reformation Protestants, spearheading a comprehensive social transformation. In 1956, Geertz received his PhD with a 700-page doctoral dissertation, published in 1960 as *The Religion of Java*: an account of the everyday religious practices of Javanese Muslims, in which the informants spoke for themselves in indented excerpts from field notes.

After completing their fieldwork in Java, the Geertzes made their way to Bali, where they lived in the village of Tihingan for most of a year and investigated kinship, calendars, laws, states, villages, and cockfights. Returning from Indonesia, they spent 1958 at the Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences in Palo Alto, followed by a year at the University of California, Berkeley. In 1960, they moved to the University of Chicago, where Geertz directed another multidisciplinary center, the Committee for the Comparative Study of New Nations. Soon thereafter, Geertz began his third major fieldwork project, this time in an ancient walled town in the Moroccan Middle Atlas Mountains, studying bazaars, mosques, olive growing, and oral poetry. In 1970, Geertz was invited to found a new School of Social Science at the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, where he remained for the rest of his career, seeking (as he later wrote) to advance a conception of research centered on the analysis of the significance of social actions for those who carry them out and the beliefs and institutions that lend significance to those actions.

Geertz's First Ethnographies

Between 1960 and 1966, Geertz published five monographs based on his Indonesian fieldwork: *The Religion of Java*, *Agricultural Involution*, *Peddlers and Princes*, *The Social History of an Indonesian Town*, and *Person, Time and Conduct in Bali*. The most widely cited of these books was *Agricultural Involution*, a study of social change in rural Java that caught the interest of American social scientists and quickly became an indispensable text for courses on modernization and development. As Geertz later recalled, he danced for rain and got a flood.

Geertz borrowed the term *involution* from the American anthropologist Alexander Goldenweiser to describe a peasant society in which endless small-scale innovations in agriculture failed to trigger economic growth. Dutch colonial policies had produced "shared poverty," in which the economic pie was divided into ever smaller fragments. Involution occurred as a result of incremental changes to labor and land tenure arrangements, and virtuosity in rice cultivation techniques using human and animal labor. These productive arrangements were mirrored in social and religious systems, *pace* Max Weber. Intensified cultivation of rice paddies was matched by a similar involution in rural family life, social stratification, political organization, and even religious practice: the "folk culture" value system in terms of which shared poverty was normatively regulated and ethically justified.

Geertz's thesis was exhaustively analyzed and critiqued; in his review of *Economic Change in Southeast Asia, c. 1830–1980*, Colin Brown described it as a brilliant hypothesis brought down by available evidence. Geertz was further criticized by Wim F. Wertheim for a "sociological blindness" that paralleled the blind spots of colonial and postcolonial elites, whose vision of the harmonious and peaceful village community, characterized by solidarity and mutual aid, was derived from and promoted by the village elite themselves. Another Dutch historian, Ernst Utrecht, similarly argued that Geertz had turned a blind eye to class distinctions and class struggle. In 1965, Geertz published *The Social History of an Indonesian Town*, in which he argued that one of Java's greatest needs was for a virile yeomanry. But 1965 was the year of the Indonesian massacres, an anticommunist coup in which hundreds of thousands of people died, mostly in rural Java and Bali. The killings were especially savage in east Java, where Geertz had done his fieldwork. Although the army organized the first death squads, most of the villagers died at the hands of their neighbors, and the consensus of subsequent research on the causes of violence emphasized tensions in rural society stemming from class and religion.

Geertz's first four ethnographies focused on rural Java and were not specifically aimed at anthropologists but rather at the wider social science community interested in modernization and development. If Parsons and Weber proved to be imperfect guides to counterrevolutionary Java, arguably more successful, if less well-known, are Geertz's first publications about Bali, notably *Person, Time and Conduct* and a 1959 article, "Form and Variation in Balinese Village Structure." In these works, Geertz set aside both the methods and the questions of Parsonian development theory in favor of an open-ended phenomenology of everyday life in Bali. To explain this departure from Parsonian orthodoxy, he argued that while conventional sociological analysis can ferret out the functional implications for a society of a particular system of "person-categories," and at times even predict how such a system might change under certain social processes, the success of the analysis depends on whether the social system—the categories, their meanings, and their logical relationships—can be taken as already known. This approach revived some of the themes Margaret Mead and Gregory Bateson had developed in their studies of Bali in the 1930s, which explored the interplay of culture and personality. But where Mead and Bateson had focused on child rearing, dreams, and visual art, Geertz was interested in the social world.

Bali, like Java, had been extensively studied by several generations of Dutch colonial ethnographers, for whom scholarly publications in ethnology were the key to professional advancement in the colonial civil service. In particular, the intricacies of *adat*—local custom and law—were considered to be vital to the mission of the colonial government, and civil servants competed to produce lucid descriptions of local variation in *adat*. Geertz wondered how the pieces might fit together. The Balinese make extensive use of both a lunisolar and a permutational calendar, which in combination depict time as unfolding in intricate patterns of embedded cycles. Geertz explored the ways in which this "wheels within wheels" view of time shapes Balinese concepts of the self as reflected in the progression of personal names encoded by generational kinship terminology and teknonymy. Later on, he extended this analysis to encompass interlocking cycles in the organization of irrigation. Here, Parsons was nudged aside in favor of the phenomenological perspective of Alfred Schutz—in particular Schutz's concept of the "lifeworld," which relates concepts of the self to the social universe. The social system was not sui generis (as in the Parsonian scheme) but rather built up from more fundamental ideas, like time. Geertz concluded that the variation in Balinese village structure observed by colonial scholars was not accidental but intrinsically meaningful.

The Interpretation of Cultures

In 1973, Geertz published what was to become his most influential book, a compendium of essays titled *The Interpretation of Cultures*. In one of them, "The Growth of Culture and the Evolution of Mind," originally published in 1962, he endorsed Kroeber and Kluckhohn's view that the development of culture profoundly affected the evolution of the brain. Rather oddly, he cited Parsons in a footnote to support the idea that culture should be defined as a learned pattern of the meaning of signals and signs. But Parsons was soon to drop out of Geertz's

footnotes, because for Geertz, psychology and the social system (the other two legs of the Parsonian triad) could not be separated from culture. In the most frequently cited passage in the book, Geertz offered his own definition of culture, derived from Max Weber's view that man is an animal suspended in webs of significance that he himself has spun. Culture, wrote Geertz, is equivalent to those webs. Consequently, cultural analysis is not an experimental science in search of laws but an interpretive one in search of meaning. Two later chapters differentiated Geertz's views from those of Claude Lévi-Strauss and offered a model for a Geertzian style of cultural analysis.

In *The Interpretation of Cultures*, the question is how subjects create meaning, not (as Lévi-Strauss would have it) how meanings create subjects. Exactly how meaning is to be read from the ethnographer's up-close observations was explored in the final chapter, "Deep Play: Notes on the Balinese Cockfight" (1972), the most cited of Geertz's essays. As the historian Natalie Zemon Davis recalls, Geertz's techniques for observing, understanding, and writing about Indonesia and Morocco burst like fireworks on the horizon of historians back in the 1970s. From an intensely significant and observable local event, like the Balinese cockfight, could be teased a world of meaning and an enduring style of life. "Deep Play" is a close reading of an ordinary cockfight witnessed by Geertz in 1958, 10 days after arriving in the Balinese village of Tihingan. The cocks are surrogates for the owner's personalities; the cockfight a simulation of a social matrix in which status and prestige are the driving forces. To read the meaning of events like cockfights as if they were plays, Geertz concluded, opens up the possibility of an analysis that attends to their substance rather than to reductive formulas professing to account for them.

At Princeton, Geertz joined a seminar taught by the historian Robert Darnton. Like his Princeton colleague Zemon Davis, Darnton credits "Deep Play" as the inspiration for a new style of microhistorical analysis, exemplified by Darnton's analysis of the slaughter of cats by a printer's apprentice in Paris in 1730, *The Great Cat Massacre* (1984). In the era of incredulity toward metanarratives, when structuralists like Louis Althusser were questioning whether the modern concept of history is more than an artifact of the 18th-century struggle of the revolutionary bourgeoisie against feudalism, "Deep Play" showed what historians and ethnographers could decipher from primary texts and up-close observations.

Later Works

In 1980, Geertz published a book-length study of 19th-century Balinese kingdoms. *Negara: The Theatre State in Nineteenth Century Bali* offered the provocative thesis that displays of status and prestige were as important to the princes of Bali as to the cockfighters (often the same individuals) and that Balinese rulers competed to produce grand spectacles in which power served pomp, rather than the reverse. This argument was met with bafflement; critics felt that Geertz had upended the relationship between ideology and the material foundation of the state, and his thesis was regarded as so provocative that reviewers seldom attended to the evidence Geertz offered in its support. Geertz had simply lost interest in sociological issues, in the view of Adam Kuper.

Yet as Geertz showed, Balinese rulers competed not for land but for manpower and expended their fortunes on spectacular rites of world renewal. The constantly changing borders of their tiny kingdoms could usually be traversed in less than a day, and they shared power with acrobat's pyramids of princelings, whose signatures were generally required to execute the business of the state, such as making a treaty or concluding a peace. Geertz mined the colonial archives to discover how it all worked: the intricate webs of *adat* relationships between lords and subjects, the organization of irrigation, taxation, trade, and warfare. Whatever intelligence Bali may have to offer us about the nature of politics, Geertz concluded, it can hardly be that big fish eat little fish or that the rags of virtue mask the engines of privilege.

After *Negara*, Geertz returned to essays, his favorite genre, and from time to time scooped up a collection of them to publish as books. In the 1988 book *Works and Lives: The Anthropologist as Author*, Geertz confronted the criticism that attention to ethnographic writing calls into question the whole project of ethnology, by celebrating the struggles of four anthropologists to "get texts exact and translations veridical . . . getting them sufficiently on the page that someone can obtain some comprehension of what they might be"

(pp. 145–146). *After the Fact: Two Countries, Four Decades, One Anthropologist* (1995) gives us Geertz on Geertz. A complete bibliography through 1999 was published by Fred Inglis as an appendix to his monograph *Clifford Geertz: Culture, Custom and Ethics*. In his last book *Available Light*, Geertz offers reflections on philosophical topics. If all we wanted was home truths, he tells us, we should have stayed at home.

J. Stephen Lansing and Thérèse A. de Vet

See also Althusser, Louis; Goldenweiser, Alexander A.; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lyotard, Jean-François; Parsons, Talcott; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Geertz, C. (1963). *Agricultural involution: The processes of ecological change in Indonesia*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

———. (1980). *Negara: The theatre state in nineteenth-century Bali*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

———. (1995). *After the fact: Two countries, four decades, one anthropologist*. Boston, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (2001). *Available light: Anthropological reflections on philosophical topics*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Geertz, C., Geertz, H., & Rosen, L. (1979). *Meaning and order in Moroccan society: Three essays in cultural analysis*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Inglis, F. (2000). *Clifford Geertz: Culture custom and ethics*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

———. (Ed.). (2010). *Life among the Anthros and other essays by Clifford Geertz*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Kroeber, A. L., & Kluckhohn, C. (1952). *Culture: A critical review of concepts and definitions* (Papers of the Peabody Museum, Harvard University, Vol. 47, No. 1). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University.

Kuper, A. (2000). *Culture: The anthropologist's account*. Boston, MA: Harvard University Press.

Shweder, R. A., & Good, G. (Eds.). (2005). *Clifford Geertz by his colleagues*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

White, B. (2007). Clifford Geertz: Singular genius of interpretive anthropology. *Development and Change, 38*(6), 1187–1208.

Geffray, Christian

After studying philosophy, then anthropology, Christian Geffray (1954–2001) published four books between 1991 and his death in 2001. These make him one of the most remarkable anthropologists of his generation.

Extending the work of Claude Meillassoux in *Ni père, ni mère: Critique de la parenté chez les Makhuwa* (Neither Father nor Mother: Critique of Kinship Among Makhuwa, 1991), Geffray, basing his approach on an examination of reproduction, dismantles the logic of kinship and domestic economy of the Makhuwa societies of Mozambique. Geffray shows in particular that the power of women in this matrilineal and matrilocal society vanishes if one moves from the domestic unit to the realm of marriages. Although in the domestic unit men and junior women work under the control of elder women, men accede to power by controlling marriages. Men marry their sons (over whom they exercise little other control) to their sisters' daughters and further strengthen the control this provides by marrying their granddaughters of the maternal line of their wife to the sons issued from these unions. It is on the basis of social relations of production that Geffray reconstructed the logic of Makhuwa kinship.

But Mozambique was at war, and with the agreement of the authorities, Geffray investigated this subject. *La cause des armes au Mozambique* (The Cause of War in Mozambique, 1990) is a pioneering book in the anthropology of war. Geffray tackled taboo subjects such as the collusion between revolutionary intellectuals and members of the state bureaucracy and the scorn these persons had for traditional village leaders. He showed that the forced relocation of isolated village communities helped support the guerrillas and the ways in which war had become a life project for the peasantry.

Geffray's next project, done under the auspices of the National Institute of Research and Development, concerned various locales on the edge of the Brazilian rain forest and resulted in *Chroniques de la servitude en Amazonie brésilienne* (Chronicles of Servitude in the Brazilian Amazon, 1995). In this work, he questions the power of paternalism as a paradigm and begins to propose an anthropology that connects the forms of social ties to the process of identification

of individual subjects. The specificity of the paternalistic exploitation Geffray found in Brazil is based on the absence of monetary relationships. The boss (*patrão*) has a monopoly on the movement of goods that come to him (latex, lumber, gold, etc.) and on the commercial products he provides. The market value of the products of the labor of his customers is always greater than that of the goods necessary for his subsistence; however, a continual increase in the value of tools and necessities engages the community in a cycle of dependency and a voluntary servitude based on an imaginary debt (one that has been repaid many times over).

The issue of this debt led Geffray to write *Le Nom du maître: Contribution à l'anthropologie analytique* (The Name of the Master: Contribution to Analytical Anthropology, 1997), where, drawing on the theory of the psychoanalyst Jacques Lacan, Geffray theorizes about the identificatory alienation of individual subjects and their collective alienation to a "We," tackling questions about the relationship between individual subjectivities and larger social collectives. These reflections continue with *Trésors: Anthropologie analytique de la valeur* (Treasure: Analytical Anthropology of Value, 2001). Drawing from the worlds of the ancient Greeks, the Yanomami, the Trobriand Islanders, and the Cheyenne, Geffray reflects on what determines value in social life. His answer is that the circulation of death (including the willingness to engage in transactions that put one's life at stake), of gifts, and of commodities makes life meaningful. Geffray then shows the recurrence of an opposition between, on the one hand, faith, the oath of loyalty, and the dignity of men and, on the other, the calculations that determine the relative value of commodities but are indifferent to honor. With goods, the belief in the truth of the subject's speech are no longer at stake, and it is instead the measurable value of the object.

Geffray also co-led an international research program on cocaine, conducting research in prisons in Mexico, Bolivia, and Brazil. With Frederic Letang, he codirected a film, *La terre de la pein* (Land of Suffering, 1997), shot in the Amazon state of Para, that shows the pure violence regulating social relations. The movie shows *fazendeiros* ("land-owning farmers") sure of their rights after having cleared the jungle, building roads and cities, announcing, "If they continue, they will die," speaking about the exploited people who occupy their land.

During his short career, Geffray's work was published in *Politique Africaine*, *les Cahiers d'Etudes Africaines*, *International Social Science Journal*, *Lusothopie*, *Cahiers de sciences humaines*, *Autrepart*, *Revista Internacional de Estudos Áfricanos*, and *Trabalhos de Arqueologia e Antropologia*. Although there are Portugese translations of his work, none have yet appeared in English.

Gérald Gaillard

See also Lacan, Jacques; Meillassoux, Claude

Further Readings

Copans, J., & Dozon, J.-P. (2001). Christian Geffray, 1954–2001. *Cahiers d'études africaines, 41*(162), 239–242.

Goudineau, Y. (2001). Christian Geffray, 1954–2001. De la valeur des choses à la valeur de l'homme [On the value of things and the value of people]. *Autrepart, 3*(19), 5–10.

———. (2001). La valeur des biens contre les hommes de valeur: Sur l'anthropologie analytique de Christian Geffray [The value of goods versus men of value: On the analytical anthropology of Christian Geffray]. *Anthropologie et Sociétés, 25*(3), 123–136.

Guillaud, Y., & Letang, F. (Eds.). (2009). *Du Social hors la loi: L'anthropologie analytique de Christian Geffray* [The social outside the law: The analytic anthropology of Christian Geffray]. Paris, France: IRD-Orstom.

Héritier, F. (2001). Christian Geffray, 1954–2001. *L'Homme, 160,* 7–10.

Meillassoux, C. (2001). Hommage à Christian Geffray. *Journal des anthropologues, 87,* 219–221.

Simoney, D. (2001). Christian Geffray, 1954–2001. *La Clinique lacanienne, 5,* 198–201.

Gender and Anthropology

It might fairly be said (to paraphrase the poet Philip Larkin's claim that sexual intercourse began in 1963) that "gender" in anthropology began in 1975 with the publication of Gayle Rubin's article "The Traffic in Women." In her article, Rubin argued that social practices such as marriage exchanges established a "sex/gender system" that divided humans into at least two genders and established borders between them. "Women" and "men" were thus cultural categories, as exchangers and objects for exchange. The article was both an appreciation and a critique

of Claude Lévi-Strauss. Rubin credited Lévi-Strauss with placing the exchange of women at the center of social life. She criticized him for not taking the opening offered by his theory on the arbitrariness of boundaries but rather building that theory on the assumption that the male/female boundary was a part of nature that men might use as a reference point for culturally imposed divisions such as those between brothers and brothers-in-law, creditors and debtors, and even nature and culture. It was central to Lévi-Strauss's argument that the difference between two *kinds* of women, sisters and wives, be seen as culturally imposed (and therefore arbitrary). This artificial division was the basis of the incest taboo, which in turn was the basis for the complex systems of exchange that, as Marcel Mauss had argued in *The Gift*, constituted social life in preindustrial societies. Neither Lévi-Strauss nor Mauss, however, felt it necessary to ask why men exchanged women and not the reverse.

Because the boundaries between sisters and wives were artificial, according to Lévi-Strauss, they needed defending, and in his study of totemism, he argued that this arbitrary division was propped up by naturalizing the divisions between the unilineal clans that exchanged wives, so that they were equated with the divisions between plant and animal species. The consequences that might ensue if "men" and "women" were themselves seen as arbitrary categories did not enter into the arguments of these two magisterial works. Ironically, in 1949, the same year that Lévi-Strauss published *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*, Simone de Beauvoir, his classmate, argued in *The Second Sex* that "Woman" was made, not born, citing him in her introduction as someone whose general line of thinking had influenced her argument. It took until the mid-1970s for de Beauvoir's work to exert a worldwide influence in anthropology through Sherry Ortner's 1972 essay "Is Female to Male as Nature Is to Culture," in which the author argued, citing both de Beauvoir and Lévi-Strauss, that the ability to give birth made women convenient symbols for the "natural" (and therefore less human) aspects of social life, establishing the basis of what she believed to be universal female subordination.

This entry examines some key work in ethnography and theory to see what insights anthropology offered before and after this turning point in the 1970s toward understanding the production and workings of "sex/gender" systems, emphasizing analysis rather than a comprehensive survey. *Gender* in this discussion will be understood to mean the social categories developed around, but by no means determined by, the biological facts of sexual difference, while *sex* and *sexuality* refer to erotic desires and behaviors as these are defined, permitted, mandated, or prohibited in sociocultural contexts. The notion of a "sex/gender system" was premised on the belief that the regimes of "sex" and "gender" were defined in interconnecting ways and that scholars (and activists wishing to change the rules) needed to approach them with these interconnections in mind.

Significant Developments in Gender Studies

Sexuality and the status of women were interconnected themes in some classic 19th-century writings on cultural evolution. Lewis Henry Morgan and Friedrich Engels (who borrowed heavily from Morgan) argued that early human groups had been both promiscuous and matriarchal. With the development of technology and human knowledge, the desire of males to pass their property to their own offspring was said to have led to the development of patriarchy. Polygamy, prostitution, and ultimately a form of monogamy, in which fathers headed families, replaced both the imagined "primitive promiscuity" and group marriage of the early hunter-gatherers and the matriarchal clans linked by "pairing" marriages, said to have characterized early village life. Although for Engels and Morgan, promiscuity and matriarchy were linked to the most primitive states of humankind, both looked forward to a more egalitarian regime for women in the future. Work of this type put sexuality, gender roles, and the regimes of kinship and marriage that were linked to them at the core of anthropological theory; later, they were to become uncoupled and relatively marginalized, at least until the later 20th century.

In the 1920s, Bronisław Malinowski published a series of works based on his fieldwork during World War I in the Trobriand Islands off the coast of New Guinea. According to Malinowski, the Trobrianders traced clan membership through women and encouraged sexual experimentation among adolescents. Malinowski wrote extensively about these matters but stressed repeatedly that premarital sex was followed by stable marriages and that matriliny did not mean matriarchy. His work on the relationship

between kinship and exchange provided an important impetus for Mauss. Malinowski stressed the social importance of fatherhood in a society in which, he alleged, people were unaware of the facts of physiological paternity. To some degree, he saw the Trobrianders as typical of primitive societies, and therefore as an appropriate vehicle for rejecting the matriarchal theorists. Malinowski rejected Freud's ideas about the Oedipus complex, arguing that family dynamics varied in cultures with differing regimes of kinship and marriage, but he mainly relied on a single example, the Trobrianders, in his critique of Freud. An important trend in the mid-20th century, the period that followed Malinowski's work, was that "kinship," "marriage," "sex," and "women's roles" became to some degree independent topics in the anthropological literature, coupled with the assumption that each was subject to a wide range of variation.

Margaret Mead, whose first book, *Coming of Age in Samoa*, was published in 1928, the same year as Malinowski's *The Sexual Life of Savages in Northwestern Melanesia*, wrote several works that dealt with sexuality, gender roles, and particularly child socialization. She described a series of societies in Polynesia and Melanesia in which rules about sexuality, marriage, and gender roles differed greatly, and during the 1930s, her main stress was on these differences. She argued against universal theories of sex and gender, seeing cultures as setting their own rules in accord with broadly defined "values" such as competitiveness or cooperation. In 1949 (the same year as *The Second Sex* and *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*), Mead published *Male and Female*, a comparative study of gender role development in seven different cultures. While Mead did not reject the idea of variability of men's and women's roles, she argued that women were unlikely to be happy in societies that did not make provision for and place a high value on child rearing. One could, therefore, argue that this book had an essentialist dimension, presuming rather than seeking to explain women's nurturing role. *Male and Female* was singled out for criticism by Betty Friedan in *The Feminine Mystique*, a foundational work of second-wave feminism. Friedan alleges that Mead had given up her stance on the relativity of gender norms to argue for a normative femininity centered on motherhood. The book was one of many writings of the Culture-and-Personality school and its descendants, continuing to the present in works like those of Nancy Scheper-Hughes, which discuss gender largely through the lens of motherhood.

British anthropology after Malinowski had relatively little to say about gender. Functionalism had a theoretical bias in favor of coherence rather than disjuncture in its presentation of individual societies; thus, studies of kinship and marriage discussed marriage arrangements in terms of social stability but did not question the basic assumptions of natural gender differences. Some functionalist ethnographies included brief remarks about the status of women in various societies, usually arguing that women supported the status quo, regarding matters such as polygamy, wife beating, and female circumcision. Anthropologists outside Britain as well have frequently defended the people they studied against stereotyping by playing down the effects of gender inequality. Within the functionalist tradition, Audrey Richards and Phyllis Kaberry wrote book-length treatments of women's roles in the communities they studied but did not examine gender as such.

Some data potentially critical of a naturalized view of sex/gender did emerge from functionalist accounts, notably E. E. Evans-Pritchard's account of woman-woman marriage among the Nuer, a custom that contributed to Rubin's notion of a sex/gender system, despite Evans-Pritchard's insistence that female husbands (and perhaps more significantly female fathers) were a legal fiction to allow for the inheritance of cattle in the absence of a suitable male heir. In this discussion, as well as in his accounts of marriages of women to the ghosts of dead men and the treatment of Nuer children born of adultery, Evans-Pritchard reiterated the distinction between biological and social paternity, a notion somewhat canonical in British functionalism, though, it must be emphasized, without interrogating the notion of gender itself. Many years later, Evans-Pritchard published an article on marriages between adolescent boys and young men among the Azande, which were succeeded by heterosexual marriages at the appropriate stage of life. Though Evans-Pritchard did not draw the conclusion that gender might be a fluid category, even within an individual lifetime, this article was cited by later scholars, such as Gilbert Herdt, in support of such arguments.

In the 1980s, scholars began to examine gender as a social construct. One very important early work in this area was Herdt's 1981 study *The Guardians*

of the Flutes. Herdt described male initiation in a New Guinea society in which masculinity was believed to be a gradually acquired and precarious status, dependent on the ingestion of semen by boys, on rituals of nose bleeding and the consumption of certain tree saps by adults, as well as the avoidance of female pollution. According to Herdt, Sambia culture suggested that both gender identity and sexual orientation might best be considered as processes rather than statuses.

Work such as Herdt's had an impact on feminist thinking both inside and outside the academy. In 1982, in a conference paper titled "Thinking Sex," Rubin revised her earlier suggestion that, insofar as they were mutually constructed, sex and gender norms could be concurrently addressed by the feminist movement, both intellectually and in the realm of practical politics. In "Thinking Sex," Rubin argued that feminists had not been a force for the dismantling of restrictive sexual norms and had, in fact, allied with sexual conservatives on key issues such as pornography. The conference at which "Thinking Sex" was presented was picketed by feminists opposed to pornography, and Rubin herself was singled out for attack because she had engaged in research and advocacy with groups in San Francisco supportive of consensual sadomasochistic practices. The conference proceedings were ultimately published in *Pleasure and Danger: Exploring Female Sexuality* (1984), edited by the anthropologist Carole Vance, who had been one of the leading organizers of the conference. Despite this collaboration, feminist anthropology and the anthropology of sexuality have remained largely separate during the past 30 years.

Feminist studies in anthropology, which have often claimed to be about "gender," have been concerned with diverse issues—among them women's strategies for empowerment; women's work; women's health and reproductive issues; the intersection of gender, race, and class; and a reevaluation of the treatment of gender in the study of human evolution and primatology. Traditional "kinship" studies were reinvented so that families could be studied as a site of gender construction and contestation. For example, Lila Abu Lughod challenged traditional anthropological notions of culture to portray Bedouin life as a set of multiple voices, male, female, old, and young, rather than as a unified system of values and statuses.

All of these studies might fairly be said to have stressed the "gender" side of sex/gender, though certainly "sex" made up a significant part of some of the studies, particularly in connection with topics such as HIV, AIDS, birth control, and sex work. Indeed, an important part of the argument of many works was that discourses about "sex" (e.g., discussions of prostitution) were ultimately discourses about gender and power relations.

Heterosexuality and Homosexuality

Since the 1970s, a large body of writing has emerged that does stress sexuality, particularly same-sex sexuality, and in some cases integrates it with discussions of gender, particularly in works about gender categories other than "male" and "female." Esther Newton's influential work on drag queens analyzed their performances as a challenge to the prevailing norms of sex and gender in the United States. Earlier anthropological and archival literature on so-called berdaches (from the French *bardache*, for "catamite")—socially recognized cross-dressing, cross-gender, or "third gender" individuals in many Native North American cultures—was reexamined. These studies had often seen these customs in terms of homosexuality, with varying attitudes on the part of the anthropologists; some anthropologists in the first half of the 20th century had treated them as ritualized cross-dressing and had denied a sexual component. New fieldwork showed that these institutions had either fallen into disuse or greatly changed their meaning.

Studies in the 1980s and 1990s varied in the degree to which they saw such phenomena as forms of "homosexuality," a discussion made more complex by the identification of some contemporary gay Native Americans with these traditional forms, once called "berdache" and since the1990s increasingly called "two-spirit," to include the religious dimension that such institutions had in many traditions. Harriet Whitehead wrote a much cited article in which she stressed the performance of work and the kinship roles usually assigned to the opposite sex as the key parameters in such institutions—rather than erotic desire. Others, such as Walter Williams, argued that anthropologists should not neglect the erotic when discussing the multiple aspects of institutionalized transgender behavior in Native North America. The many other anthropological studies

of gender-crossing institutions in North America, Polynesia, Siberia, India, Brazil, and elsewhere that have been published during the past 30 years have stressed that gender categories, erotic desire and behavior, and many other aspects of life, religious and secular, may be interconnected in local understandings of figures such as the two-spirit, the Tahitian *mahu*, the Polynesian *fa'afafine*, the Brazilian *travesti*, the Indian *hijra*, and the Albanian sworn virgin. Some of these figures were accepted in their cultures, some were stigmatized, but all were recognized as distinct categories of human beings.

Contemporary literature has pointed to a rethinking of gender and sexuality, indeed of personhood itself, that rejected essences in favor of varying bundles of characteristics that constitute local understandings of *gender* and *sexuality*. These writings challenged Eurocentric notions of "homosexuality" as well as of "gender," since the components of the institutions described varied from place to place. Two such challenges are worth noting: Deborah Elliston criticized Herdt for using the word *homosexual* to describe the Sambia practice of inseminating initiates by means of fellatio because Sambia understandings of what they were doing were not congruent with English speakers' understandings of "homosexual" behavior; Herdt, in fact, dropped the word in later publications. Another discussion where anthropologists' understandings of the malleability of gender boundaries and same-sex relationships coincide concerns woman-woman couples in which one partner adopts a "masculine" role and the other a more "feminine" one. In lesbian communities in the United States, such "butch-femme" roles had been rejected by feminists as reifications of the gender norms of the dominant culture. However, anthropologists like Evelyn Blackwood, Saskia Wieringa, and Megan Sinnott found that roles of this type were recognized in a variety of cultures, while Elizabeth Kennedy and Madelyn Davis argued in *Boots of Leather, Slippers of Gold* that their historical role in the United States challenged the sex/gender system at a time when lesbians were highly stigmatized.

It has become clear to scholars in many fields that categories such as "homosexual," "heterosexual," and "masculine" and "feminine" are highly contingent, and they are now often discussed in the plural: sexualities, homosexualities, and femininities and masculinities. Anthropology has played a leading role in questioning these taken-for-granted but misleading understandings.

Harriet D. Lyons

See also Abu-Lughod, Lila; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Freud, Sigmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Malinowski, Bronisław; Mauss, Marcel; Mead, Margaret; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Ortner, Sherry; Richards, Audrey

Further Readings

Abu Lughod, L. (1986). *Veiled sentiments: Honor and poetry in a Bedouin society*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Blackwood, E., & Wieringa, S. E. (Eds.). (1999). *Same-sex relations and female desires: Transgender practices across cultures*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Engels, F. (1986). *The origin of the family, private property and the state*. London, UK: Penguin Books. (Original work published 1884)

Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (1970). Sexual inversion among the Azande. *American Anthropologist, 72*(6), 1428–1434.

Herdt, G. (1981). *Guardians of the flutes: Idioms of masculinity*. New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

Jacobs, S.-E., Thomas, W., & Lang, S. (Eds.). (1997). *Two-spirit people: Native American gender identity, sexuality, and spirituality*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Kulick, D. (1998). *Travesti: Sex, gender and culture among Brazilian transgendered prostitutes*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Nanda, S. (1990). *Neither man nor woman: The hijras of India*. Belmont, CA: Wadsworth.

Newton, E. (1972). *Mother camp: Female impersonators in America*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Ortner, S. B. (1972). Is female to male as nature is to culture? In M. Z. Rosaldo & L. Lamphere (Eds.), *Woman, culture and society* (pp. 67–88). Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Rubin, G. (2011). *Deviations: A Gayle Rubin reader*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press. (Contains the articles mentioned above and a selection of Rubin's other work)

Whitehead, H. (1982). The bow and the burden strap: A new look at institutionalized homosexuality in Native North America. In S. B. Ortner & H. Whitehead (Eds.), *Sexual meanings: The cultural construction of gender and sexuality* (pp. 80–115). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Gender Diversity

Gender diversity, sometimes called sex/gender diversity, is related to, but different from, *sex*, the biologically differentiated status of male or female; *gender*, the social, cultural, and psychological constructions imposed on sexual differences; and *sexuality*, which refers to erotic desires, sexual practices, or sexual orientation. There is no simple, universal, or inevitable correspondence between sex, gender, sexuality, and gender diversity, which is today primarily understood as a cultural construction.

Roles transcending the sex/gender binaries of male and female, man and woman, exist in societies at all levels of cultural complexity and in all parts of the world. Sex/gender diversity is variably associated with sexual orientation, sexual practice, cross-dressing, occupation, or a range of biologically rooted intersex conditions. Sex- or gender-variant individuals are culturally often distinguished from both men and women, understood as a "mixture" of masculine and feminine qualities, which may be expressed in dress, behavior, or occupation.

Various theories and perspectives attempt to explain the occurrence and specific forms of sex/gender diversity. Until the mid-20th century, biological factors and medical perspectives dominated, but in the past 50 years, the view that both gender and sex are cultural constructions has become perhaps equally important. While traditional cultural factors are important in explaining specific forms of sex/gender diversity, these forms have also been influenced by colonialism, modernization, and contemporary globalization.

The common Euro-American identification of sex/gender diversity with homosexuality and the essentialized identity of "the homosexual" is *not* universal. It has frequently been misapplied in other cultures, where homosexual desire and practice are not viewed either as permanent or even as important components in the definition of gender. In Brazil, a male who takes the masculine role in same-sex relations is not considered sexually deviant or even marginal, while in Thailand and Indonesia, same-sex relationships are defined not by sex but rather as relationships embodying the complementary gender roles of masculine and feminine. These relationships are differentiated from the Western concept "gay," which has diffused globally but takes on various meanings in different cultures.

Most recorded alternative gender roles are associated with males rather than with females, perhaps because of the more contingent nature of the development of masculinity, perhaps because of male power dominance in most societies, or even perhaps because of male bias in ethnographic research. Alternative female gender roles are, however, found in many cultures, such as the "sworn virgin" of the Balkans, the *sadhin* of India, the Mohave *hwame*, or the contemporary *tombois* of Indonesia. The gender-diverse roles of the Hawaiian *mahu*, the Thai *kathoey*, or the Indonesian *bissu* traditionally applied to either males or females, though under the impact of patriarchal colonial cultures, they now refer mainly to feminine males.

While in contemporary societies, fear, ridicule, and even legal sanctions may attach to alternative gender roles, traditionally, gender-variant individuals were accepted and sometimes even highly valued. Native American *two-spirit* persons, for example, were often healers and shamans, and the Indian *hijras* and Brazilian *pasivos* are also associated with powerful ritual roles and magical powers.

In precontact Hawaii, the *mahu* (literally, hermaphrodite) were valued caregivers for children and the elderly, were considered highly skilled in the traditional arts of hula and chanting, and were keepers of cultural tradition. Under the impact of American colonialism, *mahu* became a derogatory term applied to effeminate males or male-to-female transgendered individuals, but with the contemporary renaissance of Hawaiian culture, the role is taking on its older, more positive meanings.

In Thailand and the Philippines, the adoption of Western psycho-medical theories of sexuality and sexual orientation resulted in gender diversity being treated as a mental illness, an important departure from its traditionally accepted status. In addition, the contemporary association of gender-variant males with sex work has degraded their popular image. In some Muslim nations like Malaysia, gender diversity is considered incompatible with the current religious emphasis on marriage and "family values."

Simultaneously, however, due partly to the global spread of a human rights ideology and the high status associated with "modernization," integrating gender-variant persons into civil society has become an issue of national debate in many societies, including Muslim societies like Pakistan. In Thailand, Tonga, and the Philippines, the widespread participation of

gender-diverse males in transgender beauty contests connects them to a modern, glamorous persona, which is viewed as a source of national prestige. In Indonesia, the gender-variant *waria* have gained popular respect and even state support through their expertise in creating a wedding industry that valorizes a "true Indonesian image" and encourages national unity.

Various theories may help explain gender diversity in a particular society, though none is conclusive. One of these theories is gender differentiation—that is, the extent to which gender roles are well-defined, specialized, and hierarchical as opposed to fluid, overlapping, and egalitarian. But India, for example, has high gender differentiation yet also contains several gender-variant roles, while many Native American cultures, which have relatively low gender differentiation, also have a high degree of sex/gender diversity.

Another important factor is the culturally variable idea of the person. Hinduism, which explicitly recognizes that humans achieve their ultimate goals by following many different paths of life, affords the individual temperament wide latitude in behavior, including gender transformations, thus providing psychic space for the expression of *hijra* transgenderism. In Oman, also, where the social philosophy accepts that people are created with dissimilar natures and are imperfect, like the world itself, a social space is permitted for the mixed-gender role of the *xanith*. *Xanith* status is not considered permanent: If a *xanith* marries and proves his male sexual potency on the wedding night, he will be reclassified as a man. Native American ideologies also give wide scope to individual differences, institutionalizing them in social roles rather than driving them underground. In these and other societies, sexual and gender transformations over a lifetime may be viewed as natural, a perspective that inhibits negative moral evaluations, punishment, or even pressures to conform. Unlike in the West, many societies, for example, in Polynesia, are little concerned with *why* individuals become the way they are or why they change from one role to another.

In addition, the Western emphasis on cultural binaries—nature/culture, male/female, man/woman, and homosexual/heterosexual—is not significant in many cultures. In the West, this ideology has been imposed not only on gender roles and gender identities but on sexual anomalies as well. Thus, *transsexuality* became the major category of sex/gender diversity since the 1950s, when individuals who experienced their bodies as incongruent with their gender identity could take advantage of the development of sex reassignment surgery and become members of the *opposite* sex, a form of gender diversity that has gradually been integrated into Western cultures.

Today, however, both *transgenderism* and *intersexuality* are challenging the dominance of transsexualism. These terms cover many different subjective experiences, physical/biological conditions, and outward expressions of gender. Both the transgender and the intersexuality movements reject the hold that psychological and medical professionals have had in defining and "curing" sex/gender diversity. They claim that, among other things, such control violates the predominant American cultural value that enshrines the individual as the autonomous unit of decision making. This view, supported by a human rights agenda, is now going global, appearing, for example, in the expansion of transgender and intersex websites accessible to people throughout the world.

In comparison with transsexualism, transgenderism and intersexuality raise theoretical questions about the influence of culture not just on gender but also on sex—that is, our understanding of what is biological and "natural." The transgender and intersex movements have been empowered by knowledge about sex/gender diversity throughout the world. This increasing knowledge of the "other" has led to a closer look at the constructed nature and assumptions of our own sex/gender system and has resulted in more accommodation for sex/gender diversity.

Serena Nanda

See also Gender and Anthropology

Further Readings

Boelstorff, T. (2005). *The gay archipelago: Sexuality and nation in Indonesia*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Herdt, G. (1996). *Third sex third gender: Beyond sexual dimorphism in culture and history*. New York, NY: Zone Books.

Jackson, P. (1999). *Lady boys, tom boys, rentboys: Male and female homosexualities in contemporary Thailand*. Binghamton, NY: Haworth Press.

Karkazis, K. (2008). *Fixing sex: Intersex, medical authority, and lived experience*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Matzner, A. (2001). *'O au no keia: Voices from Hawai'i's Mahu and transgender community.* Philadelphia, PA: XLibris.

Nanda, S. (2000). *Gender diversity: Crosscultural variations*. Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland Press.

Peletz, M. (2009). *Gender pluralism: Southeast Asia since early modern times*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Reddy, G. (2005). *With respect to sex: Negotiating hijra identity in South India.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Valentine, D. (2007). *Imagining transgender: An ethnography of a category.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Winter, S. (2006). *Transphobia: A price worth paying for gender identity disorder?* Retrieved from Transgender Asia: http://www.transgenderasia.org/

Gene-Culture Coevolution

Coevolution refers to a process where two or more different inherited traits affect selection on one another. Some of the most famous cases relate to coevolution between predators and prey or between host-defense mechanisms and parasite virulence. In these examples, both traits are typically expressed as a result of genetic inheritance. By contrast, a prerequisite for gene-culture coevolution is that there are two different tracks of inheritance; one for genetically transmitted information and the other for culturally transmitted information. Gene-culture coevolutionary theory examines the interactions between traits that are derived from these two inheritance systems.

How Genetic and Cultural Inheritance Systems Interact

Many animals can learn from one other. However, learned behavior that is socially transmitted across many generations can in some cases constitute a consistent environment that affects genetic selection. Gene-culture coevolution ensues if there is a statistical association between the differential fitness of genetically inherited variants and culturally inherited variants. For these occasions, either a purely genetic or a purely cultural model underspecifies the evolution of phenotypic variation. Thus, the most parsimonious unit of selection is the combination of each genetic variant and cultural variant, sometimes referred to as the *phenogenotype*.

Necessarily, gene-culture coevolution describes systems where the phenotypic variation under investigation is highly unlikely to be explained only by genetic variation. For instance, while the genetic makeup of humans may contribute to their intelligence, it would be ridiculous to suggest that variation in particular types of farming methods can be explained by genetic variation across human farming populations. Yet different farming technologies can be stably transmitted across generations, and thus modeled as an evolutionary process that is subject to descent with modification.

A gene-culture coevolutionary model is developed by explicitly accounting for (1) the transmission of genetic and cultural variants between generations, accounting for phenogenotype mating probabilities and biases in the pathways of cultural transmission, and (2) the differential fitness of the phenogenotypes per generation. For diploid organisms, genetic information is commonly transmitted vertically, from parents to offspring. Cultural information, however, is often recognized to be transmitted vertically, obliquely (between generations but not from parents to offspring), horizontally (within a generation), or some combination thereof. Gene-culture coevolution requires the stable transmission of cultural variants across generations and thus, typically, is assumed to rely on vertical transmission, oblique transmission, or a mechanism whereby individuals conform to commonly held views or beliefs.

By accounting for both patterns of transmission and fitness, the relative frequency of phenogenotypes can be traced across generations. Initially, gene-culture coevolutionary models were developed by modifying population genetic theory to account for culturally specific forms of inheritance. For instance, the two-locus model can be modified to consider the coevolution of a genetic trait and a cultural trait, in place of two genetic traits at separate loci.

These relatively simple systems were tractable for mathematical analysis and yet yielded a rich set of dynamics that provided predictions distinct from those of equivalent genetic models. This is because the cultural-trait dynamics often behave differently than genetic-trait dynamics. Cultural variants can spread much faster than genetic variants and can alter the rate of genetic evolution. For instance, the

effect of farming on available diet is likely to have increased the rate of genetic evolution, affecting physiology and disease resistance. Alternatively, the swift cultural evolution of health interventions can potentially buffer or shield otherwise deleterious genetic variants from selection. Furthermore, patterns of cultural transmission can be biased in ways that are distinct from genetic transmission, altering evolutionary trajectories by modulating the statistical association between the cultural and genetic variants.

Comparisons With Other Approaches

Gene-culture coevolutionary theory has been contrasted with a number of other approaches to explain the evolution of human behavior. The school of human behavioral ecology typically assumes that behavior is adaptive and evolves to maximize lifetime reproductive success, while evolutionary psychologists often assume that psychological predispositions are adaptations to past environments during human evolution. By contrast, gene-culture coevolutionary models are typically minimalist in this regard, as they do not require either assumption to hold.

A second difference from the approaches of these other schools is the explicit distinction between genetic and cultural transmission systems. While many human behavioral ecologists and evolutionary psychologists would not deny that cultural transmission occurs, gene-culture coevolutionary theorists emphasize that some patterns of behavior and psychology are affected by the interactions between genes and culture over evolutionary time.

Cultural Niche Construction and Rapid Genetic Selection of Traits

Since the sequencing of the human genome, a substantial number of genes have been identified as having been subject to rapid and recent selection. Many of these genes have putative functions whose fitness may have been affected by a culturally modified environment, sometimes referred to as *cultural niche construction*, and thus are prime candidates for gene-culture coevolution. The functional domains for these genes include the capacity for learning, forms of intelligence, and the facility for language (e.g., FOXP2). It is easy to envisage that a selective advantage for the capacity for innovation and social learning of adaptive information could coevolve with cumulative adaptive knowledge.

The cultural evolution of some innovations is likely to have affected the recent and rapid genetic evolution of anatomical, physiological, and immune-related traits. For instance, the cultural transmission of cooking techniques and the production of new diets may have affected the selection of genes relating to reduced jaw musculature and metabolism, respectively. Furthermore, it is highly plausible that farming practices and domestication in the Neolithic provoked strong selection in disease susceptibility genes through exposure to infectious and nutritional disease.

Other genes that appear to have been subject to recent, rapid selection contribute to external physical characteristics such as hair, eye, and skin color. These traits may have been subject to selection induced by cultural influences on patterns of human migration, affecting survival in particular physical environments, such as the effect of low–ultra violet rays outside the tropics on selection for skin depigmentation to enhance vitamin D biosynthesis. Also, external features can be subject to sexual selection, coevolving with culturally transmitted mating preferences.

The best known case of gene-culture coevolution is perhaps that of dairy farming and lactase persistence. Following weaning, most mammals, including most humans, cannot digest the sugar lactose, found in unprocessed milk, as they cease production of the enzyme lactase, which helps break down the sugar. However, a small number of independently evolved genetic variants originating in European, African, and Middle Eastern populations allow the persistence of lactose absorption after weaning through continued high production of lactase. For instance, most Europeans are lactose tolerant as a result of a single nucleotide base substitution in a region of the genome that promotes lactase gene activity.

It is now well established that the European genetic variant for lactase persistence spread as a consequence of dairy farming in the Neolithic, approximately 7,500 years ago. Gene-culture coevolutionary models showed that for lactase persistence to spread it was important that there was a high probability of cultural transmission for using dairy products between generations, which would facilitate a statistical association between dairy farming and the genetic variant over evolutionary time.

The coevolutionary explanation was supported further by evidence that dairy farming originated prior to the evolution of lactase-persistent alleles and thus provided the selective environment for the genetic evolution of lactase persistence, and not the other way around. Among dairy farmers, those individuals who exhibit the lactase-persistent variant would be at a selective advantage, benefiting from the consumption of milk—a regular, nutrient-rich, and high-calorie dietary supplement. Thus, the genetic trait and the cultural practice coevolved.

An interesting example of gene-culture coevolution relating farming and disease resistance is found in West African, Kwa-speaking populations of yam cultivators, who cut clearings in forests to grow crops, with a cascade of consequences. The clearings increase the amount of standing water, which provides a better breeding ground for mosquitoes and increases the prevalence of malaria. One consequence of the culturally transmitted farming practice was to provoke genetic selection for malarial resistance in these yam-cultivating populations.

In most human populations, the sickle-cell allele, HbS (sickle hemoglobin), is rare as it results in sickle-cell anemia in its recessive homozygous form (expressed when both gene copies are of type HbS). However, in the heterozygous form (i.e., where only one copy is of type HbS) the sickle-cell allele confers protection against malaria, with only mild sickling of the red blood cells. This heterozygous form is more prevalent in the West African yam-cultivating populations than in neighboring non-yam-cultivating populations, indicating that the cultural practice has coevolved with malarial resistance. Interestingly, the relatively high frequency of sickle cell may actually encourage further yam cultivation, as these crops appear to have medicinal properties circumventing the sickling effects.

The gene-culture coevolutionary system can also apply across species. A classic case is the coevolution of human antibiotic use and bacterial antibiotic-resistant strains. This is effectively a special case of a host-parasite coevolutionary system, where the host behavior, antibiotic use, is culturally derived. Cultural transmission of antibiotic use favors selection of resistant bacterial strains, which in turn can result in cultural selection for the avoidance of antibiotic use. Thus, culturally transmitted host behavior can maintain bacterial strain polymorphism where it would not otherwise be expected.

Possible Derivation of Prosocial Behaviors

Aspects of prosocial behavior, characteristically exhibited in humans more than in other primates, may have been derived through gene-culture coevolution. This argument has been made to explain a number of prosocial features, including a propensity for conformity to norm adherence; strong reciprocity, where the cooperative activity of others is rewarded while norm violators are punished at a cost to the punisher; and parochial altruism, where altruism is only directed within a culturally defined group. These prosocial predispositions can encourage the cultural evolution of symbolic group markers, assortative mating, and low genetic mixing between groups. Genetic selection may then occur on prosocial predispositions across groups. For instance, within-group cooperative behavior can enhance food productivity and also success in between-group conflict. These prosocial predispositions evolve if their benefits, accrued as a consequence of group structure, outweigh their within-group costs. Gene-culture coevolution of prosociality occurs if the fitness advantage of the prosocial genetic predispositions is reliant on the stable cultural inheritance of normative variants that are not themselves prescribed by genetic makeup.

Sex Ratios and Gene-Culture Coevolution

A final example of gene-culture coevolution pertains to the genetic evolution of sex ratio distorter genes and the cultural evolution of preference for sons, manifest, for example, through the neglect of female offspring, sex-selective abortion, or direct (female) infanticide. Sex ratio distorter genes can affect the sex at conception, for instance, by altering the proportion or viability of sperm carrying an X or Y chromosome. The primary sex ratio, that is the fraction of male offspring from a mating prior to any sex-specific mortality, can differ from the adult sex ratio, measured at reproductive age. Gene-culture coevolutionary models have shown that a female-biased primary sex ratio can evolve if parents always increase their proportion of sons by a fixed amount, compensating for loss of daughters by having more children. In this case, the mating success of an excess of sons is less than that of daughters, resulting in an increase in the frequency of female bias distorter genes. Eventually, the strength of parental bias for sons over daughters matches the female-biased primary sex ratio,

resulting in an unbiased adult sex ratio (recovering a standard result in sex ratio theory). In contrast, if parents attempt to bring their offspring's sex ratio closer to their ideal preference but without compensating for offspring loss, models predict that the primary sex ratio can become biased until it matches the male-biased preference exhibited in the adult sex ratio. Thereafter, there would be no further sex ratio adjustment by parents as the primary sex ratio matches their ideal preference.

The Future

The future of gene-culture coevolutionary studies lies in examining the possible interactions between culturally transmitted practices and specific genes that have undergone rapid and recent selection. This is a complex, interdisciplinary task, often requiring geneticists, psychologists, archaeologists, anthropologists, demographers, mathematicians, and computer scientists. Cross-population studies are required to identify signatures of genetic selection, and often, complex gene functions need to be established. Meanwhile, archaeological and anthropological data are needed to infer rates of cultural change based on particular patterns of cultural transmission, cognitive biases, and demographic change. Mathematical models and computer simulation studies can then rederive the most likely patterns of genetic and cultural evolution, testing for interactions that suggest gene-culture coevolution.

Jeremy R. Kendal

See also Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Human Behavioral Ecology

Further Readings

Feldman, M. W., & Laland, K. N. (1996). Gene-culture coevolution theory. *Trends in Ecology & Evolution, 11,* 453–457.

Gerbault, P., Liebert, A., Itan, Y., Powell, A., Currat, M., Burge, J., . . . Thomas, M. G. (2011). Evolution of lactase persistence: An example of human niche construction. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences, 366,* 863–877.

Laland, K. N., Kumm, J., & Feldman, M. W. (1995). Gene-culture coevolutionary theory: A test case. *Current Anthropology, 36,* 131–156. (This article describes the sex ratio model)

Laland, K. N., Odling-Smee, J., & Myles, S. (2010). How culture shaped the human genome: Bringing genetics and the human sciences together. *Nature Reviews Genetics, 11,* 137–149.

Perry, G. H., Dominy, N. J., Claw, K. G., Lee, A. S., Fiegler, H., Redon, R., . . . Stone, A. C. (2007). Diet and the evolution of human amylase gene copy number variation. *Nature Genetics, 39,* 1256–1260.

Richerson, P. J., Boyd, R., & Henrich, J. (2010). Gene-culture coevolution in the age of genomics. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences USA, 107,* 8985–8992.

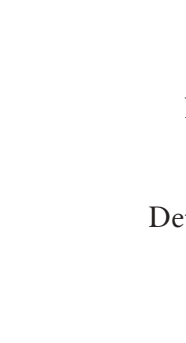
Generative Grammar

As a theory and description of human language, generative grammar (also known as transformational or transformational-generative grammar) conceives of a language as an infinite set of well-formed sentences defined—or "generated" in a mathematical sense—by a series of rules that, collectively, provide for each sentence a multifaceted structural description that includes both the sounds the sentence contains and the meaning that it conveys. On this account, a grammar is to the set of well-formed sentences in a language what the Pythagorean theorem is to the set of well-formed right triangles in a two-dimensional space. Every well-formed right triangle will satisfy the "rule" $x^2 + y^2 = z^2$: The sum of the squares of the lengths of the two sides at right angle to each other (x and y) is equal to the square of the length of the side opposite the right angle (z, which is called the hypotenuse). And every well-formed sentence in a language will satisfy the rules that constitute the generative grammar of that language.

First put forward in 1957 by Noam Chomsky, employing concepts and methods drawn from symbolic logic and mathematics, this formal, set-theoretic approach to language gave rise to numerous revisions and variants in the field of linguistics, but work in social and cultural anthropology has drawn primarily on the fundamental analytical and theoretical principles of generative grammar, described in Chomsky's *Aspects of the Theory of Syntax* (1965) as "a branch of cognitive psychology." In *Aspects*, and virtually all subsequent versions of generative grammar, Phrase Structure Rules specify the internal structure of the words and phrases of a language's sentences without initial reference to their sound or meaning. For example, one type of sentence in

English consists simply of a noun phrase (e.g., *the dog*) followed by a verb phrase (e.g., *ate the food*). A generative grammar can capture this generalization by means of the rule S → NP + VP. To begin generating, or "deriving," a sentence, the grammar applies this rule to "expand" an input symbol S into a three-part syntactic structure that can be graphically presented as a node labeled S (for sentence) dominating two nodes labeled NP (for noun phrase) and VP (for verb phrase):

Other rules can then expand each of the lower nodes in this structure to specify the internal components of the verb phrase (VP → V [for verb] + NP) and the two noun phrases (NP → Det [for determiner] + N [for noun]), to result in the following derivational "tree":



At this point, Lexical Insertion Rules can apply to each of the five bottom-most nodes, to result in the following deep structure:

Although each of the lexical items appearing in the bottom line of such a structure has semantic (meaning specifying) and phonological (sound specifying) content, additional rules must apply to a deep structure to derive a semantic interpretation or a phonological realization of the sentence. Notice, moreover, that the input to the Phrase Structure Rules—the impetus that triggers the sequential application of the rules of the grammar to derive a well-formed sentence—is *not* a meaning to be expressed, or a string of words to be construed, but rather and simply the abstract symbol S. Once triggered, the rules, if they are correct, generate all and only the well-formed sentences of a language, but they do so in an essentially non-predetermined manner. For example, when the first lexical insertion rule applies in the example above, there is nothing in the derivation at that point to force the insertion of *the* as opposed to *a* or *this* or *that*, or any of a number of other lexical items in the category Det. Similarly, when the next node is reached, any item in the category N might be selected. The grammar in no way provides a basis for generating, when needed, a particular sentence to express an intended meaning, to say nothing of providing, when needed, an analysis or interpretation of a particular input sequence of lexical items.

The term *transformational* or *transformational generative* came to be applied to generative grammars because deep structures typically describe the structural relations among elements in sentences in ways that also describe the identical relations among those elements that occur in sentences with different word orders and word structures. For example, the deep structures of the sentences "The dog ate the food." and "Did the dog eat the food?" might be identical except for the presence of a question marker. Before specifying the phonological forms of the bottom-most nodes in the deep structure of the latter sentence, Transformational Rules would derive, because of the presence of the question marker, a surface structure in which the past tense marking on the verb *ate* is extracted, leaving the verb *eat*, and then moved to first position in the sentence, where it becomes *did*, and then a rising pitch is added to the final word of the sentence to mark it as a yes/no question rather than a statement.

Chomsky carefully and repeatedly explains that a generative grammar does not produce (or understand) utterances. Although Chomsky does not use

the analogy to right triangles in a two-dimensional space, he would agree that a grammar generates a language—that is, specifies the membership of the set of sentences in a language—in much the same sense that the Pythagorean theorem generates right triangles. Furthermore, just as the Pythagorean theorem does not pretend to describe how to recognize or draw actual (approximations of) right triangles, so a generative grammar describes neither how to go about achieving an understanding of a particular string of input words nor how to go about expressing a specific intended meaning as a string of words. The rules of a grammar describe, one sentence at a time and in a totally undirected manner, what sounds, words, phrases, and meanings occur in each of the sentences it generates, but not one of these sentences is available on demand. Likewise, the formula $x^2 + y^2 = z^2$ cannot be used to produce or recognize a triangle with the dimensions 3 inches by 4 inches by 5 inches, or any other particular dimensions. Grammars express truths about the sounds, structures, and meanings of a language, but they do not in themselves explain how people manage to say what they mean or to understand what they hear.

Having made this point very clearly, however, Chomsky does go on to posit that (1) linguistic "performance"—the actual production and comprehension of utterances in a language—draws on speakers' and hearers' (tacit) knowledge of the generative grammar of their language, which he calls their linguistic "competence," even though the grammar on its own can only generate sentences in an essentially random manner. He also claims that (2) the grammars of all languages share fundamental structural features, a universal grammar (or UG) innate to the human mind, on which children build the specifics of the generative grammar that underlies a particular language to which the children are exposed.

These two claims—of the psychological reality (as opposed to merely the descriptive truth) of generative grammar and of the innateness of UG—have provoked continued controversy both within linguistics and throughout the biobehavioral and social sciences, and even in the humanities. However, most anthropologists' criticism of the Chomskyan paradigm, as exemplified by the early reactions of John Gumperz and Dell Hymes, has objected less to its psychological and genetic claims than to its arid focus on *structural* norms ("all and only the well-formed sentences of a language"). In its place, many anthropologists have preferred a richer, more *functional* focus on the rough-and-tumble reality of social discourse and the ethnographic variety of language use, which require, in Hymes's terms, "communicative" as opposed to merely linguistic "competence."

H. Stephen Straight

See also Chomsky, Noam; Gumperz, John J.; Hymes, Dell; Structural Functionalism; Structuralism

Further Readings

Chomsky, N. (1957). *Syntactic structures* (Janua Linguarum, Series Minor, 4). The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

———. (1965). *Aspects of the theory of syntax*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Gumperz, J. J. (1982). *Discourse strategies*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Hymes, D. H. (1974). *Foundations in sociolinguistics: An ethnographic approach*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

Gennep, Arnold van

Arnold van Gennep (1873–1957), the French ethnographer and folklorist, was a great scholar in the classical sense, a founding figure of both anthropology and folklore studies, in spite of a blocked academic career.

Biography

Van Gennep was born in Württemberg, southwestern Germany, into a Dutch-French family. He was 6 years old when his parents separated, after which he lived in Lyons, where his mother remarried. Such dislocations had a definite impact on van Gennep's character and abilities. Speaking four languages, French, German, English, and Spanish, in childhood, he ended up mastering 18, including Arabic, Finnish, and several Slavic languages. He also became extremely independent, and difficult in school—winning prizes but poor in conduct; he broke away from his family when they opposed his marriage to a beautiful girl without dowry. Independence also marked his academic career, contributing to his marginalization by the followers of Émile Durkheim but

helping him persist and produce, without an academic position, some of the most significant studies of his day.

Van Gennep's academic education was atypical by contemporary standards. He graduated in 1896 from the Paris School of Oriental Languages, also having a passion for prehistory, a field that was just emerging at that time, and for numismatics. He came into contact with Antoine Meillet, the great linguist and a member of Durkheim's circle. His familiarity with languages offered him a unique methodological perspective in ethnography, suggesting a practical immersion in sounds and attention paid to roots. This led him to the more general conclusion that knowledge consists in the study of living reality, through understanding the animating forces.

At university, he studied with Léon Marillier, finding his vocation in the study of religious phenomena. This happened at the same time as Durkheim's interest turned to the anthropology of religion, and Marcel Mauss and Henri Hubert both became his university acquaintances. Mauss even became van Gennep's mentor after Marillier died in 1901.

Van Gennep's first book was *Taboo and Totemism in Madagascar* (1904), taken from the first part of his doctoral thesis. It was a thorough study (with more than 360 pages) of the then available ethnographic evidence. Its preface, dated April 1903, ended with warm words of thanks to his friend Mauss, who not only gave him useful advice but even read the proofs. Van Gennep repeatedly cautioned against the imposition of an alien, Western-theoretical perspective on the material. He was particularly critical of the ideas of James G. Frazer, whom he knew personally, visiting him in London and translating his book on totemism (which appeared in 1898), and also of the Scottish Orientalist William Robertson Smith. As Durkheim, Mauss, and Hubert relied much on the works of Frazer and Smith, van Gennep occasionally voiced critical remarks about them as well, in particular concerning the presumed universality of their system of classification, assuming that this would be taken in the spirit of normal scientific practice. He was to be severely disappointed.

Van Gennep's next book, *Myths and Legends of Australia* (1906), consisted of two parts, a substantial (more than 100 pages) introduction followed by translations. Van Gennep argued that in Australia links between myths and rituals are particularly tight, comparable only with Vedic India and Northern America. He also voiced critical remarks concerning the scholarly debate over the primacy of myths or rituals. As Australia was central to the interests of Durkheim and his followers, van Gennep's criticisms multiplied. Beyond finding problematic a number of Durkheim's ideas, such as male-female affiliation or the problem of incest, van Gennep was particularly unhappy about Durkheim's preoccupation with integration, which he considered a modern concept, not presenting difficulties for Australian Aborigines. Other shortcomings van Gennep found in Durkheim's work, going beyond the general problems of Frazer's approach, was that Durkheim was searching for excessive systematicity, imposing a priori categories on the evidence, which prevented understanding, while his emphasis on the "needs" of society, by assigning agency to an abstract category, was transmogrifying the social into a metaphysical object. Such an attack on Durkheimian orthodoxy could not be left unanswered, and Mauss wrote a long and quite critical, though still measured, review of van Gennep's book. In particular, he reasserted the Durkheimian position concerning the classification of myths, legends, and fables, and the nature of Australian totemism.

The conflict escalated into open warfare in the next few years, when both van Gennep and Durkheim published their magnum opuses. Van Gennep's *Rites of Passage* (1909) was a new and original synthesis based on his familiarity with ethnographic material collected throughout the world. The work was also the product of an inner illumination: He had suddenly recognized the ordering principle inherent in the various rites accompanying the individual life cycle and the periodicity of seasons. Durkheim's *Elementary Forms of Religious Life* (1912), on the other hand, was a monumental effort to confirm his theoretical hypotheses, including the idea that Australian Aborigines represent a "laboratory" for the earliest stages of human evolution. Much of the empirical analysis in *Elementary Forms* was entrusted to Mauss, whose in-depth contribution was recognized by close associates.

Rites of Passage received a hostile review from Mauss, who interpreted van Gennep's failure to follow Durkheimian principles as an absence of theoretical work, resulting in a mere amassing of a huge amount of facts. Consequently, Durkheim's 1912 work ignored van Gennep's milestone book. On its publication, *Elementary Forms* also received

a large amount of criticism, the most consistent and authoritative being van Gennep's dismissal of the book as a mere theoretical construct, a castle of sand built on shaky facts and further misinterpretation of the evidence.

In 1908, van Gennep founded his own journal, *La Revue des Études Ethnographiques et Sociologiques*, and in 1912, he became chair for ethnography at the University of Neuchâtel. There he threw himself into work, organizing a major conference for the summer of 1914. More than 600 social scientists showed up from around Europe, with Mauss leading the French delegation and delivering a paper. Durkheim was absent, just as—for a different reason—were all British scholars. However, van Gennep was again sorely disappointed: The conference all but coincided with the outbreak of World War I, and—as he protested the Swiss partiality to Germany in the war—in 1915, he was deprived of his chair and expelled from Switzerland. Through Mauss, he appealed to Durkheim, the unchallenged ruler of relevant French academic appointments, for help finding an academic position, but van Gennep had offended Durkheim and would never hold a university position in France.

The direction of van Gennep's work was significantly altered in the mid-1920s. He gave up interest in comparative ethnography, even burning his notes, and devoted all his efforts to collecting and studying French folklore. This work resulted in the monumental multivolume *Manual of Contemporary French Folklore*, widely considered a milestone of 20th-century French social science. Van Gennep published two volumes of reference material in 1937–1938, and was hoping to finish the work in two further volumes, on life cycle and periodical rites. Instead, he ended up publishing two volumes on the cycles of human life itself, in 1943 and 1946, with further volumes about the seasonal calendar coming out in 1947, 1949, 1951, and 1953. Van Gennep managed to proofread the seventh volume, which was published posthumously in 1958, while an eighth volume based on his notes came out in 1988. The entire work, together with a series of precious unpublished notes and a comprehensive bibliography, was republished in 1999.

Major Works

Van Gennep emphasized the fundamental unity of humankind, opposing the dichotomization of nature and society and considering the division between ethnography and folklore as artificial. Still, partly due to the necessity of specialization and partly due to his problems with academic life, his lifework came to be divided into two main periods: The central concern of the first was comparative ethnography, culminating in *Rites of Passage*, while the second was fully devoted to French folklore, resulting in the *Manual.*

Rites of Passage

While van Gennep's book is not theoretical in the neo-Kantian and neopositivist sense, it has philosophical depth, revealing an ontology embedded in the rites. Social life consists of a plethora of autonomous social groups and spheres of existence. Passage between them poses problems, whose handling requires ceremonies to assist and mediate. Passages can take place in space, such as by travel between different villages and countries. Rites of passage can also take place in time, whether related to the individual life cycle, from birth through childhood, adolescence, and marriage up to old age and death, or the periodicity of nature, with its seasons, where rites of passage gain cosmic connotation. All such rites have a sequential structure, consisting of separation, then a temporary, transitory existence on the limit or margin, and then reintegration. This sequential structure was van Gennep's central theoretical innovation; but far from proclaiming originality, he acknowledged that Robert Hertz had developed the idea before him.

The central part of rites of passage is the time spent on the limit. The acts of crossing the limit and being on the limit are both symbolic and material: Crossing a threshold transforms one's mode of existence, implying something mysterious and involving a deep symbolic meaning. Yet, at the same time, it is very material, a real and concrete passing through, with time spent on the borderline. The limit is usually a zone, not just a line, though the breadth of such limit zones and the amount of time spent there varies according to rites and cultures. Crossing limits is a sacred activity, but the location of the sacred varies according to one's place within the rite. This is why the figure of the "stranger" takes up such a prominent place in rites of passage, closely associated with the sacred.

Most of the book is a meticulous study of various rites of passage, focusing on the individual life cycle.

Of particular interest is the study of funerary rites; the dead and mourners belong to a special, transitory mode of existence, in between life and death, being preoccupied with the eventuality that a dead individual not properly accompanied to the other world might be stuck in his or her condition, becoming revengeful and threatening to the living. Such sequentiality and cyclicality of human life, as van Gennep makes it evident both at the start and at the end of the work, has cosmic significance. Passages between social groups and across human life imitate and reflect the great cosmic rhythms of existence. Not accidentally, the last word of the book is *universe*, which in his own copy he eventually capitalized.

Manual of French Folklore

Preoccupation with the cosmic nature of rites of passage is evident in the *Manual*, which is more than a simple collection of material. Periodical rites predominate, a fact commented on both in the text and in a series of posthumous notes, intended for a conclusion that was never completed. Folklore is different from history; it rather reflects the living spirit of a particular culture, the vital dynamism of a people that even events like the French Revolution could not alter. Its inherent perspective and sensitivity is aesthetic rather than scientific, being oriented toward beauty, integrity, and gracefulness—not utilitarian, functionalist, or technologically efficient; yet it contains and reflects an entire philosophy of existence that is in harmony with the great rhythms of cosmic cycles; thus, it is more lasting and real than modern artificial constructs. Toward the end of his life, van Gennep increasingly became interested in the dramatic character of rites, arguing that they reveal the deep dramatic instinct of the French people, and tentatively compared this with those of various other European nations.

Van Gennep's Legacy

Van Gennep and his writings were shunned by many in Durkheim's circle, in spite of his close affinity and mutual respect with several members (Mauss, Meillet, and Lucien Lévy-Bruhl). His influence in anthropology started after the English translation of *Rites of Passage* (1960), owing to the efforts of Solon Kimball and also thanks to E. E. Evans-Pritchard and Rodney Needham. Victor Turner also played a central role when he chanced on the book in 1963 and suddenly recognized that it held the key to the anthropology he was searching for. Through Turner's notion of *liminality*, an ingenious translation of van Gennep's term *marge*, van Gennep's perspective has been increasingly used in a range of social and human sciences, though its broader philosophical implications have rarely been explored.

Arpad Szakolczai

See also Durkheim, Émile; Frazer, James G.; Hertz, Robert; Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien; Mauss, Marcel; *Rites de Passage*; Smith, William Robertson; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Belmont, N. (1974). *Arnold van Gennep: Créateur de l'ethnographie française* [Foundations in sociolinguistics: An ethnographic approach]. Paris, France: Payot.

Thomassen, B. (2009). The uses and meanings of liminality. *International Political Anthropology, 2*(1), 5–28.

———. (2012). Émile Durkheim between Gabriel Tarde and Arnold van Gennep: Founding moments of sociology and anthropology. *Social Anthropology, 20*(3), 231–249.

Zumwalt, R. L. (1982). Arnold van Gennep: The hermit of Bourg-la-Reine. *American Anthropologist, 84,* 299–313.

———. (1988). *The enigma of Arnold van Gennep (1873–1957): Master of French folklore and hermit of Bourg-la-Reine.* Helsinki, Finland: Suomalainen Tiedeakatemia.

Gift Exchange

Few assumptions have a more powerful hold on both the Western academic and the public imagination than a vision of human nature based on the norms of market economic exchange. Consequently, it is unsurprising that questioning the universality of this model of exchange has been a major theme for a discipline like anthropology, in which the critique of such assumptions has always been important.

Early Theorists of Gift Exchange: Malinowski and Mauss

The first major development in a theory of gift exchange was Bronisław Malinowski's *Argonauts of the Western Pacific*. At its heart is a lengthy description

of a network of exchange of shells known as the *kula*, which linked many of the Trobriand Islands of eastern New Guinea. Rather than aiming to maximize the shells in their possession, *kula* traders gained respect by passing items along the circuit. This may have seemed irrational from the perspective of economic individualism, but according to Malinowski, it was entirely rational in a context where authority and respect depended on the number of trading relationships that one could enter into.

This perspective was developed in Marcel Mauss's essay *The Gift*, which brought together Malinowski's description of the *kula* and accounts of other gift exchange networks. In *The Gift*, Mauss outlined three obligations that he claimed characterize the exchange of gifts: (1) the obligation to give, (2) the obligation to receive, and (3) the obligation to return. These obligations are morally charged, creating ongoing enduring bonds of interdependence between those engaged in their circulation.

Elements of Mauss's essay seemed to suggest that he saw gift exchange, and the bonds of enduring reciprocal interdependence that it established, as a fundamental element in establishing the social solidarity that was so important to his uncle and collaborator, the sociologist Émile Durkheim. As Marshall Sahlins was later to observe, a major part of Mauss's aim was to tackle the problem of how people could live together with a degree of harmony and mutual obligation in the absence of the kind of strong repressive state championed in Western political theory from Hobbes onward. As a consequence, much of the anthropological development of gift theory after Mauss had a tendency to describe how gift exchange produced self-contained and self-reproducing social systems. The *kula*, at least as Malinowski had described it, seemed to provide a template for this conception, with its fixed and bounded circuits of exchange through which men who were separated by vast distances were still bound together in ties that ideally could never be broken.

Structuralism and Gift Exchange

The Gift was as important to Claude Lévi-Strauss's structuralist anthropology as the Saussurian model of linguistics from which he took the model of underlying structural grammars. For Lévi-Strauss, Maussian reciprocity was one of the fundamental structuring principles of the human mind, shaping consciousness and culture. In particular, kinship systems, which were viewed by most anthropologists as the basis of social organization in "non-Western" societies, were analyzed by Lévi-Strauss as the most important manifestation of this cognitive structure. In Lévi-Strauss's model, systems of "bride exchange" in which women acted as the "supreme gift" moved the focus of kinship studies away from "descent" toward an analysis of how ongoing "alliances" created between groups through marriage exchange formed the basis of social solidarity.

Lévi-Strauss's reading made Maussian reciprocity as fundamental to a universal human nature as the free market individual had been to the neoclassical economic theory that Malinowski had set out to critique in *Argonauts*. However, it was a fundamental drive that varied depending on cultural context. Lévi-Strauss detailed the ways in which different kinds of marriage rules dictated different kinds of social structures, while Mauss's student Louis Dumont developed Lévi-Strauss's analysis of exchange marriage into a cornerstone of his analysis of the Indian caste system. Other notable anthropologists, such as Mary Douglas and Marshall Sahlins, made gift exchange into a cornerstone of analyses of social structures that could be contrasted with the individualism of Western society, as Dumont had done in his contrast between Indian "holism" and Western "individualism."

During the heyday of structuralism in the 1960s and 1970s, there were other anthropologists who focused more on the interplay between different spheres of exchange that coexisted in the same social situation. Most noteworthy was Paul Bohannan's analysis of different spheres of exchange among the Tiv people of West Africa. Bohannan claimed that the Tiv had three distinct spheres of exchange: (1) everyday items, (2) wealth items, and (3) marriageable female relatives. Different moralities of exchange governed each sphere, and conversion of wealth between spheres was difficult. Although it was possible to present this kind of division of social life into different spheres as building a stable, self-replicating structure, changes in the wider political economic context carried the possibility of altering or dissolving the boundaries between spheres. Bohannan argued that this had occurred among the Tiv with the introduction of Western money, which broke down the barriers between the three spheres of exchange owing to money's nature as a universal

medium of exchange. Other anthropologists in this period, most notably Fredrik Barth, also focused on the importance of borders and the conversion of value between different spheres of exchange.

The Poststructural Era

As structuralism fell out of favor in the 1970s and 1980s, other analyses of exchange came to the fore. Pierre Bourdieu's focus on the timing of return gifts was an attempt to overcome the potential deterministic pitfalls of structuralism by showing the artistry and gamesmanship that go into making gifts socially effective. Chris Gregory observed that Marx's description of commodity exchanges as transitory and impersonal transactions conducted between persons in a state of independence from each other could easily be contrasted with the Maussian gift's tendency to create ongoing ties of personal interdependence. Gregory's work drew attention to the way in which gifts and commodities coexisted and indeed could be converted into each other, so that an item that was traded as a commodity in one context could be exchanged as a gift in another. Like Bohannan's model, Gregory's model sought to explain social change, but Gregory stressed the ways in which Western-produced commodities had been incorporated into Melanesian gift exchange systems. Maurice Bloch and Jonathan Parry subsequently continued this challenge to Bohannan's assumption of the unidirectional transformative power of money and Western commodities.

Gregory's reading of Mauss hit a nerve at a time when the emphasis in anthropological theory was increasingly on models that sought to explain social change in a globally interconnected world. But almost immediately it was reinterpreted in ways that its author would not have recognized, both by its critics and by those who sought to build on its theoretical architecture. The 1980s saw the rise to prominence of postcolonial and poststructuralist approaches in anthropology, and from this perspective, any attempt to construct theoretical models on the basis of opposed categories, such as gift and commodity, seemed redolent of an old-fashioned structuralism that was best abandoned. Arjun Appadurai's introduction to *The Social Life of Things* led the intellectual attack on the gift/commodity distinction. For Appadurai, this had become an oversimplified conceptual division that both romanticized "small-scale" societies and overlooked the fact that Western societies operated in part according to "cultural" norms and not just economic rationality. For Appadurai, it was better to characterize all forms of exchange as varieties of commodity exchange, instead of relying on what were now seen as outdated opposed categories. Appadurai's critics were quick to point out that belief in the universality of commodity exchange could be seen as a return to faith in the universality of economic rationalism. In addition, it left him arguing that some commodities were more "commodified" than others, which to his critics appeared to be a fundamental logical inconsistency.

Others took Gregory's gift/commodity distinction in the opposite direction, using it as the basis for precisely the kind of distinction between Western and non-Western cultures that Appadurai had found so problematic. Marilyn Strathern used it to draw a comparison between Western and Melanesian societies. In the former, the predominance of commodity exchange was tied to the predominance of a conception of the person as a self-contained discrete individual whose existence was prior to the relations that he or she entered into, while in the latter, the predominance of gift exchange was linked to a conception of the person made up of the relations of ongoing reciprocal obligation within which he or she was entangled. Whereas Bohannan had assumed the culturally transformative power of money, Strathern's followers seemed to take the opposing transformation of the power of Melanesian customary ritual to transform commodities into gifts as their starting point, leading to an expectation of underlying cultural continuity.

Strathern was adamant that her model was not a description of how all Melanesians (or indeed all Westerners) thought in all contexts but rather an ideal-type contrast. Nonetheless, it seemed to be taken as a return to a Dumontian-style contrast between two different societies—both by supporters, for whom it proved the continued fruitfulness of this kind of anthropology, and by detractors, for whom it was an example of the kind of Orientalism that anthropology urgently needed to transcend. Meanwhile, for Gregory and those committed to a historical political economy, there was an equal sense of confusion that their approach seemed to have been read as the basis for an ahistorical contrast of cultures by opponents and followers alike.

Conclusion

The debates around how to analyze exchange that characterized 20th-century anthropology carry on into attempts to make sense of the pressing concerns of the 21st century, such as the role of financial markets in public life. Some anthropologists point out that the ways in which even Wall Street operates according to cultural codes mean that we should be wary of dividing the world into commodity and noncommodity spheres of exchange. Others argue that if there is one thing that characterizes popular anxieties about contemporary neoliberalism, it is concern about where the limits of market rationality are drawn. This might suggest that understanding the ways in which exchange practices are shaped by the ways in which those participating in them morally evaluate them is key to anthropological analysis. In particular, the ways in which participants to exchanges themselves evaluate those exchanges as ideally belonging in separate categories remains important. From this perspective, the distinction between gift and commodity is partially dependent on social perspective and is the outcome of ongoing social contest rather than the expression of a fixed cultural order. This focus can be traced back to Mauss, for whom getting the right balance between the logic of the gift and the logic of the market was a political battle of immense importance. It can even be found among Malinowski's *kula* traders, who would dispute among themselves whether a man was really conducting *kula* or was in fact conducting *gimwali*: a less prestigious form of barter carried out for material gain that looked a lot more like commodity exchange.

Perspectives that stress the ways in which sharply divergent moral evaluations of exchange practices shape those very practices seem to be gaining purchase in contemporary anthropological debates, perhaps as a consequence of the current economic crisis, which has brought these issues back to the forefront of public attention. It remains to be seen how strong and long lasting this trend is, but it is clear that the long-running fascination with exchange and the debates concerning its nature, which have characterized much of the most important anthropological theory of the past 100 years, still have some way left to run.

Keir Martin

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Barth, Fredrik; Bloch, Maurice; Bohannan, Paul; Bourdieu, Pierre; Douglas, Mary; Dumont, Louis; Durkheim, Émile; Economic Anthropology; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Malinowski, Bronisław; Mauss, Marcel; Sahlins, Marshall; Strathern, Marilyn

Further Readings

Appadurai, A. (Ed.). (1986). *The social life of things*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Bohannan, P., & Bohannan, L. (1968). *Tiv economy*. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.
Gregory, C. (1982). *Gifts and commodities*. London, UK: Academic Press.
Lévi-Strauss, C. (1969). *The elementary structures of kinship*. London, UK: Eyre & Spottiswoode.
Malinowski, B. (1922). *Argonauts of the western Pacific*. London, UK: Routledge.
Mauss, M. (1954). *The gift*. London, UK: Cohen & West.

Gillen, Francis James

See Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen

Girard, René

René Girard, the French literary and cultural theorist, is one of the most influential thinkers of the 20th century. He has had a marked and lasting impact on cultural and literary theory, an influence that shows few signs of abating.

Biography and Major Works

Girard was born on December 25, 1923, in Avignon, France. After obtaining his baccalaureate in philosophy at the Lycée of Avignon, he attended the École des Chartes in Paris, graduating as an *archiviste-paléographe* (medievalist) in 1947. Girard then moved to the United States and, in 1950, received his PhD in modern history from Indiana University. While at Indiana, Girard was asked—on account of his nationality—to teach courses on French literature. Such was his fascination with the novels that he was asked to teach that a decade later he would make his mark as a literary critic. In his debut theoretical

work, *Deceit, Desire and the Novel* (1961), Girard argued that in certain works of literature—works he termed "novelistic"—there existed a conception of human desire that had more lucidity than most properly theoretical accounts of desire. Girard's contention is that novelistic works reveal a desire to be "mimetic"—that is, fundamentally imitative. Rather than desire emanating from the preferences or appetites of a sovereign, individual will, humans take their cues as to what to desire from others who model that desire for them. This, however, raises the possibility that our desires will lead us into conflict as subjects converge on the same object.

The next stage of Girard's work occurred just over 10 years later, with the publication of *Violence in the Sacred* in 1972. Here, Girard shifted his thinking into the anthropological domain. In his literary analyses, Girard indicated the ways in which intensifications of conflictual desire lead toward a certain kind of "doubling" of adversaries: As antagonists intensify their conflicts, they come more and more to resemble each other. In *Violence and the Sacred*, this analysis of doubling and dedifferentiation is extended to the cultural domain: That is, what may begin as a conflict between a small number of adversaries may soon extend to incorporate whole communities. Girard contended that what eventually arrests this slide into unanimous violence and antagonism is a nonconscious polarization around a victim—or group of victims—who is thought to be responsible for the disorder afflicting the community. A mimesis of *appropriation* is replaced, in other words, by a mimesis of *accusation*. The lynching or expulsion of a scapegoat has the effect of reconciling the community and generating an *esprit de corps* that, post hoc, justifies the lynching in the mob's eyes. Girard argues that many of the signal features of culture—perhaps even culture itself—is the result of this "surrogate victimage mechanism."

The last stage in Girard's work involves his consideration of the Judeo-Christian scriptures. In *Things Hidden Since the Foundation of the World* (1978)—a dialogue between Girard and two psychiatrists, Jean-Michel Oughourlian and Guy Lefort—Girard sets out his work to date, including a new theory about the role of the Judeo-Christian scriptures in culture. Girard's contention is that, despite the highly ambivalent historical legacy of institutional Christianity, the Judeo-Christian texts work to expose and undermine surrogate victimage. In a thesis that parallels aspects of Friedrich Nietzsche's in *The Genealogy of Morals*, Girard argues that the Bible is preeminently a victim literature: Unlike the culture that they displaced, biblical texts narrate cultural violence from the viewpoint of the *victims* of that violence rather than the perpetrators. Despite their impact, the historical import of the Judeo-Christian texts has, Girard suggests, very often gone unnoticed—or been entirely misunderstood.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology (Social Thought)

From the appearance of *Violence and the Sacred*, Girard began to be known as a broadly "anthropological" theorist. His engagement with anthropology has been extended and extensive, and he has framed his analyses of culture in terms of three central anthropological categories: (1) myth, (2) ritual (primarily identified with sacrifice), and (3) prohibition. Like Émile Durkheim, Girard insists on the coevalness of the social and religious domains. Girard argues that the sacred is the primary expression of social order rather than something that is added to the social as a sort of "supplement" or epiphenomenon.

One of Girard's key interlocutors has been Claude Lévi-Strauss. Girard has expressed appreciation of structuralist anthropology's thesis that there are generative structures that exist independently of individual human will and that mythology is, in an important sense, "differential thought." However, he has questioned both Lévi-Strauss and Durkheim for their refusal to countenance how the sacred or differential thought is generated in the first place. If the sacred is a transcendent expression of social order or a privileged plan of differential thought, Girard wants to raise the possibility of giving a morphogenetic account of culture—to understand the mechanism by which the sacred and differential thoughts arise in the first place. He does this through his theory of surrogate victimage, which is not merely an attempt to explain the signal features of culture but an account of hominization—of the emergence of the human from animal in the natural history of the species.

As a hermeneutic or heuristic device in empirical anthropology, Girard's theories have yet to be fully tested, although there are marked exceptions. Perhaps most notable here is Simon Simonse's fieldwork in the Sudan.

Girard's Legacy

Since the publication of *Things Hidden Since the Foundation of the World*, all of Girard's work has been a tracing out, an elaboration, of the three lines of his work: (1) mimetic desire, (2) surrogate victimage, and (3) the Judeo-Christian scriptures. This is not to say, however, that his intellectual labors have involved a simple restatement of earlier hypotheses. Recent work of Girard's has, for instance, involved a detailed reading of Carl von Clausewitz's *On War* (in *Battling to the End*) and a novel interpretation of the role of victimage and sacrifice in the Vedas (in *Sacrifice*).

Girard's work has had an impact on a wide variety of disciplines and interdisciplinary work. In a significant series of publications, Eric Gans, for instance, has elaborated a comprehensive theory of the origin of language and culture. Another line of thought has been taken up by Jean-Pierre Dupuy and colleagues at Stanford and the Centre de Recherche Epistémologie Appliquée in Paris; they have utilized Girard's work in their theories on self-organizing systems. Michel Aglietta and André Orléan have applied Girard's work to economics and financial markets. Oughourlian has applied Girard's work in psychiatry and theories of psychopathology. In addition, there have been extended forays in disciplines across the humanities: theology (Raymund Schwager and James Alison), philosophy (Michel Serres and Gianni Vattimo), and literary criticism (Sandor Goodhart, Cesáreo Bandera, and Andrew McKenna). Girard's seminal contribution to the humanities was recognized in 2005 with his election as an "immortal" to the Académie Française.

Chris Fleming

See also Durkheim, Émile; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Sacrifice; Structuralism

Further Readings

Cowdell, S., Fleming, C., & Hodge, J. (Eds.). (2012). *Violence, desire, and the sacred: Girard's mimetic theory across the disciplines*. New York, NY: Continuum.

Fleming, C. (2004). *René Girard: Violence and mimesis*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Gans, E. (1997). *Signs of paradox: Irony, resentment, and other mimetic structures*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Girard, R. (1966). *Deceit, desire and the novel* (Y. Freccero, Trans.). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

———. (1977). *Violence and the sacred* (P. Gregory, Trans.). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

———. (with Oughourlian, J.-M., & Lefort, G.). (1987). *Things hidden since the foundation of the world* (S. Bann & M. Metteer, Trans.). Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (2010). *Battling to the end: Conversations with Benoît Chantre* (M. Baker, Trans.). East Lansing: Michigan State University Press.

———. (2011). *Sacrifice* (M. Pattillo & D. Dawson, Trans.). East Lansing: Michigan State University Press.

Goodhart, S. (1996). *Sacrificing commentary: Reading the end of literature*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Oughourlian, J.-M. (2010). *The genesis of desire* (E. Webb, Trans.). East Lansing: Michigan State University Press.

Schwager, R. (1987). *Must there be scapegoats? Violence and redemption in the Bible* (M. L. Assad, Trans.). San Fransisco, CA: Harper & Row.

Simonse, S. (1992). *Kings of disaster: Dualism, centralism and the scapegoat king in the southeastern Sudan*. Leiden, Netherlands: E. J. Brill.

Globalization Theory

There are two quite different approaches to the understanding of the global. The first, dating to the work of Fernand Braudel, is based on a systemic perspective in which globalization is a particular historical phase linked to the decline of hegemonic centers and the rise of new hegemonies financed by the export of wealth from the declining areas. The second tends to see globalization as a historical era understood in evolutionary terms, in which the entire world is united in a complex of cultural flows, the latter referring to the diffusion of dominant ideas, technology, identities, and so forth, and their mixture in a quasi-evolutionary moment of change.

The popularity of globalization as a topic is clearly a social fact, but it is not clear that its intellectual content warrants such popularity. This uncertainty is the starting point for the following discussion, in which the popularity of the term is dealt with as a social phenomenon, its content is analyzed in terms of its intellectual shortcomings,

and a larger framework of analysis is suggested to comprehend both of these issues. This reflection begins with relatively early work, both within anthropology and elsewhere, that considers things that we can call "global." Next is a presentation of important aspects of the more contemporary uses of globalization, primarily in anthropology but also in adjacent disciplines. This presentation will suggest that much of the key work on globalization is not empirical and analytical but clearly normative, which is expressive of the distinctive social location of some of the authors of important writings about globalization and at least an identification with a particular cosmopolitan discourse. Finally, the entry will consider the conceptual confusion that exists in those writings; this discussion will draw on a different way of approaching the global, one that springs from some of the ideas described in the following section, the prehistory of the concept.

Foundations

The idea of the global was imported into anthropology from outside the discipline. It was a concept that had acquired its meaning in part as a reflection of a number of approaches that were circulating among various sets of people who shared a broad orientation toward political economy. These included dependency theory, imperialism theory, the new world division of labor, world-systems theory, and various related debates that took place primarily among Marxist economists.

These approaches differed in significant ways. However, they had in common a growing attention to the idea that society, the focus of social theory generally, could not be approached adequately if the connections between societies were ignored. Social scientists had not, of course, ignored those connections. The now largely forgotten school of diffusionism was built on a presumption of such connections, and Bronisław Malinowski's (1922) *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* placed Kiriwina firmly in its regional context. At the same time, it is true that attention to these connections varied over time and was particularly low in the 1940s and 1950s, when both functionalism and neo-evolutionism assumed society as the explanatory totality. Against this background, the stress on the connections between societies found in dependency theory and its fellows was novel and salutary.

In the 1970s, these sorts of approaches began to have a visible impact in anthropology, mostly under the name of world-systems theory. It marked the development of those older approaches as well as the incorporation of the French *Annales* school, primarily the work of Braudel. This approach appears in the work of sociologists such as Immanuel Wallerstein, Stuart Hall, and Christopher Chase-Dunn and economists such as Andre Gunder Frank. It appears as well in the work of some anthropologists, such as Eric Wolf, Kajsa Ekholm, and Jonathan Friedman, who saw the existence of global systems as historically more significant than the recent history of Western capitalism. For the latter, global systems were the basis of ancient as well as modern civilizations, and the global approach was one in which local populations were understood as constituted loci within larger reproductive processes rather than autonomous actors that forged *external* relations, after the fact.

The 1980s marked the decline of formerly dominant materialist as well as modernist approaches in the social sciences. The more salient forms of imperialism theory (dependency, center-periphery as fixed relationships) declined sharply even as historically oriented global-systemic approaches were taking root. At about the same time, we can see the beginnings of the approach that is concerned with what is now called "globalization." This emerged from a number of sources but generally was not an extension of the older world-systems approach, with its broadly Marxist political economy. Rather, much of it reflects the work of liberal business economists, especially Keniche Ohmae. It was an expression of a real change in the configuration of the world, but an expression that was far less critical than the older approaches. That change in the world was the product of a huge wave of capital export from the old centers in the United States and Europe to other parts of the world, especially to East and South Asia. The processes that underlay this change were understood in fairly evolutionary terms; what was construed as a world of enclosed nation-states was seen as being supplanted by what was construed as an open world.

As the term caught on in the media, it seemed to make sense to many academics. For instance, in economic and cultural geography, a number of works appeared in the 1980s concerned with globalization. Some geographers, such as David Harvey, continued the older Marxist analysis. However, others moved

in a more liberal direction (e.g., Nigel Thrift), and some of them appear to have adopted an evolutionary local-to-global perspective. Such an approach appeared fairly justified if one looks at the changes that had occurred since World War II, but it was less secure if one took account of longer term trends.

The growing scholarly attention to these changes in the world took other forms in other fields. In the 1970s, the concept of cultural imperialism attracted attention, linked to the dominance of the United States in the larger world. In cultural sociology in the 1980s, this merged into a number of debates surrounding George Ritzer's so-called McDonaldization thesis, of the emergence of a single, homogenized world. From the end of the 1980s, sociologists concerned with these issues were influential, including Roland Robertson and his work on cultural globalization and, later, Manuel Castells, with his encyclopedic and more holistic sociological work on the emergence of "network society," a post-Fordist world that is no longer vertically organized but is horizontal and fragmented. The decay of the older order was given important expression in the work of Saskia Sassen on global cities. She discerned a world moving away from large-scale central and peripheral regions. Instead, center and periphery increasingly were to be found in specific urban zones throughout the world. Cities replace the nation-state as the new global actor, and the Third World is no longer "out there"; rather, it is next door (a notion that had also been embraced by Braudel for early-modern Europe).

More influential in anthropology was the development of cultural studies, especially postcolonial cultural studies. Writers in this emerging field claimed that the more conventional approaches in the humanities and social sciences were distorted by the influence of the nation-state, especially in its Western form. In their assertions, these writers promoted a vocabulary of globalization, relegating what they saw as expressions of essentialism, homogeneity, ethnic absolutism, and national bias to the dustbin, to be replaced by new terms, more suited to the world that was emerging: the globalized world, in the form of the transnational and postnational, the hybrid, the creole, border crossing, and so on.

The Discourse of Globalization

In anthropology, a discourse on globalization emerged in the 1980s and 1990s, associated especially with the work of Arjun Appadurai and Ulf Hannerz and with the journal *Public Culture*. These and subsequent anthropologists take globalization to be a new phenomenon that has occurred in their own lifetimes, and what they describe is often a direct expression of their personal experience of a changing world. They argue that we are entering a new era in which the world is, finally, a single place. People, information, money, and technology all flow around the globe in disjunctive circuits that bring us all together in a *hybrid* if somewhat fragmented world culture.

The primary characteristics of this approach to emerging globalization can be listed as follows:

- The world was once organized into separate cultural units.
- As a result of globalization, these units, whether ethnic groups or nations, mix with one another in new creole or hybrid forms, both of people and of their cultures.
- The relations between different locations has become so intense that the world has come to consist of networks of relations that link substate actors in a new world of transnational populations and cultures.
- This is an evolutionary movement from a former mosaic of localized places to a world of intermixture. Although not always clearly stated, the main cause is changes in technology, especially the effects of new information technologies.
- The increasing transnational "flows" weaken the nation-state. For some writers, this transcendence of the homogeneous nation-state by the new global hybridity is morally progressive.
- Anthropology must be refashioned to study the new flows and processes that transcend the old nation-state.

Predicaments of Globalization Discourse

It is important to understand the emergence of discourses of globalization in terms of their social context, especially where they take the form "globalism," the embrace and advocacy of globalization and its fruits (e.g., cosmopolitanism). This embrace of the transnational, border crossing, and the postnational is more a classificatory or interpretative device used by intellectuals than it is a product of

research into the realities of the global-local arena. For instance, globalist writers have virtually nothing to say about how borders and boundaries are constituted, a silence that is significant given that one cannot cross boundaries unless they already exist.

There is also an evolutionary assumption within this emerging model of globalization that seems to have become doxa for many scholars writing about globalism. This is the notion that the move from the local to the global marks a move to a higher stage of world history. Just as with the older notion of civilization, those who belong to the global are truly *évolué* (a term used by the French to refer to the more educated and assimilated members of their subject populations). Such people have left the parochial masses behind and have entered the new world of the cosmopolitan, in which all the familiar values of humanism, democracy, and human rights have been modified so that they fit a new cosmopolitan position. For those in that position, the most serious problems faced by modern societies are found in their own, downwardly mobile, national populations. Echoing the older notion of *dangerous classes*, those populations are becoming too local, even xenophobic. The discourse of globalism thus has a strong ideological component, what Friedman called a "global vulgate," which contains definitions of reality that, it appears, are assumed to be obvious and unassailable, not subject to debate, much less research.

The globalist vulgate, then, has an individualist orientation that sees boundaries and borders as denials of uniformitarian collectivity and its presumed benefits. As critique, that vulgate rejects those boundaries and borders by celebrating what crosses them (let us call it the Trans-X): the translocal, the transcultural, and the transnational. This rhetoric of rejection can be traced down to the human body and its transgressions. Trans-X discourse deconstructs supposedly pure or homogeneous categories to reveal their artificial nature, and in this, it entails a logical relation between the trans-X and the hybrid or creole. That is because the hybrid and the creole result from the movement of culture throughout the world, trans-X-wise. Because the vulgate misperceives the idea of the nation-state as referring to a homogeneous entity, for globalists that homogeneity denies the real heterogeneity. Two models explain how this emerging trans-X uniformity comes about. One, partially suggested by Homi Bhabha and Mahmoud Mamdani, is that hybridity existed before the Western, modernist, colonial imposition of national uniformity. With the decline of colonialism, the true hybridity of the world is returning. The other model is the "leaky mosaic" proposed by Friedman in 1994. Both of these models portray the world as having changed profoundly. Our old categories of place, locality, culture, and even society have been displaced by hybridity, translocality, movement, and, to use Deleuze and Guattari's terminology, rhizomes. However, this globalist assertion might well be, as suggested above, an expression of the experiential world of cultural elites and other traveling intellectuals, an experience that is presaged and reinforced by the representations of internationalized media and international networks of media managers, politicians, diplomats, and global organizations. If this is so, globalism can be understood as a socially positioned discourse, that of certain elites whose relation to the earth is one of consumerist distance and objectification. Theirs is the bird's-eye view of the multiethnic bazaar or ethnic neighborhood, and they marvel at the fabulous jumble of cultural differences that they see. Hybridity is, thus, the sensual, and especially the visual, appropriation of a space of cultural difference, a space that may be quite different for those who inhabit that space.

The political, ideological aspect of globalism is apparent in the writing of its adherents, such as Appadurai's statement in 1993 that "we need to think ourselves beyond the nation." John Kelly elaborates on this in the context of an article in *Public Culture* in 1995, in which he takes both native Fijians and Hawaiians to task for their wrongheaded, romantic assertions that they are a people linked to a place.

Lisa Malkki is another adherent of this globalist ideology. In her 1992 monograph on Burundian refugees in Tanzania, published in *Current Anthropology*, she presents a dichotomy between those who stay in the camp and cultivate their Hutu nationalism, on the one hand, and those who abandon their Hutu identity and head to town, on the other. They are described as leaving their essentialized Hutu identities to become creolized and rhizomatic. Although she cites no ethnographic evidence for her dichotomization, her thrust is clear. Camp refugees are dangerous nationalists: Their rooted identity as Hutu can only lead to violence. On the other hand, those who have given up that identity to

become "broad people" point the way for the rest of us, toward a lively cosmopolitan hybridity. This is an extraordinary statement of a simple ideological scheme: good guys versus bad guys—essentialist, nationalist refugees longing for their imagined homeland versus hybrid cosmopolitans adeptly adapting to their current circumstances. In this metaphoric space, the evil is easy to spot.

Some of Malkki's ire is directed at those who associate native people and ecological sensitivity, and her expression of that ire includes her own celebration of cosmopolitanism. The association that excites her anger conflates, she says, "culture and people," "nation and nature." "Natives are thought to be ideally adapted to their environments." These are understandings that entail, in Appadurai's (1988) words, that natives "are somehow *incarcerated*, or confined, in those places" (p. S37). But is this really the case? Is it not obvious that people move, that the history of global systems has been one of massive displacement as well as the emergence of dominant global elites? Is it not also obvious that people adapt to their environments? Is it not equally obvious that they are likely to develop social and cultural worlds around specific places, worlds that Malkki sees as conflations of culture and people, nation and nature? Is it not reasonable that people maintain practical relations to their territories and that they develop a spiritual relationship to them as well?

It might be difficult to discern the problem here. There is, however, a real conflict for these new globalizers. If the Kalahari Bushmen have a long history of integration and marginalization within the Western world system, does this eliminate their identification with their territories? One senses a distinct disenchantment with what was perhaps an assumed anthropological authenticity, just as many have taken to criticizing "natives" for having invented traditions for political reasons.

Anthropological Versions of Jihad and McWorld

Work in this vein that has appeared more recently pits global flows against local, essentialized identity. For instance, in *Globalization and Identity: Dialectics of Flow and Closure* (1999), Brigit Meyer and Peter Geschiere argue that sociocultural closure is a reaction to the experienced, if not real, loss of control over conditions of existence that comes from global flows. This is not a new idea, and it is clearly stated by the political theorist Benjamin Barber as the Jihad versus McWorld thesis—that is, fundamentalism as a reaction to Western-based globalization. While this more recent work accepts the new globalized world as a fact of nature, it is less optimistic than earlier writing, as illustrated in the dire situation described in a 1999 essay by John and Jean Comaroff in *American Ethnologist*, in which poverty and magical practices are interpreted as reactions to globalization in South Africa.

Unfortunately, these globalist writers understand globalization as a thing in itself, an evolutionary reality composed of intensifying flows. The older, global-systemic perspective would allow for such flows. However, it would see them as generated by specific conditions of capital accumulation, as it would see their forms and consequences as shaped by specific articulations between local conditions and global relations. Put more simply, the globalists can describe disaster and social disintegration in much of Africa but cannot explain why the same rising tide of globalization has seen East Asia become increasingly integrated in conditions of rapid growth.

It is, paradoxically, the limited character of the globalist approach, obsessed with the closure of the local, that leads its practitioners to criticize those who talk of bounding and territorialization, since such terms are thought to be old fashioned, even reactionary. However, in seeking to explain everything from the New Right to African witchcraft in terms echoing the Jihad-McWorld thesis, as a reaction to globalization, globalists ignore an important possibility, namely, that the local is not a mere response but a historical and complex reality in its own right no matter how transformed within the global context. And since the global is much more than globalization, the collapse of an economic and social order is not due to globalization but to systemic contradictions that globalists do not even address.

It is worth considering this spirited attack on the local. It is true that there have been tendencies in anthropology to treat societies as closed units. As noted above, this was especially the case during the heyday of structural functionalism. It is also true, however, that anthropologists have long attended to the place of the people, which they studied in terms of larger contexts. The idea that people make their

world where they are and with the people who are a part of their lives does not, after all, contradict the idea that those people and that place are integrated into a larger system of relationships.

Marshall Sahlins has made similar points in his criticism of what he called "afterology." Just where, he asks, are the classical anthropologists who maintained a view of culture as bounded and homogeneous, as essentialized? Sahlins argues, on the contrary, that those classical anthropologists could even speak of "the fallacy of separation": the mistaken idea that because cultures are distinctive they are closed. This is hardly the sort of thing one would expect of people who see cultures as bounded and self-contained. Equally, those classic writers said things that one would not expect of those who see cultures as essentialized and homogeneous. Thus, Sahlins describes how the cultural relativists stressed that cultures were constantly undergoing change, and he refers to Melville J. Herskovits himself on the complexity of cultural patterns. To echo a point made earlier, the globalist discourse needs to be situated if we are to make sense of what has been described as its distinctive view of the world and of the discipline. That discourse is the product of a particular historical conjuncture, one of real globalization, in which globalists participate and with which they identify. The discourse is not new in itself, but it tends to become salient in periods when declining hegemony, increasing class polarization, mass migration and ethnicization, and the globalization of capital coincide and produce a confrontation between indigenizing, downwardly mobile classes and new cosmopolitanizing elites. In a 2000 essay in *New Left Review*, Slavoj Žižek noted that the emerging elites identify with the world rather than with their nation-states, which are cast as dangerously racist, and they espouse a discourse that supports global control, global governance, and a new centrism of respectability pitted against the national *classes dangereuses*.

Global Systems, Globalization, and Anthropological Theory

The balance of this entry presents an argument that many of the problems so far identified in globalism in anthropology do not only reflect a set of social processes at work among anthropologists. In addition, they reflect some basic flaws in the globalist approach. Interestingly, those flaws reflect the very thing that the globalist vulgate seeks to reject, a fixation on and valorization of phenomena other than the flows and relations in which they exist. Most obviously, the vulgate's fascination with the multicultural, hybrid, and creole directs attention to the things that exhibit these thinglike properties, whether individuals, neighborhoods, cities, or countries. In doing so, it deflects attention from the systemic conditions in which flows and relations emerge and are reproduced.

An approach concerned with such conditions is global-systemic anthropology. Its emergence in the mid-1970s was marked by the publication in 1974 of Wallerstein's first volume of *The Modern World System* and, in anthropology, by several works by Ekholm Friedman and Jonathan Friedman (Ekholm, 1976; Ekholm Friedman & Jonathan Friedman, 2008a, 2008b) and by Eric Wolf's major work, *Europe and the People Without History*. Wallerstein and Wolf were concerned primarily with the 15th century onward and tended to cast the world system as a phenomenon of the modern era. Ekholm Friedman, Friedman, and, later, Frank, however, claimed that the past 5,000 years could be characterized in terms of a single system or closely related set of world systems.

This systemic approach considers societies in terms of social reproduction rather than in terms of institutional arrangement or cultural practices. To consider a society in terms of social reproduction means attending to how it is constituted within processes of production, distribution, and consumption, through which the population reproduces itself over time. It is important to note that this approach does not see material factors as determinant. Those factors can constrain, and may contradict, the dominant strategies of social life, but this is different from asserting that they cause those strategies. In fact, the primary constraints at a particular historical moment are the product of the historical operation of the social system itself.

With this groundwork laid, the question of global systems becomes, at least in principle, fairly straightforward. One need simply ask whether the population in question reproduces itself based on its own territorial resources or whether its reproduction is part of a larger regional or even wider set of circuits and flows.

This global-systems approach differs in important ways from the orientation of much of anthropology of globalization, which is concerned with the visible movement of people and things, diasporas, the Internet, and the like. In the global-systems approach, the global is the social arena within which social life is reproduced, an arena whose structural properties constitute local institutional forms and identities, as well as economic and political cycles of expansion and contraction. For the globalist, movement generates relations, and migration creates transnational networks, while in global-systemic terms, transnational relations are produced by intentional practices of transnationality. The latter are specific to specific historical contexts and contrast with periods in which migration leads to rapid assimilation.

To say that the local is part of the global does not mean that it is produced by the global. Rather, the global is an emergent property of interactions among different local social units and actors. Thus, global systems are not observable phenomena as such, since "global" refers to the underlying properties of the structure and dynamics of such larger social spaces. This implies that the globalization that most anthropologists describe is a phenomenon that occurs within already existing global systems that constitute, as they are constituted by, localities and their interrelationships (see Friedman & Ekholm, 2008a, 2008b). From this perspective, neither the global nor globalization is new, and the isolated societies of anthropological mythology are not leftovers untouched by the larger world. Rather, they are historical products of larger processes, as indicated by a body of scholarship in historical anthropology and archaeology that includes Robert Gordon's *The Bushman Myth*, Matthew Spriggs's "Ethnographic Parallels and the denial of History," and Ed Wilmsen's *Land Filled With Flies*.

It is clear, then, that studies of global systems are about something different from studies of globalization; or, rather, though each is concerned with *the global*, they construe the word in very different ways. From the global-systems perspective, "the global" refers to the invisible logics or properties of interlocal relations, which can generate phenomena such as globalization, the export of wealth, the diffusion of culture, mass migration, and the inversion of hegemonic ideology, whereas from the perspective of globalization discourse the former is an empirical novelty expressing the birth of a new world of open-ended connections. From the perspective of global systems, any approach that assumes that the global is an empirical field in its own right, different from the local, is a victim of misplaced concreteness. Even doing fieldwork on airplanes is local, and transnational fieldwork is likewise always about relations between localities. Much of the globalization literature, however, sees the global as somehow postnational or transnational, and compounds that with its own evolutionary bias: Once we were local, but now we are global; we have gone beyond all that, finally.

The fundamental difference between these two approaches is not new to the discipline. It echoes the difference between the structural functionalists and structuralists, and that difference is worth attention because it helps illustrate the difference between globalization and global systems. For the structural functionalists, the primary analytical object is the descent group or residential group. When relations are established between such groups, new levels of sociocultural integration emerge, a process that repeats and builds until we get to the global. For the structural functionalists, then, relations are links between already constituted entities, which, by definition, exist prior to the relations in which they are involved. For the structuralists, on the other hand, larger structures and smaller ones constitute each other. So, where structural functionalism saw descent groups as logically prior to the alliances that they formed, for structuralists alliance and descent form a single reproductive process in which the exchange relation is dominant.

The logic of global-systemic analysis lies at the core of Claude Lévi-Strauss's concept of the atom of kinship. His argument against the nuclearity of A. R. Radcliffe-Brown's nuclear family was based on his argument that the group, as an exogamous unit, could only reproduce itself through social relations with other groups, so that the wife giver (or husband giver) is a necessary part of the elementary structure of kinship. In more general terms, structuralism holds that relations are not something added on to already existing units. Rather, the unit is an aspect constituted within the larger set of relations. A lineage is an aspect of a larger structure of reproduction organized along kinship lines; a factory is an aspect of a larger structure of reproduction organized along commercial lines.

From the global-systemic perspective, then, local political units, such as nation-states, are constituted in larger relations within the global. The global, on the other hand, is that structured field of larger relations. It is not an entity in its own right. Not being an entity in itself, the global cannot generate the local. It is rather the field whose processes are necessary and sufficient for understanding the formation of the local. It should be clear, then, that locality is not a common global product that is spread by diffusion or generated from "above," in the way Roland Robertson and Appadurai seem to see it. Localization may be a global process, but the local is always an articulation between a specific set of historical and cultural and localized practices and the larger social field within which they are maintained, reproduced, and transformed. The structuralist critique of structural functionalism resides in the latter's empiricism—structure as observable interaction, as opposed to the explicit hypothetical approach of structuralism. The properties that account for physical phenomena such as falling objects are not identical to the falling objects themselves and are linked to more hypothetical-abstract relations between physical objects in general, namely, gravity, which is not an observable "phenomenon." Similarly, elementary structures of kinship are hypothetical models rather than empirical abstractions, and global systems are of the same order.

If globalization is an essential and new reality of flows and connections, and if there is no accounting for the way in which the phenomenon is generated, then the focus of analysis can easily be reduced to simple diffusionism. If anthropologists and others busy themselves with discovering where things come from and with showing how they get all mixed up in particular urban or other localities—that is, as hybrid or creolized cultures—that busying need not have anything to do with social lives other than their own. If such is the case, then we are dealing not with the nature of the world but instead with the identity of the collectors themselves, observing a reified world of objects from above rather than trying to grasp the emics of people's lives. This classification and hierarchization resembles that of the older colonial administrators—academics who were concerned with identifying hybrids and creoles in their empires. Like those older colonials, writers concerned with globalization have missed the point that "phenomena" like hybridity and creolization are largely products of the global gaze—they are part of the emic world of the observer unless otherwise demonstrated. That is because they are ways of identifying the experience of multiplicity at a distance. The issue of *real-existing hybridity* is one of self-identification. But it is important not to confuse etic and emic identifications, as has been common in the literature.

The globalists, then—that is, those who adopt the globalist vulgate—have failed to recognize that globalization is a process within global systems that depends on the prior existence of such systems. This failure leads to a range of errors. These include the assumption of evolution from local to global, the renaissance of diffusionism, and the focus on strange combinations that become a new kind of exoticism—hybrid cultures of Coca-Cola, *Dallas*, and "traditional" rituals and objects. This new diffusionism has a clear ideological component, identified as the unquestionably positive evaluation of cosmopolitanism or transnationalism in the vulgate: "Diffusionism, whatever its defects and in whatever guise, has at least the virtue of allowing everyone the possibility of exposure to a world larger than their current locale" (Appadurai, 1988, p. S39). Is this a new project of "enlightenment"?

To focus on diffusion, no matter what its virtues, is not to have a theory. Rather, it is to be preoccupied with the genealogy of objects, instead of attending to their integration into the social context in which they exist. This looks like a step backward, a forgetting of what we already knew. The celebrated archaeologist Gordon Childe understood that diffusion is embedded in larger systems of exchange. American cultural anthropology has long been concerned not with the origins of cultural elements but with the ways in which they are part of larger schemes of life. It is people's ability to produce coherent, structured local life from the cultural materials at hand that these new diffusionists quite absurdly deny.

Conclusion

Notions of globalization surfaced early in the 1980s in a number of disciplines in which a sudden awareness or experience that the world had changed became salient. The global perspective is not new, and aspects of globalist work are continuations of previous scholarly concerns. However, the

globalization literature was relatively novel in its stress on the evolutionary character of the current situation and its discontinuity with the past, not the least in its propositions concerning the end of the nation-state and the growth of a diasporic and postnational world.

It is useful to expand our frame, to look beyond the single society or nation-state, a desire shared by both globalist and global-systemic approaches. The focus on transnational relations, global networks, and multiculturalism has brought much to anthropological debate. However, globalization "theorizers" have too often assumed that the world had once been more local and was now entering a new age, and they have done so in a way that indicates evolutionist and normative biases that merit critical reflection. This entry has pursued that reflection by placing globalization in the context of global systems. Doing so encourages us to ask where and when globalization occurs and whether it is a long-term trend or a cyclical phenomenon. Similarly, it encourages us to avoid a trap that, as suggested earlier, globalists have failed to avoid, the trap of assuming that their personal experiences represent the world that they describe, rather than their distinctive locations within it.

Jonathan Friedman

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Dependency Theory; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Harvey, David; Herskovits, Melville; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marxist Anthropology; Sahlins, Marshall; Structural Functionalism; Structuralism; Wallerstein, Immanuel; Wolf, Eric; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Appadurai, A. (1988). Putting hierarchy in its place. *Cultural Anthropology, 3,* S36–S49.

———. (1996). *Modernity at large: Cultural dimensions of globalization.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

———. (2006). *Fear of small numbers: An essay on the geography of anger.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Calhoun, C. (2003). The class consciousness of frequent travelers: Toward a critique of actually existing cosmopolitanism. *South Atlantic Quarterly, 101*(4), 869–897.

Clifford, J. (1997). *Routes.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Ekholm, K. (1976). Om studiet av det globala systemets dynamik [On the study of global system dynamics]. *Antropologiska Studier, 14,* 15–23.

Friedman, J. (1994). *Cultural identity and global process.* London, UK: Sage.

———. (2002). From roots to routes: Tropes for trekkers. *Anthropological Theory, 2,* 21–36.

Friedman, J., & Friedman, K. E. (2008a). *The anthropology of global systems: Vol. 1. Historical transformations.* Lanham, MD: Altamira Press.

———. (2008b). *The anthropology of global systems: Vol. 2. Modernities, class, and the contradictions of globalization.* Lanham, MD: Altamira Press.

Hannerz, U. (1996). *Transnational connections: Culture, people, places.* London, UK: Routledge.

Wallerstein, I. (2004). *World system analysis: An introduction.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Gluckman, Max

Max Gluckman (1911–1975) was a distinguished social anthropologist who did pioneering studies of African legal systems and maintained an abiding interest in the dynamics of local conflict and its resolution.

Biography

The second of four children, Herman Max Gluckman was born in Johannesburg, South Africa, in 1911 to Jewish immigrant parents. He excelled in academics and sports at King Edward VII School, a school modeled after British public schools, emphasizing public service and personal character. He entered the University of the Witwatersrand in 1928, intending to pursue a legal career, a professional path his father and two brothers were to pursue. However, on a whim, he and his school friend Hilda Kuper decided to do a course in social anthropology with Agnes Winifred Hoernle. During the second-year anthropology course, Hoernle took a sabbatical, with Isaac Schapera taking her place. Schapera took Gluckman, Kuper, Eileen Krige, and Ellen Hellman on a field trip to Botswana, an experience that was to play a major role in Gluckman's eventual decision to pursue a career in anthropology. After graduating with first classes in both social anthropology and logic in 1930, Gluckman concentrated on his legal studies and student politics. In his third year, however, he switched to the BA Honors

degree in social anthropology, which he completed in the first class in 1934. Gluckman's thesis focused on Zulu chiefs, who were, as he claimed, "a sort of clearing house for economic energy—to and from [whom] . . . flowed the constant stimulus of social energy"—a model of how he was later to run seminars at Manchester University.

Gluckman's extracurricular activities while a student at Witwatersrand also played a formative role in shaping the direction his later anthropological studies would take. He was a member of the student government and almost single-handedly ran the student newspaper, an experience that helped Gluckman hone his lucid expository writing style. He also played a leading role in the National Union of South African Students (NUSAS), serving as secretary for the Bantu Studies Department. In the NUSAS Student Parliament, he was leader of the Liberals (undoubtedly inspired by his teachers, the Hoernles, both leading Liberals) and was instrumental in proposing that Fort Hare, a Black college, be admitted to NUSAS. This action eventually led the Afrikaans universities to secede from NUSAS and create their own apartheid-oriented student organization.

Awarded a Rhodes scholarship, Gluckman enrolled in Exeter College in 1934 and, studying with Robert Marrett, obtained in 1936 the first anthropology doctorate awarded at Oxford. Gluckman's dissertation, *Realm of the Supernatural Among the South-Eastern Bantu*, was based on library research rather than ethnographic fieldwork. While a student at Exeter, Gluckman also regularly attended Bronisław Malinowski's famous seminar in London and formed a close intellectual relationship with E. E. Evans-Pritchard and Myer Fortes.

In 1936, courtesy of Carnegie funding, Gluckman undertook fieldwork in Zululand. While in the field, he pushed the notion of "participant observation" to a level well beyond that practiced by Malinowski. Having studied the Zulu language (isiZulu) for 2 years at Witwatersrand, Gluckman rapidly gained fluency, but his adoption of local customs, including the wearing of traditional costume and living in a traditional hut, upset the local authorities. Fortunately, several of Gluckman's "old school chums" were technical officers in Zululand, who intervened on his behalf. Through this personal network and experience, Gluckman developed many of the insights that were incorporated into his most famous article, published in 1940, "'The Bridge': Analysis of a Social Situation in Zululand"—commonly referred to as "The Bridge."

Following this fieldwork, Gluckman returned to Oxford for his third year as a Rhodes Scholar, tutoring under the newly appointed A. R. Radcliffe-Brown. It was at this time that he married Mary Brignoli, the daughter of a prominent Italian communist. He finally managed, as the fourth choice, to secure a position in 1939 at the newly established Rhodes-Livingstone Institute (RLI) in northern Rhodesia. Apparently, rampant anti-Semitism and Gluckman's alleged communist sympathies were key factors in hindering his appointment.

Two years later, following the death of Godfrey Wilson, Gluckman was appointed director of the institute, a position he was to hold until 1947. During this time, he astutely managed to balance fieldwork in Barotseland with administrative and fund-raising chores and developed a largely successful 7-year plan, which he conceived in terms not of anthropology but as comparative sociology, encompassing both traditional and industrial life. His plan sought to analyze the region as a single social system including Whites and Blacks. In Barotseland, he initially concentrated on economic issues, but his most famous fieldwork entailed his pioneering ethnographies of law and jurisprudence. Gluckman had a knack for attracting a coterie of impressive young fieldworkers who were later to make their own major contributions to anthropology, including J. Clyde Mitchell, J. A. Barnes, Victor Turner, Elizabeth Colson, J. H. Holleman, William Watson, Max Marwick, A. L. Epstein, Ian Cunnison, Norman Long, and Jaap van Velsen.

Leaving the RLI in 1948, Gluckman lectured for 2 years at the Institute of Social Anthropology at Oxford before leaving to take the Foundation Chair at the Victoria University of Manchester. Over the following decade, a distinct "Manchester school" approach emerged. The unique direction anthropology and sociology were to take at Manchester was in part not only due to Gluckman adopting the role of a Zulu chief in his management of departmental affairs (including an expectation that all department members should attend Manchester United football games) but also due to his deep commitment to interdisciplinary studies. Gluckman worked closely with other Manchester academics, in particular the professor of government W. J. M. MacKenzie and

the economist Ely Devons. Interdisciplinary dialogue was a hallmark of Gluckman's approach, epitomized in the 1964 edited volume *Closed Systems and Open Minds: The Limits of Naïveté*. Skillfully deploying Simon Visiting Fellowships, Gluckman attracted both well-established and promising young scholars to Manchester, including Erving Goffman, George Homans, Leo and Hilda Kuper, and apartheid exiles like Jack Simons.

Gluckman also managed to maintain productive links with the RLI, bringing RLI fieldworkers to Manchester to complete their dissertations and to study the British equivalents of their African research. Those gravitating to Manchester, apart from the original RLI nucleus, included Peter Worsley, F. G. Bailey, Ronald Frankenberg, Bruce Kapferer, Richard Werbner, and the sociologists Tom Lupton and Norman Long. Under Gluckman's leadership, these prominent British community studies specialists are said to have launched "modern British sociology" as several of the Manchester acolytes, such as Mitchell, Barnes, and Worsley, obtained chairs in sociology at major universities.

Convinced of the importance of popularizing anthropology since his days as a student and his early experience at the RLI, Gluckman wrote a large number of articles for the popular press and made presentations on the BBC. Gluckman also sought to show how anthropological perspectives could provide insights into contemporary society, writing on topics ranging from English football crowds, to the application of Azande notions of witchcraft, to understanding Nazi hatred of the Jews. By contemporary standards, Gluckman would be seen as a true public intellectual.

A long-term and ardent public critic of colonialism, who was regularly accused of being a "negrophiliac" and a "communist" by settlers and bureaucrats, Gluckman was denied a visa to visit Papua New Guinea and was declared as a Prohibited Immigrant to Northern Rhodesia. Eventually, the ties to Zambia loosened, and disillusioned with the developments there, Gluckman started developing an academic interest in Israel. His interest in Israel and secular Zionism was both long-standing and complex. His mother was a leading Zionist in South Africa, and Gluckman's parental family followed his elder brother in immigrating to Israel after World War II. So strongly did he feel about Israel that he volunteered for the Israeli Defense Force after the Six-Day War. In 1963, Gluckman launched a unique concentrated effort by a team of anthropologists to explore the industrialized state. Funded by the Manchester-based Bernstein Foundation, he supervised a number of dissertations on different aspects of Israeli society and saw them through to publication. He also trained a number of prominent Israeli anthropologists, including Don Handelman, Moshe Shokeid, Emmanuel Marx, and Shlomo Deshen, who were to establish anthropology as an academic discipline in Israel. This project can also be seen as an intellectual riposte to a generational conflict that developed at Manchester, resulting in a rather acrimonious splitting of the sociology department, led by Worsley and Mitchell, who believed that with decolonization, anthropology was destined for extinction. After retirement, Gluckman spent most of his time in Israel as the Lady Davis Professor at the Hebrew University of Jerusalem. He died of a heart attack in 1974, leaving his widow, three sons, and a listed probate at just under £2,000.

Contributions to Anthropology

Unlike the present vogue in the social sciences, Gluckman did not produce an explicit theoretical exegesis. Instead, the theoretical perspectives he employed are embedded within the very fabric of his ethnographic work. This intimate link between theory and practice is one of the hallmarks of Gluckman's approach to anthropology and of his own personal commitment to political action. Gluckman thus approached his African field research, his participation in radical British politics, and his chairmanship of the Department of Anthropology and Sociology at Manchester University as critical anthropological projects.

Gluckman's theoretical perspectives were built on selected elements of the views expressed by Evans-Pritchard, Radcliffe-Brown, and Durkheim. However, rather than merely recapitulating their theoretical views, Gluckman's anthropological genius was revealed in the ways in which he built on their concerns with social structure in several distinctive ways. Unlike the earlier structural functionalists, Gluckman did not view social structure as monolithic or homeostatic, but instead he saw the pervasive presence of conflict within all social institutions and relationships. Borrowing heavily from Marxian views, Gluckman believed that conflict permeated

every aspect of social life. However, rather than seeing these conflicts perpetually ripping asunder the nature of social life, Gluckman saw the crosscutting ties of kinship, ethnicity, politics, and economics acting to ensure that these conflicts did not undermine the existing social structure but instead reinforced it. For Gluckman, such conflicts *frequently* led to revolts but *rarely* to revolutions, the critical distinction being that revolts focus on the removal of a particular office holder but not on the dissolution of the political office itself or the structural principles it embodied. Thus, Gluckman saw social structure doing its greatest work—and at its most visible—at the very moments when other anthropologists contended that social structure was being actively challenged, altered, or discarded altogether.

Gluckman explored these views through a form of anthropological inquiry that he called the "extended-case" method, inspired most probably from his legal background and his interest in Freudian analysis. This "method" was far more than a mere methodology but represented a critical integrative element in his attempt to examine the expression of social structure in the concrete reality of everyday life. Gluckman was critical of anthropologists (Malinowski in particular) who produced ethnographies that were full of "cases" that illustrated a particular insight into cultural practices but eschewed the integration of these cases into a synthetic examination of the underlying social structure. Gluckman suggested that his extended-case method permitted a deeper understanding of what Malinowski and others dismissed as accidental quarrels and personality conflicts, as evidence of the actual social processes and relations underlying every aspect of social life. These views make Gluckman one of the first social anthropologists in the British tradition to employ an explicitly Hegelo-Marxian dialectical perspective on theory and practice. These views placed Gluckman at the forefront of a turn in anthropological theory, a movement that was to eventually find its fullest expression in Pierre Bourdieu's theory of practice.

The extended-case study can be broken down into two basic types. First, there is the use of what can be termed "situational analysis," where the focus is on a single event proscribed by time and space and the case serves largely as a didactic device to illustrate the workings of a complex social order. The second version, as developed by Gluckman's protégé Jaap van Velsen, is processual rather than morphological and has much greater depth of time and space. Overall, the method of analysis and presentation contrasted sharply with the static morphological and abstracted empiricism of conventional accounts and not only served for illustration but also allowed the reader to scrutinize the interpretation in greater depth.

Gluckman's use of the extended-case study, and its impact, can be traced into three areas of cultural anthropology that were later to become flourishing subdisciplines: (1) legal anthropology, (2) urban anthropology, and (3) the anthropology of colonialism and world systems. Given his long-standing interest in politics and his legal training, it was a good fit for him to study the Barotse judicial process, and his 1955 study became a classic. Following the legal realists, like Hoebel, to find the law through "trouble cases," he famously argued that despite cultural variations, dispute resolution processes were similar in that they employed the concept of "the Reasonable Man." Unlike colleagues such as Paul Bohannan, who argued that each culture was unique and thus needed to be analyzed in its own terms, Gluckman focused on similarities rather than differences across cultures and held that to make generalizations one needed a toolkit of standardized concepts, like that provided by Anglo-Roman law.

Although Gluckman's use of Marxian conflict theory was anticipatory of emerging theories in the social sciences, he actively resisted the growing mid-20th-century tendency of anthropologists to stress the importance of individuals and personal psychological factors over the cultural contexts and social processes he saw structuring and conditioning the individual in the first place. For Gluckman, individuals—including their psychological capacities—were the product of the social structure and were not, as some of his anthropological contemporaries seemed to argue, created in a philosophical vacuum, unaltered by the social structure or social life. Thus, Gluckman stressed the structural nature of social conflict rather than personal or psychological factors. Such views led Gluckman into pitched rhetorical conflict with several of his contemporaries—most famously, Sir Edmund Leach. Given that many of the theoretical currents of the late 20th century were built on philosophies of individuality largely unconcerned with the cultural contexts structuring that individuality, Gluckman's views were prescient.

Although Gluckman did not do any urban fieldwork himself, he actively encouraged it both in Northern Rhodesia and at Manchester. Most famously, in 1961, he asserted that an "African miner is a miner" and should be analyzed first as a miner and then only as an African. While colonial administrators were concerned about "detribalization," Gluckman was asking why "tribalism" persisted. The extended-case study also led to important developments in urban anthropology, largely by his students, in particular A. L. Epstein and J. C. Mitchell, the former pioneering the study of ethnicity and the latter lauded for his role in developing network analysis, a logical development of the extended-case study.

Gluckman's interest in the urban situation stemmed from his Radcliffe-Brownian view that one had to examine the total social situation. By this, he meant that colonial society had to be seen as a single social field that incorporated both urban and rural, colonizer and colonized. The seeds for this view are apparent in his famous "Bridge" paper, first published in 1940, in which he described the opening of a bridge in Zululand and used the event to examine aspects of the South African colonial situation. In his popular broadcasts, he was to return repeatedly to the theme of how societies, with so many contradictions and conflicts, managed to cohere. It was not the machine gun but money, he suggested, that bound these disparate and conflicting groups together—plus the nature of crosscutting ties, which were multiplex rather than simplex. Along with the sociologist Leo Kuper and the Caribbean anthropologist M. G. Smith, he tried to develop a framework for analyzing what became known as plural societies, but with the rise of radical scholarship in the 1970s, this approach fell out of favor.

Gluckman's work was integral to the development of the Manchester school's approach to anthropology, with many of his students and departmental colleagues pushing his theoretical ideas into a variety of productive areas of anthropological inquiry. Despite his considerable impact on the discipline, at present, Gluckman is not seen as having made the same theoretical impact as several of his contemporaries. Perhaps, this oversight is due to Gluckman's inability to consider the question of why social structures found themselves in perpetual conflict rather than simply assuming its presence.

To the end of his life, South Africa remained an important intellectual and ethical lodestar for Gluckman. One of his last essays was *Anthropology and Apartheid*. The task of anthropology was not to translate between different cultures—that is what ethnologists were doing, and it sustained apartheid. Rather, for Gluckman, the anthropologist had to take a wider perspective and had to analyze Black and White as part of a single social system.

Robert Gordon and Cameron Wesson

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Fortes, Meyer; Goffman, Erving; Kuper, Hilda B.; Malinowski, Bronisław; Manchester School; Oxford University; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Schapera, Isaac; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Evens, T. M. S., & Handelman, D. (Eds.). (2006). *The Manchester school*. New York, NY: Berghahn.

Gluckman, M. (1940). Analysis of a social situation in modern Zululand. *Bantu Studies, 14,* 147–174.

———. (1955). *The judicial process among the Barotse of Northern Rhodesia.* Manchester, UK: Manchester University Press.

———. (1961). Anthropological problems arising from the African industrial revolution. In A. Southall (Ed.), *Social change in modern Africa* (pp. 67–82). New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

———. (1975). Anthropologists and apartheid: The work of South African anthropologists. In M. Fortes & S. Patterson (Eds.), *Studies in African social anthropology* (pp. 21–39). London, UK: Academic.

Hannerz, U. (1980). *Exploring the city.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Kapferer, B. (1987). The anthropology of Max Gluckman. *Social Analysis, 22,* 3–21.

Kuper, L., & Smith, M. G. (Eds.). (1969). *Pluralism in Africa.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Schumaker, L. (2001). *Africanizing anthropology.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Godelier, Maurice

Maurice Godelier (1934–), an oceanist ethnologist, is among the founders of French Marxist anthropology.

A graduate of École Normale Supérieure, with an *agrégation* in philosophy and a double degree in psychology and literature from Sorbonne University, Godelier also trained in economics with Charles

Bettelheim and in history with Fernand Braudel at the École Pratique des Hautes Études. Under the supervision of Claude Lévi-Strauss, who recruited him as his assistant at the Collège de France, he undertook fieldwork in Papua New Guinea between 1967 and 1969. His academic career was spent at the École des Hautes Études en Sciences Sociales, where he inaugurated the chair in economic anthropology in 1975, before creating and leading the Centre for Research and Documentation in Oceania in 1995. He was further involved in the institutional development of French anthropological research: by introducing and putting in perspective the translations of Karl Marx, Reo Fortune, Karl Polanyi, Mary Douglas, Eric Wolf, and Edmund Leach, when he was general editor of the Library of Anthropology from 1970 to 1977, and by becoming the founding director of both the Humanities and Social Sciences department at the National Centre for Scientific Research (Centre national de la recherche scientifique, CNRS) and the Research and Teaching department of the Musée du Quai Branly in 1982 and 2000, respectively. His work was awarded the highest scientific distinctions in Germany (Humboldt Research Award, 1989) and in France (CNRS gold medal, 2001), on the basis of its theoretical project of merging Lévi-Strauss's structuralism into Marx's historical materialism.

Against postmodernism and cultural studies, Godelier has reasserted the reflexive, scientific, and empirical features of anthropological practice as well as its distinctive status among the social sciences. Godelier insists that anthropological knowledge can be objective and cumulative beyond its critical function, so long as it exercises systematic comparison, decenters the ethnographic stance, objectifies the historical and social conditions of participant observation, and keeps deconstructing and reconstructing theories, methods, and empirical data in light of new facts, concepts, and controversies. This is why his publications review the main debates in kinship, religion, economics, and politics, and why his methodological inquiry is based on a deep immersion in people's daily life over the long term (between his original fieldwork and 1988, he returned eight times to Papua New Guinea's Eastern Highlands).

Ethnography of the Baruya

Godelier carried out fieldwork among the Baruya, a recently contacted tribe in Papua New Guinea, comprising some 2,000 individuals. He conducted a comprehensive survey of clans and genealogies on the basis of a topographical study of 600 garden plots and produced an inventory of kinship relations within horticultural work teams and between first land clearers, freeholders, and beneficiary users. He also undertook an exhaustive monograph dealing with warfare, pig husbandry, shamanism, and the building of houses and irrigation canals. The main result of this work was to bring to light a fundamental, asymmetrical gender relationship in the cross-functional sexual division of labor. Women were excluded from the manufacture, ownership, and use of clearing tools, weapons, musical instruments, and ritual objects. They had restricted access to land, political assemblies, cooperative tasks, and primitive forms of money, which were all under male control. Women were directly exchanged as spouses between brothers or lineage segments; they were socialized into submissive behaviors and were subjected to physical and symbolic violence. This masculine domination was inscribed both in women's real separation from the means of production, destruction, and ritual communication and in the imaginary and symbolic production of gendered bodies and minds through initiation ceremonies. Whereas only 2 weeks was sufficient to ritually transform a pubescent girl into a potential spouse and mother, young boys were separated from their mothers and sisters for 12 years and were obliged to live in the big initiates' house; they had to endure four long ritual cycles before becoming actual men begotten by other men, and therefore able to marry and procreate.

Consent to masculine domination was thus produced through sharing the same cosmology: The sun was the source of living beings and the root of bodily forms and intentional minds; its power of growth was embodied in sperm; and sperm was the human source of vitality and fecundity from which mother's milk and blood were derived. Initiatory revelation consisted for women in learning how to suck breast milk and to regularly swallow their husband's sperm; men's initiatory secret was the obligation for young novices to practice fellatio on their co-initiated elders who were still virgins and whose penises had not yet been contaminated by female bodily fluids. This regular ingestion was supposed to make them grow stronger and more powerful than women during their long period of seclusion. It was this ritual

of homosexuality, restricted to the initiates' house, that gave men the power to give social birth to the boys who came out of their mother's womb. Baruya male power and domination were both grounded on the depreciation and denial of women's reproductive role and on the dispossession of female (pro)creative abilities through their ritual transfer and imaginary attribution to initiated men, the only ones who had the legitimacy to act on behalf of the Baruya polity.

Theoretical Contributions to Anthropology

Godelier's main theoretical aim was to compare the basic structures of polities as well as their historical genesis, cultural evolution, and transformational logic. From Marx and Lévi-Strauss, he retains three axiomatic principles: first, the distribution of agency in different kinds of materiality (e.g., brains, symbols, artifacts, social relations, and ecological environments); second, the notion of an underlying logic of social relations, the unintentional properties of which may be contradictory in their synchronic articulation and organization into a hierarchical structure; and third, the analysis of these structuring-structured relations prior to theorizing their change over time on the basis of their interactions, inside and outside the system they form.

The Work of Imagination in Material Agency

Relating to the first point, Godelier goes beyond neoclassical formalism and cultural materialism to theorize a kind of bounded rationality whose available options and optimization devices arise from conceptual schemes associated with the hierarchical complementarity of economic, kinship, and political-religious relations. These conceptual schemes are in part autonomous, owing to the human capacity for imagination and analogical thinking; but they also result from the embodiment of the properties of unequal social relations and their transfiguration into an external, nonhuman source. Thus, while the Baruya attribute restricted agency to women, they conceive of the sun as an ultrapowerful agent. In the same vein, each ethnotheory of procreation postulates that the mating between a woman and a man isn't sufficient to make a child (only a fetus!). The intervention of gods, ancestors, or the State appears necessary to engender a new human being. Kinship is thus conceived as the transmission of forms of interiority and physicality (i.e., soul, mind, substance, and phenotype) that are essential to the reproduction of life. As a result, incest is defined within each society as sexual unions between people who share these identical original components. For Godelier, Lévi-Strauss's mistake was to neglect this mental dimension of kinship and the fact that what matters most in marriage is for families to perpetuate themselves. The founding principle of exogamy and of women exchange fails to fully account for the prohibition of incest, which is better explained by its function in perpetuating family procreation and the parenting units that emerged following the domestication of fire and the correlative invention of the hearth and the base camp.

Godelier criticizes Marxists for having underestimated the significance of operational chains, skills, taxonomies, or ideas that, within productive forces, justify the distribution of tasks in labor processes. Likewise, he reproaches them for having neglected the rules of possession and of the usage of resources and of energy sources within relations of production. This concern with mental and public representations leads him to identify three universal conceptual schemes that frame the rationality of human activities: (1) the notion of keeping for transmitting (with the preservation of both property and usage rights), (2) the idea of giving for indebting and sharing (maintaining property rights while transferring usage rights), and (3) the principle of exchanging for growing (which concerns both the transfer and the acquisition of property and usage rights). A polity reproduces itself over time because its social relations assume a hierarchy of functions at the same time that they are fueled by these three combined principles.

Primitive forms of money are a case in point. It is not the amount of incorporated work that fixes their value, as Godelier has shown by measuring the length, quantity, and type of labor involved in the different production phases of vegetal salt among the Baruya. The bars of salt are used by the men as if they were commodities and units of accounting within the provincial intertribal exchange system to acquire weapons, foods, and ornaments that are scarce within their own territory. However, salt bars are used as valuables within the tribe, by being given to affines and cross-cousins as compensation for social obligations. And they are considered as an equivalent for sperm in initiations, just as they can serve as a compensation for a homicide, when they become a substitute for sacred objects or human

persons. The origin of universal currencies should thus be sought in the commercialization of these valuables along the commodity chains.

The Logic of Social Relations

On the second point related to the internal dynamics of polities, Godelier keeps away from neo-evolutionist and vulgar Marxist approaches. Evolutionary typologies (bands, tribes, chiefdoms, and states) are based on shared features that do not take into account the structural diversity of the relations of production within each category. Thus, the Trobriand, Tikopia, and Hawaii islands are all credited with chiefdoms that are alike in terms of the chief's control over the distribution of the products of work, but they differ in terms of their chief's involvement in the organization of labor processes: Trobriand chiefs remain direct producers, Tikopian chiefs only supervise the farming of sago and collective fishing, and Hawaiian aristocrats do not engage in any form of material production at all. Furthermore, these chiefdoms contrast sharply in terms of their chief's control over the workforce, natural resources, and the technologies used by their descent groups: no control among the Trobrianders, weak in Tikopia, and monopolistic in Hawaii. Elsewhere, Godelier rejects economic determinism by reformulating the infrastructure/superstructure distinction and the dominant historical role played by certain social relations within polities. For a practice—whether ritual, governmental, parental, or productive—and its associated ideas, institutions, and relations to play a major role in the organization and the evolution of a polity, it must endorse—in addition to its explicit finalities—the function of production relation. In other words, it must consist in achieving the appropriation of resources, of the means of production, and of the product itself. This is the case, for instance, of kinship among the Australian Aborigines, of politics in Ancient Greece, of the Hindu religion, or of Western capitalist economy. For Godelier, however, there can be no such a thing as a kin-based, economic-based, or religious-based polity. In the final instance, it is the exercise of a sovereign power on a territory—through the exploitation of its resources and through the governance of the populations involved in this exploitation—that is at the basis of polities and of their imagined representation as interrelated, ordered totalities. The Baruya case offers a good illustration of this idea. Descent and matrimonial alliances serve as frames for cooperation, for the appropriation of the means of production, and for the sharing of products. But kinship remains nevertheless subordinate to the power relations and hierarchies between men and women that are enacted during male initiations. The organization of initiations requires the gathering of the whole tribe and the reactivation of hierarchies between the autochthonous and conquering clans, the latter being the owners of the sacred objects (*kwaitmanié*) that are necessary for the making of great men (warriors, shamans, and cassowary hunters). During these initiations, an intergenerational male solidarity operates, even greater than the one created within a generation, through the direct exchange of sisters. Indeed, each initiatory grade becomes both the recipient and the bestower of sperm in relation to the preceding and the following initiatory grades, and becomes indebted to the owners of the *kwaitmanié*.

Structural Changes in History

The last point concerns the multilinear evolution of polities from the hunting-gathering bands of the Paleolithic to the revolutions of the Neolithic, the Bronze Age, and the industrial 19th and 20th centuries. Godelier has opened four main avenues of inquiry: (1) the metamorphoses of kinship, (2) the state formation processes, (3) the transition from great- to big-men polities in Melanesia, and (4) the expansion of capitalist economy. In each case, he explores the specific transformational logics at work.

First, Godelier shows how, in kinship, the transfer of the attributes of economic and political-religious relations to the imagined roles and status of parent and child, and of siblings and cousins, is afterward embodied into masculine and feminine genders. For example, the evolution of kinship terminologies has been driven by long-term social and cultural changes. They gradually created equivalences between parallel and cross-cousins. Prescriptive rules of alliance as well as the exchange of sisters disappeared. Dravidian terminologies constitute the origins of several evolutionary lines. Some of them became Australian, Iroquois, Hawaiian, and Sudanese systems. Others developed into Crow-Omaha and Eskimo systems, deriving from Iroquois and Sudanese terminologies, respectively.

Second, Godelier critically applies the Marxist concept of *Asiatic mode of production* to the functioning of early states, as for instance the Inca Empire. He demonstrates the weak significance of this concept, which leaves unspecified the productive forces and the relations of production (multiple and varied within autonomous village and tribal communities) and reduces them to the extraction of tribute and *corvée* labor. Nonetheless, he retains the idea that all early states are based on divine kingship, whose religion organizes certain relations of production and justifies the separation between direct producers and surplus consumers, as well as their endogamy and imagined essentialization. He considers the monopolistic use of ritual and sacred objects to control the imaginary conditions of reproduction of the universe/life and argues that it must have preceded the internal differentiation of social status and the formation of new hierarchies such as orders, castes, or classes. This monopoly of the means of communication with the divine and the occult constitutes an evolutionary step leading to the control of the visible material means of production and distribution.

Third, Godelier goes beyond Marcel Mauss's distinction between antagonistic gift giving (*potlatch*) and nonantagonistic gift exchange (*kula*) by conceptualizing the emergence of the former from the latter. By comparing more than 50 Melanesian societies, he identifies two structural conditions that are necessary for the transition from great-men polities (e.g., Baruya), based on male initiations and endemic warfare, to big-men polities (e.g., Enga), characterized by their intertribal ceremonial exchanges and their female spirit cults. First, marriage must no longer be implemented through the direct exchange of women, and bride wealth should for the most part replace sister exchange. Second, access to nonhereditary positions of power and prestige is now competitive and open to those seeking to dominate through redistribution of their wealth. An important evolutionary step toward commodification, such transformation institutes for the first time the connections between the reproduction of kinship relations and the production and accumulation of wealth. The underlying mental revolution is twofold. On the one hand, the equivalence (wealth = a person) replaces the identity (a person = a person). On the other hand, in the act of giving, the search for nonequivalence rather than equivalence, rivalry and indebtness rather than solidarity and sharing, becomes the main goal and motivation.

As a result, Godelier develops the Marxian theory of formal and real subordination of labor processes under capital. He establishes the set of possible articulations between different kinds of productive forces and relations of production according to their novelty. He does so by taking into account the fundamental and changing role of cultural representations, kinship, and religious and political relations. This line of reflection is well illustrated through his case study of the colonial impact on the Baruya's way of life, following not only the introduction of wage earning, commodity production, and steel tools but also the loss of their sovereignty, the prohibition of their rituals, and the intertribal schooling of their children by Christian missions.

Laurent Berger

See also Economic Anthropology; Gift Exchange; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Mauss, Marcel; Structural Marxism; Structuralism

Further Readings

Godelier, M. (1972). *Rationality and irrationality in economics*. New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.
———. (1977). *Perspectives in Marxist anthropology.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1986). *The making of great men: Male domination and power among the New Guinea Baruya.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1986). *The mental and the material: Thought, economy, and society.* London, UK: Verso.
———. (1999). *The enigma of the gift.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
———. (2009). *In and out of the West: Reconstructing anthropology.* London, UK: Verso.
———. (2012). *The metamorphoses of kinship*. London, UK: Verso.
Goody, J. (2005). The labyrinth of kinship. *New Left Review, 36,* 127–139.

Goffman, Erving

Erving Goffman (1922–1982) created a framework for examining how people manage the complex interactions of everyday life; by focusing on what he understood as social routines and face-saving

practices, he paid attention to the obligations and expectations that govern ordinary interactions, to how obligations and expectations are breached, and to how participants attempt to repair offenses and possible harm to social status. In his 1984 essay "Goffman Reconsidered: Pros and Players," Roger Abrahams called Goffman "the philosopher-poet of modernity in the mid-twentieth century, of mobilized people whose daily lives are less and less affected by home and community" (p. 80).

Works

Forms of Talk

In his 1981 work *Forms of Talk*, Goffman described his work as "the naturalistic study of human foregatherings and comminglings, that is, the forms and occasions of face-to-face interaction" (p. 162). This excerpt, from his subtly argued, densely layered metacommunicative essay "The Lecture," provides a guide for considering an appropriately Goffmanesque encyclopedia entry on his work. Goffman was explicitly critical of the unchallenged use of biographical detail in an entry such as this. Several scholars have valiantly attempted to provide the information that Goffman was reluctant to offer. It is not that Goffman wanted the work to stand on its own but rather that he was profoundly interested in the forms of communication that we take for granted (such as encyclopedia entries and lectures, among many others). In this, he drew on phenomenology and its interest in everyday life, but what often served as anecdotes in phenomenological discussions were topics for scrutiny for Goffman.

Presentation of Self in Everyday Life

Goffman referred to the fundamental forms of interaction as "the interaction order," observable in face-to-face interaction in everyday life. He introduced these ideas in *The Presentation of Self in Everyday Life*, first published in 1956 and revised in 1959, based on his doctoral dissertation fieldwork in the Shetland Islands. As a student of Lloyd Warner, Goffman might have been expected to write about the larger social structure of the community. Instead, he focused on the multiple and complex interactions between locals, tourists, hotel workers, and others to understand how people take up a variety of roles to negotiate different sorts of encounters. *Presentation of Self* explores how people manage what they imagine to be the impressions others have of them. Participants define the situations they are in, assess the particular frame of the interaction, and present themselves accordingly.

Through attention to interaction and to face-to-face encounters, Goffman developed a performative approach that led to several key frameworks, including an interactional concept of self and personhood and the notion of frame as a central feature of how people assess the obligations and expectations of particular situations. For Goffman, the presentation of self is produced through interaction. His concept of the self is not an interior psychological state but instead is performed, situated, and relational. Like Judith Butler (more than a decade later), Goffman in his 1979 work *Gender Advertisements* argued, "There is no gender identity. There is only a schedule for the portrayal of gender" (p. 8), in which individuals learn how to read and produce the signs of belonging to a particular gender. His understanding of self is often tied to the concept of face, as in saving face, and the "face-work" of managing relationships. In 1967, Goffman wrote,

> To study face-saving is to study the traffic rules of social interaction; one learns about the code the person adheres to in his movement across the paths and designs of others, but not where he is going, or why he wants to get there. (p. 12)

Goffman undertook extensive observations of how people manage the damage done to their self-image and demonstrated how people manage breaches through remedial interchanges that can acknowledge the departure from expectations, offer a remedy to an offense, or shift the frame.

Asylums

In his 1961 observations of "total institutions" (asylums, mental hospitals, prisons, etc.), Goffman described how "territories of the self are violated; the boundary that the individual places between his being and the environment is invaded and the embodiments of self profaned" (p. 23). He observed that total institutions purport to extend surveillance to every dimension of a person's experience but that they inevitably also, sometimes inadvertently, provide "free spaces" in which surveillance is reduced. These exceptions, seemingly outside both the typical

researcher's and the institution's awareness, prove to be central to our understanding of how an institution works; they show the interactions among participants in the institution to be performances, subject to the constraints of the situation rather than an indication of the inmates' abilities, limitations, or character flaws.

Stigma

Goffman's discussion of the concept of stigma further developed his understanding of the situational, interactional relationships attributed to and inscribed on individuals. *Stigma: Notes on the Management of Spoiled Identity* (1963) presaged contemporary discussions of normalcy, especially as a critique of the adequacy of the concept of deviance. The work has been controversial among sociologists who have critiqued Goffman's interactional approach as insufficiently attending to the power relations underlying social inequities. Goffman argued that the interaction order was itself constitutive of, rather than epiphenomenal to, social structure. He rejected any neat mapping of social structure onto interaction rituals and instead suggested that the larger economical, racial, and class-based social structural relationships became relevant to and were observable in particular interaction patterns.

Recently, Goffman's work on stigma has become center stage in disability studies' rethinking of concepts of normalcy and ability. By locating stigma in interaction, rather than in the biological or cultural attributes of persons, Goffman provided observations of how stigmatizing categories are integrally connected to other social systems. Blindness, deafness, or using a wheelchair is only disabling if it discredits a person's warrant to participate in a particular interaction. Goffman's concept of stigma differentiates between the discredited and the discreditable, those already categorized as deviant and those vulnerable to becoming stigmatized. As part of this argument, Goffman explored the concept of the ally (useful, e.g., to describe people who identify as allies of those stigmatized for their sexual preferences); the allies take up the case of those who are stigmatized and then, often, are stigmatized themselves.

Philip Manning has credited Goffman with introducing the concept of "identity politics," but Goffman's 1963 discussion of the politics of identity actually offers a critique of the kind of essentialized identity later described by this concept. In *Stigma: Notes on the Management of Spoiled Identity*, Goffman pointed out that "phantom acceptance" of "phantom normalcy" in practice provided only a very conditional veneer for performing tolerance.

Interaction Ritual

Goffman offered numerous terms and categories to describe the complexity of interaction. Some of the most significant of these are his concepts of information state, frame, footing, replaying, and front and back stage. Early in his work, he discussed the inadequacy of the familiar dyad of speaker and hearer to understand interaction. Alternatively, he proposed four participant possibilities (animator, author, figure, and principal—who stands behind the position put forth) and differentiations among the participants in an exchange, for example, among hearers, ratified hearers, and unratified hearers.

This work on the participants in an interaction helped replace less precise terms such as *role*. Similarly, Goffman's work on alignment or "footing" affords precise attention to both the social categories people adopt or are ascribed to as well as the ways participants shift among categories. In narrative research, the concept of alignment has proven useful for describing how narrators position themselves and their characters in relation to each other and in relation to listeners.

Frameworks such as these continue to be applied in new ways, beyond the situations Goffman described. His work on participants in an interaction, footing, frame, and replaying (among other concepts) continues to be influential in narrative research.

Frame Analysis

Frame Analysis, which some biographers report to be the work that Goffman expected to be his crowning achievement, complicated his earlier work by adding a dimension of reflexivity, or meta-awareness, to his understanding of interaction. Frames define situations as one kind or another. The problem of frame, building on Gregory Bateson's work, begins with the concept of genre, or the type of communication. Contextualization cues are framing devices. These cues are crucial for understanding how to interpret a particular message. The same

information and/or experiences can be "reframed" or repackaged, in other forms (a request can be reframed as a joke, an invitation can be framed as a summons, etc.), significantly changing the import and meaning of the message.

As part of his work on frame, Goffman distinguished between reports of past events and "replayings," which involve "vicariously re-experiencing what took place." Goffman's interactional approach to narrative takes into account questions of reported speech and other forms of repetition, including the conditions for the repeated telling of a story and for the suspenseful recounting of a story, in which a teller might withhold information and the listeners would permit it. For example, he observed that in some situations, tellers are permitted to retell a story as if it is the first telling, as long as there is a listener who has not already heard it.

The concept of frame is part of a larger interactional model that identifies varieties of situations and strategies for negotiating among them. He differentiates among (a) primary frames; (b) keys, which reformulate the primary frame, for example, when something is rekeyed as a rehearsal rather than the actual performance; and (c) fabrications, in which participants try to convince others, through persuasion, playfulness, or duplicity, that something is other than it is, for example, that a con game is a legitimate exchange. Multiple frames can operate at the same time, and participants can change their footing in relation to these frames. In related work, he proposed the concepts of back stage and front stage to offer elaboration of categories such as formal and informal or public and private. In Goffman's work, these are not discreet zones but rather are accounts of the different requirements and expectations demanded by situations.

These observations about narrative interaction are tied to what Goffman called "information states": assessments of others' knowledge and strategies based on those assessments. He defined information state as "the knowledge an individual has of why events have happened as they have, what the current forces are, what the properties and intents of the relevant persons are, and what the outcome is likely to be" (p. 133). In brief, each character at each moment is accorded an orientation, a temporal perspective, a "horizon." For instance, Goffman provides the example of a con operation where the dupe does not know that he is going to happen upon someone who will become his confederate and that they both will in turn meet someone who seems to be a dupe.

Goffman has been criticized for his dramaturgical approach, his use of theater metaphors for exploring interactional encounters. However, in his 1974 work *Frame Analysis*, he specifically insisted that "All the world is not a stage"; and in *Forms of Talk*, he argued that he made no claim that social life was a stage, only that elements of theatricality were deeply incorporated into the nature of talking.

Goffman's Legacy

It is easier to chart the fields that Goffman has influenced than to identify his genealogy. Several disciplines claim him and continue to utilize his concepts of interaction. Although he was trained as a sociologist, particularly influenced by Émile Durkheim and George Herbert Mead, biographers note other disciplinary connections and influences, including his engagement with film studies at the University of Toronto, his work with the game theorist Thomas Schelling, and his dialogues with conversational and discourse analysts, including John Gumperz at the University of California, Berkeley, and Dell Hymes at the University of Pennsylvania, where Goffman also had a profound influence on the field of folklore. In response to the critique of Goffman's work as not addressing the politics of power and hierarchy underlying social interaction, scholars such as Roger Abrahams and Patricia Clough have recognized the subversive dimension of his work. Goffman can be seen as a cultural/social/political critic who demonstrated how subordination works by calling attention both to how subversion is enacted and to how the subordinated are called on to perform their prescribed roles.

A Goffmanesque understanding of an encyclopedia entry would observe that it is an ultimately failed effort to make connections between a scholar's life, work, and influences and that it is meant to offer facts rather than, for example, interpretations or anecdotes. The author of the entry has been selected for some authority, but that is to be assumed rather than claimed—unlike, for example, the preface of a book written by another author who might describe her relationship as a point of entry and connection. Goffman exhorted us to pay attention to these taken-for-granted assumptions about genre

and form. Using his own interactional approach, we might observe that Goffman never drew his readers into his own biographical narrative and rarely described his intersections with other scholars. At times, he explicitly differentiated himself from particular schools of thought. His work continues to be central to the study of everyday life.

Amy Shuman

See also Bateson, Gregory; Butler, Judith; Durkheim, Émile; Gumperz, John J.; Hymes, Dell; Mead, George Herbert

Further Readings

Abrahams, R. D. (1984). Goffman reconsidered: Pros and players. *Raritan Review, 3,* 76–94.

Clough, P. T. (1992). Erving Goffman: Writing the end of ethnography. In *The ends of ethnography: From realism to social criticism* (pp. 94–112). London, UK: Sage.

Fine, G. A., & Manning, P. (2003). Erving Goffman. In G. Ritzer (Ed.), *The Blackwell companion to major contemporary theorists* (pp. 34–62). Oxford, MA: Blackwell.

Goffman, E. (1959). *The presentation of self in everyday life*. New York, NY: Doubleday Anchor.

———. (1961). *Asylums: Essays on the social situation of mental patients and other inmates*. New York, NY: Doubleday Anchor.

———. (1963). *Stigma: Notes on the management of spoiled identity.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

———. (1967). *Interaction ritual: Essays on face-to-face behavior*. New York, NY: Doubleday Anchor.

———. (1974). *Frame analysis: An essay on the organization of experience*. New York, NY: Harper.

———. (1979). *Gender advertisements*. London, UK: Macmillan.

———. (1981). *Forms of talk*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

Hacking, I. (2004). Between Michel Foucault and Erving Goffman: Between discourse in the abstract and face-to-face interaction. *Economy and Society, 33*(3), 277–302.

Goldenweiser, Alexander A.

Alexander Alexandrovich Goldenweiser (1880–1940), who made several important contributions to anthropology in the decades preceding World War II, was born in Kiev (Ukraine, Russian Empire) in 1880 in an educated middle-class family of assimilated Russian Jews, where European high culture was greatly valued. His father, Alexander Solomonovich Goldenweiser (1855–1915), a prominent liberal lawyer, had a major influence on him. In 1900, he brought Alexander and his younger brother Emmanuel to the United States, so that they could escape the discrimination faced by Jewish youngsters trying to get into Russian institutions of higher education. Alexander enrolled in Harvard, where he majored in philosophy, graduating in 1902. He then went to Columbia, where his academic interests shifted to religion and, later, anthropology. He earned his PhD in 1910 under the direction of Franz Boas.

While in New York, Goldenweiser was the center of a small but lively group of young intellectuals, most of them anthropologists or anthropology graduate students like himself (e.g., Robert Lowie, Paul Radin, and Elsie Clews Parsons), who gathered frequently to discuss their discipline as well as broader issues such as the philosophy of the social sciences, psychology, politics, and literature. He was the organizer and the heart and soul of several study "circles" and intellectual groups. Best known among them were The Pearson Circle and The Unicorns. At that time, Goldenweiser was seen by many as Boas's favorite and most promising student. Not surprisingly, his mentor offered him a position as lecturer in his own department. For about a decade, Goldenweiser taught many of the core undergraduate anthropology courses and was widely admired as an effective and charismatic instructor.

Goldenweiser's only ethnographic field research involved several trips to the Six Nations Reserve in Ontario in 1911–1913, where he worked with Iroquois consultants, having been recruited by Edward Sapir, the chief ethnologist of the Division of Anthropology of the Geological Survey of Canada. He published several short articles based on that research, but the full reports on this work were never published because of the division's falling out with the government. Thanks to Margaret Mead, an erroneous notion that Goldenweiser disliked fieldwork became firmly entrenched among American anthropologists. He actually appears to have enjoyed it and managed to collect a good deal of data on social organization, religion and mythology and several other topics. According to William Fenton, to whom Goldenweiser turned over his field

notes in the 1930s and who later worked with some of the same consultants, his data were first-rate.

In addition to teaching undergraduate courses at Columbia, Goldenweiser also taught anthropology at the Rand School, affiliated with the Socialist Party between 1915 and 1929, and gave numerous public lectures to earn some badly needed money and also to spread Boasian ideas on race, sex and marriage, and cultural relativism. For the same reasons, he published numerous articles and book reviews in liberal and left-leaning magazines such as *The Nation*, *The New Republic*, and *The Modern Quarterly*. In some of his publications, he used anthropological concepts such as magic and *mana* to make sense of contemporary social issues. As far as Goldenweiser's politics are concerned, he was a leftist but with a strong anarchist bent. He rejected Marxist theory as economic determinism and distrusted American communists because of their authoritarianism and pro-Stalinist position. With his Russian background, he understood the totalitarian nature of the Soviet political system and was never seduced by it the way many left-leaning American intellectuals were.

Boas's efforts to obtain a permanent position for his protégé failed, and in 1919, Columbia let him go. While many of his contemporaries as well as subsequent commentators believed that his Jewishness and his own as well as Boas's leftist politics were the reasons for this, Goldenweiser's "irregular" behavior, including his failure to return university library books and pay personal debts, played a major role in his dismissal. Luckily, 1919 was also the year when a group of distinguished progressive social scientists, Goldenweiser among them, established The New School for Social Research. Here, his courses were pitched at a higher level, and he had a lot more freedom to choose their subject matter. In addition to lecture courses in the social sciences, he taught seminars in which students had to undertake their own field research. For example, in 1924–1925, he offered a seminar titled *Racial Groups in Greater New York*. Among Goldenweiser's anthropology students at the New School were prominent future scholars such as Ruth Benedict, Ruth Landes, Melville Herskovitz, and Leslie White. He had a particular influence on Benedict, whom he persuaded to enroll in Columbia's graduate anthropology program. Goldenweiser's concept of *Gestalt*, developed in the late 1920s, influenced Benedict's own thinking, as articulated in her *Patterns of Culture*. After the New School decided not to offer him a full-time appointment, Goldenweiser became a member of the editorial board as well as a contributor to the *Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences*, a major, multivolume reference work.

Unable to find any teaching position on the East Coast, Goldenweiser moved to Portland in 1930, where he taught anthropology and sociology at the University of Oregon's Extension between 1930 and 1938; simultaneously, he taught anthropology, sociology, and even social psychology at Reed College as a visiting professor in the department of sociology between 1933 and 1939. While he continued to enjoy a reputation as a great teacher, he viewed Portland as a backwater and made several attempts to obtain a position in larger West Coast cities, such as Seattle and San Francisco. However, except for a 1-year visiting appointment at the University of Wisconsin, Madison, plus occasional summer teaching at Stanford and the University of Washington, none of his efforts came to fruition. Eventually, Goldenweiser's reputation as an iconoclast and a leftist led to some serious conflicts between him and Reed's administration, so that in 1939, the latter decided not to renew his contract. At the same time, in the 1930s, he finally found personal happiness when he married a younger woman by the name of Ethel Cantor. Goldenweiser died suddenly of a heart attack on July 6, 1940.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

In his PhD dissertation, published in 1910 as *Totemism: An Analytical Study*, Goldenweiser demonstrated that the presumed unity of totemic phenomena was a scholarly invention. In fact, he argued that totemism was a blanket term for a wide variety of practices. He also suggested that it was based on symbolic or mystical relationships, with every society having its own totemic practices. Goldenweiser's work prompted a lively debate among anthropologists and provided one of the theoretical bases for Claude Lévi-Strauss's 1962 *Totemism*.

His other important contribution to anthropological theory in general and the study of cultural dynamics in particular was a 1913 article, "The Principle of Limited Possibilities in the Development of Culture," in which he argued that institutions and objects with a limited number of forms were almost certainly contrived independently by cultures located

at a great distance from each other. This idea helps explain those cases in which convergence provides a much better solution than diffusion.

Goldenweiser also developed the important concept of "involution," which he articulated in a brief 1936 essay "Loose Ends of Theory on the Individual, Pattern, and Involution in Primitive Society." According to him, involution described culture patterns that in reaching a definitive form stopped evolving into new patterns but continued developing only in the direction of internal complexities, leading to "progressive complication, a variety within uniformity, virtuosity within monotony." Thirty years later, Clifford Geertz used this concept to study Indonesian agriculture.

In several of his publications, Goldenweiser also argued that when cultures come into contact, there is no automatic assimilation of ideas and practices from one to another, but whether or not any new items will be accepted depends on the receptivity of the culture, which in turn depends on various social and psychological factors. Many areas of the social sciences have found this idea useful.

Generally speaking, Goldenweiser was much more interested in broad theoretical questions than many of his fellow Boasians, especially "strict" ones such as, for example, Lowie. From this perspective, Goldenweiser was much closer to Radin and Sapir, whose work he admired greatly. In fact, he considered Sapir to be the most brilliant anthropologist of his time. He also shared Sapir's and Radin's interest in the role of the individual in "primitive" society and the use of autobiography in anthropological research. Goldenweiser was also one of the first Boasians to pay serious attention to psychology, including psychoanalysis; and his works frequently make references to the key role of psychological motivations in social life and cultural production. Thus, one of his early articles contains an interesting argument about the importance of religious "thrill" in religious experience.

What also distinguished Goldenweiser from many of the other leading figures in American anthropology of the pre–World War II years was his interest in crossing interdisciplinary boundaries and engaging in a dialogue with sociologists, psychologists, historians, and other social scientists. This breadth of his scholarly interests is best illustrated by a collection of essays he coedited with William F. Ogburn, a prominent American sociologist. Titled *The Social Sciences and Their Interrelations* (1927), it contains 34 chapters, each of them devoted to the interrelation between two specific social sciences and written by a leading scholar of the day. A commitment to this dialogue (combined with a perennial search for honoraria) explains Goldenweiser's frequent contribution to various edited volumes dealing with hot contemporary issues such as sex, marriage, and others. While Lowie dismissed Goldenweiser's interdisciplinary activities by calling him the number one among "the liaison officers of the social sciences," they gained him recognition and respect among many leading figures in the social sciences.

Goldenweiser was also the first student of Boas to publish a comprehensive textbook in anthropology. Titled *Early Civilization: An Introduction to Anthropology* (1922), it was based on his lectures at the New School. Fifteen years later, he published another textbook, *Anthropology: An Introduction to Primitive Culture*. In addition, he produced a popular book called *Robots and Gods: An Essay on Craft and Mind* (1931), as well as a collection of essays titled *History, Psychology and Culture* (1933).

As far as his academic career was concerned, Goldenweiser did not accomplish very much, but most of the blame for this must rest with his own difficult personality and erratic behavior. For this reason plus the fact that quite a few of his articles appeared in nonanthropological journals, he receives little attention in many of the histories of anthropology. However, a careful reading of the entire corpus of his work reveals the brilliant mind of a highly erudite scholar.

Sergei Kan

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Herskovits, Melville; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Lowie, Robert; Parsons, Elsie C.; Radin, Paul; Sapir, Edward; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Benedict, R. (1940). Alexander Goldenweiser. *Modern Quarterly, 6*(Summer), 32–33.

Kan, S. (2009). Alexander Goldenweiser's politics. In R. Darnell & F. Gleach (Eds.), *Histories of anthropology annual* (Vol. 5, pp. 182–199). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Wallis, W. D. (1941). Alexander A. Goldenweiser. *American Anthropologist, 43,* 250–255.

White, L. (1958). Alexander Goldenweiser. *Dictionary of American Biography, 22*(Suppl. 2), 244–245.

Goodenough, Ward H.

Ward Hunt Goodenough (1919–), American cultural anthropologist, applied anthropologist, and ethnographer of Micronesia and Melanesia, carried out pioneering theoretical studies of kinship, formulated linguistic models of culture and cognition, and sought a comparative anthropology geared toward understanding human nature.

Biography and Major Works

Goodenough was born on May 30, 1919, in Cambridge, Massachusetts. He received a BA in Scandinavian languages and literatures from Cornell University in 1940. His marriage to Ruth A. Gallagher on February 8, 1941, produced four children and eight grandchildren. Shortly after their marriage, he enlisted in the U.S. Army, serving from November 1941 until his discharge with the rank of technical sergeant in December 1945. For the following 8 months, he worked in the Adjutant General's Office of the War Department as a civilian case analyst.

In 1949, Goodenough received his PhD in anthropology from Yale University under the supervision of George Peter Murdock. Murdock's interests in social structure and cross-cultural comparison on a scientific basis would persist in Goodenough's own anthropology throughout his career. In 1940, he was a research assistant in Murdock's Cross-Cultural Survey, which would evolve into the Human Relations Area Files (HRAF). In 1947, Murdock took a team of graduate students, including Goodenough, to Truk (now called Chuuk) in Micronesia for 7 months of fieldwork. His dissertation, *Kin, Property and Community in Truk*, published by Yale in 1951, argued that Trukese kinship could not be understood in isolation from access to land; that is, social structure, economics, and political organization were intermeshed and intelligible only in terms of their mutual embedding. Other significant early influences were Bronisław Malinowski, ethnographer of the Melanesian Trobriand Islands, and the Yale linguist George Trager. Goodenough conducted additional fieldwork in Kiribati in the Gilbert Islands and in Papua New Guinea in 1951 and in Lakalai, New Britain Island, in 1954.

Goodenough taught at the University of Wisconsin in 1948–1949. On completing his dissertation, he took up a position as assistant professor of anthropology at the University of Pennsylvania, where he remained until his retirement in 1989 as University Professor Emeritus. He was promoted to associate professor in 1954, to professor in 1962, and to university professor in 1980. He chaired the department from 1959 to 1961 (acting) and from 1976 to 1982. He also taught at Cornell University, Swarthmore College, Bryn Mawr College, University of Hawaii, University of Wisconsin at Milwaukee, Yale University, and Colorado College. He spent 1957–1958 as a fellow at Stanford's Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences. Goodenough delivered the Lewis Henry Morgan Lectures at the University of Rochester in 1968, held a Guggenheim fellowship in 1980, and served as Fulbright lecturer at St. Patrick's College in Ireland in 1989.

Goodenough was elected to the National Academy of Sciences in 1971, the American Philosophical Society in 1973, and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences in 1975. He received the Distinguished Service Award of the American Anthropological Association in 1986 and the Society for Applied Anthropology's Malinowski Award in 1997. He is an honorary fellow of the Society for Social Anthropology in Oceania. He was president of the American Ethnological Society in 1962 and of the Society for Applied Anthropology in 1963. He served as editor of the flagship journal *American Anthropologist* from 1966 to 1970 and on multiple other editorial boards.

In addition to his scholarly work, Goodenough has published a volume of poetry and another volume of piano pieces. Since the death of his wife, Ruth, Goodenough and his partner Joan May reside in Haverford, Pennsylvania.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Kinship Studies

Goodenough's early work in kinship moved the study of social organization from a fill-in-the-blanks exercise to a cultural analysis seen through the lens of family and community relationships. Beginning with his dissertation on kin, property,

and community, he adapted Malinowski's strategy of focusing successively on overlapping and distinct, at least from the point of view of the analyst, cultural domains. His 1956 article on residence rules challenged the objective character of observed social relations by contrasting his own analysis of the lineal descent system of Trukese kinship with that of his fellow graduate student John Fischer. Based on essentially the same fieldwork and census data, one deemed them patrilineal and the other, matrilineal. Goodenough argued that lineality was not assigned on kinship grounds alone. The Trukese were less worried about mother's family or father's family lines than about activating whatever lineal ties would provide maximal access to arable land; marital households had to choose a family line but did not do so based on kinship in the narrow sense. Goodenough's more general analysis of Malayo-Polynesian kinship in 1955 also emphasized land as the key dimension used when people apply kinship rules to particular life circumstances.

During the 1960s, Goodenough was a leading figure in the emergence of componential analysis as a formal method of ethnographic semantics. In addition to his work in kinship, he explored the domain of Malayo-Polynesian navigation systems and sought evidence on how members of culture organized their experience around normative rules that were broken in interpretable, though not predictable, ways. He famously claimed ethnographic adequacy if he was surprised at the same time as were the Trukese. His theoretical article on componential analysis and the study of meaning, which appeared in *Language* in 1963, has been acknowledged alongside the work of the Yale linguist Floyd Lounsbury as the foundational document of this approach. Goodenough argued that kinship terms consisted of underlying clusters of semantic features combined uniquely in different cultures, even when the particular set of terms was superficially similar to those found elsewhere. Because they were highly structured, such formal semantic domains allowed the analyst to approach the meaning system of the culture as a whole. This method drew on the binary feature analysis pioneered by Roman Jakobson in phonology. Drawing on his linguistic training at Yale, Goodenough enriched the interpretive dimensions of his ethnography by seeking systematic semantic patterns implicit in cultural categories but not normally analyzed by members of culture.

The question of multiple possible analyses of the same kinship system was highlighted in his 1965 analysis of Yankee kinship terminology. David Schneider was prominent among those who disputed Goodenough's definition and ordering of the underlying features of this system. He attributed Goodenough's choices to the idiosyncracies of his personal family tree and considered the analysis nonrepresentative of the kinship system of most Americans. The ensuing somewhat acrimonious debates on American kinship terms attracted a wide audience of self-styled experts applying their own native intuitions. The debate proved Goodenough's point that the reliability and validity of any cultural analysis required constant vigilance to filter out differences among individuals in a culture as well as differences introduced by the standpoint of the anthropologist. Alternative analyses could be explained in terms of these variables.

Linguistic and Cognitive Anthropology

The structural linguistics and sign theory of his training are inseparable from Goodenough's cultural anthropology. A 1957 article on cultural anthropology and linguistics argues that the methodological problems of the two disciplines are fundamentally the same. Goodenough aspires to apply the formal rigor of linguistics to the analysis of cultural phenomena, at the same time broadening the cultural scope of linguistic descriptions. In both cases, explanation was to be grounded in the search to define human nature across languages and cultures.

Goodenough's understanding of the systematic nature of culture draws from the insights of linguistics. He is not so much a linguist, however, as an ethnographer sensitive to the powerful influence of the structure of language on culture-specific meaning and the role of language in everyday interaction. *Culture, Language and Society* appeared in 1971 and was widely adopted as a textbook. In it, Goodenough lays out the title relationships as he understands them. The third term of society, juxtaposed to the traditional American anthropological binary of language and culture, brings the people back into the ethnography.

Goodenough insisted that sophisticated ethnography required knowledge of the local language. He considered his Trukese-English dictionary, published by the American Philosophical Society in 1980 with

a supplement in 1990, to be among his most difficult projects. He argued, and illustrated, that a dictionary requires deep ethnographic knowledge to calibrate potentially incommensurable categories and lexical entries. The English speaker must know a great deal about Truk and the Trukese to be able to use the dictionary.

Comparative Anthropology

Goodenough's problematization of ethnographic categories in his kinship studies called into serious question the quality of the data available for systematic cross-cultural comparison. In *Description and Comparison in Cultural Anthropology*, published in 1970, Goodenough reviewed the uncertainties implicit in ethnographic descriptions of kinship, marriage, and family, arguing that cross-cultural comparison required a universal set of categories such as those provided for social structure by his mentor, Murdock. Again, he drew on a linguistic analogy, taken from phonetics, in which the categories of a particular language or culture could be expressed in an analytic language that was, insofar as was possible, independent of any particular ethnographic case. In addition to facilitating comparison across widely different cultures, this method enabled the anthropologist to minimize the effects of his or her own cultural background. Goodenough attempted to apply this method in his own work, but it was left to his successors to pursue the implications. He concluded that the traditional "etic" (ostensibly culture-free) categories of anthropology, for example, kinship, were questionable in their universal applicability.

Goodenough was not prepared to give up on comparison but called for a much more careful assessment of comparability. He went beyond his former teacher Murdock in questioning the adequacy of the cross-cultural data that had been coded for comparison through the HRAF. He believed, however, that judicious use of the HRAF data could ameliorate the problems: The HRAF files included the full texts from which coded categories, such as kinship terms or marriage practices, were extracted, thus allowing the researcher to recover the context of the category to be compared cross-culturally as it applied in a particular case. Because the HRAF files amassed multiple works on the same culture by different investigators writing at different periods in time, the investigator had to use such contextual information to exercise a degree of control over potential dimensions of unreliability.

Culture Change

Goodenough's commitment to applied anthropology grew out of his wartime experience of small-scale societies that were being catapulted into an unfamiliar and rapidly changing world. The ethnographer of such societies was in a position to ease this transition. When he wrote *Cooperation and Change: An Anthropological Approach to Community* in 1963, Goodenough was consulting for the Peace Corps to train culturally sensitive personnel for work overseas. Development work risked imposing external values and infrastructure on local systems of meaning; the anthropologist could calibrate potential conflicts and help establish effective collaboration between communities and outside entities.

Goodenough was active in the establishment of the Society for Applied Anthropology and insisted that all anthropologists should be committed to using their science for the benefit of those studied. He also remained engaged with Oceania as an ethnographic area. A Festschrift edited by Mac Marshall and John Caughey in 1989 demonstrates his continuing influence among scholars working in the Pacific.

Goodenough's Legacy

Goodenough has long provided an exemplar for an anthropology ranging across the subdisciplines, especially linguistics and cultural anthropology. He combined traditional ethnographic studies of small-scale societies with an applied anthropology directed toward the rapidly changing circumstances of such societies in the post–World War II world. His work models the potential of the anthropologist to move back and forth between rigorous, often quantitative, cross-cultural comparison and respect for the ethnographic integrity of particular cultures. He has been a pioneer in revising the traditional concept of culture to incorporate culture change.

Regna Darnell

See also Cognitive Anthropology; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Human Relations Area Files, Cross-Cultural Studies; Jakobson, Roman O.; Lounsbury, Floyd; Malinowski, Bronisław; Murdock, George Peter; Schneider, David M.

Further Readings

Caughey, J. (2004). Goodenough, Ward H. In V. Amit (Ed.), *Biographical dictionary of social and cultural anthropology* (pp. 202–203). London, UK: Routledge.

Kimmel, A. (n.d.). *Ward H. Goodenough*. Retrieved from http://www.indiana.edu/~wanthro/theory_pages/goodenough.htm

Marshall, M., & Caughey, J. (Eds.). (1989). *Culture, kin and cognition: Essays in honor of Ward H. Goodenough*. Washington, DC: American Anthropological Association.

Goody, Jack

Jack Goody (1919–) became an anthropologist in the context of World War II and the anticolonial revolution it spawned. He carried out fieldwork in Northern Ghana under the direction of Meyer Fortes in Cambridge and has continued to maintain a link between the two places for half a century since. With Fortes, he founded a school of West African ethnography based on meticulous documentation of kinship and marriage practices and especially of "the development cycle in domestic groups." Later, his wife, Esther Goody, was his partner in much of this research.

Ethnography, the aspiration to write about another culture studied intensively through fieldwork, never defined Goody's intellectual horizons. His subject has always been historical comparison and, beyond that, "the development of human culture." He was sympathetic to Africans' drive for independence, and he responded by studying the history of West Africa's precolonial states that were linked to Islamic civilization. From this extension of his approach, he launched the project of global comparison, for which he is best known today. The ultimate historical question is where human civilization is going. For Goody, the answer lies in the similarity and divergence of regions with an agrarian past or present. Beginning with *Production and Reproduction*, he set out over the past 4 decades to compare the preindustrial civilizations of sub-Saharan Africa and Eurasia, with the aim of identifying why Africa is so different, while questioning Western claims to be exceptional.

Early Research

Goody's early research started with kinship and marriage, the domestic relations through which people manage their own reproduction and participate in the wider society. In *Death, Property and the Ancestors*, he concluded that the key to variations in kinship organization lay in the transmission of property, the material link between generations constituted by patterns of inheritance and manifested in religious observances, such as the ancestor cult. The book drew extensively on classical sources of British comparative jurisprudence; but Goody balked at making a systematic comparison of Africa and Europe then. In *Tradition, Technology and the State*, he questioned the habit of transferring categories from European history to the study of precolonial states in Africa. Again, his focus was on property forms. European feudalism was based on private property in land, and this was absent in traditional West Africa. Why? Because land was scarce in western Europe but not in Africa, where the scarce factor was people, and control over them was exercised through monopolies of the "means of destruction" (horses, guns, etc.), not the means of production. Africa's polities were both centralized and decentralized, the former acquiring manpower by force through carrying out slave raids on the latter. Shifting hoe agriculture was the norm, with the bulk of manual labor being performed by women. In both centralized and decentralized societies, women were hoarded as wives by polygamous older men, and their children were recruited to exclusive descent groups. The key to major differences in social organization between Africa and Eurasia thus lay in the conditions of production and specifically in demography, in the ratio of people to the land.

Kinship, Marriage, and Property Transmission

In 1976, Goody took off from this premise about people and land into a global survey of kinship, marriage, and property transmission, using the data compiled in the *Ethnographic Atlas*. Kin groups in the major societies of Eurasia frequently pass on property through both sexes, a process of "diverging devolution" (including bilateral inheritance and women's dowry at marriage) that is virtually absent in sub-Saharan Africa, where inheritance follows the line of one sex only. Especially when women's property includes the means of production, in agricultural societies, attempts will be made to control these heiresses, banning premarital sex and

arranging marriages for them, often within the same group and with a strong preference for monogamy. Direct inheritance by women is also associated with the isolation of the nuclear family in kinship terminology, where a distinction is drawn between one's own parents and siblings and other relatives of the same generation, unlike in lineage systems. All of this reflects a class society. Diverging devolution (especially dowry) was the main mechanism by which familial status was maintained in an economically differentiated society.

Goody argued that the agrarian economies of all the major Eurasian civilizations conformed to this pattern. They were organized through large states run by literate elites, whose lifestyle embraced both the city and the countryside. Goody (1976) writes, "In the societies of the late Bronze Age an elaborate bureaucracy, a complex division of labor and a stratified society were made possible by intensive agriculture; and title to landed property was of supreme importance" (p. 24). Africa south of the Sahara apparently missed out on these developments, even though North Africa was one of the first areas to adopt the new institutional package.

Repudiating "Us/Them" and Other Binaries

Jack Goody chose to attack the lingering opposition of "modern" and "primitive" cultures by studying the chief activity of literate elites, of which he was himself a leading example, namely, writing. He argued that contrasted mentalities should be seen as an effect of using different means of communication. The most important of these are speech and writing, orality and literacy. Most African cultures are predominantly oral, whereas the ruling classes of Eurasian civilization have relied from the beginning on literate records. Goody published his most general assault on the habit of opposing us and them, *The Domestication of the Savage Mind*, as a pointed repudiation of Claude Lévi-Strauss, suggesting that the latter's lists linking "hot" and "cold" societies to other pairs, such as history and myth, and science and magic, far from exemplifying universal reason, were a parochial by-product of mental habits induced by writing. This emerged in a specific time and place and became essential to the reproduction of Eurasian civilization, reducing the status of oral communication, which still predominated in African cultures. Literacy was a key feature of the institutional complex that marked the urban revolution.

Jack Goody rejects the notion that modern world history has made a decisive break from what went before. The unequal society of agrarian civilization lives on, but inequality has been amplified by the machine revolution. His anthropological vision offers one indispensable means of contemplating how human culture is to be rescued from the consequences of these developments. Four elements of this vision stand out. First, the key to understanding social forms lies in production, and that now includes the uneven spread of machine production. Second, civilization or human culture is largely a consequence of the means of communication—once writing, now an array of mechanized forms, but always interacting with oral and written media. Third, the site of social struggles is property—for example, are nation-states still an effective instrument for enforcing global contracts? Finally, Goody's focus on reproduction has never been more salient when the aging citizens of rich countries depend on the proliferating mass of young people from elsewhere as migrants. So kinship needs to be reinvented too.

In numerous volumes since *The East in the West*, Goody's focus has been less on what makes Africa different and more on subverting Europe's pretension to superiority over Asia. He has gained credibility from the latter's rise as home to new capitalist powers, first Japan, now China, India, and others. Since the claim for Europe's exceptional status always lay in identifying the distinctive social and cultural conditions for capitalist development, this shift in the economic balance between the West and the rest reinforces a perspective on world history that long predates current evidence for it.

Dismantling Racist Evolutionism

Twentieth-century anthropology retained more of its predecessor's racist evolutionism than its practitioners like to admit. This took the form not only of treating the indigenous inhabitants of Oceania, Africa, and the Americas as "primitives" but also of regarding the civilizations of the East, explicitly or implicitly, as backward and more suitable for comparison with the primitives than with Western societies. This attitude was reproduced by historians who traced the global mastery ensured by industrial capitalism to the Renaissance or Reformation

and even to medieval feudalism and Greco-Roman antiquity. Marx's and Weber's theories of capitalist development provided intellectual support for these views.

Goody has sought to dismantle the evolutionist myth of Europe's unique historical path in the following areas: kinship, the family and individualism; urban commerce; the puritan roots of capitalism; and communications technology. His main thesis—following the prehistorian Gordon Childe, whom he read during the Second World War, and, before him, L. H. Morgan—is that the emergence of cities and civilization in the Bronze Age constituted an "urban revolution," in which all of Eurasia participated eventually. The relative standing of its constituent regions has fluctuated over 5,000 years, with western Europe (and its North American offshoots) enjoying some advantage since the Renaissance and especially in the past 2 centuries since the Industrial Revolution. Goody utterly rejects any claim that this advantage has its roots in Western history before then or that non-Western Eurasia was ever structurally inferior. In most respects, Asian civilizations were well ahead of Europe for much of history. The speed with which they have adopted modern capitalism—faster than the Renaissance diffused to northwestern Europe—points to a fundamental similarity between Europe and Asia that helps us understand the reversal in dominance under way now.

Goody thinks that too much has been made of the Industrial Revolution as a decisive break in history, that modern capitalism may not be so radically different from its predecessors, and that attempts to associate recent history exclusively with the achievements of the West are deluded. He obviously feels that the contrast between the Old and New Worlds is exaggerated, since he never contemplates the Americas. This leads him to assert that many of the features taken to be culturally distinctive of particular regions (notably Europe) may be found elsewhere, often in quite well-developed forms. So, rather than classify whole societies according to the presumed presence and absence of cultural traits, it is better to consider the institutional variation between them as a matter of emphasis and combination. In this way, the core grounds for racial superiority are undermined, and economic development might be less readily conceived as a series of radical revolutions.

Sir Jack Goody is rarely explicit that his whole oeuvre is an attack on the fragmented idealism of contemporary cultural anthropology. Like Morgan and Childe before him, he explains cultural difference by technological change. The unequal class structure of agrarian civilization underpins many of the overt cultural differences between Eurasia and Africa, and this was made possible in turn by the intensification of agriculture (the plough and irrigation) and by new means of communication (writing). So Western supremacists are not only mistaken in their pretense of Europe's uniqueness, but they fail to grasp the material conditions that underpin the real differences in world society that they celebrate.

In the 19th century, anthropologists tried to explain how Europeans came to dominate the planet so quickly and easily. Racist binaries (and even triads) were the result. The Whites believed that they succeeded because of intrinsic cultural advantages that had a biological foundation; the empire was justified as an alternative to the permanent inferiority of the colonized. The ethnographic revolution was in part a way of rejecting this evolutionism, but the contrast between Western civilization and its primitive, nonindustrial or non-Western antithesis survived. As a comparative history of preindustrial civilizations, Jack Goody's contribution is enormous; but, like Bruno Latour, he says that we have never been modern. Modern democracy is predicated on the abolition of the unequal society that ruled the Eurasian landmass for 5,000 years. Goody reminds us of the durable inequality of our world and suggests that its causes may be less tractable than we think. The rise of China and India underlines his warning against European complacency.

Keith Hart

See also Fortes, Meyer; Latour, Bruno; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Morgan, Lewis Henry

Further Readings

Goody, J. (Ed.). (1958). *The development cycle in domestic groups.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1962). *Death, property and the ancestors: A study of the mortuary customs of the LoDagaa of West Africa.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (1976). *Production and reproduction: A comparative study of the domestic domain.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1977). *The domestication of the savage mind.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1991). Towards a room with a view: A personal account of contributions to local knowledge, theory, and research in fieldwork and comparative studies. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 20,* 1–22.
———. (2007). *The theft of history.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (2010). *The Eurasian miracle.* Cambridge, UK: Polity.
Hart, K. (2011). *Jack Goody's vision of world history and African development today.* Halle-Saale, Germany: Max Planck Institute for Social Anthropology. Retrieved from http://thememorybank.co.uk/2012/01/10/jack-goodys-vision-of-history-and-african-development-today/
Olson, D., & Cole, M. (Eds.). (2006). *Technology, literacy and the evolution of society: Implications of the work of Jack Goody.* Mahwah, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum.

Graebner, Fritz

Fritz Graebner (1877–1934) is a representative of the so-called culture historical method, or diffusionist school, which dominated cultural anthropology in the German-speaking countries from its beginning in the late 19th century until the mid-20th century. He fiercely defended the principles of diffusion and the shared origins of societies showing similar cultural traits.

Born in Berlin, Graebner studied history in Marburg and Berlin and received his PhD in 1901. Subsequently, he worked at the anthropological museum in Berlin and became the curator of the anthropological museum in Cologne in 1906. In 1925, he became the director of that museum, and a year later, he was appointed as professor at the University of Cologne. Owing to chronic illness, he retired in 1928.

Graebner's main interest was in the relation between cultures and their historical development. Perhaps due to his background in history, he intended to outline methodological principles for how to identify mutual influences between cultures. During his time, the cultural historical method was in vogue at most anthropological institutions, universities, and museums in the German-speaking countries. Nevertheless, there were internal divisions with regard to the appropriate method by which culture history could be scientifically analyzed. The 1911 publication of Graebner's book titled *The Method of Ethnology* was a hallmark of the "culture historical method," defining the guiding principles of cultural "kinship." He introduced the so-called *Formkriterium*, referring to crafted objects, as the constituting part of the material culture. Whenever two objects belonging to different cultures have a certain congruity in their formal design, Graebner considered this as an indicator of previous diffusion between the two cultures. Several formal congruities would be proof of a close relation dating back to ancient times. He aimed at defining culture relations, and subsequently cultural strata and cultural circles (*Kulturkreise*). Graebner assumed that all present cultures had developed through the diffusion of traits from a limited number of original cultural centers and that the history of those cultures that do not have written records could be reconstructed by analyzing the material elements of those cultures and by tracing the respective elements to an original cultural center. He distinguished his notion of cultural circles from the Boasian concept of culture areas by the fact that they represent historical links rather than mere geographical proximity. Opponents, like Father Wilhelm Schmidt from Vienna, argued that Graebner's criterion of form was too schematic and that it did not meet the prerequisite of understanding culture. Another ethnographer of the time, Leo Frobenius, was even more critical. He suggested that objects should not be considered as indicators of culture history but the idea of the culture as such. Frobenius blamed Graebner for overestimating the evidence available through museum objects.

Graebner's focus on the diffusion of material culture is also evident in his entry "Ethnologie," published in a volume titled *Anthropology* (1923). The editor allowed 150 pages for Graebner to expand on his perspective on the state of ethnology. Half of the entry describes "culture circles," whereas the other half deals with cultural elements, which are, in Graebner's view, the artifacts and their formal similarities. Besides inspiring discussion over the appropriate methods in culture history, Graebner's major achievement is the idea that no culture exists in complete separation from other cultures. Following Graebner's lead, every culture can be described through a grid of similarities and differences, which also constitute the kinship of that respective culture. Perhaps, it is not an exaggeration to call him

a taxonomist of cultures, since he locates cultures' relative position in a larger system of kinship of cultures.

Hans Peter Hahn

See also Bastian, Adolf; Boas, Franz; Culture Area Approach; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise;* Frobenius, Leo

Further Readings

Graebner, F. (1905). Kulturkreise und Kulturschichten in Ozeanien [Culture circles and cultural strata in Oceania]. *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie, 37,* 28–90.

———. (1911). *Methode der Ethnologie* [Method of ethnology]. Heidelberg, Germany: Winter.

———. (1923). Ethnologie. In G. Schwalbe & E. Fischer (Eds.), *Anthropologie: Kultur der Gegenwart* [Anthropology: Contemporary culture] (pp. 435–587). Leipzig, Germany: B. G. Teubner.

———. (1924). *Das Weltbild der Primitiven: Eine Untersuchung der Urformen weltanschaulichen Denkens bei Naturvölkern* [The worldview of the primitives: An examination of the original forms of philosophical thinking among primitive peoples]. Munich, Germany: Ernst Reinhardt.

Leser, P. (1978). On the role of Fritz Graebner in the development of historical ethnology. *Ethnologia Europaea, 10,* 107–113.

Lips, J. E. (1935). Fritz Graebner. *American Anthropologist, 37,* 320–326.

Gramsci, Antonio

Scholars have mined the works of Antonio Gramsci since 1947 to analyze his novel ideas. Early in his career, Gramsci (1891–1937) was a Marxist thinker, writer, and revolutionary. Later, he became disillusioned over the failure of the Marxist reliance on the power of the economic base to generate a proletariat revolution. Instead, Gramsci developed a project that turned Marxist thinking on its head. He subordinated the Marxist determination of the economic base to the revolutionary power of the ideational superstructure. His project was dedicated to a dialectic intended to explain how political agents might change the culture of the proletariat to challenge their exploitation by bourgeois capitalist governments. Gramsci's ideas and project are sufficiently distinct from traditional Marxist thinking that they are better identified as "Gramscian." They continue to invigorate thinking about change, revolutionary and otherwise.

Writings

Antonio Gramsci's body of work can be divided between his pre-prison and prison writings. In his pre-prison writings (ca. 1910–1926), Gramsci introduced the ideas on which he would muse more elaborately in his prison writings. In effect, his pre-prison writings provided the frame of reference for the revolutionary ideas he would develop later in prison. Gramsci's ideas were sufficiently threatening to Mussolini's fascist government that he was prosecuted for subversion and sentenced to 20 years in prison.

Gramsci's prison writings (1926–1937) constitute his prison notebooks, or *Quaderni del Carcere*. The *Quaderni* lack coherent integration. He intended to refine them after his release from prison. This never happened. Gramsci, always frail, died shortly after his early release due to ill health.

The *Quaderni* are a compilation of the nearly 3,000 pages of notes Gramsci compiled while he was incarcerated. Quintin Hoare and Geoffrey Nowell edited a fragment of those notes to produce the *Prison Notebooks of Antonio Gramsci*. To what extent the *Prison Notebooks* represents what Gramsci might have preferred is moot. The *Quaderni* were fragmentary, sometimes contradictory, and replete with neologisms and a code to confound prison censors. Still, the *Prison Notebooks* remain sufficiently connotative to allow diverse interpretations of Gramsci's ideas.

Ideas

The *Prison Notebooks* contain Gramsci's seminal ideas from which he developed his revolutionary project to subvert Western capitalist governments. This project relied largely on the relationship between his three central ideas: (1) hegemony, (2) the intellectuals, (3) and culture. The work that became uniquely Gramscian is identified most closely with his idea of hegemony. As a concept and problematic, hegemony has influenced extensive research in the social sciences and humanities.

Lenin defined hegemony as the domination of one state over another. Gramsci redefined hegemony as

an intellectual and moral leadership that is materialized in political organizations. Hegemony effectively is synonymous with leaders and leadership in a collective sense, such as a structure, group, apparatus, or political party. Gramsci argued that every man is an intellectual. But some had leadership skills that most lacked. He identified two categories of intellectuals: traditional and organic. Traditional intellectuals, the nobility, lawyers, ecclesiastics, for example, represent the interests of the bourgeoisie. Organic intellectuals extrude from the subaltern classes and represent the interests of the proletariat. The intellectuals represented a dialectic that infused much of Gramsci's thinking.

Before his incarceration, Gramsci was a journalist and a theater critic for various communist publications. The ideas and definitions of culture that he developed at this time pervade Gramsci's writings. Among them was a politically directed idea of culture that was fundamental to his revolutionary project. Gramsci identified culture as the exercise of thought, the acquisition of general ideas, and the habit of connecting cause and effect enlivened by political organization. Culture was personified in, and a political product of, the intellectuals. They were dedicated to persuading those they represented to accept a unified conception of the world and an ideology favorable to their interests—traditional intellectuals/capitalists and organic intellectuals/proletariat. The intellectuals represented the dialectic of hegemonies, which was the keystone of his revolutionary theory.

Revolutionary Theory

Gramsci developed two propositions to explain how a revolution of the proletariat might succeed in subverting the power of the West's bourgeois governments: a war of movement and a war of position (also a passive revolution). The war of movement relied on a strategy presumed to be effective against weak governments that ruled largely through coercion and lacked the support of their citizens. Gramsci argued that an armed insurrection by a hegemonic proletariat probably would be sufficient to overthrow these governments. The entrenched capitalist governments of Europe and North America required a different strategy, however: a war of position.

More than any other Marxist thinker, Gramsci recognized the significance of culture in revolutionary practice. A war of position would be a slow and protracted struggle by organic hegemons for the support of the proletariat. In this war, organic hegemons would confront the traditional hegemons of capitalist governments that had successfully articulated an established culture—ideas and relations of cause and effect—to sustain the support of their populations. Fully aware of the cultural density and depth of false consciousness imposed by capitalist hegemons on their populations, Gramsci argued that the proletariat must exercise leadership before usurping the governmental power of the bourgeoisie. This involved a paradox: A cultural revolution led by organic hegemons would have to precede the final political revolution.

The task the organic intellectuals faced was to replace bourgeois culture and undermine the false consciousness it imposed on the proletariat. This strategy engaged the dialectic of hegemonies. Traditional intellectuals would strive to maintain a culture and false consciousness amendable to capitalism. Organic intellectuals would engage in a counterhegemony to raise the subalterns' consciousness, alter their ideas and habitual relations of cause and effect, marshal their revolutionary energies to subvert capitalist domination, and establish a communist utopia.

Gramsci died before his theories could be tested. But over the years, his ideas, especially hegemony, have been analyzed surgically in a series of critical examinations. Some exegetes, James Scott (*Weapons of the Weak*) for example, reject Gramsci's ideas because of their Marxist taint. Scott argues that hegemony is nothing more than a synonym for the Marxist idea of false consciousness. Most stretch his ideas to apply them to different scenarios, and reinterpretations are abundant. Robert Bocock, David Adamson, and Joseph Femia identify different kinds of hegemony; Ernesto Laclau and Chantal Mouffe reject the role of the intellectuals in social and political change. Some of this variation is due to the complexity of the *Prison Notebooks*.

Exegetes

A vast literature has developed that explores the complex and intertwined implications of Gramsci's ideas, especially in the *Quaderni*, where his ideas are often open to interpretation. Gramsci did not make it easy to interpret his ideas. His notes were

not meant for public consumption; they were meant for his own use and for the project he hoped to develop after he was released from prison. Those who decipher his ideas often relate his primary ideas, hegemony, intellectuals, and culture, to his other, secondary ideas.

Gramsci used a rich terminology, often capriciously, to insinuate ideas of hegemony in different contexts. For example, in some contexts, his idea of civil society is an ensemble of social institutions; in others, it is the source of organic intellectuals' hegemonic apparatus. Gramsci's notion of a political society often is equated with the state, an idea around which much of his thinking on hegemony and the work of the intellectuals revolves. The state also is identified with bourgeois oppression and has a negative connotation. In some instances, civil society (social institutions) and political society (state) are separate entities. In others, they are absorbed into the state. Common sense to Gramsci refers to traditional conceptions of the world, while good sense implies a coherent culture that is a desirable product of the work of organic intellectuals. This shifting intertexture of ideas makes the *Quaderni* a challenge to read.

Still, the largest investment in the Gramscian idea industry is related to interpretations of hegemony. Some have explored hegemony as a philosophical problem regarding why different types of hegemonies have developed. Others are dedicated to exploring different types of hegemony and their application by agents and organizations in different circumstances. Still others ponder how organic hegemons obtain consent from subaltern populations. Many locate hegemony in a Marxist epistemology and retain its relationship to the economic base. In these works, hegemony is explored in the context of ideas from other Marxist thinkers, such as Louis Althusser, Laclau, Mouffe, or Karl Marx himself, and often is synonymous with ideology. They overlook the fact that Gramsci rejected the Marxist subordination of the ideational superstructure to the economic base. Some subordinate hegemony to the presumed power of his secondary ideas, such as civil society, political society, or common sense. This suggests a misunderstanding of the power of hegemony and weakens its revolutionary potential. Devout Marxists decry that Gramsci displayed more interest in politics and culture than in the power of the economic base. Yet Femia points out that it is ironic that in Gramsci Marxists found a true guardian of the empirical epistemology that Marx had used to predict a design in human history that ends with the collapse of capitalism and the victory of the proletariat.

Gramsci rejected the Marxist idea of an a priori dialectic to history. Instead, Gramsci argued that nothing moves people to action except ideas and ideals. Although this argument does not comply with Marx's materialist motivation for history, it does conform to Marx's argument that people make their own history but not necessarily as they please. Femia points out that Gramsci's project is not averse to this latter Marxist proposition, because Gramsci's thinking derives from first-hand experiences with demonstrations and strikes that occurred before, during, and after World War I in Turin—an industrial city that was the center of Italian communism. Because of the variety Gramsci brings to his idea of culture, there is confusion as to whether hegemony shapes culture or is shaped by it, and what exactly the relationship is between the two. Kate Crehan argues that anthropologists could learn much from Gramsci's ideas of culture. But for the most part, anthropologists have muddled his ideas badly.

Anthropologists

Anthropologists have misconstrued Gramsci's ideas because they rely on secondary interpretations of his ideas and not the writings of Gramsci himself. They are inspired primarily by interpretations of hegemony provided by Raymond Williams, an icon in the field of cultural studies. Williams established a relationship between hegemony and culture that attracted anthropologists because of their traditional attachment to the idea of culture. Richard Fox (*Gandhian Utopia*), for example, relies on Williams to develop his idea of a "cultural hegemony" that establishes sets of meanings that enable and constrain resistance to existing social formations.

To what extent Williams read Gramsci is questionable. He never mentions or cites the *Prison Notebooks*. But "culture" loomed large in his work, *Marxism and Literature*. In different contexts, Williams described hegemony as a concept that includes culture, went beyond culture, and was synonymous with culture. The conflation of hegemony and culture precluded the need for anthropologists to engage the density of the *Prison Notebooks* and other writings of Gramsci. In effect, Williams

appropriated Gramsci word *hegemony*, welded it to a notion of culture, and established ownership over ideas that had little to do with how Gramsci or his nonanthropological exegetes understood them. He was sufficiently convincing for Sherry Ortner (*High Religion*) to imply that the concept of hegemony originated with Williams. Williams's interpretations of hegemony corrupted almost all anthropological understanding of Gramsci's ideas. Jean and John Comaroff (*Of Revelation and Revolution*) correctly point out that anthropologists often use hegemony as nothing more than a trendy buzz word.

Anthropologists commonly cite Gramsci and then rely on the ideas of his exegetes to address Gramsci's ideas. They also ignore Gramsci's idea of the intellectuals and the dialectic of hegemonies. None seem to understand Gramsci's idea that culture is a product of hegemony. For example, those anthropologists who understand hegemony as a social and political force (James Brow, Martha Kaplan, John Kelly, and Daniel Linger, among others) invert Gramsci's idea of hegemony and use it to explain how elites further their interests by dominating and exploiting native populations. Of the dozen or so anthropologists who used Gramsci's ideas in the 1980s, only Peter Carstens (*The Queen's People*) and, to a lesser extent, Claudio Lomnitz Adler (*Exits From the Labyrinth*) relied on Gramsci's depiction of hegemony in the *Quarderi* as a practice by which subjugated masses develop leadership that helps them resist their exploitation.

The Comaroffs (*Of Revelation and Revolution*) developed one of the best known anthropological interpretations of hegemony. It is also perhaps the most egregious corruption of Gramsci's thinking. After rejecting Gramsci's idea of hegemony, they conflate the ideas of hegemony provided by Williams and Laclau and Mouffe and develop a functionalist model that reduces hegemony to shared traditions and orthodoxies that are devoid of the human agency of the intellectuals. They conclude that, at its most effective, hegemony is mute, an idea that primarily is good to think of and fodder only for ideological discourse. In effect, the Comaroffs strip hegemony of its revolutionary power.

The transmogrifications of Gramsci's idea of hegemony have disseminated widely among anthropologists. These ideas, however, are not authentic Gramsci. And they create a paradox for an anthropology that some of its practitioners have identified as the most subversive of the social sciences. Anthropologists in general have stripped hegemony of its revolutionary significance and theory and muddled Gramsci's ideas. Still, many of these anthropological studies are creative and convey a kind of structuralist, postmodern neo-Gramscian interpolation that represents another tangent of presumed Gramscian thinking.

Donald V. Kurtz

See also Althusser, Louis; Cultural Transmission; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Ortner, Sherry; Structural Marxism; Subaltern Studies

Further Readings

Bocock, R. (1986). *Hegemony.* Chichester, UK: Ellis Horwood.

Cavilcanti, P., & Piccone, P. (1975). *History, philosophy and culture in the young Gramsci.* St. Louis, MO: Telos Press.

Crehan, K. (2002). *Gramsci, culture and anthropology.* London, UK: Pluto Press.

Femia, J. V. (1988). *Gramsci's political thought: Hegemony, consciousness and the revolutionary process.* Oxford, UK: Clarendon.

Gramsci, A. (1971). *Selections from the prison notebooks* (Q. Hoare & G. N. Smith, Eds. & Trans.). New York, NY: International Publishers.

Kurtz, D. V. (1996). Hegemony and anthropology: Gramsci, exegeses, reinterpretation. *Critique of Anthropology, 16*(2), 103–135.

Laclau, E., & Mouffe, C. (1985). *Hegemony and socialist strategy: Toward a radical democratic politics*. London, UK: Verso.

Sassoon, A. S. (1980). *Gramsci's politics.* London, UK: Hutchison.

Thomas, P. D. (2009). *The Gramscian moment: Philosophy, hegemony, Marxism.* Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.

Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)

The Great Exhibition held in London in 1851 at the Crystal Palace, a temporary structure created at Hyde Park for the occasion, was a major undertaking that came to be seen as a model of commercial success melded with philanthropically inspired public education. Many exhibition organizers of subsequent fairs harked back to the Great Exhibition's

perceived achievements, while at the same time trying to surpass them. As objects of national policy, fairs originated primarily as trade and industrial events in France in the late 18th century. They were relatively brief, most often running for 6 months. By the late 1800s, they had become commercially successful, competitive ventures that were inextricably tied to a range of political, scientific, and technological ideals. With respect to anthropology, the Crystal Palace was most important in fostering an interest in using the fairs to examine human diversity among visitors, displaying a range of ethnological material in the official exhibits, and in setting precedents that were followed by later world fairs.

Visitors

As early as 1851, commentators noted the diverse ethnic backgrounds of the attendees and the curiosity it stirred in those interested in watching the crowds. For instance, the journalist Henry Mayhew's *1851; or, The Adventures of Mr and Mrs Sandboys* (1851) pointed out that almost every London omnibus now carried foreigners among the passengers. The comical account reflected a broader mood as, in the press, Londoners and visitors to the palace were portrayed as interested in seeing the foreign visitors as much as the official exhibits. Much of this press coverage now seems riven with revealing anxieties about race and empire. Yet, in many senses, it was crucial in perpetuating the sense that visitors were available for visual inspection and that they, given their ethnic heterogeneity, would make ideal ethnological exemplars for both the lay and the learned to study human races.

Ethnological Models and Living Performers

From the outset, people's watching of visitors was complemented by the inclusion of human models and other ethnological material among the official exhibits. For example, the Crystal Palace featured life-size models of many foreign peoples, including Native Americans, which had been commercially exhibited in the 1840s by George Catlin. Meanwhile, there was also one living exhibit at Hyde Park: an Arab man who sold sweetmeats in a mock Tunisian bazaar in the courts devoted to the Ottoman Empire. His inclusion in the Crystal Palace echoed the broader practice of commercially exhibiting foreign peoples, or "living curiosities," in the theaters, museums, galleries, and zoos of the metropolis in ways designed to showcase their ethnic singularity. After the original Crystal Palace closed, a new "people's palace" opened in Sydenham in 1854. A more nationalist venture than the 1851 exhibition, it featured newly commissioned ethnological models that were used to create a court of natural history. Curated by the leading expert Robert Gordon Latham, the court functioned as an ethnological museum and training ground for budding scholars. The incorporation of such material into both the 1851 and the 1854 Crystal Palace was crucial as it became directly tied to the emergence of new disciplines in the study of race.

Emerging Anthropology and Lasting Legacies

Between the 1840s and 1860s, in Britain, France, and Germany in particular, the human models, cultural artifacts, and displayed peoples on show at world fairs increasingly became tied to the emergence of the new disciplines of ethnology and anthropology. In Britain, for example, the shows were explicitly and routinely advertised as ideal opportunities to see specimens of ethnic diversity; and members of the Ethnological Society of London (founded in 1843) and Anthropological Society of London (founded in 1863) took advantage of the opportunity both to study the displayed peoples and to use them to bolster the credibility of these newly founded institutions. Meanwhile, anthropologists' involvement in later world fairs became extensive. They acted as curators and exhibition organizers and used the fairs to conduct their ongoing research into the nature of human races. In this context, exhibitions and performers became experimental resources used by anthropologists to provide them with access to new resources, train new practitioners, and educate the public about new anthropological theories.

In conjunction, the Crystal Palace displayed objects in numerous national contexts, enabling cross-cultural comparisons of material culture; thus, many visitors interpreted the displays in teleological, developmental, and evolutionary terms. For instance, the exhibits were sometimes read as a progressive ascent from the lowest forms of humanity to the apex of civilization as exemplified by the commercial activities of Victorian Britain. The displays were often interpreted as evidence of

human "improvement" or "progress" through the ages. At Sydenham, the temporal development was even more explicit as visitors walked and retraced the pathway from the emergence of dinosaurs from the ground's lake to the beacon of national progress provided by the palace. Historians have speculated that this influenced important anthropologists. For instance, the evolutionary anthropologist E. B. Tylor's family exhibited their wares in 1851, and Tylor kept photographs of the human models at Sydenham in his personal collection. Likewise, A. H. L. F. Pitt Rivers's collections were later exhibited to show the evolutionary development of human material culture.

The use of models and a live performer at the Crystal Palace set an important precedent that was emulated until the mid-20th century. For instance, in 1867, foreign peoples were employed as shopkeepers and servants at the Parisian Exposition Universelle. Later, at the Colonial and Indian Exhibition of 1886 in London, the Exposition Universelle of 1889 in Paris, and Chicago's World Columbian Exposition of 1893, foreign peoples were specifically imported to be exhibited within purpose-built "native villages" on the exhibition grounds. Within this context, living foreign peoples were transformed into professional performers and became tied to new forms of cheap mass entertainment. Such displays reached their peak in terms of scale, commercial success, and public access under the aegis of the international trade of Europe, India, America, Africa, and Australia, which followed in the wake of the Great Exhibition. Traditionally, historians have looked to Paris (1867 and 1889), Chicago (World's Columbian Exposition, 1893), and St. Louis (Louisiana Purchase Exposition, 1904) as the best examples of the use of displayed peoples and the means of discussing and establishing their broader connections to anthropological study. However, the Great Exhibition of 1851 inaugurated the practice of displaying living foreign peoples in international fairs. The 1854 opening of the new Crystal Palace at Sydenham witnessed one of the earliest and most significant attempts to incorporate displayed peoples into ethnological practice for both the lay and the learned. And the 1886 Colonial and Indian Exhibition provides an exemplary case of the diverse ways in which displayed peoples were presented in international fairs and used by anthropologists in late-19th-century Britain. Thus, ultimately, it is the formative role of the Crystal Palace within the broader histories of anthropology that needs to be remembered.

Sadiah Qureshi

See also Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Auerbach, J. A. (1999). *The Great Exhibition of 1851: A nation on display.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Greenhalgh, P. (1988). *Ephemeral vistas: The expositions universelles, great exhibitions and world's fairs, 1851–1939*. Manchester, UK: Manchester University Press.

Hoffenberg, P. H. (2001). *An empire on display: English, Indian and Australian exhibitions from the Crystal Palace to the Great War.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Qureshi, S. (2011). *Peoples on parade: Exhibitions, empire and anthropology in nineteenth-century Britain.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1987). *Victorian anthropology.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Tallis, J. (1852). *Tallis's history and description of the Crystal Palace and the exhibition of the world's industry in 1851* (3 vols.). London, UK: Tallis.

Greenberg, Joseph

Joseph Harold Greenberg (1915–2001) was one of the most influential linguists of the second half of the 20th century. He made major contributions to the study of all aspects of language, including grammatical structure, historical linguistics, phonology, psycholinguistics, sociolinguistics, and anthropological linguistics. Greenberg's most important theoretical contributions are to the empirical study of universals of language, known as typology, and to the genetic classification of languages.

Greenberg was trained in the classics, Indo-European comparative linguistics, and anthropology, receiving his PhD from Northwestern University under Melville Herskovits. He published 19 books and more than 200 articles and received many awards, including the Academy of Arts & Sciences' Talcott Parsons Prize for Social Science in 1997.

Genetic Classification of Languages

Greenberg's first major contribution to linguistics was the genetic classification of the languages of Africa in the late 1940s. At that time, the language families of Africa were defined by nonlinguistic traits, such as race, and by structural traits, such as the presence or absence of gender class inflections. Greenberg argued that these traits were irrelevant to the genetic classification of languages. Only the arbitrary pairing of phonetic form and meaning in large numbers of basic vocabulary items and grammatical inflections are accurate guides to genetic classification. Greenberg's classification of African languages into four families based on pairings of form and meaning at first aroused great controversy but then became widely accepted.

Greenberg's method, which he called multilateral comparison, is the large-scale comparison of vocabulary and grammatical inflections in all of the languages in a large area. Greenberg's hypothesis is that the distributional pattern of similarities in meaning and form across a large number of words and inflections and across a large number of languages can reveal genetic families of languages, as well as identifying patterns due to other factors such as borrowing, sound symbolism, and chance.

Greenberg proposed many ancient language families. In Oceania, he proposed that all of the languages in Papua New Guinea and the neighboring islands, excluding the more recent Austronesian family and the aboriginal languages of Australia, form a single family, which he called Indo-Pacific. In the Americas, he proposed that all of the languages in North and South America, with the exception of the Eskimo-Aleut and Na-Dene families in the far north and northwest, belong to a single family, Amerind. At the end of his life, Greenberg published evidence for a large family in northern Eurasia, which he called Eurasiatic, ranging from the Indo-European family in the West to the Eskimo-Aleut family in northern North America.

Greenberg's method did not use regular sound correspondences, the basis of the comparative method used by other historical linguists. Greenberg argued that the comparative method was required to analyze language families only after the genetic unity of the languages being compared has been established, and that multilateral comparison was an explicit means to achieve that first step of the comparative method. Most historical linguists continue to believe that the comparative method is the only way to "prove" the genetic unity of a set of languages, and so Greenberg's proposed ancient language families remain highly controversial. However, Greenberg's proposals and the debate that followed has revived the subfield of genetic linguistics, stimulated connections to research on human migration, and prompted the greater employment of quantitative methods in language classification.

Universals of Language

Greenberg's other major contribution to linguistics is in the area of universals of language structure. Greenberg was the founder of modern typology and universals research. At the time that Greenberg developed this approach, the field of linguistics was dominated by the structuralist view that languages could vary in their structure in unlimited ways. At the same time, Noam Chomsky was developing the theory of generative grammar, in which it is claimed that all languages have the same underlying structure.

Greenberg's research combined a novel theoretical approach to language universals—the implicational universal—with an original empirical discovery, dependencies among word orders. Greenberg's theory falls between the structuralist view that language variation is unlimited and the generative grammar view that all languages have certain structural features in common. Greenberg introduced the implicational universal, in which there is a dependency between two (or more) structural features of a language: The dependency restricts the range of possible language types but does not require all languages to be the same with respect to those structural features. Implicational universals can be illustrated by Greenberg's empirical discovery of dependencies between the word orders of different grammatical constructions. For example, one of Greenberg's word order universals states that if a language has the subject-object-verb order, then it has postpositions (which follow the noun). This universal allows for language variation: It allows for languages with subject-verb-object order (such as English), and these subject-verb-object languages may have prepositions (as English does) or postpositions (as the subject-verb-object language Grebo does). But the cross-linguistic variation is restricted: Languages

with the subject-object-verb order and prepositions are expected not to occur, or are extremely rare.

Greenberg's discovery of implicational universals of word order was unprecedented, and his paper on the topic is one of the most cited papers in linguistics. The basic facts of word order dependencies are empirical phenomena that every linguistic theory attempts to explain. Greenberg's seminal paper, which proposes universals of grammatical categories as well as universals of word order, spawned an entire subfield, typology, which explores the cross-linguistic variation of all aspects of language structure and has discovered hundreds of implicational universals. Greenberg developed models to account for language universals, including grammatical hierarchies; the role of frequency of use in language universals; and the explanation of universals of language structure in terms of universal processes of language change. Greenberg's approach has far-reaching consequences for ongoing debates about universals and relativity, which are often still framed in terms of the two extremes of unlimited variation versus complete uniformity in language structure. Nevertheless, Greenberg's typological discoveries and theories about language universals form one of the foundations of contemporary linguistics.

William Croft

See also Chomsky, Noam; Comparative Linguistics; Comparative Method; Descriptive Linguistics; Generative Grammar; Herskovits, Melville; Human Universals

Further Readings

Comrie, B. (1989). *Language universals and linguistic typology* (2nd ed.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Croft, W. (2003). *Typology and universals* (2nd ed.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Greenberg, J. H. (1963). *The languages of Africa*. The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

———. (1966). *Language universals*. The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

———. (1987). *Language in the Americas*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (1990). *On language: Selected writings of Joseph H. Greenberg* (K. Denning & S. Kemmer, Eds.). Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (2000–2002). *Indo-European and its closest relatives: The Eurasiatic language family* (Vols. 1–2). Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (2005). *Genetic linguistics: Theory and method* (W. Croft, Ed.). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Griaule, Marcel

Marcel Griaule (1898–1956) made multiple contributions to anthropology. He was the most active founder of the Société des Africanistes (1931) and also inaugurated the first French professorship of ethnography (1942). He contributed to anthropological methodology by opening Africa to French academic research in 1932 and 1933, and in 1937, he was the first to initiate aerial survey research in archaeology and ethnology. He contributed to anthropological theory through his "invention" of the Dogon, creating an approach to fieldwork that continued for half a century.

Born of modest origins, Griaule interrupted his studies to volunteer for military service during World War I. Discharged as a lieutenant of aviation in 1922, he enrolled at the Religious Sciences section of l'École Pratique des Hautes Études with Marcel Mauss and took courses in Amharic at l'Institut des Langues Orientales with Marcel Cohen. In 1927, the Department of Public Instruction and Fine Arts assigned him to an ethnological and linguistic mission in Ethiopia (then called Abyssinia). His work there resulted in the publication of a long essay "Mythes, croyances et coutumes du Begamder" (Myths, Beliefs and Customs in Begamder) in the *Journal Asiatique* (1928, Volume 212, pp. 19–124) and a smaller one in *l'Anthropologie*. Griaule also published in *Documents*, an avant-garde magazine. Recruited in 1929 as Mauss's assistant at the Laboratory of Ethnology of the Vème section of l'Ecole pratique des hautes études (Religious Science section), Griaule translated (with Abbas Jerome) *Le Livre de recettes d'un dabtara abyssin* (*The Spell Book of an Abyssinian Magician*), which was published by the Institute of Ethnology in 1930.

Exoticism was fashionable, and Griaule joined the "stew" of artists, nobility, bourgeoisie, and scholars at the Trocadero Museum (which became the Museum of Man in 1937). With the support of its director Paul Rivet and his deputy Georges-Henri

Rivière, Griaule then organized and directed the first major French expedition to Africa with funding from various sources, including a direct grant from the Chamber of Deputies, and also organized a boxing match, in which the world champion, the Panamanian boxer Al Brown, "proud to help the discovery of his ancestor negroes," defeated a boxer named Simendé.

Arriving in Dakar in May 1931, the expedition left Djibouti for Paris in February 1933 after passing through 15 countries. The spirit of this expedition was much like that of Cambridge University's Torres Straits expedition of 1898. It was faithful to the spirit of Mauss, who wished for extensive surveys rather than in-depth fieldwork at a single location. It was an era of salvage ethnography. "We will prospect for the future," wrote Griaule. Like the Torres Straits expedition, the Dakar-Djibouti expedition included a variety of specialists. At various times, it included a naturalist, a musicologist, a movie camera operator, linguists, interpreters, and an artist, in addition to botanists and ethnographers. The mission brought a wide variety of items back to France, including embryos of several species of mammals, boxes of bones, and a number of live animals, as well as a record of 30 languages, 300 manuscripts, 24 cylinders of sound recording, thousands of feet of film, and 3,500 objects, including Dogon masks and 60 square meters of paintings from one of the oldest Ethiopian churches. There were also 15,000 sheets of ethnographic reporting. Here again, the mission followed Mauss's techniques. These field notes were classified in alphabetical order without mention of the name of the author or the date of writing. All expedition members drew from this collective data as they published their reports. Travelogues were then fashionable, and two were published in the aftermath of this expedition. Michel Leiris published *l'Afrique fantôme* (Ghost Africa, 1934), a subjective, honest, but provocative diary, and Griaule published *Les Flambeurs d'hommes* (*Burners of Men: Modern Ethiopia*, 1934), a report of his Ethiopian mission, in a flamboyant style.

Griaule represented French ethnology at the First Session of the International Congress of Anthropological and Ethnological Sciences, held in London in 1934, and then directed the Sahara-Sudan Mission, leaving on January 7, 1935.

The main objective of this third mission was to study the Dogon of the Bandiagara cliffs, who were considered particularly interesting because they were "authentically wild and archaic." Like the Dakar-Djibouti expedition, this mission involved a wide variety of scholars, including three additional students of Marcel Mauss: Helen Gordon, the Countess de Breteuil (Solange de Ganay), and Denise Paulme. The last two remained in Dogon country between March and September 1935, thus constituting the first instance of long-term fieldwork by French ethnographers.

In this and earlier expeditions, Griaule and his colleagues essentially invented the Dogon. Prior to Griaule, the group now known as the Dogon consisted of village dwellers known as the Habre to the neighboring Fulani people, but without a sense of their own collective identity. Griaule unified various practices and entities under a single name, giving birth to the Dogon as such.

On his return, Griaule popularized ethnography in magazines and fought for the independence of Ethiopia after the Italian aggression of October 1934. After writing a memorandum for the League of Nations, he published *La peau de l'ours* (The Skin of the Bear, 1936). The book denounced the atrocities of the Italian military campaign and showed the complexity of Ethiopian culture, making arguments that prefigured the relativistic themes of *Races and History* (Claude Lévi-Strauss, 1952).

Appointed deputy director of the Laboratory of Ethnology of the École Pratique des Hautes Études in 1936, Griaule led a new expedition called Mission Sahara-Cameroon (July 1936 to October 1937). He flew to West Africa in a small plane. At the same time, Solange de Ganay and Germaine Dieterlen arrived in Dakar by ship and remained in the field. Using the plane, Griaule demonstrated the use of aerial photography to "read invisible remains and arrangements of space." Griaule traveled up the Niger River to explore the neighboring populations before turning to the archaeological excavations being undertaken by John Paul Lebeuf, another student of Mauss. In addition to 3,000 photos, this fourth mission returned with 800 ethnographic objects, 150 herbal plants, and a collection of 150 insects. The ethnographic sheet was still the master: The mission brought back 6,000 of them.

In his earlier work, Griaule had addressed "Abyssinian totemism." He returned to this theme in 1935 and in 1937 in his work on the Dogon, with the publication of *Masques Dogon* (Dogon Masks,

1938b). This work explored the mask societies present in all Dogon villages. The text proposed that Dogon religion reflects the myths and rituals that come from the Old Mande World. Like Herodotus gathering the stories of Greek mythology, Griaule gathered scattered material and assembled this to constitute Dogon cosmogony and cosmology. One can imagine the enthusiasm for this kind of work of a small group of French anthropologists whose imagination was inspired by classical culture (the same thing happened with Frobenius in Germany).

Griaule had written "Abyssinian Games" for *Documents* in 1929, and he turned once again to this subject for his second dissertation for the École Pratique des Haute Études (at the time, candidates for the doctorate had to defend two theses). Although Griaule argued that the games prepared their participants for life, following Mauss, he also wrote that the games were strategic locations to read the survivals of old institutions.

After defending his theses at the Sorbonne in October 1938, Griaule began a fifth mission, which included Ganay, Dieterlen, Lebeuf, Manouka Laroche, a doctor, and Jean Lebaudy, a sugar industry magnate who financed the expedition. Called the Niger–Lake Ir Mission, it traveled the Niger bend, reporting on the Tellem, Kouroumba, Dogon, and Kotoko peoples before being cut short due to the outbreak of World War II.

In September 1939, Griaule joined the French air force and received the Croix de Guerre before his demobilization in July 1940. With the Vichy regime in power, Jews were forbidden to teach, and at the beginning of September 1941, Griaule took over the courses that had been taught by Mauss and Cohen. He also became deputy director for ethnology at the Museum of Man. The Hellenist and anti-Semite Abel Bonnard was appointed minister of education in April 1942. He then created a professorship in ethnography at the Sorbonne, which he intended for Georges Montandon, a deeply anti-Semitic champion of "scientific racism." The Assembly of Teachers showed relative independence by electing Griaule to the professorship instead.

In 1947, Griaule led a sixth mission to again explore the Dogon, Bambara, Bozo, and Kouroumba societies. This last one included Genevieve Calame-Griaule, his 22-year-old daughter, who was responsible for checking the knowledge of the Qur'an of Muslim scholars. This mission would be a turning point. Griaule was no longer interested in collecting material for Museum of Man and abandoned the study of material culture to dedicate himself to oral literature and mythologies. After a "wise old Dogon" (Ogotemmeli) conversed for 34 days with him, Griaule published *Dieu d'eau* (*Conversations With Ogotemmeli: An Introduction to Dogon Religious Ideas*) in 1948. Written for the general public, the book shows the richness of the Dogon mythology.

Griaule developed the conception that by conditioning thought, myths and symbols explain social organization. Thus, unifying the male and female principles, the weaver or the blacksmith reproduces the mythical first events with his work. He explained the joking relationship between Dogon and Bozo by metaphysics, as the rule of twinning is present from the origin of the world. Reality is identified with the metaphysical representation system that operates independently and by refraction reaches the social world. This idea of the suprasocial recalls Durkheim's collective consciousness. This view has often been criticized by noting that Griaule presents no scientific explanation, but confuses this last with data subsumed in a metalanguage, and that his approach assumes that myths represent a homogeneous body of information.

When Griaule died in 1956 after a long illness, the Dogon of Bandiagara preformed a traditional funeral for him. Griaule founded a theoretical school studying the cosmology of the peoples of the Niger bend. Long led by the anthropologist Germaine Dieterlen (1903–1999), the laboratory of Systems of Thought in Black Africa of the Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique extended the study of mythic representations to the entire continent.

Gérald Gaillard

See also Frobenius, Leo; Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris); Mauss, Marcel; Musée de l'Homme; Rivet, Paul; Torres Straits Expedition

Further Readings

Clifford, J. (1983). Power and dialogue in ethnography: Marcel Griaule's initiation. In G. W. Stocking Jr. (Ed.), *Observers observed: Essays on ethnographic fieldwork* (pp. 121–156). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Copans, J. (1973). Comment lire Marcel Griaule? À propos de l'interprétation de Dirk Lettens [How to read Marcel

Griaule? About the interpretation of Dirk Lettens]. *Cahiers d'Études africaines, 13*(1), 153–157.
Douglas, M. (1975). If the Dogon . . . . In M. Douglas (Ed.), *Implicit meanings: Essays in anthropology* (pp. 124–141). London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.
Fiemeyer, I. (2004). *Marcel Griaule citoyen dogon* [Marcel Griaule, Dogon citizen]. Arles, France: Actes sud.
Forde, D. (1956). Griaule, M. *Africa, 26,* 217–228.
Griaule, M. (1934). *Les Flambeurs d'hommes*. Paris, France: Calman-Lévy. (Reprinted in 1991; translated as *Burners of men: Modern Ethiopia*, Philadelphia, PA: Lippincott, 1935, and *Abyssinian Journey*, London, UK: J. Miles, 1935)
———. (1935). *Jeux et divertissements abyssin*s [Abyssinian games and pastimes]. Paris, France: Ernest Leroux.
———. (1938a). *Jeux dogons* [Dogon games]. Paris, France: Institut d'Ethnologie.
———. (1938b). *Masques dogons* [Dogon masks]. Paris, France: Institut d'Ethnologie.
———. (1957). *Méthode de l'ethnographie* [Method of ethnography] (G. Calame-Griaule, Ed.). Paris: Presses universitaires de France.
———. (1965). *Conversations with Ogotemmeli: An introduction to Dogon religious ideas*. London, UK: Oxford University Press. (Original work published 1948 as *Dieu d'Eau*)
Griaule, M., & Dieterlen, G. (1986). *The pale fox*. Chino Valley, AZ: Continuum Foundation. (Original work published 1965 as *Le Renard Pâle*)
Jolly, É. (2001). Marcel Griaule, ethnologue: La construction d'une discipline (1925–1956) [Marcel Griaule, ethnologist: The construction of a discipline]. *Journal des africanistes, 71*(1), 149–190.

Gumperz, John J.

John Joseph Gumperz (1922–) is a sociolinguist who was professor of anthropology at the University of California Berkeley and is currently affiliated with the University of California Santa Barbara. He is particularly known for his development of interactional sociolinguistics.

Gumperz was born in Germany and moved to the United States in 1939. He completed a bachelor's degree in science at the University of Ohio, Cincinnati, then, while doing graduate studies in chemistry at the University of Michigan, he became interested in linguistics and changed his field of study. The University of Michigan awarded his PhD degree in German linguistics in 1954. His doctoral research was a study of the German Swabian dialect of a group of third-generation farmers in Michigan.

In the 1950s, it was widely accepted that people are divided into distinct community groups, each with its own language or dialect, and culture. Gumperz spent 2 years (1955–56) doing fieldwork in a caste-stratified North Indian village. He found that linguistic variation did not reflect caste differentiation. In fact, untouchable caste members spent a lot of time working in touchable caste members' households and had limited opportunity to socialize with peers. Nevertheless, they did not adopt their employers' ways of speaking, so frequency of contact also did not explain linguistic variation. What linguistic variation did reflect was normative principles about what is said, when, and by whom. Confirming evidence came in his 1963 study in a small, culturally homogeneous Norwegian town with a strong egalitarian ideology. Income and occupational status were not clearly reflected in talk, but differences in terms of regular and close relationships with speakers outside the town were reflected. In informal discussions, groups whose friendship networks were within the town tended not to switch from the local dialect to standard Norwegian, while groups whose networks extended outside the town did switch when talking about nonlocal topics. Both studies thus showed how social relationships and ideologies are reflected in speech behavior in social groups.

Subsequently, Gumperz took up an academic appointment at the University of California, Berkeley, and in 1965 became professor of anthropology and, later, emeritus professor there. During his time at Berkeley, Gumperz developed a theoretical and methodological framework known as *interactional sociolinguistics*, though that name was not used in the earlier years. In common with some other linguists, sociologists, and philosophers at the time, Gumperz's focus was on the language of everyday interaction. In the 1970s, he did fieldwork in London for a study of how cultural ways of using language could result in discrimination in employment against immigrants from Pakistan, India, and the West Indies. He was interested in miscommunication for reasons to do with both social injustice and making visible, and thus gaining insight into, how language works in interaction.

Gumperz argues that interactional sociolinguistics focuses on communicative practice because we have no other access to experiential reality. He positions interactional sociolinguistics as attempting to bridge the gap between top-down theoretical approaches that privilege macrosocietal conditions in explaining how people communicate and those, such as conversation analysis, that take a bottom-up, social constructivist approach. Interactional sociolinguistics takes a microanalytic approach to interactions, but it also explicitly takes account of the wider sociocultural context in which an interaction occurs. In particular, it pays attention to participants' goals (because participants may have different goals from each other) and the related interpretive processes that underlie utterances.

Gumperz gives an example of an older South Asian student who asked an adult education center lecturer about enrolling in a new course at a community college. The lecturer told him that she had contributed to planning the course but was not part of the selection process. Over several minutes of the interaction, he contradicted her, and she became more and more annoyed. His repeated denials puzzled Gumperz and his two younger South Asian research assistants, until the assistants noted that the student sounded as if he was pleading. This reminded Gumperz of a situation in North India where an older man asked him for help regarding his college student son in the United States. Gumperz explained that he did not have the right connections, but the man replied, "You can do everything"—similar to the stance taken by the South Asian student. Thus, in both cases, taking account of the wider sociocultural context could reveal that the requesters of help believed that people in positions of power could do anything they wanted to, which in turn could explain their linguistic behavior at the microlevel.

Interactional sociolinguistic research methodology involves close observation, often using audio (and in more recent years, video) recording, of interactions. A central concept underlying analysis is the *contextualization cue*. The analysis pays attention not just to *what* is said (the words) but also to *how* it is said (e.g., pitch, intonation, and tone of voice). Contextualization cues relate to contextual presuppositions (tacit awareness of meaningfulness) that allow us to make inferences relevant to the context about how to interpret an utterance. Gumperz points out that speakers make choices at a number of levels, for example, dialect, prosodic features, lexical and syntactic options, and sequencing strategies. Contextualization cues are often culturally specific and speakers tend not to be aware of the presuppositions and meanings that they signal in different cultures. Another step in the methodology can be that key segments of the recordings are played back to participants for their comments, which in turn become data to be analyzed for participant interpretations and insights into the talk and the situation in which it occurred.

Interactional sociolinguistics allows researchers to take account of unstated assumptions and background knowledge that participants in an interaction draw on as part of their interpretive processes. The analysis traces how participants use contextualization cues to frame the intended meanings and, thus, how participants move (or do not move) toward a shared interpretation.

Elaine W. Vine

See also Hymes, Dell; Sociolinguistics; University of California, Berkeley

Further Readings

Eerdmans, S., Prevignano, C., & Thibault, P. J. (Eds.). (2003). *Language and interaction: Discussions with John J. Gumperz.* Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Gumperz, J. J. (1996). The linguistic and cultural relativity of conversational inference. In S. C. Levinson & J. J. Gumperz (Eds.), *Rethinking linguistic relativity* (pp. 374–406). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1999). On interactional sociolinguistic method. In S. Sarangi & C. Roberts (Eds.), *Talk, work and institutional order: Discourse in medical, mediation and management settings* (pp. 453–471). Berlin, Germany: Mouton De Gruyter.

Sarangi, S. (Ed.). (2011). In honour of John Gumperz [Special issue]. *Text & Talk: An Interdisciplinary Journal of Language, Discourse & Communication Studies, 31*(4).

HABERMAS, JÜRGEN

Jürgen Habermas (1929–) is by far the most influential German philosopher, social theorist, political thinker, and public intellectual of the past several decades. He has contributed decisively to philosophy and the other humanities, the social sciences, the foundations of democracy and law, and the cultural critique of industrial societies. What he has to offer to anthropologists is some of the most relevant insights and approaches from continental European philosophy, which he develops in an—for a thinker from this background—extraordinarily strong interaction with the social sciences and awareness of the problems of modern societies.

Habermas's central question throughout his richly varied career has been this: What is, and what should it be, to be human? He has developed an answer in terms of, first, a critique of reductionist views of agency and a call for reasonable, intersubjective agency and dialogue, in everyday life as well as in law and politics, and, second, an analysis of the threats to which autonomous agency is exposed in contemporary industrial society. In the following, the main lines of his fully fledged position will be sketched, focusing on these two themes and the relevance of his hermeneutic (interpretive) philosophy for anthropology.

Life and Works

Habermas grew up in a Protestant upper-middle-class family in Germany. He studied and subsequently taught philosophy in various universities, including Frankfurt University, where he was influenced by Theodor Adorno and Max Horkheimer. As a professor at Frankfurt University from 1964 to 1971 and from 1983 to 1993, Habermas gave a decisive new impulse to the Frankfurter Schule (Frankfurt school) and its neo-Marxist critical theory of Western society and culture.

Habermas is the author of a series of influential books, starting with *The Structural Transformation of the Public Sphere: An Inquiry Into a Category of Bourgeois Society* (1962), on the constitution of public opinion through reasoned discussion. Here, he shows how the participation of all citizens in public dialogue, intimately connected to the rise of democratic societies, is in permanent danger of degradation to commercialism, consumerism, entertainment, or too much influence of experts—to interactions purely about means, no longer about goals. That analysis foreshadowed key themes of his later work, which culminated and were synthesized in his 1,000-page magnum opus, *The Theory of Communicative Action* (1981), in two volumes, with the telling subtitles *Reason and the Rationalization of Society* and *Lifeworld and System: A Critique of Functionalist Reason*. The book analyzes reasonable interaction in cultural lifeworlds and the democratic and legal systems founded in that interaction, and it shows how it is continually threatened by the systemic constraints of power (politics) and money (economy). *Between Facts and Norms: Contributions to a Discourse Theory of Law and Democracy* (1992), another major work, draws out the political, legal, and institutional implications of the theory of communicative action.

In developing his theory, Habermas has critically synthesized insights from Immanuel Kant, Karl Marx, Max Weber, and Émile Durkheim, and his work has been inspired by phenomenology and hermeneutics, pragmatism, and analytical philosophy. He has been characterized as a Marxist Weber, or a Weberian Marxist. He has engaged in debates and dialogues with, among others, more positivistically minded social scientists such as Niklas Luhmann; with postmodern thinkers such as Jacques Derrida and Richard Rorty; with Cardinal Joseph Ratzinger, who became Pope Benedict XVI; and with determinist neuroscientists. The public debates he contributed to include the struggle to come to terms with the German past, the role of religion as a source of meaning in society, the ethics of eugenics and biotechnology, postnationalism, and the implications of neuroscience for free agency.

Habermas retired in 1993 but has kept publishing, particularly in the context of various public debates, lecturing internationally, not the least in the United States, and receiving some of the highest awards, in Germany and abroad.

Reasonable Dialogue

The key element of *The Theory of Communicative Action* is a hermeneutic microanalysis of everyday linguistic communication, embedded in local cultural lifeworlds. The analysis then broadens to the macro themes law, democracy, and technocracy in modernized societies and a theory of modernization. Habermas analyzes "reasonable" human communication as a process of achieving, sustaining, and reviewing mutual understanding, in a game of give-and-take of good—reasonable and acceptable—reasons, of discussion of the validity of claims that are made. Every speech act in that game has a performative aspect—something is asserted, promised, asked for, and so on—and makes three different validity claims that are equally important, not reducible to one another, and intricately intertwined: (1) theoretical truth (regarding "it," what the facts are), (2) normative rightness (regarding "we," what we think is right), and (3) expressive or subjective truthfulness (regarding "me," what I feel and think).

Reasonable human communication, Habermas argues, is thus oriented to achieving consensus on the basis of intersubjective recognition of criticizable validity claims. In this sense, human agency is responsible—agents have to respond to critical questions, to justify their actions with good arguments, in everyday life, in courts of law, and in parliament. Accountable agency (*verantwortliche Urheberschaft*), in Habermas's formalist, procedural view of interaction, has to do with the form, not the contents, of communication. His political ideal, therefore, is (formal) solidarity among strangers, who respectfully remain strange to one another as to the contents of their beliefs and values. In the background, however, there is always the threat of a narrowing down of the interaction to strategic aspects, to tactical power plays. This happens when the interlocutors stop responding seriously to arguments and resort to purely instrumental rationality instead, such as rhetoric, ruse, or force—in such cases, the reasonable nature of interaction disappears.

This hermeneutic, normative philosophy of dialogue argues against positivistic or scientistic reduction of the I-you, intersubjective participants' perspective, which is so important to anthropology. It objects to a purely third-person perspective of agency, processes of communication, and validity claims. Such claims, in Habermas's view, can never be fully accounted for in terms of purely factual processes. Functionalist approaches in the social sciences reduce the richness of human interaction to its strategic aspect and miss out on its concern, always and everywhere, with reasonableness as a counterfactual regulative principle. With all this, in particular the implied view, and promise, of the universal, trans- and intercultural reasonableness of human interaction in a formal sense, Habermas is one of the most interesting philosophical interlocutors for anthropology as a discipline that tends to conceive of itself as not just a human but also a humane, critically engaged science.

Endangered Lifeworlds

Habermas's analysis of emancipative communicative reason, much indebted to Immanuel Kant and Enlightenment thought, broadens to a political philosophy, and a political economy of neo-Marxist inspiration. Habermas shows how, in the course of the past few centuries, systemic aspects of society have come to threaten the reasonableness of human interactions in local cultural lifeworlds. Bureaucratic power and monetary exchange, both focused on strategic rationality—the "functionalist reason"

from the subtitle of the second volume of *The Theory of Communicative Action*—have "colonized" and corrupted the lifeworld and the public sphere. The strategic, instrumental rationality of state and the market now operates on its own terms to a considerable extent, without social grounding. It bypasses consensus-oriented communication and threatens to fully determine what happens in human lives and lifeworlds. In a truly deliberative, parliamentary democracy, it should be the other way around: The legitimacy of the state should result from the will or consent of its people, who are sovereign, the source of all political power.

Habermas criticizes modern, globalized civilization as a technocracy, in which, for example, multinational corporations intrude into the political process and, through control of the market and publicity, into personal lives. Here, they, instead of the people themselves, determine what one should eat and how one should raise one's children, dress, or spend one's leisure time. In processes of commodification and alienation, human and social values become market values. Habermas criticizes Max Weber, Niklas Luhmann, and Talcott Parsons for overstressing functionalist rationality and systemic aspects in their reductionist views of modernization and modernity.

Anthropology and Enlightenment

It is surprising that Habermas's normative philosophy of what it means to be human has not been more influential in anthropology, the comparative study of humankind. This discipline also draws on Marx, Durkheim, and Weber; has strong theoretical interests; uses interpretive methods and dialogues; addresses questions of domination and discrimination; and also engages in cultural critique. Most important, Habermas provides a rationale for the humanist conception of the disciplinary identity of mainstream, in particular North American, cultural anthropology, which tends to conceive of itself as not just a human but also a humane science operating on the assumption that the sciences, in particular the life sciences, are not equipped to fully deal with the human world of language, symbolic meaning, moral responsibility, and culture.

Its humanistic disciplinary identity, its concern with human dignity and bondage, and its constructivist take on cultural lifeworlds show how strongly anthropology is rooted in Enlightenment discourse. Habermas's cosmopolitan theory of reason and cultural anthropology's disciplinary identity converge because they are both, more or less directly, indebted to the Enlightenment philosopher Immanuel Kant, the predominantly neo-Kantian climate of opinion in late 19th- and early 20th-century academia, the closely associated hermeneutic tradition, and Max Weber's sociology. These continental developments influenced North American cultural anthropology through Franz Boas, a German immigrant, and his pupils Alfred Kroeber and Edward Sapir. Max Weber's and the French philosopher Paul Ricoeur's influence on Clifford Geertz's interpretive turn in the 1970s added to that effect. French *ethnologie* and British social anthropology received Kantian input through Émile Durkheim and Claude Lévi-Strauss.

Two Metaphysics

One of the urgent challenges for anthropology presently is the long-standing tension between interpretive (hermeneutic) and explanatory (nomothetic) methodologies. The same goes for philosophy. Two mutually incompatible metaphysical traditions keep feeding into these epistemic stances, one stressing the uniqueness and dignity of human subjectivity, the other stressing the continuity between humans and other animal species. Habermas advocates a dialogue and offers a sophisticated attempt to integrate both approaches in order to overcome the polarization that holds anthropology captive. This is highly relevant for a discipline that has been described as the most scientific of the humanities and the most humanistic of the sciences and still has not sorted out its contested disciplinary identity.

Habermas's sustained argument regarding the possibility, premises, and promise of reasonable dialogue in society and between cultures, founded in the universality of human nature, challenges the tendency of much of anthropology toward cultural relativism with regard to both truth and morality. In particular, it challenges the postmodern, posthumanist tendencies of its "textual turn" of the 1990s, with its repudiation of grand theory. Habermas offers reflection on both epistemic and normative aspects of both humanistic and scientific conceptions of anthropology's disciplinary identity and,

while stressing the former view, contributes toward their conciliation and integration.

Conclusion

There is much in anthropology that is relevant for a critical evaluation of Habermas's theory of communicative rationality. He has been criticized for his negative casting of nonliterate societies, for his reconstruction of the cultural evolution of humankind, for underestimating the role of conflict and exclusion, for overstressing the linguistic nature of human nature and lifeworlds, for being unrealistically utopian, and for his Kantian proceduralism—all in all, for being too Eurocentric in various ways. But this only adds to the challenge his grand theory poses to anthropology in its present era of theoretical diversity, fragmentation, and eclecticism. Habermas's thought is a major asset for reflexively scrutinizing the philosophical roots, conceptual assumptions, disciplinary identity, basic values, and ethical issues of anthropology.

Raymond Corbey

See also Boas, Franz; Critical Theory; Durkheim, Émile; Frankfurt School; Hermeneutics; Neo-Kantianism; Phenomenology; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Bernstein, R. J. (Ed.). (1985). *Habermas and modernity.* Cambridge, UK: Polity.

Fultner, B. (Ed.). (2011). *Jürgen Habermas: Key concepts.* Durham, UK: Acumen.

Ungureanu, C., Günther, K., & Joerges, C. (Eds.). (2011). *Jürgen Habermas* (2 vols.). Avebury, UK: Ashgate.

Habitus

In anthropology, the term *habitus* is primarily associated with the work of the French sociologist/ethnologist Pierre Bourdieu. It is a fundamental element in what is referred to as Bourdieu's theory of practice, or practice theory. According to Bourdieu, each person embodies a habitus—that is, a configuration of linguistic behaviors, bodily postures and ways of moving, and emotions, desires, tastes, beliefs, and values. The habitus is socially produced, acquired in childhood, and shared by those who have a similar social background. Although shared, there are some (albeit limited) individual variations in the ways in which the habitus is lived and embodied.

Historical Overview

The word *habitus* has its origins in Latin and at the most general level refers to both conditions of the body (including disease) and customary practices. Although the concept can be traced back to Aristotle, Bourdieu's notion of habitus builds most directly on the work of Marcel Mauss, Norbert Elias, and Erwin Panofsky. In a short essay first published in 1936, Mauss used the concept of habitus to refer to ways of holding and moving the body, which he called "body techniques."

For Mauss, a "technique" was something traditional or customary, as well as practical or useful. Body techniques were the product of training received in a particular social milieu, and it reflected collective modes of behaviors and values. One of his examples came from his observation that during World War I, armies of different nations marched differently, with their own characteristic movements of the knee, postures, and so on. These constitute different bodily habitus. Mauss also included behaviors associated with caring for the body and dancing as elements of habitus. Body techniques varied by gender and age as well. Norbert Elias, also influential in Bourdieu's conceptual framework, used the concept of habitus in his theory of the "civilizing process"—a process of socialization at the individual level and a metahistorical trend that began in Europe in the court society of the Middle Ages. According to Elias, in the 19th century, the bourgeoisie in France, Germany, and other nations adopted the manners and mannerisms of the earlier "court society" to express a self-image of their superiority and that of their nation as "civilized." Part of this involved increasing levels of self-regulation and self-control of drives and impulses by individuals. For Elias, habitus was a site for the articulation of social and mental structures, so that people internalized social constraints and adopted tastes and habits that were considered "civilized." Habitus for him was a form of embodied social learning and constituted the social makeup and also self-image of individuals. Elias, like Mauss, focused primarily on national identity in his view of habitus, seeing that each nation had its own "we-feelings" and forms

of national habitus. Later, Erwin Panofsky (1951) employed habitus to discuss Gothic architectural styles and what he called the "habits of mind" that produced different art styles in different historical periods and settings. Bourdieu followed Panofsky in seeking to eliminate a distinction between forms of individual and collective creativity, shared values, and orientations.

Bourdieu developed the concept of habitus in his early ethnographic studies of peasants in rural France and Algeria during the late 1950s and early 1960s. His first published use of the term appeared in a 1962 article on rural bachelors in Bourdieu's own natal village in southeastern France. Two years later, he used this term in an article, coauthored with Abdelmalek Sayad, about displaced and uprooted Algerian peasants he had interviewed in resettlement camps during the Algerian War of Independence. Bourdieu's emphasis was on bodily habitus in this earlier work, following Mauss, and with it he expressed the uncomfortable condition of feeling displaced and outside of one's familiar milieu, one's taken-for-granted social reality. In rural France, urbanization following World War II had led to changes in the village that caused peasant bachelors, who were unable to find wives, to feel uneasy and awkward, a situation illustrated by Bourdieu through his analysis of their behaviors at a village dance. Although they had stayed in place in the village, they felt out of place. The Algerians had been physically displaced and forced into resettlement camps, where their own sense of uneasiness was the result of not being in the familiar, customary space in which they had acquired their habitus.

Bourdieu further developed his theory of habitus in later work on rural France and Algeria, education, tastes and lifestyles, language, photography, and the economics of real estate. Most of this work used examples from France.

Habitus, Cultural Capital, and Social Space

Practice theory refers in Bourdieu's work both to social practice and to practical (as opposed to theoretical or scholarly) forms of knowledge and behavior that are part of the habitus. With this theoretical framework, Bourdieu attempted to break down the conceptual division between social structure and social practices. For Bourdieu, the habitus is part of everyday life and commonsense understandings of one's social world and how to behave within it. Therefore, it is not a conscious aspect of identity or action under most circumstances. It is acquired through informal mechanisms of socialization from early childhood and onward. In an early essay on the Kabyle house (in Algeria), Bourdieu wrote about the ways in which children learn gendered values and social roles through the layout, physical orientation, and uses of space within the home. He argued, importantly, that the habitus is acquired through bodily movement and bodily experiences as much as through what is told or observed from the behaviors of others. For Bourdieu, the body is a "memory pad." Bourdieu referred to commonsense understandings of the world as *doxa*. Such taken-for-granted assumptions about social reality vary, however, according to the orientations and dispositions of any particular acquired habitus.

The primary habitus is already present when children first encounter school, although they may acquire a secondary habitus through schooling experiences and other types of life experience that take them outside their original social milieu and its assumptions, values, and so on. Bourdieu himself was an example of this, having been raised in a rural environment in southeastern France but acquiring a "secondary habitus" through his pursuit of higher education at elite schools. The orientations and dispositions of the habitus take on differing amounts of value within the wider social space. Bourdieu referred to these as forms of capital—cultural, symbolic, and social. Depending on one's habitus, a person may have qualities (forms of capital) that are more or less highly valued by the dominant sectors of society. Examples of this are "tastes" in music, art, food, and lifestyle that lead to various forms of distinction among habitus within social space. A child who has lower valued forms of cultural capital (including ways of speaking, familiarity with reading and writing, and knowledge of art and museums) than those forms most highly valued by the school will, according to Bourdieu's theory of education and social reproduction, do less well in school than those children whose forms of capital are recognized by and shared with their middle-class teachers.

Bourdieu also suggested that people can experience an uncomfortable "split habitus" when their life experiences are not in harmony with the primary habitus they acquired in early childhood through family life. This can occur through education, as in

Bourdieu's own case, or through the experience of living through rapid social changes or dramatic disruptions of social life, as in the case of Algerians who were placed in resettlement camps. Even though Bourdieu did not specifically address transnational migration in his own research, this idea can obviously be extended to immigrants.

Bourdieu's theory of habitus refers frequently to spatial positioning, both in physical settings and in social life more generally. Each diverse and stratified nation, such as France, will contain several different types of habitus related to social positions and social positioning within the social space of the nation. For example, people who work in small, family-owned companies have a different position in the social space from executives in large corporations. Bourdieu conceptualized a nation as a social space containing a variety of habitus, each taking a different position and having a different trajectory (moving toward either higher or lower status over time). He also noted that those sharing a particular type of habitus will inhabit differently valued geographical settings, so that the rich will live in more pleasant and favored neighborhoods within cities.

Habitus Beyond Bourdieu

The concept of habitus has been influential throughout the social sciences and humanities, and it is, therefore, impossible to provide a comprehensive overview of the legacy of this term here. Only two examples will be provided. In his book *The Practice of Everyday Life*, Michel de Certeau criticized Bourdieu's theory of practice (and habitus) for being a circular argument about the relationship between structure and practice. According to de Certeau, Bourdieu posited a sort of invisible and stable reality in the social structure that produces the habitus and within which the habitus employs limited forms of improvisation and tactics, which in turn tend to reinforce and reproduce that structure. In his own theory of everyday practices, tactics, ways of operating, and so on, which can be viewed in dialogue with Bourdieu, de Certeau paid more attention to the prevalent forms of "making do," cunning tricks, and other everyday practices in particular types of culture. He also focused on consumption practices and popular culture, with an acknowledgement that these are constrained by structures of power.

A more recent, and perhaps the most thorough, extension and development of the concept of habitus has been the one provided by Barnard Lahire. Lahire has written that habitus is a theory of socialization, a theory of action, and a theory of practice. He takes issue with Bourdieu's emphasis on the early acquisition of the habitus because it implies that a person's current orientations and behaviors depend primarily on past experiences. Moreover, Bourdieu assumed that people will seek situations where there is no disruption of their habitus and where they could experience a sense of harmony between their own dispositions and their social position. In his own notion of the "plural actor," Lahire posits that contextual factors in the present may lead some people to have more than one disposition or habitus and that this may be more common than Bourdieu acknowledged.

Deborah Reed-Danahay

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Mauss, Marcel; Phenomenology; Poststructuralism; Practice Theory

Further Readings

Bourdieu, P. (1977). *Outline of a theory of practice* (R. Nice, Trans.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press. (Original work published 1972)

———. (1984). *Distinction: A social critique of the judgment of taste* (R. Nice, Trans.). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. (Original work published 1979)

———. (2008). *The bachelor's ball* (R. Nice, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press. (Original work published 1962)

Certeau, M. de. (1984). *The practice of everyday life* (S. Randall, Trans.). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Elias, N. (2000). *The civilizing process: Sociogenetic and psychogenetic investigations* (Rev. ed.; E. Jephcott, Trans.). Oxford, UK: Blackwell. (Original work published 1939)

Goodman, J. E., & Silverstein, P. A. (Eds.). (2009). *Bourdieu in Algeria: Colonial politics, ethnographic practices, theoretical developments.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Lahire, B. (2011). *The plural actor* (D. Fernbach, Trans.). Cambridge, UK: Polity Press. (Original work published 2001)

Mauss, M. (1979). Body techniques. In *Sociology and psychology: Essays* (pp. 97–123; B. Brewster, Trans.).

London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul. (Original work published 1936)
Panofsky, E. (1951). *Gothic architecture and scholasticism*. Latrobe, PA: Archabbey Press.
Reed-Danahay, D. (2005). *Locating Bourdieu*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Haddon, Alfred C.

Alfred Cort Haddon (1855–1940), British biologist, zoologist, and ethnologist, established anthropology as a professional discipline at the University of Cambridge and had a major impact on the development of anthropology in Britain and beyond.

Biography and Major Works

Haddon was born into a nonconformist London family, the eldest son of Caroline and John Haddon, owner of a London printing firm specializing in missionary tracts. In 1875, he was accepted to read natural sciences at Christ's College in Cambridge, where he took classes in zoology, geology, and embryology and trained under Michael Foster, a protégé of Darwin's apologist Thomas Huxley. A central concern of these biologists was to test evolutionary theories explaining survival through adaptation, with marine populations a key site for investigation. Following the completion of a BSc, Haddon pursued this work at the Naples marine station (1879), as curator of the Cambridge Zoological Museum (1879–1880), as professor of zoology at the Royal College of Science in Dublin (1880–1900), and as assistant naturalist in the Dublin Science and Art Museum (1880–1888).

In 1888, Haddon went to the Torres Straits to study marine biology and became fascinated with the Islanders with whom he lived and worked. Concerned that traditional beliefs and practices were dying out, he resolved to return with an anthropological expedition "before it was too late."

On return to Britain, Haddon resumed his Dublin Chair. In 1892, Haddon advocated an ethnographic survey of the British Isles, which gained the sponsorship of the British Association for the Advancement of Science. He himself contributed research on the Aran Islands in Ireland. The survey's focus on local customs and the racial composition of various populations remained a central goal of Haddon's far-flung research, while its limited success highlighted the need for trained observers in the collection and analysis of ethnographic data. From 1893, he also worked part-time in the Anatomy Department at Cambridge as a freelance lecturer in anthropology and comparative anatomy. He was awarded an ScD in 1897.

Within a paradigm of salvage ethnography and encompassing a broad multidisciplinary vision of anthropology, Haddon led the 1898 Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to the Torres Straits. The expedition members—William McDougall, Charles Myers, Sydney Ray, Charles Seligman, William Rivers, and Anthony Wilkin—included scholars in the fields of medicine, physiology, experimental psychology, and linguistics, with expertise in art, music, and photography. With the assistance of named Islanders, the expedition generated an enormous amount of ethnographic data, compiled in the six volumes of the expedition's *Reports* (1901–1935), and made an extensive collection of objects, photographs, drawings, and film and audio recordings.

Following the success of the Torres Straits expedition and with much lobbying by James Frazer and others in Cambridge, Haddon was appointed the first University Lecturer in Ethnology in 1900, a fellow of Christ's College in 1901, and a reader in 1909, a position he held until his retirement in 1926. He was instrumental in setting up the Board of Anthropological Studies at Cambridge in 1904.

Haddon also campaigned for the colonial government to recognize the importance of anthropological training, arguing that it was crucial to a more humane and efficient colonial service. In 1908, a Diploma in Anthropology was established in Cambridge, which bolstered the profile and funding for anthropology within the university and provided training for members of the Indian Civil Service as well as colonial administrators and anthropologists in Melanesia and Africa.

Throughout his career, Haddon retained an active role in various scholarly associations, serving as president of the British Association for the Advancement of Science Section H, the (Royal) Anthropological Institute, and the Folklore Society; he was also a fellow of the Royal Society. He published extensively for more than 50 years on various areas of anthropology and received numerous professional accolades.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Haddon's main contributions were methodological and as a tireless promoter of the professionalization of the discipline and its wide-ranging public value. The 1898 Torres Straits Expedition was noted for the integration of field research and scholarly interpretation, for Rivers's development of the "genealogical method," and for the use of state-of-the-art recording devices. Credited with being the first person to apply the term *fieldwork* to anthropology, as leader of the Cambridge school with Rivers, Myers, and Seligman, Haddon promoted the "intensive study of limited areas." Their methodology was consolidated in the 1912 edition of *Notes and Queries on Anthropology*. Although their own field research was within the survey mode, they taught the first generation of professionally trained students, including Alfred Radcliffe-Brown, John Layard, Bronisław Malinowski, and Gregory Bateson, who established intensive fieldwork by a lone participant observer as the core methodology for a modern social anthropology.

Haddon's Darwinian approach focused on the distribution of forms within a particular region, rather than constructing a universal sequence of development. He worked to illuminate the diversity and complexity of racial and cultural groups, based on a comparative study of the distribution of physical characteristics, languages, sociocultural traits, and material culture. Haddon's research interests overlapped with diffusionism, although he was critical of later hyperdiffusionistic models. Despite his underlying concern with racial difference, Haddon rejected racial determinism. The Torres Straits research indicated that the Islanders had the same range of capacities as the British test subjects. By the 1930s, Haddon was strongly critical of the "pseudoscience of racial biology" and cautioned against its use by political forces.

Haddon was a keen advocate of museums for research and public education. In addition to his own work at the Cambridge Museum of Archaeology and Anthropology and as advisory curator to the Horniman Museum in London, he encouraged his students to make well-documented field collections of objects and photographs, many of which are now housed at the museum. He was also founder of the Haddon library for Archaeology and Anthropology in Cambridge. The extensive results of his Torres Straits research remain foundational for researchers in the region and are of particular importance to Torres Straits Islanders today.

Anita Herle

See also Cambridge University; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Rivers, W. H. R.; Royal Anthropological Institute; Seligman, Charles Gabriel; Torres Straits Expedition

Further Readings

Herle, A. C., & Rouse, S. (Eds). (1998). *Cambridge and the Torres Strait: Centenary essays on the 1898 expedition.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1995). *After Tylor: British social anthropology 1888–1951.* Madison, WI: Athalone.

Urry, J. (1993). *Before social anthropology: Essays on the history of British anthropology.* Chur, Switzerland: Harwood Academic.

Hall, Edward T.

Edward Twitchell Hall (1914–2009) was an American anthropologist, a researcher specializing in cross-cultural studies, and is considered one of the founders of the study of nonverbal behavior and intercultural communication.

Biography and Major Works

Born in 1914 in Webster Groves, Missouri, Hall spent his early years in New Mexico. In 1936, he earned his BA in anthropology from the University of Denver; in 1938, his MA in anthropology from the University of Arizona; and in 1942, his PhD from Columbia University. In 1942–1945, he served in World War II in Europe and in the Philippines. In 1946, Hall married Mildred Ellis Reed and started postdoctoral research at Columbia University. Later, he worked at the University of Denver, Washington School of Psychiatry, Illinois Institute of Technology, and Northwestern University, among others. He did extensive fieldwork studying intercultural relations with the Navajo, Hopi, Spanish Americans, and Trukese. He belonged to the American Anthropological Association, the Society for Applied Anthropology, and the Building Research Advisory Board of the National Academy of Sciences. After

retiring in 1977, he lived in Santa Fe, New Mexico, till his death in 2009.

Hall is the author of many books devoted to cultural studies and anthropology. In *The Silent Language* (1959), Hall discussed how people communicate without the use of words, stressing the importance of space and time in sending and receiving messages. The issue of temporal dimensions was also researched in his 1983 book *The Dance of Life*, to show how time determines intercultural contacts. *The Hidden Dimension*, published in 1966, focused on discussing space and its role in personal, organizational, and societal life. In *Beyond Culture* (1976), Hall stressed the importance of the cultural environment in one's life, focusing on high- and low-context cultures. Due to common experience and tradition, high-context cultures provide information not only verbally but also by using context-related features. On the other hand, low-context cultures, which are less homogeneous than the high-context ones, rely mainly on verbal messages in communication. The book titled *Hidden Differences: Doing Business With the Japanese* (1987), coauthored with his wife, Mildred Reed Hall, was devoted to describing business relations between Americans and Japanese. The issue of cultural differences between French, Germans, and Americans was discussed in the book titled *Understanding Cultural Differences: Germans, French and Americans* (1990), also coauthored with Mildred Reed Hall. The authors studied the characteristics of German, French, and American culture, taking into account notions such as stereotypes, the attitude to time and space, communication styles, and cultural values. In *The Fourth Dimension in Architecture: The Impact of Building on Behavior* (1975), Hall and his wife researched the role of the architecture of buildings and offices in the performance of workers. Hall also wrote two autobiographical works: *An Anthropology of Everyday Life* (1992) and *West of the Thirties: Discoveries Among the Navajo and Hopi* (1995). The first book covered the first 50 years of his life, and the second work was devoted to his experience acquired working with Navajo, Hopi, and Hispanic peoples.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Hall's contributions to anthropology were wide-ranging and important. His research findings offer a new perspective on the relations between humans, taking into account the role of culture in shaping one's behavior. Thus, Hall is the author whose theories and concepts set the foundation for anthropological research in nonverbal communication and the use of space.

For example, Hall is the author of concepts such as *proxemics*, *adumbration*, *monochronic* and *polychronic cultures*, as well as *high-* and *low-context cultures*. *Proxemics* is related to the role of space in human contacts. Hall distinguished various levels of distance—intimate distance, personal distance, social distance, and public distance—depending on the relation between the speakers and the culture they represent. *Adumbrations* are understood as the signals preceding or accompanying formal communication that provide information to the interlocutors and enhance mutual understanding. Hall also argued that cultures could be classified by the ways in which their members understood time. Members of *monochronic cultures* experience time in a linear way and perform one action at a time. They do not like interruptions and perceive time as a tangible object that can be wasted, saved, or spent. On the contrary, members of *polychronic cultures* favor the simultaneous occurrence of activities, and they are not against interruptions. They value contacts with people more than time-related obligations. The other division of cultures proposed by Hall is that of low-context and high-context cultures. In *low-context cultures*, information does not flow freely since it is controlled and compartmentalized. On the other hand, *high-context cultures* favor unrestricted information flow and interpersonal contacts.

Hall's Legacy

Hall's work was noteworthy for its interdisciplinary nature. Among those whose work was influential in Hall's thinking were Franz Boas, Ruth Benedict, Edward Sapir, Benjamin Lee Whorf, Sigmund Freud, Harry Stack Sullivan, Margaret Mead, David Riesman, Buckminster Fuller, Melville J. Herskovitz, and Erich Fromm. Moreover, Hall cooperated with the linguist George L. Trager on the notion of cultural events and their performance on three levels: formal, informal, and technical. Apart from linguistics, Hall was also interested in media studies. In the period between 1962 and 1976, he exchanged more than 130 letters with Marshall McLuhan, the Canadian specialist on topics such as the media, media technological determinism, and the relation between

the media and the people. This correspondence influenced some of McLuhan's scientific writing.

Since his research concerned issues pertinent to anthropology, linguistics, ethology, and Freudian psychoanalytic theory, Hall's insights about culture and anthropology continue to exert an influence on various fields of studies. His scientific legacy is visible, among others, in intercultural communication, sociology, linguistics, management, and anthropology. For example, looking closer at organizational studies, his anthropological research on the classification of cultures and the study of the role of space and time is of interest not only to scholars but also to business practitioners. Notions of social space, socialization, and identity rely on Hall's proxemic studies, and Hall's typology of culture to study cultural variations in various groups and societies is used in cultural anthropology.

Magdalena Bielenia-Grajewska

See also Boas, Franz; Columbia University; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Hall, E. T. (1963). A system for the notation of proxemic behavior. *American Anthropologist, 65*(5), 1003–1026.

———. (1964). Adumbration as a feature of intercultural communication. *American Anthropologist, 66*(6), 154–163.

———. (1990). *The silent language*. New York, NY: Anchor Books.

Hall, E. T., & Hall, M. R. (1990). *Understanding cultural differences: Germans, French and Americans*. Yarmouth, UK: Intercultural Press.

Rogers, E. M. (2000). The extensions of men: The correspondence of Marshall McLuhan and Edward T. Hall. *Mass Communication and Society, 3*(1), 117–135.

Rogers, E. M., Hart, W. B., & Miike, Y. (2002). Edward T. Hall and the history of intercultural communication: The United States and Japan. *Keio Communication Review, 24*, 3–26.

Website

Edward T. Hall: http://www.edwardthall.com/

Hallowell, A. Irving

Alfred Irving Hallowell (1892–1974) was an influential American anthropologist who studied and then taught for most of his academic career at the University of Pennsylvania. His professional reputation and personal identity were based on his research among Native North American peoples, especially the Ojibwa of Canada. The subjects to which Hallowell made original contributions included kinship and social organization, psychological anthropology, folklore, worldview, religion, sociolinguistics, cultural ecology, acculturation, transculturalization, dreams and dreaming, and the history of anthropology. During his professional career, he became a member of the Permanent Council of the International Congress of Anthropological and Ethnological Sciences and served as president of the American Anthropological Association and the American Folklore Society. Among his many honors and awards were a Guggenheim Fellowship, the Viking Medal and Award for outstanding achievement in anthropology, and election to the National Academy of Sciences.

Hallowell came to anthropology indirectly by way of graduate courses in sociology and a job as a social worker in his native Philadelphia; he eventually went to New York City to work with Franz Boas and Ruth Benedict. Finally, he decided to study intensively for his PhD degree with Frank Speck at the University of Pennsylvania. He received his doctorate in 1924 for his study "Bear Ceremonialism in the Northern Hemisphere," which turned out to be the last of the comparative cross-cultural distributional studies within the Boasian tradition. It was published in 1926 as a 175-page essay in the *American Anthropologist*. From 1927 through 1963, he worked as a professor of anthropology at the University of Pennsylvania, where he became known for his training of a cohort of prominent graduate students, including Melford Spiro, Anthony F. C. Wallace, Raymond Fogelson, George W. Stocking, Regna Darnell, James Van Stone, and Marie-Françoise Gúedon.

Hallowell's initial fieldwork centered on learning indigenous languages, gathering kinship terminologies, and collecting folktales from the St. Francis Abenaki of Quebec and the Lac du Flambeau Band of Lake Superior Chippewa in Wisconsin. During the 1930s and 1940s, he made repeated summer visits to the Montagnais-Naskapi (Innu) in Quebec, as well as the Oji-Cree of northern Ontario and the Berens River Saulteaux of Lake Winnipeg, Manitoba.

Thanks to his long-term relationship with William Berens, an Ojibwa treaty chief on the

Berens River, Hallowell was able to make engaging and memorable contributions to the anthropological literature. Many years before the "writing culture" and the "collaborative" movements in ethnography, Hallowell and Berens became close friends and mutual interlocutors, sharing experiences, autobiographical narratives, and dreams. From their conversations, for example, Hallowell learned that the Ojibwa people interpret the manifest content of their dreams as experiences of their selves, which are continuous in time and space with those of their waking lives. For nonindigenous peoples, however, while dream images may be recognized as self-related, they are only rarely included in their memoirs or autobiographies.

Known to their friends as "Pete" Hallowell and "Willy" Berens, these men worked together using various narrative genres and rhetorical tropes to convey and enliven the Native point of view. In an early field encounter, Hallowell asked Berens a naive question, to which Willy gave a sharp response. In his 1972 autobiography *On Being an Anthropologist*, Hallowell sketched the scene in which he hesitatingly asked his mentor whether a man could marry a woman who was his cross-cousin. Berens replied immediately, "Who the hell else would he marry?" In this exchange, we see a timid student learning a key lesson in Ojibwa marriage practices from an experienced, worldly mentor. By recording and presenting this type of field dialogue, Hallowell portrayed himself as a student within an ongoing active learning context.

In a classic essay "Ojibwa Ontology, Behavior, and World View," Hallowell told of his experience of strolling down the road with Berens one summer day soon after he learned that stones are grammatically animate in the Ojibwa language. He took the opportunity to ask his mentor if all the stones around them were alive. Willy reflected for a time and replied, "No! But *some* are." On another occasion, Berens told Hallowell that he saw a large stone move during a Midewiwin, or Grand Medicine Society, ceremony led by his father, a famous Midé conjurer. His father walked around the lodge twice; then, when he returned to his original place, he began to sing; at this point, the stone rolled over and over itself, following his trail around the lodge.

Hallowell summed up this teaching story saying that the movement of the stone was not a voluntary act initiated by the stone but a demonstration of the magical power of the Midé leader. By means of these and other anecdotes, we learn that some stones, indeed, have the capacity to connect human persons to other than human persons in the world of the spirits. In Grand Medicine Society ceremonies, other than human persons manifest themselves audibly for the audience in different voices. Sometimes they named themselves or sang songs. The Ojibwa name by which Hallowell is remembered in Canada to this day is Midewigimaa, meaning "master of Midé ceremonies," indicating that he was extremely knowledgeable about these ceremonies.

At the age of 72, Hallowell completed his only full-length monograph centering on his ethnographic work with the Ojibwa of Manitoba. In 1962, he began writing it for the series of undergraduate books known as *Case Studies in Cultural Anthropology*, edited by George and Louise Spindler of Stanford University. In 1967, when Railway Express reported to Holt, Rinehart and Winston that they had lost his copyedited manuscript, Hallowell was in very poor health. He searched, to no avail, for another copy of his manuscript until he died on October 10, 1974. Several years later, when Jennifer S. H. Brown, now a historian at the University of Winnipeg, took over the project, she found a copy of an early version of his manuscript at the American Philosophical Society in Philadelphia, edited it, and added a preface and an afterword. In this way, she helped Hallowell and Berens to speak together once more from their graves.

Barbara Tedlock

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Spiro, Melford; Wallace, Anthony F. C.

Further Readings

Hallowell, A. I. (1942). *The role of conjuring in Saulteaux society.* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

———. (1963). Papers in honor of Melville J. Herskovits: American Indians, White and Black: The phenomenon of transculturalization. *Current Anthropology, 4*(5), 519–531.

_____. (1966). The role of dreams in Ojibwa culture. In G. E. Von Grunebaum & R. Caillois (Eds.), *The dream and human societies* (pp. 267–292). Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1972). On being an anthropologist. In *Contributions to Ojibwe studies: Essays, 1934–1972* (J. S. H. Brown & S. E. Gray, Eds.; pp. 1–15). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

———. (1975). Ojibwa ontology, behavior, and world view. In D. Tedlock & B. Tedlock (Eds.), *Teachings from the American earth: Indian religion and philosophy* (pp. 141–178). New York, NY: Liveright. (Reprinted from *Culture in history: Essays in honor of Paul Radin*, pp. 19–52; by S. Diamond, Ed., 1960, New York, NY: Columbia University Press)

Hallowell, A. I., & Brown, J. S. H. (1992). *The Ojibwa of Berens River, Manitoba: Ethnography into history.* Fort Worth, TX: Harcourt Brace.

Lassiter, L. E. (2000). Authoritative texts, collaborative ethnography, and Native American studies. *American Indian Quarterly, 24*(4), 601–614.

Harris, Marvin

The American anthropologist Marvin Harris (1927–2001) was the creator and proponent of the theory of cultural materialism. Many of his writings sought to popularize anthropology for the general public, producing years of columns for *Natural History* magazine and several books—such as *Cows, Pigs, Wars, and Witches* (1974) and *Cannibals and Kings* (1977)—written for general readers, while other works were directed for more exclusively academic audiences, most notably *The Rise of Anthropological Theory* (*The RAT*, 1968) and *Cultural Materialism* (1979).

Marvin Harris was born in Brooklyn, New York, on August 18, 1927. He grew up in the working-class poverty of the Great Depression. During the Second World War, he served in the U.S. Army Transportation Corps (1945–1947); like many scholars of his generation, he later entered college on the G. I. Bill. Anthropology courses at Columbia University with Charles Wagley led to a general interest in anthropology and a specific interest in Brazilian ethnography. At Columbia, he earned his bachelor's degree in anthropology in 1949 and his PhD in 1953. In 1952, he married Madeline Grove, with whom he had two children and to whom he remained married for the rest of his life. Marvin Harris died in Gainesville, Florida, on October 25, 2001, from medical complications following hip surgery.

Harris's Early Career

While other Columbia graduate students of Harris's cohort had an explicit interest in pursuing Marxist theory, Harris had few such theoretical interests at that time. Harris conducted his dissertation fieldwork in 1950–1951 in Rio de Contas, Brazil, producing a descriptive village study of enculturation—later published with little modification as *Town and Country in Brazil* (1958). Harris's early ethnographic writing produced nothing prefiguring his later interest in anthropological theory; instead, this ethnographic work was a Boasian-derived descriptive village study. On defending his dissertation, Harris became an assistant professor at Columbia University in 1953, where he remained a member of the faculty until 1980.

While conducting field research in Mozambique in 1955–1956, Harris became aware of the ways in which the Portuguese colonialism created behavioral regimes of segregation not fully acknowledged in the culture's ideology. Harris switched his fieldwork focus from studying agricultural communities to studying racial segregation and colonial oppression, until he was forced to leave by government officials. He befriended Antonio de Figueiredo and Eduardo Mondlane—a founder of the Mozambique liberation movement; de Figueiredo later described Harris's critique and denunciation of the Portuguese as having "decisively influenced the abolition of the forced labour system" (Burns, 2001). In "Portugal's African 'Wards': A First Hand Report on Labor and Education in Moçambique" (1958), Harris denounced the Portuguese domination of local populations. Harris later recounted that the control exerted on him and his research in Mozambique by his Ford Foundation sponsors soured him on funding research by grant writing and led him to pursue writing trade books for a popular audience as a means of independently funding research.

Harris's experiences in Mozambique and the contradictions he observed between claims of egalitarian treatment for all and the behavioral practices of the system of apartheid spawned his interest in studying the differences between beliefs and behaviors. In an effort to develop a methodology and vocabulary for studying minute elements of human behaviors and beliefs, he wrote *The Nature of Cultural Things* (1964). This early interest in devising ways to directly study human behavior and statements led to a series of research projects using newly available

videotape technologies to record the home lives of two African American and two Puerto Rican families living in Harlem. While Harris later abandoned much of the esoteric technical vocabulary and cumbersomely detailed methods of breaking down human behaviors into minimal units of analysis, the basic methods of analyzing what at the time were called the *emic* and *etic* components of culture had their roots in this early research.

In the early 1960s, Harris led student research programs in Ecuador (1960) and Brazil (1962). In 1965, he first wrote about the Hindu ban on killing cows—arguing that Hindu cattle veneration was based on sound ecological practices protecting cattle as milk providers and a source of plow traction. Later, in 1976, he conducted fieldwork in India, studying the behavior and ideology of cattle veneration firsthand. With Charles Wagley, Harris coauthored *Patterns of Race in the Americas* in 1964, a work that demonstrated that racial systems were cultural, not biological, systems of classification. *Patterns of Race* demonstrated the social construction of race, and in this work, Harris analyzed race as an ideological system embedded within a highly stratified political economy.

The Rise of Anthropological Theory

From 1963 to 1966, Harris served as Columbia University's chair of the Department of Anthropology. In this capacity, he gained access to a new technological innovation: the department's photocopy machine, which he used to photocopy key passages from classic social science works, passages that he cut and taped between the critical commentary he wrote responding to these passages, a writing technique he used to construct the manuscript for *The RAT*.

With the 1968 publication of *The RAT*, Harris became a central figure in anthropological theory. *The RAT* filled gaps in American anthropology's disciplinary self-conception, combining a new theoretical-centric approach to studying disciplinary ancestral ties with a critical-theoretical overview of the development of Western social science during the Enlightenment up to 1960s anthropology. Its publication coincided with a period of growth in American anthropology, and *The RAT's* championing of materialist and ecological anthropological approaches helped usher in an era of ecological anthropology and encouraged the primacy of theory as an anthropological focus. *The RAT* combined an ambitious survey of theoretical developments stretching from Enlightenment thought to the 1960s with a critical-materialist analysis weighing the efficacy of past theoretical efforts—with the end goal of establishing the legitimacy of his own cultural materialism theory. Harris championed select elements of early works such as Henry Lewis Morgan's cultural evolutionism, Karl Marx's historical materialism, and Leslie White and Julian Steward's neo-evolutionism—while criticizing, for example, what he described as Boas's antitheoretical "historical particularism" and a broad range of psychological, or culture and personality approaches to culture, by Herbert Mead, Ruth Benedict, and others, as misguided. With funds earned from the publication of *The RAT*, Harris purchased a large waterfront house on Cranberry Island, Maine, where he and his family summered—and Harris mixed passions for writing and fishing—for the next 30 years.

In *The RAT* (and later works, such as *Cultural Materialism*), Harris championed Marxian principles of the primacy of infrastructure in producing the particulars of social life, while rejecting Marx and Engels's principle of the dialectic. Harris formulated a mechanical analysis of cultural phenomena with the explicitly stated purpose not of necessarily changing the world (as Marx would have it) but of understanding the world, though Harris also allowed for the possibility that designed changes in infrastructure could lead to the desired social changes. Harris's conception of cultural materialism excised Marx's materialist approach to history from Marx's revolutionary political program. Harris maintained that scientific methods necessarily operated independently of political programs, and he rejected applications of Marxist dialectical methods as nonverifiable, dogma based, and unnecessary for materialist analysis. Yet, while rejecting these elements of orthodox Marxism, as an individual, Harris aligned himself with progressive and radical political movements and at times privately referred to his own political orientation as socialistic.

Political Activism

Harris was critical of military or intelligence agencies using anthropology, and in 1965, he joined Harold Conklin, Morton Fried, Dell Hymes, Robert Murphy, and Eric Wolf in producing a handbill circulated among anthropologists across the country condemning

anthropologists' involvement in Project Camelot. In the 1960s and 1970s, Harris was active in a variety of political movements opposing the American wars in Southeast Asia. Harris helped found the group Anthropologists for Radical Political Action (satirically taking its name from the Pentagon's Advanced Research Projects Agency), and he was vice chairman of Vietnam Facts, an intercampus organization of university professors opposing the Vietnam War. In 1967, with Morton Fried and Robert Murphy, he organized a seminal session at the American Anthropological Association's annual meetings, later published as *War: The Anthropology of Armed Conflict and Aggression*. During the 1968 student uprisings and campus takeover of Columbia University, Harris was among the handful of faculty who sided with the students as they occupied the campus, and he was one of the four anthropologists who formed a human chain in an effort to protect the students occupying Columbia's Fayerweather Hall from the police.

Cultural Materialism and Theoretical Critiques

Harris conceived of anthropology as a science whose holistic evolutionary perspective and focus on the differences between ideology and behavior could help develop solutions to a variety of social problems. He believed that anthropology as a science would flourish only if anthropologists directly interrogated and challenged anthropological theories and explanations. Harris became well known for holding forth at the annual meetings of the American Anthropological Association, where he would frequently rise from the floor of sessions and interrogate presenters, pressing them to account for what he saw as mistaken forms of analysis in their papers. Harris was a vocal critic of biological determinism, challenging the sociobiological claims of Napoleon Chagnon that Yanomamo males achieved differential reproductive success by engaging in warfare and raiding neighboring groups. He criticized the work of Marshall Sahlins as obscuring the material causes of culture that Sahlins viewed as products of cultural atavism.

With the publication of *Cultural Materialism* in 1979, Harris formalized his theoretical tenets stressing the primacy of infrastructure, which he had developed in *The RAT* (1968) and which guided his analysis in *Cows, Pigs, Wars, and Witches* (1974) and *Cannibals and Kings* (1977). *Cultural Materialism* presents a selectively Marxist-derived paradigm focusing on the infrastructural forces of demography, technology, economic, and environmental conditions to explain cultural beliefs and practices—regardless of how nonutilitarian these elements of culture seem. Harris argued that cultural-materialist analysis is "based on the simple premise that human social life is a response to the practical problems of earthly existence" (1979, p. xv).

With the death of his son Robert and the increasing infighting within the department at Columbia, Harris left New York and joined the faculty at the University of Florida in 1980, where he was Graduate Research Professor until his retirement in 2000. Harris's appointment had no required teaching obligations, though he regularly taught a graduate-level theory course, often held at his home. During the past 2 decades of his life, he established a disciplined writing routine, where he read and wrote for an 8- or 9-hour period each day, producing a steady stream of articles and books.

In 1987, Harris coauthored with the anthropologist Eric Ross) *Death, Sex, and Fertility*, a work focusing on demographic pressure as what he increasingly came to see as the primary force among infrastructural features. Harris delivered the 1991 annual Distinguished Lecture at the annual meeting of the American Anthropological Association, titled "Anthropology and the Theoretical and Paradigmatic Significance of the Collapse of Soviet and East European Communism." In 1992, he conducted his final field research in Brazil, investigating changes in Brazil's racial classification systems. Harris's last book, published in 1998, *Theories of Culture in Postmodern Times* (originally titled *The Fall of Anthropological Theory*), critiqued the developments in postmodern anthropology and lamented the rejection of positivism, the rise of anthropological analysis rejecting notions of cultural evolution and the possibility of meta-analysis. Harris criticized postmodern anthropology for its lack of empirical analysis, arguing that postmodernism's rejection of positivism weakened anthropology's ability to influence public policy debates.

David H. Price

See also Columbia University; Cultural Materialism; Marx, Karl; Sahlins, Marshall; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Fried, M., Harris, M., & Murphy, R. (Eds.). (1968). *War: The anthropology of armed conflict and aggression*. New York, NY: Natural History Press.

Harris, M. (1958). Portugal's African "wards." *Africa Today, 5*(6), 3–36.

———. (1968). *The rise of anthropological theory*. New York, NY: Thomas Y. Crowell.

———. (1971). *Culture, man, nature* (1st ed.). New York, NY: Thomas Y. Crowell. (Published as *Culture, People, Nature* in later editions)

———. (1977). *Cannibals and kings*. New York, NY: Vintage.

———. (1979). *Cultural materialism*. New York, NY: Random House.

———. (1998). *Theories of culture in postmodern times*. Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira.

Harris, M., & Ross, E. B. (1987). *Death, sex, and fertility*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Wagley, C., & Harris, M. (1964). *Patterns of race in the Americas*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

Harvey, David

David Harvey (1935–) is an urban geographer whose influence on anthropology has been both institutional and theoretical. His primary contribution to social scientific thought has hinged on two questions: (1) Why does capitalism need geographical space? and (2) How does it use geographical space in a manner that both facilitates and threatens its own continued existence? These questions form the heart of an intellectual rapprochement that has simultaneously challenged geography to make effective theoretical use of Marxism, and Marxism to make effective theoretical use of geography. Since the late 1960s, Harvey has viewed this dialectic primarily through the lens of urban social theory, examining the ways in which the territorial logic of capital accumulation drives urbanization, and urbanization in its own turn establishes the conditions for further capital accumulation, including geographic barriers that must be surmounted by continued spatial reinvention if capitalism is to reproduce itself at all. These contradictions are most succinctly exemplified in his concept of the "spatial fix," in which capital's tendency to affix itself in particular places generates a crisis of accumulation that can only be resolved through capital's often violent movement across geographical space: a fixture of capitalism's character amounting to something of an addictive fixation. His work has therefore been described as a historical-geographical materialism, grounding the immanent logic of the capitalist mode of production in the development and redevelopment of the built environment under its auspices.

Harvey was born in the town of Gillingham in County Kent, United Kingdom, in 1935. He completed a PhD in geography at Cambridge University in 1961, writing a dissertation on the 19th-century history of hops cultivation in his native Kent. Following a postdoctoral fellowship at the University of Uppsala in Sweden and a subsequent lectureship at Bristol University in southwest England, Harvey moved to the United States in 1969 to take up a position at Johns Hopkins University, where he developed an interest in both Marxism and urbanization, inspired by the political struggles of the late 1960s and the urban decline he witnessed in Baltimore. Harvey found Marx's work to be historically compelling but geographically inadequate, and he began to question why capital behaves in spatial ways, at times congregating in specific places and at specific scales and at times abandoning the former spatial concentrations to bleed away and coagulate in other locations, leaving human immiseration in its wake. He would engage these intellectual problems on three fronts: (1) in his teaching, beginning particularly with his long-standing course "Reading Marx's *Capital*"; (2) in his writing, beginning with the publication of *Social Justice and the City* (1973); and (3) in his more limited supporting role in political activism, beginning with his involvement with the Progressive Action Center in Baltimore in the early 1970s. His influences from this period include not only historical figures from the Marxist canon (Marx, Engels, and Lenin) but also more contemporary urbanists such as Henri Lefebvre, Bertell Ollman, and Manuel Castells. Harvey taught subsequently at Oxford University and the London School of Economics before moving to the City University of New York's Graduate School and University Center, where he accepted a distinguished professorship in the PhD program in anthropology in 2001.

Anthropologists have typically engaged Harvey's canon as a framework for theorizing the condition of the peoples they encounter in the course of ethnographic research. One of the primary ways in which anthropologists (e.g., Matt Ruben and

Jeff Maskovsky) have made ethnographic grist of Harvey's ideas is by embracing his work on neoliberalism, especially in the wake of his 2005 publication, *A Brief History of Neoliberalism*. Anthropologists (e.g., Sharryn Kasmir and Gus Carbonella) have made particular use of Harvey's concept of "accumulation by dispossession," a term he employs to describe the process by which groups of human beings are systematically deprived of their common property and rights by the mechanisms of capitalism, especially in its neoliberal form, and which resonates strongly with the anthropological focus on peoples "othered" by dominant systems of power. Anthropologists (e.g., Setha M. Low, Owen M. Lynch, and Paige West) whose work concerns space, nature, landscape, environmental justice, and the urban condition have critically employed his ideas to understand the othering and dispossession of particular local places through pollution, displacement, capital flight, ghettoization, and other forms of spatial marginalization. One of Harvey's most popular works with anthropologists was the 1989 volume *The Condition of Postmodernity*, which the reviewer Mark Moberg called "an indignant yet bemused ethnography for our time" in his review for *American Ethnologist*. The book constitutes one of Harvey's most accessible attempts to analyze the cultural implications of shifting capitalist configurations, positing postmodernity as a generalized cultural condition (irreducible to postmodernism as a specific theoretical epistemology) arising in part from the destabilization entailed in the dissolution of Fordism and the rise of flexible accumulation in the early 1970s.

Although anthropologists cite Harvey's work with considerable frequency, the discipline has yet to engage systematically with his theoretical pronouncements on space, particularly in any critical manner, perhaps due to anthropology's own often narrow territorial predilections, especially its habitual tendency toward place-based ethnographic research entailing long-term participant observation. Such commitments to the intimate localism of the field-worker sit ill at ease with Harvey's more expansive and theoretical analysis of space. Rather, Harvey's primary critics have come from his own discipline. As with many scholars of magisterial scope, Harvey's critics are legion. They include both those staunchly opposed to his radical vision of an inherently politicized, anti-imperialist geography, as well as more sympathetic interlocutors who concur broadly with his program for a radical geography but take Harvey to task for focusing on class to the exclusion of covalent but nonidentical oppressive institutions. Feminist geographers (e.g., Cindi Katz and Nancy Hartsock), in particular, have pushed Harvey to theorize such institutions (patriarchy, racism, and heteronormativity) not as incidental appendages of identity politics but as structurally fundamental to the way in which capitalism manifests and reproduces itself in the world.

Harvey's ideas have gained increasing public exposure through their expression in digital technologies, including a Royal Society of Arts Animate production of his lecture on the 2008 financial crisis and the online production of his classic course "Reading *Capital*," and through the translation of his books into more than a dozen languages.

Eliza Jane Darling

See also Critical Theory; Globalization Theory; Marxist Anthropology; Smith, Neil; Urban Studies

Further Readings

Castree, N. (2004). David Harvey. In P. Hubbard, R. Kitchin, & G. Valentine (Eds.), *Key thinkers on space and place* (pp. 181–188). London, UK: Sage.

Castree, N., & Gregory, D. (Eds.). (2006). *David Harvey: A critical reader.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Jones, J. P. (2006). *David Harvey: Live theory.* New York, NY: Continuum.

Merrifield, A. (2002). David Harvey: The geopolitics of urbanization. In A. Merryfield (Ed.), *Metromarxism: A Marxist tale of the city* (pp. 133–155). New York, NY: Routledge.

Hegel, Georg W. F.

The German scholar Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel (1770–1831) revolutionized European philosophy, developing a comprehensive system that gathered together the major strands of the speculative tradition, especially Plato, Aristotle, Baruch Spinoza, and Immanuel Kant. His work has continued to exert a profound influence on writers and thinkers in many disciplines down to the present today. In Hegel's system, the term *anthropology* is used in a

technically narrow sense as the discipline that makes explicit the way embodiment affects awareness. Nonetheless, considered in a broader sense, anthropology, the study of human existence in its structure and in its history, is its center. In Hegel's view, the goal of the cosmos itself is to create the conditions for comprehending it and for reordering it for human well-being.

Biography

Hegel was born into a family of Lutheran pastors and minor public officials. He attended the theology seminar at Tübingen, where his roommates were the philosopher-to-be Friedrich Schelling and the poet-to-be Friedrich Hölderlin. In honor of the French Revolution, they planted a Freedom Tree; and Hegel annually toasted Bastille Day. His first position was as a private tutor. Through Schelling, he secured a position at the University of Jena, where he taught for 2 years. There, in 1807, he finished his best known work, *The Phenomenology of Spirit*, as Napoleon won the battle of Jena. Hegel said he saw "the World Spirit on horseback" riding triumphantly through the streets of Jena. He then took a 1-year position as editor of a pro-French newspaper, after which, for 8 years, he served as headmaster of a *Gymnasium*. During this time, he wrote two of his most important works, his *System of Logic* and the first draft of his *Encyclopaedia of the Philosophic Sciences*, which covered Logic, Nature, and Spirit/Mind. In 1816, he was appointed professor at Heidelberg. Two years later, he was called to the newly founded University of Berlin, where he served, with a term as rector, until his death. In 1821, he published his political theory in *Elements of the Philosophy of Right*, on which Marx wrote a notable critique. His lectures on the philosophy of history and on art, religion, and the history of philosophy were published posthumously.

Dialectic and the Whole

For Hegel, "The truth is the Whole." What makes *anthropos anthropos* is the notion of Being that points us, albeit emptily, at everything and everything about everything. That is why every people, no matter how "primitive," necessarily develops a *world*view. With the rise of philosophy among the Greeks, those views were subject to critique based on making explicit what is involved but not thought about in all our experience. Aristotle, in particular, following his master, Plato, surveyed the field of experience and laid out the bases for particular forms of inquiry that grew into the sciences. Hegel's thought keeps the Whole in view and heads off the temptation to derive various "isms" by projecting a limited method on the Whole. He claims to rewrite Aristotle in terms of what has developed since Aristotle.

In his *Phenomenology of Spirit* (1807), Hegel arrived at the starting point for his system in following out the various governing forms of consciousness operative in Western culture from the beginning. The examination of those forms showed that each form, more fully developed, led to its own breakdown, which inaugurated new forms, which, in turn, went through the same process. They exhibited what he called *dialectic*. His dialectic traced an *Aufhebung*, a polyvalent, ordinary German word that can mean cancellation, retention, or elevation. As this appears both in the history he traces and in the conceptual generation of his system, it describes the process of development in which conflicting forms of life or conflicting concepts are overcome by canceling their respective limitations, preserving what is legitimate in them, and elevating them to a higher level of compatibility. This dialectic is not Hegel's "method"; it is the process of reality itself and the conceptual system that can be shown to underpin it.

Phenomenology of Spirit

Human beings, according to Hegel, are bipolar. Experience is anchored in two immediately given factors that are abstracted out of concrete experience: (1) *sensory features* (color, sound, etc.) and (2) the notion of Being as an empty reference to the Whole. *Phenomenology of Spirit* begins with the former and ends with the conceptual space governed by the notion of Being that launches the Logic. Phenomenology, in the analysis of *consciousness*, shows the way in which scattered sensory experiences are gathered around the things exhibited in *perception*; it also shows how we can speak about these matters because of the universal forms (color, sound, things, forms, language, etc.) involved in *language*. But consciousness implies *self-consciousness*, first of appetites that reveal the needs of the conscious being. But distinctively, human

self-consciousness emerges out of encounter with other human beings, which forms the existential center of Hegel's thought.

Here, we find the famous master/slave dialectic that grounds all development in history. It arises in the situation of encounter between living, self-determining beings. The slave clings to life and thus gives up his freedom to the master, who is unafraid to risk his life and thus secures his self-determination. But the master's self-determination has the character of irrational arbitrariness. The slave, in being forced to work for the master, learns what the self-indulgent master never learns but what every child should learn through obeying commands: that one does not have to follow one's whims but can determine oneself. This is the first stage of rationally free self-determination. The slave through manipulating materials also learns things about nature that one could not know merely by contemplating it and develops skills for reworking nature that would otherwise have lain fallow. History follows the slave in learning more and more about the natural world by endeavoring to develop techniques for shaping it.

The situation is transcended in the recognition by the Stoics that, whether on the throne (Marcus Aurelius) or in chains (Epictetus), through *reason* the human being is essentially free to take up his attitude toward his external condition.

Logic

There are three parts to Hegel's system, (1) Logic, (2) Nature, and (3) Spirit, each exhibiting the dialectic in its own way. Logic is broader than formal logic, though the latter finds its place within the larger Logic. Hegel develops the categories that human beings necessarily employ without making them explicit.

The *Logic* begins with the empty notion of Being and shows how it dialectically transforms itself when we carry out careful analyses. The Logic lays out the categories involved in (a) the sensory encounter with individual things (quality, quantity, and measure), (b) the intelligible apprehension of the universal notions things exhibit to an intellectual being (essence, existence, and actuality), and (c) the human subject together with the formal logical categories employed in intellection (what we may call Formal Logic, Systems Logic, and the Logic of Life). It is the human subject, grounded in life and seeking the true and the good, who is typically left out of the scientific picture but who is the basis of science and, for Hegel, the purpose of the cosmos.

Spirit/Mind

The Logic is instantiated in *Nature* and in *Geist* (Mind/Spirit). The latter refers to the way human awareness, beyond the sensations and desires that govern animal awareness, transcends the here-and-now by being aware of the Cosmos and its time-encompassing, transcendent Ground mediating the relation between persons. Humans are thus able to pursue the True and the Good in cooperation with other humans. Nature and history display the further conditions that make possible ongoing scientific inquiry and the kind of society grounded in human rights where people can move creatively in all directions compatible with a sense of identity with family, with groups formed around occupations, and with the various levels of the state.

According to Hegel, the state comes into being historically when agriculture and marriage are institutionalized. It expands into empire with the invention of writing. The story of the development of rationality is centered on freedom. In the ancient empires, only one person was free, the emperor; and his freedom was only *formal freedom* or arbitrary will. A further development occurs with the Graeco-Roman period, when citizens, but not slaves, were free. A kind of culmination occurred through Christianity, which affirms the intrinsic dignity of all humans. It required centuries before that could fully penetrate society. Hegel discerned the main lines of that development in the Prussian Reform Movement, which was cut short by monarchical reaction. In the society he envisioned, what was made possible was the choice of rational or *substantial freedom*.

Objective Spirit

Hegel explores the institutional structures within which the free spirit can reach full actuality: the realm of *objective spirit*, residue of the work of those long dead, treated in his "Philosophy of Right." He follows Aristotle in rooting human development in the institution of the family, where one learns what it is to identify with and foster others. As in Aristotle, there is an encompassing level Aristotle called the *polis*, which, historically developed, became the complex of institutions Hegel calls the *State*.

In modernity, two new features appeared: (1) recognition of *abstract right* in the right to property and (2) the inviolability of *conscience*, which together developed into a set of rights inserted between family and state to form *civil society*, the locus of free-entry associations like business enterprises, universities, churches, fine arts societies, and the like. Here, we find freedom of the press, of religion, of enterprise, of inquiry and publicity, and of marriage and occupational choices, and the right to a jury trial. A major function of the state is to preserve such rights, constitutionally structured in a hierarchy of functions and jurisdictions that buffer the individual from unwarranted intrusion from above. The function of administration at the level of civil society is to provide infrastructure, ensure fair trade practices, and provide a safety net for those severely disadvantaged by the otherwise free enterprise system. Nonetheless, poverty and the possibility of an alienated rabble arise through the changing relation between overproduction and the economic capacity for consumption.

The state features an independent judiciary and a legislative assembly comprising the commercial, agricultural, and civil service branches. Members of the latter are to be "educated to universality" of outlook at the University of Berlin. The monarch stands atop the system, constitutionally limited and dependent on a cabinet of trained civil servants. In an ideal organization, like the Queen of England, his function is to sign documents and preside over official functions.

Absolute Spirit

Hegel rejects a world society of lasting peace, which would further support the natural tendency of individuals to limit their horizons to purely private interests, with little or no concern for the Whole. The threat of war between sovereign states makes individuals aware that they need to think in terms of the nation as a whole. The tension that this unsettled relation between states produces leads into the ultimate rational dimension of final reconciliation brought about by religion. Religion provides the highest mission of art, to represent the Absolute in sensory form. Philosophy provides the ultimate interlocking set of categories that completes and rationally grounds religious orientation.

Relation to Marx

Karl Marx was one of the Young Hegelians, who followed the philosopher Ludwig Feuerbach's reduction of religion to anthropology, rejected the grounding of the Whole in Spirit rather than in material forces, focused on the alienation involved in the master/slave relation as that played out in the emerging proletariat, and employed the dialectic for historical analysis. In setting thought back on its feet, reversing Hegel's general position, Marx regarded philosophy as ideology, dependent on and rationalizing the basically formative control of the means of production.

Robert E. Wood

See also Aristotle; Deconstruction; Frankfurt School; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Plato

Further Readings

Hegel, G. W. F. (1981). *Hegel's phenomenology of spirit* (A. Miller, Trans.). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (1991). *Elements of the philosophy of right* (H. Nisbet, Trans.). New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

———. (2007). *Hegel's philosophy of mind* (M. Inwood, Trans.). Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Inwood, M. (2007). *A commentary on Hegel's philosophy of mind*. Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Petry, M. (1977). *Hegel's philosophy of spirit* (3 vols.). New York, NY: Springer.

Pinkard, T. (2000). *Hegel: A biography*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Hermeneutics

Hermeneutics refers to the theory and practice of interpretation. It raises important questions about the possibility of texts, artifacts, and human behavior. The entry provides a brief history of philosophical hermeneutics, followed by a discussion of the use of modern hermeneutics in the social sciences and the debates surrounding it.

History

The word derives from the Greek designation for the wing-footed god Hermes, whose task it was to communicate the word of the gods to the mortals.

For the ancient Greek philosophers, hermeneutics referred to the art of making the unintelligible and the strange familiar. They were concerned with the relationship between words and things and the ability of language to tell us something about the nature of the world. One of the earliest philosophical texts, Aristotle's *Peri hermeneias*, is dedicated to exploring interpretation by exploring the nature of declarative sentences. Rather than about truth itself, Aristotle systematically explored statements about truth and falsehood.

Yet this is not how the term *hermeneutics* is being used today. Modern hermeneutics is associated with the Renaissance and the Reformation. In particular, The Age of Exploration, contact with other cultures, and questions arising from the translation of biblical texts from Latin into vernacular languages were critical factors shaping hermeneutics. Two important issues arising from the translation of scripture were directly related to the formulation of a variety of more general theories of interpretation: first, the awareness of the different conceptual resources provided by vernacular languages vis-à-vis Latin and, second, the impossibility of interpreting a text purely with reference to itself. To achieve a faithful rendering of the author's intention, the interpreter of the text needed a good understanding of context, of the lifeworld of the author. Translation was not passive consumption but a creative act that necessitated an exploration of the original language and the context in which it was used as well as a sympathetic reproduction of the author's "mental state."

Especially in 18th-century Germany, these issues were to be reworked into a number of general theories of language and interpretation, starting with the work of Johann Gottfried Herder (1744–1803) and Friedrich Daniel Ernst Schleiermacher (1768–1834). They argued that language does not have objective referents but that words acquire meaning only in connection with other words. Therefore, human experience is only accessible indirectly, through interpretation. Both attempted to set out a general theory of interpretation that extended to phenomena other than texts, particularly works of art. Their work, sometimes called *romantic hermeneutics*, included an important psychological component of empathy with the objects of investigation, be they artifacts from other cultures or historical periods. Careful interpretation always demanded respect for that which is to be interpreted.

While the German romantics laid the foundations, it is the work of 20th-century authors such as Hans-Georg Gadamer (1900–2002) and Paul Ricoeur (1913–2005) that has been important for the reception of hermeneutics in the social sciences. Gadamer's work stresses the communicative features of understanding. Understanding something is not an act in which the subject imposes meaning onto a foreign object, but rather understanding arises from the interaction of two sets of traditions or horizons of understanding in a process that de-emphasizes human agency. Traditions are not consciously chosen but given to us by "culture," the accumulation of historical experiences and interpretations, and mediated by language. Whereas, Gadamer emphasizes the importance of history and tradition as providing an inescapable predicament for interpretation, Ricoeur's work stresses the possibility of emancipation from these constraints that the text affords. For Ricoeur, a text always transcends the circumstances of its own creation and opens up an infinite variety of interpretations for the reader, for whom the act of reading, rather than merely recreating the authorial intention and context, is itself creative. Hermeneutics can therefore assume a critical and transformative potential for the interpreter.

Hermeneutics and the Social Sciences

Hermeneutics has played an important although often unacknowledged role in the social sciences and especially in debates about whether or not social phenomena can be studied scientifically. Since at least the 19th century, some economists, political scientists, and anthropologists have argued that explaining social phenomena by reference to a small number of general laws is the only way social research can be properly scientific. That is, this way of proceeding allows social scientists to arrive at progressively more general laws, eventually allowing them to predict events. If explanation is the method germane to the study of the social world, hermeneutics, with its emphasis on the individual and the nongeneralizable, has no useful contribution to make to the scientific study of society.

Their opponents, on the other hand, argue that social reality is inherently unstable and therefore unpredictable. In opposition to the natural world, behavior in the social world is self-reflective and therefore meaningful. This is particularly pertinent in a situation where the investigator is not just the external observer vis-à-vis his subject but

in a dialogic relationship, in which both parties constantly evaluate their behavior in response to the interaction itself. In such a situation, investigators need to uncover the specific context in which events take place, and the method suitable for social research is the interpretation of meaning.

While philosophical hermeneutics investigates the possibility of understanding in general, its insights have been debated in the context of a number of social sciences. In their attempts to reconstruct "the native point of view" or to be an "interpreter of the native," anthropologists like Clifford Geertz and Bronisław Malinowski have faced issues similar to those confronted by the philosophical hermeneuticists. They have been especially interested in Gadamer's idea of "pre-understanding." The anthropologist undertaking fieldwork, for example, approaches a foreign culture with preconceptions that are given to him by his background and his academic training. He must examine his own pre-understanding and that of his academic community. Anthropologists should also be concerned about the pre-understandings of their interlocutors and the changes they may undergo as the result of interaction with researchers.

While some have accepted these hermeneutical insights, there is disagreement about how to deal with the issue of pre-understanding. Structuralists have maintained that the issue of preconceptions in the understanding of culture can be resolved by developing more sophisticated formal models that accurately reflect "native" meaning, thus reducing the variety of cultural phenomena to a small number of universal patterns amenable to scientific study. Interpretivists have branded these claims as overly optimistic and reductionist. For Clifford Geertz, interpretation means the understanding of inevitable pre-understandings, resulting in what he calls "thick description." Thick description is description not only of events themselves but also of the conditions that make them meaningful. Taking the insights of hermeneutics seriously should mean that, rather than imposing our models and categories of understanding on cultural practices other than our own, we need to make conceptual room for these practices. Hermeneutics suggests that when we use concepts such as "witchcraft" or "magic" to approach a practice, we should critically examine how we arrived at their formulation, instead of postulating models that merely presume, say, the opposition between science and nonscience, which may not do justice to the context of the practitioner.

Therefore, behind this debate about the relevance of hermeneutics for the study of culture are larger questions about the status of knowledge gained from interpretation. Can anthropological knowledge claim to have validity beyond the specific phenomena it interprets? Can anthropology claim the label of a social "science" if its results are neither cumulative nor generalizable beyond the singular case in question? Those favoring an interpretivist approach to the study of culture, which is most closely associated with hermeneutics, have maintained that comparison between cultures and generalization beyond individual cases is difficult if not impossible. On the other hand, Carl Martin Allwood has suggested that interpretation is not the only method available to anthropologists and that it can also be combined with other methods. Engaging in the study of individual cultural phenomena, texts or artifacts should not automatically preclude generalization. Moreover, the possibility of going beyond individual cases is inherent in hermeneutics, especially through the concept of the hermeneutic circle. This characterizes the problem of interpretation, whether it is a text or human behavior as a dialectical relationship between the whole and its parts, in which none is completely reducible to the other. The researcher is not confronted with subject-independent objects but needs to move back and forth between the parts of a text, the whole of the text, and the text's relationship to its cultural and historical context, in a never-ending process of interpretation.

According to Gadamer, interpreting any phenomenon means engaging in a process that can never be final—it can only enlarge but can never complete one's understanding of its context. An interview with an individual from another culture not only constitutes a dialogue, and hopefully a gradual approaching of horizons, between the interviewer and the interviewee but also elicits a dialogue between the subject and his or her own culture. The very act of establishing the boundaries of the domain under investigation by the interpreter necessitates placing it in a wider context. This is probably what Gadamer himself had in mind when he characterized understanding as a "fusion of horizons" between the interpreter and the object of interpretation. A degree of comparison through a concentric putting-into-context constitutes the very possibility of engaging across cultures. Thus, while it might be impossible to derive

universal laws from the application of hermeneutics-inspired methodologies, it would be equally impossible to insist on their strictly idiographic and isolated character. In other words, while ethnographic studies might not be, strictly speaking, cumulative, they can tell us something about larger phenomena.

Critique of Hermeneutics

The hermeneutic enterprise has generated considerable controversy, especially over its use in the social sciences. One criticism has been the charge of hermeneutics embracing a relativist view of truth and objectivity. In other words, how can the interpreter judge any interpretation as superior to any other? A good example for illustrating this is Margaret Mead's and Reo Fortune's very different observations of the Arapesh in Papua New Guinea. Whereas Mead characterized them as largely pacific, gentle, and egalitarian, Fortune depicted them as fierce warriors. Hermeneutics allows for a number of explanations as to why the two accounts differ—the contrasting pre-understandings of the researchers, the differences in their academic background and training, or that one interpretation may have been a reaction to the other—but it will not settle the question as to which is correct.

Many criticisms of hermeneutics relate to the structural inequalities inherent in much of social science research, especially research into foreign cultures, where the idea of a fusion of horizons masks an unequal power relationship. Jürgen Habermas and Andreas Vasilache have argued that more often than not the dialogue between anthropologist and subject is set in a context of conquest and oppression in which the researcher mostly hails from the dominant culture. In this context, Gadamer's emphasis on placing oneself in a tradition as a precondition to understanding opens his hermeneutics to the charge of conservatism. Related to that is the accusation that hermeneutics privileges the written word and therefore has an inherent bias toward literate over oral cultures. Mitchell makes this point in connection with Black preaching—that the transcription of a sermon is not the same as the sermon. The act of transcribing the spoken word deprives speech of its performative aspect and flattens out its effects. None of these critiques invalidate the hermeneutic enterprise at large. They will instead lead to the refinement of methodologies attempting to bridge the gap between the interpretation of individual social phenomena and the need for generalization.

Paul Petzschmann

See also Aristotle; Cultural Relativism; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Gadamer, Hans-Georg; Geertz, Clifford; Malinowski, Bronisław; Structuralism

Further Readings

Allwood, C. M. (1989). Hermeneutics and interpretation in anthropology. *Cultural Dynamics, 2*(3), 304–322.

Forster, M. (2007). Hermeneutics. In M. Rosen & B. Leiter (Eds.), *Oxford companion to continental philosophy.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Geertz, C. (1983). *Local knowledge.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Ricoeur, P. (1981). *Hermeneutics and the human sciences.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Swearingen, C. J. (1986). Oral hermeneutics during the transition to literacy: The contemporary debate. *Cultural Anthropology, 1*(2), 138–156.

Watson-Franke, M-B., Watson, L. C., Freilich, M., Hanson, F. A., Hayano, D. M., Heinen, H. D., . . . Scholte, B. (1975). Understanding in anthropology: A philosophical reminder [and comments and replies]. *Current Anthropology, 16*(2), 247–262.

Herskovits, Melville

Melville Jean Herskovits (1895–1963), an American ethnologist and educator, was among the founders of African anthropology and African studies in the United States. He was also a pioneer in documenting the importance of African cultural influences on the cultures of the Americas.

Biography and Major Works

Herskovits was born in Bellefontaine, Ohio, in 1895 to Jewish immigrant parents, his father from Hungary and his mother from Germany. He had one sister. Growing up in a Jewish family in predominantly Protestant small towns, Herskovits grappled with questions about his cultural identity and his place in American society, which foreshadowed his interests as a cultural anthropologist. During World War I, Herskovits served in the U.S. Army Medical Corps. After the war, Herskovits

earned an undergraduate degree in history at the University of Chicago and an MA in political science at Columbia University in New York, where he met Frances Shapiro (1897–1972), the daughter of Russian Jewish immigrants and an aspiring writer. Shapiro married Herskovits in 1924 in Paris. Although not a university-trained anthropologist, Frances Herskovits collaborated with her husband on his research and coauthored five books and several articles.

In 1920, Herskovits entered the doctoral program in anthropology at Columbia University, where he studied under Franz Boas—the most influential American anthropologist of the early 20th century. Boas taught a new generation of anthropologists, including Herskovits, to embrace the culture concept, which replaced the race concept as an explanation for human behavioral differences. Boas and his students argued that environmental and cultural influences were the primary determinants of human behavior and intelligence. By separating culture from race, Boas and his students debunked the notions of White racial superiority embraced by an earlier generation of Victorian anthropologists and biologists. At Columbia, Herskovits's classmates included the future anthropologists Ruth Benedict and Margaret Mead.

Unlike most American anthropologists of his cohort, who studied Native American cultures, Herskovits focused on African and African American cultures, earning his PhD in 1923 with a dissertation titled "The Cattle Complex in East Africa." In this study, Herskovits marshaled extensive evidence to show that cattle were the central organizing principle behind East African cultures from the Sudan to southern Africa.

From 1923 to 1926, while teaching anthropology at Columbia and at Howard University in Washington, D.C., Herskovits studied the physical anthropology of Black Americans with funding from the National Research Council. This research yielded two books, *The American Negro* (1928), and *The Anthropometry of the Negro* (1930), in which Herskovits challenged the concept of race as a fixed, unchanging category.

Herskovits did not gain a full-time faculty position until 1927, when Northwestern University, in Evanston, Illinois, hired him. Anti-Semitism likely limited Herskovits's teaching opportunities in an era when many American universities hired few, if any, Jewish faculty. At Northwestern, where he taught for 36 years until his death in 1963, Herskovits created and expanded the anthropology department, which emphasized African and African American cultures. Before World War II, he taught most of the American anthropologists who specialized in Africa. During his long career, his students included the anthropologists William Bascom, Joseph Greenberg, Hugh H. Smythe, Alan Merriam, Erika Bourguignon, George Simpson, Simon Ottenberg, Johnnetta B. Cole, and James W. Fernandez; the political scientist Ralph Bunche; the dancer and choreographer Katherine Dunham; and the historian Harvey Wish. Under his leadership, Northwestern became the leader in African anthropology in the United States.

From 1928 to 1941, Melville and Frances Herskovits undertook field trips to Dutch Guiana (now Suriname), Dahomey (now Benin), Haiti, Trinidad, and Brazil, marshaling evidence to demonstrate the richness and complexity of African and African American cultures and the influence of African cultures in the Americas. This work yielded several books, notably *Rebel Destiny: Among the Bush Negroes of Dutch Guiana* (1934), *Life in a Haitian Valley* (1937), *Dahomey: An Ancient West African Kingdom* (1938), and *Trinidad Village* (1947).

In the late 1930s and early 1940s, Herskovits participated in the Carnegie Corporation's study of African Americans. The Swedish economist Gunnar Myrdal headed the project and wrote the final report, *An American Dilemma: The Negro Problem and American Democracy* (1944), in which he notably rejected Herskovits's argument in favor of the important African influence on African American culture. Nonetheless, Herskovits's magnum opus, *The Myth of the Negro Past* (1941), the first publication of the Carnegie project, underscored the wide-ranging influence of African cultures in the United States.

As his influence with the philanthropic foundations grew, Herskovits helped promote African and African American studies, often advocating research opportunities for Black scholars. But he also used his institutional influence to limit Blacks' opportunities when they may have challenged his authority. For example, he criticized some activist Black scholars, most notably the historian Carter G. Woodson and the sociologist-historian W. E. B. Du Bois, whom he considered propagandists because of their social reform orientation. In the 1930s, Herskovits sought

to discredit the *Encyclopedia of the Negro* project, which was edited by Du Bois. He also opposed the establishment of an African studies program at Fisk University, a Black college in Nashville, Tennessee, during World War II.

In the postwar era, Herskovits played a key role in the development of African studies programs at American universities. American involvement in the Second World War and the Cold War induced policymakers to advocate the creation of area studies programs to provide experts so that the United States could implement policies to serve its global interests. Herskovits successfully lobbied for foundation funding from the Carnegie Corporation to create the first major interdisciplinary African studies program in the United States in 1948, at Northwestern University. In 1957, he played an important role in the founding of the African Studies Association, and served as its first president. In 1961, he was named to the first endowed chair of African studies in the United States. Herskovits's support for African studies helped ensure that Africa would become a legitimate area of academic study.

In the context of Africa's drive for independence, Herskovits moved to the political stage to argue for African autonomy and as a voice for Africans in international affairs. In 1947, he wrote the American Anthropological Association's Statement on Human Rights for the United Nations, advising against an ethnocentric formulation of human rights, to ensure that a statement of human rights based on Western values would not be imposed on developing nations. From 1958 to 1960, Herskovits prepared an extensive report on Africa for the U.S. Senate and testified twice before the Senate Foreign Relations Committee, criticizing America's Africa policy and advocating African self-determination. He challenged the Cold War paradigm whereby American foreign policymakers considered African countries as mere objects in the Soviet-American battle for global hegemony. Herskovits argued that a collaborative process between Americans and Africans would advance U.S.-African relations, serve America's foreign policy interests, and improve life in Africa.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Herskovits contributed to anthropology through his studies of African and African American cultures, and through his role in the institutional development of African anthropology and African studies programs in the United States.

Physical Anthropology

Herskovits's physical anthropology research in the 1920s was part of the broader Boasian attack on the race concept, the notion that race determined intelligence, personality, and behavior. Based on the physical measurements and genealogies of African Americans in New York City and Washington, D.C., Herskovits, in *The American Negro* (1928) and *The Anthropometry of the Negro* (1930), demonstrated that most American Blacks were of mixed racial heritage and, consequently, were not really a race at all but a mixed population group. This conclusion demonstrated the fallacy of racist views of mulatto infertility and biological degeneracy and challenged the biological definition of race, steering scholars toward a more modern conception of race as a sociological category.

Economic Anthropology

Herkovits published *The Economic Life of Primitive Peoples* (1940), the first general study of comparative economics of nonliterate cultures, and a revised version of that work, titled *Economic Anthropology: A Study in Comparative Economics* (1952). In these works, Herskovits emphasized the importance of social relationships and cultural values in economic decision making, while acknowledging the role of individual choice.

Ethnographic Work on Diasporic Africans

From the late 1920s to the early 1940s, when most American anthropologists studied Native Americans, Melville and Frances Herskovits conducted fieldwork in Dutch Guiana (now Suriname), Dahomey (now Benin), Haiti, Trinidad, and Brazil to research the cultural connections between Africans and Americans of African descent. Based on that fieldwork, Herskovits rejected the widely held view that African cultures had no impact on Blacks in the Americas. Instead, he argued that African cultures influenced the music, folklore, material culture, social structure, and religious beliefs and practices of African American cultures. In his controversial classic *The Myth of the Negro Past* (1941), Herskovits challenged those who maligned Black cultures and

African cultures, including Black and White liberal scholars who argued that Black American culture was a pathological version of White culture, with little or no African influence. At a time when most White Americans assumed Black Americans to be inferior as a race and culture, Herskovits's establishment of the strength and complexity of African and African-influenced cultures was an important intellectual achievement.

Herskovits's research on Black cultures showed the diverse influences on American culture, helped transform notions of American identity from exclusive and unitary (White Anglo-Saxon Protestant) to inclusive and pluralist, and defined a dynamic view of cultural change that emphasized cultural diversity and cultural pluralism. In his most important post–World War II book, *Man and His Works: The Science of Cultural Anthropology* (1947), Herskovits proclaimed that the most important conceptual contribution of anthropology was cultural relativism, the belief that cultures could not be ranked in a developmental hierarchy. In this connection, Herskovits argued for mutual respect among cultures and attacked ethnocentric evaluations of cultures.

African Anthropology and African Studies

Herskovits pioneered African anthropology and African studies in the United States. In his dissertation, he employed the culture area methodology pioneered by Clark Wissler to argue that East Africa was a distinct culture area shaped by the cultural importance of cattle. Building on his use of the culture area methodology, Herskovits published journal articles that divided Africa into nine culture areas based largely on two broad economic divisions: (1) agricultural cultures and (2) pastoral cultures. In his use of the culture area methodology, Herskovits rejected Wissler's embrace of a cultural hierarchy with northern Europeans at the top. Instead, Herskovits employed Boas's concept of cultural relativism, which rejected cultural hierarchies. Herskovits's work represented a significant step toward a value-free study of world cultures.

In 1931, Herskovits became one of the first American anthropologists to conduct fieldwork in Africa. In the 1930s, Herskovits led the way in developing the subfield of African anthropology and thereby helped move African studies into the mainstream of academia in the United States. Herskovits's work on African culture areas and his two-volume study of Dahomey sought to understand Africans by studying their culture and history. In this way, he refuted the writings of missionaries, travelers, and historians of imperialism, who assumed African inferiority and insisted that the complex aspects of African culture were imported from Europe. Herskovits's approach to the study of African cultures helped steer writers away from a Eurocentric cultural hierarchy and toward a more objective study of world cultures.

Herskovits's Legacy

From the 1920s to the 1960s, the American anthropologist Melville J. Herskovits employed anthropological fieldwork to confront questions about race and culture in innovative and groundbreaking ways, as he undermined the hierarchical ways of thinking about humanity and underscored the value of human diversity. His research in West Africa, the West Indies, and South America documented the far-reaching influence of African cultures in the Americas and showcased the vibrancy of African American cultures. After World War II, he played a key role in the development of African studies programs in the United States, founding the first major interdisciplinary program in African studies at an American university, Northwestern University in Evanston, Illinois. Herskovits's work on Africans and African Americans was inextricably connected by his embrace of cultural relativism and his attack on racial and cultural hierarchy. As an anthropologist, Herskovits underscored the necessity of recognizing the dignity of all cultures; he maintained that marginalized peoples were worthy of study in higher education and worthy of consideration in politics.

Jerry Gershenhorn

See also Boas, Franz; Columbia University; Cultural Relativism; Goldenweiser, Alexander A.; Mead, Margaret; Mintz, Sidney

Further Reading

Baron, R. (2003). Amalgams and mosaics, sycretisms and reinterpretations: Reading Herskovits and contemporary creolists for metaphors of creolization. *Journal of American Folklore, 116,* 88–115.

Frank, G. (2001). Melville J. Herskovits on the African and Jewish diasporas: Race, culture, and modern anthropology. *Identities, 8,* 173–209.

Gershenhorn, J. (2004). *Melville J. Herskovits and the racial politics of knowledge.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Jackson, W. A. (1986). Melville J. Herskovits and the search for Afro-American culture. In G. W. Stocking Jr. (Ed.), *Malinowski, Rivers, Benedict and others: Essays on culture and personality* (pp. 95–126). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Yelvington, K. A. (2001). The anthropology of Afro-Latin America and the Caribbean: Diasporic dimensions. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 30,* 227–260.

———. (2011). Constituting paradigms in the study of the African diaspora, 1900–1950. *Black Scholar, 41,* 64–76.

Hertz, Robert

Although he was a French sociologist of religion in his lifetime, Robert Hertz (1881–1915) strikes us now as a martyr as much as a scholar, a figure of truncated promise who sacrificed himself in leading a futile attack on German positions in the First World War in 1915. He had considerable influence on later anthropology through his works on the structure of death ritual and the symbolic polarity of right- and left-handedness. The fragment of his thesis on sin that has come down to us is certainly less well-known, though it is actually more central to his overall intellectual project than either of these better known works. There is also the more ethnographic text on the Catholic cult of Saint Besse, north of Turin, in which Hertz links the various versions of the myth to different social groups (e.g., the local shepherds, the Church, and local folklorists and historians).

Hertz's studies were firmly situated within the wider intellectual project of the school of Émile Durkheim (1858–1917), a leading figure in sociology, which he established firmly as an academic discipline in France. Among other ideas, Durkheim saw society as being of positive benefit to the individual, who can only live an incomplete life without it, and indeed can scarcely exist outside it except as a malefactor. Nonetheless, there are negative aspects to social life, and these are what Hertz concentrated on: death, which tears the social fabric and has to be repaired through ritual; the negativity of the left hand, which stands in symbolic opposition to the positive attributes of the right; and, above all, sin, whereby the individual becomes estranged from God (a metaphor for society here).

The work on sin also illustrates another common Durkheimian method: It takes a topic that might be considered purely a matter for the individual, only to show that it has a social aspect too. Thus, the sinner appears to be alone in the cubicle, apart from the priest who receives his confession. However, the event is actually held in the public space of the church, and the entire structure of the event is socially determined and approved. Similarly, death is not a crisis just for the deceased; it also involves society, and the more so the greater the deceased's status. In the case of the polarity of the hands, Hertz goes even further. This polarity is ostensibly located in the physiology of the brain, the focus being on the individual as a member of a species rather than of a society. However, Hertz claims that the reasons for this polarity are actually social, in that a traditional preference for right-handedness in most societies around the world has, over time, affected the very development of the brain itself.

Hertz's article on the polarity of the hands also exemplifies yet another aspect of this school's writings: its peculiar variant of evolutionism. Although they rejected the highly structured, supposedly progressive but in reality ahistorical phases of British social evolutionists like Herbert Spencer and Edward Tylor, Durkheim and his circle were still concerned with evolutionary questions. But the evolutionary paradigm was different here. Generally, an institution was seen as combining many different aspects in early and also contemporary "primitive" humanity. World history was then an account of the gradual separation of these aspects through the emergence of separate institutions, a process finally accomplished in the modern world. For Hertz in this article, the shift in the modern world toward encouraging ambidexterity in children in effect represents the separation of the original fusion of the symbolic values of the hands and their practical value as instruments. In the modern world, the idea of ambidexterity separates fact and value by denying the different symbolic values of the hands while treating their practical capabilities as equal.

As already noted, it was the fragmentary text on sin that was really central to Hertz's view of his own academic work, from which he saw the now better

known, because completed, works on death and handedness as diversions. In fact, these are serious contributions in their own right, which have done the most to establish Hertz's credentials as a scholar to posterity. For Hertz himself, however, academic work in general was ultimately of less value than practical activities for the disadvantaged, which he felt he owed to society because of his relatively wealthy and privileged background and upbringing. In addition, Hertz felt that he owed a debt to France itself because of the refuge and the opportunities it had offered to families of German Jewish origin, like his own (though Hertz himself was French through and through). The ideas that Jews should do a little more than others for France and that the wealthy should lead by example explain what has seemed to some like his sacrificing his own life in the war by leading a hopeless attack against German lines (although in fact he was following orders in doing so), as well as his considering the possibility of joining his wife as an expert in pedagogy had he survived it. We cannot be sure, therefore, that he would have continued with the sort of scholarship that Durkheim wanted him to do and that, Durkheim persuaded him, helped cast light on the social and political problems of the French Third Republic. Hertz responded to this persuasion not only by carrying out purely intellectual work but also by founding and running the Groupe d'Études Socialistes, a left-leaning debating society bringing together like-minded intellectuals and political activists to discuss matters of public policy of urgency in contemporary France (Hertz himself contributed a somewhat chauvinistic pamphlet on the problem of depopulation in France).

Is Hertz, therefore, really a symbol of a life of scholarly promise cruelly cut short by a futile war, or was what we have by him his last word as regards a purely intellectual sociology? There is no clear answer, but his reputation can only be judged by the work he actually left behind him (which also includes numerous reviews, as well as folklore notes taken from his men at the front during the war). That work is pioneering in its focus, vivid in its descriptions, and still stimulating for students and scholars today.

Robert Parkin

See also Durkheim, Émile; Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris); Needham, Rodney

Further Readings

Hertz, R. (1960). A contribution to the study of the collective representation of death. In R. Needham & C. Needham (Eds.), *Death and the right hand*. New York, NY: Free Press.

Parkin, R. (1996). *The dark side of humanity: The work of Robert Hertz and its legacy.* Amsterdam, Netherlands: Harwood Academic.

Historical Particularism

Historical particularism is the label most often attached to the body of method and theory developed by Franz Boas and several generations of his students for the study of Native American societies in the first part of the 20th century. Beginning with his appointment at Columbia University and the American Museum of Natural History in New York City in 1897 and continuing to his death in 1942, Boas dominated both the intellectual and the institutional character of American anthropology. Although many Boasian anthropologists have rejected the idea of a "school" of anthropology, and the core group around Boas incorporated considerable internal diversity, there were, nonetheless, widely shared distinctive features. These focused on the historical and symbolic nature of culture and on the importance of language. Historical particularism went out of fashion with the expansion and internationalization of anthropology after World War II. More recently, however, many anthropologists have returned to reassessing the ongoing legacy of historical particularism and the approach to culture that it entailed.

Reconstructing Culture Histories

In "The Study of Geography" (1887), Boas adopted Wilhelm Dilthey's distinction between *Naturwissenschaften* and *Geisteswissenschaften*, the natural and the humane or cultural sciences. Anthropology was to lie with the latter, along with geography and cosmography. Although the natural and humane sciences had different objects of study and different methods, critically for Boas, both were sciences. He believed in the principle that universal laws might someday arise from the comparative study of cultures but did not expect this to happen in his lifetime because the ethnographic database was thoroughly inadequate. Such laws could only

be formulated after sufficient factual evidence had been collected, and one could expect no counterexamples from further research. In particular, Boas's critique of cultural evolution as an explanatory theory was based on the evolutionists' assumption that generalizations that accepted Western civilization as the standard for "progress" were premature. These theories did not do justice to the particularities and diversities of known cultures, never mind others that might later come to be known.

Boas turned instead to the histories of particular Native American cultures. In the absence of either written records or useful archaeological dating methods, he was left with two choices for accessing such histories: (1) historical linguistics or (2) the distribution of culture elements. Initially, Boas was enthusiastic about linguistic classification. He proposed several genetic connections among Northwest Coast languages (Tlingit and Haida; Kwakiutl and Nootka) during his survey work there for the Bureau of American Ethnology and the British Association for the Advancement of Science. By 1894, however, he had become skeptical about the analyst's ability to distinguish between the lingering effects of prior historical development within a language family and the similarities arising from more recent borrowing among genetically unrelated languages as a result of culture contact and migration. Boas was self-trained in linguistics as a discovery procedure for fieldwork on unwritten languages and was not well versed in the methods of 19th-century Indo-European philology, with its breakthroughs in historical reconstruction on the basis of systematic sound changes. His principal linguistic student, Edward Sapir, later joined by the Germanicist and Algonquianist Leonard Bloomfield, would pursue the philological route, arguing that linguistic elements—sound change and even grammatical categories—behaved in a much more predictable fashion than other elements of culture, thus allowing their histories to be traced even in unwritten languages. Bias was minimized because speakers of a language were usually not aware of the categories they employed.

Boas, however, chose to pursue time perspective through the diffusion, borrowing, and integration of folklore elements. He was perhaps much influenced in this choice by the character of the area where he chose to do his primary ethnographic work. The Northwest Coast culture area of the United States and Canada contains remarkable linguistic diversity accompanied by cultural convergences across linguistic boundaries. The area's rich marine and maritime resources enabled permanent villages, leisure for cultural elaboration, monumental architecture, and developed art traditions. Boas's year with the Eskimos of Baffin Island in 1883–1884 convinced him that the environment could pose limits on human culture but did not determine expressive capacity or cultural style. The Northwest Coast, then, offered a chance to explore the variety of cultural elaborations possible within a relatively homogeneous geographical and environmental area.

Boas chose to focus most of his historical work on folklore elements. The same stories were told throughout the Northwest Coast culture area, but they differed in form and elaboration in ways that reflected their complexly interwoven sources among neighboring cultures. As early as 1891, Boas was committed to the idea that the dissemination of folklore elements would reveal migrations, trade patterns, and intermarriage as mechanisms through which borrowed elements from unrelated sources were integrated into new cultural contexts that retained traces of their multiplex origins. Boas's student Robert Lowie coined the term *shreds and patches* for this cultural process, but he did not intend to preclude later processes of integration (despite misreadings by his successors). In 1895, Boas denied the "organic growth" of myths but emphasized that "accretion" of borrowed material occurred in alignment with the "genius" of a people. He was drawing here on the German romantic tradition of folklore and linguistics in the vein of Wilhelm von Humboldt, J. G. Herder, Hermann Steinthal, and the brothers Grimm. Boas's denial of wholesale borrowing distinguishes his historical particularism from diffusionist models developed in Europe that postulated the simultaneous co-movement of complexes of culture traits; Father Wilhelm Schmidt's migrating Egyptian pyramids of the sun and a Melanesian bow culture exemplify what Boas doubtless considered another form of premature generalization, based on speculation without empirical evidence.

By 1914, Boas was prepared to argue that no culture's myths were entirely local in their origins, certainly not on the Northwest Coast. He seems to have assumed that all culture areas would illustrate processes of diffusion similar to those he had identified on the Northwest Coast. The original form of a particular plot could never be recovered, because such forms were always in flux. There is nothing static about the definition of culture underlying this position. Boas saw

history as a product of agency in the borrowing and integration of folklore elements or motifs.

The core comparative method of historical particularism could not be formulated from the point of view of the members of any particular culture, however, because they did not have access to the range of versions of traditional tales and motifs that would allow the analyst to undertake comparisons of motifs and their integration. Members of a culture had stories about their own history, to be sure, but these were likely to be biased because they understandably justified the identity and significance of the tellers. Boas considered this to be "secondary rationalization" rather than a source of reliable historical inference. The myths and stories were critical for understanding the psychological reality of individuals in a particular cultural context, but that was another matter and required a psychological rather than a historical methodology.

The analyst, in contrast, could stand apart from particular folklore texts and attend deductively to their distribution and its historical interpretation. This is why it was so important to assemble a detailed and accurate database from which historical inference might proceed.

The historical and the psychological, then, were the two sides of the particularist coin. Indeed, the historical approach led naturally to questions of psychological integration that would be reflected in the stories narrators recorded from their particular cultural locations. The classic descriptions of distribution of culture complexes over wide culture areas provided the data necessary to generalize about how borrowing took place. The exemplars include Ruth Benedict on the Plains vision quest, A. Irving Hallowell on circumpolar bear ceremonialism, and Leslie Spier on the Plains sun dance. The distribution of elements in different tribes proved far from random. Something very like Boas's "genius" of the particular people was at work. Adopting the terminology of Herder and von Humboldt's *Volkerpsychologie*, Boas argued that each culture developed its own unique integration of elements from diverse sources and was thereby distinguished from its neighbors.

Language, Culture, and Psychology

Conventional evaluations of historical particularism have emphasized only the historical side of the program and failed to note Boas's theoretical commitment to moving between questions of history and psychology, using in alternation the methods appropriate to each. George W. Stocking Jr. suggests that Boas's theoretical ideas were so thoroughly incorporated into American anthropological practice that they were no longer attributed to him or considered theoretical. These theoretical premises include the inseparability of race, language, and culture and the equal validity and expressive capacity of all human cultures due to the character of what Boas called "the mind of primitive man," the title of his 1911 paradigm statement for anthropology as a science encompassing culture, biology, and environment.

Regna Darnell has enumerated the shared positions of historical particularism in its heyday during the first half of the 20th century. The most basic premise is that culture is a set of ideas or symbols held in common by a group of people who see themselves as a social group: Culture is not a thing, and it is always changing in response to the circumstances of the group's history. Language is key to assessing the symbolic world of a particular people. Thought is only possible through language, and each language structures reality, the nature of the world, uniquely. Although history in the sense of reconstructed cultural history is not the direct focus of Boas's insistence on the inseparability of language, thought, and reality, the strictures of speaking a particular language, itself a product of a particular history, give a group its cohesion and sense of identity. Boas edited the *Handbook of American Indian Languages* for the Bureau of American Ethnology in 1911, with a second volume coming out in 1922. Each of the grammatical sketches included in these two volumes was intended to provide a model for producing grammars of other "psychological types" (i.e., different language families) that used the categories of those languages rather than importing ill-fitting analytic distinctions from Latin or Greek. Boas's introduction to the *Handbook* was a passionate defense of particularism, implicitly as the binary opposite of unilinear cultural evolution. Societies at every scale of development or complexity had their own integrity based on categories of language and symbolic thought developed under particular historical circumstances in relation to their environment and experience.

Boas argued that the only way to get at the "native point of view" in the absence of a written history and philosophy was through language,

not as an abstract structure or even as a grammar but through texts recorded from the spontaneous speech of fluent speakers. Such texts were a necessary adjunct to an adequate grammar. A dictionary was the third prong of the historical particularist approach to language, alongside grammar and texts. Calibration of different worldviews and categories of thought required extensive cultural information to make them intelligible when words for the same concept did not exist in the analyst's language. Boas considered such texts to instantiate a crucial part of the record of all human culture. It was an urgent task to ensure that no more such thought-worlds would be lost. The task of recording and preserving "traditional" Native American understandings of the world was much more interesting to historical particularists than the contemporary situation of Native American tribes, although many of them supported the positions of Native activists and intervened with government and church authorities on behalf of the peoples they studied. Only in the 1930s, however, did ethnographic interest in acculturation become significant; the proponents were second-generation Boasians, whose interests in culture and psychology required attention to contemporary circumstances.

Boas's psychology leads to a view of the initial incommensurability of different cultural worlds that has serious implications for the task of the ethnographer as a fieldworker. This meant that it would take a long time for anthropologists to establish trust, to learn the language, to learn to think with the categories locally employed. Indeed, the move from "informants" to "collaborators" begins with the linguistics and the texts' mandate. Because each culture reasons from its own standpoint, externally imposed policies and programs are often ill suited to local needs. The Boasian attention to Native points of view and particular histories, especially in recent decades, has supported recognition of Native American communities' claims to exerting control over research and their own futures.

The Legacy of Historical Particularism

American anthropology shifted dramatically in the years following World War II. University programs expanded, with returning veterans on the G.I. Bill drawn to anthropology by their military experience overseas. American isolationism was challenged on multiple fronts both before and after the war, and policymakers turned to anthropologists as advisors in dealing with unfamiliar cultural differences. The stage for this sea shift was set by Boasian anthropologists: Margaret Mead and Rhoda Metraux's Culture at a Distance project during the war (later, this became the Columbia University Cultures at a Distance Project) and Ruth Benedict's postwar book *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword* (1946), an analysis of Japanese culture aimed at postwar reconstruction, were particularly influential. Mead was an active public supporter of the United Nations. However, the cultural relativism that made sense for studying isolated American Indian tribes seemed increasingly naive in the face of postwar political realities. At the end of her life, Benedict, the single most important theorist of cultural relativism, was talking about the "synergy" that emerged "beyond relativism" in a complex and increasingly interdependent world. Boas himself was an activist intellectual who spoke out on behalf of Jews in Hitler's Europe and Blacks in the American South. The particularist respect for the value and integrity of each culture did not preclude moral judgment about the relations between cultures. Sapir wrote "Culture, Genuine and Spurious" and about the predicament of the individual's self-realization in different cultural contexts.

The new postwar generation of anthropologists chose fieldwork sites in places far distant from American Indian reservations. Many returned to the Pacific, where they had been stationed during the war. Others went to Africa, Asia, and Latin America. Meanwhile, American academic life was reorganizing itself around a geopolitical understanding of cultural diversity. Interdisciplinary programs in area studies proliferated, and anthropologists found themselves working with colleagues from other social sciences who did not share the Americanist socialization of prewar anthropology.

Moreover, Boas's control over the American discipline began to wane after his retirement from Columbia in 1936. Those who had felt stifled by the shared program of their Boas-trained elders rejected the historical particularist paradigm in favor of new theoretical positions. The neo-evolutionary models posed by Leslie White and Julian Steward seemed to many particularly well suited to the new complexity of anthropology. White was particularly virulent in

his critique of historical particularism, arguing that Boas's position was atheoretical and had set anthropology back by at least half a century. Although acknowledging that Boas's critique of social evolution in its judgmental Victorian form provided a needed corrective at the end of the 19th century, White insisted that this exercise had been entirely negative and that its time was over. He castigated Boas and his coterie for the "memory culture" tenor of their so-called salvage ethnography. Indeed, many of the Boasians had worked with the last generation of fluent speakers of traditional Native American languages, who were also the last generation to have lived in anything like a traditional manner. These ethnographers worked hard to record, at a time of rapid social change, what was remembered by this generation. In many cases, elders and ritual specialists failed to find successors within their own communities and chose to talk to the anthropologists as a last chance to ensure that their knowledge would not be lost. As cultural revitalization gained momentum in the 1960s and 1970s, moreover, younger Indians came forward to preserve the knowledge of their elders.

The simultaneous switch of anthropology to evolution, ecology, more quantitative and purportedly objective methodologies, and the study of complex communities, especially peasants, brought the everyday social life of ethnographic subjects and their response to the rapid social change around the world to center stage in a way that seemed to render the Americanist ethnographic tradition passé. The proponents of these new approaches emphasized discontinuity rather than continuity or rapprochement. Across the social sciences, positivism was in ascendancy, and historical particularism retreated to a theory adhered to primarily by anthropologists and linguists who continued to work in Native American communities.

The development of the Culture-and-Personality school of anthropology, almost exclusively a North American phenomenon, retained more of the qualitative ethnographic character of prewar Boasian anthropology. This work had its roots in Boas's insistence that problems of psychology or the native point of view were just as significant as the historical problems that had preoccupied him during the early part of his career, because he considered them descriptively and methodologically prior to ultimate psychological questions. Margaret Mead suggested that the change from history to psychology could be dated around 1910, although the emphasis shifted gradually during the interwar years. The psychological turn, however, tallied well with the national character emphasis pioneered by Benedict and Mead during and after World War II. By the 1960s, another sea change was under way, toward interpretivist and meaning-oriented ethnography that rejected or at least marginalized questions of positivist science and deductive generalization.

One might have expected this paradigm shift to produce renewed attention to historical particularism and the balance between history and psychology advocated by Boas. This was not the case, however. Anthropologists for the most part accepted at face value the revisionist dismissal of Boasian theoretical positions by postwar critics. Marvin Harris, in *The Rise of Anthropological Theory* (1968), exemplified the trend, both in his rejection of Boasian work and in the absence of interest in disciplinary historicism or reflexivity. For Harris, the history of anthropology was unilinear, to be valued only insofar as it led to the "techno-environmental determinism" that he favored. More recent scholarly work (see "Neo-Boasianism," this encyclopedia) has corrected the historic record and made reassessment possible, in correlation with a larger turn to history across the social sciences.

Regna Darnell

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Bloomfield, Leonard; Boas, Franz; Cultural Ecology; Cultural Materialism; Cultural Relativism; Mead, Margaret; Sapir, Edward; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Bennett, J. (1998). *Classic anthropology: Critical essays 1944–96.* New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.

Darnell, R. (1998). *And along came Boas: Continuity and revolution in Americanist anthropology.* Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

———. (2001). *Invisible genealogies: A history of American anthropology.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Harris, M. (1968). *The rise of anthropological theory.* New York, NY: Thomas Crowell.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1974). *The shaping of American anthropology, 1880–1911: A Franz Boas reader.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Hobbes, Thomas

Thomas Hobbes (1588–1679), English philosopher, was one of the early Enlightenment theorists in British social anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

Hobbes was born on April 15, 1588, near Malmesbury in England. His mother's family lived in Brokenborough, where his father was a curate. Very little is known about his family life as a child growing up, except that he had two brothers. Although his father was an uneducated clergyman, several of his uncles were prosperous in business matters. Hobbes was raised by one of his uncles, Francis, who paid for his education at Magdalen College, Oxford. After leaving Oxford, Hobbes was recommended to be a tutor to William Cavendish. He maintained a lifelong affiliation with the Cavendish family, from which his intellectual career benefited a great deal. He was able to travel abroad, afforded direct contact with intellectual circles that included scientists, and provided access to the library at Hardwick Hall. All of these were especially important for Hobbes's intellectual development after leaving Oxford. In his vita, Hobbes expressed dissatisfaction with the large amount of Aristotle's philosophy that he was required to learn. Despite his professed disdain for scholasticism, in several important respects, his earlier study of Aristotle influenced the scientific account of human nature he would later develop.

Francis Bacon, an acquaintance of Cavendish, employed Hobbes as an amanuensis and included among his duties the translation of Bacon's *Essays* into Latin. Although Bacon shared Hobbes's antischolastic disposition, his influence on Hobbes was mitigated by Hobbes's preference for Euclid's deductive method rather than the inductive method Bacon touted. Nevertheless, Bacon, like Hobbes, advocated the idea of grounding ethics and civil philosophy on a scientific account of human nature.

Hobbes's close association with William and Charles Cavendish during the 1630s facilitated his study of science. He obtained for William a copy of Galileo's *Dialogues* and soon after began writing on physics and psychology. On a continental trip in 1634, Hobbes was introduced to Marin Mersenne, who had formed an intellectual circle that included René Descartes. Hobbes's earliest scientific work was a manuscript on optics that provided a mechanistic account of perception. Unfortunately, it closely resembled the account already published in Descartes's *Dioptrics*. Influenced by Galileo, both had attempted independently to apply his physics to sense perception. Hobbes had planned to incorporate his work on optics into a trilogy devoted to physics, psychology, and politics. His aim was to derive an account of natural right from a scientific account of physiology, psychology, and physics. *Elements of Law* (1640) was an early manuscript in which Hobbes spells out the basic rudiments of the view of human nature and politics he later presents in *De Cive* (1642) and *Leviathan* (1652). Some of his work on physics and psychology from this period appeared later in *De Corpore* (1650) and *De Homine* (1658).

Toward the end of the 1630s, Hobbes's work on physics and psychology was interrupted by political events. His royalist ties required him to seek exile, along with Charles II, for 11 years in France. The prior completion of *De Cive* draws in question whether his politics was deduced from the physics and psychology he presented in *De Corpore* and *De Homine*. In *Leviathan*, Hobbes even suggests that this deduction is unnecessary. He allows his definitions of psychological terms to be confirmed by each individual through introspection rather than by deduction from physics.

Contributions to Anthropology

Hobbes was the first modern philosopher to present a scientific account of natural right and political obligation. His main contribution to anthropology was an egoistic theory of human nature derived from physiological psychology. He employed this theory to explain an earlier transition from a state of nature to civil society.

Animal Motion and Psychological Egoism

In the materialist view Hobbes assumes throughout his writings, everything can be understood in terms of matter and motions. He viewed introspection, and all modes of consciousness such as imagination, memory, dreams, and sense perception, to be nothing more than motions in the brain. Perception occurs when tiny motions from objects cause a reaction of tiny motions from the sense organ,

the interaction of which produces appearances. Hobbes couples his *reduction* of psychological phenomena to motions in the brain with an *extension* of the term *endeavor* or *conatus* from its original application to the motions of inanimate objects in physics to apply as well to the purposeful behavior of living creatures. The invisible "small beginnings" of motions in the body, as well as the visible actions they constitute, are equally referred to as "endeavors."

Animals and humans have innate "vital motions" that function without cognition, such as those involved in breathing. They also have a capacity for voluntary motions that augment vital motions. "Animal motion" begins with perception and results in bodily movement either toward or away from objects that appear beneficial or harmful. Hobbes maintained that the aim of all voluntary acts is to obtain some apparent benefit for the agent. He derived this egoistic psychology from his physiological explanation of behavior in terms of appetites and aversions—which he defined as animal motion toward or away from what appears beneficial or harmful.

State of Nature

Hobbes is well known for his bold statement in *Leviathan* of a pessimistic view of human life in a state of nature. He characterized this "natural condition" as involving anarchy and war. Unlike the work of later thinkers such as John Locke and Jean-Jacques Rousseau, in which a precivil society model is the focus of their discussion of the state of nature, Hobbes was also concerned with civil war and international relations, and he includes these two examples to illustrate the idea.

War was, for Hobbes, a rational outcome of human interaction in the state of nature, due mainly to the role passions play in human motivation. He believed that, with few exceptions, fear of death is the strongest passion. Indeed, it is because all living creatures are constructed physiologically to avoid death that they have a natural right of defense. Using a metaphor drawn from physics, Hobbes pointed out, with regard to this natural inclination, that just as a stone falls downward, as a matter of physiological constitution, humans "cannot do otherwise" (*De Cive*).

What leads to war in the state of nature is not so much competition for resources as the "diffidence," or anxiety, engendered by an inherent insecurity against invaders, who aim to dispossess others. Under such circumstances, Hobbes argues that by natural right an agent is allowed to secure his possessions through anticipation and a policy of preemption. When Hobbes attributes to all humans a restless desire for power that ceases only in death, he meant that even those willing to live moderately have this desire, which is simply a desire for assurance that their present power to live well will continue. Because of the few who will invade for glory, those who are content to live within modest means must consider, as necessary for their defense, invading a neighbor to increase their power in order to ensure their future security. Despite the rationality of a first-strike policy as a defensive measure, when everyone is known to have adopted it, the result is a general disposition to engage in violence.

Hobbes presents the tendency toward war in the state of nature as a natural outcome of everyone having a desire for self-preservation and a natural right to ensure this with a rational calculation of available options. Hence, human nature is not to be condemned as evil for fostering this outcome. In the absence of the protection of a sovereign with sufficient power to enforce the law, preemptive measures are rational for the modest majority in anticipation of the vainglorious few. The problem is that, when everyone has a first-strike policy, life under these conditions is "solitary, nasty, brutish, and short" (*Leviathan*, Chapter 13). Hobbes cites fear of death and hope for a more "commodious life" as passions that motivate agents in a state of nature to seek the security and benefits of a civil society.

Origin of Civil Society

For Hobbes, the purpose of government is to provide security. The social contract authorizes a sovereign to carry out this function. A social contract can be entered into through the process of instituting a sovereign or through conquest and domination. Hobbes claims that the latter has been far more common throughout history. To illustrate a covenant of mutual trust, he uses a case of ransom involving an extorted promise. This example illustrates the role of coercion in sovereignty by conquest. When comparing the coerced promise of the vanquished under a conqueror with the uncoerced agreement that subjects enter into under institution, Hobbes points out that both are based on fear (of a conqueror or of each

other, respectively) and that, because of this, both are voluntary. As he insisted in the ransom case, coerced agreements motivated by fear are no less valid, and the terms must be fulfilled, just as in the case of uncoerced agreements.

Locke criticized Hobbes's account of the state of nature as lacking social and moral norms. He maintained that even without a formal government there would be a social structure with moral norms that most people follow. When Hobbes speaks of "the savages in America," he has a notion of a contemporary precivil society in mind. He operates with a scheme of earlier and later stages of social development when he uses the term *savages* to refer also to the ancient Germans. Locke was right to criticize Hobbes's notion that Native Americans lived without society and morality, but only to the extent that Hobbes relies on this example. Given that the advent of the English civil war had prompted Hobbes to complete his political theory earlier than planned, it is not difficult to understand his inclusion of a dissolution model along with a precivil society model of the state of nature.

Rousseau criticized Hobbes and Locke for their inaccurate portrayals of life in the state of nature. He charged them with describing civilized humans, not "natural man," in their state-of-nature theories. Hobbes's account of sovereignty by acquisition emphasizes later stages by focusing on conquest as a natural historical process that explains the origin, growth, and development of society from small families to large kingdoms. A version of the social contract that establishes civil society first occurs within the household to establish the authority of the father, husband, and master over his children, wife, and servants and slaves, respectively. Hobbes insists that this patriarchical social arrangement is not natural, as Aristotle believed, and cites Amazon women as a case in which it is contested (*Leviathan*, Chapter 20).

A master's authority is based on his ability to provide protection from invaders. When a master is conquered by another head of a household, all of the members of the conquered household are obligated to the conqueror or enslaved if they refuse to submit. Hobbes maintained that slaves, unlike servants, have no obligation to their masters. By refusing to enter into a social contract, they remain in a state of nature and are still at war. He explains the growth of commonwealths as a sociohistorical process of combining households through conquest and acquisition.

Hobbes believed that rebellion and civil war loom in the background of every civil society. His state-of-nature theory functions as a reminder of this constant threat. He was more keen on the idea that civilized people will behave "savagely" toward each other when political authority is removed than he was on the savagery of primitive people. He presents the civil war case as evidence of an atavistic tendency to lapse into behavior characteristic of a precivil society stage of human development. He held that an absolute sovereign was required to prevent the conditions under which this relapse would occur.

In his discussion of relations between commonwealths, Hobbes's view of human nature is no less pessimistic. Yet, unlike the dissolution case involving conquest, rebellion, or civil war, Hobbes did not argue for a social contract between commonwealths that would establish an absolute sovereign at the global level to provide international security. Instead, he marshaled these potential threats to the commonwealth to bolster his case for a sufficiently powerful absolute sovereign at the domestic level.

Hobbes's Legacy

Hobbes was a major influence on important philosophers such as Baruch Spinoza, G. W. Leibniz, John Locke, David Hume, Friedrich Engels, Karl Marx, and John Rawls. In science and social anthropology, he presaged Charles Darwin, Herbert Spencer, Lewis H. Morgan, John B. Watson, B. F. Skinner, Clark L. Hull, and Edward O. Wilson. His account of the state of nature as an antecedent stage of cultural development and his reconstruction of the origin of the social contract represent an early evolutionary development theory favored by many social scientists. The utilitarianism of Jeremy Bentham and John Stuart Mill, with its focus on self-interest, as well as the emphasis on materialism and economics in Karl Marx's political writings were heavily influenced by Hobbes's views. Hobbes's endorsement of mother right, which is rather unique in 17th-century thought, accommodates many contemporary feminist concerns regarding the origin of patriarchy. His account of the role honor plays in the mutual behavior of sovereigns continues to loom large in the field of international relations.

Tommy Lee Lott

See also Darwin, Charles; Marx, Karl; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Sahlins, Marshall; Spencer, Herbert

Further Readings

Kavka, G. (1987). *Moral paradoxes of nuclear deterrence.* New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

Macpherson, C. B. (1962). *The political theory of possessive individualism: Hobbes to Locke.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Peters, R. S. (Ed.). (1962). *Brett's history of psychology.* New York, NY: Macmillan.

Rogow, A. A. (1986). *Thomas Hobbes: Radical in the service of reaction.* New York, NY: Norton.

Wright, J. H. (2002). Going against the grain: Hobbes's case for original maternal dominion. *Journal of Women's History, 14*(1), 123–155.

Hocart, Arthur M.

Arthur Maurice Hocart was born on April 26, 1883, at Eeterbeck in Belgium. His early education was at Elizabeth College in Guernsey, in the Channel Islands. He then went on to Oxford, where he obtained his first degree with honors at Exeter College in 1906, receiving training in Greek, Latin, ancient history, and philosophy. He did further studies in Germany at the University of Berlin, delving into psychology and phenomenology. Hocart's most important career change was when he was recruited by William Halse Rivers Rivers for the Percy Sladen Trust Expedition to the Solomon Islands in 1908, which was to be the first instance of modern-style anthropological fieldwork involving prolonged residence among the people studied. Hocart spent 6 months with Rivers on the small island of Simbo in the New Georgia group of the Solomon Islands, researching themes such as kinship, social organization, religion, and myth through firsthand field observations and conversations with key informants in the Melanesian Pidgin of the day. This on-site training under Rivers left a lasting impact on the young scholar, as seen in his continued fieldwork in other parts of the Pacific. The two scholars kept in contact even after Rivers drifted into other areas of interest, culminating in his very different work as a military psychiatrist during World War I.

After the Solomon Islands expedition, Hocart settled at Lakeba in Fiji, where he had obtained a position as a school headmaster. He continued a long record of anthropological fieldwork in Fiji during his career there and also worked farther east in Polynesia, in Wallis, Rotuma, Tonga, and Samoa. Although he returned briefly to Oxford in 1914 to do postgraduate studies, World War I interrupted his plans as he soon found himself on military service in France. After the war, Hocart studied Sanskrit, having obtained the position of Archaeological Commissioner of Ceylon. In the period 1921–1929, he managed and followed up a long series of excavations, of which the most famous may be the groundbreaking fieldwork at the Singhalese Buddhist Temple of the Tooth at Kandy. He returned finally to England in 1929 in poor health. In 1930, Hocart married Elizabeth G. Hearn, who had been his nurse during his prolonged illness. Hocart made continued attempts at acquiring a permanent position in conventional academia throughout his career, but he failed to secure such a position until the latter part of his life, when in 1934 he was appointed to the chair of sociology at the University of Cairo. He died in Cairo in 1939 at the age of 56.

Hocart's contributions to academia can be said to be representative of theoretical trends at the time, and he was strongly occupied with evolutionary theory and the origins of social customs and institutions. This may have hampered his career when he applied for positions in England, since the theoretical fashion of the time was strongly antievolutionary. Nonetheless, Hocart's ideas were original and strongly founded in empirical materials. His interest in themes such as leadership and social origins was to be carried further in his contributions to a general theory of kingship. Indeed, Hocart is one of the very few who have tackled the comparative concept in the manner represented by his book *Kingship*. In that treatise, he drew on sources from ancient history and contemporary ethnography, again revealing the influence that his own firsthand anthropological fieldwork had on him throughout his scholarly life. Importantly, Hocart's ideas on caste and hierarchy were carried further by Louis Dumont, who acknowledged his debt to Hocart in his volume on caste.

Hocart's now somewhat outdated theoretical points aside, his ethnographic materials were of the highest quality. This is particularly evident in the ethnographic materials stemming from his fieldwork with Rivers in the Solomon Islands and his

own subsequent work in Fiji, resulting in a series of scholarly articles from 1922 onward. The material from Simbo (in the Solomon Islands) had originally been planned to be brought out as a monograph based on joint fieldwork, which would have been the very first of its kind from Melanesia, but apparently Rivers was unable to do his part. Hocart admits in the foreword to his article "The Cult of the Dead" that his intention was to rescue the ethnographic material by publishing it as a series of descriptive articles in the *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland*. The fieldwork he carried out jointly with Rivers predated Bronisław Malinowski's iconic fieldwork in the Trobriand Islands of New Guinea by 6 years and was of very high quality. Hocart's published articles, unpublished field notes, and other texts kept in archives continue to be a valuable source of materials for contemporary scholars of Oceania. His attention to both history and social institutions was undoubtedly the result of his wide education in several academic disciplines and of his training under a formidable scholar such as Rivers, but it also undoubtedly was founded in Hocart's own academic curiosity and intellectual keenness. Thus, A. M. Hocart remains one of the true pioneers in the anthropology of Oceania, which is remarkable given his very diverse training and background.

Cato Berg

See also Dumont, Louis; Needham, Rodney; Rivers, W. H. R.

Further Readings

Hocart, A. M. (1922). The cult of the dead in Eddystone of the Solomons: Part I. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 52,* 71–112.

———. (1922). The cult of the dead in Eddystone of the Solomons: Part II. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 52,* 259–305.

———. (1925). Medicine and witchcraft in Eddystone of the Solomons. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 55,* 229–270.

———. (1929). *Lau Islands, Fiji* (Bulletin 62). Hololulu, HI: Bernice P. Bishop Museum.

———. (1931). Warfare in Eddystone of the Solomon Islands. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 61,* 301–324.

———. (1936). *Kings and councillors. An essay in comparative anatomy of human society.* Cairo, Egypt: Printing Office Paul Barbey. (Republished 1970, with an introduction by R. Needham (Ed.) and a foreword by E. E. Evans-Pritchard, Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press)

———. (1954). *Social origins.* London, UK: Watts.

———. (1969). *Kingship.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Human Behavioral Ecology

Behavioral ecology is the application of evolutionary biological theory to the study of animal behavior. Human behavioral ecology is the part of behavioral ecology that studies human behavior. Most human behavioral ecologists are anthropologists. Human behavioral ecology has made important contributions to theories in social and cultural anthropology. This article describes the development of the approach, how it compares and contrasts with related approaches, its core concepts, its methods, its topical foci, and its institutional manifestations.

The development of human behavioral ecology was fostered by a series of theoretical advances in the 1960s and the 1970s, most notably William D. Hamilton's development of inclusive fitness theory, John Maynard Smith and George Williams's critiques of group selection, Robert MacArthur and Eric Pianka's use of optimization models in the study of animal behavior, and Richard Alexander's pioneering applications of evolutionary biological theory to the ethnographic record.

Human behavioral ecology is also related to the ecological tradition in anthropology. However, because evolutionary theory predicts that group-level selection will usually be weak, human behavioral ecology differs from earlier types of ecological anthropology in focusing on how behavior is shaped by selection at the levels of the gene and individual rather than the group. Human behavioral ecology also differs from the 19th-century approaches to cultural and societal evolution. While the 19th-century evolutionists relied on pre-Darwinian notions such as developmentalism and predetermination, human behavioral ecology is grounded in Darwinian principles such as variation, differential reproduction, selection, and adaptation.

Recognizing that humans are biologically similar and that human behavior is extraordinarily plastic, human behavioral ecologists base their explanations of human behavioral and cultural diversity on the

ways in which our shared, evolved nature interacts with different physical, social, and cultural environments to produce our widely varying behavioral phenotypes. Because we usually know little about how specific genes influence specific behaviors and because in the long run selection is expected to favor high-quality phenotypes regardless of the genes responsible for them, human behavioral ecologists focus on phenotypes. This is known as the "phenotypic gambit."

Explanations of behavior and other biological phenomena vary in terms of the causal distance of interest to the researcher. Functional biologists, for example, produce "proximate" explanations that focus on mechanistic, causally immediate factors. Human behavioral ecologists focus on explanations in terms of adaptations designed through the Darwinian process of variation and differential reproduction. Such explanations are usually referred to as "ultimate" or, for a better contrast with proximate, "distal." Explanations at different levels complement rather than compete with one another.

Because evolution is driven by differential reproduction, human behavioral ecologists often focus on behaviors that have clear impacts on reproductive rates. Because most theories used by human behavioral ecologists were developed to explain the behavior of nonhumans, they have also tended to focus on behaviors that humans and nonhumans have in common, such as foraging, mating, parenting, and cooperation. Human behavioral ecologists collect most of their data through fieldwork, often among people living in subsistence economies. In addition to interviews, surveys, and participant observation, human behavioral ecologists make quantitative observations of behavior and perform experiments, and they occasionally make use of historical demographic and archaeological data.

A hallmark of the early human behavioral ecology of the 1970s and the 1980s was the application of optimal foraging theory to data from hunting-and-gathering societies. Optimal foraging models have been used to examine aspects of foraging such as diet breadth and patch choice. Human behavioral ecology's use of optimization models makes it unusual in cultural anthropology to embrace rather than eschew rational choice models of human behavior. Human behavioral ecologists see such models as useful not because they believe human behavior to be fully rational or optimal but rather because they make predictions about behavior that are clear and falsifiable. In addition to foraging, human behavioral ecologists have focused a great deal of attention on reproductive and social behaviors, shedding light on issues such as mate preferences, systems of mating and marriage (e.g., monogamy, polygyny, and polyandry), the sexual division of labor, sex biases in parental behavior, male parental behavior, enculturation, inheritance patterns, altruism among both kin and nonkin, coalitional behavior, conflict, food sharing, reciprocity, and risk pooling.

The culture concept played little role in early human behavioral ecology, but this has changed considerably over the past 20 years or so. This is primarily due to three factors: (1) culture's incorporation into animal behavior studies, (2) the development of cultural transmission theory, and (3) the use of animal signaling theory to study cultural phenomena. Human behavioral ecologists have also made important contributions to the study of the demographic transition, wildlife conservation, human life history theory, and the study of religion.

Human behavioral ecology is often seen as one of three main approaches to the evolutionary study of human behavior, the others being evolutionary psychology, and cultural transmission or dual inheritance theory. The division of labor among these three approaches is similar to that found in the behavioral sciences more generally. Evolutionary psychologists and cultural transmission theorists focus on causal forces that are internal and external to the individual, respectively. Human behavioral ecologists, in contrast, use simple models to bring both kinds of causal factors to bear on questions regarding human behavior, adding complexity to those models as needed to increase their explanatory power. Human behavioral ecology also has close ties to related areas in biological anthropology, such as reproductive ecology and nutritional ecology.

Organizations supporting human behavioral ecology include the Human Behavior and Evolution Society, the Evolutionary Anthropology Society (a section of the American Anthropological Association), and the International Society for Human Ethology. In addition to general science, anthropology, and animal behavior journals, human behavioral ecologists routinely publish their findings in specialized journals such as *Evolution and Human Behavior* and *Human Nature*.

Lee Cronk

See also Cultural Ecology; Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Game Theory; Gene-Culture Coevolution; Human Universals

Further Readings

Dunbar, R., & Barrett, L. (2007). *The Oxford handbook of evolutionary psychology.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Gangestad, S. W., & Simpson, J. A. (Eds.). (2007). *The evolution of mind: Fundamental questions and controversies.* New York, NY: Guilford Press.

Laland, K. N., & Brown, G. R. (2011). *Sense and nonsense: Evolutionary perspectives on human behaviour* (2nd ed.). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Human Relations Area Files, Cross-Cultural Studies

The Human Relations Area Files, Inc. (HRAF, pronounced *her-aff* or sometimes *H-raff*) is a nonprofit membership corporation located at Yale University. Its mission is to facilitate the cross-cultural study of human culture, society, and behavior in the past and present. The unique feature of its two main databases, eHRAF World Cultures and eHRAF Archaeology, is that full-text materials (primarily ethnographies and archaeological reports) are subject indexed by anthropologists at the paragraph level to facilitate research across cultures and archaeological traditions.

Background and History

The HRAF was incorporated in 1949 as an interuniversity consortium designed to foster cross-cultural studies. The name was derived from Yale University's Institute of Human Relations, which housed the Cross-Cultural Survey, a precursor to HRAF. A group of social scientists at Yale created the Cross-Cultural Survey in 1937 to systematically catalog cross-cultural variation. Influenced by the cultural evolutionary theories of Herbert Spencer, Yale's first sociologist, William Graham Sumner, began collecting information on a wide variety of societies and organizing that information to allow for the systematic exploration of cultural evolutionary patterns. Sumner's student, Alfred Galloway Keller, and Keller's student, George Peter Murdock, expanded on Sumner's initial efforts in developing the Cross-Cultural Survey. The underlying idea of the Cross-Cultural Survey was that any generalizable explanation for human behavior should hold true across a variety of cultures and that the Cross-Cultural Survey would provide the data for testing such explanations. The HRAF collection of ethnography (often referred to as "the HRAF files") was an extension of that basic idea—providing a large, easily searchable source of cultural information for cross-cultural studies.

The initial members of the HRAF consortium were Harvard University, the University of Oklahoma, the University of Pennsylvania, the University of Washington, and Yale University, joined shortly thereafter by the University of Chicago, the University of North Carolina, and the University of Southern California. Each member institution received an annual installment consisting of several thousand 5- by 8-inch pages of text copied from primary ethnographic sources. The text on each page was subject indexed in the margin for the information it contained, using an indexing system developed by the anthropologist George Peter Murdock and his colleagues, called the *Outline of Cultural Materials* (first published in 1938). The text pages were grouped by the indexed items, so that a page containing information on five different indexed topics would be found five times in the annual installment—once in each of the indexed groupings for the information the text contained. A researcher at one of the member institutions could then go to the HRAF collection and pull out information on an indexed topic from many ethnographic sources without having to consult each source individually. This greatly simplified the process of cross-cultural research.

In 1958, HRAF began to produce the annual installments on microfiche as well as paper. Member institutions continued to receive paper installments (although paper installments stopped being produced in the mid-1980s), but any institution could gain access to the microfiche by becoming an "associate" member of the HRAF consortium. Soon many libraries were able to provide access to HRAF. Opening access to HRAF was intended to expand cross-cultural studies, and it appears to have worked: In 1958, there were fewer than 100 published cross-cultural studies; in 1997, when HRAF switched to a completely online format, there were more

than 1000 published studies based on the HRAF collection. In 1994, HRAF began offering the annual installment on CD-ROM, and in 1997, the collection was converted to online access. At the time of this writing (2011), there were roughly 400 members of the HRAF consortium located in 25 countries.

Research Collections

Since 1999, HRAF has produced two collections of indexed primary-source documents. The Collection of Ethnography is a continuation of the original HRAF collection begun in 1949. As of this writing, the Collection of Ethnography contains more than 1.3 million pages of information on more than 400 cultures (although not all have yet been converted to electronic format) and indexed by more than 700 categories. The new online version of HRAF (eHRAF World Cultures), with 260 cultures as of this date, allows searching by keyword in addition to the indexed categories. The online version of HRAF also maintains each page of text in its original context, so that a researcher can read forward and backward from the page that contains the information of interest to those preceding and following it. This allows the information to be understood within the broader context of the document—something not possible with the old paper or microfiche files.

In 1999, HRAF launched the eHRAF Collection of Archaeology (now called eHRAF Archaeology) to provide indexed primary-source documents on archaeological sites and traditions. As of this writing, the eHRAF Archaeology contains more than 125,000 pages of indexed primary-source documents on 85 archaeological traditions. The purpose of the eHRAF Archaeology is to allow for the diachronic testing of explanations. In typical cross-cultural research, explanations that hold true for a large number of cultures are thought to probably reflect true causal relationships. But testing causal relationships across cultures does not allow one to test whether presumed causes or causal conditions actually preceded the presumed effects. The information in the eHRAF Archaeology allows researchers to directly test causal relationships.

It is a common misunderstanding that the HRAF collections provide precoded, numerical data on ethnographic cultures or archaeological traditions; they do not. What both provide are primary-source documents that have been carefully indexed at the paragraph level to allow for rapid retrieval of information. While indexers have made decisions about the content of each page in each document, the researchers decide what that content means within the context of their research and how to code it for use in cross-cultural studies. With the advent of online collections, researchers also have the option of retrieving information by keyword rather than indexed content.

Publications

In addition to the collections of indexed primary-source documents, HRAF has also published a wide range of monographs, data sets, bibliographies, and encyclopedias. Between the mid-1960s and mid-1970s, HRAF Press published several hundred scholarly monographs, in addition to more general works for government and business that provided readily accessible information on foreign cultures. HRAF also published bibliographies of ethnographic works into the 1990s, with its massive *Bibliography of Native North America* being perhaps the most well-known. During the 1980s and 1990s, HRAF Press also published collected works of cross-cultural findings and a series of data sets on time allocation and cultural variation. In recent years, HRAF has focused its publishing efforts on encyclopedias, compiling encyclopedias on world cultures, national cultures, immigrant cultures, urban cultures, and prehistoric cultures, as well as encyclopedias of sex and gender, cultural anthropology, medical anthropology, and diasporas. HRAF has also sponsored the journal *Cross-Cultural Research* (formerly *Behavior Science Notes* until 1974 and *Behavior Science Research* until 1993) since 1966. The journal has been a key publication outlet for cross-cultural studies since its inception.

Influence

Cross-cultural studies have been controversial in anthropology from the very beginning of the discipline. Many anthropologists feel that cross-cultural studies are flawed because they take information out of the broader context of the culture in which it exists and, thus, end up comparing things that may not actually be alike. For example, a researcher interested in adolescent sexual behavior might not be able to take into account the subtleties with which individual cultures deal with sexuality. Cross-cultural researchers counter that while they may not

be able to explain the unique features of individual cultures, they can explain dimensions of cross-cultural variation in such behaviors. Some researchers argue that ethnographic information is so subjective that comparing materials derived from work by different ethnographers, even on the same culture, is futile, as each ethnographer's description is purely idiosyncratic. Cross-cultural researchers counter that if this were the case, no patterns of behavior could ever be discerned, and yet they are. Finally, there are some researchers who argue that cultures are such poor units of analysis that any statistical relationships discovered through cross-cultural studies should be suspect. While there are many sampling and data quality challenges that must be addressed when conducting cross-cultural research, most cross-cultural researchers employ methods (many disseminated through HRAF publications) that minimize the risk of generating spurious results.

HRAF has had a major influence in countering the general antipathy toward cross-cultural studies found in anthropology by providing researchers with the information, methodology, and publishing outlets to counter many of the arguments made against cross-cultural research. For example, both collections contain some kind of representative sample. The Collection of Ethnography contains the Probability Samples Files (which has one well-described society from each of 60 culture areas), and the eHRAF Archaeology provides a random sample of cases drawn from a larger population to provide researchers with statistically valid samples for cross-cultural research. HRAF has published a number of methodological guides to cross-cultural research and, recently, ideas and exercises for using cross-cultural methods and findings in anthropology courses. By demonstrating the value of cross-cultural research to students and providing methodological guidance to researchers, HRAF is ensuring that cross-cultural studies will have an enduring presence in social science.

Peter N. Peregrine

See also Comparative Method; Goodenough, Ward H.; Murdock, George Peter

Further Readings

Ember, C. R. (2011). Human relations area files. In W. S. Bainbridge (Ed.), *Leadership in science and technology* (pp. 619–627). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Ember, C. R., & Ember, M. (2009). *Cross-cultural research methods*. Lanham, MD: AltaMira.

Ember, M. (1997). Evolution of the human relations area files. *Cross-cultural research, 31,* 3–15.

Levinson, D., Malone, M. J., & Brown, C. H. (1980). *Toward explaining human culture: A critical review of the findings of worldwide cross-cultural research*. New Haven, CT: HRAF Press.

Murdock, G. P., Ford, C. S., & Hudson, A. E. (2006). *Outline of cultural materials* (6th ed.). New Haven, CT: HRAF Press.

Human Universals

Human universals comprise those features of culture, society, language, behavior, and psyche that, so far as the record is clear, are found in all ethnographically or historically recorded human societies. Theoretically, as acknowledged in anthropological textbooks, human universals are half of anthropology's concerns, the others comprising the differences among humans. However, although the theoretical significance and implications of human universals are relatively straightforward, the research concerns of anthropologists have largely emphasized the differences. The reasons for this emphasis must be addressed to understand the current place of human universals in anthropological theory.

During much of the past century, a series of assumptions and conditions within anthropology limited the theoretical significance of human universals (hereafter, "universals" for short). Particularly important were assumptions about culture in relation to human nature. Twentieth-century anthropologists developed or largely agreed with a layer-cake concept of reality, in which culture was an autonomous, sui generis level of reality lying over biology, which in turn lay above the realms of chemistry and physics. Culture had its own dynamics and could not be reduced to the lower levels. This view of culture led to a considerable skepticism about the existence of universals, which were often presumed to have their roots or explanation in human nature, that is, in the lower level of biology.

In their attempt to warn against and illustrate ethnocentric fallacies and socially conservative appeals to human nature, some anthropologists published or accepted seemingly scientific refutations of what was considered natural in their own culture. Margaret

Mead, for example, famously showed that adolescent stress did not occur among Samoans and that sex roles were largely reversed among the Tchambuli (or Chambri) of Papua New Guinea. Benjamin Lee Whorf's claim that the Hopi had no concept of time analogous to those in the West was widely accepted in anthropology. In light of what such studies purported to show, some anthropologists doubted that there was any such thing as a human nature beyond what culture dictated from one society to another.

The racist thinking that reduced aspects of culture and behavior to biological inheritance, as in some forms of eugenics and in Nazism, produced among anthropologists and others a profound moral and scientific rejection or suspicion of biological reductionism in general.

Throughout much of the 20th century, but presently diminishing, there was a powerful and legitimate concern to emphasize ethnography, to capture its richness and variations before all melded into a modern, heavily Westernized world culture. In this frame of mind, a great many theoretical issues were subordinated. It was not uncommon to hear dismissals of causal or evolutionary concerns as armchair theorizing, insufficiently empirical. At present, many cultural anthropologists, at least in the West, still reflect those attitudes.

Beyond the confines of anthropology were and are yet other factors. One is that the human mind is much concerned with differences: the pitch and volume of sounds; sizes, colors, shapes, and movements; hardness, softness, roughness, and smoothness; sweet, refreshing, and foul smells; young and old; male and female; and so forth. Accordingly, in the very earliest ethnographic descriptions—by the Chinese, Greeks, Romans, and Arabs—differences are explicit; the vast range of similarities among humans is largely taken for granted.

Another factor, to loosely paraphrase a Confucian scholar, is that some individuals notice change and think that nothing is constant; others note constants and think that nothing ever changes. Western thought near its foundations polarized similarly around the Heraclitan notion of all being in flux and the Platonic notion of eternal forms. Variants of these polarities, weighting toward the particularistic Heraclitan, are strong in anthropology to the present.

The cumulative effect of these factors was a minor and sporadic explicit interest in universals in general, even doubts that they could be of substantial interest. In the 1960s, the anthropologist Clifford Geertz summed up much of this view, while acknowledging the reasonable assumption that if universals do exist they might well have biopsychological foundations.

The extent, detail, and clarity revealed by recent decades of research into those biopsychological foundations figure largely now in a much expanded interest in universals. Whatever credibility the layer-cake view of reality ever had in biology, chemistry, and physics has vanished. Interdisciplinary studies of all sorts are now taken for granted. Stunningly successful drug therapies, among other considerations, made psychology as reductionist as the other sciences. At the same time, the ever-increasing sophistication of experimental psychology elucidated human (and animal) nature and offered new means of testing hypotheses about the human nature that may underlie universals of behavior and psyche.

Darwinian thinking—as in sociobiology and evolutionary psychology—coupled with breakthroughs and inventions that allowed the burgeoning study of DNA, the study of molecular structures and the detailed functions of the endocrine system, the discovery of highly specific mental modularity, the imaging of brain activity, and the discovery of numerous close analogs of human behaviors in other species all opened routes for tracing connections between our biology and our behavior—cultural or otherwise. Game theory and computer modeling provided further means of understanding human behavior.

At the same time, restudies that refuted the aforementioned works by Whorf and Mead were published, with implications that were widely noted. The dwindling number of "pristine" or "traditional" societies to study before they disappeared allowed a thorough reprioritization of aims and funding in ethnology. Thus, under present conditions, the anthropological rationale for the study of universals is much clearer.

The grand theory of universals is that in combination they constitute the building blocks or armature of the human condition; subsets of them are equally the building blocks and armature of human nature. As such, universals are both constraining and generative. On his website, the anthropologist Doug Jones formulates the goal of research on the generative aspect of universals as "understanding how a limited stock of innate ideas can

be recombined and customized to generate the kaleidoscopic variety of human cultures." In a personal communication, he gives as an example the semanticist Anna Wierzbicka, whose work he summarizes as follows:

> She's a linguist who thinks there is a stock of about 50–60 innate abstract ideas lexicalized in pretty much every language (BECAUSE, THING/SOMETHING, PERSON/SOMEONE, DO, THINK, KIND, etc., etc.) that can be combined to generate culture-specific concepts, which an empiricist stuck with perceptual categories (SQUARE, RED, HIGH-PITCHED, etc.) would have a hard time doing.

For Jones, Wierzbicka has shown that a small number of innate abstract ideas are generative of a universe of different cultural forms.

Turning the grand theory into working propositions requires clarifying and extending the very idea of universals, identifying and classifying them, describing each universal with precision, finding ways around the methodological limitations on verifying universality, and then explaining the universals.

In addition to the hundreds of "absolute" universals, there are also some variant forms. One variant is the "near" universal, such as possession of the domestic dog. Linguists, who pioneered much of the conceptual framework for universals, add another important variant, the "conditional" (or "implicational") universal, which can be described as an if-then universal: If a certain condition A obtains, then the conditional universal B will obtain. For example, if one hand is culturally given a positive evaluation, then it will be the right hand, as in the Western practice of using the right hand to greet or take an oath. In cases such as these, neither A nor B is universal, but some universal underlying situation or mechanism(s) must be at work. In this case, it is the universal preponderance of physical right-handedness.

A "statistical" universal may fall far short of near universality and yet occur in unrelated societies with a frequency well above chance, which raises the question of whether mere chance cultural convergences are at play. Thus, in a surprising number of languages, a term indicating a little person designates the pupil of the eye. The reasonably proposed explanation for this is that people everywhere looking into another person's eye see a small person there—the reflection of themselves. In this case, a universal or near-universal experience is the apparent explanation.

Near, conditional, and statistical universals are among the formal variants of universality. For various purposes, others may be added. It may be useful, for example, to refer to something like "new universals," such as the use of metal or plastic objects, which are surely very nearly if not entirely universal among extant peoples.

As indicated earlier, universals may also be classified according to whether they are cultural, societal, linguistic, behavioral, psychological, and so on. The phenomenal realm within which they occur has an important bearing on how each is to be explained—what its ultimate origin is and how it is reliably reproduced in the individual or society.

Some cultural universals—such as the use of fire and the specific use of fire for cooking—presumably spread to all peoples in the distant past because of their great utility. The same is presumably true of near universals such as the domestic dog. Most universals are almost certainly not cultural. As was long assumed, many universals are components of human nature or very closely reflect human nature. These universals raise questions such as the following: When did they emerge in our evolutionary past—in the evolution of our species or farther back in the hominid line or even more distantly? What functions were they designed to serve? What is their ontogeny in the individual? Are they sex or age linked? Are they maladaptive in some circumstances? What roles do they play in human affairs?

Every claim of universality is just that: a claim. It could not be otherwise, since we do not have accurate reporting on all relevant topics for a great many societies that have been known to history and ethnography. Whole ranges of societies have disappeared or have become very few—preliterate hunter-gathering societies, for example. Even where their remnants exist, they are nearly always sufficiently contacted by the larger world to raise questions about whether they truly represent their noncontacted forms. This has placed a premium on developing methods that to one degree or another give greater confidence to claims of universality. Studying the few preliterate societies very minimally affected

by the outside world has been especially important. Finding analogs in other species, particularly in the hominid line, has also been useful in identifying universals of mind and behavior—even of culture, which for decades was mistakenly considered to be virtually exclusively human.

Whether discovering universals, seeking to explain them, or tracing their ramified consequences in human affairs, the anthropological four-field approach—the combination of cultural and physical anthropology with linguistics and archaeology—is almost mandatory. Moreover, the study of universals must often extend beyond the four fields as conventionally defined. On the other hand, the idea of universals and the consideration of particular ones can be and are exploited outside anthropology. There is, for example, considerable activity in literary studies, focused on universal themes and structures in both folktales and the classics of literature.

Given the present assumptions and conditions impinging on and shaping anthropological theory, the study of human universals is assuming a larger role than was possible during much of the last century. That role extends well beyond anthropology yet remains centrally dependent on anthropologists' ethnographic reporting.

Donald E. Brown

See also Cultural Relativism; Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution; Greenberg, Joseph; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Antweiler, C. (2007). *Was ist den Menschen gemeinsam? Über Kultur und Kulturen* [What is human universality? About culture and cultures]. Darmstadt, Germany: Wissenschaftliche Buchgesellschaft.

Brown, D. E. (1991). *Human universals*. New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

———. (2000). Human universals and their implications. In N. Roughley (Ed.), *Being humans: Anthropological universality and particularity in transdisciplinary perspectives* (pp. 156–174). Berlin, Germany: Walter de Gruyter.

———. (2004). Human universals, human nature and human culture. *Daedalus, Fall,* 47–54.

Jones, D. (1999). Evolutionary psychology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 28,* 553–575.

Wierzbicka, A. (2005). Empirical universals of language as a basis for the study of other human universals and as a tool for exploring cross-cultural differences. *Ethos, 23*(2), 256–291.

Humanistic Anthropology

Humanistic anthropology is an approach that focuses on values and meanings, their construction and deployment, in a holistic vision of humanity that encompasses the physical and cultural dimensions of human societies along with the environments in which these societies exist. Humanistic anthropology includes a range of practices and interests. It may engage the creative and philosophical traditions of the humanities as both subject of study and method of expression, and thus it participates in creative, poetic, and dramatic writing and other artistic expression, in addition to the production of more traditionally academic ethnographic writing. Humanistic anthropology recognizes the dynamic, relational, and processual nature of our world, and thus the consequences of our work in the world at large. It hopes to bring about improvements in the world and in people's lives, through better understanding of the diverse, increasingly multicultural, semantically polyvalent, and socially constructed nature of reality.

Many of the concerns of humanistic anthropology trace back to the development of humanistic philosophy, long before anthropology came to exist as a discipline. Jean-Jacques Rousseau's *Discourse on the Origin and Foundation of Inequality* (1755) is often taken as a foundational work because it argues the importance of studying human diversity to better understand ourselves. A humanist focus was found in much of the earliest anthropological work, from Thomas Jefferson's excavations and other questions surrounding the "Moundbuilders" of North American prehistory through Lewis Henry Morgan and Edward Burnett Tylor's efforts to understand the diversity of human practices and values, and even Émile Durkheim's investigations of religion. While these precedents are most often cited for their contributions to making the study of humanity scientific, that science was founded on humanistic concerns.

In the 1960s, as scientific rhetoric and methods were prioritized in anthropology as in other social

sciences, a sense arose among some that this balance between science and the humanities was being lost—specifically, that particular constructions of science were displacing the human dimensions in the social sciences. Many of the most dominant theoretical frameworks developed through the later 19th and 20th centuries—evolutionary models, functionalism, and structuralism—sought to develop understandings that their proponents believed were more rigorous and scientific, more testable, defensible, and rational than humanistic understandings developed through evocative description. Humanistic scholarship did not disappear, but it is no coincidence that psychology, sociology, and anthropology all institutionalized societies for humanistic approaches in the early 1970s. The scholars who organized these societies were openly insistent: They were not against science but against a scientization of the study of human societies that left no room for humanism in its constructs.

The Society for Humanistic Anthropology was established in 1974 as a section of the American Anthropological Association, with *Anthropology and Humanism Quarterly* (now *Anthropology and Humanism*) begun as its journal in 1976. In addition to publishing work in humanistic anthropology, the Society for Humanistic Anthropology provides venues at the annual meeting for presenting and participating in workshops on creative and ethnographic writing and other modes of expression. The society also presents annual awards for ethnographic fiction and poetry, along with the Victor Turner Prize for Ethnographic Writing, one of the discipline's premier awards; Turner was a founder of the Society for Humanistic Anthropology, and he and his work are seen by many as one of the models for doing humanistic anthropology.

Although interest in humanistic anthropology is global, as a formal subdiscipline, it has been largely an American development. Franz Boas himself, and several of his students, exemplified an approach that insisted on keeping humanistic concerns at the forefront of the developing science of humanity. Before Boas, Frank Hamilton Cushing's experiential approach to understanding American Indians is noteworthy (as is the too easy dismissal he still sometimes receives in the discipline). Humanistic interests can be seen in the work of mainstream Boasian anthropologists, like Margaret Mead and Clyde Kluckhohn, and in more idiosyncratic Boasians like Jaime de Angulo and Paul Radin. One area in which many anthropologists expressed their humanist side, even before "humanistic anthropology" became formalized, was in taking on "modern" or "Western" life, in works including Boas's *Anthropology and Modern Life* (1928), Robert Lowie's *Are We Civilized?* (1929), Kluckhohn's *Mirror for Man* (1949), and Jules Henry's *Culture Against Man* (1963)—works that sought to construct understandings through interpretive and comparative readings of modernity and to write clearly and accessibly for a general audience. Margaret Mead built such a strong reputation through her newspaper, magazine, and television contributions that she remains for many the most visible face of anthropology, even decades after her death. These sorts of works, encouraging not just scholars but the general public to think anthropologically about everyday life and the changing world, exemplify humanistic concerns even among those pursuing a scientific anthropology. The Americanist focus on "culture"—behavior, beliefs, and values shared and learned by individuals within societies—and its "four-fields" approach articulated particularly well with humanistic concerns, but humanist strands can be found in other world traditions as well. R. R. Marrett's moral philosophy was influential for E. E. Evans-Pritchard, for example, and Claude Lévi-Strauss's interest in art—and his personal engagement with artists—can be seen particularly in his later works and also in concepts such as bricolage.

Prompted by civil rights movements, global decolonization efforts, the Vietnam War, and other aspects of the dynamic social milieu of the mid-20th century, the late 1960s and early 1970s saw dramatic conflicts within anthropology over its place in the world. The development of an institutionalized humanistic anthropology was only one response to the many calls for reinventing the discipline. Even when not overtly connected, though, other disciplinary responses often had humanistic dimensions, and they can be seen in the developing humanistic anthropology. The "interpretive turn" credited to Clifford Geertz, for example, and Marshall Sahlins's rethinking of the "original affluent society" were not framed as humanistic approaches but nevertheless have that dimension, and they were influential for those who were thinking in terms of a humanistic anthropology. Victor Turner's work on ritual and performance and his influence in developing a

symbolic anthropology are more closely associated, but the linguistic turn of the mid-1960s toward an ethnography of communication is also part of the development of humanistic anthropology.

The 1980s and 1990s saw shifting emphases in the broader discipline that in some cases articulated with humanistic anthropology's concerns, and these largely continue to the present. The so-called reflexive turn, for example, that called for anthropologists to explicitly consider positioning as shaping the anthropological project and the focus on the process of writing and constructing narratives highlighted questions that had long interested humanists. Fieldwork sites beyond traditional kinds of locations, including studies of humanistic domains like art and performance, media and music, and contemporary sites of interaction like tourism, became increasingly acceptable. Ethnographic poetry and fiction are regularly featured in *Anthropology and Humanism*, along with articles discussing the genres as anthropological domains. Life histories and memoirs, long a staple of humanistic scholarship, have become more common; and the production of dramatic works, and even art and music events have become acceptable enough to be included in venues like the annual meeting of the American Anthropological Association and in some cases are even included in tenure and promotion dossiers.

This is not to suggest that humanistic anthropology has become the mainstream; many of these sorts of projects are still considered beyond the pale by many scholars. Humanistic anthropologists continue to seek an expansive, holistic vision of humanity, trying to push the boundaries of what can be considered proper and professional anthropology, willing to experiment and play with forms but not always taken seriously in their attempt to better represent human realities.

Frederic W. Gleach

See also Boas, Franz; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Mead, Margaret; Radin, Paul; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Glass, J. F., & Staude, J. R. (Eds.). (1972). *Humanistic society: Today's challenge to sociology.* Pacific Palisades, CA: Goodyear.

Grinker, R. R. (2007). *Unstrange minds: Remapping the world of autism.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Jackson, M. (1986). *Barawa and the ways birds fly in the sky: An ethnographic novel.* Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Narayan, K. (2007). *My family and other saints.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Richardson, M. (1975). Anthropologist: The myth teller. *American Ethnologist, 2*(3), 517–533.

Society for Humanistic Anthropology. (1994). The place of humanism in anthropology today [Special issue]. *Anthropology and humanism, 19*(1).

Vargas-Cetina, G. (Ed.). (2013). *Anthropology and the politics of representation.* Tuscaloosa: University of Alabama Press.

Wilk, S. (1991). *Humanistic anthropology.* Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press.

Hurston, Zora Neale

Zora Neale Hurston (1891–1960) is well known as an African American author who was part of the Harlem Renaissance. Her skills as a writer were fashioned at Howard University and then honed through her study of the theories of anthropology at Barnard College and Columbia University. Hurston's books and articles, once all but forgotten, were rediscovered and celebrated by the writer Alice Walker, who wrote an essay about her in *Ms.* magazine in 1975.

Hurston's contributions to anthropology have received comparatively less attention due to the force and impact of her novels, but she has an important place within several theoretical perspectives. Her theoretical perspectives reflect the times of her life, but these contributions remain central to the social sciences today. Hurston focused on language as the bridge between individual creativity and initiative and structural and historical patterns. Her descriptions of one of the surviving towns incorporated by African Americans freed from slavery add to our understanding of race and class in small-town America. Finally, her keen awareness of the African Diaspora in the circum-Caribbean contributed not only to area studies but to Caribbean and Creole studies as well.

Hurston was the first African American woman to be admitted to Barnard College, and like her contemporaries, she was intrigued by the new discipline

of anthropology. She took classes at Columbia University, taught by the physicist-turned-anthropologist Franz Boas. There, Hurston found other writers in her classes, including Ruth Benedict, who likewise combined a passion for literature with an equal passion for anthropology. Boas's radical view that race, language, and culture were independent from one another led Hurston to an interest in the anthropology of language in rural Florida, and his focus on immigration no doubt complemented her interest in the migrations and movements of African Americans throughout Florida and the Caribbean. Huston began her PhD work at Columbia in 1935, but she had been studying anthropology since 1925. The strong fieldwork ethic of the Colombia program led her to preliminary fieldwork in Harlem and then to substantial studies in her hometown, Eatonville, Florida, as well as in Haiti, Jamaica, and New Orleans. Like other students of Boas, such as Margaret Mead, Hurston took pride in questioning assumptions that human nature was the same everywhere, that societies could be compared on some sort of evolutionary scale, and that people of the African Diaspora were without history or culture.

Eatonville, Florida, where Hurston grew up, is a town now almost completely engulfed by the city of Orlando. It was one of a dozen towns incorporated by African Americans after emancipation and remains today as the only survivor of this historic initiative. As such, Eatonville was and is a place where African American residents have confidence, political experience, and great initiative. Community ethnography of the small towns of the United States was a new theoretical direction, which took hold in the 1930s and 1940s. Doing anthropology of small-town America became popular. Among those studies was Robert and Helen Lynd's Marxist-inspired study of social class formation in a small Midwestern town undergoing industrialization, referred to as "Middletown." Racial segregation and a caste social structure were documented in the famous book, "Deep South." These critical community studies made a refreshing theoretical context for Hurston as she began her U.S.-based research. She described and analyzed Eatonville as having an African American Diaspora culture as it flourished without the constant oppression of White society. Hurston's *Mules and Men* (1935) focuses on the language, public performance, and folklore of Eatonville. As such, it is a dramatic break from the socio-structural approaches of other community studies. Boas recognized Hurston's skills in understanding expressive culture, and he wrote a glowing introduction to the book.

Hurston's transcription of African American English is inconsistent from one page of her work to the next, and today it seems archaic and even comical. Although Hurston had undergone linguistic training in her graduate career, she chose a "free" rather than phonetic transcription of the language of Eatonville. In 1939, she became part of the Federal Writers Project alongside Alan Lomax Jr., Stetson Kennedy, and others who adopted recording equipment to accurately document talk, stories, and songs throughout Florida. Hurston was a leader in adopting recording equipment, and used motion pictures in her methodological repertoire as early as the 1920s. Her films showed children playing, men working, a woman walking out of her home, baptisms, and life in a turpentine camp in Polk County, Florida. That footage shows the tension between her aesthetic and academic interests, a tension that continues in the field of visual anthropology today.

Hurston also did one of the first anthropological studies of farmworkers. Her book *Their Eyes Were Watching God* (1937) is in part a portrayal of African American migrant workers at the time the citrus industry was beginning to flourish in south-central Florida. It is also a book about sexuality, abuse, and the deep poverty in the African American communities of Florida during the Great Depression. Her focus on gender and sexuality in this and other works is reflected today in feminist anthropology.

Hurston advanced anthropological theory as well through linking the African Diaspora communities in the Caribbean and in the Gulf states of Florida, Alabama, Mississippi, and Louisiana. Hurston was an anthropologist of transnational cultures, and her work included multisited ethnographies in Florida, the Bahamas, Haiti, Jamaica, and New Orleans. While Florida was and is often thought of as the southern United States, Hurston saw it as the northern Caribbean. Migration to and from the Caribbean islands and across the Gulf Coast of the United States was common in Hurston's time. Her work shows that she was the first anthropologist to see Florida not just in the context of the United States but in a Caribbean context. Hurston focused on expressive culture—religion, trance, and small-group events as well—in her Caribbean

ethnographies. Her contemporary and fellow Columbia University classmate Melville Herskovits focused on African vestiges and customs that still were practiced in Haiti and the Caribbean, a concern that still influences a segment of Caribbean studies. Hurston's remarkable contribution was to describe and celebrate the Caribbean's expressive and linguistic culture in the United States, and in that way she foresaw what later became known as a Creole culture approach in Caribbean anthropology. Representative of this theme is the article "Hoodoo in America" (1931) and the book *Go Tell My Horse* (1938).

Zora Neale Hurston continued to lead a dual career as an anthropologist and a writer, but her success in that field overshadowed the contributions she made to anthropological theory. She never sought a position in an anthropology program, and like Dorothy Lee, Edward Hall, and Benjamin Lee Whorf, she worked outside the academic world, using her writing skills to bring the insights of anthropology to a public, nonacademic audience. Hurston's literary and professional career slowed down during the 1950s. She wrote essays in favor of segregation at the time when the Supreme Court ruled against it in *Brown vs. Topeka Board of Education*. She fell into controversy over an unsupported claim that she had engaged in child abuse, which limited her ability to win writing contracts, and the royalties from her books were few and far between. She became a domestic worker in Tampa and died there in 1960 after experiencing a stroke.

Allan Burns

See also Autoethnography; Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Columbia University; Du Bois, W. E. B.; Feminist Anthropology

Further Readings

Boyd, V. (2003). Zora Neale Hurston: The Howard University years. *Journal of Blacks in Higher Education, 39*, 104–108.

Charnov, E. (1998). The performative visual anthropology films of Zora Neale Hurston. *Film Criticism, 23*, 1–10.

Hemenway, R. (1977). *Zora Neale Hurston: A literary biography.* Champaign-Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Hurston, Z. N. (1931). Hoodoo in America. *Journal of American Folklore, 44*(174), 317–417.

———. (1935). *Mules and men.* Philadelphia, PA: J.B. Lippincott.

———. (1938). *Go tell my horse.* Philadephia, PA: J.B. Lippincott.

———. (1942). *Dust tracks on a road.* Champaign-Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Walker, A. (1975, March). In search of Zora Neale Hurston. *Ms. Magazine,* pp. 74–79, 84–89.

Husserl, Edmund

Edmund Husserl (1859–1938) was an influential German philosopher and the principal founder of transcendental phenomenology

Biography

Husserl was born in Prossnitz, Moravia, in 1859, into an assimilated Jewish family, which gave him a liberal view of religion (in 1886, he was baptized as a Lutheran and remained religious but nonconfessional for the rest of his life). Husserl did not excel in high school but eventually developed an interest in astronomy, which he pursued at the University of Leipzig, and mathematics, which he studied in Berlin and then in Vienna, where in 1882 he received a PhD with a dissertation on the calculus of variation. Husserl found particular inspiration in the teachings of two remarkable scholars: the mathematician Karl Weierstrass (1815–1897) at the University of Berlin and the philosopher Franz Brentano (1838–1917) at the University of Vienna. Husserl's writings have been said to combine Weierstrass's rigorous scientific thinking and Brentano's insights into human psychology. Husserl borrowed Brentano's use of the Scholastic notion of "intention" as the property of human mental activity to be about or directed toward something, whether or not that something exists. Over time, an increasingly complex notion of intentionality became for Husserl the foundation of his transcendental phenomenology.

Following Brentano's suggestion, in 1886, Husserl went to Halle to study with Carl Stumpf (1848–1936), a mathematician and philosopher who had become interested in the perception of space and sound. His *Habilitation* thesis *Über den Begriff der Zahl* ("On the Concept of Number"), written under Stumpf's supervision, became the basis for Husserl's first book, *Philosophie der Arithmetik* (Philosophy

of Arithmetic), published in 1891. In 1887, Husserl married Malvine Steinschneider, who was also from a Prossnitz Jewish family with a similar background (before the wedding, Malvine decided to follow Husserl's example and be baptized). Their three children—Elizabeth (known as "Elli"), Gerhart, and Wolfgang—were born between 1892 and 1895 in Halle.

Husserl's second book (which he dedicated to Stumpf) came out as two separate volumes with one main title *Logische Untersuchungen* (Logical Investigations) and two subtitles. The first volume (Prolegomena to Pure Logic), published in 1900, defines logic as the foundation of all theories and argues that it cannot be reduced to or explained through human psychology (the antipsychological argument). The second volume (Investigations on Phenomenology and the Theory of Knowledge) appeared in 1901 and is a comprehensive discussion of meaning-conferring acts (meaning-intentions) aimed at accounting for the ideal identity of meanings across contexts and speakers. Husserl's position is that when we understand an expression like *the Queen of England*, there is one essential content (the "meaning-intention") that we all share regardless of the kind of image or memory that such a linguistic expression might evoke in each of us. Throughout the book, in addition to proposing a formal ontology (a theory of the relation between a whole and its parts) and comparing traditional views of logic with his own, Husserl offers his own analysis of intentional experiences, from the act of wanting or liking something to the feeling of pain provoked by contact with extreme heat. Whether or not one agrees with his specific distinctions, these phenomenological analyses give us an appreciation of the analytical power of Husserl's approach.

Thanks to the interest generated by his *Logical Investigations*, in 1901, Husserl accepted a position at the University of Göttingen, where he refined his views on the special role of philosophy in providing the foundations of epistemological inquiry, including any kind of science. A major accomplishment during this period was the publication in 1913 of a new treatise titled *Ideen zu einer reinen Phänomenologie und phänomenologischen Philosophie* (Ideas for a Pure Phenomenology), now commonly known as *Ideen I*, or *Ideas* (Volume 1), because it was meant to be followed by two more volumes that never materialized during Husserl's lifetime. *Ideas* refined and expanded the theory first introduced in *Logical Investigations* and now called "pure phenomenology." Here, Husserl introduces the notion of "the natural standpoint" or "the natural attitude" (*die natürliche Einstellung*), the phenomenological reduction (made possible by the *épochè*, i.e., "suspension" or "bracketing" of the natural attitude), the discovery (made possible by the phenomenological reduction) of the transcendental Ego, and the more nuanced exploration of meaning-making acts through the notions of *noesis* (the process of knowing broadly conceived) and *noema* (plural *noemata*; the object of knowledge as such).

While at Göttingen, Husserl attracted a number of brilliant students and followers, including Adolf Reinach (1883–1917), who developed a theory of social acts in the domain of civil law that is a precursor of speech act theory, and Edith Stein (1892–1942), who in 1916 completed a dissertation about empathy (*Einfühlung*), published in 1917 as a book, which draws heavily on Husserl's views on the subject.

Husserl's efforts were finally fully recognized in 1916 with a chair in philosophy at the University of Freiburg. Unfortunately, this appointment came under the most difficult personal circumstances. In 1914, his two sons had been sent to war. The youngest, Wolfgang, was killed at Verdun in 1916. Gerhart was wounded a year later. Husserl himself fell ill from nicotine poisoning. Six months after Husserl delivered his inaugural lecture at Freiburg on "pure phenomenology" (May 1917), there was another tragic loss: The talented Adolf Reinach was killed in a battle in Flanders. In the meantime, Edith Stein had followed Husserl to Freiburg to transcribe and organize some of his stenographic lecture notes and manuscripts. After 2 years of hard and often frustrating work, she succeeded in producing what became Husserl's book on the consciousness of time, published in 1928 with little recognition of her contribution.

Husserl retired from Freiburg University in March 1928, after helping his former teaching assistant Martin Heidegger to succeed him. In a short time, however, the relationship between the two philosophers deteriorated for philosophical and political reasons, including Heidegger's support—publicly announced during his inaugural speech as rector of the university in 1933—for national socialism and its leader, Adolf Hitler.

Despite some health problems, including periods of profound depression, after his retirement Husserl remained intellectually active and had a strong desire to continue to write and refine his theory. In 1929, he went to Paris to deliver the lectures that became the *Cartesian Meditations* (first published in French in 1931), where he argued against a solipsistic view of his phenomenology and laid out the argument in favor of transcendental intersubjectivity. In 1935, he was invited to Vienna and Prague to deliver lectures, which were later included in the posthumous volume *Crisis of the European Sciences and Transcendental Phenomenology*, where he introduced the concept of *Lebenswelt* ("lifeworld") to characterize the pregiven, taken-for-granted world of both sense experience and thinking, that is, the world we inhabit when we are in what he had called "the natural attitude" in *Ideas*. More important, however, in *Crisis*, Husserl raises the issue of the limitations of the sciences in addressing the meaning of human existence. Anticipating later studies of laboratory work and scientific discovery, Husserl promoted the importance of going beyond what scientists consider *facts* to reveal what makes them into facts. He wrote, "Merely fact-minded sciences make merely fact-minded people" (*Crisis*, p. 6). For Husserl, then, toward the end of his life, transcendental phenomenology represented more than a theory of knowledge. It was his proposal for rescuing European civilization from irrationality gone violent and repressive.

The increasingly oppressive German racial laws eventually stripped Husserl not only of his right to teach but of his German citizenship as well. Without a passport, he was not allowed to travel freely, and, given his views on the universal properties of human consciousness, which did not square with Nazi claims of the superiority of the German race, he was also forbidden from publishing in Germany. He became ill in 1936 while revising his *Crisis* manuscript, was bedridden in 1937 due to a fall, and never fully recovered. He died on April 27, 1938, at the age of 79.

Husserl's wife Malvine and his assistant Eugen Fink succeeded in saving from the Nazis some 40,000 pages of shorthand lecture notes and unpublished manuscripts, plus about 10,000 pages of typewritten transcriptions that had been made during Husserl's lifetime by his assistants. With the help of the Franciscan priest Hermann Van Breda, those documents were sent to the Catholic University of Leuven, where the Husserl Archive was established in 1939. Since 1973, the hard work of dedicated scholars has produced more than 40 volumes of Husserl's works (in the *Husserliana* series). The translation of some of those volumes into English, French, Italian, and other languages has helped make Husserl's work known to an increasingly wider audience of humanists and social scientists. Husserl's finished and unfinished manuscripts demonstrate that he had something interesting and profound to say about a vast range of fundamental human activities, including knowing, thinking, theorizing, imagining, remembering, reflecting, empathizing, evaluating, and paying attention.

Husserl's Phenomenology

Even though the term *phenomenology* had been used by earlier writers, Husserl gave it a particular meaning, which he kept refining throughout his whole career. To engage in *a phenomenology of* our being in the world for Husserl meant to study how objects—broadly defined—are *given to us*. This means that we need to attend to what appears to us (the phenomena), their essential properties, and the role of our consciousness in recognizing them and making them into what they are—that is, constituting them. To engage in such an investigation, Husserl proposed to ignore the issue of whether or not something exists in the world and to focus instead on our experience of its essential qualities. By engaging in the phenomenological reduction, we are able to "bracket" our taken-for-granted world of the "natural attitude" so that we can examine in detail and without prejudice what is distinctive about a given entity "out there" (a tree in the garden, a friend's voice on the phone) or in our mind (the memory of a face, an excuse we are prepared to use) or about the ways in which we relate to such an entity (e.g., by having beliefs, wishes, preferences, feelings, and fantasies). To engage in phenomenological analysis of the kind proposed by Husserl, then, means to be able to identify the essential qualities of each experience in order to account for its distinctiveness. What makes remembering a trip among friends different from imagining it? What makes being tired after shoveling snow in front of our own house different from shoveling snow as a job? How is the anticipation of the feeling in my mouth while I am about to bite into a sandwich suddenly affected and changed

if I become aware of a homeless person watching me? Since observationally, in each of these cases, I might not be able to "see" what is different—a problem for the strictly "observational" sciences—I need to focus on the role played by my consciousness in providing an interpretation in response to or sometimes despite the sense data that are available to me. Through intentional acts of different levels of complexity (e.g., listening to a song, remembering someone's name, looking for a street name, feeling sorry for someone, etc.), we play an active role in assigning interpretations to perceived, sensuous data (*hyle*) as well as in interpreting culturally rich information. When we read from a text, we are exposed to sensuous data, but our natural attitude is to see those marks as *words* and not as lines or dots against a white or lighter background (in fact, we need to suspend our ordinary way of looking at a familiar script in order to attend to it as an aesthetic object). Similarly, when we hear people speak a familiar language, we do not hear "mere sounds." Instead, we hear *what they are saying*. Even when we do not understand the words (because we are too far or because people are speaking a foreign language we do not understand), we still know that a language (as opposed to gibberish) is being spoken. Husserl conceived phenomenology as a descriptive science that should allow people to distill out the essence of each of these lived experiences. The ultimate goal, however, is not the identification of one's *own* personal, subjective experience but a general, universal science of lived experiences *as such*.

In pursuing the *essential specific characteristics* of human experiences, Husserl identified a *transcendental ego*—the a priori constituting (pure) subject of all experiences—that partakes in a flow of consciousness. This is a stream, which Husserl discussed in his lectures on time consciousness as the "living" (*Lebende*) and later (in his lectures later published in *Analysis Concerning Passive and Active Synthesis*) as the "living present" (*lebendige Gegenwart*). Husserl's genetic method consists in the uncovering of the origins of our special way of being in the living present and attending to the surrounding world, often in a pre-predicative, pre-reflective, and perceptual mode—which he calls "passive." The living present is occupied by other human beings who participate in a simultaneous fashion (in a "pairing") in one's lifeworld.

Even though we cannot enter into another person's consciousness and have a first-person experience of what he or she is thinking or perceiving, in our everyday life we are able to have an intuitive sense of other people's goals, motivations, and even feelings. This is made possible through empathy (*Einfühlung*), a concept that Husserl borrowed from Theodor Lipps (1851–1914). Empathic apperception makes it possible to see another person not simply as a physical body (*Körper*) that has a certain weight, size, and shape but also and crucially as a lived body (*Leib*), which moves, reacts, and anticipates its surroundings in the ways in which our lived body would. When I see another person moving a hand to grasp a cup, I have an immediate, embodied, intuitive understanding of that action as something that I myself might do were I in the same position. This is where the concept of intersubjectivity comes in as the foundation of both objectivity and human sociality. The world is "objectified" not by the simultaneous occupation of the same viewpoint—that is, you and I do not need to be in the same place at the same time to know that the world is the same for the two of us—or by the complete matching of our perceptions, beliefs, or feelings but by the possibility of "trading places" (*Platzwechsel*). My lifeworld by definition presupposes the lifeworld of others. I can assume that the cup I am seeing from my point of view has another side that is visible to another person standing *over there* and that were that person to stand where I am, he or she would see it as I do. This is *transcendental intersubjectivity*, the condition for a shared objective world and for interdependence among humans. I am an alter ego for someone else and, vice versa, he or she is my alter ego. Intersubjectivity is implicated in everything we do and everything we touch, see, hear, smell, grasp, or read, including this text, which assumes a community of readers invested in approximating each other's stream of thought through analogy and a shared world of texts, authors, ideas, and interests.

Husserl's Legacy

Husserl's ideas spread into the social sciences in the United States, thanks to Alfred Schütz (1899–1959) and Aron Gurwitsch (1901–1973), who, with other European scholars who had escaped Nazi-dominated Western Europe, taught at the New School for Social Research in New York during and immediately after World War Two. It was partly thanks to interactions with Schütz and Gurwitsch

that Harold Garfinkel (1917–2011) developed the field of ethnomethodology, which adopted some of Husserl's key concepts, such as the lifeworld and the method of bracketing. Over the past 2 decades, a number of anthropologists, including Michael Jackson, Robert Desjarlais, and C. Jason Throop, have adopted or revised some of Husserl's key concepts to analyze culture-specific expressions of pain, suffering, illness, and loss. These and other authors have suggested that some of Husserl's concepts offer themselves for an immediate translation into anthropological discourse. The notion of "natural attitude," for example, can easily be recast as the "cultural attitude," namely, the taken-for-granted way of being in the world that ethnographers try to capture in their writing. An exploration of Husserl's writings on intersubjectivity can help us describe the tension between autonomy and sociality, or between individual resilience and interrelatedness, that has been documented in so many societies around the world. It can also illuminate contemporary discussions of the phylogenetic and ontogenetic roots of human sociality. Husserl's writings about temporality and a sense of a shared objective world can help ethnographers grappling with how individuals and social groups establish continuity while recognizing change through birth rites, marriages, funerals, and other public events. Just like an otherwise lifeless ink mark on a piece of paper acquires meaning through an intentional act produced by someone who "sees" it as a "word," so does a gathering of people around a newborn, a young couple, or a dead body *constitute* the newborn, the couple, or the dead, respectively, into a being(s) of a certain kind and the moment as one within a series of moments that make up the "whole" of the human cycle and, on a grander scale, the history of the community and its tradition. Husserl's writings provide myriad insights into the unfolding interplay of subjectivity and intersubjectivity in the constitution of self and society.

Alessandro Duranti

See also Benjamin, Deconstruction; Derrida, Jacques; Walter; Phenomenology

Further Readings

Desjarlais, R., & Throop, C. J. (2011). Phenomenological approaches in anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 40,* 87–102.

Donohoe, J. (2004). *Husserl on ethics and intersubjectivity. From static to genetic phenomenology.* Amherst, NY: Humanity Books.

Duranti, A. (2010). Husserl, intersubjectivity and anthropology. *Anthropological Theory, 10*(1), 1–20.

Husserl, E. (1960). *Cartesian meditations: An introduction to phenomenology* (D. Cairns, Trans.). The Hague, Netherlands: Martinus Nijhoff.

———. (1970). *The crisis of European sciences and transcendental phenomenology* (with an introduction by D. Carr, Trans.). Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.

———. (1991). *On the phenomenology of the consciousness of internal time (1893–1917)* (J. B. Brough, Trans.). Dordrecht, Netherlands: Kluwer Academic.

Jackson, M. (1998). *Minima ethnographica: Intersubjectivity and the anthropological project.* Chicago, IL: The University of Chicago Press.

Moran, D. (2005). *Edmund Husserl: Founder of phenomenology.* Cambridge, UK: Polity.

Moran, D., & Cohen, J. (2012). *The Husserl dictionary.* London, UK: Continuum.

Throop, C. J., & Murphy, K. M. (2002). Bourdieu and phenomenology. *Anthropological Theory, 2,* 185–207.

Zahavi, D. (2001). *Husserl and transcendental intersubjectivity* (E. A. Behnke, Trans.). Athens: Ohio University Press.

Hymes, Dell

Dell Hathaway Hymes (1927–2009), a linguistic anthropologist, folklorist, and educational administrator, was a key figure in the historical development of linguistic anthropology as a distinct subfield of anthropology.

Biography

Hymes was born in Portland, Oregon, in 1927 to a family that, like many during the period, endured the hardship of the Depression. After attending public schools there and graduating high school at the age of 17, Hymes attended Reed College. However, his studies there were interrupted after only 1 year for 2 years of military service in (South) Korea. When he returned in 1947, he resumed his studies while supported by the G.I. Bill and eventually earned his BA in 1950. His Reed experience provided a foundation for his later academic work since it allowed him to

combine his emerging interests in anthropology and English. Also significantly, he began a long association with his mentor, David H. French (1918–1994), an anthropologist who introduced the young Hymes to the Kiksht—a Chinookan-speaking people who resided on the Warm Springs Reservation in central Oregon.

Hymes went to Indiana University to pursue a PhD in anthropology and folklore. At this point in time, Indiana University was a virtual mecca for various innovative approaches to the study of language and communication well beyond the American structuralism of the linguist Leonard Bloomfield. Faculty appointments of C. F. Voegelin and, later, Thomas Sebeok and others helped focus and develop academic interests in anthropological linguistics, psycholinguistics, sociolinguistics, and semiotics. Indiana University hosted major national and international conferences on psycholinguistics, sociolinguistics, and linguistic style, as well as several summer institutes of the Linguistic Society of America. Thus, at Indiana, Hymes was immersed in the flow of many emerging currents in the study of language and met influential figures such as the anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss, the poet and critic Kenneth Burke, and the linguist Roman Jakobson. Hymes completed his doctoral dissertation, *The Language of the Kathlamet Chinook*, in 1955, while working as a postdoctoral fellow with Harry Hoijer, a leading linguistic anthropologist of Athabascan languages and a founder of the Department of Anthropology of the University of California, Los Angeles. From there, Hymes traveled to Harvard to serve as an instructor and assistant professor from 1955 to 1960. These new experiences further positioned Hymes on the cutting edge of emerging and converging interests in anthropology, folklore, and linguistics and provided appropriate resources for him to craft his first major book-length publication, the edited volume *Language in Culture and Society: A Reader in Linguistics and Anthropology* (1964). This massive volume (exceeding 750 pages) is often regarded as the first reader in the developing field of linguistic anthropology. Hymes's editorial goal was to demonstrate the often unacknowledged relevance of language and the many ways in which the study of language "intersects almost every concern of the anthropologist . . . and to show that the field has a noteworthy history, a lively present, and a future of promise" (p. xxii). Though many of the nearly 70 chapters were written by nonanthropologists, the volume is clearly a clarion call for a socioculturally centered view of language at a time when the influential linguist Noam Chomsky was constructing an asocial linguistics preoccupied not with actual speech communities but with idealized, perfectly homogeneous speech communities, which displayed none of the complexities and limitations of actual speakers.

From 1960 to 1965, Hymes joined the anthropology department at the University of California, Berkeley, as an associate professor and later as a full professor. Berkeley provided an especially appropriate environment of language and communication for scholars across departments, including Erving Goffman, John Gumperz, Susan Ervin-Tripp, and John Searle. This type of interdisciplinary array of scholars from anthropology, education, folklore, linguistics, philosophy, psychology, and sociology provided the basis for the foundational symposium "The Ethnography of Communication" at the American Anthropological Association Meetings in 1963 and for later publications. During this period, Hymes was the tireless author of many programmatic articles that created a sense of unity and organization in an emerging science of the study of language usage. In a manner both eloquent and persistent, Hymes argued for the importance of and the need for such inquiry at a time when Chomsky's emphasis on nativism and formal universals seemed to restrict linguistic investigations to concerns about the nature of a speaker's innate grammatical "competence."

In 1965, Hymes began a 22-year career at the University of Pennsylvania, where he was a full professor in the Department of Anthropology and later in the Departments of Folklore, Linguistics, and Sociology, before accepting the position of dean of the Graduate School of Education. At the University of Pennsylvania, his intellectual interests further developed in interaction with colleagues such as Erving Goffman, Ward Goodenough, and William Labov. During this period, Hymes's mentoring efforts helped develop a distinguished cohort of younger scholars who would further develop the ethnography of communication and the other fields that he had so steadfastly promoted. During this period, Hymes's disciplinary influence was recognized in his election as president of four academic societies: the American Folklore Society (1973–1974), the

Linguistic Society of America (1982), the American Anthropological Association (1983), and the Society for Applied Linguistics (1986–1987).

Completing his service as dean, Hymes moved to the University of Virginia, where he served as a professor of anthropology. There, he renewed and fortified earlier interests in Native American verbal art, verse analysis of narrative discourse, and related areas in a field of inquiry he variously called anthropological philology or ethnopoetics. These interests preoccupied him into retirement in 1998. He died at the age of 83 as Commonwealth Professor Emeritus of Anthropology at the University of Virginia.

Range of Research and Major Works

Hymes deserves much of the credit for shaping linguistic anthropology in the United States during the second half of the 20th century. His efforts were crucial in the transformation of linguistic anthropology from a "service" subfield that provided the necessary linguistic expertise to archaeologists and biological and cultural anthropologists to a field of linguistic inquiry that was guided by anthropological theories and concerns. His mentor at Indiana University, C. F. Voegelin, had in an influential 1949 article critiqued both a linguistics "without meaning" and an anthropological study of culture "without words." Voegelin's essay deftly analyzed the deficiencies of Bloomfieldian linguistics, in which meaning was ignored in favor of the formal rigor possible in phonological and morphological analysis. It illuminated the lack of a linguistic emphasis in the British social anthropology–influenced American anthropology of the 1940s and 1950s. However, the essay neither mobilized scholars nor demonstrated the potential of greater linguistic emphasis for anthropologists. But Hymes wrote voluminously to make the case for a socioculturally based linguistics and an anthropology that properly recognized the many functions provided by language—as a medium of data collection, as a theoretical model, and as a cultural practice—in anthropological projects. In addition to his field-nucleating reader in linguistic anthropology, *Language in Culture and Society*, Hymes wrote extensively and influentially in three main areas—the ethnography of communication, ethnopoetics, and education and communication.

Hymes's pioneering efforts in creating a field of inquiry, which he named the ethnography of speaking (later generalized to the more inclusive focus on communication), began with his recognition of how the study of language use had been neglected in both linguistics and anthropology. Linguistic grammars specified what was structurally possible but not what was actually said and by whom, to whom, and under what contexts. Anthropologists, on the other hand, demonstrated the cultural relativity of technology, kinship, and religion but somehow neglected communication. Anthropologists by the mid-20th century had become familiar with the Sapir-Whorf hypothesis, also known as "linguistic relativity," but Hymes deftly demonstrated that recognition of the relativity of linguistic structure needed to be supplemented by appreciating the cultural relativity of language usage. He argued persuasively for recognizing the importance of the social, contextual, and cultural criteria that members used in producing and evaluating culturally appropriate speech. At a time when Chomskyan linguistics focused exclusively on grammatical order, Hymes encouraged anthropologists to understand that cultural concerns mattered critically in determining what counted as appropriate communication. In 1964, Hymes and his colleague John Gumperz coedited a landmark collection of articles from the first major conference on the ethnography of communication as a special issue of the *American Anthropologist*. In a fortified and expanded version, a similar collection was developed by these coeditors in 1972 as *Directions in Sociolinguistics: The Ethnography of Communication*. This collection included work by social anthropologists (Barth), sociologists (Fishman, Garfinkel), conversational analysts (Sacks, Schegloff), sociolinguists (Labov), educational researchers (Bernstein), ethnographers (Frake), psychologists (Ervin-Tripp), and folklorists (Dundes), in an effort to present a clear, socioculturally centered alternative to Chomsky's asocial emphasis on the formal universals of language. These collections and the movement they represented did much to allow linguistic anthropology to shed its image as a "service" subfield, as Hymes and other scholars succeeded in an educational campaign to more fully recognize and confront the many roles of language and linguistic analysis in anthropological research.

Another key area in Hymes's research was "ethnopoetics"—the use of linguistic and anthropological analysis in the understanding and interpretation of narrative and other verbal art. Hymes's interest

in this area was represented early in his research with the 1959 publication of "Myth and Tale Titles of the Lower Chinook," and it continued throughout his life, most visibly in the two major collections of essays on this topic—*"In Vain I Tried to Tell You": Essays in Native American Ethnopoetics* (1981) and "*Now I Only Know So Far*": *Essays in Ethnopoetics* (2003). A major accomplishment in Hymes's work in this area was his recognition of what he called "measured verse"—linguistic patterning other than by rhyme and meter, which often involved patterns of repetition of discourse features and forms of linguistic parallelism. Preferring to work on materials indigenous to his primary research area, Hymes often studied previously documented narratives from Chinookan and other North Pacific communities. His detailed analysis and careful translation of narratives like "Seal and Her Younger Brother Lived There" revealed how attention to linguistic and cultural detail could provide a basis for a more ethnographically relevant reading of these texts—a reading that took into account the identities of the performers and their audiences.

A third area of sustained research, one that represents the intersection of Hymes's abiding interest in oral narrative with his service to the field of education, may be termed "narrative inequality." In *Ethnography, Linguistics, Narrative Inequality: Toward an Understanding of Voice* (1996), he examines written and oral narratives of Native Americans and African Americans and explores how many educational institutions enforce ideals based on literacy and social class, which reproduce class differences. Attempting to provide alternative goals, Hymes develops an ethnopoetic notion of voice as the individual's preferred languages and styles for the narrative construction of self and society.

In addition to these main areas of sustained research, Hymes also made significant contributions as a researcher, programmatic writer, and book and journal editor, including work on topics such as the history of linguistics and linguistic anthropology—*Studies in the History of Linguistics* (1974) and *Essays in the History of Linguistic Anthropology* (1983)—and studies of language contact and creolization—*Pidginization and Creolization of Languages* (1971), an edited volume. In work such as *The Use of Computers in Anthropology* (1965) and the edited volume *Reinventing Anthropology* (1972), he foreshadowed contemporary interests. In the latter work, he and other authors asked the radical question "If anthropology ceased to exist, would it have to be reinvented?" The volume explores the uses of activist anthropology in advocacy for the people anthropologists study and as a more general basis for a socially engaged anthropology. As in other aspects of Hymes's oeuvre, he displays here what has been described as his career-long linkage of "ethnography and democracy."

Paul V. Kroskrity

See also Humanistic Anthropology; Phenomology; Sociolinguistics; Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Blommaert, J. (2009). Ethnography and democracy: Hymes's political theory of language. *Text & Talk, 29,* 257–276.

Silverstein, M. (2010). Dell Hathaway Hymes. *Language, 86,* 933–939.

Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)

Between its foundation in 1925 and the 1960s, the Institute of Ethnology of the University of Paris was the only place where French anthropologists received training. With the notable exception of Claude Lévi-Strauss, every single French anthropologist received a certificate from it.

Background

Until the birth of the Institute of Ethnology, elements of a proto-discipline of anthropology were scattered in places that had specific traditions: The National Institute of Living Oriental Languages and Civilizations (1795), The Chair of Anthropology of the Natural History Museum (1856), The Paul Broca Paris School of Anthropology (1876), The Colonial School (1884), and the religious studies of the École Pratique des Hautes Études (1885).

The university hegemony of Durkheim and his followers of the French school of sociology changed this situation. Until World War II, 45% of their journal *l'Année Sociologique* was concerned with anthropological themes (the first issue opened with Durkheim's article on the origin of the incest taboo) or with reports on exotic countries (under the name of "primitive sociology"). Contributors included Henri Hubert, Robert Hertz, Marcel Granet, Célestin Bouglé, and Marcel Mauss.

The creation of the Institute of Ethnology originated with three men: Marcel Mauss, Durkheim's nephew, who was director of the Study of Religions of Uncivilized Peoples at l'École Pratique des Hautes Études; Lucien Lévy-Bruhl, professor at the Sorbonne, who intended "to define mental types including archaic types"; and Paul Rivet, a physician, naturalist, and linguist, assigned by the army to the National Museum of Natural History.

Mauss, Lévy-Bruhl, and Rivet were socialists who opposed the monarchist and antirepublican scholars of the Ethnographic Society of Paris (publishers of the journal *l'Ethnographie*) and the rightist republicans at the Anthropological Society of Paris (who published the journal *l'Anthropologie*). Unlike these latter, Mauss, Lévy-Bruhl, and Rivet were profoundly antiracist but still favored strong colonial engagement based on their idea of the universality of the Revolution of 1789.

Early Years

The victory of a left-wing coalition government in the elections of 1924 opened the way for the three to organize the Institute of Ethnology, which opened in 1925. Funded by the French colonial office and housed at the Institute of Geography of the University of Paris, the institute was responsible for coordinating the teaching of ethnological studies, research, and publication. In 1926, the collection of *Travaux et Mémoires de l'Institut d'Ethnologie* (Works and Reports of the Institute of Ethnology) published its first titles. Around a hundred titles followed, and the series continues today.

The Institute of Ethnology began granting a "certificate in ethnography" in 1927, to which was added in 1928 a "certificate of anthropology." Certificates

were granted for the successful completion of a yearlong series of courses and exams. The institute aimed primarily to educate colonial civil servants, but there were none in its first classes. Instead, the classes were filled with interested amateurs. Of the 26 students who registered, only 3 took the end-of-course examinations and received certificates. However, the institute's fortunes improved during succeeding years. The ability to issue certificates led to its success against its rival, the School of Anthropology of Paris. This being a private institution was unable to issue certificates that could be part of a degree recognized by the state. The eminent position of the Institute of Ethnology was ensured after the election of Rivet to the Chair of Anthropology at the Museum of Natural History in 1928. This allowed him to create a formal linkage between the institute and the Museum of Ethnography of the Trocadéro. Rivet's election was followed in February 1931 by the election of Mauss to the Collège de France, the most prestigious French institution. The enrollment at the institute grew from an initial class of 21 in 1926 to 256 by the start of World War II. Although most of these students did not take the examinations and receive the certificate, all of the future French anthropologists did.

Providing certification in ethnography and anthropology cost the state little, since the institute merely coordinated courses already existing at other institutions. At the start of 1927, the program included courses from Mauss (ethnography); Marcel Cohen (linguistics); Maurice Delafosse (Africa), replaced after his death by Henri Labouret (African ethnography) and Mlle. L. Homburger (African languages); and Jean Przyluski (Asia Pacific), a student of Mauss, and optional lectures by Arnold van Gennep (folklore) and Rene Maunier (colonial law). In 1928, the anthropology certificate added courses from Rivet (physical anthropology), Paul William (psychophysiology of man and anthropoids), Étienne Rabaud (biological anthropology and zoology), and Léonce Joleaud (geology of human paleontology and Quaternary time). In 1929, the institute offered a seminar given by Abbot Henri Breuil on "exotic prehistory" and courses by Alain Demangeon (human geography) and Jacques Millot (comparative physiology of the human races).

These scholars were the pillars of the teaching program of the institute until World War II. The list of students during the same period included Paul Mus, Jacques Faublée, Michel Leiris, André Schaeffner, Denise Paulme, Deborah Lifshitz, George Soustelle, Georgette Soustelle, Louis Dumont, André Leroi-Gourhan, Robert Gessain, Germaine Tillion, Jean-Pierre Vernant, Paul-Emile Victor, André Haudricourt, George Devereux, Germaine Dieterlen, Renee Maupoil, Leopold Senghor Segar, Jean Paul Lebeuf, Paul Levy, Roger Caillois, Pierre Métais, and many others (but not Lévi-Strauss). In most cases, students from law, philosophy, literature, or medicine were drawn to the institute because they were interested in a certificate that was exotic and supposedly easy to get. They were recruited to work as volunteers at the Museum of the Trocadéro. After obtaining their *licence* (equivalent to the U.S. bachelor's degree), students would enroll for a PhD (there was no master's degree at the time). Mauss and Rivet used their connections both in the French government and with the Rockefeller Foundation to find funding for students to do fieldwork. Fieldwork conducted by the institute's students was highly variable. There were fieldwork teams (e.g., the Griaule or Victor missions), others worked as married couples (e.g., Lévi-Strauss and Leroi-Gourhan), and occasionally, some worked as individuals. Some fieldwork lasted only a few days and some several years. Despite this diversity, all aimed to collect objects for the Ethnographic Museum and gather information for writing doctoral theses. Between 1926 and 1939, there were 104 missions. The first was undertaken in 1926, by M. Gromand (a student of Mauss), who traveled to Morocco to study the Berber. The fieldwork missions of this era fit into three broad categories: (1) missions carried out by colonial personnel, (2) missions carried out by students who studied with Mauss before the birth of the institute, and (3) missions carried out by the first generation of institute students. One of the most spectacular of these was the extravagant yacht mission sponsored by Count Étienne and Monique de Ganay. Between 1934 and 1936, the yacht crossed Oceania from Solomon Islands to New Guinea, bringing back to France thousands of objects that were deposited in the Trocadéro Museum.

In 1935, Rivet was elected deputy for Paris's 5th arrondissement. He was the first candidate to be supported by both communist and socialist voters. This combination of parties on the Left enabled the formation of the Popular Front government in 1936. Already chairman of the Anti-Fascist Committee, Rivet's political activism was intense. His deputy,

Georges River, took care of the Museum, and Mauss took care of the institute, which after 1938 was subsidized by the Ministry of Education. The objects brought back by the various missions were presented in numerous exhibitions at the Trocadéro Museum, which became the Museum of Man in 1938.

World War II and After

After the German defeat and occupation of France in 1940, many of the scholars associated with the institute went into exile: Rivet to Columbia, the Soustelles to London, and Alfred Metraux and Lévi-Strauss to the United States. Some joined the resistance and died in the war. When anti-Semitic laws were promulgated in 1941, Mauss was banned from teaching and was replaced first by Marcel Griaule and then later by Rev. Maurice Leenhart. Henri Vallois was appointed to replace Rivet as director of the Museum of Man in 1942. He, in turn, appointed Léon Pales as deputy director for physical anthropology and Griaule as secretary general of the Institute of Ethnology. Students of this era included Gilbert Rouget (b. 1916), Georges Balandier (b. 1920), Georges Condominas (b. 1920), Jean Poirier (b. 1921), Jean Guiart (b. 1925), and Jean Rouch (1917–2004).

On December 17, 1941, the Board of the Institute of Ethnology requested the establishment of a Chair of Anthropology in the Faculty of Arts at the Sorbonne. Griaule was elected to this position and thus became director of the institute. Reports of this era show that the institute had about 80 students each year. Most of these were French, but other nationalities were also represented. The French community of anthropologists, including physical anthropologists and prehistorians, had fewer than 50 people before the war. Many of these were still present after the war. However, Lévy-Bruhl died in 1939, and Mauss, although he survived until 1950, had become senile around 1943. Thus, of the institute's founders, only Rivet remained after the Liberation. He not only returned to his positions at the institute and the Museum of Man, but he also became very active in politics. Elected to Parliament in 1945, he held positions including vice president of the Foreign Affairs Committee of the National Assembly, chairman of the radio broadcasting committee, and vice president of the League of Human Rights. He was involved in the founding of the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization as well as the reorganization of the National Center for Scientific Research. Thus, he had little time for the institute.

In 1949 and 1950, the institute had a teaching staff of 13, including Lévi-Strauss, Denise Paulme, Marcel Maget, Paul Mus, and Leroi-Gourhan. In 1945, an associate professorship of colonial ethnology had been created in the Geography Faculty of Lyon for André Leroi-Gourhan. Leroi-Gourhan was a student of Mauss who was decorated for the role he had played in the Resistance. Leroi-Gourhan focused on prehistory, often bringing his students to archaeological sites. However, his most important impact was on anthropological education. In 1946, he created the Centre de Formation a la Recherche en Ethnologie (CFRE; the Center for Training in Ethnological Research), a joint program with the Museum of Man, and the Office of Overseas Scientific and Technical Research. Students interested in the discipline during their *licence*, had now to complete their training, with two more years of study, before working on a thesis. The CFRE was in fact an extension of the teaching of the institute without being officially a part of it. The core of the teaching staff included Leroi-Gourhan himself, Jean Poirier, René Granai, Raoul Hartweg, Pierre Métais, and André Haudricourt. The program covered museology, human geography, anthropology, and ethnology, and included writing a thesis based on fieldwork in France. In 1946–1947, 15 students enrolled in CFRE, but only 9 passed the tests for the degree. By 1947–1948, applications had grown to 30. Eighteen students were admitted, but again relatively few of them passed the examinations and received degrees.

Twice, in 1926 and 1932, Mauss had unsuccessfully proposed the creation of a Section of Economics and Social Sciences in the École Pratique des Hautes Études. Anxious to develop the social sciences in France, the Rockefeller Foundation created it in 1947; and finally, the Ministry of Education gave its financial support in 1951. The initial faculty consisted mainly of historians (including Lucien Febvre and Fernand Braudel), who were joined by social scientists, including the anthropologists Lévi-Strauss, Roger Bastide, and Jacques Soustelle (who soon joined the government as Minister of Information). In 1950, Lévi-Strauss succeeded Leenhard, becoming director of the center for the Study of Religions of People without writing at the École Practique

des Haute Études. Lévi-Strauss became politically powerful in the new Economics and Social Sciences section, which was directed by Braudel, who, like Lévi-Strauss, had spent time in Brazil. Between 1953 and 1960, a generation of new young scholars, including Balandier, Paulme, and Condominas, were hired. The establishment created laboratories whose research missions were subsidized by the Rockefeller Foundation, and later by the Ford Foundation, and it offered an alternative education to that of the Institute of Ethnology and the CFRE of Leroi-Gourhan. When Griaule died in 1956, his Sorbonne chair was taken over by Leroi-Gourhan, and a second chair of ethnology was inaugurated by Roger Bastide in 1958. Pierre Jean Servier and Pierre Métais then received associate professorships in the University of Bordeaux (1953) and Nice (1965), and positions were created in Strasbourg, Lille, Montpellier, and other locations throughout France.

At that time, Leroi-Gourhan and Lévi-Strauss (elected to the Collège de France in 1959), codirected the Institute of Ethnology, but the discipline was already fragmented, and by the time of Rivet's death in 1958, the institute had lost power in the discipline. If it had lost hegemony over the organization of teaching and research, the institute had also lost its monopoly on publications as several collections of books and professional journals had appeared. In 1965, the CFRE was administratively attached to the Institute of Ethnology, but from 1966 to 1967, the Department of Sociology and Anthropology, led by Eric De Dampierre at Paris X Nanterre (now Paris West University Nanterre La Défense), and the Department of Ethnology at the Jussieu campus (now Pierre and Marie Curie University, Paris VI), led by Robert Jaulin (both ex-students of Lévi-Strauss), also offer *licences* in ethnology. This division of the field was further established after the May 1968 movement, and the Higher Education Reform Act reorganized teaching and research in independent units. These developments led Leroi-Gourhan to question the ability of the institute to operate in the new framework, and to Lévi-Strauss's resignation as codirector. Henri Raulin, Jean Guiart, and Claude Tardits were successive secretaries general of the institute, which was now reduced to its publications. In 1973, the now defunct institute left the University of Paris to become part of the National Museum of Natural History.

Gérald Gaillard

See also Durkheim, Émile; Griaule, Marcel; Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien; Mauss, Marcel; Musée de l'Homme; Rivet, Paul; Rouch, Jean

Further Readings

Blumenson, M. (1977). *The Vildé affair: Beginnings of the French Resistance*. Boston, MA: Houghton Mifflin.

Gaillard, G. (1989). Chronique de la recherche ethnologique dans son rapport au Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique 1925–1980 [Chronicle of anthropological research in its report to the National Center for Scientific Research 1925–1980]. *Cahiers pour l'Histoire du C.N.R.S.* (éditions du C.N.R.S), No. 3, 85–126.

———. (1990). *Répertoire de l'ethnologie Française, 1950–1970: Cadres institutionnels et activités de l'ethnologie Française entre 1950 et 1970* [Directory of French ethnology, 1950–1970: Institutional frameworks and the activities of French ethnology between 1950 and 1970] (2 vols.). Paris, France: Edition du Centre national de la Recherche scientifique. Retrieved from http://www.univ-lille1.fr/bustl-grisemine/pdf/rapports/G2003-27.pdf

Griaule, M. (1942). Rapport sur l'activité de l'Institut pendant l'année scolaire 1940–1941 [Report on the activities of the institute during the academic year 1940–1941]. *Annales de l'université de Paris, 17,* 318–319.

Karady, V. (1981). French ethnology and the Durkheimian breakthrough. *Journal of the Anthropological Society of Oxford, 12,* 165–176.

Leroi-Gourhan, A. (1951). *Rapport 1949–1950 sur le centre de formation à la recherche en ethnologie* [1949–1950 Report on the training centre for research in ethnology] (5 pp.). Paris, France: Musée de l'Homme.

Lévy-Bruhl, L. (1925). L'institut d'ethnologie de Paris [The Institute of Ethnology in Paris]. *Revue d'Ethnographie et de tradition populaire, 23–24,* 233–236.

———. (1927). L'institut d'ethnologie pendant l'année scolaire, 1925–1926 [The Institute of Ethnology during the academic year 1925–1926]. *Annales de l'Université de Paris, 2*(2), 90–95.

———. (1939). L'institut d'ethnologie pendant l'année scolaire, 1936–1937 [The Institute of Ethnology during the academic year 1936–1937]. *Annales de l'Université de Paris, 14*(1), 52–59.

Mazon, B. (1988). *Aux origines de l'Ephess: Le rôle du mécénat américan (1920–1960)* [The origins of Ephess: The role of American philanthropy (1920–1960)]. Paris, France: le Cerf. (Preface by P. Bourdieu)

Rivet, P. (1940). L'ethnologie en France [Ethnology in France]. *Bulletin du Muséeum national d'Histoire naturelle, 12,* 38–52.

J

Jakobson, Roman O.

Roman Osipovich Jakobson (1896–1982) was a Russian-born linguist, literary theoretician, and semiotician.

Biography and Major Works

Jakobson was born on October 11, 1896, in Moscow and died on July 18, 1982, in Cambridge, Massachusetts. As an undergraduate at the philological faculty of Moscow University, he focused on Slavic studies and graduated, in 1918, with a master's degree for his work on Russian dialectology. Linguistics at that time was dominated by neogrammarians, who advocated a strictly genetic and historical approach that ignored the fact that the parts of language, in particular the sound system, form an internally cohesive system that regulates sound shifts or linguistic borrowing while being simultaneously tied to its use, to communication. On the other hand, Jakobson appreciated a model of language that treated it as an object of analysis as well as a creative tool rather than just a conduit of preexisting thoughts or a transparent window onto the object world. By the time Jakobson completed his undergraduate studies, he and his friends had become exposed to several key developments in the arts and sciences. But it was the new approaches to the study of language, in particular the work of the Swiss linguist Ferdinand de Saussure, that drew attention to the internal structure of language and provided a systematic, conceptual framework to describe it. Jakobson is often credited with being the first, in 1929, to use the term *structuralism*.

In 1915, Jakobson, together with his friends, established the Moscow Linguistics Circle and shortly thereafter, in Saint Petersburg, the Society for the Study of Poetic Language. Together known as Russian Formalism, these organizations promoted a programmatic approach to language and, in particular, verbal art. They brought together linguists, folklorists, literary scholars, and writers who emphasized the analysis of the intrinsic properties of literature and poetry as autonomous modes of expression that engage language in ways distinct from language's other uses. Jakobson, himself a poet, would train his analytical skills on the language of poetry, and it can be safely argued that it was from this vantage point that so much of his contributions to linguistics derive.

From 1920 until 1939, Jakobson lived in Czechoslovakia. He became fluent in Czech (he was already bilingual in Russian and French) and a close friend of avant-garde artists, poets, and playwrights. In 1926, he helped found the Prague Linguistic Circle, considered by many as one of the pivotal moments in 20th-century linguistics and aesthetics and the cradle of structuralism. In 1930, he received his doctorate from Prague University and, from 1933 to 1939, taught at Masaryk University in Brno. Many of Jakobson's groundbreaking studies in Slavic linguistics and poetics and his initial forays into general linguistics date from this period. Among them is his groundbreaking work with his colleague Nikolai S. Trubetzkoy in phonology, which first defined phonemes in terms of their distinctive

features that are both relationally invariant and yet work in consort with other units of sound, with which they form binary sets.

In 1939, Jakobson fled Nazi-occupied Prague together with his second wife, Svatava Pírková-Jakobson (a Czech folklorist), first to Copenhagen and Oslo, where he lectured and met with the Danish linguist Louis Hjelmslev, and then, in 1941, to Uppsala (Sweden). His pioneering work on child language acquisition and aphasia dates from these years. Both topics would reveal the intrinsic relationship between the brain's cognitive functions, the developmental logic of phonology's distinctive features, and the language of poetry. Jakobson asserted that the key figures of speech, metaphor and metonymy are present in all modes of language and thought and that they form part of the brain's cognitive and linguistic functions, a point widely accepted today.

After a brief stay in Sweden, Jakobson arrived in New York in 1941, where he taught at the École Libre des Hautes Études and later at Columbia University. A refuge for many exiled European artists and scholars, New York was a fertile crossroads of ideas and friendships that would define an era. Jakobson met Franz Boas and Benjamin Lee Whorf, who would introduce him to linguistic anthropology, in particular to the work of Edward Sapir. It was also while teaching at the École Libre that he first met Claude Lévi-Strauss, 12 years his junior, who attended his lectures on sound and meaning. The fundamentally holistic model of the American anthropologists dovetailed nicely with Jakobson's own, hierarchical understanding of language as a total phenomenon, as did their investigation into the relationship between language, thought, and culture. The close relationship between the two is not coincidental. Both schools of thought share the same historical source, namely, the German tradition associated with Alexander von Humboldt and Immanuel Kant.

Jakobson moved to Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1949, where he was offered a professorship at Harvard in Slavic and general linguistics and where he would make his home with Svatava-Pírková and, later, his third wife, Krystýna Pomorská, herself a distinguished Slavicist. In 1957, he also joined the MIT faculty as head of the Center of Communication Science. Among the many publications that appeared during the postwar years, several stand out as pivotal to the development of a general theory of signs (semiotics), to the study of verbal art, and, in particular, to the development of linguistic and cultural anthropology. *Fundamentals of Language*, with Morris Hale (1956), marks the culmination of his long interest in the distinctive features that constitute the phonology of a given language. Instead of phonetic description, which focuses on the points of articulation (their human physiology), Jakobson, the student of verbal art, was drawn to the acoustic quality of the sound itself, noting that individual phonemes are distinguished from each other by the presence or absence of a feature (such as pitch), together forming a multidimensional grid of binary oppositions that define a language's phonological system and that, additionally, have a distinct semantic aspect (e.g., the *i* in "high" is pitched high, whereas the *o* in "low" has a low pitch).

His discovery of the American pragmatist philosopher and logician Charles Sanders Peirce's sign typology—symbol, index, and icon—allowed Jakobson to expand on de Saussure's distinction between the signifier (the sound) and the signified (the sense). The indexical sign operates by using a part of the signified (the sense) as the signifier, the form of the sign. In this relationship of contiguity (whether physical, special, or temporal), a part stands for a whole; for example, smoke is an indexical sign of fire. On the other hand, an iconic sign works through the similarity or likeness between the two parts of the sign, as, for example, a portrait painting stands in for the person depicted. Two important features about this expanded typology reinforce Jakobson's view of language. First, the underlying mechanisms of the index and icon correspond to the two fundamental figures of speech, metonymy and metaphor, respectively. Second, the relationship between the signifier and the signified is motivated and not arbitrary. Where this relationship could be thought of as given and natural, it is established by habit and is culturally relative. In fact, as Jakobson never tires of emphasizing, the two sides of the linguistic sign (symbol in Peirce's terminology) are also formed by habit and are culturally relative. Contrary to de Saussure, Jakobson argues that the very phonological makeup of a language can operate at the level of syntax and meaning in a nonarbitrary, relatively motivated way. And while this is best realized in poetry, Jakobson shows that it is present in nonpoetic language as well. For example, the word

long sounds long in contrast to *short*, which has a clipped, short sound to it. Once again, where the poetic function of speech dominates in verbal art, it proves, for Jakobson, to be the analytical gateway to the fundamentals of language.

In a landmark article, *Shifters, Verbal Categories and the Russian Verb* (1957), Jakobson drew attention to the manner in which the speech act is grammatically encoded; its intended meaning depends on referencing contextual information. Known as *deictic shifters*, personal pronouns, grammatical tense, place markers, mood (e.g., imperative, subjunctive, etc), and the evidential (e.g., whether the event reported is presented as witnessed, quoted, or remembered) are typical examples of indexical symbols (in Peirce's sense). These indexical symbols work to continuously position and reposition the participants in discourse vis-à-vis each other and the topic.

The conception of language as practice received its full elaboration in *Linguistics and Poetics* (1960). Inspired by the recent developments of communication theory, Jakobson's model of discourse consists of six factors and their corresponding functions. Typically, (1) an addresser sends (2) a message to (3) an addressee, but three additional components must be in place for the transaction to be successful: (4) a shared context (the referent), (5) the code (language) shared by both sides, and, finally, (6) contact, the physical, psychological, and social channel enabling the exchange. Most communication is focused on making claims by referring to objects outside of the speech act itself; that is, its function is cognitive (4). Traditionally, linguistics and the philosophy of language had been, in Jakobson's view, absurdly reductionist, because their attention was focused primarily on this function. But an act of speech may be oriented toward any one of the factors. The psychologist Karl Bühler had already shown that an explicative draws attention to the sender (emotive function), while a declarative and vocative phrase draws attention to the recipient (conative). It was Jakobson's attention to the message (2), the language itself (5), and also the channel through which the message was sent (6) that was groundbreaking and helped redraw the boundaries of linguistics research. Orientation toward the contact (6) dominates when the purpose of an utterance is primarily social (*phatic*, a term first suggested by Bronisław Malinowski). For instance, the greeting "Good day" is a social act of recognition, not a statement about the weather. Orientation on the code (5) as in "Can you repeat that?" elicits the metalinguistic function. Finally (2), when the message refers to itself (self-referential), it engages the poetic function of language. Rhythm, rhyme, elements of style, or ornamentation all work by selecting identical or similar units (from sound to meaning) and stringing them along contiguously. Jakobson devoted his life to analyzing the subliminal patterning of verbal art and highlighting the key place the poetic function or parallelism occupied in all discourse. This topic received its fullest elaboration in his landmark study *Poetry of Grammar and the Grammar of Poetry* (1961).

Contributions to Anthropology

Roman Jakobson was a prolific scholar; a selection of his works fills seven hefty volumes. His contribution to research in any one of the fields of inquiry he turned his attention to was always notable and, more often than not, pathbreaking. From his lifelong interest in verbal art through his analysis of the internal organization of language (phonology, morphology, syntax, and semantic) and the underlying logic of communicative practices (pragmatics) to child language acquisition, to his study of aphasia (a class of language disorders) and his work in general linguistics, semiotics (the study of a broad range of phenomena centered on the use of signs and signifying practices), and the history of linguistics, his presence is felt in a wide range of disciplines in addition to linguistics proper. Among these Slavic studies, comparative literature and literary theory, aesthetics, medieval studies, and the study of folklore can certainly lay claim to him. And, of course, so can anthropology. In fact, his broad take on language as both an object of investigation and a process implicated in all social and cultural practices arguably identifies Roman Jakobson as an important figure in the development of modern anthropology.

Claude Lévi-Strauss, Jakobson's lifelong friend, was undoubtedly his best known protégé. Of his mentor's many ideas, the following were pivotal to Lévi-Strauss: (a) the theory of distinctive features as sets of differences, (b) the identification of figurative language as generalizable linguistic forms and thought-governing rules, and (c) the conviction that both of these principles, among others, are universal and part of human makeup. Both Jakobson and Lévi-Strauss found further inspiration (and confirmation) in the

new developments in cybernetics, game theory, and, of course, genetics. All three place emphasis on information and on the underlying, rule-governing structures operating on a dualistic logic: the binary code.

The distinctive-feature model had a significant influence on the study of kinship (Lévi-Strauss, Rodney Needham), cognitive anthropology (Ward Goodenough), and mythology. In addition to the cross-cultural study of phonology, morphology, and grammatical semantics, Jakobson had an important impact on the linguistic and cultural analysis of deixis (the role of context in determining the meaning of speech), metalinguistics (the study of language in relation to culture and society), and metapragmatics (the functions of speech in discourse; William Hanks, Michael Silverstein); the ethnography of communication (Dell Hymes, James J. Fox); ethnopoetics (Steven Caton, Paul Friedrich); and, generally speaking, symbolic anthropology (James W. Fernandez).

Andrew Lass

See also Ethnography of Speaking; Goodenough, Ward H.; Lacan, Jacques; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Prague School of Linguistics; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Semiotics; Structuralism

Further Readings

Caton, S. C. (1987). Contributions of Roman Jakobson. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 16,* 223–260.

Holenstein, E. (1976). *Roman Jakobson's Approach to Language.* Bloomington, Indiana University Press.

Jakobson, R. (1976). *Six lessons on sound and meaning.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Jakobson, R., & Pomorska, K. (1983). *Dialogues.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Lass, A. (2006). Poetry and reality: Roman O. Jakobson and Claude Lévi-Strauss. In C. Benfey & K. Remmler (Eds.), *Artists, intellectuals, and World War II: The Pontigny encounters at Mount Holyoke College, 1942–1944* (pp. 173–184). Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press.

Jameson, Fredric

Although he was born in Cleveland, Ohio, Jameson (1934–) spent most of his early life in New Jersey. He was educated at Haverford College and Yale University, studying French. He taught at Harvard University while completing his PhD dissertation on Jean-Paul Sartre, which was published in 1961 as *Sartre: The Origins of a Style*. When Harvard denied him tenure, Jameson moved to the University of California, San Diego, where he remained for more than a decade. He returned to Yale in 1982, joining the French Department, which had by this time become internationally renowned as the home of deconstruction. In 1985, he was recruited by Duke University to head up a new program in literature, and he has remained there ever since. Jameson is the author of more than 20 books as well as a great many articles and book chapters. There is virtually no 20th-century critic or theorist of consequence he has not engaged in dialogue.

Jameson's career cannot really be broken into stages as there are no major shifts of perspective or changes of focus. If an image is needed, then there may be no better way to envisage his career than to picture a stone dropping into a large pond. The ripples that spread wider and wider from that initial impact would represent Jameson's incredible appetite and capacity to absorb and process new ideas, new languages, new theories, and new kinds of media (his work embraces everything cultural, from poetry to opera to computer games). He began his career in French, but then spent the next 10 years or so mastering the leading lights of 20th-century German critical theory (Theodor Adorno, Walter Benjamin, Ernst Bloch, Georg Lukács, and Herbert Marcuse). This work yielded the magisterial *Marxism and Form* (1971) and the equally impressive companion volume, *The Prison-House of Language* (1972).

In the long essay concluding *Marxism and Form*, "Towards a Dialectical Criticism," Jameson plotted his basic hypothesis, which he has expanded and revised but never really altered in the 40 odd years since. His central idea is that all texts, be they literary, philosophical, theoretical, or even filmic, are produced in dialogue with history understood as an ineffable real. His next major work, *The Political Unconscious: Narrative as a Socially Symbolic Act* (1981), would give methodological substance to this idea. Jameson argues there that we cannot but historicize because it is as historicizing machines that cultural works are intelligible to us. Every work of art, every film, and every piece of music or literature communicates to us, at a minimum, the message that the time of this work is now, that in no other period in history before or since would it be possible. This

is why, as Gilles Deleuze argues (after Nietzsche), all great works feel untimely to us; they always arrive too soon. If they did not, they would seem neither new nor interesting, as our boredom with extinct forms attests.

The Political Unconscious transformed literary and cultural studies by offering a persuasive thesis explaining the relation between texts and history in anthropological terms as social and cultural purpose. For Jameson, history is an inexorable force; it is the outer limit, the necessary "beyond" or "horizon" of all human activity. He describes history as that which hurts, by which he means to say that history is a set of empirical facts (events unfolding across time), but goes on to add that it is only knowable as textual traces. His conception of history is, in this respect, something of an uneasy compromise between the skeptical viewpoint of poststructuralism and the absolutist position of Marxism. It accepts that history is not knowable to us in any complete way—we can never really know what the Romans thought or felt about their gods on an individual level, for example—but nevertheless insists that history is a constant force whose effects are to be seen everywhere. Culture is in this respect both a product of history and an active agent shaping history.

Borrowing from Claude Lévi-Strauss's interpretation of Caduveo face painting, Jameson argues that cultural texts manage (in a symbolic way) the multiple and various antinomies and contradictions that history throws at us. In brief, Lévi-Strauss's claim is that the Caduveo face paintings enact symbolic solutions to real social contradictions that cannot otherwise be resolved. For example, the various and complex power relations within the Caduveo tribe, and more especially in its relations with its neighbors, the Guana and Bororo, are "worked through" (in the psychoanalytic sense of resolving psychic tension by giving it expression) in a formal and aesthetic manner. In subsequent work, Jameson enlarged on this thesis to account for the cultural logic of contemporary late capitalism.

In the case of postmodernism, the subject of Jameson's next and probably most influential work, *Postmodernism, or, the Cultural Logic of Late Capitalism* (1991), it was the gloomy sense that somehow everything had ended: In art, in the wake of modernism, there was nothing new left to do; in politics, it was the end of the idea that government should be the engine of change; in capitalism itself, it was the end of the idea that the function of corporations was something other than sheer moneymaking; globally, it was the end of the idea of the nation as a discrete entity. Culturally, postmodernism responded to these forces by celebrating what remained—it made a virtue of pastiche, repetition, plagiarism, and unoriginality; it advocated an individualist approach to politics that made the resilient individual worker, who neither needed nor looked for security of tenure, the new hero of the age; it separated the idea and practice of creativity from the actuality of creating things, and in the process, it brought about a massive global realignment whereby design and sales is a First World activity, while manufacturing is exclusively a Third World activity. Although some critics suggest that postmodernism is over as a movement, it is clear that we are still in thrall to these forces.

For Jameson, the postmodern period is characterized by two major transformations: the shift from nature to culture as the key resource for capitalist growth and expansion, and the resulting penetration and colonization of the unconscious. Jameson's point is that, for the First World at least, the growth of capitalism depends on the exploitation of ideas, tastes, feelings, desires, and emotions, rather than the physical resources central to late-19th-century and early-20th-century capitalism. This does not mean that manufacturing is unimportant, but it does mean that in the first world it is no longer seen as a source of growth. In the 3 decades since Jameson made this claim, his thesis has certainly been borne out. These days, some of the largest corporations in the world, among them Google and Facebook, do not make anything at all. Their wealth derives from focusing and repackaging, and on selling our attention. As many commentators have pointed out, from the perspective of capitalism, we are not Facebook's consumers, we are its product: We use it, but it sells us (and all the information it gathers about us) to other corporations, which in turn try to sell us things. Insofar as it is meaningful to talk about manufacturing in postmodernity, it is noteworthy that the richest manufacturing corporation in the world, Apple, makes devices that absorb and indeed package our attention too. Jameson's basic point, then, is that the most valuable resource of our era is *attention* (and all that it entails), not coal, steel, oil, or any other extracted resource.

Inasmuch as *postmodernism* is an attempt to historicize an entire era, it is perhaps not surprising that it demanded several further installments to round out, if not complete, the global pen portrait Jameson wanted to sketch. This rounding-out process has been pursued in three distinct directions. First, there has been a straightforward expansion of the original material—*The Geopolitical Aesthetic* (1992), *The Seeds of Time* (1994), *The Cultural Turn* (1998), and *A Singular Modernity* (2002) all fall into this category. Second, Jameson has expanded on the theoretical underpinnings of his diagnosis—*Late Marxism* (1990), which describes Adorno's work as a joyous countertoxin to postmodernism, and *Brecht and Method* (1998) can be listed here. Third, he has produced a monumental work on modernism, the product of 30 years of musing on the subject, *The Modernist Papers* (2007), against which his account of postmodernism should be situated. In recent work, Jameson has tended to use the term *globalization* rather than postmodernism, but the thesis remains the same: He is interested in the cultural expressions of this most recent stage of capitalism.

If every great theorist must have an abiding passion or interest, then for Jameson it is the concept of the dialectic. It underpins all his writing and thinking but only infrequently receives direct or extended treatment. This changed with the publication of *Valences of the Dialectic* (2009), which also brings in full circle Jameson's earlier thoughts on history, particularly in *The Political Unconscious*. In addition, Jameson has also published two further works that can but be read as pendants: *The Hegel Variations: On the Phenomenology of Spirit* (2010) and *Representing Capital: A Reading of Volume One* (2011). Alongside these books, he frequently publishes new essays in *Critical Inquiry*, *New Left Review*, and the *London Review of Books*, his three favored journals. In 2008, Jameson was awarded the Holberg Prize in recognition of his enormous contribution to 20th- and 21st-century letters.

Ian Buchanan

See also Bloch, Maurice; Frankfurt School; Lacan, Jacques

Further Readings

Buchanan, I. (2006). *Fredric Jameson: Live theory.* London, UK: Continuum.

Helmling, S. (2000). *The success and failure of Fredric Jameson: Writing, the sublime, and the dialectic of critique.* New York: State University of New York Press.

Homer, S. (1998). *Fredric Jameson: Marxism, hermeneutics, postmodernism.* London, UK: Polity.

Irr, C., & Buchanan, I. (2006). *On Jameson: From postmodernism to globalism.* New York, NY: State University of New York Press.

Jameson, F. (2007). *Jameson on Jameson: Conversations on cultural Marxism.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Kellner, D., & Homer, S. (2004). *Fredric Jameson.* London, UK: Palgrave.

Roberts, A. (2000). *Fredric Jameson.* London, UK: Routledge.

K

Kardiner, Abram

Although little read today, Abram Kardiner (1891–1981) was one of the founding figures of the Culture-and-Personality school of anthropology. His concept of *basic personality structure* provided a theoretical integration of social anthropology and psychoanalytic theory by showing that social structure and character formation inform and constrain each other. Kardiner was one of the founders in 1930 of the New York Psychoanalytic Institute, the first psychoanalytic institute in the United States. Not an anthropologist himself, Kardiner drew on the ethnographic research of Ralph Linton, Carl Withers, and Cora DuBois. In 1939, he published *The Individual and His Society* and in 1945, *The Psychological Frontiers of Society*. Both books consist largely of analyses by others, most prominently Ralph Linton and Cora DuBois. In the 1950s, Kardiner was a professor of psychiatry at Columbia University and, from 1955 to 1957, director of the Psychoanalytic Clinic. There he attended patients until just a few weeks before his death. His other books included *The Traumatic Neuroses and War* (1941), *Sex and Morality* (1954), *Mark of Oppression: Explorations in the Personality of the American Negro* (with Lionel Ovesey, 1951), *They Studied Man* (with Edward Preble, 1961), and *My Analysis With Freud: Reminiscences* (1977). Kardiner's influence on the emerging field of psychological anthropology is recognizable in the work of John and Beatrice Whiting, Clyde and Florence Kluckhohn, Weston LaBarre, Anthony F. C. Wallace, Melford Spiro, Gananath Obeyesekere, and Howard Stein.

Biography and Major Works

Abram Kardiner was born in New York on August 17, 1891, and graduated from the City College of New York. In 1917, he received his medical degree from Cornell and interned at Mount Sinai Hospital for 2 years. Kardiner had just completed his psychiatric residency when he was accepted as a patient by Sigmund Freud in Vienna. Freud set two conditions for Kardiner's analysis: that it last only 6 months (1921–1922) and that he be paid $10 a session in American dollars. He was proud of the fact that Freud acknowledged him as a *Menschenkenner* (knower of people). Kardiner ended up departing from Freud in placing less emphasis on the instincts and their vicissitudes. Instead, he developed an enduring interest in the ego and its adaptive mediation of biological drives and institutional disciplines. Soon he came to see culture as a set of environmental and social structural exigencies and the basic problem of individual development as the culturally specific means available for the adaptation of the ego to these exigencies. His key insight was that cultural values derive from, and provide compensation for, institutionalized constraints—constraints shaped in relation to the social and economic environment.

In the 1930s, Kardiner joined with several anthropologists to study the processes by which culture is transmitted from one generation to the next, and

it was at this time, working with anthropologists such as Ruth Benedict and Cora DuBois, that he formed his concept of the basic personality structure. The structure is a configuration shared by most of a society's members as a result of the experiences they have in common. It does not correspond to the total personality of the individual but to the value-attitude systems that are basic to the individual's personality configuration. The concept was meant to integrate patterns of child care and training with social institutions, values, and roles. The ego is the site of this integration, in keeping with the view associated with psychoanalytic theory that the basic disciplines of infant and child care play a significant role in the formation of personality. According to Kardiner, the basic personality structure was formed by primary institutions. Primary institutions (subsistence methods and family organization) establish structures for the formation of the individual ego, and the ego, in adapting to these structures, generates secondary institutions that include symbolic systems such as folklore, myth, and ritual. Secondary institutions in turn shape child-rearing practices and personality structure.

Kardiner hypothesized that the structure of the ego derives from culture-specific problems of psychological adaptation. He was not interested in the Oedipus complex or in other classic Freudian dimensions of the id and the superego, although he accepted the reality of instinctual drives. Kardiner did not reduce cultural formations to the development of psychosexual states or the renunciation of libidinal desires. In fact, he argued that describing a culture in Freudian terms such as anal or erotic was useless. Kardiner instead focused on the ego as an *adaptive* mechanism that mediated biological drives and institutionalized disciplines. The ego adapts to its environmental and social conditions, and this adaptation, in turn, shapes the formation of cultural institutions that exist to defend against and provide substitute satisfaction for the frustrations established by these socially and historically contingent disciplines.

Kardiner tended to avoid notions of causality—the "chicken or the egg" problem—by stressing that primary and secondary institutions can only be analyzed in reciprocal interaction with each other. Still, he accepted to some degree the Freudian view that the basic disciplines (of infant and child care) constrain the formation of "basic" personality—that is, the personality structure that is common to all members of the social group who are similarly conditioned by the same practices. He argued, for example, that premature sphincter discipline in Tanala child training created the template for obedience to authority in adulthood—a defensive adaptation that was reinforced in the relation of father and son, with its constant relationship between obedience and security, loyalty and protection.

In his 1939 magnum opus *The Individual and His Society*, Kardiner drew on the fieldwork of Ralph Linton (his coauthor in all but name) among the peoples of the Marquesas Islands and the Tanala of Madagascar. Simpler societies were preferred because the authors assumed that small-scale, tribal societies possess relatively uniform institutions conditioning basic ego constellations. In the Marquesas, widespread and regular famine led to female infanticide and a skewed adult sex ratio, with men outnumbering women more than 2 to 1. This, Kardiner said, gave rise to polyandry as a primary institution and also to a cultural emphasis among women on maintaining erotic attractiveness; after all, they had several husbands, not just one, to keep happy. Kardiner found a corresponding de-emphasis of the relationship between women and their children, and he asserted that this led to a neglect of breast-feeding. In the Marquesas, this led to frustrations and an unfilled longing for dependency. Dissatisfactions of this sort became the elements of Marquesan myth, a secondary institution that both represents and attempts to resolve the underlying anxieties of early childhood.

Among the Tanala of Madagascar, Kardiner found that the ancestral spirits—a secondary institution—projectively recapitulated the relationship between father and son. Sons were trained to be obedient to their fathers, following the expectation that they would later inherit the fathers' land. But the recent shift to wet rice cultivation and the increasing economic insecurity—the result of the decline of the joint family and its replacement by a complex caste system—meant that sons could no longer expect the same benefits, no matter how well they ingratiated themselves with their fathers. Primary institutions, in other words, inhibited successful ego adaptation and led to beliefs about malevolent ancestral spirits. The construct of "spirit" is the Tanala symbolic representation, or projection, of the hostility to fathers.

Projection is a form of ideational representation whereby a person attributes his or her feelings or

psychology to an external person or object. Among the Marquesans, for example, a belief in supernatural *vehini-hia*—"wild women" feared by children as cannibalistic—is a projective manifestation of unsatisfied and inverted desires centered on the mother. Fantasies and fears about food and about eating/being eaten are reinforced by the material circumstances of Marquesan society, especially the tendency for famine.

Kardiner recognized that in the absence of better empirical data he could not make strong testable claims about culture and personality. When the anthropologist Cora DuBois returned from the Indonesian island of Alor in 1939, Kardiner thought the moment had come, since DuBois had collected detailed autobiographies and projective test results. Kardiner inferred from this information that precarious material circumstances led mothers to neglect the regular feeding of their children and to provide inconsistent disciplines of rewards and punishments. Children's "unsatisfied orality" and fear of abandonment gave rise to a pervasive sense of distrust and suspicion, which impeded the formation of strong social bonds. Alorese religious beliefs—a secondary institution—mirrored their early upbringing, with ancestor spirits considered by the people of Alor as at best fickle and more likely to do harm than good. Not surprisingly, Kardiner noted, Alorese myths and legends were suffused with fantasies of revenge—a feature no doubt motivated, he said, by the child's wish to visit retribution on his emotionally detached and unreliable mother.

The study of Alor appeared in Kardiner's second famous book, *The Psychological Frontiers of Society*, published in 1945, which also included chapters on the Comanche (by Linton) and white Americans in "Plainville," a small town of 175 inhabitants in the American state of Missouri (based on fieldwork by "James West," the nom de plume of Carl Withers). Unlike the Alorese, Kardiner concluded, the mothers of Plainville did not convey mixed messages to their children, and in fact, most children grew up idealizing their mothers. Fathers, on the other hand, could not provide sufficient rewards for submission to their authority, and their arbitrary punitive acts led children (especially sons) to leave home early. Kardiner believed that the Protestant deity worshipped in Plainville's churches represented transplantations of the father in the household and of the conditions under which he loves and forgives or reinstates. In Plainville, Kardiner saw the United States—indeed, the Western world—in microcosm, and he even went so far as to state that his conclusions applied just as well to Sophocles and Shakespeare.

Frequently overlooked in discussion of Kardiner's approach is his work on American race relations, "war neuroses" (now called posttraumatic stress disorder), and unemployment during the Depression. In the case histories that constituted *The Mark of Oppression* (1951), Kardiner and his collaborator Lionel Ovesey studied the external sources of prejudice in relation to the internal sources of self-hatred in African Americans living in Harlem. Although a pioneering work, the study has been criticized for assuming that there is no Black culture independent of its construction by oppression. On the traumatic neurosis of war, he came to see that the defensive maneuver to ward off the trauma sometimes destroyed the individual's adaptive capacity. The traumatic neurosis of war, he claimed, was the result of an adaptive failure, not a conflictual illness. Finally, with reference to Depression-era unemployment, Kardiner warned that economically insecure people are prone to masochism and become fodder for ruthless demagogues who promise relief from aggression directed toward the self. Government-sponsored work relief can help—Kardiner's nod to the New Deal—but he worried that the lowered expectation of competition cannot lead to permanent security in the workforce.

Critique of Kardiner's Approach

The difficulties with Kardiner's approach, as noted at the time, are that it says little about the development of real personalities in the cultures under discussion; the distributions of personality types within cultures; the dynamics of the personality-culture interaction, especially in the context of social change; and the relevance of the basic-personality approach to complex societies. Anthropologists criticized Kardiner for attempting to reconstruct the basic personality of a culture without data on specific individuals and without testable hypotheses. Margaret Mead even considered it arrogant. Meanwhile, psychoanalysts criticized Kardiner for minimizing or omitting the Oedipus complex and the tripartite structure of the psyche. In fact, Kardiner disputed the universality of the Oedipus complex and believed that it only emerged when cultural proscriptions of sexual behavior result in the fusion of sexual and dependency needs toward

the mother. This was the case, he said, in Plainville, and by extension in most of Western culture.

Concluding Remarks

Abram Kardiner attempted a synthesis of cultural and Freudian analysis, and while the concept of "basic personality" as the structure that mediates "primary" and "second" institutions has been dropped, the interest in cultural systems as projective systems remains. Psychoanalytic anthropologists (e.g., Spiro, Stein, and LaBarre) continued to relate concepts of morality and the religious to the exigencies of early childhood, and even today there is still a lively debate on the universality of the Oedipus complex. The eclipse of the Kardinerian approach, in fact, has less to do with the rejection of psychocultural synthesis than with the general retreat from encompassing social theory in the field of anthropology as a whole. Kardiner hearkens back to an earlier phase in the development of the discipline, to a time when it was considered possible (even necessary) to connect biological, political/economic, cultural, and psychological dynamics.

Charles W. Nuckolls

See also Culture and Personality; DuBois, Cora; Freud, Sigmund; Kluckhohn, Clyde; LeVine, Robert; Linton, Ralph; Psychological Anthropology; Wallace, Anthony F. C.

Further Readings

Kardiner, A. (1939). *The individual and his society: The psychodynamics of primitive social organization.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

———. (with Linton, R., Du Bois, C., & West, J.). (1945). *The psychological frontiers of society.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Mead, M. (n.d.). "Plan for Kardiner review," Container I-20, The Papers of Margaret Mead, Manuscript Division, Library of Congress. (quoted in Manson, William, The Psychodynamics of Culture: Abram Kardiner and Neo-Freudian Anthropology. New York: Greenwood Press, 59–60)

Kluckhohn, Clyde

Clyde Kay Maben Kluckhohn (1905–1960) made three significant contributions to the discipline of anthropology—(1) his pioneering ethnography, (2) his innovative approach to cultural theory, and (3) his long-term service to the profession. His field studies of the Navaho Indians of New Mexico are still unsurpassed, and he was one of the founders of the subdiscipline known as culture and personality, or psychological anthropology. As an organizer and administrator, he was a major figure in the development of cultural anthropology from 1936 until his untimely death in 1960, and he spent most of his academic life at Harvard University as a student and a professor. He was a central figure in creating institutional bonds among anthropologists at different universities, and between them and agencies of the federal government. During World War II, Kluckhohn served with the U.S. Office of War Information, analyzing the problems of morale in the Japanese population. After the war, he was the first director of the Russian Research Center at Harvard, founded in 1947 with a Carnegie grant. He served as chair of the anthropology department from 1957 until his death and was also at various times director of Harvard's Institute of Ethnic Affairs and a consultant to the U.S. Indian Service.

Biography

Born in Iowa, Kluckhohn received his undergraduate education at Princeton and the University of Wisconsin, before attending Oxford University on a Rhodes scholarship, graduating in 1931 with a master's degree in social anthropology. At Oxford, he was exposed to the "culture-circle" ethnohistorical theories of Wilhelm Schmidt at the University of Vienna, before returning to the United States to take his doctorate in anthropology from Harvard University in 1936. His major intellectual influences at Harvard were the sociologist Talcott Parsons and the social psychologist Gordon Allport, as well as the linguist Edward Sapir, who was then at Yale University. Immediately on finishing his doctoral studies, Kluckhohn joined the Harvard faculty. His doctoral dissertation was largely a composite of then current anthropological theories, titled simply *Some Aspects of Contemporary Theory in Cultural Anthropology*. It has not been published.

Kluckhohn's 1936 dissertation reflected his academic training up to that time. It was a survey, one might say a hodgepodge, of ideas from the Boasians, from structural functionalism, from the culture circle, and from recent psychology, with Kluckhohn taking the role of synthesizer of these

various topics and themes. This was a pattern that continued throughout his career: Kluckhohn was an eclectic synthesizer, never developing a tight theoretical scheme of his own.

Kluckhohn had become acquainted with the Navaho Indians when, as a 17-year-old, he was sent to the Southwest to recover from a serious disease, probably tuberculosis. Kluckhohn stayed with a mother's cousin on a sheep ranch bordering the Navaho Reservation. Over the next few years, Kluckhohn not only recovered from his illness but also became an expert horseman, traveling about the Reservation and learning to speak Navaho. He wrote two travel books on these experiences, *To the Foot of the Rainbow* (1927) and *Beyond the Rainbow* (1933).

Kluckhohn and Anthropological Theory

Perhaps Kluckhohn's theoretical posture as he graduated from Harvard in 1936 can be best understood if we picture him with a wealth of diverse theoretical training in his background, from social anthropology to psychiatry, returning to the Navahos for professional ethnographic work after a long absence. Like other intellectuals of his generation who went on to become the founders of culture and personality studies, Kluckhohn was in a marvelous position to create a novel theoretical perspective as he undertook the integration of the various schools of theory he had studied. This position was enhanced during the next decade by the increasing possibilities of global fieldwork made possible in the wake of World War II, because of global political changes and the increase in available funding.

Although Kluckhohn continually published ethnographic works over the next 2 decades, they were not necessarily coordinated among themselves or congruent with the theoretical work he published in the same period. Talcott Parsons and Evon Vogt observed that Kluckhohn's failure to publish a full-scale ethnography of the Navaho often drew criticism from his colleagues. The most thorough and best structured of Kluckhohn's ethnographic works is undoubtedly *Navaho Witchcraft* (1944), which comprises 242 pages of first-person narrative based on fieldwork conducted in the 1930s. Strangely for ethnographic books of the day, it is not richly illustrated and contains but one tiny drawing (p. 187) and no other diagrams or maps. But the book is cogent and well written, and it attracted a large nonprofessional audience as well as the admiration of colleagues and students.

Ten additional previously published pieces of Navaho ethnography are collected in Kluckhohn's Festschrift, published in 1962 as *Culture and Behavior*, edited by his son Richard Kluckhohn. They address ethnographic topics such as women's songs, ceremonial patterns, dreams, socialization, and personality formation. But altogether, these published works do not constitute a complete ethnography. Missing, for example, are quantitative examinations of major topics such as demography and Navaho techniques of farming and stock raising.

Values Orientation Method

Historians and critics of the field of culture and personality usually place Kluckhohn among the founders, alongside Ruth Benedict, Erik Erikson, Ralph Linton, Margaret Mead, Edward Sapir, and Benjamin Whorf, although some observers have assigned him to a secondary echelon of theorists, along with Cora DuBois and Abram Kardiner, perhaps because of his eclecticism. In any event, Kluckhohn's particular theoretical contributions to the field became known as the Values Orientation Method, or sometimes "The Harvard Study of Values," an approach that is probably best known from *Variations in Value Orientations*, written by his wife, Florence Kluckhohn, and the University of Chicago psychologist Fred Strodtbeck, published a year after Clyde Kluckhohn's death. In general, the principal themes of the Values Orientation Method spread among Kluckhohn's many books and articles can be summarized as follows:

1. *The importance of psychoanalysis in uncovering cultural attitudes:* Kluckhohn not only believed that authentic but masked attitudes could be uncovered from native subjects but also suggested that ethnocentric biases among anthropology students, which might impede their success in the field, could be detected and resolved by their own psychoanalysis, which he recommended for aspiring fieldworkers. He asserted that psychoanalysis was "scientific."

2. *How cultural attitudes affect international politics*, especially war making, by reference not only to his own research but also to the swaddling and toilet-training hypotheses developed by psychological anthropologists including Ruth Benedict and Geoffrey Gorer during and immediately following

World War II: These blossomed into the "National Character Studies," which played an important role in anthropology in the 1940s and early 1950s. However, such studies invited harsh criticism largely because they were based on literary sources and the memories of expatriates, rather than fieldwork. Kluckhohn observed and participated in a subsequent debate about the utility of such studies, largely through his role in the Russian Research Center.

3. *The beneficial effects of "culture crossing":* Far from being a racial or a cultural chauvinist, at least in his early years, the young Kluckhohn saw the social and intellectual benefits that accrued to persons of "mixed" ancestry; mostly he meant mixed European ancestry. Later in his life, he was sometimes ambivalent about the effects of Black-White "miscegenation" on personal behavior. Especially in Chapter 5 of *Mirror for Man*, titled "Race: A Modern Myth," Kluckhohn seems to hedge against a strictly egalitarian position concerning racial differences, suggesting that "temperament," "mental capacity," and musical ability might be unequally distributed among the "races."

4. *Making anthropology more "scientific":* Although Kluckhohn continually used the word appreciatively, it is not clear what he meant by "science." Perhaps he meant only "logic" or "clear thinking." He does not seem to have believed that science required defining variables, hypothesizing the consequences of the interactions among variables and testing the hypotheses by experiments that are replicable. Rather, Kluckhohn tended to use the term *science* rather loosely. Although he admired statistical work, his own research was not quantitative.

5. *Values Orientation Theory:* This was spun off Kluckhohn's ideas about national character and explicitly comprised analysis of the following topics as treated in different cultures: (1) Human Nature, (2) the Man-Nature Relationship (developed with his wife, Florence Kluckhohn), (3) Time, (4) Activity, and (5) Social Relations. This formulation of a research agenda has probably attracted more negative attention than any other of Kluckhohn's theoretical constructions. All the social sciences seems to be embodied in number 5, while number 3, Time, seems to be more a philosophical than a social science category. Carried forward by Florence Kluckhohn and Fred Strodtbeck after Clyde Kluckhohn's death, Values Orientation Theory stimulated a generation of social psychology students in the 1960s.

6. *The importance of language:* As an ethnographer, Kluckhohn was especially attentive to native language, and was probably at his best when describing the language used in Navaho ceremonies. In the narrative portion of *Navaho Witchcraft*, he provided 130 pages of description, which admirably employed the social anthropology he learned at Oxford. This material is preceded by a phonetic guide and followed by rich, substantial appendices totaling 85 pages, concerning details of language, the context of language use, and symbolism. He was especially careful in noting semantic variation in the terms he recorded.

Key Later Works

Kluckhohn's early theoretical contribution *Personality in Nature, Culture and Society* (1948), coedited with Henry Murray, was intended as a textbook for culture and personality. It incorporated contributions from a number of distinguished anthropologists—Benedict, A. Irving Hallowell, Jules Henry, Mead, Hortense Powdermaker, and John Whiting—and articles from psychologically oriented scholars such as Allport, J. S. Bruner, John Dollard, Erich Fromm, and David Levy. Contributions from the sociologists Robert Merton and Talcott Parsons were also included. For many scholars of culture and personality, this became the standard textbook and reference in the field. For their part, Kluckhohn and Murray essentially defined the field in this volume in two coauthored articles titled "Outline of a Conception of Personality" and "Personality Formation: The Determinants."

The next year, Kluckhohn published *Mirror for Man* (1949), which by 1971 had gone through 17 printings. It was written, as Kluckhohn put it in his preface, "for the layman, not for the carping professional." It became a standard introductory textbook for anthropology in many colleges and universities in the 1950s and 1960s. It not only covers the four traditional fields of anthropology—biological, archaeology, social cultural, and linguistic anthropology—but also, not surprisingly, contains a full chapter on culture and personality.

Another side of Kluckhohn's character and intellect is also exhibited in *Mirror for Man*: his American patriotism or national chauvinism. Especially in view of Kluckhohn's statements regarding the need for psychoanalysis to purge ethnocentrism from the thinking of potential fieldworkers, certain statements in the book seem out of place. In Chapter 9, for example, Kluckhohn claims that no people moralize as much as Americans and that American mothers offer love to their children based on their meeting certain performance standards, as if this kind of behavior provides contrasts with normal or ideal behavior in other cultures. But no concrete evidence is offered. Kluckhohn tried to correct this methodological deficiency in an article published in *Daedalus* in 1958, explicitly endorsing a "conservative" political perspective, based on colorful interviews of 69 young men in the Boston area, sponsored by the Russian Research Center. As director of the center, Kluckhohn repeatedly criticized Soviet values and politics, while in *Mirror for Man* and the *Daedalus* article, he embraced the parallel but allegedly opposite moral precepts of his native country.

For many people, especially colleagues and graduate students in anthropology, Kluckhohn's most useful and enduring book is *Culture: A Critical Review of Concepts and Definitions*, coauthored with Alfred L. Kroeber and first published in 1952. It begins with a 70-page history of the word *culture* and then moves on to an equally lengthy list of specific uses and definitions of it, divided into the categories of Descriptive, Historical, Normative, Psychological, Structural, Genetic, and Incomplete. This is followed by a section of comments and criticisms by philosophers and scientists of the past, and a final section where Kroeber and Kluckhohn try to make sense of it all. As professors and students have discovered over the past half-century, the value of the book is that Kluckhohn and Kroeber have raised these issues in such an interesting and entertaining manner. The basic idea and pedagogy of this book, as well as his careful work in Navaho ethnography, probably constitute the heart of Kluckhohn's intellectual legacy.

John H. Moore

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Cognitive Anthropology; Culture and Personality; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; DuBois, Cora; Kardiner, Abram; Linton, Ralph; Mead, Margaret; Parsons, Talcott; Psychological Anthropology; Sapir, Edward; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Kluckhohn, C. (1949). *Mirror for man.* New York, NY: Fawcett.

———. (1958). The evolution of contemporary American values. *Daedalus, 87*(2), 78–109.

———. (1962). *Culture and behavior.* New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1963). *Navaho witchcraft.* Boston, MA: Beacon Press.

Kluckhohn, C., & Leighton, D. (1974). *The Navaho.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Lindesmith, A. R., & Strauss, A. L. (1950). A critique of culture-personality writings. *American Sociological Review, 15*(5), 587–600.

Parsons, T., & Vogt, E. Z. (1962). Clyde Kay Maben Kluckhohn 1905–1960. *American Anthropologist, 64,* 140–161.

Kroeber, Alfred L.

Alfred Louis Kroeber (1876–1960) was the leading American anthropologist of his generation. Widely regarded as the successor to his mentor, Franz Boas, he dominated the discipline during the first half of the 20th century.

Biography and Major Works

Alfred Kroeber was born in Hoboken, New Jersey, and grew up in New York City. His German immigrant father was an upper-middle-class importer. As a child, Alfred was bilingual, speaking German at home. The broadly humanistic culture of German immigrants was a decisive influence on his intellectual formation; the study of natural history was also fundamental to his development. He was educated at Columbia University, earning bachelor's (1896) and master's degrees (1897) in English literature.

In 1896, Kroeber was introduced to Franz Boas and anthropology. His earliest anthropology research was with a group of Inuit (Eskimo), then living in the city. For his doctoral dissertation on Arapaho Indian decorative symbolism, Kroeber did fieldwork in Wyoming and Oklahoma (1898–1899),

sponsored by the American Museum of Natural History, where Boas served as a curator. His 1901 doctorate was the first to be awarded by Columbia for anthropology.

Kroeber first came to California in 1900 for a curatorial position at the California Academy of Sciences, San Francisco, but he soon left when it became clear that there would be little provision for field research. In the fall of 1901, Kroeber was hired by the University of California, which had just initiated a department and museum of anthropology, founded by the regent, Phoebe A. Hearst. With periods of sabbatical and leave, Kroeber spent the rest of his professional life at the university, serving as instructor (1901), assistant professor (1906), associate professor (1911), and professor (1919), retiring in 1946 as professor emeritus. In the University of California's Museum of Anthropology, he served as curator and director. Although he effectively held these positions from 1901 and 1909, respectively, the titles were not formally given until 1909 and 1925.

Most of Kroeber's fieldwork was in California, especially between the years 1901 and 1911. In 1903, he began a systematic survey of California Indian cultures, including his own fieldwork and that of his students and colleagues. Between 1911 and 1916, Kroeber worked with Ishi, the last Yahi, who lived at the museum, then in San Francisco. Today this ethnographic relationship is probably the thing for which Kroeber is most famous, at least in the mind of the general public. With his publication of the summary *Handbook of the Indians of California* in 1925, Kroeber effectively founded the scholarly study of California Indians.

During the 1910s, Kroeber spent several summers in Zuni, New Mexico, sponsored by the American Museum of Natural History. During the first 6 months of 1918, he focused on the museum's Philippines collection, curating an exhibition and writing an excellent handbook, despite his lack of any fieldwork in the country.

By the late 1910s, following the deaths of his wife, Henrietta, and of Ishi, Kroeber underwent a personal and professional crisis. He became interested in psychoanalysis and developed a private practice in the field (1918–1923) before returning full-time to anthropology.

Although Kroeber had not been interested in archaeology during his early career, after 1920, he turned increasingly to the field, as he worked with the ancient Peruvian collections at the university museum. His study of Max Uhle's collections with the graduate students William Duncan Strong, Anna Gayton, and Lila O'Neale led to his excavations in Peru (1925, 1926, and 1942), the first two trips sponsored by the Field Museum in Chicago. For the rest of his life, Kroeber continued to study the chronological development of Nasca pottery designs.

Kroeber's lifelong interest in geography, encouraged by his Berkeley colleague Carl Sauer, culminated in his 1939 monograph on *Cultural and Natural Areas of Native North America*. Leading up to this study was a second survey of California Indians, the Culture Element Distribution Survey, carried out by his students.

Kroeber's last major work was *Configurations of Culture Growth* (1944), an ambitious comparison of civilizations, focusing on the development of artistic styles. He extended these ideas in a series of late lectures, published as *Style and Civilizations* (1957).

As a noted teacher, Kroeber mentored at least two generations of students, from Samuel Barrett, the department's first doctorate in 1908, through a cohort of important students in the late 1920s and 1930s, including William Duncan Strong, Julian Steward, Cora DuBois, Ralph Beals, George Foster, and Robert F. Heizer. With his fellow Boasian Robert H. Lowie and his protégé Edward W. Gifford, Kroeber made the department the largest and most important, as well as the oldest, in the American West. With his student Thomas T. Waterman, Kroeber wrote the first—and for many years, the only—textbook in the field: *Anthropology* (1923; revised edition, 1948).

Alfred Kroeber played a dominant role in the institutional organization of the discipline of anthropology: as one of the founders of the American Anthropological Association in 1902 and as its president (1917–1918). He was also president of the American Folklore Society (1906) and a founder of the Linguistic Society of America (president in 1940).

He helped organize displays of anthropology and Native American culture for the Golden Gate International Exposition, San Francisco (1939–1940); during World War II, he was the director of an Army Special Training Program at Berkeley on the cultures and languages of East Asia (1943–1945).

After his retirement, Kroeber continued to teach, travel, and write. During these years, he focused on issues of style and comparative civilizations.

His stature in the discipline was indicated by the comprehensive conference he organized in 1952, whose proceedings he edited as *Anthropology Today: An Encyclopedic Inventory* (1953). In the 1950s, Kroeber offered testimony on aboriginal occupancy of territory for the U.S. Indian Claims Commission, arguing against his former student Julian Steward. Although a social and political liberal, he believed that these personal values should be kept separate from his professional efforts. He also spent much time going over old research, preparing manuscripts for publication.

Kroeber was married twice: first to Henrietta Rothschild in 1906, who died in 1913, and for the second time, in 1926, to Theodora Kracaw Brown, who later became famous for her writings on Ishi. Along with his two stepsons, Theodore and Clifton, Kroeber had two children with her: Karl and Ursula (later LeGuin, the science fiction author).

Alfred Kroeber died in Paris, shortly after attending a conference in Austria. Over his lifetime, he was awarded numerous prizes and honorary doctorates, and the anthropology building at the University of California, Berkeley, was named after him in the year of his death. Kroeber's personal papers were given to The Bancroft Library, University of California, Berkeley.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Alfred Kroeber considered himself first of all an ethnologist, but given his wide-ranging interests and long life, he was able to make contributions to many areas of anthropology, including archaeology and linguistics as well as sociocultural anthropology. Virtually all of Kroeber's anthropology can be traced to his conception of culture and its patterning in space and time.

Culture Theory

Alfred Kroeber generally integrated his theoretical discussions with descriptive presentations. However, in his late anthology *The Nature of Culture* (1952), he explicitly summarized his cultural theory. Here, he restated his position that culture was a coherent and separate phenomenon that gave the discipline of anthropology its scholarly autonomy.

In his general orientation, Kroeber's anthropology was based on a unique combination of empirically rooted disciplines: natural history and the humanities; he fought against the grouping of anthropology as part of the social sciences. Despite his earlier background in natural history and his later foray into statistics during the Culture Element Distribution Survey, in the end, he shunned predicative models of causality and denied that anthropology was a science. In a famous debate with Boas in the 1930s, he accused his teacher of being more interested in causal explanation and the discovery of general laws.

Kroeber's most famous contribution to anthropological theory was his concept of the "superorganic," published first as an article in the *American Anthropologist* (1917). In opposition to Edward Sapir and many of his colleagues, he de-emphasized the role of the individual in culture. For Kroeber, culture applied only to a collective level, a world of meaning, norms, and values, and as such could not be explained by relating it to psychological or biological phenomena. With Clyde Kluckhohn and Talcott Parsons, he later distinguished between culture, viewed as a pattern of meaning, and society, which he applied to the behavior of individuals and groups.

Kroeber shared his basic theory of culture as patterning with Boas and many of his students. Employing a set of related terms to characterize cultural wholes—patterns, complexes, and configurations—he emphatically avoided analyses of structure and function. He felt that a comparison of these holistically conceived cultural types could reveal the processes of their historical productions. Kroeber expanded these perceptions, first worked out among tribal societies, to the styles of entire civilizations. This kind of metahistory was similar to the work of Herbert Spencer, Oswald Spengler, and Arnold Toynbee.

Kroeber's cultural relativism was basically Boasian, although, unlike Boas, there was a stronger residue of Victorian evolutionism and cultural ranking (derived from E. B. Tylor and Spencer).

Ethnography and Geographical Orientations

As a student of Franz Boas, Kroeber made important contributions to ethnography, most notably in California but also in the American Southwest, Plains, and Arctic. Among this work was important intensive study of particular peoples, advocated by his mentor: especially the Yurok and Mojave. Like

Boas, Kroeber never wrote a single, comprehensive ethnography of any particular culture. Yet, unlike Boas, throughout his life, Kroeber stressed survey and cultural comparison. Along with Otis T. Mason and Clark Wissler, Kroeber was one of the prime formulators of the concept of culture areas. His concerns with cultural boundaries and mapping led to the definition of culture regions of Native North America. He extended this comparative approach in his work on civilizations.

Like most ethnographers of his generation, Kroeber's conception of ethnography was not what we would call participant observation. Instead, it was essentially the collection of memory culture, based on collecting data and interviews. Taking these sources, his ethnographic work is characterized by a focus on the "ethnographic present," not the tracing of historical developments in the postcontact period. His interest in cultural reconstruction was embodied most thoroughly in his California handbook, published in 1925. Despite his knowledge to the contrary, he did not want to take into account the massive genocide and culture change under which these populations had suffered. This approach was most notable in his writings on Ishi. Also like his mentor, Kroeber never taught ethnographic methodology, expecting his students to pick up the necessary skills on their own.

Temporal Styles and the Comparative Study of Civilizations

Another aspect in which Kroeber went beyond his mentor was his greater emphasis on temporal patterns. He famously explored this topic in several essays (1919 and 1940) on historical trends in European women's dress styles, especially hem lengths, which he correlated with periods of political instability. Kroeber was one of the pioneers in developing the archaeological method of seriation: a system of relative dating based on design sequences or the changing frequency of styles. He first applied this perspective in 1916 to the design styles of Zuni potsherds and later to the pottery styles of Nasca, Peru.

Between 1934 and 1938, Kroeber sent 13 students to 254 tribes or bands in the American West to determine the presence or absence of hundreds of ethnographic traits in these societies. The results of this work were published in 25 reports. This tracing of the distribution of discrete and narrowly defined cultural "elements" was almost the opposite of his earlier, and later, work on cultural patterning and integration.

Partly as a result of his belief that this atomistic methodology had failed to explain cultural processes, Kroeber turned increasingly to so-called "configurational" approaches. Not recognizing any substantive differences between tribal societies and states—only methodological ones—for him it was more a question of finding the suitable historical documentation for his analyses. In his later work on cultural creativity, he related the production of individually creative works to evolving collective traditions. Nevertheless, he maintained a cultural determinism, allowing relatively little room for personal creativity. This collectivist orientation also underlay his general antipathy to the Culture-and-Personality school of the 1930s (despite his sympathy for Benedict's concept of patterning).

Kinship and Social Organization

Although kinship study was not one of his major theoretical areas, Kroeber did make an important contribution to the field. In his 1909 essay "Classificatory Systems of Relationship," he argued that kin terms should not be regarded as direct reflections of social systems but more as linguistic or conceptual categories. This position, the basis of his "Zuni Kin and Clan" (1917), was challenged by most British social anthropologists, particularly W. H. R. Rivers and A. R. Radcliffe-Brown.

Language and Linguistics

Compared with some Boasian ethnographers, Kroeber contributed relatively little to linguistics. Yet he did field research on more than 2 dozen Californian languages, in many cases writing the first grammatical descriptions of these languages. Even more fundamental was his work on language classification in mapping and comprehending the relations of Native Californians. Between 1903 and 1919, Kroeber worked with Harvard's Roland B. Dixon to reduce the number of language families in the region, anticipating the continental classificatory work of Edward Sapir. Kroeber and Dixon were the first, in 1913, to identify the Hokan and Penutian families.

In his work on the speech of Zuni children and Yurok ritual oratory, Kroeber was an innovator in

the anthropological study of speech, as opposed to language. Toward the end of his life, he became interested in animal communication. Methodologically, Kroeber was an innovator in the ethnographic use of the wax cylinder machine to record speech and music, especially in using multiple cylinders to record lengthy narratives.

Kroeber's Legacy

Author of more than 500 publications, Alfred Kroeber dominated the field during the first half of the 20th century. As the last great generalist in American anthropology, he made important contributions to all aspects of the field except physical anthropology. In addition to his substantial theoretical and ethnographic contributions, he helped formulate the primary institutional structures of American anthropology.

In many ways, however, Alfred Kroeber is largely forgotten today. Although he is rarely cited by contemporary anthropologists, he has continued to influence anthropology in recent decades.

Kroeber's legacy in Native California was immense but controversial. As an ethnographer and generalist, his contribution to the study of California Indians is foundational. Yet he has been criticized for his perceived colonialist relationship with Ishi, his declaration that groups such as the Costanoan (Ohlone) and Gabrielino (Tongva) were extinct, his stress on the salience of wealth over religion among the Yurok, and his avoidance of genocide and culture change as historical factors. Yet one must note that this shift in his reputation is due to more general changes in intellectual and cultural climates, which were largely the result of his own work.

With Clark Wissler, Kroeber helped codify the culture area approach. Through his student Julian Steward, his concern with issues of the environment and regional patterning led to the development of cultural ecology.

In archaeology, his pioneering work in seriation is a foundation of the field in North America; his analyses of the pottery styles of Nasca, Peru, were later developed by his Berkeley colleague John H. Rowe and his students. In linguistics, beyond his formative contributions to Native California studies, his work on speech made him a forerunner of the ethnography of speaking developed by Dell Hymes. Kroeber's interest in historical questions and statistical methods made him a developer of the fields of glottochronology or lexicostatistics, which he had first explored in a 1907 paper on the Yokuts language.

Kroeber's work on comparative civilizations was an inspiration for the work of Robert Redfield and the development of area studies in academia. His work on cultural configurations influenced the art historian George Kubler's *The Shapes of Time* (1962). More recently, it has attracted attention among anthropologists and historians, most notably Eric Wolf's *Europe and the People Without History* (1982).

Kroeber's concept of the superorganic has been widely criticized as reification, and many regard his "descriptive integration" of concrete phenomena as overly particularist. In many ways, however, Kroeber was a forerunner of the recent development of cultural studies. Through his work on cultural theory with Clyde Kluckhohn, Kroeber was an inspiration for the interpretative anthropology of Clifford Geertz. His rooting of kinship in the development of language made him a precursor of what would become componential analysis and ethnosemantics. His kinship theory influenced David Schneider, and through him many modern students in gender studies.

Whatever the vicissitudes of historical reputations, Alfred Kroeber's leading role in the anthropology of his day will ensure his relevance to future generations.

Ira Jacknis

See also Boas, Franz; Culture Area Approach; Historical Particularism; Steward, Julian; University of California, Berkeley

Further Readings

Darnell, R. (2001). *Invisible genealogies: A history of Americanist anthropology.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Gilkerson, J. S. (2010). *Anthropologists and the rediscovery of America, 1886–1965*. New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

Kroeber, A. L. (1925). *Handbook of the Indians of California* (Bureau of American Ethnology, Bulletin No. 78). Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution.

———. (1939). *Cultural and natural areas of Native North America* (University of California Publications in

American Archaeology and Ethnology, Vol. 38). Berkeley: University of California.
———. (1944). *Configurations of culture growth*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
———. (1952). *The nature of culture*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
———. (1957). *Style and civilizations*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.
Kroeber, A. L., & Kluckhohn, C. (1952). *Culture: A critical review of concepts and definitions* (Papers of the Peabody Museum of American Archaeology and Ethnology, Vol. 47, no. 1). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University.
Kroeber, A. L., & Kroeber, C. (Eds.). (2003). *Ishi in three centuries*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.
Kroeber, T. (1970). *Alfred Kroeber: A personal configuration*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
Steward, J. H. (1961). Alfred Louis Kroeber, 1876–1960. *American Anthropologist, 63,* 1038–1060.
Thoresen, T. H. H. (1971). *A. L. Kroeber's theory of culture: The early years* (Doctoral dissertation). American Civilization, University of Iowa, IA.

Kuper, Hilda B.

Hilda Kuper (née Beemer; 1911–1982), Swazi ethnographer par excellence, critical colonial analyst, littérateur, and liberal political activist, belonged to a remarkable cohort of South African anthropologists that included Max Gluckman, Ellen Hellman, and Eileen Jensen Krige, who, inspired by Agnes Winifred Hoernle (affectionately known as the "mother of South African social anthropology"), all studied social anthropology at the same time at the University of the Witwatersrand.

Kuper was born to Jewish immigrants on August 23, 1911, in the Southern Rhodesian town of Bulawayo. The family moved to Johannesburg when her father died and Hilda, the youngest of five siblings, was six. Lack of financial resources was to be a major obstacle during her early career. She entered the University of the Witwatersrand in 1927, where, on a whim and encouraged by her school friend Max Gluckman, she enrolled in a yearlong social anthropology course taught by Hoernle, one of the leading liberals in South Africa. Hoernle had a profound effect on Kuper in how she interpreted the causes and effects of injustice, inequality, and cruelty. While Hoernle had worked closely with Radcliffe-Brown, she also grounded her students in European and American diffusionist approaches. The result was that Kuper was to see them as complementary to her own.

In the second and final year of the undergraduate social anthropology major, Hoernle went on a sabbatical and was replaced by Isaac Schapera, who took the class on a monthlong field trip to Botswana. After graduating in 1930, Kuper worked at the South African Institute of Race Relations, where she did a pioneering urban anthropological study examining the impact of the liquor prohibition on Africans and how women coped by developing voluntary organizations. Using a small inheritance, Kuper made her way to London, where from 1932 to 1934 she was a participant in Bronisław Malinowski's famous seminar at the London School of Economics and served as Malinowski's research assistant. Later, when she successfully applied for funds from the International Africa Institute to undertake fieldwork for her doctorate, one of her referees, Schapera, wrote that she "was extremely bright although temperamentally rather romantic." He thought so highly of her that he was encouraging her to study the "woman side of things" among the Tswana and had even proposed marriage to her to ensure this research. Although they didn't marry, this "romantic temperament" was to lead to one of Kuper's unique and pioneering contributions to anthropology, her experimenting with alternative ways of presenting data and insights.

Serendipitously, while in South Africa to address an international educational conference, Malinowski met the King of Swaziland, Sobhuza II, who invited him to visit his kingdom after the conference. Malinowski and his research assistant, Kuper, then spent 2 weeks there, regaled by the commissioner and the king, and the result was a lifelong commitment to the Swazi people stretching from 1934 to 1984. Sobhuza, who ruled Swaziland from 1921 to 1983, was Kuper's personal friend and confidante, and he appointed her his official biographer and awarded her Swazi citizenship.

Her 1936 marriage to the lawyer Leo Kuper (uncle to the anthropologist Adam Kuper) precipitated a crisis of sorts as her grant did not allow for married female researchers. Fortunately, the matter was resolved, and she completed her fieldwork and took a position as a senior lecturer at Wits University in Johannesburg from 1940 to 1947. During this time, she managed to write up her dissertation, which was published in two volumes

in 1947, *The Swazi: An African Aristocracy* and *The Uniform of Colour*. While the first volume was almost vintage Malinowskian, in the second volume Kuper broke away from the discipline's emphasis on "social control" and "culture contact" by combining an analysis of changing institutions with an implied critique of society. Her analysis of Swazi militarism, internal politics, the colonial state, and surrogate colonialism was revolutionary. It exposed the hypocrisy of the ruling White colonial elite, who owned more than two thirds of the land in the Swaziland Protectorate and who had tried to have her expelled from the Protectorate because of her liberal political views.

After the Second World War, a demobilized Leo Kuper decided to become a sociologist, and Hilda accompanied him to North Carolina and Birmingham (United Kingdom) for his studies before Leo accepted the Chair of Sociology at the University of Natal. Unable to secure a position in the anthropology department, Kuper obtained funding to do some 4 years' fieldwork on the Indian community in Natal, working with Sidney Kark, the pioneering community health exponent. The result was a landmark study, *Indian People in Natal* (1960), on immigrant communities. The Kupers became actively involved in the Gandhian passive resistance movement against apartheid in Durban and in the formation of the Liberal Party and courageously stood up to various forms of government intimidation and harassment.

Eventually, both Kupers accepted positions at the University of California, Los Angeles, where Hilda taught from 1963 until her retirement in 1977. There she made three major contributions to anthropology. She pioneered the study of biography in anthropology with her authorized biography of Sobhuza. More important, with Leo and her colleague M. G. Smith, she developed the intellectual underpinnings of the Plural Society approach to understanding complex and colonial societies. She also explored alternative ways of presenting ethnographic data and understanding through fiction. Her novel *The Bite of Hunger* (1965) and her play *A Witch in My Heart* (1970) are exemplars of intuitive communication of deep meanings that complement the knowledge of another culture gained by discursive scholarship.

Perhaps most intriguing about Kuper's legacy is her later realization that rather than the anthropologist exploiting colonial subjects, in her case, the Swazi elite skillfully used her and other progressive South Africans to adroitly and constantly invent myths and traditions in the interests of the hegemony of the Swazi royalty.

Robert Gordon

See also Gluckman, Max; Malinowski, Bronisław; Schapera, Isaac

Further Readings

Kuper, H. (1947). *An African aristocracy: Rank among the Swazi*. London, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (1947). *The uniform of colour: A study of White-Black relationships in Swaziland*. Johannesburg, South Africa: Witwatersrand University Press.

———. (1960). *Indian people in Natal*. Pietermaritzberg, South Africa: Natal University Press.

———. (1965). *The bite of hunger*. New York, NY: Harcourt, Brace.

———. (1970). *A witch in my heart*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (1978). *Sobhuza II*. London, UK: Duckworth.

Labov, William

William Labov (1927–) is an American linguist best known for his central role in the foundation of modern sociolinguistics, and more specifically for an approach to the investigation of language in its social context known as *variationist sociolinguistics*. He rose to prominence in the 1960s as part of a broad movement in the social sciences to focus attention on language as a social phenomenon in fields like linguistics, anthropology, sociology, and philosophy of language. As such, Labov's work stands in dialogue with prominent anthropologists from that period, including Dell Hymes and John Gumperz, who share a focus on the complex relationship between language and society. What sets Labov apart is his end goal of developing a socially informed linguistic theory and his methods, which focus on the quantification of variables as a means to describing social stratification and linguistic change. He is currently one of America's most distinguished linguists, with a body of work spanning 50 years.

Labov grew up in Rutherford and then Fort Lee, New Jersey. Educated at Harvard (BA in 1948), he worked as an industrial chemist at the Union Ink Company (1949–1960), before returning to academia at Columbia (MA in 1963, PhD in 1964). There, he worked under the direction of Uriel Weinreich, a pioneer in the field of language contact and a scholar of Yiddish. Labov stayed on to teach at Columbia from 1964 to 1970. Since 1971, Labov has been a professor of linguistics at the University of Pennsylvania in Philadelphia, a city that has served as a laboratory for much of his research.

Diachronic Studies of Linguistic Behavior and Social Patterning

Labov broke from linguistic tradition, which in the 1960s was more and more dominated by Noam Chomsky and generative grammar, by rejecting the *idiolect* (the variety of language unique to an individual) as the primary object of study. Generative linguists considered language a property of the individual and thus relied on individual speaker data, often in the form of intuitions or grammaticality judgments. In direct contrast, Labov argued that language is a community property and that individuals' speech can only be understood relative to that of the *speech communities* they belong to. Speech communities are considered to share linguistic norms and to be the level at which linguistic patterning can be most clearly observed. Labov also called for a combination of the *synchronic* (studies of language at one point in time) and the *diachronic* (studies of change over time). This was in response to the emphasis on synchrony made by both the newer generative and the earlier structuralist traditions (the latter being well known in anthropology due to the influence of Claude Lévi-Strauss). Labov's suggestion was to move away from the exclusively synchronic study of abstract idiolects to consider the variation in communities of speakers and how these patterns of variation provide information about community change over time. In this, he updated traditions in dialectology, which had combined synchrony and

diachrony by collecting data in the field to answer largely historical questions. While European in origin, dialectology was compatible with an earlier American tradition of descriptive, anthropologically influenced linguistics, deriving from Edward Sapir and Franz Boas, who were well aware of the extent of linguistic diversity, if not necessarily of intracommunity variation.

Synchronically, Labov set out to demonstrate that linguistic behavior varies systematically according to the social patterning found in speech communities. His first study found that local attitudes toward island life on Martha's Vineyard (Massachusetts) were correlated with the pronunciation of certain vowels. He then demonstrated the social stratification of several features of the New York City dialect. In the famous Department Store Study, Labov visited three stores of differing social status (Klein's, Macy's, and Saks), and he found that the sales clerks had corresponding differences in their production of the *r*s in the phrase *fourth floor*. The main part of Labov's dissertation study was on the Lower East Side of Manhattan, where he recorded interviews with a random, socially stratified sample of the population. Published in 1966 (revised edition, 2006) as *The Social Stratification of English in New York City*, this work was more rigorous than dialectologists' previous attempts to observe variation in American English. It demonstrated that several features of pronunciation varied systematically with the social class of the speakers and also with the style of their speech, along a continuum from casual to formal. At the same time, Lower East Siders of all class backgrounds agreed in their negative evaluation of the local dialect. Labov argued that this was evidence that New Yorkers formed a single speech community, sharing norms for linguistic use as well as socially stratified patterns of production.

The variation present synchronically in New York City was further important, Labov argued, in that it related to diachronic change. For example, he found that for the upper middle class, the younger the speaker, the more likely the person was to pronounce the *r* after a vowel. Dismissing the alternative possibility of *age grading*—that is, that speakers use less postvocalic (*r*) as they age—Labov called this pattern *change in apparent time*: The synchronic variation between age-groups is a snapshot of a change in progress in the community. In addition, patterns showing individual speakers using more postvocalic (*r*) in more formal styles (where more attention would be paid to speech) and middle class speakers leading in their use of postvocalic (*r*) were both indicative of what Labov calls *change from above* (above the level of conscious awareness). In this case, the change from above involved the adoption of an external prestige standard where coda (*r*) was pronounced. The framework also includes *change from below*, which for Labov is a language- and community-internal process, involving changes that speakers are not consciously aware of. Change from below was exemplified in New York City by the raising of the vowel in *bad* toward *ey* (or even *ee*) and the vowel in *bought* toward *oo*.

Much of Labov's recent work pursues diachronic questions, including the three-volume *Principles of Linguistic Change* (1994, 2001, 2010), which acts as a compendium of variationist sociolinguistic work (including Labov's own studies of Philadelphia English), orienting it within the larger body of work seeking to understand the principles underlying language change.

Another major recent publication (with Sharon Ash and Charles Boberg) is the *Atlas of North American English* (2006), which presents an acoustic analysis of the dialects of the United States and Canada, delineating the boundaries of the major dialect regions and characterizing broad patterns of phonological change. Based on telephone fieldwork, this was the first dialect atlas to cover such a large region and to be based on instrumental measurements.

Labov aligns with the fields of dialectology and anthropology in his methodological contributions. He focuses on gathering naturalistic data, trying to observe the type of speech people use when unobserved. The most valuable speech to elicit for analysis he terms the *vernacular*, which refers to the most casual and systematic of an individual's speech styles. Labov pioneered a methodology known as the *sociolinguistic interview*, a face-to-face recorded session designed to elicit variation across contextual styles (from the vernacular to the very formal) in long stretches of naturalistic speech. The sociolinguistic interview provides the individual data that, when aggregated, is the primary evidence used in sociolinguistic analysis. Today, it is often used in combination with ethnographic observation, allowing researchers to bring both qualitative and

quantitative linguistic observations to bear on their research questions.

A Quantitative Approach to Data Analysis

Labov adopts a quantitative approach to data analysis. His concept of the *linguistic variable* refers broadly to a set of referentially equivalent variants (ways of "saying the same thing"). Defining the linguistic variable allows for variants to be systematically tracked and counted across stretches of speech. Labov's earliest work used tables and graphs to compare the percentages of use of variants such as the presence or absence of *r* in phrases like *fourth floor*, aggregated over stylistic contexts and/or social classes. The regular patterns revealed in such displays constituted the evidence for *orderly heterogeneity* and the social stratification of the speech community, revealing intricate order in place of what had been dismissed as chaotic *free variation* by structuralist and generative linguists.

Later developments by Labov and others enabled a more sophisticated approach to the quantitative analysis of language. Computer programs called *variable rule programs* (VARBRUL) were developed to estimate the social and linguistic contextual effects on many types of linguistic alternations "coded" from naturalistic data. For example, researchers could use a single data set to show that a variable like *t/d* deletion (e.g., saying "wes' coast" instead of "west coast") is favored by particular social groups (e.g., by men more than by women) as well as in particular linguistic environments (e.g., before a consonant, as in *lef' hand*, more than before a vowel, as in *lef' out*). Over the next decades, practitioners would rely on this type of quantitative estimation to compare and contrast VARBRUL parameters between different varieties of a language as well as for studying individual varieties. Although statistical tools other than VARBRUL are now used, sociolinguists build on Labov's early demonstrations that linguistic variation is not random but is governed by orderly quantitative principles.

Nonstandard Language Varieties: Beyond the Deficit Model

Labov has also had a major impact through his focus on the description and legitimization of nonstandard language varieties, most notably the variety currently known as African American English (AAE). In Harlem in the late 1960s, Labov directed a team of field-workers who conducted ethnographically informed group interviews with African American youth. In his 1972 book *Language in the Inner City*, Labov described the speech of his participants as linguistically structured and sociolinguistically patterned, reiterating his stance on the orderly heterogeneity of all linguistic systems. In the case of AAE, demonstrating its systematicity was crucial at the time, when popular theories like the *deficit hypothesis* posited that linguistic, cultural, or even genetic differences accounted for the poor performance of African American children in schools. The work of the sociologist Basil Bernstein on *restricted and elaborated codes* also contributed to the popular view—one that still holds today—that AAE is a poor or incomplete version of English and reflects a broader cultural deficit for African Americans. Labov has remained an activist throughout his career, working to bring insights from sociolinguistics to a broader audience, both academic and popular. He testified as an expert during the 1979 Ann Arbor trial, which established the precedent that the home language of Black children should be taken into account in public education. More recently, he has worked to develop tools for educators that draw on linguistic knowledge about nonstandard varieties like AAE and Latino English to improve the teaching of reading to minority students. Furthermore, his work has sparked a massive subdiscipline devoted to the study of AAE, large enough to be considered almost a separate branch of sociolinguistics.

Sociolinguistics remains heavily influenced by the variationist paradigm. While some approaches, including many qualitative subdisciplines like discourse analysis and interactional sociolinguistics, critique variationism's reliance on quantifiable data and its use of fixed macro-sociological categories, variationist sociolinguistics remains in dialogue with the broader field. The so-called third wave of variationist studies (developed by Penelope Eckert, herself a student of Labov's) proposes to extend and refine early variationism by retaining its use of empirical and quantifiable data while calling for a renewed focus on the individual, critiquing Labov's assertion that individuals are worthy of study only in the aggregate of speech communities. Eckert's focus on individual practice, style construction, and social meaning also differs from Labov's variationism in drawing on theoretical models from anthropology

and social theory, including indexicality (from Charles Sanders Peirce and more recently revived by Michael Silverstein), enregisterment (Asif Agha), and language ideologies (Paul Kroskrity, Bambi Schieffelin).

Labov's own focus on the social life of language is primarily intended to inform linguistic theory. Nevertheless, his work has had a major impact on, and retains substantial relevance for, those who work at the intersections of language use and social behavior, across many disciplines.

Daniel Ezra Johnson and Kara Becker

See also Chomsky, Noam; Gumperz, John J.; Hymes, Dell; Sociolinguistics

Further Readings

Gordon, M. J. (2006). Interview with William Labov. *Journal of English Linguistics, 34*(4), 332–351.

———. (2013). *Labov: A guide for the perplexed*. London, UK: Continuum.

Hazen, K. (2010). Labov: Language variation and change. In W. Ruth, B. Johnstone, & P. E. Kerswill (Eds.), *The SAGE handbook of sociolinguistics* (pp. 24–39). London, UK: Sage.

Labov, W. (1963). The social motivation of a sound change. *Word, 19,* 273–309.

———. (1969). The logic of non-standard English. In J. Alatis (Ed.), *Linguistics and the teaching of standard English to speakers of other languages and dialects* (pp. 1–44). Washington, DC: Georgetown University Press.

———. (1972). *Language in the inner city: Studies in the Black English vernacular.* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

———. (1972). *Sociolinguistic patterns*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

———. (1994). *Principles of linguistic change: Vol. 1. Internal factors*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

———. (2001). *Principles of linguistic change: Vol. 2. Social factors*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

———. (2006). *The social stratification of English in New York City* (2nd ed.). New York, NY: Cambridge University Press. (Original work published 1966)

———. (2010). *Principles of linguistic change: Vol. 3. Cognitive and cultural factors*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Labov, W., Ash, S., & Boberg, C. (2006). *The atlas of North American English: Phonetics, phonology, and sound change*. New York, NY: Mouton de Gruyter.

Weinreich, U., Labov, W., & Herzog, M. (1968). Empirical foundations for a theory of language change. In W. Lehmann & Y. Malkiel (Eds.), *Directions for historical linguistics* (pp. 95–198). Austin: University of Texas Press.

Lacan, Jacques

Jacques Lacan (1901–1981) was a French psychiatrist and psychoanalyst who had a deep influence on philosophy, literary theory, and anthropology. One way to describe the work of Lacan is as an anthropology—a theory of what it means to be human. According to Lacan, Sigmund Freud's greatest contribution was the invention of the unconscious and the emphasis he placed on sexuality, both of which were specific to humans. Unlike animals, governed by instincts, nature, and biology, humans were defined by desire and language, by their ability to symbolize. Human subjectivity was thus always a form of intersubjectivity in which the encounters with the social and the "Other" were key in the construction of the self.

Lacan's thought presents a number of intrinsic difficulties. On a historical level, Lacan insisted again and again on the fact that he was simply reading Freud, that all of his concepts were anchored in Freud's texts. Such a claim is problematic in light of the fundamentally divergent interpretations of Freud throughout the 20th century. If Lacan's writings found little echo in the United States or in Great Britain, they nonetheless radically shaped the field of French psychoanalysis. Whether one argued with or against him, Lacan became a necessary reference within the French context. Lacan's work is also extremely complex on a theoretical level. His notoriously dense prose, his opaque references, his frequent digressions, and his general refusal of any systematic presentation have led many scholars to misconstrue or to simply dismiss his thought. The difficulty of Lacan's style, however, must be understood within his larger philosophical enterprise, as an attempt to *perform* his theory, to put it into practice. How does one write when language is inherently unstable, when meanings shift constantly, when the signifiers and signified are simply connected by an arbitrary relation, and, most important, when the self who writes, the author, is never an autonomous, centered self?

Born in 1901 in a Parisian bourgeois Catholic family, Lacan studied medicine before choosing

to specialize in psychiatry in 1927. His interest in the question of madness and the psyche drew him toward surrealism, toward André Breton, Georges Bataille, and Salvador Dalí, who were some of the earliest readers of Freud in France. During those years, he decided to undergo analysis with Rudolph Loewenstein, one of the original founders of the Société Psychanalytique de Paris, which Lacan joined in 1934. In 1932, he defended his doctoral thesis, *On Paranoid Psychosis and Its Relations to the Personality*, in which he maintained that psychosis was not the outcome of a specific malfunctioning of the brain as many neuroscientists believed but rather the product of biological and cultural factors. The subject, he argued, was never isolated as many psychiatrists assumed. He or she was neither the autonomous reflexive Cartesian self nor the transcendental Kantian actor. Rather, Lacan's understanding of the self was closest to G. W. F. Hegel's.

Theory of the Mirror Stage

Lacan became particularly engaged with Hegel's thought through Alexandre Kojève's seminar on the *Phenomenology of the Spirit*, which he attended in the 1930s. Kojève's reading of Hegel emphasized the constitutive role of desire and of the "Other," who is both desired and the agent of desire and, consequently, of recognition. Hegel offered a way to bypass the divide between the individual and the social by suggesting that the two were neither autonomous nor overdetermined by one or the other but, rather, were mutually constitutive. Hegel's influence was particularly palpable in Lacan's theory of the "mirror stage," which he first presented at an International Psychoanalytic Association (IPA) congress in 1936 and which he reworked throughout his career. The mirror stage describes the reaction of a baby from 6 to 18 months, who, despite his lack of physical coordination, recognizes himself in a mirror. Although the child experiences his body as fragmented, the image he perceives is whole, integrated, and contained. This contrast produces a feeling of conflict and aggressiveness, which the child attempts to overcome by identifying with the image, which in itself leads to a sense of jubilation. For Lacan, the mirror stage describes the structure of subjectivity more generally: The unconscious, self-defined by the free play of the drives, identifies with an ideal I, the ego, the social self. This constitutive ambiguity in identity formation, this fundamental alienation, is absolutely central to Lacan's work: Identifications are based on self-recognitions that are always already misrecognitions. The mirror stage, as Lacan will later argue, also marks the subject's entry into language. There is an imaginary dimension to this double process of language acquisition and identity formation, resulting from the sense of mastery, autonomy, and wholeness. There is also, however, a symbolic element as the child looks up to the adult carrying him, the "Other," to confirm his identity.

Lacan reworked his concepts of the Imaginary, the Symbolic, and the Real in his 1953 IPA paper "The Function and Field of Speech and Language in Psychoanalysis," also known as the Rome Discourse. A few months before this presentation, Lacan had—along with other French psychoanalysts—resigned from the Société Psychanalytique de Paris to found the Société Française de Psychanalyse. The relationship between Lacan and the IPA had been contentious for a several years, particularly because of his practice of variable-length sessions, which could last from a few minutes to several hours. Lacan's Rome Discourse emerged in this context as a sort of theoretical manifesto for a new psychoanalysis, a new practice and a new theory, one increasingly influenced by structuralism. Language was the starting point of Lacan's "return to Freud," because language, the patient's word, or rather *parole*, was the only medium available to psychoanalysis. Lacan opposed his notion of language to that of the ego-psychologists or the behaviorist school interested in establishing "communication" with the patient. Psychoanalysis, he argued, ought to focus on the gaps in language, silences, paradoxes, symptoms, and dreams, even if they did not appear to communicate anything. The idea behind the variable-length sessions was precisely to revive the "talking cure" along Freud's guidelines, to provide a forum in which the unconscious, as opposed to the ego, could speak.

Theory of Language

According to Lacan, contemporary psychoanalysts had overlooked Freud's two most important innovations: (1) the unconscious and (2) sexuality. Both of these, he argued, had a linguistic expression and could only be studied in relation to language. Lacan's theory of language was indebted to structural

linguistics and particularly to the work of Ferdinand de Saussure and Roman Jakobson, who conceived of language as a system of differences. The second greatest influence for the Rome Discourse was the work of Claude Lévi-Strauss. From *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*, Lacan borrowed Lévi-Strauss's system of structural equivalence between subjectivity, the social, and language, all of which were mediated by the prohibition of incest. Indeed, according to Lévi-Strauss, the law or prohibition was productive rather than restrictive in the sense that it forced men to marry outside their clan, to establish new social relations, and to mediate this process through language. Lacan's notion of castration operated similarly: No object could ever fully satisfy desire, not even the mother or the child, but other "small objects" (*objets petit a* as opposed to the big "Other") could come into being. Although these *objets a* generate desire, they also remain unobtainable. The structural lack of the object—the impossibility of having the full thing, *das Ding*—was once again analogous to the structural inability to ever have a full, transparent, immediate language. Just as Lévi-Strauss suggested that man could never return to a state of nature—which was by definition always already foreclosed—Lacan indicated that man would never lead a purely instinctual existence.

Imaginary, Symbolic, and Real

The Imaginary, the Symbolic, and the Real—the three orders that Lacan would eventually represent in a Borromean knot to illustrate the mutual implication of the terms—were also defined in relation to castration and to language. The Imaginary, illustrated in the mirror stage, describes the identification of the ego and the specular image. As such, the Imaginary is the realm not only of synthesis, plenitude, duality, and autonomy but also of alienation and illusion. The Symbolic is always already implicated in the Imaginary as the image of the parent holding the child suggests. If the Imaginary is the realm of the signified, the Symbolic is the realm of the signifier, of the "Other," and of radical alterity. The law that regulates desire in the Oedipus complex or that mandates the prohibition of incest is also located in the Symbolic. In this context, Lacan also developed the notion of the *nom-du-père* ("name of the father"), based on the homophony *nom* as "name" and *non* as "no," to expand the role of the biological father in the Oedipus complex—as the one who breaks the dual identificatory relation between mother and child—to larger structures of authority (other people but also institutions such as the school, the army, and the law). Finally, the Real designates what escapes from both the Imaginary and the Symbolic, the undifferentiated, the traumatic, the impossible, that which cannot be expressed in language but always returns.

Later Work

In 1963, the Société Française de Psychanalyse finally received from the IPA the official recognition that it had sought for years, but under the condition of Lacan's exclusion. Following his "excommunication" from the IPA and the Société Française de Psychanalyse, Lacan founded the École Freudienne de Paris, where he continued to imagine new, unorthodox practices to prevent the reification of the psychoanalytic theory and experience. One of these was "the pass," in which analysts-in-training testified to their experiences of analysis before being allowed to practice themselves.

In 1966, Lacan published his only collection of written texts, *Écrits* (Writings). His main teaching during those years was oral, in the form of his seminar, first held at the Sainte Anne Hospital from 1953 to 1964, then at the École Normale Supérieure from 1964 to 1969, and finally at the Faculté de Droit until his death. It was at the École Normale Supérieure that Lacan acquired some of his most loyal disciples, many of whom were students of Louis Althusser and Maoist sympathizers. Among these was Jacques-Alain Miller, who eventually married Lacan's daughter, Judith, and was responsible for the posthumous publication of the seminars. After 1968, the University of Vincennes (Paris VIII) instituted the first official department of psychoanalysis, where many of Lacan's students taught and propagated his ideas. After the 1970s, Lacan was increasingly attracted to mathematics, logic, and formalization as a way to represent certain psychoanalytic concepts differently and to avoid impasses of the written word. In 1980, he singlehandedly dissolved the École Freudienne de Paris and constituted the École de la Cause Freudienne, over which he presided for a few months until his death in 1981.

Among other themes, Lacan continued to explore neurosis, perversion, and psychosis. While

Freud conceived of these categories phenomenologically, Lacan treated them as *structures* in which symptoms and behaviors may or may not be present. Furthermore, he defined all three around the modalities of avoiding or refusing castration: What does it mean to live as decentered subjects, with lack of objects for one's desire and with a language that always already fails? In neurosis, the solution to this dilemma takes the form of seduction. Perversion is the "demonstration" or repetitive staging of a scenario directed toward the production of a specific *jouissance*, an unbearable pleasure. In psychosis, it takes the form of delusion. Lacan was particularly interested in the structure of psychosis, which resulted, he argued, from the foreclosure of the signifier—a "hole" in the Symbolic due to the absence of the *nom-du-père*. The psychotic was unable to function in the social just as he or she was unable to "signify" linguistically or be understood.

Another important theme in Lacan's later work was the problem of sexual difference. As a psychic structure, sexual difference was reducible neither to sex (biological) or to gender (social). It escaped representation. Lacan, for instance, devised the concept of the phallus, a symbol of desire that was discursive rather than anatomical, as was the penis in Freud's work. Similarly, he devoted a seminar to feminine sexuality (Seminar XX: *Encore*) in which he made famous (and famously misunderstood) declarations such as "Woman does not exist" and "She is not-whole." These statements point once again to the structural impossibility of having or of being a complete object of someone's desire. Throughout his career, Lacan worked and reworked this anthropology, a theory of the decentered self.

Camille Robcis

See also Freud, Sigmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude

Further Readings

Evans, D. (1996). *An introductory dictionary of Lacanian psychoanalysis.* New York, NY: Routledge.

Fink, B. (1995). *The Lacanian subject: Between language and jouissance.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

———. (1997). *A clinical introduction to Lacanian psychoanalysis: Theory and technique.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Marini, M. (1992). *Jacques Lacan: The French context.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

Roudinesco, E. (1997). *Jacques Lacan.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Silverman, K. (1983). The subject. In *The subject of semiotics* (pp.126–193). New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Turkle, S. (1992). *Psychoanalytic politics: Jacques Lacan and Freud's French Revolution.* New York, NY: Guilford Press.

Lafitau, Joseph-François

Father Joseph-François Lafitau (1681–1746) was a Jesuit missionary in Quebec from 1712 to 1717. Most of this time was spent in a settlement of Iroquois converts to Christianity at Sault St. Louis, near modern Montreal. Here, he conducted the methodical and meticulous ethnographic observations that were to form the core of his voluminous two-volume treatise *Customs of the American Savages Compared to the Customs of the Earliest Times* (1724). More than a century before Lewis Henry Morgan, he used his own detailed observation of the Iroquois along with comparable descriptions by other missionaries and secular travelers as well as the corpus of classical antiquity to elaborate an ambitious scheme of universal history. His ethnography, however impressive, was hardly unique, but the comparative scope of his inquiry was truly remarkable, foreshadowing anthropological thought in the following century.

For Lafitau, the "earliest times" referred to classical antiquity and the Bible. He accepted biblical chronology as a given—in his day an uncontroversial stance. His theology also committed him to a monogenetic vision of human origins, and consequently an explanation for the peopling of the New World. He seized on the fact that, like the Iroquois, the Lycians of Asia Minor, as described by Herodotus, were matrilineal, a condition he labeled "gynococracy." On these grounds, he conjectured that the Iroquois and other Native American peoples were descendants of Lycian migrants who had migrated across Asia and crossed over to the New World from Siberia.

Lafitau's theologically inspired vision of world history posited that, originally, all humanity had been granted divine instructions for living a proper

life but that only the "chosen people" had kept these intact. Nevertheless, the institutions of other peoples—especially religion, marriage and the family, and government—reflected, however imperfectly, the divine mandate. In his chapter on religion, the longest in the book, he attempts to reconstruct a sort of primal paganism by amalgamating features of Greek and Roman religion and accounts of Native American practices, not only of the Iroquois and their neighbors but also from accounts of Virginia, Brazil, and the Antilles. His portrayal was by no means unsympathetic. For example, he depicted pagan "mysteries"—initiation rites—as techniques for inculcating the practice of asceticism as a means of accessing the sacred, imperfect refractions of the divine spark. This section on religion is the one where he makes the least use of Iroquois ethnography.

The chapter on marriage is a far more straightforward account of Iroquois kinship. Here, Lafitau takes great pains to argue that Iroquois mores are in most respects consistent with Christian morality, lavishing praise on their marital fidelity and their systematic avoidance of marriages between relatives and only deploring the ease of divorce. Here and elsewhere, Lafitau saw no inconsistency between matrilineal kinship and the divine plan. This chapter contains an accurate explanation of Iroquois kinship terminology, earning the admiration of A. R. Radcliffe-Brown and Sol Tax, among others.

Other sections of the book leave theological concerns aside, providing a highly detailed account of Iroquois government, male and female occupations, warfare, foreign policy, trade, hunting and fishing, games, sickness and medicine, and burial and mourning, interspersed from time to time with comparisons with practices from classical antiquity.

Lafitau's work had virtually no impact on contemporary French secular Enlightenment thinkers, who had no interest in his theology and little patience with his pedantic style, especially in his discussions of classical antiquity. Voltaire lampooned his diffusionist account of the peopling of the New World. Just because the Greeks hunted, told myths, and danced on holidays and the Iroquois did likewise was hardly, he ironized, a compelling argument. Voltaire conveniently, if unfairly, omitted all reference to matrilineal descent, a far more striking coincidence. In fact, Lafitau's diffusionism, however erroneous, was hardly as careless as Voltaire suggested. Notably, Lafitau carefully considered and rejected on evidentiary grounds speculation that Native Americans were the long-lost Israelites.

Ultimately, Lafitau left a deeper mark on Scottish than on French Enlightenment thinkers. Adam Smith and Adam Ferguson relied on Lafitau, along with another Jesuit, Pierre de Charlevoix, a historian of New France, for their construct of "savagery" as the earliest stage of human progress. The Scots were particularly interested in Lafitau's descriptions of government and warfare, especially his analysis of how the Iroquois managed to maintain order, wage war, and engage in highly successful foreign diplomacy in the absence of a monarchy and indeed any central authority. Although, because of his description of Iroquois kinship, he has been retrospectively hailed as a precursor, his analysis of Iroquois government is arguably his most enduring contribution.

Robert Launay

See also Ferguson, Adam; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Voltaire

Further Readings

Lafitau, J.-F. (1974). *Customs of the American Indians compared with the customs of primitive times* (W. N. Fenton & E. L. Moore, Trans.; 2 vols.). Toronto, Ontario, Canada: Champlain Society.

Launay, R. (2010). Lafitau revisited: American "savages" and universal history. *Anthropologica, 52,* 337–343.

Lamphere, Louise

Louise Lamphere (1940–) is considered one of the "founding mothers" of feminist anthropology. Her career has encompassed Navajo studies, urban and workplace ethnography, family and kinship studies, U.S. immigration and ethnic group formation, and U.S. healthcare policy. She was among the first women to be hired for a permanent faculty position at Brown University but was denied tenure there in 1975. Always combining scholarship with activism and political engagement, she instituted a gender discrimination lawsuit, which was settled (in her favor) out of court and which had wide-ranging implications for women in higher education. She has served as president of the American Anthropological Association, the American Ethnological Society, and

the Association for Feminist Anthropology, among many other positions, and has received many honors and awards.

Since receiving her PhD from Harvard in 1968, Lamphere's scholarship has been characterized by a consistent emphasis on how subordinated individuals and groups construct strategies of resistance within specific, local political economies. Her theoretical contributions avoid the dichotomous thinking (between nature and culture, e.g., or structure and agency) so common in the social sciences, in favor of an emphasis on how practice emerges from structural conditions. Her body of work is often closely related to public policy initiatives and collapses the distinctions between applied, practicing, and public anthropology. Many of her research projects were conducted with interdisciplinary teams and employed the methodologies of historians and sociologists as well as anthropology.

Lamphere became nationally known as coeditor of a volume that helped define the field of feminist anthropology, *Woman, Culture, and Society*, published in 1974. Influenced by second-wave feminism and by the contributors' own experiences as women within the academy, the book originated with graduate students at Stanford in 1971. Lamphere was a young assistant professor at the time, and she undertook the organizing and editing duties with Michelle Zimblast Rosaldo. They explicitly defined their project as "a first generation's attempt to integrate an interest in women into a general theory of society and culture." Among the questions addressed by the contributors, and by the editors in their introduction were the following: Are women everywhere, as Simone de Beauvoir posited, the "second sex"? If so, can this universal secondary status be explained by biological factors? If not, and if gender hierarchies are historical constructs, how can they be changed? How is gender asymmetry related to other forms of stratification and domination? The ethnographic literature at the time relegated descriptive information on women largely to the topics of kinship and marriage, but there were suggestions that domestic tensions could have larger political implications. The contributors to *Women, Culture, and Society* were simultaneously trying to read an existing literature in new ways, supply ethnographic evidence that had gone previously unreported, and stretch the boundaries of existing theory, including Marxist historical materialism, British structural functionalism, and the emerging transactional political anthropology of authors such as Fredrik Barth and F. G. Bailey. Taken together, the essays represent an ambitious attempt to explain both variation and continuities in women's lives across time and space.

Within this collection, Lamphere's own contribution prefigures much of her later writing. Lamphere used her own ethnographic study of Navajo families, in dialogue with material from a range of other societies, to develop the idea that women's domestic strategies were shaped by very different sets of interests, even within the same household. At a time when evolutionary theories held that women were "naturally" competitive with each other (to attract and hold on to a male provider), Lamphere demonstrated that in situations where men and women share domestic authority, as among the Navajo, it was in women's interest to work together across kin groups and generations. Where women's household standing depended on their ability to covertly influence men, on the other hand, significant intrahousehold conflict was often generated between cowives or between the mother-in-law and daughter-in-law. The resulting domestic dramas were an outcome of social structure, not of women's "intrinsic" nature.

Lamphere explored similar themes in her dissertation fieldwork with Navajo communities in northern New Mexico in 1965–1966. Classic Navajo studies by Clyde Kluckhohn and George Collier had emphasized the negative psychological aspects of witchcraft and other beliefs; Lamphere was interested in mutual aid, cooperation, and reciprocity. Living with several different families in dispersed seasonal groups, she documented the overlapping networks through which religious ceremonies, family events, and other activities were organized and resources and labor were mobilized. Navajo conceptions of personal autonomy were often in tension with equally strong values placed on generosity and cooperation. Choices about whom to ask for help and decisions to grant or withhold assistance led Lamphere to important insights about Navajo kinship, the "loose" structure of which had defied analysis through the structural-functionalist models of the day.

Beginning in the mid-1970s, Lamphere undertook a series of large, multidisciplinary projects tracking the changing political economy of the United States, with a focus on how families made decisions about deploying labor within and outside

the home. In *From Working Daughters to Working Mothers* (1987), she traced the rise and fall of the New England textile industry, into which successive waves of immigrants sent first their unmarried daughters and later their wives and mothers, over the course of the 20th century. *Sunbelt Working Mothers*, published in 1993, examined the same process as American companies relocated from the northeast to the southwest, sparking significant changes in the household division of labor between husbands and wives, as fairly well-paid factory jobs for women became briefly available (before moving offshore by the end of the 20th century). The importance of ethnicity and immigration in both sites was further explored in two edited volumes, *Structuring Diversity: Ethnographic Perspectives on the New Immigration* (1992) and *Newcomers in the Workplace: Immigrants and the Restructuring of the U.S. Economy* (1994). As feminist anthropology developed into a vibrant and theoretically rich subfield within the discipline, Lamphere contributed another "state-of-the-art" edited volume, *Situated Lives: Gender and Culture in Everyday Life* (1997). Her commitment to documenting the ways working families adapt to the changing economic environment led her to medical anthropology and a major project on Medicaid managed-care initiatives in New Mexico, resulting in a special issue of *Medical Anthropology Quarterly* in 2005.

In 2007, Lamphere published a work bringing together her scholarly and personal history across 40 years, *Weaving Women's Lives: Three Generations in a Navajo Family*, in which she shares authorship with Eva Price, Carole Cadman, and Valerie Darwin, a grandmother, a mother, and a daughter of one of the families Lamphere lived with during her 1965–1966 doctoral fieldwork. The book traces the transformation in Navajo women's experience across the 20th century and incorporates Lamphere's own biography as a Westerner of a very different class and ethnic status. *Weaving Women's Lives* literally brings Lamphere full circle, drawing together her years of scholarship on questions of gender, ethnic identity, and economic change and their relationship to work in the United States.

Mary H. Moran

See also Barth, Fredrik; Economic Anthropology; Feminist Anthropology; Gender and Anthropology; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist

Further Readings

Lamphere, L. (1977). *To run after them: Culture and social bases of cooperation in a Navajo community.* Tucson: University of Arizona Press.

———. (1987). *From working daughters to working mothers: Immigrant women in a New England industrial community.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

———. (2007). *Weaving women's lives: Three generations in a Navajo family.* Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press.

Rosaldo, M. Z., & Lamphere, L. (1974). *Woman, culture and society.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

L'Année Sociologique

L'Année Sociologique is a journal published annually in Paris: first from 1898 to 1907 and then at various intervals (see below) until the present day. The title followed a current fashion when it was founded: "The Year in (the area of knowledge)." The 1890s was a decade of rapid expansion of such journals in France, so in choosing this title, the founders were stating the arrival of their new discipline in the scientific world of the time. The current editors describe it as "the oldest scientific journal devoted to the social sciences."

The Group

The name is also applied to the group of French scholars who founded it and worked together on it in the early years, under the direction of Émile Durkheim, who is considered to be one of the three great founders of sociology (with Karl Marx and Max Weber). At that time, Durkheim was only 40 years old. He had already published three major works, *The Division of Labor in Society* (1893), *The Rules of Sociological Method* (1895), and *Suicide* (1897), and had visited scholars in Germany, notably the social psychologist Wilhelm Wundt. His masterwork *The Elementary Forms of Religious Life* was published much later, in 1912, so it was written with the benefit of many years of ongoing study, reflection, and engagement with the group and with the vast emerging new scholarship that they were reviewing for the journal and drawing on to define their own distinctive approach.

The efforts of Durkheim and his followers bore remarkable fruit, in part due to the brilliance of the work itself and in part due to the commitment of the members. Those mentioned on the face page in 1898 were Durkheim and 12 others, of whom 3 were at other universities. A whole new generation of young people are mentioned by name for Volume 7, and there was another surge in growth in 1912. By Volume 10, there were 20 members. For Volume 12, there were 29, from 10 universities. This growth was perhaps due to Durkheim's move from Bordeaux to Paris, where he gained an appointment in 1902. By the time of Volume 12, he was established in Paris and was a major intellectual figure in the capital. Membership in the group was markedly consistent over this time. Besides Durkheim, 7 of the first participants were listed for all 12 prewar volumes: Celestin Bouglé, Emmanuel Lévy, Paul Fauconnet, Henri Hubert, Marcel Mauss, Dominique Parodi, and François Simiand.

Durkheim's nephew Mauss was the other universally recognized scholar who belonged to the group from the beginning. He contributed disproportionately to the review essays and revived the journal in the 1920s, after Durkheim's death and the losses of the First World War. Mauss summarized and characterized their work in his moving eulogy in the edition of 1923–1924. Through what he referred to as a "true sharing of work," the collaboration of the *Année Sociologique* scholars not only provided the foundation for an entire school of the new discipline of sociology, with its own links throughout European scholarship, but also fostered what he referred to as a "flowering" of the varied individual work of its members.

The Journal Format

For the first 10 issues, the journal comprised two sections: (1) original memoirs and (2) review articles. The memoirs established the most notable themes of what became known as the "French school": religious practices in society (systems of classification, sacrifice, magic, caste, and representations of death); the division of labor, law, penal practices, and property; and general theoretical issues of social reproduction and comparative analysis. The original memoirs of the first edition were by Durkheim and Georg Simmel. Durkheim had essays of his own in 5 of the first 12 editions (up to 1912); Mauss authored or coauthored 4 editions, and Robert Hertz and Hubert authored or coauthored 1 each. The pervasive theme was society as a moral order.

The reviews were composed individually or in small teams, and the scholarship addressed in the reviews was wide-ranging and voluminous. In Volume 6 (1901–1902) alone, the 15 group members reviewed about 250 works, in more than 50 titled review sections, covering French-, English-, German-, and Italian-language scholarship. An example is one 16-page section titled Philosophical Sociology, where Mauss reviewed works by 15 anthropologists, written in French, English, and German, on religious and totemic systems all over the world, most especially in Melanesia, Central Africa, and Native America. This would be the basis for the seminal essay by Durkheim and Mauss on "primitive classification" published in 1903 (see later). Also included in this one issue were books and articles by famous scholars including Gabriel Tarde, Franz Boas, Benedetto Croce, Georges Sorel, Werner Sombart, James G. Frazer, A. L. Kroeber, and others.

For Volume 11, Durkheim decided to change strategy, to publish the memoirs more fully as a separate series, so that the members could devote more time to their individual research. The journal was then devoted only to review articles, and its frequency was reduced from the annual issue to one edition every 3 years, without, however, changing the name. Only two issues—Volumes 11 and 12—were published in this form, before the First World War brought everything to a halt. The war had a devastating effect. Several young members of the *Année Sociologique* group were killed, including Durkheim's only son, André. Durkheim died 2 years after his son's death, in 1917. The journal and the group were relaunched only in 1925 (edition for 1923–1924), under the leadership of Mauss, whose famous "Essai sur le Don: Forme et Raison de l'Échange dans les Sociétés Archaïques" (Essay on the Gift: The Form and Reason of Exchange in Archaic Societies) was the original research paper for that issue. The turbulence and loss in membership was much more marked than any variability of theory and vision in the group.

Mauss picked up "the task" left by "our dead," although the journal never regained the international stature it had achieved when Durkheim was alive. This would be impossible, since the first 10 volumes

are identified as groundbreaking in the history of the social sciences.

Theory and Method

The memoirs of the first 12 volumes indicate the theoretical and methodological innovations that the group proposed and that have become identified with the thrust of their enormous influence. Some of those titles are the following:

Durkheim: "The Prohibition of Incest and Its Origins"

Simmel: "How Social Forms Maintain Themselves"

Durkheim: "On the Definition of Religious Phenomena"

Hubert and Mauss: "Essay on the Nature and Function of Sacrifice"

Durkheim and Mauss: "On Some Primitive Forms of Classification: Contribution to the Study of Collective Representations"

Bouglé: "General Review of Recent Theories of the Division of Labor"

Hubert and Mauss: "Outline of a General Theory of Magic"

Paul Huvelin: "Magic and Individual Right"

Hertz: "Contribution to the Collective Representation of Death"

Bouglé: "Note on Law and Caste in India"

These titles convey the theoretical themes and the favored method of the school. The themes center on religion and meaning, on the one hand, and on what they called "social morphology" and law, on the other. The method is rigorously empirical. Case studies and ethnography figure prominently, and they cover the world: Australia, India, France, Native America, and the Arctic. The review section covers an even wider geographical world. Integrating the two themes, several articles aim toward a "general theory" of, or at least an approach to, specific phenomena such as magic, death, religion, words, and collective representations. They insert a characteristic method of comparison here: the detailed study of signal cases, elementary forms, or specific instances of general phenomena in which the qualities they see as central are particularly evident. Although they sometimes refer to these elementary forms as "primitive," they do not embed the argument in evolutionary theory. Rather, the adjective *primitive* refers at once to a condensed, generative "first" (as in "basic") as well as "ancient." Mauss, in particular, was deeply opposed to speculative history and in favor of identifying consonances and overlaps among phenomena from all places and eras of history, to elucidate their commonalities. This is his method in the most celebrated of all the memoirs published in the journal, the "Essay on the Gift" (1925), where he starts at two ends of the world, with the Icelandic Edda epic and the Maori *hau* ("spirit of the gift"), and ends with the civic life of his own time in postwar Europe, by way of Melanesia, Ancient Rome, and India, and stretching to include institutions such as sacrifice, which broadens the very definition of "gift."

The early theoretical articles make the links explicit between the two broad themes of religion and society and draw on the ethnographic sources to make the case. Over the years, the headings for the review sections reflect the growing breadth of their reach and the focus of their analysis. Each group of reviews is broken down into subthemes as well, where the specialist reader may pick up threads across the years. By Volume 6 (1901–1902), the major headings are as follows: General Sociology, Religious Sociology, Moral and Juridical Sociology, Sociology of Crime and Moral Statistics, Economic Sociology, Social Morphology, and, finally, Diverse, which included Art and Socialism.

From the early years, out of all the general theoretical papers, the one by Durkheim and Mauss together, originally published in Volume 6 of *Année Sociologique* as *De quelques formes primitives de classification* (1903) and translated into English as *Primitive Classification* (1963), best exemplifies their method and showcases their most inspired contributions. Here, the authors argue clearly for holding aside psychology and philosophy from the study of "mental operations," in favor of a rigorous, empirically based linking of the categories of classification of the world to the classifications of human society. In "Primitive Classification" (1963), Durkheim and Mauss focus on the signal case of totemism, the widespread practice of identifying a social group with a natural species with which they maintain an active relationship of some sort (avoid eating, wear as a talisman, perform in ritual, etc.).

The social groupings of our social past and "distant present" are still "the very cadre of all classification . . . the ensemble of mental habits by virtue of which we conceive things and facts in the form of coordinated or hierarchized groups" (p. 88). Durkheim and Mauss conclude that phenomena such as totemism demonstrate how sociology can shed light on the beginning and functions of logical operations. These are arguments taken up by a long genealogy of intellectual heirs, including Claude Lévi-Strauss in his magnum opus, his four-volume work on the logic of myth.

Although the work of *L'Année Sociologique* is sometimes represented in a schematic way, as positing the social foundations of cognitive categories and moral thought, the school's propositions emerged from a matrix of vast study, ongoing interchange, and the interweaving of individual, collaborative, and team work by more than a dozen scholars over a dozen issues of a journal, each of which ran to more than 600 pages. Collectively, they created a profoundly researched, empirically supported, and philosophically sophisticated body of work, encompassing societies ancient and modern, across the world. By encompassing all societies, they created a basis for general theory, comparative sociology, and a bridge between the two disciplines of anthropology and sociology that did not exist for those who divided the social world into industrial and preindustrial societies, East and West, literate and nonliterate.

Translation

It is largely through British social anthropology that the journal's essays moved into wide circulation in English-speaking scholarship. Translations were organized by E. E. Evans-Pritchard, professor of anthropology at Oxford, who met Mauss before he died in 1950. In the 1950s and 1960s, several of Mauss's authored and coauthored memoirs from the journal were published in English as short books: *The General Theory of Magic* (1950), *The Essay on the Gift* (1954), *Death and the Right Hand* (Hertz, 1960), *Primitive Classification* (Durkheim & Mauss, 1963), and *Sacrifice* (Hubert & Mauss, 1964). These works are still widely studied, as Mauss's work gains in influence: through the compelling relevance of the ideas, through the continuation of the journal, and through the Paris-based network that bears his name as an acronym, Le Mouvement Anti-Utilitariste dans les Sciences Sociales (MAUSS).

Jane I. Guyer

See also Boas, Franz; Durkheim, Émile; Frazer, James G.; Hertz, Robert; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Mauss, Marcel; Simmel, Georg; Wundt, Wilhelm

Further Readings

Durkheim, E., & Mauss, M. (1963). *Primitive classification* (R. Needham, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Fournier, M. (2006). *Marcel Mauss: A biography.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

———. (2007). *Émile Durkheim (1858–1917)*. Paris, France: Fayard.

Latour, Bruno

Bruno Latour (1947–) is a French sociologist, philosopher, Bible scholar, anthropologist, and scientist; one of the founders of actor-network theory; and among the most unconventional thinkers of the past century. With his creative approaches to the collective production of knowledge, technology, metaphysics, and ecology, his work not only transcended the boundary between social and natural sciences but also provided a defining impulse to the discourse on the interaction of society, knowledge, and time in a world that, in his view, was never "modern." Latour is one of the most cited authors in the social sciences.

Biography and Major Works

Latour was born on June 22, 1947, in Beaune (Burgundy, France), into a wine-growing family steeped in tradition. His ideas stem from a classical Jesuit education and a comprehensive philosophical training. Even though he is now widely seen as a historian of science and a sociologist of technology, his early influences came from ancient mythologies and his enthusiasm for Friedrich Nietzsche. He felt highly attracted to the well-grounded epistemic attempts to grasp the essence of "Being."

Following his studies in philosophy, biblical exegesis, and anthropology in Dijon, Latour completed his voluntary military service (1973–1975) with the Office de la Recherche Scientifique et Technique

Outre-Mer in Abidjan, Côte d'Ivoire, where he wrote an ethnographic study on the ideology of "competence" in industrial relations and associated racist discourses. In 1975, he undertook doctorate studies at the Tours University.

Anthropology Beyond the Tropes: Laboratory Life, Science Studies, and Actor-Network Theory

In the late 1970s, Latour shifted from his anthropological research to focus on studying highly sophisticated scientific laboratories. He spent 2 years (1975–1977) in the Salk Institute for Biological Studies in San Diego, California, in the neuroendocrinology research lab of Roger Guillemin (who was later awarded the Nobel Prize), where he pioneered an ethnographic study of the scientific community, focusing on the processes of scientific discovery. The product of this fieldwork was *Laboratory Life: The Social Construction of Scientific Facts*, published in 1979, coauthored with the British sociologist Steve Woolgar. Through this work, Latour and Woolgar attempted to illuminate the roles of rhetorical strategies, technical artifacts, and discipline-specific research procedures in the construction of scientific "facts." For Latour, knowledge, be it technical skills, scientific theories, worldviews, or anything else, has no absolute certainty. Rather, it is merely a specific kind of familiarity in interaction with certain people, things, places, or events.

After his fieldwork in Côte d'Ivoire and California, Latour participated in a scientific-historical research project on the significance of Louis Pasteur for medicine and for French society (1978–1981). A summary of his findings was published in 1984 as *Les Microbes: Guerre et Paix: Suivi de Irréductions* (*The Pasteurization of France*, 1988). In 1987, he obtained his postdoctoral degree (*habilitation*) from École des Hautes Études en Sciences Sociales and published *Science in Action: How to Follow Scientists and Engineers Through Society.*

Nous n'avons jamais été modernes, or "we have never been modern," is perhaps Latour's most eye-catching aphorism. Latour revealed the dichotomy between nature and society, and object and subject, as useless, replacing them with concepts like "collective" or "human and non-human actors and actants." Latour shows how even the smallest (e.g., microbes) and seemingly unimportant, placid, and presumably lifeless things, such as keys or automobile safety belts, possess their own personal expressivity and action potentials and thus actively influence human lives. Within this reality-constitutive interplay of the most diverse forces, he presented the concept of "labor" as the quintessential social *topos*.

As a participant in numerous projects in political science and in research management, Latour has peered carefully over the shoulders of scientists and engineers. He developed all his epistemological thoughts and hypotheses on the basis of empirical studies (as exemplified in *Laboratory Life: The Social Construction of Scientific Facts* and *Aramis, ou l'Amour des Technique* [*Aramis, or the Love of Technology*]), through which he provided the crucial momentum for the development of new international and interdisciplinary research subjects, for instance, science and technology studies (STS or, in short, science studies), dedicated to the examination of the history of science and technological research.

Within the scope of science studies, he first employed poststructuralist, postmodern ideas to show that the knowledge produced by the sciences is not objective. Such knowledge is socioculturally constructed—that is, influenced by the prevailing cultural assumptions, ideologies, and power structures. But additionally, he criticized poststructural thinkers such as Roland Barthes, Jean Baudrillard, Jacques Derrida, Jacques Lacan, and Jean-François Lyotard. Jürgen Habermas and Pierre Bourdieu are also among his intellectual antagonists. Latour transcends social constructivism by arguing that reality is not mainly constructed but is set up by all the interacting and interrelated human and nonhuman protagonists at large. Latour assumes that technology, matter, nature, culture, and the social do not influence one another one-sidedly in their diverse features and domains. Rather, they are mutually dependent and interfused. In *La Clef du Berlin* (The Berlin Key, 1993), Latour used the "Berlin key" as an analogy to show that the artificial separation between society and technology is not sustainable.

In collaboration with other sociologists, specifically Michel Callon and John Law, he developed actor-network theory, a bundle of theoretical conceptions and qualitative methodologies for the examination of the processes of knowledge building in science, laboratory studies, and technology (*Reassembling the Social, an Introduction to Actor-Network-Theory*, 2005).

Latour and the Science Wars

In the 1990s, Latour became involved in the burning dispute between the humanities and natural sciences, popularly known as the Science Wars. The impetus for the scientific wars was a growing trend in the humanities to make use of physics or mathematical terms and formulas to clarify their arguments. The natural sciences raised a defense against this "infringement," and it came to an indignant cross-border fight between scientific warriors strongly tethered to their respective disciplines. In 1996, the physicist Alan Sokal parodied postmodernism by submitting a carefully crafted essay that he considered nonsense to the journal *Social Text*, which published it. Sokal critiqued the logic of postmodernists including Lacan, Baudrillard, Gilles Deleuze, Julia Kristeva, and Louis Althusser, and he attacked Latour, accusing him of irrationalism and philosophical mystification of his own social scientific approach in exploring the scientific procedures employed by the natural sciences. After Sokal and the physicist Jean Bricmont published *Impostures Intellectuelles* (Intellectual Impostures) in 1997, Latour reacted with his collected essays, *Pandora's Hope: Essays on the Reality of Science Studies* (1999), in which he addressed anew the consequences of scientific wars and renewed his antimodernistic credo, calling for flexibility, dynamism, and openness to cooperation across different scientific disciplines.

Willful Things, Politics-Capable Ecology, and the Power of Images

With *Politiques de la Nature: Comment Faire Entrer les Sciences en Démocratie* (*Politics of Nature: How to Bring the Sciences Into Democracy*), Latour, in 2004, broke new ground and not only delivered a stimulating analysis of the political philosophy of ecological movements but also renewed his call for a politically competent ecology. He provided an examination of the concepts of politics, ecology, and nature and decoupled each from the others. He separated ecology from nature, and to avoid conflict, he differentiated between ecology and economics. He proposed that nature should have a political representation consisting of humans and all other living things, such as animals and other presumably "dead" things. The new Parliament of Things that should legislate over the ecological economy, as Latour both playfully and earnestly referred to it, must first produce a new constitution that will resolve the remaining dichotomy between democracy and science. Latour, together with Peter Weibel, co-curated the 2002 international exhibition: *Iconoclash: Beyond the Image Wars in Science, Religion, and Art*. In 2005, they curated *Making Things Public. The Atmospheres of Democracy* at the Center for Art and Media Technology in Karlsruhe, Germany, and coauthored the accompanying catalog. Through *Iconoclash*, Weibel and Latour displayed a very prominent ambivalence visible in contemporary religion, science, and art: the ambivalence between iconoclastic and iconophilic attitudes, between the condemnation and admiration of the omnipresence of images—two positions that fight against one another but nevertheless need each other to exist through reciprocal opposition.

Gaia, Factish Gods, and Different Modes of Existence

In addition to his comprehensive publication and lectures on the interaction of society, science, and technology, Latour also examined the consequences of the passive presence of technology to our belief systems and religious expressions (*Jubiler ou les Tourments de la Parole Religieuse* [Glee or the Torments of Religious Speech], 2002, and *On the Modern Cult of the Factish Gods*, 2010).

In 2013, Latour delivered the Gifford lectures in Edinburgh. His lectures focused on the concept of Gaia, a complex mixture of mythical, spiritual, and scientific ideas about the nature of our planet Earth, as well as on "natural religion," a concept that in itself already consists of two highly disputed terms: nature and religion. Latour advances a secularized examination of nature, the sciences, religion, and related collective healing rituals. And he proposes a well-grounded inquiry into the supernatural.

Since 2011, Latour has been working with AIME (An Inquiry Into Modes of Existence), a project of the European Union, examining the metaphysics of different forms of existence. In the context of this project, he has developed a full-scale collaborative digital platform.

To date, Latour has written 15 monographs (translated into many languages), produced collected works (together with Callon and Pierre Lemonnier, among others), created sensitive portraits of thinkers such as Michel Serres and François Ewald based on

extensive interviews with them, and written numerous essays in scientific journals and many short texts, such as reviews and newspaper articles. In 1998, he published with Emilie Hermant a photo-essay on the technical and social aspects of the city of Paris. He has created performances, written theater pieces, and curated exhibitions. He has provided responses to numerous in-depth interviews, and his own works and thoughts have been the subjects of many other monographs.

Teaching

From 1982 to 2006, Latour taught at the Centre de Sociologie de l'Innovation and the École Nationale Supérieure des Mines in Paris and was a visiting professor at the University of California in San Diego, the London School of Economics, and the History of Science department, Harvard University. Since 2007, Bruno has been a professor at Sciences Po (Institut d'Études Politiques de Paris), where until 2012 he directed scientific research. He set up a media lab at Sciences Po to experimentally explore the opportunities offered to social theory through the spread of digital methods, and with Valrie Pihet, he created a new experimental program in art and politics.

Awards

Since 1992, Bruno has continued to be recognized with numerous prizes, honors, and honorary doctorate degrees (University of Lund, Sweden; University of Lausanne, Switzerland; University of Montreal, Quebec, Canada; University of Goteborg, Sweden; and University of Warwick, United Kingdom). In 2008, he received the Siegfried-Unseld Prize for scientific and literary accomplishments. He was the 2010 recipient of the *Kulturpreis* (Culture Prize) from the Society of the University of Munich.

Critical Contributions Within the Scientific Landscape

Latour is known as a lateral and pioneering thinker. The world that he envisages is one with its own will—one that has not really allowed itself to be tamed by the determining grip of a seemingly modern and rationally guided humanity. It is a world that emanates from the interaction of the temporarily controlled knowledge and experiences of actors and actants, be they artifacts, gods, humans, stars, electrons, technology, labor, market, mythologies, ideas, norms, things, or events. According to Latour, reality is not absolute, less so is its synonym, truth. Latour contends that even when the result of the interactions among humans and instruments cannot be calculated, the processes involved are completely empirically observable and can be closely grasped in a sort of "thick description" from a social scientific perspective. With the expansion of his examinations into areas of interest previously excluded from academic fields, Latour reveals historical totalizations and shortages in the sciences. By this, he opens our view to a new realism, one that is not naturalistic but that investigates the vitality of perceptible and tangible things—a vitality that is unconventionally independent and dynamic.

Latour's thinking and methodology connect him with those of Deleuze, Peter Sloterdijk, and Tarde; with Martin Heidegger's phenomenology; and with the philosophy of American pragmatism in the style of John Dewey, William James, and Richard Rorty.

Expansion instead of reduction, acceptance of many perspectives in place of totalization, and inclusion instead of exclusion, these are the themes that run prominently throughout Latour's works. The goal of a modern science, from Latour's perspective, can be neither the taming of nature or society nor the persistence of orthodox epistemologies. In contrast, it must derive from collaboration with the environment and public discourses and must be continuously renewed by the sparks emanating from this interaction. Modern science must fit contemporary needs to prove the relevance of its content and not appear like a mechanical toy that performs the same routine endlessly, while all that surrounds it has long since changed. This is Latour's unmistakable demand and hope. The hope for the success of a transformed science that is conscious of the complex interdependence of knowledge, politics, the public, technology, economic necessity, an endless labyrinth of intermediaries (social networks), and the urgency of interdisciplinary convergence.

Sina Lucia Kottmann

Editor's note: The editors wish to express their appreciation to Augustine Agwuele for translating this article from the German.

See also Althusser, Louis; Barthes, Roland; Baudrillard, Jean; Bourdieu, Pierre; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Derrida, Jacques; Habermas, Jürgen; Lacan,

Jacques; Lyotard, Jean-François; Network Theory/Social Network Analysis; Postmodernism; Poststructuralism; Social Constructionism; Social Studies of Science

Further Readings

Blok, A., & Jensen, T. E. (2011). *Bruno Latour: Hybrid thoughts in a hybrid world.* (Series: Key Sociologists). New York, NY: Routledge.

Harman, G. (2009). *Prince of networks: Bruno Latour and metaphysics* (Anamnesis Series). Melbourne, Victoria, Australia: re.press.

Kneer, G., Schroer, M., & Schüttpelz, E. (Eds.). (2007). *Bruno Latours kollektive: Kontroversen zur entgrenzung des sozialen* [Bruno Latour's collective: Controversies on the delimitations of the social]. Frankfurt, Germany: Suhrkamp.

Schmidgen, H. (2011). *Bruno Latour zur einführung* [An introduction to Bruno Latour]. Berlin, Germany: Junius Verlag.

Wieser, M. (2012). *Das netzwerk von Bruno Latour: Die akteur-netzwerk-theorie zwischen science und technology studies und poststrukturalistischer Soziologie* [The network of Bruno Latour: Actor-network theory between science and technology studies and poststructuralist sociology]. Bielefeld, Germany: Transcript.

Website

Bruno Latour: http://bruno-latour.fr/

Leach, Edmund

Edmund Ronald Leach (1910–1989) was one of the most emphatic and colorful figures in modern social anthropology. He spent much of his time writing for and speaking to lay audiences and so became perhaps the most widely known British anthropologist of his generation. Writing on an improbably vast range of topics, between 1937 and 1988, Leach published nine books, four edited volumes, more than 50 scholarly articles, and hundreds of shorter pieces. Although he is remembered primarily as the Anglophone purveyor of Claude Lévi-Strauss's structuralism, his intellectual achievement does not align with any one theory. He founded no "school," constructed no theoretical systems, and was impatient with theoretical assertions. Leach's assaults on established theories provoked charges of inconsistency from his colleagues, but his intellectual restlessness was far from the petulant belligerence of which he was often accused. Rather, it expressed a steady vision of social anthropology, which he maintained throughout his life. For Leach, unsettling old dogmas was not a matter of settling into new ones but of challenging intellectual habits. He saw anthropology's subject matter not as a set of theoretical edifices but as other worlds of human action and thought, there to be understood.

Early Life and Introduction to Anthropology

Leach was born on November 7, 1910, in Sidmouth, a town in Devon, into a large and densely intermarried family of Lancashire mill owners, to William Edmund Leach and his wife Mildred (née Brierley). At the time he was born, the family fortunes came from a sugar plantation and a sugar-refining factory in northern Argentina. Leach grew up in Rochdale; studied at Marlborough College, a public school, which he entered as the twenty-first Leach; and was later admitted to Clare College, Cambridge. Like most anthropologists of his generation, he had no initial training in the discipline, and at Cambridge, he read mathematics and engineering. On graduating with a first class BA in 1932, he joined a British trading firm, John Swire and Sons (later Butterfield and Swire), with operations in East Asia, and was posted to China. He spent more than 3 years living in Hong Kong, Shanghai, Chunking, Tsingtao, and Beijing, all the while traveling a great deal. In China, Leach was struck by an extraordinary fact: Here was a great, ancient, and wholly viable civilization in which everything was, as Leach liked to say, "back to front." Chinese religion, architecture, clothing, ritual, cuisine, and art offered solutions to universal human problems and seemed to invert comprehensively the ways things were thought of and done in the West. While traveling all over China, Leach wrote swathes of letters and detailed notes on the local customs, religion, and (especially) technology.

By 1936, he had grown weary of commerce. Instead of renewing his contract, he followed a spur of the moment call by an expatriate American psychiatrist, former Mormon missionary, and amateur anthropologist, Kilton Stewart (whom Leach had met in Beijing), to visit "Bottle the Bugger"—that is, the island of Botel Tobago (now Langu) off the coast of Taiwan. Having spent 8 weeks on the island, he

wrote voluminously about his observations, drew sketches, and took many photographs of the native Yami, the first "real primitives" he encountered close-up. On his return to England, Leach was introduced by a childhood friend, Rosemary Upcott, to her husband, the anthropologist Raymond Firth, and through him to Bronisław Malinowski, the leading grandee in British social anthropology at the time. Malinowski was a big, forceful, and tremendously charismatic man, who presided unchallenged from his chair at the London School of Economics over the entire discipline in Britain. Malinowski was a pioneer of extended fieldwork as anthropology's central method and of "functionalism" as its theoretical stance, which was maintained in British anthropology well into the 1950s. When Leach went to the London School of Economics as a student of anthropology, he joined Malinoswki's legendary seminars, which he ran between 1924 and 1938. These salon-like meetings, which brought together a motley gathering of anthropologists, psychologists, sociologists, philosophers, missionaries, and colonial administrators from around the world, were the nursery for much of that generation of British anthropology. Participants included the anthropologists Isaac Schapera, Audrey Richards, S. F. Nadel, Meyer Fortes, M. N. Srinivas, and E. E. Evans-Pritchard, as well as Leach's mentor and immediate teacher, Raymond Firth. Here, Leach met Noël Stevenson, a colonial administrator in Burma, through whom he came to do fieldwork in the Kachin Hills of northeastern Burma (following an abortive spell among the Rowanduz Kurds in Pakistan in 1938).

Contributions to Anthropology

During the 6 years (1939–1945) Leach spent in Burma, he conducted extensive fieldwork, served in the Burmese Rifles (reaching the rank of Major), raised a force of Kachin irregulars, got married (to Celia Buckmaster), and had his first child, Louisa. On the basis of his researches, he published his first professional monograph, *The Political Systems of Highland Burma* (1954), which is now widely regarded as his most enduring book and a momentous contribution to political anthropology. His key breakaway assertion was that the notion of a bounded "tribe" with its own language and culture was useless for understanding the Burmese highlands. Instead, he argued, the social landscape of the Kachin Hills comprised a shared system of social and political relations, in which clans segmented and allied themselves to one another via marriage and identity codes such as dialect and dress. This "system" was neither stable nor closed, as people constantly entered, left, and shifted their position within it. The changes were made possible by three ideal political models that actors had at their disposal: (1) the hierarchical *gumsa*, (2) the anarchic egalitarian *gumlao*, and (3) the Shan state system of the neighboring valleys. Ambitious persons seeking political and economic advantage employed these models strategically to justify their actions, and the accumulated weight of their decisions tilted polities this way or that, shifting the whole structure of local society over time.

This was trailblazing work, far ahead of its time. By dissolving the old ethnographic notion of tribe as an isolated totality, Leach dissented from the persistent habit in anthropology of treating village, tribal, national, or any other communities as islands unto themselves, rather than as constituents of broader relational schemes. This insight informed, for instance, his student Fredrik Barth's celebrated thesis (1969) that ethnic groups were not cultural isolates but relational entities defined vis-à-vis one another. Leach's stress on a broad regional approach also anticipated work done by anthropologists in the 1970s under the rubric of "political economy." His emphasis on the flux inherent in social systems and on changes in societies over time was radical in the age of functionalism, in which anthropologists generally described societies as existing in a state of static, ahistorical equilibrium. His insistence that societies were made and unmade by human action and interaction also prefigured criticisms of social stasis leveled at functionalist-structural anthropology by "practice theorists" from the late 1970s.

Leach pursued the two concerns central to *Political Systems*—the relationship between social structure and individual agency (Malinowski's legacy) and between ideology and the material conditions of life—through much of the rest of his career. One set of responses to these concerns appeared in *Pul Eliya, a Village in Ceylon* (1961), his next monograph based on fieldwork conducted in Ceylon (Sri Lanka) in 1954. Here, he argued that kinship was "not a thing in itself," a concrete organization for anthropologists to study, but an idiom for speaking about property relations, used to pursue

the pragmatic, material goals of political actors. *Pul Eliya* has been criticized for Leach's unquestioning adoption of the economically motivated, self-maximizing individual and for the reduction of culture to a residual consequence of paddy cultivation. The monograph, nevertheless, developed the theoretical coup that Leach launched in *Political Systems* and for which he is still mainly remembered today. One of the book's central assertions is that the local "subcastes" (*vaigas*) were not discrete groups bound by blood and descent; divisions between them were important not because they formed social enclosures but because they constituted the basis for conflictual or cooperative affinity. The implications of this, seemingly minor, ethnographic quibble were pivotal. As in *Political Systems*, here Leach was challenging the prevailing functionalist picture of societies as separate, self-sufficiently functioning organisms to be labeled and typologized by anthropologists, an exercise he derided as "butterfly collecting."

The year 1961, when *Pul Eliya* was published, was a watershed year in Leach's career. This was when he issued a collection of essays, *Rethinking Anthropology*, in which he departed drastically from his teachers' functionalism, urging anthropologists to abandon their taxonomies of cultural systems in favor of organizing the ideas that underlie patterns of action and thought in societies. This turn was accelerated by two felicitous encounters, one with the polymath-anthropologist Gregory Bateson and the other with the linguist Roman Jakobson, both of whom he met while working at the Center for Advanced Studies in the Behavioral Sciences at Palo Alto, California (1960/1961). Bateson and Jakobson were developing, in their own different ways, the means to understand systems of relations. Leach was particularly struck by the work of Jakobson, one of the most important linguists of the 20th century and a pioneer of structural linguistics. Jakobson's analysis of sound systems hinged on the pivotal proposition that meaningful sound units (phonemes) in a language did not exist in isolation but were necessarily defined relative to one another. The sounds /t/ and /d/, for instance, are separate phonemes in the English language because its speakers perceive the difference undetectable to speakers of Korean, in which they together constitute a single phoneme. So the smallest units of language could be identified only in contrast to others and were not freestanding but were fundamentally relational entities. Jakobson went on to analyze syntax, morphology, and even poetry, music, and cinema just as he analyzed sounds, by identifying elements in a system through relational opposing pairs. His work was the primary inspiration for the anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss, considered the father of "structuralism" in anthropology.

Leach remembered that when he first encountered Jakobson's ideas, his reaction was as follows: "Ah! I have been there before!" By 1961, he had been grappling with relational systems for at least a decade, and Jakobson's method offered robust analytical tools. That year, he also published two essays—"Golden Bough or Gilded Twig?" and "Lévi-Strauss in the Garden of Eden: An Examination of Some Recent Developments in the Analysis of Myth"—which signaled his fascination with Lévi-Strauss and the shift of interest from kinship and politics to narrative, art, and myth. From then on, Leach wrote prolifically on art, ritual, architecture, mythology, communication, biblical narrative, humanism, masquerades, computing, time, and the meaning of hair, among other topics. For at least a decade, he brandished Lévi-Strauss's name in his attacks on functionalism, acquiring the reputation of an advocate. But he never took on Lévi-Strauss's structuralism in its entirety and in fact rejected much of it, especially as it later began to crystallize into a metatheory of cognitive universals. Leach described himself, in a characteristically defiant manner, as both a "functionalist" interested in how things "worked" and a "structuralist" who strove to understand the required cognitive machinery. But he never fully subscribed to either theory. Although Leach was driven by the desire to grasp general patterns, and even provocatively claimed that he was "bored by the facts," his loyalties remained with ethnographic detail, never to be trumped by theory.

Legacy

Leach's painstaking attention to and admiration for ethnography came out in his excitement about the work of his students, to whom he devoted tremendous amounts of energy and time. As in his own work, he insisted on independent thinking and welcomed challenges to his own assertions, in fact scolding students for failing to disagree with him. The resulting major achievement was a generation of leading anthropologists—including Ray Abrahams,

Fredrik Barth, Jean La Fontaine, Chris Fuller, Stephen Gudeman, Alfred Gell, Stephen Hugh-Jones, Caroline Humphrey, Adam Kuper, Jonathan Parry, Marilyn Strathern, and Nur Yalman, among many others—whose regional foci, subject matter, and theoretical attitudes have been as wide-ranging as his own.

Leach remained a maverick, intellectually as well as institutionally. Although he became a lecturer in social anthropology at the London School of Economics in 1946, moved to Cambridge in 1953, became Provost of King's College, Cambridge (1966–1979), was president of the Royal Anthropological Institute (1971–1975), was elected fellow of the British Academy (from 1972), and was knighted in 1975, Leach remains the most prominent British anthropologist never to become a professorial head of department. His persistent dissent from intellectual orthodoxies was strategic. What was surprising was that what first drew him to anthropology in China, and his continued fascination with the "exotic," did not amount to unfocused reflections on the "Other" but to a real intellectual method. Leach constantly sought out contrasts between "us" and "them" to offer new insights into the lives of others, and in the process into ourselves. He saw theoretical statements as intellectually deadening if they became mental objects in their own right instead of aids to better understanding. Theory had to follow empirical observation, not the other way around, a message that remains as pertinent to anthropology now as in Leach's own day.

Anastasia Piliavsky

See also Barth, Fredrik; Bateson, Gregory; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Firth, Raymond; Fortes, Meyer; Jakobson, Roman O.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Malinowski, Bronisław; Richards, Audrey; Schapera, Isaac; Srinivas, M. N.; Strathern, Marilyn

Further Readings

Edmund Leach: An interview with Frank Kermode. (1982). Retrieved from http://www.alanmacfarlane.com/ancestors/Leach.html

Edmund Leach [Special issue]. (1989/1990). *Cambridge Anthropology, 13*(3).

Fuller, C., & Parry, J. (1989). "Petulant inconsistency?" The intellectual achievement of Edmund Leach. *Anthropology Today, 5*(3), 11–14.

Kuper, A. (1983). *Anthropology and anthropologists: The modern British school*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

———. (1986). An interview with Edmund Leach. *Current Anthropology, 27*(4), 375–382.

Leach, E. (1967, December 17). *A runaway world?* London, UK: BBC Radio.

———. (1984). Glimpses of the unmentionable in the history of British social anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 13,* 1–23.

Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland. (1990). *Edmund Leach: A bibliography* (Occasional Paper, No. 42). London, UK: Author.

Tambiah, S. J. (2002). *Edmund Leach: An anthropological life*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Leacock, Eleanor

Eleanor Burke Leacock (1922–1987), known to friends and colleagues as "Happy," had an extraordinarily active and productive career as a Marxist-feminist anthropologist. Leacock was admired for her politically committed scholarship, and she was always outspoken against injustices and exploitation. The daughter of the well-known literary critic Kenneth Burke, she was also remarkable for her ability to combine being a mother of four, a wife (she was married twice), chair of the anthropology department at City College, City University of New York for 9 years, and a political activist. Despite her multiple involvements, she was always available as a loyal friend, supportive colleague, and encouraging teacher who fought forcefully to assist minority students and to promote the careers of Third World and female colleagues.

Leacock died in Honolulu on April 2, 1987, of a stroke suffered a few weeks after returning to Samoa to complete the fieldwork that she had begun in 1985 on the problems of urban youth. This last field project, in keeping with her previous work, was undertaken to gather detailed ethnographic material with which to challenge analyses that she regarded as theoretically unsound and politically pernicious—in this case, Derek Freeman's claim that suicide and rape among contemporary Samoan youth reveal the "darker side" and "grim realities" of an unchanging Samoan culture earlier described by Margaret Mead.

As a leading U.S. Marxist-feminist anthropologist, Leacock carried out fieldwork in four major

world regions—the United States and Canada, Europe, Africa, and the Pacific—addressing a wide range of topics, including hunting-and-gathering societies, ethnohistory, urban anthropology, anthropology of education, cross-cultural studies of women, and Marxist anthropology. In all, she published 81 articles and 10 books (some edited). She is best known for her historical and ethnographic analysis of egalitarian societies and gender relations, with a focus on the transformations that produced or intensified inequalities of class, race, and gender. This work constituted a major contribution to the development of Marxist historical/evolutionary theory. Her other body of work addressed the contemporary sociocultural reproduction of inequality in U.S. society. Here, she detailed processes by which specific practices and concepts produce and reproduce forms of race, class, and gender inequalities and their intersections. Her ethnographic work attacked previous approaches that assumed the universality of both private property and male dominance.

Leacock's early fieldwork in British Colombia's Fraser Valley with the Harrison Indians during the summer of 1945 was followed by research on child training in Germany, Switzerland, and Italy during 1948–1949. Two periods of field research with the Montagnais-Naskapi (Innu) in Quebec and Labrador in 1950–1951 resulted in her dissertation *The Montagnais "Hunting Territory" and the Fur Trade* (1954), a published work of major theoretical significance. This early Innu research employed detailed ethnohistoric and ethnographic data to show that the so-called individually owned family-hunting territory was a product of the French fur trade and not aboriginal. This challenged the then current antievolutionary, anti-Marxist beliefs concerning the existence of primitive concepts of private property. At the same time, she pioneered the view that non-Western cultures could not be properly understood without examining the harmful effects of colonialism, along with people's forms of cultural resistance to colonial domination.

Like many other woman scholars of her generation, Leacock spent the first decade of her career employed on urban-based research projects—mental health, interracial housing, and city schools. In 1963, she joined the faculty of the Polytechnic Institute of Brooklyn as a full-time member, and in 1972 she accepted the chair of the anthropology department at City College, City University of New York, where she remained until her death. In 1970–1971, she went to Zambia to study primary schooling in relation to community background, and 14 years later, she began her research on Samoan adolescents.

In the 1960s, Leacock became engaged in three major new projects: (1) American Indian ethnohistory, (2) the rehabilitation of major classics in social evolutionary theory by Lewis Henry Morgan and Friedrich Engels, and (3) coediting with colleagues at Polytechnic a 10-volume series of readings called *Social Science Theory and Method: An Integrated Historical Introduction*. The latter reinforced her interest in developing a unified philosophical and methodological approach to the natural and human sciences, an interest she later returned to in her writings on emergent levels of integration in human evolution.

As a Marxist and an accomplished and critical ethnographer, Leacock was uniquely qualified to reintroduce Morgan's and Engels's work to new generations of readers. The Leacock edition of Engels's *The Origin of the Family, Private Property, and the State* has become the standard one for most anthropologists, a key text in the rebirth of a Marxist-feminist tradition of scholarship. Her combining of evolutionary theory with careful ethnography and ethnohistory also informs a series of coedited volumes on women's experiences historically and cross-culturally.

Leacock retained a lifelong interest in the emergence of and transformations in stratification and gender hierarchies. Her focus was on two kinds of social transformations: (1) those brought about by processes of state formation and (2) those produced by Western colonialism and world capitalism. She synthesized her thinking on these issues in three important articles published in 1975, 1983, and 1986. Her evolutionism always sought to identify concrete processes of conflict and change in specific historical/cultural contexts and to relate these to emerging levels of sociocultural complexity. And as a Marxist anthropologist, Leacock privileged the long-term development of commodity production and exchange as her central analytic concept in evolutionary developments.

Leacock's work on the social reproduction of contemporary forms of inequality employed ethnography to expose the social and ideational processes involved in race and class inequality. Her 1969 *Teaching and Learning in City Schools* became an

early model of classroom ethnography in the growing field of the anthropology of education. At the time, she was active in the lively struggles around community control over schooling that took place in New York City. Her 1970 article in *Schools Against Children, the Case for Community Control* and her 1971 edited book *The Culture of Poverty: A Critique*, which criticized Oscar Lewis's "culture of poverty" concept, are excellent illustrations of the way she linked her research to concrete grassroots movements for empowerment. At another level, her *Myths of Male Dominance* (1981) reveals the importance she gave to combating concepts she saw as distorting reality and harmful politically—such as the structuralist notion concerning the exchange of women or the assumption that had plagued early gender research, namely, that male dominance was a universal.

Leacock defended the view that the subordination of women was a product of history and not a transhistorical, universal condition. She criticized attempts to "naturalize" patriarchy by projecting it on all societies at all times. First, she documented the autonomy and power of women in preclass societies and the effects of colonialism and imperialism in undercutting this power. Second, she gave searching scrutiny to the social milieu that gave rise to the ahistorical, essentialist theories of women's subordination and to the interests such theories served. She insisted that gender analysis not be restricted to a separate category of study but become central to all social analysis.

For Leacock, cross-cultural studies were important not only because they challenged what was taken for granted but also because they offered an alternative vision of more egalitarian, people-centered lifeways. By focusing on the social context of theory formation, she encouraged her students to reflect on their positioning in society and on how the questions we ask are shaped by broader issues. For Leacock, reflexivity was not just a theoretical stance; it was a practice that grew out of political engagement. She played a central role in the development of The International Women's Anthropology Congress, an international network of anthropologists and others interested in research on gender that is informed by a cross-cultural perspective and that is global in its concerns. It was this engagement and holism—the unity of theory and practice—that characterized all of Leacock's life and work. Her work remains relevant today.

Constance R. Sutton

See also Burke, Kenneth; Feminist Anthropology; Gender and Anthropology; Marx, Karl; Morgan, Lewis Henry

Further Readings

Leacock, E. (1954). *The Montagnais "hunting territory" and the fur trade* (Memoirs of the American Anthropological Association, No. 78). Arlington, VA: American Anthropological Association.

———. (1958). Social stratification and evolutionary theory. *Ethnohistory, 5,* 193–199.

———. (1969). *Teaching and learning in city schools: A comparative study.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

———. (Ed.). (1971). *The culture of poverty: A critique.* New York, NY: Simon & Schuster.

———. (1972). Introduction. In F. Engels (Ed.), *Origin of the family, private property, and the state* (pp. 7–64). New York, NY: International.

———. (1975). Class, commodity, and the status of women. In R. Rohrlich-Leavitt (Ed.), *Women cross-culturally: Change and challenge* (pp. 601–618). The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

———. (1978). Women's status in egalitarian society: Implications for social evolution. *Current Anthropology, 19,* 247–275.

———. (coedited with Etienne, M.). (1980). *Women and colonialization.* New York, NY: Praeger.

———. (1981). *Myths of male dominance.* New York, NY: Monthly Review.

———. (1983). Interpreting the origins of gender inequality: Conceptional and historical problems. *Dialectical Anthropology, 7,* 263–284.

———. (1986). Postscript: The problems of youth in contemporary Samoa. In L. D. Holmes, *Quest for the REAL Samoa: The Mead/Freman controversy and beyond* (pp. 177–188). South Hadley, MA: Bergin & Garvey.

———. (1986). Women, power and authority. In L. Dube, E. Leacock, & S. Ardener (Eds.), *Visibility and power: Essays on women in society and development* (pp. 107–135). New Delhi, India: Oxford University Press.

Sutton, C. R. (Ed.). (1993). *From Labrador to Samoa: The theory and practice of Eleanor Burke Leacock.* Arlington, VA: American Anthropological Association/ International Women's Anthropology Conference.

LeVine, Robert

Robert Alan LeVine (1932–) is a leading figure in psychological anthropology, having contributed to the field since the late 1950s. LeVine's work is particularly distinctive for its breadth, covering topics in child development research, psychoanalysis, culture theory, education, and demography. In each topical area, LeVine has formulated a conceptual framework designed to synthesize existing knowledge and establish priorities for future research. He has also attempted to unify psychological anthropology in terms of its shared history, theory, concepts, and specific problems of interest.

Biography

LeVine was born on March 27, 1932, in New York City. He entered the University of Chicago in 1949. In his first year, he took David Riesman's culture and personality course, and Riesman became his long-term mentor. He received his BA in 1951, and his master's degree, also from Chicago, in 1953. His advisor, Fred Eggan, arranged for LeVine to work with Clyde Kluckhohn at Harvard. LeVine began doctoral work there in 1953, with David M. Schneider as his adviser.

Once at Harvard, LeVine found that his interests corresponded with those of John and Beatrice Whiting, who were just beginning the Six Cultures Study of child socialization in six diverse cultures. LeVine became research assistant to Beatrice Whiting and later received a Ford Foundation fellowship to go to Kenya to perform child socialization research there. When he got back in 1957, he wrote his dissertation under John Whiting's direction, with Kluckhohn as one of the committee members.

Major Works

LeVine taught first at Northwestern University (1958–1960), then at the University of Chicago (1960–1976), where he continued research on child rearing and development in Africa and undertook training at the Chicago Institute for Psychoanalysis. In Chicago, he was influenced by Clifford Geertz, Heinz Kohut (at the Chicago Institute for Psychoanalysis, where LeVine was a research candidate), Melford E. Spiro, and Donald T. Campbell at Northwestern (with whom he collaborated on the cross-cultural study of ethnocentrism, in *Ethnocentrism: Theories of Conflict, Ethnic Attitudes, and Group Behavior*, 1972). His orientation shifted toward cultural phenomenology and symbolic analysis while remaining empirically focused on the study of childhood environments. One product of those years was *Culture Behavior and Personality* (1973), LeVine's major attempt to provide a new framework for psychocultural research. Another was his chapter "Cross-Cultural Study in Child Psychology," replacing Margaret Mead's chapter in the third edition of *Carmichael's Manual of Child Psychology.*

LeVine's work from 1973 onward, including his years at Harvard (1976–1998 and beyond), can be divided by topical areas as follows: (a) person-centered ethnography, (b) parenting and early childhood, (c) schooling, and (d) history of psychological anthropology.

Person-Centered Ethnography

In *Culture, Behavior, and Personality*, LeVine considered how to revive the project on culture and personality originally launched by Edward Sapir, Mead, and Ruth Benedict. Influenced especially by the social psychologist Donald T. Campbell, Levine proposed that culture plays adaptive roles in the individual's mental functions and behavioral patterns and that a method based on psychoanalysis was the best way to uncover the emotional dynamics of this psychocultural adaptation. Deviating from orthodox Freudian theory, LeVine advocated the need to investigate culture-specific experiences. In the second edition (1982) of *Culture, Behavior, and Personality*, LeVine proposed a "person-centered ethnography" focused on cultural narratives of the self in several arenas of social communication. More broadly, he argued that most theoretical formulations in psychological anthropology can be recast as proposed relationships between the external world of collective cultural representations and the internal world of individual psychodynamics. Two examples of his own work in this vein are the articles on funerals (1982) and house design (1991) among the Gusii of Kenya.

Parenting and Early Childhood

In the late 1960s and later, LeVine combined quantitative approaches with qualitative approaches

in studies of parents and children in different cultures. With his wife, Sarah, he conducted fieldwork on early childhood among the Hausa of Nigeria (1969) and the Gusii of Kenya (1974–1976). The Gusii Infant Study involved naturalistic observations of infants' social environments over a 17-month period. Their findings showed these to be organized by locally formulated standards of child rearing, reflecting not only moral traditions but also on ecological factors that included threats to child survival, high fertility, and the need for children's labor contribution to domestic agriculture. Levine's Gusii work exemplifies his "cultural mediation" synthesis, showing cultural models of parenting everywhere as filtering multiple influences and providing parents with a "moral direction," a "pragmatic design," and "conventional scripts for action" (LeVine et al., 1994).

Schooling: Communicative Resocialization in the Less Developed Countries

In 1976, LeVine moved to the Harvard Graduate School of Education. Concern with the high fertility rates among the Gusii and convinced that women's schooling played an important role in the demographic transition to lower birth and death rates, LeVine decided to investigate the processes by which schooling has an impact on demographic change. With his wife, Sarah, and their students, he conducted studies of maternal literacy in Mexico, Nepal, Venezuela, and Zambia. Their data showed that even rudimentary literacy skills acquired in low-quality schools helped mothers attend to public health messages and services and gave them the cognitive skills to navigate the bureaucratic processes needed to obtain health services for their children. This theory of communicative socialization in school, based on the work of Max Weber, Lev Vygotsky, and Sylvia Scribner and Michael Cole, was presented in the 2012 volume *Literacy and Mothering: How Women's Schooling Changes the Lives of the World's Children*, winner of the American Psychological Association's 2013 Eleanor Maccoby Award.

History of Psychological Anthropology

LeVine always treasured the legacy of the culture and personality movement, which had come into disfavor in anthropology and the social sciences just as he became a graduate student, and he saw himself as continuing its work. His research on child rearing was clearly part of a project initiated by Mead and amplified by the Whitings, and his person-centered ethnography was based on the ideas of A. Irving Hallowell. In his retirement, LeVine traced the historical antecedents further, to Sapir's (1993) visionary teachings and Franz Boas's study of the physical growth of immigrant children. Like Sapir, LeVine embraced the child's acquisition of culture as the central process relating culture to the individual psyche. His *Psychological Anthropology: A Reader on Self and Culture* (2010) presents his recent views on this history and its significance for the field.

LeVine's Legacy

In his research career, LeVine strove to realize the potentialities for scientific understanding he saw in the culture and personality movement. His goal was to transform psychological anthropology into a "population psychology" resembling other population sciences that study distributions of individual characteristics in ecological context. To this end, he developed conceptual syntheses, launched comparative research linking microsocial with macrosocial variables, and explored the history of psychological anthropology to understand where it had come from—the better to determine where it should be going.

Hidetada Shimizu

See also Benedict, Ruth; Culture and Personality; Geertz, Clifford; Hallowell, A. Irving; Kardiner, Abram; Mead, Margaret; Sapir, Edward; Spiro, Melford

Further Readings

LeVine, Robert. (1972). *Ethnocentrism: Theories of conflict, ethnic attitudes, and group behavior.* New York, NY: Wiley.

———. (1982). *Culture, behavior, and personality: An introduction to the comparative study of psychological anthropology* (2nd ed.). New York, NY: Aldine.

———. (Ed.). (2010). *Psychological anthropology: A reader on self in culture*. Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.

LeVine, R., Dixon, S., LeVine, S., Richman, A., Leiderman, P. H., Keefer, C. H., & Brazelton, T. B. (1994). *Childcare and culture: Lessons from Africa*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

LeVine, R., LeVine, S., Schnell-Anzola, B., Rowe, M., & Dexter, E. (2012). *Literacy and mothering: How*

women's schooling changes the lives of the world's children. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Lévi-Strauss, Claude

Claude Lévi-Strauss (1908–2009) was the preeminent French anthropologist of the 20th century and a founder of the theory of structuralism. His prominence reached far beyond France and beyond anthropology. His work was influential in literary studies, philosophy, and the humanities more broadly, as well as in certain areas of information science. He was translated into many languages and was particularly well received in the United States, Canada, the United Kingdom, and Japan. His work covered a wide range of material—Australian kinship, Greek myth, Northwest Coast masks—but was centered on his interpretation of Native American oral literature. This literature—drawn from the Arctic to the tip of South America—provided an infinitely rich source of material for Lévi-Strauss's interpretive devices. He claimed to be able to connect these widely disparate myths in the context of a hemispheric whole.

Early Life

Lévi-Strauss was born in Paris, in a neighborhood (16th arrondisement) where he would spend most of his life. His father was a modestly successful portrait painter, who preferred the older, academic style to the forms of modernism that were popular in the early 20th century. This situation provided the young Lévi-Strauss with a rich visual environment and early training in art, as well as a sense of cultural dynamics and historical change. His maternal grandfather, with whom he lived during the First World War, was chief rabbi in Versailles. From him, Lévi-Strauss developed a sense of the opposition between the world of the sacred and ritual and the secular everyday world that he and his parents inhabited. Such insights would prove relevant in his later anthropological career, especially as he would consider the ability of ritual to create its own reality apart from the everyday world.

Lévi-Strauss attended school at the Lycée Janson de Sailly and the Lycée Condorcet. He studied law and philosophy at the Sorbonne, receiving his *aggrégation* in the latter, despite his dissatisfaction with what he felt to be the pseudo-sophistication and mechanical style of philosophical discourse. He went on to teach in provincial high schools for several years. During this time, he married his first wife, Dina Dreyfus, with whom he would share the beginnings of an anthropological career.

Lévi-Strauss's move toward anthropology was facilitated by a serendipitous opportunity in 1935 to teach sociology in Brazil, at the University of São Paolo. This was part of a French cultural mission that reflected the prestige with which French culture and scholarship were regarded in that country. Although he was promised that there would be Indians in the suburbs of São Paolo, this was patently untrue. What he found instead was a somewhat dowdy colonial town that gave way to rustic suburbs and then to the forested hills of the interior. Eventually, he was able to travel to the north into Amazonia, where he made contact with Indian groups such as the Caduveo, living in two worlds. Finally, at the end of his 4-year stint in Brazil (with trips back to France each year), Lévi-Strauss planned and mounted an expedition to the Mato Grosso and Amazonia, where he encountered the Bororo, the Nambikwara, and the Tupi-Kawahib. This was a true expedition, of the sort last seen around the turn of the century, involving a half a dozen scientists (including Dina Lévi-Strauss and the Brazilian anthropologist Luiz de Castro Faria), numerous support personnel, mules, trucks, and huge amounts of provisions and items for barter. Funded by the Brazilian government, the logistics of this operation impeded the scientific aspects of the project. Additionally, sickness and injury meant the loss of team members (Dina was forced to return to São Paolo for treatment of conjunctivitis). Beyond this, the very design of the expedition, according to an outmoded idea of ethnographic research, meant that Lévi-Strauss and the others would have only weeks with each tribe, never reaching the point of rapport or easy communication. Nonetheless, Lévi-Strauss was able to record material of interest. A keen observer and gifted draftsman and photographer, he brought back important images and insights into material culture, bodily adornment, and kinship. Although not yet a "structuralist," he was beginning to move in that direction by observing societies that organized themselves around the principle of complementary opposition.

Lévi-Strauss returned to Paris in 1939 with a great many material artifacts destined for the new Musée de l'Homme. This material provided the

basis of their South American collection, as his later Northwest Coast collection would for that region. (Both are now at the Musée de Quai Branly.) His interest in material culture was shaped by his own early interest in art and aesthetics and reinforced by his mentor Marcel Mauss.

When the Germans crossed the Maginot line in 1940, Lévi-Strauss was called to military service in northern France. This was for a brief period, and he returned to Paris and then moved to Montpelier, in the south of France, where he was given a teaching post. However, the Vichy government soon passed racial laws that ended his employment. He realized almost too late the virulence of the anti-Semitism within France and made an effort to flee. He hoped to return to Brazil and was nearly successful but was denied a final visa stamp. His only option was to take a steamer to Martinique. His fellow refugees included figures such as the surrealist writer André Breton. By various strokes of good fortune (he was under the protection of the ship's captain, who remembered him fondly from previous sailings to Brazil), he made his way to Puerto Rico. There, he was placed under house arrest while his ethnographic papers were examined. Eventually, he was allowed to proceed to New York, where he had an invitation to teach at the New School for Social Research.

Lévi-Strauss in New York

If the period in Brazil was crucial for Lévi-Strauss's understanding of American Indian cultures (it would prove to be his only stint of fieldwork, brief though it was), his time in New York during World War II was a period of phenomenal intellectual dynamism. The assortment of European refugees gathered in Manhattan provided a fertile milieu for developing new ideas. Many were employed at the New School for Social Research, and many were also part of the circle of Franz Boas, who, although in his 80s, made an effort to welcome and encourage these younger scholars and artists. Lévi-Strauss was immediately drawn into that circle, as he had already become enamored of the textual ethnographies produced by the Bureau of American Ethnology, to which Boas contributed many volumes. This was to become the basis of his greatest achievement: the four-volume *Mythologiques*, an analysis of myth and cultural data recorded in these and similar publications. In 1942, Boas died literally in Lévi-Strauss's arms in the faculty club at Columbia University.

A second key figure in this period was Roman Jakobson. It was he who gave Lévi-Strauss the intellectual underpinnings for what would become structuralist anthropology. Jakobson, a linguist who specialized in phonology, had adapted Saussurian linguistics to an analysis of distinctive features in language, extending beyond phonology to syntax and semantics. The underlying point—that linguistic value and, hence, meaning were constructed in a context of opposition among features, not by any inherent qualities—appealed to Lévi-Strauss because it expressed insights that he had already acquired regarding ethnographic data. Lévi-Strauss would extend this perspective to an analysis of kinship, myth, ritual, and other cultural data.

In New York, one final piece to Lévi-Strauss's professional profile would fall into place: his interest in Northwest Coast culture. Obviously, Boas was influential in this development (as had been Mauss back in Paris). But probably most significant were Boas's displays at the American Museum of Natural History and the availability of Northwest Coast artifacts for sale through Manhattan dealers at prices that even refugee academics could afford. He acquired a considerable collection of masks and other objects while in New York, and would, much later, write a remarkable book, *The Way of the Masks*, on the relation of mask form to ritual function in neighboring Northwest Coast societies.

Beyond his professional development, his time in the United States was a transformative period of his life. His experience of New York and Chicago provided him with a different idea of what a city, and what modern civilization itself, could be, which he had not found in either European cities or their colonial copies, such as São Paolo. Like other exiled French intellectuals, such as Simone de Beauvoir, Lévi-Strauss wrote affectionately of his time in the United States. Indeed, he stayed on for 2 years after the war as a cultural attaché.

Return to Paris

Lévi-Strauss returned to Paris at the end of 1947. Over the next 2 years, he submitted two publications to be considered as qualification for his doctorate in anthropology. These were accepted, and Lévi-Strauss eventually obtained a teaching position.

During the 1950s, Lévi-Strauss both was shaped by and helped shape the institutional and intellectual milieu of postwar France. In 1950, the new organization the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization, based in Paris, commissioned a work that would become *Race and History*, a significant meditation on an emerging issue of great import. During this period, Lévi-Strauss worked assiduously to carve out an institutional space for anthropology as a "human science," space that necessarily would be taken from humanistic disciplines, given the limited resources available. Unlike the United States, France did not experience rapid growth in the academy during the 1950s. The academic philosophy that he found so stultifying and nationalistic academic history were his main targets. By the end of the decade, Lévi-Strauss had successfully created a home for anthropology in the new Laboratoire d'Anthropologie Sociale affiliated with the Collège de France.

Far from wishing to isolate anthropology from other intellectual currents, Lévi-Strauss engaged in the broader exchange of ideas taking place in the Left Bank cafes of postwar Paris. Lévi-Strauss was close to Jean-Paul Sartre and Simone de Beauvoir, and he exerted a strong influence over a younger generation of philosophers, notably Michel Foucault and Jacques Derrida. His ideas were borrowed by Louis Althusser and Maurice Godelier in their attempt to forge a structural Marxism in the late 1960s. His influence within anthropology was especially pronounced among his English and American colleagues, notably Edmund Leach, Mary Douglas, and Marshall Sahlins. In recognition of his increasingly global reputation, Lévi-Strauss was elected to the Académie Française in 1973 and received a number of honors both in France and internationally in the subsequent 4 decades.

Key Ideas

Alliance Theory and Totemism

In *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*, Lévi-Strauss tackles one of the central themes of English structural functionalism. Within that tradition, as represented by A. R. Radcliffe-Brown, the key issue was descent. Descent and ways of reckoning consanguinity (e.g., matrilineal or patrilineal) defined social identity. Lévi-Strauss, by contrast, emphasized affinity—that is, marriage relations among groups. Following from his early observations of the Bororo in Brazil, Lévi-Strauss saw the "exchange" of women among groups that defined themselves in opposition to their partners as following formal rules that embedded exogamous social groups within multigenerational contexts of exchange and alliance. In this way, two groups mutually constructed themselves, creating a social whole out of two interdependent, incomplete parts. The Australian and Kachin marriage systems he analyzes in *Elementary Structures* are much more complex but can be seen as an elaboration of the underlying principle.

Social identity, like all questions of cultural meaning, is oppositional. It is also, as Ferdinand de Saussure argued for language, arbitrary. Thus, the incest taboo was for these societies not a question of the degree of consanguinity as it was of the demarcation of arbitrary social boundaries. Indeed, in certain societies, such as those of the northern Northwest Coast, the preferred marriage partner may well be a cross-cousin: a much closer relative than almost all members of one's own clan, which constituted the exogamous group. Implicit in these marriage relations was exchange: of material goods and symbolic properties (e.g., names and ritual dances on the Northwest Coast). Building on an insight developed by Émile Durkheim and Mauss, Lévi-Strauss viewed reciprocity as an essential building block of society.

The main mode by which primitive cultures understood the complementary opposition of social groups was the model of the natural world. The essence of totemism is relational, not substantive. As Lévi-Strauss famously quipped, totems are "good to think" (rather than eat). Thus, the opposition between raven and eagle for the Northwest Coast cultures (an opposition approximately as that between Odysseus and Achilles in Homer) provides a template for the opposition between two human groups, the Raven and Eagle clans.

The Structural Study of Myth

Most of Lévi-Strauss's academic writing was on the theme of myth. We learn a great deal by example about his method in *Mythologiques*. However, his most programmatic writing on myth, as well as his most famous, is his reanalysis of Oedipus. Against the background of perhaps the most famous and influential interpretation of myth, Lévi-Strauss argued audaciously against Freud's famous and

influential interpretation of the Oedipus myth as a recapitulation of a primordial series of events of universal importance. As the notion of incest is itself subject to very diverse interpretations depending on cultural context, Lévi-Strauss knew that such a global, archetypal reading was not correct. Rather, he analyzes the mythical elements ("mythemes") that arise in the myth itself and arranges them in terms of structured oppositions and mediations. Some of this is fairly straightforward: overvaluation versus undervaluation of kinship ties, while other oppositions (autochthony vs. impeded locomotion) are more recondite. Nevertheless, he demonstrates convincingly that myths must be read both syntagmatically (in the order in which events are told) and paradigmatically (where themes resonate with parallel or opposed themes in other parts of the myth). Here, he employs a theme that runs throughout his work on myth: music and the symphonic structuring of elements by counterpoint, harmony, repetition, and so forth. Like a symphony, a myth must be listened to carefully with a connoisseur's ear. Although his method has been viewed as rather mechanistic, due in part to Lévi-Strauss's own insistence that it is scientifically rigorous, it is in fact a highly aesthetic mode of interpretation.

At the root, Lévi-Strauss claims that myth is about fundamental, existential oppositions, themselves universal but interpreted in highly culturally specific ways. Life and death, culture and nature, male and female are among the most basic of these. Myth thus expresses these universal concerns while resolving them in some way. Oppositions are mediated. Thus, cooked food is contrasted with raw food (nature); but these may be mediated culturally by partially cooked food, viewed culturally as falling between the two.

Mediators may also be agents, in which case they take on the role of tricksters. In North American myths, tricksters are usually Raven or Coyote. They are mediators because they are scavengers, falling between the category of herbivores (who collect rather than hunt their food) and beasts of prey (who eat meat). This invokes larger oppositions between agriculture and hunting, and between life and death. As agents, tricksters are very potent characters, even to the point of bringing the world into being (as Raven does in a Haida myth). They are also figures who provide a comical, photographic negative image of the established social order. Uncontrollable sexuality and other appetites define them. As such they may be seen to mediate between the cosmos and chaos; while they flout all standards of acceptable behavior, they at the same time acknowledge those standards in specifically breaching them.

"Wild Thinking"

This is an alternate translation of the title of Lévi-Strauss's most important single volume, *The Savage Mind*. Here, he sets out to address another central anthropological question: the so-called psychic unity problem. Were all humans equipped with comparable cognitive faculties, a position central to both evolutionary and structural-functionalist anthropologies, or was there such a thing as a "primitive mentality" in Lucien Lévy-Bruhl's phrasing, an idea that has held a certain appeal among Romantic thinkers of all stripes? Lévi-Strauss sides with the unitarians but with a twist: The thought process of "primitive" people is equally impressive as that of we moderns, but they begin from a different epistemological starting place. Unlike the model of modern science, beginning with formal systems of classification and scientific theories from which one can generate hypotheses, the "savage" thinker begins with the data on hand and constructs classifications based on what she or he determines to be the significant features. Thus, local taxonomies of plants or animals are bound to differ from Linnaean ones, but they too are based on empirical data. Thus, the main difference is that the wild thinker is a radical inductivist rather than a deductivist. This is, interestingly, how Lévi-Strauss viewed his own thought process. He immersed himself in all kinds of information: tide charts, star maps, topographical maps, fisheries data, along with all the ethnographic and myth data, when writing about Northwest Coast cultures. This was, as it were, his Boasian side; he certainly possessed a more formal, deductive side as well.

Lévi-Strauss's term for this mode of thought was "science of the concrete." A companion term, which stands in relation to it as engineering does to science in the Western context, is *bricolage*, a common French word meaning something like tinkering: building or repairing things with materials at hand (similar to Heidegger's notion of "building"). That is, one begins not with a master plan but with

a critical and creative assessment of the materials at hand, a noticing of the relations (similarity, complementarity, opposition, etc.) that pertain among them and how these elements and their relations may be put to use. This describes not only material building of structures but also the rebuilding and restructuring that is constantly occurring in myths. Myth elements circulate freely across cultural and linguistic boundaries but are transformed as they cross them. Culture is not static, although in many cases (as in "cold" societies), it pretends to be. Rather, it is rebuilt using the principles of bricolage. Again, Lévi-Strauss considered himself a *bricoleur*, which does fairly well describe his method of analyzing myth.

Identity and Alterity

Beginning with some of his earliest writings, Lévi-Strauss was concerned with the relation between alterity and identity. As he describes exogamous, totemic clans in Australia or moiety organization in Amazonia, he forcefully makes the point that difference, although arbitrary, is what constitutes identity, rather than something inherent or essential to the group (although that may well be the ideology of the said group). This applies not only to tribal society but to modern nation states as well. In *Race and History*, Lévi-Strauss identifies the problem of creeping global monoculture, or cultural entropy, as a fundamental threat to human well-being. On one level, this echoes long-standing Gallic complaints about the intrusion of Anglo-Saxon language and culture (a topic with which Lévi-Strauss as a member of the *Académie Française* was intimately familiar). However, for Lévi-Strauss, this was only part of a larger assault on cultural difference.

The problem with global monoculture is not only the loss of cultural distinctiveness but also the loss of the "Other" as a foil to identity. It is a version of what Max Weber called the disenchantment of the world. A world in which everything significant takes place in a space dominated by the monoculture of information technology with English as the lingua franca is culturally much reduced. It is a recapitulation of what Lévi-Strauss observed in Brazil in the 1930s: Tribal cultures were being absorbed into a "sad" relationship of dependency with the global world system. By the end of the 20th century, even large and powerful nation-states were threatened with a similar fate.

Significance

The work of Lévi-Strauss has been extremely influential in anthropology and in related fields. In his later years, he distanced himself from the structuralist paradigm, to the degree that he actually denied being a structuralist. (This obviously was connected entirely with academic politics. Many other structuralists or quasi structuralists, such as Roland Barthes and Pierre Bourdieu, populated the French academic scene.) Like so many before him, it is evident that his genius lay mainly in synthesis rather than in purely original thought. One can trace the genealogy of his major concepts through fairly wide thoroughfares of French and European thought, whether of René Descartes, Jean-Jacques Rousseau, Henri Bergson, Karl Marx, Sigmund Freud, Émile Durkheim, or Ferdinand Saussure. His particular value was in applying these concepts to ethnographic and mythical material, in connecting them with problems of the modern world, and with fashioning a vision of anthropology as a "human science."

Michael E. Harkin

See also Althusser, Louis; Barthes, Roland; Bloch, Maurice; Boas, Franz; Bourdieu, Pierre; Butler, Judith; Derrida, Jacques; Douglas, Mary; Durkheim, Émile; Foucault, Michel; Jakobson, Roman O.; Lacan, Jacques; *L'Année Sociologique*; Leach, Edmund; Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien; Mauss, Marcel; Needham, Rodney; Sahlins, Marshall; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Structuralism

Further Readings

Descola, P. (Ed.). (2012). *Claude Lévi-Strauss: Un parcours dans le siècle* [Claude Lévi-Strauss: A tour through the century]. Paris, France: Odile Jacob.

Hénaff, M. (1998). *Claude Lévi-Strauss and the making of structural anthropology.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Johnson, C. (2003). *Claude Lévi-Strauss: The formative years.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Wilcken, P. (2010). *Claude Lévi-Strauss: The father of modern anthropology.* New York, NY: Penguin Books.

Wiseman, B. (Ed.). (2009). *The Cambridge companion to Lévi-Strauss.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien

Lucien Lévy-Bruhl (1857–1939) was a French philosopher who became an armchair anthropologist. His first and most important anthropological work, *How Natives Think*, was originally published in France in 1910 as *Les Functions Mentales Dans les Sociétés Inférieures* and was translated into English only in 1926—3 years *after* the translation of his second and next most important anthropological work, *Primitive Mentality* (1923), originally published in France as *La Mentalité Primitive* in 1922.

"Primitive" and Modern Thinking

Lévy-Bruhl never asserts, as is commonly charged, that "primitive" peoples are inferior to moderns. On the contrary, he means to defend primitive peoples *against* this charge, made above all by the pioneering British anthropologists Edward Burnett Tylor and James G. Frazer. For Tylor and Frazer, "primitives" think the way moderns do. They just think less rigorously. For Tylor and Frazer, the difference between primitive and modern thinking is only of degree. For Lévy-Bruhl, the difference is of kind. He maintains that primitive thought is both mystical and prelogical.

Lévy-Bruhl attributes primitive thinking to culture, not to biology. Like other 20th-century anthropologists, he separates culture from race. What distinguishes primitives from us is their "collective representations." By collective representations (*représentations collectives*), a term taken from the French sociologist Émile Durkheim, Lévy-Bruhl means group beliefs, which for him are the same across all primitive societies. Primitive representations, or *conceptions*, shape *perceptions*, or experiences. According to Lévy-Bruhl, primitive peoples believe that all phenomena, including humans and their artifacts, are part of an impersonal sacred, or "mystic," realm that pervades the natural one. To take Lévy-Bruhl's most famous example, when the Bororo of Brazil declare themselves red parakeets, they mean that they are in all respects outright identical with red parakeets.

Mysticism is only the first of the two key characteristics of primitive mentality. The other characteristic, "prelogicality," builds on the first one but is more radical: It is the belief that all things are not only mystically one but somehow also distinct. The Bororo believe that a human is a parakeet yet still a human. They do not believe that a human and a parakeet are, say, identical invisibly while distinct visibly. That belief would merely be a version of mysticism, itself hardly limited to "primitives." Rather, primitive peoples believe that humans and parakeets are simultaneously both identical and separate in the same respects. Visibly as well as invisibly, humans and parakeets are at once the same and different. According to Lévy-Bruhl, that belief violates the law of noncontradiction—the law that something cannot be both *X* and non-*X* at the same time—and is uniquely primitive.

Lévy-Bruhl does not conclude, as is conventionally said of him, that primitive peoples cannot think logically, that they are mentally deficient. Instead, he concludes that "primitives," ruled as they are by their collective representations, regularly suspend the practice of logic. Primitive thinking is prelogical, but "prelogical" does not mean illogical. Still, many readers mistook prelogical for illogical, so that Lévy-Bruhl seemed to be making primitive peoples even more hopelessly inferior to moderns than Tylor and Frazer had made them—the opposite of his intent. However, in arguing that primitive thinking differs in nature from modern thinking, Lévy-Bruhl is not arguing that it is equally true. Primitive thinking does make sense in light of its premises, but its premises are still illogical: Something cannot simultaneously be both itself and something else in the same respects at the same time. Where for Tylor and to a lesser extent Frazer primitive thinking is false but still rational, for Lévy-Bruhl primitive thinking is irrational and consequently false.

Unlike many other anthropological writers of his day and ours, Lévy-Bruhl is not a relativist. Like both Tylor and Frazer, he is an absolutist. There are several varieties of relativism—conceptual, perceptual, and moral—but none fits Lévy-Bruhl. Conceptual relativism denies the existence of objective criteria for assessing the diversity of *beliefs* about the world. Beliefs can supposedly be evaluated only within a culture. Lévy-Bruhl is scarcely a conceptual relativist, since he is prepared to judge both mysticism and prelogicality outright as false beliefs about the world. Perceptual relativism denies the possibility of evaluating objectively the diversity of *experiences* of

the world. Where conceptual relativism allows for common experiences that simply get interpreted differently by different cultures, perceptual relativism, which is bolder, maintains that experiences themselves differ. One culture deems real the purported experience of a god. Another culture deems delusory the same experience. There is no way to judge these differing evaluations. Lévy-Bruhl is hardly a perceptual relativist, since he is prepared to judge the experience of oneness as delusory. Moral relativism, which denies that objective criteria exist for evaluating the undeniable diversity of *values* around the world, is not relevant to Lévy-Bruhl, who does not consider morality in his characterization of primitive thinking.

While Lévy-Bruhl takes the concept of collective representations from Durkheim, he stresses the differences rather than, like Durkheim, the similarities between primitive and modern thinking. For Lévy-Bruhl, primitive representations, or beliefs, come between primitives and the world. They determine how primitives experience the world and not merely how they think about the world. They shape perceptions as well as conceptions. Primitive peoples experience, not merely think, everything in the world as at once mystically one and separate. By contrast, modern representations, which do exist, shape only conceptions, and thus convey the world to moderns rather than come between moderns and the world. According to Lévy-Bruhl, modern representations, or beliefs, determine how moderns think about the world but not how moderns experience the world. Moderns experience the world as it actually is.

In a section of *How Natives Think* titled "The Transition to the Higher Mental Types," Lévy-Bruhl writes of "progress" in cognition. Progress requires the filtering out of the emotional elements that distort primitive perceptions. Only modern representations have been subjected to "the test of experience." In fact, for Lévy-Bruhl, it is only "scientific theorizing" that is abstract enough to be free of emotion and therefore free of mystical and prelogical proclivities. The difference between primitives and moderns is not, then, that moderns think wholly logically. It is that primitives think wholly prelogically. For Lévy-Bruhl, the emotional allure of mystical oneness makes its total disappearance unlikely, and he cites example after example of the retention of prelogical thinking among moderns. Conversely, he traces the lessening of mystical ties among primitive peoples themselves. The opposition that he draws is, then, between primitive and modern *thinking*, not between primitives and moderns *themselves*.

Many others no less absolutist than Lévy-Bruhl have been criticized far less severely. The reason is that, despite his undeniably neutral intent, Lévy-Bruhl in fact characterizes primitive mentality much more negatively than even Tylor and Frazer characterize it. Tylor and Frazer take for granted that primitive peoples recognize not only the law of noncontradiction but most "modern" distinctions as well: those between appearance and reality, subjectivity and objectivity, supernatural and natural, human and nonhuman, the living and the dead, the individual and the group, one time and another, and one space and another. True, for Tylor and Frazer, primitives fail to think sufficiently critically and thereby produce religion rather than science, but not because of any missed distinctions. Primitives still think, and think logically and systematically. For Tylor and Frazer, religion no less than science is the product of scientific-like observation, hypothesis, and generalization. It is not the product of primitive perceptions.

To be sure, for Frazer, the efficacy of magic, which for him constitutes a stage prior to that of religion, does presuppose the failure to make two distinctions: (1) that between the literal and the symbolic—for otherwise a voodoo doll would merely symbolize, not affect, a person—and (2) that between a part and the whole—for otherwise a severed strand of hair would merely have once been part of a person, not still affect that person. But Frazer never assumes that in even this stage, primitives are oblivious to the other distinctions that Lévy-Bruhl denies them, such as the distinctions between appearance and reality and between subjectivity and objectivity. And any distinctions missed by primitive peoples are, for Frazer, of conception, not of perception, which he, together with Tylor, considers invariant universally.

For Lévy-Bruhl, primitive peoples do not even have religion. What beliefs they do have come from their collective representations and not from any observations of the world, let alone from any rational responses to observations. Far from thinking rationally, primitive peoples, brainwashed by their mystical and prelogical beliefs, scarcely think at all.

Critique and Response

Lévy-Bruhl was castigated by field-workers who claimed never to have come on any culture with a distinctively primitive mentality. In *Primitive Man as Philosopher* (1927), the American anthropologist Paul Radin gave the classic anthropological rebuttal. Like other anthropological critics, Radin denies that primitive peoples miss the distinctions that Lévy-Bruhl declares them to be bereft of: cause and effect, subject and object, natural and supernatural, nonmystical and mystical, individual and group, and literal and symbolic. Yet Radin, unlike other anthropological critics, divides the members of any society, modern and primitive alike, into "men of action," who may well fail to make some of Lévy-Bruhl's distinctions, and "thinkers," who do not. By contrast, Lévy-Bruhl insists that the "average man" as well as the "cultured, scientific man" differ from primitive man.

Against Lévy-Bruhl, the French structural anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss, in *The Savage Mind* (1966) and elsewhere, similarly argues that primitive peoples think no differently than moderns. They merely focus on the observable, qualitative aspects of phenomena rather than, like moderns, on the unobservable, quantitative ones. Colors and sounds, not mass and length, faze them. Far from being prescientific, primitive peoples attain a fully scientific knowledge of the world. Theirs is simply a "science of the concrete" rather than of the abstract. And even if they do not, like moderns, separate abstractions from concrete cases, they do express abstractions through concrete cases. Furthermore, primitive knowledge is for Lévi-Strauss basically taxonomic, so that "primitives" are quite capable of categorizing. In fact, their taxonomies take the form of oppositions, which, as the equivalent, for Lévi-Strauss, of contradictions, make primitives not only aware of contradictions but also intent on resolving them. Myths most of all evince the austere, rigorous, logic-chopping nature of primitive thinking. No view of primitive peoples could be more opposed to Lévy-Bruhl's than Lévi-Strauss's.

The chief defender of Lévy-Bruhl was the English anthropologist E. E. Evans-Pritchard, above all in his *Witchcraft, Oracles and Magic Among the Azande* (1937). Yet even he faults Lévy-Bruhl for deeming primitive thinking prelogical. Where for Lévy-Bruhl primitive magic takes the place of science, for Evans-Pritchard magic and proto-science coexist. To the Azande, the sheer physical features of a tree explain its ordinary, natural "behavior." Witchcraft, Evans-Pritchard's most famous example of supernatural causality, explains only unfortunate events involving the tree: why one day it falls on one person or, to cite his most famous example, why a granary under which Azande are sitting collapses when it does. Witchcraft attributes to malevolent intent what science writes off as bad luck. For Lévy-Bruhl, in contrast, even events as regular and therefore as seemingly natural as birth, disease, and death get attributed to *magic*—a term that he, unlike Evans-Pritchard and others, uses broadly to encompass all supernatural causes. In shifting from the Azande to the Nuer, Evans-Pritchard, in *Nuer Religion* (1956), challenges Lévy-Bruhl's most striking evidence of prelogical mentality: statements, for example, that a cucumber is an ox and that human twins are birds. Lévy-Bruhl maintains that mystical representations override the senses, so that primitive peoples somehow actually perceive, not just conceive, a cucumber as an ox. Evans-Pritchard denies that they do either. The Nuer, he asserts, are speaking only metaphorically. They are saying that a cucumber is sufficiently like an ox to serve as a substitute for it. Similarly, a human twin is like a bird in certain respects but is not therefore a bird.

In his posthumously published notebooks, Lévy-Bruhl abandons his view of primitives as prelogical, though not as mystical. He does not, like Evans-Pritchard, assert that the Bororo, in deeming Trumai tribesmen fish, are merely comparing the Trumai with fish. He is claiming that the Bororo deem the Trumai mystically identical with fish. He does, however, now grant that the Trumai are fish supernaturally, not physically. Their "fishness" complements, not contradicts, their ordinary, physical humanness. Primitives thus recognize at least the distinction between the supernatural and the natural. But overall, primitive thinking remains distinct from modern thinking.

Robert Segal

See also Durkheim, Émile; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Frazer, James G.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Radin, Paul; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Durkheim, E. (1915). *The elementary forms of the religious life* (J. W. Swain, Trans.). London, UK: Allen & Unwin. (Original work published 1912)

Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (1937). *Witchcraft, oracles and magic among the Azande.* Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

———. (1956). *Nuer religion.* Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Lévi-Strauss, C. (1966). *The savage mind*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press. (Original work published 1962)

Lévy-Bruhl, L. (1923). *Primitive mentality* (L. A. Clare, Trans.). London, UK: Allen & Unwin. (Original work published 1922)

———. (1926). *How natives think* (L. A. Clare, Trans.). London, UK: Allen & Unwin. (Original work published 1910)

———. (1938). *L'expérience mystique et les symboles chez les primitives* [The mystical experience and symbols in primitives]. Paris, France: Alcan.

Radin, P. (1927). *Primitive man as philosopher* (1st ed.). New York. NY: Appleton.

Lewis, Oscar

In 3 decades of field research, Oscar Lewis (1914–1970) contributed significantly to the shift in American anthropology away from North American Indians to peasant communities and finally to urban studies. Throughout his career, he was committed to the proposition that anthropologists should focus attention on the conditions of poverty. Especially in his writings on individuals and families, Lewis effectively employed the narrative approach to give a voice to the poor so that readers, whether anthropology students or government policymakers, would understand the challenges of living in poverty and the adaptations that people developed to it.

Biographical Data

Born in New York City in 1914 as Yehezkiel Lefkowitz (but also given the Anglicized first name Oscar), Lewis was the son of Jewish immigrants from Poland. For a time, his father practiced as a rabbi in New York City, but poor health forced him to move his family to a small town in upstate New York. There, the family had a farm and eventually constructed a family hotel on their land. The family struggled to succeed, being forced to move back to the city in the winters. Thus, Lewis grew up with firsthand experience of rural and urban poverty.

The first member of his family to attend college, Lewis entered City College of New York in 1930. Although the tuition was free, books and living expenses were a burden. He focused on philosophy and history and read extensively on Marxist approaches to the struggles of the poor. He received his bachelor's degree in social science in 1936 and was accepted into Columbia Teachers College. However, Lewis soon transferred to the anthropology department at Columbia, where he studied with Ruth Benedict and Ralph Linton. He married Ruth Maslow (sister of the psychologist Abraham Maslow) in November 1937 and also thus gained a lifelong research collaborator. The couple went together to the Blackfoot reservation in 1939, when Benedict organized a summer study there. This work led to his library-based dissertation, published by the American Ethnological Society. In 1940, the year in which he received his PhD, he legally changed his surname from Lefkowitz to Lewis.

In 1942, Lewis obtained a position at the Human Relations Area Files. While working there on the Strategic Index for Latin America, he obtained a grant to study Spanish during the summer. His focus on Latin America intensified when he moved on to a short-term appointment in 1943 at the Justice Department's Special War Policies Unit, concerned with propaganda. In August 1943, he was sent to Mexico as a representative of the Department of Interior's National Indian Institute. In this role, he was assigned to coordinate a joint study (known as the Indian Personality Project) with the Interamerican Indian Institute on the impact of government policies on Mexican Indians. The most important product of this work was his decision to begin a field project in the peasant community of Tepoztlán, located in the State of Morelos just south of Mexico City. When his assignment in Mexico was completed, Lewis was transferred to the Bureau of Agricultural Economics in the Department of Agriculture, where he first did a survey of ongoing research projects throughout the central states. Eventually, he did field research in Bell County, in central Texas, resulting in a monograph titled *On the Edge of the Black Waxy: A Cultural Survey of Bell County, Texas* (1948). Along with Walter Goldschmidt's study of a central California agricultural community, this is one of the first social anthropological studies of non-Indian rural America.

Lewis's first full-time academic position came in 1946, when he was hired as an associate professor at Washington University in Saint Louis. After 2 years there, he accepted an appointment at the University of Illinois, where he remained for the rest of his career—apart from a consultancy with the Ford Foundation in northern India during 1952–1954. Besides his administrative duties in India, he was able to conduct research with Indian field-workers and interpreters in the community of Rampur. This led to the publication of his 1958 monograph, *Village Life in Northern India*.

The Tepoztlán Restudy

While in Mexico in 1943, Lewis had initiated a restudy of the community of Tepoztlán, where, in 1926, the anthropologist Robert Redfield had done fieldwork that resulted in his monograph *Tepoztlán: A Mexican Village* (1930). The scope of Lewis's project went well beyond the mandate of the Indian Personality Project, within which it was developed. It became clear to Lewis that he would need to return to Mexico as soon as possible to gather additional data to complete what was collected in 1943–1944. He was finally able to return to Tepoztlán in the summers of 1947 and 1948. During these field trips, he and his wife, Ruth, focused on detailed family studies and individual life histories to complement the survey work that had been carried out earlier. When his monograph *Life in a Mexican Village: Tepoztlán Restudied* appeared in 1951, it set off a controversy among anthropologists concerned with the differences between the idyllic portrait sketched by Redfield for the late 1920s and the conflict-laden community described by Lewis for the late 1940s. The so-called Redfield-Lewis controversy has become the textbook example of the challenges facing anthropologists doing fieldwork and also provides an early example of the value of systematic restudies and long-term research in understanding the processes of community transformation.

The Mexico City Studies

In 1951, Lewis returned to Mexico City to take up the question of how well migrants from Tepoztlán adapt to life in Mexico City. He had first considered this question during his 1944 research but could not pursue it then. With a list of migrant families obtained from his contacts in the village, Lewis and his team of student assistants were able to visit some 100 families spread throughout the city. Just as he had with Redfield's work, Lewis now took on the standard model of "urbanism as a way of life," as proposed in 1938 by the sociologist Louis Wirth. Based on his analysis of the Mexico City data, Lewis wrote an article, "Urbanization Without Breakdown: A Case Study," published in 1952 in the general magazine *The Scientific Monthly*. Although published in an unusual venue for social anthropological research, Lewis's article has been reprinted many times and is considered a classic riposte to the claims by Wirth about the international applicability of a Euro-American model of urbanization.

Subsequently, in 1956, Lewis went to Mexico to carry out a more detailed study of family life. Using a tape recorder, he began to record detailed life histories of persons in Tepoztlán and of residents of Mexico City. The major results of this endeavor were the monographs *The Children of Sánchez* (1961) and *Pedro Martínez: A Mexican Peasant and His Family* (1964). With funding from a Guggenheim Fellowship and awards from the Wenner-Gren Foundation for Anthropological Research and his university, Lewis also began what would become his most famous and most controversial research: the culture of poverty.

The ethnographic base of the research was in two lower class *vecindades* (housing settlements) located in the old central section of Mexico City. These *vecindades* were selected to represent different socioeconomic levels among the poor in Mexico City. Subsequently, to look at the differences among other lower- and middle-class families, Lewis obtained additional funding from the Social Science Research Council (1958) and the National Science Foundation (1959). Thus, what became controversial research on the culture of poverty was supported by the most important funding sources then available to social anthropologists.

The results of his research came out in a 1959 monograph, *Five Families: Case Studies in the Culture of Poverty*, although the 1961 translation carried the more appropriate title *Antropología de la Pobreza: Cinco Familias* (Anthropology of Poverty: Five Families). Much of the controversy that erupted over Lewis's work on poverty focused on whether (or not) there was a culture of poverty, when Lewis originally meant only to elaborate an anthropological approach—emphasizing family case studies—to the

socioeconomic conditions associated with poverty in Mexico City. When *Five Families* was issued, Lewis had not yet worked out the characteristics of the culture of poverty. Eventually (in 1966), he published an article with that title in *Scientific American* and followed it with a 1969 article, "The Possessions of the Poor," in the same journal. A close reading of the numerous publications by Lewis during the 1960s on the culture of poverty suggests that for Lewis a comparative, cross-cultural *theory* of a culture of poverty was far less important than a recognition that the poor were always and everywhere with us in contemporary societies and that governments had responsibilities to deal with the situation of the poor. In the end, according to Lewis, being poor was *not* the fault of those who found themselves in poverty but was due to the social, economic, political, and cultural conditions in the society. It was not Lewis himself but other U.S. social scientists and political commentators (especially Daniel Patrick Moynihan, then Assistant Secretary of Labor in the Johnson administration, whose 1965 report *The Negro Family: The Case for National Action* focused on the role of ghetto culture as the key to the increase in single-mother families) who expanded Lewis's ideas about poverty to fuel the so-called War on Poverty during the 1960s and 1970s. Consequently, Lewis was unfairly criticized by numerous scholars for introducing a cultural view of poverty that misrepresented the results of his research in Mexico—and led him to pursue cross-cultural testing of his theory in New York, Puerto Rico, and Cuba.

The New York and Puerto Rico Studies

Always interested in testing ideas cross-culturally, Lewis wanted to go to Cuba after the 1959 revolution. However, after the Bay of Pigs fiasco, it proved impossible to get a visa. Instead, Lewis turned his attention to a comparative analysis of slum families in New York City and Puerto Rico. This study (funded by multiyear grants from the Social Security Administration of the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare) was intended to examine hypotheses about the characteristics and extent of the culture of poverty. Two monographs resulted from the study: *La Vida: A Puerto Rican Family in the Culture of Poverty—San Juan and New York* (1966) and *A Study of Slum Culture: Backgrounds for La Vida* (1968). However, even though the *La Vida* book was a public success and winner of a National Book Award, numerous anthropologists and other social scientists continued to have serious issues with the notion of a culture of poverty.

The Cuba Study

In 1969, Lewis finally was able to implement a field project in Cuba. There he hoped to test the hypothesis that the culture of poverty would be different (or even absent) in a socialist nation. Unfortunately, he was suffering from heart disease and was unable to see the project through to its completion. His wife, Ruth, carried on with the Living the Revolution project, and in 1977, the University of Illinois published (under the joint authorship of Oscar Lewis, Ruth Lewis, and Susan M. Rigdon) its major results in three volumes: *Four Women*, *Four Men*, and *Neighbors*. In addition, his colleague Douglas Butterworth compiled data for a study titled *The People of Buena Ventura: The Relocation of Slum Dwellers in Postrevolutionary Cuba* (1980).

Conclusion

Just before his untimely death from heart disease in 1970, Lewis collected some of his more important essays, articles, and book chapters into an eponymous volume *Oscar Lewis: Anthropological Essays*. This collection of 24 chapters is divided into six parts: (1) Theory and Method, (2) American Indians, (3) Rural U.S.A., (4) Peasantry, (5) Urban Studies, and (6) Selections From Life Histories. In arranging his own work in this manner, Lewis summed up his contributions to social and cultural anthropology. He challenged orthodox positions about rural and urban life; focused on fieldwork as the principal source of data; developed systematic research methods, especially involving family histories; believed in comparative analysis as cultural anthropology's hallmark; and was committed to social justice for impoverished people, whether living in the countryside or in the city, in the United States or elsewhere.

Robert V. Kemper

See also Benedict, Ruth; Human Relations Area Files, Cross-Cultural Studies; Linton, Ralph; Redfield, Robert; Urban Studies

Further Readings

Leacock, E. B. (Ed.). (1971). *The culture of poverty: A critique*. New York, NY: Simon & Schuster.

Lewis, O. (1970). *Oscar Lewis: Anthropological essays*. New York, NY: Random House.

Rigdon, S. M. (1988). *The culture façade: Art, science, and politics in the work of Oscar Lewis*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Valentine, C. A. (1968). *Culture and poverty, critique and counter-proposals*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Lienhardt, Godfrey

Ronald Godfrey Lienhardt (1921–1993) was born to a Swiss father and English mother in Bradford, Yorkshire. Both he and his younger brother Peter Arnold Lienhardt studied at Downing College, Cambridge, reading English with F. R. Leavis. While retaining a fond connection with the north of England throughout their lives, both were eventually to become distinguished colleagues of Edward Evans-Pritchard at Oxford's Institute of Social Anthropology.

Godfrey's degree studies began in 1939 but were interrupted by military service during the Second World War, years that included a posting to East Africa. He returned to Cambridge in 1945, met Evans-Pritchard, and transferred to archaeology and anthropology. On graduating in 1947, he embarked on fieldwork among the Dinka people of southern Sudan. Oxford subsequently became his base, first as a postgraduate student, subsequently as a university lecturer, and then as a reader in social anthropology and as a professorial fellow of Wolfson College. He returned to the Sudan several times, extending his studies to the Anuak; he also had visiting positions in Baghdad, Iraq (1955–1956), and Accra, Ghana (1964); he visited Northwestern University, Illinois, for the award of an honorary DLitt in 1983.

Lienhardt's best known work remains his monograph *Divinity and Experience: The Religion of the Dinka* (1961). It is a story told through the reflections of those Dinka people Lienhardt came to know well and whose trust he had won. While dedicated to Evans-Pritchard and acknowledging his 1930s researches on the Nuer, it has a refreshing quality of immediacy and intimacy flowing from Lienhardt's sensitivity to the subtleties of language as well as his own deeply held, though very liberal, religious views (as a convert to Roman Catholicism). His exploration of Dinka understandings of *nhialic*, or "divinity" (and the various overlapping "divinities" as they manifested themselves in people's lives) begins with the practical activities of cattle herding. It moves on to the less obvious forms of social experience, through their images of patrilineage and clan, themselves dependent for continuing life on the marriage alliances created through transfers of cattle. Birth, illness, and death are part of a cosmology in which the human sphere is intermittently engaged with that of divinity, especially through the flesh, words, and dreams of those born to the priestly lines of "Masters of the Fishing Spear."

Lienhardt's insights into the experiential foundations of shared belief among the Dinka were further developed in lectures and publications. In these, he explored, for example, variable notions of the High God in Africa, the place of internal consciousness in African concepts of the person, and the harder edge of reciprocity. Among a range of Nilotic peoples, popular myths are told about lineage heads or royals demanding their lost or lent possessions back, even former gifts such as beads subsequently swallowed by a cow or a child. If pursued to the end, such a cow or child will have to die. The tale is sometimes told to explain why two lineages separated long ago or to illustrate how only royals could get away with such cruel behavior. One of his most influential papers is devoted to the impact of Catholic missionaries among the western Dinka and the way the meanings of religious terms were artfully shifted, and reimagined, in this new context.

The stories, myths, and conversations Lienhardt reports from his fieldwork are never simple ethnographic data—they are presented as a part of the ongoing life he engaged with among the Dinka. What gives a lasting quality to his writings is not so much an observer's "grand theory" as an approach to ethnography that privileges the *meanings* of human encounter—both within the community being studied and between the ethnographer and his or her informants. *Divinity and Experience* is widely regarded today as an anthropological classic, respected by historians and scholars of comparative religion and theology.

A similar direct approach to the realities of human encounter runs through Lienhardt's modest (but

much translated) introductory book of 1964, titled simply *Social Anthropology.* This work appeared at a time of transition, when cynics, at least in Britain, saw the end of empire and forecast the end of anthropology. However, the younger generation was looking to fresh sources for the renewal of the subject: Lévi-Straussian structuralism, Marxism as revived in France, and, sometimes in tandem, a new focus on anthropology "at home." In these various ways, they were seeking to make the subject genuinely universal, emphasizing similarity, and comparability, over difference. Lienhardt in his own way was doing this too. By focusing on how ethnographic research was actually carried out, Lienhardt's very readable account of the intellectual roots of anthropology introduces some memorable scenes of personal encounter. His lens is focused as much on the ethnographers themselves as on the people studied; taking an ironic swipe at Lévy-Bruhl's classic on primitive mentality (*How Natives Think*, 1910), his concluding chapter is ironically titled "How Anthropologists Think." He had little sympathy with casual notions of cultural relativism and was quite outspoken about this toward the end of his life.

Lienhardt was a warm, witty, provocative teacher; while taking a very modest attitude to career advancement, he accepted several invitations to deliver radio talks, and his informal seminars were always exciting events. His home was always open to students and visitors, especially from the Sudan (north and south) and from West Africa. Among the Sudanese scholars, Francis Mading Deng has paid special tribute to Lienhardt's friendship and influence in encouraging his own writings on the songs, poetry, and history of the Dinka. Lienhardt's papers and photographs are preserved at the Pitt Rivers Museum, Oxford.

Wendy James

See also Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien; Oxford University; Religion; Structuralism

Further Readings

Al-Shahi, A. (Ed.). (2010). Letters from the field: Godfrey Lienhardt and the Dinka of southern Sudan. A personal view. *Societal Studies, 5*. Khartoum, Sudan: Centre for Society Studies. Available through the system of the Bodleian Library, Oxford, UK.

Al-Shahi, A., & Coote, J. (Eds.). (1997). Special issue in memory of Godfrey Lienhardt (includes a comprehensive bibliography). *Journal of the Anthropological Society of Oxford (JASO), 28*. Retrieved from http://www.isca.ox.ac.uk/fileadmin/ISCA/JASO/JASO_Archive_pdfs/1997_JASO_28.pdf

James, W. (2003). *The ceremonial animal: A new portrait of anthropology* (dedicated to the memory of Godfrey and Peter Lienhardt). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

James, W., & Johnson, D. H. (Eds.). (1988). *Vernacular Christianity: Essays in the social anthropology of religion, presented to Godfrey Lienhardt* (JASO Occasional Papers, No. 7.). Oxford, UK: JASO & Lilian Barber Press. Retrieved from http://www.isca.ox.ac.uk/publications/jaso/archive/jaso-occasional-papers-1982–1993/

Linton, Ralph

Ralph Linton (1893–1953), an American anthropologist, Curator of Ethnology at the Field Museum of Chicago, and President of the American Anthropological Association, is best known for his contributions to culture and personality theory and for books aimed at both popular and professional audiences.

Biographical Sketch

Several important dimensions of Ralph Linton's early life affected his scholarship in a number of interesting ways. Linton was born to a Quaker family in Pennsylvania in 1893. His father was authoritarian, which was the cause of some tension and bitterness according to Adelin Linton's 1971 account of her husband's childhood. Among other things, Ralph Linton manifested a disdain for anthropologists such as A. R. Radcliffe-Brown and Franz Boas, who were authoritarian in their dealings with students and who tended to attract faithful disciples. Linton was self-consciously more egalitarian in his interactions with students. This (in addition to having spent half of his career outside of universities with anthropology graduate programs) may be one reason why fewer anthropologists trace their direct intellectual lineage to him. It was also the case that Linton claimed no singular influence from any particular formative figure in the discipline. Nevertheless,

he had a profound influence at the undergraduate level on many students including Sol Tax, Clyde Kluckhohn, Abraham Maslow, and others, and he left a significant theoretical footprint on the field of anthropology.

Linton was an undergraduate at Swarthmore College from 1911 to 1915, and during that time, he undertook his first archaeological fieldwork in the American Southwest. It was archaeology that drew him to anthropology initially, although he later shifted toward cultural anthropology. He received a Master's degree at the University of Pennsylvania in 1916, after which he transferred to Columbia University to work with Franz Boas. Boas, however, found him to be an unremarkable student. Linton interrupted his studies to enlist in the military during World War I. When he returned from Europe to meet Boas and resume graduate studies, Linton came straight from Fort Dix, still in uniform. This likely annoyed Boas further because of his disagreement with American involvement in World War I, and Boas expressed deep skepticism that Linton could succeed in graduate studies at Columbia. This interaction with Boas led Linton to leave Columbia immediately and enroll at Harvard, where he received his PhD in 1925. This was the beginning of what was to become a long-standing tension between Linton and the Boasians that became progressively entrenched as Linton's career continued, and it was most pronounced when he replaced Boas as the chair of anthropology at Columbia in 1937.

Linton's career can be divided into four phases linked to the institutions where he worked: (1) as the curator of ethnology at The Field Museum of Chicago (1922–1928), (2) as a professor at the University of Wisconsin–Madison (1928–1937), (3) as the chair of the Department of Anthropology at Columbia (1937–1946), and (4) as a Sterling Professor of Anthropology at Yale (1946–1953). In his first position at the Field Museum, Linton became devoted to fieldwork. He spent almost 2 full years (1926–1927) on a museum expedition to collect artifacts and conduct ethnographic research in Madagascar. This resulted in a number of field reports and publications, including his 1933 monograph *The Tanala: A Hill Tribe of Madagascar*. While Linton would have liked to continue curation and fieldwork for the museum, sickness and an alluring offer to institute an anthropological curriculum at the University of Wisconsin–Madison drew him into academe. He soon became a much sought-after lecturer.

When he moved to Columbia University in 1937, Linton continued to grow in influence. At this point, his 1936 book *The Study of Man* was beginning to have an impact on the field. Linton also participated in the Social Sciences Research Council's Committee on Personality and Culture and on a subcommittee with Robert Redfield and Melville J. Herskovits. They jointly authored the "Memorandum for the Study of Acculturation," which spurred a generation of scholarship on the topic. This was an integral concept in the theoretical synthesis that Linton sought in *The Study of Man* and in his posthumously published *The Tree of Culture*.

Linton was an avid fieldworker, and he considered his success in mastering the cultural practices and gaining status in the institutions of the people he studied among his greatest achievements. It was fieldwork that both drew him into the discipline and inspired his shift from archaeology to cultural anthropology. His broad archaeological and ethnographic fieldwork experience included research in the American Southwest, Marquesas Islands (1920–1922), Madagascar (1926–1927), Ohio, Wisconsin, New Jersey, Guatemala, and work with Native American groups, including the Comanche and the Pawnee.

Key Works and Theoretical Contributions

Linton was an important theoretician and an influential teacher, well-known and respected in his time. Several of his works are of note in the history and development of anthropological theory. One of Linton's early essays made a salient point about the fundamental similarities in the beliefs and practices of "modern" Europeans and Americans and those of the members of "primitive" societies who were the most frequent object of anthropological inquiry. In "Totemism and the A.E.F.," Linton drew on his experience in the Rainbow Division of the American Expeditionary Forces during World War I. He described how the rainbow insignia became a totem for the soldiers in the division, outlining how it took on sacred and supernatural powers. This was an important insight at the time, and a contribution to the more reflexive anthropology that would follow.

Linton attempted to take what he considered the best elements from each competing theoretical

school of the time to construct an encompassing and synthetic theoretical approach. He did not position himself in any one school, but rather proclaimed his willingness to accept some, but not all, of the central propositions of each. In *The Study of Man* (his best known single work), he sought to outline this encompassing paradigm and to apprehend the relationship between the psychological functioning of individuals and the suprapersonal dimensions of culture.

The Study of Man was not only a theoretical but also a historical synthesis. The text begins with human origins and seeks a basic explanation of contemporary cultural diversity. In doing so, Linton examined the concept of race, critiqued its popular usage, and showed that it lacked empirical validity. He subsequently moved to explain variations in social organization through a theoretical integration of diffusionist, evolutionary, historical particularist, functionalist, psychological, and humanistic perspectives. One challenging aspect of the text is its near complete lack of citations and footnotes—Linton maintained some unconventional views of such scholarly conventions. Nevertheless, one can see connections between his grand synthesis and the ideas of his contemporaries. Interestingly, he seemed to want to integrate most thoroughly the schools of two contemporaries with whom he had significant personal animosity—Boas and Radcliffe-Brown. Linton proposed a typology of the different forms, meanings, uses, and functions of cultural elements. He believed that this typology could take account of the ultimate functions of cultural elements, while also being sensitive to social and cultural change, and the diffusion of particular practices and tools. He further added to this synthesis what he saw as a more sophisticated treatment of the psychology of individuals, which he argued that key players were ignoring or mistreating in each school.

Status and Role

One chapter in *The Study of Man* has been widely cited in anthropology and sociology for its contribution to our understanding of social systems. In "Status and Role," Linton lays out several important distinctions regarding specialization in society. A status is a particular place or position within a social organization, such as the status of "father" or "neighbor." A role, however, constitutes the attitudes, values, and behaviors that each person occupying a particular status carries out (what Linton termed the *dynamic* aspect of inhabiting a status). While statuses and roles are linked, they are experienced as distinct by individuals. Statuses are experienced as structural placements within a social system, while roles involve what has to be learned by an individual in order to effectively carry out and validate their placement in the social order. The other important distinction that Linton makes here is the difference between achieved status (status based on one's activities) and ascribed status (status based on one's inherent characteristics at birth), and he explicates the varying conditions in which a status may be either achieved or ascribed.

Culture and Personality

Linton is often identified with the "culture and personality school." What is interesting is that the cultural essentialism that modern anthropologists often assume characterizes that the "school" is not inherent in the assumptions or the explicit treatment of individual variation in Linton's writings. Linton's descriptions of ascribed versus achieved status, as well as his subsequent concept of status personalities, seek to take stock of the extensive individual psychological variation within social systems. Robert LeVine describes how the contemporary disciplinary myth about the Culture-and-Personality school incorrectly assumes that these theorists believed the relationship between personality and culture was relatively unproblematic (i.e., personality writ large) and that culture exerted its influence more or less uniformly across the personalities that it shaped. Linton explicitly rejected these ideas, and his writings in the early twentieth century have a strikingly modern feel. He ruminated about the dangers of essentialism (though he does not use this term) and considered the complex philosophical issues at stake in simplistic cultural representation. He wrote about the variety of ways that anthropologists ought to take individual variation into account, arguing that some dimensions of psychological function can indeed be independent from cultural fashioning and that culture surely exerts differential pressures on varying subgroups within each society (male and female, different classes and castes, age groups, etc.).

Disciplinary entrenchment was increasingly important in the academy when Linton began his

career. He became an important figure in calling for the transcendence of these boundaries to deal with interesting investigations of the human condition without regard to what he considered superficial divisions. From his time at Wisconsin to his chairmanship at Columbia, he participated in joint seminars and initiatives to promote cross-disciplinary teaching and research. One of the best known of these efforts was the joint seminar that he held with Abram Kardiner. In this seminar, Kardiner would bring psychoanalytic interpretation to ethnographic presentations made by anthropologists. Kardiner's work included analyses of Linton's material on Comanche, Tanala, and Marquesan culture. Other presenters at the seminar included Cora DuBois, Carl Withers, Charles Wagley, and Francis L. K. Hsu.

Kardiner's melding of psychoanalysis and ethnographic material had far-reaching influence, and a number of notable publications came of the seminar, including Linton's 1945 book, *The Cultural Background of Personality.* This work can be seen as Linton's attempt to refine some of the efforts to integrate psychological function with particular cultural patterns that were typical of the seminar, as well as a refining of his own arguments in *The Study of Man.* For example, he proposes the "status personality" as a concept that can integrate a functionalist understanding of social configurations while still accounting for variations from the "basic" or "modal" personality types in a given society. Status personalities are personality configurations specific to the interactions of people in particular positions in the social configuration. This allowed for a diachronic dynamism not inherent in Kardiner's formulation, as well as an understanding of more extensive variation in the types of personalities that were seen as distributed across a cultural group.

Linton's Legacy

Ralph Linton died of a heart attack in 1953. He was actively writing and lecturing at the time of his death, which is evidenced by the posthumous publication of two books, *The Tree of Culture* in 1955 and *Culture and Mental Disorders* in 1956. The former was approximately two thirds completed at the time of his death and was completed by his widow. *The Tree of Culture* included a more comprehensive historical synthesis than *The Study of Man*, which was more theoretical. *Culture and Mental Disorders* was based on a set of interdisciplinary seminars at Yale and was edited and published by George Devereaux.

Linton's footprint on the discipline of anthropology can be seen in the way that he synthesized important observations from competing schools of thought into a coherent approach, developed a theoretical framework that could account for both macrosocial patterns as well as idiosyncratic psychological factors (the enduring central concern of contemporary psychological anthropology), and in the ways that he communicated these ideas to both popular and specialized audiences through his lectures and writings. He fashioned a more reflexive discipline and drew from a wealth of ethnographic and archaeological experience to push forward a grand synthesis of understanding the human condition for social scientists and the general public alike.

Jacob R. Hickman

See also Boas, Franz; Columbia University; Culture and Personality; DuBois, Cora; Herskovits, Melville; Kardiner, Abram; Kluckhohn, Clyde; LeVine, Robert; Psychological Anthropology; Redfield, Robert; Tax, Sol

Further Readings

LeVine, R. A. (2001). Culture and personality studies, 1918–1960: Myth and history. *Journal of Personality, 69*(6), 803–818.

Linton, A., & Wagley, C. (1971). *Ralph Linton*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Linton, R. (1924). Totemism and the A.E.F. *American Anthropologist, 26,* 296–300.

———. (1936). *The study of man: An introduction*. New York, NY: D. Appleton-Century.

———. (1938). Culture, society, and the individual. *Journal of Abnormal and Social Psychology, 33*(4), 425–436.

———. (1939). The Tanala of Madagascar. In A. Kardiner (Ed.), *The individual and his society* (pp. 251–290). New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

———. (1943). Nativistic movements. *American Anthropologist, 45,* 230–240.

———. (1955). *The tree of culture*. New York, NY: Alfred A. Knopf.

———. (1961). *The cultural background of personality*. East Norwalk, CT: Appleton-Century-Crofts.

Linton, R., & Devereux, G. (Ed.). (1956). *Culture and mental disorders*. Springfield, IL: Thomas.

Manson, W. C. (1986). Abram Kardiner and the Neo-Freudian alternative in culture and personality. In G. W. Stocking (Ed.), *Malinowski, Rivers, Benedict, and others: Essays on culture and personality*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Robert, R., Linton, R., & Herskovits, M. (1936). Memorandum for the study of acculturation. *American Anthropologist, 38,* 149–152.

London School of Economics

London School of Economics (LSE), formally known as the London School of Economics and Political Science, is a research institution of higher education in the United Kingdom.

History of the LSE and the Tradition of Anthropology at the School

The LSE specializes in the social sciences, offering graduate programs in all traditional disciplines. Organizationally, it is a school of the University of London. As a distinct entity, the LSE has played a significant role in the institutional development of anthropology in higher education, most notably in Britain. Formative anthropologists, theorists, philosophers, and intellectual figures serving on the faculty of the school, either on a permanent or a visiting basis, full-time or part-time, have included Edward Westermarck, Charles Gabriel Seligman, Bronisław Malinowski, Raymond Firth, Lucy Mair, Audrey Richards, I. Schapera, Sir Karl Popper, Maurice Bloch, and Dan Sperber. Former LSE students who have gone on to make significant contributions to anthropological theory include E. E. Evans-Pritchard, Meyer Fortes, Edmund Leach, Hilda B. Kuper, and Jean and John Comaroff.

The LSE was founded in 1895, having socialist origins as an intellectual endeavor of the Fabian Society. Beginning in 1900, formal courses were offered at the school, with degrees conferred from the year 1902. By 1904, the LSE had fully joined the University of London as one of its schools, at which time degrees were awarded by the university. At that time, the school had an enrollment of more than 1,400. The school's students were instructed by an academic staff of more than 40 lecturers.

As an academic teaching and research area, ethnography and social institutions were historically grouped together at the school, and the director, Lord William Beveridge, expressed interest in prioritizing the expansion of this academic area in these earliest years of the institution's history. Expansion of the area's resources took place under the direction of the Finnish philosopher and sociologist Edward Westermarck and later under the leadership of the pioneering ethnologist Charles Gabriel Seligman. In the early years of the LSE, academic departments did not exist. In fact, for the most part, the school did not have formal academic departments until the 1960s. It has been said that the word *department* was taboo in the early history of the school and that only when enrollment numbers soared did the LSE find it necessary to accommodate students in academic departments. Rather, for a great part of its institutional history, certain subjects were taught for credit as course requirements in the LSE's syllabi of degree programs.

In the 1920s and 1930s, a priority at the school was to keep all the social sciences under one roof. Another institutional goal was to enhance the offerings in the social sciences. To broaden the offerings of the social sciences in the school's degree catalog of syllabi, the senior leadership decided to expand the courses in anthropology. This included the creation of a formal graduate program with significant additional resources.

The Anthropology Faculty and Its Notable Students

Since departments did not exist in the early years of the school, faculty posts were structured around certain courses and subjects in the school's degree syllabi. Westermarck started lecturing in anthropology in 1904. He remained on the faculty at the LSE as a part-time professor until 1930. The year 1913 marked the creation of the first faculty post in ethnology, to which Seligman was appointed. Although this appointment was permanent, it was only part-time. Seligman had already been appointed to a lecturer's post in ethnology in 1910.

By 1927, the school had created its first full-time professorship in anthropology, to be held by Malinowski. Offered a scholarship that was arranged with the help of Seligman's leadership, Malinowski had become a student at the LSE in 1910 and had studied with Seligman and Westermarck. The school awarded him a DSc in 1913, and he began lecturing

at the school, taking on students alongside his teachers Westermarck and Seligman. The school formally elected him a social anthropology readership in May 1923, which commenced in 1924.

Malinowski's faculty post in social anthropology at the school was in part made possible by significant funding from the Rockefeller Foundation. The anthropologist Jack Goody has argued that by insisting that the faculty position carry the title of Social Anthropology rather than Cultural Anthropology, Malinowski and the LSE hoped to distance themselves from their institutional neighbor University College London. This gave the school a distinct reputation in British anthropology that was rivaled only by nearby Oxford University. By the end of the 1920s, Malinowski had attracted a group of formidable scholars to the LSE to carry out graduate studies under his direction.

By 1925, Evans-Pritchard and Firth had joined the anthropology graduate program, followed by Schapera a year later. The first of Malinowski's PhD students was Firth, who was awarded his degree in 1927. Evans-Pritchard, Fortes, and Max Gluckman all studied with Malinowski at the LSE prior to transferring to Oxford to study under A. R. Radcliffe-Brown. Firth, Richards, Leach, and Schapera kept LSE their primary academic affiliation in research and fieldwork dating from that time period. Monica Wilson was one of the students attending Malinowski's LSE seminars. Hilda B. Kuper was a full-time PhD student of his at the school.

Structural functionalism had become the mainstay at Oxford with Radcliffe-Brown's commanding presence there. The LSE emerged as its rival institution in British social anthropology, serving in part as Malinowski's mouthpiece for articulating a more implicit form of functionalism, one that was not structural in its theoretical foundations and did not depart as much from early intellectual figures such as Herbert Spencer and Auguste Comte as that promoted by Radcliffe-Brown. Malinowski died in 1942, and in 1944, his chair was given to Firth, thus continuing Malinowski's tradition in anthropology. During Firth's tenure, the school enhanced its theoretical reputation in anthropology. His faculty appointment at the school was followed by teaching posts for Schapera and Mair. This trio of scholars became a fixture in the school's anthropology department in the succeeding years.

The Anthropology Graduate Program and Its Resources

Malinowski had been successful in developing a formal graduate program in anthropology at the LSE in the years following the First World War. The program peaked in the 1930s and then rose to prominence again in the 1950s. The LSE received significant funding from the Rockefeller Foundation from 1923 to 1939. In addition to funding students, the institution also used the money to help finance the expansion of its library, its buildings, professorships, research projects, and overseas travel to the United States for professional purposes. Among the University of London community of schools and colleges, the LSE gained the reputation of preferring additional faculty resources and professorships to the expansion of school buildings. Nevertheless, the LSE soon housed the largest social science research library in Britain. Today, the British Library of Political and Economic Science at the LSE is one of the institutional legacies of funding by the Rockefeller Foundation in the 1920s and 1930s.

Theory at Other Departments of the School and the Next Generation of Anthropology

Shortly after publishing his treatises *The Poverty of Historicism*, which were writings dating from 1930, and *The Open Society and Its Enemies*, the eminent philosopher Sir Karl Popper arrived at the LSE in early 1946. Popper took up a full-time academic position; served as the founding figure of the LSE's Department of Philosophy, Logic, and Scientific Method; and 3 years later was appointed professor of logic and scientific method. He held this faculty post until 1972. Primarily because of Popper's early achievements, the LSE gained a reputation as a leader in the philosophy of the social sciences. Popper's research, teaching, and scholarly influence after arriving at the school were primarily in the philosophy of physics, philosophy of science and methodology, and history of science. The department continues today to attract leading faculty.

Jean and John Comaroff, today editorial affiliates of the highly influential journal *Public Culture*, were both students in the Department of Anthropology's graduate program. John Comaroff earned his PhD from the LSE in 1973, and Jean Comaroff was awarded the same degree the following year. There

was a group of South Africans in the school's anthropology department, and they were represented by the Comaroffs. Soon after the Comaroffs departed, the emerging interdisciplinary field of contemporary cultural studies was embraced by the school. The prolific contemporary cultural studies scholar Scott Lash earned his PhD in 1980 from the school's Department of Sociology.

As a faculty member in the Department of Anthropology for the major portion of his career, Maurice Bloch generated theoretical works that stemmed from and engaged structuralism and the French Marxist traditions. The works also had implications for, and relied on, developments in cognitive science. Another notable scholar who had employed cognitive science in his theory construction, Dan Sperber, arrived at the LSE in 1988 as a distinguished visitor. He returned as a visiting professor in the late 1990s through the 2000s, most of the time sponsored by the Department of Anthropology.

The LSE in Recent Years: Contemporary Theorists and Their Contributions

The leading contemporary sociological theorist Anthony Giddens served as director of the school from 1997 to 2003. Under his leadership, the school's Department of Sociology grew to greater prominence. This was especially the case in its theoretical orientation to critical and cultural studies, particularly in contemporary social and political issues. Most visible was his case for advances and dialogues in globalization theory.

The vocal sociologist Ulrich Beck has become a mainstay at the LSE Department of Sociology in recent years. He teaches graduate social theory courses to students enrolled in programs there. His research on the theoretical aspects of modernity received significant attention. His arrival further raised the profile of the school's sociology department.

The field of urban studies has emerged in recent years at the LSE. For the most part, this has been made possible through funding for a research project on cities undertaken by the school's Department of Sociology. The department has welcomed the urban sociologist Saskia Sassen, originator of the term *global city*, as a recurring centennial visiting professor in recent years. It has also housed other leading scholars devoted to urban studies in their theoretical constructs.

The highly respected sociologist Craig Calhoun took over as director of the school in September 2012. A cultural sociologist and theoretician, Calhoun served as founding director of the Institute for Public Knowledge at New York University prior to his arriving at the LSE. He had also been president of the Social Science Research Council. For a number of years, Calhoun had worked with the LSE's eminent sociologist Richard Sennett in the cofounding of a research consortium consisting of New York- and London-based graduate students focusing on incorporating ethnographic, historical, and other qualitative methods into their research in the social sciences. Under Calhoun and Sennett's direction, the students in the consortium brought these methods to light in their work encompassing cultural, social, and political themes, for which the LSE had gained an international reputation in the 1990s and 2000s.

The famed cultural studies figure Paul Gilroy joined the faculty of the LSE Department of Sociology as inaugural Anthony Giddens Professor of Social Theory prior to Calhoun's arrival at the school. A product of the Centre for Contemporary Cultural Studies at the University of Birmingham in Britain in the early 1980s, Gilroy was a PhD student of the formative cultural theorist Stuart Hall. He was a vocal advocate of British cultural studies at the school. This tradition was pervasive in the course offerings at the Department of Sociology and within a number of the school's interdisciplinary research clusters prior to Calhoun's arrival.

Dustin Bradley Garlitz

See also Bloch, Maurice; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Firth, Raymond; Fortes, Meyer; Gluckman, Max; Kuper, Hilda B.; Leach, Edmund; Mair, Lucy; Malinowski, Bronisław; Popper, Karl; Richards, Audrey; Rockefeller Foundation; Schapera, Isaac; Seligman, Charles Gabriel; Sperber, Dan; Urban Studies; Westermarck, Edward; Wilson, Monica

Further Readings

Dahrendorf, R. (1995). *LSE: A history of the London School of Economics and Political Science, 1895–1995*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Eriksen, T. H., & Nielsen, F. S. (2001). *A history of anthropology*. London, UK: Pluto Press.

Goody, J. (1995). *The expansive moment: The rise of social anthropology in Britain and Africa 1918–1970*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Kuklick, H. (Ed.). (2008). *A new history of anthropology*. Malden, MA: Blackwell.
Kuper, A. (1973). *Anthropologists and anthropology: The British school 1922–1972*. New York, NY: Pica Press.
———. (1988). *The invention of primitive society: Transformations of an illusion*. London, UK: Routledge.

Lounsbury, Floyd

Floyd Glenn Lounsbury (1914–1998) was an American linguist and anthropologist known for contributions to the anthropology of kinship relations, ancient Mayan hieroglyphic writing, and the linguistics of Iroquoian languages. Along with Ward Goodenough, Lounsbury was a foundational theorist in the "new ethnography," or "ethnoscience," a formal approach to the analysis of cultural systems from the perspective of native categories, as represented in lexical semantics of language.

Biography

Lounsbury was born in Stevens Point, Wisconsin, on April 25, 1914, to John Glenn Lounsbury and Anna Louise Jorgensen Lounsbury. He completed his undergraduate degree in mathematics at the University of Wisconsin. During that time, he also took courses in anthropology and linguistics from several noted scholars, including Einar Haugen, Morris Swadesh, and Freeman Twadell. Swadesh hired Lounsbury as an assistant in his Oneida language project, funded by the Works Progress Administration, which Lounsbury himself led from 1939 to 1940 after Swadesh moved to Mexico. He completed his research and wrote his master's thesis on Oneida phonology using the data gathered from the project. Like many scholars of the time, Lounsbury's work was interrupted by the outbreak of World War II. After 4 years of military service, Lounsbury formally completed his master's degree at the University of Wisconsin in 1946 and received a Rockefeller grant to carry out his doctoral studies in anthropology at Yale University, where he studied with Bernard Bloch. His dissertation, *Iroquoian Morphology*, was finished in 1949 and published in 1953 as *Oneida Verb Morphology*. On graduating, Lounsbury took a faculty position in anthropology at Yale, where he remained until retiring in 1979. At the time of his death in 1998, he held the title of Sterling Professor Emeritus of Anthropology at Yale University.

Major Contributions

Lounsbury contributed to several different fields. His most significant contributions, however, have been in Iroquoian linguistics, kinship, and the decipherment of Mayan hieroglyphics.

Iroquoian Linguistics

Much of Lounsbury's later contributions to anthropological theory and to the decipherment of Mayan hieroglyphic writing can be related to his formative training in the rigorous and systematic approaches of mathematics and descriptive linguistics. His master's thesis and doctoral dissertation on Oneida continue to be standard reference material for Iroquoianists today, most of whom were mentored by Lounsbury. In his work on Iroquoian phonology and morphology, Lounsbury developed much of the descriptive framework and terminology for describing Iroquoian languages.

Kinship

Lounsbury is perhaps best known for his application of the methods of componential analysis—pioneered in linguists for the study of the sound systems of language—to kinship. In an influential article published in the journal *Language* in 1956, Lounsbury explained how the terms used in the Caddoan language Pawnee to talk about kinship relations could be systematically analyzed in terms of individual components of meaning to discern the underlying organizing distinctions, the system of kinship. The basic method was to gather a comprehensive list of words used in a language to refer to kin relations and then to define each item in terms of a fairly small but theoretically universal set of contrastive features (parallel to the place and manner of articulation and voicing in phonology). The system of meaningful distinctions for a given language can be inferred from the feature contrasts that are lexicalized (expressed with different words) in the language and those that are not. The method he laid out was rigorous, methodical, and—as he showed in subsequent articles on L. H. Morgan's

"Omaha"- and "Crow"-type kinship systems, and others—readily applicable to any group.

Lounsbury's systematic, empirical approach attracted linguists, who were struggling to investigate language meaning with the same methodological rigor that had been achieved in post-Bloomfield structural linguistics in the realm of phonology and morphology. It also appealed to anthropologists as it seemed to bridge the space between the systematicity of language and other, seemingly less structured cultural patterns and behaviors. Lounsbury's work also complemented the work of fellow Yale graduate Ward H. Goodenough, whose "Componential Analysis and the Study of Meaning" appeared in the same 1956 issue of *Language* as did Lounsbury's study of Pawnee kinship. Both Lounsbury and Goodenough emphasized a systematic, empirical approach to the study of society that sought to define, primarily on the basis of lexicon, the indigenous categories and structures according to which a given society organized the world. Both their methods and their goals have been important in the "new ethnography," ethnoscience, and in cognitive anthropology.

Mayan Hieroglyphics

Lounsbury's characteristic analytical rigor can also be seen in his contributions to ancient Maya hieroglyphics. He was an early proponent of looking to the Mayan languages to understand hieroglyphs and was among the first American scholars to see the value of the work on phoneticism in Mayan hieroglyphics by the Russian Yuriy Knorosov. Lounsbury advocated investigating Mayan hieroglyphs as language rather than as abstract representations of ethereal ideas, and he introduced a new degree of rigor into the methods of decipherment, which at the time were fairly loose and slipshod. Lounsbury became interested in Mayan hieroglyphics in the 1960s, but he was particularly active in efforts to decipher Mayan hieroglyphic writing during the 1970s and 1980s. In addition to contributing specific proposed decipherments and interpretations of texts, especially at Palenque, and introducing more rigorous methods for formulating and testing hypotheses about glyphic readings, Lounsbury also contributed to the understanding of ancient Mayan numeration, mathematics, and astronomy. He published work on the "Venus tables" in the Dresden Codex and addressed and resolved several issues with specific distances numbers and calendric cycles in various inscriptions. He also wrote an important summary of the current state of the art in Mayan numeration and calendrics.

Daniel Law

See also Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Goodenough, Ward H.; Swadesh, Morris

Further Readings

Conklin, H. C. (2000). Obituary of Floyd Glenn Lounsbury (1914–1998). *American Anthropologist, 102*(4), 860–864.

Lounsbury, F. G. (1953). *Oneida verb morphology* (Yale University Publications in Anthropology, No. 48). New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

———. (1956). A semantic analysis of Pawnee kinship usage. *Language, 32,* 158–194.

———. (1964). A formal account of the Crow- and Omaha-type kinship terminologies. In W. Goodenough (Ed.), *Explorations in cultural anthropology* (351–393). New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

———. (1978). Maya numeration, computation, and calendrical astronomy. In C. C. Gillespie (Ed.), *Dictionary of scientific biography* (Vol. 15, Suppl., pp. 759–818). New York, NY: Scribner.

Lowie, Robert

Robert H. Lowie (1883–1957) was born in Vienna to a German-speaking Jewish father born in Hungary and a Viennese Jewish mother. When he was 10, his family immigrated to New York, where he grew up as a bilingual youngster in a middle-class German Jewish intellectual milieu. Lowie retained his bilingualism and his European (and specifically Viennese) cultural tastes and habits for the rest of his life. In 1897, he entered City College, concentrating first on Greek and Latin and later on science. On graduation, Lowie taught in the New York public schools for 3 years and then enrolled in a graduate program in anthropology at Columbia University. His main mentor, Franz Boas, had a major influence on him as a scholar. However, he was just as much a student of Clark Wissler, his supervisor at the American Museum of Natural History, where Lowie worked as a volunteer while still in graduate

school. It was Wissler who sent him on his first ethnographic field trip to the Lemhi Shoshoni in 1906. In 1908, on completion of a thesis dealing with comparative mythology, Lowie received his PhD degree and continued working as a curator at the American Museum of Natural History until 1917.

As both an undergraduate and a graduate student, Lowie was very interested in the history and methodology of science and was a particularly devoted follower of the Austrian philosopher Ernst Mach, with whom he corresponded. He shared these interests with several other members of the first cohort of Boas's graduate students, especially Alexander Goldenweiser and Paul Radin. He also shared their literary tastes and political orientation. During his New York years, Lowie espoused socialist ideas and supported various left-wing and liberal causes, including socialism and feminism. His articles and book reviews appeared in publications such as *The Masses*, *The Freeman*, *The Liberal Review*, *The Dial*, *and The New Republic*. However, once he became older and settled in California, Lowie moderated his political views, while remaining a liberal for the rest of his life.

His move from the East to the West Coast was made possible by A. L. Kroeber, another early student of Boas, who founded the anthropology department of the University of California, Berkeley. After teaching there as a visitor for a few years in the late 1910s, Lowie was promoted to full professor in 1921 and remained on the faculty of that department until 1950. He and Kroeber taught several generations of (mainly graduate) students, taking turns chairing the department, while the more junior faculty members taught the undergraduate courses. Lowie was never considered a charismatic teacher, but his students did receive a thorough grounding in world ethnography and the history of anthropology, while his command of ethnographic literature was considered to be truly encyclopedic. He was also widely admired by students and colleagues for his genuinely courteous manners and generosity of spirit.

Lowie was highly respected in his profession. For 9 years (1923–1931), he was the editor of the *American Anthropologist*. He also served as president of the American Folklore Society in 1916, the American Ethnological Society in 1920, and the American Anthropological Association in 1935 and was elected to the National Academy of Sciences. After retiring in 1950, Lowie was much in demand as a visiting lecturer in the United States and abroad.

In 1933, Lowie married Luella Cole, who became his closest friend and traveling companion. During World War II, Lowie taught courses on German culture and European ethnography, and this experience plus his own background stimulated his interest in writing a book, *The German People* (1945). After the war, accompanied by his wife, Lowie carried out ethnographic research in Germany, using the data from it for his book *Toward Understanding Germany*, published in 1954. In both of these works, he tried to avoid the superficial theorizing typical of many of the "national character" studies of that era.

Lowie's main ethnographic works dealt with the Crow Indians of the Great Plains, whose culture he studied over many years. He also conducted ethnographic research among the Shoshoni, the Ute, the Hidatsa, the Mandan, the Arikara, the Washo, and the Hopi. In addition, he studied several South American Indian cultures from a distance, using data provided by local ethnographers. Lowie developed good rapport with his Native American consultants, all of them elderly men and women whom he meticulously interviewed about the "old culture" of their own younger days as well as that of their parents and grandparents. Hence, along with most of the other Boasians, he was a strong advocate of *salvage anthropology*, a term some scholars actually attribute to him.

Most scholars agree that Lowie's contributions to anthropological theory were not as significant as those of the more brilliant Boasians such as Edward Sapir, Radin, Goldenweiser, and Kroeber. However, a number of his books and articles did make an impact on the discipline at the time of their publication, and some have continued to do so long after. His general theoretical orientation can be described as "mainstream Boasian." Like his mentor, Lowie emphasized cultural relativism as opposed to Victorian social evolutionism. His books *Primitive Society* (1920) and *Primitive Religion* (1924) established him as the main opponent of evolutionism in American anthropology, while his 1929 brochure *Are We Civilized?* questioned the common assumption that technological and economic progress inevitably lead to moral progress.

Generally speaking, Lowie was a dedicated empiricist and positivist who viewed cultural anthropology as a science—trusted facts—and mistrusted any

theorizing that he viewed as unsubstantiated. Many of his specific theoretical positions can be characterized as middle-of-the-road. Thus, for example, on the question of the correlation of semantic categories in kinship terminologies, on the one hand, and social organization and behavior, on the other, he advocated a position in between American historical and British functional ones. Similarly, while he was sympathetic to some of the arguments put forward by the proponents of the theory of cultural diffusion, he rejected their more radical speculations. When it came to the relationship between psychology and anthropology, Lowie argued that the former was a study of the innate behavior, in contrast to the learned behavior, of culture. At the same time, he suggested that mythology and religion have common elements across cultures, which might have been derived from dreams, and that these dreams may have some sort of biological basis (*History of Ethnological Theory*, 1937). He did not trust the Freudian generalizations of the early culture and personality studies.

Not surprisingly, some of Lowie's most original contributions to anthropological method and theory can be found in his studies of specific ethnographic cases rather than in his general works. For example, the historical and comparative summaries at the end of his work on Plains Indian age societies (1916) were praised even by the most empirically oriented Boasians. They are among the best examples of the kind of comparative and historical interpretation produced by that school. It is this work that had a major impact on the American historical tradition of kinship studies spearheaded by Fred Eggan, the British functional approach to kinship and social organization, and even the work of Claude Lévi-Strauss on the same subjects.

Sergei Kan

See also Boas, Franz; Goldenweiser, Alexander A.; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Radin, Paul; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Harris, M. (1968). *The rise of anthropological theory.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Lowie, R. H. (1959). *Robert H. Lowie ethnologist.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Murphy, R. F. (1972). *Robert H. Lowie.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Radin, P. (1958). Robert H. Lowie, 1883–1957. *American Anthropologist, 60*(2), 358–375.

Steward, J. H. (1974). Robert Harry Lowie, 1883–1957. *National Academy of Sciences: Biographical Memoirs, 44,* 175–211.

Lubbock, John

Sir John Lubbock (1834–1913), Lord Avebury, an English avocational archaeologist, naturalist, banker, and member of parliament, was a close associate of Charles Darwin and a leading evolutionist of the 19th century. He was the eldest son of a London banker who was also the treasurer of the Royal Society. The Lubbock estate neighbored Downe village in Kent, where Charles Darwin lived, and Darwin encouraged the young aristocrat's interest in natural history. Lubbock's principal scientific work was in entomology under Darwin's direction. He also worked closely with the geologist Charles Lyell and the biologist Thomas Henry Huxley, who promoted his membership in leading English scientific societies. Lubbock was also deeply interested in archaeology and visited the well-known sites of his day with leading prehistorians such as Joseph Prestwich and John Evans. Lubbock's descriptions of these sites in his 1865 book *Pre-Historic Times, as Illustrated by Ancient Remains, and the Manners and Customs of Modern Savages* helped build his reputation as one of the leading proponents of human antiquity in Victorian England.

Lubbock finished his education at Eton at the age of 14 and immediately became active in his family's banking business. In his 30s, he ran for parliament and was elected in 1870. As a member of parliament, his greatest achievements were to legislate banking holidays and shorter working hours, and for protecting archaeological sites through the Ancient Monuments Act of 1882. In 1879, Lubbock was elected first president of the Institute of Bankers, and from 1881 to 1886, he served as president of the Linnean Society. Lubbock also received honorary degrees from Oxford, Cambridge, and the University of Edinburgh, and in 1878, he was made a trustee of the British Museum. In 1900, Lubbock was made a peer and took the title Lord Avebury from the important henge monument he purchased in 1871 to save it from destruction.

In *Pre-Historic Times*, Lubbock attempted to prove human antiquity and create a picture of the lives of Stone Age humans. He did this, as one can tell from the book's full title, using archaeology and the 19th-century theory of the comparative method, especially the notion that modern indigenous people were a window into earlier stages of human society. In addition to archaeological reports, Lubbock made full use of ethnographic descriptions of the "primitive" people of his day, such as Australian aborigines, Native Americans, and the people of Tierra del Fuego. However, rather than starting in the prehistoric past and working forward, Lubbock's book moves backward in time, with a focus on archaeological excavations, starting with the Bronze Age through the Alpine Lake dwelling sites in Switzerland to the Somme River gravel beds excavated by the French archaeologist Boucher de Perthes, where Acheulian hand axes were first discovered. Additionally, in *Prehistoric Times*, Lubbock coined the terms *Neolithic* and *Paleolithic* as subdivisions of Christian Thomsen's three-age system of Stone, Bronze, and Iron Ages.

In 1870, Lubbock published *The Origin of Civilization and the Primitive Condition of Man*. Whereas Lubbock's purpose in *Prehistoric Times* was to study archaeology and the "primitive" people of his day in order to understand more accurately the culture of ancient peoples, *The Origin of Civilization* set out to describe the social and mental condition of "savages." He argued that there were three principles to be emphasized in the study of the "lower races": first, that savage cultures resemble those of our ancestors from long ago; second, that such cultures include customs that no longer have present utility but are rooted in our minds like fossils in soil; and, third, that studying aboriginal peoples shed some light on the future. Following Henry Main's *Ancient Law* (1861) and E. B. Tylor's *Researches Into the Early History of Mankind and the Development of Civilization* (1865), Lubbock's book was strongly evolutionist in tone, tracing the evolutionary history of art, marriage, religion, morality, language, and laws from their first appearance in savagery to their culmination in modern Europe.

In many ways, Lubbock's books, in particular *The Origin of Civilization*, encapsulate the main themes of English evolutionary thought in the mid-19th century so typically associated with Tylor and Lewis Henry Morgan. First, there is the belief in unilineal evolution—that all societies were evolving in the same way. This parallel evolution is driven by psychic unity—a principle first enunciated by Adolf Bastian. Bastian argued that because all humans share biologically similar brains, all will share similar elementary ideas and therefore when confronted with similar problems will solve them in similar ways. The implication of cultural evolution and psychic unity was that cultures were simply at different places in their progress up the evolutionary ladder. Lubbock's ethnographic reporting described the many cultural parallels found in savage societies around the world and the "fossils" of those practices that remained in modern society. His archaeological writings pointed out these parallel developments through time, demonstrating the similarities between the lives of modern savages and the materials revealed in the archaeological excavations of his day.

Lubbock was famous in his day and widely known for his writings on various topics in biology and natural history. *Prehistoric Times* was a popular archaeology text and went through seven editions by the time of Lubbock's death in 1913. Today, however, Lubbock's legacy has been eclipsed by that of Tylor and Morgan. He is primarily remembered today in anthropology as one of the founders of prehistoric archaeology.

R. Jon McGee and Alice Beck Kehoe

See also Comparative Method; Darwin, Charles; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Spencer, Herbert; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Fichman, M. (2002). *Evolutionary theory and Victorian culture*. Amherst, NY: Humanity Books.

Kehoe, A. B. (1998). *The land of prehistory: A critical history of American archaeology*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Lubbock, J. (1865). *Pre-historic times: As illustrated by ancient remains and the manners and customs of modern savages*. London, UK: Williams & Norgate.

———. (1870). *The origin of civilisation and the primitive condition of man: Mental and social condition of savages*. London, UK: Longman, Green.

Murray, T. (2009). Illustrating "savagery": Sir John Lubbock and Ernest Griset. *Antiquity, 83,* 488–499.

Patton, M. (2007). *Science, politics and business in the work of Sir John Lubbock*. Aldershot, UK: Ashgate.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1987). *Victorian anthropology*. New York, NY: Free Press.

Trigger, B. G. (2006). *A history of archaeological thought* (2nd ed.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Lyotard, Jean-François

Jean-François Lyotard (1924–1998) was a French intellectual and philosopher. Although most commonly associated with postmodernism, he was also an important part of the French poststructural movement. He is best known for his critique of modernity and for his view of reality as a fragmented ensemble of complex events that cannot be represented or interpreted accurately. Although Lyotard's work has been extremely influential in social and cultural anthropology, it spans several other realms, including philosophy of language, psychology, ethics, political philosophy, and aesthetics. Mirroring this diversity is Lyotard's engagement with a number of eminent thinkers: Immanuel Kant, G. W. F. Hegel, Karl Marx, Sigmund Freud, Martin Heidegger, Jacques Lacan, Gilles Deleuze, and Jean Baudrillard, to mention a few. This entry offers a brief biography followed by a discussion of some of Lyotard's fundamental ideas and his work *The Postmodern Condition*, concluding with some critiques and comments on his legacy.

Biography and Major Works

Lyotard was born in Vincennes in 1924. After graduating from the Sorbonne in philosophy and literature, he taught philosophy in a number of schools, including one in Constantine, Algeria, where he experienced firsthand the conflict between Algerian workers and the French oligarchy. In 1948, he married Andrée May, with whom he had two children, Corinne and Laurence. In 1993, he married his second wife, Dolorès Djidzek, with whom he had a son, David.

In 1954, Lyotard joined the Marxist Trotskyte group Socialisme ou Barbarie (Socialism or Barbarism) and was a contributor to the journal *Socialisme ou Barbarie*. In 1964, due to internal discord, he joined the splinter group Pouvoir Ouvrier (Workers' Power), until 1966, when he also resigned from his academic post as assistant professor at the Sorbonne. Around that time, he took up a position in the philosophy department of the University of Paris X (Nanterre) and, despite his loss of faith in Marxism, participated in the May 1968 student protests against the government. Eventually, Lyotard's critique of Marxism was outlined in *Libidinal Economy* alongside his critique of capitalism. Arguing that both systems are intertwined with libidinal forces—irrational desires and impulses underlying a multitude of events that are exploited by economic structures—Lyotard concluded that Marxism's "truth" is no better than the "truths" it criticizes, while acknowledging that libidinal forces potentially have the power to destabilize and transform these structures.

Lyotard's academic career reached new heights as a professor of philosophy and languages at various distinguished institutions, including the University of Paris VIII (Vincennes), where in 1978 he became professor emeritus; the University of California; and Emory University. He was a visiting professor at several universities around the world, including the University of Montreal, Quebec, Canada; the University of Saõ Paulo, Brazil; and the University of Siegen, Germany. Between 1968 and 1970, he was in charge of research at the National Centre for Scientific Research in Paris. In 1983, with Jacques Derrida, Gilles Deleuze, and others, he cofounded and was one of the presidents of the International College of Philosophy in Paris. Lyotard died of leukemia in Paris in 1998.

Lyotard's most famous books include *Phenomenology* (1954), *Discourse, Figure* (1971), *Libidinal Economy* (1974), *Au Juste: Conversations* (*Just Gaming*, 1979), *The Postmodern Condition: A Report on Knowledge* (1979), *The Differend: Phrases in Dispute* (1983), *The Inhuman: Reflections on Time* (1988), *Peregrinations: Law, Form, Event* (1988), *Lessons on the Analytic of the Sublime: Kant's Critique of Judgment* (1991), *Political Writings* (1993), and *Postmodern Fables* (1997).

Some Fundamental Ideas

In *Discourse, Figure*, Lyotard critiques structuralism, to which he relates "discourse" (written text), a form of cognitive communication that he juxtaposes with "figure," the potentially subversive product of the senses (phenomenology). These two categories are not simply opposites; they are intertwined. Despite the fact that discourse has historically dominated, it has been inadequate in representing historical events as well as the *sublime*, a concept that Lyotard adopted and modified from Kant to include

not only the "transcendentally great" but also anything that we as humans are incapable of representing or fully grasping.

These ideas are tied to Lyotard's important anthropological insights. First, he challenged the notion of the "subject" as the central, rational entity of modernity, suggesting instead that it is as fragmented as reality itself. Second, in later works, for instance, in *The Inhuman*, these ideas gave rise to his notion of humanism, where, influenced by Lacan and Freud, he disputed the idea of human nature as the essence and argued that humans are not born human and that this inherent inhumanness never leaves us completely—in contrast to teleological interpretations that interpret the unhuman as only the initial stage of the life cycle.

Furthermore, as Veronica Vesterling notes, Lyotard's humans are permanently afflicted by high levels of "affectability" or sensitivity to external events, thus remaining finite and vulnerable in the universe, unable to express the sublime. In contrast to Kant, Lyotard does not believe that rationality compensates for the failure of the senses and imagination; moreover, what our imagination cannot grasp should not be suppressed or hidden. The only exception to humanity's inability to express the sublime are subversive and disruptive forms of "avant-garde" art, a realm at the periphery of society sufficiently detached from established language games, hence free of the prejudices and limits imposed by reason and convention. "Good art" is not about faithful representation or about harmony between form and contents as modernity would have us believe. It is not even about new ways to represent. For Lyotard, it is about discovering the limitations of representation and unmasking the unpresentable: Art becomes an important catalyst for social and political revolutionary change.

Failure to adapt to the world is significant not only in the anthropological sense but also politically. Lyotard built on Wittgenstein's theory of language as something complex, multifaceted, and governed by forces that are neither eternal nor universal.

He regards "language games" as phrases or utterances that carry their own rules—by being incommensurable and heterogeneous, they ensure the fragmentation of discourse. They can be descriptive (knowledge) or prescriptive (action). What phrases are chosen and which ones are silenced are political decisions. Mirroring his idea of the social world as fragmented and diverse, Lyotard's language games are individual expressions of conflicting realities, values, and practices from a range of social areas engaged in a power struggle. Just as there is no narrative superior to any other, there is no language that is higher than any other or capable of resolving conflict between the different language games. The important point is that discourses that are incommensurable should not be forced to speak a common homogeneous language, for that would not be just.

Taking this idea further, Lyotard conceptualized injustice in discourse in *The Differend*, argued by many to be Lyotard's most important book. The "differend" is a situation of unresolved language conflict where victims cannot present the wrong they suffered or their side of the story; the inability to negotiate the unpresentable is part of the notion of the sublime. Lyotard believes that the duty of philosophy is to continuously expose the differend or the misappropriation of language games. The matter of how ideas about reality and justice differ is also explored in *Au Juste*. Lyotard argued that a single "rational rule" of judgment cannot be applied to both parties in a dispute. In postmodernity, it is crucial that we build a system of ethics that includes a willingness to allow others to express their own language games. According to Lyotard, justice in modernity is rationalized by descriptive knowledge and universal preexisting criteria. He argued that it should instead be based on indeterminate reflective judgment, using the Kantian constitutive imagination, where the criteria differ in each case according to its own circumstances. This allows the coexistence of incommensurable and irreducible differences, a situation Lyotard refers to as *paganism*.

The Postmodern Condition (1979)

Arguably, *The Postmodern Condition* is Lyotard's most famous book. It was originally a report commissioned by the Council of Universities of the Quebec government on the status of knowledge in developed countries. It is regarded by many as the guiding text of postmodernism, extending its key ideas from the realm of art to that of sociopolitical and cultural theory. Others regard it as a critique of Jürgen Habermas's appeal to discursive coherence in the public sphere. At a basic level, *The Postmodern Condition* is a book about the effects of technological progress on the nature and role of knowledge. According to Lyotard, in modern advanced societies driven by "performativity" or efficient performance,

knowledge becomes a commodity, a way to power rather than the means to a better life. Knowledge is linked to both science and language in the sense that there is scientific knowledge and narrative knowledge, the latter taking on a variety of forms or language games.

In *The Postmodern Condition*, Lyotard argues that grand narratives or metanarratives, which underpin modernity, have lost credibility. This is the postmodern condition, one of "incredulity towards metanarratives." Grand narratives are stories that set the rules for other narratives and language games by organizing knowledge in universal terms to justify the way things are or to explain the occurrence of important events, whether theological (e.g., the creation of the world) or political (e.g., capitalism). In modernity, Lyotard identifies two grand narratives: (1) the speculative narrative (knowledge is the basis of the progress of human life in the quest for truth) and (2) the emancipation narrative (which makes knowledge the prerequisite for human freedom in the pursuit of justice).

However, loss of faith means that narratives no longer have unifying power—identity and reason no longer play a legitimizing role in the formation of knowledge, values, and institutions. Knowledge is no longer the means to a better society underpinned by universal values. The world dominated by capitalism runs on efficiency and profitability, and these are the standards by which the nature and status of knowledge are determined. At the same time, societies become fragmented and individuals alienated from the networks and bonds they previously relied on. This moral and ethical disintegration has been identified by countless scholars as a problem. What makes Lyotard different is the fact that he thinks that the grand narratives themselves are the problem; thus, it is not a matter of replacing one narrative with another. In other words, consensus, compromise, and cooperation are not the solution, and neither is the forceful imposition of a single narrative. For Lyotard, the answer is small local narratives (*petit recits*) and the maximization of language games to ensure a difference.

Criticisms and Legacy

Lyotard's work, contentious at the best of times, has been condemned as philosophically and politically self-defeating. Can any political or legal system work without universal values and without a unifying vision or compromise of some sort? Another criticism is that the postmodern rejection of the Enlightenment does not take it into account that the rights of minority and exploited groups owe much to the values that emerged from it. Furthermore, in the anthropological sense, there seems to be little acceptance of human limitations, and the obsessive emphasis on diversity denies that humans, at least those who live in the same societies, do have some similarities. Finally, there is the most obvious trap for postmodernism to consider: Loss of faith in grand narratives is itself a narrative.

Despite these critiques, Lyotard's assault on grand narratives has important anthropological and political implications: He does not simply wish to tinker with the political spectrum, he wishes to change the very way in which we practice politics. Politics as we know it needs to shift beyond representation; furthermore, he is not concerned with political parties or ideologies but with a politics where difference is cherished rather than downsized and where small narratives speak about the unpresentable. Yet respect for diversity is not the only legacy: Lyotard's commitment to a sociopolitical system that is just and ethical rescues him from the emptiness of relativism and inspires those who wish to change the world for the better.

Daniela di Piramo

See also Baudrillard, Jean; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Derrida, Jacques; Freud, Sigmund; Habermas, Jürgen; Lacan, Jacques; Modernism; Phenomenology; Postmodernism; Poststructuralism; Structuralism; Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Further Readings

Browning, G. K. (2000). *Lyotard and the end of grand narratives.* Cardiff, UK: University of Wales Press.

Dunn, A. (1993). A tyranny of justice: The ethics of Lyotard's differend. *Boundary 2, 20*(1), 92–220.

Malpas, S. (2003). *Jean-François Lyotard.* London, UK: Routledge.

Reading, B. (1991). *Introducing Lyotard: Art and politics.* London, UK: Routledge.

Rojek, C., & Turner, B. S. (Eds.). (1998). *The politics of Jean-Françoise Lyotard.* London, UK: Routledge.

Vasterling, V. (2003). Body and language: Butler, Merleau-Ponty and Lyotard on the speaking embodied subject. *International Journal of Philosophical Studies, 11*(2), 205–223.

Williams, J. (1998). *Lyotard: Towards a postmodern philosophy.* Cambridge, UK: Polity Press/Blackwell.

THEORY *in* SOCIAL *and* CULTURAL ANTHROPOLOGY

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA

Editors

R. Jon McGee
Texas State University

Richard L. Warms
Texas State University

Editorial Board

Regna Darnell
University of Western Ontario

F. Allan Hanson
University of Kansas

J. Stephen Lansing
University of Arizona

Robert Launay
Northwestern University

Herbert S. Lewis
University of Wisconsin, Madison

George E. Marcus
Rice University

Deborah Pellow
Syracuse University

Robert Rotenberg
DePaul University

David Zeitlyn
Wolfson College, University of Oxford

THEORY *in* SOCIAL *and* CULTURAL ANTHROPOLOGY

AN ENCYCLOPEDIA

EDITORS

R. Jon McGee

Richard L. Warms

Texas State University

2

SAGE reference

Los Angeles | London | New Delhi
Singapore | Washington DC

SAGE reference

Los Angeles | London | New Delhi
Singapore | Washington DC

FOR INFORMATION:

SAGE Publications, Inc.
2455 Teller Road
Thousand Oaks, California 91320
E-mail: order@sagepub.com

SAGE Publications Ltd.
1 Oliver's Yard
55 City Road
London, EC1Y 1SP
United Kingdom

SAGE Publications India Pvt. Ltd.
B 1/I 1 Mohan Cooperative Industrial Area
Mathura Road, New Delhi 110 044
India

SAGE Publications Asia-Pacific Pte. Ltd.
3 Church Street
#10-04 Samsung Hub
Singapore 049483

Copyright © 2013 by SAGE Publications, Inc.

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

Printed in the United States of America.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Theory in social and cultural anthropology : an encyclopedia / edited by R. Jon McGee and Richard L. Warms, Texas State University.

pages cm

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 978-1-4129-9963-2 (hardcover)

1. Ethnology--Encyclopedias. I. McGee, R. Jon, 1955–

GN307.T54 2013
306.03—dc23

2013016332

Acquisitions Editor: Jim Brace-Thompson
Developmental Editor: Sanford J. Robinson
Production Editor: Jane Haenel
Reference Systems Manager: Leticia Gutierrez
Reference Systems Coordinators: Laura Notton and Anna Villasenor
Copy Editors: QuADS
Typesetter: Hurix Systems Pvt. Ltd.
Proofreader: Susan Schon
Indexer: Jeanne Busemeyer
Cover Designer: Glenn Vogel
Marketing Manager: Carmel Schrire

13 14 15 16 17 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Contents

Volume 2

List of Entries *vii*

Reader's Guide *xi*

Entries

M	*501*	S	*729*
N	*575*	T	*853*
O	*603*	U	*877*
P	*609*	V	*889*
Q	*665*	W	*901*
R	*669*		

Chronology of Theory in Anthropology *949*

Index *955*

List of Entries

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Action Anthropology. *See* Applied Anthropology
Alliance Theory. *See* Alliance-Descent Debate
Alliance-Descent Debate
Althusser, Louis
American Anthropological Association
American Museum of Natural History
Anderson, Benedict
Animism, Animatism
Anthropological Society of London. *See* Royal Anthropological Institute
Appadurai, Arjun
Applied Anthropology
Area Studies
Aristotle
Asad, Talal
Autoethnography

Bachofen, Johann J.
Bailey, Frederick G.
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barth, Fredrik
Barthes, Roland
Bastian, Adolf
Bataille, Georges
Bateson, Gregory
Baudrillard, Jean
Benedict, Ruth F.
Benjamin, Walter
Binford, Lewis R.
Biography/Life Writing
Bloch, Maurice
Bloomfield, Leonard
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Bourdieu, Pierre
Burke, Kenneth
Butler, Judith

Cambridge University
Carneiro, Robert L.
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)
Childhood
Chodorow, Nancy
Chomsky, Noam
Clifford, James
Cognitive Anthropology
Columbia University
Communitas
Comparative Linguistics
Comparative Method
Componential Analysis. *See* Ethnoscience/New Ethnography
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Critical Theory
Cultural Ecology
Cultural Materialism
Cultural Relativism
Cultural Transmission
Culture and Personality
Culture Area Approach

Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Deconstruction
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Dependency Theory
Derrida, Jacques
Descent Theory. *See* Alliance-Descent Debate
Descriptive Linguistics
Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*
Discourse Theory
Douglas, Mary
Du Bois, W. E. B.
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis

Dundes, Alan
Durkheim, Émile

Economic Anthropology
Emics and Etics. *See* American Anthropological Association; Cultural Materialism; Pike, Kenneth
Ethnography of Speaking
Ethnohistory
Ethnological Society of London. *See* Royal Anthropological Institute
Ethnomethodology
Ethnoscience/New Ethnography
Ethology, Human
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Evolutionary Anthropology
Evolutionary Psychology

Face-to-Face Interaction
Fanon, Frantz
Feminist Anthropology
Ferguson, Adam
Firth, Raymond
Fischer, Michael
Formalism/Substantivism
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Foster, George M.
Foucault, Michel
Frankfurt School
Frazer, James G.
Freud, Sigmund
Fried, Morton
Frobenius, Leo

Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Game Theory
Geertz, Clifford
Geffray, Christian
Gender and Anthropology
Gender Diversity
Gene-Culture Coevolution
Generative Grammar
Gennep, Arnold van
Gift Exchange
Gillen, Francis James. *See* Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Girard, René
Globalization Theory
Gluckman, Max
Godelier, Maurice
Goffman, Erving
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goodenough, Ward H.
Goody, Jack
Graebner, Fritz
Gramsci, Antonio
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Greenberg, Joseph
Griaule, Marcel
Gumperz, John J.

Habermas, Jürgen
Habitus
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hall, Edward T.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Harris, Marvin
Harvey, David
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Hermeneutics
Herskovits, Melville
Hertz, Robert
Historical Particularism
Hobbes, Thomas
Hocart, Arthur M.
Human Behavioral Ecology
Human Relations Area Files, Cross-Cultural Studies
Human Universals
Humanistic Anthropology
Hurston, Zora Neale
Husserl, Edmund
Hymes, Dell

Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)

Jakobson, Roman O.
Jameson, Fredric

Kardiner, Abram
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.

Labov, William
Lacan, Jacques
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Lamphere, Louise
L'Année Sociologique

Latour, Bruno
Leach, Edmund
Leacock, Eleanor
LeVine, Robert
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey
Linton, Ralph
London School of Economics
Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Lubbock, John
Lyotard, Jean-François

Maine, Henry James
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Manchester School
Marcus, George
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Mauss, Marcel
McLennan, John
Mead, George Herbert
Mead, Margaret
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Mobility
Modernism
Montesquieu, Comte de
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Murdock, George Peter
Musée de l'Homme
Myth, Theories of

Nader, Laura
Nash, June
Nationalism, Transnationalism
Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist
Needham, Rodney
Neo-Boasianism
Neo-Kantianism
Neo-Whorfianism. *See* Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Network Theory/Social Network Analysis
Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology

Ortner, Sherry
Oxford University

Parsons, Elsie C.
Parsons, Talcott
Phenomenology
Pike, Kenneth
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Plato
Polanyi, Karl
Political Economy
Popper, Karl
Postcolonial Theory
Postmodernism
Poststructuralism
Practice Theory
Prague School of Linguistics
Psychological Anthropology
Public Sphere

Queer Theory

Rabinow, Paul
Race
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Radin, Paul
Rappaport, Roy
Rational Choice Theory
Redfield, Robert
Religion
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute
Richards, Audrey
Rites de Passage
Rivers, W. H. R.
Rivet, Paul
Rockefeller Foundation
Róheim, Géza
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Rouch, Jean
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Royal Anthropological Institute

Sacrifice
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Sapir, Edward
Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Saussure, Ferdinand de

Scapes
Schapera, Isaac
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Schneider, David M.
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Semiotics
Service, Elman R.
Simmel, Georg
Smith, Adam
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Smith, Neil
Smith, William Robertson
Smithsonian Institution
Social Constructionism
Social Evolutionary Theory, 20th-Century. *See* Carneiro, Robert L.; Comparative Method; Fried, Morton; Murdock, George Peter; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie
Social Studies of Science
Sociobiology. *See* Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution
Sociolinguistics
Soviet Anthropology
Spencer, Herbert
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Sperber, Dan
Spiro, Melford
Srinivas, M. N.
Steward, Julian
Strathern, Marilyn
Structural Functionalism
Structural Marxism
Structuralism
Subaltern Studies
Subjectivity
Sustainability
Swadesh, Morris
Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology
Symbolic Interactionism
Systems Theory

Tambiah, Stanley
Tax, Sol
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Thick Description
Torres Straits Expedition
Turner, Victor W.
Tyler, Stephen A.
Tylor, Edward Burnett

University of California, Berkeley
University of Michigan
Urban Studies
Utilitarianism

Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Visual Anthropology
Voltaire

Wagley, Charles
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Weber, Max
Wenner-Gren Foundation
Westermarck, Edward
White, Leslie
Whorf, Benjamin Lee
Wilson, Edward O.
Wilson, Monica
Wittfogel, Karl
Wittgenstein, Ludwig
Wolf, Eric
World-Systems Theory
Wundt, Wilhelm

Reader's Guide

American Anthropologists and Anthropology

Abu-Lughod, Lila
American Anthropological Association
American Museum of Natural History
Applied Anthropology
Benedict, Ruth F.
Binford, Lewis R.
Bloomfield, Leonard
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Burke, Kenneth
Butler, Judith
Carneiro, Robert L.
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)
Chodorow, Nancy
Chomsky, Noam
Clifford, James
Columbia University
Culture Area Approach
Du Bois, W. E. B.
DuBois, Cora
Dundes, Alan
Fischer, Michael
Foster, George M.
Fried, Morton
Geertz, Clifford
Goffman, Erving
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goodenough, Ward H.
Greenberg, Joseph
Gumperz, John J.
Hall, Edward T.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Harris, Marvin
Herskovitz, Melville
Hurston, Zora Neale
Hymes, Dell
Jameson, Fredric
Kardiner, Abram
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Labov, William
Lamphere, Louise
Leacock, Eleanor
LeVine, Robert
Lewis, Oscar
Linton, Ralph
Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Marcus, George
Mead, George Herbert
Mead, Margaret
Mintz, Sidney
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Murdock, George Peter
Nader, Laura
Nash, June
Ortner, Sherry
Parsons, Elsie C.
Parsons, Talcott
Pike, Kenneth
Rabinow, Paul
Radin, Paul
Rappaport, Roy
Redfield, Robert
Rockefeller Foundation
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Sahlins, Marshall
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Sapir, Edward
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Schneider, David M.
Service, Elman R.
Smithsonian Institution
Spiro, Melford
Steward, Julian
Swadesh, Morris

Tax, Sol
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Tyler, Stephen A.
University of California, Berkeley
University of Michigan
Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Wagley, Charles
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Wenner-Gren Foundation
White, Leslie
Whorf, Benjamin Lee
Wilson, Edward O.
Wolf, Eric

Biological and/or Social Evolutionary Perspective

Bastian, Adolf
Carneiro, Robert L.
Comparative Method
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Cultural Transmission
Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Ethology, Human
Evolutionary Anthropology
Evolutionary Psychology
Freud, Sigmund
Fried, Morton
Gene-Culture Coevolution
Human Behavioral Ecology
Human Universals
Lubbock, John
Maine, Henry James
Malthus, Thomas R.
McLennan, John
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Murdock, George Peter
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Service, Elman R.
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Spencer, Herbert
Sperber, Dan
Spiro, Melford
Steward, Julian
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Wallace, Alfred R.
Westermarck, Edward
White, Leslie
Wilson, Edward O.
Wittfogel, Karl

British and Commonwealth

Bailey, Frederick G.
Bateson, Gregory
Cambridge University
Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Douglas, Mary
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Ferguson, Adam
Firth, Raymond
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Frazer, James G.
Gluckman, Max
Goody, Jack
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Haddon, Alfred C.
Harvey, David
Hobbes, Thomas
Hocart, Arthur M.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Leach, Edmund
Lienhardt, Godfrey
London School of Economics
Lubbock, John
Maine, Henry James
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Manchester School
McLennan, John
Needham, Rodney
Oxford University
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute
Richards, Audrey
Rivers, W. H. R.
Royal Anthropological Institute
Schapera, Isaac
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Smith, Adam
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Smith, Neil

Smith, William Robertson
Spencer, Herbert
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Strathern, Marilyn
Turner, Victor W.
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wilson, Monica

Concepts, Locations, Events, and Organizations

Alliance-Descent Debate
American Anthropological Association
American Museum of Natural History
Animism, Animatism
Applied Anthropology
Area Studies
Autoethnography
Biography/Life Writing
Cambridge University
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893)
Childhood
Columbia University
Communitas
Comparative Method
Cultural Relativism
Cultural Transmission
Deconstruction
Descriptive Linguistics
Ethography of Speaking
Ethnomethodology
Formalism/Substantivism
Gender and Anthropology
Gender Diversity
Generative Grammar
Gift Exchange
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Habitus
Human Relations Area Files, Cross Cultural Studies
Humanistic Anthropology
Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)
L'Année Sociologique
London School of Economics
Manchester School
Mobility
Modernism
Musée de l'Homme
Myth, Theories of
Nationalism, Transnationalism
Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist
Oxford University
Prague School of Linguistics
Public Sphere
Race
Religion
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute
Rites de Passage
Rockefeller Foundation
Royal Anthropological Institute
Sacrifice
Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Scapes
Smithsonian Institution
Social Studies of Science
Soviet Anthropology
Subjectivity
Sustainability
Thick Description
Torres Straits Expedition
University of California, Berkeley
University of Michigan
Urban Studies
Utilitarianism
Visual Anthropology
Wenner-Gren Foundation

Economic and Ecological Perspective

Binford, Lewis R.
Bloch, Maurice
Bohannan, Paul
Bourdieu, Pierre
Carneiro, Robert L.
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Cultural Ecology
Cultural Materialism
Dependency Theory
Economic Anthropology
Fanon, Frantz
Ferguson, Adam
Formalism/Substantivism
Fried, Morton
Game Theory
Gift Exchange
Globalization Theory

Godelier, Maurice
Gramsci, Antonio
Harris, Marvin
Herskovits, Melville
Human Behavioral Ecology
Leacock, Eleanor
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Mauss, Marcel
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Nash, June
Polanyi, Karl
Political Economy
Rappaport, Roy
Rational Choice Theory
Richards, Audrey
Sahlins, Marshall
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Scheper Hughes, Nancy
Service, Elman R.
Smith, Adam
Smith, Neil
Steward, Julian
Structural Marxism
Sustainability
Systems Theory
Tax, Sol
Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Wagley, Charles
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Weber, Max
White, Leslie
Wittfogel, Karl
Wolf, Eric
World-Systems Theory

Ethnography

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Asad, Talal
Bailey, Frederick G.
Barth, Fredrik
Bateson, Gregory
Benedict, Ruth F.
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Douglas, Mary
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Face-to-Face Interaction
Firth, Raymond
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Foster, George M.
Frobenius, Leo
Geertz, Clifford
Gluckman, Max
Godelier, Maurice
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goody, Jack
Griaule, Marcel
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Herskovits, Melville
Hocart, Arthur M.
Hurston, Zora Neale
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Leach, Edmund
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey
Lowie, Robert
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Mead, Margaret
Murdock, George Peter
Parsons, Elsie C.
Radin, Paul
Redfield, Robert
Richards, Audrey
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Schapera, Isaac
Scheper Hughes, Nancy
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Spiro, Melford
Srinivas, M. N.

French

Alliance-Descent Debate
Althusser, Louis
Barthes, Roland
Bataille, Georges
Baudrillard, Jean
Bloch, Maurice
Bourdieu, Pierre
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Dumont, Louis
Durkheim, Émile
Foucault, Michel
Geffray, Christian
Gennep, Arnold van
Girard, René
Godelier, Maurice
Griaule, Marcel
Hertz, Robert
Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris)
Lacan, Jacques
Lafitau, Joseph-François
L'Année Sociologique
Latour, Bruno
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Lyotard, Jean-François
Mauss, Marcel
Meillassoux, Claude
Montesquieu, Comte de
Musée de l'Homme
Rivet, Paul
Rouch, Jean
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Sperber, Dan
Voltaire

Gender

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Alliance-Descent Debate
Butler, Judith
Childhood
Chodorow, Nancy
Cultural Transmission
Feminist Anthropology
Gender and Anthropology
Godelier, Maurice
Hurston, Zora Neale
Lacan, Jacques
Lamphere, Louise
Leacock, Eleanor
Material Production, Theories of
Mauss, Marcel
Mead, Margaret
Nash, June
Ortner, Sherry
Parsons, Elsie C.
Queer Theory
Race
Religion
Richards, Audrey
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Strathern, Marilyn
Subaltern Studies
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Wolf, Eric

German

Bachofen, Johann J.
Bastian, Adolf
Benjamin, Walter
Frankfurt School
Frobenius, Leo
Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Graebner, Fritz
Habermas, Jürgen
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Husserl, Edmund
Marx, Karl
Müller, Max
Simmel, Georg
Weber, Max
Wittfogel, Karl
Wundt, Wilhelm

Globalization

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Anderson, Benedict
Appadurai, Arjun
Applied Anthropology
Area Studies
Asad, Talal
Barth, Fredrik
Critical Theory

Dependency Theory
Economic Anthropology
Fanon, Frantz
Globalization Theory
Harvey, David
Jameson, Fredric
Lamphere, Louise
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Mintz, Sidney
Mobility
Nash, June
Nationalism; Transnationalism
Polanyi, Karl
Political Economy
Postcolonial theory
Race
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Scapes
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Smith, Neil
Subaltern Studies
Tambiah, Stanley
Urban Studies
Wagley, Charles
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Wolf, Eric
World-Systems Theory

Linguistics

Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barthes, Roland
Bloomfield, Leonard
Chomsky, Noam
Comparative Linguistics
Descriptive Linguistics
Ethnography of Speaking
Face-to-Face Interaction
Generative Grammar
Goodenough, Ward H.
Greenberg, Joseph
Gumperz, John J.
Hymes, Dell
Jakobson, Roman O.
Labov, William
Lounsbury, Floyd
Müller, Max
Pike, Kenneth
Prague School of Linguistics
Rivet, Paul
Sapir, Edward
Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism
Saussure, Ferdinand de
Semiotics
Sociolinguistics
Swadesh, Morris
Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Literary and Interpretive Perspective

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Bailey, Frederick G.
Bataille, Georges
Benjamin, Walter
Boas, Franz
Burke, Kenneth
Clifford, James
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Douglas, Mary
Du Bois, W. E. B.
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Fortes, Meyer
Foster, George M.
Foucault, Michel
Frankfurt School
Frazer, James G.
Frobenius, Leo
Geertz, Clifford
Geffray, Christian
Gennep, Arnold van
Gluckman, Max
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goody, Jack
Graebner, Fritz
Griaule, Marcel
Hallowell, A. Irving
Humanistic Anthropology
Hurston, Zora Neale
Hymes, Dell
Jameson, Fredric
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Leach, Edmund
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey

Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Müller, Max
Nader, Laura
Needham, Rodney
Neo-Boasianism
Ortner, Sherry
Phenomenology
Postmodernism
Practice Theory
Rabinow, Paul
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Radin, Paul
Redfield, Robert
Rouch, Jean
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Sapir, Edward
Schneider, David M.
Semiotics
Smith, William Robertson
Srinivas, M. N.
Strathern, Marilyn
Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology
Symbolic Interactionism
Tambiah, Stanley
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Thick Description
Turner, Victor W.
Voltaire
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wilson, Monica

Marxist and Neo-Marxist Perspective

Althusser, Louis
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Baudrillard, Jean
Benjamin, Walter
Bloch, Maurice
Bourdieu, Pierre
Critical Theory
Dependency Theory
Fanon, Frantz
Frankfurt School
Godelier, Maurice
Gramsci, Antonio
Harvey, David
Jameson, Fredric
Lacan, Jacques
Latour, Bruno
Leacock, Eleanor
Lyotard, Jean-François
Marx, Karl
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Smith, Neil
Structural Marxism
Wallerstein, Immanuel
White, Leslie
Wittfogel, Karl
Wolf, Eric

Nineteenth Century and Earlier

Animism, Animatism
Aristotle
Bachofen, Johann J.
Bastian, Adolf
Comparative Method
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Darwin, Charles
Ferguson, Adam
Frazer, James G.
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace)
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Hobbes, Thomas
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Lubbock, John
Maine, Henry James
Malthus, Thomas R.
Marx, Karl
McLennan, John
Montesquieu, Comte de
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Plato
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Smith, Adam
Smith, William Robertson
Spencer, Herbert

Torres Straits Expedition
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Voltaire
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wundt, Wilhelm

Other National Traditions

Anderson, Benedict
Appadurai, Arjun
Asad, Talal
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barth, Fredrik
Fanon, Frantz
Freud, Sigmund
Gramsci, Antonio
Jakobson, Roman O.
Polanyi, Karl
Popper, Karl
Prague School of Linguistics
Róheim, Géza
Said, Edward
Saussure, Ferdinand de
Soviet Anthropology
Srinivas, M. N.
Tambiah, Stanley
Westermarck, Edward
Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Philosophers and Philosophies

Aristotle
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barthes, Roland
Bataille, Georges
Baudrillard, Jean
Burke, Kenneth
Comte, Auguste
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Habermas, Jürgen
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Hobbes, Thomas
Husserl, Edmund
Latour, Bruno
Lyotard, Jean-François
Marx, Karl
Mead, George Herbert
Montesquieu, Comte de
Plato
Popper, Karl
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Simmel, Georg
Smith, Adam
Spencer, Herbert
Utilitarianism
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Voltaire
Weber, Max
Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Postmodern Perspective

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Anderson, Benedict
Asad, Talal
Autoethnography
Barth, Fredrik
Barthes, Roland
Baudrillard, Jean
Bourdieu, Pierre
Burke, Kenneth
Clifford, James
Critical Theory
Deconstruction
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Discourse Theory
Fischer, Michael
Foucault, Michel
Geertz, Clifford
Girard, René
Jameson, Fredric
Lacan, Jacques
Latour, Bruno
Lyotard, Jean-François
Marcus, George
Postmodernism
Poststructuralism
Practice Theory
Rabinow, Paul
Rosaldo, Renato
Said, Edward
Scapes
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Strathern, Marilyn
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Tyler, Stephen A.

Psychological and Sociological Perspective

Bateson, Gregory
Benedict, Ruth
Chodorow, Nancy
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis
Dundes, Alan
Durkheim, Émile
Fanon, Frantz
Fortune, Reo
Freud, Sigmund
Girard, René
Goffman, Erving
Hall, Edward T.
Hertz, Robert
Kardiner, Abram
Lacan, Jacques
L'Année Sociologique
LeVine, Robert
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Linton, Ralph
Malinowski, Bronisław
Mauss, Marcel
Mead, Margaret
Parsons, Talcott
Rivers, W. H. R.
Róheim, Géza
Weber, Max
Westermarck, Edward
Wundt, Wilhelm

Theoretical Approaches

Alliance-Descent Debate
Cognitive Anthropology
Comparative Linguistics
Critical Theory
Cultural Ecology
Cultural Materialism
Culture and Personality
Culture Area Approach
Dependency Theory
Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*
Discourse Theory
Economic Anthropology
Ethnohistory
Ethnoscience; New Ethnography
Ethology, Human
Evolutionary Anthropology
Evolutionary Psychology
Face-to-Face Interaction
Feminist Anthropology
Game Theory
Gene-Culture Coevolution
Globalization Theory
Hermeneutics
Historical Particularism
Human Behavioral Ecology
Human Universals
Marxist Anthropology
Material Production, Theories of
Neo-Boasianism
Neo-Kantianism
Network Theory/Social Network Analysis
Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology
Phenomenology
Political Economy
Postcolonial Theory
Postmodernism
Poststructuralism
Practice Theory
Psychological Anthropology
Queer Theory
Rational Choice Theory
Semiotics
Social Constructionism
Sociolinguistics
Structural Functionalism
Structural Marxism
Structuralism
Subaltern Studies
Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology
Symbolic Interactionism
Systems Theory
World-Systems Theory

Theorists

Abu-Lughod, Lila
Althusser, Louis
Anderson, Benedict
Appadurai, Arjun
Asad, Talal
Bachofen, Johann J.
Bailey, Frederick G.
Bakhtin, Mikhail M.
Barth, Fredrik
Barthes, Roland
Bastian, Adolf

Bataille, Georges
Bateson, Gregory
Baudrillard, Jean
Benedict, Ruth F.
Benjamin, Walter
Binford, Lewis R.
Bloch, Maurice
Bloomfield, Leonard
Boas, Franz
Bohannan, Paul
Bourdieu, Pierre
Burke, Kenneth
Butler, Judith
Carneiro, Robert L.
Chodorow, Nancy
Chomsky, Noam
Clifford, James
Comte, Auguste
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat
Darwin, Charles
Dawkins, Richard
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari
Derrida, Jacques
Douglas, Mary
Du Bois, W. E. B
DuBois, Cora
Dumont, Louis
Dundes, Alan
Durkheim, Émile
Evans-Pritchard, E. E.
Fanon, Frantz
Ferguson, Adam
Firth, Raymond
Fischer, Michael
Fortes, Meyer
Fortune, Reo
Foster, George M.
Foucault, Michel
Frazer, James G.
Freud, Sigmund
Fried, Morton
Gadamer, Hans-Georg
Geertz, Clifford
Geffray, Christian
Gennep, Arnold van
Girard, René
Gluckman, Max
Godelier, Maurice
Goffman, Erving
Goldenweiser, Alexander A.
Goodenough, Ward H.
Goody, Jack
Graebner, Fritz
Gramsci, Antonio
Greenberg, Joseph
Griaule, Marcel
Gumperz, John J.
Habermas, Jürgen
Haddon, Alfred C.
Hall, Edward T.
Hallowell, A. Irving
Harris, Marvin
Harvey, David
Hegel, Georg W. F.
Herskovits, Melville
Hertz, Robert
Hobbes, Thomas
Hocart, Arthur M.
Hurston, Zora Neale
Husserl, Edmund
Hymes, Dell
Jakobson, Roman O.
Jameson, Fredric
Kardiner, Abram
Kluckhohn, Clyde
Kroeber, Alfred L.
Kuper, Hilda B.
Labov, William
Lacan, Jacques
Lafitau, Joseph-François
Lamphere, Louise
Latour, Bruno
Leach, Edmund
Leacock, Eleanor
LeVine, Robert
Lévi-Strauss, Claude
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien
Lewis, Oscar
Lienhardt, Godfrey
Linton, Ralph
Lounsbury, Floyd
Lowie, Robert
Lubbock, John
Lyotard, Jean-François
Maine, Henry James
Mair, Lucy
Malinowski, Bronisław
Malthus, Thomas R.
Marcus, George
Marx, Karl

Mauss, Marcel
McLennan, John
Mead, George Herbert
Mead, Margaret
Meillassoux, Claude
Mintz, Sidney
Montesquieu, Comte de
Morgan, Lewis Henry
Müller, Max
Murdock, George Peter
Nader, Laura
Nash, June
Needham, Rodney
Ortner, Sherry
Parsons, Elsie C.
Parsons, Talcott
Pike, Kenneth
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox
Plato
Polanyi, Karl
Popper, Karl
Rabinow, Paul
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.
Radin, Paul
Rappaport, Roy
Redfield, Robert
Richards, Audrey
Rivers, W. H. R.
Rivet, Paul
Róheim, Géza
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist
Rosaldo, Renato
Rouch, Jean
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques
Sahlins, Marshall
Said, Edward
Sanday, Peggy Reeves
Sapir, Edward
Saussure, Ferdinand de
Schapera, Isaac
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy
Schneider, David M.
Seligman, Charles Gabriel
Service, Elman R.
Simmel, Georg
Smith, Adam
Smith, Grafton Elliot
Smith, Neil
Smith, William Robertson
Spencer, Herbert
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen
Sperber, Dan
Spiro, Melford
Srinivas, M. N.
Steward, Julian
Strathern, Marilyn
Swadesh, Morris
Tambiah, Stanley
Tax, Sol
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis
Turner, Victor W.
Tyler, Stephen A.
Tylor, Edward Burnett
Vayda, Andrew P.
Veblen, Thorstein B.
Voltaire
Wagley, Charles
Wallace, Alfred R.
Wallace, Anthony F. C.
Wallerstein, Immanuel
Weber, Max
Westermarck, Edward
White, Leslie
Whorf, Benjamin Lee
Wilson, Edward O.
Wilson, Monica
Wittfogel, Karl
Wittgenstein, Ludwig
Wolf, Eric
Wundt, Wilhelm

M

Maine, Henry James

Sir Henry James Sumner Maine (1822–1887) has usually been regarded as the most cautious and credible of the Victorian anthropologists. He was praised by students of Franz Boas, such as Robert Lowie, and was honored both as an ancestor of functionalism and as a creator of kinship studies and the anthropology of law by Meyer Fortes and Max Gluckman. He enabled the structural functionalists to focus on legal and social rights and duties rather than on individuals. E. E. Evans-Pritchard considered him a master of the comparative method. Today, however, when kinship studies are at a low ebb and the involvement of anthropology in imperialist enterprises has been for some time under scrutiny, Maine is sometimes viewed as a conservative colonialist whose writings provided a rationale for the British policy of indirect rule.

Maine was born in Scotland. His father was a physician. After a brilliant undergraduate degree at Cambridge, he was appointed there, at the early age of 25, as Regius Professor of Civil (Roman) Law in 1847. In 1852, he became a reader at the Inns of Court in London, and from 1863 to 1869, he served as legal advisor on the Viceroy's Council in India. In 1869, he took up a professorship at Oxford. In 1877, he became Master of Trinity Hall, Cambridge.

Ancient Law

Maine's most famous work was *Ancient Law* (1861), and the best known statement in that book, which became a set text for the Indian Civil Service exams before anthropology was taught in the universities, was this: "We may say that the movement of the progressive societies has hitherto been a movement *from Status to Contract*." The meaning of Maine's famous sentence is not transparent. The "progressive societies" were all to be found in parts of Europe where Greek, Romance, Celtic, and Germanic languages were spoken. Comparative philology, a new science that had developed after Sir William Jones's discovery, around 1780, of the relationship between Sanskrit, Latin, and Greek, indicated that speakers of most European languages and speakers of Persian, Sanskrit, Hindi, and Urdu possibly shared a common "Aryan" or "Indo-European" linguistic and cultural heritage. To Maine, unlike some of his contemporaries, the word *Aryan* had more to do with what we would now call "culture" than with biological race. He believed that there were similarities in the early social history of all Aryan groups, but Indian societies were not "progressive" because irrational, imitative, and cruel elements of Hindu tradition had influenced some aspects of Indian law, particularly concerning caste.

The word *status* in Maine's writings signifies the vesting of certain rights and duties with respect to people and things in corporate entities, specifically kin groups or other collective social bodies, rather than individuals. In *Ancient Law*, Maine examined the significance of status in early Aryan societies, particularly in Rome. In the mid-5th century BCE, when Roman law was codified as the Twelve Tables, the family was the only recognized legal actor, the owner of common property, and its ruling principle

was *patria potestas*: As head of the family, or paterfamilias, the father *alone* acted on its behalf, exercising the power of life and death over his wife, children, slaves, and cattle. He controlled the group's land, which with rare exceptions could never be sold; arranged his daughters' marriages; and bought and sold property, such as slaves, daughters, horses, and cattle. Such sales involved a formal conveyance, a literal handing over of goods in exchange for currency, accompanied by the striking of brass scales and the utterance of precise verbal formulae, and demanding the presence of vendor, purchaser, and at least five witnesses.

Family membership normally descended from the paterfamilias to his male children. A woman could not inherit property. On marriage, she passed from the *manus* ("hand," i.e., power, control) and lineage of her father to that of her husband, and her children were his *agnates*—born into (*ad-nati*) his lineage, not the lineage of her birth. Adoption, one of the first *legal fictions*, permitted an extension of the group of agnates to include nonbiological kin. The Roman *gens* or patrilineage was thus an extension of the family principle, and ultimately the city state or commonwealth was built, at least theoretically, on the same model. The family and the *gens* were economic, political, and jural institutions. Later, when he read *The Ancient City* (1864) by Fustel de Coulanges, Maine affirmed that ancestor worship sustained the *gens*.

In *Ancient Law*, Maine traced the slow decline of *patria potestas* and the development of individual legal rights in the 950 years following the Twelve Tables. That period included the transformation of Rome from a homogeneous, rural market town to the hub of the Roman Empire.

According to Maine, by the latter years of the republic, marriages *sine manu* (without *manus*) were beginning to supplant the older forms. During the days of the empire, women who were not traditionally married gained rights to own and sell property but not to participate in public life. Before the end of the republic, the rights of fathers to punish their children were restricted. Sons were given limited rights of property ownership. While theoretically all citizens were affiliated at least fictionally to the traditional patrilineages (*gentes*), shared territory rather than kinship became the real rationale of the state. Individual ownership of movable property became much more common. Citizens who were not family heads could do business with each other, utilizing new, simplified forms of contract developed by officials such as the *praetor peregrinus*, who sought to mediate conflicts between the various legal systems recently incorporated into the Roman state. No longer restricted to ritualistic, here-and-now conveyances, contracts could stipulate future actions and could be undertaken without rigid formulae and public performances. They could still be written, but they could also be based on oral promises backed by a consideration.

The Comparative Method: History and Evolution

Maine endeavored to develop a relatively new discipline, the historical study of comparative jurisprudence. In constructing a history of Roman law, he could turn to the few documents that had been preserved, including fragments of the Twelve Tables, the praetorian edict, the Latin works of jurists like Gaius and Justinian, and writings by scholars of his own era, like Friedrich Karl von Savigny. Some speculation was necessary to fill in the gaps as Maine traced the path from status to contract. Both comparative philology and comparative legal scholarship encouraged the collection of supporting evidence. For example, Maine felt that he could demonstrate that the *patria potestas* was a Pan-Aryan institution, evident in Ancient Greece and in India in the Sanskrit *Laws of Manu*.

One manifestation of status, the collective ownership of property and the denial of individual rights, could be demonstrated in the early medieval *mark* community of the Germans, as described by Georg Ludwig von Maurer. In his second major work, *Village Communities East and West* (1871), Maine described a form of communalism in many interior portions of the Indian subcontinent. Here, Maine argued, a community composed of different families and unequal groups of specialists (*jatis*, or "castes") shared some land rights, such as the ownership of wasteland used for pasture. Arable land was partitioned between different groups, but all united in communal labor on it. This later form of "status" was based not so much on kinship as on the territory that was maintained by agricultural labor and the exchange of specialist services. Maine's somewhat oversimplified portrayal of the village community was corrected by later writers. It reflected the

situation in less than a quarter of Indian communities and, as Maine conceded, virtually none in the coastal regions, where the British presence had been strongest.

Maine's use of the comparative method to align 19th-century India with the Europe of an earlier time reminds one of the evolutionary anthropologists of his era, but his deliberate, almost exclusive, concentration on Aryan societies differentiates him from such scholars. Unlike them, Maine was not much interested in primitive societies and had little to say about "primitive" law. He thought that law in the proper sense had been preceded by the arbitrary commands of primitive rulers and then by the slow development of prelegal customs by village elders. In Rome, the development of the *patriarchal family*, *the gens*, and the state was accompanied by the birth of true law, and once there was writing, it could be preserved in codified form.

Within 20 years of the appearance of *Ancient Law*, the writings of J. F. McLennan in Scotland and Lewis Henry Morgan in the United States had advanced a "matriarchal" theory that challenged Maine's assertion that the patriarchal family was probably primal. Although they disagreed on the reasons and details, both agreed that promiscuity and sexual mayhem were the normal state of affairs in the earliest human societies. The development of mother-right (matriliny), the recognition of kinship to the mother and mother's brother rather than the father, was a natural consequence of a situation where people were ignorant of physiology and could not identify their fathers. According to Morgan, primitive promiscuity was succeeded by group marriage and then by occasional polygamy. The first societies to develop horticulture and live in villages were matrilineal. Like the Iroquois, whom he studied, they were composed of matriclans that owned property in common. Matrilineal societies were egalitarian, and Morgan noted that Iroquois women played important social roles. As surpluses developed and inequality increased, the clan became patrilineal and the society patriarchal. Although Morgan used the Roman word *gens* for the property-owning Iroquois clan, his idea of the universal priority of matriliny and speculations about matriliny irritated Maine, who noted that Darwin had strongly supported the patriarchal theory and the rejection of primitive promiscuity, because it was the nature of male quadrupeds to be jealous of potential rivals and assert their power within the group. Such ideas also made a universal stage of matriliny improbable.

Unlike unilinear evolutionists such as Lewis Henry Morgan and Edward Burnett Tylor, Maine neither embraced the idea of psychic unity nor advanced any theory of graduated stages in social evolution based on improvements in technology, morality, or ideation. Indeed, it could be argued that he was not really an evolutionist at all. His accomplishment was the construction of a contrast between two very different ideal types of sociation. The great sociologist Ferdinand Tönnies utilized Maine's contrast between *status* and *contract* in developing his ideas of *Gemeinschaft* and *Gesellschaft*, and his ideas were amplified by Max Weber. The contrast also foreshadows Émile Durkheim's *mechanical and organic solidarity*. It reflects Maine's historically grounded understanding of the relationship between law, social interests, and social change, which was closely connected to his political attitudes.

Although he was a supporter of free trade, an expression of "contract," Maine was in other respects a Tory, and was particularly conservative in his ideas about the role of law in society. In *Ancient Law*, he expressed his disdain for Rousseau's ideas of the state of nature, the natural law, and the social contract, which he argued provided a program for subsequent Jacobin bloodshed. He was also skeptical about the reformist ideas of the utilitarians. He opposed any form of legal activism that assumed that all human societies were alike and that one could implement social change through law in a directed fashion. In his view, the genius of Roman law was that it grew slowly, as magistrates such as the praetors, scholars such as the jurisconsults, and legislators (particularly in later years) reacted to social change through the deployment of legal fictions, the development of equity, and the creation, when necessary, of new law.

Colonial Contexts

Maine went to India in 1863 as legal advisor on the Viceroy's Council. At that time, the Mutiny of 1857 was causing a reevaluation of the program of legal reform that had been undertaken with the aim of making India a reflection of British post-Enlightenment, humanitarian values, and thereby justifying imperialism. However, the Mutiny

convinced many administrators that the policies of liberal imperialism had been utterly wrong. In her book *Alibis of Empire*, Kuruna Mantena argues that Maine's career in the imperial service and his influential writings perfectly accorded with the spirit of post-mutiny imperialism, which rejected the liberal program and cautioned against reformist policies that ignored cultural difference. Despite Maine's negative attitude toward the Hindu religion, he had slowly developed an appreciation of the traditional Indian village society as something socially coherent, composed of intricate networks of obligation, well adapted to rural life, and based on a system of land tenure that was not originally linked to the marketplace. That appreciation, evident throughout *Village Communities*, was an acknowledgment of both cultural similarity and cultural difference, hardly relativism but a step in that direction. Indian village life was certainly not preferable to Victorian laissez-faire, but it was superior to the life of primitives because its Aryan institutions possessed the potential for slow development.

In India, Maine was involved in the drafting of 200 bills, including a codification of the marriage law that permitted civil marriages. He believed that legal reforms were necessary to deal with the problems already created by unwise interference. Many colonial officials interpreted his work as a warning against the fast introduction of the market principle into the rural economy, because one broken cog in the wheel could send the whole cart flying. The dissolution of native society was a possible, unintended consequence of misdirected legislative and political action. On the other hand, a wise colonial official might take steps to retard or forestall change. As Clive Dewey has noted, some later legislation in India reflected Maine's caution and gradualism. According to Mantena, Maine's intellectual successors included Alfred Lyall in India, Arthur Gordon in Fiji, and Lord Lugard in Africa, all advocates of the policy of Indirect Rule, which sought to integrate indigenous leaders into the colonial administration.

Historians of anthropology have noted how well functionalist and structural-functionalist anthropology served the purposes of Indirect Rule, which is hardly surprising given that both the anthropological and the political practices reflect Maine's conservative colonialism. Given functionalism's integral ties with fieldwork, we should note that Maine's reconstruction of law in the early Roman Republic was based on hallowed but imperfect documentation and his insights into rural India relied on the reports of settlement officers. However, his ideas had a strong resonance in impeccable fieldwork studies of the legal systems of lineage-based societies in Africa, as readers of Max Gluckman on the Lozi and Paul Bohannan on the Tiv may attest.

Andrew Lyons

See also Bachofen, Johann J.; Durkheim, Émile; McLennan, John; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques; Tylor, Edward Burnett; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Diamond, A. (Ed.). (1991). *The Victorian achievement of Henry Maine: A centennial reappraisal*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press. (The chapters by A. Kuper, A. Macfarlane, E. Shils, and C. Dewey are most useful to anthropological readers)

Maine, H. J. S. (1875). *Lectures on the early history of institutions*. London, UK: Murray. (First edition published 1861)

———. (*1876*). *Village communities in the East and West*. London, UK: Murray. (First edition published 1871)

———. (1883). *Dissertations on early law and custom*. London, UK: Murray.

———. (1884). *Ancient law: Its connection with the early history of society and its relations to modern ideas* (10th ed.). London, UK: Murray. (First edition published 1861)

Mantena, K. (2010). *Alibis of Empire: Henry Maine and the ends of liberal imperialism*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Mair, Lucy

Lucy Phillips Mair (1901–1986) was an eminent British anthropologist, an academic, and an ethnographer specializing in Africa and colonial administration (later renamed applied anthropology).

Biography and Major Works

Mair was born on January 28, 1901, in Banstead, Surrey, the eldest of four children of David Mair and Janet Thomson. She attended St Paul's Girls' School in London, before attending Newnham College, Cambridge. On her arrival there in 1919, she found

women under intense pressure to prove themselves equal to men academically. Mair never married; one of the chapters in *Marriage* published in 1971 titled "What Are Husbands For?" indicated that she held strong views on women and men's roles and status in the world around her. Her strong intellect and views about the position of women and about colonial administration, a subject about which some anthropologists were critical and dismissive, found her being described on occasion by fellow anthropologists as "fierce" and socially awkward. Others might suggest that she was ahead of her time in promoting authoritative views as a woman in a man's world.

After graduation from Cambridge University in 1922 with a BA in classics, she was employed by the liberal activist, politician, and public intellectual Gilbert Murray as his secretary-assistant in the League of Nations for 5 years. In 1927, she joined her mother and future stepfather at the London School of Economics (LSE), holding a lectureship in international relations. There, Audrey Richards introduced Mair to Bronisław Malinowski's seminar series in anthropology, because her work (on mandated territories) involved Africa and Richards thought that no one could understand Africa unless they understood anthropology. Mair was said to have been impressed by Malinowski's charm, but she remained a skeptical admirer, with deep reservations about his ideas. He nevertheless arranged for her to go to Buganda (in what is today south-central Uganda) to do fieldwork, funded by a grant from the Rockefeller Foundation. Mair spent 9 months in Africa doing ethnography that resulted in her first anthropological work, *An African People in the Twentieth Century* (1934). She returned to the LSE in the early 1930s and gained her PhD. She was a member of the group that included Edward Evan Evans-Pritchard, Raymond Firth, Meyer Fortes, Max Gluckman, Audrey Richards, and Isaac Schapera, as well as Siegfried Frederick Nadel and Edmund Leach. It was a stimulating though not always harmonious group. Some of its members later came to dominate British social anthropology and were to have a deep influence on anthropology in the United States.

Mair continued to teach at LSE, taking responsibility for the courses that trained colonial administrators. Her students, initially mostly former members of the British army, later included talented young local nationals from the colonies themselves. After World War II, funding for this training was lost, and students were guided to residential universities, where they were thought less likely to be exposed to radical ideas. Later, in the 1960s and 1970s, Mair was confronted by socialist and Marxist anthropologists who disparaged colleagues who had worked in the maintenance of the colonies. She denied that everything the colonial administrators had done was completely wrong and insisted that her work offered improvement and choices in governance for the local population. She promoted the view that academics like herself were best suited to deliver training for colonial officers and was adamant that careful scholarship and hard work promoted fairness and social justice. Her strong position on such matters reflected her earlier experiences and a rather dogmatic stance on colonial matters.

During the Second World War, Mair served in the Royal Institute for International Affairs and at the Foreign Office. On her return to the LSE, she was seconded to Canberra to teach members of the Australian military administration of Papua New Guinea. She had two postings there and wrote *Australia in New Guinea* (1948), with an updated version a few years later. In 1947, she was promoted to a reader in colonial administration, and in 1952 she began a second readership in applied anthropology. She influenced a wide range of students, from the young men in the colonial administrators' course to her BA and PhD students in social anthropology from the 1950s. Mair became professor in 1963, and she taught at the universities of Durham and Kent after her retirement in 1968. In 1964, she was made president of Section 4 of the British Association for the Advancement of Science.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Mair wrote extensively on the subject of social organization and contributed to the involvement of anthropological research in governance and politics. Her view was that development could not be considered a discipline separate from economic and social anthropology. She thought that it was essential to know the social organization of developing peoples so as to be able to assess the likely consequences of intervention.

Mair's early publications (many collected in *Studies in Applied Anthropology*, published in 1957, and *Anthropology and Social Change*, which appeared in 1969) were concerned with the technical problems of colonial administration and with

explaining the aims and achievements of anthropologists to an audience of administrators. *New Nations* (1963), *The New Africa* (1967), and *Anthropology and Development* (1984) summarized and consolidated that work, making it accessible to students and administrators. In the postwar years, she began a series of short volumes based on her lectures: *Primitive Government* (1962), *Witchcraft* (1969), and *Marriage* (1971). In 1972, she published her *Introduction to Social Anthropology*, which was still in print 25 years later. She was critical of colleagues who would only write specialist work for an audience of their own kind, and these last four books, concise and expository accounts of the state of knowledge, brought her a much wider readership.

On her death in 1986, Mair bequeathed her book collection to libraries at the LSE; her own books continue to be read and still contribute to the body of anthropological literature. Throughout her working life, Mair was closely involved with the Royal Anthropological Institute. After winning the institute's Wellcome medal in 1936, she served as honorable secretary from 1974 to 1978 and as vice president for the year 1978–1979. After her death, the Royal Anthropological Institute instituted the Lucy Mair Medal for Applied Anthropology in 1997 to commemorate her life and work.

Salma Siddique

See also Applied Anthropology; Economic Anthropology; London School of Economics; Malinowski, Bronisław; Richards, Audrey

Further Readings

Mair, L. (1928). *The protection of minorities: The working and scope of the minorities treaties under the League of Nations*. London, UK: Christophers.
———. (1948). *Australia in New Guinea*. London, UK: Christophers.
———. (1957). *Studies in applied anthropology*. London, UK: Athlone.
———. (1961). *Safeguards for democracy*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.
———. (1962). *Primitive government*. Baltimore, MD: Penguin Books.
———. (1969). *Anthropology and social change*. London, UK: Athlone.
———. (1984). *Anthropology and development*. London, UK: Macmillan.

Malinowski, Bronisław

A founding father of British social anthropology, Bronisław Kasper Malinowski (1884–1942) pioneered modern fieldwork methods, re-created the genre of ethnographic writing, promoted applied anthropology in Africa, and contributed to many academic debates and popular causes. At the time of his death in the United States, he was a scientific celebrity, an international humanist committed to the battle against totalitarianism.

Biography and Major Works

An only child, Malinowski was born in Cracow, the capital of Galicia in the Austro-Hungarian Empire. Both his parents were impoverished gentry of Roman Catholic persuasion, a faith that Malinowski abandoned as a youth. His father was a distinguished professor of Slavic philology at Cracow's ancient Jagiellonian University. Malinowski's formal schooling was interrupted by recurrent illnesses, and his mother devoted herself to his education and took him on health-seeking trips to the Mediterranean countries. By the time he was 16, Malinowski spoke several languages and had developed a cosmopolitan outlook. Like his compatriot and literary hero, Joseph Conrad, he would attribute his enthusiasm for the exotic to these early experiences of cultural variation.

Malinowski studied philosophy, physics, and mathematics at the Jagiellonian University, receiving his doctorate with the highest honors in 1908. A significant influence in his youth was his passionate, competitive friendship with Stanisław I. Witkiewicz, alias Witkacy, a celebrated avant-garde artist and dramatist. Outshone by his friend's artistic genius, Malinowski directed his own creative ambitions toward science. His brilliant doctoral dissertation on the positivism of Ernst Mach, "On the Principle of the Economy of Thought," contained the seed of Malinowski's later functionalism, the anthropological doctrine for which he became renowned. Following in his father's footsteps, Malinowski spent a year at Leipzig University, where he renounced physical chemistry for the anthropological psychology (*Völkerpsychologie*) of Wilhelm Wundt and the economic history of Karl Bücher. Initially sparked by a youthful reading of James Frazer's *The Golden*

Bough, Malinowski's interests turned inexorably toward anthropology.

In March 1910, Malinowski traveled to London to continue his studies in ethnology and "primitive sociology" at the London School of Economics, under the supervision of C. G. Seligman and Edward Westermarck. As well as Sir James Frazer, Malinowski befriended A. C. Haddon and W. H. R. Rivers, both of whom, like Seligman, were veterans of the pioneering Cambridge University Torres Straits Expedition of 1898–1899. Each of these men played some part in advancing Malinowski's early career.

In 1913, Malinowski published a work begun in Leipzig, *The Family Among the Australian Aborigines*, which his later rival A. R. Radcliffe-Brown praised as a model of scientific method. Based on a critical evaluation of the ethnographic literature, it addressed current controversies about the origin of marriage and the family and overturned the evolutionists' assumption that the Aborigines practiced "group marriage" and that therefore the individual family could not exist.

The outbreak of war in August 1914 caught Malinowski in Australia on his way to begin fieldwork in Papua (ex-British New Guinea). His 3-month apprentice fieldwork among the coastal communities of southern Papua was of the survey type, as conducted by Haddon and Seligman. Assisted by local missionaries and working through a trade language, he came to realize the deficiencies of this kind of investigation. Returning to Australia for a few months, he dashed off *The Natives of Mailu* (1915), a conventionally structured report guided by the categories of *Notes and Queries in Anthropology*. Although the monograph won him additional funding from the Australian government and helped him earn a DSc degree from the University of London, he belittled it as a mere "pamphlet."

Malinowski returned to Papua in June 1915, and while waiting for a boat to the north coast, he made a fateful detour to the Trobriand Islands in the northern Massim, an insular region that Seligman had surveyed a decade earlier. Although wary of treading on his supervisor's ethnographic toes, Malinowski was intellectually captivated by its vibrant culture. Seligman approved his change of location, affording Malinowski the opportunity to put into practice the rules laid down by Rivers (his "patron saint of fieldwork") for intensive study. He avoided consorting with the resident Europeans by pitching his tent in the chief's village and quickly learned that close observation of everyday activities yielded unexpected insights into peoples' lives. Once he had invested time and effort in learning the language of Kiriwina, its ethnographic gifts were his for the asking. He made the recording of "concrete occurrences" and "actual cases," another cornerstone of his ethnographic method. He amassed documentation—genealogies, sketch maps, plans, photographs, measurements, and vernacular texts on every conceivable subject. Although he was inclined to observe rather than to participate in everyday activities, "participant observation" became the slogan for later generations of field-working anthropologists. He devised "synoptic charts" for summarizing information; they revealed gaps in his data and enabled him to visualize the functional interconnections between institutions. He later used the synoptic charts as teaching aids in the classroom to demonstrate his functional method.

Malinowski interrupted 20 months of intensive fieldwork in the Trobriands with a lengthy break in Melbourne. Although he suffered recurrent bouts of illness, it was a productive period. He began his courtship of Elsie Rosaline Masson, daughter of an eminent Scottish professor of chemistry, whom he later married and with whom he had three daughters. He wrote *Baloma: The Spirits of the Dead in the Trobriand Islands* (1916), a methodologically sophisticated treatise on the sociology of Trobriand religion, which dealt with the ideological underpinnings of matrilineal kinship and the denial of physiological paternity. He sorted his field notes with a view to compiling a comprehensive ethnographic compendium—a mammoth project that he later abandoned in favor of a series of focused monographs. On his second expedition to the Trobriands in 1917–1918, Malinowski concentrated on checking, validating, and enlarging the data he had collected on the previous trip, transcribing oral texts and extending his command of the vernacular.

Under light government surveillance as an enemy alien, he had spent a relatively peaceful war in the islands, though haunted by reports of the terrible events in Europe and devastated by the belated news of his mother's death in Poland. Fieldwork by immersion in an alien culture had exacted a heavy psychological price, and Malinowski's posthumously published field diaries speak poignantly of his lonely ordeal. While *A Diary in the Strict Sense*

of the Term (1967) scandalized many readers by its author's racist expressions and explicit sexual fantasies, it is a ruthlessly honest document, profoundly introspective yet therapeutic, in which Malinowski kept a daily ledger of his achievements, failings, and moral dilemmas. He came to the important realization that his diary and his ethnography were complementary; the former sharpened his insight into the experiences of his native subjects, bringing him closer to the final goal of the ethnographer: "to grasp the native's point of view . . . to realize *his* vision of *his* world."

As the war was about to end, Malinowski returned to Australia "as laden with materials as a camel." In early 1920, he sailed back to Europe with his bride Elsie and his ethnographic treasures. Following brief sojourns in Scotland and Poland (where Malinowski turned down the offer of a professorship at the Jagiellonian University), the couple spent several months in Tenerife, where Malinowski completed his classic monograph *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* (1922), a richly detailed account of the canoe-borne trade and ceremonial exchange of arm shells and shell necklaces, which linked the Trobriands via the *kula* circuit to other island groups of the Massim. A preface by Sir James Frazer ensured the successful launch of *Argonauts*, and although it fell far short of the best-selling status of *The Golden Bough*, it has never been out of print.

Appointed a lecturer in 1922, a reader in 1924, and foundation professor of social anthropology in 1927, Malinowski's rise to eminence in the University of London was rapid, and he was granted British citizenship in 1931. He worked extraordinarily hard, teaching, writing, and propagating his views on many contemporary social issues: marriage and the family, divorce, sexual morality, birth control, religion, race, and warfare. He won popular recognition as a polemical essayist and broadcaster. His Socratic seminars at the London School of Economics attracted students from every continent and from different academic disciplines, who catalyzed a heady ferment of ideas. He used what his pupil and colleague Raymond Firth called "intellectual shock tactics" to get his students to think for themselves. His enthusiasm for his subject was that of a prophet, the self-proclaimed "godfather and standard-bearer of the School of Functionalism," who invented a novel methodology for a new scientific discipline.

In collaboration with the International African Institute, Malinowski won Rockefeller Foundation support for his vision of a "practical anthropology" and advocacy of "an anthropology of the changing native." Insofar as it addressed colonial policies in Africa, his work in this field amounted to a second anthropological revolution. As well as for the British Colonial Office, he exercised influence as an informal advisor to bodies such as the International Missionary Council, the British Social Hygiene Council, and Mass Observation (which adopted his latest slogan, "Anthropology begins at home"). With Rockefeller funding under International African Institute auspices, he trained a talented cohort of research fellows, including Audrey Richards, Lucy Mair, Hilda Kuper, Meyer Fortes, and Siegfried Nadel. In 1934, he visited students working among the Bemba and the Swazi and conducted some cursory fieldwork of his own among the Arusha and the Chagga.

During his prolific years in London, Malinowski promoted his theories in innumerable essays, book reviews, encyclopedia articles, and lengthy forewords to his students' books. In his Trobriand monographs, he strived for scientific candor with the principled separation of fact and opinion. He was scrupulous in telling the reader what events he had or had not witnessed, appealing to his "seeing eye" as the hallmark of his authority. Malinowski's best ethnographic writing is a rhetorical confection of colorful description, reflexive anecdote, native commentary, and theoretical aside. While he aspired to be the Joseph Conrad of anthropology, he settled for being its Émile Zola.

Following *Argonauts*, he published *Crime and Custom in Savage Society* (1926), a pathbreaking little book that described the workings of quasi-legal mechanisms in the Trobriands. His analytical insights into "the binding force of reciprocity" in everyday exchanges and his pioneering use of the case method laid the foundations of legal anthropology. *Sex and Repression in Savage Society* (1927) was a polemical work that contested Freudian dogma concerning the universality of the Oedipus complex. Malinowski argued that the emotional configuration of the Trobriand family under the rules of matriliny ensured that it was the mother's brother, not the father, who was the resented authority figure, and it was the sister, not the mother, who was the object of a boy's incestuous desire. *The Sexual Life*

of Savages (1929) was a comprehensive ethnography of Trobriand courtship, marriage, and domestic life; while avoiding pornography, it amounted to a subversive assault on sexual prudery and hypocrisy, and in the changing mores of the period, it had a liberating appeal. *Coral Gardens and Their Magic* (1935) dealt exhaustively with horticultural practices and their ritual accompaniments, with the politics and mythological basis of land tenure, and with the poetic language of magic. It was in 1935, after a protracted and debilitating illness, that Elsie died, just before the appearance of *Coral Gardens*—a work her husband had dedicated to her.

Malinowski had made his first enthusiastic trip to the United States in 1926 on a Rockefeller-sponsored fellowship, and although some members of the Boasian school of American anthropology were antipathetic to the man and his message, he was invited twice more to give lecture tours and notably, in 1936, to receive an honorary doctorate from Harvard University. In 1938, he returned to the United States for a health-seeking sabbatical in Tucson. He visited Indian reservations and taught a seminar at the University of Arizona, followed by a summer school at Smith College, in Northampton, Massachusetts.

With the outbreak of World War II, he was advised by the London School of Economics authorities to remain in the United States, and at the end of 1939, his three daughters left England to join him. To supplement his reduced income, he taught evening classes at the New School for Social Research in New York and accepted a visiting professorship at Yale University. In 1940, he married his long-term partner, the English painter Valetta Swann. They spent the summers of 1940 and 1941 in Mexico, where Malinowski, assisted by a young Mexican anthropologist, Julio de la Fuente, conducted fieldwork on the Zapotec market system of the Oaxaca Valley. Although a Spanish translation of their pioneering report had a significant influence on later studies of market systems, *The Economics of a Mexican Market System* (1982) was not published in Malinowski's lifetime.

Following Hitler's invasion of Poland in September 1939, Malinowski joined the "Great Debate" with a lecturing and writing campaign to convince Americans of the need to fight the German war machine. The war revived his dormant Polish patriotism, and he wrote passionately against the evils of totalitarianism and the menace of rampant nationalism in a series of essays on the anthropology of war, culminating in his posthumously published *Freedom and Civilization* (1944). He assisted many Jewish friends and colleagues to escape Nazi persecution, though he was less successful in finding them jobs. Indeed, his own position at Yale remained provisional until he was appointed finally to a permanent professorship a month before his death of a heart attack. The evening before he died, on May16, 1942, he addressed the inaugural meeting of the Polish Institute of Arts and Sciences in America, of which he had been elected president.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Malinowski's move to England in 1913 had been at an opportune moment in the history of British anthropology. His mentors had only recently begun to professionalize the discipline and call for more intensive fieldwork. The "survey" or "rescue" ethnology conducted by researchers like Haddon and Seligman yielded weighty monographs of broad scope but little analytical depth. *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* set a completely new precedent. Malinowski's explicit intention was to raise ethnographic fieldwork to a professional art, and his self-mythicizing introduction to *Argonauts*—arguably the most influential 25 pages in the history of the discipline—prescribed a mode of research that would become a rite of passage for subsequent generations of anthropologists.

A foundation text of economic anthropology, *Argonauts* can also be read as a theoretical critique of current views of Primitive Economic Man, "a fanciful, dummy creature" motivated by enlightened self-interest. Malinowski introduced a moral dimension; he wanted his account of the *kula* (which he regarded as the highest expression of the Trobrianders' conception of value) to dismember this straw figure and dispel the rationalistic conceptions of primitive mankind. Although *Argonauts* was conceived before he had properly developed functionalism, Malinowski's methodological strategy in the book was to link magic with mythology and both with economic activity in a demonstration of their functional interdependence. Together with A. R. Radcliffe-Brown's *The Andaman Islanders*, also published in 1922, *Argonauts* signaled the beginning of a decisive paradigm shift in British

anthropology—from evolutionary and diffusionist speculations concerning mankind's past to a social anthropology of the present based on empirically observed and theoretically driven ethnographic accounts of particular societies.

The revolution in anthropology Malinowski sought to promote demanded a broad assault on the "antiquarians" of the *ancien regime*. His theoretical strategy was to generalize from the Trobrianders in their Melanesian cultural garb to the rest of humankind. Every ethnographic domain—magic and religion, mythology, language, law, sex, kinship, marriage, the family—was vulnerable to Malinowski's tactic of bringing to bear firsthand data of a depth and complexity none of his opponents could match. Thus did the fruits of intensive fieldwork transform anthropology from the antiquarian study of items of custom into the sociological study of institutions.

Malinowski elaborated a theory of functionalism from 1926 onward, his stated purpose being to discover the laws and regularities that governed social behavior. There were two strands to his functionalism: (1) methodological (inspired by fieldwork practice) and (2) doctrinal (based on the premise that there are cultural universals). Empirical observation, he believed, was the principal scientific activity of anthropology. Through direct field observations, the researcher examines the actual working of a custom or an institution to determine the purpose it serves; this should provide the key to its meaning and the reason for its existence. He taught that there were no facts without theory and that it was functional theory that provided the criteria of relevance for the observation, selection, and recording of data; it also directed the field-worker to new observations, which in turn posed fresh questions. As a matter of fieldwork principle, functionalism required all data to be fully contextualized, that is, treated holistically. Functionalism was thereby a safeguard against the detachment of any custom from its living context.

The doctrinal strand of Malinowski's functionalism was formalized in his posthumously published *A Scientific Theory of Culture* (1944). Anthropology ("the proper study of mankind") was the science of culture, which sought to develop common measures for the comparative study of cultures. While recognizing that human cultural diversity is the *raison d'être* of anthropology, his scientific interest lay in the search for what he called the "underlying sameness" of cultures. A culture is a complex instrumental apparatus for the satisfaction of human needs, individual and social. In the satisfaction of man's primary needs (e.g., for food, sex, and shelter), it produces secondary or derived cultural needs, which in turn produce third-order integrative needs. Critics have not been kind to this instrumental, formalistic "system" in which Malinowski invested so much thought. His attempts to elaborate it in light of the behaviorism of his Yale colleagues resulted in even greater complexity; it grew unwieldy and vacuous. If his functionalism survives as a method, its status as grand theory is largely discredited.

Malinowski's Legacy

Malinowski's most enduring achievement is his Trobriand corpus, among the most comprehensive and widely read in global ethnography. It continues to stimulate, provoke, and invite reanalysis. His tenets of fieldwork method have become axiomatic, and insofar as anthropologists continue to live among the people they study, they will continue to be guided by his ideas concerning the functional interconnection of the sociocultural phenomena they observe.

Another achievement was his creation of a cohesive school of social anthropology that proliferated for a generation. Established in key academic posts, his students gave the discipline a distinctive intellectual profile. Following Malinowski's departure for the United States, his influence in Britain was temporarily eclipsed by that of Radcliffe-Brown, whose Durkheimian structural functionalism attracted many of Malinowski's erstwhile disciples. *Man and Culture* (1957), a volume in Malinowski's memory edited by his pupil and successor, Raymond Firth, revived the master's reputation. While agreeing that he was an incomparable ethnographer, the majority verdict of the dozen contributors was that he had been a flawed and inconsistent thinker whose psychological functionalism had prevented him from grasping the analytical priority of social systems and structures. But even his most critical pupils acknowledged the theoretical contributions he had made to fields as disparate as kinship, psychoanalysis, mythology, law, economic anthropology, and applied anthropology. His contribution to anthropological linguistics, semantics, and the ethnography of speaking through concepts such as "phatic communion" and "context of situation" also remains seminal.

The publication of his private diaries brought him renewed posthumous fame. They fueled the epistemological and moral crisis of anthropology in the 1970s, when decolonization was focusing attention on the exploitative aspects of the discipline in its alleged role as a "handmaid of Imperialism." In 1984, Malinowski's centenary yielded another round of evaluations, most importantly by the Polish scholars who rehabilitated Malinowski in his homeland following his disparagement under communism as a reactionary bourgeois anthropologist. In America, meanwhile, postmodernists used Malinowski's diaries for their own rhetorical ends in deconstructing ethnographic authority and denouncing positivism. Ironically, by deploring anthropologists' romantic infatuation with "the freakish," he had preempted by half a century the postmodern critique of exoticism. In this new century, Malinowski remains a venerable ancestor and an anthropologist for all seasons.

Michael W. Young

See also Applied Anthropology; Firth, Raymond; Frazer, James G.; Freud, Sigmund; Haddon, Alfred C.; London School of Economics; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Rivers, W. H. R.; Seligman, Charles Gabriel; Torres Straits Expedition; Westermarck, Edward

Further Readings

Ellen, R., Gellner, E., Kubica, G., & Mucha, J. (Eds.). (1988). *Malinowski between two worlds: The Polish roots of an anthropological tradition*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Firth, R. (Ed.). (1957). *Man and culture: An evaluation of the work of Bronislaw Malinowski*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1996). *After Tylor: British social anthropology*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Thornton, R. J., & Skalnik, P. (1993). *The early writings of Bronislaw Malinowski*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Young, M. W. (Ed.). (1979). *The ethnography of Malinowski: The Trobriand Islands, 1915–18*. London, UK: Routledge.

———. (Ed.). (1988). *Malinowski among the Magi: "The natives of Mailu."* London, UK: Routledge.

———. (2004). *Malinowski: Odyssey of an anthropologist, 1884–1920*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Malthus, Thomas R.

Thomas Robert Malthus (1755–1834) was educated at Cambridge University. He took holy orders on his graduation in 1788, though he pursued an academic rather than a religious career, becoming professor of political economy at the East India College in Hertfordshire in 1805. He is best known for his *Essay on the Principle of Population*, written in 1798. His concerns with population growth in relation to agricultural production inspired demographic research in anthropology as well as in many other disciplines. However, his conclusions were fiercely contested by 19th-century theorists of progress, ranging from Herbert Spencer to Marx and Engels.

Malthus's *Essay* was an attack on the utopian and politically radical ideas of Condorcet and William Godwin, for whom the ultimate aim of progress was the reduction, if not the elimination, of human suffering. Malthus attempted to reconcile a progressive conception of human development with a uniformitarian vision of human suffering. His principle of population, that any increase in food production would be matched if not surpassed by an increase in population, was meant to demonstrate the inevitability of "misery." A corollary of this iron law of population was that any measures of social welfare taken by the state to alleviate the misery of the poor would actually make matters worse; without a concomitant increase in food production, any monies distributed to the indigent would simply result in inflation in the cost of food, penalizing the rest of the "labouring classes." Malthus argued that social inequality, the class division of society into rich and poor, was equally founded in the laws of nature and that life, of necessity, was a process with winners and losers.

Suffering, for Malthus, was simultaneously an impetus to virtue and a punishment for evil. Misery, in the form of starvation, was the price humanity had to pay for succumbing to unbridled sexual desire. Alongside misery as a check to population, he added "vice," namely, "vicious customs with respect to women, great cities, unwholesome manufactures, luxury, pestilence, and war" (1976, p. 44). Malthus's ideal society was decidedly rural, with the bulk of its working population directly devoted to the production of food. Malthus's *Essay* is, among

other things, an impassioned if ineffective conservative critique of the emerging industrial order in England. For Malthus, the manufacture of frivolous luxuries in large towns was simultaneously a moral evil, another form of social capitulation to the forms of desire, and a recipe for misery on a grand scale. For Malthus, there remained only one unambiguously positive check on population: the practice of delayed marriage. Malthus astutely and correctly noted the importance of this specifically European marriage pattern. If suffering were the punishment for succumbing to unrestrained desire, through the operation of the natural consequences of a divinely created order, then restraint, in the form of delayed marriage, was the path to demographic salvation.

If the original version of Malthus's *Essay* directly addressed issues that we, with hindsight, might label "anthropological"—notably the vision of humanity's development through progressive stages—he hardly devoted a great deal of attention to non-European populations. However, in the revised version of the *Essay* published in 1803, Malthus very considerably expanded his discussion of non-Europeans. Indeed, the whole of Book I (of III) was devoted to the factors that checked population growth in less civilized parts of the world and in the past.

Malthus was concerned to demonstrate the ubiquity of "misery" and "vice" and to dispel any residual nostalgia about "noble savages." The South Sea Islands, Tahiti in particular, had been depicted in some of the travel literature in idyllic terms, especially by Bougainville. Malthus, drawing on the subsequent and considerably less enthusiastic observations of Cook and Vancouver, was at pains to dispel any such impressions. China constituted for Malthus an anomaly of a rather different sort, given the sheer size and density of its population. In at least one respect, Malthus expressed genuine admiration for China, precisely because such a huge proportion of the population was involved in agriculture as opposed to manufacturing. Such an agrarian society corresponded to Malthus's ideal. On the other hand, the practice of marrying young in China, as opposed to European patterns of delayed marriage, contributed substantially to the "wretchedness" of the population at large. China was simultaneously touted by Malthus as a model of the benefits of a national policy that consistently privileged agriculture over industry and as a dire warning of the depths of generalized misery in which overpopulation, taken to its extreme, results.

Malthus's ideas were an important influence on Charles Darwin, who considered that the "struggle for existence" caused by the tendency of species to increase faster than the available food supply was the prime motor of natural selection. On the other hand, Malthus's pessimistic conclusions were contested by other 19th-century evolutionary (not to mention revolutionary) thinkers. In 1852, Herbert Spencer published a rebuttal, suggesting implausibly that, in Lamarckian fashion, the growth of the human brain was accompanied by a decrease in sexual appetite. More convincingly, he argued that population pressure is an essential spur to innovation, leading to increased productivity of food production, and as such a critical factor in human evolution. More recently, Ester Boserup has formulated a similar argument.

In spite of such critiques, Malthus has remained a fundamental (if often unacknowledged) influence in anthropological demography and in cultural ecology. Roy Rappaport's *Pigs for the Ancestors* (first published in 1968) is a notable example of an influential ethnography that considers the relationship between population pressure, pig husbandry, ritual, and warfare in New Guinea, a testimony to the enduring influence of Malthus's thought.

Robert Launay

See also Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat; Darwin, Charles; Rappaport, Roy; Spencer, Herbert

Further Readings

Boserup, E. (1965). *The conditions of agricultural growth: The economics of agrarian change under population pressure*. London, UK: G. Allen & Unwin.

Darwin, C. (2003). *The origin of species*. New York, NY: Signet Classics.

Malthus, T. (1976). *An essay of the principle of population: A Norton critical edition* (P. Appelman, Ed.). New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

Rappaport, R. (1984). *Pigs for the ancestors* (2nd ed.). New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Spencer, H. (1972). Population and progress. In J. D. Y. Peel (Ed.), *Herbert Spencer on social evolution* (pp. 33–37). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Manchester School

The Manchester school, a landmark in the history of British anthropology, represents the life and work of a group of distinguished ethnographers and their students at Manchester University's Department of Social Anthropology. It was founded in 1947 by Max Gluckman, who chaired it for the next 2 decades.

Beginnings

The school's innovative methodology and theory were rooted in an earlier phase in Gluckman's career as director of the Rhodes-Livingston Institute in south-central Africa. His close colleagues and students adopted some of his major formative ideas about ethnographic fieldwork and anthropological theory. Contesting earlier "functionalist-structuralist" anthropologists' perceptions of social life in their studies of tribal societies, he considered conflict an indispensable feature of social life in all small groups and larger human societies. He also revealed the weakness of ethnographic presentations based on "apt illustrations," namely, reliance on sporadic examples of social behavior portraying static structural societal features and postulating an authoritative code of normative behavior. Instead, he proposed what became known as the "extended-case method" or "situational analysis," which reported the follow-up over time of series of events that signified a dynamic process of ongoing relations between individuals and groups in a social system and a culture. That conceptual paradigm also demonstrated the fluctuations in real-life situations that modify the apparently commanding power of norms of social behavior and cultural prescriptions.

The extended-case research strategy demanded rich, detailed reporting of participants' behavior in the cases presented in the Manchester school's ethnographic writing. The school's practice of closely observing the minute behavior of individuals in daily intercourse and in ceremonial events appears akin to Erving Goffman's "symbolic interaction" conception as a strategy of research and interpretation. A number of ethnographies apparently became the hallmark of the Manchester school, such as Gluckman's own pioneering report of 1940, *Analysis of a Social Situation in Modern Zululand* (describing the inauguration ceremony of a bridge in South Africa and interpreting the mode of participation of the different constituencies of Whites and Blacks in a divided society), Clyde Mitchell's 1956 ethnographic presentation of *The Kalela Dance* (introducing the dynamics of interaction between various tribal groups drawn together in a new urban African setting), and Victor Turner's 1957 *Schism and Continuity in an African Society: A Study of Ndembu Village Life* (describing the contest of asymmetrical obligations of father/son/mother's brother/uncle in a matrilineal society). In all the above studies, the major sociological inquiry probed the strategies of containing conflict in situations of competing interests and ambiguous circumstances of moral accountability; in Gluckman's teaching, this conflict arises between community ideals and individual interest, often self-interest, in all human societies. An important hypothesis for the circumstances of reconciliation of belligerent groups was his idea of "cross-cutting ties." The theoretical leitmotiv in the above and other Manchester school works was the assumption that the micro situations are at once the representative and the outcome of the macro-socioeconomic-cultural social system. This approach, almost inevitably, was problem oriented at the outset of research and at the conclusion of ethnographic writings by the school's adherents—as against the more descriptive mode of the classic functionalist-structuralist ethnographic presentations.

The Extended-Case Method: An Example

An illuminating example among the later Manchester school works is Abner Cohen's 1965 ethnography *Arab Border Villages in Israel*, which is about the reemergence of competing and antagonistic *hamula* groups (patrilineal associations) in Arab villages after the defeat in the 1948 war, which left the Palestinian villagers who stayed on in the state of Israel an ethnic minority separated from the surrounding Arab world. Employing the extended-case method, Cohen described in detail some dramatic events that proved his conclusion about the new roles ascribed to these apparently defunct traditional kinship groups. The old norms of kinship obligations (e.g., insistence on in-*hamula* marriage) were now revived, offering a sense of security as well as economic and political support to villagers confronting the changing circumstances since the forced

separation from their relatives in other villages as well as the confiscation or loss of their land across the border (the "Green Line" separating Israel from the West Bank, which until 1967 was affiliated with the Kingdom of Jordan). Thus, for example, individuals (men and women) came under severe pressure exerted by their kinsmen to give up their choice of mates from other *hamula* groups.

Gluckman, who customarily wrote extensive forewords to most Manchester school ethnographies, offered a concise summary highlighting some of the major theoretical interests and the methodology advocated by the school as revealed in Cohen's book. A few final sentences in his foreword clearly present that agenda, as he concludes that the book is a study of social processes in which men and women react in terms of traditional allegiances, customs, and values to cataclysmic changes, which also animate in them new objectives. Change in process and purpose is displayed through continuity of social formations and culture, illuminated throughout by detailed analysis of actual events and the doings of particular men, who come to stand vividly before us. This is possible because the research that focuses on one village is made into a study of all Arab villages in the border region. Beyond that, it emerges as a study of general social problems, both in small communities and in general politics.

Evidently, Gluckman considered Cohen's work an outstanding ethnographic study, based on the extended-case method, reporting and theorizing on social processes (at one research site) as the consequences of the macro situation (economic and political factors in particular) affecting a wider population sharing the same environmental and social circumstances. It is indeed a showcase for the Manchester school's scientific paradigm exhibiting the interrelation between the individual and society, and between a micro situation and the macro forces impinging on the destiny of private lives, groups, and nations.

Training in the Manchester Research Tradition

The team of close colleagues and later recruits developed the strategies and rituals for training novices in the Manchester research tradition. Of particular renown was the series of weekly staff seminars, when the graduate students back from the field presented the first draft of major chapters in their planned dissertations. All teachers and students attended these sessions and were expected to comment on the reported field data and their sociological interpretation. These performances were anxiously experienced as rites of passage, when the novices had to defend their work, accept the obligatory sharp criticism about missing evidence, and follow constructive suggestions for new directions in developing their work. Most ethnographies that won their supervisors' approval for being in accord with the school's agenda and merit were recommended for publication by Manchester University Press. They all reflected the school's major characteristics in applying the extended-case method and its typical theoretical interests: the expression and containment of social conflicts (between individuals, groups, institutions, and discordant moral obligations). All were problem directed at an early stage of the research or later, when the connecting threads between the events they observed over time became revealed through the extended-case method.

In addition to being a model of professional training, the Manchester school was also unique in the social ambience of close relationships that for many years characterized daily life and intellectual interactions among its members, teachers, and students. In particular, the tradition of going regularly together to Manchester United soccer matches became famous. Gluckman would pick students up in his van on their way to the game, and afterward they would socialize at the local pub. That atmosphere of communality generated a feeling among school veterans and newcomers of sharing a distinctive theoretical perspective and advanced research tools for a better understanding of social life and culture in other societies near and far.

Although the Manchester school founding generation and their students in later years did most of their work in Africa (e.g., A. L. Epstein, Bruce Kapfferer, Norman Long, Jaap Van Velsen, and William Watson), many fieldwork projects were conducted by Manchester researchers elsewhere, too. Examples are Britain, Ronald Frankenberg; Cyrenaica, Emrys Peters; Norway, J. A. Barnes; and India, F. G. Bailey and Joyce Pettigrew. Dedicated to expanding the Manchester school legacy, in 1963, Gluckman launched his third grand research project, this time in Israel. Ten major studies had been accomplished by the time of his premature death in 1975. The blueprint of the project seemed to repeat

the agenda of the Rhodes-Livingstone Institute of the 1940s—in particular identifying the interaction between different ethnic groups and the maintenance of social order in spite of the centrifugal forces that separate them. In practice, all participants studied small social settings, villages, and towns mostly on the periphery of post-1948 Israeli society (e.g., Myron Aronoff, Shlomo Deshen, Don Handelman, Emanuel Marx, and Moshe Shokeid). All their ethnographic texts could be identified by the Manchester "trademark"—the extended-case method. Likewise, they all engaged in issues of conflict: between Jewish immigrants and the absorbing institutions, among political parties, among kinship groups, between individuals' material and spiritual expectations and the realities of daily life, and between old timers and newcomers in Israeli society. For example, the first ethnography, published in 1970 by Shlomo Deshen—*Immigrant Voters in Israel: Parties and Congregations in a Local Election Campaign*—reported his ongoing experiences as he attended activities in a new immigrant town in southern Israel during a national election campaign. He described in detail the fierce competition between various political parties, whose audacious delegates manipulated religious symbols to attract voters unaccustomed to a democratic state system.

However, Gluckman's ambition to conceptualize and represent a "holistic" portrayal of Israeli society was hardly accomplished through that sample of fieldwork projects. Characterizing the conflicts and other social problems reported in these studies as the outcome of the macro situation was undoubtedly conclusive, but they alone could not represent the "macro," that is, Israeli society. This project, although successful in the production of excellent ethnographies, nevertheless revealed the shortcomings of the Manchester school research scheme when applied to a complex industrialized society, in contrast to its role and achievements in presenting the major structural cleavages and cultural contradictions in colonial and postcolonial African societies.

Legacy

The Manchester school's heyday passed with Gluckman's retirement from the chairmanship of the department. But its decline in international anthropological discourse was no less due to the rise of new theoretical paradigms, in American anthropology in particular. Gluckman's neo-functionalism seemed outdated, and the work of many anthropologists of his generation and his close colleagues conducted in Africa and in other Third World societies came under criticism with the rise of the Marxist and other critiques of colonialism in the 1970s and the 1980s. The new genres of postmodernism and reflexivity left the Manchester school ethnographies behind, burdened by wearisome detailed descriptions and lacking the notion of the anthropologist's personal engagement. However, the younger students who moved on to other research fields, and accommodated the new theoretical winds in anthropology, carried with them to new academic centers their school's legacy of fieldwork. Actually, the Manchester school's methodology has been adopted—without its name—by many ethnographers in Europe and America. Particularly influential is the leading position attained by Victor Turner in American anthropology. His highly regarded writings (e.g., *The Forest of Symbols* and *The Ritual Process*) demonstrate a decisive achievement for the Manchester school in the arena of contemporary anthropology.

Moshe Shokeid

See also Gluckman, Max; Goffman, Erving; Rhodes-Livingstone Institute; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Burawoy, M. (1991). The extended case method. In M. Burawoy (Ed.), *Ethnography unbound: Power and resistance in the modern metropolis* (pp. 271–290). Berkeley: University of California.

Epstein, A. L. (Ed.). (1967). *The craft of social anthropology*. London, UK: Tavistock.

Evans, T. M. S., & Handelman, D. (Eds.). (2006). *The Manchester school: Practice and ethnographic praxis in anthropology*. New York, NY: Berghahn Books.

Gluckman, M. (1963). *Order and rebellion*. New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1965). *Politics, law and ritual in tribal society*. Oxford, UK: Basil Blackwell.

Kuper, A. (1983). *Anthropology and anthropologists: The modern British school*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Shokeid, M. (2004). Max Gluckman and the making of Israeli anthropology. *Ethnos, 69,* 387–410.

Werbner, R. P. (1984). The Manchester school in south central Africa. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 13,* 167–185.

Marcus, George

George E. Marcus (1946–), the American anthropologist and cultural theorist, is among the most important figures of contemporary American anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

Marcus was born in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. He is married to the historian Patricia Seed and has two children, Rachel and Avery. He was educated at Yale University; Queens College, Cambridge; and Harvard University. He has worked as Chancellor's Professor in the Department of Anthropology at the University of California, Irvine, since 2005—where he helped found the Center for Ethnography (www.ethnography.uci.edu)—and previously served as Joseph D. Jamail Professor (2001–2006) and chair (1980–2005) in the Department of Anthropology at Rice University, where he taught from 1975 to 2006. While at Rice, Marcus was a key participant in the Rice Circle (1983–1987)—a collaborative discussion group that included anthropologists and humanities faculty from the university and whose energies led to the formation of the Center for Cultural Studies. As a professor, Marcus has been especially concerned with the critical reimagination of fieldwork projects among graduate students. He has been a participant in prestigious professional seminars at the Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton University (1982–1983); Getty Center for the History of Art and the Humanities (1988–1989); Center for Advanced Study in the Behavioral Sciences, Stanford University (2004–2005); and others. In 1984, Marcus was a participant in a seminar at the School of American Research in Santa Fe, New Mexico, which later resulted in the publication of *Writing Culture* (1986)—a groundbreaking examination of ethnography. Marcus conducted ethnographic fieldwork among the Tongan islanders of Polynesia in the 1970s. His work considered the kingly order and nobility and later addressed the issue of Tongan identity given the contexts of globalization and diasporic communities. Later, he completed fieldwork among American dynastic families and cultural elites, and in works that include *Elites: Ethnographic Issues* (1983) and, with Peter Dobkin Hall, *Lives in Trust: The Fortunes of Dynastic Families in Late Twentieth Century America* (1992), he brought important attention to the understudied area of the anthropology of elites. Marcus has collaborated widely with artists, filmmakers, politicians, architects, philosophers, and economists.

Marcus served as the founding editor of *Cultural Anthropology, Journal of the Society for Cultural Anthropology.* His text *Writing Culture: The Poetics and Politics of Ethnography* (coedited with James Clifford, 1986) is considered one of the most influential texts of contemporary anthropology and is seen as having launched the contemporary critical (sometimes inaccurately called "postmodern") movement in anthropology. In the same year, he published *Anthropology as Cultural Critique: An Experimental Moment in the Human Sciences* (with Michael M. J. Fischer). This text established important theoretical precedents in anthropology and drew attention to the ideas of the critical perspective in anthropology, the repatriation of anthropology, and experimentalism. He later published a retrospective collection of essays on ethnography, *Ethnography Through Thick and Thin* (1998), which included a number of provocations—multisited ethnography, ethnographic complicity, and reflexivity—that would further guide anthropology into the next millennium. Marcus edited the Late Editions annual series (1993–2000)—a collection of critical essays that expressed the complexities of fin-de-siècle issues including nationalism, corporate culture, paranoia, cynicism, self-awareness, cultural change, and the zero state. His work with Fernando Mascarenhas—*Ocasião: The Marquis and the Anthropologist. A Collaboration* (2005)—offered an interesting model of collaboration that challenges the traditional relationships between anthropologists and key informants.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Marcus's contributions to anthropology are wide-ranging and seminal. A number of his ideas—including multisited ethnography, ethnographic complicity, anthropology as cultural critique, paraethnography, and the ideas of critical ("postmodern") ethnography that were generated with the publication of *Writing Culture*—continue to inspire professional anthropologists and anthropology graduate students alike.

In *Nobility and the Chiefly Tradition in the Modern Kingdom of Tonga* (1980), *Elites: Ethnographic Issues* (1983), *Lives in Trust: The Fortunes of Dynastic Families in Late Twentieth Century America* (1992), and *Ocasião: The Marquis and the Anthropologist. A Collaboration* (2005), Marcus established an important focus on the cultural dynamics of elites, dynastic families, and nobility. Especially salient is his emphasis on the need for new ethnographic approaches to the study of elites, the concept of eccentricity that is notable among some elites, and the requirement of focusing on elites not as exotic subjects of study but as meaningful sources of cultural information.

Critical Interdisciplinarity

Like Clifford Geertz before him, Marcus has displayed a strong commitment to lessening the disciplinary constraints of anthropology. Marcus's work, especially his edited collection *Writing Culture*, has broadly affected other disciplines that include art and performance studies, cultural studies, sociology, religious studies, architecture, literary criticism, philosophy, economics, political science, and others. In one such example, Cuban avant-garde artists of the 1980s were inspired by the textual, experimental, and critical influences that they discovered in *Writing Culture*, and some went on to produce work that was highly influenced by this collection. While at Rice University, Marcus encouraged and enabled discussions among anthropologists and those of other fields. These discussions included fiction writers and professional performance/installation artists. Another example of Marcus's commitment to the critical interdisciplinarity of cultural anthropology is his editing of the *Late Editions*—an annual series that established critical dialogues and debates among professionals and scholars of many different disciplines and backgrounds. His commitment to interdisciplinarity has angered some critics, who charge that Marcus has lessened the appeal of anthropology; in fact, it may be argued that his commitment has broadened and strengthened the appeal of anthropology.

Anthropological Pedagogy

In Marcus's work as a classroom professor at Rice University and the University of California, Irvine, he has focused on developing critical and engaging classroom seminars. Most notable is a particular proseminar course that he has frequently offered. This class utilizes the work of classic ethnography and contemporary ethnography and juxtaposes both with the context of original graduate student research. In a typical proseminar course, Marcus invites students to reflect on the disciplinary trajectories of these classic and contemporary moments in anthropology as a way of developing and revitalizing their original research projects. Marcus's efforts in pedagogy have had a considerable impact on the professional careers of the students he has mentored.

Anthropology as Cultural Critique

One of Marcus's most significant methodological innovations is his work on cultural critique. In a volume edited with Michael M. J. Fischer (1986), Marcus established a powerful and wide-sweeping paradigm that forced anthropology to seriously reconsider its core assumptions and revitalized important focus on the critical function of anthropology. Marcus and Fischer detail the major cultural shifts that have affected the ways in which anthropologists engage with culture through ethnography, and they suggest significant precedents that have established an "experimental moment" in anthropology. Cultural critique—in one sense an epistemological form that challenges analytical reason and in another a more direct form that focuses on uprooting specific social institutions and cultural forms—has had cultural precedence in the late 19th century, in the interwar years, and in the late 1960s through the present. Taken as a formative approach in anthropology, cultural critique offers new cultural interpretations of the discipline and ethnography, provides important criticisms of the anthropological binaries of "home" and "away," and suggests new modes of criticism within the discipline.

Critical Views of Ethnography

Writing Culture (1986), which Marcus coedited with James Clifford, represented a watershed moment in contemporary cultural anthropology. In a lecture in 1992 (Rice University, Houston, Texas), Marcus explained that, at its most general level, the text and the movement it generated acted as "a radical questioning of . . . ethnography itself as a form of knowledge." The text instituted a critical moment in anthropology that served to

anger some and inspire others. The foundations of Marcus's deep questioning of ethnography included his publication of *Ethnographies as Texts* (1982, with Dick Cushman). What was significant about this piece was its paradigm-setting argument that ethnographies could be viewed as texts. This problematizing of ethnography included overviews of the approaches of realist ethnography as well as the ideals of experimental ethnography and, much like *Writing Culture* to follow, this work emphasized the issue of the authority of ethnographic texts—an emphasis that would have a wide impact on contemporary cultural anthropology. Following this initial work on critical ethnography, Marcus, along with James Clifford, organized the 1984 School of American Research Seminar, which led to the publication of *Writing Culture*. With this work, Marcus helped usher in a new era of critical ethnography. The authors of this collection shared a common concern with the numerous implications of ethnography and the fieldwork project. The classic ethnographies of Bronisław Malinowski, the rhetorical strategies of ethnographers, the issue of cultural translation, and the topic of ethnography as situated within world historical systems are some of the many foci in the text that helped establish an explicit concern with what has been called, often pejoratively by some critics, the "literary turn in anthropology." Since his editing of *Writing Culture*, Marcus has continued to suggest a direction for the future of ethnography and anthropological fieldwork. He has been particularly committed to the development of new research imaginaries that guide the formation of alternative research trajectories, methodological approaches, and reimaginings of the relationship of the ethnographer to the field.

Multisited Ethnography

One of the most influential of Marcus's concepts of contemporary ethnography is the idea of multisited ethnography. This conceptualization of ethnography—what Marcus calls a "research imaginary"—breaks with the notion of the single-site ethnography and instead argues for an ethnography that is composed of multiple field sites. Marcus outlines the possibilities in terms of modes of construction—follow the people, thing, metaphor, story, life, or conflict—and considers the ways in which multisited ethnography resituates the ethnographer as a sort of circumstantial activist, a researcher torn between various fields' sites and contradictory personal and professional commitments. Like many of his other innovations, Marcus's view of multisited ethnography has affected disciplines outside anthropology, and now multisited ethnography has become a popular catchphrase in the social sciences, the humanities, and cultural studies.

Ethnographic Collaboration, Complicity, and Para-Ethnography

In *Ocasião: The Marquis and the Anthropologist. A Collaboration* (2005), Marcus explores the idea of ethnographic collaboration through an extended conversation with Fernando Mascarenhas, Marquis of Fronteira and Alorna. Through a series of 187 e-mails presented in epistolary form, the two critically and collaboratively produce a portrait of contemporary nobility in Portugal. This ethnographic collaboration highlights Marcus's ongoing interest in redefining notions of ethnographic collaboration. In work with the anthropologist Douglas Holmes, Marcus has suggested further redefinition of the ethnographic encounter. In conjunction with his work on multisited ethnography, he has offered the notion of ethnographic complicity—in which the ethnographer and the informant share a common predicament, a realization of being trapped in fieldwork situations characterized by uncertainty and anxiety—and in further work with Douglas Holmes on central bankers, he has focused on the concept of para-ethnography, an emergent form of ethnography that deals with the contemporary complexities of capitalism, globalization, and other systems that have produced a predicament of embedded discourse, overlapping actors, and continued complexities for the ethnographer.

Marcus's Legacy

Given the breadth of George Marcus's work and the influence that it has had within and outside anthropology, it can be said that Marcus is one of the most important figures in the discipline since the 1970s. Marcus's focus on critical views of ethnography, fieldwork, and epistemology continues to influence developments within cultural anthropology and affect the social sciences generally.

Scott A. Lukas

See also Clifford, James; Fischer, Michael; Geertz, Clifford; Postmodernism

Further Readings

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. E. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Marcus, G. E. (1980). *Nobility and the chiefly tradition in the modern kingdom of Tonga*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press.

———. (with Cushman, D.). (1982). Ethnographies as texts. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 11,* 25–69.

———. (1983). *Elites: Ethnographic issues*. Albuquerque, NM: School of American Research Press.

———. (1992, February 17). *Cultural anthropology at Rice since the 1980s*. Provost Lecture, Rice University, Houston, TX.

———. (with Hall, P. D.). (1992). *Lives in trust: The fortunes of dynastic families in late twentieth century America*. Boulder, CO: Westview.

———. (1998). *Ethnography through thick and thin*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Marcus, G. E., & Fischer, M. M. J. (1986). *Anthropology as cultural critique: An experimental moment in the human sciences*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Marcus, G. E., & Mascarenhas, F. (2005). *Ocasião: The marquis and the anthropologist. A collaboration*. Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira Press.

Marx, Karl

Karl Marx (1818–1883) is best known as a critic of capitalism and an advocate of class struggle as a means of overcoming the contradictions of the capitalist system and achieving socialism/communism.

Early on, Marx studied law in Bonn and later in Berlin, where his interests turned to philosophy, and he joined the circle of "Left Hegelians," who sought to draw atheistic and revolutionary conclusions from Hegel's philosophy. Throughout his life, he served as editor/journalist/commentator on the events of his day and did not shy away from fierce polemics with his political and philosophical rivals. Marx's early journalistic activities convinced him that he was not sufficiently acquainted with political economy, and he energetically set out to correct that deficiency. His subsequent life combined scholarly work of great erudition in philosophy and political economy with activism in the struggles of the working-class movement of his time, for which his scholarly work provided the raison d'être and for which he was successively expelled from one European country after another.

Beginning in the 1840s, he began a collaboration with Friedrich Engels, which continued throughout his life in both scholarly and political realms. It was Engels who supported Marx and his family during their exile in England in the last days of Marx's life, and it was Engels who posthumously edited Volumes 2 and 3 of Marx's life work, *Capital*.

From 1852 until the onset of the American Civil War, Marx was the London correspondent of the *New York Tribune*. His articles were often extensive serial analyses of the political and economic circumstances of the various countries of Europe, but the arrangement was not especially remunerative.

The London years were mainly devoted to the study of political economy, and Marx spent long hours at the British Museum. But he never completely abandoned practical politics. Marx and Engels were principal movers in the formation of the International Workingmen's Association, the so-called First International, founded in London in 1864. Marx hammered out a strategy for the proletarian struggle of the working class in the various countries of Europe, under which the French Proudhonists, German Communists, and English New Trade Unionists worked together, until the movement was split by the anarchist wing led by Mikhail Bakunin. Marx and Engels also played a role in organizing support for and advising the revolutionaries of the Paris Commune in 1871 and in analyzing its failure in the aftermath.

In increasingly poor health, and following shortly on the death of his wife, Jenny, Marx peacefully passed away in his armchair on March 14, 1883. He lies buried with his wife in the Highgate Cemetery, London.

There are several ways in which Marx's work remains relevant to the conduct of contemporary anthropology, but to open oneself to these possibilities, it helps to separate the excesses of the existing socialist/communist states (which Marx never lived to see) from his analysis of the real existing capitalism of his own time (which remains relevant today).

Marx employed the perspectives of historical materialism and dialectical materialism to mount a kind of anthropological analysis of the capitalist system. More than 100 years later, in the 1960s, in the hands of the French neo-Marxists, his concepts were creatively adapted for use in the analysis of

the precapitalist and postcolonial societies typically studied by anthropologists, and they have subsequently been applied in the field of economic anthropology. In this latter area, the Marxist approach shares some understandings of the human condition with the "substantivist" position of Karl Polanyi and his followers, and it has also been inspirational in the formulation of alternative models of economic development.

Materialism

Marx was first and foremost a proponent of what he called *historical materialism*, a theoretical position that argues that the activities in which humans participate to fulfill their basic material needs will impose certain requirements on the population that, in turn, will determine the range within which the social relations in that society might vary, and influence the range within which the thoughts of its members might wander.

For example, if you grow rice as your basic subsistence crop, the rhythm of your annual activity will be tied to the various stages in the maturation of the particular species of rice that you plant, imposing on you the necessity to perform certain activities at certain times of the year, requiring you to organize your social life and system of belief in such a way as to allow those activities to be performed. Multiple arrangements are possible, as long as they allow the activities necessary to materially provision society to be carried out in a timely fashion.

In this way, Marx made a distinction between the economic base that is determinate of the overall shape of society and the ideological superstructure that arises from that economic base, providing the population with a system of belief that should allow them to reproduce the system as a whole—that is, that strains toward consistency with the requirements of the economic base. The economic base is characterized by a distinct mode of production, which in turn is composed of a particular combination of forces of production (tools, machines, and technology) and relations of production (the organization of humans to put those forces of production to work).

Marx claimed to be an exponent of *dialectical materialism*, which allows that the ideological superstructure (which includes the cognitive and expressive dimensions of social life, religious belief, philosophy, political struggle, art, and music) may from time to time structure the way in which the forces of production and the relations of production are set in motion. For Marx, class struggle, a quintessential superstructural phenomenon, was the motive force of history, the dynamic force that brought about change in the mode of production, and hence change in society as a whole. Marxist anthropology understands class as an important parameter of social inquiry. As regards the dialectical relationship between base and superstructure, the French neo-Marxists have pointed out that in the societies in which anthropologists are prone to carry out research, kinship relations often function as relations of production in the Marxist sense insofar as they play a role in structuring how the forces of production are deployed, and they can therefore be construed as an element of the economic base.

Applied to the pursuit of anthropological fieldwork, a materialist approach (dialectical or otherwise) would give initial attention to those activities most closely tied to the material subsistence of community members, whether hunting and gathering, subsistence agriculture, plantation agriculture, commercial mechanized agriculture, simple commodity production, industrial wage labor, and so on, and to the social relations, whether class or kinship relations, entailed in these arrangements (to the forces and relations of production).

The Analysis of Capitalism

For Marx, industrial capitalism was characterized by several distinctive contradictions, principally the contradiction between the increasingly cooperative, social nature of production under capitalism, and the private ownership of the means of production. He also noted the tendency for competition to eliminate itself, resulting in monopoly, and argued that in the end the competitive and creative impulse of capitalism is self-destructive, leading to repeated crises and ultimately to the demise of the system altogether. It must be admitted in this regard that despite its numerous crises during the past century, capitalism has proved more durable than Marx predicted.

Marx's principal work, *Das Kapital* (*Capital*), is a kind of anthropology of the capitalist system. It begins with an examination of the system's most elementary unit, the commodity. It espouses a labor theory of value, which understands the value of

a commodity to be determined by the amount of socially necessary labor expended in its production, plus an increment of surplus labor imparted to the commodity during the production process. The laborer's wage is determined by the labor power socially necessary to reproduce himself (sufficiently so as to keep him fit enough to return to work the following day), rather than the amount of labor power he actually adds to the commodities he produces during the time he is employed. The difference is surplus value that redounds to the capitalist as profit when the commodity's value is realized in circulation (sold on the market). The surplus labor is disguised in the wage contract, which creates the illusion that the laborer is being paid for his full day's work but in fact hides from him the amount of surplus labor extracted in the process of production for which he is not recompensed.

Marx was at pains to point out that capital is a social relation between members of differently situated classes, not a thing in itself. In 1849, he famously wrote in Chapter 5 of *Wage Labor and Capital*,

> A Negro is a Negro. Only under certain conditions does he become a slave. A cotton-spinning machine is a machine for spinning cotton. Only under certain conditions does it become capital. Torn away from these conditions, it is as little capital as gold is itself money, or sugar is the price of sugar. (p. 25)

Thus, the origin of profit lies in the very act of production, in the relations of production between labor and capital, rather than in the hurly-burly sphere of circulation. Exploitation is concealed in the wage contract, which has the appearance of being a contract between equals. The whole point of Marx's analysis of the capitalist system was to expose its underlying, if often obscured, exploitative character.

Commodity fetishism was Marx's term for the ideological characteristic of people who live in market-based capitalist societies, in which value is seen to reside in objects or commodities themselves rather than being understood as the product of a specified amount of labor power imparted to the commodity in the process of production (including the labor power socially necessary to reproduce the worker, plus an increment of surplus labor that accrues to the capitalist). Commodity fetishism is part of the false consciousness that functions as a kind of blinder disguising from participants the exploitative nature of the relations of production under capitalism.

It is the historical role of the working class (the proletariat) to overcome its false consciousness, understand the system for what it is, and through organized political activity bring about the overthrow of the capitalist system and the creation of a communist system free of exploitation, as expressed in the slogan "From each according to his ability, to each according to his needs." The enormous productivity released by the capitalist system would be sufficient to supply the needs of all members of society if the means of production were socialized, the private profit of the capitalist class eliminated, and goods more equitably distributed.

The French Neo-Marxists

Those espousing Marxist approaches in the social sciences in the United States were, with a few exceptions, purged from academic and political life during the late 1940s and 1950s, when the combined attacks of Senator Joseph McCarthy and various congressional committees charged with uncovering communist subversion succeeded in delegitimizing Marxist discourse and relegating its advocates to the margins of American society.

But in France, where the communist alternative to capitalism was taken more seriously, the academic world was spared such attacks, and in the post–World War II period, there ensued a re-exploration of the significance of Marxist approaches in the social sciences that came to a head in the 1960s and reverberated across the Atlantic to influence American academia as well. In general, the French neo-Marxists favored a more flexible, nuanced approach in their application of Marxist concepts than the Soviet Stalinist theorists of Marx, whose more economic deterministic understandings had dominated the interpretation of Marx's writings up to that point. With some input from French structuralist anthropology, the neo-Marxists adapted the concepts that Marx had devised to analyze capitalism to the analysis of the pre-capitalist and postcolonial societies typically studied by anthropologists. As mentioned above, this included the recognition that kinship relations might indeed function as relations of production, making the distinction between economic base and superstructure in such societies somewhat less clear. But they also reconceptualized

Marx's feudal and Asiatic modes of production as variations of a single, more all-encompassing "tributary" mode of production and wrestled with the possibility that multiple modes of production might coexist in a single society in a given historical period.

Economic Anthropology

The Marxist approach, with its focus on the mode of production, has been most influential in the subdiscipline of economic anthropology, which in its early days was consumed by a debate between the so-called formalists and substantivists. The debate turned on whether, as the formalists contended, humans were to be understood as pretty much the same in all times and all places, as maximizers of utility, always constrained by scarcity to make choices in their allocation of scarce resources to alternative ends, *Homo economicus* incarnate, or whether, as Karl Polanyi argued, the emergence of capitalism in the 19th century was fundamentally transformative of human relations: that human nature was malleable; that prior to the emergence of capitalism, one could not assume that all human behavior was motivated by the pursuit of gain; and that *Homo economicus* was not a human universal. Polanyi was an economic historian, and for him it was anachronistic to assume that human behavior prior to the emergence of capitalism could be understood by employing the tools of an economic science designed to understand capitalism. But it is easy to see why his approach was received enthusiastically in the cultural-relativist environment of American anthropology. Polanyi characterized his theoretical position as the substantivist approach to economics, and he proposed the transactional modes of reciprocity and redistribution as ways of understanding the provisioning of society prior to the emergence of free market capitalism at the end of the 18th century.

Marx was also concerned with the processes by means of which capitalism had evolved out of the institutions of a pre-capitalist, feudal Europe, and he argued for the transformative effects of capitalism on human relations as well. For Marx, those effects were a temporary aberration in human history that would be superseded, and therefore capitalism ought not to be understood as the most potent expression of a universal unchanging human nature. Thus, a Marxist approach might be said to have more in common with substantivism, even while its emphasis on the forces and relations of production in society provides an approach alternative to both substantivism and formalism in economic anthropology. The neo-Marxist reconceptualization of the notion of the tributary mode of production reinforces that commonality with substantivism insofar as the concept bears a distinct similarity to Polanyi's redistributive transactional mode.

Economic Development

The Marxist approach was also inspirational in the critiques of the economic development theory of the 1950s and the 1960s, which resulted in the emergence of dependency theory and world-systems theory. Finding the orthodox development models of the era hopelessly naive in their assumptions, dependency theorists stressed the asymmetrical, exploitative character of the relationships between former colonial powers and their former colonies. Where such relations of dependency existed, one could not expect development to occur no matter how many well-intentioned, locally based aid projects might be tried. World-systems theory represented a further attempt to provide an alternative development paradigm, one that understood the world as a single system, with differently endowed sectors, core and periphery, as a means of revealing the structural obstacles to development in the very relationships touted to foster it. It is precisely in this impulse to reveal the asymmetry and the exploitation obscured in apparently benign relationships between world economic sectors that dependency and world-systems theorists share some affinities with the Marxist approach. They align themselves with the oppressed and the disadvantaged of the system, with the "wretched of the earth."

At present, with globalization already acknowledged globally, one might conclude that world-systems theory has carried the day, but the class perspective that makes dependency theory and world-systems theory a way of speaking truth to power seems absent in the contemporary representation of globalization as a naturalized force in the world.

Conclusion

Despite the flexible adaptation of Marxist concepts by the French neo-Marxists, and the relevance

of these concepts to contemporary economic anthropology and development theory, more recent critiques of Marx have called attention to his Eurocentrism and to the assumptions of the evolutionary theory, which he shared with his contemporaries of the 19th century. It has been questioned whether his characterization of capitalism as a phenomenon unique to 19th-century western Europe was ever appropriate, and certainly his notion of an "Asiatic mode of production" as a stagnant formation lacking the dynamism of the capitalist West has not stood up to more recent scholarship in comparative world history.

Still in all, the present crisis in world financial markets, which began in 2008, makes Marx's understandings of the contradictions of the capitalist system all the more relevant to an understanding of the contemporary world. So long as we continue to have faith in the benign tendency of the market to self-correct, Marxist perspectives will continue to have relevance to understanding the reasons why a world organized on that basis persistently fails to meet the needs of large sections of its population.

Gene Cooper

See also Dependency Theory; Economic Anthropology; Polanyi, Karl; Structural Marxism; Structuralism; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Bloch, M. (1980). *Marxism and anthropology*. London, UK: Routledge.

Braverman, H. (1974). *Labor and monopoly capital*. New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.

Frank, A. G. (1998). *Reorient: Global economy in the Asian age*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Godelier, M. (1977). *Perspectives in Marxist anthropology*. London, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Mintz, S. (1986). *Sweetness and power*. New York, NY: Penguin Books.

Polanyi, K. (1949). *The great transformation*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press.

Sahlins, M. (1978). *Culture and practical reason*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Taussig, M. (1980). *The devil and commodity fetishism*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press.

Wolf, E. (1982). *Europe and the people without history*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Marxist Anthropology

The 1970s saw a set of outspoken antagonistic theoretical positions emerging in anthropology. The most popular and articulate of these positions were Marxist and feminist, which regularly overlapped. Marxist work was energized by the various world rebellions of the 1960s and 1970s, as well as by the massive increase in student numbers and teaching positions in university systems. It was informed by the recent publication in English of anthropologically relevant texts by Marx and Engels that had not been available before, such as the *Grundrisse* and the *Ethnological Notebooks*. The work of the French Marxist philosopher Louis Althusser, who had a substantial influence over a rapidly expanding field of French Marxist anthropologists, was important as a background inspiration too. In America, and for a short while in the United Kingdom and the rest of Europe, world-systems theory, "the development of underdevelopment," "uneven development," and imperialism theories, programmatically affiliated with Marxism through Vladimir Lenin, Rosa Luxemburg, and Lev Trotsky, helped form its wider politico-intellectual environment. In a later phase, Marxian anthropologists took inspiration from Antonio Gramsci via British cultural Marxists such as Raymond Williams and Stuart Hall and from British Marxist historians such as Edward Thompson and Eric Hobsbawm. By 2000, urban anthropology was acquiring a more Marxian twist through the work of the Marxist geographer/anthropologist David Harvey and his French inspirer Henri Lefebvre.

This entry describes three epochs of Marxist anthropology since the 1970s, organized around their guiding paradigms, modes of production (1970–1985), class and hegemony (1985–), and globalization and financialization (1995–). It is not assumed that this is the only valid categorization of the field, or an exhaustive one. For reasons of space, Marxian anthropological work in urban studies, on the neoliberalism issue, on domestic and "petty commodity" production, and in British development studies, for instance, will not be elaborated on.

Marxist theories in the anthropology of the 1970s rejected the assumptions of structural functionalism, culturalism/idealism, and "vulgar" functionalism/"vulgar" materialism, which were

dominant in "bourgeois" anthropology up to the late 1960s. Marxist theories were also explicitly employed to promote global and historical theorization and comparison in anthropology. In the 1980s and 1990s, Marxist approaches were countered and diluted by the increasingly popular Geertzian hermeneutics and forms of postmodernism, which reemphasized relativism, local cultural knowledge, synchronic ethnographic case studies, and the impossibility of "grand historical narratives." "Neoliberalization" of academia and the wider world and capitalist triumphalism after the collapse of the socialist societies in Central and Eastern Europe also powerfully served to both repress and rephrase Marxist positions. Neoliberal outlooks showed a marked elective affinity with postmodernist relativism and the ethnographic turn toward cultural knowledges. The consequent theoretical void was gradually and only partly filled up by French theorists such as Gilles Deleuze, Michel Foucault, and Pierre Bourdieu. Marxian approaches meanwhile were sustained under the less provocative names of "political economy" and "anthropology and history" (although the majority of research under those headings was not necessarily Marxian).

From the emergence of the global justice movement in the late 1990s onward, Marxian positions reemerged in anthropology, though rarely claiming the Marxist mantle in full. They accelerated demonstrably with the start of the financial and social crises beginning in 2007, crises that were associated with neoliberalism and market rule and that could not be seriously analyzed in terms derived from Clifford Geertz, Foucault, or Bourdieu. Interest in (finance) capitalism, class, labor, and dispossession, key Marxian symbols, as well as resistance (not something alien to the Marxist heritage) grew tangibly, inside and outside academia, within and without anthropology. The Marxist geographers David Harvey and Neil Smith were offered Distinguished Chairs in anthropology at City University of New York's Graduate Center shortly after Eric Wolf's death in 1999, and both had a strong though diffuse influence on the wider field. One reason for that influence was the gradual opening toward doing "anthropology at home" in Europe and the United States, as well as the increasing importance of urban studies. If the "tribe" and the peasant had been core symbols of Marxist anthropology in the 1970s, the worker, the urban dweller, the "precariate," and the "surplus population" were the key symbols of the new anthropological Marxisms of the 21st century. These Marxisms were decidedly multiple and showed less deference to classical texts than Marxist anthropology of the 1960s and 1970s. After 2000, the conferences of the large anthropology associations began featuring well-attended sessions again that brought Marxian languages back into circulation.

Modes of Production

Marxist anthropology in the 1970s was primarily concerned with the mode-of-production concept, more perhaps than with understandings of class. Classically, Marxist scholars have made a distinction between the younger and the older Marx. The former engaged with broad philosophical and historical notions, while the latter turned primarily to political economy. But Marxist anthropology in the 1970s emerged out of a reading of what one could call the third period of Marx's politico-intellectual engagements. In the last years of his life, Marx read extensively in the anthropology and history of precapitalist modes of production. He was particularly interested in L. H. Morgan's *Ancient Society* (1877) and in the history of German land tenure. His interests also included India, Russia, and the Roman Empire. In *The German Ideology* (1846), Marx had developed a historical sequence of modes of production. But it was only in this later period, after more anthropological and historical research had become available, that Marx was able to flesh out his vision in more precise historical terms. His intention in reading Morgan and others was to understand the capitalist mode of production more fully as compared with older modes of production. "Primitive communism" was supposed to have reigned over mankind before the emergence of private property, classes, and the state. In this late "ethnographic" period, Marx began to think that there might not have been a necessary teleology or sequence of modes of production from primitive to capitalist. He suggested the possibility that a socialist revolution could occur in Russia without an intermediate capitalist phase, carried through by peasants who wanted the return of the *Mir* (commune) organization of agriculture.

In his notebooks on Morgan's *Ancient Society* as well as in the *Grundrisse*, Marx used his concept

of mode of production in a rather exploratory and eclectic way. For example, the number of modes of production he identified varied between five and seven. Additionally, there are places where he talks about "the association of direct producers" as a submerged mode that regularly occurred in the interstices of various, more hierarchical modes. Marx seems to have used modes of production as shorthand, sufficient for the task of making some key sensitizing distinctions about class relationships, property, and the state in different types of societies, rather than as a fixed evolutionary sequence with sharply demarcated phases.

Some of the less distinguished scholarly discussion in Marxist anthropology, however, took the modes of production as sharp analytic concepts meant to separate historical epochs and types of societies. The drive for global and generalizing knowledge among young Marxists in anthropology in the 1970s was palpable, and fieldwork was slow to catch up with the steep acceleration of theoretical learning that took place as they read Marx. Jonathan Friedman, educated in both France and the United States, later frankly characterized his own and his colleagues' work as "excessively theoreticist."

That theoreticism was a crucial part of French Marxist anthropology, however. And while there was excess, it also led to a higher level of sophistication in anthropology. One of the basic epistemological moves of Maurice Godelier and others was to emphasize the nonempiricist nature (*not* nonempirical) of Marxist inquiry against the common methodological assumptions of British structural functionalism and American neo-evolutionism. Marxist anthropology took Marx's dialectical method seriously. Abstraction did not simply derive from aggregated empirical data. Aggregations were mere empirical abstractions but not theoretical concepts. Theoretical concepts were constructions of the analyst. They were meant to capture the key relations between diverse observable facts and processes within a society and to integrate these into a logical model. Those relations, Marx and the anthropological Marxists believed, determined the mode of movement and the structural tendencies of the development of a society. Knowing a social formation was equal to knowing the modes of movement of such a formation, based on the relations among its parts. The intellectual strategy behind the concept of mode of production did precisely this: It served to discover the relevant key relations and the consequent processes and transformations that were set in motion through the effort to reproduce those key relations within a consequently patterned process of accumulation. Marxist anthropologists such as Godelier and Friedman therefore stressed the contradictions of social reproduction over time often more than production per se.

Modes of production and their dynamics could not just be read off actual empirically observable production processes. They were not reducible to work and tools. Work and tools were part of the observable "relations *in* production"; but a mode-of-production analysis combined these relations *in* production with an analysis of "relations *of* production," which were the social relations of extraction, surplus appropriation, property forms, law, and the state. One could therefore not empirically separate the base from the superstructure within a social formation in a rigorous way. Base and superstructure were *analytically* distinguishable "structures" or "levels," not separable chunks of an observable reality. Researchers could not a priori be certain what the infrastructural aspects and what the superstructural aspects of a social formation should be. Godelier and others rejected categorically the projection of the key Marxist division of base and superstructure onto "primitive" and precapitalist societies. This categorical distinction between different institutional levels was the exclusive historical property of capitalist society, the property that had enabled Marx to actually discover "the base" and the preeminent function of labor and "economics" within social reproduction. But for precapitalist societies, still the specialist object of anthropology in the 1970s, this was misleading. The base or infrastructure was held to be an "articulation of those levels of a social formation" that together served to secure the reproduction of a mode of production over time. Labor was by definition a part of it, as capitalism had taught us, but so could be kinship, law, ritual, and cosmology.

A key critique of the Marxists against British structural functionalists concerned the idea that kinship, not economics, determined behavior in "primitive" societies. Rather, the Marxists argued, kinship appeared dominant precisely because it organized the key reproductive functions of primitive modes of production. Kinship was a "generalized institution" and therefore appeared dominant. But the

economic infrastructure, which it encapsulated, was determinant.

The mode of production, then, was the opposite of a reductionist notion. This is in contrast to the ideas of economy and action that prevailed in neoevolutionist, economic, and ecological anthropology, which were often derived from a straightforward liberal notion of rational action. Of the proliferating Marxisms of the 1970s, Marxist anthropology was programmatically among the least reductionist. Its mode-of-production concept was also both more precise and less empiricist than the substantivist notion of economics springing from the work of Karl Polanyi.

Marxist discussions in anthropology excelled when they set out to discover complex historical combinations of modes of production within one social formation. Such studies focused on discovering the logics of accumulation, the consequent contradictions of social reproduction over time, and the transformational logics suggested by them. Thus, Godelier (1977) criticized Marshall Sahlins's research on "the familial mode of production" for confusing class-based with classless modes. He rejected Sahlins's distinction of band-based, tribe-based, and "chiefdom-based" societies within the larger category of one "familial mode of production" as based on misguided empiricist methods focused merely on "relations *in* production." He argued that with the transition from tribal organization to hereditary chiefdoms, one is confronted with the emergence of class-based societies and the state.

Marxist anthropologists such as Godelier and Friedman were particularly good at increasing our insights into the overlapping dynamics of chiefdoms and Asiatic modes of production. Godelier analyzed the Inca civilization as a social formation dominated by an Asiatic mode of production. At its apex was a theocratic state–bureaucratic complex organized by a surplus-taking hereditary ruling class, which claimed exclusive property over all territory. The state extracted forced labor dues from village-based lineages, whose communal modes and rituals were superficially left intact. However, these had acquired fundamentally different functions by now, serving the sun god and his son, the Inca ruler.

Friedman's modeling (1998) of key relations of social reproduction among the hill dwellers of Southeast Asia demonstrated the precise contradictions of such societies. These contradictions led to a systemic sequence of change, transformation, and finally devolution and collapse. Friedman thus showed the actual logics behind the oscillation of horizontal (*gumlao*) and hierarchical (*gumsa*) social relations in the uphill societies of Burma that Edmund Leach had first analyzed. Leach saw this oscillation as an alternation between opposed cultural ideals, basically explained by happenstance and cultural choice. Friedman argued that all societies in the region, not just the Kachin described by Leach, went through similar though not necessarily synchronized sequences. *Gumsa* chiefdoms would emerge from the successful accumulation of resources, producing court societies with elaborate festive rituals around increasingly sacrilized chiefs. This came close to an Asiatic mode of production as described by Marx, with sharply polarized class relations between rulers and villagers. But at some point, hard limits to further development would be reached by the sheer limitations of resources in land and labor. Such limitations would then lead to an overstretching of noble claims, the decline of deference, the collapse of courts, and a fracturing of social relations and institutions. Thus, the horizontal *gumlao* model of more or less independent clusters of peasant households would return at the end of the cycle, after which hierarchical accumulation would start anew. Friedman suggested that similar processes underlay comparable cycles in China, but with higher limits on accumulation. Leach's original observations were now provided with a materialist explanation, but the notion of Asiatic modes as essentially static, durably class polarized, and lacking the characteristic middle layer of propertied entrepreneurs who had presumably led Europe on its path to capitalist growth was rejected as a Eurocentric fantasy.

By the later 1970s, the limitations of Althusser's "structural Marxism" were becoming obvious. In particular, critical anthropologists were increasingly rejecting its assumption of discrete and bounded societies as basic units of analysis—an assumption that it in fact shared with much of the anthropology of the era. In France, anthropological interest was growing in the work of Samir Amin. Anglophone anthropology was inspired by the work of André Gunder Frank and Immanuel Wallerstein, offering a fresh transnational perspective not only on capitalism but also on society in general. Anthropological languages of Marxism were changing as a consequence

of this transnational turn. The concept of articulation, for example, began to refer increasingly not only to the articulation of levels or structures within a territorialized mode of production but also to the articulation of modes of production throughout space. This was particularly evident in discussions of the articulation of capitalism with other modes of production such as feudal modes (often in reference to Latin America) and "domestic modes" (Africa).

In *Peasant Wars of the Twentieth Century* (1972), Eric Wolf had developed a transnational and imperial perspective on peasant resistance and Third World revolution. *Europe and the People Without History* (1982), Wolf's magnum opus, now universalized this approach. While remaining within the orbit of modes-of-production analysis, Wolf started his book with a chapter on "connections," showing the intensity of exchanges among different people and cultures before the emergence of the modern world system, which would further accelerate as well as reorient (in fact "re-occident") such connections. In a series of rich historical chapters, he then analyzed how European world economic expansion subjected the societies it encountered to its own commercial and capitalist exploits. He showed in detail how it thereby unsettled and transformed their internal relations in ways that varied from drastic to genocidal, all along criticizing earlier anthropological ideas of isolated and "history-less" societies.

Consciously moving away from the Althuserian theoretical framework, *Europe and the People Without History* was arguably—and paradoxically, given Althusser's initial role—the culmination of a decade of Marxist anthropological research on modes of production. While the book should probably be read first of all for its rich historical understandings, it contained significant further Marxist theorizing on modes of production. Wolf took Marx's conception of modes of production in the loose spirit that Marx himself seemed to have preferred. Referring to "key relationships" in the deployment of social labor (*in and of production*), he reduced the five to seven modes that Marx had distinguished to just three: (1) a capitalist mode, (2) a kinship-based mode, and (3) a tributary mode. He also refused to imply a necessary teleology among them. The Asiatic mode was brought together with feudal modes in the single-umbrella concept of the tributary mode. This allowed for the oscillation between more centralized and more decentralized phases in the development of tributary systems such as Friedman had suggested. Wolf also made an explicit claim for understanding the capitalist mode as only beginning with the actual domination of capital over the sphere of production: that is, with the coming of the factory system in late-18th-century England.

While the aligning of feudal and Asiatic modes into the one concept of the tributary mode has been of enduring theoretical value, the limitation of the capitalist mode to factory-based social production was in retrospect a less productive maneuver. For one, right at the time of Wolf's writing, Western capitalism itself started de-industrializing and financializing, giving rise to new formations of surplus populations and to the de-proletarianization of modern social structures. More generally, it seems that much of Marxist writing in anthropology and history had underestimated the sheer relevance of property and finance, including large-scale speculation and credit-debt structures, all throughout post–Bronze Age history, including the imperial political forms necessary to sustain and foster them. If capitalism had to be sharply demarcated from what came before, a different approach was required (see below).

However, Wolf's vision of the making and remaking of working classes within an ever differentiating, recompositioning, and respatializing world capitalism, as evinced in the last chapter of his magnum opus, proved enormously enabling for the emergent anthropological study of labor in modern capitalist habitats. This crystallized in the 1980s under different headings (also see below) and acquired new vigor after 2000 as the "new anthropology of labor."

Class, Power, and Hegemony

The work of Wolf and the structural Marxists was strongly criticized within fieldwork-driven anthropology for its prevailing macro-institutional and macro-historical orientation. Anthropology, specializing in research in micro settings, offered robust internal barriers to the world-historical agenda of the Marxists, even though that agenda anticipated the tasks of the social sciences in a rapidly globalizing capitalist world rather well. Such criticisms also served to clear the way for a renewed wave of culturalism that privileged the study of how particular people felt and thought about themselves rather

than seeking to explain those thoughts, let alone the course of human history.

The critique was not entirely unfounded. Whatever the quality of Wolf's insights into particular cases, *Europe and the People* featured few genuine efforts to get close to popular experience. This was partly the consequence of the effort to paint such a macroscopic canvas, partly the effect of the mode-of-production agenda itself, which remained profoundly macro-institutional. Marxian-inspired authors in the New Social History, emerging in parallel with Marxist anthropology, had privileged class, class struggle, "social being," and "experience" rather than more formal modes-of-production analysis. For example, Edward Thompson rejected Althusserian intellectualism and structuralism in *The Poverty of Theory* (1978) and had superbly shown in *The Making of the English Working Class* (1963) that a much more ethnographic and existentialist alternative was available. Raymond Williams and Stuart Hall had demonstrated how Antonio Gramsci and Valentin Volosinov could be used for contemporary sociocultural analysis of British youth cultures, working-class cultures, and the emergent populist authoritarianism of Margaret Thatcher. A younger cohort of left-wing anthropologists from the mid-1970s onward built on these examples to articulate an alternative Marxian anthropology, one that sought to develop a radical ethnographic style without losing the vital Marxist interest in power, history, and space. Class, hegemony, and avoidance/resistance/protest as forms of culture making in densely situated contexts of inequality and power/powerlessness became its key tools. Its underlying methodology was "relational realism." Making their academic careers in the neoliberal 1980s and 1990s, these scholars preserved Marx by retuning his heritage under respectable academic labels such as "anthropology and history," economic anthropology, and "anthropological political economy."

While mainstream anthropology went looking for the Geertzian "webs of meaning," Marxian anthropologies of class sought to expose what Ingmar Bergman once called "the tissue of lies" that informs lives and biographies in class societies. Hegemony however was not primarily about "ideology." Rather, it was about whole ways of life structured by territorially ingrained power relationships of capital, state, and class. Analyses in this vein were often multiscalar in Wolfian fashion, seeking what Don Kalb (2010) called the "critical junctions" connecting global capitalist geographic power frames with national histories and locally situated historical structures of accumulation and everyday life. They made a determined effort to assemble dense local ethnographies and reveal the silences, inversions, rationalizations, concessions, confrontations, and so on, of hegemonic and relational power fields. Where the New Social History had found agency and self-conscious historical praxis, Marxian anthropologists often found contradictory social ties of dependence, deep ambiguities, and unhappy though proud evasion.

Three works provide good illustrations of this ethnographic Marxism. They also show the partial shift in anthropological locations from the tribes and peasants of the South to the small producers and working classes of the West/North, which was selectively ongoing in this same period.

Gerald Sider's *Culture and Class in Anthropology and History* (1986), a study of Newfoundland outport fishing settlements, is set in a long time frame of British mercantile capitalism that did not penetrate into the sphere of production as required in Wolf's view but that thoroughly shaped fishermen's lives nevertheless. Fishermen were forbidden to hold land in this crown colony. They depended on advances from mercantile agents for their livelihoods, both for the procurement of food and tools and for the sale of their fish. They lived in dispersed communities of isolated households in a harsh climate antagonistically integrated into a centralized mercantile monopoly. Unable to influence the terms of trade, they were dealt with by the agents on an individual basis. This included, for some but not for others, being left to starve in the long winters. Sider traces the contradictory and idiosyncratic socialities and social rituals that developed within this set of forcefully exploitative relations of "community." His fishermen, later under Canadian administration, were fighting "within and against their own histories." They refused to believe in the possible benevolence of any sovereignty over them, evaded imposed order, but also finally failed to find a common voice to speak to the Canadian state, which dismantled their societies when the cod fisheries became unprofitable and welfare too costly.

In *Immediate Struggles: People, Power and Place in Rural Spain* (2006), Susana Narotzky and Gavin Smith trace a 20th-century history of class conflict in the Vega Baja, near Valencia, Spain. The Civil

War and the consequent Francoist repression had served to thoroughly destroy trust in public authority. Dispersed workshops were augmented by home industry networks. Such networks exploited (and favored) female kinship connections, thus colluding exploitation with family and friendship and making social ties both strong and fragile. This left workers vertically dependent on employers, middlemen, and their blackmailing tactics—tactics that were subtly fine-tuned into the post-Francoist welfare state. The European Union, meanwhile, had helped transform a cohort of local critical left-wing researchers and politicians into project proposal–writing professionals, while the local commercial media kept celebrating the advent of "European modernity." As in Sider, hierarchically nested scales of power and "struggles within and against one's own histories" were brought together in one dynamic ethnographic picture, both intimate and analytic.

In *Expanding Class: Power and Everyday Politics in Industrial Communities, The Netherlands, 1850–1950* (1997), a study of a key modern factory community in Eindhoven, the Netherlands, Kalb analyzed how daughters were exploited by a hegemonic alliance of working-class fathers and employers, encompassing the plants and neighborhoods of Philips Electronics, as well as the urban public sphere at large. This exploitation ensured high productivity, optimal flexibility, and sustained accumulation in a light export-driven industrial region in a country thoroughly exposed to international competition and market movements. It also safeguarded parental status, family accumulation, and political quiescence. Kalb highlighted important distinctions within the urban industrial capitalist mode of production. He contrasted Fordist and "flexible familist" ensembles and traced in detail the contradictory consequences for gendered local lives, culture, and politics. Eindhoven in fact prefigured the massive light-manufacturing outlays on the East China coast. As in Eindhoven, they sought to recruit girls' labor from and within paternalist environments, a capitalist patriarchy that would encapsulate the geo-economic and geopolitical shifts of the 21st century, which globalization was all about.

Combining Wolf, Thompson, Eric Hobsbawm, and Gramsci, and, after 2000, increasingly David Harvey, the class-power-hegemony paradigm within Marxist anthropology showed in meticulous detail how whole lives, friendship and kinship networks, and community "cultures" were both energized and emptied by particular regional integrations within globalizing capitalist modes of accumulation. These studies thus laid bare particular "spatio-temporal" fixes (Harvey) of life under capitalism, producing rich and dynamic accounts of the accordant social and cultural relations and the political and existential struggles that animated them. In fact, such studies grasped the complexities and immanence of class in ways that went far beyond classic Marxist or liberal understandings.

Globalization and Financialization

Over time, ethnographic Marxism of the class-and-hegemony school increasingly overlapped with a third stream of work in Marxist anthropology focusing on globalization and financialization. Like Wolf and others, Jonathan and Kajsa Friedman had in the 1970s already proposed a globalist/transnational mode of research. However, their temporal scope was far larger even than Wolf's, and their data were less detailed, which made them vulnerable to rejection by the anthropological mainstream. They built eclectically on the spatialized Marxism of Rosa Luxemburg to construe a universal cyclical model of core-periphery development of a distinctly anthropological kind. All through human history, dynamic urban cores had formed around military, court, or temple complexes. They had imposed divisions of labor over their hinterlands and had exerted assimilative cultural hegemonies over dispersed populations as well as urban migrants. Increasing local price and wage levels, however, turned dynamism at some point into stagnation. If that happened, these hegemonic modern centers "financialized": Their elites made their assets liquid and began exporting capital and know-how to new competitive centers. These urban elites "cosmopolitanized" and exported their "cosmopolitan" cosmologies to new areas and alliances. Rather than assimilating incoming migrants and dominated populations into the modern and urban civilization of the center they had built, such financializing elites would begin to reject common local civil belongings, restrict the claims of (fictive) kinship, and increasingly draw boundaries between a hereditary cosmopolitan class and the localized plebs. Friedman's examples came from circum-Mediterranean archaeology and the contemporary West.

Here was a comprehensive anthropological model of globalization, financialization, class, and culture change. In fact, it predated Giovanni Arrighi's discovery of the historical rhythms of financialization, which would play a key role in the Marxist political economy of crisis and globalization. After 1989, Jonathan Friedman in a series of publications claimed that what was "emically" understood as the globalization of the West into the "one world" of the first President Bush was in fact a financialization plus cosmopolitanization of erstwhile national elites within a U.S.-dominated core that had shifted from industrial to financial, speculative, and fictitious accumulation. This argument accorded broadly with Harvey's notion of flexible accumulation combined with urban spectacle and with Fredric Jameson's idea of postmodernism as the late capitalist cultural logic, but it added important anthropological accents about the cultural dynamics of class-driven social change.

For one, it allowed Friedman to reject the cultural-globalist school in anthropology—authors such as Arjun Appadurai and Ulf Hannerz—for taking appearances and elite discourses for realities. Rather than cultural diffusion from the center leading to a hybrid world culture, he argued that a declining West, exchanging its hegemonic modernism for postmodern, traditionalist, and indigenist cultural affections, is confronted with an accelerating East, developing its own modernisms. In his vision, cosmopolitanism and multiculturalism were elite-class ideologies obscuring the real processes of "double polarization," polarizations of a cultural and social kind. Localized workers and migrant populations in the declining Western cores were increasingly being reduced, in representation as well as fact, from Fordist working classes to ethnicized and plebeian "*classes dangereuxes*." He was broadly seconded by authors such as Gavin Smith, who approached financialization as the strategy by which a new, post-Fordist dominant bloc in the Gramscian sense "captured" once sovereign democratic states and publics—in particular their "surplus populations"—thus ensuring that their reproductive energies were locked in and creamed off. On the basis of a collection of urban/regional case studies in Europe, Kalb and Gábor Halmai argued that the neo-nationalist turns in postsocialist and post–welfare state popular politics must indeed be understood along the lines suggested by Friedman. Cosmopolitanizing elites in Europe saw their nemesis after 2000 in nativist mobilizations against their policies and hegemonic claims. In fact, these authors argued with Slavoj Žižek that this was the return of the repressed issue of class, but now in illiberal ways. Neo-nationalism was aimed against the *classes dangereuxes* of Roma and immigrants, as well as the rapacious transnational elites who sponsored globalization and multiculturalism. Neo-nationalism brought class back in a political conjuncture where the Left had all but sold out to neoliberal capitalist demands, accepting forms of dispossession and disenfranchisement that had hollowed out the mass democracies and imagined popular sovereignties of the postwar period.

In the wake of the financial crisis (2007–), Marxian anthropology seemed to be coming full circle. There was not only a noticeable rise in interest among anthropologists. Also, a synthesizing of the three paradigms discussed here appeared in the offing. Kalb, in a symposium on Friedman's "Anthropology of Global Systems" in *American Ethnologist* (2013), argued that his conception of financialization was too universal, covering all "commercial civilizations." It was also too much based on Max Weber's notion of "abstract wealth" and not sufficiently attuned to the relational and institutional specifics of capitalism as a transnational space-making project. Relying on new historical research by, among others, Jonathan Israel, Kalb dated the origins of capitalism as a mode of social reproduction precisely to 1688, the year of the Dutch military capture of England, since then mystifyingly called the "glorious revolution." The occupation resulted in an emergent Protestant territorial empire annex world system constructed around the purposefully created Bank of England. After 1688, "endless accumulation" was facilitated by the recycling of Dutch and other surpluses via Amsterdam into the Bank of England and the British state debt. The ensuing "financial revolution" allowed the British state to accumulate debt cheaper than any other unit by rerouting financial capital into the profitable making of a transatlantic space of flows, and increasingly a trans-world space of flows, just as Genovese financializations had driven the Iberian globalizations of two centuries earlier. This led to the making of new human habitats—based on slave, contract, bonded, or free labor, as described by Wolf—now entirely entangled in capitalist debt and accumulation relationships. Kalb argued that rather than being about

"abstract wealth" this was about the forceful and violent making of capitalist space, capitalist national states, legal systems, and social and institutional relationships. This financialization-driven pattern of imperial capitalist space making was once more repeated after 1989. In a reply in the same issue, Jonathan Friedman and Kajsa Ekholm Friedman accepted the charge by saying, "We were Weberian but for Marxist reasons" (Friedman, 2013, p. 253).

Don Kalb

See also Althusser, Louis; Bourdieu, Pierre; Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari; Formalism/Substantivism; Foucault, Michel; Globalization Theory; Godelier, Maurice; Gramsci, Antonio; Harvey, David; Jameson, Fredric; Leach, Edmund; Marx, Karl; Meillassoux, Claude; Mintz, Sidney; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Polanyi, Karl; Political Economy; Sahlins, Marshall; Wallerstein, Immanuel; Wolf, Eric; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Banaji, J. (2010). *Theory as history: Essays on modes of production and exploitation*. Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.

Barber, P. G., Leach, B., & Lem, W. (Eds.). (2012). *Confronting capital: Critique and engagement in anthropology*. London, UK: Routledge.

Bloch, M. (1983). *Marxism and anthropology*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Carbonella, A., & Kasmir, S. (Eds.). (2013). *Difference and dispossession: Toward a global anthropology of labor*. New York, NY: Berghahn Books.

Carrier, J., & Kalb, D. (Eds.). (in press). *Class in anthropology*. New York, NY: Berghahn Books.

Crehan, K. (2002). *Gramsci, culture and anthropology*. London, UK: Pluto.

Friedman, J., & Friedman, K. E. (2013). Globalization as a discourse of hegemonic crisis: A global systemic analysis. *American Ethnologist, 40*(2), 244–257.

Harvey, D. (1989). *The condition of postmodernity*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

———. (2007). *Limits to capital*. London, UK: Verso.

Kahn, J. S., & Llobera, J. R. (Eds.). (1981). *The anthropology of pre-capitalist societies*. London, UK: Macmillan.

Kalb, D. (2013). Financialization and the capitalist moment: Marx versus Weber in the anthropology of global systems. *American Ethnologist, 40*(2), 258–266.

Roseberry, W. (1989). *Anthropologies and histories. Essays in culture, history and political economy*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

Material Production, Theories of

Few topics are more controversial in anthropology than theories of material production. They span the entire scope of human history and prehistory, from the first use of tools to computerized trading. The bodies of *Homo sapiens* have been formed in relation to material production or "making a living." For example, human canines have been reduced in size in part due to the use of fire and weaponry. Bipedalism, an adaptation preceding the emergence of *Homo sapiens* by several million years, has been tied to sharing food, pair bonding, and the gender division of labor. Thus, theories of material production are also theories of human nature and are inextricably tied to political understandings.

Early anthropological theorists have been labeled "unilineal evolutionists" as they linked types of material production to universal stages of human culture. In *Ancient Society* (1877), for example, Lewis Henry Morgan described all human societies as falling into the following categories:

> *Savagery:* in which humans scratch out a living through what we now call "hunting and gathering" using crude tools in a direct relationship with "nature"
>
> *Barbarism:* in which humans learn to domesticate plants and animals
>
> *Civilization:* in which humans engineer sophisticated productive systems, writing, and the arts

Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels relied heavily on the work of Morgan and the other evolutionists in developing "historical materialism," which proposed that all human social and cultural life is, in the last analysis, determined by modes of material production. In *The Origins of the Family, Private Property, and the State* (1884), Engels tied family form and the development of inequality to modes of production and argued that monogamy would only be truly voluntary given the future rule of the working class in a socialist society.

Twentieth-century anthropology turned away from the grand theorizing of the evolutionists and their reliance on the reports of missionaries and

colonists. They emphasized careful collection of firsthand data through ethnographic fieldwork. American anthropology, under the influence of Franz Boas and his students, such as Margaret Mead, focused on close description of particular traits of various cultures without identifying a material productive basis to explain these traits. Their work has been labeled "configurationalism" as they sought to describe cultural systems as radically diverse and unique configurations. For example, the competitive gift giving or "Potlatch" of the Pacific Northwest tribes was described in great detail by many ethnographers but was not explicitly tied to productive or political change. However, in describing the enormous variation between cultures, these anthropologists undercut the claims of classical economics, which posited a universal "rational," profit-seeking human nature.

British anthropology in this period was also devoted to careful ethnographic fieldwork. Bronisław Malinowski's *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* (1922) described the *kula* trade system of the Trobriand Islands, tying trade to cultural values, magic, and status. British anthropology was theoretically "functionalist," situating particular practices within an overall cultural system described synchronically (in the present) rather than diachronically (developing over time). Like its American counterpart, British functionalism did not identify modes of production as the key determinative variable in explaining pieces of a cultural whole.

The 1940s and 1950s saw a revival of interest in historical change and material explanation. Leslie White's *The Science of Culture: A Study of Man and Civilization* (1949) identified three interlocking levels in all cultures. White claimed that the "technological" level was the basis of cultural evolution and determined the "sociological" and "ideological" levels. This very closely replicated the Marxist understanding of the "infrastructure" on which rested the social "structure" and ideological "superstructure." However, because of the atmosphere of anticommunism prevalent in the period, White did not credit Marx and Engels. White asserted that the purpose of technology was to capture energy for human interests and that as a society captured increasing amounts of energy, it evolved in complexity.

Of more lasting influence has been the "multilineal evolutionism" of Julian Steward. Steward also argued that cultures and individuals are largely defined by how they make a living, and he carefully situated these productive practices within particular environments. Steward's work is considered the foundation of "cultural ecology," a project that continues to the present, and is summarized in Steward's *Theory of Culture Change: The Methodology of Multilineal Evolution* (1955). Influenced by Steward's approach, Roy Rappaport analyzed the role of ritual in material production in his classic *Pigs for the Ancestors: Ritual in the Ecology of a New Guinea People* (1968). Rappaport argued that societies should be analyzed as populations in dynamic interaction with specific environments. The contrasting approaches of White and Steward reflect the now defunct formalist/substantivist debate that raged in the 1960s. The formalists argued that Western models of economic development could be applied universally, while the substantivists argued that these models applied to capitalist economies only and that cultures needed to be understood on their own, unique terms.

Contemporary theories of material production have been strongly influenced by the anticolonial and other political struggles of the postwar period and the 1960s. One of Steward's students, Eric Wolf, argued in *Europe and the People Without History* (1982) that no culture can be understood as an isolate outside the global economic system. Many ethnographers are currently conducting fieldwork in the factories that have moved from the Western "core" to the "periphery" (the so-called Third World). Applied anthropologists deploy world-systems theory in their work with Indigenous peoples and the World Bank, the United Nations, NGOs, and micro-lending institutions. Following the influence of the feminist movement of the 1970s, current anthropological theories of material production are also concerned with gender divisions of labor and the impact of development on women. Finally, postmodern approaches analyze and even deconstruct the very discourse of "theories of material production," often criticizing the "productivist" biases of the language deployed by Western and anthropological terminology.

Still, universalist descriptions of ways of making a living organize many anthropological textbooks, placing societies into the productive categories of *hunting and gathering*, *horticulture*, *pastoralism*, *agriculture*, and *industry*, tying this (implicitly or explicitly) to political categories of *bands*, *tribes*, *chiefdoms*, and *states*.

Eric McGuckin

See also Boas, Franz; Malinowski, Bronisław; Marx, Karl; Mead, Margaret; Rappaport, Roy; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Engels, F. (1908). *The origins of the family, private property, and the state* [E. Unterman, Trans.]. Chicago, IL: Charles H. Kerr. (Original work published 1884)
Harris, M. (1979). *Cultural materialism: The struggle for a science of culture*. New York, NY: Random House.
Malinowski, B. (1922). *Argonauts of the Western Pacific*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.
Morgan, L. H. (1887). *Ancient society*. New York, NY: H. Holt.
Rappaport, R. (1968). *Pigs for the ancestors: Ritual in the ecology of a New Guinea people*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
Sacks, K. (1982). *Sisters and wives: The past and future of sexual equality*. Champaign: University of Illinois Press.
Steward, J. (1955). *Theory of culture change: The methodology of multilineal evolution*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
White, L. (1949). *The science of culture: A study of man and civilization*. New York, NY: Grove Press.
Wolf, E. (1982). *Europe and the people without history*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Mauss, Marcel

Marcel Mauss (1872–1950) was a French anthropologist and a prominent collaborator in the *Année Sociologique* from its start. He became the leading figure in French anthropology between the wars and has been an inspiration to many researchers.

Career and Personality

Born in Épinal (Vosges) in eastern France, Marcel (Israël) Mauss received a Jewish upbringing but soon abandoned the faith. His mother's brother was the great sociologist Émile Durkheim (b. 1858), and at the age of 18, Mauss went to Bordeaux to study philosophy and sociology with his uncle. Planning to specialize in the anthropology and sociology of religion, he moved to Paris in 1895 to study Indology under Sylvain Lévi, at the same time following courses in Avestan language, Indo-European philology, Hebrew, and nonliterate religions. During 1898–1899, he continued working on Sanskrit ritual texts in Holland and England and soon afterward began lecturing on Indian religions and philosophy. He was on affectionate terms with Lévi, whom he called his "second uncle" and whose influence on his own life and work is being increasingly recognized. However, he also collaborated closely with Durkheim, helping him set up the *Année Sociologique* in 1898.

In 1902, Mauss started lecturing at the École Pratique des Hautes Études on the religions of "non-civilized peoples"—a title he disliked. Intending to write his thesis on prayer, he often lectured on "oral ritual" among native Australians, but he also covered many other ethnographic areas. At the start of the First World War, he volunteered for the army and served as an English interpreter. The period of the war saw the death of many of his students, as well as of Durkheim. Afterward, with varying success, he took on a very heavy load. Apart from pursuing his own research in multiple directions, he edited and brought out unpublished texts left by his deceased colleagues, relaunched the *Année Sociologique*, and generally tried to continue the tradition of Durkheim and serve as leader of the French social sciences. He also took on further lecturing, from 1926 at the Institut d'Ethnologie (which he helped found) and from 1931 at the Collège de France (to which he was elected). He retired at the start of the Second World War, and although he survived the Nazi occupation of Paris, he lost the will, and eventually the capacity, to write.

Unlike his rather puritan uncle, Mauss enjoyed many aspects of life. He took pleasure in the arts, in climbing mountains, in conversation with students, and in friendships with scholars both at home and abroad. He also enjoyed female company, though he did not marry till he was in his 60s and had no children. A moderate socialist, he devoted considerable time, energy, and money to supporting the cooperative movement. His versatility took its toll, and he received many, almost despairing letters from Durkheim reproaching him for delays in his contributions to the *Année* and for not finishing his thesis. This was not the only project he failed to finish.

Mauss's Writing

Although he never completed and published a single-authored book, Mauss's list of publications in the standard biography runs to 55 pages, and even this list omits his shortest notices in the *Année* and his course summaries. In 1909, he republished

as a book three older essays in religious studies, adding only a new introduction, but this was coauthored with his close friend and collaborator Henri Hubert. In 1947, his *Manuel d'Ethnographie* (*Manual of Ethnography*) was prepared by his student Denise Paulme, who compiled it from student lecture notes taken during his annual course at the Institut d'Ethnologie; however, at the end of the academic year, the course was never completed. What have appeared as books in English were originally essays or "sketches" that he published in journals or elsewhere, if indeed he published them at all. A few significant contributions only appeared posthumously—for instance, his 1920 draft toward a projected book, *The Nation*, or his useful "Intellectual Self-Portrait," written to help those who proposed him for the Collège de France. In French, most of his scattered writings have been consolidated into five substantial volumes.

It is difficult to come to terms with such a fragmented and wide-ranging oeuvre, and there is little consensus about how best to do so. One approach is to focus on his best known text, *The Gift*, and then add comments on other texts that happen to have been translated or to have attracted one's interest. However, he himself in 1930 presented his work as a whole, teaching alongside writing, scholarly collaboration (in which he believed deeply) alongside individual signed texts, one genre alongside another. His ideas in fact crosscut the forms in which he expressed them—reviews (which he preferred to call "analyses"), notes of various types, obituaries, published interventions in debates, unfinished drafts, and full-scale lectures and articles. He did not wish to produce a system or synthesis, conceiving of his research as the discovery of social phenomena (i.e., "social facts," *faits sociaux*) and of theorizing as essentially an aid to discovering new ones.

Since Mauss never undertook what would now be counted as fieldwork, he was not obliged to specialize geographically and could allow his voracious curiosity to roam the globe. In a sense, his immersion in Indology substituted for fieldwork, forcing him to wrestle with difficult concepts in an exotic language. At the same time, it deepened his awareness of history and historiography—he once referred to his field as "the comparative history of societies and especially of religions." His geographical and historical range is well exemplified by his reviewing (which included books in half a dozen modern European languages, not to mention French and Latin).

Thematically, there are few fields covered by the *Année Sociologique* that he left untouched. At the "hard-science" end of the anthropological spectrum, he helped Durkheim with the quantitative data for his *Suicide* and stressed the importance of statistics and demography (often treated under "social morphology"); he also valued ethnographic museums and the study of techniques. At the other end, his first paper concerned the origins of the distinction between civil and criminal law, and he was at ease discussing myth, cognition, and theory. The *Manual* covers fieldwork methods, including photography and film, and moves gradually from material culture to religion, with substantial treatments of aesthetics and law (which he understood in a broad sense as including much of kinship). Although addressed originally to those likely to find themselves in a position to add to ethnographic description, the *Manual* embodies a good deal of Mauss's theoretical thinking.

World-Historical Dimension

Even when evolutionism went out of fashion in social anthropology, Mauss retained an interest in the world-historical aspect of social phenomena. Several of his best known texts are articulated by the implicit culture-typological schema: tribes/archaic literate civilizations/modern West. The first category was often split into the more conservative ("primitive") Australians, while the second referred mainly to India, China, the Greco-Roman world, and medieval Europe. Thus, *Primitive Classification* (written with Durkheim) starts with totemic Australia, where the division of the tribe into socio-structural units correlates with, and (they propose) leads to, the divisions of the rest of the cosmos. After exploring similar but more elaborate systems in tribal North America, the text moves to China, where clans no longer relate to the rest of the classification but correspondences remain between other domains. Such correspondences—say between regions, colors, and elements—are absent from the scientific worldviews that have recently developed out of the earlier classifications.

Thirty-five years later, the argument of *The Person* follows a similar course. It starts in North America with the Zuni and Kwakiutl, loops back to

the less detailed material from Australia, treats the literate civilizations briefly, and ends with the philosophers Kant and Fichte. Mauss's unfinished projects on prayer and "substance" were intended to follow the same schema. The essay on Magic, written with Hubert, follows it not in its argument but in its listing of sources.

Mauss's world-historical thinking is apparent in some of his other typologies. In *The Nation*, his fourfold schema recognizes acephalous tribes, clan-based tribes with a political elite, diffusely integrated societies (the stronger central power now outweighing the clans), and finally the nation proper; and Mauss looks ahead to international organizations. Among religious phenomena, dietary prohibitions (as in totemism) have tended to decline, sacrifice characterizes the middle range of development, and prayer has tended to flourish. Again, early societies were characterized by "total prestations": the exchange of goods, services, and women (etc.) between groups or categories, each exchange being theoretically spontaneous and voluntary but in fact obligatory. Such systems may become competitive or agonistic (the main topic of *The Gift*), before yielding to the market, with its individual contracts and ideology of maximization.

Classification and Categories

Like any discipline, sociology needed to classify the phenomena it covered, and the organization of social facts was a continuing theoretical preoccupation for Mauss. It was also a practical issue, affecting the division of labor among contributors to the *Année* and the structure of the lecture course that became the *Manual*. Mauss was particularly sensitive to phenomena that crosscut traditional divides such as religion, law, and economics: Total prestations belonged simultaneously to all three (and others). Thus, he came to recognize a category of "total social facts" and thought hard about how to organize the rubric "general sociology."

A society consists not only of people on a territory and their ways of behaving (institutions) but also of ideas ("collective representations"); and one approach to classifying basic ideas was to start from Aristotle's list of categories. In *The Person*, Mauss uses tribal ethnography to set up a starting point for the category. The prototype conception is, roughly speaking, a male clan member who bears a name and soul that incarnates regularly within the clan and who ritually dances out his identity with the mythic founder of the clan. The essay links this prototype to the (in principle) liberated individual who has the rights and duties of a citizen in a modern nation-state, and in that respect is homogeneous with other citizens.

Primitive Classification tackled Aristotle's categories of class and, in part, space. Its argument gains clarity if one distinguishes intradomain and cross-domain classification. It is not primitive to classify society into component groups, animals into species, or the year into seasons. What modern thinking rejects is cross-domain classes, whereby one clan (or socio-structural unit) is associated with its totem, season, and so on, and contrasts with other clans and *their* associations; for us, the members of a class belong to a single domain. The other Aristotelian categories that Mauss talks about are time (studied by Hubert), cause (which he connected with magic), number, substance, and totality (which he saw as the central topic of Durkheim's *Elementary Forms*). Though Mauss never says so, *The Gift* can be read as studying the Aristotelian category of relation. However, he also recognized non-Aristotelian categories, some ancient and faded, others recent—for example, chance.

The Edges of the Social

Being interested in sociology *as a whole*, Mauss liked exploring the borders of the field. His Indology equipped him for the border with philology and religious studies, and *Sacrifice* is still admired by Vedic specialists as well as anthropologists. His interest in categories and his criticism of figures like Lucien Lévy-Bruhl and Ernst Cassirer took him toward the philosophy of mind and what might now be called cognitive studies. He was particularly drawn to the borders with biology and psychology. Thus, his classic *Techniques of the Body* explores cultural differences in phenomena like gait, gymnastics, swimming, breathing, and making love. He was particularly pleased by the insight that these activities, apparently belonging to physiology, can be classified under the rubric "techniques," along with pot making and carpentry.

At the start of Mauss's career, sociology was still fighting for recognition as a discipline distinct from psychology, but after the war, he was keen to build

bridges and published more than once in psychology journals. Thus, in tribal mourning rituals, what might look like the expression of individual emotion had a definite social component, and so did cases of death that were apparently due directly and solely to the victim's state of mind. His lecture on cooperation between the two disciplines mentioned topics such as language, symbolism, expectation, and rhythm (a long-standing interest). This line of thought led him to conceptualize *l'homme total*, man in his three aspects as organism, mind, and member of society.

Commentators often remark on the concrete nature of Mauss's thinking about social facts. Rather than drawing data from anywhere in his encyclopedic knowledge, he believed in critical assessment of sources and exact localization of facts in time and space. Geography and the environment mattered, as is clear when he discusses social morphology, for instance, in the *Manual*, or more specifically when studying the Eskimos. The rhythmic seasonal alternation between summer and winter lifestyles amounted almost to two distinct Inuit cultures. In the summer, the population dispersed in single-family tents, only to concentrate in multifamily houses or igloos in the winter stations. Religious activity, minimal in summer, was both facilitated and stimulated by the social density in winter. But Mauss also studied cultural geography on a larger scale. With Durkheim and later, he argued that sociology included intersocietal and international phenomena. Thus, he recognized a very ancient stratum of civilization covering the islands and shores of the Pacific, containing smaller regions related in part to language families.

Although Mauss usually maintained a gap between purely academic writing and the political engagement best exhibited in his critique of Bolshevism, his attitudes sometimes show through. The final section of *The Gift* is well-known, but he also (discreetly) favors colonial emancipation and moves toward global governance. He did not write on gender politics but lamented that the anthropology of his time covered only half of humanity.

Mauss's Legacy

For several reasons, notably World War II, Mauss did not leave behind a united group of Maussians. Many who heard or knew him found inspiration in the man, while those who can only read him have tended to emphasize or draw on just one or two aspects of his multifarious oeuvre. Thus, Lévi-Strauss saw him as the precursor of structuralism, and others, more recently, have seen him as the discoverer of "the symbolic," or of *l'homme total*. Many have embraced the political economy aspect of *The Gift*, in particular the group of French scholars led by Alain Caillé, who constitute the Mouvement Anti-Utilitariste dans les Sciences Sociales. Recent discussions of embodiment and habitus regularly look back to *Techniques of the Body*. In comparison, other aspects of his work have perhaps been relatively neglected. For instance, one approach to kinship takes from Mauss the observation that names and souls are often transmitted between alternate genealogical levels and connects it with his idea of exchanging children—thereby complementing Lévi-Strauss's use of Mauss's formulations about the exchange of women. It was probably from *Primitive Classification*, via the Sinologist Marcel Granet, that Georges Dumézil gained his "trifunctional" insights into Indo-European ideology—insights that continue to be developed in various ways by comparative mythologists.

It is recognized that after the First World War Mauss permitted himself a number of discreet criticisms of his uncle, for instance, of his binarism (as in sacred/profane or religion/magic) and of his conception of clans as internally amorphous. However, the earlier intellectual exchanges between the two men are difficult to reconstruct. Obviously, Durkheim taught his nephew, but the influences were not all one-way. From early on, Mauss could contribute insights from Indology, and the writings of his youth, notably those on sacrifice and on the rhythmic relation between social concentration and dispersal, contributed more than is usually recognized to Durkheim's *Elementary Forms of Religious Life*. In that sense, Durkheim himself can be numbered among those who learned from Mauss.

Naturally, in such a substantial oeuvre, passages can be found that have not stood the test of time. However, the depth and sharpness of Mauss's curiosity and the range of his knowledge remain exemplary, and if many of his ideas call for development beyond the point that he himself reached, this can be regarded less as a defect than as an invitation or stimulus.

N. J. Allen

See also Dumont, Louis; Durkheim, Émile; Gift Exchange; Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris); *L'Année Sociologique*; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien; Sacrifice

Further Readings

Allen, N. J. (2000). *Categories and classifications: Maussian reflections on the social*. Oxford, UK: Berghahn Books.

———. (in press). Mauss and India. *Journal of Classical Sociology*.

Carrithers, M., Collins, S., & Lukes, S. (Eds.). (1985). *The category of the person: Anthropology, philosophy, history*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Fournier, M. (2006). *Marcel Mauss: A biography*. Princeton NJ: Princeton University Press. (Abridged from the French, 1994, Paris, France: Fayard)

Hubert, H., & Mauss, M. (1964). *Sacrifice: Its nature and function* (W. D. Halls, Trans.). London, UK: Cohen & West.

James, W., & Allen, N. J. (Eds.). (1998). *Marcel Mauss: A centenary tribute*. Oxford, UK: Berghahn Books.

Mauss, M. (1968–1969). *Mauss, Oeuvres* (includes Mauss's bibliography) (Vols. 1–3; V. Karady, Ed.). Paris, France: Minuit.

———. (1979). *Seasonal variations of the Eskimo: A study in social morphology* (J. J. Fox, Trans.). London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

———. (1979). *Sociology and psychology: Essays* (B. Brewster, Trans.). London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

———. (1990). *The gift: The form and reason for exchange in archaic societies* (W. D. Halls, Trans.). London, UK: Routledge.

———. (2003). *On prayer* (S. Leslie, Trans.). New York, NY: Durkheim Press/Berghahn Books.

———. (2005). *The nature of sociology: Two essays* (W. Jeffrey, Trans.). New York, NY: Durkheim Press/Berghahn Books.

———. (2007). *Manual of ethnography* (D. Lussier, Trans.). New York, NY: Durkheim Press/Berghahn Books.

McLennan, John

John Ferguson McLennan (1827–1881), a Scottish lawyer in Edinburgh, pioneered the comparative study of marriage and descent at a time when marriage was widely debated in British scholarly journals, in popular novels, and in the "penny dreadfuls" sold on London street corners. In 1865, when Charles Dickens's *Our Mutual Friend* explored the complexities of familial and financial life across classes in London, McLennan's *Primitive Marriage* argued for the evolutionary origins of marriage worldwide in the capture of brides. In 1869–1870, on the eve of Charles Darwin's *The Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex* (1871) and George Eliot's *Middlemarch* (1871–1872), McLennan, in the influential *Fortnightly Review*, argued that human kinship evolved from the earliest form of religion, which he believed to be the worship of animals and plants as *totems* whom humans venerated as their ancestral kin. In contrast to Dickens, Darwin, and Eliot, McLennan is no longer a household name. Yet his influence on scholars of his time such as Edward Tylor and William Robertson Smith and, through Smith, on James G. Frazer, Émile Durkheim, and Sigmund Freud contributed to creating the fields of kinship, religion, and ecology in anthropology. Research in these fields has since disproved his theories of the social evolution of marriage and religion. Yet his accounts of contemporary practices of marriage and divorce in Great Britain are now recognized as valuable historical documents in the comparative study of kinship, marriage, and religion.

McLennan—born on October 14, 1827, in Inverness, Scotland—was the first of three sons of John McLennan, an insurance agent, and Jessie Ross. A gifted student, he went from the University of Aberdeen (MA, 1849) to the University of Cambridge, where he got a first-class rank in his mathematics exams in 1853, but he left for London without taking his degree. While studying law, he wrote for liberal journals like *The Leader*, founded by George Henry Lewes and Thornton Hunt; fellow contributors included George Eliot, Harriet Martineau, and Herbert Spencer. According to his friend William Michael Rossetti, he also wrote poetry, including *Poems on the Praeraphaelite Principle* (since lost). He returned to Scotland, where he joined the Scottish bar in 1857, serving in Edinburgh as secretary of the Scottish Society for Promoting the Amendment of the Law and in London as Parliamentary Draftsman for Scotland (1871–1875). He married Mary Bell McCulloch in 1862 and, after her death, Eleonora Anne Brandram in 1875. He died at Hayes Common, Kent, on June

16, 1881, at the age of 53, from long-standing tuberculosis complicated by malaria.

McLennan's career exemplifies how intellectuals interested in legal reform contributed to the study of human behavior from a comparative perspective, later called anthropology. His article "Law" for the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* in 1857 drew on Auguste Comte's *Cours de Philosophie Positive* (translated into English by Harriet Martineau in 1853) to argue for the study of society according to scientific principles. While still writing on popular culture (notably, a critique of *Scottish Art and Artists in 1860* under the name of "Iconoclast"), he wrote "Marriage and Divorce: The Law of England and Scotland" (*North British Review*, 1861), arguing that the "errors and defects" in these laws, more than in any others, inflicted the greatest suffering on human hearts. In "Hill Tribes in India" (*North British Review*, 1863), he followed this up by examining "the leading relationships of life," mainly marriage practices among people then subject to British colonial rule. Here, he began to conjecture about what he called "the progress of mankind," assuming, as was common then, that the current practices of colonized and colonizing people exemplified primitive and civilized stages in human development, respectively, and could therefore be used to make historical arguments.

Primitive Marriage (1865), which McLennan described as "an exercise in scientific history," is based on this assumption plus the notion that symbols are relics of past realities. McLennan put marriage reform at the heart of human history, coining the terms *endogamy* and *exogamy* (marriage within a specified group and marriage outside a specific group, respectively) in the process. Primordial promiscuous hordes, struggling over scarce resources, killed female infants less fit for hunting and warfare and therefore "prey[ed] upon one another for wives." As they progressed in civility, they developed kinship by descent through women (matriliny) combined with polyandry, then patriliny combined with polygamy, and, ultimately, at the highest stage, monogamy. In the *Fortnightly Review* in 1869–1870, McLennan cited Lewis Henry Morgan's research on the animal names of exogamous Iroquois tribes to argue that the "totem stage of development," in which humans worshipped the animal or plant (their *totem*) imagined to be their ancestral kin, breed, or species, represented the earliest stage in human history.

The debates over the relative antiquity of matriliny and patriliny between McLennan, Morgan, John Lubbock, and Henry Maine, taken up in Darwin's *Descent of Man*, provoked ethnographic and archival research that disproved their theories of social evolution while refining our understanding of marriage and descent past and present. McLennan's legal works are now a valuable source of data for analyzing the kinship practices of people in Great Britain and its colonies in terms of their differing social positions in the British Empire in the mid-19th century. By linking exogamy, matriliny, and the worship of animals and plants into one system he called "totemism," McLennan inspired the study of sacrifice. Smith, then Frazer, Durkheim, and Freud, showed how sacrifice, in which animals stand in for humans, works to forge social groups, a field of inquiry into the intimate relations of humans and other organic beings that now encompasses kinship, religion, political economy, and ecology.

Gillian Feeley-Harnik

See also Alliance-Descent Debate; Darwin, Charles; Durkheim, Émile; Frazer, James G.; Maine, Henry James; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Religion; Sacrifice; Smith, William Robertson; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Barnes, R. H. (1999). Marriage by capture. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, 5,* 57–73.

Gill, R. (2004). The imperial anxieties of a nineteenth-century bigamy case. *History Workshop Journal, 57,* 58–78.

Kuper, A. (2008). Changing the subject: About cousin marriage, among other things. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, 14,* 717–735.

McLennan, J. F. (1857). Law. In *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (Vol. 13, pp. 253–279; 8th ed.). Edinburgh, UK: Adam & Charles Black.

———. (1861). Marriage and divorce: The law of England and Scotland. *North British Review, 35,* 187–218.

———. (1869–1870). The worship of animals and plants. *Fortnightly Review, 4,* 407–427, 562–582; *7,* 194–216.

———. (1970). *Primitive marriage: An inquiry into the origin of the form of capture in marriage ceremonies* (With an introduction by P. Rivière). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press. (Original work published 1865)

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1987). *Victorian anthropology.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Trautmann, T. R., Feeley-Harnik, G., & Mitani, J. (2011). Deep kinship. In A. Shryock & D. L. Smail (Eds.), *Deep history: The architecture of past and present* (pp. 160–188). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Mead, George Herbert

George Herbert Mead (1863–1931) was an American philosopher and social scientist. He is considered among the most innovative thinkers in the philosophy of pragmatism and is best known as a founder of the discipline of social psychology, in particular symbolic interactionism. Among his most notable contributions include establishing the social and symbolic basis of mind and self, the relationship between language and culture, language use in social interaction as the means by which reality is constructed, and a metaphysics of emergence and temporality.

Mead was born on February 27, 1863, in South Hadley, Massachusetts. In 1870, the Mead family moved to Oberlin, Ohio, where his father, a Congregational minister, joined the faculty of the Oberlin Theological Seminary. His mother was on the faculty of Oberlin College and later served as president of Mount Holyoke College. Mead attended Oberlin College (1879–1883), earning a BA degree. At Oberlin, he was exposed to progressive ideas and was greatly influenced by those of Charles Darwin. During this time, he became a committed naturalist and a nonbeliever. After graduation, Mead tried teaching school; then, for 3 years, he worked on a surveying crew for the Wisconsin Central Railroad Company. In 1887, he entered graduate school at Harvard, where he studied psychology and philosophy.

After Harvard, Mead traveled to Germany (1888–1891) to continue his studies with Wilhelm Dilthey and in the psychology laboratory of Wilhelm Wundt. In 1891, Mead married Helen Castle, the sister of his friend Henry Castle, and joined the faculty of Philosophy and Psychology at the University of Michigan. A son, Henry, was born in 1892. In 1894, Mead joined John Dewey at the University of Chicago. At Chicago, Mead flourished as a teacher and a scholar. In addition to his academic career, he was involved in numerous progressive causes. He was a member of the civic-minded City Club of Chicago, he participated in educational reform initiatives, he supported women's suffrage, and he worked with Jane Addams in the Settlement Movement and Hull House. He stayed in Chicago until his death on April 26, 1931.

Pragmatism

Pragmatism is a philosophical school of thought founded in the United States around 1870. The central themes of pragmatism are consistent with science as a problem-solving method: with the study of phenomena as they occur in nature, and with the emergent, processual, and consequential qualities of the world. For pragmatists, ideas should be based on observation and put to an empirical test and judged by their usefulness, by their practical consequences. The process of finding ideas that work was called *intelligent practice*.

Four principles form the basis of pragmatism: (1) reality is based on language and is socially constructed; (2) people define and act toward social and cultural objects according to their meaning and practicality; (3) because of language use and symbolic behavior that is largely molded in human social environments, humans are fundamentally different from all other species; and, finally, (4) any understanding of human individual and social behavior, and social worlds must be based on observations of situated human behavior.

Mind, Language, and Reality

Mead understood that group life preceded the human mind and that language, mind, and self emerged together in the context of the social processes inherent in group life and cannot be understood apart from those processes. Mead defined mind, or mental processes, as thought—as internal conversations with oneself. In his treatment, mind evolved when vocal gestures (primitive language) gained significance, when those gestures called out in self a response that was functionally identical to the response called out in the other. Vocal gestures became symbolic and shared.

Mead, along with Franz Boas, Edward Sapir, and Benjamin Lee Whorf, were instrumental in identifying the relationship between language and culture and between language, thought, and constructed reality. Like the anthropological linguists, Mead characterized language as a set of significant symbols and rules of usage that are shared by members of

a speech community. As people in the community named and defined objects in their world, language developed, and reality became socially constructed, shared, and symbolic. Accordingly, perception and thought both were made possible and constrained by the structure of one's native language.

Regarding thought, experience, and mental activity, Mead noted that they only happen in the ongoing present. Past experiences, or memory, can only exist as experience in the present. Past experience isn't experienced as it was originally, but rather, it is reconstructed or re-membered in relation to the circumstances constituting a person's present situation. In Mead's view, reality is continually being reconstructed as a way of making sense of the present. As with the past, Mead characterized the future as existing only in the present as a projected outcome or a previsioned consequence of purposive action. From Mead's perspective, the past is not objective facticity and cannot determine human conduct. Instead, human behavior in the present is guided in part by a reconstructed past and conditioned by a projected future.

Mead observed a reflexive quality in mental activity, the ability to adjust one's behavior in anticipation of the incipient behavior of others. Through observation, a person takes the attitude of the other and prepares his or her own options for action that coordinates with, circumvents, or resists the oncoming actions of the other person in the situation. A teacher seeing an angry parent approaching adjusts how he or she will meet the parent. Similarly, by turning back experience on oneself, one can identify the attitude of others and adjust one's own behavior to affect how one is seen and defined by them.

For Mead, human behavior is not caused. Nor is it released or propelled by stimuli or by social forces. Human behavior is organized and directed toward practical consequences in the form of individual and social acts. A hungry person has several options to solve his problem. He can look for a café or a convenience store, go home to raid his refrigerator, or ignore the hunger. Once a course of action is selected, the person can proceed with the social act. The hunger does not determine the course of action taken. Mind works as the process of initiating purposive behavior.

Self, Society, and the Social Act

In Mead's view, the self arises within the context of social interaction in significant social relationships. Having a self involves how a person identifies self and acts in social situations. Self is largely a process that develops within dominant social relationships and is related to the language used in those relationships. That is, we come to know ourselves from the actions and responses of others, particularly significant others. We are not, however, totally determined by the definitions and actions of others. Mead insisted that humans are more than the product of their social environment; they are an active part of the social groups that define them. Our own actions affect how others define us. Inherent in the process of viewing ourselves from the perspective of others is the potential for changing self by changing how others view us. A child who perceives that others view her as lacking in intelligence can begin to take her studies seriously and improve her vocabulary and academic performance. Others may note this and redefine the child.

The nature of the social relationships in which a person's self develops forms a significant dimension of self. In this sense, self cannot exist without other/s. A person can organize and regulate his own activity, or it can be done by others. The demands and expectations of others are routinely taken into account in organizing our behavior. Mead's inclusion of the significant role of social relationships in the development of self has been adopted by postmodern anthropologists, who focus on how dominant groups not only oppress but also repress the full, healthy development of self. Not only does a subordinate learn to anticipate the expectations of her supervisor, but also a child born into a highly paternalistic society, including a strict paternalistic family structure, will have a different self as compared with a child who develops in a society that is characterized by egalitarian social forms. For Mead, the form of the social relationships in which a person is involved is a significant dimension of self.

For Mead, a person has a self when he can act toward himself as a social or cultural object, as others act toward him. Social objects have names, definitions, and understandings on how to act toward them. We learn the social objects that constitute our worlds through our involvement in social group life. A pencil is a social object, as is a church. Friday is a social object. We name social objects and act toward them in terms of how we define them. Similarly, people can be social objects. We define and act toward college professors differently than we define and act

toward a thief. We become a social object to ourselves when we make indications to self and direct our behavior with regard to the definition of our role in a social situation. When college professors prepare their next lecture, they are acting toward self as a social object.

Significant or meaningful interaction for Mead is constituted in a triadic process involving the initiating vocal gesture, the response of another, and the result of or consequence of the interaction. Thus, the meaning of an utterance is not contained in the words spoken or in the intent of the speaker. When a young woman smiles and says "Hi" to a young man who does not return the smile, it has an entirely different meaning as when the warm greeting is returned by the young man, who then stops to talk to the young lady and asks for her telephone number. The meaning of a smile does not lie in the utterance. It is contingent on the response of the other and any consequence thereof.

Mead describes the development of self as occurring in three distinct stages of increasing complexity in language use: (1) thought processes, (2) role-taking ability, and (3) organizing one's own behavior. These stages encompass early learning, play, and games. In the game stage, the child begins to engage in reciprocal interaction by taking the role of the other in social situations.

As children learn more complex games, they come to understand an organized set of roles as it relates to their own behavior. They abide by rules, act strategically, and act with others in an organized fashion, including a division of labor, toward a common future state. For example, in a baseball game, a player understands the organized set of roles that constitute his team in the game and can anticipate their behavior in a given situation. The kinds of games played by boys and girls in a society prepare them for their involvements as adults. For example, boys who play football are preparing for their involvement in corporate worlds. They are learning hierarchically organized, competitive, coordinated action involving a division of labor and a leader who defines and initiates a sequence of social acts that lead to a specific outcome.

An implied final stage in Mead's development of self is the "generalized other." It refers to the perspective that is common to the group or community to which a person belongs. That is, the person sees self from the generalized standpoint of the larger community. A person defined as a nice guy by his community, besides seeing himself as a nice guy, is morally obliged to act like a nice guy throughout the day or risk being held accountable for untoward behavior. For Mead, the generalized other accounts for consistent behavior across situations involving different actors.

In Mead's view, all group life is based on the cooperative (coordinated) behavior of its members. Coordinated social behavior or social acts begin with an impulse and end with an achieved objective that releases the impulse. For Mead, the social act is the basic unit of analysis in the study of human social behavior. A social act may involve the participation of two or more people and can range from the simple (two people in conversation) to the complex (a government agency investigating corruption). Short-term social acts can be embedded in long-term social acts. For example, a group project is part of the social act of getting a college education.

Social acts are both observable and understandable to social scientists and competent members of society who engage in them daily. Mead's idea was to develop a way to understand the methods that people employ both to construct social acts and to make sense of it all. In their vast variety and number, social acts constitute what we think of as culture and society. It is in social acts that social and cultural objects are defined and acted on. It is through social acts that people construct, maintain, and modify reality.

Dan E. Miller

See also: Boas, Franz; Darwin, Charles; Geertz, Clifford; Sapir, Edward; Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism; Social Constructionism; Symbolic Interactionism; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Carroll, J. B. (Ed.). (1956). *Language, thought, and reality: Selected writings of Benjamin Lee Whorf*. Cambridge: Technology Press of the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

Mead, G. H. (1932). *The philosophy of the present*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1934). *Mind, self, and society*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1938). *The philosophy of the act.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Miller, D. (1973). *George Herbert Mead: Self, language, and the world.* Austin: University of Texas Press.
Sapir, E. (1985). *Selected writings of Edward Sapir in language, culture, and personality.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Mead, Margaret

Margaret Mead (1901–1978) was an American cultural anthropologist best known for her ethnographic research on small-scale cultures in the South Pacific and her role as a public intellectual. She made anthropology and anthropological concepts such as cultural relativism and gender known to the general public through her many books, lectures, magazine articles, and radio and television appearances. A student of Franz Boas and Ruth Benedict, Mead had a strong background in psychology, an interest shared by both of her mentors. Her major contributions to 20th-century anthropology include highlighting the importance of the study of women and children in anthropological research, the integration of methods and theories from psychology with anthropological theory and research, bringing out the importance of fieldwork as a hallmark of anthropology, and the development of the subfields of applied anthropology and visual anthropology. The latter included an emphasis on the importance of film and photography in both fieldwork and data analysis. Mead was not only a major contributor to the subfield of psychological anthropology known as culture and personality, she was also influential in introducing the notion of culture into the study of psychology and psychoanalysis. A strong proponent of cultural relativism, Mead has been both lauded and maligned for her conviction that each culture needs to be understood and evaluated based on its own beliefs, practices, and cultural logic rather than the values and beliefs of Western culture.

By the time of her death in 1978, Mead had become internationally famous as an outspoken and articulate public intellectual, using her anthropological insights to speak out on issues that ranged from parenting and sexuality to atomic energy and the environment. President Jimmy Carter posthumously awarded Mead the United States Medal of Freedom. However, in 1983, 4 years after her death, the Australian anthropologist Derek Freeman challenged Mead's findings published in her first book, *Coming of Age in Samoa* (1928). He argued in favor of biological determinism and against what he argued was Mead's extreme position of cultural determinism as the sole factor influencing human behavior. Given Mead's status as a public intellectual in late-20th-century America, Freeman's accusations grabbed the media's attention, and American anthropologists rallied to support Mead, seeing Freeman's critique of her Samoan research as flawed in itself.

Background and Early Years

Mead was born in Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, the eldest of five children, to Edward Mead, a professor of finance at the University of Pennsylvania, and Emily (Fogg) Mead, a graduate of Wellesley College and the University of Chicago, where she studied sociology with Thorstein Veblen. As a child, Mead accompanied her mother while she conducted research on Italian immigrants for her doctoral dissertation. Unlike her parents, both of whom were nonreligious, as a child, Mead decided to join the Episcopal Church, remaining a practicing member throughout her life. Growing up in an unconventional academic family—her mother was a feminist, and Mead was homeschooled by her grandmother until high school—Mead was determined, in opposition to her father's desires, to go to college. Transferring after her freshman year from DePauw University to Barnard College, part of Columbia University in New York City, she studied psychology and English literature. After completing her undergraduate degree in 1923, she received a master's degree in social psychology for her thesis *Intelligence Tests of Italian and American Children* (1925). The results of her research, a comparative study of IQ testing among "American" children and the children of Italian immigrants (Mead utilized her experience with her mother's fieldwork), demonstrated that there was a cultural bias to the tests that affected adversely the immigrant students' scores. This research contributed to her lifelong interest in the interrelationship between culture—or one's social environment—and individual psychology—or one's biological "nature"—as well as the topic of race and its relationship to human nature versus nurture. However, after taking graduate courses with the anthropologists Franz Boas and Ruth Benedict,

Mead decided to pursue a PhD in anthropology rather than social psychology as Benedict had convinced her that there was an urgency to anthropological research as the opportunity to work with what were then called "primitive cultures" was quickly being lost.

In 1923, Mead married Luther Cressman, a theology student and a neighbor of her family's in Doylestown, Pennsylvania. Cressman, a doctoral candidate in sociology at Columbia University during Mead's fieldwork in Samoa, agreed to a divorce after Mead met the New Zealand anthropologist Reo Fortune while returning from her fieldwork in the Pacific. Mead's marriage to Fortune lasted from 1928 to 1935, when she met the British anthropologist Gregory Bateson while she and Fortune were doing fieldwork in New Guinea. Bateson and Mead were married from 1936 to 1950 and had one child, a daughter, Mary Catherine Bateson, who became a linguistic anthropologist.

Although Mead never openly acknowledged having had a sexual relationship with her mentor Ruth Benedict, Benedict self-identified as a lesbian and Mead's daughter, in her 1984 memoir about her parents, implied that Mead and Benedict had been lovers. Later in her career, Mead, in an article for the women's magazine *Redbook* in 1975, suggested that an individual's sexual identity was malleable and could change over the course of one's life from early youthful infatuations with the same sex, to heterosexual relations during adulthood (specifically, during a woman's fertile, childbearing years), to homosexual attachments during old age. Indeed, Mead seems to have followed this pattern herself, living until her death with the anthropologist Rhoda Metraux.

Mead's Theoretical Contributions to Anthropology

Coming of Age in Samoa (1928): *Nature Versus Nurture*

As was typical at the time, Mead wrote a doctoral dissertation based on extensive library research and then prepared to go off to do fieldwork. Her thesis advisor, the founder and chair of the Department of Anthropology at Columbia University, Franz Boas, suggested that she do research in American Samoa as it was a relatively safe place for a young woman on her own. The research topic that Boas gave her to investigate was the emotions and behavior of adolescent Samoan girls as they entered young adulthood. A petite 24-year-old woman (she was 5 feet 2 inches) at the time, she was ideally suited physically to work with adolescent girls, many of whom were already taller and bigger than she was. The issue of adolescent development was of interest to Boas because he disagreed with the then prevailing theory of adolescent psychological development propounded by the American psychologist G. Stanley Hall. Influenced by Sigmund Freud and evolutionary theory, Hall believed that adolescence was necessarily a time of tension and stress for all youth because of the biological transitions they were experiencing during puberty. Boas was interested in challenging this strictly biological determinist theory as he hypothesized that environmental factors, such as the culture in which one grew up, might also play a role in how adolescence was experienced. The case of adolescent Samoan girls would provide an excellent test case for his hypothesis concerning the role of cultural and social factors in shaping individual psychology and behavior.

Mead's research demonstrated that adolescence in Samoa engendered a very different psychological experience for Samoan girls than adolescence in America, evoking none of the emotional turmoil and intergenerational strife prevalent among adolescents in the United States, thus providing Boas with the one negative case he needed to contradict Hall's theory based solely on biological determinism. Moreover, as Nancy Lutkehaus points out in her 2008 book *Margaret Mead: The Making of an American Icon*, Mead's book *Coming of Age in Samoa*, written for a popular readership, catapulted her into national recognition. The American public was eager to understand its own younger generation, the products of the Jazz Age, so different from their parents. Mead's Samoan research represents one of the earliest ethnographic contributions to what is often glossed over by scientists as "biological determinism versus cultural determinism" or "nature versus nurture," a debate that continues today as researchers seek to understand the complex relationship between biological and cultural factors as they shape human behavior.

Growing Up in New Guinea (1931)

Continuing her interest in the relationship between individual psychological development and

culture, Mead's next research focused on children in New Guinea. Guided by the idea then favored by psychologists that the minds of children, primitive people, and psychotics were similar, Mead wanted to understand the characteristics of the minds of children in primitive cultures and how they changed as they became adults. In 1933, she went to the Manus Islands with her second husband, Reo Fortune. In *Growing Up in New Guinea*, Mead argued that Manus children had to be taught "primitive" beliefs such as the importance of ghosts and ancestor spirits, beliefs that dominated the lives and behavior of their parents. In other words, from the standpoint of Western psychological theory, Manus children were more "rational" than their parents, and to become "normal" Manus adults, they had to become socialized into their "superstitions."

The Changing Culture of an Indian Tribe *(1932): Acculturation Studies*

During the summer of 1930, Mead and Fortune conducted research among the Omaha, a displaced Native American tribe in Nebraska. Mead found the research depressing, as she acutely felt the Omaha experiencing the unraveling of their traditional culture. However, her focus on the Omaha's adaptation to their newly settled, semi-urban way of life, which she described in her book *The Changing Culture of an Indian Tribe*, has subsequently been cited as one of the earliest examples of the anthropological study of acculturation. In a later study of culture change, based on her return to Manus 25 years after her first visit there, Mead observed a more positive response of the formerly tribal society to the impact of Western culture. Her analysis of what she saw as the successful acculturation of the Manus, published in her book *New Lives for Old* (1954), was an early theoretical contribution to the newly developing subfield of applied anthropology.

Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies (1935)

Mead's research among the Mundugumor, Tshambuli (Chambri), and Mountain Arapesh of New Guinea, undertaken with Reo Fortune, was less controversial than her Samoan research. *Although Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies* has also received its share of criticism (see below), it may be more far-reaching in its impact. This research is often cited by feminists as the source of the distinction between "gender"—as an identity and an associated set of beliefs and behavior—and "sex"—as a biological categorization of an individual based on anatomical characteristics. In her book, Mead observed that each of the three different New Guinea tribes she and Fortune studied had a different cultural norm for typical male and female behavior. Among the Arapesh, both men and women were expected to be maternal, conciliatory, and nurturing of children. Among the belligerent Mundugumor, the norm was for both men and women to be aggressive and to lack an interest in child care. However, in Tchambuli society, it was the women who were the economic providers, while the men stayed at home to care for the children and spent hours preparing elaborate headdresses and attire for their ritual dances.

The implications that Mead drew from these cultural differences was that male and female behavior was not "hardwired" as part of our biological heritage but instead was malleable and could be influenced by the culture one grew up in.

This important insight—another contribution to the role of culture versus biology in the determination of human behavior—brought her acclaim from both scholars and the general public.

Balinese Character *(1942): A New Visual Methodology*

After her marriage to Gregory Bateson in 1936, Mead's research turned to data gathering with film and still photography. Mead and Bateson's fieldwork in Bali, which they undertook in 1936, did not make lasting theoretical contributions. They had hoped not only to use moving and still photography to demonstrate the ways in which culture shapes both emotions and their bodily expression but also to provide new insights into the study of schizophrenia. While their research contributed nothing new to the study of mental illness, it did demonstrate the importance of visual data to the study of culture and behavior. Their photographic study *Balinese Character* (1942) and the films they shot during this fieldwork, such as "*Trance and Dance in Bali*," are acknowledged as important methodological contributions to anthropological research. They helped establish the subfield of visual anthropology, championing the production of ethnographic film and the

use of film and still photography for the microanalysis of behavior.

"Culture-and-Personality" School

Mead's research in Samoa, New Guinea, and Bali demonstrated her interest in the study of the human mind and the impact of culture on individual emotions, beliefs, and behavior. Along with her mentor Ruth Benedict, she was influential in creating the Culture-and-Personality school, a precursor of the subfield of psychological anthropology. Other anthropologists associated with culture and personality studies include A. Irving Hallowell, John and Beatrice Whiting, Cora DuBois, Clyde Kluckhohn, and, to a lesser extent, Gregory Bateson. Mead was greatly influenced by Benedict's book *Patterns of Culture* (1934), which argued for an understanding of culture as "personality writ large." Like Benedict, who claimed that a culture and an individual were both more or less consistent patterns of thought and action, Mead also promoted a configurationist approach to the analysis of cultures, looking for patterns in behavior, beliefs, social institutions, and so on, that combine to form a distinct culture. These traits constitute an interdependent constellation of aesthetics and values in each culture that together add up to a unique gestalt. Today, the name "culture and personality," along with some of its basic theories and premises, such as "modal personality," "cultural configuration," and culture as "personality writ large," has become outdated. However, other aspects of culture and personality studies, such as the focus on understanding the individual within the context of his or her culture, the interaction between the individual and culture, and culture's impact on an individual's emotion, remain fundamental concerns of psychological anthropology.

Mead's Legacy: The Mead-Freeman Controversy

When Freeman published his critique of Mead's Samoan research in 1984, many anthropologists felt that some of the basic theoretical principles of American cultural anthropology, such as the importance of culture in the determination of behavior, were being attacked. Moreover, they cited many ethnographic errors and misrepresentations in Freeman's arguments against Mead, ultimately leading the American Anthropological Association to condemn Freeman's critique. However, because of Mead's public celebrity status, both her reputation and that of cultural anthropology suffered as a result of the media's coverage of the controversy. At present, although anthropologists such as Ira Bashkow and Lise Dobrin, Deborah Gewertz and Paul Roscoe are aware of and have written about the shortcomings of Mead's research, such as her findings about the Arapesh and Chambri in *Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies*, many of these same individuals, including Gewertz, Richard Handler, Maureen Molloy, and Roscoe, praise other aspects of her work and her pioneering contributions to ethnographic research methodology, the study of kinship, gender and child rearing, and psychological anthropology. Although Mead's legacy outside anthropology is mixed, her contributions to anthropology are many, and she remains a pioneering figure in the application of anthropological insights to issues fundamental to modern American life, such as race, gender, sexuality, children, and the family.

Nancy Lutkehaus

See also Bateson, Gregory; Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Culture and Personality; DuBois, Cora; Fortune, Reo; Hallowell, A. Irving; Kluckhohn, Clyde

Further Readings

Côté, J. E. (1994). *Adolescent storm and stress: An evaluation of the Mead-Freeman controversy.* Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum.

Handler, R. (2005). *Critics against culture: Anthropological observers of mass society.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Lutkehaus, N. (1995). Margaret Mead and the "rustling-of-the-wind-in-the-palm-trees school" of ethnographic writing. In R. Behar & D. Gordon (Eds.), *Women writing culture* (pp. 186–206). Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (2008). *Margaret Mead: The making of an American icon.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Mead, M. (1928). *Coming of age in Samoa: A psychological study of primitive youth for Western civilization.* New York, NY: William Morrow.

———. (1931). *Growing up in New Guinea: A comparative study of primitive education.* New York, NY: William Morrow.

———. (1935). *Sex and temperament in three primitive societies.* New York, NY: William Morrow.

———. (1972). *Blackberry winter.* New York, NY: William Morrow.

———. (1975, January). Bisexuality: What's it all about? *Redbook, 144*(3), 29–31. (Reprinted in *Aspects of the Present*; by M. Mead & R. Metraux, Eds., 1980, New York, NY: William Morrow).

Molloy, M. A. (2008). *On creating a useable culture: Margaret Mead and the emergence of American cosmopolitanism*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press.

Roscoe, P. (2002). Introduction. In M. Mead (Ed.), *The Mountain Arapesh* (p. III). New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.

Shankman, P., & Boyer, P. S. (2009). *The trashing of Margaret Mead: Anatomy of an anthropological controversy.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Meillassoux, Claude

Claude Meillassoux (1925–2005), born in northern France, exerted a major influence in anthropology through his work on West African farm communities, slavery, premodern trade, gender roles, and the theory of imperialism.

In the 1950s, after participating in militant Third World study groups, he was initiated to Anglo-Saxon social anthropology by Georges Balandier and conducted fieldwork among Gouro-speaking farmers in Côte d'Ivoire. Subsequently, he spent his career in the French National Research Center and carried out longer stretches of fieldwork among the Soninke and Marka populations in Mali and Senegal. In the 1960s, he came to be known as a pioneer of Marxist anthropology and an economic anthropologist, but he also wrote on Mande culture history, voluntary associations, comparative kinship, child labor, and apartheid South Africa.

In his first pathbreaking article of 1960, Meillassoux presented a model of farm communities producing most of their needs (self-provisioning), based on his Gouro fieldwork. The model assumes that all members have access to land, and tools are simple and easy to find; the division of labor follows sex and age. Even so, production techniques are complex and necessitate a long apprenticeship. Senior men at the top of the hierarchy act as the organizers. Younger men work the farms and produce most other necessities but "yield" the produce to the elders, who then distribute it according to norms and needs. This dependency finds expression in kinship and corresponds to filial relations within the household; therefore, it is consensual but also fraught with potential antagonism. Senior men's authority stems ultimately from their control of knowledge and also the farming conditions: Until harvest time, previous years' stored crops are needed for sustenance; older men appear as the providers, setting the principle of anteriority supreme. Yet the resulting social ranking is not simply inscribed in the natural order. The elders reinforce their hold by limiting the transmission of the requisite knowledge through cultural means or extending its range beyond the technical to ritual and the supernatural, to delay or constrain the emancipation of junior men. Furthermore, they control junior men's social progress by regulating marriage, because young men can only obtain dependents and set off in the path of autonomy by establishing their proper household.

Senior elders provide spouses for young men by engaging in delayed exchanges with other groups, in which the surrender of bride wealth goods, an assortment of diverse rare objects, serves as a safeguard for later reciprocation. The elders keep these treasures out of reach of the juniors. When the development of monetary relations threatens their easier availability, they resist the conversion of bride wealth to money. The broader powers they gain with their ability to control marriages allows them to delegate local tasks such as the distribution of food to younger seniors heading house groups. This complex political organization that rests on farming can evolve into stratified village polities. The worsening of general security, the rise of militarized groups, or invasion by foreigners can further lead to centralized power. More frequently, these communities trade with foreign professionals. Usually, the senior elders monopolize trade, isolating the rest of the community from the exchanges. If their control collapses, the young men and women sell their products directly, price equivalencies emerge within the community, and the entire social order starts changing.

Meillassoux ethnography of the Gouro, published in 1964 and based on a survey of four villages; the intensive study of published sources; and the ingenious use of aerial mapping, put greater emphasis on farmers as cash croppers. In 1975, in a theoretical synthesis translated as *Maidens, Meal and Money*, he elaborated that women were valued more for giving birth than as agricultural workers;

if there was subjugation, it lasted only during their procreative years, primarily to control the offspring. The book also considered wage work in colonial situations and internal migration. The workers who travel to take up mining or factory jobs are raised in farm communities, which also reabsorb them when they return worn out, making it possible for the industries that employ them to pay lower wages. This explains the paradox that imperialist systems deliberately maintain labor reserves and community areas, instead of fully integrating them into the capitalist system.

Meillassoux's originality lay in focusing on farm production and theorizing family and community in terms of "relations of production," a Marxist inspiration. His bride wealth analysis revealed that restrictions on the circulation of objects had political consequences, laying bare the triteness of earlier discussions on bride purchase; his contrast between juniors and seniors opened up new interpretive horizons. Meillassoux sways in his early writings between describing self-provisioning farm communities as a step in historical evolution and as fieldwork reality, but his 1975 book settled on the latter perspective. Meillassoux provided an impetus for a lively debate in the 1970s known as the "modes of production controversy" (the term having been given currency by the philosopher Louis Althusser), but he responded by avoiding its use.

Between 1960 and 1977, in his Senegal and Mali fieldwork, Meillassoux encountered complex, stratified savanna societies, and his writing took a historic turn. *The Development of Indigenous Trade and Markets in West Africa* synthesized 19th-century travel literature and earlier 20th-century ethnologists' and historians' contributions to produce an intricate canvas of connections between production and commerce in West Africa. He distinguished long-distance commerce in high-value items from women's retail food trade. Until the 20th century, this commerce surpassed the Atlantic trade in volume. War provided a means of payment and markets for this trade. Commerce involved, however, only products, not labor or capital; as prices across the region remained uncoordinated, trade profits had no systematic influence on production conditions. A major discovery of the book was slavery's significance in several 19th-century savanna societies, as in many others elsewhere in the world since antiquity. While slavery assumed different forms, across regions and local cultures, slaves served as a major commodity and were employed to produce food and goods supplied to long-distance trade. These insights were pursued in his edited *Slavery in Precolonial Africa* (1975), which was the first major discussion of African slavery by anthropologists, and developed in *The Anthropology of Slavery: The Womb of Iron and Gold*.

Meillassoux noted that because slaves were captured from the outside, their work was less costly to the capturers than internally raising the equivalent population. This way, resources got transferred from birth communities to those of forcible incorporation. But the captured needed to be moved far away in order to reduce their chances of being delivered or escaping, giving rise to extensive trade networks. The use of slaves in agriculture, war, tax collection, and government subsidized the military establishment of enslavement. In contrast to full members of the community, the exploitation of slaves in agrarian conditions absorbed their life energies, hampering their self-reproduction. They were replenished only by ongoing capture. A slave society could not be self-contained—a significant amendment of Marx and Engels and of the earlier Marxist tradition, which considered slavery a type of society, or "mode of production." But the demand for slaves was bound to exceed the demographic capacity of the pilfered population to supply them, extending the catchment area to exhaustion. If in successive generations slaves were transformed into serflike communities paying a product-rent, exploitation was subdued. Commerce allowed some West African areas to increase the number of dependents through purchase, generating profits and feeding the monetized long-distance trade economy, as well as the overseas Mediterranean and Atlantic markets.

This comprehensive theory revealed the shortcomings of earlier studies on slavery based on information from 19th-century America, because the banning of the transatlantic slave trade by then had altered the circumstances. Meillassoux's analysis of slavery is one of the greatest anthropological contributions to general social theory.

Meillassoux's later publications focused on child labor, emphasizing its wage-lowering effect at the expense of adults staggering under high

unemployment rates. His final book, *Mythes et Limites de l'Anthropologie* (Myths and Limits of Anthropology, 2001), argued that the naturalist model of kinship emerged in warrior-aristocratic cultures, where power holders sought to limit succession to persons in their household whom they could dominate personally.

In economic anthropology, Meillassoux was influenced by Karl Polanyi and Paul Bohannan, but his sweeping vision linking political and economic phenomena and his ability to recognize broad patterns that eluded others, both partly inspired by his Marxian focus on social reproduction, led him quickly to leave behind their typological approach to produce strikingly original contributions.

Mahir Şaul

See also Althusser, Louis; Bohannan, Paul; Marxist Anthropology; Polanyi, Karl

Further Readings

Meillassoux, C. (Ed.). (1971). *The development of Indigenous trade and markets in West Africa.* London, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (1978). "The economy" in agricultural self-sustaining societies: A preliminary analysis. In D. Seddon (Ed.), *Relations of production* (pp. 127–157). London, UK: Frank Cass. (Original work published 1960)

———. (1981). *Maidens, meal and money: Capitalism and the domestic community.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press. (Original work published 1975)

———. (1991). *The anthropology of slavery: The womb of iron and gold.* London, UK: Athlone. (Original work published 1986)

Şaul, M. (2005). Claude Meillassoux. *American Anthropologist, 107*(4), 753–757.

Mintz, Sidney

Sidney W. Mintz (1922–) is an American anthropologist known for his pioneering ethnographic and historical research on the Caribbean, Afro-American cultures, cultural creolization, and food systems. Mintz is the author and editor of several books and many scientific articles on these and related themes. Caribbeanist anthropologists typically study only one society or societies speaking the same language in the region. Mintz chose to do fieldwork in three Caribbean societies with three different colonial legacies and languages: Puerto Rico (1948–1949, 1953, 1956), Jamaica (1952, 1954), and Haiti (1958–1959, 1961). He later worked in Iran (1966–1967), where he did fieldwork with his wife, Jacqueline Wei Mintz, and in Hong Kong (1996, 1999).

Biography and Theoretical Directions

Mintz was born in Dover, New Jersey, one of four children of Eastern European Jewish immigrant parents. Arriving in New York at the beginning of the 20th century, his father, Solomon, was a diemaker and clothing salesman; his mother, Fanny, became a seamstress and Industrial Workers of the World organizer. With the onset of the Depression, Solomon lost the restaurant he had eventually come to own there, opened a diner, and became a cook. Mintz attended Brooklyn College, and in the summer months, he worked the midnight shift at an arsenal near Dover. After receiving his BA in psychology in 1943, he was drafted into the U.S. Army Air Corps, where he taught celestial navigation. After the war and with the aid of the G.I. Bill, he enrolled in graduate studies in the Department of Anthropology at Columbia University in September 1946. During 1947–1948, he was an assistant to Ruth Benedict, whom he admired. At Columbia, he encountered fellow veteran graduate students who were interested in leftist/radical politics and in applying Marxist/materialist approaches to anthropological theory. They formed a study group called the Mundial Upheaval Society, many of whose members, including Mintz, Stanley Diamond, Morton Fried, Robert Manners, John Murra, Elman Service, and Eric Wolf, became prominent professionally.

At Columbia, a major influence was Julian Steward, whose models of multilinear evolution provided a critique of the ethnographic particularism of many followers of Franz Boas and a counterpart to Benedict's culture and personality approach. With funding from the Rockefeller Foundation and the University of Puerto Rico, Steward assembled a team of graduate students from Columbia and from the University of Chicago, whose members

would each study an economically and ecologically distinct sector in the island. Mintz chose to study a rural sugar plantation proletariat at "Cañamelar," a pseudonym for Jauca, Santa Isabel, on the island's south coast. Murra, who was on the faculty of the University of Puerto Rico, was the project's field manager. In the resulting landmark book, *The People of Puerto Rico: A Study in Social Anthropology* (1956), each student contributed a chapter based on his or her field studies. It was during his fieldwork that Mintz developed a lifelong friendship with his main informant, Anastacio Zayas Alvarado ("Taso"), who became the subject of Mintz's book *Worker in the Cane: A Puerto Rican Life History* (1960).

Mintz's early anthropological training contributed greatly to the formation of his theoretical perspective. Mintz agreed with his friend and early collaborator Wolf that past cultural forms and social structures orient and limit human behavior; but within these forms, and from the norms acquired as part of the culture-learning process, humans learn how to maneuver socially toward achieving their particular goals. Their room for maneuver, however, depends substantially on their position within specific social and economic systems. Mintz sought to create a theory of culture that might enrich Marxism. For Mintz, "culture," while definable as behavior mediated through symbols, must also be seen as a set of historically derived materials animated by events and actors in a social system. Placing an emphasis on how people made their living and how that experience is objectified and symbolized, Mintz argues that cultural forms and social positions overlap. Different classes and social groupings do not necessarily have different cultures; yet the existence of some single, coherent culture for each society cannot be demonstrated. From early on, Mintz developed his characteristic refusal to consider the "communities" studied by anthropologists as cut off from wider networks and historical connections of world power and influence. Here, he anticipated the anthropological interest in globalization by decades.

Other early influences on the formation of Mintz's anthropological thought include his encounters with the work of Caribbean intellectuals. While doing fieldwork in Puerto Rico, he met the Trinidadian historian (later politician) Eric Williams and read his now classic book *Capitalism and Slavery* (1944), in which Williams argued that the motivations for slavery were economic and that Atlantic slavery was implicated in the development of capitalism. Mintz was also influenced by the Trotskyite Trinidadian scholar-writer C. L. R. James's book *The Black Jacobins: Toussaint Louverture and the San Domingo Revolution* (1938), which he read when preparing to do research in Haiti. In his book, James argued for the utter modernity of Caribbean people, born as they were in the crucible of slavery and industrial factory production that characterized the sugar plantations. Mintz also interacted with Caribbean ethnologists such as Fernando Ortiz of Cuba and Jean Price-Mars of Haiti. Other Caribbean intellectual influences can be traced to the Haitian anthropologist Rémy Bastien, the Jamaican anthropologist Jean Besson, the Jamaican historian Douglas Hall, and the Guyanese historian Elsa Goveia, among others.

Mintz conducted fieldwork in Jamaica's former "Free Villages," whose origins could be traced to church-founded landholding schemes to establish a free peasantry after slave emancipation during the 1830s and 1840s. This led to his interest in the Caribbean peasantry. Early research on peasant markets and on market women in Jamaica led to a Guggenheim Fellowship to conduct research on Haitian markets. Mintz published papers on units of measure, on trading partners, on the uses of capital, and on the specifics of provisioning and financial transactions. He would later reflect on his fieldwork and his relationships with his informants in Puerto Rico, Jamaica, and Haiti in his book *Three Ancient Colonies: Caribbean Themes and Variations*, published in 2010.

Mintz enjoyed a long academic career at Yale University (1951–1974), where he helped found the Afro-American Studies program. He produced PhD students who did their dissertations on the Caribbean, including the African American scholar Councill S. Taylor. In 1974, he was invited to found the Department of Anthropology at the Johns Hopkins University, where he helped start the interdisciplinary Program in Atlantic History and Culture. There, he produced a number of PhD graduates, including many from the Caribbean, who were all encouraged to study a Caribbean society different from their own. He was the editor of a book series on the Caribbean for the Yale University Press, and

then, after his move to Johns Hopkins University, he became a coeditor of the Johns Hopkins Studies in Atlantic History and Culture book series. He was a visiting professor at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, the École Pratique des Hautes Études and the Collège de France (Paris), Florida International University, the Chinese University of Hong Kong, and elsewhere. In 1992, Johns Hopkins established the annual Sidney W. Mintz Lecture, which quickly became a prestigious venue. In 2012, the American Anthropological Association awarded Mintz the Franz Boas Award for Exemplary Service to Anthropology.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Mintz's critical contributions are many; in the context of a career spanning 5 decades, they are difficult to adumbrate. They fall roughly into three broad categories: (1) a historical approach to the formation of Caribbean societies, their role in the emergence of the capitalist world system, and how local responses would affect the cultural outcomes; (2) what is meant by the creolization of African culture in the New World; and (3) the historical anthropology of food, food systems, and foodways.

Capitalism, Contradictions, and the Caribbean

Mintz often pointed out that the Caribbean was the site of Europe's first sustained transoceanic colonial expansion and that this intercultural encounter was conducted on terms new to both the dominators and the dominated. In *Caribbean Transformations* (1974), Mintz theorized that colonial and postcolonial Caribbean "plantation societies" were deeply affected by the plantation complex, because it was itself tied to wider, world-spanning political economies and its populations of slaves and masters began as migrants themselves. Mintz's materialistic approach led him to suspect popular-nationalist and scholarly arguments that differing colonial slavery systems produced qualitatively differing degrees of cruelty, exploitation, and racism. The intensity of capitalistic effort did affect how these societies and cultures took shape. Mintz further argued that conventional theoretical categories had to be rethought when it came to the Caribbean. For example, in debating whether the Caribbean slave could be considered a proletarian, Mintz pointed out that Caribbean slavery was different from most Old World slavery because of its involvement with capitalism. But because slavery meant unfree labor, the Caribbean region was, while in the service of capitalism, not fully capitalistic. Contradictory forces, he argued, produced Caribbean peoples who were highly individualized through their plantation-based relationship with modernity yet able to engage in collective and cooperative activity. Caribbean peasantries were unlike the peasantries that existed elsewhere. They were formed, he contended, in resistance and as an adaptation to slavery and the plantation complex, as a "mode of response" to the plantation system and a "mode of resistance" to superior power. Mintz called them "reconstituted" because they began in recent historical time as something other than peasants. Not content with typological overviews, Mintz focused his ethnographic lens on the domestic economy and the gendered division of labor, especially women's roles in marketing.

Creolization in Question

In collaboration with the anthropologist Richard Price, Mintz's one-time informal student and then colleague at Yale and at Johns Hopkins, Mintz addressed the question of African cultural origins and cultural creativity in the New World. In the book *The Birth of African-American Culture: An Anthropological Approach* (1992; first published in 1976 and first delivered as a conference paper in 1973), Mintz and Price considered the question of *creolization* (a term used to describe the blending of two or more cultural traditions to create a new one) in Afro-American culture. Though they do not employ the word *creolization* at all in the book, they significantly revise and qualify the U.S. anthropologist Melville J. Herskovits's approach to Afro-American culture, which Herskovits saw as consisting of African cultural survivals existing below the surface of colonial-derived culture but still identifiable in key practices such as language and religion. Mintz and Price looked instead at cultural creativity and mutual fashioning in hierarchical, power-laden colonial and postcolonial contexts. Combining Herskovits's cultural-anthropological approach and the structuralism of the anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss (Price had studied with Lévi-Strauss for a year in Paris), Mintz and Price argued that Afro-American culture is characterized

by the deep-level "grammatical principles" of the various African cultures that entered into the slave trade and that these principles today extend to motor behaviors, kinship practices, gender relations, and religious cosmologies. This has been an influential yet controversial model in the anthropology of the African diaspora.

Sweetness, Power, and Gastronomical Orbits

Sweetness and Power: The Place of Sugar in Modern History (1985) established Mintz's prominence as an anthropologist of food. Drawing on history, anthropology, botany, geography, economics, and nutrition, *Sweetness and Power* employs multidisciplinary theory and methodology to explore sugar's meanings and uses over time. The book is also notable for incorporating issues of both production and consumption and for connecting the New World brutalities of slavery in the Caribbean to the Old World brutalities of English industrialization. While those who produced sugar endured cruelty, slavery, and early death, the product of that labor was consumed in weak tea and in bread and jam in Britain by the world's first factory proletarians. Among the first serious academic studies to feature an edible commodity, *Sweetness and Power* became a model of interdisciplinary food studies scholarship.

In *Tasting Food, Tasting Freedom: Excursions Into Eating, Culture, and the Past* (1996), Mintz evinced skepticism about the existence of "national" (especially "American") cuisines, and argued instead that cuisines are products of regional geographical locations and indigenous foods. Later, Mintz traced the development and use of the "proletarian hunger killers" tea and Coca-Cola, which emerged as popular drinks in modernizing societies (England of the 1800s, the southern United States of the 1900s) as workers' mealtimes became shaped by factory schedules. Finally, Mintz examined the use of soy in the West, primarily as an industrial crop rather than as a human food, in contrast to soy's multiple forms in Asian foodways.

Mintz's Legacy

Mintz combined a Marxist/historical materialist perspective with the particularism of Boasian cultural anthropology. His focus remained steadily on those global socioeconomic forces that marked the advent of capitalism and European expansion in the Caribbean. But at the same time Mintz argued that the local cultural responses to such forces should be investigated through careful, empathetic, and ethical ethnography; Mintz's theoretical approach anticipated the interest in globalization and cultural hybridity that characterized early-21-century anthropology. Yet Mintz insisted, against the grain, that these concepts used only in the abstract were of no help to serious anthropological and historical understanding. Methodologically, Mintz's historical approach led the way for anthropologists to visit the archives. And *multisited ethnography* was part of his anthropology well before the term was coined. Mintz was also reflexive on academic politics. He regretted that the study of the Caribbean was placed outside anthropology's prestige zones because its culturally and ethnically hybrid populations were not "exotic" enough for a discipline that sometimes traded in exoticism. His own immense contribution to anthropological theory based on Caribbean research belied those mistaken and prejudiced notions. Mintz's leading role in the production, reproduction, and institutionalization of anthropological knowledge means that his legacy will endure.

Kevin A. Yelvington and Amy Bentley

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Columbia University; Fried, Morton; Herskovits, Melville; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Baca, G., Khan, A., & Palmié, S. (Eds.). (2009). *Empirical futures: Anthropologists and historians engage the work of Sidney W. Mintz.* Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press.

Bentley, A. (Ed.). (2008). Sweetness and power: Rethinking Sidney Mintz's classic work. [Special issue, guest edited]. *Food and Foodways, 16*(2).

Carnegie, C. V. (2006). The anthropology of ourselves: An interview with Sidney W. Mintz. *Small Axe, 19,* 106–179.

Duncan, R. J. (Ed.). (1979). *The anthropology of The People of Puerto Rico.* San Germán, Puerto Rico: Inter American University of Puerto Rico, Caribbean Institute and Study Center for Latin America.

Ghani, A. (1998). Routes to the Caribbean: An interview with Sidney W. Mintz. *Plantation Society in the Americas, 5*(1), 103–134.

Lauria-Perriceli, A. (1989). A study in historical and critical anthropology: The making of *The People of Puerto Rico* (Unpublished doctoral dissertation). New School for Social Research, New York.

Palmié, S. (2005). Ackee and saltfish vs. *amalá con quimbombó:* A note on Sidney Mintz' contribution to the historical anthropology of African American cultures. *Journal de la Société des Américanistes, 91*(2), 89–122.

Peace, W. (2008). Columbia University and the Mundial Upheaval Society: A study in academic networking. In D. M. Wax (Ed.), *Anthropology at the dawn of the Cold War: The influence of foundations, McCarthyism, and the CIA* (pp. 143–165). London, UK: Pluto Press.

Scott, D. (2004). Modernity that predated the modern: Sidney Mintz's Caribbean. *History Workshop Journal, 58,* 191–210.

Silverman, S. (Ed.). (2011). The Puerto Rico project: Reflections sixty years later. [Special issue, guest edited]. *Global Studies in Culture and Power, 18*(3).

Mobility

Mobility—a complex assemblage of movement, representation, and practice—appears self-evidently central to globalization, as a key process and as a fundamental metaphor capturing the common impression that our lifeworld is in constant flux. The current anthropological interest in human mobility, from daily home-to-work movements to more permanent transnational migration, goes hand in hand with theoretical approaches that question earlier taken-for-granted correspondences between peoples, places, and cultures. This follows the critique by James Clifford in the 1990s that anthropology needs to leave behind its preoccupation with discovering the "roots" of sociocultural forms and instead trace the "routes" that (re)produce them. Over the years, anthropologists have studied the most diverse forms of mobility across the globe. This entry examines key issues related to the concept of mobility that have repercussions for the discipline as a whole.

Although anthropologists have been slow to react to the alleged "mobility turn" in the social sciences (as propagated by geographers and sociologists), ideas of mobility have a long history in anthropology. They are already present in transcultural diffusionism (Franz Boas) and in French theories of gift exchange systems (Marcel Mauss). Archaeological and (ethno)historical records show that humankind has always been characterized by movement and that certain groups were more mobile in the past than they are now. For a long time, however, mainstream anthropology mostly confined its analyses of boundary-crossing movements to the areas of kinship (marriage mobility), politics (structure of nomadic peoples), and religion (pilgrimage). Moreover, mobility was often limited as a defining characteristic of groups such as hunter-gatherers or traveler gypsies. It was used as a concept describing physical or abstract motion, not as something implying in and of itself social or cultural change.

While classical anthropology tended to ignore or regard boundary-crossing movements as deviations from normative place-bound communities, cultural homogeneity, and social integration, discourses of globalization and cosmopolitanism (which have become dominant since the end of the Cold War) shifted the pendulum in the opposite direction. In the 1990s, globalization—largely theorized in terms of transborder "flows"—was often being promoted as normality, and too much place attachment was seen as a local resistance against globalizing forces. Mobility became a predominant characteristic of anthropological analyses of the globalized world. This led to "multi-sited ethnography" (George Marcus), to capture the transnational flows that "deterritorialize identity" (Arjun Appadurai) and lead to "creolization" (Ulf Hannerz). By the turn of the millennium, however, there were already serious cracks in the discourse of unfettered mobility that accompanied the master narrative of the benefits and necessity of (economic) globalization. The overly optimistic language of mobility had inadvertently distracted attention from how the fluidity of markets shapes flexibility in modes of control (see the work of Anna Tsing and Aihwa Ong).

The movement of people may, and often does, create or reinforce difference and inequality, as well as blending or erasing such differences (Nina Glick Schiller). Despite the overly general celebration and romanticization, the ability to move (and the freedom not to move) is spread unevenly within countries and across the planet. Border-crossing journeys as a form of human experience are the exception rather than the norm. Anthropologists were among the first to point out that the very processes that produce cross-border movements and global linkages also promote immobility, exclusion, and

disconnection (see the work of Hilary Cunningham, Josiah Heyman, and James Ferguson). Stated differently, mobility and immobility always go together. The boundaries people face in mobility are related to factors such as social class, gender, age, lifestyle, ethnicity, nationality, and disability (all of which have been addressed by anthropological research in some way or the other).

Geographical mobility is made meaningful by being linked with the accumulation of economic (material resources), social (relational networks), or cultural (the embodied dispositions and competencies of cosmopolitanism) capital (Pierre Bourdieu). Although there often is a contradiction between this dominant ideology of mobility and the barriers faced in trying to realize it, mobilities and boundaries are not antithetical. Physical borders, for instance, have themselves been historically mobile, and as they move, people's previous daily connections suddenly become cross-border mobility. The first stages of the Industrial Revolution were marked by states trying to contain their labor within their borders. As more people began to move, states attempted to maintain authority over the sociocultural meaning that is attributed to these movements (Pál Nyíri). Consideration of the interconnectedness of mobilities and moorings focuses research on the political-economic processes by which people are bounded, emplaced, and allowed or forced to move. Such a focus shows how mobility is materially grounded (Johan Lindquist). To assess the extent or nature of movement, or, indeed, even observe it sometimes, one needs to spend a lot of time studying the things that stand still (or change at a much slower pace).

Mobility research directs new questions toward traditional anthropological topics. Many earlier conceptualizations blinded scholars to the fact that mobility is variable and multidimensional. People are moving all the time, but not all movements are equally meaningful and life shaping (for both those who move and those who stay put). Mobility gains meaning through its embeddedness within societies, culture, politics, and histories (which are themselves, to a certain extent, mobile). Alongside gender, class, race, ethnicity, age, nationality, language, religion, lifestyle, disability, and geopolitical groupings, mobility has become a key difference- and otherness-producing machine, involving significant inequalities of speed, risk, rights, and status, with both mobile and immobile people being engaged in the construction of complex politics of location and movement.

The critical questions for an anthropology of (im)mobility are not so much about the overall rise or decline of mobility but about how various mobilities are formed, regulated, and distributed across the globe and how the formation, regulation, and distribution of these mobilities are shaped and patterned by existing social, political, and economic structures. The cultural assumptions, meanings, and values attached to (im)mobility need to be empirically problematized rather than assumed. Contemporary anthropology is well equipped to challenge the (Western) assumptions embedded within many interdisciplinary mobility studies. Founding fathers such as Franz Boas and Bronisław Malinowski, while missing the extent to which their own epistemological projects were predicated on their own mobility, showed how the liminal positioning of anthropologists among the humanities and social sciences, with constant methodological and theoretical boundary crossings, offers promise for a fruitful holistic and grounded ethnographic analysis of the various forms of human mobility.

Noel B. Salazar

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Boas, Franz; Clifford, James; Globalization Theory; Marcus, George; Mauss, Marcel

Further Readings

Barnard, H., & Wendrich, W. (Eds.). (2008). *The Archaeology of Mobility: Old World and New World Nomadism.* Los Angeles: UCLA Cotsen Institute of Archaeology.

Clifford, J. (1997). *Routes: Travel and translation in the late twentieth century.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Salazar, N. B. (2010). Towards an anthropology of cultural mobilities. *Crossings: Journal of Migration and Culture, 1*(1), 53–68.

Salazar, N. B., & Smart, A. (Eds.). (2011). Anthropological takes on (im)mobility. *Identities: Global Studies in Culture and Power, 18*(5).

Modernism

Modernism can generally be defined as a broad movement or set of movements, primarily though

not exclusively in the arts, that, responding to cultural, material, and political changes in the Western world, engendered new forms of cultural and artistic expression in Europe and America in the late 19th and early 20th centuries. On the whole, modernist attitudes were those of revolt from traditional, Enlightenment (and, more recently, in Anglo-American contexts, "Victorian") ways of viewing the world and expressing it through the arts, perhaps most pithily expressed in the poet Ezra Pound's dictum "Make it new!" World War I is generally viewed as the historical event that most profoundly gave rise to (or confirmed) disillusionment in the modern world order and in the orthodox and received ways of knowing that characterize modernist expression.

Modernist Currents in the Arts and Anthropology

Perhaps most saliently, modernism is characterized by the rejection of realism as an ideology and method and a predominance of skepticism and pessimism in philosophical outlook and in tone. Formally, modernism in the arts tends to promote and illustrate discontinuous (vs. continuous or consecutive) narrative form and innovation in modes of expression that promote subjective (rather than objective) states: specific movements and methods embodying those include, variously, stream of consciousness narrative, collage, spatialism, surrealism, cubism, Dadaism, expressionism, imagism, and primitivism. Artists considered most characteristically and prominently "modernist" include Igor Stravinsky, Pablo Picasso, James Joyce, Joseph Conrad, Max Ernst, T. S. Eliot, Ezra Pound, William Butler Yeats, Virginia Woolf, William Faulkner, Ernest Hemingway, and Langston Hughes.

If taken strictly in terms of periodization, modernist anthropology could be considered the social and cultural anthropology produced in roughly the first half of the 20th century, and as such it would coincide with the period in which anthropology as a field became institutionalized in universities and in departments of anthropology. This is, of course, also the time frame in which, in Anglo-American anthropology especially, the monograph became established as the normative discursive form of social and cultural anthropology and participant observation became the normative practice or methodology. Considered in terms of this time frame and the rise of these institutionalizing practices, the most prominent "modernist" anthropologists would include Franz Boas and Bronisław Malinowski in England and America and Marcel Mauss in France (acknowledging that the institutionalization of anthropology in France followed some trajectories quite different from those on the Anglo-American scene).

Given that modernism is generally defined as an *artistic* period or movement (or constellation of movements), it is worth considering how the rise and prevalence of modernism in the arts influenced or was related to the anthropology of that period. It is certainly the case that a number of anthropologists in the first decades of the 20th century in England and America either were practicing artists or styled themselves as such—note Malinowski's famous injunction in his notorious Diary, "I shall be the Conrad" of cultural anthropology, and also Ruth Benedict and Edward Sapir's avocation as poets. However, the interpenetration of modernist aesthetics with modern anthropology was considerably more pronounced within French anthropology, especially in the case of the Collège de Sociologie, wherein Georges Bataille, Roger Caillois, Michel Leiris, and others collectively engaged in what James Clifford has termed an "ethnographic surrealism" that was vitally related to the avant-garde aesthetic experimentation in Europe in the early decades of the century. As Clifford and Michele Richman note, the Collège's modernist aspects were hardly limited to literary styles or effects, but rather, the work, individually and collectively, of members of the Collège was vitally concerned with the role of myth and the sacred in collective life, issues that were also, arguably, central to much of modernist art. In the case of the Collège, what can be defined as "modernist" has less to do with the influence (of, say, modernist art on modernist anthropology) and more to do with a mutual interpenetration of prevalent modernist concerns and modes of expression: One could say that both artist and anthropologist, and artist *as* anthropologist, were vitally concerned with how to wrest individual and collective value and meaning out of the chaos and fragmentation of modern living.

On the Anglo-American scene, on the other hand, both the creators of modernist literature and subsequent critics and readers of modernist art emphasized the importance of the influence of anthropology on the arts, and on modernist literature in particular.

The most famous of those anthropological influences was that of James G. Frazer's *The Golden Bough* on modernist masterworks such as Eliot's poem *The Waste Land* and Joyce's novel *Ulysses*, both published in 1922. Eliot advertised his debt to Frazer both in the controversial "Notes" he appended to *The Waste Land* and in a very visible and highly quoted review (1923) he wrote of *Ulysses*, in which, Eliot noted, Joyce, with the aid of Frazer and others, had created a "mythical method" for modern art that would supplant the more traditional "narrative method" of creating literature that could make sense of modern life.

The modernist preoccupation (sometimes rising to obsession) with *The Golden Bough* and related evolutionary-oriented anthropological writings both greatly influenced and was a manifestation of a broad cultural and artistic fascination with the primitive and with ritual, which preoccupied and galvanized much of modernist art—both the visual arts (Picasso, Georges Braque, etc.) and the literary arts (Yeats, Eliot, Eugene O'Neill, and D. H. Lawrence, to name but a few). Theories of myth and ritual so prevalent in the late 19th and early 20th centuries in evolutionary anthropology had a great influence on modernist artists, by their own admission, having impacts on both formal and thematic aspects of their works. Such theories came from Frazer, certainly, but also from a wide range of anthropologists and classicists, perhaps most notably and influentially, on the Anglo-American scene, the Cambridge Hellenists or Ritualists, including Jane Harrison and F. M. Cornford, who asserted, often drawing from the archaeology of the period, a ritualist origin and basis for all art, ancient and modern. These theories came to have a great influence not only on modernist art but also on 20th-century theories of art, including, perhaps most prominently, the so-called myth criticism of the mid-20th century (see, e.g., the work of Joseph Campbell and Stanley Edgar Hyman) and arguably culminating in Northrop Frye's landmark work of literary criticism, *Anatomy of Criticism* (1957).

Ironically, the literary works that most famously made the case for a modernist literature, *The Waste Land* and *Ulysses*, and were pronounced by Eliot as vitally influenced by Frazer's work, were published in the same year, 1922, in which Malinowski's *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* appeared, which more than any other single anthropological work changed the landscape of modern cultural anthropology. At the same moment that Eliot was making the case for the enormous influence of Frazer's brand of comparative evolutionism on modernist art, Malinowski's *Argonauts* was marking, and making, the shift away from evolutionism to functionalism in theory, as well as away from comparative organization and discourse to what would become the orthodox form of ethnography for decades to come: the monograph.

Now, of course, Malinowski was not the only or even the first anthropologist to put forward alternatives to evolutionary theory and to the comparative method. As early as the 1880s, Boas in America was arguing against the then prevalent evolutionary assumptions as those influenced, and organized, the comparative arrangement of artifacts in anthropological museums. However, not until Malinowski's *Argonauts* was there an ethnography that provided a model for the monograph, which would become the orthodox discursive form in cultural anthropology through much of the 20th century. Whereas the Frazerian comparative text provided the predominant anthropological inspiration for artistic modernism, especially in its freewheeling juxtapositions of ancient and modern, of "primitive" and "civilized," and of magic and religion and science, within cultural anthropology itself, the modernist form par excellence was the monograph, which, in its mode of participant observation and its discursive casting of the ethnographer as narrator-hero, provided a much more narrative-based (vs. comparative based) discursive form. Just as artistic modernism (at least as articulated by Eliot) was moving from the conventional narrative method to the "mythical method," modernism in anthropology was signified by a movement from the "mythical" and comparative methods of evolutionary anthropology to the more predominantly narrative method of the monograph, with its accounting of the experience in time of the ethnographer as hero.

A fundamental change occurring in anthropology in the late 19th and early 20th centuries was the shift from a predominantly evolutionary view of culture hierarchically conceived (represented by a ladder, with "primitive culture" on the bottom rung and civilized British culture on the top rung) to a conception of "cultures," which in the plural are conceived as not higher or lower but as distinct from one another—thus, cultural relativism was born. This dramatic shift, from hierarchically

conceived culture to relativistically regarded cultures, is witnessed in the decline in influence within anthropology of evolutionary anthropologists such as Frazer and Tylor (whose 1871 volume *Primitive Culture* is commonly seen as inaugurating cultural anthropology as a field) and the rise of resolutely nonevolutionary, field-based anthropologists such as Boas and his disciples in America (Robert Lowie, Margaret Mead, Sapir, Benedict, etc.) and Malinowski, E. E. Evans-Pritchard, A. R. Radcliffe-Brown, and others in England.

Cultural relativism as it emerged in the modern, or modernist, anthropology that dominated the anthropological scene for several decades (from roughly the early 1920s through the 1940s or later) was but one of a number of relativisms emerging out of the modern era that marked, or characterized, modernist thought and expression. In this regard, cultural relativism can be seen, in a very general sense, as one of a piece with Einstein's theory of relativity or the psychoanalytic theories of Freud, both of which sought to knock off balance received notions of cosmic or psychic stability, respectively, much as cultural relativism in anthropology sought to knock off balance received notions of cultural order.

Postmodernism

Finally, an understanding of modernism generally, or within anthropology more specifically, cannot be complete without some consideration of postmodernism, as a consequent movement (or cluster of movements) of philosophical or artistic tendencies in the past century. There have been numerous definitions and debates within the academy over the meaning of postmodernism and its relation to modernism, which in part have been concerned about whether postmodernism is a period ("post") following a modernist period and/or whether it is a set of attitudes and strategies that are located in or arise out of modernism (and modernity generally).

Acknowledging the above debates and complications, postmodernist anthropology generally can be defined as a period of anthropology following the canonical modernist anthropology of the first half of the 20th century and characterized by the embrace of, or in any case response to, various movements within the intellectual academy of the second half of the century, including structuralism (as articulated by Claude Lévi-Strauss most prominently), poststructuralism, semiotic anthropology (à la Clifford Geertz and others), feminist anthropology, and postcolonialist anthropology.

Somewhat more specifically, and in accord with the prevailing (and sometimes contesting) definitions and characteristics of postmodernism both within the academy and in contemporary culture generally—for example, postmodernism's sense of reflexivity and play, its loss of faith in organic form, its skepticism or even hyperawareness of representational practices, its skepticism or even hyperawareness of its own ties to imperialism and colonialism—postmodernist anthropology is often defined by and associated with the somewhat vaguely termed "ethnography as text movement." That movement was inaugurated by James Clifford and George Marcus's influential collection *Writing Culture* (1986), which was followed by the similarly influential *Women Writing Culture* (Ruth Behar & Deborah Gordon, 1995), which incorporated a feminist framework and a set of methodologies into the former collection's proclivities toward the textual/discursive and imperial/colonial nature of anthropology. These and other writings in the past several decades have themselves provided the opportunity and impetus to revisit, reassess, and redefine not only the future of cultural anthropology but also modernism as a general cultural movement and as a period or set of tendencies within cultural anthropology.

Marc Manganaro

See also Bataille, Georges; Boas, Franz; Clifford, James; Frazer, James G.; Geertz, Clifford; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Malinowski, Bronisław; Marcus, George; Mauss, Marcel; Postmodernism; Structuralism; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Behar, R., & Gordon, D. A. (Eds.). (1995). *Women writing culture*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Caughie, P. L. (Ed.). (2009). *Disciplining modernism*. London, UK: Palgrave Macmillan.

Clifford, J. (1998). *The predicament of culture: Twentieth-century ethnography, literature, and art*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Dettmar, K. J. (Ed.). (1992). *Rereading the new: A backward glance at modernism*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.
Eliot, T. S. (1971). *The complete poems and plays, 1909–1950*. New York, NY: Harcourt, Brace, & World.
———. (1975). Ulysses, order, and myth. In F. Kermode (Ed.), *Selected prose of T. S. Eliot* (pp. 175–178). New York, NY: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.
Ellmann, R., & Feidelson, C., Jr. (Eds.). (1965). *The modern tradition: Backgrounds of modern literature*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
Evans, B. (2005). *Before cultures: The ethnographic imagination in American literature, 1865–1920*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Frazer, J. (1922). *The golden bough*. London, UK: Macmillan.
Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures*. New York, NY: Basic Books.
_____. (1988). *Works and lives: The anthropologist as author*. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press.
Hegeman, S. (1999). *Patterns for America: Modernism and the concept of culture*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
Joyce, J. (1986). *Ulysses* (H. Gabler, Ed.). New York, NY: Vintage. (Original work published 1922)
Manganaro, M. (Ed.). (1990). *Modernist anthropology: From fieldwork to text*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
———. (2002). *Culture, 1922: The emergence of a concept*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
Marcus, G. E., & Fischer, M. M. J. (Eds.). (1986). *Anthropology as cultural critique: An experimental moment in the human sciences*. Chicago, IL: Chicago University Press.
Pound, E. (1975). *Selected prose, 1909–1965* (W. Cookson, Ed.). New York, NY: New Directions.
Richman, M. H. (2002). *Sacred revolutions: Durkheim and the College de Sociologie*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.
Snyder, C. J. (2008). *British fiction and cross-cultural encounters: Ethnographic modernism from Wells to Woolf*. New York, NY: Palgrave Macmillan.
Stocking, G. (1995). *After Tylor: British social anthropology, 1888–1951*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.
Tylor, E. B. (1958). *Primitive culture*. New York, NY: Harper & Row. (Original work published 1871)
Vickery, J. B. (1973). *The literary impact of The Golden Bough*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Montesquieu, Comte de

Charles-Louis de Secondat, Comte de Montesquieu (1689–1755), was one of the leading thinkers of the French Enlightenment. His literary career began with the publication of *Persian Letters* in 1721, a novel comprising letters written by and to a pair of Persian travelers in France. The book ranges from a witty satire of French manners to philosophical reflections about society and a vehement condemnation of despotism as embodied by the harem. In 1748, toward the end of his life, he published *The Spirit of Laws*, a treatise relating the principles of different forms of government to climate, geography, commerce, warfare, family, and religion in Europe as well as the non-European world. The comparative scope of Montesquieu's enterprise, if not his specific ideas, constituted a point of departure for social and political thought in France and Britain throughout the rest of the 18th century, providing a paradigm for universal schemes that, a century later, underpinned the emergence of modern anthropology.

Montesquieu was born into the judicial aristocracy in Bordeaux. He trained in law before inheriting his title along with the office of president of the Parlement of Bordeaux. The success of *Persian Letters* granted him notoriety and entry into the salons of Paris. Tired of the provincial atmosphere of Bordeaux, he sold his judicial office to finance his life in Paris as a successful writer and man of the world. His background in the law was clearly central in the elaboration of his life's major undertaking, *The Spirit of Laws*.

Persian Letters reverses the logic of the standard travel narrative by furnishing an account of French society, ostensibly from the point of view of non-European foreigners. Montesquieu cleverly stages the progressive initiation of the Persians Usbek and Rica into French society as naive incomprehension gives way to familiarity. The book self-consciously adopts a stance that would become central to much of ethnographic writing, the notion that outsiders are able to perceive fundamental aspects of society that insiders take for granted and fail to notice. The literary trope of the seemingly clueless but perceptive and insightful non-European outsider was hardly Montesquieu's invention, though the popularity of the book directly spawned a host of imitations.

The book shifts from a gentle satire of French society to a virulent critique of the domestic despotism of the Persian harem. Usbek, even tempered and philosophical in France, turns out to be a petty tyrant at home, subjecting his wives to the cruel discipline of eunuchs. In his absence, pandemonium breaks out, and his favorite wife, caught by the eunuchs with her lover, commits suicide—a dark ending to a broadly witty and entertaining book. The harem here functions as a metaphor for despotic rule in general, a focus of much of Montesquieu's later work.

The Spirit of Laws is a sprawling treatise of encyclopedic proportions. Its central contention is that "[laws] should be so specific to the people for whom they are devised that it is a great coincidence if those of one nation are suitable for any other." Montesquieu contended that the laws of any nation depended on its climate, geography, modes of livelihood, demography, commerce, religion, mores, and manners. Such a flagrant assertion of legal relativism flew in the face of the major currents of political theory, the deductive reasoning of Thomas Hobbes, John Locke, Hugo Grotius, and Samuel Pufendorf. In fact, such an ambitious comparative program had already been formulated by French jurists and historians in the 16th century but had later fallen into abeyance. Montesquieu was directly responsible for reviving and revamping such a project, one that underpins the logic of anthropology in particular and the social sciences in general.

Admittedly, Montesquieu's book does not always live up to such lofty aims. Montesquieu reduced the variety of legal systems to three: republican, monarchical, and despotic. Monarchies and despotisms were ruled by a single person, as opposed to republics; republics and monarchies were, unlike despotisms, subject to the all-encompassing rule of law. Each system was, he argued, governed by an entirely different principle. Republics depended on civic virtue, on the commitment of every citizen to uphold civic order and the law. Such virtue was entirely out of place in a monarchy, where subjects were most concerned with honor, the prerogatives associated with their rank, defending them not only against those beneath them but also especially against the monarch's central authority. Despotism, finally, was ruled by fear, by the need to cater to the ruler's irrational whims.

Montesquieu's assertions that each system was valid in and of itself, and that he was making no moral judgments, were not convincing. Clearly, despotic authority was his bugaboo, and his central political preoccupation was to elaborate the most effective checks against the arbitrary exercise of central authority. In this respect, his book was egregiously Eurocentric. Basing himself on Aristotle's adaptation of the Hippocratic scheme of climactic determinism in terms of hot, temperate, and cold climates, he asserted that Europe was the only region of the world that had developed alternatives to despotism, either republican or monarchical. He drew particularly on descriptions of Asian societies, notably Turkey, Persia, India, and China, as exemplars of despotic rule. In the absence of republican government, it was the existence of an independent aristocracy, however vainglorious, in Europe that constituted an effective barrier to arbitrary central authority.

Whatever the failings of Montesquieu's particular arguments, which were amply contested throughout the rest of the 18th century, the very scope of his project sketched out the epistemological foundations of modern anthropology.

Robert Launay

See also Ferguson, Adam; Voltaire

Further Readings

Launay, R. (2001). Montesquieu: The specter of despotism and the origins of comparative law. In A. Riles (Ed.), *Rethinking the masters of comparative law* (pp. 22–38). Portland, OR: Hart.

Montesquieu. (1973). *Persian letters* (C. J. Betts, Trans.). Harmonsworth, UK: Penguin Books.

———. (1989). *Montesquieu: The spirit of the laws* (A. M. Cohler, B. C. Miller, & H. S. Stone, Eds.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Morgan, Lewis Henry

Lewis Henry Morgan (1818–1881), American ethnologist, lawyer, statesman, industrialist, and philanthropist, is among the founders of American anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

Morgan was born in Scipio, in western New York. One of 13 children, he was the son of a prosperous landowner and state senator. Educated in Latin

and Greek at Aurora Academy, Morgan pursued a law degree at Union College, where he became convinced of the virtues of progress, the power of rationality, and the truth of natural law. Admitted to the bar in 1842, he returned to Aurora but found little work. He gave lectures promoting temperance, wrote articles about history, and joined a fraternal club called the Order of the Gordian Knot.

Morgan and other members of the society determined to base the structure of the Gordian Knot and its rituals on those of the Iroquois. They changed their group's name to The Grand Order of the Iroquois and began to visit local Iroquois communities to learn their customs. They were aided by Ely Parker, the son of a chief of the Tonawanda band of the Seneca Nation, whom Morgan had met by chance at a local book shop. Parker also became prominent in his own right. Educated at a Baptist mission school and later at Rensselaer Polytechnic, Parker served on the staff of U. S. Grant during the Civil War and later as U.S. commissioner of Indian affairs.

In 1844, Morgan moved to Rochester, opened a law practice, and founded a branch of the Grand Order there. Within a few years, other branches had been established, and the society had more than 500 members. These constituted a web of connections that Morgan used to promote his legal practice. The purpose of the Grand Order included providing aid to Native Americans, and this involved Morgan in a largely unsuccessful legal battle to preserve Senecan land rights.

Although the Grand Order had dissolved by 1847, Morgan's interest in the Iroquois continued. Attempting to understand them, Morgan drew on his relationship with Parker and with the American ethnographer Henry Schoolcraft. He made numerous visits to Iroquois reservations in the late 1840s. In 1846, at Morgan's request, he and two friends were adopted into the Tonawanda band. Although this action was controversial among the Tonawanda, it gave Morgan additional access to information about them. Morgan's research resulted in the publication of *The League of the Iroquois* in 1851. There, Morgan traced the history of the Iroquois confederacy and detailed their environment, social institutions, and material culture.

In 1851, Morgan married his cousin Mary Elizabeth Steele, the daughter of a powerful Albany politician and bank director. Morgan's Rochester law practice grew, as did his involvement in civic affairs. In 1854, he founded the Pundit Club, an organization of intellectuals devoted to scientific exploration and discussion. Among its members was the Reverend Joshua H. McIlvaine, who was to have a profound influence on Morgan's thought.

Morgan was not religious in a doctrinaire sense; however, he was affected by the deep religious beliefs of his wife and of McIlvaine. His convictions included a commitment to monogenesis: the belief in the single origin and unity of all humans. Morgan was influenced by his reading of Darwin and came to believe in both deep time and change over time. However, Morgan remained convinced of the independent origin of each species. McIlvaine's disapproval of marriage to close relatives might have also played a role in Morgan's kinship studies.

In the mid-1850s, Morgan became the chief lawyer for investors in railway and mining operations in Michigan's Upper Peninsula. He prospered from both the legal fees he collected and the investments he made in both railways and mines. These included one-fourth ownership of the Lewis Morgan Iron Company. He traveled frequently to Michigan for his clients and to oversee his properties. Morgan's wealth allowed him the freedom to pursue his ethnological interests and amass a substantial library.

Although he continued to be involved in the wide-ranging intellectual activities of the Pundit Club, Morgan did not pursue his interest in ethnography until after he attended the 1857 meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science. In a paper describing Iroquois kinship the following year, Morgan noted that a comparison of descent systems might prove the Asiatic origins of Native Americans. At the same time, McIlvaine drew Morgan's attention to comparative philology, and Morgan began to consider the relationship between kinship and language. This led to the publication in 1871 of *Systems of Consanguinity and Affinity of the Human Family*, in which Morgan analyzed kin terminology from cultures throughout the world and proposed an evolutionary framework for kinship.

As he researched kinship and language, Morgan also wrote *The American Beaver and His Works* (1868), an in-depth biological study of the beaver that also argued for the similarity of mental processes in humans and animals, as well as the socially driven evolution of human and animal mental

capacity. Morgan proposed that the beaver's works emerged from its social relationships.

In 1870 and 1871, Morgan traveled for 14 months in Europe, spending time with Darwin, John F. McLennan, John Lubbock, and Thomas H. Huxley. These meetings, and particularly the writings of McLennan and Lubbock as well contributions from McIlvaine, Lorimer Fison, and Adolf Bandelier, were influential in the writing of *Ancient Society* (1877). There, Morgan traced the progress of human society, focusing on inventions and subsistence, and the evolution of the ideas of government, the family, and property. He thus combined his work on kinship with analysis of other social institutions.

In the summer of 1878, Morgan traveled to Colorado and New Mexico. His experiences led to the publication in 1881 of *Houses and House Life of the American Aborigines*. Morgan hoped to show that all Native American architecture reflected a primitive family structure and communal property ownership.

In addition to his research in anthropology, Morgan was deeply involved in civic and organizational life. He was elected to the state assembly as a Republican in 1861 and served one term. In 1867, he was elected to the state senate and again served a single term, much of it taken up with disputes between the New York Central and Erie Railroads. He sought, but did not attain, positions as commissioner of Indian affairs and U.S. ambassador. In 1875, he founded the anthropology subsection of the American Association for the Advancement of Science and, in 1880, served as president of the association. He was elected to the National Academy of Sciences in 1875. Morgan had also long been interested in the education of women. He was instrumental in the founding of Wells College (originally a women's college, today coeducational) and was its first elected trustee.

Morgan and his wife had three children. His two daughters died of scarlet fever in 1862 while Morgan was traveling on the Missouri River. His son was born with a mental deficiency that prevented him from living independently. When Morgan died in 1881, he left his property to his wife and son during their lives but instructed that after their deaths, his considerable estate pass to the University of Rochester to promote the education of women. The university also received the bulk of his library as well as most of his papers.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Morgan's contributions to anthropology were wide-ranging and seminal. They can be divided into three broad, interrelated categories: (1) work in ethnography, (2) kinship studies, and (3) social evolution.

Ethnographic Work on the Iroquois

Morgan's early work, *The League of the Iroquois*, set a precedent for American ethnography. Although European Americans had written about Native Americans during the 17th and 18th centuries, most of the accounts were written from the perspective of conquerors and missionaries. Many were harsh critiques of native society, purporting to explain the conditions of natives as the result of their fall from grace or their innate savagery. Although Morgan's work was romantic and condescending, it was relatively free of overt value judgment, focusing instead on descriptions of social and political institutions. Unlike much previous work, *The League of the Iroquois* was based on direct data collection, both through interviews with Ely Parker and through time spent at the Iroquois reservations. Morgan presented his work "To encourage a kinder feeling toward the Indian . . ." and argued that left to their own devices the Iroquois would make progress toward civilization.

Kinship and Evolution

In his research for *The League of the Iroquois*, Morgan had noted the differences between Iroquois and European understandings of kinship. In the late 1850s, he turned his attention more directly to the analysis of kin systems. Morgan began to wonder if by combining the study of kinship with philology he could provide evidence for the unity of all Native Americans and shed light on their origins. As with *The League of the Iroquois*, Morgan turned to empirical research. With the support of the Smithsonian Institution, he devised a questionnaire to collect information on kinship, testing it among the Iroquois. He sent questionnaires to contacts throughout the world and undertook yearly data-collecting trips to Kansas and Nebraska from 1859 to 1862. The linguistic data from these trips and surveys became the source of *Systems of Consanguinity and Affinity of the Human Family* (1871), in which Morgan showed that all societies used a small number of kinship systems and that

these could be described with reference to a small number of variables. One of the principal insights of *Systems* is the distinction between descriptive and classificatory kinship. In descriptive kin systems, specific terms such as *father* or *uncle* represent people who hold specific genealogical positions. In classificatory kin systems, a kin term can refer to a large number of genealogical positions. For example, in a classificatory kinship system, the term *father* may refer to all the men in your lineage who are of a generation older than you.

Morgan identified classificatory kin terminology among Native American groups and in data from India. He proposed that classificatory kinship systems originated in an earlier evolutionary stage when people were so promiscuous that it was impossible to distinguish among relatives. Thus, if a group of people were called "father" it was because the actual biological relationship to these individuals could not be known. He argued that different systems of kinship could be explained as stages of an orderly progression from this state of general promiscuity to the monogamous family of Morgan's day. Thus, evolution was a moral as well as a historical process. Morgan also proposed that the evolution of the family was tightly connected to changes in other social institutions, particularly the development of private property.

In Morgan's time, ethnology based on historical reconstruction frequently relied on biblical examples as well as data drawn from the ancient classical world. These were widely believed to be the oldest societies known. Morgan's idea that kinship terminology reflected evolution from an era of total promiscuity meant that the kinship terminology of the Bible and the classical world already showed substantial evolutionary change. It thus involved accepting the idea of human societies being far older than religious authorities countenanced. This idea forms a cornerstone of Morgan's next work, *Ancient Society*, the preface of which begins as follows: "The great antiquity of mankind upon the earth has been conclusively established."

Stages of Societal Evolution

After *Systems*, Morgan continued his work on social evolution, and in 1871, after his return from Europe, he began work on what became his most famous book, *Ancient Society: Or, Researches in the Lines of Human Progress From Savagery Through Barbarism to Civilization* (1877). Although *Ancient Society* contains some discussion of kin terminology, Morgan's primary focus was on kin organization, especially clans, which he called *gens*. More than half of *Ancient Society* is devoted to a discussion of the roles they play in the evolution of political organization. He also devotes substantial sections of the work to the evolution of the family and the development of the idea of private property, particularly as it relates to rules of inheritance.

In *Ancient Society*, Morgan proposed that the evolution of society involved the growth and development of institutions such as monogamous marriage, the nuclear family, and the concept of private property. Morgan associated developments in these areas with the stages of savagery, barbarism, and civilization. He further divided the first two of these into lower, middle, and upper stages. Using examples drawn from his surveys as well as studies of the Aztec and the ancient classical world, Morgan developed a system of classification that allowed him to place each society in a specific category. For example, people in the stage of middle savagery had developed technology for making fire, subsistence that included fishing, a "consanguine" family structure (founded on the intermarriage of brothers and sisters), and no concept of private property. Morgan indicates that Polynesians and Australian Aborigines were in the state of middle savagery at the time they were first contacted by the Europeans. Morgan's evolutionary scheme was very similar to the understanding of social evolution Edward Burnett Tylor presented in *Primitive Culture* in 1871. Morgan was aware of Tylor's work and had hoped to meet him during his travels in Europe in 1870–1871. However, the meeting never took place.

Morgan believed that the basic ideas that would lead to modern notions of the family, political institutions, and other aspects of society were present in incipient form in all human brains, even those of the lowest savages. He referred to these as "germs of thought." The evolution of society involved the expansion and growth of these germs, and this resulted in the development of complex social institutions. Morgan proposed a relationship between diet and the growth of "germs of thought" and thus linked subsistence and evolutionary progress. Great periods of evolutionary progress were related to the development of different forms of subsistence. Thus, in Morgan's scheme, savage society was based on

fishing and the gathering of wild vegetable foods, while the domestication of plants and animals was the basis for the evolutionary advance into barbarism. He proposed, for example, that the absence of animals adapted for domestication in the Americas was the reason for the backwardness of the aboriginal people of the Americas and that it was the domestication of large animals in the Old World, and the use of those animals to pull plows, that led to unlimited subsistence through agriculture and laid the foundation for civilization.

Morgan argued that because all of humanity had a single origin and because all humans shared the same basic cognitive makeup, the pathway of evolution was the same for all societies. Thus, ethnographers could examine each society, and by comparing its traits with those of other societies, they could determine not only its position on the evolutionary scale but also what earlier states of the society looked like and what the future would bring if the society were allowed to develop free of outside influence. Twentieth-century anthropologists called the comparison of traits among societies with the goal of locating their place in an evolutionary hierarchy the *comparative method* and referred to this understanding of social evolution as *unilineal evolutionism*.

For Morgan, the evolution of societies was determined by many interrelated factors, but the primary of these were biological and mental. Morgan was deeply influenced by the profound racism of his era, and he paid particular attention to the work of the physician Samuel G. Morton, who claimed to prove that different races were characterized by different brain sizes. Morgan believed that civilized people had larger brains than others. Thus, the process of social evolution had a biological basis. Evolution resulted in increased brain size, and this was assumed to correlate with increasing abilities to use logic and rationality. Increased rationality led to changes in technology and society. Although Morgan identified the relationships between technology, social institutions, and evolution, he understood these changes more as the result of evolution than its cause.

Morgan's Legacy

In his era, Morgan's work was central to the development of anthropology. John Wesley Powell, Frederick Ward Putnam, and Otis T. Mason all developed personal relationships with Morgan, and their work was strongly influenced by his. Powell, as first director of the Bureau of American Ethnography, made sure his staff members brought copies of *Ancient Society* to the field. Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels were drawn to the connections Morgan had identified between stages of cultural progress and material factors such as subsistence and technology. Marx made extensive notes to Morgan's work, and Engels later incorporated these into *The Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State* (1884). In the late 19th and early 20th centuries, Morgan exerted a profound though negative influence on Franz Boas and his followers. The Boasians attacked Morgan's evolutionism and drew attention to problems with his assumptions and techniques of cultural comparison. Their anthropology grew in direct opposition to Morgan's. In the 1930s and 1940s, Leslie White and others were drawn back to Morgan's analysis of the linkages between subsistence, technology, and other aspects of society. White argued that his own ideas about cultural evolution were firmly rooted in Morgan's. Although there is much scholarship about Morgan today, few anthropologists engage the specifics of his work. Nevertheless, his insights about kinship and his ideas about subsistence, technology, and progress continue to exert an influence on the field.

Richard L. Warms and R. Jon McGee

See also Comparative Method; Darwin, Charles; Lubbock, John; Marx, Karl; McLennan, John; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Tylor, Edward Burnett; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Kuper, A. (1985). The development of Lewis Henry Morgan's evolutionism. *Journal of the History of the Behavioral Sciences, 21,* 3–22.

Moses, D. N. (2009). *The promise of progress: The life and work of Lewis Henry Morgan.* Columbia: University of Missouri.

Resek, C. (1960). *Lewis Henry Morgan: American scholar.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Service, E. (1981). The mind of Lewis H. Morgan. *Current Anthropology, 22*(1), 25–43.

Tooker, E. (1992). Lewis H. Morgan and his contemporaries. *American Anthropologist, 94*(2), 357–375.

Trautmann, T. R. (1987). *Lewis Henry Morgan and the invention of kinship.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Müller, Max

Friedrich Max Müller (1823–1900) was a German scholar, celebrated in his day, who relocated to England in 1846 and spent the rest of his life there, mainly at Oxford University. He was renowned in multiple fields: Indology, comparative philology, comparative religion, and comparative mythology. He was, above all, a leading Sanskritist. To introduce the sacred writings of the East to the West, he oversaw the editing of the 49-volume *Sacred Books of the East*.

Müller was educated in his native Germany and then studied for a few years in Paris. His talent for languages was exceptional. While in Paris, he was urged to undertake a translation of the most ancient of the Vedas, the Rig Veda. He devoted much of his life to the publication of a critical edition. The manuscripts that he needed were available only in England—they were owned by the East India Company—and that is why he moved there. In 1854, he was named Taylorian Professor of Modern European Languages at Oxford. In 1858, he became a fellow of All Souls College. In 1860, he lost the election, to a lesser scholar but a more conservative Christian, for Oxford's chair in Sanskrit. Müller remained bitter for life at the decision but vowed to continue with his research and never left England. In 1868, he was named the first occupant of Oxford's chair of comparative philology. He delivered the most prestigious lecture series in the land, among them the Gifford Lectures, and was what today would be called a public intellectual.

Müller was a leading Indo-Europeanist and espoused Sanskrit as the original Indo-European language. For him, as for many others, language was the key to culture. Conventionally, he pitted Indo-European, or Aryan, language and culture against Semitic language and culture. But to his credit, he did not, like so many others, extend culture to race, and he was appalled at the extension. He defended the superiority of the dark-skinned Indians to the white-skinned Scandinavians. He was a relentless advocate of Indian civilization. He sought to show the kinship among Indo-European peoples. Yet he remained a staunch Christian, specifically a Lutheran, and somehow managed to reconcile the superiority of Christianity with a common source for all Indo-European religions.

The "Science of Religion"

Müller was the founder of the "science of religion," which became identical with the field of religious studies. By *science*, he did not mean an experimental discipline like physics or chemistry. He meant "science" in the ancient, Aristotelian sense of a unified body of knowledge. What for him made religious studies scientific was threefold: (1) a distinctive subject matter, (2) a purportedly distinctive method of studying that subject matter, and (3) the attribution of religion to other than revelation. More recent defenders of the autonomy of the discipline such as Mircea Eliade echo Müller.

According to this school, which came to call itself the history of religion, religion originates and functions to bring believers close to God. No other origin or function is allowed. If the sole way to explain religion is religiously, then only those in the field of religious studies are qualified to study religion. Anthropologists, sociologists, economists, and psychologists, all of whom explain religion nonreligiously, are excluded. Religious studies are thereby entitled to the status of an independent discipline, one safe from competition with the social sciences. The autonomy of the discipline does not rest on the assumption of the truth of religion. Like the social sciences, the science of religion circumvents the issue of truth and limits itself to the issues of origin and function. It is on the origin and function, not the truth, of religion that this discipline breaks with the social sciences.

Although Müller was a Christian, his theory of religion was more typical of Pagan or pantheistic nature mythology, according to which religion, which goes hand in hand with mythology, is the worship of one natural phenomenon or another. For Müller, as for some nature mythologists, that phenomenon was the sky, especially (but not only) the sun. Yet Müller was not really a nature mythologist because for him the grandeur of the sky provides the ideal condition for the experience of the true object of worship. That object is not the sun but the immaterial "Infinite," which is symbolized by the sun but which itself is nonphysical. Müller was the founder of religious studies precisely because he did not reduce God to the sun or to any other natural entity.

In some respects, Müller's approach to religion appears forlornly outdated—surely not unusual

for one who was writing more than 100 years ago. For example, someone so resolutely committed as Müller to comparativism would seem abhorrent to the dogmatic anti-comparativism of postmodernism. Müller's assumption that we intuitively and directly apprehend the world itself and that language merely articulates—if not corrupts—our knowledge of the world would today seem mortifyingly naive.

Various basic tenets of Müller's theory of religion have always been debatable. For example, Müller pits religion against mythology, subordinates mythology to philology, deems religion universal, deems religion irreducible, and reconciles religion with science.

Müller Versus Tylor on Religion and Myth

The best known of Müller's positions is his derivation of mythology from a "disease" of language. Take the opposite view, that of his rival E. B. Tylor, the pioneering English anthropologist (*Primitive Culture*, 1871). For Tylor, myth arises within religion. Without myth, there would still be the belief in Zeus as the god of thunder and lightning. But there would be no stories of the life of Zeus, of the acquisition of his powers, and of his use of those powers. Myth provides all three. For Tylor, both myth and the rest of religion were meant to be read literally. Symbolic readings of myth are modern anachronisms and are intended to preserve myth for moderns, who cannot accept a literal reading because of the conflict with science.

Where, then, for Tylor moderns misread myth by taking it symbolically, for Müller ancients themselves mistakenly came to take literally their originally symbolic personifications of natural phenomena, for which myths then had to be created. Originally, religion flourished without myth. There were no gods. There was only the Infinite. Where for Tylor "primitives" were incapable of symbolism, for Müller they were supremely capable of it.

Yet gradually, mere metaphors for the physical manifestations of the Infinite came to be taken literally. The sea was initially described poetically as "raging," which was then taken to be the characteristic of the personality responsible for the sea, and a myth was then invented to account for this characteristic. The metaphors properly recognized as metaphors by earliest humanity came to be misunderstood by later, if still early, humanity. Myth itself was taken literally from the outset. Mythology for Müller stems from the absence, in at least some ancient languages, of a neuter gender. Speakers therefore had to refer to impersonal entities in the male or female gender, forever after misleading their descendants into taking the referent to be a person rather than a thing.

Where for Tylor religion, including myth, is really about the physical world, for Müller religion is originally and properly about the immaterial Infinite, merely symbolized by the sky and other physical entities. But religion, in 19th-century fashion, is still rooted in the physical world. Myth, a corruption of religion, is about gods rather than the Infinite. Still, the gods are gods of nature. For Müller, neither religion nor myth is the projection of something human or social onto the physical world. Neither of them is the confusion of something outside the physical world with something in it, as 20th-century theorists would maintain. Rather, religion is really about a quality of the physical world, even if that quality symbolizes something beyond the physical world (see Müller, 1878, Lecture 1).

As opposed to Müller's view of myth as Tylor is, he grants Müller's disease of language a secondary place in the "formation of myth." Contrary to Müller, Tylor insists that myth arises primarily from reality—from the actual experience of the physical world. The primitive, and also modern, experience of the world is above all of motion, such as that of the falling of rain or the growing of a plant. Myth is a scientific-like inference to account for the motion, and the inference comes from analogy to the purposeful behavior of human beings. For Tylor, "the difference in nature between myth founded on fact [Tylor] and myth founded on word [Müller] is sufficiently manifest." Tylor is prepared to concede that "more advanced" peoples would have been capable of thinking symbolically, so that the mistaking of the initial metaphor for a literal personification could have arisen among them. But "primitive" peoples are for him at once too materialist and too literalist ever to have turned mere language into reality, which is to say, into gods.

Müller's Debates With Andrew Lang

In his time, Müller engaged in many famous debates with the Scottish man of letters Andrew Lang (1844–1912). In Lang's earlier writings—*Custom*

and Myth, the first edition of *Myth, Ritual and Religion* (1887), and *Modern Mythology: A Reply to Max Müller*—he seeks to refute Müller's theory of myth. Lang is here a faithful follower of Tylor. Accordingly, myth presupposes "animism," which is Tylor's term for religion, or the belief in gods, in all natural phenomena. The decisions of gods account for events in the natural world. For earlier Lang, as for Tylor, myth and the rest of religion operate in tandem. Religion does not degenerate into myth. Where Tylor accepts Müller's linguistic explanation of myth as a secondary origin of religion, Lang rejects it altogether and does so in the name of Tylor!

In Lang's later writings—*The Making of Religion*, the second edition of *Myth, Ritual and Religion*, and *Magic and Religion* (1901)—he seeks to refute Tylor's theory, not of myth but of religion. There is no mythology in this first stage of religion both because there is only one god, who therefore cannot interact with other gods, and because that god is nonanthropomorphic and so does not act in human-like ways. So ethereal and sublime is this pristine conception of god that it simply cannot last and eventually degenerates into Tylor's polytheism, which now becomes the second stage of religion. Only now does mythology arise—to account for the nature of these gods. While mythology still serves to account for events in the natural world, as part of degenerate religion, it is now itself considered degenerate.

Most ironically, Lang's position thus becomes almost identical with Müller's: Pristine worship of an impersonal god degenerates into the worship of many anthropomorphic gods, the nature of whom mythology arises to account for. Yet Lang never enlists Müller against Tylor. Where for earlier Lang, as for Tylor, myth is a part of religion and completes its explanatory function, for later Lang, as for Müller, myth is pitted against religion, which is to say, original, prelapsarian, true religion.

Current Perspective on Müller's Theory

Müller's theory of religion and of myth seems at best quaint. Present-day theorizing is a throwback to Tylor in its focus on personification, or anthropomorphism, as the heart of religion. A work like Stewart Guthrie's *Faces in the Clouds* (1993) seeks to explain the naturalness of personification, just as Tylor does. Rather than a fall from a pre-personified stage, religion is taken to be personification from the start, and even religions apparently without gods are assumed to have them. Müller's equation of personification with a fall in the course of religion is nowhere accepted today.

Robert Segal

See also Tylor, Edward Burnett; Oxford University; Religion

Further Readings

Bosch, L. P. van den. (2002). *Friedrich Max Müller.* Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.
Chaudhuri, N. C. (1974). *Scholar extraordinary.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
Guthrie, S. (1993). *Faces in the clouds.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.
Lang, A. (1887). *Myth, ritual and religion* (2 vols., 1st ed.). London, UK: Longmans, Green.
———. (1901). *Modern mythology.* London, UK: Longmans, Green.
Müller, F. M. (1867). Comparative mythology, 1856. In *Chips from a German workshop* (Vol. 2, pp. 1–141). London, UK: Longmans, Green.
———. (1878). *Lectures on the origin and growth of religion* (1st ed.). London, UK: Longmans, Green.
Stone, J. R. (Ed.). (2002). *The essential Max Müller.* New York, NY: Palgrave Macmillan.
Tylor, E. B. (1871). *Primitive culture* (2 vols., 1st ed.). London, UK: Murray.

Murdock, George Peter

George Peter ("Pete") Murdock (1897–1985), the American anthropologist, made seminal contributions to the study of kinship and is among the founders of cross-cultural research.

Biography and Major Works

Murdock was born and raised on a farm in Meriden, Connecticut. He worked on the farm until his matriculation at the Phillips Academy in Andover, Massachusetts, from which he graduated in 1915. He went on to attend Yale University, earning a bachelor's degree in history in 1919. Following a year of law school and a year traveling through Europe and Asia, Murdock returned to Yale and began work on a doctoral degree in anthropology, which he was awarded in 1925. He taught for 3 years at the University of Massachusetts, then returned to

Yale in 1928 with a joint appointment in anthropology and sociology. He helped found the Department of Anthropology at Yale in 1931 and twice served as the department chair. Murdock moved to the University of Pittsburgh in 1960, where he remained until his retirement in 1973.

Murdock had first sought to do graduate work in anthropology at Columbia University, but Franz Boas rejected his application, and Murdock turned to his former professor at Yale, Albert G. Keller, who encouraged him to matriculate at Yale. The relationship between Columbia and Yale was strained at the time—Columbia, under the firm leadership of Boas, was dedicated to historical particularism, whereas Yale had become dedicated to cultural evolution through William Graham Sumner (a devotee of Herbert Spencer) and his students, including Keller. Murdock's rejection at Columbia and acceptance at Yale drew him fully into the cultural evolution group, an approach to anthropology he supported for the rest of his career. Indeed, Murdock's dissertation was a critical translation of the German anthropologist Julius Lippert's seminal work on cultural evolution, which Murdock later published as *The Evolution of Culture* (1925).

During the first few years of his professional career, Murdock conducted fieldwork among the Haida and the Tenino, but situated as he was at Yale between two departments with differing approaches to social science, Murdock understood, in a way that perhaps other social scientists working at the time could not, the need for integrative work on human culture and behavior. The direction he chose was cross-cultural research, which at the time faced major problems in both methodology and data access. In 1937, Murdock launched the Cross-Cultural Survey to address these problems. Murdock also published a seminal article that year in which he outlined what would become the basis of cross-cultural research to this day. He argued that cross-cultural comparisons must be based on a worldwide sample of unrelated cultures, that the variables used must be clearly defined and measurable, and that any relationships or patterns found must be evaluated using the appropriate statistics.

The Cross-Cultural Survey and Human Relations Area Files

The initial work of the Cross-Cultural Survey included collecting and organizing ethnographic information in a systematic way. Murdock and colleagues at Yale developed the *Outline of Cultural Materials* (1938) as a basic framework for organizing the collected ethnographic information. The *Outline* provides a three-digit hierarchical system for classifying the information found in ethnographies. The *Outline* was initially used to classify information on 90 cultures. It was then revised, and the work of the Cross-Cultural Survey continued until World War II. By that time, ethnographic information on 150 cultures had been collected and organized.

Murdock believed that the information collected by the Cross-Cultural Survey might be useful to the U.S. military fighting in the Pacific. He enlisted in the navy along with his colleagues Clellan S. Ford and John M. W. Whiting, and he worked with them to produce a series of Civil Affairs Handbooks that described the cultures of the islands of Micronesia, Okinawa, and Taiwan. These were used extensively by the military government both during and after the war. Murdock recognized the importance of cultural information to government administrators at the end of the war and organized a massive program of ethnographic and linguistic research in Micronesia under the auspices of the Office of Naval Research. Murdock continued to work in the Pacific for the rest of his career and was a central figure in developing the Bernice P. Bishop Museum of Pacific Culture and Natural History in Honolulu, Hawaii.

After the war, Murdock returned to Yale and transformed the Cross-Cultural Survey into a multi-institution consortium, the Human Relations Area Files (HRAF). This nonprofit organization located at Yale was incorporated in 1949 to provide multi-institutional access to the information being collected and organized by the Cross-Cultural Survey. Eight universities formed the initial consortium, each receiving an annual installment of ethnographic texts typed onto 5- by 8-inch paper slips, the slips themselves organized by *Outline of Cultural Materials* numerical codes for the information contained on that page of text. Thus, scholars at HRAF consortium institutions could immediately access information on a topic of interest from many ethnographic sources without having to search each source individually. In 1958, the annual installments were converted to microfiche, and consortium membership was opened to any institution wishing to join. Today, the HRAF has more than 400 member institutions in 25 countries.

Social Structure

One of the first major works to be based on the HRAF collection of ethnographic materials was Murdock's *Social Structure* (1949). The book is divided into three major parts. The first half of *Social Structure* describes the variety of family, kin group, descent group, and community forms found in 250 cultures. From this descriptive information, Murdock attempts to explain how this variety came to be. In the second part of the book, he explores the evolution of kinship, marital residence, and descent. He reviews existing ideas and demonstrates them to be inadequate explanations for the cultures in his sample, and he then goes on to propose and test a large number of alternative explanations. Murdock undertakes a similar task in the third part of *Social Structure*, but focusing on the regulation of sexual behavior, which he shows also varies widely among the cultures of the world.

Social Structure is a key work in the history of anthropology, for two primary reasons. First, Murdock demonstrated that it is possible not only to systematically describe variation in human culture but also to develop empirically testable explanations for the origins of specific variations. While other scholars had developed explanations for the varieties of kinship, few had been tested in any systematic way, and none with the thoroughness that Murdock demonstrated. Second, Murdock's explanations showed that culture is an integrated whole rather than a "thing of shreds and patches," as Robert Lowie suggested (and many others accepted). Indeed, within Murdock's explanations can be seen the germs of later understandings of culture as an adaptive mechanism or process within human societies.

Africa: Its Peoples and Their Culture History

Following *Social Structure*, Murdock embarked on a program to produce systematic ethnographic overviews of each major region of the earth. His first effort, and the only one to be completed, was *Africa: Its Peoples and Their Culture History* (1959). Murdock did initiate bibliographical research on North American cultures, which developed into the seminal *Ethnographic Bibliography of North America* (first published in 1941 and regularly updated until 1990) and a summary volume on South American cultures. But neither of these works approached the scale of *Africa*. In *Africa*, as in *Social Structure*, Murdock not only provides descriptive information but also attempts to develop and test explanations for cultural variation. He begins by considering the prehistoric peoples of a given region in Africa, then employs archaeological, linguistic, environmental, and ethnographic data to trace how particular cultural features developed. The work is thus both descriptive and explanatory, and although many of the explanations were not widely accepted, *Africa* provided a compelling example of the power of systematic comparative studies.

Ethnographic Atlas *and the Cross-Cultural Cumulative Coding Center*

Despite the importance of the works already discussed, Murdock's most enduring contribution to anthropology is the *Ethnographic Atlas*, published in serial installments in the journal *Ethnology* between 1962 and 1971 and in two summary books from the University of Pittsburgh Press, one published in 1967 (*Ethnographic Atlas*) and the other published in 1980 (*Atlas of World Cultures*). The complete *Ethnographic Atlas* contains coded data for 1,270 cultures on 110 variables, while the 1967 and 1980 summaries contain coded data on the most well-described 862 and 563 cultures from the complete *Atlas*, respectively. Murdock himself coded the data for the *Atlas*, but he was also aware that one person could only code a tiny number of variables—broader and more systematic data coding was needed.

To create a large number of coded variables, Murdock and his colleague Douglas White created the Cross-Cultural Cumulative Coding Center at the University of Pittsburgh in 1962. Researchers at the Cross-Cultural Cumulative Coding Center did not simply organize ethnographic texts (as had been done at the Cross-Cultural Survey), but they actually coded the information in the texts for different variables across many cultures. With these precoded variables, a researcher could conduct exploratory research or test hypotheses to explain the variation in human culture and behavior. These variables were coded for 186 of the world's best described cultures, selected by Murdock and White to provide a representative sample for statistical tests, called the Standard Cross-Cultural Sample. Researchers at the Cross-Cultural Cumulative Coding Center published some 650 variables (primarily in *Ethnology*) for the Standard Cross-Cultural Sample, and other

researchers have now published more than 1,350 additional variables.

Murdock's Legacy

Murdock's legacy is threefold. First, he made seminal contributions to our understanding of kinship and particularly to our understanding of how and why kinship systems change. Second, Murdock was an important leader and administrator, helping to found independent anthropology departments at both Yale and the University of Pittsburgh, helping to create the HRAF, serving as the director of large-scale ethnographic projects for the Office of Naval Research, helping the Bernice P. Bishop Museum to develop into a world-class institution, and serving as president of both the Society for Cross-Cultural Research (of which he was a founding member) and the American Anthropological Association. Third, Murdock created or assisted in creating three major sources of data for cross-cultural research: (1) the HRAF collection of ethnography, (2) the *Ethnographic Atlas*, and (3) the Standard Cross-Cultural Sample. These data sources remain seminal in cross-cultural research and will remain so for many, many years.

Peter N. Peregrine

See also Carneiro, Robert L.; Comparative Method; Evolutionary Anthropology; Fried, Morton; Human Relations Area Files, Cross-Cultural Studies; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Goodenough, W. H. (1994). George Peter Murdock, 1897–1985. *National Academy of Sciences Biographical Memoirs, 64,* 304–319.

Murdock, G. P. (1949). *Social structure.* New York, NY: Macmillan.

———. (1959). *Africa: Its peoples and their culture history.* New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

———. (1967). *Ethnographic atlas.* Pittsburgh, PA: University of Pittsburgh Press.

Murdock, G. P., & White, D. R. (1969). Standard cross-cultural sample. *Ethnology, 8,* 329–369.

Spoehr, A. (1986). George Peter Murdock (1897–1985). *Ethnology, 24,* 307–316.

Whiting, J. M. (1986). George Peter Murdock (1897–1985). *American Anthropologist, 88,* 682–686.

Musée de l'Homme

Officially opened on the 20th of June, 1938, the Paris Musée de l'Homme (Museum of Mankind) was, along with those in the Soviet Union, among the very rare anthropology museums created in the 1930s. Considered the most modern museum of its time and highly innovative in terms of museography, this "Temple of Mankind"—according to the words of its founder, Paul Rivet—represented the desire to embody a new scientific humanism in a period characterized by the apogee of colonial imperialism (the 1931 International Colonial Exposition in Paris drew more than 8 million visitors and sold more than 33 million tickets), a vogue for primitive art, the institutionalization of ethnology as a university discipline, the economic crisis and growing industrialization, and also the rise of totalitarianism in Europe, including fascism and Nazism, the latter of which made a devastating misuse of the notion of race. All these factors left their mark in the discourse of the display rooms of a museum whose heyday, although brief, began paradoxically even before it was opened.

Beginnings

In fact, the Museum of Mankind was the heir to the Trocadéro Ethnographic Museum (TEM) on the same site, founded in 1878 by Ernest-Théodore Hamy for the Universal Exposition. The Trocadéro Museum had become derelict but was resurrected from 1928 on through a deep-reaching reorganization carried out under the ambitious and strong-willed direction of the Americanist anthropologist Paul Rivet (1876–1958), powerfully assisted by an inventive and brilliant vice director, Georges Henri Rivière (1897–1985). Rivière was to be the founder of the National Museum of Popular Arts and Traditions (Musée National des Arts et Traditions Populaires) in 1937, which took in the French ethnographic collections left aside by the Museum of Mankind. Rivet requested that the TEM be placed under the scientific supervision of the National Museum of Natural History and the Ministry for Public Education, thus leaving the aegis of the Fine Arts Ministry. The prestige of exoticism and primitive arts among travel writers and avant-garde artists—among them the surrealists—favored the

renewal of interest around the TEM, where ethnologists and artists collaborated in the short-lived but passionate journal *Documents* (1929–1931), founded and directed by Georges Bataille.

The urban planning projects undertaken in preparation for the 1937 International Exposition of Arts and Techniques in Paris provided Rivet and Rivière with the opportunity to see their own museum modernization project materialize, which they had been working on since 1931. Before the TEM closed its doors for renovation in August of 1935, it had been the site of 7 years of exciting activity that represented the prehistory of the Museum of Mankind, making it one of the highlights of Parisian culture and science, at the same time as it established ethnology as a legitimate field. Those were the years during which a scientific team (Rivet, Rivière, Michel Leiris, Jacques Soustelle, André Schaeffner, etc.) was set up to plan out the scientific project of the Museum of Mankind, including important ethnographic missions such as the famous Dakar-Djibouti mission (1931–1933) and the Franco-Belgian mission to Easter Island (1934–1935).

Housed in the Passy wing of the new *Palais de Chaillot*, the Museum of Mankind opened officially in 1938, a year later than planned, hence well after the closing of the International Exposition. The delay was due to financial problems that were to be recurrent throughout its history and would eventually precipitate—and accompany—its long decline, beginning in the 1960s. The problems were exacerbated by the fact that the museum was funded only by its ticket sales. The recurrent budget issues emphasize the extent to which the very idea of the existence of an anthropology museum never really caught on with the French authorities, nor was it ever to be a priority for the ministry responsible for it. It is thus quite false to say that the Museum of Mankind was a creation of the Popular Front, the political coalition that governed France in the mid-1930s. What is accurate, however, is that Rivet was deeply involved in Popular Front politics and had been elected as a Socialist Town Councilor in 1935. These political connections were to help Rivet get together the much needed financing for the museum. Furthermore, the Popular Front's political ideals of democratization and of popularizing the sciences for the working masses corresponded perfectly with Rivet's and with those of his team of ethnologists, most of whom were left leaning politically. They had a militant conception of ethnology as responsible for watching over the education of the people to enable them to appreciate diversity and otherness, in order to combat the stereotypes about peoples categorized as primitive or backward, to restore their dignity and valorize their culture and skills. To them, the paramount mission of ethnology was facilitating better understanding among peoples and nations, propounding racial equality, and supporting the struggle against racism. The museum organized lectures and visits guided by ethnologists and stayed open late in the evenings to welcome workers after their working hours.

The Museum, Its Mission, and Its Context

Although the Museum of Mankind was explicitly defined as a colonial museum—not to have done so would have been absurd, in view of the reality of French imperialism—the declaration of the museum's intentions had a certain air of opportunism. It was not aimed at the representatives or the members of societies subject to the colonial yoke (and we must emphasize that the history of their colonization went unmentioned) but rather toward a national, Occidental public. (It was more a question of reshaping the mores of fellow citizens and discouraging their inegalitarian prejudices.) The underlying ambition—which was to remain wishful thinking—was to humanize colonial administrative policies as a result of the knowledge and expertise acquired by ethnologists. Those in charge of the Museum of Mankind were in constant contact with their peers abroad, as well as in France and its colonies, seeking to set up a network of ethnographic institutions and museums, which would be the overseas satellites of the central institution represented by the Paris museum. Rivet and Rivière did not adhere to any scientific agenda imposed by the Colonial Ministry, nor did they have the feeling of compromising their principles, yet they regularly tried to present the value of ethnology to colonial authorities in a highly pragmatic way to legitimate the existence of the museum. In particular, they sought to underwrite its development and influence, request funding, facilitate ethnological missions to their colonial territories, assist in professionalizing the students in the University of Paris Ethnology Institute, and so on. They did not question colonialism but hoped for a better treatment of colonial peoples within the French Empire.

In the same way, the struggle against racism took place in a scientific and historical context that was quite particular and influenced by European political events. In 1930s Europe, combating racism did not necessarily mean combating all forms of racism. There was little effort to combat ideas of Black inferiority. Instead, anti-racist efforts of the era were aimed more at the virulent anti-Semitism and intra-European racial pseudoclassifications that set up a hierarchy among the "Alpine," "Nordic," and "Aryan" races. Openly perceived—and rightly so—as an anti-racist institution, the Museum of Mankind invited its visitors to follow an educational circuit beginning with the Grand Gallery of Physical Anthropology (covering an area of 1,000 square meters), before leading them to the ethnographic galleries (covering an area of 3,650 square meters). According to Rivet, this gallery was so successful with the public because it provided them with clear information on the evolution of humanity as an animal species; on the absence of racial determinism, the profoundly arbitrary character of racial classifications, such as the existence of a "Jewish race"; and on the very ancient mixing of human beings, which makes these classifications nonsensical. Still, the museum presented the three great "races" of the world (Black, Yellow, White) according to an evolutionist scheme, with the "White race" as the culmination of the lineage. Before World War II, although the most progressive anthropologists insisted on the many limits and defects of the concept of race, the racial paradigm was still so deeply embedded in the popular interpretation of human diversity that they felt it would have been premature to attempt to eliminate it.

Compared with other countries with a strong tradition in anthropology (Germany, England, the United States), the Museum of Mankind held a unique place. Internationally, the institutional links between ethnographic and anthropological museums and the academic study of anthropology were weakening—it was the end of the "museum movement"—and anthropology was increasingly anchored in university departments and able to distance itself conceptually from ethnographic objects to shape a real social and cultural anthropology. However, in France, these relationships remained consubstantial and fusional for more than 30 years, right into the 1960s. There was no French ethnologist active in the 1980s and 1990s who had not been trained at the Museum of Mankind. More influential than the University of Paris Ethnology Institute created in 1925, it was thanks to the museum that ethnology was able to present itself as a legitimate field and discourse on the "Other," both scientifically and culturally, and was able to turn up its nose at the academic and institutional resistance that weighed on the field. Thanks to the museum, ethnology was able to take a shortcut to long-delayed recognition. This was to have profound repercussions on the role, status, and scientific functions of the Museum of Mankind. The museum's curators invented the notion of a "museum-laboratory" to reconcile the traditional missions of conservation, exhibition, and popularization with research on collections of ethnographic objects and the organization of ethnographic missions whose paramount objective was to bring back objects that would fill the museum's collections.

As Rivet had wished, the Museum of Mankind was thus far more than an anthropology museum: Three times larger than the old Trocadéro museum, it held collections on prehistory, paleontology, and physical anthropology, as well as ethnographic objects—its very name, which was revolutionary, stressed the ambition of disciplinary generalization that underlay it. However, it was also a center for scientific documentation (including a movie theater), teaching (with classrooms for the students in the Ethnology Institute), and research. It housed several learned societies and was the hub of a network of scientific institutions centering on it.

The Exhibitions

The museum exhibitions ran from the biological to the cultural and included prehistory. The way the exhibit rooms were set up reflected both a geographic and a thematic logic: the gallery of physical anthropology, the department of Black Africa, with a section dedicated to Madagascar, the gallery of White Africa (North Africa and the Near East), the European gallery, the Arctic department, the Asian gallery, then Oceania, and the Americas, which were the largest sections with Black Africa. Each gallery was divided into display cases arranged along either generalizing or thematic lines. The last gallery, dedicated to Arts and Techniques, was highly innovative in endeavoring to show the unity of the human spirit by highlighting the manual and artistic skill of people who understood how to adapt

to their environment. At a time when mechanization and Taylorism were becoming more and more dominant in industry, this room deliberately turned away from cultural hierarchies and regional division to valorize manual work. For a committed socialist like Rivet, this argument took on all its importance: For the man of the people, for the worker visiting the museum, the opportunity to see primitive crafts and technologies enabled him to identify with and understand what he had in common with people from outside his own culture: technical know-how and artistic sense. As a conservatory of the material civilization of peoples around the world, the Museum of Mankind defended a definition of the ethnographic object as a "witness object" that personified and revealed the very essence of the society that made it.

Decline and Renewal

However, after Rivet's departure in 1939, the Museum of Mankind was unable to continue occupying the quasi-monopolistic place it had once held within the field of anthropology. The professionalization and growth in the number of anthropologists, the creation of teaching chairs and university laboratories in Paris and the French provinces, and the arrival of social anthropology and structuralism were changing the nature of the discipline. After Rivet's departure, the museum was led by uncharismatic directors without scientific ambition for the museum. It gradually entered into a slow institutional and intellectual decline, which became particularly evident from the 1970s on. It was only the grand exhibits of primitive art organized by the Society of Museum Friends in the 1960s and early 1970s that were able to attract a good number of visitors and were a real success. The museum was unable to adapt to the changing attitudes surrounding decolonization in the 1950s and 1960s and went on showing exotic societies as outside modernity, culturally pure. So poorly endowed financially, struggling day by day to scrape together enough money to redo a gallery or a room, the museum was not able to modernize and follow museological developments and the new thematic and theoretical interests of anthropologists, who now rarely collected objects during their ethnographic fieldwork. After the creation in 1972 of three teaching chairs for biological anthropology, prehistory, and ethnology, each with their own galleries, laboratory, and scientific personnel, the Museum of Mankind went into a kind of paralysis, undermined by rivalries that were both personal and scientific. Renovation projects in 1976, 1987, 1992, and 1995 all failed. Running on a ridiculously tiny budget by the 1990s, the museum was unable to attract even 200,000 visitors a year, and those who visited were primarily schoolchildren who came to hear the anti-racist program of the permanent exhibit in the gallery of biological anthropology, which had been totally renewed in 1992 and 1994.

After many a twist and turn, the museum's unity was broken up—painfully—in 2003, when the ethnographic objects were moved to the Quai Branly museum, which opened to the public in 2006. The old museum retained only its osteological, prehistory, and biological anthropology collections. It closed for good in 2009 and is to be opened again before 2020, with a new museological and scientific project based on the relationship between humankind and nature.

Christine Laurière

See also Bataille, Georges; Rivet, Paul

Further Readings

Clifford, J. (1988). *The predicament of culture: Twentieth-century ethnography, literature, and art*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Conklin, A. L. (2013). *In the museum of man: Anthropology, racial science and humanism in France and its empire, 1850–1950*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Laurière, C. (2008). *Paul Rivet, le savant et le politique* [Paul Rivet, the scientist and the political person]. Paris, France: Publications du MNHN.

Myth, Theories of

Theories of myth are methods of finding meaning in myths. They do so by attempting to explain the content, form, function, and history of myths. Because myths are of interest to scholars in many disciplines, anthropologists have been able to supplement their own theories with those from other fields. What follows is a roughly chronological look at the ways in which anthropologists have used theories of myth. It should be understood that all of the theories

discussed here are much more complex and nuanced than space allows us to describe.

An important aspect of theories of myth to understand is that they begin when myths cease to be taken literally. A widespread myth is that of the separation of the sky from the earth, usually through the efforts of one of their offspring. To accept this as a literal account of history is not to make a theoretical interpretation. It is only when someone says that this story is a metaphor or allegory, or that it can be understood symbolically that we enter the theoretical mode of interpretation.

The 19th Century

Systematically theorizing myth began in earnest in the 19th century, and anthropology played a large part in its development. In the 1870s, Edward B. Tylor wrote about myth as a system of thought that sought to explain the natural world. In this respect, he believed myth to be like modern science. Tylor proposed that those who believed in myth took it literally. Its origin was in attempts to explain the world and people's place in it. This work, including Tylor's explanation of the concept of animism, has been very influential.

In the 1870s and 1880s, a debate arose in England about the origin and meaning of myth. It centered on two figures, Friedrich Max Müller and Andrew Lang. Müller studied ancient languages; Lang was an anthropologist. The debate started with Müller's argument that all myths could be traced back to stories told about the movement of the sun across the sky and that the way to determine this was to look at the history of the names for gods. Lang countered that this was an absurd theory to apply to every myth, and that the data from anthropology exposed it as misguided. This is one of the earliest applications of the idea that a theory of myth can be tested by using data collected from anthropological fieldwork. By the early 20th century, the theory of solar mythology was largely discredited. Yet, like many theories, some of its tenets remained. After all, some myths really are about the sun.

The 20th Century

Theorizing myth became even more prominent in the 20th century. As the results of fieldwork, notably that of Franz Boas and his students, became more and more available, the number of myths that could be studied—and their variety—increased dramatically. Ethnography determined the course of much of the theorizing. For example, functionalists like Bronisław Malinowski and E. E. Evans-Pritchard used their experiences in the Trobriand Islands and Africa to argue that the elements of a culture, including myth, work together to ensure that culture operates smoothly. In particular, Malinowski argued that myth provides explanations of the physical world and justifications of the social world. He famously called myth a "social charter."

During the same period, the myth-ritual theory became prominent. This concept originated in the 19th century with the writings of a scholar of ancient cultures named William Robertson Smith. Smith first put forward the idea that myths arise to explain rituals. This idea was picked up in the 20th century by James G. Frazer in his multivolume study *The Golden Bough*. Frazer argued that rituals have initial explanations that their current performers have forgotten, so they invent myths to explain how the rituals came about and why they take the form they do. The myth-ritual theory roots myths in an explanation that says the gods (or other culture heroes) originally performed certain deeds that humans echo in ritual, in particular rites of renewal, often related to agriculture and fertility. Criticism led most mythologists to abandon this theory, but in recent years, it has gained back some ground.

Psychoanalysis also became popular in the 20th century as a means to understand myth. Begun by Sigmund Freud, the psychoanalytic view of myth can more or less be reduced to understanding myth as a product of the subconscious. Myths, as they attempt to express the less savory sides of the psyche, become distorted by the defense mechanisms of the subconscious. Thus, a symbolic reading is necessary. Most famously, Freud proposed that the myth of Oedipus, in which Oedipus unknowingly kills his father and marries his mother, reflected an unconscious, universal psychological drive in preadolescent boys. Anthropologists began searching for evidence of the complex in non-Western cultures, with mixed results. More a victim of changing fashion than of any direct refutation, psychoanalysis does still have advocates.

In the middle of the 20th century, the anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss applied concepts from structural linguistics to myth. In structuralism, any part of a given myth only has meaning through its

relationships to other parts, to other versions of the same myth, and to the entire body of myths known to a group and its neighbors. Lévi-Strauss proposed that myths carried unconscious universal messages, and he looked for binary oppositions, or elements in a story that oppose each other (up/down, east/west, nature/culture, life/death), as a way to understand the thoughts expressed in myth. Though structuralism is about the relationship between the elements in a myth, its conclusions are about function: Lévi-Strauss proposed that myths help people overcome a contradiction they see in the world by providing another contradiction, one that is soluble, into which the first can be absorbed. Though it was embraced by many anthropologists, others found that many field studies could be used to argue against the basic tenets of structuralism.

From the discipline of religious studies, the ideas of Mircea Eliade reached publication at about the same time as those of Lévi-Strauss. Eliade believed that myths functionally brought the past into the present, so that modern people could walk in the footsteps of gods and ancestors. This was not the recent past but the mythical past, which Eliade called "*illo tempore*" ["at that time"]. It was sacred time, and so myth and ritual became ways to sanctify contemporary life. In this way, there are similarities between this and the myth-ritual theory, both of which have to do with constructing the present in terms of the past. Eliade's writings, however, are more nostalgic and are focused on the individual rather than on nature. For Eliade, myth involves a spiritual rebirth, and in this sense, it is therapeutic.

It should be noted that none of these theorists operated in a vacuum. Each had influences, and importantly, each has followers. Though the theorists above are rarely overshadowed by these followers, later writings often revise or flesh out a theory beyond its initial formulation. Lévi-Strauss was followed by anthropologists such as Edmund Leach, who was as much a critic of structuralism as one of its theorists; Freud was followed by Alan Dundes, who applied psychoanalysis to anthropological data.

Other Theories

There are other theories of myth that have had little impact on anthropology. Theories stemming from literature, such as the writings of the Canadian critic Northrop Frye, have found little in common with the ethnographic nature of anthropological scholarship outside the interpretive anthropology championed by Clifford Geertz. Likewise, Joseph Campbell's work on myth, while extraordinarily popular outside the academic community, has not had much effect. Anthropologists have focused on the ethnographic perspective, and theories that stem from the study of literature have been excluded not necessarily because they are faulty but because they address different concerns. Literature operates quite differently than oral tradition, which has been one of the provenances of anthropology.

Ethnography, Theory, and the Comparative Study of Myth

The ethnographic nature of anthropology has directed much of its course with regard to myth. Anthropologists have worked hard to collect myths from around the world and to study them in their contexts when possible. This attention to context has led to performance studies in which scholars look at myth as situated in living enactment, being told by specific individuals. A performance study attends to audience response as well as the artistry of the performer, and sees that the line between these roles is sometimes blurred. This performance-centered perspective provides the opportunity to enhance other theories because it is rich with data.

The anthropological study of myth has always been the combination of ethnography and theory. Frazer exemplifies this principle, synthesizing the results of others' fieldwork and exploring them with his own ideas. Frazer also exemplifies the comparative nature of some anthropological approaches to myth. Born out of the observation that many myths seem similar despite the extraordinary distances between their tellers—such as the separation of sky and earth, which exists in a broad swath over much of Europe, northern Africa, Asia, and the Pacific Islands—the comparative study of myth seeks to explain and interpret those similarities.

Another anthropological perspective on myth is the linking of elements of myth with other elements of culture. Boas's approach was typical of this method of analysis. He saw myth as a mirror of culture, finding in myth elements that exist in real life, such as material culture, kinship, and reciprocity systems. Ruth Benedict, who studied the Zuni so fruitfully, was critical of this. She noted that myths often

depicted events, characters, and situations that had never existed in Zuni life but instead were something along the lines of wish fulfillment or daydreaming fantasy. She saw in them a psychological resonance.

There are some obvious similarities between the theories. Both structuralism and psychoanalysis are about the operations of the human mind. Both functionalism and myth-ritual theory are about how myths operate within a culture. But the differences are equally as important. Earlier theories tend to be diachronic—that is, they focus on history, explaining how myths arise and develop; such is the case with the myth-ritual theory of the 19th century. The diachronic approach was especially popular in the context of 19th-century evolutionary thinking, in which scholars believed that all societies passed through progressive states of development, roughly from savagery to civilization, and mythical thinking was associated with early stages of evolutionary development. But as myth theory developed in the 20th century, this approach was displaced by the synchronic approach, which examines how myths operate in the present. This is the method of functionalism and structuralism.

Theories have shaped not only the understanding of myths but also how they are collected and published. Structural theorists, for example, can rely on fairly rough summaries, whereas for students of performance, the ideal is to collect and present myths in a form as close to performance as possible. Thus, theories of myth have become intertwined with the myths themselves, as if they are new variants of the old stories.

Daniel Peretti

See also Dundes, Alan; Frazer, James G.; Freud, Sigmund; Leach, Edmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Malinowski, Bronisław; Müller, Max; Smith, William Robertson; Structuralism; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Dundes, A. (Ed.). (1984). *Sacred narrative: Readings in the theory of myth*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Georges, R. (Ed.). (1968). *Studies on mythology.* Homewood, IL: Dorsey Press.

Middleton, J. (Ed.). (1967). *Myth and cosmos: Readings in myth and symbolism.* Austin: University of Texas Press.

Schrempp, G., & Hansen, W. (Ed.). (2002). *Myth: A new symposium.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Sebeok, T. (Ed.). (1955). *Myth: A symposium.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Segal, R. (2004). *Myth: A very short introduction.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

N

Nader, Laura

Laura Nader (1930–), American cultural anthropologist, University of California–Berkeley professor for more than 50 years, and coiner of the phrase "studying up," is among the most important cultural anthropologists of the end of the 20th and beginning of the 21st centuries.

Biography and Major Works

Laura Nader was born in Connecticut, the third of four children of immigrant Maronite Christians, Nathra and Rose Nader. Her parents had fled the political turmoil of their native Lebanon. She was raised in a bilingual household (English and Arabic), where education was clearly valued. All of her siblings earned college degrees, with her older sister Claire earning a PhD in political science and her younger brother Ralph (the famous consumer advocate and several-time presidential candidate) earning a law degree from Harvard. But it was her older brother Shafeek who recommended that she take up anthropology. He did so after Laura almost did not graduate from Wells College in 1952, when the Spanish literature department rejected her honors thesis on Mexican revolutionary novels as too sociological and the sociology department said they could not count her as a sociology student since she had taken no courses in their department. At that time, Shafeek sent her a copy of Clyde Kluckhohn's (1944) book *A Mirror for Man*. In a 2012 address at the University of California–Berkeley's anthropology department's graduation ceremony, Nader characterized two chapters of that book as particularly memorable—"An Anthropologist Looks at the United States" and "An Anthropologist Looks at the World"—and explained that the book was a key reason why she began her doctoral program at Harvard, studying with Kluckhohn.

Starting at University of California–Berkeley in 1960 (and still working there full time, as of this writing, in 2012), from the beginning of her professional career, Nader has juxtaposed being an anthropologist who looks at the United States with one who looks at the world beyond its shores. As one way to measure this juxtaposition, 11 of the 54 dissertations that she has chaired were based on fieldwork in the United States. Of the remaining 43, 10 were based in Mexico, 3 each were in Lebanon and Saudi Arabia, and the remainder spanned the globe from China to Ghana to Sweden. The preponderance of studies in the United States, Mexico, and the Middle East is not surprising. She has been based in the United States all her life, and her perhaps best known article "Up the Anthropologist"—which was a chapter in Dell Hymes's edited 1969 volume *Reinventing Anthropology*—recommended that a reinvented anthropology should study powerful institutions and bureaucratic organizations in the United States because such institutions and their network systems affected American anthropologists (and many others) as Americans, as well as affecting the lives of people whom anthropologists have traditionally studied all around the world. Her doctoral dissertation and many of her published articles and books are on the Zapotec and other indigenous

groups of Oaxaca in Mexico. Her family background, language skills, and the ongoing status of the Middle East as a central (and from a Western perspective, poorly understood) part of the world make it logical that she would consider this part of the globe as well.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Summarizing Nader by the geographies of *where* she is interested in seems to distort a more important focus on *what* she has studied. Her interest in the *anthropology of law* or, phrased another way, the ways societies identify and respond to conflicts and trespasses has been long-standing and central, as three of her book titles make clear: *The Disputing Process: Law in Ten Societies* (1978), with Harry Todd; *No Access to Law: Alternatives to the American Judicial System* (1981); and *Law in Culture and Society* (1969/1997). In 1965, she edited a special issue of *American Anthropologist* with the theme "The Ethnography of Law." She has been a visiting professor at Yale University Law School and is a trustee of the Law and Society Association and the Center for the Study of Responsive Law.

Still, summarizing her as an anthropologist of the law also feels misleading, not because it is wrong but rather because it is incomplete. At least three other intertwined quests define Nader's work: She is a skeptic of the status quo (particularly of how it perpetuates advantage and disadvantage), she sees her work as moral without that compromising its empiricism, and she is a tireless champion of anthropology. Her core complaints in "Up the Anthropologist" were that ethnological theory was distorted and that the social utility of anthropology was compromised if anthropology only looked at the marginalized, the exotic, and "the colonized" and not at those who were wielding power.

In a similar vein, the book *Naked Science* (1996), which she edited, considered how the use of empirical methods by groups traditionally conceptualized in the West as primitive (e.g., Polynesian seafarers) was not regarded as science, while the imprimatur of "Science" could lend power to ideas that were not disinterested and/or that excluded relevant data. More holistically, she worried that science is too often directed toward definitive answers to small questions rather than plausible answers to larger ones, that it is inherently political, that it is dominated by the quest for the universal rather than the particular, and that, in its invocation as "Big Science," it can be used to silence rather than include.

Nader's modus operandi has always been to extend and broaden the audiences of anthropological inquiry. As she noted in a distinguished lecture in 2000 to the American Anthropological Association, if anthropologists are ignorant of debates outside academia, they will increasingly find themselves mainly talking to each other, trapped in a diminished space, and working in cramped quarters.

As her career draws to a close (she is in her 80s at the time of this writing), Nader will likely be most remembered for her work with the Zapotec, the anthropologies of law and science, her advocacy for "studying up," her focus on conflict resolution, and her championing of anthropology as a vehicle to support democracy and inclusion. Nader has also argued for an "unencumbered anthropology," that is, an anthropology free of *isms* (be they Marxism, postmodernism, structural functionalism, etc.), where the imperatives of an ideological orientation are less important than asking socially relevant questions and insistently and perhaps eclectically pursuing the methodologies necessary to illuminate answers.

Edmund T. Hamann

See also Foster, George M.; Hymes, Dell; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Rosaldo, Renato; University of California, Berkeley

Further Readings

Hamann, E. T. (2003). Imagining the future of the anthropology of education if we take Laura Nader seriously. *Anthropology & Education Quarterly, 34*(4), 438–449.

Nader, L. (1969). Up the anthropologist: Perspectives gained from "studying up." In D. Hymes (Ed.), *Reinventing anthropology* (pp. 284–311). New York, NY: Pantheon Books.

———. (1979). Disputing without the force of law. *Yale Law Journal, 88*(5), 998–1021.

———. (1984). The recurrent dialectic between legality and its alternatives: The limitations of binary thinking. *University of Pennsylvania Law Review, 132*(3), 621–645.

———. (1990). *Harmony ideology: Justice and control in a Mountain Zapotec village*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

———. (Ed.). (1996). *Naked science: Anthropological inquiry into boundaries, power, and knowledge.* New York, NY: Routledge.
———. (1997). *Law in culture and society* (Rev. ed.). Berkeley: University of California Press.
———. (2001). Anthropology! Distinguished lecture 2000. *American Anthropologist, 103*(3), 609–620.
———. (2010). *The energy reader.* Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.
Nader, L., & Todd, H. (Eds.). (1978). *The disputing process: Law in ten societies.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Nash, June

June C. Nash, Distinguished Professor Emerita at the City University of New York, Graduate Center and City College, is a founder of Latin American feminist and class-based ethnography.

Biography and Major Works

Nash was born on May 30, 1927, in Salem, Massachusetts, to Joseph (a carpenter) and Josephine (Salloway) Bousley. She counts a Penobscot Indian woman among her great-grandmothers. Nash graduated from Barnard College in 1948 and entered graduate studies at the University of Chicago at the height of postwar structural functionalism, studying with Professors Robert Redfield and Sol Tax. She completed her master's degree in 1953 and joined fellow graduate student and husband Manning Nash (m. 1951) in Guatemala for his doctoral research. Their stay overlapped with the Central Intelligence Agency–supported 1954 coup. Nash contributed maps and numerous interview censuses to Manning Nash's 1955 doctorate and first book. She published some of the earliest work on the conversion of Guatemala Mayans to U.S.-introduced Protestantism.

Nash earned her doctorate from Chicago in 1960, working within structural functionalism and the classic community studies framework and based on research from 1957 forward in Chiapas, Mexico, where she continues working to date. Nash then placed power, violence, and the Mexican state at the center of her 1970 monograph, *In the Eyes of the Ancestors* (Spanish translation, 1975), which documents a spike in homicides over a decade. The homicides, which many cast as executions of witches, reflect the competition among caciques allied with the Mexican ruling party, the Partido Revolucionario Institucional.

During 1960 and 1961, Nash worked in Burma with Manning Nash, before the 1962 military coup d'état ended the short-lived democratic republic. She maintained the structural-functional orientation in her study of how Burmese villagers near Mandalay dealt with *nats*, earth and ancestor spirits.

In 1967, scant weeks following a Bolivian government–ordered massacre of miners, Nash began a productive and activist relationship with that country's tin mining communities. She describes this experience as her consciousness-raising moment. From the 1970s on, Nash engaged with feminist, anti-imperialist, and working-class movements. She published *We Eat the Mines and the Mines Eat Us* (1979; C. Wright Mills Award honorable mention, 1980; Spanish translation, 2009). She cowrote an autobiography with the miner Juan Rojas, first in Spanish (1976), produced as a 1977 documentary film, and then translated in 1992 as *I Spent My Life in the Mines*. She coedited a series of influential volumes on women and class, with Helen Safa, *Sex and Class in Latin America* (1976) and *Women and Change in Latin America* (1986), and with M. Patricia Fernandez Kelly, *Women, Men, and the International Division of Labor* (1983). She undertook U.S.-based research on the multinational corporation General Electric and on the workers and community of Pittsfield, Massachusetts (*From Tank Town to High Tech*, 1989).

Nash moved her academic career from Chicago to the East Coast, first to Yale University from 1964 to 1968, then to New York University, and finally to the City College of the City University of New York in 1972 as professor of anthropology. She was married to the New York University sociology professor Herbert Menzel from 1972 until his death in 1987.

Nash returned to Chiapas in 1988, seeking a safe field site to train undergraduates. Her first collaboration, the 1993 anthology *Crafts in the World Market*, explored Mayan artisanal producers' location in a globalizing capitalist market. Since the 1994 Zapatista uprising and the ensuing state and paramilitary counterinsurgency, Nash has focused on Mayan claims for pluricultural autonomy, publishing an edited anthology with articles by students and colleagues, *The Explosion of Indigenous*

Communities in Chiapas, *Mexico* (1995), which was simultaneously published in Spanish; *Mayan Visions* (2001), with a Spanish translation in 2006; and *Social Movements: A Reader* (2004).

Nash shares homes with her husband, the religious studies scholar Frank Reynolds (m. 1997), in both Chiapas and a neighboring town of Pittsfield, Massachusetts. Her two children, Eric and Laura, are from her first marriage.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Nash is most associated with anti-imperialist Marxism, class-based feminism, and globalization studies (see her reflections on her 50 years of work with these paradigms in *Practicing Ethnography in a Global World*, 2007). Kay Warren points out, however, that Nash makes her greatest theoretical contributions by pushing every paradigm for greater ethnographic depth and focus on social justice, usually for the working poor and women. Nash has experimented with postmodern and poststructuralist analysis, most extensively in *Mayan Visions*.

The works of her entire career are consistently marked by a pragmatic and empirical orientation, which Nash attributes to coming of age during the anti-ideological environment following World War II. Her goal is to write ethnographies that outlast any original but discarded paradigm and allow others to propose thoughtful analyses. Nash's legacy includes making feminist analysis an integral part of the scientific programs of the American Anthropological Association, the Latin American Studies Association, and the Social Science Research Council. She collaborated on international networks with Latin American scholars and feminists. She heads an impressive lineage of women, working-class, and native anthropologists and has been honored with the highest awards of the American Anthropological Association and Latin American Studies Association. The Society of Latin American Anthropologists and the City University of New York's anthropology department named awards in her honor.

Nash's life of field research is marked by two commitments, the first being the community study, in relation to the tensions between local autonomy and predatory capitalism. The second is the return trip and ongoing collaboration, despite increasing danger in certain fields. She has translated and repatriated the vast majority of her work. She revisited field sites in Guatemala, Burma, and Bolivia to present manuscripts for critique and to catch up and join with community members in solidarity. In 2005, Nash wrote that she had never expected to live long enough to witness the great resistance movements of the peoples of her many ethnographies. She wrote (2005) that her hope for the world springs from the periphery, where peasants and workers will find new alliances with which to resist global capitalism.

Abigail E. Adams

See also Feminist Anthropology; Globalization Theory; Political Economy; Redfield, Robert; Tax, Sol

Further Readings

Nash, J. (1970). *In the eyes of the ancestors: Belief and behavior in a Mayan community.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

———. (1979). *We eat the mines and the mines eat us: Dependency and exploitation in Bolivian tin mines.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

———. (1989). *From tank town to high tech: The clash of community and industrial cycles.* Albany: State University of New York Press.

———. (1997). When isms become wasms: Structural functionalism, Marxism, feminism, and postmodernism. *Critique of Anthropology, 17*(1), 11–32.

———. (2001). *Mayan visions: The quest for autonomy in an age of globalization.* New York, NY: Routledge.

———. (2004). *Social movements: An anthropological reader.* New York, NY: Blackwell.

———. (2007). *Practicing ethnography in a globalizing world: An anthropological odyssey.* Lanham, MD: AltaMira Press.

Nash, J., & Fernandez-Kelly, M. P. (Eds.). (1983). *Women, men and the international division of labor.* Albany: State University of New York Press.

Nash, J., & Safa, H. (Eds.). (1976). *Sex and class in Latin America.* South Hadley, MA: Bergin.

———. (1986). *Women and change in Latin America.* South Hadley, MA: Bergin & Garvey.

Nationalism, Transnationalism

Despite anthropology's historical legacy of focusing on relatively small communities and marginal populations, the discipline has long considered the ways in which individuals, groups, and the public draw

identities and construct notions of belonging from the nation-state. This includes the nation-states' intellectual projects that create and perpetuate nationalism—or the sense of attachment, notions of identity, or patriotic emotions derived from the nation-state.

Much of the literature of nationalist studies has assumed that the nation creates primordial attachments. Birth within a particular state, region, community, or ethnic group assumingly binds one to an unyielding geography or collective identity, thereby structuring one's sense of commonality, connection, and nationalistic pride. Yet anthropologists challenge these ideas through grounded ethnographic research focused on diverse experiences among various communities and groups living within and across state boundaries. Research over the past few decades shows that nationalism is neither a neatly organized, centralizing feature within citizens' lives nor a concept that automatically supersedes alternate forms of community, groupings, or identities based on kinship, language, religion, ethnicity, and various other ties. In fact, these diversities often frustrate political elites' and intellectuals' work on national integration and their search for national identities, which in various ways disproportionately favor either those considered autochthonous or those constructed as autochthonous through their ability to exert power over sociopolitical systems within the nation-state. A logical correlate of this line of inquiry is the anthropological attention given to the growing field of transnationalism, which recognizes that political, economic, cultural, and social relationships that increase interconnectivity between people and cultures within multiple nations challenge the boundaries of nation-states and their relevance to peoples' lives. Researchers within transnationalism studies do not assume that the nation-state is the central feature in both citizens' and noncitizens' lives. This recognition forces reconsiderations of the role of boundaries, the ideas of citizenship, and the power of the state in contemporary global reorderings.

Given the growth of global interconnectedness through the expansion of neoliberal capitalism, new communicative technologies, flexible accumulations of labor and capital, transportation advancements, and complex patterns of population movement (including mobilities from labor migration to diasporas or from refugees to environmentally displaced populations), the features of commonality and boundedness that characterize traditional understandings of nation-states become stretched and fragile. In the face of transnational movements, nationalists and some elites marshal political capital and material resources to reinforce the durability of the nation-state and to strengthen nationalistic pride. Yet their efforts only highlight the fact that nation-states do not emerge from shared primordial essences. Over the past 20 years, a majority of researchers within nationalism studies have concluded that nation-states are (re)constructed and historically contingent. Ideas of nationalism and belonging are continuously reimagined and reinvented to mitigate the oppositions posed by global fluidity. As seen in works by authors such as Benedict Anderson, Eric Hobsbawm, and Terence Ranger, ideas of nationalism become rooted within nations and are created through socialization processes, various societal institutions, invented traditions, and "print capitalism."

The Anthropological Focus

Within anthropology, this understanding expands research opportunities. Increasingly, anthropologists focus not only on the roles elites and political institutions play in forming ideas of nationalism but on the ways in which nationalism is performed by ordinary people through everyday practices (see, e.g., the work of Eric Hobsbawm). The study of nationalism "from below" seeks to understand how people understand, reinterpret, and talk about nationalism, as well as experience and reinforce national identities through practice. Here, practice includes common experiences seen in national sporting events, religious activities, or the reification of national symbols. Yet practice also includes sociopolitical divisions that may weaken national solidarities or operate to exclude those considered lesser within national communities. For example, since Thailand's military-led coup d'état of the former prime minister Thaksin Shinawatra in 2006, public discourse has largely framed the political tensions between the "red-shirt/yellow-shirt" protestors as a divergence of rural and urban interests. Popular political rhetoric notably draws distinctions between urban and rural populations, where urban upper- and middle-class citizens are hierarchically associated with modernity, high status, and

education over (lesser) citizens in rural spaces. In the process, the Thai social order is affirmed, and certain citizens receive differential valuations of worth. In such contexts, researchers attend to the mutually constitutive aspects of nationalist agendas and practice. Individuals draw on nationalistic ideologies to structure their behavior and views, as well as justify variants of exclusion or intolerance to those perceived as challenging the stability of the nation-state's social order. Yet still, power of nationalism is exercised over individuals and populations in ongoing attempts to maintain patriotism and solidarity as well as identify instabilities or enemies to a given country. Of course, in the Thailand case, a central problem is how formal and informal powers handle populations within a state that are discursively constructed as other, though they exist simultaneously as citizens. Authors such as James Holston, Aihwa Ong, and Renato Rosaldo have attempted to address such dynamics of engagement and contest among national subjects through the broad field of "cultural citizenship."

These research trajectories have deepened anthropological understanding of the tenuous nature of nationalism and solidarity and have led anthropologists to understand that events within the broad framework of globalization challenge ideas of geographically bounded and unified nation-states. Research in transnationalism highlights the fact that several challenges exist for the actualization of nationalism, as well as the fact that transnational imaginings and processes affect a nation's internal sociopolitical and cultural systems. In particular, much anthropological focus has been directed toward unpacking the multiple layers of transnational practices (including economic, political, social, cultural, and environmental movements across state boundaries), the manifestations of transnational processes at various scales and levels, and the theoretical and methodological developments that grapple with how best to conceptualize and study transnational events and networks.

Largely over the past 20 years—when a flurry of literatures built on or challenged several key works by authors such as Linda Basch, Cristina Blanc-Szanton, Nina Glick-Schiller, Akhil Gupta, James Ferguson, Michael Kearney, and Roger Rouse—transnationalism and transnational theory have been connected with studies on topics including social networks, nongovernmental organizations, transcontinental investment, pan-religious movements, transnational communities, political systems and politicking, identity formation, cultural difference, labor migration, diasporas, and so forth. Contemporary scholarship has applied transnational theory to a host of issues that some argue might more satisfactorily and appropriately be studied within theoretical frameworks such as international theory or even globalization. This results in a decline of conceptual clarity, as the transnational framework is directed toward nearly any process that exists outside the "normative" ideas of bounded nation-states and territorially fixed nationalism.

In response, various works have attempted to bring additional structure to these types of research. At fundamental levels, there have been efforts to draw distinctions between historical analogs of transnational connections and the ways in which the "new" transnationalism differs in form and function. Researchers often recognize parallels between contemporary forms of transnationalism and historical events, such as colonialism, missionary campaigns, empire expansion, or early periods of labor migration and family reunification in the 19th century. However, the scale, intensity, and flexibility of contemporary transnationalism create notable points of divergence from earlier patterns. Specifically, the flexibility of capital and accumulation within transnational corporations, the global extraction and transport of natural resources, the advancements in transportation and communicative technologies, the changing demographic trends of immigrant communities, and the increased percentage of immigrants with higher education and advanced skills all contribute to distinctly new transnational relationships and networks.

Is a Unified Theoretical Approach Needed?

Due to transnationalism's contemporary complexities and its highly diverse expressions in multiple academic fields (e.g., anthropology, economics, geography, philosophy, sociology, etc.), authors argue for a unified theoretical approach. Notably, Sanjeev Khagram and Peggy Levitt, along with associated scholars, have called for *transnational studies* to structure such interests. The transnational studies framework centers on five intellectual foundations: empirical, methodological, theoretical, philosophical, and public transnationalism. While

these foundations call on scholars to clarify how they connect their research to transnationalism (e.g., methodological transnationalism requires that new designs and methods collect data that accurately capture transnational realities), perhaps philosophical transnationalism proves the most transformative. Here, transnational studies continue to critique the assumption that social and cultural life is automatically or principally organized by and contained within nations, states, or other bounded groupings. Yet philosophical transnationalism considers transnational activities the norm and argues that social processes often considered geographically fixed or bordered are affected by *trans*-boundary, *trans*-national dynamics. For example, one might read William Julius Wilson's *When Work Disappears* within a transnational perspective to understand the loss of blue-collar jobs in American inner cities. Transnational studies require researchers to reconsider naturalized, normalized categories that are rooted within the nation-state model of the broader social sciences and to examine the extent and influence of cross-border dynamics.

Such critique and opening of transnationalism's conceptualization are readily seen in the anthropological approach to migration and diasporas, particularly as these populations fundamentally challenge ideas of boundaries, borders, and belonging. For example, scholars such as Deborah Cohen examine the production of transnational subjects, individuals whose self-understanding and connection to place exist beyond the nation-state. As immigrants or members of diasporas transgress national, political, and cultural boundaries, they may recognize themselves as part of multiple national communities, existing as both national and supranational sociopolitical subjects, with multiple allegiances and sources of attachment. Building from research in *social fields*, anthropologists disentangle the ways in which transnational social fields are sustained by interconnected relationships and networks through which ideas, material resources, capital, cultural beliefs, or practices are exchanged across dispersed populations and communities. Much of anthropological research has abandoned assimilationist models that dominated social science research throughout much of the 20th century. Scholars recognize that previously assumed concepts of citizenship or nationalism dramatically change as they are constituted across dispersed geographies.

Intersecting Nationalism and Transnationalism

The emphasis on transnationalism has led anthropologists to explore a wide range of topics, including the formation of transnational political organizations by ethnic diasporas, the way transmigrants critique or support political events within their origin country, the expressions of racism against newly arrived immigrants and how such intolerances operate to sustain transnational lives, the formations of "triadic relationships" among diasporas (i.e., the relationships between the dispersed group, their current state location, and their homeland), the way newly arrived immigrant populations change the sociopolitical structure of urban landscapes and how fear and fixations on citizenship produce new patterns of segregation and exclusion, the emergence of hybridity and new ethnicities among transnational youth, and the shared imagination and consciousness that become reworked as groups or communities move from place to place yet maintain desire and attachment to previous locations (or the reimagination of those locations). Of course, such multiple connections misalign with nationalist views on homogeneity and strict allegiance and patriotism to one nation-state. Immigrant communities, foreign populations, or those deemed nonautochthonous are therefore distrusted and their nationalistic ideologies interrogated. Ultimately, in these intersections between nationalism and transnationalism, researchers may critique the ways in which nation-states are challenged by transnational activities and global fluidity. Yet researchers simultaneously explore how these very actions produce responses that seek to reinforce the validity of the nation-state as well as the associated characteristics of nationalism, autochthony, homogeneity, and boundaries for citizens and noncitizens alike.

Gregory S. Gullette

See also Anderson, Benedict; Appadurai, Arjun; Globalization Theory; Mobility; Postcolonial Theory

Further Readings

Akhil, G., & Ferguson, J. (1992). Beyond "culture": Space, identity, and the politics of difference. *Cultural Anthropology, 7*(1), 6–23.

Anderson, B. (1983). *Imagined communities: Reflections on the origin and spread of nationalism*. London, UK: Verso.

Appadurai, A. (1996). *Modernity at large: Cultural dimensions of globalization*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Caldeira, T. P. R. (2000). *City of walls: Crime, segregation, and citizenship in São Paulo*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Cohen, D. (2011). *Braceros: Migrant citizens and transnational subjects in the postwar United States and Mexico*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press.

Glick-Schiller, N., Bash, L., & Blanc-Szanton, C. (Eds.). (1992). *Towards a transnational perspective on migration: Race, class, ethnicity, and nationalism reconsidered*. New York: New York Academy of Sciences.

Hansen, T. B., & Stepputat, F., (Eds.). (2005). *Sovereign bodies: Citizens, migrants, and states in the postcolonial world*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Hobsbawm, E. (1992). *Nations and nationalism since 1780*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Kearney, M. (1995). The local and the global: The anthropology of globalization and transnationalism. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 24,* 547–565.

Khagram, S., & Levit, P. (2008). *The transnational studies reader: Intersections and innovations*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Rouse, R. (1991). Mexican migration and the social space of postmodernism. *Diaspora, 1*(1), 8–23.

Native Anthropology, Native Anthropologist

The English word *native* is derived from the Latin term *nativus*, meaning "innate," "to be born to or related to the land." In colonialist contexts, the root sense of the term was overtaken by a pejorative usage in which *native* was employed to categorize those who were regarded as inferior by the colonial administrators and settlers. Soon, the concept of "native" became associated with the concepts of "primitive" and "savage" in colonial discourse.

There has been a long debate in anthropology over the proper use of the concept of "native anthropologist" and whether it continues the discipline's history of "othering" non-White people. Native anthropologists are believed to write about their own natal cultures from a position of intimate affinity, while nonnative anthropologists, because they are more distant from a culture in which they were not born or raised, are thought to be more "objective" or "objectifying" in their descriptions and analyses of other cultures.

Historical Perspective

Until the late 1960s, anthropology was considered a discipline in which Western scientists studied, interpreted, and represented non-Western "natives."

Beginning at this time, a small number of self-identified "native" or "indigenous" anthropologists, who were members of their own research communities by birth, began to call for the decolonization of anthropology. They suggested that traditional outsider anthropological research be replaced by insider or "native anthropology" formulated from the point of view of indigenous, tribal, peasant, subaltern, and minority researchers who shared a history of colonialism and, thus, subordinate status. In 1988, when Arjun Appadurai critiqued the idea of "the native," he noted that in contrast to the mobile anthropologist, "natives" were persons who not only were from certain out-of-the-way places but were born in and thus belonged to the place the anthropologist was observing or writing about. Not only that, they were also incarcerated or were confined there to their own niches and epistemologies.

This and other telling critiques ought to be understood within the historical context of the professionalization of anthropology. In the 1920s, Bronisław Malinowski described anthropological fieldwork as an encounter between an ethnographic Self and native Others. In his methodological introduction to *Argonauts of the Western Pacific* (1922), Malinowski privileged direct observation and linked it to a radical separation between "home" and the "field." According to his framework, the production of anthropological knowledge depended on observation across a major cultural divide between an ethnographic Self and native Others, who obey the commands of their tribal code without comprehending them. Anthropologists in this tradition—such as Victor Turner and Pierre Bourdieu—believed that their training and their outsider status gave them the ability to understand and unlock native cultural codes.

Boasian historical particularism did not produce "native anthropology" as the virtual Other to "real anthropology" but attempted to overcome Otherness by describing the similarity of peoples

in terms of temporal rather than cultural alterity. Instead of the opposition between an ethnographic Self and a native Other, Boas identified a hidden history as the principal object of study, and he was pleased when Native Americans, African Americans, and members of other cultures generated ethnographic materials. To encourage this, he actively recruited literate informants to produce anthropological texts on their own.

Some native anthropologists wrote their work in their own native languages for local audiences, while others wrote in foreign languages, serving as translators of their cultures for outsiders. This resulted in their segmentation into "indigenous anthropologists," who addressed local audiences, versus "native anthropologists," who addressed international audiences. Two early examples of native anthropologists were Jomo Kenyatta, from Kenya, and Fei Xiaotong, from China. Both were trained in anthropology during the 1930s at the London School of Economics by Malinowski, and they each wrote their PhD dissertations about their own people. Kenyatta wrote and published his 1938 thesis, *Facing Mount Kenya*, in English as both an act of cultural translation and a political defense of the misunderstood indigenous practice of clitoridectomy. Xiaotong undertook his field research in Zaixian'gong, a village not far from where he was born and raised. Instead of writing his 1939 thesis in Chinese, he wrote and later published it in English as *Peasant Life in China*.

That insider or "native" research in one's own society might not be enough of a professional credential for a "non-Western" anthropologist is illustrated by the career of Edward P. Dozier, the first Native American to establish a professional career as an academic anthropologist. From the late 19th century throughout much of the 20th century, American anthropologists who were employed in universities, museums, or government agencies were White male scholars who studied the "vanishing" Indian cultures of North America.

Dozier, the child of an Anglo-American father and a Tewa mother from Santa Clara Pueblo, was both within and outside the Pueblo. This hybrid insider-outsider status enabled him to work during the 1950s and 1960s as both a linguist and an ethnographer within the Tewa society and also outside in the world of professional anthropology. While this was a remarkable accomplishment, his mentor, Fred Egan, mentioned to Dozier that he might further improve his status by working in a foreign culture. He suggested the Kalingas, who once practiced headhunting, as an appropriately "exotic" culture for Dozier's second fieldwork. In 1959–1960, Dozier conducted research among the Kalingas in the Philippines with the aid of a National Science Foundation senior fellowship.

Ever since the emergence of professional anthropology in the late 19th century, it has been a hybrid inquiry, practiced by people of many ethnicities worldwide who worked at recording and translating a vast number of cultural realities. The African American anthropologist Delmos Jones was one of the earliest anthropologists to explicitly raise important theoretical questions about the standpoint, perspective, and positionality of researchers. In his 1970 article "Towards a Native Anthropology," Jones pointed out that while there had been many discussions about the fieldwork problems encountered by "outsiders," there is another, perhaps more important, vantage point from which research might be conducted—that of an "insider," a person who is a member of the same racial, ethnic, or cultural group he or she researches and writes about. He advocated for what he called a "critical native anthropology" that would contribute to the decolonization of anthropology.

Decolonizing Anthropology

Over the years, this work has stimulated Faye Harrison and other anthropologists of color to initiate critical projects in decolonizing anthropology. As they noted, the concept of "native" is problematic since it keeps people in their places by essentializing them, bounding their communities, and subjecting them to the disciplinary legacies of racism, sexism, and homophobia that emerged from colonial rule.

In a 1993 essay, Kirin Narayan argued against the dichotomy between "native" and "nonnative" anthropologists by exploring two intriguing questions: How "native" is a native anthropologist? And how "foreign" is an anthropologist from abroad? She noted that the paradigm separating native anthropologists from real anthropologists stems from the colonial setting in which anthropology was initially forged. Narayan suggested that the concept of the native anthropologist does not serve us well and that we rethink "insiders" and "outsiders" to melt the wall between ourselves as interested readers

of stories and as theory-driven professionals. After all, as subjects simultaneously changed by life experiences and professional concerns, we should write texts mixing narrative with analysis that enacts our hybridity, regardless of our origins. In this way, Narayan emptied of meaning the category of "native anthropologist" by pointing out that no anthropologist is ever really native since he or she inhabits multiple identities that confound and essentialize native status.

The reality is that natives worldwide are rarely homogeneous groups. Even when they share their nationality, there are other, more intimate markers of identity, including regional background, social class, education, gender, sexual identity, and age. For example, the Japanese anthropologist Takami Kuwayama included himself in the "native" category, even though he is a Western-trained intellectual teaching anthropology at a major university in Tokyo. In a critical 2006 review of Kuwayama's book *Native Anthropology*, Harumi Befu, a Japanese American raised in Japan during World War II, questioned Kuwayama's self-identification as a "native anthropologist." He describes "native anthropology" as a practice in which "natives," those people who are normally the objects of ethnographic description—especially those living on the peripheries of the anthropological profession—engage in anthropological discourse.

For Kuwayama, however, nativity is a fluid category encompassing urban ethnographers like himself who are simultaneously considered "nonnative outsiders" by inhabitants of the rural communities where they do their field research and "native insiders" by foreign anthropologists. He extended the concept of native anthropologist to include individuals from any society anywhere who have been objects of anthropological research.

Even the most radical attempts to rethink the concept of "native anthropology" have fallen short of deconstructing the foundational Self/Other divide that organizes fieldwork and produces the native anthropologist as a virtual, or not real, member of the discipline. Kevin Dwyer, in his 1982 book *Moroccan Dialogues*, argued that the anthropologist is more than an outsider; he is a superior outsider who comes from a dominant society and imposes himself on the studied society. As Matti Bunzl noted in 2004, the epistemic division between the ethnographic Self and the native Other has become more, not less, common. Today, many self-identified native, or indigenous, anthropologists agree with him and insist that anthropology must find alternate bases of authority.

Darren Ranco, a member of the Penobscot Indian Nation and a self-identified "native anthropologist," uses his training to advocate for an indigenous perspective and to create new kinds of research that reveal the impacts of research itself on Native communities. He intends his work on the relationship between power and knowledge in Native American environmental policy to be of service to his own as well as other Native communities. In his 2006 article "Toward a Native Anthropology: Hermeneutics, Hunting Stories, and Theorizing From Within," Ranco describes traditional anthropology as a "hunting story"—a narrative about capturing something of the Other that the West desires and bringing it back for Western consumption. He argues that this search for the Other is a colonial desire with which Native and non-Native researchers alike must contend. To replace this colonialist narrative, he suggests that we need to discover what kind of research a community might find interesting and how we can make it into a good anthropological story. He also suggests that we do more participatory research, show our finished products to those we research, and include Native people as codirectors of our projects rather than as mere consultants.

Barbara Tedlock

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Boas, Franz; Bourdieu, Pierre; Hermeneutics; Historical Particularism; Malinowski, Bronisław; Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Appadurai, A. (1988). Putting hierarchy in its place. *Cultural Anthropology, 3*(1), 36–49.

Bunzl, M. (2004). Boas, Foucault, and the "native anthropologist": Notes toward a neo-Boasian anthropology. *American Anthropologist, 106*(3), 435–442.

Harrison, F. V. (1991). *Decolonizing anthropology: Moving further toward anthropology for liberation*. Washington, DC: Association of Black Anthropologists.

Jones, D. J. (1970). Towards a native anthropology. *Human Organization, 29*(4), 251–259.

Kenyatta, J. (1938). *Facing Mount Kenya: The tribal life of the Gikuyu*. London, UK: Secker & Warburg.

Kuwayama, T. (2004). *Native anthropology: The Japanese challenge to Western academic hegemony.* Melbourne, Australia: Trans Pacific Press.
Malinowski, B. (1922). *Argonauts of the western Pacific.* New York, NY: Dutton.
Narayan, K. (1993). How native is a "Native" anthropologist? *American Anthropologist, 5,* 671–686.
Norcini, M. (2007). *Edward P. Dozier: The paradox of the American Indian anthropologist.* Tucson: University of Arizona Press.
Ranco, D. J. (2006). Toward a native anthropology: Hermeneutics, hunting stories, and theorizing from within. *Wicazo Sa Review, 21*(2), 61–78.
Xiaotong, F. (1939). *Peasant life in China: A field study of country life in the Yantze Valley.* London, UK: Kegan Paul.

Needham, Rodney

Rodney Needham (1923–2006), a notable figure in British social anthropology, was a theorist and specialist in the study of kinship and the analysis of systems of symbolic classification.

Biography and Major Works

Rodney Needham was born in Welling, Kent, on May 15, 1923. He was educated at Haileybury, a school originally established in 1807 as the East India College. In 1941, he volunteered for the infantry, and the following year he was commissioned into the 4th Battalion, 1st King George V's Own Gurkha Rifles, rising to the rank of captain. He saw service in India and Southeast Asia and was twice wounded in Burma. His time with the Gurkha was of lasting importance; he kept a Gurkha kukri on the wall in his office.

After his discharge from the army, he changed his name from Rodney Philip Green to Rodney Needham, replacing his father's name with his mother's family name.

In 1947, he began a study of Chinese and Malay at the School of Oriental and African Studies, University of London, but the following year, he transferred to Oxford to study social anthropology. He received a Diploma in Anthropology with Distinction in 1949 and a BLitt in 1950, with a thesis on the Naga tribes of the Indo-Burma border. His thesis supervisor was A. R. Radcliffe-Brown. In 1950, prior to his initial fieldwork, he participated in J. P. B. de Josselin de Jong's seminar at Leiden University, which focused on Claude Lévi-Strauss's work. This seminar was formative for Needham. In 1951–1952, he carried out extensive fieldwork with the Penan of central Borneo, and in 1953, he completed his DPhil, with a thesis on the social organization of the Penan. His doctoral supervisor was Louis Dumont. Needham did further brief fieldwork in 1954–1955 among the Kodi and Mamboru in West Sumba and among the Chewong of Malaya.

Needham's first appointment was as a visiting lecturer at the University of Illinois (1955–1956); he then spent the summer of 1956 as an instructor at the University of British Columbia. In 1956, he was appointed as university lecturer in social anthropology at Oxford University, where he remained for the rest of his career. He did, however, have a number of short-term appointments in the United States: at the Center for Advanced Study in Palo Alto (1961–1962), a semester at the University of California, Riverside (1970–1971), a summer session at Harvard (1972), and a year at the University of Virginia (1978–1979). From 1976 until his retirement in 1990, he held the Chair of Social Anthropology at Oxford. He was a fellow of Merton College until his appointment as professor in 1976, when he joined All Souls College. Oxford and its traditions were paramount for Needham; from the time of his appointment until his death, Needham occupied college properties on Holywell Street in the heart of Oxford and within walking distance of the Bodleian Library. He would regularly meet with students for discussions and with visitors, in one or other of the nearby pubs.

Needham was prolific in his writings, which ranged over a great variety of subjects. In addition to his numerous books, articles, and translations, he published more than 200 reviews, notices, letters, communications, and minor translations. He was a frequent reviewer for *The Times Literary Supplement* during the period when all reviews were published anonymously. He was also an inspiring teacher who attracted numerous students. His correspondence with his students and colleagues was voluminous.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Although Needham published on his fieldwork among the Penan of Borneo and the Kodi and

Memboru of Sumba, he was better known for a succession of technical analyses of specific systems of prescriptive alliance in diverse societies from around the world. Early in his career, he wrote a succinct monograph, *Structure and Sentiment* (1962), for which he was awarded the Monograph Prize of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. In this study, he argued the case for the special significance of prescriptive alliance. The monograph was intended to demonstrate the explanatory value of structural analysis versus psychological explanation. He later advanced his ideas on kinship in notable essays in a volume he edited, *Rethinking Kinship and Marriage* (1971), and in *Remarks and Inventions: Skeptical Essays About Kinship* (1974), and he separately articulated his thinking on prescription (1973) and alliance (1986).

Needham saw in societies with prescriptive alliance the possibility for a correspondence of social and symbolic classification. His approach to prescriptive alliance reflected a Leiden tradition that gave emphasis to Durkheim and Mauss's *Primitive Classification* rather than Mauss's *The Gift*, the study that inspired Lévi-Strauss. Ideas of polarity were critical to this understanding. Needham indicated this clearly in his translation of Robert Hertz's essays in *Death and the Right Hand* (with his wife, Claudia Needham, 1960), *Primitive Classification* (Durkheim & Mauss, 1963), and F. A. E van Wouden's *Types of Social Structure in Eastern Indonesia* (1968). Given these different premises and the direction that Needham's researches took, his interpretation of marriage and alliance came to differ significantly from those of Lévi-Strauss. These differences hinged on divergent understandings of ideas of prescription and preference. By relying on precise terminological criteria, Needham attempted to identify a class of societies where marriage relations were directed and obligatory. Thus, within Needham's interpretation, it was possible to distinguish asymmetric preference within a system of symmetric prescriptive alliance. Lévi-Strauss's original formulation was not concerned with these fine distinctions, and it endeavored to encompass a wide spectrum of societies with directed marriage. Needham's approach, in effect, deconstructed Lévi-Strauss's original distinctions and reduced the grand global design of his original work to a more precise analysis of a relatively small group of societies.

Needham translated important works by other thinkers whose ideas resonated with his own. In addition to the works already mentioned, he translated Hans Schärer's *Ngaju Religion* (1963), P. H. Pott's *Yoga and Yantra* (1966), Claude Lévi-Strauss's *Totemism* (1963) and *The Elementary Structures of Kinship* (with J. H. Bell and J. R. von Sturmer, 1969), and Arnold van Gennep's *The Semi-Scholars* (1967). He also translated an article by Marcel Granet and another by A. C. Kruyt for inclusion in his compendium, *Right and Left: Essays on Dual Symbolic Classification* (1973).

Needham also called attention to individuals in anthropology whose work he felt had been neglected. In addition to the studies by Schärer and van Wouden, he prepared a comprehensive bibliography of the writings of A. M. Hocart (1967), produced revised editions of two of Hocart's books, *The Life-Giving Myth* (1970a) and *Kings and Councillors* (1970), and compiled a collection of his essays, *Imagination and Proof* (Needham, 1987). He also promoted the rediscovery of Charles Staniland Wake's *The Development of Marriage and Kinship* (1967) and Carl Nicolai Starcke's *The Primitive Family in Its Origin and Development* (1976).

Needham's book *Belief, Language and Experience* (1972) was a specific demonstration of his conception of anthropology as the practice of an empirical philosophy. His complex, extended argument sets forth the view that belief is not an inner state but a categorical, hence cultural, creation. Following this study, his work increasingly took a philosophical turn. Three thinkers—Sir Thomas Browne, Ludwig Wittgenstein, and Georg Christoph Lichtenberg—were of great importance to him, as was the Argentine writer Jorge Luis Borges.

A succession of volumes consisting of articles and essays on diverse subjects—*Primordial Characters* (1978), *Symbolic Classification* (1979), *Reconnaissances* (1980), *Circumstantial Deliveries* (1981), *Against the Tranquility of Axioms* (1983), *Exemplars* (1985), and *Counterpoints* (1987)—embody some of Needham's most nuanced insights and considered judgments on anthropology and its practice in the widest sense. The thrust of his work was always comparative: Anthropological evidence from the world's ethnographies was the source of his inspiration for the study of what was humanly possible, what might be universal, and how this might be recognized.

Needham articulated his view of social anthropology most emphatically in his Oxford Inaugural Lecture, in which he envisaged an "integrated semantic discipline, an architectonics of significance." Quoting Kant, he proposed a discipline that would chart the limits of human understanding, a venture that would not only be cognitive but would also engage the imagination and the passions. He went on to describe social anthropology in his 1981 book *Circumstantial Deliveries* as "the practice of an empirical philosophy" whose benefits would be

> an expansion of the sympathies, a revision of conventional judgments, the provocation of alternative possibilities of conduct, a vision of man as he might otherwise be, or else a characterization of man as he can newly be seen to be. (p. 28)

James J. Fox

See also Dumont, Louis; Durkheim, Émile; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Mauss, Marcel; Oxford University; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.

Further Readings

A fuller account of Rodney Needham's work can be found in the obituary that appeared in the *American Anthropologist, 110*(3), 401–403, 2008. A long interview with Needham, filmed in Canberra in 1979, is available at Alan Macfarlane's *Anthropological and Other Ancestors* website: http://www.alanmacfarlane.com/ancestors

Needham, R. (1962). *Structure and sentiment: A test case in social anthropology.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (1974). *Remarks and inventions: Skeptical essays about kinship*. London, UK: Tavistock.

———. (1981). *Circumstantial deliveries*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Neo-Boasianism

Neo-Boasianism is a late-20th-century revival of the American anthropological tradition founded by Franz Boas (1858–1942). The classic Boasian concerns with culture, history, and psychological patterning are reinterpreted by neo-Boasians in light of recent theoretical trends, especially neo-Marxism, neopragmatism, and practice theory.

Two Networks

The Boasian revival began in the 1980s in two academic networks, one in New York, the other in Chicago. The New York group was loose knit and institutionally dispersed but could be traced by various routes to Columbia University, the original home of Boasian anthropology. A few Columbia alumni, led by Alexander Lesser (1902–1982) and Sidney Mintz (1922–), had never abandoned the Boasian legacy, even as they experimented with materialist and neo-evolutionist approaches widely regarded as antithetical to Boas's school of thought. By the early 1980s, the materialist reaction against Boas had crested, and the basic Boasian sensibilities of these alumni remained intact. The year before his death, Lesser published an important essay that recast Boas as a profound and innovative theoretician whose historical pluralism stood as a bulwark against positivist, reductionist, and teleological thinking. Lesser's interpretation of Boas would be endorsed by Mintz and several other Columbia alumni, including Eric R. Wolf (1923–1999), Herbert S. Lewis (1934–), and Richard G. Fox (1939–). From this rather diffuse network came the first explicit calls for a Boasian revival.

Meanwhile, a more tightly integrated network emerged at the University of Chicago, where George W. Stocking Jr. (1928–) had been engaged since the 1960s in a comprehensive investigation of the history of anthropology. Stocking had been trained at the University of Pennsylvania by Alfred Irving Hallowell (1892–1974), who had studied with Boas in the 1920s. The importance of Stocking's work to the Boasian revival can hardly be overstated. His early essays effectively restored Boas's intellectual reputation after its precipitous decline in the postwar era. Though Stocking never "lobbied" for a neo-Boasian anthropology, he laid its foundation by sharply clarifying the historical sources, conceptual structure, and enduring value of the Boasian legacy. Stocking's many students at Chicago, including Richard Handler (1950–), Ira Bashkow (1962–), and Matti Bunzl (1971–), went on to synthesize his approach to intellectual history with a neo-Boasian style of ethnography and cultural analysis.

While the New York network operated in various "generalizing" modes, with significant forays into evolutionary and Marxian theory, Stocking's circle has been more consistently hermeneutic and

particularizing, with an abiding regard for the viewpoints and experiences of specific cultural actors. This difference in emphasis would seem to recapitulate the old tension between scientific and humanistic orientations that helped define the original Boasian school. The perennial quality of the bifurcation suggests that to reach a deeper understanding of neo-Boasianism, we must reexamine the thinking of Boas himself.

The Original Boasian School

The research tradition that Boas founded around 1900 still dominated American anthropology when he died in 1942. Yet the diversity of approaches within this school has confounded any simple characterization. Indeed, some of Boas's most prominent students, including Alfred L. Kroeber (1876–1960) and Melville J. Herskovits (1895–1963), denied the existence of such a "school," arguing that there was too great a variety of interests, methods, and theoretical orientations among the so-called Boasians to warrant the name.

This image of an intellectual hodgepodge was examined and rejected by Stocking, who recast the Boasians as a diverse and quarrelsome "family" headed by a remarkably steady and rigorous mentor. The historical origins and lifelong consistency of Boas's approach were brought into focus for the first time in Stocking's early essays, as represented in the landmark volume *Race, Culture, and Evolution* (1968). Stocking's subsequent writings, including "The Basic Assumptions of Boasian Anthropology" (1974) and "Ideas and Institutions in American Anthropology" (1976), explored the abiding influence of Boas's legacy in the ramifying projects of his students.

Stocking highlighted a certain theoretical tension at the heart of the Boasian tradition. The alternative principles of "scientific generalization" and "historical understanding" had always coexisted here but were differently weighted by each Boasian theorist. In Boas himself, scientific generalization was a "recessive trait"—masked, in most environments, by a dominant tendency toward historical understanding. Yet the legitimacy of objective, universalizing science as well as interpretive, particularizing history was upheld in Boas's early essay "The Study of Geography" (1887), which has come to be seen as a founding document and veritable manifesto of the Boasian school. In the end, Boas argued, neither science nor history was inherently superior, because each originated in a different desire of the human mind. Speaking for himself and no one else, Boas found the understanding of cultural phenomena within their social and historical contexts simply more satisfying than reducing such phenomena to general laws.

Eclipse and Resurgence

In the middle decades of the 20th century, the Boasian tradition was broadly eclipsed by rival approaches, including the American school of neoevolutionism and European imports such as structural functionalism. These ascendant schools of thought shared a distaste, if not a disdain, for the cultural-historical method in particular. Leading the anti-Boasian movement were Leslie White (1900–1975) and Marvin Harris (1927–2001), who harshly criticized the legacy of "historical particularism" as theoretically vacuous and obsessed with detailed ethnography to the neglect of cross-cultural comparison and explanation. In 1968, Harris produced a polemical history of the field, *The Rise of Anthropological Theory*, which castigated Boas for his purported timidity as a scientist. This was perhaps the nadir of the Boasian tradition.

Yet 1968 also saw the publication of Stocking's first book, *Race, Culture, and Evolution*. For 20 years or more, his sympathetic treatment of the Boasian school would compete with Harris's acerbic critique, effectively dividing American anthropologists into two intellectual "clans" based on rival images of the ancestors. If the tide eventually turned in Stocking's favor, this was attributable not only to the caliber of his scholarship but also to the renewed interest in social and cultural history that swept into anthropology in the 1980s. The rehistoricization of the field drew inspiration from various Marxian, Weberian, and Foucauldian sources, but one option for American anthropologists was to revive and rethink their own 20th-century tradition.

An important harbinger of this trend was "Reconsidering the Ancestors," a yearlong series of lectures held at the City University of New York in 1976. Each of the invited speakers had studied under or worked closely with a leading anthropologist of the Boasian era, and each lecture included personal as well as professional and intellectual reflections. In keeping with the metropolitan setting, the lectures tended to focus on the "ancestors" who had studied

or taught at Columbia and other New York City institutions. Thus, along with Boas himself, Alfred Kroeber, Paul Radin (1883–1959), Ruth Benedict (1887–1948), and Julian Steward (1902–1972) were all profiled and their work debated. The resulting papers, which were edited by Sydel Silverman (1933–) and published under the title *Totems and Teachers* (1981), can be seen in retrospect to carry distinctive traces of neo-Boasianism in its earliest form.

Between Humboldt and Bourdieu

The chapter on Boas was authored by Alexander Lesser, who explored the surprising affinities between Boasian anthropology and Darwinian biology. Like Darwin before him, Boas had turned away from abstract schemes of evolutionary stages in favor of the naturalistic study of variability and interconnectedness within specific social and physical surroundings. In this light, Lesser interpreted both Darwinian biology and Boasian anthropology as *historical* sciences seeking to understand particular events and sequences in ever-changing contexts. Such insight into the Darwin-Boas parallel was rare, especially within anthropology, and very likely rooted in Lesser's undergraduate training: He had studied with the leading pragmatist philosopher John Dewey (1859–1952) before switching to anthropology and taking his PhD under Boas in 1929. Given that Dewey and Boas had converged on a distinctively historicist reading of evolutionary theory, Lesser found himself at a unique intersection in American thought. Here, he was able to gather up conceptual instruments usually assigned to radically different purposes.

The resulting toolkit of evolutionism, pragmatism, and cultural historicism would be sorted through and put to use in various ways by Lesser's own students and followers. First among these was Sidney Mintz, whose introduction to anthropology had come through Lesser's course at Brooklyn College. In Mintz's studies of the Caribbean, traditional culture history was fused with Marxian political economy, giving rise to a neo-Boasian variation on the materialist paradigm that had once threatened to eclipse the Boasian legacy altogether. Mintz's approach was adopted in turn by Richard G. Fox (1939–), who called in 1991 for a "nearly new" culture history based on Boasian models. In taking this step, Fox introduced a certain "paradigm consciousness" into a revival that had been gathering momentum for a decade or more. Herbert S. Lewis (1934–), who was especially attuned to the epistemological sensibilities shared by Boas, Dewey, and Darwin, raised that consciousness to a new level. Lewis set out in the 1990s to extend and elaborate the pragmatism that had been implicit in Lesser's approach. One of Lewis's articles, "Boas, Darwin, Science, and Anthropology" (2001), is perhaps the purest expression to date of neo-Boasianism as a "scientific" enterprise.

Meanwhile, Stocking's students were pushing farther into the historical territory he had first scouted in the 1960s. A neo-Boasian approach, they realized, would have to be based on a broad assessment of the historical revolution in 19th-century thought, with special attention to the German ethnological tradition in which Boas had been trained. Such an assessment was carried out by Matti Bunzl, who argued that Boasian anthropology had deep roots in the German Counter-Enlightenment. In Bunzl's groundbreaking 1996 paper, Boas's intellectual connections were traced back to the dual heritage of Wilhelm von Humboldt (1767–1835) and his brother Alexander (1769–1859). The Boasian culture concept, with its emphasis on historical and especially linguistic relationships, could be traced to Wilhelm, the linguist and philosopher; while the Boasian emphasis on fieldwork and the plotting of distributions in space and time could be traced to Alexander, the explorer and natural scientist. The duality of the Humboldtian tradition, interestingly enough, would be reflected not only in the original Boasian school but also in the twin streams of neo-Boasian thought.

A quarter-century after the New York network staged its lecture series "Reconsidering the Ancestors," Stocking's students offered their own series, "The Pasts, Presents, and Futures of Boasian Anthropology." Presented at the Chicago meeting of the American Anthropological Association in 1999, five of the lectures were published in *American Anthropologist* in 2004. With this newest incarnation of Boasian anthropology, the tradition is not just recovered and revitalized but drawn into dialogue with the works of Michel Foucault, Pierre Bourdieu, and other theorists of late modernity.

Lars Rodseth

See also Boas, Franz; Columbia University

Further Readings

Bunzl, M. (2004). Boas, Foucault, and the "native anthropologist": Notes toward a neo-Boasian anthropology. *American Anthropologist, 106,* 435–442.

Fox, R. G. (1991). For a nearly new culture history. In R. G. Fox (Ed.), *Recapturing anthropology: Working in the present* (pp. 93–113). Santa Fe, NM: School of American Research Press.

Lewis, H. S. (2001). Boas, Darwin, science, and anthropology. *Current Anthropology, 42,* 381–406.

Silverman, S. (Ed.). (2004). *Totems and teachers: Key figures in the history of anthropology* (2nd ed.). Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1982). *Race, culture, and evolution: Essays in the history of anthropology.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (Ed.). (1996). *Volksgeist as method and ethic: Essays on Boasian ethnography and the German anthropological tradition.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Neo-Kantianism

At the end of the 18th century, Immanuel Kant redirected philosophical inquiry from its traditional concern with *being* (ontology) toward the limits and conditions of *knowing* (epistemology). In his three "critiques," Kant asked in order the following questions: What can I know? (*The Critique of Pure Reason*) What must I do? (*The Critique of Practical Reason*) What may I hope? (*The Critique of Judgment*). Each of these questions has been central to anthropology throughout its history: In what measure is knowledge socially or culturally constructed, rather than the result of an isolated subject's encounter with the world? How universal versus culturally specific are the cognitive schemes and value systems that inform and constrain human actions in the world? In what ways does social positioning affect aesthetic judgment? Insofar as anthropology, as a discipline, addresses such questions and reacts to them, it may be regarded as having broadly "neo-Kantian" foundations.

Kant explored these questions in the course of his life chronologically from first to third. However, because the impact of the first question—What can I know?—so permeates the field of anthropology owing to the significance of cultural relativity, the distinctive imprint of Kant and the followers of Kant (or "neo-Kantians") can be most clearly seen by starting with the third critique and working back to the first. The third critique has become focally important in anthropology only in the past 3 or 4 decades, and its impact is correspondingly less widespread.

Pierre Bourdieu

The third critique has been foregrounded most obviously by Pierre Bourdieu in his study *Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgement of Taste*. Bourdieu responds to Kant's proposal to distinguish between the "agreeable," grounded in the sensation of pleasure, and the "beautiful" and "sublime," which involve judgments distanced from sensation and presumably tapping into a subjective universal. Bourdieu links the Kantian distinction to social class, attempting to show that lower class French judgments regarding taste are more closely tied to the kinds of sensory responses Kant labeled "agreeable," whereas higher social classes tend to make judgments more distant from sensory gratification. More generally, Bourdieu argued that tastes scale according to relative distance from "necessity," higher status aesthetic judgments being more typically "disinterested" and lower status choices reflecting a "taste for the necessary." This work resonates with the much longer history of anthropological interest in the variability of aesthetic standards.

Marshall Sahlins

Although Marshall Sahlins, unlike Bourdieu, does not explicitly mention Kant, his book *Culture and Practical Reason* is widely understood to be a response to the second critique—*The Critique of Practical Reason*—and not only because of the similarity in titles. Kant was concerned in the latter work with the concept of freedom, which is key to his understanding of humanness. By freedom, he meant the ability to act not out of instinct or habit, both of which constrain freedom, but rather in accord with reason. There is an obvious connection between freedom and the disinterestedness of judgment in the third critique, though Kant, here, is concerned not with aesthetic judgments but with the grounds for action, which is also Sahlins's focus. However, Sahlins argues for a view of action as grounded not in universal reason but rather in cultural schemes.

In effect, the cultural or "symbolic scheme" replaces reason as the a priori.

Max Weber

The huge shadow cast by Kant over the social sciences often goes unremarked because, unlike Bourdieu and more like Sahlins, most scholars never mention him explicitly, instead regarding his thought as a background to their own foregrounded ideas. Concerning the second critique, this is nowhere more obvious than in the case of Max Weber, whose idea of "interpretive analysis" so influenced Geertz and much of contemporary cultural anthropology. Weber conceptualized social action in a way that strikingly parallels the grounds of action posited by Kant, for whom freedom meant acting in accord with reason as opposed to emotion or habit. For Weber, reason appears as the "rational" form of social action, as opposed to "affectual" (i.e., determined by the actor's feelings) and "traditional" (i.e., determined by habit). Indeed, he viewed the large-scale transformations of human society in terms of a movement from tradition to rationality mediated by affect (or "charisma"). Despite the obvious background debt to Kant's second critique, the 1,469 pages in the English translation of Weber's monumental *Economy and Society: An Outline of Interpretive Sociology* contain no direct mention of Kant and only one reference to neo-Kantian doctrines.

This is not to suggest that Weber was straightforwardly affirming the views laid out in the second critique. He was not, in any simple fashion. In fact, his rationality is not the same as Kant's reason. In the case of social action, Weber distinguished two types of rationality, what he called "value-rationality" and "instrumental rationality." The former—where an action can be seen as fostering a particular explicit value—most closely parallels Kant's notion of reason. It is congruent with Kant's argument regarding the categorical imperative, which involves acting in a way that the actor would wish everyone to act in accord with the same principle. Weber distinguished this value orientation from the instrumental form of rationality, where rationality refers to taking account of how other human beings as well as objects in the environment actually behave. Conduct could be rational in the first sense if doing Action A would foster Value B, but it would be irrational if in doing A the actor did not take account of how others would respond to A. Correspondingly, an action could be rational in the second sense of calculating environmental responses but may not be oriented to fostering ultimate values or goals.

Importantly, Weber socialized the notion of reason. For Kant, reason was transcendent, with ethical imperatives following from its dictates. For Weber, ultimate values were part of social formations, especially religions, in which he was so intensely interested. In some ways, for Weber, it was the instrumental form of rationality, particularly as manifested in the economic realm, that embodied the horizon of human history and that came closest to a human universal. In contrast to Kant's hope for the future, Weber held a decidedly more pessimistic view, summed up in his phrase "the iron cage," referring to the deathly grip instrumental rationality holds on human life as economic action proliferates.

Émile Durkheim

If the second critique has been hugely influential in the social sciences, it is nevertheless probably the first critique—*The Critique of Pure Reason*—that has most supplied the backdrop for research within anthropology historically. In this critique, Kant distinguished the "phenomenal," what is accessible in the world through the senses, from the "noumenal," what must be supposed to lie behind the phenomenal, things as they are as opposed to things as they are perceived. He also adopted a distinction between *a priori* and *a posteriori* knowledge, that is between knowledge arising from experience and knowledge that precedes experience and makes experience possible. A priori knowledge was, in this way, transcendental.

Perhaps the most influential anthropological work to take up the Kantian distinctions was Émile Durkheim's *Elementary Forms of the Religious Life*. Durkheim, however, provided a very different understanding of the a priori. He argued that transcendent knowledge comes to us from society or what we today call culture. Kant, according to Durkheim, viewed human existence as involving the interaction between an individual subject and a material world. The material world was revealed to the subject through sensory perceptions, but the subject was also guided by impersonal reason,

which is prior to and also necessary for experience. Durkheim proposed that Kant erred in failing to appreciate "collective thought" and "collective representations," what we would today call "culture." While Durkheim made explicit reference to Aristotle's "categories of understanding"—that is, ideas of space, time, class, number, cause, substance, and person—he had in mind as well the Kantian categories. As he did in his earlier work with Marcel Mauss, *Primitive Classification*, Durkheim argued further that a priori conceptions of space and time derive from society and social classifications.

Where Kant imagined transcendent universal conditions behind subjective experience, Durkheim posited social or cultural conditions that are prior to the experience of any given individual and that inform the experiences of that individual. In so doing, he set the stage for much of later anthropological investigation by raising the question of possible cultural variability. That the categories of experience may derive from society does not necessarily exclude the possibility that there are some aspects of those social categories that are universal. However, it does suggest that we cannot immediately move from the recognition of a priori knowledge to human universality. Cross-cultural study would have to be a part of any such investigation.

Franz Boas

If Durkheim introduced Kantian epistemological considerations into the emerging discipline of anthropology, so too did Franz Boas in the United States. George Stocking notes that, as a young man, Boas was influenced by Benno Erdmann, one of the leading Kantian scholars of his time. Boas wanted to explore the relationship between the subjective and objective worlds. Culture would for him come to play a central role, as it did for Durkheim, intervening between experience and understanding. Stocking speculated that even E. B. Tylor, author of the 1871 book *Primitive Culture*—regarded by many as the first work in English to use the term *culture* in something like its modern anthropological sense—may have been influenced by Kant. Whether or not he was, there is evidence that Boas developed American anthropology at least in part in response to Kantian ideas, and especially Kant's first critique.

Later Developments: Sapir, Jakobson, and Foucault

It is interesting to view some later developments in this light, for example, the discovery by Boas's student Edward Sapir, published in his article "The Psychological Reality of Phonemes," of the influence of phonemic patterning on the ability to cognize differences between sounds. Phonemic structure appears to intervene between perception or experience and its meaningful comprehension. Moreover, the phonemic system is the product of a given specific language, and systems vary from one language to the next.

The work of the Prague School linguist Roman Jakobson in splitting the phoneme—the minimal meaningful unit of sound within language—into its constituent binary features in turn provided a way to approach Kantian universal a priori foundations at the level of sound—although there is no evidence that Jakobson was actually thinking about the Kantian dualism. Jakobson's approach to sound in turn supplied a model for Claude Lévi-Strauss's quest to uncover the binary oppositions of myth in his three-volume *Mythologiques* series and, hence, to arrive at something like Kantian universal prerequisites of experience, or what Lévi-Strauss called "brain structure."

Tensions between the quest for universals and the assertion of cultural variability run throughout the history of anthropology and in some ways situate anthropology as a discipline responding to the thought of Kant—and even, perhaps, as a "neo-Kantian" discipline. Even Michel Foucault, who had such an influence on anthropology in the latter part of the 20th century and the beginning of the 21st, himself responded to Kant. As part of his 1961 dissertation, Foucault wrote "Introduction to Kant's Anthropology," which critically assessed Kant's 1798 book, *Anthropology From a Pragmatic Point of View*, a collection of the lectures Kant gave every year between 1772 and his retirement in 1796 in a course on anthropology.

Kant's 1798 book is often thought to be a starting point for the discipline of anthropology as it is known today. It raises what can be regarded as a fourth Kantian question, supplementing those underlying the three critiques. The fourth question is "What is man?" Or, as it might be put today, what

is a human being? Foucault, in his "Introduction," challenged the coherence of Kant's approach, suggesting a contradiction underlying it. In the three critiques, Kant's subject is pure, existing outside time; it is not empirical. The pure subject possesses a priori characteristics, such as the categories, that make experience possible. But in this 1798 work, Foucault points out, Kant makes the subject into an object. The subject, as formulated in the first three critiques, becomes in this last rendering simultaneously an object of empirical investigation. Foucault thought of this as an unresolvable paradox. Lévi-Strauss, however, regarded this not as a paradox but as the defining characteristic of the method of ethnography. He referred to anthropology as a science that used intimate experience (what we would today call "participant observation" research) to establish objective accounts of culture and society.

Anthropology: A Neo-Kantian Discipline?

There are good reasons to regard many of anthropology's key aspects as responding to Kant's formulations, not only those of the three critiques but those founding his "anthropology" as well. At the same time, one could look at the discipline from other perspectives, for example, through Marxism, which, though relatable back to Kantianism through its Hegelian reworking, became far enough removed from the Kantian project to give a different perspective on the field. Foucault himself took inspiration from Nietzsche, who, though reacting in many ways to the neo-Kantian environment in which he was immersed, ended up sufficiently far from Kantian questions to suggest yet another angle on the discipline. Or, again, one could look at anthropology through the lens of semiotics, as conceived by Charles Sanders Peirce and carried forward first by Roman Jakobson and more recently by Michael Silverstein and others. Peirce's semiotics was an attempt to rethink Kant's categories, but the rethinking was so innovative as to give yet another perspective on the discipline.

Still, there is benefit derived from employing Kantian thought as a lens through which to view the coherence of anthropology as a discipline. The human-subject-as-empirical-object problem remains with us today, and as Lévi-Strauss proposed, it is a defining characteristic of the anthropological endeavor. Moreover, just as Kant viewed the human subject as endowed with the capacities for freedom and reason, and the ability to use those capacities to render experience intelligible and to guide action, so too has anthropology viewed humans as having a special capacity, an exceptionally developed orientation to the transmission and acquisition of culture, enabling them to organize conduct and lend meaning to experience in terms of it. While research has shown how widespread social learning is in the animal kingdom—and so, in certain respects, how widespread "culture," as broadly construed, is—humans continue to be unique with regard to the extent to which sensory experience is rendered intelligible and conduct is regulated by something prior to the experience of any given individual: the culture into which that individual is born and continues to live.

Greg Urban

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Cultural Relativism; Durkheim, Émile; Foucault, Michel; Subjectivity; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Bourdieu, P. (1984). *Distinction: A critique of the judgement of taste.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Durkheim, É. (1969). *The elementary forms of the religious life.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Foucault, M. (2008). *Introduction to Kant's anthropology.* Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Lévi-Strauss, C. (1983). *The raw and the cooked: Mythologiques* (Vol. 1). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Sahlins, M. (1978). *Culture and practical reason.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Sapir, E. (1968). The psychological reality of phonemes. In D. G. Mandelbaum (Ed.), *Selected writings in language, culture, and personality* (pp. 46–61). New York, NY: Harcourt, Brace.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1968). *Race, culture, and evolution: Essays in the history of anthropology.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Urban, G. (1996). *Metaphysical community: The interplay of the senses and the intellect.* Austin: University of Texas Press.

Weber, M. (1968). *Economy and society: An outline of interpretive sociology.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Neo-Whorfianism

See Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism

Network Theory/Social Network Analysis

A social network is a set of entities (often referred to as *actors* or *nodes*) and the set of ties that represent a designated type of relationship among them. The social network approach is rooted in the assumption that the structure of social relationships among a collection of nodes has important consequences. The pattern of relationships in which a node is embedded can enable or constrain its behavior, thereby affecting the outcomes attainable by that node.

Social Networks in Anthropology

Although it wasn't the first social science discipline to employ the social network approach, anthropology has played an important role in the development of social network analysis (SNA) as a field. Indeed, the term *social network* was coined by the social anthropologist John A. Barnes in 1954. SNA has been used to study a number of topics in anthropology. As social anthropologists began doing fieldwork in urban contexts in the 1950s and 1960s, they used social network thinking to make sense of the greater social complexity they faced. SNA proved useful in the study of kinship systems as well, as it provided anthropologists with a formal set of mathematical tools with which to examine kin networks. Cognitive anthropologists have also taken a social network perspective by, for example, examining the effects that certain social network positions have on individual perceptions. Moreover, many anthropologists have found that the formal network approach to examining social interaction is an effective complement to ethnographic fieldwork. In the following sections, we describe the basic underpinnings of social network theory and the methodological aspects of data collection in SNA.

Social Network Theory

One criticism of social network research is that it is devoid of native theory. A number of scholars have recently countered this contention by outlining the theoretical contributions that have grown out of social network research. We briefly summarize these key theoretical concepts below.

Types of Ties and Levels of Analysis

Entities studied in social networks include individuals, clans, villages, organizations, nations, or any other entity that is capable of having some kind of relationship with another entity. The ties that connect nodes in a network can also come in many forms. For example, ties that have been studied in anthropological research include kin relationships among family members, friendship ties among individuals, gift exchange ties among households, alliances ties among tribes, and economic exchange ties among villages. The types of ties studied in SNA can be classified into five general categories. The typology depicted in Table 1 contains five types of dyadic relationships: similarities, social relations, mental relations, interactions and transactions, and flows.

Network ties are often thought to form "paths" or "pipes" along which resources (e.g., information, beliefs, money) flow. Social networks can be examined from three levels of analysis: the node level, the dyadic level, and the network level. At the *node level*, researchers focus on where each individual node is located in the overall structure of the network. One of the best known node-level concepts is centrality, which is a family of concepts that describe node position. At the *dyadic level*, researchers focus on the properties of pairs of actors. Examples of dyadic measures are *geodesic distance* (i.e., the number of links in the shortest path from one node to the other) and *structural equivalence* (i.e., the extent to which a pair of nodes has, or does not have, ties to the same third parties). At the *network level*, researchers focus on the structure of the network as a whole. Examples of network-level properties include *density* (i.e., the proportion of the number of ties that actually

Table 1 Typology of Social Network Relationships

Types of Relationships	*Examples*
Similarities	
• Location	Nodes in the same spatial and temporal space
• Membership	Nodes in the same tribe; nodes in the same club
• Attribute	Nodes of the same gender; nodes with the same beliefs
Social relations	
• Kinship	Mother; grandparent; sibling
• Non-kin relationship	Friend; enemy; coworker
Mental relations	
• Affective	Likes; hates
• Cognitive	Knows; sees as competent; believes to be high-status
Interactions and transactions flows	Talked to; had sex with; lent money to; traded with Information; beliefs; money

Source: Borgatti and Ofem (2010). Reprinted with kind permission of Harvard Education Press.

exist out of the maximum number of ties that could mathematically exist) and *centralization* (i.e., the extent to which the network revolves around a single node).

Social Capital

One of the most important theoretical concepts to come out of social network thinking is that of social capital, which can be defined as the benefits of network connectedness. Social capital is seen as a determinant of the success of individuals or collective entities. It contrasts with and complements a human capital point of view that sees outcomes of entities as a function of the inherent characteristics of the entity. At the individual level, the social capital perspective argues that actors can use their social ties to access or control resources—such as information or financial capital—that they don't possess themselves. At the group level, social capital theorists argue that certain overall network characteristics (e.g., density) provide a collectivity with a cohesiveness that enables it to effectively pursue collective goals. Thus, there are two fundamental social capital perspectives, with one focused on how networks facilitate individual action and the other focused on how networks facilitate collective action.

Theoretical Mechanisms

The primary focus of social network research in the social sciences has been on the outcomes that networks generate. These outcomes can be divided into two categories: homogeneity and performance. *Homogeneity* refers to the similarity of nodes in terms of their behavior or internal structure. A study that examines how two actors come to have the same beliefs about child rearing would be an example of research focused on homogeneity. *Performance* refers to a node's outcomes with respect to some good. A study that links social network centrality to economic wealth would be an example of research focused on performance. Three theoretical mechanisms for explaining homogeneity and performance have been identified: direct transmission, adaptation, and binding.

Direct transmission occurs between nodes when there is either (a) a physical transfer of a material resource or (b) a mimetic process of contagion whereby an intangible resource (e.g., an idea) is transferred. For example, one actor influencing another actor to adopt a certain set of beliefs by having a face-to-face discussion would be an example of homogeneity being created via direct transmission. The direct transmission mechanism can also be used to explain performance outcomes, as when an actor taps her more experienced friends for advice.

Adaptation provides another explanation of how nodes become homogeneous. Adaptation occurs when nodes react to their social environments; a consequence is that if two nodes have similar social environments, they are similarly shaped by those environments. For example, two nodes tied to the same third-party nodes at work (e.g., the same boss, same suppliers, and same customers) will likely exhibit the same behaviors because they are exposed to the same demands, requests, and constraints by virtue of being tied to the same third parties.

The idea behind the *binding* mechanism is that social ties can bind nodes together to create a superordinate identity, creating coordinated action on the part of its constituents. Labor unions and political alliances illustrate the binding mechanism in that they both provide individual nodes with a new identity based on the collective, not to mention greater levels of power than any one node could have in isolation. The power that nodes derive from binding processes enables performance. The superordinate identity that nodes assume through binding enables homogeneity.

SNA Methodology

SNA requires specialized data-gathering methods to capture the relationships among entities. There are two primary data collection strategies used by social network researchers. The first is the *whole-network approach*, which entails measuring all of the relationships that exist among a predefined set of nodes. The second is the *egocentric* approach (also known as a personal network research design), which entails selecting a sample of nodes from among a population and then gathering data about the characteristics of their personal social network ties.

Whole-Network Approach

In the whole-network approach, a set of nodes is predetermined by the researcher before data collection begins. The population of nodes chosen often corresponds to some kind of group; it may be a self-defined group or it may be a group that is defined by the researcher. In this approach, the researcher attempts to get every node in the population to report on his or her ties with every other member of the population. For example, each individual in an organization might be asked to list every other organization member with whom the individual (a) has a friendship tie to, (b) has a conflict tie to, or (c) seeks advice from. In this case, the network population is all the members of the organization and three types of network ties are being measured.

This approach results in a number of person-by-person matrices (known as *adjacency matrices*) that represent the presence or absence of each kind of tie between each possible pair of individuals in the network. These matrices are usually composed of 1s (which indicate the presence of a tie) and 0s (which indicate the absence of a tie), although this is not always the case. Each adjacency matrix represents one particular type of tie, so the example mentioned above would result in three adjacency matrices, one each for friendship, conflict, and advice.

One drawback of the whole-network approach is that a substantial proportion of the population needs to respond for the network data to be valid. The most agreed-up rule of thumb states that a researcher needs a 75% to 80% response rate to conduct a valid analysis of a whole network. The primary benefit of whole-network data, however, is that it allows a researcher to compute a number of graph-theoretic measures and matrix algebra procedures that are not possible with egocentric data.

A second drawback is that, to construct the network, surveys cannot be anonymous. This can reduce response rates when respondents have concerns that the data will not be kept confidential.

Egocentric Approach

In the egocentric approach, a researcher begins by selecting a sample of respondents out of a population. The goal in egocentric analyses is not to capture all of the ties that exist among a group of nodes (known as *egos*), as in the whole-network approach. Instead, the idea here is to take a representative sample from a large population and then gather data on the personal networks of each ego. The process of gathering data on each ego's network happens in two steps. In the first step, the researcher asks each ego to respond to *name generator questions*. The purpose of name generator questions is to get the ego to generate a comprehensive list of others (known as *alters*) in his or her social network. An example of a name generator question is "With whom do you discuss important personal matters?" The answers to name generator questions generate a list of the ego's alters.

The list generated in step one then feeds into the second step, which is the *name interpreter*. In this

step, the ego is asked about the types of relational ties he or she has with each of the alters named. For example, an ego might be asked to indicate which of the alters on the list he or she considers to be a friend, which are family members, which are coworkers, and so on. These data provide a researcher with information on the size of the ego's network. The ego may also be asked to answer questions about the characteristics of each alter. For example, the ego may be asked to indicate the age, gender, and race of each alter on the list. These data allow the researcher to determine the composition of the ego's social network. In some studies, the ego is also asked to indicate whether or not each of the alters has social network ties with the others. This provides the researcher with data on the structure of the ego's social network.

The principal benefit of the egocentric approach is that it can be conducted on a random sample of nodes and that it is not subject to the response rate requirements inherent to the whole-network approach. The data collected via this approach are also not subject to the network autocorrelation issues encountered with whole-network data, which means that these data can be treated as normal attribute variables and can be analyzed using the same methods as for traditional social science data. A third benefit of the egocentric approach is that the surveys can be anonymous and even the alters need not be identified by their real names.

The principal drawback of the egocentric approach is that it does not capture the structural features of an entire network, which means that certain social network measures cannot be applied to data collected with this approach.

Conclusion

Social network theory and methodology continues to play an important role in anthropological research. Anthropologists are currently using social network perspectives to examine a number of phenomena. In biological anthropology, researchers are using SNA to study the evolution of primate social structure to better understand human cooperation (for a review, see Lewton, 2012). In cultural anthropology, H. Russell Bernard and colleagues continue to pursue their "network scale-up" project, which provides tools for estimating hard-to-count populations. Douglas White and Ulla Johansen have recently provided the field with new, network-based, conceptual tools for understanding kinship. Anthropologists Jose Luis Molina and Christopher McCarty have been studying migration from a network perspective and developing new tools for egocentric network research in the process. These are but a few examples of the ways in which researchers are using social networks in anthropology. Many exciting directions, however, remain for social network researchers to pursue.

Travis J. Grosser and Stephen P. Borgatti

See also Manchester School; Systems Theory

Further Readings

Borgatti, S. P., Everett, M. G., & Johnson, J. C. (in press). *Analyzing social networks.* London, UK: Sage.

Borgatti, S. P., & Halgin, D. S. (2011). On network theory. *Organization science, 22,* 1168–1181.

Borgatti, S. P., Mehra, A., Brass, D. J., & Labianca, G. (2009). Network analysis in the social sciences. *Science, 323,* 892–895.

Borgatti, S. P., & Ofem, B. (2010). Overview: Social network theory and analysis. In A. J. Daly (Ed.), *Social Network Theory and Educational Change* (pp. 17–30). Cambridge, MA: Harvard Education Press.

Johnson, J. C. (1994). Anthropological contributions to the study of social networks: A review. In S. Wasserman and J. Galaskiewicz (Eds.), *Advances in social network analysis: Research in the social and behavioral sciences* (pp. 113–151). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Lewton, K. L. (2012). Complexity in biological anthropology in 2011: Species, reproduction, and sociality. *American Anthropologist, 114,* 196–202.

Marsden, P. V. (1990). Network data and measurement. *Annual Review of Sociology, 16,* 435–463.

Scott, J. (2000). *Social network analysis: A handbook.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

White, J. W., & Johansen, U. C. (2005). *Network analysis and ethnographic problems: Process models of a Turkish nomad clan.* Boston, MA: Lexington Books.

Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology

The concept of evolution served as a framework by means of which scholars could describe physical,

cultural, and social change. It was a key principle in the discussions of early anthropologists. This was particularly true in Great Britain but also—though to a lesser extent—in other countries where anthropology took hold as a new field of inquiry in the mid-19th century.

Evolution and Anthropology

The field of anthropology grew out of a number of areas of inquiry, including linguistics (then called philology), biology, anatomy, geography, and history. These varied disciplines shared a common interest in the character of world's peoples and in perceived contrasts in their physical appearance and levels of social and technological "advancement"—concepts typically subsumed under terms such as "race," "culture," and "civilization."

Anthropology's first forum in Great Britain was the Ethnological Society of London, founded in 1843 as an offshoot of the Quaker-dominated Aborigines' Protection Society. There were similar societies in Paris and New York and an earlier Anthropological Society of London, in existence from 1837 to 1842 as well as a second Anthropological Society established for a short time in the 1860s. For many members of these organizations, the concept of "evolution" provided a unifying theory to explain the differences among peoples—a means by which to place non-Europeans within a single continuum, extending from "simple" to "complex" and "primitive" to "civilized."

Western Concepts of Evolution

Evolution was a concept employed in "natural history" or "natural philosophy" long before the emergence of various branches of science in the 19th century. Many natural philosophers had hypothesized about the nature of plants and animals and their relations to one another. Evolutionary ideas were also current in historical thought and in speculations on the nature of human societies—long, indeed, before Darwin. The very notion of hierarchy and a relationship between "low" and "high" forms was in fact endemic in Western thought, extending back to ancient philosophers and to the theological concepts of the Middle Ages.

Contributions of Natural Philosophers

The medieval notion of a "great chain of being" was a central theme in Western thought, coloring much of the later speculation on the world's order. Enlightenment philosophers added a new level of understanding to the physical world and the interrelationships among its many parts. The French philosopher René Descartes (1596–1650) employed a mechanical model to describe change and variety among plants and animals. Other philosophers, notably Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz (1646–1716) and Johann Gottfried Herder (1744–1803), had a more spiritual concept of evolution. The mid-18th-century writer Pierre Louis Maupertius (1698–1759) took a more "materialist" stance, arguing that changes among species, including humans, were the result of accumulated variations—a concept that anticipated Darwin's central concept of "natural selection."

In the late 18th century, Georges-Louis Leclerc, Comte de Buffon (1707–1788) postulated a unity among species, suggesting that many species had common ancestors. Buffon's ideas expressed in his books *Natural History* (*Histoire naturelle, générale et particulière*, published in 36 volumes between 1749 and 1788) and *Epochs of Nature* (*Les époques de la nature*, 1778) had an important influence on later thinkers, shifting attention away from the notion of divine creation toward a more "scientific" conception of origin and change. The encyclopédiste Denis Diderot (1713–1784) argued as well for the transmutation of species. Jean-Baptiste Lamarck (1744–1829) provided a theory for the mechanism of change, arguing that species passed on acquired characteristics to their offspring. Concurrently, the English philosopher James Burnett, Lord Monboddo (1714–1799), speculated that humans were subject to the same principles and that modern races may well have descended from primates.

Historians and Social Philosophers

Ideas of gradual change and transformation were important not only to "natural philosophers" but to social philosophers as well. The Scottish writers Adam Ferguson (1723–1816), John Millar (1735–1801), and Adam Smith (1723–1790)—all members of the Scottish Enlightenment—suggested that societies went through relatively uniform stages from hunting-and-gathering societies, through pastoralism and nomadism, to agriculture and then commerce. The influential German idealist Georg Wilhelm Friedrich Hegel (1770–1831) also believed that history had an underlying rationality and

directionality. Historical change, in Hegel's view, elevated humankind to higher states of existence. Although Hegel had little direct influence on anthropological thinking, his notions of change, teleology, and progress corresponded to notions of evolution adopted by later anthropologists.

Nineteenth-century writers built on this early work. Among the most important of these was Auguste Comte (1798–1857), now considered to be among the principal founders of the modern discipline of sociology. In his influential work *A General View of Positivism*, first published in 1848 and translated into English in 1865, Comte synthesized his ideas on "social evolution," positing three distinct stages of development—from theological to metaphysical to positive. In Comte's view, the varied beliefs and practices of existing peoples corresponded to one of these stages.

The English writer Herbert Spencer (1820–1903) similarly applied the general idea of "evolution" to human societies. Spencer wrote of evolution as early as the mid-1850s. He later coined the phrase "survival of the fittest" in response to Darwin's concept of "unconscious selection," giving the concept of evolution a more strongly aggressive character than it had in Darwin's writings. Spencer's own ideas of evolution drew as well on those of Jean-Baptiste Lamarck, suggesting that societies changed over time in response to necessity and that the resultant changes passed on to future generations. Although not a leading figure in the new anthropological organizations, Spencer knew many of the anthropologists of his generation and contributed importantly to the emerging anthropological discourse.

Uniformitarian Geology

The concept of "gradual change," as expressed in uniformitarian geology, had an enormous impact on anthropological thought in the mid- to late 19th century. So too did the geological recognition of layers in the earth's crust, each representing distinct epochs in the world's evolution. Geology also provided anthropologists—as did the science of biology—a model for scientific organization and discussion.

Formulated by early Scottish geologists such as James Hutton (1726–1797) and John Playfair (1748–1819), the idea of uniformitarianism was given further prominence in the early 19th century by "practical geologists" such as William Smith (1769–1839). All of these early scientists argued for a "gradualist" understanding of the earth's change and variation, suggesting that earlier "catastrophist" explanations, in large part predicated by biblical teaching, did not adequately account for the variety of rocks and sediments evident from stratigraphic cuts in the earth's surface. The presence of fossilized forms of extinct animals further verified that much longer periods of time had been necessary than those proposed by theologians for the earth's creation and subsequent changes.

The leading figure in the field of geology in the mid-19th century was Charles Lyell (1797–1875). Lyell stressed the importance of understanding development in universal terms, an idea easily grafted onto anthropological thinking of the time. His emphasis on the value of an understanding of stratigraphy as a record of geological change provided a ready metaphor for anthropologists interested in understanding the development of human societies. A close friend of Darwin—and of many anthropologists as well—Lyell expressed sympathy to the idea of "transmutation of species" as early as the 1830s and later expressed strong support for Darwin's *Origin of Species* after its publication in 1859.

Ethnologists and Evolution

The concept of evolution played a key role in the understanding of early "ethnologists"—the predecessors to later anthropologists—especially the leadership of the Ethnological Society of London. The anatomist and "phrenologist" Robert Dunn (1799–1877) saw parallels between the development of human anatomy and social organization, arguing for a single human origin and varied degrees of "improvement" toward civilization among the world's different races. His ideas were explained in his long treatise "Civilisation and Cerebral Development," published in the society's *Transactions* and in other works. Thomas Hodgkin (1798–1866) and Richard King (ca. 1811–1876) also perceived a unity among humans, suggesting that the environment played an important role in humanity's varied appearance and unequal achievements.

James Cowles Prichard (1786–1848), one of the Ethnological Society's founders, developed these arguments further, proposing five-part division of humankind based on physical character and technological and social "advancement." His *Researches*

Into the Physical History of Mankind—first published in two volumes in 1813 and expanded in many subsequent editions—argued that humans transcended their circumstances to move on to higher levels. Prichard's work specifically opposed the theories of the German philosopher Johann Friedrich Blumenbach (1752–1840), who held that each of the world's several races occupied permanent positions. Blumenbach's arguments, in turn, found continuing favor among opposition figures in the new field, including members of the short-lived, breakaway Anthropological Society of London (the second society with this name), founded in 1863.

In his *Natural History of Man*, published in 1843, Prichard argued for the unity of human origins, citing language as an identifying characteristic of human groups. He also utilized his studies of ancient languages to demonstrate specific connects among peoples, suggesting that human varieties were the equivalent of the branches of a single tree. Not exactly an evolutionist position—his concept emphasized historical change and was based on the twin notions of dispersal and migration—it shared with the concept of evolution an emphasis on "gradualness" and "interrelatedness."

Parallels in Archaeology

Probably the closest field to anthropology in the mid-19th century was archaeology. As with anthropologists, archaeologists aspired toward greater scientific acceptance in the mid-19th century and witnessed the creation of numerous new societies.

One of the great contributions of archaeology was the "Three-Age System," a method of classification of artifacts proposed by the Danish antiquarian Christian Jurgensen Thomsen (1788–1865) in the 1830s. Based on collections of tools and weapons, Thomsen placed objects in a sequence of stone, bronze, and iron. Thomsen's system offered a means of dating objects relative to each other and also of assessing the relative level of advancement of peoples both in the past and in the present. Thomsen's system became shorthand for archaeologists and the lay public, allowing for the categorization of peoples based on the types of tools used. Implicit in the Three-Age System was the assumption that peoples could pass from one state to another, like the ancient Europeans, from whom the model was derived.

In Great Britain, the archaeologist John Lubbock (1834–1913) was the first to elaborate on Thomsen's system. In 1865, Lubbock published what scholars have called the most important archaeological book of the 19th century, titled *Pre-Historic Times*. This work not only introduced the concept of "before history" but also suggested important relationships between people in the past and those of the present. As his book's subtitle explained, his work showed how "ancient remains" were illustrated by "the manners and customs of modern savages." Lubbock invented the terms *Paleolithic* and *Neolithic* to further subdivide Thomsen's "Stone Age."

The Impact of Darwin

Charles Darwin (1809–1882) often is credited with originating the concept of evolution for anthropologists of his era. Darwin's explanation for variations among species and, more important, the transmutation of species—meaning a change from one distinct type of plant or animal to another—had a great impact on all thinking people of the time. However, the idea of evolution had multiple sources, as we have seen, and early anthropologists borrowed freely from these when formulating their own theories.

Darwin's most striking new idea was what he saw as the mechanism by which change was effected: This was Darwin's concept of "unconscious selection," in which he argued that species changed as a result of minute adaptations over time due to competition. Darwin's idea represented a distinct advance over other explanations of change, providing a new way of understanding adaptation. Darwin's thesis also opened the door to new ways of interpreting humanity's origins and diversity.

One of Darwin's great collaborators and supporters was the British naturalist and explorer Alfred Wallace (1823–1913). Wallace independently developed a theory to explain the transmutation of species. Unlike Darwin, Wallace stressed environmental pressures on the species as a whole and not on individuals. Wallace also perceived a greater gap between apes and humans than Darwin had implied. Active in anthropological societies of the 1860s, Wallace, in fact, provided a harsh vision of completion among species that in fact gained little acceptance among anthropologists, who still tended toward a more benign understanding of social change than that set out in the vision of either Wallace or Darwin.

Darwin's greatest champion among active anthropologists was Thomas Henry Huxley (1825–1895). In 1863, he anticipated Darwin's later work the *Descent of Man* (1871) with his own publication *Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature*. Huxley was one of the founders of the Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland (later the Royal Anthropological Institute) in 1871. Although he wrestled with many of Darwin's ideas, he eventually accepted the fundamental notion of "gradualism" but remained skeptical of Darwin's central concept of natural selection.

Evolutionist Orthodoxy

The principal advocate for a new theory of "cultural evolution" was the Quaker anthropologist Edward Burnett Tylor (1832–1917). A friend of the archaeologist Henry Christy (1810–1865), Tylor's interest in human variety originated in his 2-year trip to Mexico, an experience that became the basis of his first book *Anahuac: Or Mexico and the Mexicans, Ancient and Modern* (1861). His question in *Anahuac* was whether the ancient Aztecs developed independently or were indebted to other civilizations. His answer was that the native people of the New World evolved separately from the people of Europe and the Middle East and that they did this independently. He repeated this argument in his books *Researches Into the Early History of Mankind and the Development of Civilization* (1865) and *Primitive Culture* (1871).

Tylor's views found wide acceptance within the anthropological community and among the public more generally. His ideas on social and cultural evolution became a liberal orthodoxy, coloring British attitudes toward native peoples and clearly affecting colonial policy in the late 19th century. The idea that humans adapt to circumstances and their environments in a universal manner and that all societies are capable of slow transformation from "primitive" conditions to "civilized" ones became a canon of the new discipline as it came to be defined in Great Britain. Other British anthropologists adhered to a similar theoretical position. These included Augustus Pitt Rivers (1827–1900), the founder of the museum in Oxford still bearing his name, and James George Frazer (1854–1941). Pitt Rivers's collection mirrored Tylor's theories, demonstrating the progress of human technology. Frazer's comparative studies of religion and symbolism similarly adhered to Tylor's essentially "unilineal" evolutionist ideas.

Although Tylor accepted the concept of borrowing or "diffusion" of knowledge, he tended to emphasize processes of independent development. In contrast to this largely British version of anthropology, Continental scientists—typically far more rooted to philology and geography—preferred explanations couched in terms of cultural influences. Often contrasted with "evolutionism," "diffusionism" promoted the idea that there were specific sites of origin for many aspects of culture, downplaying the evolutionist notion of universal responses to similar conditions. Diffusionism had its strongest adherents in Germany and in Scandinavian countries. It later found support in the United States, especially through the influence of the German scholar Franz Boas (1858–1942). Both approaches were not necessarily mutually exclusive. However, the champions of either approach tended to find deep faults with the ideas and suppositions of their rivals. They also distrusted the broader implications of each other's theoretical framework.

One of the last great contributors to the 19th-century idea of "evolution" was the American lawyer and ethnographer Lewis Henry Morgan (1818–1881). Active in the American Association for the Advancement of Science—and the organization's president in 1879—Morgan published widely on the Iroquois nation as well as on geology, stone implements, kinship systems, and various species of animals, notably the beaver. His 1877 work *Ancient Society* contained the most complete explanation of his notion of human evolution through separate distinguishable and—in many ways—universal stages. Morgan's work was well received by his British colleagues and had a profound impact on the writings of Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels (1820–1895) as well.

William Chapman

See also Boas, Franz; Comte, Auguste; Darwin, Charles; Ferguson, Adam; Frazer, James G.; Hegel, Georg W. F.; Lubbock, John; Marx, Karl; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox; Smith, Adam; Spencer, Herbert; Tylor, Edward Burnett; Wallace, Alfred R.

Further Readings

Blackledge, P., & Kirkpatrick, G. (Eds.). (2003). *Historical materialism and social evolution.* London, UK: Palgrave Macmillan.

Brew, J. O. (Ed.). (1972). *One hundred years of anthropology.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Burrow, J. W. (1963). Evolution and anthropology in the 1860's: The anthropological society of London, 1863–71. *Victorian Studies, 7*(2), 137–154.

Chapman, W. (1985). Arranging ethnology: A. H. L. F. Pitt Rivers and the typological tradition. In G. W. Stocking (Ed.), *Objects and others: Essays on museums and material culture* (pp. 15–48). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Goldman, I. (1959). Evolution and anthropology. *Victorian Studies, 3*(1), 55–75.

Greene, J. C. (1961). *Evolution and its impact on Western thought: The death of Adam*. New York, NY: Mentor Books.

Harris, M. (1968). *The rise of anthropological theory: A history of theories of culture*. New York, NY: Thomas Y. Crowell.

Hays, H. R. (1965). *From ape to angel: An informal history of social anthropology.* New York, NY: Alfred A. Knopf.

Johnson, A. W., & Earle, T. (1987). *The evolution of human societies: From foraging group to agrarian state*. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press.

Kuklick, H. (1991). *The savage within: The social history of British anthropology, 1885–1945*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Leopold, J. (1980). *Culture in comparative and evolutionary perspective: E. B. Tylor and the making of primitive culture*. Berlin, Germany: Dietrich Reimer Verlag.

McCalman, I. (2009). *Darwin's Armada: Four voyagers to the southern oceans and their battle for the theory of evolution*. London, UK: Simon & Schuster.

Nisbet, R. A. (1980). *History and the idea of progress* (2nd ed.). Piscataway, NJ: Transaction.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1991). *Victorian anthropology.* New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1995). *After Tylor: British social anthropology 1888–1951*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Ortner, Sherry

Sherry B. Ortner (1941–) has been one of the outstanding contributors to anthropological theory since her debut article in 1972. Her contributions lie in several overlapping areas—culture, gender, and practice theory, as well as issues of class and culture in late capitalism—with an overall concern to develop an approach to practice that integrates history, power, and meaning. Her arguments are developed in several outstanding ethnographic monographs as well as several edited works, but her forte, perhaps, has been the essay. She has an unusual ability to move right to the heart of major theoretical issues and to depict the alternatives and developments with great precision and clarity.

Ortner was trained at Bryn Mawr (BA in 1962) and the University of Chicago, receiving her PhD in 1970 in the heyday of symbolic anthropology, of which Chicago was the center. She has had a distinguished professional career, teaching at Sarah Lawrence, Michigan, and Columbia, among other places, and serving as department chair at both Michigan and Columbia. She is currently Distinguished Professor of Anthropology at University of California, Los Angeles. She has held a MacArthur fellowship and been a recipient of numerous other awards, fellowships, and honorary lectureships.

Ortner has carried out several fieldwork projects among the Sherpas of Nepal, resulting in three theoretically informed and noteworthy ethnographies, on (1) popular religion and the interpretation of rituals, (2) the causes and consequences of the founding of Buddhist monasteries in the early 20th century, and (3) the perceptions of mountaineering expeditions by Sherpa guides and their employers. The latter, *Life and Death on Mount Everest*, won the Staley Prize in 2004. Ortner then turned her attention to the United States, with a project on her former high school graduating cohort on issues of social class, followed by research on the relationship between independent filmmaking and mainstream Hollywood. Between these projects, she also produced a series of important and provocative essays on gender and practice.

Culture, Practice, and Gender

Many of Ortner's ideas emerged through interaction with her teacher Clifford Geertz. Thus, in the early essay "On Key Symbols," her distinction between summarizing and elaborating symbols articulates two approaches to the depiction of culture and to the work that symbolic formations do that expand and develop Geertz's concepts of models of and models for. Her concept of key scenarios has been especially influential and presages her subsequent conceptualizations of serious games and projects. More generally, her work is informed by and elegantly develops what she calls in her 1997 article "The Fate of 'Culture': Geertz and Beyond," a fundamentally Geertzian view of human social life: meaning laden, meaning making, intense, and real.

As a consequence of her participation in feminism (theoretically and lived), and no doubt influenced by the interdisciplinary environment at

Michigan, Ortner took a turn away from a fully Geertzian position by the mid-1980s, as heralded in her incisive stock taking of the field, "Theory in Anthropology Since the Sixties." This remains a tour de force account of the various theoretical positions that characterized a highly creative, transformative, and disputatious period of approximately 2 decades. There is no better short guide to the strengths and weakness of the main theories of the day and the ways in which they challenged, influenced, or ignored each other. The essay also brought together a number of theoretical initiatives under the label "practice" and set out one influential image of the critical features of a practice approach.

Although he pointed the way to a form of practice theory, Geertz famously read practices as though they were cultural texts that could be abstracted from live action. Ortner looked for a more "muscular" and less static approach than the Geertzian interpretive approach, one that could account for power as well as meaning and would examine the interests of (and constraints on) actors engaged in pursuing specific practices, the social consequences of such practices, the conflicts entailed in the process, and, more generally, the ways in which agents can respond to the culture or structures that form them. Following her own specifications, Ortner's subsequent work provided a more fully sustained and historically located account of practice in social life. However, unlike many Marxists and practice theorists, she never ignored the importance of culture, interpretation, or thick description and has carefully addressed "the fate of 'culture'" and the legacy of Geertz, as well as acknowledging the changing conceptualizations of culture.

Thus, Ortner draws on Geertz to understand gender as a "cultural system." The implications are, first, that it is not directly natural and, second, that what women and men do and who they are need to be understood through the particular set of meanings that define gender constructs and polarities in the first place. But she moves beyond this framework to look at what the actions and motivations of specific socially located agents are, a position that would not be antithetical to Geertz's and for which, as she acknowledges, he laid the groundwork. Culture, as Ortner (1997) comes to formulate it, "is not an aesthetic object but the grounds of action and the stakes of action, with real outcomes in the real world and with powerful representations in literature, drama and art" (p. 10). In a later essay, Ortner (2006) distinguishes poststructuralist concerns with delineating subjects or subject positions from a more deeply and culturally informed account of *subjectivities*, which she defines as "complex structures of thought, feeling, and reflection that make social beings always more than the occupants of particular positions and the holders of particular identities" (p. 115).

Among cultural anthropologists, Ortner stands out for her lively interest and evident success in applying the work of the great social theorists (Karl Marx, Max Weber, Émile Durkheim, and Sigmund Freud, as well as more recent figures like Pierre Bourdieu and Raymond Williams). In her case, the key figures have been especially Weber and, subsequently, Marx, albeit the latter at arm's length—influences interestingly tempered by inspiration from Jean-Paul Sartre. In thinking through the deep roots of gender, she briefly addressed Freud and also took a foray into the work of Claude Lévi-Strauss, producing a very important, highly controversial, and largely misunderstood essay, "Is Female to Male as Nature Is to Culture?" The essay was also strongly indebted to Simone de Beauvoir (who may have been something of an intellectual role model). Like de Beauvoir, Ortner stands out by bringing the insights of feminist theory to bear on mainstream "high" theory (and conversely) and hence exhibits in her own practice, as a heavy hitter in a field then dominated largely by men, the relationship of agency to structure.

Although some critics have seen that essay as, in effect, naturalizing gender or acceding to the inevitability of gender hierarchy, that was far from Ortner's point, and indeed the dominant orientation of her work in this respect has been, in a broad sense, Weberian. The 1981 edited book *Sexual Meanings* was precisely about cultural variation in the meaning of gender and sexual difference, and Ortner's own essay offers a deep analysis of the particularities of gender in hierarchical Polynesian societies. In the original "Is Female to Male" article, Ortner bluntly claimed that the secondary status of woman in society was a true universal, a claim that she subsequently partially retracted or at least complicated in interesting ways. She also clarified that conceptualizing gender through a nature/culture opposition could not directly produce inequality. However, in her 1996 volume of essays *Making Gender: The Politics and Erotics of Culture*, she continues to

assert the point that such oppositions, understood (as they must be) at a deep level as existential quandaries rather than as empirical terminologies, generate metaphors that are often asymmetrical.

Agency, Subjectivity, and Class Projects

As *Making Gender* clearly illustrates, Ortner is interested in the complex relations between subject formation and agency, the ways in which human subjects simultaneously find themselves "made" by specific cultural, ideological, or discursive formations and "makers" who can engage their circumstances and resist them. She argues in the introduction for a practice theory that transcends not only the alternatives of structure and agency but also a way of thinking that begins with seeing structure and agency as opposed terms within a dichotomous relationship. Although she does not reference them, in some ways, her articulation of the gendered "games" she sees people playing, with respect to marriage strategies and the like, echoes the work of Bronisław Malinowski and Marcel Mauss on the circulation of value.

Ortner suggested that what she labeled practice theory was not really a theory in the usual sense of the word but rather an argument about how human action and structure dialectically make and unmake each other. She called it a project to conceptualize and represent social life, the latter understood in terms drawn from Sartre with respect to subjectivity and objectivity in unity and constant motion (1996; citing Sartre, 1968, p. 97). For Ortner, as noted, this entails giving a central place to agency. In a relatively late essay, published in 2006, she defends the concept of agency against the critique that it is individualistic, culturally particular, and naive in its explanation of change. She articulates two dimensions of agency, understood as a form of intentionality and the enactment of "projects," often with unanticipated consequences, and understood as a form of power, including acts of empowerment, domination, and resistance. While some theorists might privilege only one of these, she shows that they are inextricably interconnected.

While a book like *High Religion*, which takes up the cultural shape and movement of historical agency, beautifully exemplifies Ortner's theoretical project, by the 1990s, Ortner shifted her gaze from Himalayan Buddhism to the contemporary United States, where her ethnographic projects are remarkably consistent with, shaped by and enhancing, her theoretical vision. These ambitious, brilliantly conceived projects (characterized in each case by exhaustive original fieldwork, carried out by Ortner, not a team of students) provide a two-pronged account of class and the production of culture in the contemporary United States. *New Jersey Dreaming* is about "class" in a double sense—it is an ethnography of her own high school graduating class as a historical cohort, but it is also about class mobility and discourse in the United States. Class in the second sense in Ortner's hands is not merely a sociological variable (or a precise Marxist analytic) but, after Bourdieu, a habitus and, after Sartre, a project. In *Not Hollywood*, she turns to cultural production in the independent film industry to show agentive responses to the disruptions created by decades of neoliberal policy, economic decline, and class polarization experienced by the generation of the middle-class adult children of the New Jersey study. Interestingly, although this is the most directly Marxist of her books, her methodology here includes a return to a Geertzian interpretation of "texts" with respect to the films and the interviews with filmmakers she observed. *Not Hollywood* is a singular intervention that brings together the strengths and insights of cultural studies, understandings of "public culture," and good old-fashioned ethnography to produce a work simultaneously of and on culture critique. If the proof of anthropological theorizing lies in the quality of the social and cultural analysis it generates, and is responsive to, this work, like the Sherpa trilogy, brilliantly validates Ortner's contributions.

Michael Lambek

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Geertz, Clifford; Habitus; Marx, Karl; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Ortner, S. (1972). Is female to male as nature is to culture? *Feminist Studies, 1*(2), 5–31. (Revised and reprinted in *Woman, culture, and society*, pp. 67–87, by M. Rosaldo and L. Lamphere, Eds., 1974, Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press)

———. (1973). On key symbols. *American Anthropologist, 75,* 1338–1346.

———. (1975). Oedipal father, mother's brother, and the penis [Review article on *Psychoanalysis and Feminism* by Juliet Mitchell]. *Feminist Studies, 2*(2/3), 167–182.

———. (1978). *Sherpas through their rituals.* New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.
———. (Ed.) (with Whitehead, H.). (1981). *Sexual meanings: The cultural construction of gender and sexuality.* New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1984). Theory in anthropology since the sixties. *Comparative Studies in Society and History, 26*(1), 126–166.
———. (1989). *High religion: A cultural and political history of Sherpa Buddhism.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
———. (1996). *Making gender: The politics and erotics of culture.* Boston, MA: Beacon Press.
———. (1997). Introduction: The fate of "Culture." Geertz and beyond. *Representations, 59*(Summer), 1–13.
———. (1999). *Life and death on Mount Everest: Sherpas and Himalayan mountaineering.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
———. (2003). *New Jersey dreaming: Capital, culture, and the class of '58.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.
———. (2006). *Anthropology and social theory: Culture, power, and the acting subject.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.
———. (2013). *Not Hollywood: Independent film as cultural critique.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Oxford University

Although an interest in anthropology at Oxford can be traced back to the 1860s, its institutionalization dates from the founding of the Pitt Rivers Museum in 1884. That same year, Edward Tylor, a key figure in 19th-century evolutionary anthropology in Britain, was given a readership, later promoted to a professorship. However, he had little impact on teaching, and it was Robert Ranulph Marett, an evolutionist of a later generation, and Henry Balfour, the first curator of the Pitt Rivers Museum, who dominated social and cultural anthropology in Oxford from the launch of the first postgraduate course in anthropology in 1905 until A. R. Radcliffe-Brown's appointment as professor of social anthropology in 1936. This continued focus on evolutionism ensured that Oxford remained behind the times compared with the London School of Economics, where Bronisław Malinowski's functionalism was attracting the more progressive minds in the discipline.

Oxford anthropology did not start to catch up with other anthropology departments until Radcliffe-Brown arrived. He was a leading structural-functionalist, famous for treating anthropology as the science of society, through which it was possible to discover laws as in the natural sciences (see *Structure and Function in Primitive Society*, 1952). However, anthropology still remained a very small subject, with only seven students in Radcliffe-Brown's year of retirement. His efforts to set up an undergraduate degree in the subject were unsuccessful. It was not until the inclusion of anthropology in the new Human Sciences degree course in 1969 (followed by the launch of the Archaeology and Anthropology programs in 1990) that a degree in anthropology was offered at Oxford.

E. E. Evans-Pritchard, who succeeded Radcliffe-Brown as professor of anthropology at Oxford in 1946, resembled him in acknowledging the influence of the Durkheim school (he also sponsored many translations of its members' works) but differed in seeing anthropology not as a science but as closer to history.

Evans-Pritchard's most famous work, *The Nuer*, published in 1940, is perhaps the archetypal structural-functionalist ethnography, basically a demonstration of the political dynamics of the Nuer's descent and territorial systems. The Nuer, of the Sudan, had no central political authority and were therefore acephalous ("headless"). They did have mediators, in the form of so-called leopard-skin chiefs (really priests), with little actual power beyond the threat of their curses. Much discussed, one main lesson of this study was the way in which social groups are not fixed but take different forms according to the context. Evans-Pritchard also set out to show that, contrary to colonial stereotypes, Nuer feuding was not just senseless violence but had a structure of what he called "ordered anarchy."

Evans-Pritchard also wrote on religion and family and marriage among the Nuer. However, his other major ethnography was on the Azande (*Witchcraft, Oracles and Magic Among the Azande*, 1937) of the borderlands between the Sudan, Uganda, and what is now the Central African Republic. This famous study of witchcraft was again mainly concerned to counter colonial stereotypes, this time by showing that these beliefs were not simply mindless superstition but had a logic to them. Evans-Pritchard also showed that witchcraft is not a substitute for causal explanations of the physical world but explains coincidences, rather like the western notion of luck

(which the Azande lack). This study was therefore also a tacit refutation of the view that primitive peoples have fundamentally different mentalities—more mystical, less logical—from those of civilized humanity, associated with the French philosopher Lucien Lévy-Bruhl. Evans-Pritchard showed that the Azande are no less logical than Westerners, who in their turn are no more logical than the Azande in ordinary life.

Later in his career, Evans-Pritchard wrote extensively on other anthropologists and those he saw as their precursors among philosophers, such as the Scottish Enlightenment thinkers of the late 18th century. His writings can also be read as exemplifying what it means to do fieldwork, at which he was a master, far more so than Radcliffe-Brown. And he started a trend in skepticism of theory and about the limitations of anthropology (e.g., the idea that some topics are best left to the psychologist or theologian), which continued through the later work of both Rodney Needham and Edwin Ardener, two of his successors at Oxford, and in some ways has come to characterize anthropology at Oxford—another departure from the functionalist dogmas of Radcliffe-Brown. This is perhaps best seen in his short *Theories of Primitive Religion*, published in 1965. Under Evans-Pritchard's tenure of the professorship, the anthropology department at Oxford expanded considerably, being given five teaching posts in addition to his professorship and having more than 100 students.

Anthropologists at Oxford have historically had a focus on work in Africa and the subcontinent of Asia. Personally close to Evans-Pritchard was Godfrey Lienhardt, who wrote a renowned phenomenological study of the religion of the Dinka (*Divinity and Experience*, 1961), a neighboring tribe to the Nuer, whom the latter often raided and enslaved. One of Evans-Pritchard's last students, Wendy James, appointed a lecturer in 1972 but now retired, has conducted extensive and long-term work with another Sudanese people, the Uduk. Others who taught anthropology at Oxford under Evans-Pritchard were Meyer Fortes, Max Gluckman, Mary Douglas, Paul Bohannan, John Peristiany, and John Beattie (all Africanists); Peter Lienhardt (the Persian Gulf); M. N. Srinivas, Ravi Jain, Louis Dumont, and David Pocock (all Indianists); Franz Steiner; Rodney Needham; and Edwin Ardener. At the Pitt Rivers Museum at this time were, among others, Audrey Butt and Kenelm Burridge.

On Evans-Pritchard's retirement, the China specialist Maurice Freedman succeeded him for 4 years, an uneventful period for Oxford anthropology both intellectually and institutionally. A year after Freedman's premature death in 1975, Rodney Needham, a structuralist, replaced him as chair of the institute and professor, though after differences with his colleagues, he left the institute and based himself at his college (All Souls). Although he later disagreed with Claude Lévi-Strauss, Needham is especially known for his structuralist analyses, and his imprint on Oxford anthropology has been extensive. Needham worked extensively on kinship from a structuralist point of view, rejecting psychological explanations for kinship systems in *Structure and Sentiment* (1962) and solving many technical issues. He published his own fieldwork on kinship in eastern Indonesia comparatively late in his career. Partly through his work on kinship, he also became interested in classification, a topic he saw as central to anthropology. One of Needham's best known works is *Belief, Language and Experience* (1972), in which he deconstructs the notion of belief as either a cross-cultural category or an inner state. Needham was also active as a translator and editor of obscure but worthy earlier anthropologists. He retired in 1990 and died in 2006.

Three of Needham's students held posts in Oxford from the 1970s (all retired or due to retire as of 2011): Peter Rivière (fieldwork among the Trio in the Amazon), N. J. Allen (fieldwork among the Thulung Rai in Nepal), and R. H. Barnes (fieldwork in Kédang in eastern Indonesia). All can be considered structuralists broadly influenced by Needham, and all have (inter alia) worked on kinship and contributed to the historiography of the subject. Allen has also sought to take further the work of Georges Dumézil on Indo-European comparative mythology.

Another influential figure at Oxford of roughly the same period was Edwin Ardener, whose influence matched Needham's in his lifetime, though they were personally estranged (Ardener died in post in 1987). He did fieldwork in both West Africa and the Hebrides but never took a doctorate. Like Needham, he was interested in problems of classification as well as structuralism. With his students, he began to criticize and deconstruct Claude Lévi-Strauss's ideas, partly with reference to other French intellectual currents of the time. His main approach to classification, unlike Needham's, concerned not its structure

but rather its language and its meanings and how they differ from culture to culture. This led to a brief fashion for "semantic anthropology" at Oxford in the early 1980s. Ardener also pointed to the way in which new categories are created in the very process of classifying. For example, new ethnic, caste, and other labels were often devised by European officials in taking censuses in colonial territories, labels that had not existed before in the indigenous scheme of classification (though they would be adopted later). Thus, there was no boundary between data collection and classification: They were a "simultaneity." Other ideas of his included the template (really a structure) and "event density" (the idea that different periods, or different societies, seem more eventful than others). With his wife, Shirley Ardener, he pioneered the study of women, which, fostered especially by Shirley, has been a consistent feature of Oxford anthropology since about 1970, though institutionally separate from the department. Under Edwin's auspices, the *Journal of the Anthropological Society of Oxford* was founded in 1970.

Needham's three successors as chair from 1990 have been John Davis (fieldwork in Libya and Italy; also promoted the use of computers in anthropology and oversaw the founding of the British Centre for Durkheimian Studies by William Pickering); David Parkin (fieldwork with the Giriama of East Africa), from 1996; and the current holder, David Gellner (fieldwork among the Newar, etc., in Nepal), from 2008. Parkin's tenure saw the launch of the Centre on Migration Policy and Society as a research center for migration studies (directors: first Steven Vertovec, now Michael Keith) and the establishment of medical anthropology, under the custodianship of Elisabeth Hsu, a specialist in traditional Chinese medicine. She was later joined by Stanley Ulijaszek, a specialist in human ecology, whose work is located at the interface of the social and biological aspects of medicine. Parkin's tenure also saw the creation of a second chair, currently held by Harvey Whitehouse, whose work combines the study of religion and cognition. Still more posts (mostly lectureships) have been created under Gellner.

There has also been a revival of biological anthropology under another recently appointed professor, Robin Dunbar, whose "number"—suggesting a limit of around 150 as the number of acquaintances humans can cope with cognitively—has become media famous. Although physical or biological anthropology has been represented at Oxford since becoming a supplementary subject in the Natural Sciences degree course in 1885, its first reader was not appointed until 1927, and it only became a separate department (later institute) in 1976 under Geoffrey Harrison (supported by Vernon Reynolds) and then under Ryk Ward. The untimely death of the latter in 2003 led to a hiatus in its activities until it was revived in 2006.

Another fairly recent development is visual anthropology, started by Marcus Banks (a specialist in India on Jains) in the 1990s. In museum-related studies and material culture, the current specialists are Inge Daniels (Japan); Michael O'Hanlon (Director of the Pitt Rivers Museum and a specialist on New Guinea); Clare Harris (Tibet, art) and Laura Peers (northwest North America, repatriation issues), the latter two having curatorial roles at the Pitt Rivers Museum as well as teaching duties; and Jeremy Coote (Sudan). Their immediate predecessors at the museum were two successive directors, Brian Cranstone (New Guinea) and Schuyler Jones (Nuristan), Donald Tayler (Colombian Amerindians), and Howard Morphy (Australia).

Other permanent and teaching members of staff include Paul Dresch (Yemen, Middle East), Elizabeth Ewart (Lowland South America), Morgan Clarke (Lebanon, Middle East), David Pratten and Ramon Sarró (Africanists), and Robert Parkin (Indian tribes, Poland, and kinship). Roger Goodman (Japan), Laura Rival (Lowland South America, development), Mohammad Talib (Islamic societies), Fernanda Pirie (anthropology of law), and Sondra Hausner (Nepal) are anthropologists with permanent posts in other departments but having close connections with the institute. At the time of writing (2011), anthropology at Oxford has around 200 graduate students in a typical year (twice as many as in Evans-Pritchard's day), split roughly equally between taught master's degrees and doctorates, plus around 50 undergraduates.

Robert Parkin

See also Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Needham, Rodney; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.

Further Reading

Rivière, P. (Ed.). (2007). *A history of Oxford anthropology.* New York, NY: Berghahn.

Parsons, Elsie C.

Elsie Clews Parsons (1974–1941) was a prominent American feminist, sociologist, anthropologist, and folklorist. She first specialized in critiques of gender and family life in Western society but later focused on Pueblo Indian, Zapotec Indian, and Afro-Caribbean culture. She was central to the development of American anthropology in the interwar period, serving as president of the American Folklore Society (1918–1920), the American Ethnological Society (1923–1925), and the American Anthropological Association (1940–1941). She underwrote the *Journal of American Folklore*, serving for many years as its assistant editor. Today, she is not only known as a pioneering feminist anthropologist but is also known for the intrusiveness of her research among the Pueblo peoples of the American Southwest.

Early Life

Born in 1874 into a prominent New York family, Elsie Worthington Clews rebelled against the restrictions of her gender and social class at an early age. As an undergraduate at the newly established Barnard College, Elsie found in sociology the basis for a critique of the cultural beliefs underlying women's subordination. Within 3 years of receiving her BA (in 1896), she obtained an MA in sociology and a PhD in education from Columbia University. In 1900, she married Herbert Parsons, a lawyer and fellow social reformer, and 2 years later, she became a lecturer in sociology at Barnard, teaching on the organization of the family. She gave up the position in 1905 when Herbert was elected as a Republican Congressman, and the family moved to Washington, D.C. There, she completed a controversial textbook, *The Family: An Ethnographical and Historical Outline* (1906), the first of six books that employed comparative ethnological material to critique contemporary social classifications based on sex, age, race, and nationality.

In 1910, Parsons made a visit to the American Southwest that turned her interest toward anthropology. Like many nonconformists of her generation, Parsons found a sense of new possibilities in the Southwest. While seemingly a radical departure from her sociological work, Parsons' new interest in Pueblo Indian culture stemmed from her interest in discovering alternative ways of organizing gender relations and family life.

Ethnographic Research in the Southwest

On returning to the east, Parsons soon moved back to New York, where she immersed herself in the ethnological literature on the Southwest and acquainted herself with both the Native American collections and the curators of the American Museum of Natural History. Among the curators were Pliny Goddard and Robert Lowie, who introduced her to the empiricism of Franz Boas. She soon came into contact with Boas himself and with Alfred Kroeber—both of whom became close friends and colleagues. In 1915, after two additional short trips to the Southwest, Parsons plunged into fieldwork in Zuni, presenting a paper titled "Zuñi Pregnancy and Conception Beliefs" that same year. The following

year, she published the first half dozen of some 90 professional articles on the Pueblos and her last sociological book, *Social Rule: A Study of the Will to Power*. The book concluded that science offers an escape from the restrictions and intolerance of conventional social classifications.

Between 1916 and 1932, Parsons made brief field trips to most of the Western and Rio Grande Pueblos. While at Zuni, she stayed at the home of Margaret Lewis, as did Kroeber before her. Mrs. Lewis, a Cherokee, originally came to Zuni as a schoolteacher; she was married to a prominent Zuni man, who served as governor of the *pueblo* from 1912 to 1917. Much of Parsons's understanding of the Zunis was mediated through Margaret Lewis, who was paid for her assistance. Parsons' *Notes on Zuñi* (1917) includes a diary of events that Parsons solicited from Lewis, and her magnum opus, *Pueblo Indian Religion* (1936), contains materials from Lewis, a Hopi Tewa man named Crow-wing, and Alexander M. Stephen, a Scotsman who married a Hopi and lived in his wife's village in the early 1880s. Parsons is now recognized as an innovator in the use of personal documents in ethnographic accounts.

Parsons's lifelong interest in the relationship between cultural conventions and individual experiences, together with her desire to influence public opinion, led to a second innovation in ethnographic form: a 1919 fictional biography, "Waiyautitsa," that traces the life of a typical Zuni woman from cradleboard to grave. After its publication, Parsons persuaded Boas, Kroeber, Lowie, Leslie Spier, Paul Radin, Edward Sapir, and other anthropologists to write similar fictional pieces, which she gathered, together with a revised "Waiyautitsa," into a popular collection, *American Indian Life* (1922), lavishly illustrated by her friend Grant LaFarge. In the introduction to the collection, Parsons identifies herself as a "Member of the Hopi Tribe," basing this designation on the formal hair-washing and name-bestowing ceremony given her by a Hopi host in the hope that clan membership would mitigate others' opposition to her presence. By all accounts, the adoption meant a lot to Parsons, although she, like her host, thought of the ceremony instrumentally, hoping that it would help her obtain entrance to ceremonies closed to non-Hopis. Perhaps, she used her adoption in an equally instrumental way in *American Indian Life*, seeking to appeal to an audience that, as she wrote in her preface, usually got their ideas about Indians from romantic novels.

Partly because of restrictions on her movements and observations, partly because of her concern for individual expression and variation, and partly because of her thoroughgoing empiricism, Parsons' ethnographic studies are polyphonic and situated, meshing together her own observations, those of other scholars, and native texts (in English); generalizations, speculations, and examples of individual deviations from custom; and assessments of both informants' accuracy and the limitations of her own knowledge. As a comparative survey and summation of a life's work, *Pueblo Indian Religion* is inevitably couched in a more impersonal and authoritative voice than many of Parsons's other writings. Even here, however, she is by no means an invisible or omniscient narrator. She draws widely on the work of others, makes frequent use of anecdotes, admits the incompleteness of her knowledge, and ties her own material to particular informants, indicating through the latter practice that even this broad-sweeping synthesis is dependent on a research method that typically relied, in each town, on one or two key informants—often, like Margaret Lewis and Crow-wing, an outsider of some kind.

In contrast to the Western Pueblos, where she lived in the Zuni governor's house and was adopted into a Hopi clan, Parsons's research in the more secretive Rio Grande Pueblos was generally clandestine. She would typically interview single informants outside the *pueblo*, employing an interpreter related to the informant and paying both to reveal sensitive or privileged religious knowledge or objects. Parsons was aware of the questionable ethics of this research method and its potential for personal and social devastation. She knew that trespassing in the area of shrines, except by those ritually empowered to do so, was an act of desecration and that religious ceremonies lost their power if revealed. Her informants told her that they would be jailed or killed for revealing privileged knowledge, that they feared bringing illness or a difficult pregnancy on themselves, or that they felt compelled to confess their betrayal before dying.

At Taos, Jemez, San Juan, and elsewhere, the publication of Parsons's monographs prompted animosity toward and reprisals against those believed to have betrayed their people. Trying to prevent this—and viewing her work as primarily for the consumption of other anthropologists—Parsons

attempted to conceal the identity of many of her informants in publications and to keep all her works from being distributed outside the scholarly circles in the Southwest. While she voiced regret over the consequences of the dissemination of her manuscripts in the *pueblos*—particularly at Taos, where her friends Tony and Mabel Dodge Luhan were targets of hostility—she continued to justify her scholarship in terms of her scientific commitment to documenting a way of life that she thought was disintegrating—a belief she shared with Boas and other members of his circle. In the end, Parsons's research method—which was adopted by her protégé Leslie White and others—exacerbated factionalism among the Pueblos, reinforced secrecy, and increased suspicion of anthropologists and other outsiders. Parsons's sense of Western science's entitlement to Pueblo religious knowledge continues to this day to cast a shadow on her oeuvre on the Pueblos.

As exploitative as were her relationships with many of her informants, Parsons was dedicated to egalitarian collaboration among scholars. In 1918, soon after initiating her own research in the Southwest, Parsons founded the Southwest Society, an organization that until her death in 1941 supported and coordinated ethnological fieldwork and the publication of research results—including dozens of volumes with expensive color plates. Under the auspices of the Southwest Society, Parsons supported the work of Boas, White, Ruth Benedict, Ruth Bunzel, and Esther Goldfrank on the Pueblos and that of Gladys Reichard, Ruth Underhill, Berard Haile, and Morris Opler among other Southwestern peoples. Outside the Southwest, Parsons was a strong supporter of the work of Melville Herskovits.

On at least two occasions, Parsons's social and institutional prominence allowed her to be of genuine service to the Pueblos. When the U.S. Senate's passage of the Bursum Bill in 1922 threatened Pueblo land tenure and water rights, Parsons contacted friends in Congress and the press; organized resolutions on behalf of the Pueblos from the Peabody Museum, the American Ethnological Society, and the American Anthropological Association; helped form the Eastern Association of Indian Affairs, a non-Indian advocacy group; and organized publicity for a Pueblo delegation to Washington. When this threat passed, Parsons turned her attention to opposing an executive order of Indian Commissioner Charles H. Burke that prohibited summer religious ceremonies in the *pueblos* on the grounds that they took up time better spent in agricultural labor. The opposition to Burke, like that to Bursum, was successful and ultimately led to the appointment of John Collier, a reformer active in both struggles, to head the Bureau of Indian Affairs under Franklin Roosevelt. Nevertheless, at the time she wrote *Pueblo Indian Religion*, Parsons was convinced that Pueblo religious life was not only changing but disintegrating under the twin assaults of Protestantism and capitalism. She advocated urgent research efforts on that basis—without, however, acknowledging that intense research by outsiders might, in fact, actively contribute to religious disintegration through heightening factionalism and secrecy. Fortunately, Parsons and her contemporaries have been proven wrong in their estimation that the Pueblos and their ceremonial life would soon become extinct. There has been a renaissance in Pueblo religion that has included both a revitalization of ceremonial life and a renewed control over sacred knowledge, sites, and objects.

Research in Mexico and the Caribbean

While Parsons's research among the Pueblos was the most sustained, stretching across her entire career as an anthropologist, she also completed significant folkloristic research on Afro-Caribbean culture as well as extensive field research in Mexico. Her acclaimed 1936 ethnography, *Mitla: Town of the Souls*, is an acculturation study of the Zapotecs of Oaxaca, which grew out of her interest in the Spanish influence on the Pueblos. Based on three seasons of intensive field research in Mitla, it stands with Robert Redfield's *Tepotzlan* as an important ethnography of her time. *Mitla* pioneered the use of modernist techniques in ethnographic writing and also called attention to similarities in the indigenous cultures of Mexico and the American Southwest.

Pauline Turner Strong

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Herskovits, Melville; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lowie, Robert; Radin, Paul; Redfield, Robert; Sapir, Edward; White, Leslie

Further Readings

Deacon, D. (1997). *Elsie Clews Parsons: Inventing modern life*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Hare, P. (1985). *A woman's quest for science: Portrait of anthropologist Elsie Clews Parsons*. Buffalo, NY: Prometheus Books.

Lamphere, L. (1989). Feminist anthropology: The legacy of Elsie Clews Parsons. *American Ethnologist, 16,* 518–533.

Parsons, E. C. (1991). *Pueblo mothers and children: Essays by Elsie Clews Parsons, 1915–1924* (with an introduction by B. A. Babcock, Ed.). Santa Fe, NM: Ancient City Press.

———. (1994). *Tewa tales* (with a new foreword by B. A. Babcock). Tucson: University of Arizona Press. (Reprinted from *Memoirs of the American Folklore Society, 19,* 1926)

———. (1996). *Pueblo Indian religion* (2 vols.; reprinted with new introductions by P. T. Strong & R. A. Gutierrez). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1992). Ideas and institutions in American anthropology: Thoughts toward a history of the interwar years. In *The ethnographer's magic and other essays*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Zumwalt, R. L. (1992). *Wealth and rebellion: Elsie Clews Parsons, anthropologist and folklorist*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Parsons, Talcott

Talcott Parsons (1902–1979) is the preeminent American theorist in sociology and, worldwide, the most important sociologist of the mid-20th century. His work mediates between the contributions of late-19th-century and early-20th-century figures, such as Max Weber, Émile Durkheim, and George Herbert Mead, and the more specialized writings of recent sociologists. Parsons's "general theory of action," developed over 50 years, was designed to be universal, applicable to all aspects of human conduct in all times and places. Parsons's theory evolved through several distinct phases, with its central ideas gaining increasingly abstract, analytical, generalized, and yet carefully qualified formulation.

Background and Career

Parsons was raised in a Congregationalist family that maintained a New England ethic of, in Max Weber's phrase, inner-worldly asceticism. At Amherst College, he studied institutional economics, Darwinian biology, and Kantian philosophy. He then spent his first year of graduate study at the London School of Economics, where Bronisław Malinowski's seminar in anthropology was his outstanding intellectual experience. In that seminar, he became friendly with three fellow students who later became major figures in the development of the British school of social anthropology, E. E. Evans-Pritchard, Meyer Fortes, and Raymond Firth. Parsons later kept in intermittent touch with them, read their major works, and tracked the progress of their thought. In the following year, Parsons studied at the University of Heidelberg, where he was inspired, as he later wrote, by the "ghost" of Max Weber. Weber had died several years earlier, but his thought still influenced teaching at the university. Parsons found in *The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism* a striking analysis of the religious ethic of his own upbringing. That analysis led him to Weber's comparative studies of ancient and non-Western civilizations, then the methodological essays, and, further, the study of Neo-Kantian thought. Parsons later completed his doctorate at Heidelberg with a dissertation on the conception of modern capitalism in the works of Weber and other German economic historians. With his dissertation drafted in 1927, he became an instructor in economics at Harvard University. With the founding of the Department of Sociology at Harvard in 1930, he transferred to it. Promotions came slowly due to opposition from the new department chair, Pitirim Sorokin, but by the end of World War II, Parsons had become professor and succeeded Sorokin as chair.

In the postwar years, Parsons collaborated with the anthropologist Clyde Kluckhohn, the social psychologist Gordon Allport, and the clinical psychologist Henry A. Murray in founding the interdisciplinary Department of Social Relations. He served as its first chair and taught both graduates and undergraduates. In 1969, the Department of Social Relations was dissolved, despite Parsons's opposition, and sociology again became an autonomous department. Parsons retired in 1973, but he retained an office, continued to write, and taught at other universities.

Parsons's seminars on "Topics in the Theory of Social Systems" were famous as forums in which he worked out new ideas and engaged graduate students in developing theory. His teaching for undergraduates was generally too demanding to be popular, yet his lectures gave students a sense of being brought directly to the frontiers of sociological theory. His graduate students included the sociologists Robert K. Merton, Bernard Barber, Marion Levy, Harold Garfinkel, Robert N. Bellah,

Renee C. Fox, Neil J. Smelser, Mark Gould, and Mounira Charrad. His teaching was influential with a number of anthropologists who later became prominent, including David Aberle, David M. Schneider, Clifford Geertz, and Terence Turner. During the late 1940s and through the 1950s, Kluckhohn, emphasizing culture and values and as a leading proponent of "cultural anthropology," was the most influential teacher of anthropology at Harvard. Although he did not oppose Kluckhohn, Parsons's teaching drew on the contributions of the British "social anthropologists" along with the works of Durkheim and Weber. His balanced stress on both cultural and social factors contributed to the education of students in anthropology as well as, more famously, sociology. Geertz's writings come closest to representing his perspectives on anthropology.

Conceptual Development

On arrival at Harvard, Parsons was a promising young scholar of German historical economics, especially Weber. He soon broadened the range of figures he studied to include Alfred Marshall, Vilfredo Pareto, and Durkheim. He also embraced an emerging Harvard school of scientific methodology, especially the writings of the philosopher Alfred North Whitehead and the physiologist Lawrence J. Henderson, which emphasized frames of reference or conceptual schemes as essential to the initial phases of research.

Parsons's first book, *The Structure of Social Action* (1937), argued that Marshall, Pareto, Durkheim, and Weber had "converged" in emphasizing certain elements common to all human social action. Parsons proposed that ends, means, norms, conditions, and, in some formulations, effort are universals of social action. Meaningful social action is not possible unless one or more instance of each element is involved. He also proposed that every instance of human conduct may be understood as combining these basic elements. The set of elements constitutes a frame of reference for guiding the analysis of human social action in any and all situations. A study that fails to attend to each element is faulty by logical and empirical standards. Parsons criticized utilitarian and behaviorist theories for not attending to norms and idealist theories for focusing on ends and norms but underemphasizing conditions and means. These arguments about the foundations of social theory were supported by probing analyses of the works, empirical as well as theoretical, of his four predecessors—Weber, Durkheim, Marshall, and Pareto.

For Parsons, the conceptual scheme of *The Structure of Social Action* was foundational, but only a beginning. Within a couple of years, he had drafted a monograph, *Actor, Situation and Normative Pattern*, that extended his conceptual scheme to address relations among actors, social systems, system functions, motivational aspects of individual actors, and processes of social control. He used the monograph in teaching but withheld its ideas from publication until he could present them in less rudimentary form.

In 1951, in *The Social System*, Parsons shifted his central concept from the unit act, composed of ends, means, norms, and conditions, to social systems—systems of social interaction and social relationships. He also related social systems to cultural and personality systems, arguing that the three systems are integrated with one another by shared normative content. Normative orders take on moral authority from the cultural patterns that give them meaning, are institutionalized as structures of social systems, and, internalized in the superegos of personalities, regulate the motivational dispositions of individuals. Key chapters of *The Social System* explored the socialization processes by which individual personalities internalize the normative patterns of environing social systems and the processes of social control by which social actors, using positive and negative sanctions, informal and formal, require one another to act in accord with shared normative standards. A chapter on medical practice illustrated the processes of social control, analyzing the ways ill persons are expected to adopt the sick role, with its exemptions from everyday duties, and then the dynamics of physician-patient relationships.

The frame of reference centering on social relationships raised the question of how social systems are sustained over time. *The Social System* emphasized two functions: (1) resource allocation enabling actors to gain the means (e.g., tools, skilled personnel, and financing) to attain role-specific ends and (2) social integration involving the mechanisms of social control. Large social systems require formal mechanisms to fulfill these functions: economic markets for resource allocation and legal institutions for social integration.

In the following years, Parsons replaced this rudimentary account of functions with the "four-function paradigm." Unlike all earlier formulations in the history of the social sciences, the four functions are not an ad hoc list of functional requisites but rather an *analysis* of the concept of action system into four general aspects. The key insight is that any and all action systems can be analyzed in terms of the same four coordinate dimensions. This approach creates efficiencies in generalizing about how the operations serving each function are organized across empirical settings.

The four functions are as follows:

- *Pattern maintenance:* the processes of developing attachment to the basic principles, especially values, that distinguish a system from its environment. In societies, institutions of family, education, and religion serve this function, promoting socialization in a broad sense.
- *Integration:* the processes of reciprocal adjustment among a system's units to promote their interdependence. In societies, institutions, including civil and criminal law, community, and strata formation, serve this function by strengthening solidarity and social control.
- *Goal attainment:* the processes of aligning a system's relations with its environments in terms of shared ends. In societies, political institutions serve this function in setting collective ends and mobilizing resources for achieving them.
- *Adaptation:* the processes of developing and allocating resources to gain generalized control over the environment. In societies, institutions of economic production and market exchange serve adaptation.

A key application of the four-function paradigm is Parsons's theory of four functionally specialized subsystems of society. Its outlines emerged in the mid-1950s, but it was refined throughout the 1960s and 1970s. Late formulations identified the following subsystems: the economy for adaptation, the polity for goal attainment, the societal community for integration, and the fiduciary system for pattern maintenance.

In developing the idea of societal subsystems, Parsons started by integrating a sociological analysis of economic institutions with Keynesian theory in economics. The conception of the polity emerged through critiques of scholarship on power and authority, and on electoral, administrative, and executive institutions. These parts of the theory of societal subsystems progressed rapidly, yielding insightful essays on specific institutional complexes. The work on the integrative and pattern maintenance subsystems progressed more slowly, because the salient literatures were less highly codified. Parsons's writings on the fiduciary system brought together research on religion, family, socialization processes, and educational institutions. His conception of the societal community utilized research on reference groups, interpersonal influence, status systems, social classes, ethnicity, and legal institutions. The resulting formulations are less satisfactorily unified yet richly suggestive.

Parsons's theorizing on societal subsystems yielded insights into their complexity in modern societies: Every subsystem involves many differentiated and segmented institutions, its institutions are maintained over time and space by mechanisms of social control specialized to their functions, it meets functional needs and adjusts to changing conditions through functionally specialized dynamic processes, and it has processes of change facilitating long-term growth. Parsons crystallized these ideas in hypothesizing that each societal subsystem exchanges resources with each of the other subsystems to obtain means for its own operations. This idea originated in economists' treatment of the "circular flow" between business firms and households, which Parsons treated as exchanges between economic and fiduciary institutions. Parsons's conception of intersystem exchanges presents the four subsystems of society as operationally independent of one another yet dynamically interdependent through six complex exchanges.

Noting that processes within the economy and across its boundaries are mediated by money, Parsons identified additional "symbolic media" that mediate the internal and boundary operations of the other three subsystems of society. He designated political power as the symbolic medium of political processes, influence as the medium of the societal community, and value commitments as the medium of the fiduciary system. The conception of symbolic media and their regulation of societal dynamics is among Parsons's most fruitful ideas, although critics have identified problems with particular formulations.

In the 1970s, Parsons extended the four-function analysis to the relationships among cultural, social, personality, and behavioral systems. In his last major theoretical innovation, he proposed a still more comprehensive theory of the "human condition." It placed action systems, treated as integrative, including their cultural, social, personality, and behavioral aspects, in context with physical-chemical (adaptive) and biological (goal-attaining) systems as well as the transcendental potentialities for meaningful life (pattern maintaining).

Besides his contributions to general theory, Parsons wrote more than 100 essays on specific empirical problems. Their topics include the rise of Nazism, American family and kinship, the professions, social stratification, McCarthyism in the 1950s, economic and political modernization, sources of order in international relations, ethnicity, institutions of higher education, and American religious culture and values. Many of his essays became famous for their originality and empirical insight. Most of them applied, at least implicitly, the theoretical ideas that Parsons was exploring when he wrote them.

Conclusion

Parsons developed a complex theory that requires extensive study to comprehend. As few social scientists have invested the effort to master his theory, his work has long been criticized based on misinterpretation. One widespread misunderstanding is that Parsons's thought was rooted in conservative ideology; Parsons was an avowed and consistent liberal. Another misunderstanding is that Parsons was committed to static theory and had no interest in tension, conflict, and change; social stress and change were major concerns throughout his career.

Parsons is often called a grand theorist who advocated a closed system. He was a pragmatist with keen analytical abilities, who refined basic and general ideas in step-by-step fashion and explored their implications across many empirical domains. He was a persistent critic of his own thought, confident of his ability to improve on previous formulations. Perhaps his enduring legacy is a belief in the possibilities of progressive refinement of general ideas in the social sciences.

Major studies and significant collections of essays devoted to Parsons's work continue to be published. Most sociological theorists now agree with Jürgen Habermas that contemporary theory across the social sciences cannot be grasped without an understanding of Parsons's contributions.

Victor Lidz

See also Durkheim, Émile; Geertz, Clifford; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Neo-Kantianism; Schneider, David M.; Structural Functionalism; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Bourricaud, F. (1981). *The sociology of Talcott Parsons*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Fox, R. C., Lidz, V. M., & Bershady, H. J. (Eds.). (2005). *After Parsons: A theory of social action for the twenty-first century*. New York, NY: Russell Sage Foundation.

Gerhardt, U. (Ed.). (1993). *Talcott Parsons on national socialism*. New York, NY: Aldine de Gruyter.

Habermas, J. (1987). *The theory of communicative action: Vol. 2. Lifeworld and system: A critique of functionalist reason*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press.

Lidz, V. (2011). Talcott Parsons. In G. Ritzer & J. Stepnisky (Eds.), *The Wiley-Blackwell companion to major social theorists: Vol. I. Classical social theorists*. Oxford, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.

Parsons, T. (1937). *The structure of social action*. New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

———. (1951). *The social system*. New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1969). *Politics and social structure*. New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1978). *Social systems and the evolution of action theory*. New York, NY: Free Press.

Parsons, T., & Platt, G. M. (1973). *The American university*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Parsons, T., & Smelser, N. J. (1956). *Economy and society.* New York, NY: Free Press.

PHENOMENOLOGY

Phenomenology centers on embodied experience of the phenomenal world. It resists both the realist claim for the priority of things, which results in objectivity, and the idealist claim for the priority of thoughts, which results in subjectivity. The term *phenomenology* was coined by Edmund Husserl, though he himself never escaped his idealist roots. His most famous pupil, Martin Heidegger, did.

Taking up the problem of "Being" from Husserl, Heidegger loosened it from its anchorage in the idealist-rationalist-intellectualist tradition without re-anchoring it in the realist-materialist-empiricist tradition, making him the first philosopher in 2,000 years to propose such an original solution to the mind/body problem.

Both philosophical traditions regarded the body as a sort of solid object, separating it in the idealist tradition from the ethereal subject mysteriously infused into it and reducing it in the realist tradition to a collection of material processes. The mind/body problem is the result of this dismantling of the person into subject and object. Heidegger solved it by finding the third term: *Dasein*, being there, to be there, being *the* there or *the* here, or *its* there or here. Neither consciousness, the personal *I*, nor the being of objects, *Dasein*, is the clearing in which things show up for us, which Heidegger calls being-in-the-world, or existence. Maurice Merleau-Ponty takes this way of being as the body "intervolved" in its environment. Following Heidegger, Merleau-Ponty proposed starting neither from the reality of objects, as the realists do, nor from the primacy of ideas, following the idealists, but from embodiment. From here/there, not only does the body never reduce itself to the paradigm of a physical object but also it resists etherealization into an idea. Materialization and etherealization are equally moves away from embodiment. Neither is the body's fundamental way of being; each is one of a spectrum of possibilities of embodiment. The social sciences in general, and anthropology in particular, hover between the clarities of the sciences, whose clout they envy, and the creativity of the humanities, whose insights they crave. Phenomenology offers the field a third prospect, one that takes the body as its point of departure, not the mind. By recentering phenomena on the body, phenomenology makes anthropology humanistic without making it subjective.

I am embodied in a world on whose spaces and objects I leave a trace. It is the material form of these traces that first discloses to the anthropological perceiver the particular style of being of the others who inhabit the world. But my reach for the world through the body is not evident only in material traces. It is also evident in embodied interactions. The acts of the other are not mysterious gesticulations that I must undertake to decipher. Rather, I find myself, without reflection, partially colonized by the intentionality of the other. The other's acts pull the world into the meaning it has for him or her, and pull my body along with it. I inhabit the other's significance. Our joint participation in the meaning of the world is what Merleau-Ponty calls "intercorporeity." Because intercorporeity is the ground of being, anthropology's engagement with the social world grasps being at its root. Phenomenology, like anthropology, begins from the insertion of the body in a world of objects and others. From this point of insertion, my body projects itself outward temporally as well as spatially, backward in memory, forward in anticipation, and sideward in imagination. Reckoning time from the body makes time temporality, human time. The body haunts the perceptual world. Phenomenology opens out into anthropology in the four domains delineated here: spatiality, intentionality, sociality, and temporality.

Spatiality

To begin at the edge, my world is not an outside I find my body *in*. The world and the body are codiscoveries at which I arrive through perception. Things open up at once around me and within me as, on the one hand, phenomena and, on the other, sensation. The two are indiscrete, hence Merleau-Ponty's curious phrase "the flesh of the world," which captures the thickness of being to which I and things belong. Landscape solicits the body. Insofar as I respond to its solicitations, I am enfolded in the contours of the world; insofar as I resist its solicitations, the landscape lays itself out before me, and I perceive myself over and against it. My participation, which Heidegger calls spatial *ec-stasis*, is the body's capacity to stand out from itself and be elided into things; my resistance produces both subjectivity, my capacity to separate myself from what I was once absorbed in, and objectivity, my capacity to treat the phenomenal world as an array of objects set before me. Phenomenological archaeology moves between the body in thrall to its surround and the body turned back toward its surround as if from elsewhere.

If the way the body takes hold of the landscape leaves a trace, then the trace solicits other perceivers to take hold of the landscape in the same way, to trace the trace, revealing corporeally something of the meaning its makers have made of it. Embodied encounters with objects and spaces snug perceivers

into the postures, gestures, and apprehensions of the bodies who have handled it before. My bodyscape complements the landscape. I orient to place even as I am oriented by it via my "somatic modes of attention," in Thomas Csordas's evocative phrase. It is this pull of spaces and objects on the body that archaeologists intercept in their embodied encounters with cultural ecologies. Shaping matter to meaning makes space into place. Through this interplay, my body gets attuned to my place, and I become native to it. The intervolvement of the body and space creates Pierre Bourdieu's "habitus."

Intentionality

Neither is my body an object, nor is it set over against objects as a subject. I and things are looped together in what Merleau-Ponty calls an "intentional arc." When I am unreflectively engaged in my projects, my body partakes of things via motor intentionality. Motor intentionality is the body's tacit anticipatory appreciation of its surround before as well as while it moves into it. I do not think and then act. Motor intentionality precedes any possibility of acting. Insofar as I am absorbed in courses of action, my body disappears from awareness. As Hubert Dreyfus puts it in his lectures on phenomenology, for the body, floors solicit walking, doorknobs solicit turning, and musical instruments solicit playing before I walk, turn, or play, respectively, or even think of doing so. These things come into being for me in perception, which absorbs me into them or them into me without my thinking about them consciously. By contrast, if my walking, turning, or playing is obstructed—I slip on the floor, or the knob won't turn, or I play the wrong note—I shift to "representational intentionality" and think about walking, turning, or playing as a conscious project. I have to take hold of the thing or of my body on purpose. When I do, others and things, including my own body, seal themselves up as objects, as if they were outside me, as if they preceded my engagement with them. But they only count for me because they engage my intentionality. I act toward them. It is because intentionality is not concealed in the body that anthropologists have the prospect of perceiving how other people inhabit their worlds.

The body is sutured to the world by the senses. The infant arrives synesthetic and learns over the course of its development to separate its sensuous experience into different senses, each of which conjures up its own reality: the rarefied, shifting, impalpable world of smell; the solidified, palpable, obtrusive world of touch; the light, colored, voluminous visual world; the tangible, textured, flavored world of taste; and the layered, modulating, episodic auditory world. These disparate perceptual modalities come together in things and are not perceptions *of* things but ways of being in the world. My appreciation of the world is intersensorial. Because the senses are learned, they can be culturally constructed. Intersensorial perceptions are ways of being that I share with my consociates. David Howes has inaugurated inquiry into this field as the anthropology of the senses. The consequence of the cultural shaping of sensory experience is that any body's *lebenswelt*, its lifeworld, is culturally textured. Because of their disciplinary commitment to being present to acts and others, anthropologists have access to the luminous moments when things make sense.

Sociality

The world is not an arrangement of objects but a configuration of meaning. When I step into the other's configuration, my world reorients itself around his or her body, re-polarizing my perceptual field. Things, as Merleau-Ponty puts it, are pulled into the vortex of the other's configuration of meaning. Because the other's intentionality is not concealed within his or her body, it becomes perceptible in the shape of the body and the shape of the environment. This is not to say that I might decipher the other's body as a clue to his or her subjectivity but to acknowledge that I feel the pull of the other's perceptual hold on what was hitherto my world. The other person's body is the vehicle of his or her form of behavior. So the other's body does not appear to me as an object but as "the eloquent relic of an existence" that is not my own. I perceive in the other's body a prolongation of my own ways of handling objects, others, and acts. I and the other are enmeshed in being in the world. It is not that I cannot overcome my estrangement from other subjects but that I cannot disentangle myself from our copresence in the world.

This perceived copresence is neither a sort of mind reading nor a mode of empathy, which is why in his later work, Merleau-Ponty switches from calling it "intersubjectivity" to calling it

"intercorporeity." I can turn my attention to my own body as an object just as I can turn my attention to the body of the other as an object. If I do so, not only does the other's subjectivity seem to disappear behind the opacity of his or her body, but also, instead of being transparent to my project, my own body obtrudes itself on my awareness as an object. In a single gesture, I have made myself what Merleau-Ponty calls the "transcendental Ego," and turned the world, the other, and the body into objects of my consciousness. I am under the illusion that nobody else is there. Objectivity and subjectivity are both inflections of the intercorporeity out of which they come forth and into which they fall back when, after consciously attending to my being in the world, I return to acting in it. Thus, solipsism is not a fate; it is an accomplishment. To warrant its own project, anthropology need not be committed either to objectivity or to subjectivity but to intercorporeity.

Temporality

Like the spatial horizons of the *here*, the temporal horizons of the *now* open up around me. As I turn an object over in my hand, the object is not deprived of the part of it I have just seen or of the part of it I am yet to see. This is, to take up Heidegger's term again, temporal *ec-stasis*, the way the body extends itself from its present into its past and its future. Each present collects up its past, which has collected up its past ad infinitum. But this is also true of the future, which exerts the same pull on the present that the past does. Each act, each thought, projects a future into which it will mold itself as if it already awaited my project. Each of these temporal pulls deforms the other, so that the present loops through the past and the future, like a Möbius strip. Temporality transforms space by bringing to bear on my experience of both the past it no longer materializes and the future it only promises.

Time fringes the body, so that its past experience is present to it in acts of memory. A memory that arises unbidden announces the bearing of the past on the present through the body. The effect of this is that the past and the present, like the body and space, are mutually implicated. Landscapes are infused into memory so that the past is as constitutive of experience as the space itself. Like memory, imagination stretches my body toward a world that holds itself out to me as if I proposed to act in it, even though I cannot. I have a possible world, as one might say, in mind, by which I mean that I experience an imaginary world as a horizon of possibility, though of an attenuated kind. Memorial and imaginary worlds are sustained only by my attention; if I turn away from one, it disappears. Insofar as anthropologists retrieve absent worlds through memory and imagination, they participate in what Alfred Gell identifies as an anthropology of time.

Imaginary worlds can be elaborated by acts of narration. Stories have two ontological presentations: (1) as a realm of events transpiring in another space and time and (2) as a realm of discourse transpiring in the here and now. The pull of stories on events is as evident in tellings as the pull of events on stories. William Labov describes stories as "transformations of experience." They enter us into two temporalities: (1) the time it takes to tell the story and (2) the time the events in the story take. They are geared into everyday life twice: (1) once to while away everyday time and (2) once to enter into an alternate temporality. Stories, and other doubles of space, time, and the body, Erving Goffman points out, replay our realities back to us under a more consequential interpretation of them, as if events had the beginnings and ends that narrative attributes to them. Dell Hymes describes our cultural habit of repeating ourselves to ourselves as "narrative thinking." It is by virtue of narrative thinking that humans attribute causality to everyday life. Narrative makes time human. By virtue of phenomenology, anthropology situates the body with objects and others in its spaces and times.

Katharine Young

See also Benjamin, Walter; Cultural Ecology; Deconstruction; Gadamer, Hans-Georg; Habitus; Humanistic Anthropology; Practice Theory; Psychological Anthropology; Scapes; Subjectivity

Further Readings

Bourdieu, P. (1989). *Outline of a theory of practice*. Cambridge, MA: Cambridge University Press.

Casey, E. (1993). *Getting back into place: Toward a renewed understanding of the place-world*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Csordas, T. (2002). Somatic modes of attention. *Cultural Anthropology, 8*(2), 135–156.

Desjarlais, R., & Throop, C. J. (2011). Phenomenological approaches in anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 40,* 87–102.

Goffman, E. (1974). *Frame analysis: An essay on the organization of experience*. New York, NY: Harper & Row.

Heidegger, M. (1962). *Being and time* (J. Macquarrie & E. Robinson, Trans.). New York, NY: Harper & Row.

Howes, D. (1991). *The varieties of sensory experience: A sourcebook in the anthropology of the senses* (D. Howes, Ed.). Toronto, Ontario, Canada: University of Toronto Press.

Hymes, D., & Cazden, C. (1978). Narrative thinking and story-telling rights: A folklorist's clue to a critique of education. *Keystone Folklore, 22,* 1–2.

Jackson, M. (1998). *Minima ethnographica: Intersubjectivity and the anthropological project.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Labov, W. (1972). *Language in the inner city: Studies in the Black English vernacular*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

Merleau-Ponty, M. (1962). *The phenomenology of perception* (C. Smith, Trans.). London, UK: Routledge.

———. (1968). *The visible and the invisible* (A. Lingis, Trans.). Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press.

Tilley, C. (1994). *A phenomenology of landscape: Places, paths and monuments*. Oxford, UK: Berg.

Young, K. (1987). *Taleworlds and storyrealms: The phenomenology of narrative*. Dordrecht, Netherlands: Martinus Nijhoff.

———. (2011). Gestures, intercorporeity, and the fate of phenomenology in folklore. *Journal of American Folklore, 124*(492), 55–87.

Pike, Kenneth

Kenneth Lee Pike (1912–2000) was a world-renowned theoretical linguist, anthropologist, Christian philosopher, missionary statesman, and Bible translator. He was one of the key founders of American linguistics and is widely known for his integration of faith and science.

Born in East Woodstock, Connecticut, Pike received his bachelor's degree in 1933 from Gordon College (then in Boston). In 1935, he joined the Summer Institute of Linguistics (today SIL International) and served in Mexico studying Amerindian languages. He received his PhD in linguistics at the University of Michigan in 1942 under Charles Fries and Leonard Bloomfield and later served for 30 years on the University of Michigan faculty. Pike was the recipient of 10 honorary doctorates/professorships from universities around the world, including the University of Chicago, Université René Descartes, the University of Lima, and Albert-Ludwigs University in Freiburg, Germany. His leadership roles included serving as president of the Linguistic Society of America, president of the Linguistic Association of Canada and the United States, and, from 1942 to 1979, president of the SIL. He was chair of the University of Michigan Linguistics Department from 1975 to 1977 and director of the English Language Institute at Michigan at the same time. For 40 years, he divided his time between the University of Michigan and SIL, as director of the SIL school at the University of Oklahoma, and establishing other SIL schools around the world. He lectured in 42 countries and studied well over 100 indigenous languages in the field, including languages in Australia, Bolivia, Cameroon, Cote d'Ivoire, Ecuador, Ghana, India, Indonesia, Mexico, Nepal, New Guinea, Nigeria, Peru, the Philippines, Sudan, and Togo.

Ken Pike's contributions to the field of linguistics combined with his dedication to the minority peoples of the world brought him numerous honors. He was elected to the National Academy of Sciences in 1985. He was the recipient of the Presidential Medal of Merit from the Philippines and the Dean's Medal at Georgetown University. He was nominated for the Nobel Peace Prize for 15 years in a row and for the Templeton Prize three times. At the time of his death, he was a member of the American Philosophical Society, the American Anthropological Association (AAA), Professor Emeritus of the University of Michigan, and President Emeritus of the SIL. Pike published 30 books, 200 academic articles, and more than 1,000 poems. He was actively lecturing and writing until 1997, when his health required him to slow down. His last book publication was his five-volume set of poems titled *Seasons of Life* (1997). And he had just completed a historical essay on *Early American Anthropological Linguistics* a month before his death (it was published posthumously in 2003).

Pike's Contribution to Linguistics

Pike's major theoretical contribution to linguistics was his development of tagmemics, an important

theory in American linguistics for analyzing languages in the 1940s to 1960s. Pike's magnum opus on tagmemic theory, *Language*, was first published in three volumes in the 1950s and then in a second edition in 1967. His most widely used book, though, and a true classic, is his *Phonetics* (1943). Published 70 years ago, it is still in print and was used as a text in courses at the end of the 20th century.

Pike's practical contribution to linguistics was in his amazing ability to train students to learn, analyze, and publish data on then virtually unknown minority languages. One of his major goals was to help missionaries with their linguistic challenges. To that end, he established linguistic workshops around the world in which he and his doctoral students helped thousands of field researchers and Bible translators with difficult analytical challenges in unwritten indigenous languages. When Pike first went to live with the Mixtec people in Mexico in 1935, he knew no Spanish, nor did the Mixtecs. So he began learning their language monolingually (learning a new language by gesture only) since neither he nor his informants knew a common outside language, such as Spanish. This method eventually developed into Pike's famous pedagogical "monolingual demonstrations" before university audiences. At these events, a moderator would introduce Pike to an audience, and then the moderator would bring someone onto the stage from a foreign country who spoke a language Pike did not know. Then, with the foreigner's permission, Pike would begin to elicit some words and sentences of the language from the foreign speaker without either of them speaking a word of English. The audience would be spellbound watching Pike, who within 30–40 minutes would begin to carry on a conversation with this foreigner in his or her own native language.

No one would have guessed in the 1940s that around the world there existed some 4,000–5,000 local tribal languages that were unknown and unidentified even to linguists. This holistic approach to language learning became Pike's trademark. He taught thousands of his students how to learn such languages by using the method that he demonstrated countless times in his dramatic monolingual demonstrations. Pike's method is described best by Adam Makkai in an article titled "The Nature of Field Work" (1998).

Today, Pike's students have published thousands of linguistic analyses on 1,200 indigenous languages in 50 countries. Most of those languages had never been studied before, most are spoken by just a few hundred to a few thousand people, and almost all fall under the category that is now called *endangered languages*—defined as those likely to become extinct by the end of the 21st century.

Pike's Contribution to Anthropology

Pike's major contribution in anthropology was his development of the *emic/etic* concept. Pike published this conceptual contrast in 1954 in his first edition of *Language*, and the two terms are found in common usage in the vocabularies of most anthropologists today. In fact, most anthropologists today use insights about the different perceptions of reality among various cultural groups as the principal conceptual tool of their trade. The emic/etic distinction underlies a basic contribution of modern anthropology, a uniquely anthropological tool for understanding the worldviews of other cultures. Anthropologists make their living at least partly because of their unique ability to make the distinction between emic and etic. *Etic* refers to the point of view outsider scientists may take in explaining the customs of an indigenous people, while *emic* refers to the perspective the natives themselves may have for why they practice certain customs. Neither explanation is necessarily right or wrong, but just two different ways of explaining cultural or linguistic phenomena. For a short explanation of the concept, see the online report by Karl Franklin, *K. L. Pike on Etic vs. Emic* (1997).

Pike's High Point in Anthropology

The high point of Pike's role in the AAA came in 1988. During that year's annual meeting of the AAA, Pike and Marvin Harris, American anthropology's leading theoretician at the time, had a historic public debate on their differing uses of the emic/etic concept. That exchange resulted in a 1990 book titled *Emics and Etics: The Insider/Outsider Debate* by Thomas Headland, Pike, and Harris.

Pike's Low Point in Anthropology

Pike also had a low point in anthropology. He was a controversial figure among anthropologists because he was the president of SIL, a Christian-based nongovernmental organization made up of lay missionaries doing Bible translation for minority language groups around the world. This low point surfaced in the AAA in 1975 when anthropologists brought a formal charge of ethnocide (cultural genocide) against SIL to the AAA's Committee on Ethics (COE),

alleging that SIL undermined the traditions of indigenous peoples by introducing Christianity. The case is named in the SIL's *Pike Special Collection* archives as "COE's Case 75-2," the same name the AAA gave to the case. In May 1975, the AAA wrote a letter to the SIL describing the complaint and inviting SIL to formally respond. Pike replied to the AAA in a 15-page letter dated May 21. After a 1-year investigation, the COE's report to the AAA Executive Board declared unanimously in favor of SIL. In a letter to Pike dated September 20, 1976, AAA Executive Director Edward Lehman stated, "At its 85th meeting in May [1976], the [AAA] Executive Board accepted that [COE] recommendation, also by a unanimous vote."

Pike's Contribution to Christian Philosophy

We cannot close this review of Pike's life without mentioning his Christian philosophy and how this was such a driving force in his life and leadership of SIL and in his contribution to linguistics and anthropology. Pike was keenly interested in the spiritual dimension of his career, as seen in his relationship with Wycliffe Bible Translators, the sister organization of SIL. He and Angel Merecías translated the New Testament into the San Miguel Mixtec Indian language, completed in 1951. Pike was above all a convinced Christian theist who influenced thousands of people toward religion. He wrote numerous religious articles and books. His *With Heart and Mind* (1996) defended scholarly and intellectual approaches to Christianity, maintaining that Christian faith and academic scholarship can be intimately integrated. He published his most personal autobiographical account of his religious sojourn in a short essay, *My Pilgrimage in Mission* (1997). His sister wrote a longer biography of him, *Ken Pike: Scholar and Christian* (1981), describing his religious philosophy. He also wrote a personal autobiographical account of his career called *Linguistic Pilgrimage* (1998).

Pike Archives

Today, the huge volume of Pike's personal and work-related papers is archived in the *Pike Special Collection* in Dallas, Texas. These materials include Pike's unpublished academic papers, lecture notes, teaching resource materials, correspondence, diaries, awards, and honorary recognitions, as well as many photos and work-related artifacts. Many other details on Pike are found in the *Collection*.

Thomas N. Headland

See also American Anthropological Association; Dundes, Alan; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Harris, Marvin; Structuralism

Further Readings

Franklin, K. J. (1997). *K. L. Pike on etic vs. emic: A review and interview*. Retrieved from http://www.sil.org/klp/karlintv.htm

Headland, T. N., Pike, K. L., & Harris, M. (Eds.). (1990). *Emics and etics: The insider/outsider debate*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage. (Introduction available at http://www.sil.org/~headlandt/eticemic.htm)

Makkai, A. (1998). *The nature of field work in a monolingual setting*. Retrieved from http://www.sil.org/klp/klp-mono.htm

Pike, E. V. (1981). *Ken Pike: Scholar and Christian*. Dallas, TX: Summer Institute of Linguistics.

Pike, K. L. (1943). *Phonetics: A critical analysis of phonetic theory and a technic [sic] for the practical description of sounds*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.

———. (1967). *Language in relation to a unified theory of the structure of human behavior* (2nd ed.). The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton. (First edition published in three volumes in 1954, 1955, and 1960, Glendale, CA: Summer Institute of Linguistics)

———. (1996). *With heart and mind: A personal synthesis of scholarship and devotion* (2nd ed.). Duncanville, TX: Adult Learning Systems. (Original work published 1962)

———. (1997). My pilgrimage in mission. *International Bulletin of Missionary Research, 21,* 159–161. Retrieved from http://www.sil.org/klp/pilgrim.htm

———. (1998). A linguistic pilgrimage. In *First person singular III: Autobiographies by North American scholars in the language sciences* (Studies in the History of the Language Sciences Series No. 88). Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins. Retrieved from http://www.sil.org/klp/lingpilg.htm

SIL International. (n.d.). *Pike special collection*. Dallas, TX: SIL Language and Cultural Archives.

Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox

General Pitt Rivers (1827–1900) was a soldier, an archaeologist, the first Inspector of Ancient Monuments, and a leading contributor to the development of anthropology in 19th-century Britain. His donation of 20,000 objects to the University of Oxford in 1884 was a key moment in the

establishment of the study of material culture as a major aspect of British anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

Augustus Henry Lane Fox (he was not to take the name Pitt Rivers until 1880) was born in Yorkshire, England, in 1827. He was privately educated, joining the Grenadier Guards at the age of 18. He served in the army for 37 years, retiring in 1882 with the honorary rank of Lieutenant-General, which entitled him to use the rank of General. He served in Malta, Ireland, and Canada, as well as in various postings in the British Isles, and was decorated during the Crimean War.

The life of an army officer in the 19th century was very different from what it is today; it was possible to withdraw from active service from time to time, and officers were also given substantial periods of leave. Pitt Rivers took advantage of these opportunities to further his interests in archaeological fieldwork and in the development of technology—an interest that had developed out of his professional involvement in the testing of rifled weapons in the early 1850s.

It was Pitt Rivers's contention that particular types of objects evolved in much the same way as Darwin had shown that animals did: moving by progressive small changes from the simple to the complex. He believed that if sufficient objects could be gathered together, it would be possible to demonstrate such evolution of forms in sets of series. He also believed that ethnographic objects illustrated ancient forms of material culture that had decayed and had been lost and that they provided insights into the thinking of past generations. He demonstrated his views in a series of papers he gave to the large number of learned societies to which he belonged from 1860 onward.

To demonstrate the full sequence of the evolution of form of particular types of artifacts, Pitt Rivers needed to acquire a large number of objects. By the 1870s, his collection numbered well in excess of 10,000 objects and was described as filling his London house from cellar to attic. Believing that public education was important for demonstrating to the working classes that evolution rather than revolution was the natural mode of progress, in the 1870s, he loaned his collection to the South Kensington Museum (later the Victoria & Albert Museum) for public display, first at its branch in the poor working-class area of Bethnal Green and then in the main museum site in West London. When his relationship with the authorities at South Kensington broke down, he agreed to donate his collection to the University of Oxford. Soon after donating his collection to Oxford, however, he began to amass a second collection, broadly similar to the first. Much of this collection was displayed according to his evolutionary principles at his private museum in Farnham, Dorset.

In 1880, Pitt Rivers inherited a large estate from a distant relative and took the additional surname by which he is known today. He was a leading member of many of the learned societies in the fields of anthropology and archaeology from the 1860s until his death in 1900. His most active period of involvement was from the 1860s to the 1880s, during which time he served as an officer of many societies, contributed many papers (many of which were later published), and exhibited many objects at meetings. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Society in 1876.

The publications for which he is most celebrated are the series of privately published accounts of his archaeological excavations on his private estate at Cranborne Chase on the borders of Dorset and Wiltshire (1887–1898) and the companion volume, published just after his death, comprising a catalog of his collection of the art of Benin. Of his earlier publications, perhaps the best known is the paper he gave to the Royal Institute in 1875 titled "On the Evolution of Culture."

Pitt Rivers died in 1900 at the age of 73. It is perhaps typical of his independent personality that he had decided, most unusually for the time and especially for a member of the landed gentry, to be cremated. His remains were placed in a memorial in Tollard Royal church in his country estate.

Pitt Rivers married into the intellectual and liberal aristocratic Stanley family in 1853. One of his sons-in-law was the evolutionist John Lubbock (1834–1913), one of his grandsons was the anthropologist and eugenicist George Pitt Rivers (1890–1966), and one of his great-grandsons was the anthropologist Julian Pitt Rivers (1919–2001).

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Pitt Rivers's views on the evolution of forms of material culture were very influential in Britain during the 19th century; his contributions were well received,

and his death was noticed in many obituaries. His major contribution to anthropology was his practice of thinking about anthropological topics through the medium of material culture, an approach that underwent a renaissance in the late 20th century.

His most lasting contributions were to the fields of museum anthropology and museology. His publications about the arrangement of artifacts by type and in series, though seldom if ever followed in practice today, are still considered required reading for museologists. His views on the contribution museums can make to public education and the need for different modes of display have also had a lasting influence.

Pitt Rivers's Legacy

Pitt Rivers's major legacy is his collection of some 50,000 ethnographic and archaeological objects. The first collection, of more than 20,000 objects, became the founding collection of the University of Oxford's Pitt Rivers Museum. This is visited by more than 300,000 people every year and is a leading center for collections-based research in anthropology, archaeology, and museum ethnography. The famously dense museum's displays continue to be organized primarily by type, rather than by culture, in a manner that reflects Pitt Rivers's own preferred arrangement. However, the displays are no longer arranged in supposed evolutionary series from simple to complex but are arranged to illustrate the variety of solutions people around the world and throughout history have found to the problems of existence (how to obtain food, shelter, and protection from the elements; how to attract a sexual partner, deal with misfortune, and intercede with ancestors)—a modern take on Pitt Rivers's overriding interest in form and function. Pitt Rivers's second collection was broken up from the 1950s, so it no longer exists as a single entity but is dispersed in public and private collections around the world (a manuscript catalog containing detailed illustrations of many of the objects survives at Cambridge University Library, MS Add. 9455). In preserving many thousands of artifacts for posterity, and in thinking about them so rigorously, Pitt Rivers provided one of the major stimuli for museum-based anthropology in the United Kingdom.

Alison Petch and Jeremy Coote

See also Lubbock, John; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Oxford University

Further Readings

Bowden, M. (1991). *Pitt Rivers: The life and archaeological work of Lieutenant-General Augustus Henry Lane Fox Pitt Rivers*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Petch, A. (1998). "Man as he was and man as he is": General Pitt Rivers's collections. *Journal of the History of Collections, 10,* 75–85.

———. (2006). Chance and certitude: Pitt Rivers and his first collection. *Journal of the History of Collections, 18,* 249–256.

Petch, A., & Coote, J. (2009–2012). *Rethinking Pitt Rivers: Analysing the activities of a 19th-century collector*. Oxford, UK: University of Oxford, Pitt Rivers Museum.

Pitt Rivers, A. H. L. F. (1906). *The evolution of culture and other essays* (J. L. Myers, Ed.). Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Plato

Plato, an Athenian, was born in 427 BCE in a noble family. Although drawn in his youth to politics and poetry, after he met the philosopher Socrates he devoted his life to philosophy. After Socrates was tried for subversion and executed in 399 BCE, Plato reportedly journeyed throughout the Mediterranean for about 12 years before returning to Athens and establishing the Academy—a private institution devoted to philosophic inquiry in all areas. He is traditionally credited with writing 35 dialogues and 13 letters. He attempted (unsuccessfully) to educate the Sicilian tyrants Dionysius I and II. He died in 347 BCE, with his final manuscript (the *Laws*) still incomplete.

For modern anthropology, what is important from the work of Plato and his student Aristotle is that they present an analysis of the structure and function of human nature that in many ways has not been superseded. Plato laid out the fundamental directions that would influence the entire Western philosophic tradition. Though he often presented his ideas as teaching doctrines, he said he did not record his most important thoughts. His dialogues are masterpieces of philosophic pedagogy whose structure, imagery, and dramatic action together point in

directions that have to be followed and completed by the intellectually alert reader.

The Human Being in the Whole

Plato's *Republic* is the urtext of Western philosophy. Beginning with the image of going down to the port of Athens and going back up to the city, the dialogue deals with what is "up" and "down" in human life. The measure is to be found in justice rooted in the structure of psychic life oriented toward the cosmic Whole. Socrates constructs three cities based on human need: (1) the basic city, dedicated to satisfying natural needs through a division of labor; (2) the luxurious city, creating surplus goods and the needs corresponding to them; and (3) the city purged of luxury, organized on three levels: the artisans of the first two cities and, above them, the army consisting of guardians and their auxiliaries. These levels parallel three "parts of the soul": the appetitive, the spirited, and the rational. What subsequently become the "cardinal virtues"—prudence, justice, fortitude, and temperance—have their origin here. Justice involves reason ruling and producing harmony, with each part fulfilling its function. Fortitude and temperance are conditions for having and following practical wisdom.

Plato warns that there might be something that we do "with the whole soul" that would force a reexamination of the tripartite vision. The movement in that direction takes place in the middle books, where reason turns from the practical to the theoretical, from ruling "downward" to looking "upward." Plato opens that movement upward by means of three images: (1) the sun as the image of the ruling Good/One, (2) the diagram of the Line of Knowledge, and (3) the allegory of the Cave. The latter represents humans generally as in a dark cave chained to the limited and distorted views provided by their culture. Outside, one can see in the light of the sun. Socrates announces that just as the sun makes possible the seeing of what is seen, so the Good makes possible intellectual understanding of the intelligible.

The Line is a marvelous device constructed to lead us to apprehend the framework of human wakeful life governed by pursuit of the Good. Socrates calls for the construction of a proportionately divided line that is subdivided by the same proportion as the original division. He does not tell us but puts us in a reflective position to see that this represents a universal geometric theorem in a visual instance: The central two of the four sections will be found to be always equal. The divided line is then taken metaphorically to represent the interplay of intellect and the intelligible with sensing and the sensible. Mathematics is the first step out of the sensory; above it is the region of Plato's famous Forms (*eide*), a region that we are invited to fill in with, among other things, the universal features involved in the interplay of the fourfold. He further points out that as geometry develops a deductive system governed by a few axioms and postulates, it should be possible to arrive at a wider coherence by moving "up" from the fewness of the geometric principles toward what we are to project as the One, the Good in light of which the intellect searches, seeking unity in what otherwise would be perceived as incoherent multiplicity. Filling in those Forms would lead back to the moral considerations that preceded the intellectual ascent. The words we use, though sensory, stand in for the apprehension of universal meanings. Plato's Forms turn out to be not the occupants of a "Platonic heaven" but the forms of language. As Parmenides says in the dialogue named after him, "No Forms, no language."

Furthermore, though Plato describes the situation of embodiment as a tomb or a mud-bog or a prison, this describes psychologically the difficulty involved in living the theoretical life. In the *Timaeus*, the body is the *house* of the soul.

Social and Political Thought

Plato was an intellectual heir to the Greek 5th century, an era of intellectual ferment in all areas. Traditional beliefs and customs were subject to searching critique, invoking "nature" as the standard for judging human practices. "Nature" refers to an order discovered but not made by man, capable of guiding us to what is genuinely good for human beings. Plato continues the tradition of evaluating social practice in light of nature. In the *Gorgias*, Plato's Socrates refers to politics as the art of caring for the soul. This conception of politics is at work in everything Plato wrote on that subject. Throughout the *Republic*, the *Laws*, and elsewhere, political and social life is evaluated in terms of what is naturally good for the soul. As a result, Plato offers harsh critiques of existing practices and radical proposals for

reform (whether practically intended or not). Plato proves highly critical of Greek conventions in at least four areas: religion, property, the family, and the relations between the sexes.

Discussions of the gods suggest that Plato, like the Sophists and pre-Socratics before him, considered the pantheon largely or wholly fictional. Socrates argues that the various conflicts among the gods related by Homer and Hesiod are not true, nor would gods take part in conduct traditionally attributed to them. The *Laws* contains one of the earliest examples of natural theology. The Whole exhibits some form of intelligible order, such that the fates of human beings are not in the hands of capricious divinities.

Private property and the biologically based family unit are subject to searching critique in the *Republic*. Privacy of all kinds stands in the way of devotion to the well-being of the political community, and the desire for exclusive possession of people or things is attachment to lower goods at the expense of higher ones. Hence, in the purportedly best regime laid out in the *Republic*, private property and private families among the ruling class (not among the artisans) are abolished to foster the unity of the city. These reforms may or may not have been seriously proposed. In the *Laws*, the *Republic*'s city is declared impossible for human beings, and a less radical political form is proposed. Exclusive families and private property are allowed, though family life and the distribution of property are strictly regulated.

Another radical reform proposed in the *Republic* (but not followed in the *Laws*) is the complete equality of the sexes in the ruling class. Women as well as men are to be warriors, sharing the same barracks, exercises, and (for the most part) tasks; some of the philosopher-kings may be women as well. However, the discussion of sexual equality is prefaced by the comment that most men are better than most women at most things.

Plato is as critical of traditional political regimes as he is of social conventions. Democracy is criticized both in the *Republic* and in the *Laws*. "The many" are depicted as ill-educated, self-interested, and guided primarily by pleasure and caprice rather than by a concern for virtue. The need to work for a living incapacitates them for higher pursuits. Socrates considers the political community to be the "biggest sophist," using its standards of praise and blame to corrupt the rare individual capable of truly living well (i.e., philosophically). Most other traditional Greek regimes (oligarchy, warrior-aristocracy, etc.) also come in for harsh critique in the *Republic*, being corrupted by their allowance of private property and hostility to philosophy. The only regime besides the best regime that has any place whatsoever for philosophy is democracy, where letting each citizen live as he pleases allows philosophers to conduct their inquiry in private.

Robert E. Wood and Jonathan Culp

See also Aristotle; Derrida, Jacques; Frazer, James G.; Gadamer, Hans-Georg; Hegel, Georg W. F.

Further Readings

Cooper, J. M. (Ed.). (1997). *Plato: Complete works*. Indianapolis, IN: Hackett.

Guthrie, W. K. C. (1975). *A history of Greek philosophy: Vol. 4. Plato: The man and his dialogues—earlier period*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1978). *A history of Greek philosophy: Vol. 5. Plato: The later Plato and the Academy*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Kraut, R. (Ed.). (1992). *The Cambridge companion to Plato*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Polanyi, Karl

In the decades following World War II, economic anthropology occupied a central place in the parent discipline. The focus of this attention was the "formalist/substantivist" debate, an argument about the applicability of neoclassical economics to the world as a whole that was itself a replay of the "Battle Over Methods" (*Methodenstreit*) in late-19th-century Germany. Karl Polanyi (1886–1964) launched this debate, but he was neither an economist nor an anthropologist. He was trained originally in law in Budapest and worked as an economic journalist in Vienna after fighting for Austria-Hungary in World War I.

Theories and Key Works

The Great Transformation: The Political and Economic Origins of Our Times was first published in 1944. It is primarily about the development of the "free market" in 19th-century Britain and society's

reaction to the market's unprecedented domination of economic life. It was shaped by Polanyi's experience of England during the 1930s, where he gave lectures but never held an academic post. Polanyi did not claim that it was a work of history: He was not searching for a convincing sequence of outstanding events but for an explanation of their trend in terms of human institutions. His practical knowledge of the economy was largely acquired during the 1920s in Vienna. He always read voraciously, and his anthropological theories were based on notes he took down from Karl Bücher, Bronisław Malinowski, Richard Thurnwald, and Marcel Mauss. Polanyi's main venture into anthropologists' territory was a historical study, *Dahomey and the Slave Trade*, and Africa was a principal focus for his main followers. After moving from Britain to the United States, Polanyi conducted historical research on the economy of "archaic" societies. This interdisciplinary collaboration at Columbia University led him to suggest a "substantivist" approach to economic life that appealed to some anthropologists.

In his seminal essay "The Economy as Instituted Process," Polanyi argued that the "formal" and "substantive" meanings of the word *economic* have been conflated. The first refers to a means-end relationship, the mental process of economizing, whereas the second is concerned with the general provisioning of material wants in society. Polanyi held that the first notion led to a complete rupture between the economy and life. Most nonindustrial societies are ruled by institutions that guarantee collective survival, but industrial societies have a delocalized economy, "the market," in which individual decision making rules. He proposed that anthropologists and historians should focus on noncapitalist economies, leaving modern capitalism to the economists. A "formalist" approach emphasizes the regular operation of ideas, in this case the universal claims of neoclassical economics, while a "substantivist" approach gives priority to the empirical content of material circumstances. The terminology may be traced back to Plato; and elsewhere in the same volume, Polanyi acknowledges Aristotle's significance for him. The conceptual opposition between "form" and "substance" was commonplace in the 19th century, especially in Germany. It entered economic discourse through Carl Menger and Max Weber. Both formalists and substantivists recognized the importance of markets for economic coordination, but Polanyi held that the market principle was not the main "mode of integration" in world history.

He had already argued in *The Great Transformation* that the principles of reciprocity, redistribution, and householding were of greater significance than the market in nonindustrial societies; "householding," the principle of thrifty budgeting for self-sufficiency, disappeared from the set in his later writings. Reciprocity was a symmetrical form of exchange between persons or groups of equal standing, as in the Trobriand *kula* ring. Redistribution reflected a principle of centricity, whereby resources were pooled and handed out through a hierarchy, as in the potlatch rituals of the American Northwest Coast. These forms of integration could co-exist, but there was an implicit evolutionary sequence. Reciprocity was dominant in "primitive" egalitarian societies with simple technologies, whereas redistribution usually presupposed the possibility of storing a surplus and some degree of social stratification. It was exemplified by the societies of the Ancient Mediterranean. As for the market, Polanyi consistently played down its significance before the dramatic changes that occurred in 19th-century Europe. He preferred Aristotle's emphasis on a self-sufficient *oikos* ("house") to Adam Smith's human propensity to "truck and barter," which reduced all value to a utilitarian calculus. Markets were present in primitive and archaic societies, but they did not yet pose a threat to the integration of the economy in the wider social system since they were "embedded" in it. Their administered prices were typically stable over long periods, as were the interest rates. Commercial activity was concentrated in specific "ports of trade," where it had little or no direct impact on the bulk of the population.

In Polanyi's philosophy of history, the rupture created by industrialization—and above all, the creation of a market for free wage labor in Victorian England—led to a "disembedding" of the economy. This "utopian" elevation of the market principle to the dominant form of economic integration was bound to fail. Society could not tolerate the buying and selling of nature, humanity, and society itself in the form of the "fictitious commodities" of land, labor, and money, so it sought to defend itself. Polanyi identified a "double movement": on the one hand, the economics of laissez-faire and, on the other, social resistance, which, in 19th-century Britain, ranged from the Chartist movement and

trade unions to national protectionism. This led inevitably to the crises and world wars of the 20th century. The market mentality responsible for these horrors was now "obsolete," Polanyi claimed; and, indeed, the New Deal and the consolidation of welfare states in Europe helped usher in a new era of social democracy that put an end to the market illusion forever—or, as it turned out, for a few decades.

Money and markets have their origin in the effort to extend society beyond its local core. Polanyi believed that money, like the sovereign states to which it was closely related, was often introduced from outside, and this was what made the institutional attempt to separate economy from politics and naturalize the market as something *internal* to society so subversive. He distinguished between "token" and "commodity" forms of money. Token money was designed to facilitate domestic trade, commodity money, foreign trade; but the two systems often came into conflict. Money was not a commodity for Polanyi; it was purchasing power. In "Money Objects and Money Uses," he approached money as a semantic system, like language and writing. His main point was that only modern money combines the functions of payment, standard, store, and exchange, and this gives it the capacity to sustain those functions through a limited number of "all-purpose" symbols. Primitive and archaic forms attach the separate functions to different symbolic objects, which should therefore be considered to be "special-purpose" monies. Here, Polanyi argued against the idea that money is only a medium of exchange and in favor of a multistranded model of its evolution.

Polanyi's Legacy

Polanyi built a school of followers led by an anthropologist, Paul Bohannan, and George Dalton, who was originally trained in economics. Together they edited the landmark collection *Markets in Africa*, where they showed that while traditional African societies knew many kinds of marketplaces, which often had major social, political, and even religious significance, these remained "peripheral" in comparison with other forms of integration. The rise of the modern market principle, as a result of new patterns of cash cropping for export, was bound to undermine these traditional markets and the societies they served.

Polanyi's reputation has been rising palpably in the past two decades. He offers a distinctive, Eurocentric vision of world history, a salutary reminder that a wider vision is possible and indeed necessary. Institutes in Montreal and Paris named after Polanyi keep the interdisciplinary flame burning today. His ideas have never dropped out of sight, but attempts to place Polanyi on a par with Karl Marx, Max Weber, Émile Durkheim, and Georg Simmel have never really taken off. There are several reasons for this. His depiction of capitalism as a self-regulating (and ultimately self-destructive) market missed some of the key political features that were central to its resurrection after the war. His formal analysis and conceptual system were fuzzier than those of the other founders. His main book succeeds as a narrative more than as a basis for effective action. He abandoned his populist critique of mainstream capitalism to become a guru in the academic study of nonindustrial economies.

Polanyi's idea that the economy is normally "embedded" in social institutions has become a cornerstone of economic sociology in recent decades, but in a watered-down form. His pluralist approach to economic institutions, in opposition to fundamentalisms of both the right and the left, is still attractive. But a tension remains between claiming that the "free market" is "disembedded" from political oversight and acknowledging that it is in reality "embedded" in political processes that are made largely invisible by liberal ideology. *The Great Transformation* was a work of prophecy, and broadly speaking, the prophecy failed. The 1940s did indeed see a world revolution, but its immediate outcome was not foreseen by Polanyi. An anticolonial revolution accompanied a revival of the world market under American hegemony, fueled by increased public spending. The past three decades have seen a replay of the "self-regulating market" scenario and its possible demise, so Polanyi's vision offers a perspective on the political and economic origins of our own times, too. His time as a prophet may yet come.

The dramatic expansion of finance capital in recent decades is directly analogous to the historical phenomenon identified by Polanyi previously. The current globalization of market capitalism has a "double movement" of its own. Society now protects itself not through the formation of national trade unions within but through transnational networks

of activists protesting against the power of the G8 states. Jean-Louis Laville leads a recent revival of Polanyi's influence in France, linking his legacy explicitly to that of Marcel Mauss, whose socialist politics have always been given greater prominence in that country. Global markets and "global civil society" implicate each other; our task is to understand the changing institutional forms of this interdependence. By outlining the theoretical foundations of a plural approach to the economy rather than appealing to a radical alternative, Polanyi opened up the entire field of human possibilities, most of which already exist in our societies.

Keith Hart

See also Bohannan, Paul; Columbia University; Economic Anthropology; Mauss, Marcel; Smith, Adam; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Beckert, J. (2009). The great transformation of embeddedness: Karl Polanyi and the new economic sociology. In C. Hann & K. Hart (Eds.), *Market and society* (pp. 38–55). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Bugra, A., & Agartan, K. (Eds.). (2007). *Reading Karl Polanyi for the twenty-first century: Market economy as a political project*. New York, NY: Palgrave Macmillan.

Dale, G. (2010). *Karl Polanyi: The limits of the market*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Hann, C., & Hart, K. (Eds.). (2009). *Market and society: The Great Transformation today*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (2011). *Economic anthropology: History, ethnography, critique*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Hart, K., Laville, J. L., & Cattani, A. D. (Eds.). (2010). *The human economy: A citizen's guide*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Isaac, B. (2005). Karl Polanyi. In J. G. Carrier (Ed.), *Handbook of economic anthropology* (pp. 14–25). Cheltenham, UK: Edward Elgar.

McRobbie, K., & Levitt, K. P. (Eds.). (2000). *Karl Polanyi in Vienna: The contemporary significance of The Great Transformation*. Montreal, Quebec, Canada: Black Rose Books.

Polanyi, K. (1957). The economy as instituted process. In K. Polanyi, C. Arensberg, & H. Pearson (Eds.), *Trade and market in the early empires: Economies in history and theory* (pp. 243–270). New York, NY: Free Press.

———. (1977). *The livelihood of man* (H. Pearson, Ed.). New York, NY: Academic Press.

———. (2001). *The Great Transformation: The political and economic origins of our times*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press. (Original work published 1944)

Stanfield, J. (1986). *The economic thought of Karl Polanyi*. London, UK: Macmillan.

Political Economy

In anthropology, political economy refers to a critical and historically grounded theoretical subfield concerned with the influence of economic systems on the constitution of power and on the process of cultural production. Political economy is an interdisciplinary theoretical approach, with representations in political science, economics, sociology, and geography, among others. It has made a significant contribution within anthropology, bringing attention to the effects of globalization and capitalist integration on the process of cultural construction and the lived realities of humans around the world. This entry focuses on the historical development of political-economic perspectives in anthropology.

Origins

The origins of political economy can be traced back to the classic political economists of the 18th century, most notably Adam Smith and David Ricardo. These scholars sought, in the context of the Industrial Revolution and rapid economic growth, to understand the role of the state, social classes, production, and exchange in the process of capitalist wealth accumulation. Smith and Ricardo proposed that the "invisible hand" of the market, based on the laws of supply and demand, could best create wealth in the absence of governmental intervention. This view continues to influence many of today's academic disciplines, most notably economics. Political-economic perspectives in anthropology, however, are influenced by another strain of political economy. In the 19th century, Karl Marx and Friedrich Engels continued to examine questions related to wealth formation. However, Marx and Engels rejected the idea that capitalist markets were ultimately rational and moral. Integrating examinations of the moral aspects of capitalist wealth production into their analyses, they argued that wealth

generation under capitalism was dependent on the ability of the wealthy capitalist class to control the means of production (e.g., land, water, and other natural resources) and to profit from the surplus labor supplied by wage laborers (the difference between their productivity and their wages). Marx and Engels, thus, argued that capitalist production regimes were exploitative, eventually resulting in an unjust distribution of wealth, social hierarchy, and discontent. While not all political-economic analyses in anthropology today are purely Marxist, they typically share this focus on the production and reproduction of inequality enabled by a division of labor in society, as well as a historical and materialist orientation to their subject of study.

Henry Lewis Morgan, another of anthropology's intellectual ancestors, argued along with his contemporaries Marx and Engels that the means by which people make their living exert a heavy influence on the social and political organization and ideologies of society. This materialist orientation ties cultural production to the process of making a living and the structures of power that shape and constrain those activities.

The Twentieth Century

While the materialist perspectives of Morgan, Marx, and Engels continued to influence many branches of social theory in the 19th century, the development of anthropology as a discipline in the early 20th century was heavily influenced by Franz Boas, who rejected materialist perspectives and grand theories of cultural evolution. It was not until after World War II that the roots of anthropological political economy were further developed. Around the middle of the 20th century, materialist approaches were revived by the work of Julian Steward and Leslie White, both of whom saw the genesis of human culture in the subsistence strategies people used to adapt to their environments. White and Steward would go on to train some of anthropology's most influential scholars, including Robert L. Camiero, Lewis Binford, Elman Rogers Service, and prominent political economists like Sidney Mintz and Eric Wolf.

Meanwhile, scholars were beginning to question modernization theory's assumption that capitalist integration and infusion would create growth and stability. Development programs based on these assumptions were failing, the Cold War was destabilizing fragile postcolonial regimes, and observations suggested that, in many cases, disparities between the so-called First World and Third World were increasing rather than stabilizing.

Dependency Theory; World-Systems Theory

Beginning in the 1960s, a new generation of theorists inspired by the political economy of Marx sought to understand this imbalance of wealth. The economist Andre Gunder Frank argued that, contrary to modernization theory, underdevelopment was not due to the lack of capital but rather to the effects of prolonged capitalist exploitation. Historians of anthropological theory often tie political economy's most recent roots to Frank. Work influenced by his dependency theory illustrated the means by which capitalist colonialism disrupted domestic modes of production, deprived local people of access to resources, dispossessed people of wealth, integrated communities into a global market at a disadvantage, and resulted in the formation of social hierarchies, both local and global. These ideas were further developed in Immanuel Wallerstein's world-systems theory, which viewed wealth creation in the economic cores as systematically linked to the exploitation of the economic peripheries. Through unequal trade relations, this system allowed the world's most powerful countries to subjugate and exploit peripheral nations and thus reproduce and centralize economic and political power.

World-systems and dependency theories were critiqued as abstract neo-functionalism on the grounds that they neglected to consider the value and the meaning of precapitalist economic conditions beyond their function in capitalist accumulation. Furthermore, critics claim that dependency and world-systems views of the capitalist world system were static and structurally deterministic, failing to consider its potential dynamism or the influence of noncapitalist modes of production. A group of French scholars addressed some of these concerns through ethnographic analysis of capitalist integration, the lingering effects of colonialism and the implications of international trade on the lived realities of societies with precapitalist modes of production. Maurice Godelier, Emmanuel Terray, Pierre-Phillip Rey, and Claude Meillassoux are often referred to as the "French articulationists" because they brought attention to the

contradictions and conflicts that occur as capitalist modes of production influence and are influenced by precapitalist economic formations. This dialectical tension and focus on the changing positions of societies in the world economy moved away from the less dialectical and more deterministic materialism of the 1950s, while laying the foundation for a political economy that also considered the ongoing impact of a global division of labor. Together, the French articulationists, Frank, and Wallerstein made important contributions to contemporary anthropological perspectives in political economy. Most important, they grounded the development of culture in history and in global political and economic structures.

As the perspective was further developed in the late 1970s, analyses explicitly labeled "political economy" became increasingly common. One of today's most cited political economists, William Roseberry, marked the official recognition of political economy as a theoretical subfield with the publication of a special issue of *American Ethnologist* in 1978. However, the field remained heterogeneous and often internally contentious, without a unified vision. Some political economists critiqued others for not being political enough or for lacking an adequate appreciation of precapitalist local histories and their influence on contemporary cultural forms.

Critical Perspectives and Postmodern Critiques

In the 1980s, three seminal books in political economy, Eric Wolf's *Europe and the People Without History* (1982), Sidney Mintz's *Sweetness and Power* (1985), and William Roseberry's *Anthropologies and Histories* (1989), addressed many of the previous critiques of political-economic perspectives and helped unify political economy in anthropology. In an era of accelerated globalization and the promotion of free markets by Margaret Thatcher and Ronald Reagan, critical political-economic perspectives flourished, demonstrating the negative effects of contemporary and historical capitalist integration.

Wolf's work in *Europe and the People Without History*, for example, sought to historicize the conditions of some of the world's least privileged people and contextualize them in relation to a long history of global integration. Wolf drew heavily on the work of Marx, Steward, and Frank, viewing society as the product of historical and material processes. However, he also addressed many of the critiques of his intellectual ancestors, integrating a greater sense of dynamism in structures of dependence, a balance of global structure and local agency, and a stronger ethnographic engagement in his analyses. Wolf was careful not to paint his ethnographic subjects as static or only subject to change with the influence of capitalist integration and external domination. His work helped anthropology unbind its conceptualizations of culture and to view it as a dynamic and ongoing process placed in time rather than as a fixed entity. He argued that while societies must be seen in the context of their place in the modern world system, their particular histories cannot be neglected. Wolf gave credence and voice to these histories and the views of the oppressed. His large-scale social analysis thus marked a more dialectical consideration of local and global influence, emphasizing the dynamic nature of culture. Given anthropology's traditional focus on indigenous and noncapitalist societies, analyses of history and power revealed that many cultural forms helped people adapt to and resist oppression and disadvantage within the global capitalist system.

While recognizing the agency of local cultures, political economists in the 1980s led the discipline to increasingly recognize the control that wealthy and powerful exercise, not only on the means of production but also on the production of knowledge, systems of meaning, and our understandings of history. These works drew heavily on social theorists like Michael Foucault, Pierre Bourdieu, and Antonio Gramsci, who illustrated the ability of the powerful to govern the minds of the oppressed by naturalizing the values and practices of the dominant class. Whether referred to as mystification, doxa, or hegemony, these ideas would increasingly prompt political economists to study not only the material base but also symbolic systems of rank and power that illustrate how the powerful control knowledge production and naturalize disadvantage. With this growing recognition, anthropologists began to question their own ability, as products of privileged social locations, to objectively or accurately represent the perspectives of less powerful others. While the influence of postmodernism is often viewed in opposition to the materialist perspectives that characterize political economy, both threads helped inspire a period of reflexivity.

During the 1980s and 1990s, there developed a heightened concern for situating anthropological analyses in the everyday lives and perspectives of anthropological subjects. Moving beyond economic

reductionism and structural determinism, political-economic analyses influenced by these concerns gave more voice to the people they studied and more analytical attention to the means by which people actively interpret, resist, or subvert the demands of capitalist production and its associated ideologies. Michael Taussig's classic work with miners and plantation workers in South America, for example, illustrated how these workers gave meaning to the contradictions of capitalist production and critiqued the commodification of their labor. At the same time, political economy was continuing to broaden beyond purely class-based analyses to consider other locations of social, political, and economic inequality. Inspired by the work of Eleanor Leacock, June Nash, and later Carla Freeman, feminist political economists would continue to analyze the gendered division of labor, the unpaid work of household reproduction, and the creation of gender inequality in the context of colonization and development programs. Other scholars examined the impact of racial discrimination in the workplace and the ongoing legacy of slavery and colonialism.

Recent Developments

Leading up to and around the turn of the 21st century, political economy came to be increasingly influenced by theories of practice and critiques of structural determinism leveled by interpretive anthropology. While the theoretical subfield remains heterogeneous and broad, integrating an array of subjects, methodologies, and sites, it has responded to critiques of structural determinism and vulgar materialism with a generalized attempt to balance consideration of structure and agency, the global and the local, and of the material structure with superstructure. As prominent political economist Paul Durrenberger has recognized, it is impossible to view the economic system as separate from other aspects of society or as impervious to social and political influence.

The influence of political economy on contemporary anthropology is evident. While its influence is perhaps most prevalent in studies of globalization and development, contemporary political economy in anthropology is concerned with a broad array of topics. From Philippe Bourgois's analysis of the international economic factors that lead to the structural violence against homeless drug addicts to Aihwa Ong's analysis of the links between an individual's market value and notions of citizenship in neoliberal regimes of global competitiveness, the influence of political-economic perspectives is clear. Regardless of the topic, work inspired by political economy continues to remind anthropologists that analyses of culture are incomplete without a consideration of history, power, and ideology.

Cindy Isenhour

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Dependency Theory; Foucault, Michel; Gramsci, Antonio; Leacock, Eleanor; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Mintz, Sidney; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Nash, June; Smith, Adam; Steward, Julian; Wallerstein, Immanuel; White, Leslie; Wolf, Eric; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Edelman, M., & Haugerud, A. (2005). *The anthropology of development and globalization: From classical political economy to contemporary neoliberalism*. Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.

Marx, K. (1977). *A contribution to the critique of political economy*. Moscow, USSR: Progress. (Original work published 1859)

Mintz, S. (1985). *Sweetness and power: The place of sugar in modern history*. New York, NY: Penguin Books.

Roseberry, W. (1988). Political economy. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 17,* 161–185.

———. (1989). *Anthropologies and histories: Essays in culture, history, and political economy*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

Wolf, E. (1982). *Europe and the people without history*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Popper, Karl

Sir Karl Raimund Popper (1902–1994), an Austrian British social and political philosopher and philosopher of science, is significant in anthropology for his ideas on methodology, on knowledge and consciousness, and on liberalism and morality.

Biography and Major Works

Karl Popper was born in Vienna on July 28, 1902, as the youngest child of parents of Jewish origin. His home environment was bookish: Interests in law, the classics, philosophy and social and political issues, and music were inculcated. Popper was educated at the University of Vienna, studying mathematics, music,

psychology, physics, and philosophy. He obtained a primary school teaching diploma in 1925, earned a PhD in philosophy in 1928, and qualified to teach mathematics and physics in secondary school in 1929 (teaching between 1930 and 1936).

The growth of Nazism in Germany and Austria led him to emigrate in 1937, becoming a lecturer in philosophy at Canterbury University College, Christchurch, New Zealand. In 1946, he became a reader in logic and scientific method at the London School of Economics and Political Science (University of London), was promoted to professor in 1949, and retired in 1969. He was knighted in 1965, elected Fellow of the Royal Society in 1976, and made a Companion of Honour in 1982.

Three of Popper's major works appeared between 1935 and 1945. *Logik der Forschung* (1935, appearing in English as *The Logic of Scientific Discovery* in 1959) was a theory of science. "The Poverty of Historicism" (1936, later updated and published as a book in 1957) applied the theory of science to history and society and critiqued the Marxian notion of historical laws. *The Open Society and Its Enemies* (1945, two volumes) treated the history of liberalism as a form of open thought and society contrasted with the closures of authoritarianism, fundamentalism, and totalitarianism.

Popper's major later works included two collections of papers, *Conjectures and Refutations: The Growth of Scientific Knowledge* (1962) and *Objective Knowledge: An Evolutionary Approach* (1972); an autobiography, *Unended Quest: An Intellectual Autobiography* (1976); a collaboration with John Eccles on the mind/body problem, *The Self and Its Brain: An Argument for Interactionism* (1977); as well as *Postscript to the Logic of Scientific Discovery* (1982–1983) and *The Myth of the Framework: In Defence of Science and Rationality* (1994). He remained active as a writer, broadcaster, and lecturer until his death in 1994. His manuscripts and correspondence are now archived at the Hoover Institution, Stanford University.

Contribution to Anthropology

Central to Popper's thought is a challenging correspondence he would draw between "openness" in scientific practice and openness in society; good science and good society—moral, free, liberal—flourish under comparable conditions.

Popper argued for human life to be understood as primarily a process of solving problems (and hence making meaning) in changing environments. Such problem solving entailed conscious attempts to extend an understanding of experience by the use of the creative imagination, which was then subjected to critical control. Whether expressed in an idiom of art or science, through means rational or irrational, empirical or intuitive, a constancy of experimentation engaged anew with the presently unknown and constructed order. Hence, it was the essential character of all human thought to be revolutionary, and Popper was pleased to describe the human brain as an open system of open systems. What problem solving achieved was an approach nearer to the truth. Even though we may never know with certainty what was true, we could know, absolutely, what was not true: We could differentiate between competing theories and learn from mistakes. This was a process not only of scientific advancement but also of moral improvement, for humanity could improve on its relation to itself and its environment and thereby hope to lessen suffering.

The scientific and the moral best came together in a particular type of society that Popper called open and whose best recent representation, since its origin in ancient Greece, was in Western liberal democracies. An open society ideally made every source of knowledge admissible—imagination, tradition, reason, and observation—while none was held to be authoritative in the estimation of future action and none was immune from criticism. Knowledge continued to be treated as a hypothesis to be empirically tested and then corrected, while every executive or administrative policy and decision was a speculation to be subjected to rational-critical debate. Power, moreover, was held for strictly limited purposes: for the maintenance of free institutions and for intervening in social life—providing education, housing, health, and so on—so as to extend the range of individual choice.

What characterized such liberal societies, above all, was an attitude of criticism whereby a diversity of often incompatible worldviews was openly expressed and conflicting aims pursued. For when it was recognized that everything was actually disposed to imaginative construction, experimentation, and change, any truth was expected to be partial. It was not the case, then, that the open society simply replaced one absolutism, religion, with another,

criticism. For it recognized that there existed no general criterion of truth that could save humanity and that criticism was neither infallible nor finally authoritative since it was human.

The ideal open society was to be open in two significant ways, then. It was open scientifically, embodying an environment in which the exploration of the world through theory and experiment, and the accumulative acquisition of knowledge, took place without institutional or ideological hindrance. Only by conducting scientific exploration that avoided the closures of doctrinal and conventional truths, of normative and fashionable expectations, and of comforting and habitual teleologies and tautologies could humankind continue along the progressive path of accruing knowledge that more closely approximated to the nature of reality. The open society was also open politically and socially; it practiced a form of government and of civility that afforded space and opportunity to individual citizens to make their own explorations of life and draw their own conclusions concerning how it was to be lived—and it prided itself on so doing. The open society respected the integrity of the individual and also individuals' capacity to make sense: to accede to an understanding of self and the world that accorded with their own needs and desires, with their will, and that represented an appositely authentic and dignified way for those individuals to conduct themselves.

The gaining of scientific knowledge of the world and of individual knowledge of "self in the world," entailed similar processes, Popper claimed. One began with conjecture—with an imagined theory, a story, a poetic framework, a speculative paradigm—concerning what the world or self might or could be like. One put one's conjecture to the test, experimenting with one's ideas by enacting them, living them, and critically assessing the results. Were the results valuable? Did they better one's capacity to control life and self? Did they increase the possibility that one could ensure order, regularity, and pattern in one's environment—that one could appreciate how order might be ensured in the world? In light of one's experimenting with and criticizing an initial theoretical conjecture, one improved continually on the inevitable prejudices—the constructions and anticipations of the world—by which one lived.

Crucially, Popper contended that the two kinds of openness, scientific and sociopolitical, were linked. A society that was open scientifically afforded sociopolitical improvement, while a society that was open sociopolitically afforded scientific improvement, and the two kinds of openness mutually assisted one another; openness in one sphere spilled over into the other. It was the case, therefore, that one might expect better science in a liberal democracy, where the practice of social questioning and critique was safeguarded, than in a totalitarian society, where it was not; also, one might expect better politics in a milieu where there was a general, scientific questing after the ways of nature than in a world of preordained and revealed knowledge, where it was not. And the converse was also true; minds that were closed theoretically, that inhabited a straitened and dogmatic world of ideas, would not at the same time celebrate notions of civil freedom.

As Popper painted it, then, the distinction between such closed and open societies was a very stark one; nor was there any question, for him, as to which was superior. An open society, which upheld equalitarian and individualistic principles, which afforded every person the right and the opportunity to model their life as they saw fit (to the extent that this did not interfere with others' lives), and which encouraged individual initiative and self-assertion, was the means of every advance in knowledge, reasonableness, mutuality, and chances of human survival.

Taken to its most challenging conclusion, moreover, Popper's coupling of science and democracy proposed that there might be ways of linking "is" and "ought": how the world actually was and how the world ought to be lived. For if it was good that humankind improved on its understanding of the universe and its place within it and, thereby, also on its ability to affect its chances of survival, and if this science could be linked to a particular way of life, then science, its conducting and its results, could provide a moral vision, ranking ways of life and suggesting a good way to live. At the least, Popper suggested that the process of undertaking good science provides insights of a moral, political, and social kind into the good life. In short, not only could science be seen to supersede supernaturalism and religion in answering the "what" question about the universe—"What is the universe like?"—but it also could be seen to supersede religion in answering the "why" question—"Why should one behave in one way and not another in the universe?"

Notwithstanding, Popper recognized that the open society had its detractors, its difficulties and

tensions, and has had them throughout history. For the realities of openness could be an atomistic social milieu of insecurity and change; conventional authority could feel threatened by new solutions, and individuals could suffer from alienation and anomy, hence the historical tradition running parallel to the open society: the closed society. Reacting against the open society and finding its costs—experimentation and change—too much, this latter society would prescribe a form of closure that arrested openness in favor of a coercive (Utopian) totalism. Popper saw ideologies of such "tribalism" as beginning with Plato and extending through Marx to contemporary religious fundamentalisms. A closed society pursued a communitarian rather than a liberal ethos, valuing the continuation of the society per se over the nurturance of its individual members; the critical diversity and play of the individual mind were exchanged for uncritical certainties and monolithic social ends. Here, too, submission to magical forces and a rigid conventionality substituted for rational attempts at human improvement; religious or mythical truths justified hierarchical and conservative relations of authority maintained by ritual and taboo.

Popper remained a humanist. To equate human beings with machines or with products of processes of manufacture—whether natural or sociocultural—is to deny or misconstrue the existence of mental phenomena, and consciousness or personal experiences more generally. It was to reduce selves to mere epiphenomena of events and to treat the world as a closed, self-explanatory structure. That is wrong both morally and empirically. Morally, it ignores suffering and the significance of the human fight against brute materiality (culminating in the conscious facing of death). Empirically, treating human beings mechanistically (or deconstructively) means to ignore their cognitive power, through speculation and experimentation, both to construct environments for themselves and to transcend those and construct anew. The desire to abdicate one's freedom so as to escape the responsibility of having to make choices and decisions, and of living with the consequences—as in a closed society—represents a victory for the immature plane of human nature.

Popper's Legacy

Popper's thought is controversial in anthropological circles that promote cultural relativism and methodological holism; not all are persuaded by the downplaying of the role of sociocultural construction in favor of an individual experimenter transcending cultural and historical givens. But there have been committed engagements and evaluations of Popper's work. Ernest Gellner described himself (in *Anthropology and Politics*, 1995) as a "good Popperian," esteeming Popper as, together with Willard van Orme Quine, the greatest living philosopher. In considering how anthropology might partake in a debate on civil society and its moral dissemination, Gellner rated *The Open Society and Its Enemies* as one of the two key texts of 20th-century liberalism (the other being *The Road to Serfdom* by Friedrich von Hayek).

The project of any adequate anthropology, Gellner elaborated, is underwriting a supracultural morality for a cosmopolitan world of movement. This must encompass a social scientific understanding of human liberty: granting the symbolic worlds of cultural fraternities a respected place in a scientific universe, while also ensuring individual equality a securer foundation than either communitarian whim or laissez-faire consumerism alone. While allowing that a symbolic domain alongside the technical one of science may continue to be necessary for human comfort, Gellner concluded that this domain might nevertheless be expected to reflect universal lineaments and be ultimately subject to reason.

In this, Gellner was extending the ruminations of another Central European and liberal, Bronisław Malinowski. In *Freedom and Civilization* (1947), Malinowski imagined the seemingly self-contradictory vision of cultural belonging (ethnicity, religiosity, and nationalism) set in a situation of universal government. If the inevitable consequences of cultural and communitarian belonging—from exclusivism to colonialism to genocide—were morally repugnant, Malinowski reasoned, then the solution was a League of Nations, a supranational government, by which all would, in effect, be colonized. Social groupings would surrender their claims to territorial and political sovereignty, while their cultural independence and vitality might be ensured. By differentiating culture from territory, the same land could come to accommodate different forms of life. This was the only humane solution to the complexity of the ethnic map, to mutually incompatible nationalistic claims to territory, and to demands for community without the attendant tyrannies, oppression, or loss of life. An open society might thus

colonize those domains of ethnocultural exclusivity while at the same time protecting individuals' rights to belong.

Nigel Rapport

See also Ethnomethodology; London School of Economics; Malinowski, Bronisław; Social Studies of Science

Further Readings

Ingold, T. (Ed.). (1996). *Key debates in anthropology*. London, UK: Routledge.

Jarvie, I. (1984). *Rationality and relativism*. London, UK: Routledge.

Jarvie, I., & Pralong, S. (Eds.). (1995). *Popper's open society after fifty years*. London, UK: Routledge.

Kuznar, L. (1996). *Reclaiming a scientific anthropology*. Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira Press.

Rapport, N. (Ed.). (2005). Democracy, science and the open society [Special issue]. *Anthropological Journal on European Cultures, 13*.

Turner, S., & Risjord, M. (Eds.). (2006). *Philosophy of anthropology and sociology*. Amsterdam, Netherlands: Elsevier.

Postcolonial Theory

Postcolonial theory addresses the effect of colonialism on culture. Initially associated with literary analysis, in the 1970s, postcolonial theory focused first on Western colonial discourse, showing that colonial power took shape in areas of life such as literature, which are not initially obviously political. But other founding contributors to postcolonial theory, especially historians, urged the study of the histories of colonized people and their experience of colonialism. Anthropology's and history's engagement with postcolonial theory has broadened attention to the agency of the colonized, to resistance, and to postcolonial consequences.

Cultural anthropology and postcolonial theory share many analytic and reflective questions. As postcolonial theory extended its moral and political challenge, it provoked anthropologists and historians to question whether their fields, like literature, had underestimated colonialism, overestimated Western culture to be universal, and neglected colonial domination and its effects. While anthropologists have long been champions for others and skeptics of the West, and its ethnocentrism and racism, until the rise of postcolonial theory, they had not developed a sustained critical inquiry into colonial processes. But anthropology also offers challenges to unexamined assumptions in postcolonial theory. In particular, anthropology questions the periodization implied in the term *postcolonial*, which implies an open-ended era defined by past Western domination. Most important, anthropologists have identified new ways to think about and name the postcolonial era, including a focus on nation-states, decolonization, globalization, and plural modernities.

Orientalism and Subaltern Studies

Postcolonial theory began with scholarship on colonial era texts. Edward Said's *Orientalism*, published in 1978, which inspired much of postcolonial theory, critically analyzes the writings of orientalists. "Orientalists" were 18th- and 19th-century scholars, travelers, novelists, and colonial officials who focused on the Islamic world as "the Orient." Said, a scholar of comparative literature, argues that literary and textual representations of this imagined Orient contributed integrally to Western political and economic domination of Asia and the Middle East. Indeed, Said argues that 18th- and 19th-century Orientalists were part of a larger, Western colonial discourse about the Orient, stretching from the ancient Greeks to contemporary U.S. policymakers. Furthermore, he argues that Western discourse about the Orient created a powerful, unanswerable portrait of the Orient as ancient, weak, and irrational, effectively silencing the object of its study. He suggests that similar dynamics underlie all the relations between the West and all the colonized peoples of the world.

In writing about colonial discourse, Said drew on theorists who brought together theories of meaning and consciousness with theories of power. The term *discourse* is drawn from the work of Michel Foucault and is used to describe overarching, powerful, systematic understandings of the world. Said saw "Orientalism" as a hegemonic discourse. *Hegemony* is a term drawn from a Marxist tradition (begun by Antonio Gramsci and continued most notably by the literary theorist Raymond Williams) that seeks to understand the role of naturalized understandings in the reproduction of social inequality. Both discourse and hegemony assume that people in particular societies, or particular historical eras, have shared

categories of understanding, what anthropologists would define as shared culture. But unlike the culture concept, both hegemony and discourse theory portray these understandings, which structure beliefs, practices, and institutions, as sinister at heart and laden with power relationships. The differences they establish and maintain serve to naturalize and perpetuate inequalities. Postcolonial theory explores colonial discourse, relating it to wider powerful discourses about gender and about class and race, showing the powerful, constructed cultural understandings that animate the colonizers. Social orders are shown to be profoundly unequal. Postcolonial theorists take as their task the exploration of the role of culture (systems of meaning) in perpetuating that inequality. They fundamentally changed the ethical priorities for the study of culture, adding a concern to address power dynamics to inquiry into expanding knowledge of cultural possibilities.

Said's work reframed studies of colonial era literature and scholarship, leading to many demonstrations that colonial inquiries that seemed to be in search of knowledge and works that seemed to be knowledgeably descriptive were in fact reinforcing preexisting representations and colonial domination. For some postcolonial theorists, the message was that knowing itself is inextricably part of a colonial project. Most famously, Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak asks, "Can the subaltern speak?" She argues that, because of the power of colonial discourse, some colonized or otherwise subjugated people literally cannot represent themselves. Ironically, as many have observed, some postcolonial theory risked overvaluing the power of powerful colonial discourses. Yet nuanced studies, such as the work of Ashis Nandy, show colonialism to be an "intimate enemy," infiltrating the consciousness even of anticolonial figures. Nandy focuses not on Western texts but on the lives and texts of people living under colonialism, analyzing their writings and careers, showing the possibilities for adapting, inverting, and challenging colonial impositions in the course of creating new social and political visions.

The most influential early anthropological contribution to postcolonial studies was Talal Asad's edited volume *Anthropology and the Colonial Encounter*, which was published in 1973. In a chapter on two European views of non-European rule, Asad shows that Orientalist scholars portrayed Islamic polities as ruled by irrational despots who subjugated a repressed, passive populace, while British functionalist anthropologists writing about African political systems portrayed African polities organized through a self-reproducing consensus between chiefs and the people. Asad challenges these representations by discussing the local histories (of popular rebellions in Islamic polities, of dynamism, not stasis, in southern African kingdoms) that belie the scholarly stereotypes. He shows that the roots of these different representations lie in the differing underlying political and economic relations between the scholars' own societies and the societies whose political systems they describe. He makes a powerful case for anthropological analysis of the impact of such historical relations on scholarly representation. In a different vein, the anthropologist Bernard Cohn's studies of the colonial British in India describe powerful British colonial projects, but a much less determining colonial footprint, tracking the complex interactions between British and South Asian institutions and knowledge systems.

The subaltern studies school opened a new mode of inquiry in postcolonial theory in the 1980s. The subaltern studies collective is a group of scholars of South Asian history and historiography, some of whom had begun with political-economic approaches to South Asian history. However, where Marxist theorists would approach people's experiences, motives, and possibilities through an analysis of class relations, the subaltern studies scholars seek a more flexible way to understand experience and characterize indigenous and colonial inequalities. The terms *elite* and *subaltern* are relative. In relation to the colonial British, all Indians were subalterns, but landlords or factory owners, British or Indian, were elites relative to peasants or workers. Like Said, the subaltern studies group critiques the assumptions of colonial histories and, further, the elite assumptions of nationalist histories. But they also proposed that it is indeed possible to write the history of colonial and postcolonial "subalterns." In particular, they sought to research understandings and critiques not shaped by colonial influence, because of resistance or social distance or both. Oral history and critical readings of colonial documents were among the methods for bringing these histories to light: Ranajit Guha pioneered a critical approach to "the prose of counterinsurgency," reversing the meanings of colonial descriptions of subaltern rebellions. Shahid Amin found in local newspapers,

police reports, and oral history differences between what Gandhi said and what the subalterns heard. In this way, the contributions of initial subaltern studies to historical research articulated with the 1980s rapprochement of anthropology and history. At that time, historians in general turned to social history, and anthropologists developed an interest in historical agency. Some anthropologists focused on history making as local, culturally distinct forms of dynamism (as advocated by Marshall Sahlins's structure-and-history approach), while others such as Eric Wolf and Sidney Mintz viewed historical change in the context of world-system relations. In either approach, like the initial subaltern studies approach, the focus was on acknowledging and chronicling plural distinctive historical experiences and agencies.

Within the subaltern studies group, Spivak developed a critique, congruent with that of Said, of the politics of representing the experience of colonized or subjugated people. But others in the group wrote works representing the historical experiences of colonized and postcolonial subalterns. In this approach, and for many others in postcolonial studies, inquiry is couched as the study of colonial hegemony and resistance to hegemony, and such studies assume that no hegemony is ever complete. Resistance to hegemony is to be expected and can be studied. Indeed, studies of resistance to colonial or other forms of power became pervasive, complementing the focus on colonial discourse. The anthropologist Sherry Ortner reflects seriously on the widespread use of resistance as an analytic, placing it in the context of anthropology's ethnographic contributions and goals. Surveying both resistance analyses and critiques, she shows that the focus on resistance tends to ignore complex indigenous political systems in favor of a focus on Western power, that it can emphasize political-economic histories rather than appreciating local ethnographic realities and that its roots in textual study can lead to thin portrayals of what anthropologists often find to be richly contextualized cultural motives and intentions. (The anthropologist Clifford Geertz once defined good ethnography as "thick description.") Ortner ponders the question of whether the subaltern can speak, suggesting that respectful inquiry into motivations and agency is possible and that thickly descriptive inquiry and representations are possible. Other ethnographers argue, with Spivak, that subaltern peoples do not have the power to represent themselves the way elites can.

Within the humanities disciplines, postcolonial theory has also moved to become the study of contemporary literary and cultural works by non-Western authors, whether living in the former colonies or in former imperial centers. For many scholars, the enduring question is how to form an identity, voice, or subjectivity either beyond the powers of colonial discourse or effectively responding to it. Another development in the literary field has been the consideration of non-Western colonial powers (e.g., Japan) and their histories and resistances to them. Work in comparative literature has also opened up questions about Occidentalism, whether the reified representations of the West have been created by non-Western observers or by Westerners themselves. Does the project of Orientalism create a concomitant representation of Westerners as modern, powerful, and knowing subjects? Some see what anthropologist Arjun Appadurai named "modernity at large" as the end of colonial domination, while others see a renewal of colonialism in a new ideology of modernity.

Reframing Postcolonial Theory: Nations, Decolonization, Globalization, Modernities

A serious question for scholars of postcolonial theory themselves, and a common observation from outside the approach, is the problem of the primacy given to the colonial and the West by the use of terms such as *postcolonial* or *non-Western*. Even the study of anticolonial resistance can be seen as organizing the boundaries of the inquiry within colonial categories. The debates about knowledge and power and the possibilities of writing ethnographically and historically raised by postcolonial theory articulate well with cultural anthropology's long-term commitment to reflexivity. But anthropologists also bring questions that have reframed some of the terms and questions of postcolonial theory, beginning with the term *postcolonial* itself. Anthropologists have questioned the periodization implied in the term *postcolonial*, which implies an era unendingly defined by an era of Western domination. Most important, anthropologists have identified new ways to think about and name the postcolonial era, including a focus on decolonization, nation-states, globalization, and plural modernities.

The postcolonial era can be differently conceptualized through a focus on nations and nationalism, the political forms of anticolonial movements and of the postcolonial era, and their cultural concomitants. The interest of the humanities and social sciences in nations and nationalism was rekindled by Benedict Anderson's *Imagined Communities*, which considered national citizenries as "imagined communities." Anderson's language of imagination provides scholars from many fields, including literary, visual culture, and cultural studies, a way to address how people come to understand themselves as being a part of a national entity. Like the studies of colonial discourse, studies of national imagining raise questions of hegemonic ordering of people's understandings. But the study of national belonging, in Anderson's approach, also implies participation in a more egalitarian political entity. He argues that print capitalism, that is, shared consumption of texts, from newspapers to novels, led to shared national identities, a sentiment of shared time and space among people who would not in fact ever meet. Anderson explored the creation of this clearly horizontal national imagination in the Americas and in Europe. He then described the making of nations in the former colonies as exportation to the colonized world of a modular nation-state form. Like Said's *Orientalism*, Anderson's *Imagined Communities* has been criticized for its assumptions about the power of the West to impose its model on others. Historian Partha Chatterjee pointed out the irony of an approach that proposes that powerful nationalist, anticolonial movements need to be understood as the adoption of an already European modular political form.

More recently, other scholars have followed Bernard Cohn's suggestion to augment studies of European colonialism with attention to the study of the rise of American power in the 20th century. This approach reconsiders postcoloniality in relation to actual decolonization and the breakup of empires. Prior to World War II, empires were the predominant political form throughout the world. Even ostensible "nations" like England were also solidly and inextricably a part of an empire. After World War II, successful anticolonial liberation movements throughout the colonized world had to find their way in the American-planned global system of independent nation-states and were arrayed in a United Nations world. Both England and England's former colonies became individual nation-states. And in this Cold War era, the United States surpassed the former European powers.

Many scholars connect analysis of U.S. power with the analysis of European colonial power (e.g., contributions by the anthropologists Donna Haraway and Vicente Rafael appear in a recent multidisciplinary volume titled *Cultures of United States Imperialism*). Some, writing from a political-economic perspective, call U.S. power in the post–World War II era by the terms *neocolonialism* and *neo-imperialism*. Some, focusing on discourse, emphasize continuities between European colonial discourse and U.S. discourse, seeing Western Orientalism or hegemony as continuous, as Said did in *Orientalism*. They describe U.S. imperialism. In contrast, others reconceptualize the political and cultural trajectories of the world of nation-states, taking independence as real, with egalitarian goals, and also limited liability for the Western powers. They call this new world order "Pax Americana." For example, the anthropologist John Kelly analyzes the emergence of Pax Americana in a study of decolonization-era leaders and scholars who fought against empires but who also saw different dangers in U.S. power and the form of the nation-state. In the 1920s, Mahatma Gandhi's nationalism was highly internationalist, anticipating Indian independence as ushering in an era of international justice and interdependence. In the 1950s, Frantz Fanon warned of the vulnerability of small independent nation-states to capitalist exploitation. As global inequality increases and poverty spreads in many nations, scholars focused on the particular political forms of the post–World War II era see not imperialism as practiced in the past but new, specifically postcolonial predicaments, for which further decolonization cannot provide the solution, since it is the nation-state form that is the problem.

Continuing debates about the era after the end of the European empires have also led to a focus on modernity, alternative modernities, and globalization. The questions about modernity follow from observing the organization of postcolonial economies and cultures. The global connections of the European colonial world had featured imperial centers and colonies, an unequal but enduring hierarchy of colonizers and colonized, in which the colonizers believed themselves to be civilized or modern and considered the colonized as ancient or traditional. Even following independence, colonial

influences remain to be resisted. On the other hand, the post–World War II, postcolonial emergence of an era of separate, independent, bounded nation-states created a postcolonial baseline that made cross-boundary influence and interconnection a violation of self-determining sovereignty. But in this context, the late-20th-century rapid interconnections in global popular culture, facilitated by new technologies and capitalist interests, seemed startling. Some anthropologists, emphasizing the independent initiatives of non-Western societies in making their own choices in combination for their global future and local past, see the emergence of plural and alternative modernities, while other anthropologists, emphasizing one uneven history of capitalism, still see one globalizing modernity. Either way, as Appadurai has argued, modernity is no longer the attribute of the West, but rather, modernity is at large in a world of plural centers and sites of power. Scholars now debate whether globalization is ending postcoloniality, whether it is in fact a new form of empire, or whether it is the inevitable progression of decolonization as people push against the limits of the nation-state.

Martha Kaplan

See also Anderson, Benedict; Appadurai, Arjun; Asad, Talal; Foucault, Michel; Globalization Theory; Gramsci, Antonio; Said, Edward

Further Readings

Anderson, B. (1983). *Imagined communities: Reflections on the origin and spread of nationalism*. London, UK: Verso.

Appadurai, A. (1996). *Modernity at large: Cultural dimensions of globalization*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Asad, T. (1973). *Anthropology and the colonial encounter*. London, UK: Ithaca Press.

Cohn, B. (1996). *Colonialism and its forms of knowledge: The British in India*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Guha, R. (1982). On some aspects of the historiography of colonial India. In R. Guha (Ed.), *Subaltern studies: Vol. I. Writings on South Asian history and society* (pp. 1–8). New Delhi, India: Oxford University Press.

Kelly, J. D. (2001). Postcoloniality. In N. J. Smelser & P. B. Baltes (Eds.), *International encyclopedia of the social and behavioral sciences* (pp. 11844–11849). Oxford, UK: Elsevier Science.

Ortner, S. (1995). Resistance and the problem of ethnographic refusal. *Comparative Studies in Society and History, 37*(1), 173–193.

Said, E. (1978). *Orientalism*. New York, NY: Vintage Books.

Spivak, G. C. (1988). Can the subaltern speak? In C. Nelson & L. Grossberg (Eds.), *Marxism and the interpretation of culture* (pp. 271–313). Basingstoke, UK: Macmillan.

Williams, P., & Chrisman, L. (Eds.). (1994). *Colonial discourse and postcolonial theory: A reader*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

POSTMODERNISM

Postmodernism is a controversial philosophical, aesthetic, and cultural formation that has influenced culture, literature, art, and the social sciences, including anthropology.

Foundations

Postmodernity generally refers to a period beginning in the 1980s (sometimes also referred to as late capitalism) in which radical changes in technology, economics, politics, architecture, and popular culture signified a shift in society—a movement away from modernity. Some thinkers, including Daniel Bell, have denoted this period as a time of postindustrialism. Massive changes in the nature of economics (e.g., the movement toward multinational corporations), transformations in government, alterations in technology and information systems, the development of a media-based society, and changes in consumerism can all be attributed to this epochal shift that has been labeled *postmodernity*. In a cultural sense, postmodernity often refers to a period in society in which hyperreality and cultural eclecticism are the norms. Hyperreality is associated with the work of Jean Baudrillard, Umberto Eco, Guy Debord, and others and suggests that culture has become inauthentic mainly because people seem to lack the ability to distinguish between the "real" and the "fake" or "fictive." In 1984, philosopher Jean-François Lyotard offered that eclecticism is the natural state of contemporary culture—people eat various foods, reflect contrasting and contradictory tastes in fashion, and shop, consume, and take in numerous and divergent *memes* or sources of information.

In addition to being thought of as a social or cultural period, postmodernism also, somewhat ambiguously, refers to myriad philosophical, epistemological, aesthetic, and cultural styles, modes of thoughts, and worldviews.

While the meanings of postmodernism vary greatly, the concept suggests a radical reformation, an opening up of new lines of inquiry, and a general distrust of the sanctity of systems of knowledge (Truth) and forms of representation. Pastiche, the breakdown of high and low cultures, eclecticism (the blending of styles and forms that are incongruent), the breakdown of rules, non sequitur, irony and humor, resistance to authority and systems of power, the breakdown of the referent in semiotics, double coding, endless signifiers, indeterminacy, performativity, and the notion of the unrepresentable are some of the many concepts that are indicators of the postmodern.

Some of the most powerful influences of postmodernism arose within the world of aesthetics, popular culture, and media. In the world of literature, Samuel Beckett, James Joyce, William S. Burroughs, Thomas Pynchon, Jorge Luis Borges, Alfred Jarry, Kurt Vonnegut, Italo Calvino, and many others have been credited with introducing new modes of authorship that, perhaps indirectly, influenced the ways in which anthropologists and social scientists have thought about writing. In a similar sense, within the world of performance and music, artists such as John Cage challenged the notion of the authorship of the work of art. In Cage's mind, the chance operations of the *I Ching* could imitate the apparent randomness of nature and thus move the composition away from the composer's ego. Larger scale musical movements, such as punk, attacked another facet of culture—the idea of high culture. In the case of punk, anyone, literally, could be an artist. Punk drew on many of the cultural influences begun in movements like surrealism, Dadaism, Fluxus (an art movement that focused on anti-art, process, and everyday life), and other forms of performance and conceptual art. What was significant in these movements was the rejection of current modes of aesthetics, politics, and culture and the suggestion of radical new ways to approach the world.

The work of visual artists, including Marcel Duchamp (1887–1968), Joseph Beuys (1921–1986), and Andy Warhol (1928–1987), also drew attention to new modes of representation. Some of these were so jarring that they continue to exemplify what the art historian Robert Hughes has called the "shock of the new." Many visual artists have moved away from art equating with beauty, the sublime, or the genius of the individual artist to creating art that privileges parody, bricolage, pastiche, and anarchy and negates the power of the work as residing in the artist in favor of a more participatory understanding of art. The influences of artists like Duchamp, Beuys, and Warhol can be felt well outside the worlds of art. Like the other cultural influences considered here, these artists influenced the ways in which social scientists and others thought about the world and its representation.

Technological developments, especially those related to the media and forms of consumerism, have also laid a foundation for postmodernism. The montage effects of MTV music videos, much like the montage of surrealism and Dadaism, transformed the sensibilities of the viewers of media. In the world of architecture, a number of significant developments have also influenced postmodernism. Architects such as Robert Venturi (1925–) transformed the nature of architecture by developing what Charles Jencks, in 1977, noted as a double coding within the field. Architecture became more eclectic, often combining multiple styles in structures that, like the hermeneutics of Jacques Derrida, pointed to multiple interpretations. These cultural tendencies, along with the radical political upheavals of the 1960s, affected the cultural world to such a degree that they necessitated shifts within academic disciplines, including anthropology. This spirit of cultural radicalism had considerable impact on the lives of anthropologists and the academic institutions in which they taught, and anthropology, at least at the margins, began to embrace postmodern tendencies.

From within the history and philosophy of science, a number of developments have influenced the postmodern tendencies within anthropology. Thomas Kuhn's (1922–1996) conceptualization of the idea of the paradigm shift in his influential *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions* suggested that even within the most stringent empiricist and positivistic traditions of science, revolutions were likely to take place. His notion that illogical events could lead to scientific discoveries echoes the postmodern sensibilities of Paul K. Feyerabend (1924–1994), who, years after Kuhn, focused on an anarchistic philosophy of science that often advocated an

"anything goes" principle that strongly contradicted the logical approaches of empirical science. In terms of scientific disciplines, chaos theory (with its emphasis on the role that indeterminacy plays in natural phenomena) and quantum mechanics (with its focus on counterintuitive principles of reality) may have influenced some of the general tendencies of theoretical postmodernism.

Some of the most significant impacts on the development of postmodernism arose from the field of philosophy. The work of Friedrich Nietzsche may be the single greatest influence on postmodernism. His use of aphoristic style in works like *Human, All Too Human* established Nietzsche as a thinker who could not be easily categorized, and his exceptionally critical focus on society, value systems, and philosophical systems of thought (especially metaphysics) established a new precedent for critical philosophy. Perhaps his most important influence on postmodernism was his assertion that Truth was simply a form of illusion that people had forgotten was an illusion. This notion would provide ample grounds for the later critiques of Truth in the work of Baudrillard, Derrida, Foucault, and Lyotard. Equally significant in terms of their impact on postmodernism are Søren Kierkegaard and Martin Heidegger. Kierkegaard's critique of the rationalism of life and its impact on the individual and his attempts to radically rework Christian thought, as well as Heidegger's focus on the question of being and his views on the impacts of mass society on the individual, provided a strong foundation for postmodernism's insistence on a "war on totality," in Jean-François Lyotard's memorable phrase. In the years that followed these philosophers, the works of Walter Benjamin (especially his work "The Task of the Translator" and "The Work of Art in the Age of Its Mechanical Reproducibility"), Michel Foucault (notably for his focus on the nature of power and institutions), Jean Baudrillard (for his understandings of hyperreality and postmodern semiotics), Gilles Deleuze and Félix Guattari (who collaborated on many texts that took a postmodernist or "nomad" approach, e.g., *A Thousand Plateaus*), and Lyotard (whose *The Postmodern Condition: A Report on Knowledge*, 1984, established the most significant contemporary foundations of postmodernism) all influenced the development of postmodernism.

In semiotics and hermeneutics, one of the primary forces that shaped the textual and representational foci of postmodern anthropology is found in the work of Derrida. Derrida's notions of deconstruction, *différance*, and the eternal play of signifiers profoundly influenced the ways in which postmodernism would be developed within anthropology. In interdisciplinary senses, other significant schools of thought that had an impact on postmodernism include the Centre for Contemporary Cultural Studies and the Frankfurt school.

One of the most challenging aspects of postmodernism is the enormous variation in the ways the concept has been understood, applied, and debated. For some, the term *postmodernism* is nothing more than a buzzword—an empty signifier of loosely connected concepts in culture. For others, the concept has significant meaning, but due to its revolutionary nature, it, much like conceptual or avant-garde aesthetics, eludes clear meaning and definition. Others argue that the term is an inadequate way of dealing with the various forms of newness that appear in art, politics, science, and other fields. In this sense, whatever is new is postmodern, perhaps because it still has not been conceptualized. Robert Pool in his 1991 essay "Postmodern Ethnography?" argues that many anthropologists have been lumped into the camp known as "postmodern anthropology" but that the concept is a *shibboleth*—a term that means much to the many critics of "postmodernism" but offers little insights in terms of actual meaning.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

The influences of postmodernism on contemporary anthropology fall into three general trends. The first is an epistemological tendency that challenges the Enlightenment, empiricist, and positivistic assumptions of a knowable reality and reliable, truth-seeking methodologies. The second is a linguistic/hermeneutical tendency that attacks the assumptions of the omnipotence of the author and the final authority of the text, as well as the notion that the text can objectively represent various phenomena in the world. The third and final one is a political tendency that takes issue with the apolitical assumptions of science and methodology and posits a more political course for social science. These three tendencies have intermingled and have been realized in eclectic, contrasting, and sometimes ironically contradictory ways in anthropology.

Postmodern Anthropology

The most well-known of the forms of postmodernism that have taken root in anthropology appear in cultural anthropology. Beginning in 1986, a series of critical texts helped establish the foundations of this tendency—*Writing Culture: The Poetics and Politics of Ethnography* (edited by James Clifford and George Marcus), *Anthropology as Cultural Critique: An Experimental Moment in the Human Sciences* (George Marcus and Michael M. J. Fischer), *The Predicament of Culture: Twentieth-Century Ethnography, Literature, and Art* (James Clifford), and *The Unspeakable: Discourse, Dialogue, and Rhetoric in the Postmodern World* (Stephen A. Tyler). Some have labeled this focus as a form of meta-anthropology, which perhaps accurately captures the spirit in which this critique turns anthropology on itself. Many, if not most, of the anthropologists connected to these developments would disavow the use of the term *postmodern*. However, this term has stuck and has, for better or for worse, become the moniker that resonates most with the critiques of anthropology that emerged in the late 1980s.

Postmodern anthropology may be characterized in terms of three major impacts. First, it is an epistemological critique of knowledge that challenges the assumptions of West-centric, positivistic, and unproblematized forms of knowledge. Next, it is a challenge to anthropology's methodologies (fieldwork), its view of the relationship of the anthropologist to the observed, and the connections of fieldwork to the text (ethnography). Last, it is the explicit critique of ethnography—the nature of textuality, its politics, its disciplinary position within anthropology, issues of the specific form and modes of the text, the voice of the ethnographer, and the role of the informant within the text.

In terms of the first area—the epistemological critique—this focus, much like the foci of postprocessualism and feminist anthropology, addressed the nature of knowledge production within the discipline. Some major tenets of the past—the model of the static social structure, an uncritical and often reified view of culture, archaic typologies (band, tribe, chiefdom, and state), and the emphasis on the culture area paradigm—were explicitly and implicitly challenged by postmodernists. Especially relevant, though related more explicitly to the second and third critiques, was the concern with positivistic and scientific views of culture that gave the field-worker an omnipotent status. Many cultural anthropologists, like their processualist counterparts in archaeology, failed to question their status in anthropological knowledge production and instead assumed that culture, and its people, could be objectively understood. In addition, many theoretical specializations—such as structural functionalism, cultural materialism, cognitive anthropology, and cultural ecology—were challenged because they presumed a structure that existed above, and not through, cultural actors on the ground.

The second major area of postmodern cultural anthropology addressed the ways in which anthropologists went about doing anthropology. Some traditionalists (though not necessarily uncritical of some of the concerns of postmodern anthropology) in the discipline continued to advocate for approaches to fieldwork that modeled strictly the exemplars of participant observation of Bronisław Malinowski. Some ethnographers of the apparent postmodern camp, including Renato Rosaldo, suggested that new insights be brought to bear on the methodologies of the discipline. In "Grief and a Headhunter's Rage" (from *Culture and Truth: The Remaking of Social Analysis*), Rosaldo presented a complex methodological interplay of the rage of the Ilongot he studied with his own rage and identity as he dealt with the tragic death of his wife, Michelle Zimbalist Rosaldo. Rosaldo, like many other postmodernists, offered the idea that emotion, subjectivity, and the important aspect of reflexivity could, and indeed should, be a part of new methods of fieldwork.

Another significant development in anthropological research methods is the new way in which some field-workers conceptualize their field studies and undertake them. George Marcus has passionately argued for new forms of what he calls research imaginaries, and one in particular—multisited ethnography (ethnography that involves more than one field site)—has influenced both cultural anthropology and the social sciences. Additionally, in multiple publications, Marcus, along with Paul Rabinow, has called for new models of research collaboration and for rethinking the traditional relationships between informant and field-worker. One of the most interesting examples of this latter development is Marcus's notion of ethnographic complicity, or the idea that

ethnographers and informants are wrapped up in mutual and conflicting moral and political worlds.

The third area focuses on the textual criticisms of ethnography. Since much of postmodernism developed in literary critique, postmodernists were drawn to the analysis and critique of ethnographies. On the one hand, the postmodern approaches of the late 1980s took issue with ethnography as a disciplinary form—a model that graduate students and future ethnographers were asked, at least by traditionalists, to follow almost religiously. In some part, this concern was influenced by the work of Clifford Geertz, who prior to the late 1980s established an important critical focus on interpretive anthropology, "thick description," and an emphasis on the anthropologist as a kind of author. The contexts established in *Writing Culture* most famously situated ethnography in a "crisis of representation." Exceptionally significant in the *Writing Culture* critiques were notions of ethnographic authority and power, the rhetoric of ethnographic texts, the role of the ethnographer, and numerous other issues that challenged the idea of ethnography as the hallmark of the discipline.

On the other hand, the postmodern ethnographic criticisms of the 1980s focused attention on the production of actual postmodern or experimental ethnographies. These are ethnographies that have presumably followed the epistemological, methodological, and representational critiques of postmodern anthropology and have developed new and postmodern approaches to textuality, including new approaches to reflexivity, bifocality, montage and juxtaposition, "messy texts," and other experimental approaches. Some of the earliest examples of such texts include Paul Rabinow's *Reflections on Fieldwork in Morocco* (1977) (notable for its critical insights on the relationship of the ethnographer and the informant), Jean-Paul Dumont's *The Headman and I: Ambiguity and Ambivalence in the Fieldworking Experience* (1978) (for its attention to how Dumont's informants viewed him in the field), Vincent Crapanzano's *Tuhami: Portrait of a Moroccan* (1980) (especially for its challenge to traditional notions of life history), Kevin Dwyer's *Moroccan Dialogues* (1982) (for its challenging of scientific realism and advocacy for dialogic approaches to ethnography), Anna Lowenhaupt Tsing's *In the Realm of the Diamond Queen* (1993) (critical for its emphasis on redefining the notion of the ethnographic imaginary and its use of multiple textual techniques), Kathleen Stewart's *A Space on the Side of the Road* (1996) and *Ordinary Affects* (2007) (both for their attention to the intricacies and contradictions of everyday life), Marc Augé's *In the Metro* (2002) (for its meandering focus on the city metro system), and George E. Marcus and Fernando Mascarenhas's *Ocasião: The Marquis and the Anthropologist: A Collaboration* (2005) (for its new approach to ethnographic collaboration).

One of the highest levels of experimentalism in ethnography is found in the work of the anthropologist Michael Taussig. Beginning with *Shamanism, Colonialism and the Wild Man: A Study in Terror and Healing* (1987), Taussig has traced an interesting and critical path for experimental ethnography. Some of his later work, including *The Magic of the State* (1997), has been criticized for its reliance on approaches that stray too close to fiction and that emphasize too heavily the presence of the ethnographer. While Taussig, and many of the other ethnographers listed, do point to a new realm of possibility and experimentalism within ethnography, these only partially enact what Stephen A. Tyler argued for postmodern ethnography in his "Post-Modern Ethnography: From Document of the Occult to Occult Document" (1987). While it would be difficult to construe Tyler's concepts in this particular piece as a guidebook for enacting postmodern ethnography, many of his concepts have not been fully explored in an experimental ethnographic sense—an effect that strikes the discipline, much like the entirety of postmodernism, in indirect, ironic, and sometimes unseen ways.

Criticisms of Postmodern Anthropology

The criticisms of postmodern anthropology have been widespread and varied in approach and tone. One, and perhaps the most common, focuses on the idea that postmodernism attacks the scientific and methodological bases of the discipline. Many empiricists and positivists claim that postmodernism has moved the discipline toward a nonscientific basis, perhaps more toward the humanities. One especially prevalent form of this critique has been the assertion that postmodern anthropology is primarily a textual movement, hence a moniker of the "literary turn" in anthropology that some critics have offered.

An additional form of this critique has been the argument that postmodernism steered professional anthropology away from concerns with fieldwork and into concerns with ethnography as a textual object. Postmodernists such as Stephen P. Sangren and George Marcus have responded that critics have too rigidly construed postmodernism as purely textual critique and ignored the degree to which it has opened anthropology to more critical dialogue and debate about its core principles.

Additional criticisms have highlighted the sometimes challenging level of language of some postmodernist texts (e.g., the work of Tyler). They have charged that postmodern anthropology is solipsistic, egotistical, and noncommunal, and that it has fractured the discipline and destabilized the political bases of anthropology (a common critique offered by feminist anthropologists). Furthermore, they have charged that postmodern anthropology, because it takes a critical and revolutionary position, develops its own sort of authority, a sense of privilege within the discipline. Some, including Marvin Harris, have gone so far as to associate some of the approaches of postmodernists—including those of Tyler and a number of feminist ethnographers—with fascist impulses. In his *Theories of Culture in Postmodern Times*, Harris suggests that the purported extreme relativism of postmodern ethnography parallels the political relativism espoused by the fascist Benito Mussolini. In Harris's mind, the ideas of postmodern ethnography are the latest in a line that runs from Nietzsche to Mussolini to the postmodernists. Many of these criticisms appear to be personal in nature and do not seem to advance the discipline, but taken as a whole, they represent a possible space for future dialogue within anthropology.

Feminist Anthropology

Like postprocessualism and postmodern anthropology, feminist anthropology has offered especially insightful and often intense criticisms of mainstream anthropology. Feminist anthropology shares with postmodernism insights about disciplinary power, the political dynamics of fieldwork, and the focus on new forms of reflexivity and ethnographic voice. Feminist practice within anthropology may be traced to the important legacies of Margaret Mead and her contributions to fieldwork practice, ethnography, and the study of gender in society. Years later, Rayna (Reiter) Rapp's *Toward an Anthropology of Women* illustrated the many ways in which women had been excluded from ethnographic study and how male bias had affected anthropology. In the late 1980s, Henrietta Moore published *Feminism and Anthropology* and further elaborated the critiques of Rapp. Moore argued that even work done by female anthropologists reproduced a patriarchal bias. In terms of disciplinary standing within anthropology, like postmodernist anthropology, feminist anthropology was often relegated to a minor status within the academy. Critics of this approach have argued in a vein similar to those who have expressed concerns about the nature of postmodernist anthropology. For some, the feminist approach is antiscientific and too controversial for its attack on the many biases of mainstream anthropology. In the 1980s, other feminist anthropologists produced work that, in many ways, paralleled the disciplinary critiques of postmodernist anthropology. Feminist anthropology introduced important insights from academic feminism, such as standpoint theory (or the effect of an individual's perception on the construction of knowledge), into many circles within professional anthropology. Interestingly, it is the connection with the postmodernist anthropological critiques of the late 1980s that provided both an impetus and a challenge to feminist anthropology.

Many have pointed out that before the critiques of the late 1980s, some feminist ethnographers had drawn attention to the dynamics of power and knowledge within field contexts and others focused on addressing these dynamics, in their own right, by developing forms of reflexivity in their ethnography. This issue, in combination with a comment made by Clifford in the introduction to *Writing Culture*, provided a springboard for much of the dialogue that surrounded feminist anthropology. Clifford claimed that there was a viable feminist ethnographic critique; this was seen as an affront by some critics, and others, perhaps unfairly, viewed this as a delegitimation of feminist ethnography. While Clifford's comments may have been taken out of context, in their wider consideration, they do suggest political contexts in which feminist ethnography has been viewed as secondary to other camps within the discipline. In addition to this political issue, some feminist anthropologists have expressed concern that the postmodernist critiques of anthropology allow for the continued subordination of feminist

ethnographers. These feminist critics argue that postmodernist anthropology maintains a masculinist subjectivity and thus does not represent a true decolonization of contemporary anthropology.

Margery Wolf has argued that the crisis of representation addressed in postmodern anthropological critiques has an additional aspect—the responsibility of the ethnographer to the informant and the audience. Judith Stacey has argued that this political responsibility, ironically, challenges the ability to have a truly authentic feminist ethnography. Other feminist ethnographers have suggested the combining of postmodern or experimental tendencies within ethnography with forms of political praxis and activism, as in new ethnographies of the national state, globalization, and other phenomena. Perhaps one of the most interesting results of the energetic debates among postmodernists, feminists, and traditionalists within the discipline is an exciting future syncretism of ethnographic form and practice.

Legacy

While it is impossible to state all of the specific ways in which postmodernism has influenced anthropology, it is clear that it can be said that postmodernism has challenged the epistemological, methodological, and representational (textual) foundations of the discipline. In the 2010s, there are already signs of rapid shifts that have occurred as a result of these critiques. New models of culture, society, and the individual have taken root (see *Global Assemblages: Technology, Politics, and Ethics as Anthropological Problems*, edited by Aihwa Ong and Stephen J. Collier; *Lines: A Brief History* by Tim Ingold; *Empire of the Senses: The Sensual Culture Reader* by David Howes; and *Partial Connections* by Marilyn Strathern), new and innovative fieldwork methods have been developed (multisited ethnography, notions of ethnographic complicity, and considerations of global/local contexts), innovative research designs have been created (Anthropology of the Contemporary Research Collaboratory at the University of California, Berkeley; Center for Ethnography at the University of California, Irvine), and ethnographic texts have become more experimental in nature—though perhaps, disappointingly, not fully so. While the ultimate power of postmodern anthropological critique may remain phantomlike—perhaps due to the continued marginalization of this power by mainstream forces in the discipline—the legacy of this important critique will continue to inspire.

Scott A. Lukas

See also Baudrillard, Jean; Benjamin, Walter; Clifford, James; Derrida, Jacques; Feminist Anthropology; Fischer, Michael; Foucault, Michel; Geertz, Clifford; Harris, Marvin; Harvey, David; Jameson, Fredric; Lyotard, Jean-François; Marcus, George; Rosaldo, Renato; Strathern, Marilyn; Tyler, Stephen A.

Further Readings

Behar, R., & Gordon, D. A. (Eds.). (1996). *Women writing culture*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. E. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Geuijen, K., Diederick, R., & de Wolf, J. (Eds.). (1995). *Post-modernism and anthropology: Theory and practice*. Assen, Netherlands: Van Gorcum.

Harvey, D. (1991). *The condition of postmodernity: An enquiry into the origins of cultural change*. New York, NY: Blackwell.

Jameson, F. (2005). *Postmodernism, or, the cultural logic of late capitalism*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Lyotard, J.-F. (1984). *The postmodern condition: A report on knowledge*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Marcus, G. E. (1998). *Ethnography through thick and thin*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Mascia-Lees, F. E., Sharpe, P., & Cohen, C. B. (1989). The postmodernist turn in anthropology: Cautions from a feminist perspective. *Signs, 15*(1), 7–33.

Sangren, P. S. (1988). Rhetoric and the authority of ethnography: "Postmodernism" and the social reproduction of texts. *Current Anthropology, 29*(3), 405–435.

Tyler, S. A. (1987). *The unspeakable: Discourse, dialogue, and rhetoric in the postmodern world*. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Wolf, M. (1992). *A thrice told tale: Feminism, postmodernism and ethnographic responsibility*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

POSTSTRUCTURALISM

Although the term *poststructuralism* is sometimes used loosely to refer to general theoretical trends in anthropology since the 1970s, it was first coined to

describe the work of a number of French scholars—principally, Roland Barthes, Jacques Lacan, Michel Foucault, and Jacques Derrida—who were stimulated by or in dialogue with Claude Lévi-Strauss. Except for Lévi-Strauss, these scholars were not anthropologists; rather, their expertise ranged primarily across literary theory, psychoanalysis, history, and philosophy.

Structuralism and the Roots of Cultural Critique

The theoretical system known as structuralism, which Lévi-Strauss inaugurated in anthropology in the 1940s, had become by the 1950s and 1960s a broad intellectual movement in France. It was also becoming increasingly influential elsewhere in Europe and in North America. In reacting to this movement, it was inevitable that Barthes, Lacan, Foucault, and Derrida would have some impact on anthropology. Foucault's work eventually became especially influential in the discipline, and Foucauldian theory is now sometimes taken by anthropologists to exemplify poststructuralism as a whole. Although there are other significant strands to poststructuralism that developed through Barthes, Lacan, and Derrida (and some others), these have had less impact on anthropology.

Initially, Barthes, Lacan, Foucault, and Derrida were themselves regarded as structuralists because they shared with Lévi-Strauss an interest in structural linguistics. Structuralism had its roots in the linguistic theories of Ferdinand de Saussure, with their teachings about the arbitrariness of the linguistic sign and the idea that words do not have meanings in and of themselves but only by virtue of their relational positions within systemic codes or "structures." Lévi-Strauss was also profoundly influenced by his encounter with American cultural anthropology, with its emphasis on the fundamental relationship between language, worldview, and cultural configuration. In 1960, he declared social anthropology to be so akin to linguistics that it should be defined as a branch of semiology—the study of signs. In so doing, he recast Émile Durkheim and Marcel Mauss's earlier emphasis on collective representations and located anthropological endeavor, even in areas such as kinship, economics, and technology, as the study of cultural models or systems of meaning. Anthropology's object was thus defined as "the symbolic function," which Lévi-Strauss located in the ordering properties of the unconscious mind.

By 1960, French intellectual life had been dominated for some time by phenomenology and existentialism, philosophies that emphasized the fundamentally subjective and experiential dimensions of authentic knowledge of the world. Lévi-Strauss's structuralism provided a strong objectivist and rationalist countercurrent to this, suggesting that truth inhered in the general properties of symbolic systems, not in the intentional lives of individuals, and that this truth could only be recovered by investigative methods, not by intuition. However, when Lévi-Strauss began to popularize this view, particularly after the publication of his *Tristes Tropiques* in 1955, Barthes and Lacan were inspired to put forward their own, rather different ideas about the relationship between structural linguistics and culture. A little later, they were joined by Foucault and Derrida. Broadly speaking, this is the shift from structuralism to poststructuralism. While this terminology signals some large departures that Barthes, Lacan, Foucault, and Derrida made from Lévi-Strauss's original ideas, affinities remained in poststructuralism's abiding concerns with signification and the nature of human subjectivity.

Jacques Lacan

Lacan independently established an interest in Durkheim in the 1930s, but Lévi-Strauss later introduced him to Saussure and structural linguistics. This prompted Lacan to move toward what he called his "return to Freud," which in effect meant a linguistically informed reinterpretation of the psychoanalyst's idea of the unconscious. While Lévi-Strauss took structural linguistics into the study of culture as forms of objectified thought (kinship, totemism, and myth), Lacan pursued its links to people's inner life, eventually declaring his view that the unconscious was "structured like a language." More than that, he suggested that systems of signification *create* the unconscious as "the Other," in the sense that becoming a human subject requires the submission of one's egoistic desires to orders of rules and regulations (repression). At the same time, however, the unconscious becomes the repository of all manner of creative connection between signifiers, which Lacan, borrowing directly from Lévi-Strauss, called "the Symbolic order." Where Freud had found

the unconscious to be indeterminately articulated by processes of condensation and displacement, Lacan suggested that these processes conformed to the metaphoric and metonymic characteristics of language as processes serving to express the subject's unconscious desire (sublimation). Implicit in this view was the idea that the unconscious must always be a *cultural* unconscious, even though its structural relationship to the ego was in some sense necessary and universal.

While Lévi-Strauss modeled the symbolic function as a taken-for-granted aspect of the human condition, Lacan was more concerned with how the symbolic order takes root in persons and is maintained as intersubjectivity. As a psychoanalyst, he favored an explanation privileging the Oedipal situation, suggesting that the symbolic was tied to "the law of the father" and in tension with the order of "the Imaginary," which involved a mirror-like identification with objects, archetypally the mother. Lacan made some remarks about the specificity of modern Oedipal dynamics and suggested that these were not exactly replicated in other cultures, but he did not fully engage with anthropological debates about the universality of the Oedipus complex. Neither did he systematically link his ideas about language and the unconscious to the contemporaneously emerging field of ethnopsychoanalysis. While a few anthropologists have operationalized aspects of Lacanian theory in ethnographic situations since the 1970s, Lacanian anthropology has not formed a recognizable disciplinary field in its own right, tending instead to function as an adjunct to other perspectives.

Louis Althusser and Roland Barthes

Louis Althusser took an interest in Lacan's theories in an effort to better conceptualize the Marxist notion of ideology, suggesting that Lacanian theory well described the way in which subjects were "interpellated" by systems of signification. However, it was Barthes who most systematically used structuralist ideas to support Marxist analysis and critique. Barthes was from the outset a violent critic of bourgeois culture in France, particularly as it was expressed through conventional literary theory. However, his most virulent attack on bourgeois values was mounted in his 1957 book *Mythologies*, where he sought to demystify a motley collection of signs operating in French culture—everything from striptease to laundry detergent and from professional wrestling to the latest Citroën car. His aim was to show how such cultural phenomena carried meanings that stretched beyond themselves along connotative chains of signification, so that wine and milk, for example, did not simply announce themselves to consciousness but, through certain equivalences and contrasts, obliquely spoke to the French national character as energetic and virile. For Barthes, this symbolism was a comfortable bourgeois artifice, alienating people from the ugly truths inherent in the circumstances of capitalist production and commodification—of wine and everything else.

In Barthes's hands, structuralism became a way of revealing truth and speaking to its power, primarily by way of taunt rather than as a call to arms. His moralizing style set him apart from Lévi-Strauss and Lacan, and most of his projects, which lay principally in the field of literature, were highly marginal to anthropology, if not to the burgeoning field of cultural studies. In time, Barthes became dissatisfied with the kind of technique he had deployed in *Mythologies*, realizing that it depended on a point of reference that placed him, as author and knowing subject, outside the system of signification and in direct touch with truth and reality. In structuralist terms, this was an impossible place to be, hence the maxim eventually coined by Derrida: "There is nothing outside the text." Barthes's response was to declare "the death of the author," indicating that there could be no final or fixed account of cultural products, only a multiplicity of interpretations that should be actively fostered by an open, indeterminate process of writing, rather than closed down in the name of ultimate truth. This view was eventually echoed in Clifford Geertz's account of thick description (although he appeared to owe no particular debt to Barthes) and played a significant part in the turn toward experimental writing in anthropology during the 1970s and 1980s. Barthes also studied Japanese culture, publishing his account in 1970 as *The Empire of Signs*. He argued that the manner in which Japanese people trucked in signs illustrated a culture without any Western-like notion of transcendental subjectivity, a position that recapitulated Geertz's modeling of Balinese personhood in his famous essay "Person, Time and Conduct in Bali." This correspondence was not entirely fortuitous, since it indicates how the trend toward

poststructuralism was part of a larger movement of cultural critique and the undoing of Eurocentricity.

Jacques Derrida

Jacques Derrida is generally credited with the definitive poststructuralist critique of Western philosophical assumptions, which he initiated by accusing structuralists of continuing to privilege a "metaphysics of presence" and the idea of a coherent subject, in spite of the structuralist mantra that all identity is necessarily relational and largely beyond itself. He is associated with the term *deconstruction*, which is sometimes confused with cultural critique and demystification but which in fact refers to a method of exposing contradictions in texts. Contradictions are not treated as error but as intrinsic, as well as self-referential, so that deconstruction is always ranged against consistency, including one's own. Derrida applied this method not only to the writings of Saussure, Lévi-Strauss, Lacan, Foucault, and a number of philosophers but also to a number of social and politico-legal issues, such as globalization, sovereignty, violence, and the relationship between law and justice. His broad position was that, in all matters, one necessarily works toward some horizon—a place that is simultaneously a limit and an opening, and therefore a paradoxical wedding of presence and absence. Deconstruction is therefore at once the construction and the destruction of identity, a "decentering" of both subjectivity and Enlightenment reason.

Like Barthes, Derrida's significance for anthropology lies principally in the field of cultural critique. In destabilizing the West's metaphysics of presence, Derrida was also exposing its ethnocentrism—even in Lévi-Straussian anthropology. While Derrida is not frequently found in anthropological writing, his indirect influence has been immense because of the way in which postcolonial theorists such as Homi Bhaba, Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak, and Robert Young took up his work after the 1970s. For postcolonial theory, Derrida offered a way of conceiving global history and the relationship between "the West and the Rest" that was responsive to subalterns, defined as those who had been excluded from hegemonic colonial discourses.

Postcolonialism and Michel Foucault

As an effect of decolonization during the middle of the 20th century, postcolonialism not only refracted globalized identity politics and new nationalisms but also caused a crisis of consciousness in the West, whose relationship to its "Other" was being confounded. Unsurprisingly, anthropology, as the study of this Other, suffered a similar fate, leading to a crisis of representation. The publication of Edward Said's *Orientalism* in 1978 was a key marker of this crisis and was quickly taken up by anthropologists. The 1983 publication of Johannes Fabian's *Time and the Other: How Anthropology Makes its Object* was more anthropologically symptomatic, but both books asked searching questions about the way Western intellectuals construct those regarded as exotic. However, Derrida was almost entirely absent from these texts; rather, their primary poststructuralist inspiration was Foucault.

Foucault distanced himself from structuralism and rarely engaged its terminology, but his publications did go directly to relevant matters concerning language and signification. Beginning in the 1960s, and informed by work in the philosophy of science, he embarked on a series of projects in the history of ideas, along the way introducing and refining a battery of concepts concerning the relationship between knowledge and power. He suggested that there were specific epochs in history characterized by distinctive epistemic orders that generated discourses of various kinds—for example, about sexuality, mental health, criminality, art, or science. His interest was in epistemic change, but as a lapsed Marxist, he did not treat discourses as superstructural. Rather, discourse was seen to reflect desire and power, manifesting itself as the will to speak the truth—hence the intricate coupling of knowledge and power.

Power was not simply located hierarchically but was "everywhere," wherever discourse was encountered. Discourses created subjects as "positions." Rules of inclusion and exclusion defined what was proper and improper, so that some discourses and positions were central and authoritative, while others were marginal and resistant to domination. While Foucault explored the former, he was most interested in the ways in which deviant discourses were expressed and repressed, particularly in modern society, which he characterized as "disciplinary," "carceral," "panoptic," and "governmental." He tended to imply that modern techniques of discursive control were pathological in their obsession with uniformity and their repression of otherness. Consequently, his preference was for exploring the resistant and plural voices of the marginal—criminals, lunatics, and perverts. In valorizing these voices, his

work was not simply poststructural but antistructural, and therefore easily aligned with work that was not simply postcolonial but anticolonial.

Said's Foucauldian thesis in *Orientalism* was that the West had discursively controlled and thereby subordinated the Orient. Fabian's *Time and the Other* ghosted Said's book in suggesting that anthropology had been guilty of similar intellectual imperialism, a charge specifically leveled at Lévi-Strauss and structuralism. However, Foucault has also had a more positive impact on anthropology, inspiring not only a valorization of the Other's voice through dialogical methods but also a systematic ethnographic interrogation of Western knowledge, including that of science. Paul Rabinow's work since the 1970s typifies this "anthropology of the contemporary," although Foucault's influence is pervasive, with the idea of discourse in large measure serving to displace or redefine the idea of culture. In addition, his take on power/knowledge has contributed greatly to the politicization of the discipline, filling the void created by the near abandonment of structural Marxism after the 1970s, although there remains much argument about Foucault's emancipatory potential.

Poststructuralism, Anthropology, and Decentered Subjectivity

Poststructuralism contributes significantly to postmodern thought but is not coextensive with postmodernism. It has never been a unified theoretical approach, and it cannot be identified with a single thinker. However, structuralist and poststructuralist studies have been united in their concern with culture as signification, now most commonly named as "discourse." A further common thread lies in an anti-Cartesian attitude, where singular identity is subordinated to plural relationships—an idea that is now commonplace in anthropology, although it has not always been directly derived from structuralism. The passage from structuralism to poststructuralism in anthropology, from Lévi-Strauss, Lacan, and Barthes to Derrida and Foucault, can be broadly defined in those terms—as a therapeutic working through of the idea of decentered subjectivity at a time when the discipline was losing its "primitive" object and rediscovering itself in a much fuller, if less disciplined, relationship with its Other.

John Morton

See also Althusser, Louis; Deconstruction; Derrida, Jacques; Discourse Theory; Foucault, Michel; Geertz, Clifford; Lacan, Jacques; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Postcolonial Theory; Said, Edward; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Semiotics; Structuralism

Further Readings

Belsey, C. (2002). *Poststructuralism: A very short introduction*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Clifford, J. (1988). *The predicament of culture: Twentieth-century ethnography, literature, and art*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Fabian, J. (1983). *Time and the other: How anthropology makes its object*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Macksey, R., & Eugenio, D. (1972). *The structuralist controversy: The languages of criticism and the sciences of man*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Merquior, J. G. (1986). *From Prague to Paris: A critique of structuralist and post-structuralist thought*. London, UK: Verso.

Norris, C. (1982). *Deconstruction: Theory and practice*. London, UK: Methuen.

Rosenau, P. M. (1992). *Post-modernism and the social sciences: Insights, inroads, and intrusions*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Sturrock, J. (Ed.). (1979). *Structuralism and since: From Lévi-Strauss to Derrida*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Practice Theory

Pierre Bourdieu's intellectual project is distinguished by methodological and conceptual schema devoted to the synthesis of oppositions that are apparent in Western thought and the social sciences. Such oppositions include the binaries of body and mind, structure and agency, subjectivism and objectivism, theory and practice, the material and the symbolic, as well as interpretation and explanation. Because Bourdieu viewed such antinomies as artificial, much effort in his scientific program was mobilized to reconcile seemingly antithetical theoretical positions. Such attempts at synthesis were undertaken by following the methodology of reflexive scholasticism, which Bourdieu advocated. So in an extensive body of work, he continued not only to refine, rework, and rethink but also to rarely fix his conceptual

schemata. That Bourdieu was seldom categorical in his exposition of concepts and analytical devices makes attempts to specify and also apply his constructs challenging. The challenge is compounded by the use of an abstract stylistic idiom or, as detractors would argue, a convoluted writing technique to expound on some of his key analytic tools. Attempts to unravel the enigma of his constructs and theory therefore must reckon with such density and also with the fact that the development of his notions occurs through writings that are not only theoretical treatises but also empirical dissertations. A further layer of difficulty is presented by the interdependence of the constructs that inform his conceptual repertoire, as the disambiguation of one item in Bourdieu's lexicon requires the concurrent decoding of others. Such is the case in his theory of practice.

Bourdieu's theory of practice was an attempt to overcome the deeply entrenched dichotomy between subjectivism and objectivism. This attempt is elaborated through many of his writings, and the first substantial formulation of the theory was initiated in *Esquisse d'une théorie de la pratique*, which was translated and revised as *Outline of a Theory of Practice*. In this volume, Bourdieu's conceptualization of practice unfolded within a detailed ethnographic account of Kabylian matrimonial strategies, rituals, and myths. He amplified his framework as well as his ethnography and further developed his notions of practice in *Le sens pratique*, or the *Logic of Practice*. In the *Logic of Practice*, Bourdieu also articulated his concerns about reflexivity in scholarly practice by emphasizing that the construction of knowledge, including anthropological knowledge, and observation is situated in and informed by context. In *La Distinction: Critique sociale du jugement*, translated as *Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgement of Taste*, practice is discussed as inextricably linked to the concepts of habitus as well as of capital and field, or what are considered the principal thinking tools of Bourdieusian approach.

Subjectivism and Objectivism: A Binary Opposition

According to Loïc Wacquant, Bourdieu's signature intellectual style is monistic, or antidualistic. In the *Logic of Practice*, Bourdieu argued that the division between subjectivism and objectivism was one of the most fundamental and ruinous in social science. In advancing his theory of practice, then, he sought to overcome the incompatibility between the two. According to Bourdieu, subjectivism is a stance in the social sciences that takes representations as a point of departure to assert that reality is the accumulation of acts of interpretation on which people construct lines of meaningful interaction. Objectivism, on the other hand, implies that the social world is constituted by sets of rules, relations, and forces that impose themselves on individuals to determine conduct and representations. Bourdieu's project was to produce an analytical apparatus that enabled the transcendence of such binary oppositions.

Bourdieu insisted that the work of intellectuals and the ideas to which they subscribe should be read and understood as conditioned by the context that produced it. In submitting his theory of practice to such a contextualization, two key facets serve to illuminate the significance of his theory of practice, particularly as a transcendental instrument. First is the temporal and intellectual context of the formation of Bourdieu as a scholar. Second is the empirical context of his fieldwork experiences. As a scholar, Bourdieu came of age during a period of time in the 1940s and 1950s when phenomenology and structuralism prevailed as the dominant modes of thought in France. These modes of thought were simultaneously incorporated into and repudiated in his work. To Bourdieu, the dichotomy between subjectivism and objectivism reflected the epistemological positions of phenomenology and structuralism. Largely the domain of German philosophers, such as Edmund Husserl and Martin Heidegger, phenomenological premises also had their French interlocutors. One of the most notable was Maurice Merleau-Ponty, with whom Bourdieu studied. Phenomenological premises also were present in the work of the postwar existentialists. Subjectivism then was concerned with ontological questions of *being*, asserting the primacy of idealism as well as issues of human will, individual choice, and personal freedom. The objectivist tradition was embodied in the work of Claude Lévi-Strauss and an anthropological program that sought to explain human behavior as a reflection of rules. Structuralism's project was to render visible the invisible social structures, regularities, and rules that governed human action in different societies and cultures. Bourdieu acknowledged that each of these modes of knowledge represented a distinct view of human action. In phenomenology

or subjectivism, human action is seen as a function of individual choice and decision making; while in structuralism, human actions are seen as a function of rules of behavior. Subjectivism became a presupposition of ethnomethodological, constructivist, culturalist, and interpretivist approaches to analyzing the social world. The constructivist, culturalist, and idealist approaches investigate the commonsense perceptions and actions of the individual. The structuralist-analytic approach pursues the invisible relational patterns operating behind the backs of agents. To Bourdieu, neither analytic optic was tenable as a way of understanding the social world in its own right. The tenuous status of these stances as independent theoretical positions was underscored by observations of human action made during his fieldwork.

In fieldwork among the Kabylia of Algeria and also the rural Béarn, Bourdieu observed that human action did indeed involve choices and decisions. But he also observed that choices and decisions were not made according to an individual's free will. In both contexts, for example, he observed that marriage choices were not simply a function of choosing and not the mere application of social rules. What Bourdieu saw was that individual action emerged from an unconscious calculation and a strategic positioning in a specific social space to accomplish a social end.

The Notion of Habitus

The puzzle for Bourdieu was to account for how behavior is regulated without being a function of following rules. In working through this problem and based on field-derived observations, he argued that the social world could not be understood by reducing the field of the observer's vision to the voluntarism that was a descendent of phenomenology or to the determinism that was a descendent of structuralism. His view was that there was in fact an "ontological complicity" between objectivist and subjectivist modes of knowledge and also a dialectical relationship between these seemingly antagonistic theoretical stances. Bourdieu's theory of practice therefore explores this ontological complicity by elaborating on the dialectic between subjectivism and objectivism. The elaboration of this dialectic is particularly enabled by the notion of *habitus*, and his theory of practice is further realized through the interrelated constructs of *habitus*, *capital*, and *field*. In his 1984 work *Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgement of Taste*, Bourdieu formalizes the interrelationship as

$$[(\text{Habitus})(\text{Capital})] + \text{Field} = \text{Practice}.$$

The general thrust of his theory of practices is encapsulated in this formula. As the formula suggests, practice results from a relationship between habitus and capital within the context of a social arena or field. To acquire a sense of how Bourdieu theorized practice, then, requires a decoding of the terms in the formula.

In moving from the right side of the equation toward the left, the notion of practice in Bourdieu's work means quite simply social action. Social action or behavior can consist of the entire array of human activity, including marriage rites, market transactions, war, forms of bodily behavior, mental activities, the exercise of tastes, judgments, and preferences, ad infinitum. Practice, however simple in meaning, nonetheless, is the result of a complex dialectic between social externalities and individual internalities. While field is external and informs practices from without, habitus is internal and structures practices from within.

A *field*, according to Bourdieu, is a social space in which forces impose regularities and regulations that constrain choices from without. Much of Bourdieu's explication of field is undertaken by positing analogies to sports fields, occupational fields, and artistic fields, each of which can be distinguished by certain forms of practice. The notion of field is also marshaled to explain distinctive social practices followed by those occupying different positions in a field, among which are the differentiations inflected by class. Field, according to Bourdieu, is also a social space of struggle and contestation, in which the basis of domination and hierarchy is subjected to disputes that are translated into practices. At stake in this field is the accumulation of capital, which both reflects and results from class positionings.

Bourdieu isolated four forms of capital. *Economic capital* refers to money and assets. *Cultural capital* refers to forms of knowledge, tastes, aesthetic and cultural preferences, language narrative, and voice. *Social capital* refers to networks and affiliations, including family and religious ties. Finally, *symbolic capital* refers to the capacity of different capitals to be exchanged and converted between fields. Those

who occupy positions of domination will struggle to conserve their position by pursuing practices that will preserve the existing distributions of all of these forms of capital. While those who are assigned subordinate positions will challenge the existing order and pursue actions that will challenge such distributions. To understand practices, it is necessary to reckon with the regularities of social fields and how they are related to the practical logic of social agents. This practical logic is a feel for the regularities of the field. It is also critical to reckon with the relationship between the evolving fields within which social agents are situated and also the evolving habituses, which those social agents bring to their social fields of practice. For Bourdieu, then, practice is generated at the juncture of field and habitus.

Habitus is a concept that is central to Bourdieu's theory of practice, yet it is the most enigmatic and is defined in many and varied ways throughout his work. So Bourdieu, in characteristically abstract fashion, writes of habitus as being the product of the structure, producer of practice, and reproducer of structure. It is also the unchosen principle of all choices and the practice unifying a practice-generating principle. In a 2008 essay, Karl Maton distills from this writing that habitus essentially focuses on our ways of acting, feeling, thinking, and being, as well as how we bring our past into the present to make choices as an ongoing interactive and evolving process. The choices before any individual are constrained by the current context or field and by the range of choices that are visible to the agent. This vision, in turn, is shaped by past experiences, which are embodied in the agent, and habitus thus informs practices from within.

The Role of Dispositions

Practices are thus not simply the result of one's habitus but rather of unconscious relations between habitus and one's current circumstances. Habitus thus helps explain the sociological conundrum presented by the consonance between sociological regularities and individual experience. For example, certain working-class children tend to get working-class jobs and be drawn to popular forms of art and entertainment, considered to be lowbrow. By the same token, many upper-class individuals enjoy high art and literary forms, and so on. Yet there are no rules that prescribe these tendencies or predilections. At the level of individual experience, people feel that they are free agents who choose such forms of entertainment or class-based occupations. Sociologically, such practices are expressions of regularities. This structure then is structured and comprises a system of *dispositions*, which materializes in certain perceptions as well as practices. Dispositions, according to Bourdieu, express first the result of an organizing action, with a meaning close to that of structure. But they also designate a way of being, a habitual state, and, in particular, a predisposition, tendency, propensity, or inclination. The idea of disposition then is pivotal in thinking through the implications of habitus in Bourdieu's theory of practice.

Structure and Agency

Bourdieu's construct of habitus suggests how the social becomes internalized in the individual. It is thus the link between the social and the individual, the outer and the inner, and, most important, the objective and the subjective. As a foundational concept in Bourdieusian thought, habitus offers a way of confronting not only the dualism of objectivism and subjectivism but also the interlinked dichotomy of structure and agency. Structure refers to the social structures that sociologists and anthropologists expose in their objectivist analytics. Agency refers to the mental structures that guide individuals in their interactions with and against objective structures. As habitus conceptually collapses the subjective and the objective, it enables an understanding of how agents are able to incorporate a practical sense of what can or cannot be achieved—the objective possibilities—based on their intuitions gained through past collective experiences. The habitus then, as Bourdieu states, produces practices that tend to reproduce the regularities immanent in the objective conditions of production of the generative principle. So, as Jeremy Lane suggests, habitus is generally understood to be a structure of dispositions that reflect a field of objective possibilities open to agents at a particular historical moment. In other words, it is a system of internalized dispositions that mediate between social structures and practical activity and refers to the implicit cultural assumptions transmitted by institutions, practices, and social relations, which then generate action according to certain dispositions. The notion of habitus is central to the theory of practice for it provides a key to understanding how

it becomes possible to move beyond the entrenched antinomies and dualisms in the ways of thinking about the social world.

Bourdieu's Dialectical Epistemology: A Call for Reflexivity

The distinctiveness of Bourdieu's thinking lies in its relational and dialectical approach. In his theory of practice, the subjectivism and objectivism dyad is reconciled through such a dialectical epistemology. As Bourdieu states in *Outline of a Theory of Practice*, an adequate science of practices aims to make possible a science of the dialectical relations between the objective structures to which the objectivist mode of knowledge gives access and the structured dispositions within which those structures are actualized and that tend to reproduce them. Bourdieu, therefore, proposes a conceptual framework that embeds the dialectical nature of the relationship between structure and agency as well as subjectivism and objectivism. In this respect, his work occupies the interstices between the determinism of structuralism and the voluntarism of intentionality. Bourdieu's work is also distinctive in that it moves us beyond the dualisms, conceiving a new space in which structure and agency are interpenetrating, reciprocally constituting, and interdependent. The internalities of habitus and externalities of field are also reciprocally formed and mutually constituted in a true dialectic.

To Bourdieu, the theory of practice is also a tool deployed to understand the activities of both the observer and the observed. In *Outline of a Theory of Practice* and *Logic of Practice*, he was concerned to constitute the actions of social scientists as practical, engaged social activity. This again emerged from dissatisfaction with structuralism and how, as a body of thought, its stance toward people was to constitute them as objects of interpretation for academic philosophers. He was concerned with the development of a sociology that would situate analyses as practices and as such would relativize objectivism itself. Repudiating this view, Bourdieu's project was to develop a form of social science practice that would relativize objectivism by placing it within the social world and not above it. He favoured a move toward seeking to understand the agency of those whom we study as theory-generating agents rather than as the fodder on which scholars build their theories. And through the recovery of the agency of the observed, theory would itself be a practical and engaged social activity. Finally, in reflecting on the practice of the intellectual in the academic field, he suggested that generative principles in theoretical knowledge must also be analyzed. Intellectuals must submit their formulations to an analysis of the intellectual's relation to the social world and the objective social conditions on which scholarly inquiry is founded. In this call for reflexivity, Bourdieu inveighs against scholasticism as an idealist project. In this way, the theory of practice recovers the work of intellectuals as a form of engagement in and with the social world.

Winnie Lem

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Critical Theory; Habitus; Husserl, Edmund; Phenomenology; Structuralism

Further Readings

Bourdieu, P. (1977). *Outline of a theory of practice*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press. (Original work published 1972)

———. (1984). *Distinction: A social critique of the judgement of taste*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. (Original work published 1979)

———. (1990). *The logic of practice*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press. (Original work published 1980)

———. (1994). *In Other words: Essays towards a reflexive sociology*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Bourdieu, P., & Wacquant, L. J. (1992). *An invitation towards a reflexive sociology*. Cambridge, UK: Polity Press.

Brubaker, R. (1985). Rethinking classical theory: The sociological vision of Pierre Bourdieu. *Theory and Society, 14,* 745–775.

Calhourn, C. (1993). Habitus, field, and capital: The question of historical specificity. In C. Calhoun, E. LiPuma, & M. Postone (Eds.), *Bourdieu: Critical perspectives* (pp. 61–88). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Fowler, B. (1996). An introduction to Pierre Bourdieu's understanding. *Theory, Culture and Society, 13,* 1–16.

Maton, K. (2008). Habitus. In M. Grenfell (Ed.), *Pierre Bourdieu: Key concepts* (pp. 49–65). London, UK: Acumen Press.

Wacquant, L. J. (2008). Pierre Bourdieu. In R. Stones (Ed.), *Key sociological thinkers* (pp. 261–277). London, UK: Macmillan.

Prague School of Linguistics

The beginnings of the Prague school of linguistics date back to the foundation of the Prague Linguistic Circle in 1926. The school's ideas have been continuously developed until today, even during the German occupation and the 40 postwar years when the Circle was disbanded. From the viewpoint of its official existence and the three series of its *Travaux*, the Circle's history can be divided into three periods closely connected with, and reflecting, the situation in Europe and in Czechoslovakia during the past century. The first period, often referred to as the classical period, embraces the decades from the Circle's foundation until the 1950s. Then under the communist regime framing the second period, the Circle was replaced by a newly established society, Jazykovêdné sdružení (Linguistic Association) and Kruh moderních filologů (The Circle of Modern Philologists/Modern Language Association), a philological society of long standing. This period lasted until the overthrow of the communist regime in 1989. In the democratic atmosphere of the recent decades, the Circle resumed its activities as early as 1990 by holding fortnightly lectures followed by discussions, which were open not only to members but also to the academic public at large.

The postwar and the postcommunist periods are treated together since many of the scholars who worked in the former are still active and have students and followers.

The Classical Period

The Prague Linguistic Circle was founded by Vilém Mathesius, the founder of English studies at Charles University in Prague, then the capital of Czechoslovakia. The first meeting of the Circle, in October 1926, was attended by five members, Vilém Mathesius, Bohuslav Havránek, Roman Jakobson, Jan Rypka, and Bohumil Trnka, and an invited lecturer, Henrik Becker from Leipzig. The Circle quickly grew into an international association, counting among its members not only prominent linguists, such as Vilém Mathesius, Bohuslav Havránek, Roman Jakobson, Sergej Iosifovič Karcevskij, Vladimír Skalička, Lucien Tesnière, Bohumil Trnka, Pavel Trost, Nikolaj Sergejevič Trubetzkoy, Josef Vachek, and others, but also foremost literary scholars, such as Jan Mukařovský, René Wellek, and others. The term *L'École de Prague* dates back to 1932, when it was first used in the documents of the Amsterdam Congress of Phonetic Sciences.

The Basic Concepts

The theoretical framework of the Prague school is functional structuralism, which reflects its principal concerns: the structure of the language system, the functionality of language elements, and the social function of language, with an emphasis on the synchronic approach, especially in the early period.

The language system is understood as a whole composed of several levels, each of these mapped to a basic unit: phonological (phoneme), morphological (morpheme and word), syntactical (the sentence), and discourse (the utterance). The function of lower units is to realize units of the higher level, for example, phonemes realize morphemes, morphemes realize words, and so on.

The functional relation of these elements is oriented to their task or role played in a structure, as well as in the flow of discourse (communicative function). The task-oriented character of language gave rise to a teleological view of its structure and development, the means-end model.

The social function of language was elaborated in connection with the standard language and its differentiation and cultivation (a separate sphere of interest in the classical period, see below).

The third basic concept, besides structure and function, was the sign. Karcevskij described it in terms of asymmetrical dualism, namely, the tendency of the sign to have other functions besides that connected with a particular context; similarly, the content can be expressed by other means than by the primary sign alone. It is this quality of the sign that makes language development possible.

The ideas of Prague functional structuralism were anticipated before the appearance of Ferdinand de Saussure's 1916 *Cours de linguistique générale* in Mathesius's lecture "O potenciálnosti jev jazykových" (On the Potentiality of the Phenomena of Language), delivered in 1911. With its printed form also in Czech, it remained practically unknown until the 1960s, when it appeared in an English translation by Vachek in his *Prague School Reader in Linguistics* (1964).

In the early period, the primary spheres of interest were phonology, developed especially in the works of Trubetzkoy, Jakobson, Trnka, and Vachek, and morphology, a special concern of Jakobson, who elaborated the structural morphology of the Russian verbal system and Russian declension. The synchronic analysis of phonology led to its emancipation from phonetics. The phoneme was defined as a bundle of distinctive features that entered into sets of oppositions. For example, the phonemes /p/ and /s/ are distinguished by two oppositions, the place and manner of articulation. The best known set of distinctive oppositions was designed by Trubetzkoy in his *Grundzüge der Phonologie* (1939). An opposition is neutralized where it fails to assert itself; for example, in German and in Slavic languages, the opposition of voice in pairs of consonants like p/b, t/d, and k/g is neutralized in the word-final position: the words *Rad* ("bicycle") and *Rat* ("advice") have the same form [ra:t]. The approach to diachrony is shown in Jakobson's treatment of the phonological development of Russian, where developmental changes are described as having a therapeutic character in that they often restore the balance of the system. As a change may give rise to another weak point in the system, the system is in a constant process of development.

A third sphere of interest in the classical period was the theory of the standard language and language culture, developed especially by Havránek and Mathesius. In contrast to the previous views of correctness based on historical criteria, the functional theory of the standard language, of correctness and language culture, is determined by functional adequacy. The standard language is differentiated according to its various functions: communicative, technically practical, technically theoretical, and esthetic. Across this classification runs the differentiation according to the oral and written forms. The development of the standard language is determined, among other factors, by the tendency to intellectualization and by the cultural and civilizational role of the standard language in stimulating the enlargement and intellectualization of its vocabulary. Such intellectualization culminates in scientific-theoretical speech/writing. On the other hand, the function of the standard language as a kind of common language operates in the opposite direction, that is, it bridges the gaps between the various kinds of a particular language. Language devices differ in their degree of automatization or foregrounding (defamiliarization). Automatization refers to expression in the conventional linguistic form that does not draw any attention to itself. In contrast, foregrounding is the use of linguistic devices that are perceived as uncommon. The maximum foregrounding, used for its own sake, is found in poetic language.

In the sphere of grammar, a model presented in the early Prague school was the functional grammar of Mathesius. An English translation of Mathesius's key work, *A Functional Analysis of Present-Day English on a General Linguistic Basis*, appeared in 1975, 30 years after his death. The grammar is based on two functional acts: (1) the naming act and (2) the bringing of the naming units into mutual relations in the act of sentence formation (functional syntax). The formal aspect of both acts is treated in morphology. While formal analysis of the sentence singles out the subject and the predicate, functional analysis determines its theme and rheme, namely, what is spoken about and what is said about it, respectively. This functional division of the sentence gave rise to the theory of functional sentence perspective, a theory of information structure.

In the sphere of typology, language types were approached from the functional-structuralist standpoint by Skalička, who formulated a coherent frame of five major language types: isolating, inflectional, agglutinative, introflectional, and polysynthetic.

The Prague Linguistic Circle's programmatic declaration was formulated in the French *Thèses*, presented to the First Congress of Slavicists, held in Prague in 1929. The major works of the Circle's members were published in the first series, *Travaux du Cercle linguistique de Prague*.

The Postwar Period

The postwar Circle resumed its activities without some of its leading figures: Trubetzkoy and Mathesius had died, and Jakobson had to seek refuge in exile. Jakobson first founded it in Scandinavia and from 1941 in the United States. He became one of the founding members of the Linguistic Circle of New York (1943), and through his teaching, at numerous institutions including Harvard University and Massachusetts Institute of Technology, he helped bridge the gap between European and American linguistics.

In Czechoslovakia, the Prague school of linguistics continued to develop and expand in the work of several generations of the pupils of Mathesius, Jakobson, Skalička, Havránek, Trnka, Trost, and Vachek, such as Miloš Dokulil, František Daneš, Jan Firbas, Oldřich Leška, Ivan Poldauf, and Petr Sgall, and the younger generation constituted by František Ĉermák, Eva Hajičová, Jarmila Panevová, and others. Many of these scholars contributed to the second series, *Travaux linguistiques de Prague*.

Although the official existence of the Prague Linguistic Circle had been terminated, Trnka attempted to continue its activities within the Circle of Modern Philologists by founding, in 1956, one of its specialized groups, devoted to functional linguistics. In 1957, the theses of Prague structuralism were presented in the discussion of linguistic structuralism conducted by the journal *Voprosy jazykoznanija*; in the following year, they appeared in English in the journal *Philologica Pragensia*. After Trnka's death in 1984, the group continued to be convened by his pupil Jiří Nosek, who maintained its activities until the reestablishment of the Circle in 1990.

One of the major developments of the postwar period was the distinction between the center and the periphery, the theme of the second volume of this period's *Travaux*. The center/periphery distinction was regarded as a continuous scalar relation, and linguistic categories were understood as complexes of distinctive features. While central units are basic (simpler), regular, and of high frequency, and have a high functional load, peripheral units are irregular and of lower frequency, and have a low(er) functional load. Thus, for example, the English plural suffix *-(e)s* represents a central device of plural formation, whereas the suffix *-en* is a peripheral one—compare *birds* and *oxen*. Anticipating the prototype theory, the center/periphery distinction has evolved from Mathesius's idea of the potentiality of language phenomena.

Developments in syntax were based on the notion of the verb as the central factor of sentence structure, elaborated in terms of syntactic patterns by Daneš and Zdeněk Hlavsa. Daneš's three-level approach comprised the grammatical structure of the sentence, its semantic structure, and the organization of utterance (its functional perspective, theme/topic–rheme/comment division). Thus, for example, the grammatical structure of the sentence *The boys broke a window* is constituted by the subject, verb, and object; its semantic structure displays the configuration of agent, action, and patient, while its information structure contains the theme (*the boys*, what is spoken about) and the rheme (including the transitional element, the verb, what is said about the theme *broke the window*). A change in word order usually results in a different rheme, for example, *I gave Charles a present* vs. *I gave a present to Charles*.

The division of the sentence into the theme and rheme has been systematically elaborated in the theory of functional sentence perspective by Jan Firbas and his followers and the concept of topic focus articulation in the functional generative description by Hajičová and Sgall. The original conception of the utterance as being composed of a theme and a rheme, basically the "known/new" distinction, has been elaborated, besides other points, in Firbas's approach by a scalar view of communicative dynamism (the amount of information carried by a sentence element).

Another aspect of the discourse level was presented in Poldauf's treatment of grammatical forms with pragmatic functions, such as the "ethic dative" case and particles. A fully explicit, formal, and electronically implementable formulation of the framework of language description has been elaborated by the group of theoretical and computational linguists, Sgall, Hajičová, Panevová, and others, as the functional generative description.

Major developments in lexicology have been made in the field of word formation by Dokulil and in the elaboration of the concept of the naming unit (denomination), introduced by Mathesius, in Ĉermák's treatment of one-word naming units, words, and multiword units, such as *carry out*, *black market*, and *round the clock*.

The past two decades have seen further developments and extension into other spheres, with the support for lexical and grammatical research provided by the recent progress in corpus linguistics. A major role in this respect has been played by the buildup of the Czech National Corpus. A complex system of semiautomatic annotation of texts from the corpus has prepared a basis for the Prague Dependency Treebank. The buildup of parallel corpora has led to a new stage in the pursuit of contrastive studies, the first impulse to which goes back to Mathesius.

Outwardly, this period is characterized by the official existence of the Prague Linguistic Circle,

since 1990, and the publication of the third series, *Travaux du Cercle linguistique de Prague* NS.

Libuše Dušková

See also Jakobson, Roman O.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Semiotics; Structural Functionalism; Structuralism

Further Readings

Luelsdorff, P. A. (Ed.). (1994). *The Prague school of structural and functional linguistics: A short introduction*. Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Luelsdorff, P. A., Panevová, J., & Sgall, P. (Eds). (1994). *Praguiana 1945–1990*. Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Travaux du Cercle linguistique de Prague [Prague linguistic circle papers]. (1929–1939). (8 Vols.). Prague, Czech Republic: Jednota českých matematiků a fyziků.

Travaux du Cercle linguistique de Prague NS [Prague linguistic circle papers]. (1995–2002). (4 Vols.). Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Travaux linguistiques de Prague [Linguistic works of Prague]. (1964–1971). (Vols. 1–4). Prague, Czech Republic: Académie tchécoslovaque des sciences.

Trnka, B., et al. (1958). Prague structural linguistics. *Philologica Pragensia, 1,* 33–40.

Vachek, J. (Ed.). (1964). *A Prague school reader in linguistics*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

———. (Ed.). (1966). *The linguistic school of Prague*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

———. (Ed.). (1983). *Praguiana: Some basic and less known aspects of the Prague linguistic school*. Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Psychological Anthropology

Contemporary psychological anthropology is an interdisciplinary field of study that is situated at the intersection of psychology, psychiatry, neuroscience, philosophy, and anthropology. Practitioners investigate the dynamic ways in which subjective experience, social action, and cultural meaning interrelate in the complex interpersonal worlds of various communities around the globe. Despite a shared overall thematic focus, psychological anthropology is not a singular enterprise. It is instead defined by a number of distinctive, and yet interrelated, approaches. The most prominent of these include ethnopsychology and cognitive anthropology, developmental psychological anthropology, phenomenological and sensorial anthropology, psychodynamic anthropology, and neuroanthropology. While in critical conversation with the fields of cultural psychology, transcultural psychiatry, and cross-cultural psychology, psychological anthropology stands out most strikingly from these because of its ethnographic commitment to exploring the concrete contexts of social life in which the shared and variable aspects of our existence as humans arise.

In broad strokes, psychological anthropology has tended to follow along three distinctive intellectual lineages that at times crosscut the various approaches outlined above: the historical-phenomenological, the comparative-cognitive, and the cultural-psychodynamic. On the historical-phenomenological front are those thinkers who follow Franz Boas's neo-Kantian path toward ethnographically tracing the linguistic, cultural, practical, and material realities that shape the conditions that give rise to possibilities for experience in any one social setting. While influenced by a Boasian interest in discerning the relationship between linguistic-cognitive categories and the shape of lived experience, those following the comparative-cognitive lineage arguably owe just as great a debt to W. H. R. Rivers's early work on color perception, as well as to the innovative experimental work on the cultural patterning of sensory discrimination undertaken by other members of Rivers's research team on the Cambridge Expedition to the Torres Straits (1898). On the cultural-psychodynamic side are those who followed in the footsteps of Bronisław Malinowski's famous critique of Sigmund Freud's Oedipus complex, which highlighted the significance of pursuing ethnographic investigations into the role that culture plays in shaping the intersubjective dynamics and the resulting forms of attachment arising from particular caregiver-infant relationships in differing communities.

While these lineages are distinctive in terms of their various theoretical, analytical, and methodological emphases, all three were set out to emplace cultural differences and interpersonal variations within a broader understanding of what defines the psychological parameters of our human condition, or what Adolf Bastian termed the *psychic unity of humankind*. Yet each approach also shares a critical stance on the potential uses and abuses of psychological theorizing, research, and practice that often

draw from universalizing assumptions about what makes up our distinctly human mode of "being-in-the-world." Such a critical stance is evident in historical-phenomenological critiques of the scientific racism of Herbert Spencer's Social Darwinism; in comparative-cognitive critiques of the unexamined cultural biases inherent in many experimental settings, protocols, and measures; in critical dialogues between psychodynamic anthropology and classic Freudian psychoanalysis; and in more recent challenges to the universality of the psychiatric diagnostic categories outlined in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders*, which are used to justify the global circulation of psychopharmaceuticals. An interest in examining the relationship between psychopathology and culture, which is embedded in such critiques, is also inherently linked to the history and contemporary development of the field.

Culture and Personality and the "Sapirian Alternative"

Psychological anthropology was defined for time, for better or worse, by an interest in exploring how cultural assumptions and social practices shape the development of locally valued and configured personality types. On the historical-phenomenological side, this found articulation in Ruth Benedict's Gestalt psychological–inspired writings in her book *Patterns of Culture*, as well as in the extended influence her ideas had on the thinking of Margaret Mead, Gregory Bateson, and others. On the cultural-psychodynamic side, we find Abram Kardiner's extension of Bronisław Malinowski's critique of psychoanalysis in the development of the concept of *basic personality structure*, as well as the influence these ideas had on the formulation of the related construct of *modal personality* by Cora DuBois. Collectively, this body of research was known as the culture and personality movement. In its later years, interest in culture and personality shifted to studies of *national character*. This was marked most controversially by Benedict's study of Japanese personality in her book *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword* (1946) and Geoffrey Gorer's so-called swaddling hypothesis, which linked restrained immobility in infancy to adult patterns of character and political authority in Russian society.

The caricatures of preferred personality types that arose at the end point of the culture and personality movement in the 1950s clearly demonstrated problems associated with positing overly homogenized renderings of personality formation arising in the confluence of material circumstances, cultural assumptions, sociopolitical realities, and socialization practices. There were, however, other thinkers writing during this period who offered a very different version of what psychological anthropology could be. Perhaps the most important and underrecognized of these contributors was Edward Sapir.

While Sapir is best known for his early contributions to linguistic anthropology, his later career was marked by a serious engagement with psychology and psychiatry. Sapir's initial interest in psychology stemmed from his engagement with Boas, Benedict, and Mead. His interest in psychiatry arose, however, after witnessing his own wife's struggles with mental illness and her eventual death. This tragic event led to his friendship and collaboration with the psychiatrist Henry Stack Sullivan at the University of Chicago. Inspired by this collaboration, Sapir taught the first ever course on psychological anthropology offered at an American university—"The Psychology of Culture" at the University of Chicago in 1926.

Critical of the overly deterministic cultural theories of human behavior found in the work of fellow Boasians like Alfred Kroeber, Sapir sought instead to highlight how individual experience and concrete interpersonal relations were the only "location" where anything we might term *culture* could be found. While cultural and linguistic traditions thoroughly shape the content and structure of psychic life, individual experiences, perspectives, and reactions "spill over" and "lend color" to such traditions, Sapir argued. Carrying forth his long-standing interest in poetry and creativity, something that also inspired his early fascination with Benedict's dissertation research on guardian spirit visions in Native North American religious traditions, Sapir was reluctant to divest individuals of possibilities for actively responding to and transforming the social and cultural conditions they are also necessarily defined by.

In part inspired by his conversations with Sullivan, Sapir argued that to truly understand the impact of cultural processes on lived experience, it is necessary to examine the concrete interpersonal relations and expressive forms arising within such relations. Seeing both psychology and psychiatry as fields that examine such concrete relations, as well as individuals' actual experiences and responses to them, Sapir held that anthropologists needed to

take a lesson or two from their psychological and psychiatric colleagues. It is, after all, in the context of interpersonal relations that cultural and linguistic forms arise and are transmitted, contested, and transformed. Seeing psychology and psychiatry as often relying on largely unexamined assumptions about the functioning, structure, and shaping of human minds, as well as the forms of psychopathology that afflict them, Sapir also believed that psychologists and psychiatrists needed to learn a lesson or two from their anthropological colleagues, who ethnographically document the variability of human responses, feelings, emotions, ideals, expressive forms, and orientations in human communities.

Seeing the significance of furthering interdisciplinary dialogue, Sapir and Sullivan went on to organize two symposia of the American Psychiatric Association in the late 1920s, which led to a number of National Research Council conferences in Hanover sponsored by the Rockefeller Foundation and the Social Science Research Council. Sapir's involvement with these conferences eventually led to his move from Chicago to Yale in 1934, where he gave his last lectures on psychological anthropology.

It was at Yale that the "Sapiran-Alternative," as Regna Darnell terms it (1986), was articulated in response to the deeply problematic generalizations advanced in the configurationalist work of Benedict and Mead. By focusing on general tendencies and putatively shared traits in particular cultural groups, Sapir argued that Benedict and Mead advanced an "as-if psychology" that failed to examine the actual psychologies of individuals living in the societies they described. Sapir's alternative was to instead focus on concrete individual experiences and the actual interpersonal relations within which such experiences were articulated. As Robert LeVine notes, Sapir's early death prevented him from publishing any programmatic synthesis of his ideas. While his lectures deeply influenced some key figures in the next generation of psychological anthropologists, including, perhaps most important, the young Irving Hallowell (see below), Sapir's contributions to the development of psychological anthropology went unrecognized for many years.

Sapir's Legacy

A student of Boas's student Frank Speck at the University of Pennsylvania, a regular attendee at Boas's seminars at Columbia, and a participant in Sapir's and Sullivan's interdisciplinary conferences, Irving "Pete" Hallowell is arguably one of the most influential advocates of the Sapirian alternative to have contributed to midcentury psychological anthropology. Advocating a phenomenological or experiential approach, Hallowell situated his analysis within a rich ethnographic description of the Ojibwa (Anishinaabe) peoples as a means to demonstrate the distinctive ways in which self-experience is configured in cultural terms. Recognizing the important role that language and socialization practices play in such processes, but weary of overly simplistic and culturally determinative assumptions, Hallowell emphasized the less deterministic language of "orientation" to describe the complex ways in which culture and experience intersect. Borrowing from the Gestalt psychology of Kurt Koffka, Hallowell employed the concept of "behavioral environment" to refer to the culturally ordered environment that is experienced by individual social actors. Cultural assumptions and practices are, Hallowell argued, only "in part" responsible for shaping lived experience, as complex psychological processes significantly contribute to defining any particular self's habitual and ongoing orientations to its behavioral environment.

A student of Hallowell's for a time at Northwestern, but also deeply influenced by Freudian theory, Melford Spiro articulated yet another productive alternative to culture and personality approaches. Arguing against the view that culture and personality are mutually exclusive categories that require a causal mechanism to explain their articulation, Spiro asserted instead that these concepts designate two complementary components of a singular process. In Spiro's view, as in Sapir's and Hallowell's, social interaction is taken to be the generative site through which individual experience is recurrently brought into contact with cultural traditions, and vice versa. For Spiro, it is the specificities of such interactions that lead individuals to variously internalize their culture.

Hallowell's and Spiro's work set the stage for what was to become a deep interest in the complex articulations of psychological and cultural processes in contemporary psychological anthropology. For psychological anthropologists working in the wake of Hallowell and Spiro, culture was increasingly understood in terms of what Anthony F. C. Wallace would call the "organization of diversity" or what Theodore Schwartz would term a "distributed

embodied idioverse," and was not, as it had once been, a determinative catalyst in defining the contours of social life and individual experience. The ensuing reinvigoration of the field led to the development and publication of the Society for Psychological Anthropology's flagship journal *Ethos*, a project initiated in 1973 by the efforts of Walter Goldschmidt and Douglas Price-Williams (who were the founding editors), along with Melford Spiro, Theodore Schwartz, Robert Levy, Douglas Schwartz, John G. Kennedy, George DeVos, and Robert Edgerton.

Developmental Psychological Anthropology

To understand how culture becomes "internalized," even if in distributed or diverse ways, is to raise the core question of socialization. Practically, from its inception, issues of socialization were deemed central to those who contributed to the formation of the field of psychological anthropology. Although, unfortunately, there were still comparatively few anthropologists who actually took on a close study of child rearing, parenting styles, childhood, and development in their ethnographic work. Mead's controversial claims about evidence for differential outcomes in adolescent experience among Samoan girls, as well as her pioneering, and still controversial, critique of Jean Piaget's theories of cognitive development in her work on childhood cognition and imagination in Manus, clearly pointed, however, to the need to look seriously at how early childhood experiences, socialization techniques, and the resulting formations of adult personality were interlinked.

Inspired by Mead's work, as well as by the pioneering work on the systematic ethnographic observation of child socialization practices by John and Beatrice Whiting, important contributions to the field of developmental psychological anthropology were advanced by Robert and Sarah LeVine, Theodore Schwartz, George and Louise Spindler, Elinor Ochs, Bambi Schieffelin, Thomas Weisner, and Sara Harkness, among others. With the effort of these scholars, developmental psychological anthropology expanded in the 1960s, 1970s, and 1980s to include work examining different developmental stages, caregiving strategies, and socialization techniques. This included ethnographic projects that revealed cross-cultural differences in sibling caregiving responsibilities and patterns of residence and cosleeping; research on institutionalized socialization practices ranging from staged ritual initiations to formal schooling; comparisons of the impact of orality and literacy on acquiring particular cognitive competencies; research on language socialization; work on the effects of differing parenting styles on particular developmental outcomes; as well as important ethnographic examinations of informal learning, imitation, play activities, and peer socialization. Returning to Mead's earliest ethnographic interests, some of the most innovative research in contemporary developmental psychological anthropology examines the adolescent experience, including issues of gendered identities and sexuality in postcolonial settings around the globe.

Ethnopsychology and the Anthropology of Self and Emotion

A contributor to, and outgrowth of, the cognitive revolution's reaction to behaviorism in the social sciences in the mid-1960s and early 1970s, comparative-cognitive approaches in psychological anthropology emerged in the guise of ethnoscientific explorations of local knowledge systems and their related schemes of categorization. As evident in the work of Charles Frake, Ward Goodenough, Floyd Lounsbury, Anthony F. C. Wallace, Brent Berlins, and Paul Kay, ethnoscientific research explores how an empirical study of local knowledge systems sheds light on the flexibility and limits of human cognitive capacities in a cultural context. From work on the cultural categorization of colors to kinship relations to local flora and fauna, ethnoscientists developed methodologies for eliciting systems of local knowledge as well as analytical frameworks that could be deployed in an effort to understand and organize them.

As cognitive anthropology developed as a vibrant field of inquiry in the mid- to late 1970s and early 1980s, researchers began to investigate related issues of memory and meaning by means of the concept of "cultural schemas"—a concept that can be ultimately traced back to Sir Fredric Bartlett's notion of "schemata." Such schemas encoded culturally relevant scripts for recognizing and enacting typical forms of social interaction discernible through communicative acts and various forms of expressive behavior. Other important influences on the field included critical appraisals and extensions of Piaget's cognitive-developmental theories in cultural contexts, as well as ethnographic explorations of the cultural mediation of the so-called higher mental

functioning. Much of this work was inspired by the school of Soviet psychology pioneered by Lev Vygotsky.

Important contributions to these various approaches to cognitive anthropology are found in the work of Roy D'Andrade, Kimbal Romney, Naomi Quinn, Russell Bernard, Dorothy Holland, Jeanne Lave, Bradd Shore, Edward Hutchins, James Boster, Claudia Strauss, and Linda Garro. These scholars have examined issues that range from studies of the relations of culture, cognition, and memory to reasoning, narrative practices, and decision making, to the associations between forms of categorization and perceptual processes, to learning and apprenticeship, to motivation.

Sharing a somewhat similar intellectual lineage, although with a rather distinctive trajectory, what became known as the field of ethnopsychology arose from an extension of ethnoscientific work to examination of local understandings of psychological processes. This was, in some respects, also a continuation of the long-standing interest of the Culture-and-Personality school in the cultural patterning of emotions like anger, shame, and guilt. Three of the most influential early contributions to the ethnopsychological tradition include Hildred Geertz's work on the cultural categorization of emotions in Indonesia, Jean Briggs's work on emotional expression and the management of anger in Inuit communities in Canada, and Robert Levy's pioneering person-centered work on self and emotion in Tahiti. Focusing not only on the cultural categories that shape understandings of mind, self, and emotion but also on the interpersonal dynamics and modes of expression that arise from, and in turn pattern, such categories, these scholars provided ethnographically rich and personally nuanced portraits of subjective life as locally configured.

Levy, in particular, left an indelible mark on the further development of the field with his use of person-centered interviewing methods. Loosely based on clinical interviewing techniques, Levy's person-centered interviewing method helped reveal aspects of emotional life that were interpersonally palpable and yet not always fully cognized by the individual who experienced them. Terming such emotions *hypocognized*, Levy argued that while local understandings of emotions deeply affected the ways in which individuals expressed, reacted to, and felt them, there were still registers of feeling that affected individuals regardless of the extent to which they were culturally elaborated, linguistically represented, or explicitly cognized (what Levy termed *hypercognition*).

The early contributions of Geertz, Briggs, and Levy inspired a number of important studies of self and emotions in the late 1970s and early 1980s. This included influential studies of religious experience; the personalization of meaning, healing, and psychopathology in Sri Lanka by Gananath Obeyesekere; and a critical evaluation of the psychiatric category "mood-disorders" in the *Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders* by Arthur Kleinman, Byron Good, and others. Still other key contributions to the movement included Catherine Lutz's ethnographic insights into Ifalukian understandings of emotion and self-experience in the western Pacific; Michelle Rosaldo's explorations of Illongot concepts of self and feeling in the Philippines; Richard Shweder's investigations of emotional life and personhood in Orissa, India; Edward Shieffelin's research on mourning and affect among the Kaluli in Papua New Guinea; Elinor Ochs and Bambi Schieffelin's work on language socialization and the emotions in Samoa and Papua New Guinea; Geoffery White's examination of the concepts of emotion and person in the Solomon Islands; Uni Wikan's insights into "emotion work" in Bali; Douglas Hollan and Jane Wellenkamp's person-centered analysis of suffering and contentment in Toraja Indonesia; Steven Parish's ethnography of moral personhood in Nepal; Janice Jenkin's insights into trauma and "political ethos" in Salvadorian families; and Nancy Scheper-Hughes's research on schizophrenia in Ireland and on issues of attachment, love, loss, and mourning in Brazil. Focusing less on issues of cognition per se and more on the various ways in which local understandings of selfhood, mind-body relations, emotions, dreams, mental illness, and altered states of consciousness are articulated in local terms, contributors to the anthropology of self and feeling often used their ethnographic insights to critique universalizing assumptions about the structure and function of mental life in the fields of psychology, psychiatry, and philosophy of mind.

Phenomenological and Psychodynamic Anthropology

While each of these thematic, theoretical, and empirical trajectories continue to inform contemporary psychological anthropology, work in the

subfield during the 1990s and 2000s was significantly marked by a shift to examine the cultural formation of embodied subjective experience from the perspectives of phenomenology and relational psychodynamic theories. Overall, both psychodynamic and phenomenological anthropologists share a commitment to exploring the existential ambiguities, ambivalences, dilemmas, and struggles that arise as part and parcel of our emplacement in intersubjective fields of relationality that give rise to the complex dynamics of our social and cultural life.

Arthur Kleinman's, Michael Jackson's, Thomas Csordas's, Nancy Scheper-Hughes's, Margaret Lock's, and Robert Desjarlais's work on experience, existence, and embodiment; David Howes and Contance Classen's call for the establishment of a sensorial anthropology; Tanya Lurhmann's ideas about "interpretive drift"; as well as Byron Good, Mary-Jo DelVecchio Good, Cheryl Mattingly, and Linda Garro's research on narrative practices and illness experience, all importantly contributed to the turn to experience in phenomenologically oriented psychological anthropology. Extending Hallowell's "proto-phenomenological" approach to critical dialogues with the phenomenological philosophies of Edmund Husserl, Martin Heidegger, Maurice Merleau-Ponty, Alfred Schütz, and others, psychological anthropologists inspired by phenomenology have sought to explore the rich textures and complexities of lived experience in its concrete unfolding and social emplacement. Researchers who have employed phenomenological perspectives in psychological anthropology have examined issues of bodiliness, sensory perception, illness and healing, suffering, pain, violence, morality, communicative practices, socialization, aesthetics, the concrete effects of political and economic formations, and subjectivity and intersubjectivity, among other themes and topics.

Working from a rather different intellectual heritage, but terminating in a somewhat similar set of goals for the subfield, proponents of psychodynamic anthropology extended Levy's interests in person-centered ethnography and Gananath Obeyesekere's influential work on the "subjectification" of culture to an engagement with the self-psychologies, object-relations, and relational psychodynamic theories of Heinz Kohut, Melanie Klein, Donald Winnicott, Hans Loewald, Stephen Mitchell, and others. The work of Jacques Lacan is yet another important influence on contemporary psychodynamic anthropology, particularly for those who seek to integrate political and postcolonial theory into their analysis.

Key contributors to the development of contemporary psychodynamic approaches in psychological anthropology include Waud Kracke, Gilbert Herdt, Douglas Hollan, Nancy Chodorow, Stephania Pandolfo, and Byron Good. Each have contributed crucial ethnographic investigations into the complex intersubjective dynamics configuring, and configured by, dream life, imagination, fantasy, desire, attachment, social suffering, processes of somatization and psychologization, trauma, illness experience, psychopathology, "postcolonial disorders," empathy, and care taking in the lives of specific persons and communities around the globe.

Clinical Anthropology and Neuroanthropologies

Finally, two important recent developments in contemporary psychological anthropology are the establishment of a clinically focused psychological anthropology and a burgeoning interest in neuroanthropology. The former approach stems from psychological anthropologists' long-standing research in clinical settings, as well as interest in the global circulation of, and local responses to, clinical techniques and psychopharmaceutical interventions. It also arises from the dual, clinical, and research duties that a number of psychological anthropologists undertake in light of the training they have received in psychiatry, clinical psychology, psychoanalysis, and social work. The latter tradition owes a significant debt to the pioneering work of Charles Laughlin, Eugene D'Aquili, and John McManus, who set out to explore in the 1970s, 1980s, and 1990s, the productive intersection of neuroscience, anthropology, and psychology. In its most recent guise, neuroanthropology has generatively explored how insights into issues of neuroplasticity, embodiment, subjective experience, imitation, intersubjectivity, empathy, development, and psychopathology, all made possible by ongoing developments in neuroscientific imaging technology, can contribute to theory and research practices in anthropology and the social sciences more generally.

C. Jason Throop

See also Bateson, Gregory; Benedict, Ruth F.; Cognitive Anthropology; Culture and Personality; Hallowell,

A. Irving; Mead, Margaret; Phenomenology; Sapir, Edward; Spiro, Melford

Further Readings

Bock, P. K. (1999). *Rethinking psychological anthropology* (2nd ed.). Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland Press.

Darnell, R. (1986). Personality and culture: The Sapirian alternative. In G. W. Stocking Jr. (Ed.), *Malinowski, Rivers, Benedict, and others* (pp. 156–183). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

LeVine, R. (2010). Invisible pioneers: "Culture and personality" reconsidered. In R. LeVine (Ed.), *Psychological anthropology: A reader on self and culture*. Oxford, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.

Sapir, E. (1917). Do we need a "superorganic?" *American Anthropologist, 19,* 441–447.

Public Sphere

Studies of the public sphere build on the seminal work by the German philosopher and sociologist Jürgen Habermas. The public sphere, a social space between the family and the state, is a crucial dimension of a democracy, in which citizens come together as private persons to discuss issues of public concern. According to Habermas, socioeconomic differences or inherited ideas *should* not influence citizens' collective deliberation. Rather, arguments should be judged on their own merits—that is, by assessing (on a rational-critical basis) the strength of their justifications in an open, egalitarian, and inclusive dialogue, thus leading to the formation of shared public opinion. Examples of such public spheres include newspapers, magazines, coffee shops, websites, and other social domains of civic engagement. Via the public sphere, citizens exert some control on the state and press their elected officials to represent their constituents' evolving concerns and projects for social change. The public sphere is at once a descriptive category, indicating some constitutive aspects of democracy, and a normative category, on the basis of which social change can be assessed or promoted.

Within anthropology, the public sphere is viewed as a useful analytical construct to analyze postcolonial contexts, in particular the formation of new forms of community and social participation transcending or redefining ties of kinship, ethnicity, and patronage. Anthropologists' interest in the theory of the public sphere reflects their growing dissatisfaction with a narrow understanding of cultural relativism and their search for more satisfactory mediations between understanding people in their own terms and cultivating new forms of transnational partnership. Anthropologists offer important correctives to West-based normative conceptions of the public sphere. For example, by exploring how socially grounded positions and modern power continue to affect people's participation in the public sphere, they question the applicability of the public sphere construct as necessarily entailing certain egalitarian transformational processes. They also explore the usefulness of this construct to investigate other dimensions of social life beyond the narrowly conceived political one.

Some anthropologists and religious studies scholars have insightfully developed a modified concept of the public sphere to describe the transformation of religious communities and people's forms of religious participation. For instance, the anthropologists Robert Launay and Benjamin Soares trace the emergence of a relatively unified Islamic sphere in French Sudan (today's Mali, West Africa) under French colonization. Via conversion and participation in the Islamic sphere, people of that region developed a new, more individualized sense of self. They came to transcend localized identities such as kinship and ethnic alliances and forged new alliances with representatives of the wider Muslim world. Debates in the religious sphere were centered on issues of public concern, although their articulation did not necessarily follow Habermas's rational-critical model. They mediated changing forms of historical consciousness and reflected continual social and cultural transformations within the religious sphere and beyond. Such an approach contributes to a more nuanced and historically grounded understanding of religious communities. It questions simplistic oppositions between the sacred and the profane, thus opening a more nuanced discussion on the contexts and modalities of collective participation and public engagement.

Other anthropologists explore how people's socially grounded positions, in particular their gender identity, continue to be reflected and are further articulated in their participation in the public sphere. Analyzing readers' letters to "Prescriptions," a column in *Femina* (a widely read women's magazine in India), the anthropologist Susan Dewey suggests that the column represents a parallel public sphere in which women at the margins publicly discuss and

address their private concerns, particularly about highly stigmatized topics such as rape and domestic violence. Yet such forms of public participation do not have a substantive transformational effect on the lives of these women; indeed, communication in the parallel public sphere ultimately reconfirms the importance of modesty and honor as guiding values regulating women's conduct. Dewey's analysis shows how participation in the public sphere (around private topics) and social marginality may be mutually constituted.

Finally, some anthropologists explore the transnationalization of the public sphere emerging from people's often devastating experiences with displacement, violence, civil wars, and escalating poverty. Victoria Bernal investigates *Dehai*, a website established by members of the Eritrean diaspora, as a transnational public sphere situated between Western media coverage of Eritrea and the Eritrean national press. *Dehai* simultaneously enables Eritreans in the diaspora to partake in the construction of Eritrea as an independent nation as well as to experiment with new forms of community and socialization to overcome the isolation they experience in the diaspora. Despite some of the messiness and limits recorded in the actual working of this transnational public sphere (e.g., violence, censorship, gender disparity), the author concludes that, via Dehai, Eritreans in the diaspora experiment with new forms of community and communication that also draw Eritreans back home into more open dialogues around issues of public concern, including women's status, religious concerns, and policy changes.

In sum, the public sphere provides anthropologists with a useful framework to address changes in community forms in postcolonial situations. Some anthropologists have used the concept of the public sphere to study religious communities and social changes, showing how the religious sphere contributes to the modernization of postcolonial societies. Others have focused on how people's socially grounded positions and power differentials are reflected and further articulated in people's participation in the public sphere. Yet others explore the emergence of a transnational public sphere and its impact on notions of citizenship, nationalism, belonging, and civic engagement. Overall, anthropological studies of the public sphere reflect practitioners' increasing interest in exploring interpretive frameworks that can also contribute to social change.

Rosa De Jorio

See also Critical Theory; Feminist Anthropology; Habermas, Jürgen; Nationalism, Transnationalism

Further Readings

Bernal, V. (2005). Eritrea on-line: Diaspora, cyberspace, and the public sphere. *American Ethnologists, 32*(4), 660–675.

De Jorio, R. (2009). Between dialogue and contestation: Gender, Islam, and the challenges of a Malian public sphere. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute, 15*(1), 95–111.

Dewey, S. (2009). "Dear Dr. Kothari . . . ": Sexuality, violence against women, and the parallel public sphere in India. *American Ethnologist, 36*(1), 124–139.

Fraser, N. (1992). Rethinking the public sphere: A contribution to the critique of actually existing democracy. In C. Calhoun (Ed.), *Habermas and the public sphere* (pp. 109–142). Cambridge: MIT Press.

Habermas, J. (1989). *The structural transformation of the public sphere: An inquiry into a category of bourgeois society* (T. Burger [with F. Lawrence], Trans.). Cambridge, UK: Polity Press. (Original work published 1962)

Launay, R., & Soares, B. F. (1999). The formation of an "Islamic sphere" in French colonial West Africa. *Economy and Society, 28*(4), 497–519.

Salvatore, A., & Eickelman, D. F. (2004). *Public Islam and the common good*. Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.

Queer Theory

Queer theory is an interdisciplinary field of inquiry that emerged in the 1990s at the intersection of feminist theory, gay and lesbian studies, poststructuralist philosophy, and women's and gender studies. Characteristically, practitioners of queer theory challenge structural inequalities grounded in gender and sexuality by critically engaging heteronormative categories and conventions. Though primarily associated with humanistic disciplines, queer theory is indebted to and influential in queer studies in anthropology.

The Term "Queer"

The word *queer* sometimes functions as an umbrella term, encompassing those who identify as gay, lesbian, bisexual, transgendered, intersex, and two-spirit; additionally, the term is sometimes used in relation to heterosexuals involved in nonnormative sexual subcultures and practices, such as polyamory and sadomasochism. When used in this way, the category is meant to be more inclusive than the acronym LGBT (lesbian, gay, bisexual, transgendered). Sometimes, however, "queer" is included as a specific category within the more expansive acronym LGBTQQI2SA (the latter parts referring to queer, questioning, intersex, two-spirit, and asexual, respectively). Queer-theoretical and -anthropological perspectives emphasize the cultural and historical specificity of categories, framing various forms of queerness in terms of contingent cultural constructions rather than as transhistorical, essential universals.

In the contemporary United States, the word *queer* is increasingly embraced by those who fall under its banner. Historically, though, queer was a derogatory term, its negative connotations stemming from its etymology (the German root *quer*, meaning "oblique" or "perverse") and from its earlier use in referring to people deemed odd or unusual. Current self-identifications as queer can be seen in terms of a project of reclamation, steeped in the aftermath of the identity politics of the 1990s generally and as a legacy of the radical activist group "Queer Nation" in particular. In this current usage, "queer" signifies fluidity, transgression of boundaries, and reterritorialization of static and binary forms of identity, thus challenging normative classifications, ideologies, and practices. In this way, "queer" has shifted from an ontological status to an epistemological stance. Grammatically, it now functions not only as an adjective or noun but also as a verb.

Queer Theory's Canonical Foundations

The phrase "queer theory" was coined by Teresa de Lauretis as the title for a conference she held at the University of California, Santa Cruz, in 1990. Central to queer theory is the destabilization of categories, especially the universalizing of the hierarchical binaries man/woman and heterosexual/homosexual, in favor of the recognition of fluidity in experience and identification across time and space. Two important precursors to queer theory are the poststructuralist philosophers Michel Foucault and

Jacques Derrida. In *History of Sexuality*, Foucault argued that the "speciation" of the "homosexual" as a type of person is a historically specific phenomenon, an idea that underpins subsequent social constructionist arguments in queer studies. Also influential is deconstruction, an interpretive method developed by Derrida in his work *Of Grammatology*. The influence of Derrida's observations about "violent hierarchies," in which one term of a binary is constitutively privileged, can be seen throughout queer-theoretical work.

Two texts considered foundational in queer theory, both published in 1990, are Eve Panofsky Sedgwick's *Epistemology of the Closet* and Judith Butler's *Gender Trouble*. Sedgwick argues for the symbolic centrality of the seemingly marginal topic of hetero- and homosexuality in the structuring of contemporary Western thought. Central to Sedgwick's *Epistemology* is her critical interrogation of the work of categorization, emphasizing the importance of differences across categories as well as within them. In *Gender Trouble*, Butler develops a performative theory of gender, a theory that underpins key subsequent writings such as *Bodies That Matter* (1993), *Excitable Speech* (1997), and *Undoing Gender* (2000). Her work centers on showing how gender is better understood as an act, something one *does*, than as an internal essence, something one *is*. For Butler, gender is manufactured through repetitive and compulsory ways of inhabiting a body in relation to categories that make it intelligible. She rethinks gender as regulatory norm rather than as interior essence. In doing so, she uses a philosophical consideration of non-normative sexual practices to denaturalize gender as an analytic category.

Anthropology's Role in the Emergence of Queer Theory

While both *Epistemology of the Closet* and *Gender Trouble* are grounded in humanistic disciplines, Butler and Sedgwick are both influenced in part by anthropological writings. Both these canonical texts in queer theory reference earlier works of Esther Newton and Gayle Rubin, two pioneering figures in queer anthropology. Esther Newton's monograph *Mother Camp* was published in 1972. This work, an ethnographic study of professional drag queens in Chicago, examines female impersonators as performing homosexuals and homosexual performers. Newton draws on the sociological theories of Erving Goffman, referencing his works *Stigma* and *The Presentation of Self in Everyday Life* in developing her analysis. This work with the concepts of stigma and self-performance begins to prefigure queer-theoretical interests in the metaphor of the closet, the notion of performativity, and the disruption of normative binaries. Moreover, Newton offers an ethnographic grounding for the development of these ideas.

In her 1975 essay "The Traffic in Women," Gayle Rubin develops the concept of "the sex/gender system" as a way to examine the transformation of biological sex into cultural gender, a historical work of naturalization so ceaseless that access to sex itself becomes mediated through the social construction of gender. Subsequently, however, in her 1984 essay "Thinking Sex: Notes to a Radical Theory of the Politics of Sexuality," Rubin revises this position, arguing for an understanding of gender and sexuality as analytically distinct. "Thinking Sex" also introduces the concept of "The Charmed Circle," a system of binary oppositions, such as heterosexual/homosexual, vanilla/kinky, whereby the former term is privileged as good in contradistinction to the latter. Rubin shows how the intersection of these distinctions as they empirically exist in combination leads to a complex "ladder of social acceptability," of which married, monogamous heterosexual couples are the apex. In this multivariate framework, some forms of sexuality—such as unmarried heterosexuals and long-term gay and lesbian couples—occupy a liminal state deemed potentially eligible for acceptance, whereas others—such as commercial, kinky, and cross-generational sex—are deemed beyond the pale. Rubin's work, too, prefigures and inspires key concepts in the seminal writings of Butler and Sedgwick, both of whom take up her essays explicitly.

Queer Theory and Queer Anthropology

Despite these interconnections, disciplinary differences between literary-cultural studies and anthropology reflect a divergence between "queer theory" and anthropological writings on queer topics. Central to this divergence is a tension between normative and empirical claim-making practices. Characteristically, queer studies are engaged in

critiques of heteronormativity. In humanistic theoretical writings, these critiques tend to take the form of an antinormative stance such that, within queer theory, anti-normativity itself becomes a norm. In anthropological writings, however, theorizations about queerness tend to foreground the ways in which actual people undo, resist, challenge, and remake norms, focusing on how everyday practices disrupt hegemonic ideologies, heteronormative, androcentric, Eurocentric, and otherwise.

A key text in queer theory as an antinormative philosophical project is Michael Warner's book *The Trouble With Normal*, published in 1999. Warner argues that an idealization of sexual normality is grounded in a politics of sexual shame. Moving from abstract to concrete, he applies his philosophical framework to gay marriage, which he reads as a regressive reincorporation of queerness into a heteronormative model that might otherwise be challenged. Similarly, in *Gaga Feminism* (2012), J. Jack Halberstam outlines an opposition to gay marriage on queer-theoretical grounds, arguing that embracing "marriage" weakens more radically antinormative stances, such as a wholesale rejection of the institution and its exclusionary privileges.

Likewise influential is the "anti-relationality thesis," advanced by Leo Bersani in *Homos*, published in 1995. Through a reading of André Gide's novel *The Immoralist*, Bersani justifies the stance implied by the novel, interpreting the text as even *more* subversive and threatening to dominant social order than it would have been had the protagonist embraced his homosexuality. Thus, for Bersani, the subversive potential of queerness resides in the radical dismissal of relationality, enabled by rejection of familial or contractual relationships based on a heterosexual model. This thesis gets debated in later queer-theoretical texts. Lee Edelman, in *No Future* (2004), embraces the antirelational stance, arguing for a rejection of futurity and its master symbol, the child. José Esteban Muñoz, in *Cruising Utopia* (2009), critiques the antirelational position, arguing for queerness as collective. He remains committed, however, to a philosophically antinormative characterization of queerness as a rejection of the here and now. Conversely, in queer anthropology, theoretical innovation gets positioned as emerging out of ethnographic engagement. Two groundbreaking monographs, Kath Weston's *Families We Choose* (1991) and Don Kulick's *Travesti* (1997), exemplify this characteristically anthropological approach. Weston shows how gays and lesbians, thought to be "exiles from kinship," form families of friends, thereby inhabiting idioms of kinship in alternative and creative ways. Kulick shows how *travestis*, Brazilian transgendered prostitutes, are invested not so much in a masculine/feminine binary on the basis of anatomical sex as they are in a binary of the sexual role positions of penetrator and penetrated around which to organize their subjectivities. Both anthropologists deploy ethnographic insights in ways that trouble received heteronormative wisdom, but they construct their arguments descriptively rather than in terms of an a priori theoretical commitment to anti-normativity as such.

Within cultural anthropology, studies on queer topics consistently address several theoretical problems. One consists in what Kath Weston has called "ethnocartography," locating cross-cultural examples of non-normative practices involving gender and sexuality. An important classic example of this phenomenon is Gilbert Herdt's work on "ritualized homosexuality" in Melanesia. More recently, anthropologists have grappled with the extent to which analytic categories translate cross-culturally, an issue taken up in the works of Evelyn Blackwood, Tom Boellstorff, Martin Manalansan IV, and David Valentine, among others. Key developments in queer anthropology can be traced through a series of volumes edited by Ellen Lewin and William L. Leap, which critically engage the paradigm of being "out" as a central basis of ethnographic work on queer topics. Though queer-anthropological writings speak to questions central to the discipline, from kinship to globalization, queer anthropology has tended to be marginalized within the field as a whole.

Likewise, anthropological works and methodologies have tended to be marginalized in humanistic queer studies. However, some recent works outside anthropology have begun to move beyond this theory/ethnography opposition. Two prominent examples are Jasbir Puar's (2007) *Terrorist Assemblages*, which develops the concepts of "homonationalism" and "homonormativity" in its critique of how the acceptance of certain forms of queerness depend on the production of other constitutive exclusions, in terms of race, class, sexuality, and religion, and Tim Dean's (2009) *Unlimited Intimacy*, a study of the subculture of "barebacking," or having unprotected sex. Drawing in part on participant observational

methods, while also being deeply engaged with textual analysis and philosophical questions, these works speak to the productive potential of keeping queer theory and queer anthropology in conversation.

Queer Anthropology in a Professional Context

Theoretical transformations in queer studies are reflected in matters of professional organization. The section of the American Anthropological Association focusing on queer anthropology originated as the Anthropological Research Group on Homosexuality. In 1987, this group became the Society of Lesbian and Gay Anthropologists. This first shift, from "homosexuality" to "gay and lesbian," reflects a movement from experience-distant scientific approaches characteristic of the sociology of deviance to the embrace of experience-near and identity-based formulations, which had strong currency in the 1990s. The Society of Lesbian and Gay Anthropologists achieved formal recognition as a section of the American Anthropological Association in 1998. In 2009, the Society of Lesbian and Gay Anthropologists became the Association for Queer Anthropology. This most recent shift signposts the increased inclusion of transgendered and two-spirit persons and other ethnographically distinct forms of sexuality that cannot be equated with or reduced to terms like *gay* or *lesbian*. This move aligns with anthropology's characteristic attention to the limits of commensurability across cultures. Likewise, the newest incarnation of the title moves away from an explicit assumption of a correspondence between subject matter and researcher identity.

Richard Joseph Martin

See also Butler, Judith; Derrida, Jacques; Foucault, Michel; Gender Diversity

Further Readings

Boellstorff, T. (2007). Queer studies in the house of anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 36*, 17–35.

de Lauretis, T. (Ed.). (1991). Queer theory: Lesbian and gay sexualities. An introduction. *Differences: A Journal of Feminist Cultural Studies, 3*(2), iii–xviii.

Halperin, D. (2003). The normalization of queer theory. *Journal of Homosexuality, 45*(2–4), 339–343.

Lewin, E., & Leap, W. L. (Eds.). (2002). *Out in theory: The emergence of lesbian and gay ethnography.* Chicago: University of Illinois Press.

Newton, E. (2000). *Margaret Mead made me gay: Personal essays, public ideas*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Rubin, G. S. (2011). *Deviations: A Gayle Rubin reader.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Warner, M. (Ed.). (1993). *Fear of a queer planet: Queer politics and social theory.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Weston, K. (1998). *Long slow burn: Sexuality and social science*. New York, NY: Routledge.

R

Rabinow, Paul

Paul Rabinow (1944–) is an American anthropologist. He is best known for his distinctive approach to modernity and the contemporary and for his works on the French historian and philosopher Michel Foucault. He is currently professor of anthropology at the University of California, Berkeley.

Early Life and Works

Paul Rabinow was born in Florida in 1944. His family moved to New York City when he was a small child. He attended Stuyvesant High School in Manhattan and went on to the University of Chicago, where he pursued both his undergraduate degree and later his PhD in anthropology. Rabinow's undergraduate years provide the backdrop for his later thinking. He has often cited the philosopher Richard McKeon, a student of John Dewey's, as a crucial figure in his early intellectual development at the University of Chicago. But it was also a more general feature of the intellectual climate at Chicago in the early 1960s that proved formative for Rabinow. Chicago's curriculum, classical and rigorous, embodied an intellectual tradition that was to be taken as a whole. Rabinow's position has never been to reject the philosophical and literary tradition in which he was trained at Chicago but rather to historicize and explore the grounds of its coherence and authority.

As a graduate student at Chicago, Rabinow studied under Clifford Geertz. At that time, Geertz was overseeing a collaborative project in Indonesia and Morocco. While the goal was to ultimately synthesize and compare the research findings, individual research projects in Geertz's network were stand-alone contributions. Rabinow set off for the Middle Atlas Mountains in 1968 as a member of Geertz's group. There he conducted immersive fieldwork and subsequently completed a dissertation, which became the book *Symbolic Domination: Cultural Form and Historical Change in Morocco*, first published in 1975. The monograph examines the interrelation between symbolic forms and social and political context, arguing that historical transformations had produced tensions between the core symbolic forms of a group of Moroccan religious leaders and a rapidly changing Morocco. *Symbolic Domination* reflects the early influences of Geertz and Max Weber on Rabinow's thinking. From Geertz, Rabinow inherited the aims of an interpretive social science and a concern with the symbolic negotiations involved in historically situated social processes (something that Geertz himself took largely from Weber) and from Weber, a conceptual toolkit for discussing domination and legitimacy and a concern with the interrelation between religion, and social forms and values.

Rabinow's work in the Middle Atlas also resulted in a second book, *Reflections on Fieldwork in Morocco* (1977), perhaps his most widely read (and widely taught) work. At the time of its writing, Rabinow held a professorship at Richmond College (1970–1978), but the book reflects Rabinow's engagements with Pierre Bourdieu and Robert Bellah at the Institute for Advanced Study

in Princeton (1971–1972). Though *Reflections* echoes themes from both Hegel's *Phenomenology of Spirit* and Lévi-Strauss's *Tristes Tropiques*, it is cast as an autobiographical account of fieldwork as an experiential process. At the time of its writing, Rabinow had been a proponent and a practitioner of the interpretive approach in anthropology. In the introduction to a reader titled *Interpretive Social Science* (1988), Rabinow observes, with William Sullivan, that the 20th century was a sobering one for grand historical theory. The evolution of society was recast as a mixture of chance and imperialism. This recasting meant that the social sciences were in need of some redefinition. Structuralism seemed to offer one kind of curative. But the fitting of human activity to abstract formal operations requires that at a certain point in the investigation the context of human action melt away. It was this last step to which Rabinow, like Geertz, was resistant.

Instead, the interpretive approach in anthropology treated culture as a set of meanings to be deciphered. The anthropologist's task, then, was to interpret these meanings, which he or she gained familiarity with through cultural immersion during fieldwork. The interpretive approach tended to focus investigation on the content of human action. But to posit that culture required interpretation was also to acknowledge that the anthropologist was situated in cultural meanings and context, which figure prominently in field encounters. Therefore, Rabinow observed, the taken-for-granted nature of fieldwork, and its relationship to ethnographic monographs, was in dire need of some critical attention. Thoroughly ahead of its time, *Reflections* reflected on fieldwork as a deeply experiential, messy process that destabilizes Self and the Other. And its message was that knowledge of an Other was always situated not only in historical antecedents and power relations but also in words, gestures, and relationships. *Reflections* casts doubt on interpretive anthropology's grounding in fieldwork. But the implication was not that fieldwork is doomed but that it must be evaluated in light of contemporary problems and that new forms of inquiry and new genres of writing might be in order. Nonetheless, after its writing, and with his discovery of the works of Michel Foucault, Rabinow largely turned away from interpretive work.

Seen in hindsight, these early interventions in the dynamics of fieldwork had an unexpected and not always salutary career. Culminating in the late 1980s in the volume *Writing Culture* (1986), which has left an indubitable mark on anthropology and to which Rabinow contributed a chapter, these critiques challenged ethnographic authority and dissolved the seamless relationship between the anthropologist as a field-worker and as an author. But the result, as Rabinow and others have lamented, has often been a turn toward subjectivism, lacking in standards of assessment. This was not the aim of *Reflections*, or of the *Writing Culture* critiques, but it has been a big part of their legacy.

Writings on Michel Foucault

In 1978, Rabinow joined the anthropology department of the University of California. The following year, Rabinow attended a seminar given by Hubert Dreyfus and John Searle, in which Michel Foucault was portrayed as a structuralist. Rabinow disagreed with the characterization, thereby launching a collaboration with Dreyfus that resulted in their book, *Michel Foucault: Beyond Structuralism and Hermeneutics* (1983). Foucault had taken a visiting professorship at Berkeley that coincided with the writing of the book. He proved a willing interlocutor and penned the afterword. In the book, Rabinow and Dreyfus argued that Foucault had combined elements of structuralism and hermeneutics to form a method they called "interpretive analytics." Interpretive analytics retained some of the formal characteristics of structuralist thought, while historicizing the very foundation of the social sciences, for which the human appeared as both subject and object.

Rabinow has emerged as one of the foremost commentators and discussants of Foucault's methods and concepts. Beyond commenting on Foucault's works and exploring their ramifications, Rabinow's own thinking has been deeply tied to Foucault's. While many of Rabinow's more theoretical works have delved into Foucault's writings, it is perhaps his fourth book, *French Modern: Norms and Forms of the Social Environment* (1989), that most clearly explores the Foucauldian method and problem. Foucault had written a number of works he characterized as histories of the present. These works denaturalized the categories and objects of the present by tracking their historical formation. Rabinow's *French Modern* is a history of the present that looks at the formation of French social modernity, focusing on urban planning. In the book, Rabinow argues that the notion of society we take for granted today took shape in France in the early

19th century, through shifting configurations of power and knowledge.

Biosociality and the Life Sciences

After completing *French Modern*, Rabinow turned to the life sciences and techno-science to track the modernization of the notion of "life." Rabinow undertook this project as part of what he termed the anthropology of reason, which explored the changing relationship between truth claims and values in contexts of shifting power relations.

Rabinow's inquiry into the life sciences began with something between a prophecy and a diagnosis. Rabinow identified an inchoate transformation, which he hypothesized would change what it means to be a living being in the decades to come. We are entering a period of "biosociality," he argued in the early 1990s. The term has proven influential in science and technology studies and in medical anthropology, capturing a crosscurrent to the sociobiology debates of the preceding decades. Marshall Sahlins, among others, had argued that sociobiology, for which social life was largely biologically determined, was itself pervaded by a bourgeois cultural logic. Thus, sociobiologists were remaking nature in society's image. Rabinow largely agreed with this characterization, but he observed that molecular biology and genetics would themselves become the basis of a new sociality. And since the technological aims of knowledge and intervention were combined in genetics research, the outcome would be a society based on synthetic nature. Such a society reflected the penetration of techno-science deeper and deeper into what was once Nature's stronghold. For Rabinow, therefore, biosociality would bring us closer to overcoming the nature/culture divide.

Rabinow's subsequent works examined genetics research in diverse contexts. He conducted fieldwork at biotech companies and academic institutions in France, Iceland, and the United States. His works on genetics research include *Making PCR: A Story of Biotechnology* (1997), *French DNA: Trouble in Purgatory* (1999), and *A Machine to Make a Future: Biotech Chronicles* (with Talia Dan-Cohen, 2004).

Anthropology of the Contemporary

In the late 1990s, Rabinow began to move past a concern with modernity, instead laying the foundations for a new anthropological endeavor that he called the anthropology of the contemporary. For Rabinow, to focus on the contemporary marks an attempt to move self-consciously past epochal terms. The anthropology of the contemporary also provides an alternative to both postmodernism and globalization, two dominant answers to the question "What comes after modernity?" The anthropology of the contemporary is attuned to emergence and focuses on the recent past and near future. It builds on the observation that without a grand historical *telos*, the new ceases to dominate by virtue of being new. It borrows Foucault's notion of assemblage, tracking the often contingent coming together of old and new elements. Sorting out situations that are consistently underdetermined involves careful conceptual honing, something that Rabinow has undertaken in a number of works, including *Anthropos Today: Reflections on Modern Equipment* (2003), *Marking Time: On the Anthropology of the Contemporary* (2008), *The Accompaniment: Assembling the Contemporary* (2011), and *Demands of the Day* (2013). Alongside these works, Rabinow has devoted some attention to creative modes of collaboration and new venues for thinking through and sharing problems in the anthropology of the contemporary. His inquiries range from studies of genetic technologies in the United States and France to formulating human practices for the emergent field of synthetic biology. And he has coauthored works and performed collaborative fieldwork with students and colleagues.

The anthropology of the contemporary seeks to provide anthropologists interested in contemporary practices—be they genetics, market, law, or others—with appropriate tools to replace the residual ethnographic paraphernalia that was fitted to a different time and a different set of problems. For that task, Rabinow has argued for an anthropological practice that revolves around concepts and cases rather than theory and ethnography. Concepts help organize and think through specific problems encountered in fieldwork. As such, they are oriented toward the concrete and must be reworked for different cases. Their flexibility makes them more appropriate for chronicling the emergent.

While earlier in his career Rabinow took part in more mainstream attempts to revamp anthropology so as to produce continuity between its past and its present, his more recent work has been less concerned with disciplinary coherence. Rabinow's own contemporary concepts, drawn from the works of John Dewey, depart sharply from the familiar

anthropological set. How these concepts will be received and used is yet to be determined.

Talia Dan-Cohen

See also Deconstruction, Foucault, Michel; Hermeneutics; Modernism; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. E. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Dreyfus, H. L., & Rabinow, P. (1983). *Michel Foucault: Beyond structuralism and hermeneutics*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Gibbon, S., & Novas, C. (Eds.). (2007). *Biosocialities, genetics and the social sciences: Making biologies and identities*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Rabinow, P., Marcus, G. E., Faubion, J., & Rees, T. (2008). *Designs for an anthropology of the contemporary.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Rabinow, P., & Stavrianakis, A. (2013). *Demands of the day: On the logic of anthropological inquiry.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Rabinow, P., & Sullivan, W. M. (Eds.). (1989). *Interpretive social science: A second look*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Race

Anthropology's concern with race dates back to the discipline's 19th-century beginnings, when it defined itself as the scientific study of the *races of man*. Concepts and explanations of race have been closely tied to the development of and the shifts in anthropological theory in general. The diverse peoples, cultures, and societies that constitute anthropology's intellectual focus have been conceptualized in contradictory terms. The notion of psychic unity that the German ethnologist Adolf Bastian formulated underpinned the comparative study of humankind. Societies and cultures located beyond the boundaries of Western civilizations, many of which were classified then as "primitive," were assumed to possess the collective cognitive capacities to evolve according to a logic of progress and perfectibility and, hence, to become "civilized" eventually. However, civilization was envisioned according to European and Euro-American criteria. The earliest theories of evolution essentialized sociocultural differences in a manner that assigned the majority of the world's peoples to distinct temporalities. Non-Western societies—as well as the folk, peasant, nomadic, or otherwise low-status ethnic minority segments within Western societies—were rendered as living fossils from the evolutionary past, in contrast to the societies marked by progress, later to be construed in terms of modernity and development.

Scientific Racism and Its Contenders

While psychic unity emphasized the common denominators among all human beings, the positive implications of this concept were offset by commonly held biologically determinist assumptions that conflated nature, or biology, with culture. This translated into the notion that primitive culture was correlated with or the result of biological inferiority. The biologization of sociocultural variation was most evident in the early phases of physical anthropology. Those endeavors were preoccupied with measuring the anatomical (especially cranial) differences that marked supposedly higher and lesser forms of humanity, framing the results in racial taxonomies. In the most extreme cases, polygeneticists manufactured typological evidence to make the case for separate origins and, hence, for species-like distinctions between Europeans and their colonial subjects, particularly sub-Saharan Africans, whose purported inferiority and radical otherness helped justify the capture of labor power by means of enslavement. Monogenetic interpretations were also problematic in their racist assumptions concerning the purported "degeneration" of non-Europeans from the ideal human form developed from a single genesis.

Joseph Arthur Comte de Gobineau's 1853–1855 treatise *An Essay on the Inequality of the Human Races*, argued the natural superiority of the Aryan race. In 1885, the Haitian ethnologist Joseph Anténor Firmin published a counterargument in *The Equality of the Human Races*. In addition to its value as critique, the treatise instantiated an approach to a more methodologically sound anthropology. In good part due to the silencing of Haitian voices and historical agency, Firmin's theory had limited impact at that time.

Social Darwinism permeated much of the anthropology of the late 19th and early 20th centuries,

contributing to a racial worldview. Franz Boas intervened with the argument that race (visible markers of human variability), language, and culture were distinct. His idiographic theory of historical particularism represented a major departure from evolutionary thinking. Boasian antiracism, in dialogue with W. E. B. Du Bois's parallel theorizing on "the color line," marked a major break away from the dominant paradigm of scientific racism. By the early post–World War II period, the Boasian school had consolidated its validity and set the standard for the entire disciplinary field.

Perspectives During the Pre- and Postwar Period

During the 1930s and 1940s, anthropological inquiry on race in the United States was informed by Malinowskian functionalism and A. R. Radcliffe-Brown's structural functionalism. These perspectives were sometimes brought into uneasy conversation with other theoretical discourses, such as the Marxist ideas circulating during the Great Depression. The 1933–1935 collaborative ethnographic research that Allison Davis, Burleigh Gardner, and Mary Gardner undertook in Natchez, Mississippi, resulted in an analysis of the structure and function of race as it was related to class. It also inscribed a form of theoretical border crossing. In their 1941 *Deep South*, they conceptualized race through the lens of caste to underscore the workings of a historically constituted and power-mediated *social* distinction intertwined with class. Besides the influence of British social anthropology, the study engaged Marxist assumptions concerning political economy, conflict, and violence.

Theoretical eclecticism continued in St. Clair Drake and Horace Cayton's 1945 *Black Metropolis*, where the authors used structural functionalism and Marxist and Weberian ideas in an attempt to illuminate African Americans' navigation of Chicago's landscape. Drake's later study of a multiracial port district in Cardiff, Wales, addressed similar problems from the vantage of the families and the community of African and Arab seamen, whose social status was marked by both racial subordination and colonial subjection. Also beginning to work in the United Kingdom around that time, Michael Banton examined race relations in England. By the 1960s, he started to look beyond the social structural approach to explain the conflict situations that discrimination engendered in various social domains, including police-community relations. In his later analysis, he employed rational choice theory. This shifted his analytical focus from structure to social actors, who assess costs and benefits in making choices.

Materialisms, 1960s to the Present

While Marxism was a notable source of theory, it was submerged in less politicized materialisms (e.g., cultural ecology) throughout most of the 1950s in the United States due to the McCarthy Era hostilities toward the political left. For example, Marvin Harris drew from Marx's emphasis on production and Malthus's focus on demographic factors. Harris reworked Marxist notions of base (infrastructure) and superstructure, while rejecting its dialectic. To explain the varied, historically contingent racial formations in the Americas, he adumbrated an approach he later elaborated as the scientific paradigm of cultural materialism in his 1968 book *The Rise of Anthropological Theory*.

Harris's seminal study compared "patterns of race" across three ecological zones: (1) the temperate, (2) the highlands, and (3) the tropical/subtropical coastal lowlands. He explained the development and deployment of varying forms of racial classification in the context of material realities—the ecological, demographic, and techno-economic conditions that shape the levels of structure and superstructure. He posited that the interplay between productive and reproductive forces determined the cultural logics of racial classification (e.g., the U.S. hypodescent and the Brazilian color continuum or "racial calculus").

In later work, other materialist views of race were asserted, some of which were explicitly framed within Marxism. Bernard Magubane applied Marxist concepts to examine the political economy of race and class in South Africa. Eric Wolf's magisterial *Europe and the People Without History* (1982) brought Marxist categories to his anthropological history of world capitalism and its expansionist articulations with diverse local and regional economies populated by "people[s] without history." Within this context, racial distinctions emerged from historical processes that converted populations of entire continents into coerced labor. In later phases of capitalist development, these categories retained their stigma, resulting in exclusion from the higher

echelons of employment and society. Furthermore, Eleanor Burke Leacock's Marxist feminism yielded significant theoretical insights into the development of women's subordination in the context of a deeper history of more egalitarian periods of gender relations. She also analyzed the interplay of culture, race, and poverty.

Another Marxist feminist whose theorization of race has been significant is Karen Brodkin. Contributing to a unified theory of race, gender, and class, she sought to explain "how Jews became white" after being initially relegated to the margins of whiteness. She sees race as a material relation articulated to class and gender, central to the means of capitalist production. In her 1998 American Ethnological Society address, "Global Capitalism: What's Race Got to Do With It?" (published in *American Ethnologist* 2 years later), she argued that race and class are "mutually constitutive, two facets of the same process that apply to both the structure of productive relationships and people's consciousness or identities." Gender is also integral to this process; its constructions make race "corporeal, material, and visible."

There are also other materialisms that interrogate race and racism by drawing on interpretive perspectives associated with postmodernism and poststructuralism: culture and political economy, reflexive political economy, and multiracial feminisms. They acknowledge the materiality of race while being attentive to the intersubjective dynamics of identity, discursive practices, and structures of feeling, whose salience exceeds the limited "superstructural" role that more orthodox materialisms allow.

Postmodernist/Poststructuralist Perspectives

The postmodernist turn contributed to the shift from nomothetic theory and grand narratives toward more idiographic analyses of diverse trajectories of discourse, practice, and identity. In her 1995 *Colonial Inscriptions: Race, Sex, and Class in Kenya*, Carolyn Martin Shaw examines the racial, class, and sexual politics in the formation of political subjects in colonial Kenya. Her analysis of plural and interlocking subjectivities among both European settlers and Africans is informed by a synthesis of post-Marxism and poststructuralism, and her analysis draws on her critical reworking of Michel Foucault's theory of knowledge.

Another take on racial discourses comes from the linguistic anthropologist Jane Hill, whose *The Everyday Language of White Racism* (2008) shows how language use and ideologies play an important role in circulating racial stereotypes in the "talk and text" of everyday life. For Hill, discourse denotes "all the varieties of language-in-use"—including what remains silent. She invokes the concept of ideology for the more politically loaded role of language that Foucault addresses in his theory of discourse. She argues that middle-class White discourse, which is widely circulated in the mainstream media as well as in ordinary talk, continues to produce White racism. She focuses on how slurs, gaffes, and covert racist discourse operate in the White public space.

Theories of practice have also been employed to interrogate the workings of race. In her 1991 *Stains on My Name, War in My Veins*, Brackette Williams's analysis of the deployment of racial and ethnic categories in the context of nation building draws on both Pierre Bourdieu and the cultural Marxist Antonio Gramsci. The complementarity of these two theorists is demonstrated in Williams's reworking of concepts such as Bourdieu's *doxa* (similar to the Gramscian common sense) and "transformist hegemony" from Gramsci, who elucidates how hegemony is reproduced by incorporating elements of subordinate groups' cultures into the national identity to secure their loyalty. Williams adapts these concepts for theorizing Guyanese nationalism and the cultural struggles between African and Indian descendants for cultural capital as well as political power.

Melissa Hargrove also finds Bourdieu's practice theory helpful, as she explains in her 2009 article in *Transforming Anthropology*, "Mapping the Social Field of Whiteness." To explicate White racism's operation within the social field of whiteness, she employs the concept of *habitus* (a system generating practices within a field where hierarchy is normalized). This allows her to explain how urban renewal, historic preservation, and heritage tourism work together to maintain racial inequalities and White domination. As a consequence, the African American Gullah/Geechee of Charleston, South Carolina, are disempowered, displaced, and silenced with respect to their historical consciousness and sense of preservation of values and priorities.

In his 2001 *Harlemworld*, John Jackson takes a performance approach to explain how race and class are seen through social practices. Drawing on a

wide array of theoretical sources (from Judith Butler to hip-hop and the less visible folk theory), his interpretation of performative raciality focuses on the residents of Harlem, New York. Contrary to conventional social theory, in which race is ascribed and class is achieved, Jackson argues that race is achieved through practices and performances marked by differences of class. However, performance alone is never enough. Race is not only what people do but also what is done to them in contexts of racism complicated by class exploitation, ethnicity, gender, and sexuality, which operate simultaneously.

In his 2005 *Real Black: Adventures in Racial Sincerity*, Jackson formulates a theory of racial authenticity and sincerity in which two models for assessing racial identities compete for explanatory dominance. Authenticity valorizes cultural scripts that restrict and objectify racial self-making, while sincerity affirms the subjectivities and uncertainties of racial performances.

In his more recent *Racial Paranoia: The Unintended Consequences of Political Correctness*, Jackson coins the concept of racial paranoia. This is a tool for theorizing the insidious power that political correctness and claims of color blindness have in silencing what Whites really feel, thereby sustaining the status quo. This causes intense distrust and anxiety within people who continue to be constrained by racial disparities.

Transnationalism, Globalization, and Development

The mapping of racializing processes in the interrelated contexts of transnationalism and globalization is an important new trend informed by a wide range of theoretical perspectives on development, postcoloniality, diasporas, neoliberalism, and the restructuring of nation-states. Synthesizing elements from a wide body of knowledge on race, nationalism, and hegemony, Linda Basch, Nina Glick-Schiller, and Cristina Szanton Blancs contribute a seminal analysis in their 1993 *Nations Unbound: Transnational Projects, Postcolonial Predicaments and Deterritorialized Nation-States*. In this text, they examine the racialization of new immigrants who resist hegemonic U.S. racial categories and the stigma invested in them. Their contestations, along with the processes of change engendering new racial alignments within U.S. society itself, are destabilizing the established racial order and the public discourse on racial classifications. In recent analyses of race's relationship with globalization, anthropologists elucidate how globalization intensifies race making and how the structural, ideological, and experiential workings of race contribute to the ways in which global transformations are configured. In some of this work, the political-economic restructuring and shifts in sociocultural production that occur within the global context are examined through the prism of concepts such as global apartheid and structural violence. The growing disparities along such lines of wealth, health, expectancy, and military power tend to correlate with race and implicate both local and supralocal modalities of racism. As Faye Harrison argues in *Resisting Racism and Xenophobia*, these are often sites of human rights struggles engendered by a broad continuum of violence. The transnational human rights regime has become a significant stage for remaking racial meanings and identities.

In her 2009 *Anthropology Today* article, "Invisible Colour: Landscapes of Whiteness and Racial Identity in International Development," Kristin Lóftsdottir addresses the overlap of race and global processes in her analysis of international development as a site where the meanings and representations of race, notably whiteness, are "stimulated and recreated." Through the lived practices, cross-cultural encounters, and visual representations of development, historical memories of colonial racialization are reinvested, and new racialized identities are constructed. This unintended process operates through a "developscape," a concept coined from Appadurai's mapping of various "scapes" across transnational terrain. According to Lóftsdottir, developscape refers to the mobility of people, commodities, and images as well as the ideas and desires appropriated within local contexts. These influence the ways development is imagined and performed—whether according to Western or Chinese scripts.

Neoliberalism

A number of anthropological studies of race and racism examine neoliberalism as a context for new racial meanings, frictions, and identities. In her 2011 *Racial Representations in Asia*, Yasuko Takezawa notes that new forms of racial exclusion have emerged, many of which are barely visible. In an era of racism without races, she seeks to understand invisible races and racisms. Her focus is on

the visible and invisible modes of representing racial differences and reproducing racialized disparities in the case of the Burakumin and the Koreans in Japan. Takezawa describes how nonvisual modes of representation are mediated through auditory, olfactory, or tactile sensorial responses, "triggered on the premise of the idea of race" and often based on dreadful or erotic feelings about imaginary differences. In her theory, she combines structural and phenomenological perspectives in explaining how multisensorial perceptions are represented through representational repertoires.

Neoliberalism's relationship with race is elucidated insightfully in Charles Hales's theory of neoliberal multiculturalism, which is presented in his 2006 book *Más que un Indio: Racial Ambivalence and the Paradox of Neoliberal Multiculturalism in Guatemala*. In this book, he demonstrates that neoliberalism is more than economic reform; it also involves the reorganization of governance in which the cultural rights of indigenous and Afrodescendant peoples are acknowledged but neutralized. Consequently, racial hierarchies are remade despite the endorsement of multicultural equality. A compensatory concept of collective rights has become central, contrasting with the enshrinement of competitive individualism in other national contexts. Latin America's neoliberal multicultural regimes "shape, delimit, and *produce* cultural differences," rather than suppressing them as in previous demands for assimilation in *mestizaje* discourse.

Beyond Binaries and Dichotomies

In the conventions of Americanist studies, the concept of race is presumed to be only applicable to African descendants, while ethnicity is relevant in the case of indigenous people. Peter Wade's *Race and Ethnicity in Latin America* argues against this dichotomous view, pointing out that race and ethnicity apply to both populations, which are differentially incorporated into racialized structures of alterity. Wade is joined by a growing number of anthropologists who substantiate the salience of race among Amerindians in Latin America. However, there is no consensus in this view. Addressing the issue from the United States in "Deracializing the Past," Joe Watkins advocates for deracialization, insisting that "'American Indian' is a politically created ethnicity rather than a racial one." Nonetheless, Hale argues for a "race-centered analysis" to address racial hierarchy and systemic racial privilege in ways that ethnicity theory has not. The challenge, he argues, is to theorize new cultural racisms in which racial hierarchy becomes more flexible and resilient.

In U.S. society, the hegemonic Black/White binary restricts how the complexities of race are understood. Jacalyn Harden's *Double Cross: Japanese Americans in Black and White Chicago* (2003), her analysis of Japanese Americans' relations with African Americans, demonstrates the necessity of "double crossing" the color line. Her metaphor connotes both betrayal to hegemonic racial assumptions and fluctuations across the line between "coloredness" and "leaving coloredness behind" for model minority status. She uses this idea to unbury the history of Japanese American and Black convergence in struggles related to work and civil rights. She thinks that the politics and economics of divide-and-conquer have kept the representations of the "rebellious, government-dependent" Blacks and the "model minority" Japanese antithetical.

Recent work on whiteness, the White public space, and White racial discourses has also challenged conventional approaches to race framed as a Black problem embedded in Black/White disparities. In addition to the scholars discussed earlier in this entry (not only Brodkin, Hargrove, and Hill but also Davis et al. and Shaw, in whose work Whites were included), there are two other scholars whose writings are notable. Pem Davidson Buck's Marxist-inflected account of rural central Kentucky's poor Whites in her 2001 *Worked to the Bone* explains the shift from earlier cross-racial alliances. John Hartigan's 1999 *Racial Situations: Class Predicaments of Whiteness in Detroit* offers insights into class- and place-specific forms of whiteness. His analysis, made especially clear in his 2010 *Race in the 21st Century: Ethnographic Approaches*, is informed by recent trends in conceptualizing cultural dynamics, which are integral to how racial difference, belonging, and identification are made and remade.

Faye V. Harrison

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Bastian, Adolf; Boas, Franz; Bourdieu, Pierre; Butler, Judith; Du Bois, W. E. B.; Foucault, Michel; Gramsci, Antonio; Habitus; Harris, Marvin; Leacock, Eleanor; Malinowski, Bronisław; Marxist Anthropology; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Postcolonial Theory; Postmodernism; Poststructuralism; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Rational Choice Theory; Scapes; Structural Functionalism

Further Readings

Baker, L. D. (1998). *From savage to Negro: Anthropology and the construction of race, 1896–1954*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Banton, M. (1998). *Racial theories* (2nd ed.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Davis, A., Gardner, B. B., & Gardner, M. R. (2009). *Deep South: A social anthropological study of caste and class*. Columbia: University of South Carolina Press. (Original work published 1941)

Hale, C. R. (2006). *Más Que un Indio: Racial ambivalence and the paradox of neoliberal multiculturalism in Guatemala*. Santa Fe, NM: School of American Research Press.

Harden, J. D. (2003). *Double cross: Japanese Americans in Black and White Chicago*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Harrison, F. V. (Ed.). (2005). *Resisting racism and xenophobia: Global perspectives on race, gender, and human rights*. Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira.

Hartigan, J., Jr. (2010). *Race in the 21st century: Ethnographic approaches*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Hill, J. H. (2008). *The everyday language of White racism*. Malden, MA: Wiley-Blackwell.

Jackson, J. L., Jr. (2005). *Real Black: Adventures in racial sincerity*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Smedley, A., & Smedley, B. D. (2011). *Race in North America: Origin and evolution of a worldview* (4th ed.). Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Thomas, D. A., & Clarke, K. M. (Eds.). (2006). *Globalization and race: Transformations in the cultural production of blackness*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Wade, P. (2010). *Race and ethnicity in Latin America* (2nd ed.). London, UK: Pluto Press.

Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.

A. R. Radcliffe-Brown (1881–1955) is considered one of the founders of modern social anthropology and the main theorist of structural functionalism.

Biography and Works

Alfred Reginald Radcliffe-Brown (born Alfred Reginald Brown), the second son of Alfred Brown—a manufacturer's clerk—and his wife Hannah, née Radcliffe, grew up in Birmingham, England. After his father's death in 1886, the family struggled economically, but thanks to grants, Brown was educated at the prestigious King Edward's School and subsequently went on to study for a degree in mental and moral Science at Trinity College, Cambridge. Studying under the leading anthropologists W. H. R. Rivers and A. C. Haddon, Brown was drawn toward this subject, and in 1906, he left for fieldwork in the Andaman Islands.

Instructed by Rivers to trace genealogies and to collect a wide variety of materials with the explicit aim of reconstructing the original way of life of the "Negritos" of the islands—presumed to be the "lowest of the four population strata in Southeast Asia"—Brown found fieldwork taxing and difficult. From his published work, it transpires that he only spent about 10 months in the field out of the 2 years he spent in the archipelago. Most of this time seems to have been spent with people who had left their villages and moved to the town of Port Blair. Admitting poor mastery of the local language, Brown did most of his fieldwork in Hindustani and, in the final period, with an English-speaking interpreter.

Retrospectively, Brown's Andaman fieldwork is considered unfocused and unsatisfactory, and he returned without a full record of Andamanese genealogies, as well as no proper grasp of their original social organization. The contrast with the sophisticated fieldwork style developed a few years later by his contemporary and rival Bronisław Malinowski is striking.

Following his return from the Andaman Islands, Brown received a fellowship at Trinity College on presenting his dissertation. The Andaman material would not be fully published until 1922, however, and already in 1910, Radcliffe-Brown embarked on new fieldwork in Western Australia, accompanied by the zoologist Grant Watson and the self-taught ethnologist Daisy Bates. Arriving late in the field, probably because of his marriage to Winifred Marie Lyon in April 1910, Brown concentrated on the study of kinship systems. He had by now become thoroughly acquainted with the sociology of Émile Durkheim and his *Annales* school. Seeing the comparative, systemic Durkheimian approach to social life as superior to the ethnological tradition in which he was trained, Brown became determined to mold social anthropology into a kind of comparative micro-sociology, with an emphasis on scientific explanation of variations in structural form rather than the description and comparison of cultural traits.

Although his Andaman monograph remained unfinished, Brown would publish a series of

influential papers on Australian kinship systems and totemism in the 1910s. The quality and quantity of his own empirical material was always the Achilles' heel of his academic work, and at the meeting for the Association for the Advancement of Science in Melbourne, Australia, in 1914, Bates openly accused Brown of having plagiarized her work. As a matter of fact, his original contribution lay not so much in his ethnography, where he often relied extensively on secondary sources, as in his theoretical innovations. Brown nevertheless had a reputation for drawing freely, and often without citing the sources, from data collected by people whom he did not consider professionals.

Due to the outbreak of war in Europe, Brown found himself stranded in Australia in 1914. He taught at the Church of England Grammar School in Sydney for a while, before taking up the post of director of education in Tonga (1916–1919). In 1921, he became a professor of social anthropology at the University of Cape Town, South Africa, founding the School of African Life and Languages and directing research on various South African peoples.

In South Africa, Brown refined his theoretical program of modeling social anthropology on the natural sciences. Unlike Durkheim's French followers, he saw empirical work essentially as a means to develop general hypotheses about social form, ultimately leading to the formulation of "natural laws of society." In South Africa, he became involved, reluctantly, in political matters of race and ethnicity, which he saw as a "detestable nuisance," but he nevertheless gave policy advice to the White rulers and made a statement on the possibility of a future South African nationalism that encompassed both Blacks and Whites. In the same period, his *Andaman Islanders* (1922) was finally published. Although Brown was by then a full-fledged Durkheimian with his own theoretical agenda, the influence of Rivers's psychological and cultural anthropology was still perceptible; it is less so in the second, slightly revised edition of 1932.

Among Brown's students in Cape Town were Isaac Schapera, a later member of his Oxford group, and Winifred Hoernlé, who subsequently taught social anthropology for many years at the University of the Witwatersrand in Johannesburg. Brown's influence on South African anthropology was enduring.

In 1925, Brown returned to Australia, as a professor of social anthropology in Sydney; shortly afterward, he hyphenated his name into the now familiar form, reasoning that there are far too many Browns in the world. In Sydney, he developed an ambitious teaching program encompassing both theoretical and applied anthropology, while continuing to pursue his interests in Australian kinship systems and totemism. A successful fund-raiser, Radcliffe-Brown soon had a fair number of research students working in Australia and the Pacific, collecting data that Radcliffe-Brown would later mine for his comparative theorizing. Founding the influential journal *Oceania* in 1930, he soon afterward published *The Social Organization of Australian Tribes*, synthesizing material produced by his own students as well as drawing on many other sources with the explicit aim of classifying Australian kinship systems comparatively, showing both their differences and their similarities. Australian kinship is reputed to be exceedingly complex and diverse, with moiety systems, double descent, and sometimes systems creating four lines of descent. This book, as well as subsequent volumes published by Radcliffe-Brown and his students, helped establish the reputation of British and Commonwealth social anthropology as "kinshipology" by the late 1940s.

Radcliffe-Brown succeeded in establishing Sydney as an anthropological milieu of note, and many foreign visitors, from Margaret Mead to Malinowski's old student Raymond Firth, visited the department for varying lengths of time. He nevertheless ran into difficulties with the Australian Research Council over administrative and financial matters, and this may partly have motivated him to accept a position at the University of Chicago in 1931.

The years in the United States, from 1931 to 1937, interrupted only by a few months in Yanching (China) in 1935, differed from the time spent in South Africa and Australia. In the United States, Radcliffe-Brown arrived as an established theorist and the leader of a "school" (although he himself eschewed that term), amid a flourishing anthropological community where Boasian historical particularism dominated. Engaging with leading American anthropologists of the day, such as Robert Redfield and Ralph Linton, and teaching emerging anthropologists like Sol Tax and Fred Eggan, Radcliffe-Brown left his mark on the Chicago department, which for decades was reputed to be the most

"social anthropological" department in the country. His publications from this period tended to be programmatic and polemical; and his final series of lectures, titled *A Natural Science of Society*, emphasized the importance of studying social structure comparatively to arrive at "natural laws," a project very distinct from the psychological, linguistic, and sometimes historical interests of the Boasians.

Radcliffe-Brown's return to England to take up a chair at Oxford as professor of social anthropology was greeted by his admirers, foremost among whom were E. E. Evans-Pritchard and Meyer Fortes, and he soon succeeded in establishing the Institute of Social Anthropology, which was independent of the Pitt-Rivers Museum. Differences with Malinowski, still at the London School of Economics, became acutely pronounced as the two men found themselves in the same country, and Radcliffe-Brown castigated Malinowski and his followers for "muddled thinking" and an unscientific interest in culture (a hopeless abstraction, according to Radcliffe-Brown) and psychology. Malinowski subsequently left for the United States, where he died in 1942, but the tension between the Malinowskians and the followers of Radcliffe-Brown's structural functionalism continued into the postwar years.

With the publication of *African Political Systems* (edited by Fortes and Evans-Pritchard, 1940) and Evans-Pritchard's *The Nuer* (1940), the hegemony of Radcliffe-Brown's structural functionalism in British social anthropology was firmly established. Although Malinowski had never written systematically about politics or kinship, these central features of social structure were now defined as the very engine of social life. For a few years, Radcliffe-Brown, Fortes, Evans-Pritchard, and Max Gluckman were all at the institute at Oxford. However, Radcliffe-Brown spent much of the Second World War abroad—largely in Brazil—and by the time of his return, there were indications that his influence was already waning.

After having been retired against his will in 1946, Radcliffe-Brown continued to travel and teach, notably in Cairo and at Rhodes University in Grahamstown, South Africa. Two of his most notable books, the coedited (with Daryll Forde) *African Systems of Kinship and Marriage* (1950) and his main collection of essays, *Structure and Function in Primitive Society* (1952), were published in this late period. His Chicago lectures had been transcribed by Lloyd Warner's secretary and were published posthumously as *A Natural Science of Society* (1957), without making much of an impact on a discipline that had by then moved decisively in new directions.

Often described as egocentric and flamboyant, Radcliffe-Brown moved in the upper circles of society and doubtless contributed to social anthropology's reputation in Britain as an upper-middle-class discipline. He was nevertheless also described as a "charming host and a brilliant conversationalist" in an obituary by his American students Fred Eggan and Lloyd Warner. A complex man, Radcliffe-Brown was simultaneously perceived as an arrogant snob with aristocratic affectations and a Utopian adherent of radical political ideas. In this contrast between order and chaos lies, arguably, the key to his intellectual creativity and his original attempt to reveal structural regularities hidden by a superficial disorder.

Theoretical Contributions

Considering his influential and long career, Radcliffe-Brown was not a prolific writer. His main essays are collected in a relatively slim volume, *Structure and Function in Primitive Society* (1952), and he never wrote a proper monograph after *The Andaman Islanders*. However, his public lectures and articles were important. They would typically begin with a sweeping theoretical statement, sometimes with an acerbic polemic against muddled or antiquated thinking, followed by a statement of the problem in the form of a puzzle, and then delving into some empirical material, his own or (usually) that of others, to emerge with a solution to the problem. His essays are lucid, sophisticated, and stringent.

Since Radcliffe-Brown is frequently described as a bad field-worker and a good analytical thinker, it should be pointed out that his field experiences, however incomplete, played an important part in shaping his theoretical thought. In the Andaman Islands, he recognized the impossibility of reconstructing social structure through oral sources and instead focused on synchronic analysis. In his Australian work, a main source of motivation was to show that Durkheim's analysis of totemism was simplistic, and in South Africa, he was intrigued by seeming anomalies in the kinship systems of the "native peoples."

Radcliffe-Brown's main source of intellectual inspiration was Durkheim's sociology, although the

central analytical terms, structure and function, had been introduced in the 1870s by Herbert Spencer. In Durkheim, Radcliffe-Brown found a theoretical program enabling him to overthrow the directionless nitty-gritty detail of ethnological description (which he and his followers would often castigate the Malinowskians for) and the historical speculations of evolutionists and diffusionists. A society, according to Radcliffe-Brown, could be fully understood through an understanding of the interrelationships of its institutions in the present. There are perceptible traces of evolutionist problem formulations in Radcliffe-Brown's early work, but these were shaved off progressively as the structural-functionalist program took shape in the years following the First World War.

At its most general level, Radcliffe-Brown's main theoretical contribution consisted in his insistence in studying the interrelationships between social institutions and their mutual influence. Unlike Malinowski's functionalism, which argued the primacy of individual needs as the main explanation for the existence of particular social institutions, Radcliffe-Brown—like Durkheim—placed institutions before individuals. His critics might allege that this mode of explanation was teleological; it seemed as if social institutions had intentions and goals of their own. However, Radcliffe-Brown repeatedly emphasized that he looked at co-adaptation between institutions and never believed that they were governed by an invisible hand or that they were fitted perfectly together like the pieces of a jigsaw puzzle. His founding question was how it could be that stable social forms could emerge out of a situation of flux and instability. Characteristically, Radcliffe-Brown held that religion and ritual provide "the glue which holds society together," unlike Malinowski's view that the "function" of religion consists in satisfying individual needs for order, meaning, and so on.

Believing that the accumulation of empirical material and the refining of theoretical models would eventually lead to the formulation of a set of natural laws of society, Radcliffe-Brown did not see himself as a representative of a "school." A full-fledged science, he argued in 1940, has no need for schools, since the scientific endeavor is common to all who practice it.

While mainstream American anthropologists invoked culture as their key concept, Radcliffe-Brown saw culture at the same time as messy and abstract. Like a natural scientist, he wished to isolate variables that could be studied accurately, such as customary laws, marriage rules, structures of authority, and kinship terms. In one of his later statements, he wrote contemptuously about the idea of "culture contact," arguing that in an encounter involving, say, Europeans and Africans, research should focus on their social relations within a specific structural arrangement and not on relations between "cultures."

Although it is not his best work, "The Mother's Brother in South Africa" (1924) may still be Radcliffe-Brown's most well-known article. Its merit lies in its clear delineation of the difference between the old diffusionist anthropology and his own structural functionalism. Unlike previous writers, Radcliffe-Brown argues that the warm, affectionate relationship that exists between a male ego and his mother's brother in patrilineal societies is not a "survival" or "residue" from a previous matrilineal or even matriarchal society but can be understood through its contemporary functioning. Ego is to inherit from his father, who is a figure of authority. His mother, a member of another kin group, is nurturing and caring and cannot impose effective sanctions anyway. The sentiment toward the mother, according to Radcliffe-Brown, is extended toward her kin group, including the mother's brother, because he too is inoffensive, not being in a position to effectuate sanctions. The "joking relationship," studied by Radcliffe-Brown and several of his students, is a related kind of institution.

Radcliffe-Brown's writings on totemism also illuminate his theoretical significance, as well as indicating his intellectual development. In fact, he developed two theories of totemism, separated by 2 decades. Totemism, an institution whereby different segments of a society associate themselves with a natural species (often an animal), had already been discussed by many British anthropologists. Radcliffe-Brown's first theory, elaborated in "The Definition of Totemism" (1914), was unspectacular and largely echoed Durkheim's view that it served to enhance solidarity within society. Radcliffe-Brown's second theory, however, elaborated in his late article "The Comparative Method in Social Anthropology" (1952), developed the argument several steps further. While the first theory is not falsified, it is shown to be incomplete, and Radcliffe-Brown argues that the imagined relationship between the natural species

corresponds to the relationship between the totemic clans, creating a system of contrasts or oppositions, which create unity and order in the social and the natural world. Claude Lévi-Strauss would later build on this insight when developing his structuralist theory of totemism.

Criticism and Legacy

In Britain, Radcliffe-Brown's main opponents were the Malinowskians, who insisted on the precedence of the complexity of the social world above elegant models that, in their view, oversimplified in misleading ways. American cultural anthropologists were generally less engaged with structural functionalism and often more sympathetic, but its influence was similarly limited outside Chicago and was felt only in scattered pockets elsewhere. French anthropologists, following the lead of Marcel Mauss, took Durkheim's legacy in a direction different from that of Radcliffe-Brown, applying it to qualitative studies of particular institutions or societies. In England, a decisive break came when E. E. Evans-Pritchard, the new incumbent of the chair in Oxford, repudiated Radcliffe-Brown's positivist ambitions for a natural science of society, arguing instead that social anthropology should fashion itself on history.

Methodological individualism, pioneered by Raymond Firth and later developed by Fredrik Barth and F. G. Bailey, was a growing influence in Britain in the 1950s, and structuralism was already a major phenomenon in France. Network analysis, developed by John Barnes, Max Gluckman, and others, owed a debt to Radcliffe-Brown but did not take on his grand theoretical project. By 1955, it seemed as if Fortes in Cambridge was the only major social anthropologist who remained loyal to structural functionalism. Later, Mary Douglas would nevertheless demonstrate brilliantly how structural functionalism combined with structuralism could create a powerful new brew.

At the time of his death, at the age of 74, Radcliffe-Brown had already been in retirement for nearly a decade, and he had already witnessed the gradual decline of his influence in social anthropology. Yet his influence and legacy tend to be underestimated by contemporary anthropologists, who admire the quality of Malinowski's fieldwork and reject Radcliffe-Brown's theoretical ambitions. Today, his systemic, comparative approach to social life remains powerful, if indirect, especially in British, Commonwealth, and European social anthropology, where studies of complex societies, and network analysis in particular, are indebted to Radcliffe-Brown's somewhat overstated "natural science of society."

Radcliffe-Brown, often criticized for not being able to deal with social change, held a more dynamic view of society than his critics allege. The positivism in *Natural Science of Society* is complemented by an acute attention to inner tensions and frictions between the institutions that make up a society and a conscientious examination of ethnographic detail. Radcliffe-Brown's fundamental question, concerning the mechanisms that create stability out of a natural state of flux, remains crucial to contemporary anthropological theorizing.

Thomas Hylland Eriksen

See also Alliance-Descent Debate; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Fortes, Meyer; Gluckman, Max; Malinowski, Bronisław; Oxford University; Rivers, W. H. R.; Structural Functionalism

Further Readings

Fortes, M. (Ed.). (1949). *Social structure: Studies presented to A. R. Radcliffe-Brown.* Oxford, UK: Clarendon.

Kuper, A. (1996). *Anthropology and anthropologists: The modern British school* (3rd ed.). London, UK: Routledge.

Radcliffe-Brown, A. R. (1952). *Structure and function in primitive society: Essays and addresses.* London, UK: Cohen & West.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1996). *After Tylor: British social anthropology 1888–1951.* London, UK: Athlone.

Radin, Paul

Paul Radin (1893–1959) is normally accorded a relatively minor status in the Boasian pantheon of American anthropology. His name never became as well-known among the general public as that of a Margaret Mead or a Ruth Benedict, nor was he as central to the institutional and epistemic legacies of Boasianism as figures like Alfred Kroeber, Robert Lowie, and Edward Sapir. But his relative obscurity does not mean that he contributed less to anthropological social theory than his contemporaries—quite the contrary.

Radin was born in Poland, but his family emigrated to the United States when he was young. He earned a BA at City College in New York, and after some years of graduate study in Europe, he returned to New York to complete a PhD in anthropology under Franz Boas at Columbia University in 1911. After working for the Bureau of American Ethnology and the Geological Survey of Canada in the years before the First World War, he held several academic positions, the longest of which was at the University of California, Berkeley (1918–1920, 1930–1941, and 1944–1949). Radin seems to have been, by all accounts, a somewhat difficult and peripatetic figure, never staying long enough in one place to build a stable intellectual network of his own and never being agreeable enough to charm interlocutors to his way of thinking. Those who knew him, like Harry Hoijer and David Sapir, described Radin as fiercely yet productively iconoclastic, someone who disliked the institutional life of a professor. Eminent historians of anthropology such as George Stocking and Regna Darnell likewise classify Radin as a "rebellious Boasian" and as the "maverick among the first generation." Yet, however much he bristled, his contemporaries clearly respected him, with Lowie citing him as belonging to the Boasian "super-intelligentsia."

This entry does not allow space for an exhaustive account of Radin's contributions to ethnography and theory. Instead, it will describe key moments and lines of inquiry in Radin's work that seem especially salient contributions to the future of social theory. Indeed, in certain respects, the human sciences have only recently caught up with Radin's "maverick" thinking. This is certainly true of his pathbreaking work on non-Western intellectuals and on the dynamics of the constitution of anthropological knowledge. More directly than the other Boasians, Radin laid the groundwork for much of future reflexive anthropology. The entry also highlights Radin's early championing of methodological individualism in anthropological research and his unusual effort to import Jungian psychoanalysis into anthropological theory decades before Freudian psychoanalysis was to have its greatest impact on the field.

Radin's Anthropology of Intellectuals

Radin's *Primitive Man as Philosopher* (1927) is generally regarded as his most important and enduring legacy for its argument that indigenous peoples possessed philosophy, or more to Radin's point, *philosophers*, just as the settler colonizers did. The importance of the text extends considerably beyond the broader Boasian antievolutionist argument that all human beings possessed equivalent mental capabilities. Radin's book was also the first sustained effort in anthropology to discuss the effects of the social specialization of knowledge on practices in field research, analysis, and intercultural representation central to ethnographic methodology. As such, it foreshadowed all future reflexive anthropology.

In *Primitive Man as Philosopher*, Radin argues that although all societies possess intellectuals, ethnologists of "primitive" societies have failed to discern a division of mental and material orientations, assuming instead that all "primitives" are simply "men of action." The key to this failure lay, for Radin, in the stronger sensual and pragmatic orientation of primitive societies, which alienated Western intellectuals, including ethnologists, and thus drew attention away from "primitive" intellectual accomplishment. Since sensualism is the antithesis of the Western intellectual's own life, it transitively becomes the locus of distinction for what is defined as "primitive." Thus, according to Radin, ethnologists were oriented, unintentionally perhaps, toward neglecting the subtlety of ideation among their fellow thinkers in primitive societies in favor of the more overtly sensual or mechanistic cultural expressions of nonintellectual social actors.

One of the more interesting implications of this argument is that the ethnologist and the primitive philosopher actually have more in common, intellectually and sociologically, with one another than either might share with the "men of action" in their own societies. Radin understood that his argument undermined the idea that cultural orders existed that unified entire collectivities. On the one hand, he argued that the idea of a unified cultural order is fictitious insofar as it masks a continuous dialogical politics of cultural knowledge and representation between intellectual and nonintellectual individuals. On the other hand, where a sense of collectivity does emerge, Radin shows that it originates in the ethnological interpretation of native philosophical work. This is a hidden collaboration between two groups of "thinkers," the ethnologists and the native philosophers: Both groups of intellectuals share a common orientation toward objectifying cultural knowledge,

an orientation toward ordering, indeed collectivizing knowledge. In the process of anthropological (ethnological) analysis, though, that collaboration is suppressed, resulting in the proposition of general cosmologies rather than intellectual artifice and dialogue. According to Radin, where anthropological knowledge purports to represent collective cultural knowledge, it is only, in fact, partially representing the cultural labors of a particular social class. Radin was frustrated that this displacement from individual and intellectual to collective and cultural was nowhere recognized and accounted for among his contemporaries, a frustration that contributed strongly to his turn toward methodological individualism.

In many respects, *Primitive Man as Philosopher* thus pioneers what much later came to be termed the "reflexive turn" in anthropology. Radin pinpoints an enduring ethical dilemma for anthropological theory. If anthropological knowledge is driven by a collaborative engagement between specialized knowledge makers, then there is a constant danger of ignoring or marginalizing the understandings and lives of social actors with other epistemic dispositions. Here too, Radin's work gestures very clearly toward the theoretical and ethical considerations that have come to orient contemporary reflexive anthropology of experts and cultures of expertise, where theorem and datum often become compressed and where epistemic authorities overlap and compete in often uncomfortable ways.

Radin and the Boasians

The misidentification of the primitive with sensuousness and ideology with collectivity were not the only failings that Radin saw in contemporary anthropology: Radin's relationship to his teacher, Boas, and to his Boasian colleagues was decidedly troubled. Indeed, his major statement on the discipline—*Method and Theory in Ethnology* (1933)—is filled with, by turns, aggressively polemical and slyly familiar distancing of his own position from the then Boasian mainstream of American anthropology. Taken as a whole, the work best captures Radin's argument against all sweeping, ahistorical, or evolutionary generalization in anthropology. Against the study of mankind, it champions an anthropology and an ethnographic practice whose ends are the robust understanding and representation of cultures and individuals in their historical specificity, not subordinate to any theoretical or "sociological" projects. Despite his recognition of their good-faith efforts, Radin saw his Boasian contemporaries as more or less unconsciously wedded to a fundamental misunderstanding of both the nature and the limits of the anthropological project.

Radin argued that the primary culprit in perpetuating these misunderstandings was Boas himself. While his critique is far-ranging, it centers on the anthropologist's handling of and relationship to his or her data. He understood Boas as approaching ethnography, despite himself, as a physicist. Physical facts speak for themselves; cultural facts do not: The unannotated presentation of "raw" data about material culture, typical of work such as Boas's Kwakiutl monographs, could not be, for Radin, the end goal of anthropological practice. Similarly, Radin found fault with the recording of complex myths and ritual practices solely in English, as well as their distillation into putatively essential elements for cross-cultural comparison. At the heart of it, what Radin saw in these tendencies was the setting apart of the ethnographer from the data. In *Method and Theory*, Radin presciently wrote that

> we are part of the cultural facts we are describing in a very real way . . . the moment we stand beside or above them, we do them injury; we transvaluate them and make them facts of a different order. (1933, p. 11)

Beyond the fascination with the natural sciences, Radin pointed to a number of sociological explanations for these tendencies, such as the necessarily unsophisticated character of early anthropological research, the professions from which the first anthropologists were recruited, and the widespread societal and academic taste for "antiquarianism." However, he didn't see the problems of contemporary method as irremediable. As a palliative measure, he urged anthropologists to take inspiration from culture historians, arguing that anthropologists should use the available historical materials not to causally explain but only to enrich the description of the cultural phenomena under discussion.

For Radin, the key locus of information about the contemporary history of aboriginal peoples can only be the individual aborigine. He argued that ethnographers should not treat their informants as

tokens of a cultural type but as culturally shaped individuals acting in particular historical contexts. He disapproved of attempts by Boasians such as Mead and Kroeber to integrate the individual and society, arguing that their projects relied on psychological catchwords such as "the unconscious" to stand in for the individual. Sapir, for his part, was criticized for using a generic "man" despite recognizing the importance of the individual as such. To ameliorate this lack of attention to the actuality of ethnographies' dramatis personae, Radin made a profoundly humanist methodological turn toward biography, arguing for a near-total *epistemological* privileging of the individual over his or her culture.

Methodological Individualism and the Turn to Biography

Radin's commitment to methodological individualism was far from abstract. Radin held the study of actual individuals and specific events to be *the* essential components of solid ethnographic reasoning. If there are no generic individuals expressive of their cultural types, then only a comprehensive investigation of particular cases can yield fruitful ethnographic data. Moreover, the meaning of these singular events and persons for the ethnographer cannot be found in an external description of them. For Radin, the truly objective description of social facts must include the subjective attitudes of their participants. For this reason, Radin increasingly turned to autobiography as a privileged source of ethnographic data. His *Crashing Thunder: The Autobiography of an American Indian* (1926) opens with an explicit challenge to take seriously the inconsistency and vagueness characteristic of real lives, to move beyond grand systematizations to the focused investigation of actual persons.

Radin's interrogation of the relationship between the individual and society culminated in his final book-length work, *The Trickster* (1956), which contains some of his most trenchant thought about what it means to be human. The main part of the book is taken up by a telling of the Winnebago Trickster Cycle; Radin's analysis and appendices by Károly Kerényi and C. G. Jung make up the latter half. Although he was clearly influenced by his long-standing relationship with Jung, Radin was far from content to simply ape a Jungian analysis of his American Indian material. In treating these stories, Radin tacks between a psychoanalytically inflected analysis of the symbolic economy of the Trickster myth in general and a sophisticated pragmatics of the specific speech scenarios in which it was actually told. The result is a mélange of anthropology and psychoanalysis strikingly different from the more Freudian-influenced thought of the other Boasians of his generation.

In *The Trickster*, Radin does not attempt to treat individuals as tokens of a mental-cultural whole or conduct a psychoanalysis of the hypostasized culture itself. Instead, under the influence of pragmatism no less than Jung's, his aim is an understanding of the concrete speech acts of the "raconteurs" of these stories. He is quite attentive to the actual context of the production and transmission of these myths, to the attempt to inculcate structures of thought and conduct in listeners, as well as to the aesthetic features of the stories themselves. Radin is interested in the meanings of symbols for specific individuals in specific speech situations. In *The Trickster*, he is committed both to an understanding of the highly elaborated perspectives of expert storytellers and to the impact of this elite discourse on the psychosocial world of everyday Winnebago. Walking the line between a philosophical anthropology and a careful culture history, his attempt to think at once of the historical, the psychological, and the interpersonal continues to demand serious attention today.

Conclusion

Clearly, much of Radin's thought bears the marks of his era and conflicts with current disciplinary *doxa*. However, it is easy to see in his work the roots of several lively currents within contemporary anthropology. Although developed through the treatment of ritual specialists and philosophers, his attention to the dynamics of differential competence and epistemological authority in small-scale societies marks him as the first anthropologist of expertise and secures a place for him in the early sociology of knowledge. His commitment to conducting ethnography as a cultural history of the present marks him as a key pivot point between the culture diffusion studies of his Boasian colleagues and the more nuanced causal understandings of later historical anthropologists. His focus on the subjective meanings of events for their participants and the imbrication of the ethnographer with his or her data is

a clear and quite early precursor to the later turn toward interpretive ethnography. Despite his place within these intellectual traditions, however, what is perhaps most striking about Radin's thought is its iconoclasm, and what is perhaps most rewarding in returning to him as a thinker is that arguments such as those of *The Trickster* remain as unexpected and original today as they were when they were first advanced.

Ian Lowrie and Dominic Boyer

See also Biography/Life Writing; Boas, Franz; Culture and Personality; Freud, Sigmund; Hermeneutics; Historical Particularism; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Myth, Theories of; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Darnell, R. (2001). *Invisible genealogies: A history of Americanist anthropology.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Hoijer, H. (1959). Paul Radin, 1883–1959. *American Anthropologist, 61*(5), 839–843.

Lowie, R. (1959). *Robert H. Lowie: A personal record.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Radin, P. (1926). *Crashing thunder: The autobiography of an American Indian.* New York, NY: D. Appleton.

———. (1927). *Primitive man as philosopher.* New York, NY: D. Appleton.

———. (1933). *The method and theory of ethnology: An essay in criticism.* New York, NY: McGraw-Hill.

———. (1956). *The trickster: A study in American Indian mythology.* London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Sapir, J. D. (1961). Paul Radin, 1883–1959. *Journal of American Folklore, 74*(291), 65–67.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (Ed.). (1974). *The shaping of American anthropology, 1883–1911.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Rappaport, Roy

Roy Abraham Rappaport (1926–1997), an American anthropologist, is recognized as a key figure in ecological anthropology and the study of religious ritual in human evolution.

Biography and Major Works

Roy Abraham "Skip" Rappaport was born in New York City. Like many others, Rappaport's path to the field of anthropology was not direct. He enlisted in the U.S. army at the age of 17, served with the infantry during World War II, and was awarded a Purple Heart after being nearly killed by the German troops. After returning from the war, Rappaport attended Cornell University, where he completed a BS degree in hotel administration in 1949. Two years later, he opened a country inn, which he named "Avaloch," in the Berkshire Hills of Massachusetts. Although he would continue to be known for his hospitality and the great pleasure he took in entertaining, by the late 1950s, Rappaport became increasingly discontented with his life as a businessman. While reading the social psychologist Eric Fromm's *Escape From Freedom*, which describes the conditions under which an unconscious search for unity with others can lead people to support fascist ideas, Rappaport decided that the inn could not fulfill his growing desire to confront a range of contemporary problems.

Rappaport's cousin Robert Levy, then a psychoanalytic psychiatrist, who later became an anthropologist at the University of California, San Diego, introduced him to the Pacific Island ethnologist and historian Douglas Oliver as well as Kai Erickson, who would later become a sociologist at Yale. On their advice, Rappaport read the American anthropologist Ralph Linton's symposia volume *The Science of Man in the World Crisis*, in which Linton commented on the war and lamented what he saw as an increasing fragmentation in scientific inquiry—a drift that Rappaport attempted to contend with in his own work through a focus on unifying themes. It was after a conversation at Columbia University with Conrad Arensberg, now a recognized leader in the anthropological study of complex modern societies, that Rappaport decided, in 1958, to pursue his doctorate in anthropology. He earned his degree at Columbia in 1966 after working with other personalities in the discipline such as Morton Fried, Marvin Harris, Margaret Mead, and Eric Wolf. His first anthropology course was an introduction with Fried beginning in January 1959, during which he met his future wife, Ann, who would later join his fieldwork and assist in linguistic analysis. He sold his inn in March that year.

As a student in 1960, Rappaport conducted his first empirical research in the Society Islands with Kenneth Emory, an ethnologist at Hawaii's Bishop Museum, and Roger Green, a Harvard archaeologist. Although Rappaport was not satisfied with

archaeological fieldwork, the experience allowed him to begin conceptualizing a framework for analyzing a human population, social and cultural structures, and the biophysical environment in a single study—an essential start to his own fieldwork 2 years later. While on the long boat trip in the South Pacific, Rappaport read Marshall Sahlins's *Social Stratification in Polynesia*, which became a source of his interest in ecological science. His emerging human-ecological approach was later honed through the close mentorship of the anthropologist Andrew Vayda, who encouraged Rappaport to conduct research in the highlands of Papua New Guinea, where Vayda himself had an ongoing project. Rappaport ultimately made two trips to the region. His dissertation fieldwork was conducted from October 1962 to December 1963. A follow-up study under a grant from the National Science Foundation from October 1981 to August 1982 allowed him to study the acculturation of the relatively isolated Tsembaga Maring as contact with contemporary Papua New Guinean society increased.

Approximately 1 year after his return from his first major fieldwork, Rappaport presented an academic paper at the 1964 meeting of the American Anthropological Association. This introduced career-defining themes such as the place of religion and ritual in ordering human societies and structuring their relationship with the natural world and the role of ritual in human evolution. These ideas were greatly elaborated in Rappaport's highly influential book that helped define the field of ecological anthropology. First published in 1968, *Pigs for the Ancestors* became a milestone anthropological work of empirical methodology that employed systems theory to demonstrate the function of ritual in the management of resources. After his last trip, Rappaport released a second edition in 1984, which sought to respond to critics through extensive comments that nearly doubled the first edition's size. Considering the criticism received in the 15 years since its publication, Rappaport bemoaned in his preface how scholars seemed compelled to adopt new approaches without having assimilated the lessons from previous approaches. In keeping with this sentiment, he informed students at the University of Michigan, where Rappaport served as chair of the Department of Anthropology (1975–1980) and taught from 1965 until shortly before his death in 1997, that they had a vital role to play as "synthesizers." Seven essays, the product of his analysis of ritual through commingled materialist and symbolic perspectives, appear in his book *Ecology, Meaning, and Religion*, published in 1979.

For Rappaport's final book, he set a goal of sweeping synthesis. He felt that trends leading to more specialized subfields had dictated severe limitations on the scope of anthropological analysis, reducing it to the study of discrete bits of human experience. It was Rappaport's penchant, however, to tackle the whole of the human condition. Published posthumously in 1999, *Ritual and Religion in the Making of Humanity* summarizes the evolution of Rappaport's thinking on broad themes that were his intellectual preoccupation for some 30 years.

In addition to his contributions to teaching and scholarship, Rappaport served as a consultant on a range of educational and environmental projects, including the National Academy of Sciences Task Force, which counseled the president of the United States on oil leasing on the outer continental shelf. He also advised the State of Nevada concerning the proposed use of the Yucca Mountain as storage facility for nuclear waste. Among numerous academic honors, Rappaport was elected to both the American Association for the Advancement of Science and the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He served as president of the American Anthropological Association from 1987 to 1989, directing the organization toward greater engagement in policy issues.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Rappaport is widely recognized as a principal figure in ecological anthropology. Less widely acknowledged are his contributions to the anthropology of religion and the development of a publicly active or "engaged" anthropology.

Ecological Anthropology

Rappaport's *Pigs for the Ancestors* is based on fieldwork conducted in a community of some 200 individuals within the Simbai River valley of Papua New Guinea's Western Highlands. Rappaport considered the Tsembaga Maring a population in the ecological sense, given that he took them to be one component in a larger system of energy exchanges taking place within a bounded geographic area. The

Tsembaga were swidden horticulturalists for whom pig husbandry was an essential component of their agricultural and ritual cycles. In a highly egalitarian society, without hereditary or elected chiefs or big men, Rappaport identified in their ritual cycles a means for the Maring to maintain certain biotic communities within their territory, redistributing land, people, and local pig surpluses while limiting the overall frequency of intergroup conflict.

Rappaport's early writings focus on what he asserts are the ways in which Tsembaga religious rituals have regulated social and ecological interactions—mediating the interactions of a population with processes or things external to itself. He wanted to show the function of different cultural forms, their relative adaptive value, in maintaining existing relationships with a particular environment. While he recognized that the introduction of steel tools and crops such as maize through the networks of exchange together with efforts by the government of Papua New Guinea to suppress regional warfare had produced important changes, he insisted that any meaningful impact was limited. Rappaport's emphasis on equilibrium and stability, his dismissal of the possible consequences of individual power and political economy, as well as his assumption that the Maring community functioned ecologically as a nearly closed system have been widely criticized.

Anthropology of Religion

Rappaport's earliest attempts to understand the complex interrelationships of the ritual cycle and its roles in Maring society developed into an interest in religious ritual for its own sake, but only after he returned from his first trip to Papua New Guinea in 1963. Rappaport's focus grew from an interest in how self-regulation might work in the link between a given human population and its environment to a broad interest in the construction of meaning. While making no sharp separation between the realm of the sacred and everyday life, Rappaport finds in ritual the means through which religion is made.

In his emphasis on understanding the human condition, Rappaport sought to come to what he spoke of as some kind of rightness for humanity. He was fond of saying that he was not interested in abstract conceptions of culture, for example, but in arriving at theoretical and methodological tools that would enable people to do good for the world. For Rappaport, it came down to what is good for people to think and the consequences of seeing something in accordance with a particular worldview. Rappaport's interest was based on his desire to reconcile the apparent incompatibilities between religious understandings, what he called a pseudo-religion like economics, and the laws that govern the ecological systems known by science to make up our world.

Engaged Anthropology

In later work, teaching, and public lecturing, Rappaport cited the British philosopher Stephen Toulmin's critique of modern science and philosophy for dwelling too comfortably in the immaterial and the theoretical while ignoring tough practical issues. In contrast, Rappaport was committed to an engaged anthropology, which he saw as uniquely qualified to identify and attempt to solve complex contemporary problems. He felt that certain "disorders" threaten the survival of all species. He described these as violations of contingency relationships wherein a way of knowing such as economics usurps the dominant position of ecological principles to which it should be subordinate. Rappaport was confident that his understanding of systemic disorder gave him a principled ground for fostering a holistic anthropology tasked with shaping critical public policy. Rappaport often said that humanity is a species living in terms of meaning in a world subject to law. Rappaport believed that it was our responsibility as humans not merely to think of the world but also to think on behalf of the world. As such, he insisted that anthropology must deal with both human meaning and the laws of the natural world to be worthy of its subject, that is, worthy of humanity itself.

Rappaport's Legacy

Toward the end of his life, Rappaport used to joke that after a few years of fame in the early 1970s, following the publication of *Pigs for the Ancestors*, people simply stopped reading his work. He bemoaned that the impact of this landmark book may have blinded many to his subsequent contributions. His final book, *Ritual and Religion*, may reestablish Rappaport as a lasting voice in anthropological thought more broadly. Ellen Messer and Michael Lambek's edited volume of his chapters,

Ecology and the Sacred: Engaging the Anthropology of Roy A. Rappaport, as well as a special issue of the journal *American Anthropologist*, guest edited by Aletta Biersack, suggest the breadth and depth of Rappaport's ongoing influence. Rappaport's ideal of creating a holistic, engaged anthropology, both scientific and humanistic, and committed to understanding and solving the problems that continue to challenge humanity, may be more important than ever in an increasingly frictional world.

Brian A. Hoey

See also Bateson, Gregory; Fried, Morton; Material Production, Theories of; Religion; Sahlins, Marshall; Systems Theory; University of Michigan; Vayda, Andrew P.

Further Readings

Biersack, A. (Ed.). (1999). Ecologies for tomorrow: Reading Rappaport today [Special issue]. *American Anthropologist, 101*(1), 5–122.

Darnell, R. (2002). Roy A. Rappaport, 1988–1989. In R. Darnell & F. W. Gleach (Eds.), *Celebrating a century of the American anthropological association: Presidential portraits* (pp. 277–280). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Hoey, B., & Fricke, T. (2007). From sweet potatoes to God almighty: Roy Rappaport on being a hedgehog. *American Ethnologist, 34*(3), 581–599.

Messer, E., & Lambek, M. (2001). *Ecology and the sacred: Engaging the anthropology of Roy A. Rappaport.* Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.

Rational Choice Theory

Rational choice theory is an umbrella term for a variety of models explaining social phenomena as outcomes of individual action that can in some way be construed as rational. "Rational behavior" is behavior that is suitable for the realization of specific goals, given the limitations imposed by the situation. The key elements of all rational choice explanations are individual preferences, beliefs, and constraints. *Preferences* denote the positive or negative evaluations individuals attach to the possible outcomes of their actions. Preferences can have many roots, ranging from culturally transmitted tastes for food or other items to personal habits and commitments. *Beliefs* refer to perceived cause-effect relations, including the perceived likelihood with which an individual's actions will result in different possible outcomes. For example, a village head may believe that raiding a neighboring village A has a higher probability of success than raiding a neighboring village B. *Constraints* define the limits to the set of feasible actions (e.g., the amount of credit one can get imposes a budget constraint on those considering buying a house).

Key Assumptions

Key ideas of the theory can be traced back to the writings of moral philosophers such as Adam Smith. The theory's core was subsequently developed by what is now referred to as neoclassical economics. Three assumptions are important: (1) individuals have selfish preferences, (2) they maximize their own utility, and (3) they act independently based on full information. These assumptions have also met increasing criticism from within economics, resulting in adjustments and the birth of "behavioral economics." This branch uses insights from psychology and the cognitive neurosciences to refine the oversimplified and highly stylized conceptualization of *Homo economicus*. Rather than dismissing deviations from the model as cognitive anomalies that would cancel each other out when aggregated to the collective level, behavioral economics and related fields attempt to develop a more realistic behavioral microfoundation.

There are many different variants of rational choice theory. Depending on the degree to which they adhere to the assumptions of the neoclassical model, rational choice explanations come in "thin," strictly neoclassical, versus "thick," sociological versions, in which these strict assumptions are relaxed. They differ on three dimensions: (1) the type of rationality, (2) preference, and (3) individualism assumptions.

Rationality

"Thin" versions of rational choice theory (neoclassical economics) assume *full rationality*: Individuals are fully informed about all their decision alternatives, the probabilities of their outcomes, and their consequences, and there are no cognitive limitations in the perception or processing of this information. Individuals base their decisions on cost-benefit

calculations and choose the alternative that generates the highest expected utility. Models of *bounded rationality*, for example, those proposed in 1957 by Herbert Simon, relax these assumptions: Selective attention limits the amount and kind of information, and limited information-processing capabilities lead to satisficing rather than maximizing: Individuals tend to accept solutions that are "good enough." More recently, Siegwart Lindenberg has proposed "thick" models of *social rationality* that specify under which conditions gain-maximization and other rationality traits contained in full- or bounded-rationality approaches will guide human decision making, and under which conditions other processes, such as learning or automatic responses, will guide behavior.

Preferences

In the "thin" version of the rational choice approach, preferences are exogenously given and stable, and individuals are *selfish egoists* striving toward the maximization of material gain. Selfishness can take the form of opportunism (self-seeking with guile), in which individuals break the rules to realize their objectives. "Thicker" variants of the theory assume that individual behavior may be motivated by *social preferences*; that is, they have a concern for the well-being of others. The benefits individuals strive for are not restricted to material gains but can be psychological or social (like prestige or behavioral confirmation).

Individualism

All rational choice explanations are reductionist: They share the assumption that explanations of societal-level outcomes (e.g., institutions, group structures, collective action, warfare, etc.) need to be grounded in a microlevel behavioral theory of individual action. This analytical strategy is also called "individualism." In the "thin version" (*methodological individualism*), social structures are not relevant as constraints on behavior (since all the necessary information is contained either in the objective prices of goods or in the subjective meanings). "Thick" versions (*structural individualism*) consider social and institutional embeddedness as major conditions affecting individual decisions and behavior. As a result, structural individualism models social phenomena through a three-step social mechanism explanation: (1) a macro-micro step, or "situational mechanism"; (2) a micro-micro step, or "action generating mechanism"; and (3) a micro-macro step or "transformation mechanism."

Rational Choice Theory in Anthropology

Along with structural-institutional theory, on the one hand, and cultural theories, on the other, the rational choice approach constitutes one of the three major metatheoretical paradigms in the social sciences. Though originally developed in economics, rational choice reasoning is now applied in other subdisciplines of the social sciences, though applications in the field of social and cultural anthropology are still rare. Here, economic anthropologists hotly contested rational choice arguments during the "formalism vs. substantivism" debate in the 1960s and 1970s. Currently, rational choice reasoning in anthropology seems to be largely restricted to the domains of economic, ecological, and evolutionary anthropology. For example, James Acheson uses rational choice theory to explain the differences between the Maine lobster industry and the New England ground fishery in their ability to solve collective-action dilemmas resulting in overexploitation. The volume *Kinship, Networks, and Exchange*, edited by Thomas Schweitzer and Douglas R. White, contains several contributions drawing on rational choice theory to explain, for example, the emergence of social and economic structure in the Highlands of Papua New Guinea or the pattern of cattle exchange among the Pokot in Kenya.

Rafael Wittek

See also Economic Anthropology; Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Formalism/Substantivism; Game Theory; Gift Exchange; Human Universals

Further Readings

Acheson, J. (2002). Rational choice, culture change, and fisheries management in the Gulf of Maine. *Research in Economic Anthropology, 21,* 133–159.

Coleman, J. (1990). *Foundations of social theory.* Cambridge, MA: Belknap.

Ensminger, J. (1998). Anthropology and the new institutionalism. *Journal of Institutional and Theoretical Economics, 154,* 774–789.

Lindenberg, S. (2001). Social rationality versus rational egoism. In J. Turner (Ed.), *Handbook of sociological theory* (pp. 635–668). New York, NY: Kluwer Academic/Plenum Press.

Schweizer, T., & White, D. R. (Eds.). (1998). *Kinship, networks, and exchange.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Wittek, R., Snijders, T. A. B., & Nee, V. (in press). Rational choice social research. In R. Wittek, T. A. B. Snijders, & V. Nee (Eds.), *Rational choice social research*. Palo Alto, CA: Stanford University Press.

Redfield, Robert

The American anthropologist and sociologist Robert Redfield (1897–1958) was a leading theorist of social development and change who exercised a wide-ranging influence among American social scientists from the 1930s through the early 1960s.

Biography and Major Works

Robert Redfield was born in 1897 in Chicago, Illinois. His mother was the daughter of the Danish consul in Chicago, and his father was a prominent attorney. Redfield grew up in comparatively affluent surroundings. His early education was conducted by private tutors, and from the age of 13 through high school, he attended the University of Chicago Laboratory School. On graduating from the Lab School in 1915, he matriculated in the College at the University of Chicago. He struggled to establish direction in his first years in college, but after some interruptions, including driving an ambulance in France in 1917 for the American Field Service, he graduated from the College in 1920. At his father's strong encouragement, he earned a JD from the University of Chicago law school in 1921. On graduating, he took to practicing law in downtown Chicago, but after 2 years, he found law highly unsatisfactory.

While at the University of Chicago, Redfield married a fellow student, Margaret (Greta) Park, whose father, Robert E. Park, was a prominent member in the University of Chicago's sociology department. Redfield's father had died while Redfield was in his last year of law school, and Robert Park came to fill the role of a father figure. Park perceived Redfield's dissatisfaction with his law career and exerted a valuable influence in helping Redfield see opportunities beyond law. In one particularly important act, Park provided Greta and Redfield the funds to take an extended trip through postrevolutionary Mexico in 1923. Park believed that exposure to a society in the grip of active social reconstruction could be a mind-expanding experience and could possibly serve as a springboard for Redfield to reorient his life. The trip proved to be just that, and on returning home, at Park's encouragement, Redfield chose to leave behind the practice of law and undertake graduate study in social science.

In the fall of 1924, Redfield enrolled in the doctoral program in sociology and anthropology at the University of Chicago. His trip to Mexico had kindled an interest in the processes of social change, and this interest came to dominate his work over his entire career. Redfield conducted his dissertation research in Mexico, undertaking a study of social change in the small village of Tepoztlán. Two primary influences shaped Redfield's thinking regarding the dynamics of social change: (1) the culture-civilization debate of the 1920s, a searching dialogue among transatlantic writers and intellectuals following World War I, probing the issue of whether the transition from a supposedly less developed "culture" to "civilization" represented actual progress, and (2) Robert E. Park, who was his closest intellectual mentor and served as a personal conduit for the fundamental ideas of the "Chicago school" of sociology, which focused in large part on the empirical study of social dynamics within the urban setting. On completion of his dissertation study of Tepoztlán in 1928, Redfield graduated with a PhD degree and accepted an offer from Chicago to become an assistant professor in the department of sociology and anthropology.

Shortly after being hired at Chicago, Redfield published a slightly modified version of his dissertation, as *Tepoztlán, A Mexican Village: A Study of Folk Life* (1930). Redfield followed his study of Tepoztlán with a much broader set of interrelated community studies on the Yucatán peninsula, which focused on comparative studies of a village, town, and city. Like his earlier work, his goal in the Yucatán studies was to use empirical research to further develop the theory describing the processes of social change. Redfield conducted his studies in Yucatán over the course of the 1930s and published the culmination of his work in 1941, *The Folk Culture of Yucatán*.

Over the course of the 1940s, Redfield turned away from active field research and shifted his focus toward academic administration and several high-profile social and political concerns. In particular, he served as an expert witness in the Supreme Court case *Sweatt v. Painter*, challenging racial discrimination in college admissions, and he worked on the political effort to draft a world constitution. Following World War II, moreover, he turned his attention toward the broader, more philosophical aspects of social science. He wrote several articles exploring these issues, the most important of which was "The Art of Social Science," published in 1948 in the *American Journal of Sociology*.

In the 1950s, Redfield returned to active academic research and writing. He brought an expanded perspective to his work, focusing on comparative study of civilizations rather than on the narrower community studies that had characterized his earlier projects. Redfield embraced a decidedly interdisciplinary approach to comparative civilization studies, and he spent much of his effort in this initiative, demonstrating how anthropology could complement the work of other scholars in the characterization of civilizations. During the early to mid-1950s, Redfield published several short works directed toward the study of civilizations. He also collaborated with the University of Chicago philosophy professor Milton Singer to establish an interdisciplinary institute at Chicago for comparative study of civilizations.

Redfield was diagnosed with lymphatic leukemia in 1955. He continued to work over the next few years, but his scholarship slowed considerably. He died on October 16, 1958, in Chicago.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

A single overarching theme runs through all of Redfield's anthropological work: the study of social change. His work can be seen as falling into three related but distinct subcategories: (1) modernization, (2) peasants, and (3) comparative civilization studies.

Modernization

Redfield's interest in what came to be called modernization studies emerged in his earliest work. Redfield brought a decidedly unique theoretical and methodological approach to his fieldwork in Mexico. Almost all the field studies conducted in the 2 decades prior to his undertaking his dissertation study had followed the methods defined by Franz Boas, the leading anthropologist in America from 1900 through the early 1920s. The basic goal of these studies was to capture a description of the life of tradition-bound peoples in remote, isolated villages prior to the transformation of their way of life by modern society. These studies were often called "ethnographic photographs," or more derisively by some, "salvage anthropology." Redfield viewed these static studies as wasted opportunities. Instead of trying to capture the way of life in a remote village before it changed, he argued, anthropologists should view villages just starting to change under pressures from outside influences as sociological laboratories. They should be studied precisely because they offered a chance to view social change "as it happens" and in a setting in which incipient changes could be more easily discerned and analyzed than in more complex societies. Villages on the periphery of developing society provided in his view the perfect setting to apply the scientific study of social dynamics with the goal of elucidating general principles of social change.

While Redfield fell somewhat short in drawing the theoretical generalizations about social change he hoped to reach from his Tepoztlán study, he achieved much more in his lengthier studies based on his work in Yucatán. Specifically, Redfield demonstrated the power of using sociological theory to extend the scope and reach of empirical field studies. Drawing heavily on the ideas of Robert Park and the "Chicago school" of sociology, Redfield proposed an ideal-type schema, which he called the "folk-urban continuum," to describe the general process of change from tradition to modernity that he observed in communities in Yucatán. His use of the folk-urban construct not only grounded his own research and provided a base for observations and generalizations but also served as a framework for multiple restudies of Latin American communities by the generation of anthropologists following Redfield. While many of these subsequent studies supported Redfield's conclusion, most of them challenged and sought to overturn his interpretations and conclusions, faulting him particularly for overlooking the role of politics and power in social dynamics. Redfield's work set the terms of debate, nevertheless, for many of the most significant community studies done in Latin America during the

1960s and 1970s and strongly influenced the turn toward the study of social evolution by anthropologists during this period.

Peasant Studies

Redfield's thinking about peasants stemmed directly from his modernization studies. Almost all his ethnographic field studies focused on what he referred to as "intermediate peoples," or peasants, who occupied a distinct sociocultural and economic space between traditional remote villages and urban civilization. Redfield's initial treatments of peasants emphasized the cultural aspects of their experience. Yet in his later work, his focus shifted more toward political and economic dimensions. He argued persuasively, especially in his *Peasant Society and Culture: An Anthropological Approach to Civilization* (1956), that peasants constituted an appropriate subject of study for anthropologists, who up to the 1950s had concerned themselves almost exclusively with nonliterate, isolated, "primitive" peoples. Redfield's *Peasant Society and Culture* was one of the first texts to explore both the justification and the methodology for anthropological study of peasantry, and it became a foundational text for peasant studies, which emerged as an important subfield within anthropology in the second half of the 20th century. It should be noted that peasant studies developed in the 1960s and 1970s, largely in critique of Redfield's conceptual approach, emphasizing primarily material, economic, and political themes that had been underplayed by Redfield.

Comparative Study of Civilizations

Closely related to Redfield's work on peasants are his writings on comparative civilization studies. His primary contributions to civilization studies are his work on worldview studies, methodological discussions regarding community studies, and development of his Great and Little Traditions construct. He was one of the pioneers of worldview studies, which attracted numerous practitioners in the 1950s–1960s. He offered a compelling example of a worldview study in the internal view of a Yucatecan villager he provided in a chapter in *The Folk Culture of Yucatán* and then provided an in-depth methodological discussion of the practice of worldview studies in *The Primitive World and Its Transformations* (1953).

Redfield's Great and Little Traditions construct constituted his most important contribution to civilization studies. He proposed that civilizations be seen as composed of two distinct but intertwined cultural traditions: (1) the "Great Tradition" of the literary elite and (2) the "Little Traditions" of the nonliterate masses. These dual traditions exerted mutual influence in defining major civilizations. But the same mode of study or disciplinary approach could not be used to study both traditions. Redfield thus proposed a scholarly division of labor in which anthropologists focused on characterization of little traditions and humanistic scholars focused on great traditions. Scholars from several different disciplines found the Great and Little Traditions construct useful as a conceptual tool for describing the flow of ideas and influences within civilizations, and Redfield was widely regarded as one of the leading influences in the comparative civilizations discourses of the 1950s and 1960s.

Redfield's Legacy

Redfield's primary influence lay in the realm of theory making. His ideas and models describing the processes of social change provided a vocabulary that proved useful to mid-20th-century social scientists. His contributions to the modernization discourse of the 1940s–1970s are particularly important as he provides an example of an American social scientist who carefully sought to separate the concept of modernization from Americanization. He also served as an influential disciplinary philosopher who stimulated much discussion among his colleagues through his articles on the joint roles of science and art inherent in the practice of sociology and anthropology. Finally, Redfield provides an example still valid today of an engaged social scientist who demonstrated unshakeable faith in the value of social science to facilitate construction of a moral society.

Clifford Wilcox

See also Comparative Method; Foster, George M.; Historical Particularism; Lewis, Oscar; Mintz, Sidney; Tax, Sol; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Redfield, R. (2008). *Social anthropology* (with an introduction by C. Wilcox, Ed.). New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1992). *The ethnographer's magic and other essays in the history of anthropology.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Tarn, N. (1991). The literate and the literary: Notes on the anthropological discourse of Robert Redfield. In *Views from the Weaving Mountain: Selected essays in poetics and anthropology* (pp. 169–194). Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press.

Wilcox, C. (2004). *Robert Redfield and the development of American anthropology.* Lanham, MD: Lexington Books.

Religion

The history of the theory of the anthropology of religion follows, to a degree, the general history of anthropology. Varying between amicability and terse rebuttal, the particular and the universal, anthropological approaches to religion seek to understand social constructs wherein actions, narratives, and texts coalesce around the whole of the social experience. Saturated with meaning, constituent ritual and myth are a part of the dynamic, interwoven, interactive fiber of cultural experience. At present, some anthropologists focus primarily on practice, others on meaning, others on the sociohistorical context, still others on the political ecology, some on cognitive science, and some on a combination of these models.

Of the many things that could be said about the anthropological study of religion, three things are clear: (1) that there is little interest in developing a model dedicated to determining epistemological truth; (2) that the human propensity to construct myths, rites, purity codes, and associations between material and ideology is widespread, perhaps universal; and (3) that apart from introductory texts to anthropology, there is little agreement about what the term *religion* means or how best to use it.

The term *religion*, as a taxonomy, creates and reflects a particular worldview. Defining religion is as difficult as defining culture. According to some, the term betrays at the very best a generalization of culturally specific phenomena or at worst an intellectual air that continues the colonial past.

A construct of the West, the term *religion* has been used as a pejorative as well as an expression of power. Rooted in Latin, some uses point to *relegare*, "to read again" (*re*: "repeat," *legere*: "to read"); others to *religio*, as "to *rely*" ("to depend on"); and some others to *ligation* (contractual obligations), for that which ties, restrains, or binds the gods and human relationships. To be *religio* involved the praxis of reading and tracing the narratives and ritual practices of one's ancestors or the different practices and worldviews of various peoples (*ethne*). The introduction of Christianity introduced a delineation between *nostra religio* and *vestra religio* (a collective's *religio* vis-à-vis the *religio* of others). By the 3rd century CE, the distinction was more pronounced, delineating true religion from false religion (*vera religio* from *falsa religio*). Constantine's declaration of tolerance resulted in Christianity's association with true religion in 313 CE.

With the fall of Rome, the term languished until shifts in political, economic, and social thought and order in the Middle Ages brought about its renewed use to describe a particular rite, community, or doctrine. The phrase *Christinia religio* emerged during the Reformation in an attempt to argue epistemological truth, positing the teachings and practices of the Roman Catholic Church over and against those of the protesters/reformers. During the Enlightenment, *religio* appeared as a plural (acknowledging many monastic orders), as a doctrine (a body of beliefs), as an internal matter (of the heart), and as a philosophical construct (an internal essence).

With European expansion and missionary movements, true religion was associated with Christian European society; other world religions, indigenous cosmological systems, and local practices were generally viewed to be false, superstition, or of the Devil.

Early Social Science

The Enlightenment marked the beginnings of a separation between intellectual inquiry and the Roman Catholic Church. A consequence of this separation was the emergence of philosophy, science, the social sciences, and religion as distinct disciplines. Scholars began to think about origins, social organization, life, death, the cosmos, and truth through empirical lenses rather than through the theological apologetic of the past. Yet this empiricism was clearly shaped by cultural and ideological constructs.

Positivism

The French philosopher Auguste Comte posited a unifying, posttheistic theory regarding social progress. Writing during the Industrial Revolution and with Spencerian and Lamarckian evolutionary ideas in the air, Comte argued that social progress could be explained using scientific methods. This positive

movement could be anticipated using hypothetic principles and measures.

Assuming unilineal social evolution, early anthropological approaches to religion adopted these principles. Edward Burnett Tylor, Lewis Henry Morgan, and James G. Frazer developed social evolutionary models (among others) contending societies' progress through specific evolutionary stages. Tylor concluded that religion exists in all societies in various degrees of sophistication and that the animism in what he terms primitive peoples, lower races, savages, and barbarians would give way to polytheism and finally monotheism. Morgan limited his discussion of religion, suggesting that its irrationality and emotional center made it difficult to understand and study when developing a model of social evolution. Frazer developed a hierarchal positivist model similar to Tylor's, asserting that magic will give way to religion, ultimately giving way to science. Magic and science shared the expectation that the world was subject to invariable natural laws. Human beings were able to explain and predict events based on magic or a scientific formula. Religion, on the other hand, asserted that the world was subject to capricious spirits. Given time, societies would abandon their dependence on spirits as they proceed along the evolutionary track. Émile Durkheim argued, contra Frazer, that although magic and religion shared essential elements, the former excludes the integrative moral character that befits a community. Magic, including ceremony, belief, and prayers, was largely utilitarian, whereas religion was a unified system, setting things apart within a singular moral community, such as within a church.

The Introduction of Ethnography

Functional and Structural Approaches

With ethnographic research, the focus turned to particular manifestations of magic, myth, and ritual. Some looked to the function of rites, others to their structure relative to the social whole. Bronisław Malinowski's study of garden and fishing magic focused on psychological states and ritual activity. Drawing heavily on Frazer's contentions regarding magic and human prediction and Freud's study of anxiety and security, Malinowski proposed a link between the ways specific terms associated with magic functioned in achieving the desired effects. Contra Malinowski, A. R. Radcliffe-Brown pointed to rites, taboos, and totems as the social glue that maintained social structure, contending that the function of rules regarding ritual is to maintain social order.

Contextual Particular Approach

North American historic particularism found anthropologists focusing on documenting information about the social and material culture of indigenous peoples before their assumed inevitable assimilation into the dominant North American society. Early on, Franz Boas and his students considered the relationships between various social practices and material culture as distinct evolutions rather than a singular progression, as was common in European social anthropology. Rather than arguing for a singular evolutionary model, early North American anthropologists documented many different religious practices as a part of the social whole, influenced and shaped by the local milieu.

Modern Anthropology

The Rhodes-Livingstone Institute

British anthropologists from the Manchester school focused on village structures, on conflict and resolution, which appeared to be in tension in their research in Central Africa. They found seemingly structurally incompatible elements (e.g., residency rules and lineage systems) amid social cohesion. At the same time, the introduction of Christianity, trade goods, and colonial rule was bringing ideological, social, and structural changes to these regions. Max Gluckman's emphasis on situational analysis emerged as structure functionalism, a perspective that considers the relationship between structures and the functions they serve within a particular social context. This attention to the part amid the whole shaped a generation of researchers. Amid segmentary opposition, the theoretical problem was how stability was maintained (and at times achieved) in times of conflict and change within African societies.

Victor Turner applied Gluckman's focus to his research on the ways ritual expressions create, reinforce, and modify existing social forms. Things that might appear contradictory to the positivist mind serve as practical solutions to social and individual tension. Cohesion does not exist because of consistent mental processes but rather through

the expression of shared ritual, each in and of itself a shared collection of words, actions, and material goods to which symbolic associations have been attached. Turner proposed that social drama (ritual) served several purposes. Within his oft-cited study of rites of passage, periods of anti-structure (liminality) are necessary, for they provide resolution to social tensions that, if left unresolved, would ultimately lead to the dissolution of the social order. The structural sanctioning (read ritual) of a liminal event clearly defines it, according to Turner, as a symbolic religious event.

At the same time that British anthropologists were focusing on the structural foundations of ritual, some North American anthropologists were adopting positivism in their work.

Neo-Positivism: Social Ecology, Materialism, and Social Biology

In the 1950s, some North American scholars applied new scientific methods to their work, proposing that environmental and material factors were ultimately the defining element in determining the shape, structure, and timing of ritual activity.

Julian Steward's attention to ecological specificity argued that religion, rather than being a priori, emerged within specific ecological settings to tend to mini crises in the lives of indigenous peoples. Birth, puberty, marriage, and death serve as points wherein ritual practices emerge. Roy Rappaport carried forth Steward's notions of cultural ecology: that human adaptation to the environment created culture. Religious activity is formulated through material resources, excesses, and limitations. Applying ecological functional methodology to the study of ritual, Rappaport argued that the human organism is part of an environmental system; human adaptation to the environment created culture. Ecological factors create the parameters as well as the reasons for ritual behavior.

Marvin Harris drew on Steward and Karl Marx in developing his own model of materialism. Harris posited that religious belief and ritual activity are rooted in practical matters tied to access to resources and the means of production. For example, in his analysis, South Asian cattle keeping and the accompanying rules about consumption, the handling of carcasses, and the use of by-products rely on complex caloric-exchange analysis, historical events, and legislation.

This new positivism is also represented in Napoleon Chagnon's research on the relationship between ritualized revenge killing and progenity. The relationships between violence, human conflict, and evolutionary reproduction suggest that genetic success is tantamount to cultural success, ritualized within the religious activities of particular communities.

Neo-Positivism: French Structuralism

Claude Lévi-Strauss proposed that common traits, components, and structural designs were shared by all myths—each representing attempts to reconcile the seemingly irreconcilable. These religious stories about the origins of the cosmos and of social relationships, identities, and responsibilities are fundamentally about creating order. By examining the binary oppositions that emerge in cultural myths, one could find common social tensions. Although the images and language may change, the issues remain the same in all cultures. All human societies, in effect, develop stories of identity and origin in an attempt to resolve identical experiential tension(s).

Some anthropologists embraced Lévi-Strauss's dialectical model, applying elements of it to their own research; others argued against both his methodology and his conclusions.

Responses to Neo-Positivism

Clifford Geertz, Mary Douglas, and Victor Turner are among those who proposed alternative models to these highly refined positivist models. Geertz argued that cultural unification is not a product of common cognitive formation. Instead, a particular religion is a complicated system of *symbols*—images, individuals, historical moments, language, or places—that people share in common. These symbols carry with them immediate affinity and a sense of connectedness with others who share those same symbolic representations. Nevertheless, what various narratives, rituals, and material goods mean are constructed by the participants, and these meanings are crafted by the ethnographer. Instead of committing to the centrality of a specific ritual activity, it was important to pay attention to the inner relationship between the various elements of the larger system of meaning. Rather than delineating particular universal rules or indices, anthropological writings interpret the interpretation of the cultural participants. To accomplish this, the ethnographer

must read culture as text, allowing the contextualized symbolic analysis to attempt to decipher meaning within the system in which it appears.

Douglas explored symbolic structure, extending Durkheim's focus on classification systems. In her analysis of ritual purity and contamination, she worked to uncover broad universal patterns that can be applied from one social setting or event to another. She considered the dialectic of clean and dirty as a symbolic structure for analysis. Solidarity exists when the sacred and the profane are properly delineated. Rules governing behavior create order by defining what is out of order.

Postmodernism

With the emergence of postmodernity, issues of representation, distribution of power, gender, voice, and authority became relevant in the study of religion. Emerging anthropological analyses of religion and ritual joined the larger academy in recognizing their relationships with power, authority, and place.

Feminist scholars of religion and anthropology challenged the dichotomy between public and private spaces relative to gender constructs. Unconvinced that the presumed universal subordination of women to men was natural, Sherri Ortner focused on the ways societies construct gender. Michelle Rosaldo and Louise Lamphere focused on religion and culture. Past studies of religion had largely focused on those who played public roles in ritual ceremony. The voices and experiences of women and marginalized individuals were generally ignored or filtered through the public social system. The sum of these critiques and theses was an invitation to reimagine access, identity, relationships, and voice in the study of religious movements.

Talal Asad challenged Geertz's definition of religion as a system of symbols, arguing that when a definition of religion privileges interiority over and against the structural normalcy inherent in some religious expressions then the definition is suspect. Geertz's definition of religion, according to Asad, was heavily laden with western European Protestant constructs and as a result was rooted in the context within which it was developed. Others, including Richard King, Stanley Jeyaraja Tambiah, and Morton Klass, criticized the use of the term *religion* given the sociohistorical overlay with which it had been infused.

Gananath Obeyesekere's challenge to Marshall Sahlins's interpretation of the death of Captain Cook as the returned deity Lono in Hawaii was representative of a movement that asked questions about the ability of outsiders to interpret indigenous actions and motives. Couched in the study of religion and the controversial interpretation of the meaning of Cook's death, the debate focused on cultural identity, reflexivity, and epistemology.

These and similar critiques resulted in a heightened cognizance of position, privilege, power, and place in the study of religion (e.g., Asad). Whereas positivism sought to identify absolutes based on verifiable data, postmodernity worked to liberate ideological construction from any particular foundation. Ethnographic research and literary style changed dramatically.

Attention to positionality and voice resulted in ethnographies wherein the ethnographer became intertwined in the local narrative. The ethnographies included a self-reflexive analysis of the relationship and role that researchers played in the experiences of their communities of study. Studies of women, individuals of color, and culturally situated data became the norm.

Contemporary Approaches to the Anthropology of Religion

The ongoing debate over whether anthropology should focus on the ethnographic enterprise, focus on the subjectivity of the researcher, or look for the underlying universals is present in the anthropology of religion. Some scholars continue the ethnological enterprise, documenting the effect of the past and present, gender, power, and locality on contemporary religious practices; some focus on the symbolic systems wherein meaningful constructs exist, adapt, and shape experience through semiosis; others suggest a need to engage what some called world religious systems that heretofore have been largely ignored; and still others have turned to cognitive science, advocating for the scientific analysis of language, ritual behavior, and magical tenets so that the underlying tenets of human reasoning might be uncovered.

Semiotic Materialism

The imbuing of material culture with symbolic meaning and power is drawing the attention of some (e.g., Matthew Engelke and Webb Keane). Bridging sociolinguistics and cultural anthropology, these scholars consider conflicts over the significance and meanings attached to material goods, gestures, and

concepts. Whether studying a religious movement's rejection of written sacred texts over and against direct communication with God or another's negotiation of the complex relationships between purification, modernity, and money, scholars focusing on objects and their meanings do so within complex sociohistorical postcolonial contexts.

Christianity

The past decade has seen a dramatic increase of publishing on Christianity by anthropologists. This upsurge in publications has provided glimpses into the diversity of thought and experience among people who self-identify as Christian. Encouraged by a small cadre (e.g., Joel Robbins and Simon Coleman), this growing canon includes glimpses into the rise of modern American evangelicalism, the independent indigenous movements, the various renditions of Pentecostalism, the mission trip phenomena, the relationship between missionary activities and current local praxis, and the various revitalization movements. Together these reflect anthropological attention to the relationship between historical and contemporary activities and ideologies.

Cognitive Science

Scholars working in the area of cognitive science continue the postpositive interest in developing empirically based models (e.g., Whitehouse). For example, some argue that the tendency of human beings to explain things, specifically to anthropomorphize material culture and natural phenomena, is evidence of the universality of religion. Others draw on psychology, anthropology, neuroscience, and cognitive science to argue that religion is important to people across culture, time, and space as a result of evolution of the human brain. Still others emphasize modes of religiosity, delineating between the imaginistic mode (infrequent, high-energy rites, as in puberty rites) and the doctrinal mode (repetitive, low-energy activities, with a goal of creating semantic memory). By linking neurological studies, cognitive science, and psychology with social behavior, unifying models for the study of religious consciousness and activity are possible.

Political Ecology

Hegemony, the subaltern discourse, praxis, reflexivity, freedom, and self-consciousness elicit attention from many scholars exploring socioreligious phenomena. Culturally imbued agency relative to colonialism and neocolonialism, transmigration, technology, development, linguistics, and gender relative to religion (to name a few) are receiving the attention of still others. As a part of this trend, some scholars are focusing on the globalization of various movements, including, for example, Islam, Christianity, Indigenous religions, and Hinduism. Together they consider the complex of actors as agents, their voices, and the social milieu in which they are engaged.

In short, the history and theory of the anthropology of religion has tended to follow the ebb and flow of the discipline as a whole. People researching religion from an anthropological perspective continue to provide helpful contributions to the discipline as a whole; theoreticians continue to model this thing called religion. The past is somewhat clear, the future a bit less so. In the present, the relationship between subject and object, the part and the whole, the self and the Other continues to inspire participants and observers in their quest for meaning.

Frederick P. Lampe

See also Animism, Animatism; Asad, Talal; Communitas; Comte, Auguste; Douglas, Mary; Durkheim, Émile; Frazer, James G.; Geertz, Clifford; Gluckman, Max; Harris, Marvin; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Malinowski, Bronisław; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Myth, Theories of; Ortner, Sherry; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Rappaport, Roy; *Rites de Passage*; Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist; Steward, Julian; Turner, Victor W.; Tylor, Edward Burnett

Further Readings

Asad, T. (1993). The construction of religion as an anthropological category. In T. Asad (Ed.), *Genealogies of religion: Discipline and reasons of power in Christianity and Islam* (pp. 27–54). Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Cannell, F. (2006). *The anthropology of Christianity.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Csordas, T. J. (Ed.). (2009). *Transnational transcendence: Essays on religion and globalization.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Engelke, M. (2007). *A problem of presence: Beyond scripture in an African church.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Lambek, M. (2012, May). Facing religion, from anthropology. *Anthropology of This Century,* 4.

Retrieved from http://aotcpress.com/articles/facing-religion-anthropology

Robbins, J. (2006). Anthropology and theology: An awkward relationship? *Anthropological Quarterly, 79*(2), 285–294.

Rosaldo, M. Z., & Lamphere, L. (Eds.). (1974). *Women, culture and society.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Tambiah, S. J. (1990). *Magic, science, religion, and the scope of rationality.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Turner, V. W. (1991). *The ritual process: Structure and anti-structure*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press. (Original work published 1969)

Whitehouse, H., & Laidlaw, J. (Eds.). (2007). *Religion, anthropology, and cognitive science*. Durham, NC: Carolina Academic Press.

Rhodes-Livingstone Institute

The Rhodes-Livingstone Institute was a most influential initiative in the ethnographic study of Africa and in the building of anthropological theory. Established in Northern Rhodesia (now Zambia) during 1938, its aim was to scientifically analyze social life in Central Africa. Godfrey Wilson (1938–1940) served as the first director and was succeeded by Max Gluckman (1941–1947), Elisabeth Colson (1947–1951), Bill Epstein (1951–1955), Charles White (1955–1956 and 1960–1965), and Henry Fosbrooke (1956–1960). Although financed by colonial governments, the institute distinguished itself as an independent center of learning. Most researchers held liberal or radical views, opposed White minority rule, and saw their task as preparing the way for independence. Many were later based at Manchester University, where they wrote up the results of their fieldwork. The Africans themselves used the anthropologists as vehicles to argue local causes.

Despite focusing on classical anthropological topics such as kinship, the Rhodes-Livingstone Institute introduced new subject matter, pioneered new research methods, and defined novel theoretical constructs. Affiliated researchers rejected the tribe as the unit of analysis and rather sought to conduct detailed ethnographic research on particular settings within an overarching, rapidly transforming Northern Rhodesian social system. This larger analytical frame compelled recognition of colonial presence, industrial enterprise, and migrant labor. The researchers treated Africans as integral actors in the modern world. Gluckman defined the larger social system in terms of the interdependence of institutions rather than common values. This enabled him to treat contestation and conflict as an integral aspect thereof. Researchers of the institute collected statistical data to complement ethnographic research, quantify variables, and make systematic comparisons. They also developed the extended–case study method. Here, the analysis starts with the observation of interactions among concrete individuals within specific settings, such as butchery, and then proceeds to ask questions about broader social relationships.

The most influential studies in rural settings were conducted by John Barnes (kinship among the patrilineal Ngoni), Elisabeth Colson (agriculture among the Plateau Tonga), Ian Cunnison (fishing and trade among the Luapula), Max Gluckman (legal processes in Barotseland), Hans Holleman (the Shona tribe as a political entity), Max Marwick (sorcery accusations and social tensions among the Chewa), Clyde Mitchell (kinship among the matrilineal Yao), Edith and Victor Turner (matrilineal kinship, symbolism, and ritual among the Ndembu), Jaap Van Velsen (politics of kinship among the lakeside Tonga), and William Watson (the Mambwe, tribal integration in the money economy).

Many studies by the Rhodes-Livingstone researchers showed the impact of labor migration on rural life. Gluckman recorded a predominance of family conflicts in Barotse court cases, arising from the absence of men. More cooperatively structured communities were not as hard hit. Watson argued that through patrilineal cooperation, the Mambwe managed to avoid the destructive impact of labor migration on agriculture. The Mambwe migrants earned money for marriage payments at home, spent intermittent spells in their villages of origin, and invested in land, which remained the ultimate basis of their economic security.

Victor Turner's 1957 work *Schism and Continuity in an African Society* exemplifies the emphasis on conflict. In the monograph, Turner analyzes several drawn-out disputes, over issues such as succession, as "social dramas." He shows how they illuminate tensions arising from the conflicting demands of virilocal marriage and matrilineal inheritance and how rituals are invoked to resolve the disputes by

affirming the deepest values of social groups. He depicts the Ndembu villages as marked by unstable compositions and as prone to fission.

Studies conducted in urban settings rejected the conservative view that Africans were essentially "tribal people" for whom urbanization implied social disintegration. Here, researchers of the institute sided with White liberals and African nationalists, who argued for investment in urban housing and amenities. On the basis of fieldwork in Broken Hill, a zinc-mining town, Wilson shows how Africans successfully forged new social relations. Wage earners invested in clothing and European-style housing, which signified status in the colonial world. Their marriages became not only more autonomous and interethnic but also unstable, due to unbalanced sex ratios. Dance clubs, rotating credit associations, and burial societies emerged as new social forms. Wilson saw the central problem in Northern Rhodesia as one of "social disequilibrium," in which industrial development occurred at the expense of rural societies. He suggested that equilibrium could be achieved only by stabilizing the workforce, removing the color bar, and investing capital in agriculture.

In *The Kalela Dance* (1956), Clyde Mitchell focuses on a popular Bisa dance and uses the extended–case study method to explore the intricacies of tribalism on the copper belt. The dancers were young male laborers, smartly dressed in European clothing and accompanied by a king, a doctor, and a nursing sister. Their songs heaped self-praise on the Bisa and made fun of other ethnic groups. Yet the dance did not originate in Bisa territory. Moreover, the songs were sung in Bemba—the lingua franca of the copper belt—and addressed urban experiences such as being converted by the Watchtower movement. For Mitchell, the dance is far removed from "rural tribalism"—an organized system of relationships based on chieftaincy and involved in managing land as a productive resource. Rather, the dance articulates "urban tribalism." In the multiethnic urban contexts, Mitchell claims, tribe is a category for social interaction and for classifying strangers. Here, Bisa men provide each other with hospitality and social support. They sustain joking relations—characterized by relations of permitted disrespect—with certain other tribes to ease hostility. Mitchell sees such tribalism as a situational identity: pertinent to social interaction among African workers but irrelevant when they collectively confront European management.

Bill Epstein's fieldwork in the town of Luanshya substantiates many of Mitchell's assertions. Focusing on the development of politics, he shows how a system of elected "tribal elders" replaced the unpopular African mine police. The elders represented the workers to management, and vice versa; settled minor offenses; and participated in urban courts. But the tribal elders played no role during the 1935 miners' strike, in which trade unions coordinated the industrial action. Moreover, workers supported the African National Congress, led by educated Africans, in opposing racial discrimination and the formation of the unpopular Central African Federation. Epstein too sees identities and alliances as dependent on the situations in which African workers found themselves. Mitchell and Kapferer subsequently focused analytical attention on social networks as chains of relations radiating outward from particular individuals.

After Zambia's independence, the institute no longer served as a locus for metropolitan anthropological research but attained a nationally defined social research agenda. Yet its actor-focused ethnographic perspective was to have a lasting impact on international scholarship.

Isak Niehaus

See also Gluckman, Max; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Mitchell, J. C. (1956). *The Kalela dance* (Rhodes-Livingstone Papers 27). Northern Rhodesia, South Central Africa: Livingstone.

Shumaker, L. (2001). *Africanizing anthropology: Fieldwork, networks and the making of cultural knowledge in Central Africa*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Turner, V. (1957). *Schism and continuity in an African society: A study of Ndembu village life*. Manchester, UK: Manchester University Life.

Richards, Audrey

Audrey Richards (1899–1984), a social anthropologist and a social reformer, was a talented administrator and a committed advocate for the discipline. She

championed the study of colonial social change and anthropology's role as an applied social science.

Biography and Career

Audrey Richards was born in London in 1899 into a well-connected family of barristers, academics, and British colonial civil servants. Her uncles on her father's side included two colonial governors. The second-born of four girls, she had a privileged early childhood in India, before boarding school and reading natural sciences at Cambridge. Influenced by the idealism of her older sister Gwynedd, who became a social worker, she then spent several years in London working as secretary to the labor department of the League of Nations union.

She decided to pursue her postgraduate studies with Bronisław Malinowski at the London School of Economics and found herself attracted to his intellectual charisma and pedagogic flair. Joining a brilliant group of students in his research seminar, she was exposed to his functionalist idea that rites, beliefs, and customs play a necessary role in filling biological or social needs. While some of Malinowski's students later rebelled against his domineering personality, Richards remained loyal and, after the death of his wife Elsie in 1935, became his closest confidante, acting as a surrogate mother to his three daughters. They were even briefly engaged. Like all of her extensive correspondence, now in the London School of Economics archive along with her field notes, their letters to each other are full of intimacies and amusing academic gossip. Throughout her research career, she stayed true to his commitment to systematic data collection and careful empirical research.

As diet became an increasingly important topic among social reformers, Richards began to do a library-based PhD dissertation on nutrition. On the opening page of her doctoral thesis, later published as *Hunger and Work in a Savage Tribe* (1932), she gently questioned Malinowski's focus on explaining social systems in relation to sexual "needs." Instead, she argued that nutrition was more influential than any other physiological function on the nature of social organization. Encouraged by her supervisor to focus on the role women played in the economic and social life of an African tribe, she traveled to Northern Rhodesia in 1930 to carry out two periods of fieldwork on a previously unstudied group, the Bemba. This led to her most influential monograph, *Land, Labour and Diet in Northern Rhodesia* (1939), a holistic account of the Bemba in the Malinowskian mold.

Throughout this period, she was also teaching anthropology, first at Bedford College and then at the London School of Economics. Her ambitions, social connections, and talent at combining research, teaching, and administration guaranteed an influential career. Her next move was to become head of the department at the University of the Witwatersrand, during which time she both did further fieldwork and became very involved in helping an influential colonial reformer, Sir William Malcolm Hailey (Lord Hailey), with his multivolume *African Survey* (1938), a Carnegie-sponsored report on economic and social conditions across Britain's African colonies. This report called for the wholesale reorganization and prioritization of colonial research to inform postwar development planning. It was highly influential within Whitehall. With the outbreak of World War II, she returned to England and was employed by the Colonial Office to chair its nutrition committee. It was the ideal position from which to put Lord Hailey's recommendations into practice, and she became a key advocate for a new Colonial Office committee tasked with the social research required for a more rational approach to colonial development.

Her own appointment to this Colonial Social Science Research Council lasted almost 20 years (1944–1962), interspersed with a 6-year period as the founding director of the East African Institute of Social Research at Makerere in Uganda from 1950 to 1956. Aware of the quality of the social research conducted at the Rhodes-Livingstone Institute under the influential direction of Max Gluckman, Richards successfully convinced the committee to support a series of applied interdisciplinary social research institutes in the colonies: These were eventually set up in Uganda, Nigeria, and the Caribbean. While at Makerere, she directed a whole suite of empirical social surveys on aspects of agricultural and social change, as well as doing the hard work of pulling together a series of edited collections that resulted from them, including *Economic Development and Tribal Change* (1954), *East African Chiefs* (1960), and her sole-authored *The Changing Structure of a Ganda Village* (1966). As well as securing the reputation of the Makerere

Institute and its model of engaged and "relevant" social research, she also returned to her field notes from the 1930s and wrote *Chisungu: A Girl's Initiation Ceremony Among The Bemba of Zambia* (1956). Later, she sought to protect the independence of the research institutes as the first winds of independence blew across Africa.

Returning to Britain in 1956 and with a fellowship at Newnham College, Cambridge, she again demonstrated her skills at institution building, becoming the first director of Cambridge's African Studies Centre. She advocated the importance of training anthropology students in fieldwork methods, and with her Cambridge colleague Sir Edmund Leach, she persuaded a whole generation of Cambridge anthropologists to carry out their first research interviews in a collaborative ethnographic study of Elmdon, the village in which she lived. Greatly respected and admired by her students, many honors now accrued, including a Commander of the British Empire. She became the first female anthropologist to be elected to the British Academy and the Presidency of the Royal Anthropological Institute.

Despite her hard work, connections, and charm, her commitment to "applied" anthropology rather than to "pure" theory building meant that her academic contribution was never fully acknowledged by the award of a full professorship. Academic misogyny was a factor, and she was not helped either by her defensive attitude toward colonial policy in the period that followed African independence. Her success in securing the institutional future of the British discipline through colonial office funding and patronage in the 1940s and 1950s had to be its own reward.

Contributions to Anthropology

Richards's contributions to social anthropology were diverse and wide-ranging, and the most influential was her empirical work on nutrition and agricultural economics, her work on ritual and matrilineal kinship, and her quiet attention to gender. She championed applied anthropology and the study of social change at a time when both were unfashionable. They have since become key aspects of disciplinary practice. She also repeatedly drew attention to the importance of training in fieldwork methods.

Nutrition and Agricultural Economics

Richards's work among the Bemba sought to demonstrate that the material and productive economy of a people could not be separated from their political systems and symbolism. Championing a Malinowskian functionalist approach, her contribution through her 1939 work *Land, Labour and Diet* was to offer a detailed empirical study of how, as she put it, the "biological facts of appetite and diet are themselves shaped by the particular systems of human relationships" (p. ix). The quality of her research records on the Bemba *citimene* ("slash-and-burn") agricultural complex made it the basis of "*Cutting Down Trees*," a more regionally and historically contextualized restudy by Henrietta Moore and Megan Vaughan in 1994. However, their work shows how the original study ignored the changes wrought by the colonial administration on Bemba political authority, a surprising weakness given Richards's interests. This perhaps demonstrates the limits of a functionalist study of a single society, the difficulty of placing such studies in a comparative context, and the challenge of explaining social change within a functionalist paradigm.

Theorizing Matrilineality

Richards wrote several chapter-length accounts of matrilineality, the most important being her contribution to Radcliffe-Brown and Forde's *African Systems of Kinship and Marriage* (1950), in which she explored what she called the matrilineal problem: the tension between the recognition of descent through the female line and the social requirement for women to marry outside their kin groups. If a woman leaves her home when she marries, her brothers have to find some way of keeping authority over her children. Alternatively, if it is the men rather than the women who move, then they are separated from their home, where they have inheritance rights. Richards shows the various ways in which societies manage this problem, often by managing marriage and residency as a social process rather than as a one-off act. By comparing two broad groups of Bantu-speaking peoples across what is called the "matrilineal belt" of Central Africa, she is able to show the range of ways in which marriage and residence arrangements are developed to manage the tensions created by matrilineality, and how these are influenced by agricultural practices (e.g., shifting

cultivation), the value of land and other possessions, and local political structures. Her attention to the fine-grained details of rights and obligations, placed in a broad comparative context, made this piece a significant contribution to more structural approaches to kinship, while still staying grounded in the contingencies of the local political economy.

Writing on Ritual and Socialization

Richards's account of the elaborate puberty rites of two young Bemba girls and the role they played in a matrilineal society, told from the woman's point of view, was influential among female anthropologists, even if overshadowed by Victor Turner's rather more theorized interpretations of Ndembu ritual symbolism in his *Forest of Symbols* (1967). Richards underscored the socialization role of such rituals and criticized the lack of attention paid by anthropologists to questions of education and child rearing.

Documenting Colonial Change

Much of the research carried out by Richards at the East African Institute for Social Research was partly funded by the colonial authorities to address the direct effects of the colonial agricultural and development policy in Uganda—wage labor, migration, changing land use, experiments in local governance, and the introduction of councils—and even the effects of beer-brewing policies in Kampala. While not written for an anthropological audience, this work promoted the value of collaborative interdisciplinary work, as well as quietly documenting the huge social changes wrought by colonial rule. Although never a political critic of colonial power, and instead fond of describing herself as a "do-gooder," her intellectual interest in the effects of colonialism led her to write an innovative article in *Man* in 1942—about the "revival" of tribalism in South Africa as the result of struggles over land—and also a short Rhodes-Livingstone book titled *Bemba Marriage and Present Economic Conditions* (1942), which directly showed the effects labor migration was having on Bemba family structures. Challenging the dominant view that functional perspectives could not account for social change, this innovative work was nonetheless neglected by the discipline.

Richards's Legacy

Richards's pioneering career as a female anthropologist was acknowledged in the two collections of essays written in her honor—Jean La Fontaine's *The Interpretation of Ritual* (1972) and Shirley Ardener's *Persons and Powers of Women in Diverse Cultures* (1992)—and in the creation of the annual Audrey Richards Lecture at the University of Oxford. While never calling herself a feminist, she was all too aware of the challenges facing women academics of her generation, an issue she discusses in an interview titled "On Fieldwork" (available online).

As well as acting as an invaluable role model for her many female students, her commitment to linking theory and practice was pathbreaking, if never fully acknowledged. She showed how practical, policy-relevant research could carefully record the huge changes being wrought under colonial rule and how these in turn could generate theoretical questions and insights. Her administrative expertise and energy ensured funding for a generation of researchers, securing the reputation of social anthropology as an academic discipline within British universities.

David Mills

See also Applied Anthropology; Bloch, Maurice; Cambridge University; London School of Economics; Mair, Lucy; Malinowski, Bronisław; Structural Functionalism

Further Readings

Gladstone, J. (1986). Significant sister. *American Ethnologist, 13,* 338–362.

Kuper, A. (1999). Audrey Richards: A career in anthropology. In *Among the anthropologists: History and context in anthropology* (pp. 115–138). London, UK: Athlone.

La Fontaine, J. S. (1985). Audrey Richards: In memoriam. *Cambridge Anthropology, 10*(1), 1–97.

Mills, D. (2006). How not to be a "government house pet": Audrey Richards and the East African Institute of Social Research. In M. Ntarangwi, D. Mills, & M. Babiker (Eds.), *African anthropologies: History, critique and practice* (pp. 76–98). London, UK: Zed.

Strathern, M. (1993). Audrey Isabel Richards 1899–1984. *Proceedings of the British Academy: 1992 Lectures and Memoirs, 82*(1993), 439–453.

Rites de Passage

Rites de passage is a type of ritual that goes through a three-phase transition at both physical and

psychological levels. The three phases at the physical level refer to the (1) *rites of separation*, (2) *rites of margin*, and (3) *rites of aggregation* (or incorporation). At the psychological level, the stages are the (1) *preliminal rites*, (2) *liminal rites*, and (3) *postliminal rites*. The classic study of this type of ritual was conducted by the French folklorist Arnold van Gennep, who published his work *Les Rites de Passage* in 1909. These rites are generally understood to include life cycle rites, calendaric or seasonal rites, festivals, and rites of "firsts." *Rites de passage* has become a fundamental concept and a theoretical model in many disciplinary studies, like anthropology and folklore, particularly following the translation of *Les Rites de Passage* into English in 1960.

van Gennep's Model

The formulation of van Gennep's model was the result of extensive ethnographic studies that stood in opposition to the trends in studying magic and religion at the end of the 19th century. Being critical of James G. Frazer and Émile Durkheim's separate classification of magic, ritual, and religion, van Gennep coined the phrase *magic-religious*, in which magic was the technique and religion was the theory, although the two aspects remained inseparable.

He also discerned a patterned sequence to rites of passage. In examining the processes of rites of passage, van Gennep paid attention to the interrelations between the temporal and spatial as well as physical and psychological aspects of rituals. According to his original discussion, the first stage of a rite of passage, the *rites de séparation*, marks a physical separation as well as a psychological *preliminal* state; the second stage of *rites de marge* keeps the subject physically marginalized from the social group while psychologically in a *liminal* stage; and the third stage of *rites d'agrégation* incorporates the subject both physically and psychologically back to the group with a new status through some *postliminal* rites. Van Gennep believed that both individuals and groups experience such a transition from one situation to another and that this transition is marked by time, place, social status, and spiritual worlds. These transitions reflect the different cultures that human beings have developed to satisfy their curiosity toward nature and themselves as well as to assuage their worries and fears.

The central idea in van Gennep's model is about the physical "margin" and the psychological "liminal." Discerning this threshold is helpful to understanding how ritual actions embody beliefs, how meanings are created and communicated, and how different cultures have developed different rites to serve similar purposes. Thus, this stage has much to do with our human cultural creativity, a realization essential to studying liminality. According to van Gennep, this is a stage of uncertainty: Whoever passes from one world to the other (between the sacred and the secular) finds himself or herself physically and magic-religiously in a special situation for a certain period of time—he or she wavers between both worlds. Such a situation is referred to by the term *margin*. It is from this sense that Victor Turner later developed the idea of *liminality*, for students and scholars of ritual studies. In developing this idea, however, one needs to keep a dynamic view of the process of marginality and liminality, as it is not static in either a ritual or a social sense, and to avoid stereotyping any group. For example, this model can be applied to studies of ethnic identity and migration, in which changing social contexts greatly influence the ritual symbols and processes, as well as the ways in which both insiders and outsiders perceive the individual and group identities. One problem in comprehending the model has to do with the English translation of *rites de marge* into "rites of transition" or "transition rites," since *transition* loses the meanings of "margin" and "liminal" at both physical and psychological levels.

In understanding and applying this model, van Gennep warns that one needs to be aware of three aspects. First, rites of passage are only one type of ritual, while some others may not contain the same transitional pattern. There are also various kinds of rites of passage. The commonly used terms like *life cycle rites* and *life crisis rites*, which concern the process of birth-marriage-death, refer to only one kind of *rites de passage*, while calendaric or seasonal rites, for instance, are another kind of rites of passage. Furthermore, not all rites of birth or initiation, wedding, or funeral are rites of passage, because they may include other rites of fertility, protection, divination, defense, or propitiation. Because not all peoples develop the same characteristics of rites of passage, there is no absolute uniformity in understanding the particular rites within the model. One may have noticed that the phrase *rite of passage* can be so idiosyncratic in everyday speech, or even misused as an academic term, that it is used to denote patterned actions that, unlike rituals, may

not have symbolic meanings. As seen in *Les Rites de Passage*, van Gennep discusses the model specifically from these aspects: the classification of rites, the territorial passage, individuals and groups, pregnancy and childbirth, birth and childhood, initiation rites, betrothal and marriage, funerals, and other types of rites of passage.

Second, the model of rites of passage can be applied at more than one structural level to analyze a ritual process. As van Gennep states, any rite may be interpreted in several ways, depending on whether it occurs within a complete system or in isolation, or whether it is performed for a certain occasion. While one's life, from birth to marriage to death, can be examined with this model, it is also possible to look at any stage itself as a process of rites of passage. For example, at the first level, birth is at the stage of rites of incorporation (as the end of one cycle) as well as at the stage of rites of separation (as the beginning of a new cycle), engagement-wedding-childbirth is in the stage of rites of margin, and death is at the stage of rites of incorporation (into the spiritual world) as well as at the stage of separation (from the living). But each stage can be further seen as a process of rites of passage at the second level. For example, the transition from engagement to wedding to birth giving forms a sequence of the rites of separation, rites of margin, and rites of incorporation. Furthermore, at the third level, the wedding ceremony alone can be analyzed with the model, in which the departure of the bride from her maiden house to her groom's house forms a series of rites of separation, the veil or carpet keeps the bride in the state of physical margin and psychological (liminal) uncertainty, and finally the bride is incorporated into her husband's family (in a patriarchal society) through rites of incorporation, namely, postceremonial feasts or games.

Third, the rites of margin are in the liminal stage, in which the subject is in an abnormal stage between the previous world and the unknown new world and thus is treated by his or her group or society in an abnormal way. This relates to the development of ritual liminality to social liminality or from studying marginality in a ritual sense to studying it in a social sense. Anthropologists such as Mary Douglas and Victor Turner, along with some sociologists, have expanded the studies of marginalized people undergoing a ritual process to the socially and politically marginalized people in greater societies. Douglas writes that the initiates behave like dangerous criminal characters during the marginal period in their socializing process, and to behave antisocially is the proper expression of their marginal condition. It is therefore consistent with the ideas about form and formlessness to treat initiates coming out of seclusion as if they were themselves charged with power—hot, dangerous, and requiring insulation and time to cool down.

Later Interpretations

Since many anthropologists and folklorists who refer to van Gennep's rites of passage are in fact more familiar with Victor Turner's interpretation of van Gennep's ideas, it should be noted that Turner's interpretation of the liminal stage differs from van Gennep's. Turner stresses aspects of the liminal as being outside the ordered universe, a period within the categories of ordinary social life, while van Gennep intends *rites de marge*, or liminal rites, to denote a passage from one state to another and focuses more on the patterned relationship *between* the stages than on the lack of order *during* the liminal period. Of course, Turner's development moves from considering ritual structure to social structure, and his focus is mainly on where transition in space-time is ritualized, *how* it is ritualized, the nature and properties of the ritual symbols and of their interrelations, and how these give us clues not only to the cherished values of the society that performs the rituals but also to the nature of human sociality itself that creates and transcends particular cultural forms.

In applying and further developing the ideas embedded in the model of the rites of passage, one should also consider the social changes, that is, the dimensions of racial, gender, ethnicity, occupation, and global or local contexts, in understanding issues like migration and the construction of cultural and ethnic as well as individual and collective identities. In simple societies, it is common that initiates return to their former group or society with a new status, forming a physical circular process. However, in modern societies, the ritual subjects at the conclusion of the rites of passage are often incorporated into a new group or society, with a new status, following a somewhat linear process. This physical or geographical change can be relative to the changing notion of border in a society or a nation (with the influence of globalization), while the psychological transition remains the same in nature.

The impact of the model of *rites de passage* has continued for a century after the first publication of van Gennep's book, and there are still ideas and subject matter worth exploring in new contexts. The distinction of physical puberty and social puberty, for example, was van Gennep's discovery in analyzing the rites of initiation, which contributed particularly to sociological and physiological studies. Understanding the legal, religious, cultural, psychological, and physiological definitions of puberty or adulthood may help us cope with the confusion and tension in life crises in our social and cultural interactions and help interpret the rites of passage in different cultures. The recent decades have witnessed the translations of *Les Rites de Passage* in languages such as Japanese, Korean, Russian, and Chinese, which will further attest to the universality of *rites de passage* in human practices. In anthropology and folklore, this model is seen by the folklorist Alan Dundes as one of the theories fundamental to folkloristics and the one with the greatest impact on folkloristic analysis. As a method of examining human behaviors in both rituals and everyday practices, the model illustrates the conformity of human life to cosmic rhythms, and it further emphasizes that there is much more to rites than models and sequences. Reflecting on the use of the model in the past century, one may find it to be still useful in gaining a deeper understanding of what is done in rituals and even in everyday practices in the increasingly complex and globalizing world.

Juwen Zhang

See also Dundes, Alan; Frazer, James G.; Gennep, Arnold van; Structuralism; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Belmont, N. (1979). *Arnold van Gennep: The creator of French ethnography* (D. Coltman, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Dundes, A. (Ed.). (1999). *International folkloristics: Classic contributions by the founders of folklore*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield.

van Gennep, A. (1960). *The rites of passage* (M. A. Vizedom & G. I. Caffee, Trans.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press. (Original work published 1909)

Turner, V. (1969). *The ritual process: Structure and anti-structure*. London, UK: Aldine.

Zhang, J. (2012). Recovering meanings lost in interpretations of *Les Rites de Passage*. *Western Folklore, 71*(2), 119–147.

Zumwalt, R. L. (1988). *The enigma of Arnold van Gennep (1873–1957): Master of French folklore and Hermit of Bourg-la-Reine* (FF Communication No. 241). Helsinki, Finland: Academia Scientiarum Fennica.

Rivers, W. H. R.

William Halse Rivers Rivers (1864–1922) was a medical doctor, experimental psychologist, and pioneer of fieldwork methods, who became a key figure in the formative years of British social anthropology. Today, Rivers is most famous for his comparative work on sensory perception and for a series of experiments in neurophysiology with his colleague Henry Head; for his pioneering psychological treatment of traumatized officers during the First World War; for his contributions to kinship studies in the form of the "genealogical method" developed during fieldwork in India and the Pacific Islands; and for his role in establishing anthropology and psychology as professional fields.

Early Career

Born to a respectable middle-class family in Kent, England, Rivers was educated at the well-known Tonbridge School. His exposure to anthropology began early by way of his maternal uncle James Hunt, an eminent racial theorist, a speech therapist, and the founding president of the Anthropological Society. A lifelong stammerer with frail health, Rivers was prevented by sickness in his final year from taking the Cambridge University entrance examinations. Instead, he trained as a doctor at the prestigious research hospital St. Bartholomew's and at the University of London, where he gradually developed an interest in neurology and psychiatry. After a stint as a ship's surgeon in the Pacific and in Japan, in 1892, Rivers gave up his post at the National Hospital for the Paralysed and Epileptic and traveled to Jena, where he studied philosophy with Rudolf Eucken and attended lectures by the psychiatrist Otto Binswanger and the experimental psychologist Theodor Ziechen. He then worked at Bethlem Royal Hospital and lectured in psychology at Guy's Hospital and University College London,

during which time he also spent a summer working with the Heidelberg psychologist Emil Kraepelin, developing methods to scientifically study fatigue.

In 1893, Rivers moved to Cambridge University to teach and to undertake experiments in the physiology of the senses. There, he began a lifelong affiliation with St. John's College (eventually being made a fellow in 1902). In 1897, he took over the running of the new psychology laboratory in University College London.

In 1898, Rivers joined the Cambridge zoologist Alfred Cort Haddon, who was organizing the second Cambridge University expedition to the Torres Straits. The first, in 1888, had been a zoological survey of the islands' flora and fauna. The second was explicitly anthropological, aiming to document, and salvage, the social practices and customs of the Torres Straits, which Haddon perceived to be radically transforming due to colonial impact. The expedition team comprised six researchers, each of whom had responsibility for recording a different aspect of the society and culture of the Torres Straits. This collaborative endeavor also set the stage for the development of anthropology as a field-based science. Haddon recorded the local customs, studied decorative art, oversaw the collection of artifacts, and took anthropomorphic measurements. Rivers was responsible for experimental psychology, with a particular emphasis on vision. William McDougall studied tactile sensation. Charles Myers was a skilled musician and focused on hearing and music (recording music on the expedition's phonograph). Both were students of Rivers. Sidney Ray was the expedition's linguist. Charles Seligman researched traditional medicine and pathology. Anthony Wilkin was the official photographer and also investigated house construction and land tenure. The expedition became a landmark for the new discipline, producing several volumes of reports and refining methods of research and documentation. During this time, Rivers became intrigued by larger questions of cultural change and social organization and committed to further exploring the immense cultural variation and intermingling in the Pacific Islands.

The Genealogical Method

One of Rivers's greatest contributions to anthropology was methodological. Rivers was deeply invested in the formalization of anthropological theory and method and was an important contributor to the fourth edition of *Notes and Queries on Anthropology*, a methodological guide and reference manual for those working in the field.

During the 1898 Torres Straits Expedition, Rivers developed his famous contribution to ethnographic techniques: the genealogical method. At first, Rivers was drawn to document kinship relations between the islanders in order to research the heritability of certain psychological and physiological capacities. He soon realized that these kinship charts were also invaluable maps of social organization, presenting not only the local vision of relatedness but also models of political authority. The genealogical method not only allowed access into local lifeworlds and language, it demonstrated the social foundations of kinship. In addition, tracing genealogies was in itself a form of "culture history," moving backward in time to different points of cultural development and potentially highlighting the emergence of key cultural concepts and categories. Furthermore, tracing the heritability of certain physical and mental capacities demonstrated that there were more differences (on average) between the islanders than there were between the islanders and Europeans—an important contribution to contemporary debates about the nature of the difference between "primitive" and "modern" civilizations.

The genealogical method was the first step toward total linguistic immersion—a key strategy of the developing method of participant observation. It also underpinned the observation of how kinship (and marriage) formed the basis of more systematic social and political organization. The genealogical method became the mainstay of anthropological fieldwork—a young Bronisław Malinowski wrote to his friend John Layard in 1914, during their first ever stint of fieldwork, that he was collecting genealogies and was finding them indispensable, albeit difficult to manage.

The Todas

In 1901–1902, Rivers spent some months among the Todas of the Nilgiri Plateau in southwestern India. The ethnographic monograph that emerged from this fieldwork, *The Todas* (1906), was a holistic account of Toda social organization. Rivers made heavy use of his own genealogical method as a strategy to connect language and kinship terms to

broader principles of social organization. *The Todas* marks Rivers's first monographic attempt to systematically develop a theoretical matrix with which to interpret ethnographic facts, and it emphasizes his commitment to connecting fieldwork methodology and interpretive theory—the first marker of a professionalizing anthropology. Influenced by Lewis Henry Morgan's work on kinship, Rivers was increasingly interested in classificatory kinship terminology and the structuring and regulating capabilities of marital relationships (even those that no longer prevailed), in particular exploring the details of cross-cousin marriage.

Nerve Regeneration

Alongside his developing interest in South Asian and Melanesian cultures, Rivers continued to actively conduct research as an experimental psychologist, famously developing double-blind protocols for research on human subjects. His most well-known experiment was in collaboration with Henry Head. On April 25, 1903, Head had two cutaneous nerves of his left forearm surgically severed. He and Rivers charted the loss and reemergence of sensory perception in his arm until December 1907, when Head reexperienced normal sensitivity. The use of the self as subject in studies of peripheral nerve disorder and the intensive and longitudinal nature of this research made the experiment a milestone in experimental psychology methods. While Head and Rivers's hypothetical conclusion that there are three distinct sets of nerve fibers (deep sensation, protopathic, and epicritic) has since been disproven, the experiment remains influential in neurology and as a model of self-experiment.

The History of Melanesian Society and Theories of Cultural Diffusion

By 1904, anthropology was well established at Cambridge as a postgraduate diploma. A. R. Brown (later Radcliffe-Brown) became one of Haddon and Rivers's first students, undertaking fieldwork in the Andaman Islands from 1906 to 1908. In 1907–1908, Rivers traveled throughout the Solomon Islands and also to the New Hebrides (now Vanuatu), Hawaii, and Fiji. In the *History of Melanesian Society* (1914), Rivers was interested in mapping the ways in which social organization, kinship forms, and language migrated and transformed over time and distance. He was fascinated with what he termed "culture history": the evolution and subsequent diffusion of cultural traits, such as kinship and language, systematically over time. His comparative fieldwork across the island of Melanesia afforded him an empirical base to chart the diffusion of languages, concepts, rituals, and social structures.

In 1914, Rivers and a distinguished cohort traveled to Australia to attend the British Association for the Advancement of Science meetings, after which Rivers returned to the New Hebrides with John Layard to undertake further research into the megalithic ritual cultures of the Solomon Islands and New Hebrides. Rivers and Layard traveled together to the Small Islands of Atchin, off the coast of Malakula. They stayed on the island a few days, after which Rivers left to work with an old colleague, the Reverend Fred Bowie of the Melanesian Mission. Layard remained in the Small Islands for almost a year, an intensive period of research coterminous with Malinowski's first stint in the Trobriand Islands and now generally recognized as one of the earliest models for single-sited anthropological research. He later dedicated his volume *Stone Men of Malekula* (published in 1942) to Rivers: "To the memory of Dr. W. H. R. Rivers who once told me that he would like to have inscribed on his tomb-stone the words 'He made ethnology a science.'"

In addition to his methodological contributions, Rivers published on kinship, kava drinking, astronomy, and language, among many other things. He was an active member of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, becoming president of the anthropological section in 1911, and was also active in leadership of the English Folk-Lore Society and the Royal Anthropological Institute, while maintaining his professional commitments to psychology (in 1904, he founded the *British Journal of Psychology*).

Rivers was a close friend and colleague of Grafton Elliot Smith (chair of anatomy at University College London from 1919 to 1937). After conducting research in Egypt, Smith became convinced that ancient Egypt was the source of a subsequent diffusion of megalithic culture across the globe. Rivers, who had himself worked on color vision in Egypt with Myers and Wilkin in 1900, came to accept this hypothesis, positing that this was the probable origin point of a megalithic complex in Melanesia that included the raising of large stone monuments and

the mummification of the dead. The theory of hyperdiffusionism, and its attendant conflation of culture and race, was ridiculed by the academic community and did much to discredit Smith and his associates.

World War I

During the Great War, Rivers worked as an army psychiatrist and was eventually commissioned as captain in the Royal Army Medical Corps. He worked at a variety of military hospitals, where he treated soldiers afflicted with what he termed "war neuroses," the more popular term being "shell shock." Influenced by Freud, Rivers considered these neuroses to be a form of self-preservation undermined by repression. He not only advocated strongly for the recognition of these mental states as a form of affliction comparable to physical wounding but also emphasized the unique qualities of psychological experiences. Bringing his interests in experimental psychology and psychoanalysis together, he advocated that these afflictions be treated in their own terms rather than as correlates of physical disorders. In 1916, he was stationed at Craiglockhart Hospital for Officers, near Edinburgh, where he famously treated the writers Wilfred Owen and Siegfried Sassoon. Rivers made a deep impression on Sassoon, who wrote about Rivers in his fictionalized memoirs and kept in regular contact with him until Rivers's death. The story of Rivers's time at Craiglockhart has been fictionalized in Pat Barker's prize-winning series of novels.

After the War

This period was one of great personal fulfillment and transformation for Rivers. Fieldwork experiences both in the Torres Straits and in the hospitals treating World War I soldiers effected a kind of personal transformation from a shy, retiring academic to a confident and engaged public figure. His move to Central Hospital, London, in 1917 precipitated a new period of research and a new orientation of his life, away from the inward-looking structures of university life. His psychiatric work focused more on the methods and theories of psychotherapy, and he became greatly interested in the interpretation of dreams and in accessing the repressed and the unconscious. He reconnected with his former Cambridge colleague Bertrand Russell and became increasingly politically minded. He attended socialist meetings in London and became active in the Labour Party. In 1921, he was invited by the party to stand in the University of London constituency.

In 1922, Rivers was in Cambridge busy preparing his candidacy for political office, working with students, and writing a book on instinct and the unconscious. On the night of June 3, he was unexpectedly struck with a strangulated hernia and was only found the following morning. He died on Sunday, June 4, 1922. His last publications were the presidential address to the Royal Anthropological Institute, titled "The Unity of Anthropology," in which he presented a manifesto for a four-field anthropology comprising ethnology, archaeology, linguistics, and physical anthropology, and an edited volume from a conference that convened colonial administrators, ethnologists, and missionaries to discuss the implications of colonialism and contact—*Essays on the Depopulation of Melanesia*, one of the earliest books to address the impact of European influence and government on traditional culture and society.

Rivers left a lasting legacy. Several important works, including *Conflict and Dreams*, were published posthumously by Grafton Elliot Smith, his literary executor. His contributions to anthropological methods and to the professionalization of anthropology were felt deeply by subsequent generations of students, such as Malinowski and Radcliffe Brown, who were responsible for developing the first academic anthropology departments, even though their commitment to functionalism often obscured Rivers's interests in cultural, historical, and psychological issues. In recent years, Rivers has been recognized as one of the early founders of anthropology and has been restored as a father figure within the genealogy of professional anthropology.

Haidy Geismar

Author's Note: Many thanks to Professor Simon Schaffer for generously commenting on a draft of this entry.

See also Cambridge University; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Freud, Sigmund; Haddon, Alfred C.; Malinowski, Bronisław; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Smith, Grafton Elliot; Torres Straits Expedition

Further Readings

Barker, P. (1996). *The regeneration trilogy.* New York, NY: Viking.

Herle, A., & Rouse, S. (1998). *Cambridge and the Torres Straits: Centenary essays on the 1898 anthropological expedition.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Langham, I. (1981). *The building of British social anthropology: W. H. R. Rivers and his Cambridge disciples in the development of kinship studies, 1898–1931.* Dordrecht, Netherlands: D. Reidel.
Rivers, W. H. R. (1900). A genealogical method of collecting social and vital statistics. *Journal of the Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 30,* 74–82.
———. (1906). *The Todas.* London, UK: Macmillan.
———. (1914). *The history of Melanesian society.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1922). *Essays on the depopulation of Melanesia.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1922). Presidential address. The unity of anthropology. *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 52,* 12–25.
Schaffer, S. (1994). *From physics to anthropology—and back again.* Cambridge, UK: Prickly Pear Press.
Slobodin, R. (1978). *W. H. R. Rivers.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.
Urry, J. (1992). *Before social anthropology: Essays on the history of British anthropology.* Philadelphia, PA: Harwood Academic.
Whittle, P. (2000). W. H. R. Rivers and the early history of psychology at Cambridge. In A. Saito (Ed.), *Bartlett, culture and cognition* (pp. 21–35). Hove, UK: Psychology Press.

Rivet, Paul

Paul Rivet (1876–1958), army doctor and French ethnologist, a key figure in international Americanism, a militant antifascist and antiracist, a socialist politician, and founder and director of the Paris Musée de l'Homme (Museum of Mankind) in 1937, was also among the founding fathers of French anthropology in the 1920s and 1930s.

Rivet was born in May, 1876, in the little village of Wasigny in northern France, as the second of six children in a modest Catholic family. He became an army doctor in 1897. Contrary to the General Staff and many of his comrades, he took up the cause of Captain Dreyfus as he did not share in their anti-Semitism. He also broke away from the family's Catholicism, not concealing his atheism and, even at times, anti-clericalism.

As a physician and a naturalist, he took part in the second French geodesic mission to Ecuador (1901–1906), where he carried out many archaeological excavations, took hundreds of anthropometric measurements, collected the vocabularies of indigenous languages as well as many objects, did some ethnographic fieldwork in the strict sense of the term, and above all did extensive ethnography at and around the various geodesic mission stations. As a doctor, he treated his Indian patients free of charge, thus winning their trust. This long period spent in the Andean Cordillera, investigating the past and present of the Indian peoples, was to drastically change the course of his life, since he became passionately interested in indigenous ways and changed his profession entirely to become an anthropologist.

Once back in Paris in April 1906, Rivet joined the Department of Anthropology of the National Museum of Natural History as a volunteer worker, where he studied and promoted the outstanding collections he had brought back from South America. He was able to enter the Parisian anthropology scene on the merits of his long experience in fieldwork. It is proof of the predominance of physical anthropology at the time that it was chiefly his contributions to this discipline that argued in favor of his scientific legitimacy. However, he turned away from this rapidly, as he felt that it led only to a dead end and that renewal of the discipline would come far more from ethnography and linguistics. When he was appointed assistant chairman of anthropology at the museum in 1909, he was able to give up his career as an army doctor and dedicate himself entirely to anthropology, to which he contributed greatly by redefining and dynamizing it. As a partisan of diffusionism, he wrote many articles on the classificatory linguistics of northwestern South America, bringing order into a field that heretofore had been poorly structured. His chapter on the synthesis of Amerindian languages published in 1924 in the famous work *Les langues du monde* (*The Languages of the World*) established him as a highly reputed international authority, as proven by Franz Boas's invitation to him to join the editorial committee of the *International Journal of American Linguistics*.

In 1912, Rivet published the results of his archaeological excavations (*Ancient Ethnography of Ecuador*) and continued to take an interest in techniques, studies of material culture, and most

especially pre-Columbian metallurgy, in which he became a specialist. He thus found a way to effectively highlight the empirical knowledge and know-how of Amerindians by demonstrating their inventive genius and technical skills.

At the end of World War I, he fought for scientific internationalism, finding in Franz Boas a powerful ally. He made the *Journal de la Société des Américanistes de Paris* into a leading international journal for communicating knowledge on South American ethnography right into the 1950s.

It was on the basis of linguistic evidence, supported by ethnographic data and physical anthropology, that he returned to a question that passionately interested him: the mystery of the origins of Native Americans. Rivet proposed a controversial theory on how the Americas were peopled, which became the subject of heated debate by his colleagues in the United States (Alex Hrdlicka, among others). Rivet rejected the idea that North America had been populated only by an Asian migration across the Bering Strait. He believed that the process had been far longer and more complex, possibly including Australian and Melanesian emigrations, which could have reached South America before the Asian immigrants came to North America. In 1943, he published his views in the *Origins of American Man*, a work republished many times in South America.

In the 1920s and 1930s, Rivet played a decisive role in helping ethnology gain university and institutional status in France. Along with his friend Marcel Mauss, he was responsible for codirecting the new Ethnology Institute (1925) and was elected professor of anthropology at the National Museum of Natural History in 1928, which gave him de facto direction over the Trocadéro Ethnography Museum, which became the Museum of Mankind in 1937.

For Rivet, the 1930s were years of intense commitment to militant antiracism and antifascism. He was head of the Vigilance Committee of Anti-Fascist Intellectuals (1934) and led the initiative in creating a journal, *Races et Racisme*, that fought against the Nazi racist ideology. In 1935, he was elected the town councilor of Paris from a list of leftist parties.

As soon as the collaborationist regime of Vichy was set up in 1940, Rivet resisted Marshall Pétain and was relieved of his duties. He took part in the Resistance network at the Museum of Mankind and barely escaped capture by the Gestapo in February 1941. Rivet left for Bogotá (Colombia), where he created the Ethnology Institute. In 1942, he visited Columbia University with Claude Lévi-Strauss.

After 1945, Rivet was elected a Socialist member of parliament twice and was among the French delegation to UNESCO. He supported independence for Indochina and opposed the repression in Madagascar in 1948, and although he at first defended the French presence in Algeria, he then condemned the use of violence and recommended that negotiations be entered into.

Paul Rivet died on March 21, 1958, at the age of 81.

Christine Laurière

See also Boas, Franz; Comparative Linguistics; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Griaule, Marcel; Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris); Mauss, Marcel; Musée de l'Homme

Further Readings

Landaburu, J. (1996–1999). *Documentos sobre lenguas aborígenes de Colombia del archivo de Paul Rivet* [Documents on the aboriginal languages of Colombia from the archive of Paul Rivet] (Vols. 1–4). Bogotá, Colombia: Colciencias. (Original work published 1996)

Laurière, C. (2008). *Paul Rivet, le savant et le politique* [Paul Rivet, the intellectual and politics]. Paris, France: MNHN.

———. (2010). Anthropology and politics, the beginnings: The relations between Franz Boas and Paul Rivet (1919–1942). *Histories of Anthropology Annual, 6*, 225–252.

Rockefeller Foundation

Rockefeller Foundation funding, particularly through the Laura Spelman Rockefeller Memorial, was critical to the support of fieldwork and the growth of anthropology as a discipline during the years between the two world wars. On both sides of the Atlantic, in the Pacific and in Africa, Rockefeller initiatives built infrastructure at major institutions, primarily universities, supported the work of academic superstars, and encouraged interdisciplinary work for the betterment of society. Although tensions between the biological and cultural approaches were never entirely resolved and funding declined precipitously as a result of the Depression, Rockefeller philanthropy supported anthropology at a crucial time

during its movement from museum to university and encouraged anthropologists to extend their fieldwork sites internationally. After World War II, as a result, anthropology was well poised to respond to government-funded research directed toward public education and internationalization.

The Place of Anthropology in Rockefeller Philanthropy

Rockefeller Foundation subsidiaries held varying relationships to anthropology and its subdisciplines. The Rockefeller Foundation per se began with an emphasis on medicine and public health, later channeled bureaucratically into the Rockefeller Institute for Medical Research and the General Education Board. The Laura Spelman Rockefeller Memorial, established in 1918 by John D. Rockefeller Sr. to honor his late wife's commitment to social justice issues, despite its small size within the Rockefeller enterprises, was the primary funding source for cultural anthropology. During the 1920s, the Rockefeller Foundation professionalized its staff and solidified a commitment to research as the preferred route to "the well-being of mankind," focusing on selected elite universities and increasingly on international ventures undertaken in collaboration with local institutions and scholars.

The Spelman Memorial was headed by Beardsley Ruml, Edwin Embree, and Edmund Day. Embree developed research in human biology that was heavily "psychobiological," evolutionary, and racialist in its assumptions. Day headed the Division of Social Sciences, which was consolidated in the foundation's 1928 reorganization, absorbing the Spelman Memorial. This division aided in refocusing much of the anthropological work of the foundation in the direction of the cultural and environmental research that increasingly dominated the social sciences. Clark Wissler, an Americanist anthropologist trained by Franz Boas, mediated between the racialism and behaviorism of Yale University's Institute of Human Relations (established by Ruml in 1921) and a more ethnographic cultural relativism, although the institute also supported primate field research by Robert Yerkes. The Rockefeller-subsidized National Research Council supported ethnographic work by Margaret Mead, Melville Herkskovits, and Otto Klineberg, among others. Eugenics-motivated initiatives in Sydney, Australia, floundered over personnel issues and moved in sociocultural directions with the appointment of A. R. Radcliffe-Brown in 1925. Yale, the National Research Council, and New York's American Museum of Natural History collaborated in extensive Pacific research with the Bernice P. Bishop Museum in Honolulu.

Ruml's Spelman Memorial supported interdisciplinary social sciences centers at the University of Chicago (subsidizing the appointment of Edward Sapir in 1925), Columbia University, and Yale. Block grants and liberal local interpretation of relevance allowed a wide range of research to be encompassed under the Rockefeller mandate. At Chicago, Fay Cooper Cole's archaeological work led to the establishment of a cultural and linguistic field school in Santa Fe. The Laboratory of Anthropology provided ethnographic training for a generation of anthropology students from Chicago and other major universities. The annual Hanover Conferences at Dartmouth established a think tank that brought together the superstar scholars of the interdisciplinary amalgam. Sociology and psychology were paramount, but Sapir's charisma and wide-ranging vision ensured that anthropology would mediate perspectives toward the relationship of group and individual.

Support of British anthropology leaned toward the functionalism of Bronisław Malinowski, with its potential for application to colonial administration rather than to historical or diffusionist approaches. Conceding the Pacific to Radcliffe-Brown, Malinowski turned to Africa and to functionalist studies of acculturation, channeling fieldwork funding through the International African Institute.

A proposed Division of Behavior and Personality headed by Leonard Outhwraite intended both American Indian and international research but foundered on the Rockefeller Foundation's decision to curtail support for anthropology by 1933. The height of the Depression favored more urgent social problems than the "vanishing cultures" studied by anthropologists. The anthropologists, having grown accustomed to relatively munificent Rockefeller support, were puzzled and largely retreated from interdisciplinary social science research until the postwar government-sponsored area studies gained momentum.

The Rockefeller Legacy in Anthropology

The legacy of the Rockefeller Foundation was critical to the very survival of anthropology during the

interwar years. At the turn of the 20th century, support for anthropological fieldwork was centered in museums and their collections of artifacts. Ethnological and linguistic studies were secondary in the priorities of museums and the individual philanthropists who supported them, such as Phoebe Apperson Hearst in California, Sara Stevenson in Philadelphia, and Mary Wheelwright in the Southwest. Archaeology and physical anthropology were easier for potential donors to understand because their products were visible; the Carnegie Foundation provided extensive support for these subdisciplines. Only the Rockefeller Foundation offered a systematic vision that included cultural anthropology.

In his 1992 volume of essays on the history of anthropology, George W. Stocking emphasized that anthropology has always been a small discipline with little political or social capital to appeal to philanthropy. Anthropologists found few sources for research funding, because ethnography in distant places did not seem directly relevant to the larger issues of social engineering in the behaviorist mode that dominated the political economy of the social sciences during the interwar years. The tactics of the relatively powerless, however, fit well in the interstices of Rockefeller plans for strategic research. During the brief period of Rockefeller engagement with anthropology, and despite the relatively small amount of money directed toward the discipline in these plans, only $26 million out of the $228 million distributed by 1934, anthropology claimed a central role in the social sciences through Rockefeller funding of Hanover Conferences and Chicago and Yale interdisciplinary initiatives and through support for the emergence of culture and personality as an alternative to sociobiology.

Regna Darnell

See also Columbia University; Herskovits, Melville; Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris); London School of Economics; Malinowski, Bronisław; Mead, Margaret; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Fosdick, R. (1952). *The story of the Rockefeller foundation*. London, UK: Oldhams Press.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1992). Philanthropoids and vanishing cultures: Rockefeller funding and the end of the museum era in Anglo-American anthropology. In G. W. Stocking Jr. (Ed.), *The ethnographer's magic and other essays in the history of anthropology* (pp. 178–211). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Róheim, Géza

Géza Róheim (1891–1953) was a Hungarian American anthropologist, psychoanalyst, and folklorist, who pioneered psychoanalytic anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

As the only child, Róheim grew up in the privileged milieu of a Budapest merchant family. He was profoundly influenced by the patriotism of his grandfather, who also instilled in him a love of worldwide folklore. Róheim began to acquire an almost encyclopedic knowledge of myths, legends, ethnology, and prehistory; and the insights later gained from anthropological fieldwork and clinical experience, culminating in the development of his ontogenetic theory of culture, cannot be divorced from these early foundations. It was during the years of childhood and adolescence that Róheim anchored his thinking in cross-cultural comparison and the unity of humankind.

At the age of 20, Róheim published *Dragon and Dragon Killers* (1911), a mythological study that draws on Edward Burnett Tylor, James G. Frazer, Ernest Crawley, Leo Frobenius, Arnold van Gennep, and Franz Boas. He subsequently studied philosophy, law, and linguistics at the University of Budapest and geography in Leipzig under Karl Weule and under Felix von Luschan in Berlin, where he gained his PhD in 1914. Freud's *Totem and Taboo* first appeared in 1912–1913, and it was during those years of study in Germany that Róheim became familiar with the psychoanalytic works of the Viennese-Hungarian circle, also including C. G. Jung, Karl Abraham, and Sándor Ferenczi. Their emergent theories provided the original impetus for the anthropological approach to sexual development that Róheim was to fully develop.

Back in Budapest, Róheim entered into a training analysis with Ferenczi in 1915. His marriage to Ilonka in 1918 was to be an extremely close and lifelong union, without which he appeared unable to work. In 1921, he received the annual award for applied psychoanalysis for his impromptu

presentation, "Australian Totemism," at the Hague Congress in 1920 (published in 1925) and for his study *Das Selbst* (The Self) a year later. By now an active member of the Hungarian Psychoanalytic Society, Róheim also briefly held the first chair of anthropology at the University of Budapest. He published significant articles throughout the 1920s (including "*Nach dem Tode des Urvaters*" [After the Death of the Primal Father], 1923), in which he began to cautiously revise Freud's "primal horde" theory—the phylogenetic hypothesis of the origins of the incest taboo, totemism, and exogamy presented in *Totem and Taboo*—by exploring in detail the links between ontogenesis and social evolution. His turn toward the individual as the source of cultural productions reflects his disinclination to accept the notion of a group mind necessary in Freud's reconstruction of the killing of the father by one generation of sons and the guilt-driven transformation of this act into totemism over countless later generations.

The publication in 1927 of Malinowski's *Sex and Repression in Savage Society*, which rebuts the universality of the Oedipus complex, instigated Róheim's fieldwork (1929–1931) in the island of Melanesia (Dobu) and in East Africa (Sipupu), Central Australia (Arrernte, Pitjantjatjara, Pintupi), and Arizona (Quechan Yuma). This was the first ethnographic research by a trained psychoanalyst.

After having taught again at Budapest University (1932–1938), Róheim and his wife left for the United States and settled in New York City in 1940. He lectured at the New York Psychoanalytical Institute and worked in private practice until his death in 1953.

Róheim authored 20 books and roughly 160 articles. He regarded his *Children of the Desert* (published in two volumes in 1974 and 1988) as his magnum opus. *The Riddle of the Sphinx or Human Origins* (1934), *The Origin and Function of Culture* (1943), *The Eternal Ones of the Dream. A Psychoanalytic Interpretation of Australian Myth and Ritual* (1945), and *Psychoanalysis and Anthropology: Culture, Personality and the Unconscious* (1950) are held to be his major works.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Róheim's contributions to anthropology comprise a major theory of the origin of culture; a range of ingenious insights into the psychosexual underpinnings of particular cultural institutions, which are relevant to contemporary gender theory and the anthropology of childhood; unique ethnographic material; and interdisciplinary fieldwork techniques.

On account of his comparative approach and the links between child socialization and character development, Róheim's greatest impact was on the culture and personality theory developed in the 1930s and 1940s by the American anthropologist Ruth Benedict. Yet with few exceptions, notably Margaret Mead, Edward Sapir, George Devereux, and Weston La Barre, the American anthropological community denied Róheim full recognition.

Legacy of Ethnographic Work in Central Australia

Pivotal to the development of his own theoretical position was his field research in Central Australia, conducted over 8 months in 1929. Working with Pitjantjatjara, Pintupi, Luritja, and Arrernte speakers at the Hermannsburg mission and Tempe Downs station, Róheim recorded 129 folk narratives and myths. He employed projective play techniques (dolls play), dream analysis, and in-depth interviews, in addition to participant observation of ritual, child socialization, and other aspects of everyday life. Errors of ethnographic and linguistic detail notwithstanding, much of what he had to say about the Central Australian Aboriginal lifeworld has stood the test of time and is acutely relevant: His view, expounded in *The Eternal Ones of the Dream* (1945), that myth and ritual are attempts to imbue the environment with libido offers one explanation for the widely described attachment of the Aboriginal people to their land; his explication of the indigenous, land-based mythopeia—the Dreaming—as arising from the experience of nocturnal dreaming, where a withdrawal from the environment and toward one's own body allows for the creation of a whole new world, prefigures the now acclaimed analysis of Australian Aboriginal psychoontology by Nancy Munn, *The Transformation of Subjects Into Objects in Warlpiri and Pitjantjara Myth* (1970); his psychoanalytic interpretation of initiation rites, together with his observations on adult-child relationships, presents important conceptual stimuli for current research on relational ontology; and his interpretation of Aboriginal children's sexual freedom as basic to the structuring of

social and cultural capacity is significant in light of the increased focus by the Australian government on child well-being and the renewed pressures of cultural assimilation.

Ontogenesis and Culture

Róheim articulated his ontogenetic theory of culture most concisely in *The Origin and Function of Culture*. Drawing heavily on the notion of neoteny developed by the Dutch anatomist Louis Bolk, he saw that, for the individual as much as for humanity at large, prolonged infancy and sexual retardation are the cause of early emotional conflicts in the narrow field of the family milieu. These are retained and symbolically sublimated in adulthood as cultural adaptation. This unitary principle of evolution—rather than natural or sexual selection—has led to human existence, whose cultural variation could now be explained as the outcome of specific childhood traumata.

Róheim developed a second strand of his ontogenetic theory of culture, one that pivots on the concept of "dual unity" between mother and child as the basis for social integration. Influenced by primatological observations, Róheim recognized the importance of play, where instrumental action and clinging to the mother (or her breast as part object) become transformed into imaginary games of symbolic value: Here, in what the British psychoanalyst Donald Winnicott came to call *transitional space*, lie the origins of culture—the human capacity for concept formation, the constancy of self-consciousness, and the reality principle (delayed gratification).

Ute Eickelkamp

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Culture and Personality; Freud, Sigmund; Mead, Margaret; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Balint, M. (1953). Obituary of Géza Róheim. *International Journal of Psychoanalysis, 22,* 324–27.

Dadoun, R. (1972). *Géza Róheim.* Paris, France: Payot.

Kilborne, B. (1993). Róheim and psychoanalytic anthropology in the United States. *Acta Ethnographica Hungarica, 31*(1–3), 9–15.

La Barre, W. (1967). Géza Róheim: Psychoanalysis and anthropology. In F. Alexander, S. Eisenstein, & M. Grotjahn (Eds.), *Psychoanalytic pioneers* (pp. 272–281). New York, NY: Basic Books.

Morton, J. (1993). Psychoanalysis and Australian Aboriginal anthropology. *Acta Ethnographica Hungarica, 31*(1–3), 17–29.

Robinson, P. A. (1972). *The sexual radicals: Reich, Róheim, Marcuse.* London, UK: Paladin.

Wilbur, G. B., & Muensterberger, W. (Eds.). (1951). Bibliography of Géza Róheim's writings. In *Psychoanalyis and culture: Essays in honor of Géza Róheim* (pp. 455–462). New York, NY: International University Press.

Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist

Michelle (Shelly) Zimbalist Rosaldo (1944–1981), an American anthropologist, was one of the central figures responsible for revitalizing feminist anthropology in the 1970s and early 1980s. She also made signal contributions to symbolic, linguistic, and psychological anthropology and laid the groundwork for unifying the study of gender, kinship, and politics.

Biography and Major Works

Rosaldo was born in New York City and attended Radcliffe College, earning her bachelor's degree from Harvard in history and literature. While an undergraduate, she spent a summer in Chiapas, Mexico, under the supervision of George A. Collier and Evon Z. Vogt. She conducted graduate studies in social anthropology in the Program in Social Relations at Harvard, where she and her husband, Renato, completed their PhDs. With Renato, she conducted fieldwork between 1967 and 1969 among the Ilongot of northern Luzon, in the Philippines. Her dissertation, *Context and Metaphor in Ilongot Oral Tradition*, concerned the figures of speech through which the Ilongot expressed notions of self and emotion. It exemplified her distinctive approach to emotion, one that placed the emphasis on the symbolic and discursive production of self in a social order rather than on interior states. This would later lead her to question the idea of different logics or systems of meaning separate from the relationships of rank and order that make up a particular social world.

After receiving their PhDs, the Rosaldos were appointed to the Department of Anthropology at Stanford University. It was still rare at that time for women to be hired at elite universities. Ben Paul, the then department chair, had been able to secure a

full-time position and split it between Jane F. Collier and Shelly. Jane and George Collier occupied 1½ slots and the Rosaldos, the other 1½. The Rosaldos continued to sit on a 75% position each for several years. At Stanford, Shelly began her inquiry into the apparently universal devaluation of women relative to men. With Jane F. Collier and others, she developed a theory of gender based on social constructions of prestige that could provide a cross-cultural account of women's inequality without recourse to biological determinism. They also rejected the concept of subordination since even where women were powerful and not subordinate to men, men's activities were still more highly valued.

At Stanford, Rosaldo organized and cochaired the university's first Committee on Feminist Studies in 1980–1981 and helped develop curricula and programming for the Center for Research on Women. She participated actively in two Faculty Seminars, one on interpretative approaches in social inquiry and the other on feminist studies. She received a residential fellowship at the Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton University in 1975–1976 and at Stanford's Center for Advanced Studies in the Behavioral Sciences in 1979–1980.

Rosaldo was active in campus politics, working to draft a University Statement on Academic Freedom in the aftermath of the firing of the tenured English professor H. Bruce Franklin, a Melville scholar who led a group of students to occupy the Stanford computer center to protest the U.S. invasion of Laos in 1972. Rosaldo became a strong voice for ethical investment policies, academic freedom, and affirmative action. She was elected by her peers to serve on Stanford's Academic Senate. She was also known as an excellent teacher, and in 1979, she received the Dinkelspiel Award in recognition of her service to undergraduates.

She returned to the Philippines in 1974 and again in 1981 on a Fulbright with the University of the Philippines at Baguio, where she was beginning a project with Renato among the Ifugao. While walking along a path with two Ifugao, she slipped and fell to her death 65 feet down a ravine and into a river. In addition to Renato, she was survived by her two sons, Samuel Mario and Manuel Zimbalist Rosaldo. Members of her immediate cohort of colleagues, and many anthropologists of her generation, experienced the loss acutely. She was widely regarded across the field of anthropology as one of its leading lights. Anthropologists from subdisciplines that would profoundly diverge in the 1980s attributed to her some of their best insights and dedicated their work to her.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Rosaldo's contributions span feminist and gender studies, symbolic anthropology, the anthropology of emotions, and cognitive and linguistic theories of language use.

Women in Culture and Society

Rosaldo's landmark collection, *Woman, Culture and Society*, was coedited with Louise Lamphere and gathered together essays by 16 women social scientists (mainly anthropologists) to examine the devaluation of women to men cross-culturally. In assuming universal sexual asymmetry, Rosaldo explicitly challenged evolutionary and certain more vulgar Marxist approaches that searched for the origins of gender inequality rather than trying to understand it in light of ongoing social relations. She called attention to what she termed the public and domestic spheres, the former encompassing and limiting the latter. The public/domestic dichotomy was a heuristic device to understand how child-rearing and "home" tasks limited women's participation in other affairs and how they subsequently came to be symbolically and socially devalued. Rosaldo speculated on the broader social and political consequences were men to assume a larger role in child rearing. Other contributions in the book focused on the variability among women's positions within and across societies, opening up the ethnography of women. Later, Rosaldo would recognize that the public/domestic dichotomy was a product of class-based, capitalist societies and not a neutral analytical tool. With Collier, Rosaldo expanded her work by comparing models of gender and kinship in various "simple" societies—those characterized by other anthropologists in terms of bride wealth and bride service. The focus was on socially created systems of inequality and prestige. Collier continued this work in her volume *Marriage and Inequality in Classless Societies* (1988); and Collier and Sylvia J. Yanagisako, also at Stanford, carried on the analysis in *Gender and Kinship: Essays Toward a Unified Analysis* (1989). Second-wave feminist scholars in the 1970s discovered the field of anthropology, hoping to find there evidence of women in other cultures

who were valued as men's equals or betters. Rosaldo was critical of this quest. For Rosaldo, the ethnographic record could not sustain such an assertion, and the demand for anthropology to contribute to feminism in that way was born more of a quest for origins than a response to actually existing, and varied, social arrangements in which women and men find and make themselves.

Emotions and Social Life

Rosaldo's book *Knowledge and Passion: Ilongot Notions of Self and Social Life* (1981) is a rich ethnographic account of the way the Ilongot talk about emotions. Headhunting was practiced by men during her first visit in 1967. It continued even after the state's attempt through martial law to abolish it in 1972. It remained a significant part of the men's narration of self. Rosaldo redescribed headhunting not as the acquisition of the vanquished's soul substance or energy but rather as the lifting of a weight from the headhunter's heart. Delving into Ilongot metaphors and categories associated with headhunting, hearts and passion, and knowledge and health, Rosaldo argued that the Ilongots did not make a utilitarian calculation that taking a head would convey to the hunter the energy of the dead, and that the Ilongots did not take home the severed heads. Rather, headhunting helped organize and explain a social world where people felt weighted down with envy at others' accomplishments and needed a way for energy to be released and renewed so that they could achieve more productive ends. Her account was thoroughly social. She argued that earlier accounts of headhunting suffered from the anthropologist's desire to locate a motive—an interior state—which presumed a model of self foreign to the Ilongots' repertoire of personhood and society. Rosaldo invoked Wittgenstein on the need to seek out the "tone" of discourse and the "forms of life" rather than local logics. The book was exemplary of a new kind of interpretive ethnography and was influential in psychological and linguistic anthropology.

The Things We Do With Words

Rosaldo's work on language took Western theories of linguistic action as the ethnography of Western societies and social preoccupations, not descriptions of universal truths. Rosaldo set Ilongot notions of language alongside the speech act theory of J. L. Austin and J. Searle. Developed while she was at the Center for Advanced Study with Michael Silverstein, and after reading Derrida and Grice, this work linked language use to social rank and forcefully argued that relations, not intentions, should come first in the analysis of language. Rosaldo argued that promises and performatives, Austin and Searle's modal speech acts, presume an interior, autonomous self to the neglect of the social relations in which such selves are made. Notions of sincerity central to the felicity of such speech acts fall away when speakers like the Ilongots issue directives not about interior states or actor-based intentions but rather the affirmation and maintenance of ongoing social life.

Rosaldo's Legacy

Michelle Zimbalist Rosaldo's legacy remains her contributions to feminist anthropology and the effort to account for universal sexual asymmetry without biological reductionism. She posed a profound reformulation of anthropological relativism and reflexivity, which, despite their attempt at critical purchase, still reproduced contemporary Western assumptions about human personhood. Her emphasis on the relational and thoroughly social aspects of human existence and her insistence on humans as social persons first and individuals second—if at all—remain a profound challenge to anthropology.

Bill Maurer

See also Feminist Anthropology; Gender and Anthropology; Lamphere, Louise; Rosaldo, Renato

Further Readings

Lamphere, L., & Rosaldo, M. Z. (Eds.). (1974). *Woman, culture and society.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Lugo, A., & Maurer, B. (Eds.). (2000). *Gender matters: Re-reading Michelle Z. Rosaldo.* Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.

Rosaldo, M. Z. (1980). *Knowledge and passion: Ilongot notions of self and social life.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1980). The use and abuse of anthropology: Reflections on feminism and cross-cultural understanding. *Signs, 5*(3), 389–417.

———. (1982). The things we do with words: Ilongot speech acts and speech act theory in philosophy. *Language in Society, 11*(2), 203–237.
———. (1984). Toward an anthropology of self and feeling. In R. A. Shweder & R. A. Levine (Eds.), *Culture theory: Essays on mind, self and emotion* (pp. 137–157). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Rosaldo, Renato

Trained as a symbolic and structuralist anthropologist in Asian and Latin American cultures, Renato I. Rosaldo Jr. moved beyond disciplinary boundaries to become one of the most notable anthropologists, and the most distinguished Chicano anthropologist, of the 20th century. His work helped decolonize and transform sociocultural anthropology, particularly the ways in which fieldwork, ethnography, culture, and social analysis are conceptualized in the contexts of the humanistic and social sciences as well as higher education more broadly.

Early Life and Fieldwork

Rosaldo was born in 1941 in Champaign, Illinois. His father, a university student from Mexico, immigrated to Chicago in 1932 and eventually went to the University of Illinois, Urbana-Champaign, where he met and married Rosaldo's mother, who was from Illinois. His father became a professor of Spanish at the University of Wisconsin at Madison in 1945, and Rosaldo lived there until he was 13 years old, when his father obtained a position at the University of Arizona. He started comprehending more about his own Mexican family and heritage, the nature of Mexican communities, and the presence of racial-ethnic and class differences when his family moved to Arizona and he started spending summers in Guadalajara, Mexico. Although he did not live in a Mexican barrio, his public high school served the entire city, and he made friends with other working-class Chicanos, including *pachucos*, or young Mexican men with distinctive cultural and linguistic practices, and he belonged to a *palomilla*, or ganglike group of mostly working-class boys.

Immediately after graduating from high school, in 1959, he enrolled in Harvard, where he remained until he earned a PhD in 1971. From about the mid-1950s to mid-1960s, Rosaldo was the only Mexican American student at Harvard. He, along with other public school students, mostly African Americans, had received grants to attend the elite university. Because this segregated group of students was required to clean the dorms in exchange for scholarships, Rosaldo and some of the other students developed a stronger consciousness regarding their position in society. Rosaldo has said that because Harvard offered very few courses in Latin American studies, he obtained an AB in Spanish history and literature (1963).

Following his mother's suggestion, Rosaldo took a course in anthropology and enjoyed it so much that he began conducting summer fieldwork in Ecuador and Peru (1961–1962) as an undergraduate. As a graduate student, Rosaldo studied with Evon Vogt, David Maybury-Lewis, Cora DuBois, and the teaching assistant Laura Nader, among others, and met many students who would become notable anthropologists, including his wife, Michelle Zimbalist Rosaldo (1944–1981, m. 1966). He and Michelle conducted research with the Harvard Chiapas Project in Mexico (1965–1966), and he produced his first article when he was still a graduate student—"Metaphors of Hierarchy in a Mayan Ritual," published in *American Anthropologist* (1968). Rosaldo and his wife carried out joint fieldwork in northern Luzon, Philippines, in 1967–1969, 1974, and 1981.

Ilongot Headhunting

Rosaldo was introduced to the works of Clifford Geertz shortly before he took his doctoral exams. Soon after Renato Rosaldo and his wife were hired by Stanford University's anthropology department (1970–2003), they, along with several other faculty, invited Geertz to their campus. Geertz in turn invited the Rosaldos to the Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, New Jersey (1975–1976), where they became lifelong friends and colleagues. At the institute, Rosaldo developed an interest in critical social history, resulting in a groundbreaking and award-winning historical ethnography, *Ilongot Headhunting, 1883–1974: A Study in Society and History* (1980). Also influenced by postcolonial, racial-ethnic, and feminist movements, he chronicled the history of a tribal culture in terms of spatial analysis, situated local practices within global events, and challenged the presumed dichotomy

between social structures and human agency. In *Ilongot Headhunting*, Rosaldo did not seriously consider the Ilongots' assertions that one of the reasons they headhunted was to rid themselves of their grief and rage. However, in 1981, when Renato lost his beloved wife and partner from a tragic hiking accident in the Philippines, and was left to be a single father for his two young children, he became consumed by his own grief and rage. With this change in his subjectivity and positionality, he came to reconsider the Ilongot assertions and better understood how the power and force of emotions could lead them to kill others and throw away their heads as a way to rid themselves of their own rage. Rosaldo first published an essay on this topic in 1984, but he never posited that rage is the only reason Ilongots headhunt, or that it is a universal explanation for headhunting, which, he noted, can also be part of a coming-of-age ritual that deals with personal turmoil and helps create social order or a way to obtain power. Nevertheless, reconsidering emotions and how they affect subjectivity was a key shift that opened doors for others to reevaluate objectivity.

Postcolonialism, Postmodernism, and Ethnic/Chicano Studies at the Crossroads of Anthropology

By the 1980s, Rosaldo was increasingly embracing his interest in Chicana/Chicano and Latin American studies. He coedited *The Inca and Aztec States, 1400–1800: Anthropology and History* in 1982; and in 1985, he produced an article, "Chicano Studies, 1970–1984," for the *Annual Review of Anthropology*. He also served as director of the Center for Chicano Research at Stanford from 1985 to 1990 and began to write about racial-ethnic relations in Asia, Latin America, and the United States, including a reassessment of the concept of assimilation.

By the mid-1980s, Rosaldo had married the literary critic and fellow Stanford professor Mary Louise Pratt, and they both became involved in a movement, led by women and ethnic minority students and faculty, to incorporate non-Western and nonmale texts and perspectives into scholarly and literary canons, especially in Stanford's core course on Western civilization. As well-known leaders of the movement to transform the university and its curriculum, they became embroiled in both campus and national controversies, sometimes dubbed "the culture wars." The couple also became contributors to one of the most legendary and controversial books in anthropology, *Writing Culture: The Poetics and Politics of Ethnography* (1986). Associated with postmodernism, this group of scholars argued that postcolonial anthropology must critically analyze the relationships of field-workers to the people they studied, focusing in particular on writing as a form of representation and on the production of knowledge.

Continuing his activist scholarship and disciplinary border crossing, Rosaldo was always the person to couple critical analysis with solutions. His 1994 article "Whose Cultural Studies" recognized how powerful, mainstream academics were institutionalizing new venues for cultural studies scholarship and programs. Recognizing that these new programs were effectively displacing older, traditional anthropologists, as well as displacing and ignoring ethnic scholars and ethnic studies programs, Rosaldo suggested ways to incorporate all three groups. By this time, he was also publishing more work in Spanish as well as exploring the role of creativity and playfulness, both in society and as a form of ethnographic analysis, ultimately coediting a volume, *Creativity/Anthropology*, with Smadar Lavie and Kirin Nirayan (1993).

Culture and Truth

Rosaldo reconceptualized the major tenets of anthropology and other social sciences in his groundbreaking book *Culture and Truth: The Remaking of Social Analysis* (1989). As a postcolonial Chicano scholar, he eschewed a purely academic press and writing style, publishing instead with Beacon Press in an effort to reach a broader audience. Major concepts of the book include his critique of positivism, especially the idea that the best—or only—way to do social science was to be rational and detached. His satirical portrait of "the lone Ethnographer" instead posited that an individual's positionality (location within a social structure), subjectivity, emotions, and experiences provide equally valid, and sometimes more appropriate, ways of understanding social and cultural processes.

Culture and Truth also theorizes the concept of culture and how it is analyzed. Following Geertz, Rosaldo defines culture broadly as the forms through which people make sense of their lives, and

he further suggests that anthropologists examine not just the patterns and consistencies of culture but also its fluidity, ambiguities, conflicts, and changes. Drawing from Gloria Anzaldúa's revolutionary book *Borderlands/La Frontera: The New Mestiza* (1987), he suggests that cultural borderlands are constructed via historical and political processes and are characterized by differentiation at both internal and external levels. Alternatives to what he calls anthropology's period of classic norms (1921–1971) include blurring the boundaries between social science and the humanities, dialogic interaction with the people we study, attention to the force of emotion, and narrative forms of writing. Understanding culture as perpetually dynamic, he advocates using a case history method to conduct processual analysis, moving away from a focus on social norms and structures to include ambiguous, spontaneous, improvised, and disordered cultural processes. In addition to Anzaldúa, his model is influenced by the work of scholars such as Clifford Geertz, Victor Turner, Sherry Ortner, and Pierre Bourdieu, but he focuses less on mechanisms of control and more on the interplay between culture, structure, agency, and power, suggesting that scholars such as E. P. Thompson and Raymond Williams offer theoretical concepts to assist with processual analysis. Although this book did not receive any awards when it was first published, it was reissued with a new foreword in 1993, the same year when Rosaldo received a John Simon Guggenheim Fellowship, and was widely honored on its 20th anniversary.

Cultural Citizenship Theory and Praxis

Merging new understandings of subjectivity with the traditions of the Chicana/Chicano Movement, Rosaldo strove to develop collaborative dialogic relationships with both scholars and research participants, whom he conceptualized as thinking, strategizing subjects who had agency. Rosaldo was director of Stanford's Center for Chicano Research for almost 2 decades (1985–1990). During this time, he helped establish a multicentered Latino Cultural Studies Working Group that included Chicana/Chicano and Latina/Latino Studies Centers at several universities. The group developed a project on cultural citizenship, or the idea that legal citizenship in and of itself does not create subjects who are fully enfranchised and incorporated into civil society; instead, they evaluated a community's sense of membership and belonging within a society, as well as its ability to set its own agenda and have a different yet equally public presence and voice. Rosaldo contributed to a volume on *Latino Cultural Citizenship: Claiming Identity, Space, and Rights* (1997) and edited a volume titled *Cultural Citizenship in Island Southeast Asia* (2003), which were cited by scholars and activists in anthropology and many other fields.

In the vanguard of attempts to transform academic institutions and his own discipline, Rosaldo's praxis frequently led to confrontations, and Stanford's Department of Anthropology exemplified this discord. Often posited as a postmodern-versus-positivist battle, faculty at Stanford went through periods of great conflict during the mid-1980s and 1990s. Rosaldo assumed the position of department chair from 1994 until 1996, when he suffered a stroke in his office. Partially paralyzed on his right side after the stroke, he increasingly devoted attention to writing poetry and became an award-winning poet, winning, among others, the 2004 American Book Award for his bilingual book of poetry, *Prayer to Spider Woman/Rezo a la mujer araña* (2003). Merging his poetic and ethnographic voices, he refers to himself as an *anthropoeta*, or someone whose writing bridges the more sensual, evocative, emotional, and experiential world of poetry with the ethnographic and academic world of anthropology. In 2003, Rosaldo and Pratt left Stanford and took positions at New York University, where they continue to mentor students and collaborate in both their personal and academic lives. He became the inaugural director of Latino Studies, as well as the Lucie Stern Professor in the Social Sciences and professor of anthropology in the Department of Social and Cultural Analysis.

Ana M. Juárez

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Critical Theory; Geertz, Clifford; Humanistic Anthropology; Postcolonial Theory; Postmodernism; Subjectivity

Further Readings

Anzaldúa, G. (1987). *Borderlands/La frontera: The new Mestiza.* San Francisco, CA: Aunt Lute Press.

Lugo, A. (2012). Introduction: Renato Rosaldo's border travels. *Aztlán: A Journal of Chicano Studies, 37*(1), 119–143.

Montezemolo, F. (2003). Conversando con Renato Rosaldo [Talking with Renato Rosaldo]. *Revista de Antropología Social, 12,* 321–345.

Rosaldo, R. (1993). *Culture and truth: The remaking of social analysis.* Boston, MA: Beacon.

———. (2003). *Prayer to spider woman/Rezo a la mujer araña.* Saltillo, Mexico: Instituto Coahuilense de Cultura.

Rouch, Jean

The work of Jean Rouch (1917–2004), a French anthropologist, Africanist, and filmmaker, had a monumental impact on 20th-century anthropology and documentary filmmaking. At the time of his death, Rouch, whose work has earned him great international distinction, had produced more than 120 films.

On special occasions, such as the death of a notable person, the elders of the Songhay people of Niger and Mali like to recite the following proverb: "The blind mongoose never strays far from its home." Like the blind mongoose, Jean Rouch never strayed far from his homes: France and Niger. When he was well into his 80s, Rouch still traveled to Niger at least once a year. During his annual trip in 2004, Jean Rouch died in a tragic car accident. Although he had become a cultural icon in his native France, his wife decided that he should be buried in Niger, the site of most of his works in ethnography and film. His grave site is in the Catholic cemetery of Niamey, Niger's capital city.

When I traveled to Niamey in 2009, I went to the Catholic cemetery to find Jean Rouch's grave. The cemetery is a dry and dusty expanse of sand, concrete, and marble, just off the road to Kollo near Niamey's Terminus neighborhood. Most of the graves are desolate mounds of earth marked with wooden crosses in various states of decay. Rouch's grave, which had been dug in an isolated section of the cemetery, is covered with white marble squares and features a marble tombstone that reads, "Jean Rouch May 31, 1917–February 18, 2004"—a modest space that marks the passing of a great scholar and filmmaker.

My visit was on the fifth anniversary of Rouch's death. In the years since his passing, Jean Rouch's persona has reached mythic proportions in Niger. Niamey's French cultural center is named after him. In the cultural center's library, there is a collection of books by and about Rouch. A media center is being developed. In addition, *Le Caravan Jean Rouch*, sponsored by the cultural center, has taken Rouch's films to the isolated corners of the Nigerian countryside, where they were shot, in some cases, more than 60 years ago. Some of the villagers are the grandchildren of the people who appeared in those films.

During my trip to Niger, everyone talked about Jean Rouch in reverential tones, as if he, as a respected ancestor, was listening to all the talk about his life and work, as if he were making judgments about us down here on earth.

"Did you know him?" people would ask me in a whisper.

Life and Work

In 1917, Jean Rouch was born into a family of scientists and artists, a combination of perspectives that would give his work in ethnographic film its unique texture. During the 1930s, Rouch's maternal relatives—the artists—introduced him to the vibrant works and lives of the surrealists. Meanwhile, his father, a climatologist who sailed on exploratory voyages to Antarctica, encouraged his son to pursue the sciences. Rouch created a profound marriage of the scientific and artistic perspectives when he learned to build bridges as works of art at the famous French engineering school École Nationale des Ontes et Chaussees. In 1941, he was sent to the Colony of Niger to build roads and bridges. During one road project, lightning struck and killed a worker, and all work stopped. The workers were afraid of Dongo's (the Songhay spirit of thunder) retribution. Before work could start up again, the workers would have to make an offering to Dongo. In this way, Rouch saw his first spirit possession ceremony. The ceremony transformed him, thrusting the young engineer into the creative chaos of spirit possession, Songhay religion, and a life between Niger and France, between science and art, and between ethnography and film.

In 1944, Rouch, who had joined the Corps of Engineers of the Free French Army, returned to France. After the war, he began his formal anthropological study under the sponsorship of the famed French ethnographer Marcel Griuale. In 1946–1947, Rouch and two friends decided to journey, in catamarans and dugouts, the entire length of the Niger River. During this journey, Rouch brought a camera

to film the daily and ritual lives of the diverse peoples who lived along the banks of the majestic Niger. During one of the shoots, Rouch broke his tripod and had to shoot sequences with a hand-held camera—the birth of Rouch's documentary technique.

In 1947, Rouch became a researcher at France's National Research Center and began to conduct his doctoral research in anthropology among the Songhay people of west Niger and northeastern Mali. This period of research resulted in Rouch's doctoral dissertation, later published as two volumes, *Les Songhay* (The Songhay, 1954) and *Contribution a l'Histoire des Songhay* (Contribution to a History of the Songhay, 1953). Meanwhile, he began to produce some of his first documentary films: *Au pays des mages noirs* (In the Country of Wise Black Men, 1947), *Initiation a la danse de possedes* (Initiation to Possession Dance, 1949), *Les magiciens de Wanzerbe* (The Magicians of Wanzerbe, 1949), *Circoncision* (Cirumcision, 1949), and *Bataille sur le grande flueve* (Battle on the Great River, 1951). Each of these films documented the ritual life of the Songhay people (spirit possession ceremonies, magic rites, circumcision ceremonies, and the practice of hippopotamus hunting on the Niger River).

These early films are examples of the documentary realism of early ethnographic filmmaking. They attempt to document in a filmic language akin to scientific style the ritual and religious life of the Songhay of Niger and Mali. They exhibit none of the poetic flair of Rouch's later films, which, when they were first produced in the middle to late 1950s, established his international reputation in the worlds of both anthropology and film.

In 1954, Rouch began his long-term research on the migrations of the Sahelian peoples (the Songhay and Hausa from Niger, Bamana and Sonninke from Mali, and Mossi and Gurmantche from Burkina Faso) to the West African coast. His studies there resulted in one important book, *Migrations au Ghana* (Migrations to Ghana), and some of his most important films—the uniquely disturbing *Les maîtres fous* (The Crazy Masters, 1955), the incomparable *Moi, un noir* (Me, a Black Man, 1958), and the disquieting *La pyramide humaine* (The Human Pyramid, 1959).

These films were about the greatest issues of Rouch's time—war, colonialism, and racism. Rouch's confrontations with these issues in West Africa inspired him to seek new ways to understand and represent the complex forms of his social world. No matter what challenge he faced, Rouch was unafraid to take risks, to try something new, or to bear the consequences of his choices. When he found himself, as was often the case, at intellectual, artistic, or cultural crossroads, Rouch would often choose the less traveled path and say, "*Pourquoi pas?*" Why not try something different? This playfully deep creativity met the challenges of the complex social forms he attempted to describe and understand.

Rouch referred to these films produced in the 1950s as examples of "ethnofiction." Using data based on years of careful and rigorous ethnographic fieldwork, Rouch used film to tell stories that stretched the imagination, stories that compelled the viewer to think deeply about the existential issues—colonialism, war, and racism—that shaped an era of European-African political and social relations. The documentary texture of Rouch's ethnofiction films helped shape the documentary contours of the famous films of the French New Wave (François Truffaut's *The 400 Blows* and Jean-Luc Godard's *Breathless*, among others).

In 1960, Jean Rouch published his magisterial anthropological work *La religion et la magie Songhay* (Songhay Religion and Magic), a masterwork of ethnographic documentation, featuring a limited amount of authorial interpretation. Such a tack was the hallmark of Marcel Griaule's approach to ethnographic description. Following the publication of *La religion*, Rouch focused almost all his attention on creative approaches to filming social life. He did publish a few influential essays in the 1970s, however, notably "The Camera and the Man" (1974) and "On the Vicissitudes of the Self: The Possessed Dancer, the Magicians, the Sorcerer, the Filmmaker and the Ethnographer" (1971).

Following the production of his ethnofiction films, Rouch's work developed profound artistic and imaginative texture. Working always with his Nigerian partners, Damoure Zika, Lam Ibrahim Dia, and Tallou Mouzourane, Rouch found new and creative cinematic ways to represent an increasingly complex social reality. In 1960, using sound-synchronous filming, Rouch shot and produced *Chronique d'un été* (Chronicle of a Summer, 1960), a documentary film about the state of social life in France around 1960. *Chronique* was the first example of what Rouch called *cinéma vérité*.

Meanwhile, Rouch continued active collaboration with his Nigerian counterparts. This collaboration, which involved all aspects of shooting and production, resulted in the production of noteworthy films, *The Lion Hunters* (1965), *Jaguar* (1967), *Petit à Petit* (Little by Little, 1970), and *Les tambours d'avant: Tourou et bitti* (The Drums of the Past: Tourou and Bitti, 1971). Working with the same team as well as with his senior colleague Germaine Dieterlen, a specialist on the Dogon people of Mali, Rouch filmed the entire 7-year sequence of the *Sigui* ceremonies. With deep symbolism and pageantry, these seven works (1967–1974) document with great lyricism the origin story of the Dogon people, who developed one of the most complex and poetic cosmologies known in the anthropological record.

Jean Rouch used the camera to participate fully in the lives of the people he filmed, as well as to provoke them and, eventually, his audiences into imagining new dimensions of sociocultural experience. Many of his films of the 1960s cut to the flesh and blood of European colonialism, compelling us to reflect on our latent racism, our repressed sexuality, and the taken-for-granted assumptions of our intellectual heritage. They also highlight the significance of substantive collaboration, a research tactic that Rouch called "*anthropologie partagée*," in the construction of scholarly knowledge. Through these provocative films, Jean Rouch unveiled how relations of power shape our dreams, thoughts, and actions.

Rouch's example suggests that anthropologists and other scholars might need to adopt the medium of film/video to represent complex social forms faithfully. Rouch, after all, used film to evoke critically the painful presence of colonialism and racism. Yet the new media were insufficient means to reach this end. They certainly provided a wealth of representational possibilities, but for Rouch, they were no quick fix to the problem of representing complex social forms. If the new media were not the solution to the problem of representing complex social forms, what was one to do?

During a televised interview in 1980, Robert Gardner, the highly regarded and highly provocative documentary filmmaker, posed this question to Jean Rouch: "Jean Rouch, are you an anthropologist, or are you a filmmaker?" To which Rouch replied, "Well, anthropologists think I'm a filmmaker, and filmmakers think I am an anthropologist." He smiled at Gardner and said nothing further.

For Rouch, that boundary-defining question was beside the point. Just as the Songhay sorcerer lives in a space between the village and the bush, between the world of social life and the world of the spirits, so did Rouch live between France and West Africa, between ethnography and fiction, and between anthropology and film—a liminal figure par excellence. Rouch understood the creative power of the "between."

In his later years, Jean Rouch extended himself to a new generation of filmmakers and anthropologists. He tired quickly of aimless theorization. He always urged young filmmakers and anthropologists to tell good stories that evoke the issues of the day. The reason why Jean Rouch's work lives on is that in his major films, a master storyteller spins an unforgettable tale that reminds us viscerally what it means to live your life in ever-changing social worlds. As such, Rouch's body of more than 120 films is a monumental contribution of our comprehension of the human condition.

Rouch's complete bibliography and filmography can be accessed at the Comité de Film Ethnographique website: http://comitedufilmethnographique.com.

Paul Stoller

See also Griaule, Marcel

Further Readings

Eaton, M. (1979). *Anthropo-reality-cinema: The films of Jean Rouch*. London, UK: British Film Institute.

Henley, P. (2009). *Adventures of the real: Jean Rouch and craft of ethnographic cinema*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Rouch, J., & Feld, S. (2003). *Cine-ethnography*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Stoller, P. (1993). *The cinematic Griot*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Rousseau, Jean-Jacques

Jean-Jacques Rousseau (1712–1778), whom Claude Lévi-Strauss considered the most anthropological of the philosophes, was one of the most important thinkers of the French Enlightenment. Born in Geneva, he left the city at the age of 16, maintaining

an ambivalent relationship with his birthplace throughout his life. Initially settling in Savoy in the French Alps, he eventually pursued his career in Paris as a musician and critic, writing articles on music for the *Encyclopédie* edited by Denis Diderot as well as composing an opera, *Le Devin de Village* (The Village Diviner), which was well received by King Louis XV. Turning from music to philosophy, he wrote passionately and prolifically for the rest of his life, condemning the political and economic injustices of a society that promoted inequality and, in the emotional, artistic, and spiritual realms, shamelessly promulgated artificiality rather than nature. Rousseau's polemics eventually led him to quarrel with virtually all the other leading philosophes of his generation, most notably Voltaire, Diderot, and David Hume. Nonetheless, he maintained a loyal following. After his death, many of his ideas found an echo in the French Revolution. His legacy remains controversial. Admirers see him as an early champion of freedom and equality, while his detractors accuse him of naively romanticizing the "noble savage" while justifying the excesses of revolutionary ideology.

The Discourses and the Origin of Languages

Rousseau's philosophical career was launched when he responded to a call by the Academy of Dijon in 1750 to write an essay about whether the reestablishment of the sciences and arts had contributed to the amelioration of morals. His prize-winning essay, published the following year, provocatively argued to the contrary that progress in the sciences and arts was accompanied by moral decay. He did not object to learning and culture per se but rather to the uses to which they were normally put. Most often, the sciences and arts served to implement, justify, or embellish the domination of the majority by the undeserving few. Responding to critics who alleged that savages might be vicious, Rousseau concurred but stipulated that ignorance was compatible with both good and evil but no society had yet combined learning and morality. Savagery was not necessarily noble, but civilization was intrinsically corrupt.

Four years later, in response to another challenge by the Academy of Dijon, he developed these ideas in far more detail in his *Discourse on Inequality*, one of his most important works. Rousseau begins by constructing an avowedly conjectural model of natural—which is to say radically asocial—humanity. Such humans live an entirely solitary existence, children leaving their mothers as soon as they are able to fend for themselves. Motivated solely by appetites for food and occasionally sex and by a fear of pain and hunger, they are not aggressive but on the contrary avoid contact with others, though, like animals, they feel a natural empathy for others in pain. Lacking language, they cannot transmit anything they might learn to the next generation. They are neither good nor evil, but lack any moral concepts whatsoever.

Rousseau's model was clearly intended as a rebuttal of the social contract theories of Hobbes and Locke. The rampant acquisitive desires that, for Hobbes, led to a state of nature characterized by the war of every man against every man are, Rousseau suggested, intrinsically social rather than natural. Of Locke's "natural" rights to life, liberty and property, Rousseau only acknowledged natural liberty. Rousseau's natural savages lacked the very concept of death, and consequently of life. As for property, Rousseau argued that its development in society was antithetical to natural liberty. It is unclear whether Rousseau believed that humans had ever existed in such a state of nature. His model has sometimes been construed as a sort of thought experiment, an attempt to imagine what humans would be like in the total absence of society or culture. But positing such a vision as the original state of humanity would have run afoul of religious authorities, either in France or Geneva, who insisted on the biblical account.

One way or the other, Rousseau argued that the idea of property was at the root of human inequality. Rousseau singled out the invention of metallurgy and agriculture as banes to human happiness, to the extent that they enabled the accumulation of property and the domination of the majority. He was convinced that savages were happier, and certainly more free, than his civilized contemporaries, though only at the price of ignorance if not stupidity. Yet he was also certain that there was no turning back and that the desires and habits inculcated by civilized society could not simply be shrugged off.

The *Discourse* includes a long footnote deploring the quality of descriptions generally found in the travel literature of his day. He complained that descriptions of non-Europeans were generally penned by sailors, soldiers, merchants, or missionaries—for

the most part, unqualified observers. He imagined descriptions written by philosophes, the likes of Diderot and the Comte de Montesquieu, combining careful observation with relative freedom from prejudice, and addressing critical philosophical concerns. Arguably, such a program foreshadowed the development of academic anthropology.

Rousseau had originally intended to include his ideas on the origin of language in the *Discourse on Inequality*, but the digression was so long that he decided to omit it, and it was only published posthumously as the *Essay on the Origin of Languages*. The scenario he imagined here was substantially different, with humans living in prelinguistic endogamous hordes, not unlike the 19th-century speculations of Johann Bachofen, John Ferguson McLennan, and Lewis Morgan about primal incest. Language arose when shepherds from one horde, smitten at the well with foreign shepherdesses, broke out in pure melody, the original and most expressive form of language. However, Rousseau made a further distinction between the southern lands of abundance and the harsher northern climates, where language arose in the inferior form of speech, as a plea for assistance rather than for love. More generally, the shift from melody to speech, from the expressive to the instrumental, was in Rousseau's eyes a sign of moral decline.

Later Writings

However much he deplored the moral consequences of material and intellectual progress, Rousseau was acutely aware of the impossibility of returning to any "natural" human condition. In his later work, he grappled with the question of how best to reconcile nature and society. *The Social Contract* (1762) begins with the famous outcry "Man is born free, but is everywhere in chains." Liberty and equality are the natural conditions of humanity, servitude and inequality their social predicaments. The book attempts to theorize the kind of society where humans can live freely and equally. Rousseau distinguishes between the particular wills of individuals, concerned with their specific interests, and the general will of society, focused on the common good. The general will emerges as a sort of sum total of the particular wills of an informed citizenry, with antithetical interests canceling each other out. As for many of his contemporaries, an idealized vision of the early Roman republic served as a model for such a government.

In the same year, he also published *Émile*, a long treatise on education. The book spells out a program for the moral and intellectual education of a boy from infancy to early adulthood, one that attempts to follow "natural" contours as much as possible while ultimately modeling a citizen. Both *The Social Contract* and *Émile* were rapidly condemned as subversive, not only in Paris but also in Geneva. Increasingly isolated, Rousseau grew to consider himself as the victim of a conspiracy. In his last years, he wrote *The Confessions*, which was published posthumously. The book was a remarkably novel kind of autobiography, a self-presentation in the form of a self-examination that sought to bring to light all the author's faults as well as his virtues rather than to portray him in the best possible light.

Influence

Along with Montesquieu, Rousseau was unquestionably the French Enlightenment thinker with the greatest impact on the social sciences in general and anthropology in particular.

Rousseau's work on the origin and development of social inequality set the agenda for subsequent attempts to grapple with the problem. He was certainly not the first to see the link between property and inequality, but his understanding of its technological roots, particularly through the development of agriculture and metallurgy, was echoed by Adam Smith and Adam Ferguson in Scotland. In the 19th century, Lewis Henry Morgan, Karl Marx, and Friedrich Engels were to develop this argument in far greater detail. Unlike the Scottish thinkers, Rousseau's prose was fervent if not incendiary. The central ideals of the French Revolution—liberty, equality, and fraternity—were explicitly meant to reflect Rousseau's thought. He profoundly influenced the 19th-century revolutionary thinkers, notably Marx and Engels, and through their writing various neo-Marxist currents in anthropology and other social sciences.

In a very different vein, Rousseau's attempts to theorize the essential nature of the social domain by attempting to distinguish "natural" from "social" aspects of humanity was an important influence on the thought of Émile Durkheim, who devoted a short book to *Émile*, Rousseau's treatise on education. Claude Lévi-Strauss, who was preoccupied in much of his writings with the relationship of nature to culture, was a great admirer of Rousseau. Rousseau's scenario in his *Essay on the Origin of Languages*

for the simultaneous emergence of language, music, and exogamy must certainly have appealed to, if not inspired, Lévi-Strauss. Jacques Derrida's seminal *Of Grammatology* also includes a long discussion of the same work.

Finally, Rousseau's *Confessions*, as a painfully honest attempt at a self-appraisal of his life and work, provided a blueprint for reflexive autobiography, a stark contrast to the self-promoting memoirs more typical of his era. Anthropologists who have used autobiography as a vehicle for critical reflection on their own and the discipline's practices of fieldwork and writing are following his example, even if they are not necessarily aware of their debt to Rousseau. However, his exploration of new modes of subjectivity as well as his passionate advocacy of liberty and equality and his philosophical speculations on nature, society, and culture have all in very different ways left their mark on contemporary anthropology.

Robert Launay

See also Derrida, Jacques; Durkheim, Émile; Hobbes, Thomas; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marx, Karl; Montesquieu, Comte de; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Voltaire

Further Readings

Ellingson, T. (2001). *The myth of the noble savage.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Rousseau, J-J. (1984). *A discourse on inequality* (M. Cranston, Trans.). Harmondsworth, UK: Penguin Books.

———. (1997). *The social contract and other later political writings* (V. Gourevitch, Ed. & Trans.). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1998). *Essay on the origin of languages and writings related to music* (J. T. Scott, Ed. & Trans.). Hanover, NH: University Press of New England.

Royal Anthropological Institute

The Royal Anthropological Institute (RAI) is one of the world's leading anthropological foundations. It has its roots in the early 19th century but took its characteristic modern shape in 1871, when the Anthropological Institute was formed out of the Anthropological and the Ethnological Societies of London. It was granted a Royal Charter in 1907. Though it has changed buildings repeatedly throughout its history, only obtaining a freehold as late as the 1980s, the institute's intellectual orientation and organizing principles have remained remarkably consistent. Albeit with a strong underlying emphasis on ethnography, the RAI is devoted to the study of anthropology in its broadest sense, embracing social anthropology, archaeology, biological anthropology, and any other subthemes that may become relevant, such as linguistic anthropology or material culture. This approach stands in marked contrast to the fractionization of anthropology in British universities after World War I, when social anthropology separated off markedly from both archaeology and biological anthropology.

The explanation of this readiness to retain a holistic interpretation is partly a reflection of the era when the institute was founded. The conception of anthropology at that time was both comparative and historical. The study of humankind's diversity and the study of archaeology therefore coincided in that both were traceable through a series of developing stages. The emergence of evolutionary theory provided a perfect way of unifying this diversity, as was clearly stated by Robert Marett, for example, in his characteristically robust *Anthropology*, published for the first time in 1912. This intellectual sense of unity received its expression in the institute's publications, of which the *Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute* (*JRAI*) is the most long-lived. Just about every British anthropologist of significance published at least some of their work in the *JRAI*, because of which it has become the journal of record for the discipline in the United Kingdom, a role that it partly retains even in today's much more diverse publications environment.

The RAI for much of its existence has also awarded the prestigious Huxley Medal, regarded as one of the most important accolades in an anthropologist's career. The Huxley Memorial Lecture has featured not just the most well-known names in Britain but also international thinkers of diverse background: James G. Frazer, Alfred C. Haddon, W. H. R. Rivers, Pierre Bourdieu, Marcel Mauss, Claude Lévi-Strauss, V. Gordon Childe, Ian Hodder, Clifford Geertz, Lewis Binford, Colin Renfrew, and Marshal Sahlins, among many others. It awards additionally the Rivers, Wellcome, and Lucy Mair

medals for fieldwork, medical anthropology, and applied anthropology, respectively.

Though it took shape in earlier times, further explanation of the RAI's longevity may lie in the way the institute is organized. It was and is independent. This means that it has never been caught up directly in the intellectual politics of any other institution or those of government. Additionally, there is no intellectual barrier or required qualification to join as a fellow, which means that no groups of people have become gatekeepers, and hence protective of a disciplinary line that excludes others. The council of the institute is elected—with some form of rotation enforced by statute, meaning that it changes every year—and is responsible to the fellows at the annual general meeting.

This does not mean that there have never been interest groups within the RAI. It was a sense of frustration with the dominance of the evolutionary model that led to fellows separating and forming the Association of Social Anthropologists in the period after World War II. The rise of social anthropology over the next 4 decades had an impact on those who published in the *JRAI* and who became most active as fellows. This, though, has never been enshrined in the organizational characteristics of the institution. By virtue of the changing and fluid membership of both the fellowship and the council, it is possible to regain or rejuvenate without structural upheaval a broad-based conception of the discipline, should it be perceived that one or another disciplinary line is becoming dominant. Furthermore, the loose yet long-term commitment that many fellows have to the institute over decades means that interests have a habit of coming round again, even if they have gone quiet for a while.

This wide reach and flexible organization has meant that the RAI has been able to devote working parties or committees to a number of distinct problems as they emerge; and here, its intellectual influence has often been very marked. For instance, one of the most read of all publications has been *Notes and Queries in Anthropology*, which appeared in the 19th century and ran in various editions until 1951. It outlines the way in which fieldwork should be conducted—in the form of a series of extended questions—and was printed in large numbers. Though conceived in its earlier forms through Section H of the British Association for the Advancement of Science, it gradually began to become shaped by the leading fellows of the RAI, many of whom were active in both organizations. This kind of codification has declined markedly in popularity as the more free-searching interpretation of anthropology has come to the fore, but it played a distinct part in the dense ethnographic triumphs that were part of the modern school that finally crystallized under Malinowski. Curiously, there is nothing today that is quite its equivalent, though archaeology has independently developed a codification of its methods through the Institute of Field Archaeologists.

This same urge to place anthropology on a sound methodological basis was partly the inspiration for a long initiative led by Sir John Linton Myres in the years leading up to the First World War. Myres was a classicist and historian of great energy and interested in anthropology; he was successively honorary secretary, president, and founding editor of *Man*—a popular version of the *JRAI*. In the course of his long career at the institute, Myres wished to attempt an internationally approved scientific clarification of the way in which anthropological research should be conducted. His meticulous preparations to hold an international congress that would draw in the European nations, Russia, and the United States to discuss these issues was hampered by the outbreak of war. But the initiative that he began was finally successful when it resulted in a large international congress held in London in 1934. The congress then subsequently transformed itself to become the International Union for Ethnographic and Anthropological Sciences. The International Union for Ethnographic and Anthropological Sciences remains prominent, meeting in China in 2009 and in Manchester in 2013. The story of Myres's role is still not fully told. It is worth noting, however, that he was assiduous in enquiring as to whether the proposed congress should be purely ethnographic or should also include physical anthropology, and the institute took an express decision to retain its broad base.

Before the Second World War, a further initiative was started at a time when the RAI was particularly short of funds. This was an attempt to apply the principles of fieldwork to industrial anthropology, with a view to solving problems in the workplace, sponsored in part by Israel Sieff (of the British department store chain Marks & Spencer). Though this was not as successful as the institute had initially hoped, the Lucy Mair Medal continues to recall the

importance of applied anthropology, and the institute in 2012 held a large conference at the British Museum titled "Anthropology in the World" to reinvestigate its dialogue with applied anthropology and related fields.

After the war, the institute went through a difficult period. The ending of the lease of its building in Bedford Square and the perennial financial difficulties all played a part in this. However, after a careful review, it obtained a freehold (its present premises) in Fitzroy Street, donated its library to the British Museum, and self-consciously sought to think where it might most actively make a contribution. From this introspection emerged one of its most successful projects, ethnographic film. The institute now holds a regular, biannual international film festival, and its film committee contains a host of well-known figures who are active filmmakers.

Just before this initiative was another that met with equal success at its outset: The institute formed a committee for ethnomusicology, which drew together international experts in the field in an attempt to create a critical mass that could suggest a codification for ethnomusicological research and seek its appropriate recognition more widely. The University Grants Committee of that time was persuaded, and accordingly posts were set up, notably at Belfast under the leadership of John Blacking. Ethnomusicology in the United Kingdom has subsequently rather lessened in importance in anthropology departments, though it has flourished in other spheres. The untimely demise of this guiding committee (which the RAI council in 2012 decided to reconstitute) is perhaps one of the reasons why.

The formation of a committee devoted to the place of anthropology in preuniversity education is another striking example of how devoting specific resources to a problem through the organization of expert groups can be effective. First thought of by the RAI in the 1970s, the idea was revisited in the new millennium to good effect, and after a long sequence of meetings, an Examination Board agreed to take on the subject for A level (the main U.K. school-leaving qualification). Again, as in so many RAI projects, the A-level curriculum is devoted to a broad conception of anthropology as a discipline that draws in material culture, biological anthropology, as well as social anthropology.

In sum, today the immense growth of universities, the multiplicity of departments, and the more recent emergence of alternative forums for intellectual discussion mean that the RAI has to be flexible as to which aspect of anthropology it pursues and must accept that it can only be one part of an overall matrix of anthropological thought. Any dominant role that the RAI once held, when anthropological ideas were discussed most intensively at its premises, perhaps more than anywhere else in the country, has waned. This fact means that occasionally questions have been asked as to whether the time has passed for such institutions. These doubts, if they were ever seriously held, have quickly been shown to be erroneous.

The RAI has moved from being a 19th-century to a 21st-century learned society almost unscathed. The fellowship is buoyant, and its lectures and special events are well attended. Its publications are bought by just about every large university library in the world, and to be voted to serve on the RAI's council is regarded an honor by many. Yet, more than this, it would appear that there is a desire, a need on the part of those interested in anthropology, whether possessed of a university post or not, to have a place where they can meet to talk, discuss, and present events without constraint. The institute can accordingly act swiftly and decisively. Unencumbered by bureaucracy, the RAI retains a sense of being a group of like-minded intellectuals coming together by free association. It is to this that it owes much of its effectiveness and continued popularity.

David Shankland

See also Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Haddon, Alfred C.; Leach, Edmund; Mair, Lucy; Richards, Audrey; Seligman, Charles Gabriel

Further Readings

Marett, R. (1912). *Anthropology.* London, UK: Home University Library.

Mills, D. (2007). *Difficult folk? A political history of social anthropology.* Oxford, UK: Berghahn.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1971). What's in a name? The origins of the Royal Anthropological Institute. *Man, 6*(3), 369–390.

Urry, J. (1972). "Notes and Queries on Anthropology" and the development of field methods in British anthropology, 1870–1920. *Proceedings of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, London, UK, 1972,* 45–57.

S

Sacrifice

Since the late 19th century, anthropological theories of sacrifice have shaped interdisciplinary scholarship on this ambiguous and powerfully fraught word. Symptomatic of this ambiguity, the original 1987 entry for sacrifice in the *Encyclopedia of Religion* begins with etymologies of the Latin term (*sacer*, "holy"; *facere*, "to make"), moving back and forth between its Latinate and Germanic (formal and vernacular) connotations as either a personal religious "offering" or, more generally, an action "to perform, [to] accomplish" something sacred. After explaining how the word tends to, but should not have to, imply destruction, the metaphorical identification of sacrifice with ritual slaying is elaborated in 26 headings and subheadings that catalog its world-historical traditions. The second edition (2004) contained a postscript by the historian of Aztec religion David Carrasco, noting that recent work on sacrifice deals increasingly with the "ubiquity, tenacity, and mystery of ritual violence and its creative and destructive powers"—a particularly important task for 21st-century scholarship confronting nationalist forms of discrimination and open calls for a "War on Terror."

Sacrifice has been studied in the humanities and social sciences from its origin(s) in collective religious beliefs and ritual processes to the modern governmental practice of marshaling civil society toward the goals of the state. Unquestionably, sacrifice matters. Its very language is part and parcel of modern philosophical systems—but it is also a vitally popular keyword, the way countless people talk about their ideals and collective fantasies, their personal troubles and ideological attachments.

Anthropological theory opens a distinctive mode of critical thinking about actual sacrificial practices—practices that typically enshroud the meaning of political and religious events, with often shocking indifference to persecution, suffering, and victimhood. Across this literature, sacrifice can be defined as follows: (a) the domain in which the supernatural materializes, lying at the intersection between the religious and political worlds; (b) how scholars make sense of propositional claims about systems of belief and, by extension, the projection of an imperial order; and (c) a set of practices that scholars use to reimagine today's most pressing geopolitical issues, using theological concepts reformulated by secular intellectuals in disciplines as wide-ranging as anthropology, sociology, and religious studies.

Most notably, scholars from James G. Frazer to Sigmund Freud, or from Bruce Lincoln to Claudio Lomnitz—dating from the origins of social theory forward—have viewed sacrifice as critically integral to state law and to the forms of violence underwriting it. Ritual and ethical sacrifice both demand materially separating and destroying something's presence (i.e., making something "exceptional") and then remaking one's world in the spirit of such an offering. Frazer, in *The Golden Bough* (1911–1915), famously asserted that sacrifice plays a key role in the Western logic of kingship and the powerful myth of exercising complete, worldly dominion over matters of life and death. From a Frazerian perspective, however, the power of divine kingship cuts both ways; if a ruler does not prove worthy of

his rule, he can be ritually murdered—made into an exception—from one season to the next. Taking the agencies of ruler *and* ruled into account, many 20th-century anthropologists, such as Valerio Valeri in his historical ethnography of Hawaiian sacrifice, ask how indigenous systems of sacred kingship operated at the moment of first contact with European colonists. In recent decades, heated anthropological debates, such as that between Marshall Sahlins and Gananath Obeyesekere, have turned on whether indigenous belief in divine kingship could help reconstruct historical events, such as the ritual sacrifice/murder of Captain James Cook (at the hands of native Hawaiians, who arguably had venerated him as their mythical God-king, *Lono*), or whether such ascriptions of ritual sacrifice are merely projections of Western fantasies about indigenous psychology and the exoticizing logic of colonial rule.

The study of sacrifice has been pushed in still other directions in constitutional democracies, where "the people" nominally exercise sovereign rule. As John Borneman noted in a 2002 essay, democratic elections that arrogate to citizens the cyclical power to remove their heads of state from office reflect, albeit in a peaceable way, Frazer's mytho-historical understanding of king sacrifice. In such contexts, citizens are told that whomever or whatever one happens to sacrifice, it ought to be a critically important personal *choice*, with different constituencies coming together in alliance around the core values of one's society. This sacrificial logic can be seen at work across lofty rhetoric, such as the nation's sacrifice and veneration of unknown fallen soldiers (see Benedict Anderson's *Imagined Communities*), or even in the way President George W. Bush urged citizens to go shopping to stimulate the national economy, as a response to the 9/11 terror attacks—patriotic neoliberalism in the service of strengthening his military-industrial command. Although these examples may seem incongruous, they both relate to the expectation that sacrifice is an individual ethical activity, fostering a productive sense of collective sovereignty. In other contexts, Parvis Ghassem-Fachandi shows this perverse logic to be operative in the Indian case of Hindu nationalist pogroms against Muslims, and Lomnitz likewise reveals how the Mexican state rhetoric about the financial "crisis" allows certain political constituencies to make the less powerful carry a heavier burden of economic austerity or to systematically undermine their political interests.

The promise of a choice to participate in sacrificial phenomena can be said to be democratic, but optional participation is also held out to domesticate and naturalize ritual violence—as René Girard argues in various books—as if such voluntarism were the product of the democratic will and not broader structural forces. Anthropologists such as Maurice Bloch explore what actually happens, in places such as Orokaiva, Papua New Guinea, when you are obligatorily recruited into the vital world of a community's ritual forms of reproduction, particularly when necessary change in society, such as a younger generation reaching political maturity, is rendered impossible without some kind of ritualized disturbance—that is, when one's identity shifts, in Bloch's own words, "from prey to hunter." While Frazerian theories may concern themselves with political leaders, another strain of theory of sacrifice deals more properly with the way consecration and victimhood operate structurally to inform social processes.

In their 1898 book *Sacrifice: Its Nature and Functions*, Henri Hubert and Marcel Mauss denominated the nature and function of sacrifice, a system of religious experience based on a symbolic yet destructive rite. Sacrifice, for them, was a religious act that, in the process of consecrating a victim, "modifies the condition of the moral person" who performs the act of consecration or modifies "certain objects with which he is concerned"—a broad-based definition of efficacious ritual communication, transformation, and solidarity. More than half a century later, E. E. Evans-Pritchard wrote a foreword to the first English translation of Hubert and Mauss's by then internationally classic text, introducing the prospect of sacrifice as a "fundamental rite" of social order. Most ethnographers and critics who delve into questions of sacrifice today interrogate these great anthropologists' works. Susan Mizruchi and other critics have claimed more recently that the concept of sacrifice emerged out of distinctly historical European American social scientific inquiry in the service of capitalist imperial expansion. However, doing so would isolate academic knowledge as a mere symptom of Orientalist fantasies and would ignore the democratization of claims about sacrifice and its influence on secular statehood and national belonging—problems that, as Ivan Strenski shows

in his 2002 book *Contesting Sacrifice*, are as central today as they were in the late 19th century.

Indeed, fin de siècle treatments of sacrifice such as Frazer's and Hubert and Mauss's remain surprisingly prescient today. They illuminate the ritual orders that make sense of imperial rule, the impact of scapegoating on the creation of pariah populations, or the dovetailing religious and political implications of sovereign rule. When the Italian philosopher Giorgio Agamben claims in his laudable *Homo Sacer* (The Sacred Man) monographs, for example, that any historical definition of the political lies with the power to determine who can be killed without being sacrificed, he builds directly on the way early anthropologists adapted concepts drawn from theology to understand secular problems of societal reproduction. Works of intellectual history such as Strenski's *Contesting Sacrifice: Religion, Nationalism, and Social Thought in France* (2002) demonstrate the centrality of laying claim to victimhood and collective revitalization in tumultuous periods of state history. In the past quarter-century, feminist theorists such as Nancy Jay have critiqued how sacred violence in the service of patriarchal authority was the central problem analyzed by early theoretical approaches to sacrifice, concerned as they were with paradigmatically masculine questions of kingship and victimhood, blood lineage and outsidership. Erica Weiss, Jill Robbins, Stephanie Jamison, Kathryn McClymond, and others similarly explore the hidden, nonreductivist dimensions of intellectual questions about sacrifice's phenomenology or its ritual ordering within the state—a key hermeneutical movement examining religious, ethnoracial, gendered, and generational difference. It is as if in critiquing sacred violence—including its intellectual history—contemporary theorists of sacrifice analyze the legacy of an unbroken tradition of secular inquiry going back to the late 19th century and the ever-fraught character of the modern state form.

Chris Garces

See also Anderson, Benedict; Bloch, Maurice; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Frazer, James G.; Mauss, Marcel

Further Readings

Borneman, J. (2002). Introduction: German sacrifice today. In G. Eghigian & M. P. Berg (Eds.), *Sacrifice and national belonging in twentieth-century Germany* (pp. 3–25). Arlington, TX: Texas A&M Press.

Carrasco, D. (2005). Sacrifice: Further considerations. In L. Jones (Ed.), *Encyclopedia of religion* (2nd ed., pp. 8008–8010). New York, NY: Thomson Gale.

Frazer, J. G. (1911–1915). *The golden bough: A study in magic and religion*. London, UK: Macmillan.

Hubert, H., & Mauss, M. (1964). *Sacrifice: Its nature and functions*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press. (Original work published 1898)

Strenski, I. (2002). *Contesting sacrifice: Religion, nationalism and social thought in France*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

———. (2003). *Theology and the first theory of sacrifice*. Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.

Sahlins, Marshall

Marshall Sahlins (1930–) is one of the most important anthropologists of the second half of the 20th century, an expert in Polynesian ethnology, and an advocate of culture as a central concept, first in economic anthropology (in the early part of his career) and then in historical anthropology (in the later part of his career).

Biography and Major Works

Sahlins was raised on the west side of Chicago and came of age during World War II. A lifelong sports fan and athlete, he chose to attend the University of Michigan based on the quality of its football team. There, Sahlins became a protegé of Leslie White, a maverick thinker who opposed mainstream Boasian anthropology. For Boas, anthropology was the in-depth study of particular cultures, and he spurned theories of societal evolution and generalizing approaches to social science because of their inaccuracy and connection to racism and eugenics. White, in contrast, was influenced by Lewis Henry Morgan and Herbert Spencer and argued for a generalizing, scientific study of culture. White enjoyed denouncing the religious pieties of the American Midwest as unevolved, and he was also involved in radical socialist politics. Sahlins was to inherit White's contrarianism, his skepticism about America's self-confidence, and his interest in generalizing approaches.

After Sahlins earned his BA and MA under White, he moved to New York to earn a doctorate at Columbia. There, he was influenced by a generation of young faculty and graduate students who were themselves influenced by Julian Steward. This included Robert Murphy, Sidney Mintz, Eric Wolf, Marvin Harris, and Morton Fried, who supervised Sahlins's dissertation. These scholars combined Steward's cultural ecology with their own leftist sympathies to produce a Marxist anthropology. Sahlins was also influenced by the Hungarian emigré Karl Polanyi, one of the many scholars who fled Europe during World War II. Polanyi, an economist and historian, argued that capitalism was a culturally specific phenomenon that was ultimately pathological. In his dissertation, *Social Stratification in Polynesia*, Sahlins combined the ideas of Polanyi, White, and Steward to argue that Polynesian cultures took the form they did because of their adaption to their different island homes. The dissertation was a triumph both for its theoretical sophistication and for its astonishing ethnographic synthesis.

As he came of age intellectually, Sahlins's school of thought moved from the margins of anthropology to its center. Sahlins returned to teach at the University of Michigan, where a leftist, evolutionary economic anthropology flourished under a new cadre of professors, including Elman Service, Thomas Harding, Eric Wolf, Raymond Kelly, and Roy Rappaport. Sahlins produced an ethnography of Fiji based on fieldwork, *Moala*, as well as a volume on evolution, *Evolution and Culture*, which he edited with Service and Harding. He also became active in the antiwar movement, writing against Vietnam and organizing the first teach-ins.

In the mid-1960s, Sahlins embarked on a series of trips that decisively shaped the course of his career. He spent 2 years as a visiting professor in France and was exposed to Claude Lévi-Strauss's structuralism as well as student activism in May 1968. He also traveled to Australia, where he encountered the first generation of Pacific historians, such as Greg Denning and Henry Maude. In 1973, he published *Stone Age Economics*, a series of essays in the Polanyi-White tradition. The most important essay in the book was "The Original Affluent Society," in which he argued that hunter-gatherers live simple lives because they are not driven by the West's culturally specific need to amass endless wealth. It became his most well-known piece.

In 1972, Sahlins took a position at the University of Chicago, where he taught until his retirement in the late 1990s. At Chicago, Sahlins shifted direction. White had argued that culture was a unique causal force in history and that it was determined by the environment. Both could not be true. Moreover, evolutionary anthropology focused narrowly on the environment and never explained how societies adapted to one another. In 1976, Sahlins wrote *Culture and Practical Reason*, which emphasized that culture was an independent force that interacted with, but was not determined by, the environment.

In 1985, Sahlins published *Islands of History*. Here, he presented his famous theory of the "structure of the conjuncture" (described later in the entry). His exemplary case was the death of the British naval officer Captain James Cook in Hawaii in the 18th century. Sahlins's theoretical sophistication made him one of the foremost thinkers of the decade because he demonstrated how a structural approach could be reconciled with a focus on the reality of "practice," or action on the ground. *Islands of History* also drew criticism. Most notably, Gananath Obeyesekere criticized Sahlins for drawing on Western stereotypes to depict the Hawaiians. The result was the "Sahlins-Obeyesekere debate," which became famous because it epitomized the different ways anthropologists responded to postcolonial criticisms popular in the 1990s. Ultimately, the debate boiled down to how best to respect indigenous Hawaiians—by emphasizing their similarity with other humans or by respecting their cultural difference. Unusually, it was Sahlins, the "old White man," who emphasized difference and alterity, while Obeyesekere argued in favor of a more Western-style universalism. Over time, the debate fizzled out, and Sahlins is generally considered to have won on points.

As the 1980s turned into the 1990s, Sahlins focused on defending anthropology from postmodern and postcolonial criticisms. In texts like *Waiting for Foucault*, Sahlins mocked these trends and emphasized that social life could be explained clearly even if it was complex. In addition, he published a series of papers arguing against the idea that indigenous culture was dying out. Rather, he claimed, indigenous cultures are resilient and vibrant and co-opt Western culture for their own ends. In the 1970s, he argued that capitalism was a culturally

specific project. Now, he argued that capitalism's impact was mediated by the cultures exposed to it.

The events of 9/11 galvanized Sahlins to return to a more politicized anthropology. He became more politically active, writing articles critical of the American regime in Iraq. He argued that disorder and civil war in the Middle East were not the result of ancient primordial ethnic and religious tensions, nor were they the result of some raw, aggressive human nature unleashed by the end of governmental rule. Rather, American imperialism had induced a crisis in the region, which led to the troubles common in that region. He also revisited his theories of the role of individual agency—no doubt with an eye on George W. Bush—in making history. The result was the book *Apologies to Thucydides*, which traces the roots of America's foreign policy to the realpolitik of Thucydides. The book is an extended comparison of the Peloponnesian war with a conflict in 19th-century Fiji. The best part of this book, however, is the sparkling middle section, in which Sahlins examines the role of structure and agency in the Elian Gonzales affair. Gonzales was a Cuban orphan who was rescued at sea, where his mother drowned in an attempt to emigrate to the United States. He was brought to live with his relatives in Florida against the wishes of his father in Cuba but was eventually repatriated. Sahlins demonstrated how the story of Elian's family became national news because of the way it engaged numerous larger cultural structures, such as U.S.-Cuba antagonism, Catholic interest in miraculous rescues, and the importance of Florida's Cuban demographic in the upcoming national election.

In the first decade of the 21st century, Sahlins continued to elaborate a "political anthropology of the marvelous," which emphasized the role of culture in politics. In particular, he argued that the worldwide distribution of stranger kingship (political systems where the ruler is not from one's ethnic group) indicated a universal human propensity to search for sources of power and fertility outside one's own group. He further argued that exogamy was the paradigmatic form of this search. In his most recent book, *What Kinship Is . . . And Is Not*, Sahlins revisits some of the oldest themes in his work and makes daring and wide-ranging claims about human nature—a fitting move in the career of a long-lived scholar who continues to publish actively to this day.

Critical Contributions

Sahlins's work ranges across several continents and a few centuries. However, beneath this variety of topics, there are a few common themes that are at work in his writings.

Culture as a Sui Generis Force

Sahlins has consistently put the culture concept at the center of anthropology. For him, culture is a sui generis force or "unique order of determination." This means that although culture shapes and is shaped by other factors, such as biology and geography, it is ultimately a unique and real phenomenon that cannot be reduced to any other, more primary force. Just as life is an emergent force that is greater than the sum of its parts, so too is culture. Indeed, for Sahlins, anthropology is a distinct discipline not because of its unique viewpoint or methods but because it has a unique subject matter: culture. For Sahlins, *culture* refers to arbitrary and conventional systems of meaning. In practice, these systems are applied in a variety of ways. Although the results may appear contradictory and disorderly, this does not mean that the basic structure beneath them is disorderly. Rather, the differences of meaning, viewpoint, or classification are themselves systematic and can be viewed as transformations of underlying, more orderly structures.

Many anthropologists prior to Sahlins inherited a distinction between materialism and idealism that dated back to Georg W. F. Hegel (or, perhaps, Plato). Sahlins explicitly formulated the culture concept to avoid this dualism. For him, culture can be both physical and meaningful, existing as much in cultivated landscapes or made objects as it does in the realm of cognitive meaning or intersubjective understanding. Human action is, for Sahlins, always cultural, even if it is also physical or serves utilitarian goals. Thus, for instance, he writes that cannibalism is always "symbolic" even when it is "real"—something that carried symbolic importance as well as nutritional value.

Structure of the Conjuncture

Sahlins claims that culture both shapes and is shaped by other factors, such as biology and geography. To clarify how these different forces interact with one another, Sahlins developed the concept of

the "structure of the conjuncture." He argues that societies were shaped by the complex conjuncture (intersection) of a variety of forces (structures). Sahlins intended this model to replace earlier, evolutionary ones that claimed that culture was always shaped by the need to adapt to the natural environment. Rather, he claims, multiple causal forces react with each other. An important part of this claim is that individuals have the agency to make history based on their position in a cultural structure. Sahlins distinguishes between "systemic agency" and "conjunctural agency." Sometimes structures amplify the agency of certain people because of their position in a system of power and authority—Fijian chiefs, for instance, can make decisions that can change the course of history. At other times, it is the structure of the conjuncture, a fortuitous arrangement of circumstances, that allows people to make history. Sahlins uses Bobby Thomson's game-winning home run in 1951 as an example of this latter sort of agency. Any player of a baseball team may be the one to hit (or miss) the pitch that could win them the game, despite the fact that he is no more special than any of the other players on the team. A benefit of Sahlins's model, then, is that it recognizes human agency even as it acknowledges the way agency is shaped by other forces.

Sahlins argues that conjunctures are so complex and driven by circumstance and chance that one cannot develop a generalized science of them in which distinct causal forces are enumerated and their interaction tested. Understanding why a society has the shape and form it currently has requires a historical explanation of the contingent history that produced it. Only through a corpus of such histories can we begin to make some generalizations about how human cultures function as a whole. In this respect, Sahlins's work ultimately resembles that of Max Weber.

Cultural Determination of Behavior

Throughout his career, Sahlins has argued that culture shapes human social life in a fundamental way. In the famous "formalist" versus "substantivist" debate in economic anthropology in the 1970s, Sahlins was the chief proponent of substantivism. Like all substantivists, he insisted that economic life—the provisioning of food, shelter, and other needs—was made on the basis of cultural rules regarding the production and distribution of goods. Thus, it was wrong to assume, as economists sometimes do, that society is best viewed as a collection of utility-maximizing individuals. Understanding economic life, therefore, requires understanding the institutions that shape it, rather than seeing it as a by-product of multiple individual choices.

Sahlins has also made the same argument in the realm of politics. The doctrine of "realism" in political science sees conflict as driven by competitive self-interest. In contrast, Sahlins argues that politics involves the achievement of culturally specific ends using culturally specific means. The orchestration of lethal force, such as firing squads, requires a process of socialization in which soldiers are taught that it is culturally normal to fire when ready. Even cases that appear to most closely approximate Hobbes's state of nature—Iraq after the American invasion, for instance—are the result of massive, organized, and culturally driven interventions in local states of affairs. As Sahlins remarked, it takes a lot of culture to make a state of nature.

The same is true with regard to basic biological processes too. Authors such as Steven Pinker, David Buss, and Robert Wright have argued that there is an innate, relatively substantial, human nature and that culture is merely the window dressing, which does little to shape human lives. Sahlins argues the opposite. In the case of sexual desire, for instance, kinship systems organize sexuality and human reproduction, rather than the other way around. Racial categories are not an impingement of natural biological difference on our consciousness. Rather, to the extent that race has any sort of biological reality at all, it is because race is the organization of biology by culture, since cultural norms shape marriage choices and thus ultimately the biological constitution of individuals.

Criticism of Western Theories of Human Nature

Throughout his career, Sahlins has argued that the findings of anthropology are opposed to much of Western common sense, and in particular to Western social theory. In particular, Sahlins has consistently argued against the influence of Thomas Hobbes in Western thought. Hobbes argued that society was composed of appetitive, desiring individuals. In contrast, Sahlins argues that biologically given desires are very general and only take the specific

form they do because of the way in which culture shapes biology. We are not desiring individuals, he argues, but members of a community with culturally distinct forms of reciprocity. For Sahlins, in other words, it is not altruism that needs to be explained but the West's culturally distinctive belief that greed is natural. Sahlins has criticized the Hobbesian strain of social thought wherever he has found it. In his 1976 book *The Use and Abuse of Sociobiology,* Sahlins argues that sociobiology uses a theory of nature similar to Hobbes's. He has made a similar move in his criticism of "formalist" approaches to the economy and his criticisms of the field of economics as a whole. The idea that individuals pursue their own biologically given ends, he argues, underlies American individualism and consumer culture. In the realm of politics, Sahlins has traced Hobbes's viewpoint back to Thucydides (who influenced Hobbes) and argued that it is Herodotus, the proto-ethnographer, rather than Thucydides, the proto-political scientist, whom we ought to revere. At its broadest level, Sahlins's polemic has encompassed the entire tradition of Western philosophy, which he has criticized in works such as his 2008 pamphlet *The Western Illusion of Human Nature.*

Legacy

Sahlins has had a deep and enduring legacy in anthropology, becoming (with Clifford Geertz) the most well-known anthropologist of the post–World War II period. In the 1960s, he was one of the key figures who produced the neo-evolutionary approach in anthropology. In the 1970s, he was key in the development of economic anthropology. In the 1980s, his work on the structure of the conjuncture became one of the key paradigms for understanding the interaction of culture and agency. At the same time, he also became one of the first people to develop historical anthropology, a subdiscipline that flourished during that same decade.

Beyond this broad, discipline-wide influence, Sahlins has also been key to the development of a variety of other groups of scholars. Pacificists, whether they study Polynesia, Micronesia, or Melanesia, have looked to Sahlins's work for well over half a century. In addition, Sahlins has influenced Pacific Island scholars. For instance, the Tongan anthropologist and novelist Epeli Hau'ofa credits Sahlins with influencing his seminal essay "Our Sea of Islands." In Hawaii, Sahlins worked with the Hawaiian scholar Lilikala Kame'eleihiwa (who is now critical of his Hawaiian ethnography). Sahlins has also been a central part of the network connecting Anglophone and Francophone scholars. Sahlins is a recipient of the Chevalier des Arts et des Lettres from the French Ministry of Culture (a sort of French knighthood), and his books continue to be read and discussed in that country and in Europe more broadly.

Sahlins will also be remembered for his political activism. During the Vietnam War, he was one of the developers of the teach-in and opposed government projects that would use social science knowledge in the service of imperialism. After 9/11, Sahlins was active in politics again, arguing against American involvement in the Middle East. In particular, he opposed anthropologists who collaborated with the U.S. government. Sahlins's activism has also extended to the area of copyright reform and open access: As the editor-in-chief of Prickly Paradigm Press, he has issued pamphlets under a creative commons license, and he has encouraged open-access journals such as *Hau.*

Although Sahlins's influence is wide, it is also diffuse. Sahlins has never encouraged devotees, and there is no "Sahlinsian" school of thought. As a result, his students have stood out for the way they have transformed, not reproduced, his thought. As he continues to write and publish in a career that has stretched more than 5 decades, Sahlins produces new works that will leave a legacy whose scope and power are still waiting to be determined.

Alex Golub

See also Columbia University; Economic Anthropology; Fried, Morton; Harris, Marvin; Mintz, Sidney; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Polanyi, Karl; Steward, Julian; University of Michigan; White, Leslie; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Borofsky, R. (1997). Cook, Lono, Obeyesekere, and Sahlins. *Current Anthropology, 38*(2), 255–282.

Golub, A., Rosenblatt, D., & Kelly, J. (2014). *A practice of anthropology: Essays in honor of Marshall Sahlins.* Montreal, Quebec, Canada: McGill-Queens Press.

Sahlins, M. (1972). *Stone age economics.* Chicago, IL: Aldine-Atherton.

———. (1976). *Culture and practical reason.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
———. (2000). *Culture in practice: Selected essays.* New York, NY: Zone Books.

Said, Edward

Edward Said (1935–2003) was a Palestinian American professor of English and comparative literature at Columbia University. Said's work is a very prominent example of how literature advances anthropology by fostering the development of its theories, critiquing anthropological insights and practices, and calling on anthropologists to reflect on the effect of their work on the people they investigate. Said's book *Orientalism* was the initial impulse for postcolonial studies. This entry gives short biographical notes, retraces the main issues of Said's work, and discusses its influences on prominent theoretical scholars of difference (construction) and otherness.

Biographical Notes

Said was born as Edward Wadie Saïd on November 1, 1935, in Jerusalem in the British Mandate of Palestine. His parents were Christian Palestinians practicing the Greek Orthodox rite. In World War I, his father served in the U.S. Army, and both he and his family became U.S. citizens. The household language was English. The family moved several times between Jerusalem, Cairo, and Beirut. Said received his elementary education in Jerusalem and his higher education in the Egyptian branch of Victoria College in Cairo, an institution known for recruiting local students and preparing them for (post)colonial duty in the government and administration of the newly independent Arab nation-states. In 1951, after Said was expelled from Victoria College for bad behavior, his family sent him to the United States, where he studied English literature and history and received his Bachelor of Arts degree at Princeton University in 1957. He received his Master of Arts degree and his PhD at Harvard University in 1960 and 1964, respectively. In 1963, he accepted a position at Columbia University, where he taught English and comparative literature until his death in 2003.

Alongside his academic career, Said was engaged in the political process in the Levant and was an inveterate foe of Israel for a long time. He compared the Levantine situation with South Africa's apartheid regime. After a long period of being totally nonpolitical, agnostic, and not defining himself as Arab or Palestinian, his political consciousness awoke after the victory of Israeli forces in the Six-Day War in 1967 and the following occupation of Palestinian territory. These events also spurred him to write *Orientalism*. Since the publication in 1968 of his first political article, "The Arab Portrayed," he was considered the voice of Palestine in the United States and Arafat's man in New York. In 1977, he was elected to a permanent position as a member of the Palestinian National Council, and he established the first contacts between the Palestine Liberation Organization and the U.S. government. In 1991, he broke with the Palestine Liberation Organization, left the Palestinian National Council, and became one of the harshest critics of Palestine Liberation Organization politics and of Arafat, accusing both of corruption. As a consequence of the 1993 Oslo I Peace Accord, Said began to change his opinion about Israel and its actions. In 1999, with the Jewish conductor Daniel Barenboim, he established the West-Eastern Divan Orchestra, a youth orchestra based in Seville, Spain, to boost the reconciliation process between Jews and Arabs. Edward Said died of leukemia on September 25, 2003, in New York.

Work

Orientalism

Said's most influential book, *Orientalism*, resulted from his personal experiences as a member of a Christian minority in the Jewish- and Muslim-dominated Middle East and as a refugee in the Western world after the occupation of Palestinian territory by Israel. The first experience enabled him to develop a sensibility for difference constructions in general (e.g., ethnic groups, religious beliefs). The latter experience turned his attention to the fact that any construction of difference is interwoven with claims of power. During the period of colonialism, the claims of power and the social hierarchy of oppressor and oppressed were obvious, and colonizers could be called to account for their actions. The postcolonial situation was less transparent. Said argued that the oppression of colonial subjects continued through the mechanism of the Western construction of them as the opposite of the Western

world. In that sense, Said interpreted the distinction between Occident and Orient as an ongoing colonial construction and sign of political power that guaranteed distance between the imperial center and the (post)colonial periphery. For Said, any representation of the Orient is necessarily spatial; he calls this an imaginative geography that reflects the power relations of the inventor (colonial center) and the subjects of its imaginings.

Said developed the thesis of Orientalism out of his own experience: In reading texts and looking at paintings or pictures from the 18th and 19th centuries, he realized that the people portrayed had—almost—nothing to do with the real people of the Orient. They were mostly constructed either as Rousseau-like noble savages or as uncivilized counterparts to the developed and civilized Occident (Europe). In *Orientalism*, he took an approach to discourse analysis inspired by that of the theorist Michel Foucault. He analyzed writing, paintings, and reports by "Orientalists," including academics—philologists, anthropologists, and archaeologists—and nonacademics, such as writers and missionaries. He extended this with an analysis of the situation in the 20th century, postulating that the colonial stereotypes that constituted the Orient/Occident dichotomy were reinforced by the media, especially television and film. He argued that these intensified the imaginative demonology of the mysterious Orient.

What does Said mean by Orientalism? According to Said, Orientalism is the outcome of a historic process of defining Europe via the construction of the Orient as "other." This means that the *presence* of the Occident is a result of *representing* the Orient as the opposite via discourse and practice. In that sense, Orientalism can mean three different things:

1. It is an academic tradition of investigating the people, language, and culture of the East, from the Middle East to India, called Oriental studies. Oriental studies includes scholars from anthropology, sociology, history, philology, and other subjects. Orientalists produce the Orient through academic discourse.
2. A more general meaning of Orientalism is a style of thought based on ontological and epistemological distinctions made between the Orient and the Occident. This thinking is part of the cultural heritage of Europe and is widely reproduced, especially by poets, novelists, philosophers, political theorists, economists, and imperial administrators. Despite the diversity of countries and peoples considered "Oriental," such discourse tends to produce a homogeneous, stable image of an Orient without history. This image is a fiction and a projection of Western fantasies, but it produces a reality of ongoing colonialism.
3. It refers to the historical and real suppression of Eastern cultures and societies practiced in imperial and colonial intercourse. This reality is the imposition, through both physical force and discourse, of Western-style rule and Western cultural forms on non-Western cultures both past and present.

All three forms of Orientalism culminate in silencing the Orient in Western thought by constructing it as a passive object defined by the West.

But, in fact, the reality of colonial intercourse tended to blur the clear-cut dichotomy of the Orient and the Occident, as Said argues in *Culture and Imperialism* (1993). As cultures met, both in discourse and in physical locations, the result was hybridization rather than the creation of simple opposition. For Said, all cultures are hybrid constructions that interweave diverse elements. This hybridity only deepened as decolonization gave members of diverse cultures greater ability to define themselves.

At the end of *Orientalism*, Said raises a question that should concern all anthropologists: How does one *represent* other cultures? Said's work challenges the idea that cultures can be adequately described, at least by outside observers. Clifford Geertz noted that Said's argument implied that all descriptions of other cultures are necessarily products of specific researchers. As such, they reflect the culture, interests, and life history of their authors and are not the objective descriptions of cultures they purport to be. Thus, anthropological insights must be considered the constructions of anthropologists and not objective truth. Anthropology does not simply observe but rather creates its subject matter.

Other Works

After the broad recognition and reception of *Orientalism*, Said published two further books on the Levantine situation and Islam: *The Question of Palestine* (1979) and *Covering Islam* (1981).

But neither book achieved the success of *Orientalism*. In the 1990s, Said published two major works on postcolonial studies, *Culture and Imperialism* and *Representations of the Intellectual* (1994). *Culture and Imperialism* is an expansion and generalization of the ideas he developed in *Orientalism*.

Influence

Orientalism had a deep influence on all Orientalists, including anthropologists, and from there, Said's ideas infiltrated cultural and social theory as well as literature. *Orientalism* is considered a founding work of postcolonial studies, a milestone in the debate about representation within anthropology, and a fundamental contribution to the debate on difference (construction). *Orientalism* is still relevant to anthropologists and scholars, and it has become virtually impossible to do anthropological research without referencing Said's multiple insights. Said's ideas have also become important to the political engagement of Third World intellectuals. As these have become internationally prominent, they have demonstrated how previously suppressed voices have challenged and changed the relationship between periphery and center and increased cultural hybridity.

Homi K. Bhabha and Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak are among the prominent scholars influenced by Said's ideas. Bhabha emphasizes the aspect of cultural hybridity introduced by Said. Bhabha pleads for a "third space" of hybridity rather than the strict separation between Occident and Orient that Said uses in *Orientalism*. This "space between" gives members of interacting cultures the possibility of translating their own cultural contents into the language and practice of the other. Bhabha argues that transit through the "third space" inevitably alters the meanings of cultural contents. Culture is built through a process of translation, inscription, and articulation that leads inevitably to hybridity and makes "pure" cultures impossible. Because the "third space" allows the colonized to take part in the colonizer's ability to define the self and other, entering it gives people the ability to avoid the politics of polarity and exclusion.

Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak contributes additional insights and brings Said's insights to the new discipline of subaltern studies. Taking on Said's thesis of silencing the Orient and inspired by Michel Foucault's *The Order of Things*, she develops the idea of "epistemic violence." Because the voices of subaltern individuals have been silenced in the violent process of knowledge construction, they have been effaced from the history of colonialism. It is the job of current-day scholars of postcolonialism to restore these voices and recognize the historical contributions of subaltern individuals. In addition, Spivak argues that to gain increased political power, oppressed groups need to develop "strategic essentialism." That is, they must be able to represent themselves and act as a single large group while at the same time understanding that such collective identities are inevitably composed of numerous different smaller groups with competing and conflicting interests.

The use and development of Said's multiple ideas by Bhabha, Spivak, and numerous others keeps his work alive. Said's insights continue to contribute to anthropological theory and practice.

Lars Allolio-Näcke

See also Deconstruction; Foucault, Michel; Geertz, Clifford; Postcolonial Theory; Poststructuralism; Social Constructionism; Subaltern Studies

Further Readings

Ashcroft, B., & Ahluwalia, P. (1999). *Edward Said*. London, UK: Routledge.

Bhabha, H. K. (1994). *The location of culture*. London, UK: Routledge.

Geertz, C. (1996). *After the fact: Two countries, four decades, one anthropologist*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Said, E. (1978). *Orientalism*. New York, NY: Vintage Books.

———. (1993). *Culture and imperialism*. New York, NY: Knopf.

Spivak, G. C. (1987). *In other worlds: Essays in cultural politics*. London, UK: Methuen.

Veeser, H. A. (2010). *Edward Said: The charisma of criticism*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Sanday, Peggy Reeves

Peggy Reeves Sanday (1937–) is a U.S.-based cultural anthropologist, feminist, and public intellectual. Inspired by the legacy of Margaret Mead and

Franz Boas, Sanday sees anthropological research as a form of public service, working for the public interest on behalf of social equality. At the dawn of the feminist movement, Sanday made the then novel argument that male sociocultural dominance is not universal but rather emerges out of particular social environments. This pioneering contribution had a powerful impact on feminist anthropology and feminist theory more broadly, while reframing the Western understanding of patriarchy and matriarchy. Throughout her career, Sanday pushed the field of anthropology to produce and appreciate publicly engaged scholarship. To this end, she worked to establish the field of public interest anthropology. Across her career as an anthropologist and public intellectual, three themes emerge: (1) the importance of empirically driven scholarship, (2) the focus on social equality, and (3) the creation of scholarship that both speaks to and influences a broad audience.

Sanday received her PhD from the University of Pittsburgh in 1966 and took her first academic position at Carnegie Mellon University in 1969. In 1972, she became a tenured associate professor of anthropology at the University of Pennsylvania and was promoted to full professor in 1986. She retired in 2011.

Sanday was influenced by the theoretical and empirical legacies of George Peter Murdock, Ward Goodenough, and Clifford Geertz. She began her career as a mathematical anthropologist studying subcultural variations in the U.S. urban poor population. Even in these early writings, Sanday showed her propensity to focus on important public conversations, when she argued that cultural differentiation and structural inequality were more important factors than class and race, in understanding the inadequate school performance of children in poor and working-class communities in urban United States.

In the early 1970s, Sanday intervened in discussions on the widely publicized differences in Black/White IQ scores. At the time, prominent intellectual figures like the educational psychologist Arthur Jensen and the Nobel Prize–winning physicist William Shockley argued that the difference in IQ scores was based on genetic differences between Black and White populations. Sanday contested these claims, employing an anthropological understanding of the cultural context of knowledge that challenged the noncontextual, nonenvironmental approach of Jensen and Shockley. At the same time, she labored to bring this cultural argument to a broader public through publishing in popular journals and debating with Shockley on national Canadian TV. In an edited book, *Anthropology and the Public Interest* (1976), she broached the issue of a public anthropology, publishing and commenting on a series of anthropological studies of public issues.

In her first single-author book, *Female Power and Male Dominance* (1981), Sanday analyzed a worldwide sample of 186 societies for correlates of female power and male dominance. This study demonstrated that male dominance is neither universal nor even prevalent when viewed from a large-sample perspective. Her analysis suggested that male dominance tends to evolve as resources diminish and as group survival comes to depend increasingly on the aggressive acts of men. She found that male oppression of women is sometimes a strategy for responding to stress, be it stress due to decreasing food resources, population displacement, or the social oppression of constant warfare. Stress, she argued, constrains the male nurturing capacity, which she found is evident in sexually equal societies.

To seek further insight into the cultural context of gender relations, Sanday's next project was an ethnographic study of the Minangkabau of West Sumatra, Indonesia, a project that she pursued off and on between 1981 and 2009. This was a critical site of study because the Minangkabau are the largest and most stable matrilineal society in the world. In this long-term, field-based research, Sanday provided a detailed ethnographic analysis of how the Minangkabau matrilineal system works, through descriptions of cultural practices, origin myths, life cycle rituals, magical thought, and healing practices. Her research led her to redefine matriarchy, critiquing the Western definition, which makes matriarchy the mirror image of patriarchy in its emphasis on female dominance. In *Women at the Center: Life in a Modern Matriarchy* (2002), Sanday suggests that matriarchy, Minangkabau style, represents an egalitarian social system in which the dominant social symbols focus on growth in nature and the central cultural and economic role of the matrilineal line, giving both sexes prominent but different roles in upholding the matrilineal system.

During these years, Sanday also undertook a study of fraternity gang rape, which was motivated

by the rape of one of her students. In *Fraternity Gang Rape: Sex, Brotherhood, and Privilege on Campus* (1990/2007), she examined the fraternity party rituals and initiation rites on campuses across the country to understand the socialization for nonconsensual acquaintance sex. The book was written for a college audience and offers a chilling depiction of the sexual debasement of women at some fraternities. This work was followed by further research focused on the outcome of acquaintance rape in the courts and its portrayal in U.S. and European legal history, which resulted in *A Woman Scorned: Acquaintance Rape on Trial* (1996/2011).

Between 1999 and 2004, Sanday undertook a more intimate ethnographic study focused on the Wolfe Creek Crater in the Western Desert of Australia. Working with the local Aboriginal community, Sanday collected stories and paintings that detailed the meaning of the crater while delicately expressing the cosmological outlook of the Aboriginal people. This work was a personal journey for Sanday, as her father, the American geologist Frank Reeves, was the first Westerner to document the crater in 1947.

Sanday's long and varied career includes original research on the urban poor, male dominance, matrilineal society, and Aboriginal cosmology. The consistent thread that ties this work together is Sanday's focus on empirically driven, theoretically informed scholarship focused on human emancipation. She expressed this vision, intervening in the central social and cultural issues of the day, while arguing for a brand of engaged scholarship that could help cultivate a more humane world.

Todd Wolfson

See also Feminist Anthropology; Gender and Anthropology

Further Readings

Sanday, P. R. (1976). *Anthropology and the public interest: Fieldwork and theory.* New York, NY: Academic Press.

———. (1981). *Female power and male dominance: On the origins of sexual inequality.* New York: Cambridge University Press.

———. (2007). *Aboriginal paintings of the Wolfe Creek crater: Track of the Rainbow Serpent.* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Museum of Archaeology and Anthropology.

———. (2007). *Fraternity gang rape: Sex, brotherhood, and privilege on campus* (Rev. ed.). New York, NY: New York University Press. (Original work published 1990).

———. (2011). *A woman scorned: Acquaintance rape on trial* (Rev. ed.). Berkeley: University of California Press. (Original work published 1996)

Sapir, Edward

Edward Sapir (1884–1939), the undisputed doyen of the linguists among the classic first generation of Franz Boas's students in American anthropology, carried out fieldwork on more than 30 different American Indian languages, dramatically simplified the classification of Native American language families, produced process-based grammars that remain models of linguistic description, and defined a phonemic level of analysis relying on native speaker intuition rather than on form alone. He turned in midcareer to what later came to be called culture and personality, emphasizing individual creativity within the patterns set out by language and culture, and was anthropology's primary representative in the Rockefeller Foundation–funded interdisciplinary social science of the interwar years.

Biography and Major Works

Sapir was born in Lauenberg, Pomerania, on January 26, 1884, to a Lithuanian Jewish family. His father, Jacob David Sapir, was a cantor whose ambitions led him to emigrate first to England and then to the United States, settling his wife, Eva, née Segal, and two sons in Richmond, Virginia, in 1890. After the death of Edward's brother Max, his father's career disintegrated, and the family moved to New York City's Lower East Side, where his mother ran a small notions store to support the household. While still in high school, Sapir won a prestigious Pulitzer scholarship designed to encourage the brightest of New York's immigrant children to pursue higher education.

Sapir used the scholarship to finance his education at Columbia University, where he majored in Germanic philology (as linguistics was known then), receiving a BA in 1904 and an MA in 1905. Impressed by the urgency of recording American Indian languages from what was in many cases the last generation of fluent speakers, he switched his

major to anthropology under the tutelage of Boas. Sapir carried over his training in Indo-European historical linguistics into his American Indian work. He completed his PhD in 1907 based on a summer of fieldwork with Takelma in Oregon, but the degree was not awarded until 1909 because of Columbia's publication requirement.

In 1907, Sapir accepted a research fellowship at the University of California, Berkeley, where his fellow Boasian anthropologist Alfred Kroeber was developing a research program to map the linguistic and cultural diversity of the state under the funding aegis of Phoebe Apperson Hearst. Sapir, who was less interested in the mapping mandate than Kroeber, concentrated on fieldwork in Yana, with a part-time foray into Chasta Costa. He resigned after a single academic year to move to the University of Pennsylvania, where he held a Harrison Fellowship under the direction of another former Boas student, Frank Speck. For the next 2 years, Sapir worked on Southern Paiute with Tony Tillohash, a bilingual student at Carlisle Indian School in Pennsylvania, whose insights into his own language would later be crucial to Sapir's definition of the "psychological reality of the phoneme." His proposed long-term research program on Ute and Paiute in the Southwest was not funded by the University Museum.

In 1910, Sapir became the first director of the Anthropological Division of the Canadian Geological Survey in the Department of Mines, a position he held until 1925. In the early Ottawa years, Sapir began a personal research program on the Northwest Coast, focusing on the Nootka (now called Nuu chah nulth), and assembled a research staff trained specifically in anthropology, in contrast to the amateur staff of the U.S. Bureau of American Ethnology. His permanent colleagues, the Eskimo (now called Inuit in Canada) specialist Diamond Jenness and the Quebec folklorist and ethnologist Marius Barbeau, were trained at Oxford under the tutelage of R. R. Marett. Sapir was also able to hire various members of his Columbia cohort, including Harlan I. Smith, Wilson Wallis, Paul Radin, and Alexander Goldenweiser, for short-term Canadian fieldwork. For a time, therefore, Ottawa had the largest contingent of Boasian anthropologists outside New York, but government research funding was devastated by the First World War and never recovered from the cutbacks imposed after 1916.

Sapir became increasingly depressed by the lack of opportunity to continue either his personal field research or the Division project of mapping the language families of the Dominion of Canada. Professional setbacks were compounded by the physical and mental illness of his wife, Florence, née Delson, a distant cousin whom he had married in 1910. By 1916, the couple had three children, and Sapir's mother took over the management of the household. During this period, for both personal and professional reasons, Sapir became intensely interested in psychoanalysis. At the same time, he was active in Ottawa literary circles, frequently publishing poetry and critical essays. These dual preoccupations set the foundation for his rethinking of the relationship between culture and personality. When Florence died in 1924, Sapir was open to pursuing opportunities elsewhere.

Back in the United States, Rockefeller Foundation funding to a small number of American universities was enabling collaborative research across the social sciences, particularly sociology and psychology. Sapir was called to the University of Chicago in 1925 as the superstar who would integrate anthropology into an emerging synthesis around the study of personality and society. The Chicago school of sociology had already established an ethnographic tenor, using the city of Chicago as its laboratory for social analysis. Here, Sapir found the intellectual stimulation he had been lacking. In 1926, he married Jean Victoria McClenaghan, with whom he had two more children. With the interactional psychologist Harry Stack Sullivan and the political scientist Harold D. Lasswell, Sapir began to insert an anthropological concept of culture into the interdisciplinary amalgam of society and the individual.

At Chicago, Sapir also continued his American Indian work. He undertook fieldwork in Navajo loosely tied to the Laboratory of Social Anthropology in Santa Fe and attracted a talented group of linguistic students, most of whom followed him when he took up a Sterling professorship at Yale in 1931 to direct a Rockefeller Foundation–sponsored seminar on the impact of culture on personality at Yale's Institute of Human Relations.

Anti-Semitism made Yale a much less attractive venue than Sapir had hoped. His frustrations were compounded by political cross-purposes at the institute, where his meaning-centered approach to ethnography, personality studies, and linguistic

description alike increasingly isolated him from the more quantitative and behaviorist direction of the program. Sapir suffered a heart attack in 1937 while teaching at the Linguistic Society of America's Summer Institute of Linguistics in Ann Arbor, Michigan. Cancelling a planned research year in China, he spent his sabbatical the following year in New York City in an attempt to recoup his health. He returned to teaching in the fall of 1938 but succumbed to a second heart attack on February 4, 1939. He was at the time president of the American Anthropological Association; his presidential address was read by Boas only weeks before his death.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology and Linguistics

Mapping Linguistic Diversity

At the start of Sapir's career, the classification of American Indian languages languished because adequate materials for comprehensive comparative work were unavailable for many languages and those that had been recorded suffered from the self-taught linguistic skills of most of the previous investigators. John Wesley Powell of the Bureau of American Ethnology had produced a 55-unit classification in 1891 based on questionnaire data in manuscripts inherited from the Smithsonian Institution and on the fieldwork of his own staff after 1879. In contrast, Sapir applied his philological training and extraordinary intuition for sound patterning in language to consolidate the number of linguistic families, using his own fieldwork to fill in gaps in the documentary record and ferret out the abstract underlying patterns that crossed related languages. There was a close relationship between Sapir's fieldwork and his historical comparisons. His Southern Paiute work led to a formulation of sound correspondences in Uto-Aztecan; he collaborated with Kroeber, Roland Dixon, and others to define the Hokan and Penutian linguistic stocks in California; his particular passion was Na-Dene or Athabascan, the language family that included Navaho and Hupa, on which he did fieldwork. He also sent his student Fang-Kuei Li to study several northern Athabascan languages spoken in Canada's Northwest Territories. Sapir believed that Athabascan tone would ultimately link up to Sino-Tibetan tone languages in Asia and thereby clarify the origins and successive migrations of the American Indians to the New World.

In 1921, Sapir proposed a classification of only six language families for all of North America (revised in 1929 to include at least tentatively a few previously unassigned languages). Like Powell, he presented no systematic data for his classification; but Sapir's proposal was much more extensive, based on grammar as well as sound changes extrapolated from the often superficial lexical evidence available to Powell. Sapir's proposed broad language families were as follows: Eskimo-Aleut, Na-Dene (in which he included Haida and Tlingit on the Northwest Coast), Algonquian-Ritwan (Sapir added two California outliers to the long-known Algonquian family), Penutian (moving outward from his own work on Takelma and Chinook and linking these Northwest Coast languages to the Californian and Mexican branches of what he believed to be a widespread language family), Hokan-Siouan (the far-flung grab bag of California and the North American interior), and Aztec-Tanoan (further extending the Uto-Aztecan stock that included Paiute).

Since its appearance, the six-unit classification has polarized linguists between "lumpers," like Sapir (and those who took his larger groupings at face value without examining the detailed evidence), and "splitters," who required systematic proof, preferably through detailed sound correspondences, of particular connections before they could be considered proven. Linguistic opinion has shifted over recent decades toward retaining a larger number of stocks than Sapir envisioned, as exemplified in the work of Lyle Campbell, Marianne Mithun, and Ives Goddard. Nonetheless, Sapir's suggested larger groupings remain tantalizingly plausible and continue to invite comparisons for future demonstration of a historical relationship. Sapir's conviction that culture history could be extrapolated from the linguistic relationships of peoples continues to tie anthropological linguistics to anthropology as a whole and to maintain the possibility of convergent evidence across the four traditional subdisciplines.

Ethnographic Inference From Language

Sapir's language classification was in one sense internal to philology or historical linguistics, based on the assumption that sound change and other

linguistic processes operated the same way in unwritten languages as in Indo-European ones. In addition, however, Sapir aspired to draw the linguistic relationships among the various tribes into the theoretical toolkit of his fellow anthropologists. He believed that language was unique among the parts of culture because of its formal structure; the existence of systematic sound correspondences would demonstrate unambiguously that resemblances across languages reflected previous historical identity rather than borrowing as a result of culture contact.

By 1894, Boas, despite an early flirtation with extending linguistic classification on the Northwest Coast, had concluded that past historical relationship could not be distinguished from more recent borrowing among peoples living in proximity but initially speaking unrelated languages. Boas's own historical reconstructions relied on the borrowing and reworking of folklore elements rather than on linguistic form. The analysis of language, for him, became primarily a question of the psychological tenor of a language as reflected in its grammar and in texts recorded from native speakers, a point of access to "the native point of view" rather than a means of reconstructing culture history.

In 1916, Sapir produced his manifesto on why the anthropologist needs linguistics. "Time Perspective in Aboriginal American Languages: A Study in Method" presented concrete examples for the reconstruction of broad historical movements based on linguistic evidence and illustrated how cultural phenomena were encoded in language. For example, four cognates (related lexical items) demonstrated the northern origin of the Navajo: *Corn* was glossed as "enemy food," and the word for *snow* was adapted to a southwestern desert environment. Sapir's colleagues welcomed his methodological paper because they had few other data for historical inference. Archaeology only began to provide relative dating after 1927, when tree-ring dating provided the first reliable time sequences, although these applied only to the Southwest. There was little recognition of oral tradition as a source of reliable historical evidence.

Language and Linguistic Theory

Sapir was a major player in the emergence of an autonomous discipline of linguistics distinguishable from its North American origins in anthropology and in literature or folklore. Boas remained the senior figure, but Sapir was the "real linguist" in the anthropological camp, soon joined by Leonard Bloomfield, a Germanicist who did fieldwork on Cree and reconstructed proto-Algonquian (the reconstructed common ancestor of Algonquian) on the basis of four contemporary Algonquian languages. These three men collaborated to obtain funding from the American Council for Learned Societies for extensive American Indian linguistic fieldwork, primarily by their own students.

In linguistics, Sapir has long been esteemed as a general linguist. His paper defining the phonemic or meaningful level of sound patterning in language appeared prominently in the first volume of *Language* in 1925. Sapir's new "concept" was independent of European formulations by the Prague school at about the same time. In a 1933 elaboration of his position, Sapir used the linguistic intuitions of the native speakers he had worked with (Tony Tillohash for Southern Paiute, Alex Thomas for Nooktka, and Albert "Chic" Sanodoval for Nootka) to argue that the linguist should attend to the categories implicit in the understanding of their own language by fluent speakers. "Psychological reality" was the proper goal of grammatical as well as phonemic analysis. Sapir's own grammars, especially of Southern Paiute, still stand as models of how to incorporate meaning and process into the scientific study of language.

Sapir's only book, *Language: A Study of Speech*, appeared in 1921 and was directed toward a popular audience. Sapir alternated examples from English and familiar European languages with others taken from the American Indian languages he had studied. The equal subtlety and expressive power of these languages were taken for granted. This book remains an elegant statement of the beauty and complexity of the human capacity for language as Sapir understood it.

Linguistic Relativity

The so-called Sapir-Whorf hypothesis of linguistic relativity often has been misinterpreted as a claim for linguistic determinism. Neither Sapir nor his protégé Benjamin Lee Whorf intended such a reading. Indeed, both were much impressed by the capacity of grammatical categories to structure habitual thought. Nonetheless, conscious reflection and

what Whorf called "multilingual awareness" made it possible to think outside the boxes of "habitual thought" in one's native language. John Leavitt summarizes the history of this misinterpretation and contextualizes the return to Sapirian approaches toward the immense diversity of human languages in recent years, after decades of searching for linguistic universals whose pervasiveness seemingly trivialized the uniqueness of particular languages.

The Impact of Culture on Personality

At Yale, Sapir ran a seminar training foreign scholars to analyze their own cultural background and its correlates in personality. He also encouraged several anthropology graduate students to undergo training analysis in the same way that psychoanalysts did, so that they could study personality in a range of American Indian cultures. He was an active and charismatic participant in the Rockefeller Foundation Hanover (New Hampshire) Conferences of the late 1920s and early 1930s, drawing parallels of method between the anthropologist's life histories and the psychologist's clinical case histories. Sapir rejected a simplistic division of culture and individual personality, seeing these as sides of a single coin (what we might today see as a question of observer standpoint). He spoke of "the impact of culture on personality" and thereby preserved the capacity of the creative individual to modify culture and escape any hint of determinism in its influence. The Culture-and-Personality school of thought that developed within anthropology after Sapir's death under the intellectual leadership of Ruth Benedict and Margaret Mead was oriented toward the comparative study of whole cultures. Thus, Sapir's emphasis on individual agency and creativity as expressed in language was marginalized. These concerns reemerged not in relation to psychology and psychoanalysis as Sapir had envisioned but rather out of a post-Chomskian cognitive linguistics.

Sapir's Legacy

The centenary of Sapir's birth in 1994 produced a spate of scholarship in both anthropology and linguistics. Papers from an Ottawa conference were edited by William Cowan, Konrad Koerner, and Michael Foster in 1986. An editorial board chaired initially by Sapir's son Phillip undertook a *Collected Works of Edward Sapir* project, planned in 15 volumes, including newly annotated unpublished linguistic field notes and manuscripts, about half of which have now appeared through Mouton de Gruyter, Berlin. Judith T. Irvine edited several extant sets of class notes for Sapir's never written book on "the psychology of culture." Regna Darnell produced a biography covering the full interdisciplinary range of Sapir's work.

Sapir is the only Boasian to whom the epithet of genius is regularly applied, by both his peers and his successors. His students (e.g., Harry Hoijer, Morris Swadesh, Mary Haas, Stanley Newman, George Trager, Benjamin Whorf, and Carl Voegelin) and their students maintained his legacy by establishing the study of Native American languages in departments of both anthropology and linguistics. Linguistic anthropology continues to be closely associated with the ongoing study of American Indian languages.

Sapir's capacity to draw connections between languages and across academic disciplines has continued to inspire and to pose questions for contemporary scholars. In the positivism of post–World War II America, Sapirian perspectives receded for a time, but the study of meaning in both culture and language has returned to the attention of anthropologists since the 1960s.

Regna Darnell

See also Bloomfield, Leonard; Boas, Franz; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Rockefeller Foundation; Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism; Swadesh, Morris; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Cowan, W., Foster, M. K., & Koerner, K. (Eds.). (1986). *New perspectives in language, culture and personality.* Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Darnell, R. (1990). *Edward Sapir: Linguist, anthropologist, humanist.* Berkeley: University of California Press (Reprinted 2010 with a new introduction, Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press).

———. (2001). *Invisible genealogies: A history of Americanist anthropology.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Hymes, D., & Fought, J. (1975). *American structuralism.* In T. Sebeok (Ed.), *Current trends in linguistics 10: Historiography of linguistics* (pp. 903–1176). The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

Leavitt, J. (2011). *Linguistic relativities: Language diversities and modern thought*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Sapir, E. (1949). *Selected writings of Edward Sapir* (D. Mandelbaum, Ed.). Berkeley: University of California Press.
———. (1992). *The psychology of culture* (Judith T. Irvine, Ed.). Berlin, Germany: Mouton De Gruyter.

Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism

The so-called Sapir-Whorf hypothesis holds that language plays a powerful role in shaping thought, perception, and action, especially in relation to the worldview of an associated culture.

Historical Perspective

The idea that language guides perception is often associated with the writings of Edward Sapir and his student Benjamin Lee Whorf. While both had much to say about the role of language in the coordinating perspective during social interaction, many writers throughout history have commented on connections between language, thought, and perception.

Aristotle (384–322 BCE) observed that political rhetoric, when phrased in gripping poetic terms, has the potential to stir an audience to action, even in the name of some absurd slogan, a phenomenon that reaches its height when reason is overpowered by emotion. Subsequently, many philosophers granted language a prime place in human social cognition. The Italian philosopher Giambattista Vico (1668–1744) was one of the first to advance a theory of conceptual relativity, holding that humans universally build imperfect models of the world, which take on the status of a kind of virtual reality, as revealed by the changing face of science or religion throughout the ages—and as reflected in figures of speech. In Germany, this assessment was echoed by Wilhelm von Humboldt (1767–1835), who proposed that language functions as an organ of thought, with diverse languages leading speakers to different observations about the world, a phenomenon that Whorf later called the linguistic relativity principle. At the same time, von Humboldt proposed a theory of universal grammar, seeing traces of a common architecture behind the linguistic structures of the world—the differences arising as the historical products of creativity. Franz Boas, one of the founders of American anthropology, was aware of this tradition, which in turn came to influence his primary student in linguistics, Edward Sapir.

The Role of Vocabulary

Both Sapir and Whorf strongly asserted that vocabulary provides a key to one's worldview, in so far as a speaker's choice of words not only reflects a given perspective but also encourages its adoption. This principle was earlier articulated by Boas, who noted that vocabulary is often developed in areas of cultural interest, such as specialized religious knowledge. Boas commented that while sensory experience is infinitely subtle, languages classify these perceptions into a small set of categories, even if the classification is imperfect. Citing as an example the Baffin Island Eskimos, for whom there are separate words for snow in different situations (e.g., on the ground, in the sky, or in a drift), he argued that languages develop words for habitual conceptual distinctions; thus, what English speakers differentiate into lakes, rivers, streams, creeks, brooks, rain, dew, foam, waves, and ice might receive less attention in another language, occurring as variations on a single root for "water." Most anthropologists now take it for granted that these differences in vocabulary give rise to a relativity of local cultural habit, not of human potential. Consider the jargon of the professions.

Sapir himself went on to consider the relationship between language and thought in actual social circumstances, especially in relation to expressive culture. Seeing language in aesthetic terms, he often dwelled on the difficulty of translating poetry, since there is inevitably a mismatch in sound or meaning or rhythm when passing between traditions. He parted with Boas in insisting that language not only reflects reality but also resonates with the social imagination, as when interpreting poetry against the backdrop of religion. To illustrate this principle, consider the following line from George Herbert's (1593–1633) "Matins," wherein larger meaning hinges on the specific use of the word *sunbeam*. In the implicit context of addressing God, it refers specifically to Jesus and the cross.

Teach me thy love to know;
That this new light, which now I see

May both the work and workman show
Then by a sunbeam I will climb to thee.

Sapir also noted that language is more than a conceptual system, since words evoke emotions; many words convey a feeling tone and cast an evaluation. Viewing language as social and creative, he compared it with a work of art produced over many generations, imbuing each word with symbolic overtones. Passing from one language to the next meant shifting one's aesthetic and emotional sensibilities, while invoking a parallel shift in the content of the social or literary imagination.

Returning to the Boasian sense of language as a conceptual system, Whorf came to view language as an instrument of thought—capable of conveying whole cosmological systems or even leading speakers astray with misconceptions. In his work as a fire insurance inspector, he found that when speakers spoke about an accident, their descriptions provided a key to the misunderstanding that led to the disaster. In one example, vapor-filled gas drums were mistakenly described as "empty," a conception that went unquestioned until there was an explosion. Similarly, what workers described as inert "scrap lead" actually contained wax, leading to a similar lack of caution around this equally flammable substance. Whorf suggested that our habit of referring to time in "long" or "short" durations in English leads to the imaginary conception that time flows in a linear fashion rather than merely "getting later," without any real spatial path.

The Place of Grammar

In a departure from the linguistics of his times, which was dominated by historical studies, Boas took great pains to depict the relativity of linguistic structures, carefully documenting the phonology, vocabulary, and grammar of each language he encountered. While grammars everywhere serve a similar functional role, allowing speakers to communicate abstract concepts in near-shorthand form, he observed that there were parallel ways of solving similar practical problems, such as singling out a given person in speech with pronouns or referring to a given point in time with tense markers. Since these grammatical categories vary in both meaning and structural configuration, he noted that a well-formed construction might create different mental imagery from one language to the next. Classifier languages like Navajo, for instance, place great focus on the shapes that objects take when in motion or at rest—a matter that rarely comes up at all in languages like English, where this is not a grammatical requirement. Yet he was careful to note that languages rarely completely flesh out thoughts, since any given construction may say more or less than the speaker meant.

In carrying out his own research on indigenous languages, Sapir observed that grammatical categories often held psychological and cultural overtones when seen in full social context. While heeding the Boasian caution that language rarely lends full expression to thought, he continued to explore the notion that it might channel the flow of ideas, even without the speaker's conscious awareness. Inspired by Gestalt psychology, he suggested that speakers often unconsciously intuit the meaning of complex constructions, while projecting related cultural expectations onto experience in an associative fashion. Echoing Boas, he observed that speakers are inclined to impose categories from their own language onto sound perception, noticing patterns that fit their expectations while ignoring others; in other words, people tend to hear what they expect, often based on their cultural or linguistic conditioning, tuning out what does not fit their preexisting understanding. Similarly, few speakers pause to consider the semantics of grammar—such as the past or future in English—instead arriving at the meanings without a second thought, taking these grammatical categories as "natural" or "given" rather than as psychological projections. Some languages, by contrast, divide the past or future into far more categories than English requires—including an "immediate future" or "ancient past." Taking a historical perspective, Sapir observed that grammars change over time, often in response to social or cultural practices, such as the need for a special "ancient past" when delivering stories set in mythological times.

Inspired by Sapir's psychological insights, Whorf went on to suggest that our entire sense of the universe may be at the mercy of language, arguing that we arrive at a socially constructed sense of reality by projecting meanings onto experiences in accordance with the models laid out in our native tongue. He began by questioning the notion that people everywhere conceptualize space or time according to the same models, even if they start with the same experiences in the physical world. Drawing

a two-way comparison between the "thought-worlds" of English and Hopi, a Native language of the Southwest, he contrasted the linear sense of time in English, as reflected in our practice of counting days as if they were like objects that accumulate, with the cyclical sense of time in Hopi, where the focus is on the recurrence of events, like the sun rising. In this way, Whorf suggested that humans inhabit different worlds of habitual thought by virtue of participating in the conceptual systems of specific languages.

Neo-Whorfianism

In the years following World War II, the metalinguistic writings of Sapir and Whorf attracted a great deal of attention. The linguist Harry Hoijer created an industry among anthropologists, linguists, and psychologists when he boiled these ideas down to what he called the Sapir-Whorf hypothesis. The expression is a misnomer since Sapir and Whorf did not collaborate and had different agendas. Furthermore, neither approached the linguistic relativity principle as a scientific hypothesis. Nevertheless, Hoijer proposed that if anthropologists hypothesized that language has an impact on thought, it would be important to "test" the hypothesis. Crude but testable versions began to circulate as linguistic determinism based on the formulation that language governs thought rather than influencing it. In a truly Whorfian fashion, this misleading label has sparked a great deal of activity in the names of Sapir and Whorf, who probably would not have recognized the resulting formulations.

Empirical Studies: Testing the "Whorfian Effect" in the Laboratory

While Sapir and Whorf worked through cross-cultural comparison, observing language use in social settings, the recent trend has been to test the effects of language on perception in nonlinguistic settings—leading to observations of what is now called the Whorfian effect. One of the first studies, conducted by Eric Lenneberg, showed that having a name for a something as simple as a color (codability) affects recognition and later recall. Returning to the Whorfian method of comparison, John Lucy demonstrated that grammatical categories such as plural markers affect the subject's ability to assess the number of objects in a scene. Stephen Levinson has demonstrated that language can have a profound impact on a range of activities, such as remembering the spatial layout of a scene. Speakers of languages like Guugu Yimidhirr of Australia pervasively use cardinal points like north, south, east, and west since these concepts are embedded in the grammar and their language offers no other directional options, like left or right. Not surprisingly, Guguu Yimidhirr speakers outperform English speakers when it comes to remembering cardinal points.

Humanistic Research: Poetics, Ideology, Multilingualism, and Metaphor

A parallel line of inquiry focuses on the role of language in facilitating the play of perspective in social interaction. Dell Hymes was a pioneer in this area, arguing that linguistic relativity as a cognitive phenomenon was secondary to the relativity of social practices. Following Sapir, he advocated for a return to aesthetics, uncovering the poetic strategies in oral narrative, illustrating the diversity of the literary imagination. Paul Friedrich has shown that ordinary language is often pervasively poetic, including grammatical features, giving rise to diversity on the basis of creativity. Michael Silverstein has shown that speakers differ in their awareness of linguistic features, while a community's assessment of a trait, such as the use of informal (now archaic) second-person pronouns, like "thee" and "thou," can have a profound impact on the historical development of grammar. Thus, language is an ideological field where worldviews collide and change over time. He showed that when 17th-century Quakers protested against social hierarchy by dropping the use of "you" with superiors, using the egalitarian forms "thee" and "thou" with everyone, they set off a chain of events, throwing the pronoun system into confusion and resulting in the loss of *thee* and *thou* in English today. In this vein, Sean O'Neill has shown that when languages come into contact, speakers sometimes insist on accentuating their (preexisting) differences; thus, multilingualism and an awareness of diversity can heighten the extent to which languages maintain separate grammars, vocabularies, and storytelling traditions, as he observed among the Hupa, Yurok, and Karuk languages of California. Following Aristotle, George Lakoff has shown that while many metaphors have a basis in universal experiences, such as transferring

traits from animals to humans (e.g., "He badgered me"), there is a creative element in language, giving rise to endless diversity even in the face of profound universals.

Sean O'Neill

See also Aristotle; Boas, Franz; Cultural Relativism; Hymes, Dell; Sapir, Edward; Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Further Readings

Friedrich, P. (1986). *The language parallax: Linguistic relativism and poetic indeterminacy.* Austin: University of Texas Press.

Lakoff, G. (1987). *Women, fire, and dangerous things: What categories reveal about the mind.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Leavitt, J. (2011). *Linguistic relativities: Language diversity in modern thought.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Lucy, J. (1992). *Language diversity and thought: A reformulation of the linguistic relativity hypothesis.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

O'Neill, S. (2008). *Cultural contact and linguistic relativity among the Indians of Northwestern California.* Norman: University of Oklahoma Press.

Sapir, E. (1949). *Selected writings of Edward Sapir in language, culture, and personality.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Whorf, B. L. (1956). *Language, thought, and reality: Selected writings of Benjamin Lee Whorf.* Cambridge: Massachusetts Institute of Technology Press.

Saussure, Ferdinand de

Ferdinand de Saussure (1857–1913) was a Swiss linguist whose ideas about the scientific study of language provided the basis for what came to be known as structuralism. In the field of linguistics proper, he is widely recognized as the father of 20th-century linguistics. More broadly in the humanities and social sciences, his ideas are linked to those of the philosopher Charles Sanders Peirce, to make Saussure a cofounder of semiotics, the all-encompassing study of sign systems, of which language is but one.

Saussure's most radical departure from previous views of language lies in the distinction he made between *langue* and *parole*. The colloquial meaning of *langue* is "tongue; language," while *parole* means "speech; word," as in "take my word for it." Saussure meant something very different by these terms. Locating them in two distinct portions of the neuropsychological circuitry that underlies listening and speaking, he said that langue is the portion in which auditory images become associated with concepts, while parole is the portion in which speakers' communicative intentions become associated with producible output. Saussure went on to say that of these two components, the proper focus of the scientific study of language is langue, because it is shared by everyone in a given speech community. In fact, it is the shared ability to associate specific auditory input with the same concepts that defines a speech community. In contrast, Saussure said, parole is diverse and confusing because speakers use their language in idiosyncratic and unpredictable ways. Even though linguists are forced to infer the contents of langue from the messy evidence provided in parole, they must maintain a strict commitment to the description of langue, on which the structural stability of language depends.

Saussure himself frequently drifted away from his own langue-focused definition of linguistics to talk about the vagaries of parole, in which are found the ingredients of potential changes in langue when meaning-to-sound connections made by individual speakers come to be widely understood by the collective, and thus incorporated into langue. Despite such internal confusion and occasional inconsistencies, Saussure maintained a constant emphasis on structure: the interdigitated and oppositional nature of systems of sound, of systems of meaning, and of the sign systems they define. For this, Saussure is widely recognized as the founder of structural linguistics.

Intellectual Biography

Ferdinand Mongin de Saussure was born in Geneva, Switzerland, to a Calvinist family famous for having produced a long line of accomplished scientists and scholars. During his lifetime, Saussure published only one work of lasting note. Finished and printed when he was only 21, his *Memoire sur le système primitif des voyelles dans les langues indo-européennes* (Dissertation on the Primitive Vowel System in the Indo-European Languages) employed the rigorous comparative method developed by his

mentors at the University of Leipzig, where he had gone at the age of 19 after a year of studying Latin, Greek, and Sanskrit at the University of Geneva.

Saussure's Leipzig professors were the most prominent of a group of mostly German Indo-Europeanists known as *Junggrammatiker* (Young Grammarians), who were doing fierce battle with other linguists of the time regarding the regularity of sound changes in the Indo-European languages. The neo-grammarians (as the *Junggrammatiker* are known in English) held that changes in the pronunciation of words follow a strictly regular pattern: A change in a given sound simultaneously affects all of the words in which the conditions for that change are met. Apparent exceptions to this principle, the neo-grammarians insisted, could be resolved by a more careful and detailed examination of the conditions and timing of the changes observed. For example, a sound in initial position in a word may undergo a shift without affecting that same sound in the middle or at the end of a word. This principle eventually proved to be overstated: Some changes do take place in only one or a few words and spread gradually, if at all, to words that the neo-grammarian hypothesis would predict they should apply to immediately and without exception. But the neo-grammarians succeeded in resolving a number of otherwise irregular patterns of sound change. And the strict regularity of relations among the sounds in a language at a given point in time became a key component and arguably the guiding principle for many other aspects of the as yet unborn Saussurean structuralism.

On the basis of observed but previously inexplicable variations in the vowel systems of languages in the Indo-European family, Saussure's *Memoire* put forward a reconstruction of the sound system of the family's common ancestor that contained consonantal elements, which Saussure called *sonorant coefficients*, later called *laryngeals*, which were absent from all the then known members of the family. This revolutionary departure from previous work in the field provoked skeptical displeasure from his professors at Leipzig, who found it far too speculative. They nevertheless awarded Saussure a doctorate in 1880, but only after he submitted a dissertation on the genitive absolute in Sanskrit that he wrote during a year of study at the University of Berlin. Shortly afterward, Saussure took a position at the École Pratique des Hautes Études in Paris, but after a decade, he had not managed to rise above the rank of *maître de conférences* (assistant/associate professor or senior lecturer). In 1891, he accepted a professorship at the University of Geneva, where he spent the rest of his career.

Although the controversial reconstruction in the *Memoire* was largely vindicated in 1927 by means of newly discovered inscriptions in Hittite, and would therefore have sufficed to put Saussure's name on the all-time list of brilliant historical linguists, none of Saussure's writings during his lifetime explain the depth and breadth of Saussure's long-term intellectual impact. This derives overwhelmingly from lectures he gave late in his life. Until the end of his fifth decade, Saussure's teaching, like his few writings, had focused entirely on Indo-European historical linguistics. It was only with the unexpected death of a colleague that Saussure, in 1907, took up responsibility for a first-year course in linguistics, which he taught three times before his death from cancer at the age of 55. Not long after, his colleagues and students, impressed by the originality and scope of Saussure's lectures, pieced together and expanded on Saussure's and his students' surviving notes to create the *Cours de linguistique générale* (Course in General Linguistics, 1916; revised 1922).

The *Cours*

Edited by Charles Bally and Albert Sechehaye, who became in turn the successors to Saussure's Geneva professorship, the *Cours* gave rise to innumerable and often contradictory commentaries. The *Cours* not only smooths over problematic discrepancies among Saussure's three series of lectures—not always in favor of the later versions—but also contains material not found in anyone's notes, thus ensuring a continuing debate over Saussure's actual beliefs and original intent. Even so, the *Cours* came for many to define the field of linguistics and to contribute vitally to the intellectual movement known as structuralism, characterized by key ideas such as langue versus parole (mentioned above), diachrony versus synchrony, signifier and signified, the arbitrariness of the sign, meaning versus value, and syntagmatic versus paradigmatic. Although each of these ideas can be described in turn, they are interdependent in ways that exemplify the central tenet of Saussurean theory: that any system of

signs—linguistic theory included—consists of inextricably interrelated components.

Langue Versus Parole

To recapitulate briefly, Saussure defined langue as the largely homogeneous, socially shared knowledge of how to interpret the signs of a given language, while parole, which provides the observable evidence on which linguistic description depends, is the heterogeneous, idiosyncratic linguistic output of individual users of a language.

Saussure's langue/parole distinction has probably been more misunderstood than any other distinction in modern linguistics. Chief among the sources of misunderstanding is Saussure's observation in the *Cours* that langue is the social part of language, beyond the control of individuals, who depend on its shared nature to make their parole intelligible to others. This identification of langue as a social fact resonated with the work of Émile Durkheim and others who sought to identify values and social structures that transcend the individual and exercise control over the thoughts and the behavior of people in a given society. However, as shown by Saussure's clear localization of langue in the receptive portion of each individual's language-processing system, the notion that langue resides in a realm of reality outside of individual members of a speech community in no way corresponds to Saussure's clear intent. Furthermore, when Saussure goes on to observe that parole lies solely in the domain of the individual, with no two speakers employing exactly the same connections between meanings and sounds in their speaking, this does not mean that parole has no social effects. Parole is after all the sole source of changes in langue, as new meaning-to-sound connections come to be used by other speakers and, over time, take their place in the shared langue of the community. Thus, some individual facts become social facts in Saussure's theory.

Another common misconstrual of the langue/parole distinction consists of equating it to Noam Chomsky's famous competence/performance distinction. On this reading, langue loses its place in receptive language processing and becomes a set of abstract structure-defining rules (in Chomsky's view, a *generative grammar*), which somehow apply in both receptive and expressive processing, while parole becomes the victim of innumerable factors that impinge on the perfect realization of langue in listening and speaking. This bears no similarity to anything Saussure is known or thought to have said or believed. Clearly, despite the best efforts of Saussure and the many proponents of his ideas, the auditory image of the word langue has as yet failed to become associated with a shared concept in the langue of the speech community known as Academe, thus disconfirming Saussure's claim that linguistic signs are by definition shared.

Diachronic Versus Synchronic Study of Signs

To understand diachronic patterns of change in signs over time, we must first possess accurate synchronic descriptions of sign systems at particular points in time.

This distinction grew directly out of Saussure's training by the neo-grammarians. The regularity of sound change discerned by the neo-grammarians derives, Saussure believed, from the synchronic structure of a language at a particular point in time: A system of sounds constitutes not merely a helter-skelter collection but rather a well-tuned constellation of what is usually a very small set of distinctive sounds. The exclusive focus on the synchronic description of language by many linguists since Saussure, unheard of in prior generations, clearly shows the impact of this fundamental shift of attention.

Another effect of the diachronic/synchronic distinction relates to matters of prescriptive grammar and word usage. Would-be rule givers cannot legitimately appeal to the diachronic origins of particular constructions or words as the basis for condemning or condoning their deployment by present-day members of a speech community: The "proper" use of a language is strictly and entirely determined by langue, which prescribes how the members of that community understand it. If that understanding changes over time, then the language has changed.

Signifier and Signified

This pair defines every sign; in language, the pair consists of an auditory image and an associated concept.

Despite extensive discussion in the *Cours* of physiological-articulatory aspects of speech sounds, and occasional use of dual or bidirectional arrows (some of which were erroneously added by the editors of the *Cours*) to show the connections between

signifiers and signifieds, Saussure explicitly states that langue (the proper primary object of linguistic interest) is located in the receptive rather than the executive part of the human brain. Drawing directly on the work of the French surgeon Paul Broca and the German neuropathologist Carl Wernicke of the last decades of the 19th century, Saussure identifies the executive portion of language in what is now known as Broca's area in the left frontal lobe of the cortex and the receptive portion in Wernicke's area in the left temporal lobe. It is in the latter that auditory images (constructed in Heschl's gyrus immediately below Wernicke's area) become associated with concepts (which, we now know, triggers a host of additional semantic processing in the posterior lobes). Later linguists, most notably Edward Sapir, maintained the primacy of the receptive mode of language, but many, including Leonard Bloomfield, abandoned this principle, and by the last decades of the 20th century, with the rise of generative grammar in the work of Noam Chomsky and his followers, most descriptive linguistics took either a processing-neutral or an execution-oriented approach.

The Arbitrariness of the Linguistic Sign

Partial exceptions to this principle exist in the form of onomatopoetic words (buzz, oink, plink, etc.) and sounds (long vs. short; slip, slide, slurp, etc.), but even these differ across languages, thus confirming the lack of universal a priori connections between sounds and meanings. A warning must be borne in mind, however: Once a particular connection has been established, both the signifier and the signified are, to some extent, fixed; associating an existing signifier to a new signified creates ambiguity or confusion and creates a point of tension in the sign system. For example, once the signifier *south* has been associated with one of the four points of a compass, it becomes very unlikely that an attempt to associate it with a second of those points will stick, but the signifier *bank* is associated with both financial institutions and rivers. Such homonyms create little problems for understanding unless they occur in very similar contexts. If someone asks me if I saw a bat on the front lawn when I pulled into the driveway, I might well not know whether I am being asked about a flying rodent or a length of wood. When a particular ambiguity becomes frequent, speech communities can resolve it by adopting a new signifier for one or another of the signifieds to which it is attached, but existing tensions nevertheless often persist, and new ambiguities arise over time.

Because of the arbitrariness of signs, the association of signifiers to signifieds must be acquired anew in every generation through exposure to language input. At the same time, this sociocultural transmission makes possible the inevitable and constant shifts in connections between signifiers and signifieds that result from changes in sound systems and the *value* of signs (see below) brought about by the multifarious structures and functions of parole.

The Meaning Versus the Value of a Sign

A sign's *meaning*, with respect both to its reference to a particular object, event, or quality in the world and to what it conveys regarding that referent in a given instance of use in parole, is shaped by circumstance, while its *value* depends on how it contrasts in conceptual function with other signs in langue, the entire sign system. Meanings, as products of parole, are rich in contextual content while values, as elements of langue, are minimalist distinctive semantic features that serve to distinguish signs from each other. An example is the word *dog*, the value of which is simply the set of characteristics that distinguish members of the canine species from other species and from other physical objects, while its meaning in the sentence "Suddenly the dog jumped up and came running toward the open door" will depend on the hearer's or reader's general and specific knowledge of how dogs move and why this particular dog might be running to this particular door.

This feature of Saussurean theory, without acknowledgment, has become well-known to the 21st-century linguists in the design of neural networks for the modeling of language processing (see, e.g., Hudson, 2007). As they undergo what network modelers call "spreading activation," the nodes in these networks act very much like Saussure's "values" as they, along with input from other sources, trigger the activation of increasing numbers of semantic nodes to result in a full-blown "meaning" as a configuration of activated nodes. Notice, too, that the train of thoughts that might arise as the result of receiving a sign clearly goes well beyond the minimalist workings of langue: Saussure did not claim that langue could account

for the explosion of interpretive events but merely the first-phase mapping of signifiers onto the values of their respective signifieds. This same modesty applies to neurolinguists' claims about what happens in Wernicke's area: Words are recognized there as meaning-triggering units, but the full interpretation of a received utterance can involve vastly larger expanses of the cortex.

Syntagmatic Versus Paradigmatic Relations Among Signs

Every sign relates both syntagmatically to other signs that might occur before or after it in a syntactic or other linear construction and paradigmatically to signs that might replace it in a particular position in such a construction.

In other words, syntagmatic relations necessarily exist among the signs that occur in a particular sequence of signs, while paradigmatic relations exist among the signs that might be placed into each of the slots in that sequence. For example, the verb-object relation between *love* and *peace* in the sentence *I love peace* is syntagmatic, while the synonym-antonym relations between *love* and *hate* and between *peace* and *war* in the sentences *I love peace* and *I hate war* are paradigmatic. In the end, the syntagmatic and paradigmatic relations among signs—and also among the elements of a sound system—are what constitute the formal and functional oppositions that make them a structured system as opposed to a mere collection.

By the middle of the 20th century, these two analytic dimensions had gradually become the basis for description of what structural linguists recognized as separate "levels" of structure in language (see "Prague School of Linguistics"). It was already clear that the syntagmatic/paradigmatic distinction applied not only to sign systems as a whole but also to the perceptible constituents of signs, that is, signifiers: Syntagmatic relations exist among paradigmatically related elements in the sequential ordering of articulatory gestures and auditory cues ("distinctive phonetic features") and individual speech sounds ("phonemes"), as well as among meaningful strings of sounds ("morphemes" or "words"), or "signs" as linkages of signifiers to signifieds. By extension, these same syntagmatic/paradigmatic relations can be seen in a cascade of increasingly complex forms ("sentences" and "discourses") constructed from simpler signs and also in the semantic values of words, which can be broken down into "sememes," such as male versus female or fast versus slow. The most extensive elaboration of this approach can be found in the work of Sydney Lamb and his students. Parallels also exist in analysis of the structure of pragmatic interactions and narratives, which can be broken down into interdependent "speech acts," such as conversations containing pairs such as question versus request or acceptance versus denial, or stories with sections identifiable as exposition, development, climax, and dénouement. The last examples show why structural linguistics has had such a profound impact in the field of literary criticism.

Saussurean Theory Beyond the Study of Language

Applications of the principles described above have occurred in a wide variety of scholarly disciplines. Within anthropology, understanding of archaeological remains, nonverbal communication, myths and rituals, and a host of other cultural artifacts and practices have benefited from structural semiotic analysis. The structural approach gave rise not only to the structural anthropology of Claude Lévi-Strauss and the various branches of structuralist theory and reactions to it that arose over the past century, but also to rich developments such as cognitive and symbolic anthropology (see Colby, Fernandez, & Kronenfeld, 1981; D'Andrade, 1995) and biogenetic structuralism (see Laughlin & d'Aquili, 1974). In fact, for field after field across the arts and sciences, it is hard to imagine how they would look in the absence of the principles articulated by Ferdinand de Saussure.

H. Stephen Straight

See also Bloomfield, Leonard; Boas, Franz; Chomsky, Noam; Comparative Linguistics; Deconstruction; Descriptive Linguistics; Jakobson, Roman O.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Poststructuralism; Prague School of Linguistics; Sapir, Edward; Semiotics; Structuralism; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Colby, B., Fernandez, J. W., & Kronenfeld, D. B. (1981). *Toward a convergence of cognitive and symbolic anthropology.* New York, NY: Blackwell.

Culler, J. (1986). *Ferdinand de Saussure.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

D'Andrade, R. (1995). *The development of cognitive anthropology.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
Harris, R. (2004). *Saussure and his interpreters* (2nd ed.). Edinburgh, UK: Edinburgh University Press.
Hockett, C. F. (1987). *Refurbishing our foundations* (Current Issues in Linguistic Theory, 56). Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.
Hudson, R. A. (2007). *Language networks: The new Word Grammar.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.
Joseph, J. E. (2012). *Saussure.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.
Lamb, S. M. (1999). *Pathways of the brain: The neurocognitive basis of language* (Current Issues in Linguistic Theory, 170). Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.
Laughlin, C. D., & d'Aquili, E. (1974). *Biogenetic structuralism.* New York, NY: Columbia University Press.
Sapir, E. (1921). *Language: An introduction to the study of speech.* New York, NY: Harcourt, Brace & World.
Saussure, F. de. (1916). *Cours de linguistique générale* [Course in general linguistics] (2nd ed.). Paris, France: Payot.

Scapes

Scapes are a set of topographical metaphors that played a key role in the anthropology of globalization as it was developed in the 1990s. The concept is inextricably linked to the work of the anthropologist Arjun Appadurai. He first introduced the idea in his 1990 article "Disjuncture and Difference in the Global Cultural Economy" and subsequently refined it, and it became the cornerstone of his book *Modernity at Large*, published in 1996. Like many other anthropologists at the time, Appadurai was looking for a new descriptive language to capture how cultural globalization cuts across traditional political and social boundaries while cultural reproduction is occurring outside the nation-state and supposedly stable cultural entities. This entry describes the theoretical importance of scapes for disentangling the dynamics of global processes.

In his attempt to capture the shifting interconnections between the local and the global, Appadurai characterizes the global cultural economy as a complex, overlapping, and disconnected order that is highly unpredictable. Global cultural flows of capital, goods, information, and people occur in and through the disjunctures between five dimensions, which he terms "scapes"—ethnoscapes, technoscapes, financescapes, mediascapes, and ideoscapes. As a scape refers to both a "scene" and a "view," the notion lends itself expediently to analyzing the way people experience and understand their world(s), thereby superseding standard geographical thinking in social cultural analysis. Importantly, Appadurai does not see scapes as parts of a united global system. They interrelate but are not causally ordered; no single organizing principle rules. Together, scapes provide a framework for making sense of transnational cultural flows and a way of connecting the deterritorializing forces of globalization with the situated production of specific localities.

Ethnoscapes refer to all people making up the globalized world in which we live (although Appadurai privileges mobile groups such as tourists, immigrants, refugees, exiles, and guest workers). The prefix "ethno" refers to people rather than strictly to ethnicity. Ethnoscapes are the landscapes of group identity, no longer bound to certain territorial locations. *Technoscapes* consist of highly mobile (and mobilizing) technologies, particularly new information and communication technologies, facilitating the movement of information, images, and sounds at high speeds across unlikely parts of the world. *Financescapes* refer to the transnational culture associated with global financial markets and mobile forms of capital. *Mediascapes* consist of the movement of information throughout the world and to the images of the world created by the global media and culture industries. Finally, *ideoscapes* are the global flows of ideologies, both of states and of political-social movements explicitly oriented to capturing state power, or a piece of it.

Scapes, by analogy to landscapes, are given material shape and meaning by human action. They are the results of global processes at any given time but are not the processes themselves. The processes are specifiable "flows" (e.g., mobilities and relations). The sheer speed, scale, and volume of these flows are so great that the disconnections they produce have become central to the politics of global culture. The visual metaphor of scape signifies how flows are understood from the perspectives of sociohistorically situated groups and individuals. It points to the fluid, irregular relationship between the local and the translocal. Far from providing a rigid taxonomy, the various scapes indicate that these are not objectively given relations that look the same from

every angle of vision but, rather, deeply perspectival constructs, inflected by the historical, linguistic, and political situatedness of different sorts of actors: nation-states, multinationals, diasporic communities, interest groups, villages, neighborhoods, families, and individuals.

As Henrietta Moore has noted, the notion of scape as a metaphor explicitly moves away from part-whole relationships. One of its great strengths is its commitment to the idea of flow, processes, interconnections, experiences, and imagination at the expense of units, entities, systems, and subsystems. Far from being mutually exclusive, scapes and flows continually intersect, with the former providing a partial structure—a global order—within which fluidity can emerge and thrive. Whereas Appadurai's original theory assumes that static units are the opposite of flows, Heyman and Campbell propose a processual geography to understand how flows can create, reproduce, and transform geographic spaces. Rather than seeing flows as disconnected and thus implying causal equality among different scapes, Hayman and Campbell give greater weight to flows of capital, especially financial capital, and to a lesser extent to centralized political power, than to other flows and scapes. This elaboration of Appadurai's model moves beyond a list of globally settled scapes, paying more attention to global inequalities and the continuing importance of boundaries.

In sum, the notion of scapes offers a useful tool to analyze the complex play between fluidity and fixity in global cultural flows, in a context where physical borders no longer necessarily sustain locality. The contribution of scapes is that they provide an alternative spatial conceptualizing of the present. By using the notion of scapes, we can explore the dynamics of various place-making flows, from the personal to the institutional and from the local to the national, transnational, global, and diasporic. Appadurai is to be credited with introducing this concept in anthropology. His model not only offers multiple flows and scapes but also insists on their empirical and analytical separation. This is particularly helpful in opening up multiple approaches to the study of global mobilities. With the loss of place as a dominant metaphor for culture goes a methodological redirection from order to nonorder, which allows anthropologists to capture not only mobilities in the landscape but also the processes of deterritorialization and reterritorialization that these mobilities involve.

Noel B. Salazar

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Globalization Theory; Mobility

Further Readings

Appadurai, A. (1990). Disjuncture and difference in the global cultural economy. *Public Culture, 2*(2), 1–24.

———. (1996). *Modernity at large: Cultural dimensions of globalization.* Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Heyman, J. M., & Campbell, H. (2009). The anthropology of global flows: A critical reading of Appadurai's "Disjuncture and Difference in the Global Cultural Economy." *Anthropological Theory, 9*(2), 131–148.

Moore, H. L. (2004). Global anxieties: Concept-metaphors and pre-theoretical commitments in anthropology. *Anthropological Theory, 4*(1), 71–88.

Schapera, Isaac

Isaac Schapera (1905–2003), the South Africa–born anthropologist, compiled the richest and most authoritative body of ethnographic work on the Tswana people of Botswana and played a key role in developing anthropological perspectives on social change.

Biography and Major Works

A child of immigrant Jewish parents, Schapera was born in a small town in the arid northern region of Cape Colony, South Africa, where there was a large population of indigenous Khoekhoe people. He enrolled at the University of Cape Town with an intent to study law, but an interest in early European travelers' accounts of southern Africa led him to pursue a master's degree in anthropology under A. R. Radcliffe-Brown. In 1926, he joined the London School of Economics (LSE) to pursue a doctorate under the supervision of C. G. Seligman and was one of a group of students at the LSE who went on to pursue outstanding careers (Raymond Firth, Audrey Richards, E. E. Evans-Pritchard, Gordon Brown, and Lucy Mair, among others). Returning to teach in South Africa in 1930,

Schapera played key roles at the University of the Witwatersrand and subsequently at the University of Cape Town in training numerous prominent scholars and promoting the study of Africa in South African universities.

Schapera returned to the LSE in 1950 as chair of the Department of Anthropology, where he played an important part in the institutional development of anthropology and African studies in the United Kingdom and the British Commonwealth. Schapera retired from the LSE in 1969, having been instrumental in transforming anthropology from a small-scale movement of intellectuals in the 1920s and 1930s into an established profession.

Schapera was an enormously prolific scholar. In 1930, he published *The Khoisan People of South Africa*, the first synthetic study of the Khoekhoe. From 1928 to 1943, he carried out a comprehensive set of ethnographic studies of the Tswana in the Bechuanaland Protectorate (now Botswana). This meticulously documented corpus of work, together with his unpublished field notes and carefully annotated genealogies, has served as a point of reference for all later scholarship on the Tswana. Schapera's *Handbook of Tswana Law and Custom* (1938) is a recording of "customary" legal practices commissioned by the government at the request of chiefs who were concerned that the next generation of chiefs would be unfamiliar with these practices. Judicial authorities in Botswana continue to make reference to the *Handbook* in their rulings. *Migrant Labour and Tribal Life* (1947) documents the impact on economic and kinship arrangements of the large-scale migration of young men to South African mines and farms. Schapera's ethnography *Married Life in an African Tribe* (1940) is a candid presentation of sexuality and gender relations in the village of Mochudi, where labor migration, economic hardship, and the modernizing efforts of chiefs and Christian clergy were bringing about rapid transformations. Schapera also carried out historical work, editing and publishing the papers of the 19th-century British missionaries Robert and Mary Moffat and David Livingstone.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Schapera routinely disclaimed interest in anthropological theory, preferring to consider his work as describing social situations as he encountered them. Nonetheless, his approach to ethnographic description was itself revolutionary in that it focused on social change. Bronisław Malinowski, one of Schapera's teachers in his early years at the LSE, had promoted analyses of "traditional" social life that tended to overlook the effects of missionary Christianity and global capitalism. Schapera turned away from this approach at an early point, arguing that missionaries, traders, administrators, chiefs, commoners, and diviners had to be considered parts of a single social system. This theoretical approach had political significance in the context of the segregationist and, later, apartheid policies in South Africa, whose anthropological promoters concentrated on describing African groups in isolation from political and economic contexts. Schapera's focus on what he termed the "whole structure" of social life helped indirectly to inspire later generations of anthropologists to focus on world systems of production and consumption. More immediately, Schapera's documentation of inadequate land bases for African farmers and the disruptive effects of labor migration provided important empirical data for discrediting the intellectual premises of apartheid, namely that "White" and "Bantu" were separate cultures that were to "develop along their own lines."

Schapera's book *Tribal Innovators: Tswana Chiefs and Social Change 1795–1940* (1970), a revision of work composed in the 1940s, exemplifies his focus on the contingent acts and processes that give rise to social changes. The book documents the decisions chiefs made to discontinue initiation rites, ban polygyny, and build schools. Schapera's historical awareness led him to trace current arrangements to contingent decisions made by particular persons. While this approach to historical change had largely fallen out of anthropological fashion at the time of publication, when Marxist approaches predominated, the book reflected the empirical grounding Schapera brought to his descriptions of change.

Schapera's Legacy

Schapera's name is renowned in Botswana, where he is widely recognized as a recorder of histories and practices that might have been largely forgotten but for his efforts. Schapera made outstanding contributions to the development of literature in the Setswana language. Two Setswana texts on laws

and tribal histories published by Schapera in 1938 and 1940 are used in the Botswana school system. Schapera's *Praise-Poems of Tswana Chiefs* (1965) records the recollections of elders in the 1930s of the oral poetry composed to praise and criticize chiefs as far back as the 17th century. This text also is widely read and admired in Botswana today. Finally, Schapera's legacy rests on the large number of prominent Africanist scholars whom he helped train and with whom he shared his voluminous research notes.

Frederick Klaits

See also Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Firth, Raymond; London School of Economics; Mair, Lucy; Malinowski, Bronisław; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Richards, Audrey; Seligman, Charles Gabriel; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Comaroff, J. L., Comaroff, J., & James, D. (Eds.). (2007). *Picturing a colonial past: The African photographs of Isaac Schapera*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Kuper, A. (2001). Isaac Schapera—a conversation: Part I. South African beginnings. *Anthropology Today, 17*(6), 3–7.

———. (2002). Isaac Schapera—a conversation: Part II. The London years. *Anthropology Today, 18*(1), 14–19.

Scheper-Hughes, Nancy

Nancy Scheper-Hughes (1944–), professor of anthropology at the University of California, Berkeley, is a prominent and prolific scholar known for her work in critical medical anthropology, her courageous fieldwork and exploration of ethics, her public exposure of criminal activities taking place in human organs trafficking, and her evocative anthropological writing. In her anthropological career, she has examined schizophrenia among rural bachelors in Ireland, hunger, impoverishment, child mortality, the violence of everyday life in rural Brazil, and structural violence and health inequities evident in human organ trafficking in Moldova, Israel, South Africa, and the United States. Her writings and her mentorship have launched generations of inspired anthropologists, both in the United States and globally. Overseas, she has given dozens of keynote addresses on violence, human trafficking, organized crime, dangerous and endangered youth, heretical methods, and undercover research. Scheper-Hughes is one of the most influential anthropologists of the past 30 years.

Biography and Major Works

Scheper-Hughes was born in an ethnically diverse working-class neighborhood in Brooklyn, New York, where she attended a Catholic school and then Queens College before joining the Peace Corps. After serving in the Peace Corps in Brazil in the early 1960s, Scheper-Hughes returned to the United States and participated in the Catholic Worker Movement and in civil rights organizations working in the U.S. South. She completed her undergraduate and doctoral degrees at the University of California at Berkeley under the tutelage of the anthropologist Hortense Powdermaker. After teaching briefly at Southern Methodist University, she was invited to return to Berkeley and has remained there since. In the course of her career, Scheper-Hughes has authored or edited at least 10 books and more than 160 scholarly articles.

Scheper-Hughes is the recipient of many grants, awards, and book prizes, including a Guggenheim Fellowship, the Margaret Mead Award, the Staley Prize, the Wellcome Medal from the Royal Anthropological Institute, and the William Sloan Coffin Award for moral leadership. Scheper-Hughes has taught in Paris, Manchester, and Cape Town and is a frequent keynote speaker at institutions and conferences across the globe. At Berkeley, she has served as chair of the anthropology department, interim director of Latin American studies, director of the doctoral program in medical anthropology, and dean of the division of freshman and sophomore studies. She is currently Chancellor's Professor of Medical Anthropology and the cofounder and director of Organs Watch, an organization that grew out of the Bellagio Task Force; she monitors the social and economic organization of the organs trade and advocates for the human rights of populations made vulnerable by this activity. She also serves on the World Health Organization advisory panel on global transplant safety and ethics and is a member of the Asian Task Force on Combating Traffic in Humans for Organs.

Her first book, the 1979 *Saints, Scholars and Schizophrenics: Mental Illness in Rural Ireland*, won the Margaret Mead Award in 1980. Scheper-Hughes's book caused a stir; the residents of the small village

of An Clochán took offense at what they saw as a public airing of community secrets. Scheper-Hughes eventually reflected on her Ireland research experience in a number of articles, exploring the contours of how anthropology is—whether it wants to be or not—centrally engaged in a number of ethical pursuits. Scheper-Hughes has argued that anthropologists ought to be scribes, witnesses, cultural critics, friends, and collaborators in pursuit of diverse forms of social justice and that much of our activity will be—even should be—controversial. Scheper-Hughes's own work has evolved to advocate for different, and increasingly radical, approaches to methods and ethnographic writing—beginning with "good enough," progressing to "militant," and, more recently, speaking to "heretical" methods—referring to her undercover work with the police and prosecutors in Brazil, Turkey, South Africa, and the United States to prosecute illicit networks of human traffickers.

Her second major book, *Death Without Weeping: The Violence of Everyday Life in Brazil*, published in 1992, is an internationally recognized *tour de force*. A classic in anthropology and seminal in the fields of medical anthropology and the anthropology of Brazil, *Death Without Weeping* won the Staley Prize from the School for American Research and was a finalist for the National Book Critics Circle Award, a rare achievement for an academic publication. The book communicates the historical conditions—specifically, colonialism, the slave trade, and the sugar trade—that transformed vast parts of northeast Brazil into a land of hunger seemingly abandoned by modernity, a region where impoverished mothers are cared for neither by the state nor by the political-economic system that sustains brutal inequalities. Scheper-Hughes argued that in these circumstances some mothers are unable to care for their children and must ration their emotional and economic resources in favor of those who appear to have a knack (*jeito*) for life. *Death Without Weeping* politicized generations of anthropologists to use their expertise to bring social injustices to light, using ethnographic writing to examine and advocate for those who are less powerful.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Scheper-Hughes's contributions to anthropology build on and deepen themes first developed in her earlier ethnographic work. For example, following the themes first developed in *Death Without Weeping*, Scheper-Hughes (and coauthor Philippe Bourgois) redefined anthropology's understanding of human violence, broadening the definitions and the outlines of what contemporary anthropology can address; Scheper-Hughes has developed multiple foci for studying violence, including the everyday, medical-psychiatric, symbolic, and political aspects that have pushed anthropologists to comprehend violence in a much broader and philosophically relevant perspective.

In her more recent work, Scheper-Hughes has uncovered criminal aspects of the global traffic in humans for their transplantable organs and tissues. This work not only speaks to the ways in which the world's poor are once again treated as disposable but also points to how trafficking illuminates human approaches to death and dying. Scheper-Hughes intends to elaborate fully on this work in two projected books, the first on the global traffic in organs and the second on the Argentine "dirty war" of the 1970s and 1980s. Scheper-Hughes has written a number of seminal articles on themes that build on her earlier work. For example, in "The Mindful Body: A Prolegomenon to Future Work in Medical Anthropology," Scheper-Hughes and Margaret Lock examine how medical anthropology might better conceptualize the body as tripartite, as (1) phenomenally experienced, (2) socially constructed and symbolized, and (3) created as an artifact of social and political control. In Scheper-Hughes's research tracking the global traffic in human organs, she extends this tripartite extension to include the idea of a body in debt under conditions of late capitalism and the divisions among and between the global rich and poor. In particular, she explores the idea of neo-cannibalism, the possibility that because of economic inequalities, body parts are made available in ways that suggest that the poor are being exploited for their organs. This idea is also visible in her earlier work in *Death Without Weeping*, where the poor and disenfranchised of the community she studied believe that their body parts and organs are being snatched for medical research and profit, a rumor with historical grounding that Scheper-Hughes later came to document.

Scheper-Hughes's Legacy

Scheper-Hughes is a militant and critical medical anthropologist, known for her ability to debate

and write both persuasively and with great wit. She advocates for the transformative capabilities of anthropological writing and has a large following of admirers both within anthropology and far beyond. In a memorable debate that took place on the pages of *Current Anthropology*, titled "The Primacy of the Ethical: Propositions for a Militant Anthropology," Scheper-Hughes sets out the parameters of what an ethically grounded anthropology might look like, critiquing the idea that cultural relativism can be appropriately applied in contemporary anthropological settings that require new and much bolder forms of political and social commitments. A provocative interlocutor and courageous field-worker, Scheper-Hughes has produced an influential oeuvre that attempts to rattle anthropological complacency and to make anthropology intellectually vibrant and politically relevant, while producing new engagements for anthropology within a broader public.

Donna M. Goldstein

See also Applied Anthropology; Globalization Theory

Further Readings

Scheper-Hughes, N. (1979). *Saints, scholars, and schizophrenics: Mental illness in rural Ireland*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1992). *Death without weeping: The violence of everyday life in northeast Brazil*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1994). The last white Christmas: The Heidelberg pub massacre. *American Anthropologist, 96*(4), 805–832.

———. (1995). The primacy of the ethical: Propositions for a militant anthropology. *Current Anthropology, 36*(3), 409–440.

———. (2000). The global traffic in human organs. *Current Anthropology, 41*(2), 191–224.

———. (2004). Dangerous and endangered youth: Social structures and determinants of violence. *Annals of the New York Academy of Sciences, 1036,* 13–46.

———. (2004). Parts unknown: Undercover ethnography of the organs-trafficking underworld. *Ethnography, 5*(1), 29–73.

———. (2009, November). The tyranny and the terror of the gift. *Economic Sociology: The European Electronic Newsletter, 11*(1), 8–16.

———. (2010). The body of the terrorist: Body parts, biopiracy and the spoils of war at Israel's National Forensic Institute. *CounterPunch, 17*(15), 1–8.

———. (2011). Mr Tati's holiday and João's safari: Seeing the world through transplant tourism. *Body & Society, 17*(2–3), 55–92.

Scheper-Hughes, N., & Bourgois, P. (2004). Introduction: Making sense of violence. In *Violence in war and peace: An anthology* (pp. 1–32). Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Scheper-Hughes, N., & Lock, M. (1987). The mindful body: A prolegomenon to future work in medical anthropology. *Medical Anthropology Quarterly, 1*(1), 16–41.

Schneider, David M.

David Murray Schneider (1918–1995) was one of the most influential American anthropologists of the middle to late 20th century. He made important contributions to Micronesian ethnography and the understanding of marital alliance. With Clifford Geertz, he pioneered what came to be called "symbolic" or "interpretive" anthropology. From the 1960s through the mid-1970s, he was a powerful force in the University of Chicago's anthropology department. He was instrumental in founding the Association for Social Anthropology in Oceania. Beginning around 1970, he was responsible for deconstruction of kinship as a cultural category and, thereby, became arguably the most important precursor of postmodernism in American anthropology.

Early Life and Education

Schneider was born in Brooklyn, New York, in 1918. His parents were Eastern European immigrants and, during the Great Depression, members of the American Communist Party, who passed their leftist sympathies on to their son. David respected his father but had a difficult time with his mother and resented his younger brother. In an act of rebellion, he performed poorly in school, leading his parents to send him to a boarding school in Darien, Connecticut. After high school graduation, he entered Cornell University. He planned to study agricultural bacteriology but changed his major to anthropology after being introduced to the subject by R. Lauriston Sharp. At Cornell, he met his lifelong friend—and intellectual adversary—Ward Goodenough, as well as his future wife, Addy. David and Addy married on June 17, 1940, the day of their Cornell graduation.

After earning an MA at Cornell, Schneider joined Goodenough at Yale. There, he briefly studied psychoanalytic anthropology with Geoffrey Gorer, who introduced him to Margaret Mead. Before completing his degree, he was drafted into the army. His notes on the experience led to the publication of his first two articles, "The Culture of the Army Clerk" and "The Social Dynamics of Physical Disability in Army Basic Training."

Contributions to the Study of Kinship

On his discharge, Schneider entered Harvard's doctoral program in social relations, where he worked with Clyde Kluckhohn and the sociologists Talcott Parsons and George Homans. In collaboration with Kluckhohn and Henry Murray, he edited his first book, *Personality in Nature, Society, and Culture*, an important collection of essays in psychological anthropology. Fieldwork on the Micronesian island of Yap in 1947–1948 led him to consider kinship and conclude that his predecessors—W. H. R. Rivers, A. R. Radcliffe-Brown, George Peter Murdock, and others—had been fundamentally mistaken about kin terms.

Schneider's dissatisfaction with previous approaches to kinship led to a career-long preoccupation with the American kinship system. In his first publication on the topic, coauthored with Homans, he challenged the conventional distinction between vocative and referential kin terms (i.e., between terms like *dad*, which are used when directly addressing a relative, and terms like *father*, which are used when referring to a relative in the third person) and noted the variety of terms applied to relatives (e.g., *papa* and *old man*), many of them outside the realm of what anthropologists typically recognize as "kin terms." His critical approach ultimately led him to conclude that the definition of kinship was, itself, problematic.

Schneider's collaboration with Homans led to his first major public controversy. In *Marriage, Authority, and Final Causes*, Homans and Schneider disputed Claude Lévi-Strauss's explanation for the predominance of matrilateral over patrilateral cross-cousin marriage. Earlier, Radcliffe-Brown had noted a tendency for men in patrilineal societies to marry their mothers' brothers' daughters. He attributed this to a warm, emotionally close relationship in many patrilineal societies between a man and his sister's son, and suggested that a boy's sentimental attachment to his maternal uncle is transferred to the uncle's daughter. Since patrilineal societies are more common than matrilineal ones, matrilateral cross-cousin marriage is more common than the patrilateral variant.

In *The Elementary Structures of Kinship*, Lévi-Strauss argued (contra Radcliffe-Brown) that a cultural phenomenon such as unilateral cross-cousin marriage cannot be explained in terms of individual sentiments. Instead, he proposed that a rule directing men to marry their matrilateral cross-cousins is, for structural reasons, more productive of social solidarity than the reverse. His explanation works equally well with matrilineal or patrilineal descent and is, therefore, not tied to statistical vagaries.

Homans and Schneider objected that Lévi-Strauss had presented a final cause—that matrilateral cross-cousin marriage exists because it is "good for society." However, marriage is contracted by people, not societies, and Lévi-Strauss had said nothing about why a man would want to marry his matrilateral cross-cousin. The answer to that question, they contended, requires a search for an efficient cause, and for that, one must return to individual sentiments.

In 1962, Rodney Needham responded to Homans and Schneider with the publication of *Structure and Sentiment*. He argued that *The Elementary Structures* was about prescriptive rather than preferential marriage systems; and if a man had no choice but to marry his matrilateral cross-cousin, individual sentiments were irrelevant.

Schneider replied in 1965 by disavowing the central argument of his book with Homans but asserted that Needham was equally mistaken. From a structural viewpoint, he declared, it makes no difference how rigidly a rule is enforced; what matters is the rule's existence. Lévi-Strauss, he claimed, chose not to distinguish between prescriptive and preferential marriage systems because the difference is irrelevant to his argument. Four years later, Lévi-Strauss proclaimed in his preface to the English edition of *Elementary Structures*—whose translation had been overseen by Needham!—that Schneider was correct.

Culture as a Symbol System

Meanwhile, Schneider worked to refine the culture concept developed by Alfred Kroeber, Kluckhohn, and Parsons. Central to their view was culture's

separation from the biological organism, individual psyche, and social system. Notably, whereas the social system comprises patterns of behavior, culture is a system of meanings and symbols. Like language, it is an underlying code shared by a community's members. Just as knowledge of a language does not tell us what anyone will say, to understand a culture does not tell us what someone will do. People immersed in different cultures may act similarly for different reasons, and people sharing the same culture may behave quite differently if their situations differ.

Schneider defined culture as a system of symbols, and a symbol as anything that represents something else, where there is no necessary relationship between the representation and that which it represents. Since symbols are arbitrary social constructs, the existence of a symbol in one community does not ensure that it will be recognized in any other. Whether any construct exists cross-culturally is an empirical question; therefore, cultural documentation requires listening to one's informants and avoiding prior assumptions.

American Kinship

Perhaps Schneider's most widely cited book is *American Kinship: A Cultural Account*. It resulted from a survey of kin term use among Chicago residents. More important, it was intended to illustrate Schneider's idea of how to conduct and present a culturally sound ethnography. He attempted to eliminate prior assumptions, identify the meanings and symbols through which members of the community define their cultural units, and use his interpretive insight to discover the order underlying his informants' worldview. His analysis differed from the commonsense perspective held by most Americans, but it was intended to make their commonsense perspective intelligible to the critical observer.

Schneider argued that Americans use biological relatedness as a symbol in terms of which kinship is defined and differentiated from other cultural domains. The application of that symbol, however, is not dictated by biogenetic reality. People with no biogenetic relationship may be considered kin, while others who are biologically related may be denied kinship status.

American culture, Schneider proposed, encompasses two great orders, which he termed "nature" and "law." Kinship, he said, is unique in that it partakes of both. Its distinctive features are shared natural or biogenetic substance (order of nature) and a code for conduct involving diffuse and enduring solidarity (order of law). Americans speak of the first in terms of "blood" and the second by using expressions such as "relationship" and "love." The core symbol holding everything together is sexual intercourse, through which husband and wife express their love for one another, thereby creating a "relationship in law." In the process, they join their biological substance to create new relatives "by blood." Love between blood relatives such as parent and child is "cognatic love" and excludes sexual relations, which would be incest. Love between husband and wife is "conjugal love" and receives its highest expression in the act of "making love."

Where both biogenetic substance and diffuse, enduring solidarity are present, the relationship is clearly one of kinship. If only one component is present, one may or may not consider the person in question to be kin, and both positive and negative designations are correct according to the definitions and symbols that constitute American culture. "In-laws," for example, are expected to adhere to the appropriate code but not to share biogenetic substance. Therefore, Americans are divided as to whether or not in-laws are relatives. Similarly, adoptive relatives, characterized by solidarity but not shared substance, are sometimes differentiated from "real" relatives and sometimes considered to be "real relatives" of a special type. By contrast, a "natural" relative, such as a woman who gives up her child for adoption, shares biogenetic substance with the child but not diffuse, enduring solidarity. Americans may say that the woman is the child's mother because the natural relationship cannot be severed, or they may deny the mother-child relationship because the woman is not acting in a "motherly" way.

Schneider's argument that Americans define kinship in terms of an interplay between shared substance and diffuse, enduring solidarity led, a short time later, to his infamous contention that kinship as a cultural category does not exist at all.

Deconstruction of Kinship as a Cultural Category

Shortly after *American Kinship*'s publication, Schneider took his 1968 conclusions in unexpected

directions. In 1969, he announced that kinship, nationality, and religion in American culture are all defined in terms of shared substance (which he now termed "natural" rather than "biogenetic") and diffuse, enduring solidarity. However, if three cultural domains share the same defining features, then those features do not distinguish any one of them from the other two. And if the three domains are indistinguishable from one another, not one of them deserves the label "kinship." In 1972, he added that since kinship is an English word, if the category were to exist in any culture it should be in America's. Since kinship does not exist in American culture, Schneider argued, it does not exist in any culture anywhere. His last major work, *A Critique of the Study of Kinship*, explored the implications of kinship's nonexistence and how the illusion of its existence had distorted cultural analysis throughout the discipline's history.

Schneider's deconstruction of kinship as a cultural category discouraged others from pursuing the subject, and the past decades of the 20th century saw little research and publication in that area. However, by freeing kinship from its former biological constraints, he opened doors for feminist and gay anthropologists, and largely through their work, the subject has become reenergized in recent years.

In 1986, 2 years after the publication of his *Critique*, Schneider retired from the University of Chicago. He joined the anthropology department at the University of California, Santa Cruz, and remained there until his death a decade later.

Richard Feinberg

See also Goodenough, Ward H.; Kluckhohn, Clyde; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Murdock, George Peter; Needham, Rodney; Parsons, Talcott; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Rivers, W. H. R.

Further Readings

Feinberg, R., & Ottenheimer, M. (Eds.). (2001). *The cultural analysis of kinship: The legacy of David M. Schneider.* Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Homans, G. C., & Schneider, D. M. (1955). *Marriage, authority, and final causes: A study of unilateral cross-cousin marriage.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Kluckhohn, C., Murray, H. A., & Schneider, D. M. (Eds.). (1953). *Personality in nature, society, and culture.* New York, NY: Knopf.

Lévi-Strauss, C. (1969). *The elementary structures of kinship*. Boston, MA: Beacon Press. (Original work published 1949)

Needham, R. (1962). *Structure and sentiment: A test case in social anthropology.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Schneider, D. M. (1965). Some muddles in the models: Or how the system really works. In M. Banton (Ed.), *The relevance of models for social anthropology* (pp. 25–85; ASA Monograph, No. 1). London, UK: Tavistock.

———. (1968). *American kinship: A cultural account.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

———. (1969). Kinship, nationality, and religion in American culture: Toward a definition of kinship. In R. F. Spencer (Ed.), *Forms of symbolic action* (pp. 116–125). Seattle: University of Washington Press.

———. (1972). What is kinship all about? In P. Reining (Ed.), *Kinship studies in the Morgan centennial year* (pp. 88–112). Washington, DC: Anthropological Society of Washington.

———. (1984). A *critique of the study of kinship*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.

———. (1995). *Schneider on Schneider: The conversion of the Jews and other anthropological stories by David Schneider, as told to Richard Handler.* Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

Schneider, D. M., & Gough, K. (Eds.). (1961). *Matrilineal kinship*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Seligman, Charles Gabriel

Charles Gabriel Seligman (1873–1940) was a dedicated field-worker *par excellence* who laid the foundations of scientific ethnology in eastern New Guinea and Southern Sudan. By the early 1920s, he had conducted exploratory fieldwork in more locations than any other British anthropologist, and his detailed ethnographic documentation of hitherto undescribed peoples is an invaluable legacy. At the London School of Economics, he played a major role in the establishment of academic anthropology in Britain after World War I. As president of the Royal Anthropological Institute in 1923–1925, he increased its membership and enhanced its status as a repository of anthropological knowledge.

Born in London, the only child of a Jewish wine merchant, Seligman was a reclusive boy who found consolation in nature study and chemical experiments. Blessed by a keen aesthetic sensibility, his

early enthusiasm for butterfly collecting foreshadowed a lifelong passion for collection and classification, exemplified in later years by the delight he took in his private collection of early Chinese ceramics and bronze ware.

After qualifying in medicine in London, Seligman specialized in pathology, and his earliest publications were on tropical diseases. An interest in physical anthropology prompted him to persuade A. C. Haddon of Cambridge University to allow him to join the Torres Straits Expedition of 1898. Like most other members of this epoch-making expedition, Seligman approached anthropology as a biological scientist. While collecting data on medical conditions, he investigated curing practices and customs related to girls' puberty. He assisted W. H. R. Rivers's psychophysiological testing of the Islanders, and through firsthand experience of the methods Rivers used for sociological inquiry, he conceived an enthusiasm for ethnographic research.

Although he continued pathology research in London for several more years, the attraction of ethnographic fieldwork was irresistible. (As he once told his distinguished pupil Bronisław Malinowski, fieldwork is to anthropology what the blood of the martyrs is to the Church.) In 1904, Seligman led a three-man expedition to British New Guinea (later Papua New Guinea). From the Gulf of Papua in the west to the insular Massim in the east, he surveyed groups of coastal peoples, whom he classified in ethnological terms according to geographical, physical, linguistic, and cultural criteria. Although the main source of his data was native informants whom he interviewed through local interpreters or Pidgin English, his eclectic method was to assemble material from every available source, including government officers and missionaries. He devoted a monograph to each of the several groups he had studied, before integrating them into a single volume. *The Melanesians of British New Guinea* (1910) is an ethnographic compendium of vast comparative scope that established Seligman's reputation as a professional anthropologist.

In 1905, Seligman married Brenda Z. Salaman, who became his constant companion, a co–fieldworker and coauthor, as well as the mother of their two children. At Haddon's suggestion, the couple traveled to Ceylon (now Sri Lanka) to study remnant populations of Veddas, believed to be the island's aboriginal inhabitants. Reclusive hunters and honey gatherers, Vedda men jealously protected their womenfolk, so Seligman's only access to domestic life was through his wife. Under his tutelage, she became an accomplished ethnographer in her own right, acknowledged in their joint publication *The Veddas* (1911), a work of lasting historical value. Subsequently, Brenda Seligman published many theoretical articles on kinship and marriage, and although she never held an academic position, her anthropological career was crowned in 1959 by her election as president of the Association of Social Anthropologists.

Following his appointment in 1913 to the foundation chair in ethnology at the London School of Economics, Seligman taught and mentored a generation of cosmopolitan pupils, including Malinowski, Raymond Firth, E. E. Evans-Pritchard, Isaac Schapera, and Meyer Fortes, all of whom testified to his extraordinarily generous intellectual, moral, and financial support.

Like Haddon at Cambridge and R. R. Marett at Oxford, in addition to his regular teaching, Seligman offered professional training to British colonial officers bound for India or Africa. In 1915, he was commissioned in the Royal Army Medical Corps and joined Rivers in treating hospitalized shell-shocked soldiers. This harrowing work fostered a new understanding of human behavior under extreme stress and, along with his reading of Sigmund Freud and Carl Gustav Jung, fostered in Seligman an interest in psychopathology and the unconscious. Somewhat unfashionably, he maintained that psychoanalysis shed comparative light on folklore, mythology, and typical dream imagery—a topic he explored in his 1932 Huxley Memorial Lecture.

After their fieldwork among the Veddas, the Seligmans' partnership continued, with three government-sponsored expeditions to the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan between 1909 and 1922. These arduous pioneering field trips ventured into ethnographically uncharted regions. They systematically recorded the physical anthropology, prehistory, social organization, religion, and mortuary practices of many tribes, such as the Nuer, Dinka, Shilluk, Bari, Lotuko and Nuba, some of them incompletely "pacified." They investigated also several nomadic Arab tribes, notably the Kababish of Kordofan. Over a period of 2 decades, the Seligmans published their extensive research in articles and monographs, culminating in *Pagan Tribes of the Nilotic Sudan* (1932), a monumental conspectus that guided subsequent studies

of the region, notably by two of Seligman's own pupils, Evans-Pritchard and Siegfried Nadel. It was preceded by *Races of Africa* (1930), an ethnological synopsis of the continent that served as a standard reference text for 40 years.

In 1929, Seligman and his wife visited China and Japan, and his research during this and subsequent visits resulted in a number of publications on glass, porcelain, and bronze objects characteristic of Chinese and cognate civilizations. Troubled by poor health, Seligman resigned his London School of Economics professorship in 1934 but continued to publish and lecture on a variety of topics. In 1938, he accepted a 6-month visiting professorship at Yale University, and at the time of his death, he was assembling material for a book on the art of the Massim.

Seligman's wide-ranging interests extended to every branch of anthropology except linguistics. In addition to his seminal contributions to descriptive ethnography, he published on historical ethnology, physical anthropology, cross-cultural psychology, material culture, Egyptian archaeology, and Chinese antiquities. As an indefatigable collector of data, he insisted on empirical rigor and systematic documentation. His ethnological researches concerned with tracing prehistoric migrations and cultural diffusion in both New Guinea and Africa were conducted with scrupulous attention to factual evidence, and he rejected the fanciful conjectural reconstructions of Rivers and G. Elliot Smith. He was similarly skeptical of the evolutionists' search for origins. The functionalist doctrine promoted by Malinowski also failed to engage him (for his part, Malinowski disparaged Seligman's interests as "antiquarian"). Seligman's temperament and biological training inclined him to focus on facts, and he was uncomfortable with theoretical speculation; he preferred to deal with things that could be measured and classified. Among his many honors, Seligman was elected to the Royal College of Physicians in 1911 and to the Royal Society in 1919; he was awarded the Rivers Medal in 1925 and the Huxley Medal in 1932.

Michael W. Young

See also Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Firth, Raymond; Fortes, Meyer; Haddon, Alfred C.; London School of Economics; Malinowski, Bronisław; Rivers, W. H. R.; Royal Anthropological Institute; Schapera, Isaac; Torres Straits Expedition

Further Readings

Firth, R. (1975). Seligman's contributions to oceanic anthropology. *Oceania, 45*(4), 272–282.

Fortes, M. (1968). Seligman, C. G. *International Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences, 14,* 159–162.

Myers, C. S. (1941). Charles Gabriel Seligman, 1873–1940. *Obituary Notices of Fellows of the Royal Society, London, 3,* 627–646.

Seligman, C. G. (1910). *The Melanesians of British New Guinea.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Seligman, C. G., & Seligman, B. Z. (1932). *Pagan tribes of the Nilotic Sudan.* London, UK: Routledge.

SEMIOTICS

Semiotic theory has had an important impact on sociocultural anthropology during the last half of the 20th century and into the new millennium. Semiotics provides a way to study communication focusing not only on spoken or written language but also on all kinds of communicative signals or "signs." (That is why the field is called *semiotics*, based on the Greek words for signs and significance.) For example, when people communicate with each other, they may use gestures or intonation patterns as well as words to convey ideas. Semiotics provides an integrated framework for examining these as they operate together in conveying meaning. Or, to take another example, a semiotic analysis of law could encompass not just the written and spoken words of judges, lawyers, and litigants but also the physical configurations of courtrooms, jails, and other locations in which the law operates. The way judges and litigants dress, the symbols used in courtrooms to depict ideas of justice or national identity, and so forth, can all become part of a semiotic analysis. This combination of many aspects of communication has been particularly powerful for anthropologists.

Sociocultural anthropology in particular has struggled to find analytic approaches capable of dealing with both material life and symbolic or cultural meaning. Semiotics opened up an opportunity for anthropology to bridge these aspects of human life because it permits researchers to analyze everyday practices, material conditions, symbolic systems, culture, and language as inextricably linked parts of human experience. At the same time, the

development of semiotic approaches within anthropology also permitted sociocultural anthropologists to draw on the precision of anthropological linguistic analysis, and it allowed linguistic anthropologists to embed their analyses of language within the study of wider social phenomena. Thus, semiotics has forged new links between the subfields of linguistic and sociocultural anthropology.

A Brief History of Semiotics in Anthropology

Beginning in the early 1960s, the French anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss brought semiotics into the anthropological mainstream, drawing on the work of the linguists Roman Jakobson and Ferdinand de Saussure. Saussure (who used the term *semiology* rather than *semiotics*) had developed a powerful analysis of signs by focusing on the structural features of language. Saussurean linguistics distinguished between the abstract structure of language (*langue*—think of a grammar book, e.g., or the way sounds combine to make words) and the realization of that abstract structure through spoken language (*parole*—think of someone actually saying something).

Saussure focused on the way structured oppositions or differences in language generated meaning. Within the abstract structure of language, for example, meanings sometimes emerge through the presence or absence of certain features like sounds. Thus, English speakers distinguish between the words *but* and *bud* on the basis of a very small difference in the final sound. (Linguists would call this a difference in "voicing," where "t" is not voiced but "d" is; if you put your hand on your throat while saying these two words, you can feel this difference.) On the other hand, the very same difference in sound does not cause a change in meaning if it occurs after an initial *s* in English: We do not think of *stop* and *sdop* as meaning two different things. Thus, the internal relationships of sounds to one another in languages create differences in meaning. (This would be called a system of *phonemes*, or meaningful sound differences.) In the example above, the presence (+) or absence (–) of voicing can be analyzed as a contrastive set. Variation in meaning depends not only on whether voicing is present or absent but also on the position of a particular sound vis-à-vis other sounds (does it follow an "s" sound at the beginning of a word in English?).

Saussure's structural account of language meaning also relied on a dichotomy between the *signifier* (the form the sign takes—so, e.g., the sounds that make up the word *horse*) and the *signified* (this would be the *idea* that we get from hearing the word—in the previous example, an image or idea of a horse). Note that this theory does not include any mention of the objects in the world to which these signs refer; the "signified" is not any particular real horse, but it is rather the idea of a horse that a listener forms when hearing the word *horse*. A signifier and a signified together form an individual *sign*, which gets its meaning through its structural relationship with other signs. As we have seen in the example above, structured variations in sounds in the signifier create variations in the signified.

Lévi-Strauss applied Saussure's model of structured system-internal differences in language meaning to the wider arena of cultural signaling in general. For example, he analyzed elements of myth (*mythemes*) as contrastive components whose opposition created cultural meaning, arguing that this was parallel to the way phonemes or sounds generate linguistic meaning. Lévi-Strauss learned about Saussure's approach to analyzing language while studying with another famous linguist, Roman Jakobson. However, Jakobson took the position that there are important differences between the relatively clear (and internally structured) sound systems through which language works and the much messier (and contextually dependent) remainder of language. Jakobson was a member of the Prague school of linguists (or Prague Linguistic Circle), a group that stressed the importance of language *function* as opposed to only examining language form. They also urged that linguists study language as dynamic and changing over time (this was called a *diachronic* perspective, as opposed to the static, one-time [*synchronic*] snapshot that they viewed—some would argue mistakenly—as characteristic of Saussure's approach).

Lévi-Strauss's version of semiotic anthropology was criticized because it ignored many important differences between sound systems in language and broader structures of meaning in society. When we move from the difference between "t" and "d" (phonemes) to the difference between killing one's father and killing one's mother (mythemes), we run into many more aspects of context and shades of meaning. How we define mythemes is much less

straightforward than how we define voicing. In addition to this difficulty, structuralist approaches that focused on abstract systems of phonemes and grammatical categories within *langue* wound up missing the importance of *parole*, or the actual act of speaking. This was not only true for sociocultural anthropologists interested in social and cultural phenomena generally, it also applied to linguists who sought to understand only language in particular; as it turns out, grammar and abstract linguistic structures are only a small part of how language itself conveys meaning. In subsequent generations, both semiotic anthropology and anthropological linguistics moved on to do a better job of including the "in-action" aspects of language, society, and culture.

During the 1970s and 1980s, semiotic anthropology once again began to attract attention as it reemerged in new forms. The clearest call for a "semiotic anthropology" came from the work of Milton Singer and his colleague at the University of Chicago, Michael Silverstein. Like Lévi-Strauss, Singer drew on Saussurean linguistics, but he added a new element by also looking to the work of the semiotician Charles Sanders Peirce. Singer felt that Peirce's work would offer anthropology an important tool for linking the analysis of meaning to its social context.

Peirce's theory of signs included a component not found in Saussure's work. Like Saussure, he was interested in the form of the sign (what he called the "sign vehicle" or *representamen*) and the idea created in a listener's mind by hearing or reading that sign vehicle (what he called the *interpretant*). However, he also required that semiotic analysis include the study of the sign's "object"—the thing or concept that the sign stands for. Signs stand for their objects in different ways. For example, an architect's model of a planned building stands for that building by virtue of having a similar shape. Peirce called this kind of connection between sign and object *iconic*. Some signs, by contrast, signal their objects by virtue of having a spatiotemporal connection with them. An example of this kind of *indexical* or *pragmatic* relationship would be the connection between a pointing finger and the object to which the finger points. (The indexical connection is accordingly the most heavily dependent on immediate contexts.) Finally, some signs stand for their objects just by virtue of convention that makes it so: Most words have this kind of relatively arbitrary connection to their objects. For example, the sounds in English that make up the word *chair* have come to indicate the items of furniture that we sit on just because of linguistic convention. Peirce labeled this kind of conventional connection *symbolic*. (It is also referred to as *semantic* meaning, in contrast with the more heavily contextual *pragmatic* meaning.) Thus, signs can be icons, indexes, or symbols depending on the manner in which they connect with their objects.

In the new form of semiotic anthropology that emerged in the 1970s and 1980s, Singer and Silverstein combined Saussure's focus on language structure, on the one hand, with Peirce's interest in how signs connect with their objects, on the other. Their work demonstrated that Peirce's theory could push scholars to integrate issues of social context more systematically into the analysis of meaning, by requiring us to consider the relationship of sign vehicles and interpretants with their objects. Including Peirce's framework in a semiotic analysis, then, permits us to encompass but also move beyond studying the internal system of language. Through integrating the study of indexicality and pragmatics with other aspects of communication, a semiotic anthropology could now analyze not only the words people speak but also how, when, and where they talk—in other words, the entire sociocultural world opens up to this form of analysis.

Semiotic anthropology gained momentum during the 1980s and 1990s, drawing together multiple threads of work from various anthropological and other scholarly traditions. The work of the anthropological linguist Michael Silverstein, in addition to blending Saussure, Peirce, and Jackobson, drew on diverse roots from linguistics, psychology, analytical philosophy, anthropology, semiotics, sociolinguistics, cognitive science, and literary theory, building a framework for empirically grounded research on communication in social contexts. Semiotic anthropology as it developed also integrated the accumulated empirical knowledge of research on language in context from sociolinguistics, ethnomethodology, discourse analysis, conversation analysis, and approaches like frame analysis, derived from Irving Goffman's work. For example, the sociolinguist John J. Gumperz used the concept of "contextualization cues" to study the way speakers use verbal and nonverbal cues to index their contexts of speaking. Semiotic anthropologists have drawn on the idea of contextualization cues in studying the indexical

and pragmatic aspects of cultural communication. Indeed, as we will see, there is considerable overlap between the anthropological-linguistic and the sociolinguistic approaches.

Proposals for a renewed semiotic approach in anthropology proliferated during the last decades of the 20th century, including a suggested focus on the crucial role of "semiotic mediation" in society. This focus highlighted the ways in which signs and language mediate at many levels, from the basic mechanics of everyday interaction through the complexities of psychological development and of the dynamics of whole societies and cultures. On the one hand, these proposals drew from a long history of anthropological research on cultural symbols dating back to Franz Boas and Ruth Benedict and continuing through Clifford Geertz, Mary Douglas, and Victor Turner. On the other hand, the new semiotic approach also incorporated materialist traditions within anthropology and other social sciences. Even some of the leading Marxist scholars in anthropology began to incorporate this new kind of symbolic and semiotic analysis, as can be seen in the work, for example, of Jean and John Comaroff. The resulting rapprochement between symbolic and materialist analyses allows today's anthropologists to study power relationships and religious iconography, global economic dynamics and the semiotics of advertising, the reinvention of local tradition and new national political forms, the ideas and practices of nongovernmental organizations, and numerous other topics, now brought together in an integrated research framework.

Semiotic Anthropology at the Turn of the Millennium

The twin concepts of indexicality and pragmatics have played an important role in the novel integrated semiotic approach that continues to develop in the early decades of the new millennium. As noted, indexical meaning is the meaning that signs derive from their immediate spatiotemporal contexts. Thus, a pointing index finger means very little if we don't know anything about the context to which it points. Similarly, there are parts of speech that are more heavily indexical than others. Words like *this* or *that*, and *now* or *before* (known as *deictics*) rely heavily on the particular places and times in which they are spoken (and thus on pragmatic meaning). However, even with these kinds of heavily context-dependent words, there is always a residual semantic meaning that is not as reliant on a particular context of use. Take, for example, *now* versus *before*. To understand exactly what is meant by any particular use of those words, we would want to know about the context in which they were spoken. But apart from some context-specific information, we already know that when people say *now* to index a temporal moment, they are generally talking about the then current time, whereas when people say *before*, they are talking about a time previous to another referenced moment. This little nugget of residual "semantic" meaning, which derives from a more abstract and conventional source in language, informs our interpretation of the meaning of those words in particular contexts.

Here, we see the beginning of a very specific model of how social context and abstract symbolic or semantic meanings can interact to make communication—and community—possible. Scholars such as Elinor Ochs and Bambi Schieffelin have employed these models in tracking how children are socialized into their communities through language practices. In political and legal anthropology, scholars like Susan Gal, Susan Hirsch, and Justin Richland have demonstrated the vital role of semiotics in struggles over national identity, citizenship, and justice. Psychological anthropologists like John Lucy and Anna Wierzbicka have tracked the interaction of semiotics with psychological orientations. It is no exaggeration to state that almost every conceivable aspect of human social and cultural life can be analyzed using this new synthetic semiotic approach. On the one hand, the turn to semiotics has introduced somewhat more precision into such broadly conceived studies. On the other hand, as the noted linguistic anthropologist Alessandro Duranti has remarked, there is a risk that this broadening has diluted the technical rigor of classical linguistic anthropological analysis. Thus, although the new synthetic semiotic model has advanced anthropological understandings in important ways, it is not without its controversial aspects as well. If semiotic anthropology continues to draw more of the broadly trained sociocultural anthropologists into using linguistic analysis, the field will likely have to take a more careful account of the potential pitfalls lurking beneath rising popularity.

On the positive side, semiotic studies in anthropology have found increasingly creative ways to trace the linkages between microlevel details of local interactions and macrolevel developments reaching national and international arenas. Concepts like "footing" and "entextualization," studies of the interaction of performance and audience, research on voicing in its social context, and other similar analytic tools have advanced our understanding of how layers of communication help connect and constitute local and global orders.

One particularly fruitful avenue of research has focused on metalinguistics and linguistic ideology as key points at which linguistic and social structures and contexts meet. "Metalinguistic" analysis examines how language is used to reflect on itself (and this can happen at a conscious level, as when we speak explicitly about how language works, or at an unconscious level, as when linguistic categories operate to regiment our understanding of how language works without any conscious reflection on the process). This line of inquiry has examined the complex modes of linguistic calibration required for speakers to actually comprehend one another, tracing the minute-to-minute processes by which metalinguistic processes connect language and social contexts. At the same time, this kind of approach has also been useful for analyses of wider institutional and political processes as they work in and through language.

Specifically, semiotic anthropologists have developed the study of metalinguistic processes at new levels, largely through an extended consideration of how "metapragmatic" function and structure operate. If the pragmatic aspect of meaning depends on contexts of speaking, then speakers operate at a metapragmatic level when they use language to index (or point to) that context-dependent meaning. So, for example, if I were to say, "I'm not trying to be argumentative; I just want some clarification," I would be using language at a meta level to talk about (and try to affect) the pragmatic meaning of my utterance. I would be highlighting the way the very words I was speaking depend on context and audience. Note that exactly the same words can mean different things depending on what metapragmatic label is given them. If members of my audience hear my words as "argument" (a linguistic label for a context-dependent type of speech), they are likely to take in what I am saying differently than if they hear them as a "request for clarification" (also a metapragmatic label). Words like *request* and *argument* are heavily metapragmatic. When speakers overtly index their own speech in this way, they are employing *explicit* metapragmatics, often in an effort to name or control the context-dependent meaning of an utterance. (This conception of explicitness is not the same as J. L. Austin's category of "explicit performatives," although there is some overlap.)

Metapragmatic structuring ranges from explicit to implicit levels and is often not consciously reflected on by speakers. At a broad institutional level, metapragmatic levels of language take the form of *linguistic ideologies*, which have been described by semiotic anthropologists as clusters of metalinguistic ideas about the social functioning of language in context. Linguistic ideologies are generally socially shared among speakers in structured ways that reflect wider power relationships, stages of national or cultural or other struggle, and so on. For example, the idea that speaking a particular language is evidence of ethnic or national identity is a linguistic ideology. Close analysis of these kinds of ideologies can permit anthropologists to achieve more integrated studies of the intersection of local language use and entrenched social hierarchies (or ongoing social struggles over culture and identity). Linguistic ethnographies in institutions like schools can capture this intersection with vivid precision.

As semiotic anthropology moves further into this fascinating nexus of micro- and macrolevel processes, it stands poised to shed new light on important social and cultural problems, from the role of courts in social change, through struggles over gendered and racial identities, to the constitution of citizenship and safety in an ever more connected global arena.

Elizabeth Mertz

See also Ethnography of Speaking; Goffman, Erving; Gumperz, John J.; Jakobson, Roman O.; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Prague School of Linguistics; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Greenhouse, C. (2011). *The paradox of relevance: Ethnography and citizenship in the United States.* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

Hirsch, S. (1998). *Pronouncing and persevering: Gender and the discourses of disputing in an African Islamic court.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Jackobson, R. (1971). *Selected writings: Vol. 2. Word and language.* The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

Lévi-Strauss, C. (1963). *Structural anthropology.* New York, NY: Basic Books.

Mendoza-Denton, N. (2011). The semiotic hitchhiker's guide to creaky voice: Circulation and gendered hardcore in a Latina/o gang persona. *Journal of Linguistic Anthropology, 21,* 261–280.

Mertz, E. (2007). Semiotic anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 36,* 337–353.

Peirce, C. S. (1974). *Collected papers* (Vol. 2; C. Hartshorne & P. Weiss, Eds.). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Saussure, F. de. (1959). *Course in general linguistics.* New York, NY: Philosophical Library.

Schieffelin, B., Woolard, K., & Kroskrity, P. (Eds.). (1998). *Language ideologies: Practice and theory.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Silverstein, M. (1993). Metapragmatic discourse and metapragmatic function. In J. Lucy (Ed.), *Reflexive language* (pp. 33–58). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Singer, M. (1984). *Man's glassy essence: Explorations in semiotic anthropology.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Service, Elman R.

Elman Rogers Service (1915–1996) was a central figure in the 20th-century exploration of cultural evolution directed toward explaining cultural phenomena in causal terms.

Life and Career

Service was born in Tecumseh, Michigan, in 1915, not far from the University of Michigan, and as a teenager during the Great Depression, he directly witnessed the inequalities that provoked so many of his later intellectual interests and gave him a lifelong commitment to social justice. Service's high school was closed for lack of funds in 1933 before the end of his senior year, and he had to delay starting his undergraduate studies at the University of Michigan until he could save enough money from a job in a Southern California aircraft factory. But Service fought his way back, both as a factory worker and as an amateur Golden Gloves boxer.

Before starting his studies for a bachelor's degree at the University of Michigan, Service volunteered to fight against fascism during the Spanish Civil War. He served in the Abraham Lincoln Brigade and was wounded and hospitalized. He rarely spoke of his service in the war, but he offered an anecdote about being fortunate enough to be hospitalized with John Murra (himself later to be an important figure in anthropology), where they amused themselves by learning colorful Spanish epithets. Although Service was very much a serious force in the world, he characteristically took care not to take himself too seriously or allow others to do so.

Returning to the University of Michigan in 1938, Service earned a degree in English, with some coursework in anthropology, in 1941. He then proceeded to a year of graduate study in anthropology at the University of Chicago in 1942, before World War II drew him to military service in France with the U.S. army.

After the war, Service resumed his graduate career at Columbia University. The small faculty of Columbia's Department of Anthropology took on 150 graduate students in the early postwar years until 1953. Many were there on the G.I. Bill, and military service and the strain of readjustment to civilian life promoted bonding among men eager to regain their place in academic careers. That camaraderie heightened some of the divisions within the Department of Anthropology, where a fracture line split it into two camps, one committed to a humanities approach to anthropology, following Ruth Benedict, and the other to materialist approaches to anthropology, following Julian Steward.

Service was a leader among the students aligned with Steward and materialism, including Pedro Carrasco, Stanley Diamond, Clifford Evans, Louis Faron, Morton Fried, Anthony Leeds, Robert Manners, Betty Meggers, Sidney Mintz, Robert F. Murphy, John Murra, Elena Padilla, Vera Rubin, Elliott Skinner, and Eric Wolf. Many joined together in a study and discussion group that met often to discuss different topics built around papers or talks by volunteers from the group. This group came to call itself, largely at Service's impetus, the "Mundial Upheaval Society," or MUS.

Eric Wolf later commented that Service was respected to the extent of being seen as "something of a hero." He came from small-town America; he had fought as a Golden Gloves boxer; he had fought in Spain; and he had even taken anthropology

courses with Leslie White, who was then a major contender against Robert Lowie in the fight over evolution in cultural anthropology that was waged in the pages of the *American Anthropologist* and the *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology*. He had ventured to the floor of the Grand Canyon to do fieldwork among the Havasupai. He understood and had original thoughts on the study of kinship, and he offered an evolutionary discussion of social organization. And, in common with most in the MUS, Service aspired to understand and explain culture in terms of *causality*.

Following a year of fieldwork in Paraguay, Service completed his PhD in 1950 and began his own teaching career at Columbia. He shared an office with Morton Fried, with whom he also shared a lifelong interest in the evolution of political systems, though they came to quite divergent positions on the origins of ancient states. Fried took a tough-minded approach based in conflict theory and saw states emerging and expanding through exploitation. Service took an integrationist approach, arguing that increasing political centralization must offer at least *some* benefits from ruling elites.

In 1953, Service returned to teach at the University of Michigan, initiating what was later occasionally characterized as the "Michigan-Columbia Axis." Over the next 16 years, even with White's presence at Michigan, Service became the preeminent scholar in cultural evolution. In 1969, Service moved to the University of California, Santa Barbara, where he continued an active scholarly life until his death in 1996.

Professional Contributions

With a strong background in evolutionary thought and in pursuit of causal accounts of cultural phenomena, Service used comparative ethnography to explore transitions from small-scale egalitarian societies to centrally organized states and empires. To facilitate comparability, Service organized ethnographic cases under the evolutionary categories of band, tribe, chiefdom, and state. Although he made many contributions to the study of social organization, cultural evolution, political organization, Latin American ethnohistory and ethnography, and history of anthropology, Service became most widely known for his classification system.

Cultural anthropologists appropriately argue over the fit of cases to these categories, but the point was not to make cases fit. These were *ideal types*, so that failures to fit are not failures of the method but opportunities to explore *why* the fit doesn't work. For example, the category "tribe" proved to be the most problematic, and this resulted in productive reconsiderations. And the category of "chiefdom" was especially provocative for research on transitions to centrally controlled societies that has been particularly influential and productively contentious in archaeology.

Though Service's contributions are particularly influential in archaeology, they are often not fully explored in cultural anthropology. Perhaps this is in part because his band, tribe, chiefdom, and state system of organization became *foundational knowledge* that organizes every introductory anthropology textbook. But the value of the system is in challenging us toward greater clarity in noting variations as well as commonalities. Service's aim was not to offer merely another typology of stages. What distinguished his evolutionary approach was that he wanted to explore how evolutionary change works. The clarity in his contributions toward understanding such challenging questions contrasted with the abundance of fads and jargon that often infect anthropology. With characteristic good humor he responded with a clever critique under the title "Models for the Methodology of Mouthtalk."

Although recognized as a major figure in the 20th century in anthropology, Service consistently avoided any demonstrations of self-importance. He did not place himself in the spotlight at professional conferences, though he once quipped that he did agree to go to occasions when he was being "institutionalized."

Darrell La Lone

See also Carneiro, Robert L.; Columbia University; Comparative Method; Fried, Morton; Murdock, George Peter; Sahlins, Marshall; Steward, Julian; University of Michigan; White, Leslie

Further readings

Harding, T. G. (1999). Elman Rogers Service. *American Anthropologist, 101*(1), 161–164.

Rambo, A. T., & Gillogly, K. (Eds). (1991). *Profiles in cultural evolution: Papers from a conference in honor of Elman R. Service* (Anthropological Papers, No. 85).

Ann Arbor: University of Michigan, Museum of Anthropology.
Sahlins, M. D., & Service, E. R. (Eds). (1960). *Evolution and culture*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press.
Service, E. R. (1958). *A profile of primitive culture*. New York, NY: Harper & Row.
———. (1962). *Primitive social organization: An evolutionary perspective*. New York, NY: Random House.
———. (1971). *Cultural evolutionism: Theory in practice*. New York, NY: Holt, Rinehart & Winston.
———. (1975). *Origins of the state and civilization: The process of cultural evolution*. New York, NY: W. W. Norton.
———. (1978). *Profiles in ethnology* (3rd ed.). Boston, MA: Addison Wesley.
———. (1979). *The hunters*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall. (Original work published 1966)
———. (1985). *A century of controversy: Ethnological issues from 1860 to 1960*. Orlando, FL: Academic Press.

Simmel, Georg

Georg Simmel was born in Berlin into a Jewish merchant family in 1858. He died in Strasbourg, soon after being elected as professor of philosophy there, in 1918, toward the end of World War I. His relative economic independence allowed him to pursue a distinctive intellectual career even while the anti-Semitism of his day worked to marginalize him in the German academy. A contemporary of, and an intellectual sparring partner with, Ferdinand Tönnies, Émile Durkheim, and Max Weber, Simmel is considered one of the preeminent sociologists of the early 20th century. He is best known for his essays on diverse social and cultural forms, for example, "The Adventure," "The Stranger," "The Sociology of the Senses," and "Some Remarks on Prostitution in the Present and the Future," among many others. However, throughout his career, in parallel with his sociological writing, Simmel lectured on the Enlightenment philosophy of Immanuel Kant, aligning himself with eminent neo-Kantians of the late 19th century, including Wilhelm Dilthey. And, for the most part, he described himself as a philosopher. He did not envisage sociology rivaling and setting itself on a par with the natural sciences. Instead, he developed his social philosophy, true to Kantian principles of critique, as a reflection on the limits of human social and cultural experience.

After the First World War, social scientists increasingly looked to the natural sciences for models of disciplinary progress. Simmel's work, with its antimechanistic essayistic qualities, acquired an opaque status—influential but rarely integral. While postmodern trends from the 1980s onward favored a return to Simmelian styles of inquiry, the even more fluid situation in 21st-century social inquiry may encourage a further reassessment of Simmel's contribution, particularly regarding his work on money and on webs of interaction.

Simmel and Neo-Kantian Social Philosophy

German social thought at the end of the 19th century was in search of a philosophical basis for the study of modern society of the kind that Kant had established for natural science. In addition to his critical work on scientific reason, Kant had proposed an anthropology that would investigate what humans make of themselves as free-acting social beings. Taking his lead from Kant, Simmel aimed in his essays to explain and to mirror the freedom, open-endedness, and contradictions of social life as humanly experienced. His later work, notably on Rembrandt, explicitly argues against social determinism, attending instead to the rich individuality of social (especially aesthetic) life. In this light, Simmel can be understood as one of the most authentic late-19th-century interpreters of the philosophical anthropology initiated by Kant.

For Simmel, the heterogeneous quality of modern society and culture responded to universal forms of subjective development. His earliest work explored how the tendency toward differentiation is primary in human thought and social interaction. Humans distinguish; they search out and create differences within the continuum of their experience. As a result, history tells of a constant elaboration of cultural differences. Of all the distinctions generated by human experience, Simmel proposes that the primary, and perhaps most inescapable, is that between what he calls subjective culture and objective culture. Subjective culture describes the imaginative world of the self in its full activity and potential. Objective culture is experienced as that which exists outside the self, acting autonomously with regard to the self. Objective culture constrains what selves can

or should know about the world around them, but it also presents the individual with aims and objects of desire. Against Durkheim, who had envisaged society as a totality that mapped its differences onto individuals, Simmel argued that differences begin in the fluid creativity of the individual mind. Through interaction, subjectively generated distinctions are formalized and gain objectivity within a continuously changing social milieu.

The idea of subjective culture may seem less self-evident from the perspective of latter-day social science than are Simmel's ideas concerning objective culture: Yet the distinction between these two is crucial to his thought. Simmel notes a situation where subjectively valued worldviews can remain inchoate because they do not acquire an objective form. He saw the female-centered cultures of his day in this light: Subjectively vibrant worlds were muted by a dominantly male objective culture. However, no objective cultural form could ultimately constrain the movement of subjective thought, Simmel proposes. Subjectivity and objectivity have distinct qualities; subjective culture is characterized by variation, openness, and flux, whereas the forms of objective culture are valued for their stability, closure, and relative invariance. It is in the nature of subjectivity as a life force that it tries to break the rules or boundaries that objectivity presents, and yet objectivity is valued for the regulative standard that it provides.

A Philosopher of Modernity

Simmel is above all a philosopher of modernity. At one level, for him, modernity describes a dissatisfaction with unchanging precepts and a welcoming of new venues for the realization of subjectivity through differentiation. Again, Simmel saw modern experience as contradictory: It potentialized a fuller and freer development of human personality, but simultaneously it generated new compulsions and duties. Modernity and the metropolitan life were notable for a blasé detachment from things and people close at hand and a desire for the distant and the ephemeral. On the other hand, modern forms of association seemed to welcome individual-centered forms of self-expression as well as notions of personal responsibility that transcended group loyalties. In a series of interconnected works, Simmel suggested that the experiences of the city, of fashion, and of the ubiquitous use of money—all characteristic markers of modernity—are effectively synonymous in terms of their causes and effects. Each of these phenomena arose out of, and in different ways provided venues for, the subjective search for freedom vis-à-vis objective conditions. Simmel argued, however, that individuals themselves initiated new kinds of objectivity through their search for freedoms; and they experienced whatever was objective as a constraint and an obligation. The involvement of an individual in new aesthetic or intellectual fashions, for example, could be felt as a freedom from previously closed social circles. However, entry into these unfamiliar milieus would crystallize new dependencies for that same individual within an enlarged web of relationships and a further differentiated cultural array.

For Simmel, the term *modern* catches the experience of expanded and variegated networks of interaction, highly diversified forms of objective culture, and, hence, the engagement of the individual in multiplex relationships and affiliations. Modernity is, then, both a purely relative term and the objective historical correlate of a universal tendency in subjective development. Simmel was not a social evolutionist: He did not envisage a necessary progress in objective institutions. Notwithstanding his views on the universal significance of individuality in all social processes, his interpretation of objective culture was relativistic. Each sphere of objective culture established its own rules and patterns. It did not follow, for example, from the success of laboratory science that the value of all other forms of culture could be measured (or even eliminated) according to a scientific perspective. An art appreciation that found the cause of the artwork in the chemistry of brushstrokes, the psychology of vision, or the surrounding social conditions would be diminished and insufficient. Cultural forms flourished to the extent that they captured and extended the vitality of subjective experience. Objective culture lost its significance when it no longer provided an object for subjective energy and imagination.

In his anthropological writings, Kant had referred to what he called the "unsociable sociability" of the human being. He proposed that together hostility and hospitality were driving forces in human social development. For Simmel too, conflict was not simply a by-product of human interaction, it was an inevitable element in the generation of valuable social relationships and cultural forms. Every

new relationship entered into by an individual was marked by new kinds of conflict. For example, when two people married, their family groupings were effectively conjoined, resulting in conflicts and negotiations with in-laws. The formation of new relationships brought with it problems of allegiance to forms of objective culture for the individuals concerned. One shape conflict could take was in the urge toward the social closure provided by secrecy versus countervailing interests in openness, unveiling, and transparency. Given his fascination with the two-sidedness of social experience, it is not surprising that, for Simmel, social conflict was congruent with new kinds of freedom of action. At the same time, he indexed sociability as an escape from the weight of everyday social activity. In their daily interactions, individuals tended to be valued for their distinct objective capacities. Contrastingly, in the realm of sociability, there was a chance of expressing some of the full vivacity of an individual's subjective lifeworld in an artful way. Through the imaginative play of sociability, conflicts between objective and subjective culture could be explored without engendering real-life consequences.

Influence on Later Anthropology and Social Theory

Simmel's influence on later anthropology and social theory is in certain ways indirect and clouded. Simmel himself recognized that his distinct style of social philosophy, however influential, was unlikely to create a specific school or following. He had set his own thought against certain trends that were gaining ascendance by the end of the 19th century. These included Durkheim's social determinism but also, in particular, Friedrich Nietszche's philosophy of the will. Nietszche had drawn on evolutionist ideas to attack the humanist universalism of the neo-Kantians. In his study of Nietzsche and Arthur Schopenhauer, Simmel welcomed the influence of both these philosophers. However, for him the commitment to a philosophical path was necessarily a personal one, and he adhered to Kant's view of human individuals as social beings who sought aesthetic, moral, and rational freedoms through their relations with others.

The adoption of Simmel's ideas in anthropology has taken different shapes at different times. During the discipline's formative years, few social or cultural anthropologists felt the need to cite Simmel, though his influence was present in the emergence of key themes. From the 1940s onward, anthropologists became increasingly aware of the role of conflict in shaping social structure. Simmel's essays "The Sociology of Conflict" and the "Web of Group Affiliation" presaged recognition of how fission and fusion complement each other in the establishment of social relationships. Debates around this theme came to be integral to the social anthropological work of the mid-20th century. In this regard, both the titles and the arguments of Meyer Fortes's "The Web of Kinship Among the Tallensi" and of Max Gluckman's lectures on "Custom and Conflict in Africa" indicate strong conceptual links to Simmel, though neither anthropologist acknowledges the social philosopher explicitly.

More recently, in particular, it has been Simmel's work on money and his insights into social networks that has drawn attention. Recognition of the implications of the Internet as a social form brought a new engagement with Simmel's formal sociology of networks and webs of association. We should exercise caution here, though, recognizing that Simmel was never purely interested in the formal-objective aspect of the social—that for him, what he termed subjective culture was at least equally significant and inextricable from the meaning of objective forms. This last observation is, in turn, relevant to understanding the renewed significance of Simmel's philosophy of money. Money could be—and, he argued, was—used to analyze social reality quantitatively and thereby to break down accustomed cultural distinctions. From this point of view, money assisted in freeing individuals from their habitual dependence on people and things close at hand. However, where it began to be treated in purely formal or analytic terms, as something independent from individual life interests, the danger arose of money becoming the vehicle of a generalized moral-aesthetic indifference.

Simmel emphasized the heterogeneity of cultural forms as objects of interaction and subjective investment. Culture as an objective array did not of itself fall into any overarching system. Behind the specific validity coherence and the coherence of cultural phenomena lay the vivacity of subjective interests and imaginings; apart from these, the cultural form presented merely an empty possibility. Again, it is this anti-systematism that has posed the most difficulty when attempts are made to incorporate Simmel into

social science as a discipline. As such, Simmel's open-ended essays continue to provoke countless different kinds of reflection on the field of human interaction and culture, without providing any defined method or operational model.

Huon Wardle

See also Durkheim, Émile; Fortes, Meyer; Gluckman, Max; Modernism; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Frisby, D. (2002). *Georg Simmel*. New York, NY: Routledge.
Simmel, G. (1955). *Conflict and the web of group affiliations* (K. Wolff, Ed.). New York, NY: Free Press.
———. (1980). *Essays on interpretation in social science* (G. Oakes, Ed.). Manchester, UK: Manchester University Press.
———. (1997). *Simmel on culture* (D. Frisby & M. Featherstone, Eds.). London, UK: Sage.
———. (2004). *The philosophy of money* (D. Frisby, Ed.). Abingdon, UK: Routledge.
———. (2005). *Rembrandt*. New York, NY: Routledge.

Smith, Adam

Adam Smith (1723–1790) is most famous for being the father of modern economics. His masterpiece, *An Inquiry Into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations*, is the first systematic account of the political and social organization of a free market economy. But Smith was a political economist second and a philosopher first, investigating human nature and its relationship to society and governance in all of his writing. Political economy, for Smith, was a branch of moral philosophy, and his work is foundational to numerous other disciplines, including anthropology, sociology, and English.

Smith published two books in his lifetime. The first, *The Theory of Moral Sentiments* (TMS), published in 1759, asked what virtue is and how it is acquired. The second, *An Inquiry Into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations* (WN), published in 1776, asked what it meant for a nation to be wealthy and how this wealth was to be increased. These two parallel sets of questions reveal his overall project: the search for principles that govern human social interaction and deliberation. TMS starts with an investigation of those forces that motivate individuals, and WN ends with a description of the proper method of financing the sovereign. His writing thus conceived describes the continuity of experience within a society of discrete persons.

Background

Smith was born in 1723 in Kirkaldy, Scotland, to a widowed mother; he never married and had no children. He was educated in a local public school, then Glasgow College, and finally Oxford University, becoming an independent lecturer in Edinburgh after graduating. While some of his earliest writing had its origins during his time in Oxford and Edinburgh, TMS was written while he was a faculty member at Glasgow University. Student notes on his class lectures on justice and on rhetoric and belles lettres survive.

Smith left Glasgow to be a private traveling tutor, during which time he immersed himself in political economy, considering numerous schools of thought, particularly those put forth by the French physiocrats and philosophes. He then returned to Kirkaldy, where he spent years finishing WN. He remained there, working as a customs officer, until he died.

Smith's biography does not reveal his attention to detail or his obsessive focus on the minutiae of his work. Both of his books were revised repeatedly during his lifetime, and while scholars debate what they have in common, there is little doubt that Smith sought to create a philosophical system describing human nature, community organization, and the social and political institutions that resulted. His work moves back and forth between descriptive claims about the evolution of society and prescriptive assertions about the best way to live and govern. Smith was working before the fragmentation of the humanistic disciplines. He would have had no concept of anthropology, sociology, psychology, or history as distinct and discrete fields of study. Instead, by doing moral philosophy writ large, Smith was able to use historical records, sociological data, observation, and moral and psychological insight together to articulate the human experience. By writing on political economy, Smith was doing more than just economics. He was working with philosophy, political science, economics, anthropology, psychology, sociology, history, literature, and archaeology.

In these endeavors, Smith was a typical member of the Scottish Enlightenment. While some refer to the Enlightenment as a monolithic entity, Europe is best described as having three separate but overlapping conversations. There were German, French, and Scottish enlightenments, each of which asked similar questions but had their own emphases. For Smith and his countrymen, the Enlightenment was a way of articulating a unique and independent Scottish voice, while emphasizing the complementary nature of human reason and emotions. They were also concerned with the power of history, the ability of science (or natural philosophy, as Smith would understand it) to describe human behavior, and the nature of collective deliberation. In this respect, Smith's work can be considered anthropological because he articulates the nature of "progress" from primitive to commercial society. He concluded that different economic institutions necessitated different kinds of government and as economic behavior grew more sophisticated, government naturally changed with it.

Predictability and Human Nature

Smith and the other Scottish Enlightenment thinkers were also deeply influenced by Isaac Newton, applying Newton's method to moral philosophy and, by extension, sociological analysis. Newton famously argued that the laws that govern the heavens were the same as those that governed the earth. He reduced physical behavior to a handful of laws, insisting that they are universal and work together. Analogously, Smith argued that the principles that govern individual activity were few in number and contiguous with those that governed the collectivity; individual behavior for Smith is not radically distinct from group behavior and can be explained by referencing the same processes.

However, while Newton believed that the laws of nature allowed for predictive certainty about objects, Smith argued that the principles of human behavior were in tension with one another. As a result, detailed predictions were impossible. Thus, while it is true that philosophers could identify historical patterns (for Smith, nations progress through four stages of history: hunters, shepherds, farmers, and merchants) and while it is also true that human psychology can be reduced to the two fundamental motivations of self-interest and benevolence, more precise prediction is beyond science. We cannot know what a person will do with any certainty, nor can we effectively socially engineer it. Instead, the complexity of human behavior, combined with the vicissitudes of historical development, make it appear as if social progress is guided by an invisible hand, an unseen force that directs the forward movement of history itself, furthering human knowledge and economic specialization and identifying and realizing aspects of justice along the way.

Scholars debate the meaning of the invisible hand. Some suggest that it is merely a turn of phrase with uncommon rhetorical power. Others argue that it describes different phenomena in each of Smith's different uses. Still others insist that it is Smith's acknowledgment that God has designed nature to act a certain way, in accordance with a premeditated plan for human development. (Smith was likely a deist who believed in a creator but not an interventionist God.) Whatever the meaning, it is most certainly a metaphor for the ways in which economic activity tends toward a just distribution of resources.

In TMS (1976), Smith uses the idea of the invisible hand to show that free market exchange results in "nearly the same distribution of the necessaries of life, which would have been made, had the earth been divided into equal portions among all its inhabitants" (pp. 184–185). In WN, Smith cites the invisible hand to show that self-interest, taken collectively, promotes economic advancement in ways no individual agent intends. In his early essay on the history of astronomy, he uses the phrase to describe primitive attitudes about divine intervention. The invisible hand thus prefigures the social science emphasis on "unintended consequences," outcomes disconnected from human motivation, and the libertarian faith in "spontaneous order," the belief that left alone, social and political chaos inevitably gives way to order.

It is unlikely that Smith would be comfortable being associated with modern-day libertarianism, but it is evident that his phrase has a vibrant life of its own. In contemporary parlance, the invisible hand is most commonly used as shorthand to describe the economic and social progress that comes from free market commercial interaction, suggesting falsely that Smith did not believe the government had a strong role to play in society and the economy. In actuality, he was in favor of taxation, public education, government support of the arts, and economic policies that

helped raise the standard of living of the poor and the working class. Ultimately, his point in WN is that a nation's wealth comes not from the amount of money within its borders at any one time—this is the position held by mercantilists, whom he opposed—but by the value of labor in a society. Increased labor means increased wealth, and free trade allows for increased labor. Thus, the more a nation trades, the wealthier it is. The invisible hand ensures that individual wealth acquisition benefits everyone in society.

Political Theory and Moral Psychology

It is noteworthy that the invisible hand appears throughout his works. It underscores that the phrase has moral as well as economic content, emphasizing Smith's belief that free markets are moral solutions to the problems of oppression and poverty. Smith hoped to develop a philosophical system that promoted "universal opulence," the circumstance in which all members of society had access to the necessities of life (as opposed to conveniences and luxuries, which are not equally distributed). He also argued that all people in society should have the liberty to choose their own profession, pursue their own goals, and follow their own religious beliefs.

Smith rejected the idea of a social contract, dismissing the notion that human beings could ever live outside society. The state of nature, for Smith, is not a useful comparative to political life, even if it is postulated as a hypothetical benchmark for liberty. One can only compare different stages of human development to measure progress. The final stage, the "system of natural liberty," Smith believed, was both the most stable and the most affluent way of organizing a modern society. Smith is frequently considered a proponent of classical liberalism and mentioned alongside John Locke, John Stuart Mill, and similar political theorists.

Smith also struggled with the philosophical foundations of moral justification. For example, David Hume, Smith's friend and longtime interlocutor, famously wrote that "*reason is, and ought* [italics added] only to be the *slave of the passions* [italics added]." In return, Smith argued that individuals were guided by a natural sympathy, a technical term Smith defines as "fellow-feeling with any passion whatever" but that more modern readers would call empathy. Smith's theory of sympathy has been interpreted as moral agreement, a process of emotive modulation, and a description of how people seek moral approval of others. No scholarly consensus exists on its precise meaning, but for Smith, human sympathy is proof that people are not solely self-interested. The first line of TMS—its Newtonian starting principle—argues that individuals take an interest in other people's fortunes, even if the person derives nothing but the pleasure of watching others' happiness. This nod toward altruism, a term coined many years after Smith's death, is sometimes seen as contradicting the self-interested economic motivations emphasized in WN. Most commonly referred to as "The Adam Smith Problem," this claim of inconsistency is a mistaken and ideological interpretation of Smith's work. As indicated above, individuals are motivated by both self-interest and a concern for others, sometimes simultaneously, and the tension between the two helps moderate the more extreme passions. All of Smith's work references both self-interested and benevolent motivations.

Passions are most effectively kept in check, for Smith, when a community rewards or punishes a moral actor; TMS is largely a moral psychology of acculturation and sometimes appears to be a defense of cultural relativism. But Smith balances his demand for social surveillance by highlighting the human capacity to imagine an impartial spectator, an intersubjective guide, for those times when no one is watching or when a moral actor feels strongly enough to disagree with the dominant social norms. The impartial spectator is, in essence, a theory of conscience, and Smith never suggests that it is any more real than other products of the human imagination. Smith, like Hume and others, was intrigued by the imagination and emphasized its limitations. For Smith, because it is a creation of the agent's mind, the impartiality of the spectator is imperfect, and justice often advances only in the long run, as history unfolds and as the shortcomings of all individuals and all communities give way to the natural laws of progress. Smith was an empiricist; he struggled with Hume's claim that one could not logically derive an "ought" from an "is" and thus relied on the laws of nature to guide human beings in their moral, political, and economic endeavors. History and progress, he argued, reveal the "ought" over time, and the invisible hand moves societies toward a more just framework.

Jack Russell Weinstein

See also Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat; Economic Anthropology; Ferguson, Adam; Lafitau, Joseph-François; Polanyi, Karl; Political Economy; Rational Choice Theory; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques

Further Readings

For a general audience:

Berry, C. J. (1997). *The social theory of the Scottish Enlightenment*. Edinburgh, UK: Edinburgh University Press.

Fleischacker, S. (2004). *On Adam Smith's Wealth of Nations*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Haakonssen, K. (Ed.). (2006). *The Cambridge companion to Adam Smith*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Raphael, D. D. (1986). *Adam Smith* (Past Masters). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Weinstein, J. R. (2001). *On Adam Smith*. Belmont, UK: Wadsworth.

For advanced study:

Evensky, J. (2005). *Adam Smith's moral philosophy*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Griswold, C. L., Jr. (1999). *Adam Smith and the virtues of Enlightenment*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Haakonssen, K. (Ed.). (1998). *Adam Smith* (The International Library of Critical Essays in the History of Philosophy). Aldershot, UK: Ashgate/Dartmouth.

Raphael, D. D. (2007). *The impartial spectator*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Samuels, W. J. (2011). *Erasing the invisible hand*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Smith, A. (1976). *The theory of moral sentiments* (D. D. Raphael & A. L. Macfie, Eds.). Indianapolis, IN: Liberty Classics. (Original work published 1759)

Weinstein, J. R. (2013). *Adam Smith's pluralism: Rationality, education and the moral sentiments*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Young, J. T. (1997). *Economics as a moral science*. Cheltenham, UK: Edward Elgar.

Smith, Grafton Elliot

Grafton Elliot Smith (1871–1937) was an Australian British anatomist and physical anthropologist, prominent both as an early student of human brain evolution and as a late advocate of a reductive, naive theory of human cultural history.

Life and Career

Educated in medical anatomy first in Sydney and then subsequently at Cambridge, Smith moved to Cairo and taught anatomy from 1899 to 1908, where he studied ancient mummies and became infatuated with the idea of the Egyptians as the source of ancient civilization. He subsequently returned to England to be dean of the Faculty of Medicine at Manchester University, and ultimately, in 1918, he became professor of anatomy at the University of London. Among the students he taught were (undergraduate) Ashley Montagu (a British American anthropologist and humanist) and (medical) Solly Zuckerman (a British public servant, zoologist, and operational research pioneer) and Raymond Dart (an Australian anatomist and anthropologist). Smith received many honors for his neuroanatomical research, and was knighted in 1934.

In anthropology, however, he is remembered mostly for the things he was wrong about. Smith passed expert judgment on the Piltdown Man remains and contributed to their authentication. He felt that the remains (later to be known as the most infamous case of scientific fraud in history) validated his theory that the brain was the first aspect of human anatomy to reach its modern form. More notoriously, he founded a small and iconoclastic "hyper-diffusionist" school of anthropology, along with the ethnologist William J. Perry at University College London and the Austrian linguist Father Wilhelm Schmidt.

The Heliolithic School

To the German-English idea that different people developed similar ideas independently of one another because of the common properties of the human mind, Smith developed an alternative—namely that different people have similar ideas because they received them from a common source. Paradoxically, although Smith was primarily known as an evolutionary biologist, it was his antagonists in anthropology who were known as the "evolutionists"; Smith's model was "diffusionism." In large part, the synchronic "functionalism" of Bronisław Malinowski and A. R. Radcliffe-Brown attempted to transcend the historical interpretive issues that had divided the two earlier British schools, evolutionism and diffusionism.

Early German anthropologists such as Friedrich Ratzel and Fritz Graebner had adopted the view that some form of historical contact resulted in the pattern of broad similarities seen among the world's cultures. Smith's version of diffusionism, however, was about the origin of civilization itself. According to this "heliolithic" theory, rather than seeing diverse peoples as equally creative, only the ("Hamitic") ancient Egyptians were considered fundamentally creative and were thus the source of all early cultural knowledge, from mummification in Oceania to pyramids in Mesoamerica.

Smith's theory was also founded on the wrong side of a classic paradigm shift in early anthropology, involving the concept of "culture." To the anthropological generation of the late 19th century, the term was used synonymously with "civilization," as an attainment in varying degrees by different peoples. In the early 20th century, as used by Franz Boas in the United States and Malinowski in England, the term came to refer to the particular lifeways of diverse peoples, which they all possessed entirely and equally, although differently. Smith's theory of the diffusion of "culture" is actually about the diffusion of "civilization"; he used *culture* in a sense that was already obsolete, and he reified *civilization* just as it was being parsed and problematized by a newer generation of anthropologists, such as Alexander Goldenweiser and Alfred Kroeber.

In reifying civilization and trying to identify how different peoples came to acquire it, Smith (1915) was able to identify (spuriously) any and all cultural achievements as evidence of an Egyptian inheritance. Since civilization was so complex, it stood to reason that different peoples would not have assembled it independently by chance means (an argument similar to that of the "irreducible complexity" of life, popular among creationists many decades later), and thus, he categorically rejected the ideas "put forth ex cathedra by the majority of modern anthropologists" (p. vi).

In *The Diffusion of Culture* (1933), Smith continued to bring his focus on the brain to the subject that other anthropological scholars were trying to understand as social process. He denied the "psychic unity of mankind" (which made individual qualities largely irrelevant in historical explanations) and imagined the innovative genius to be the limiting factor in culture change. Thus, seeing pyramids in Mexico and Egypt, he would not identify a fundamental structural constraint on the separate attempts to create a large, stable edifice but would imagine rather a primordial phantom architect and his descendant copyists, imitators, and victims. Smith's model of human history was drawn not from the nascent history of science and technology, where simultaneous independent innovation is the rule (hence the famous obsession of scientists with establishing priority), but from the more familiar bellicose and colonial practices of his own civilization. As he explained it in a leading scientific journal in 1917,

> When a small band of immigrants, intent upon exploiting the mineral wealth, forces its way into a barbarous country, and, in virtue of its superiority of weapons or of skill and knowledge, is able to dominate the local people, and compel it to work for them, the stamp of the alien civilization, its practises, its customs and beliefs, can be imprinted upon a large servile population. (p. 246)

Smith thus universalized the colonial British experience to the entire history of the human species. His theory of culture enjoyed transient popularity, owing largely to Smith's reputation in anatomy, and brought his anthropological ideas (which otherwise would have been ignored as anti-intellectual fluff) a measure of scholarly gravity. He wrote the entry "Anthropology" for the 12th (1922) edition of the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, but it was quickly superseded.

Jonathan Marks

See also Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Goldenweiser, Alexander A.; Graebner, Fritz; Kroeber, Alfred L.

Further Readings

Elkin, A. P., & Mackintosh, N. W. G. (Eds.). (1974). *Grafton Elliot Smith: The man and his work*. Sydney, New South Wales, Australia: Sydney University Press.

Smith, G. E. (1913). The Piltdown skull. *Nature, 92,* 131.

———. (1915). *The migrations of early culture.* Manchester, UK: Manchester University Press.

———. (1917). The origin of the pre-Columbian civilization of America. *Science, 45,* 241–246.

Smith, G. E., Malinowski, B., Spinden, H. J., & Goldenweiser, A. (1927). *Culture: The diffusion controversy.* New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

Stocking, G. W. (1995). *After Tylor: British social anthropology, 1888–1951.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Todd, T. W. (1937). The scientific influence of Sir Grafton Elliot Smith. *American Anthropologist, 39,* 523–526.

Smith, Neil

Neil R. Smith (1954–2012) was an urban geographer and dialectical materialist. Deeply influenced by Karl Marx, David Harvey, and Henri Lefebvre, Smith developed insight into the historical geography of capitalism through attention to the spatial contradictions inherent in capitalist growth, particularly at the urban and global scales. His theories of uneven development, gentrification, the production of nature, and the politics of scale have been a widely influential part of a recent *spatial turn* in the social sciences. Smith was known for advocating and practicing an unrepentant yet open materialism, receptive to insights from postmodernism, feminism, and critical race theory without dispensing with a commitment to materialist analysis of class within an anticapitalist framework. Throughout his career, Smith worked tirelessly against the eclipsing of politics in theory, imagination, and representation, whether in his appointed disciplines of geography and anthropology or in the world at large. His attention remained focused, especially in the last years of his life, on the necessity and possibility of revolution against capitalism.

Biography and Major Works

Born in 1954 in Leith, Scotland, Smith earned his BA at the University of St. Andrews before enrolling at Johns Hopkins University. He studied the relationship between capitalism and the production of space as a graduate student under David Harvey, focusing on the phenomenon of gentrification. In 1979, Smith introduced two of his most influential contributions: (1) his theory of the "rent gap" and (2) his distinct approach to "uneven development." Influenced heavily by Lefebvre's theory of the production of space, Smith argued that the logic of capitalism is at the root of the geographic unevenness of development. Smith quickly became known for his prolific and invigorating writing. Soon after completing his PhD in 1982, he adapted his dissertation into the book *Uneven Development* (1984), which may still be his best known work. Smith taught at Columbia University, Rutgers University, and the University of Aberdeen before accepting a position as Distinguished Professor of Anthropology at the Graduate Center of the City University of New York in 2000. During these years, Smith became well-known as a mentor to a generation of radical geographers, through teaching as well as with the establishment of institutions such as City University of New York's Center for Place, Culture and Politics. Moreover, Smith developed a reputation as a scholar whose political commitments and intellectual pursuits took him far beyond the academy, cultivating insights and experiences that reflected and guided his academic work.

Contributions to Anthropology

Smith's contributions to the subfields of urban, political, and economic anthropology as well as to wider disciplines are far ranging. However, they can be located along the conceptual axes aligning his most important areas of work: gentrification, uneven development, scale, and the production of nature.

Smith's concept of the "rent gap" is widely used among anthropologists and geographers (e.g., Setha Low, Eliza Darling, Julian Brash, and Judith Whitehead) and remains one of the most influential causal explanations of the economic and speculative logics behind gentrification and urban displacement. Disinvestment of capital in the built environment, Smith argued, not only causes decline and abandonment of urban centers but also paradoxically creates an increasing gap between actual and potential ground rent extraction. This catalyzes a moment of speculation during which properties may be purchased cheaply and then utilized to extract higher rents (from wealthier tenants). Rapid reinvestment kicks off a new cycle of neighborhood-wide development, leading to the displacement of previous neighborhood residents. Documenting a wide range of examples in cities across the world, Smith was sharply attuned to the ways in which gentrification had become what he called "a global urban strategy."

Smith's work on *uneven development* has widely influenced anthropologists and geographers (e.g., Ida Susser, Ruth Wilson Gilmore, and Vinay Gidwani). His approach to uneven development is highly indebted to classic texts of V. I. Lenin, Rosa Luxemburg, and Leon Trotsky; at the same time, he provides new theoretical insights for understanding the contemporary geographic dynamics of capitalist development. Uneven development is a structural feature of capitalist accumulation that affects a highly polarized landscape of overdevelopment and underdevelopment through the reorganization of the built environment. According to Smith, uneven development should also be understood in relation to what he called the *production of nature*—that is, that nature itself is a socially and politically produced category often posited as an "outside" to capitalist society. Smith's theories of nature, along with those of contemporaries in geography and anthropology (e.g., Cindi Katz, Noel Castree, and Donna Haraway), have been fundamental for contemporary approaches to theorizing the dialectical relation of nature to society. They have influenced theoretical discourse on contemporary productive and reproductive technologies. Smith has also argued influentially that nature itself has become "an accumulation strategy" entirely unique to capitalism.

In *Uneven Development* and subsequent works, Smith articulates a *theory of scale* based on Peter Taylor's Urban–Nation (State)–Global schema. This theory views scales as emerging from the fundamental spatial tension between differentiation and equalization in capitalist development. Smith later refined this framework to incorporate feminism and social movement theory, recognizing scales as arising from reproduction and consumption as well as production processes. He posited a "politics of scale" in which scale is socially constructed through contestation, and he emphasized smaller scales—the body, the household, and the community. He coined the phrase "jumping scale" to signify efforts to transcend the scalar limits of social struggle. Smith's theories of scale have been particularly influential for urban theorists and commentators on neoliberalism (e.g., Anna Tsing, Neil Brenner, Nik Theodore, and Don Mitchell).

Throughout his work, Smith demonstrated a passionate preoccupation with war and imperialism, influenced as much by his political commitments as by his intellectual fascination with the forces of capitalist expansion, spatial integration, and the concentration of economic and political command. These works are alike in their attempt to think about Empire through a geographic framework and to read the intellectual legacy of war as entwined in the formation of geography as a discipline.

Legacy

Smith's conceptual contributions bridge fields of radical urban spatial theory, geography, and anthropology to produce social theory in the service of understanding capitalism, with a strong emphasis on class and a persistently revolutionary perspective. Smith also succeeded as an internationalist both in his politics and in his intellectual ambitions, with much time and energy spent traveling for intellectual and political contributions to spaces inside and outside academia. His work has been well received internationally and has been translated into several languages.

Morgan Buck, Zoltan Gluck, Malav Kanuga, and Stephen McFarland

See also Harvey, David; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Urban Studies

Further Readings

Castree, N. (2004). Neil Smith. In P. Hubbard, R. Kitchin, & G. Valentine (Eds.), *Key thinkers on space and place* (pp. 374–379). London, UK: Sage.

Smith, N. (1996). *New urban frontier: Gentrification and the revanchist city.* New York, NY: Routledge.

———. (2005). *The endgame of globalization.* New York, NY: Routledge.

———. (2010). *Uneven development: Nature, capital and the production of space.* New York, NY: Verso Books. (Original work published 1984)

Smith, William Robertson

William Robertson Smith (1846–1894) was a celebrated Scottish biblical critic, theorist of religion, and theorist of myth. His accomplishments were multiple. First, he brought higher biblical criticism from Germany to the English-speaking world. He then developed it far beyond its Germanic origins. Where his mentors reconstructed the history of

Israelite religion from the Bible itself, he ventured outside the Bible to Semitic religion and thereby pioneered the comparative study of religion. Others viewed religion from the standpoint of the individual. He approached ancient religion from the standpoint of the group and thereby helped pioneer the sociology of religion.

As an original theorist of religion, Smith asserted that ancient religion was centrally a matter not of creed but of ritual. Practice counted much more than belief. Religion was initially communion between god and humans, not a prescientific explanation of the world. As an equally original theorist of myth, Smith similarly maintained that myth was initially not an explanation of the world but instead an explanation of ritual. He thereby pioneered the myth and ritual theory.

Smith was strikingly precocious. In 1870, at the age of 23, he was named professor of Old Testament at the College of the Free Church in Aberdeen. He began teaching a day after his ordination as a minister in the Free Church.

On the basis of his entry "Bible" for the ninth edition (1875) of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, Smith was, in 1876, formally charged with heresy by his church. Smith, following the older, Continental scholars with whom he had become acquainted, deemed the Book of Deuteronomy not Moses' farewell address to Israel but instead a work composed long after Moses' time. Smith's Free Church critics assumed that in denying Mosaic authorship of Deuteronomy, he was denying the divine authority of the Bible. On the contrary, argued Smith, revelation itself was gradual, so that the denial of Mosaic authorship was simply the denial that the advanced, prophetic views expressed in Deuteronomy had been revealed to Moses himself. After 4 years, during which Smith was suspended from his chair, he won his case and was reinstated. But the appearance of subsequent articles reopened the charge, and though never convicted of heresy, he was, in 1881, removed from his professorship.

Embittered but undeterred, Smith had already begun to offer public lectures on his views to huge audiences in Edinburgh and Glasgow. From these lectures came his first two books, *The Old Testament in the Jewish Church* (1881) and *The Prophets of Israel and Their Place in History to the Close of the Eighth Century* (1882/2002).

To support himself, Smith became coeditor and eventually sole editor of the same edition of the *Encyclopaedia Britannica* that had caused his undoing. In 1883, he moved to Cambridge University, and in 1889, he became Sir Thomas Adams Professor of Arabic. He utilized his knowledge of Arabic to root Israelite religion in ancient Arabia, where for him lay the origin of Semitic culture as a whole. His studies culminated in his final and fullest work, *Lectures on the Religion of the Semites*, which were delivered as three series of Burnett Lectures at the University of Aberdeen from 1888 to 1891.

In the *Lectures*, Smith turns to "heathen Arabia" as the earliest and therefore presumably clearest case of Semitic religion. He asserts that the Semites were initially at a "primitive" stage of culture. He even uses "primitive" and "ancient" almost interchangeably. Yet unlike his protégé J. G. Frazer, who was interested in only the similarities among "primitives" the world over, Smith was equally interested in the differences—between early Semites and other "primitives," between early and later Semites, and between Jews and Christians. Still, his focus on the early similarities was revolutionary and controversial.

Smith's focus on practice rather than belief as the core of primitive religion was equally revolutionary. Yet on ritual, as on other aspects of religion, his revolution abruptly stops short. He does not propose that modern religion likewise be taken as ritualistic. He draws a rigid hiatus between primitive and modern religion. He approaches modern religion no differently from others of his day. It is creedal first and ritualistic second—a reflection of Smith's antiritualistic, anti-Catholic viewpoint. Where 20th-century theorists of religion stress the similarities between primitive and modern religion, Smith stresses the differences.

Smith was revolutionary most of all in seeing ancient and primitive religion as collective rather than individual. Because he takes for granted that modern religion is a matter of the individual, his revolutionary approach once again abruptly stops short. He does not, like Émile Durkheim, argue that religion per se is collective.

Durkheim, one of the pioneering sociologists of religion, is indebted to Smith for the focus on ritual as well as belief, on the group rather than the individual, and most exactly on totemism as the first form of religion. But he offers a far fuller sociology of religion than Smith. Not only does Durkheim "sociologize" all religion, but also his sociologizing of even primitive religion goes deeper than Smith's.

For Smith, as for Durkheim, the function of primitive religion is the preservation of the group. But Smith does not, like Durkheim, make group experience the origin of even primitive, let alone modern, religion, and he most certainly does not, like Durkheim, make the group the object of worship in even primitive, let alone modern, religion.

Equally indebted to Smith is Sigmund Freud, who, like Durkheim, credits Smith above all with deeming totemism the earliest stage of religion. (Strictly, Smith appropriated, not created, the idea of totemism.) Freud focuses on the totemic meal but turns Smith's notion of a loving activity into the killing of the totem, which is to say the killing of God. And unlike Durkheim as well as Smith, Freud maintains that the equivalent of the totemic deed is the heart of every stage of religion thereafter.

Smith's legacy is hardly limited to totemism; however, totemism, Smith's most explicit area of influence on Durkheim and Freud, has long since been rejected as the beginning of religion.

Robert Segal

See also Durkheim, Émile; Frazer, James G.; Freud, Sigmund; Religion

Further Readings

Black, J. S., & Chrystal, G. (1912). *The life of William Robertson Smith*. London, UK: Black.

Durkheim, E. (1915). *The elementary forms of the religious life* (J. W. Swain, Trans.). London, UK: Allen & Unwin. (Original work published 1912).

Freud, S. (1950). *Totem and taboo* (J. Strachey, Trans.). London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul. (Original work published 1911).

Jones, R. A. (2005). *The secret of the totem*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Segal, R. A. (2002). Robertson Smith's influence on Durkheim's theory of myth and ritual. In T. A. Idinopulos & B. C. Wilson (Eds.), *Reappraising Durkheim for the study and teaching of religion today* (pp. 59–72). Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.

———. (2008). William Robertson Smith vis-à-vis Émile Durkheim as sociologist of religion. *Journal of Scottish Thought, 1/2,* 1–12.

Smith, W. R. (2002). *Lectures on the religion of the Semites* (with an introduction by R. A. Segal). New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction. (Original work published 1889)

———. (2002). *The prophets of Israel and their place in history to the close of the eighth century* (with a new introduction by R. A. Jones). New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction. (Original work published 1882)

Smithsonian Institution

Since its founding in 1846 by an act of the U.S. Congress, the Smithsonian Institution has played a central role in the development and institutionalization of American anthropology. It is recognized for initiating in-depth fieldwork practices, establishing early linguistic research, as well as being a collecting institution that provides a public platform for the dissemination of anthropological research.

Origins of Smithsonian Anthropology

The origins of anthropology in the United States can be traced back to a series of collecting surveys and excursions, the first being the United States Exploring Expedition of 1838–1842 (Wilkes Expedition), which gathered natural history and ethnographic material from South America, the Pacific, and the Northwest Coast of the United States. Following lengthy debates as to the kind of institution that should be established from the bequest of James Smithson (1765–1829), a research center—the Smithsonian Institution—was established in 1846 by the U.S. Congress, with the respected physicist Joseph Henry (1797–1878) as the first secretary. Henry's primary endeavor was a publication series titled *Contributions to Knowledge*. The first volume, *Ancient Monuments of the Mississippi Valley: Comprising the Results of Extensive Original Surveys and Explorations* (1848), by Ephraim George Squier and Edwin Hamilton Davis, documented the ancient earthworks of Ohio and Kentucky, classifying sites according to function, such as burial grounds and fortifications. From the start, collecting was an essential research strategy for the Smithsonian. The Board of Regents launched a nationwide network made up of government officers, missionaries, and independent researchers for the widespread collection of specimens, calling on secretaries of state, the treasury, and military divisions for assistance.

Influences on Smithsonian anthropology can also be traced back to the linguistic surveys of North American tribes pursued by the then secretary of state, Thomas Jefferson (1743–1826), and Henry Rowe Schoolcraft (1793–1864). At the inaugural meeting of

the Board of Regents of the Smithsonian Institution, Schoolcraft submitted a "Plan for the Investigation of American Ethnology," which advocated for the development of a library of philology. Schoolcraft argued that language (grammar, vocabularies, etc.) was an enduring and thus critical source to understand Native Americans. He was successful in establishing philology as a keystone to Smithsonian research, thereby instituting linguistics as one of the central endeavors within American anthropology.

During these early years, ethnology—as social cultural anthropology was then termed—followed an established set of natural history methods for the classification of specimens. Early field collectors and ethnologists, such as Edward Palmer (1831–1911), John Wesley Powell (1834–1902), Robert Kennicott (1835–1866), Walter Jesse Fewkes (1850–1930), and James Stevenson (d. 1888), had their initial training in natural history (botany, geology, and zoology). The first assistant secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, Spencer Fullerton Baird (1823–1887), not only applied the biological systematics of Linnaeus in his development of the overall institutional collecting schemas, he also provided specific instructions and equipment to military officers and explorers educating them how to collect. Baird also set about organizing and exhibiting this vast inventory from the newly chartered territories of North America, laying the foundations for the U.S. National Museum.

Bureau of American Ethnology (1879–1965)

The founding of the Bureau of Ethnology in 1879, later known as the Bureau of American Ethnology (BAE), ushered in the first institution devoted to the methodological study of Native Americans. Government funded, the work of the BAE was linked to the wider Smithsonian through shared expeditions and the resulting collections. The bureau's broad interests in the past and present ways of life of the North American tribes led to an extensive system of researchers and publications, such as the *Annual Reports* and the *Handbook of North American Indians.* Powell, the bureau's founder, began his scientific career as director of the U.S. Geographical and Geological Survey of the Rocky Mountains, leading expeditions to the Western territories, including the famous expedition down the Colorado and Grand Canyon in 1869. Powell documented the languages of the tribes he encountered, positioning him as one of the leading figures in early U.S. field research. According to Powell, research at the BAE should include eight subjects: (1) somatology (skeletons, especially the skull), (2) philology (classification of language stocks and mapping original habitats), (3) mythology, (4) sociology (following Lewis Henry Morgan's kinship structures), (5) habits and customs (mortuary and religious ceremonies), (6) technology, (7) archaeology, and (8) the history of Indian affairs (including treaties, cession of lands, removals, and schooling). Powell's synthetic approach to anthropology was also heavily influenced by his preoccupation with survey work and the systematic collection of data.

After founding the bureau, Powell lost no time in launching expeditions—the first of which departed for the Southwest region in 1879. This was led by Stevenson and commenced at the Pueblo of Zuni, followed by Hopi and some of the Rio Grande Pueblos. The expedition comprised the photographer John K. Hillers (1843–1925); Stevenson's wife, Matilda Coxe Stevenson (1849–1915); and the newly hired ethnologist at the U.S. National Museum, Frank Hamilton Cushing (1857–1900). Under Powell's direction, this expedition resulted in one of the first systematic ethnographic and photographic studies, leading to the high visibility of American anthropology in the late 19th century. Photographs and ethnographic specimens were distributed to historical societies and libraries around the nation and world as part of the Smithsonian's vision for the dissemination of knowledge and cultivation of public interests in Native North American cultures.

The 1879 expedition also resulted in the first example of participant observation fieldwork in Americanist anthropology. When the research party moved on to Hopi, Cushing remained in Zuni, where he set about learning the language, studying the philosophy and history of the Zunis over a period of 5 years. Departing from Powell's commitment to Morgan's evolutionary hierarchy, Cushing paid more attention to the relationship between people and their physical environment over time. As he advocated an in-depth understanding of Zuni culture and emphasized the mental structures that shaped people's perception of the world, Cushing's work is now regarded as a precursor to French structuralism. Cushing is also remembered for his initiation into the Bow Priest society in Zuni, which not only gave him access to Zuni esoteric ritual

knowledge but also assigned him responsibilities toward the protection of the Zuni people. In his day, however, Cushing was criticized by a number of his colleagues for his immersive and intuitive approach to fieldwork, revealing early tensions in the discipline between the empiricist and subjectivist positions.

Through its early in-depth research projects, the BAE and Smithsonian forged a new kind of field ethnology. In particular, long-term research commitments to specific regions and tribes gave the bureau a defining role in the study of the people of North America. The bureau was also the first institution that could fund professional anthropologists, giving key figures in American anthropology their start in anthropology, including James Mooney (1861–1921), who conducted extensive fieldwork, principally among the Cherokee and Kiowa. His field experiences acquainted him with methods used by tribes to transmit their history through formulas, ceremony, and art, resulting in his privileging ethnohistorical approaches. Matilda Coxe Stevenson dedicated more than 30 years to the Puebloan cultures of the Southwest, pioneering the earliest use of a photographic series. Fewkes devoted years to archaeological and ethnographic fieldwork at Hopi villages and is recognized as the first ethnographer in 1890 to make sound recordings of traditional songs. Consequently, the professionalization of fieldwork, the adaptation of new technologies, and the widely distributed publications positioned the bureau as the most prominent producer of ethnographic data in the United States in the late 19th and early 20th centuries.

By the 1890s, Powell argued that he and his colleagues had moved anthropology beyond survey and armchair analysis and that "by long training, by great zeal, and by deep scientific insight, these gentlemen are now able to accomplish results far beyond the elementary stage, and the significance of the data being rapidly gathered becomes more apparent" (BAE Annual Report, 1894). Appropriate organizing schemas, however, were not wholly apparent, resulting in debates over differing theoretical lines—as shown by the different approaches adopted by the BAE, the U.S. National Museum, and later by Franz Boas at the American Museum of Natural History in New York.

Anthropology at the U.S. National Museum

Initially, the Smithsonian's anthropological collections were housed in the U.S. Patent Office, but by 1881, as the result of vigorous collecting, they had outgrown this space, and Congress approved the building of the U.S. National Museum. The Division of Anthropology was established in 1883 and, while emphasizing North America, the museum's collecting and research program became worldwide in scope.

The first curator of ethnology at the U.S. National Museum, Otis T. Mason (1838–1908), played a key role in designing Smithsonian classification schemas. Baird had chosen Mason to oversee the organization of the North American collections and encouraged him to draw on the taxonomies of natural history for their identification. Mason was also heavily influenced by Gustav Klemm (1802–1867) of the Museum of Ethnology in Leipzig, whose system of classification was built on the unity of global cultures as defined by environmental factors. Ascribing to this culture history approach in anthropology, Mason was fascinated by the evolution of human invention. Under Mason's direction, anthropologists at the National Museum studied how things were made as a way to get at the creators' minds. Alongside William Henry Holmes (1846–1933) and Cushing, Mason used this research to develop exhibits, creating life groups organized according to culture areas, demonstrating specific knowledge, such as stone tool making and Puebloan weaving. These life groups formed the core exhibits at numerous world expositions and the U.S. National Museum, as well as becoming the technique used by Boas in his creation of dioramas at the American Museum of Natural History in New York. In the journal *Science* in 1887, however, Boas criticized Mason for basing his analysis on external form, suggesting that appearances were often misleading and that it was important to interpret the ethnological specimens according to their specific history and meaning. Despite this refutation of Mason's view of anthropology, Boas and the Boasian lineage owed some of their beginnings to the collective work of the BAE, the National Museum, and innovators such as Cushing and Mooney. Due to its inability to confer academic degrees, however, the Smithsonian's legacy has often been ignored.

Diversity of Anthropology at the Smithsonian

Following World War II, while the Smithsonian anthropology remained primarily focused on the Americas, a more global outlook continued to

develop with research in Africa, Asia, and the Pacific. In 1965, this endeavor took new directions with the hiring of Chicago-trained Sol Tax (1907–1995), who became an advisor to the Smithsonian's secretary, Sidney Dillon Ripley II (1913–2001). Three years later, the Center for the Study of Man was established, with Tax as its first director. With its broad mission of applying anthropological knowledge to problems faced by the world, the center helped transform anthropology at the Smithsonian, establishing various programs of ongoing importance. The challenges posed by merging individual researchers into new collectives and by changes in the funding base eventually led to the center's termination in 1983. As part of these developments, the BAE was dissolved in 1965, and its staff joined the National Museum of Natural History, Department of Anthropology. In 1968, the BAE's archives became the foundation for the National Anthropological Archives, which has become the single most important repository for anthropological materials in the United States. The National Anthropological Film Center had been founded in 1975 as part of the center, assembling more than half a million feet of anthropological research film. In 1981, the National Anthropological Film Center joined the National Anthropological Archives and became the Human Studies Film Archives. Under the editorship of former BAE member and curator for North America Ethnology, William C. Sturtevant (1926–2009), in 1978 the Smithsonian began publishing the edited scholarly reference volumes *The Handbook of North American Indians*. While much of the center was absorbed into the National Museum of Natural History, Department of Anthropology, other anthropological research developed outside the center, principally through the annual Folklife Festival. Beginning in 1967, and now a part of the larger workings of the Center for Folklife and Cultural Heritage, the festival remains an important showcase and forum for the global diversity of the performing arts and their intangible heritage.

In the 1980s, Ivan Karp (curator for African Ethnology) and Steven D. Lavine examined the role of anthropology in museums through the prominent interdisciplinary conference and subsequent edited volume *Exhibiting Cultures: The Poetics and Politics of Museum Display* (1991), which explored museums as arenas that provided key insights into social interactions. The Arctic Studies Center formed by William Fitzhugh (curator of Archaeology) in 1988, exemplified this method of interdisciplinary and collaborative research with indigenous communities, including an exhibit that relocated more than 500 objects to the Anchorage Museum in Alaska. Following a decade-long negotiation with the Pueblo of Zuni over the definition of cultural patrimony, in 1987, the Smithsonian returned the *Ahayu:da*, or War Gods, to the Pueblo of Zuni. *Ahayu:da* are twin gods carved by the Bear and Deer clans to serve as protective guardians for the Zuni people. After their annual tenure, new *Ahayu:da* are created, and previous ones are purposely placed on shrines, where their disintegration process is vital in replenishing the earth with their powers. In 1991, in accordance with legislation passed by Congress, the Repatriation Office was established in the Department of Anthropology to facilitate the return of human remains, sacred objects, and objects of cultural patrimony to Native American tribes. Collaborative work with communities has also been forged by the National Museum of the American Indian, which was established by an act of Congress in 1989 to house the former collections of the Museum of the American Indian, New York. With a new museum opening on the mall in 2004, the National Museum of the American Indian displays exhibits co-curated by museum staff and indigenous communities from across the Americas. In 2009, this collaborative approach to collections at the Smithsonian was expanded through the *Recovering Voices* initiative, which connects communities across the globe with their respective collections and archival materials to help foster grassroots heritage efforts in the maintenance of endangered languages and knowledge.

With more than 160 years of history, the Smithsonian Institution—particularly the BAE—is recognized as being integral to the founding of American anthropology. Its specific contributions comprise laying the groundwork for a discipline based in fieldwork—including participant observation methods—institutionalizing the study of linguistics of indigenous peoples, and professionalizing the discipline through the support of long-term research. An important legacy of Smithsonian anthropology are the collections, which have become a building block for indigenous communities for the

development of heritage programs, thereby adding diverse dimensions to anthropology's future.

Gwyneira Isaac and Joshua A. Bell

See also American Museum of Natural History; Boas, Franz; Culture Area Approach; Descriptive Linguistics; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Tax, Sol

Further Readings

Boas, F. (1887). Museums of ethnology and their classification. *Science, 9,* 612–614.

Darnell, R. (1971). The Powell classification of American Indian languages. *Papers in Linguistics, 4,* 79–110.

Fowler, D. D., & Fowler, C. S. (1971). Anthropology of the Numa: John Wesley Powell's manuscripts on the Numic Peoples of western North America, 1868–1880. In W. Merrill & I. Goddard (Eds.), *Smithsonian contributions to anthropology* (No. 14). Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Hinsley, C. M. (1981). *The Smithsonian and the American Indian: Making a moral anthropology in Victorian America.* Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Isaac, G. (2005). Re-observation and the recognition of change: The photographs of Matilda Coxe Stevenson (1879–1915). *Journal of the Southwest, 47*(3), 411–455.

Karp, I., & Lavine, S. D. (1991). *Exhibiting cultures: The poetics and politics of museum display.* Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Merrill, W. L., Ladd, E. J., & Ferguson, T. J. (1993). Return of the Ahayu:da. *Current Anthropology, 34*(5), 523–567.

Parezo, N. J. (1985). Cushing as part of the team: The collecting activities of the Smithsonian. *American Ethnologist, 12*(4), 763–774.

Social Constructionism

Social constructionism is a type of philosophical idealism; its opposite is realism. That means the intellectual (*geistig*) being is the reason of the material being—and not vice versa. Social constructionists believe that the world cannot be accurately represented by language (*abbildtheorie*), but rather, language creates a socially agreed-on construction of the world. This means that the world cannot be seen as essence, as realism sees it. Social constructionism is relevant especially in psychological anthropology and to questions of identity, ethnicity, and race.

Social Constructionism in Current Anthropology

Reference books on social and cultural anthropology seldom mention social constructionism. Rather, the term (*social*) *constructionism* is used in many different contexts that presuppose a very broad definition, such as representation, race, identity, postcolonial theory, and Foucauldian discourse analysis. Scholars associated with the term include Stuart Hall, Talal Asad, Edward Said, Richard A. Shweder, Clifford Geertz, and James Clifford. That the term *social construction* is used in such different ways is not totally wrong, but it does hinder the use of the term as a scientific theory or a scientific position; rather, in this broad sense, it means *any* production of knowledge. For instance, Said's study *Orientalism* is a Foucauldian-inspired discourse analysis rather than social constructionism; it does not need concrete actors, but social constructionism essentially does. On the other hand, the adjacent social sciences—especially sociology and psychology—do have a profiled definition of social constructionism. If anthropology were to share this fairly precise definition of social constructionism, interdisciplinary communication would be improved. What remains then to be understood by social constructionism?

Philosophical Background

In the social sciences, the term *constructionism* mostly refers to the sociological work of Peter L. Berger and Thomas Luckmann. The epistemological idea of constructionism is of course much older and refers back to the early 18th century—to the work of Giambattista Vico. Vico rejected the idea that people should be studied using scientific methods, and he therefore opposed the mathematically and scientifically oriented philosophy of René Descartes. He argued that a Cartesian approach ignored the human self as *producer* of cultural meaning and symbol systems. Thus, constructionism is about the ways in which human beings create their own realities.

Social constructionist thinking does not assume per se that the world cannot be explained according to the principles of natural science. Even radical constructionists do argue in that sense: Truth about the "objective" world cannot be found in that

methodology. In Vico's writings, this corresponds to the separation of nature and history. He designs his constructionism as analogous to God's action only for history, and thus only for human space of creative action. This means that we are not able to uncover reality; rather, we construct our perceived reality (*wirklichkeit*); that is, what is true (*verum*) and what is objectively real (*factum*) do not coincide in human action and insight. Human beings can only gain truth by constructing it through thoughts, language, and history. The limitedness of human understanding is therefore the origin of interpretation in the humanities and social sciences. The world of this productiveness is the world of probability. Reason *and* fantasy, logic *and* action, nothing can be separated. The world—as a human world—is always an interpreted and constructed world. As Geertz wrote in a 1984 essay, "We see the lives of others through lenses of our own grinding and . . . they look back on ours through ones of their own" (p. 275).

Influences on Social Constructionism

Beside the aforementioned sociological developments, social constructionism experienced a renaissance in the 1980s, but the sources from which it draws its inspirations are quite varied. Only one common focus can be found: the linguistic turn inspired by Ludwig Wittgenstein's later linguistic theory, published as *Philosophical Investigations*. For Wittgenstein, words do not get their meaning because of their relation to reality or to objects; they receive meaning only in the context of their use in speaking. The much quoted Wittgensteinian *meaning-as-use* takes place in a social context and in social practices: in "language games." Next to this common reference, other influences on current social constructionist approaches can be identified as follows:

Thomas Kuhn's *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions* (1962), which allowed thinking about different scientific realities, showed that scientific knowledge production is subject to the support of a community. Karin Knorr-Cetina showed that this is true not only for knowledge of philosophical subjects but for knowledge of scientific subjects as well.

The two methodical approaches of *ethnomethodology* and *conversation analysis* have impressively shown in everyday situations and conversations how such common constructions occur in reality: Daily activities are subject to many conventions and follow rules over which individuals exercise only very limited influence.

The *radical constructionism* of Ernst von Glasersfeld, Humberto Maturana, and Francisco Varela has also contributed. Radical constructionism emphasizes the ways in which the individual mind constructs reality, whereas social constructionism emphasizes the ways in which societies construct reality; but both share basic assumptions regarding the problem of representation (the question whether meaning resides in the real world of objects or not), the reference to reality, the limitations of human epistemic abilities (*erkenntnisfähigkeit*), and the availability of world (*weltverfügung*).

Premises of Social Constructionism

- All human knowledge is historically and culturally variable and is the product of social communities.
- Knowledge construction is tied to specific languages and language areas. That means knowledge formulated in a specific language cannot be generalized and cannot be claimed to be true over time. That means also that the claim of scientific neutrality and objectivity must be rejected.
- The world cannot be represented by language (*abbildtheorie*), but language creates the world within social speaking, so that the world can never be considered as essence. Meanings do not adhere to words or things; rather, they are (re) negotiated in social interactions depending on the specific context. Cultural traditions guarantee the "certainty" of understanding. Thus, social constructionism is identified as a variation of philosophical idealism, which means the intellectual (*geistig*) being is the reason of the material being—and not vice versa.
- Human insight (*rkennen*) takes place as a productive process and is not reducible to the deduction of insights from the material facts or structures. Accordingly, human thinking and acting transcend the acquisition (*widerspiegelung*) of material and social conditions; they are not essentially instrumental-rational.

- A fundamental insight of constructionism is the *limitation of human action and cognition*. Or, following Vico, if we take it seriously that the human being is a perceiving subject, then truth and reality will become identifiable through their appearance in his or her thoughts, speech, and history. But situation, perspective, and horizon remain limited in principle. Insight itself is ascertainable neither by observation or contemplation nor by summing up separated perspectives or merging of different horizons. This leads to relativism in regard to truth and the validity of knowledge and leads to criteria of truth such as instrumental usefulness.
- If the world is constructed in social interactions, then this applies to all existing things in it, including individual ideas and feelings. Emotions do not arise in the head or belly of the individual; they are negotiated in social practices in which individuals (have to) take part. That means the individual adopts them.
- If things remain changeable, and are permanently negotiated, there is always the opportunity to influence and manipulate them. In this respect, social constructionist theories claim to have an emancipatory character.

Methods

Methodological consequences result from these premises: The methods and ideas borrowed from natural science can be neglected in favor of hermeneutic and linguistic analyses. Hermeneutic methods include ethnomethodology, autoethnography, conversation analysis, and some varieties of discourse analysis.

Conversation analysis and specific forms of discourse analysis, such as the approaches of Derek Edwards and Jonathan Potter, are sometimes criticized as linguistic rather than social science methods. They confuse speaking (social interaction) with language (grammatical analysis) and thus miss the proper subject.

Critique

- Similar to the confusion between language and speaking, some variants of social constructionism explicitly reject an acting subject and the resulting subjectivity—and thus the agent, its intentionality, and its agency (*handlungsfähigkeit*). Mostly, the acting subject is just seen as a passive partaker in these practices; at best, it appears as "subject position" or, more neutral, as "positioning." In this understanding, because texts gain meaning purely from their relationship with other texts, they do not require knowledge, experience, or other psychological constructs. Texts do not need authors if they only refer to other texts. However, Wittgenstein's *meaning-as-use* requires genuine speaking subjects who *participate* in the language game. We learn the meaning of concepts through actually playing the language game (Saussurean *parole*). Meaning without an interpretive subject would be meaningless as well as senseless. Language itself does not require speakers; it is an abstract system about the relation of the signified and the signifier (Saussurean *langue*).
- By ignoring the role of the individual, some forms of social constructionism also deny a role to the physical body, treating it as a passive canvas for social attributes. Experience (*erfahrung*), bodily experience (*erleben*), and body language are only considered if these produce readable signs. This excludes the fact that the body acts out of physically anchored experience and can be subversive in its expressivity and desire.
- Following constructivism radically would lead to a world of *anything goes*; that is, no one could be made responsible for suffering. Suffering would be individualized as construction, and the causation would be disputable. Therefore, the idea of realism remains necessary. It keeps open the option that there is an objective world outside language. Only with the realism apriority—in the sense of Immanuel Kant—can we refer to the responsibility of human beings and reason conditions that cannot be questioned by discourse—for example, human dignity.

Lars Allolio-Näcke and Jürgen van Oorschot

See also Asad, Talal; Autoethnography; Clifford, James; Ethnomethodology; Geertz, Clifford; Psychological Anthropology; Said, Edward; Saussure, Ferdinand de; Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Further Readings

Berger, P. L., & Luckmann, T. (1966). *The social construction of reality: A treatise in the sociology of knowledge*. Garden City, NY: Anchor Books.

Burr, V. (2003). *Social constructionism* (2nd ed.). London, UK: Routledge.
Geertz, C. (1984). Anti-anti-relativism. *American Anthropologist, 86*(2), 263–278.
Gergen, K. J. (1999). *An invitation to social construction.* Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.
Gergen, M. M., & Gergen, K. J. (Eds.). (2003). *Social construction: A reader.* London, UK: Sage.
Kuhn, T. (1962). *The structure of scientific revolutions.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Nightingale, D. J., & Crombie, J. (Eds.). (1999). *Social constructionist psychology: A critical analysis of theory and practice.* Buckingham, UK: Open University Press.
Wittgenstein, L. (2001). *Philosophical investigations.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell. (Original work published 1953)
Zielke, B. (2007). *Sozialer Konstruktionismus* [Social constructionism]. Göttingen, Germany: Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht.

Social Evolutionary Theory, 20th-Century

See Carneiro, Robert L.; Comparative Method; Fried, Morton; Murdock, George Peter; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie

Social Studies of Science

Social studies of science is a multidisciplinary approach to analyzing scientific and technological practice. The field is also referred to as science, technology, and society or science and technology studies. (As the differences between approaches are slight, the abbreviation STS will serve here.) The flagship journal for the field is *Social Studies of Science*, first appearing in 1971. In 1976, the Society for the Social Study of Science held its first annual meeting and released the first issue of its journal, *Science, Technology, and Human Values.* STS is an international concern, represented by professional societies that include the European Association of Science and Technology, the Japanese Society for Science and Technology Studies, and the Latin American Society for the Social Study of Science and Technology. There are a growing number of STS programs at both undergraduate and graduate levels, either run independently or in conjunction with history, sociology, anthropology, and policy programs.

The next section of this entry presents the early and mid-20th-century foundation on which STS was built. Four themes are then detailed that represent major areas of study: (1) laboratories and fields, (2) networks, (3) hybrids and bodies, and (4) controversies. Although not covered here, it is important to note that STS has been engaged with postcolonial, racial, and queer theory as well as scholarship on visualization in science, public understanding of science, and human-animal relations, and the study of social sciences, including economics.

Foundations

Science and technology became ever more central to social, economic, and political life in the 20th century. Scholars saw a need to understand these changing dynamics. Philosophy, history, and sociology had already begun to study science as a system of knowledge. Several European intellectual communities, most notably the logical positivists of the 1920s Vienna circle, debated whether and how scientific thinking was unique. Karl Popper's *Logic of Scientific Discovery* (1935) argued that a scientific fact must be "falsifiable," ideally through experiment. In the same year, the Polish doctor Ludwik Fleck published *The Genesis and Development of a Scientific Fact.* Like Popper, Fleck was concerned about the epistemological character of scientific facts. Using biological and medical case studies, he refuted the positivists' conception of facts as objective, free-floating entities. Instead, facts emerged from the cultural worlds of the people who assert them, or "thought collectives."

In the United States, historians and sociologists were also turning their attention to the study of science. Thomas Kuhn drew from perspectives in history and philosophy of science to write *The Structure of Scientific Revolutions*, published in 1962. In representing scientific practice as radical shifts in "paradigms," as opposed to the stepwise accumulation of data that putatively describes "nature" with greater and greater precision, Kuhn offered an antipositivist account.

At Columbia University, Robert K. Merton did pioneering work in the sociology of science, beginning with his 1938 doctoral dissertation "Science, Technology and Society in 17th Century England." He directed attention away from the foundations of scientific knowledge toward the institutional features of modern science. In 1942, he codified his program around the "norms" of science to characterize an

ethos of science whose coexistence and interdependencies lead to the production of a scientific workforce and its consequent knowledge.

Scholars in the Science Studies unit, an interdisciplinary center established in Edinburgh in 1964 by David Edge, criticized such normative approaches. The critique evolved into what David Bloor called the Strong Program of the Sociology of Scientific Knowledge (SSK). SSK applied a constructivist and relativist approach to analyzing the content of science. In *Knowledge and Social Imagery*, Bloor drew on Émile Durkheim's *Elementary Forms of Religious Life* to build an analogy between religion and science that would suggest why one might undertake a social study of science as part of the promise of social science to demystify the making of all human knowledge.

By the end of the 1970s, scholars were engaged in a cross-disciplinary dialogue that coalesced under the umbrella of STS.

Laboratories and Fields

One focus of STS has been to study science as it is practiced. As STS expanded from the sociological focus of SSK, early laboratory studies explicitly drew on anthropological theory and methods, including ethnomethodological practices. The first of these, published in 1979, was Bruno Latour's and Steve Woolgar's *Laboratory Life: The Social Construction of Scientific Facts*. Latour commented on the surprising fact that no "anthropological excursions" had been made to study the "tribes of scientists." Situating scientists as tribes with attending cultures opened the door for questions of kinship and life cycles in science. In 1988, Sharon Traweek modeled her analysis of the Stanford Linear Accelerator in *Beamtimes and Lifetimes* on E. E. Evans-Pritchard's study of the Nuer. Just as making sense of the Nuer required the anthropologist to understand how the Nuer made sense of cattle, Traweek argued that understanding physicists meant understanding how they made sense of detectors.

Additionally, Karin Knorr-Cetina, Michael Lynch, and others argued that facts, as Fleck had earlier observed, were not lying around waiting to be discovered but were actively created through social and material processes. These accounts examined how politics and cultures were ever present in the lab. In studying how facts become stable and accepted, analysts focused on the artifacts necessary for their production and circulation. They argued that no step in lab work is self-evident; each requires a social decision. Accordingly, since lab work is social, the facts that are produced from lab work are as much social as natural.

Scientific work occurs in the field as well as in the laboratory. Charles Goodwin, Cori Hayden, Stefan Helmreich, and Christopher Henke have all used ethnography—from anthropological, linguistic, and sociological starting points—to follow knowledge and techniques as they move into the field and the wider public culture. Studying how science happens in different places raises the question of the epistemological importance of place in scientific practice. Robert Kohler, in his 2002 *Landscapes and Labscapes*, historicized the "lab-field" border and the way practices moved across this border. A laboratory strives to be placeless. Far from being a mirror of nature, lab work strips a phenomenon of certain attributes so as to focus on those that scientists deem important. Facts are authoritative because they emerge from a carefully controlled lab setting. Aware of the intimate connection between authority and the laboratory, scientific field-workers often emulate lab procedures in the field to lend a similar legitimacy to their work.

Networks

Following science beyond the laboratory required a reconceptualization of the relationship between science and society. Dissatisfied with an assumed distinction between these two spheres, Bruno Latour, Michel Callon, and John Law developed actor-network theory (ANT) in the 1980s. ANT used the imagery of a network to place STS on the same plane, arguing that they were simultaneously constructed. This symmetry also applied to the actors: Human and nonhuman actors potentially share equal agency within the network. ANT required a new definition of "social" in which any tie between two actors is social, even if not part of what commonly would be called the social sphere. In a famous example, Callon framed scallops, fishermen, and scientists as actors, each with fluid identities and relationships, while writing about controversial fishing practices. With the social destabilized, the goal of an ANT analyst is, as Latour coined, to "reassemble the social."

Though technologies are lively actors within ANT, the social construction of technology focuses explicitly on technological systems. This field is more influenced by SSK and the history of technology and deviates from ANT in that social and technical domains remain distinct and stable. However, social construction of technology, like ANT, embraces a networked worldview.

Wiebe Biker, Thomas Hughes, and Trevor Pinch's book, *The Social Construction of Technological Systems* (1987), shifts technology studies from how technology influences society to how social forces influence technological development. Emblematic of this work is Donald MacKenzie's *Inventing Accuracy*, which addresses how nuclear missile guidance both shapes and is shaped by its social context. MacKenzie illustrates a network populated by technicians, politicians, and the military, arguing that it is this web of interactions, not a natural technological trajectory, that explains the historical increase in the accuracy of ballistic missiles.

Hybrids and Bodies

While network approaches detail how humans are enrolled in complex techno-scientific systems, another stream of STS focuses on how the human body is itself already a hybrid of science and technology. David Mindell's work examines humans as they live in machines (warships, spacecrafts) and the simultaneous embrace and rejection of being part of a mechanical system. Sherry Turkle's study of an early Internet program sorts through the psychological impact of the newly emerging networked self.

Donna Haraway, drawing from both STS and feminist scholarship, presents the cyborg to argue that we are all human-technological hybrids. This requires a rethinking and possible rejection of the nature/culture binary. Haraway thus suggests the erasure of other binaries, specifically those stemming from gender, race, and class.

Marilyn Strathern, in *Partial Connections*, found traction with the image of the cyborg when considering the analytic difficulty in switching scales that necessarily accompany anthropology's move to cross-cultural comparison. Haraway's cyborg captures the positioning of the ethnographer as simultaneously embedded and looking beyond a situation, and thus caught between being one person and something more than one person. Strathern's work flows back into STS through works such as Annemarie Mol's *Body Multiple* (2002). In detailing the experience of patients with atherosclerosis, Mol innovatively presents two narratives simultaneously. The ethnographic and analytic texts both appear on the same page but without explicit connections. Her book visually reflects Strathern's characterization of being more than one but less than many.

Haraway, joined by Evelyn Fox Keller, Emily Martin, Rayna Rapp, and Sarah Franklin, brought feminist theory into STS. As the body is a fruitful place to explore questions of sex and gender, STS feminist studies focused on the biological sciences, signifying a shift away from the physical sciences that early theorists found exemplary when thinking through facts and experiments.

Controversies

An early approach to controversy studies played with Kuhn's theory of shifting paradigms, when the "normal" science of work within a paradigm shifted to "revolutionary" science. The heterodox nature of revolutionary science can lead to controversy. With this model, there must be a mechanism by which a new paradigm is shored up. Harry Collins's notion of the "experimenters' regress," the inability to know whether a replicated experiment supports a truth claim or reinforces false premises, suggested that it is not simply a competently performed experiment that ends a controversy, because what is or is not "competent" is under debate. Latour noted that controversies do not end because of the emergence of indisputable facts. Rather, what in retrospect looks like indisputable facts are the result of a resolved controversy. Peter Galison argued against such clear shifts from one paradigm to another. Instead, his "trading zones," modeled on anthropological understandings of how cultures exchange goods despite speaking different languages, account for how scientists who might appear to be working in different paradigms develop a discourse that allows seemingly incommensurable theories to be simultaneously developed.

Conclusion

STS scholars have begun to ask what their role is in scientific controversies. Should STS be an activist discipline, more intimately engaged with scientists and the policy questions they raise? Sheila Jasanoff reframed the language of "controversy," suggesting instead a model of "coproduction" in which knowledge and social order are simultaneously produced. Jasanoff advocated for the scholar to offer critical reflection while still being actively engaged.

Debating whether and how STS should be socially or politically active has encouraged the examination of topics that illustrate how scientific work affects people beyond the laboratory. Kim Fortun's *Advocacy After Bhopal* situated her role as activist and offered a study of an industrial disaster and the role of advocacy networks, while Steven Epstein has

examined the role of lay and expert knowledge in the area of biomedical activism.

STS is still concerned with questions raised early on about lab work, fieldwork, and scientific facts. Though the complex network of STS defies description in any single work, STS continues to attend to micro and macro processes, following them wherever they lead.

Lisa R. Messeri

See also Ethnomethodology; Latour, Bruno; Popper, Karl; Social Constructionism; Strathern, Marilyn

Further Readings

Dumit, J. (2004). *Picturing personhood: Brain scans and biomedical identity.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Forsythe, D. (2001). *Studying those who study us: An anthropologist in the world of artificial intelligence.* Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

Latour, B. (1988). *Science in action: How to follow scientists and engineers through society.* Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

MacKenzie, D. (1993). *Inventing accuracy.* Cambridge: MIT Press.

Pickering, A. (1999). *Constructing quarks: A sociological history of particle physics.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Rabinow, P. (1996). *Making PCR: A story of biotechnology.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Shapin, S., & Schaffer, S. (1985). *Leviathan and the air-pump: Hobbes, Boyle, and the experimental life.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Star, S. L., & Griesemer, J. R. (1989). Institutional ecology, "translations" and boundary objects: Amateurs and professionals in Berkeley's Museum of Vertebrate Zoology, 1907–39. *Social Studies of Science, 19*(3), 387–420.

SOCIOBIOLOGY

See Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution

SOCIOLINGUISTICS

As the two constituting terms *linguistics* and *society* suggest, sociolinguistics studies the relationship between language and society. An explanation of these terms will help define sociolinguistics, its subject matter and goals, and delineate its scope, its specific themes, and its research interests.

Linguistics: Formal and Social Orientation

Linguistics is the scientific study of language. Broad differentiation is often made between "theoretical or formal" and "empirical or social" approaches to the study of language. The most influential theoretical linguist in the past 60 years is Noam Chomsky. According to Chomsky, linguistics is concerned with an ideal speaker-listener, who is in a completely homogeneous speech community and knows its language perfectly. Chomsky's works in the field of syntax, which stress the analyses of deep linguistic rules that govern language as a system, exemplify this formal approach. Other theoretical linguists include Björn Lindblom, Manfred Krifka, and Bruce Hayes, who study phonetics, semantics, and phonology, respectively. Theoretical linguists study the formal properties of languages; they focus on the abstract system of knowledge possessed by the so-called idealized *speaker-hearer* of a language rather than on what a language user does with it or its functions. Their goal is to elucidate the universal nature of language by making sense of rules that users have internalized.

The empirical approach to the study of language is different from, and perhaps in reaction to, theoretical linguistics. With orientation toward actual societies, this approach, known as sociolinguistics, studies the actual utterances of speakers as they occur in varying societal situations and contexts. Instead of explicating an abstract system of knowledge possessed by a speaker, the focus is on "talk" and its contents and goals. Sociolinguistics sees language as a cultural product, a communal property that, among other things, encodes societal values, members' dispositions, and how members use language to negotiate relations. Furthermore, sociolinguistics focuses on the communicative and social functions of language, aiming to understand native meanings and texts as well as subtexts. Thus, the domain of sociolinguistics is the actual, day-to-day utterances of individuals as members of a group or society as they negotiate different social situations. It studies language use and variations in the context of a society and social situations.

Subject Matter of Sociolinguistics

Sociolinguistics focuses on communications in a society—that is, a group of interacting people. Just

as a society is vast and complex, the study of the speech of such a society is equally vast and complex. In response to this complexity, scholars have carved out diverse specializations and research questions through which they obtain meaningful insights into the often perplexing issues arising from rapid changes in social structures. Some scholars study the relationship between language and social categories such as identity, gender, ethnicity, and sexuality. Others are concerned with how language changes over time and how such changes either affect or are affected by social forces. Integral to sociolinguistics, however, is the study of language variation. One of the goals of studying variation is to understand the many internal variations observed among individuals and groups in light of the specific linguistic norms that work to curtail these variations such that participants still communicate meaningfully. Since there are many ways to speak, sociolinguistics studies the existence and use of multiple languages within a community (multilingualism). This includes an understanding of the choices that individuals make when switching between different languages in conversations (code switching). Sociolinguistics also studies the attitudes, feelings, and views of individuals and groups to the different varieties of language used in their society. Governmental policies concerning language use are also studied in sociolinguistics. Studying these different themes provides a comprehensive understanding of the interactions between facets of society and language use.

Group in Sociolinguistics

The notion of group is important to sociolinguistics. "Group" is used to describe people who are geographically bound, who fraternize for social, religious, political, cultural, familial, or vocational reasons and share similar speech norms. People live in groups, organize their existence in groups, and, in a stratified society, identify with a certain group either as minority, majority, marginalized, or dominant. Group membership may be permanent or temporary, and members use the variety of speech of their group. Different levels of groups conceptualized for research purposes by sociolinguistics include a speech community (people who use a specific language or its varieties), a community of practice (a group of people who are closely knit, who engage in similar functions and share a similar language, e.g., biologists, linguists, or tennis players), a linguistic community—which among other definitions can refer to the collective speech of a political unit (e.g., the United States), and social networks, including online and offline social relations in a society. As people move between groups or social networks, they configure their speech to conform to and reflect their group membership. The speech pattern within a group is presumed to be uniform because members adhere to the linguistic features of their group to be identified with it and be set apart from other groups. Through these conceptual levels, sociolinguistics accounts for the use of language within the community, and sociolinguists study the social motivation for the choices that people make in their use of language as they go about their daily lives. Sociolinguists also study speakers' view of their language, their attitude to the way they sound, who they consider linguistic insiders, and how they maintain language boundaries. For example, people in the United States, Nigeria, and Great Britain all say they speak English. However, there are obvious differences in the way they speak, such that most English-speaking listeners can tell which of these countries they come from. To most people in these three countries, American and British English have more prestige than Nigerian English. It is within groups that stereotypes, values, norms, desires, and attitudes of people toward self and others take their roots and find expression. The linguistic behavior of individuals, according to the sociolinguist William Labov, cannot be understood without knowledge of the community to which they belong. The society of one's primary orientation provides the context in which the linguistic codes derive their meaning and references.

Language in Society

Linguists and most nonlinguists understand language differently. Most nonlinguists think about proper and improper speech, and good and bad language. Generally, "good language" refers to a formal *standard* speech form—the variety that is taught and learned in school, found in textbooks, and perhaps used by the media. This is contrary to linguists, who make no distinction between proper and improper speech and consider standard speech as one of the many varieties in existence. To sociolinguistics in particular, the more interesting varieties are those that nonlinguists call *dialects*. They are more interesting

because they closely approximate what people actually use in their normal interactions. Nonlinguists, however, assume that *dialects* are qualitatively inferior and less correct than the standard. Linguists avoid making value judgments; they consider every form of speech used by any group of people as valid, and they consider it their task to provide accurate descriptions of the languages that they observe without prescribing rules for their use.

Members of a speech community subscribe to a certain sense of rightness or wrongness with respect to usage of their language. This presumed sense becomes the "standard linguistic version" against which actual usages are measured. In the United States, this is called Standard American English. It is referred to as Received Pronunciation in Great Britain and *Hochdeutsch* in Germany. Scholars at the linguistic end of the research spectrum might study the formal content of these varieties, while those at the social end might be interested in their relationship to social issues such as stratification, education, gender, sexuality, education, and politics. There is no homogeneous linguistic society where everyone speaks alike. For instance, there is no one way to speak English in North America. This is the result of historical and social factors ranging from the different patterns of its early settlement, to the different environments within which groups subsist, their demography, and how groups interact with each other and across social classes. The different patterns of speaking that arose due to these factors are termed *dialects* by linguistics. Linguists differentiate between language and dialect based on "mutual intelligibility." If, in spite of pronunciations or vocabularies, people from different places understand one another, then they are said to be speaking dialects of the same language; if not, then they are speaking different languages. So people in the United States are said to be speaking English even when each speaks in a dialect, be it New York, Southern, or Appalachian, among many others. There are also social dialects such as African American Vernacular English and Spanglish. While these varieties are associated with named ethnicities, they are not exclusively used by all members of these ethnicities.

Some scholars studying dialects focus on explicating their grammar, morphology, phonetics, pragmatics, or other linguistic features to illustrate the dialect's systematicity and regularity. These scholars aim at dispelling the stereotypical view that sees these dialects as incomplete languages, illogical, and crude. In the United States, the works of Lisa Green and John Rickford on African American Vernacular English are exemplary in this case. Complementarily, John Baugh studies issues relating to linguistic profiling, discrimination, and negative attitudes toward individuals who speak dialects against which there are prejudices. His works have shown that some companies screen calls on their answering machines and do not return the calls of those they believe sound "Black or Latino." From an experiment, he concluded that in the United States, most people could tell the ethnicity of another person just from hearing that person say, "Hello." Other researchers may be interested in governmental policies on languages.

Concepts in Understanding Language and Society

Terms such as *slang* (words that come into and go out of fashion), *accent* (different phonological realizations of speech sounds), and *jargon* (words specific to a profession, sport, or trade) also reveal the biases, prejudices, and stereotypes against the people and groups whose language forms are thus qualified. When a dialect is stigmatized or seen as prestigious, it is because its speakers are branded or admired. All speakers speak a dialect of their language; this is shown by their choice of words, whether they say *schlep* or *drag*, *fixing to go* or *getting ready to leave*, and *waiting on* or "waiting for" the world to change. Everyone speaks with an accent; that is, everyone's speech includes pronunciations that mark his or her regional, ethnic, or social background. For example, in American English, this may be shown by whether a speaker makes a distinction in pronouncing *pin* and *pen*, *feel* and *fill*, or whether one realizes the first vowel in *life* as a diphthong [ai] or not. We all make use of expressions that come in and out of fashion (slang), so we may be *hip*, *bad ass*, or simply *BFF*. As we move across different social and professional spheres, we adapt our language accordingly. For instance, many of the terms in this essay are linguistic jargon, just as *touchdown* is a football term and *to serve a volley* is tennis jargon.

Language Variation

It is important to find out if there is a social significance to the ways language varies within a society. Consequently, another dimension of sociolinguistics

is to identify those exact linguistic units that have social significance. Sociolinguistics seeks to determine if there are linguistic variables that are linked with social factors such as age, class, gender, and ethnicity. Labov is one of the most notable scholars in this realm, especially since his 1966 course-charting study on /r/ dropping in New York speech. He observed that whether a New Yorker pronounces the /r/ in words like *fo[r]th* or *floo[r]* correlates with his or her societal status. Following Labov, sociolinguistic studies often involve sophisticated, structured, empirical, and systematic analyses of specific usages as they vary with sociocultural factors.

Language and Gender

A major interest of sociolinguists is determining whether men and women speaking the same language use it differently. Researchers have noted phonological differences in certain languages; for example, women in general speak with a higher pitch than men. And Peter Trudgill has observed phonetic differences in Gros Ventre, a Native American language in the United States, in which men use *djatsa* and women *kjatsa* for bread. John Fischer noted that in New England more boys than girls engage in "g" dropping in words such as *running and jogging*, mostly in informal situations. Robin Lakoff suggests that in the United States, women use more tag questions (*isn't it*), color terms (*mauve*, *magenta*, *beige*), rising intonations, adjectives (*cute*, *nice*), and polite forms than men. Sociolinguistics has shown differences in style, cultures of conversation, and goals for how males and females employ language. Explanations for the observed differences include the suggestions that women engage in private talk, while men engage in public talk, and women use language to build rapport, while men engage in the communication of facts (*rapport vs. report talk*). Studies of this kind have created greater awareness of sexism in language and its relationship to the asymmetry in gender relations. In particular, scholars such as Deborah Tannen have noted lexical items that underscore male dominance in society. Most unmarked (regular) items have a masculine grammatical gender and base: *Man* is often used as a cover term for humanity, and terms like *actor* or *chairman* are considered generic. In further noting that these usages are implicated in the gender ideologies of a society, sociolinguists relate language to other social factors through which women are subordinated.

Language and Status

The style of language employed by an individual is relative to the particular person and his or her place or situation. While there are variable styles that a speaker can employ to convey an intended message, there are linguistic markers that potentially could confer prestige or stigma on the speaker, thereby indexing his or her social class. Whether one says *mmh*, *what*, or *pardon* does not change the content of the message; however, to a listener which of these is said implicates the social standing of the speaker. Class or social status gained particular salience in sociolinguistics with the work of Labov, who originally recognized that the attention given by speakers to speech was variable and depended on the goal of discourse and the degree of formality. For instance, the level of attention or care to speech correlates with the degree to which the speaker sought overt prestige. Speakers will emulate the speech pattern of those they want to resemble. Trudgill noted that men adopt "covert prestige" by using a more local dialect, whereas women use a more "standard dialect," thus displaying overt prestige.

Language and Ethnicity

Language is a very salient marker for ethnic identification. The dominant group in Western nations rarely sees itself as having ethnic affiliation; consequently, the United States, in spite of being home to many ethnicities and different (native) languages, considers itself monolingual, with English as its official language. This is, however, not the case in South Africa and Canada, with 11 and 2 official languages, respectively; neither is it the case in India, which implements a multilingual policy. To speak two languages is to be bilingual, and to speak more than two languages is to be multilingual. In most African countries, multilingualism is the norm. To Africans, the ability to use different languages is cultural and linguistic capital that enables people to freely move for labor. This is not so in the United States, especially in the South, where an increase in the use of the Spanish language is seen as threatening to the English-only view and multilingualism is viewed somewhat negatively. Sociolinguistics studies

the various attitudes of people to the existence of more than one language in their society.

Sociolinguistics studies the intersection of language and society because of the centrality of language to individual and communal goals. The field can be defined following Labov, who sees the significance of language in what it allows us to do. We can use it to exercise or resist power, gain influence, or diminish others. Whether we use language to argue with our spouse, joke with friends, or deceive enemies, the study of these usages is the appropriate focus of sociolinguistics.

Augustine Agwuele

See also Chomsky, Noam; Labov, William

Further Readings

Baugh, J. (2003). Linguistic profiling. In S. Makoni, G. Smitherman, A. F. Ball, & A. K. Spears (Eds.), *Black linguistics: Language, society, and politics in Africa and the Americas* (pp. 155–168). London, UK: Routledge.

Blum, S. D. (2013). *Making sense of language: Readings in culture and communications.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Gerard, V. H. (2012). *What is sociolinguistics?* New York, NY: Wiley-Blackwell.

Green, L. (2002). *African American English: A linguistic introduction.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Holmes, J. (1992). *An introduction to sociolinguistics.* London, UK: Longmans.

Hymes, D. (1974). *Foundation in sociolinguistics: An ethnographic approach*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.

Labov, W. (1970). The study of language in its social context. *Studium Generale, 23,* 30–87.

Lippi-Green, R. (1997). *English with an accent: Language ideology and discrimination in the United States.* London, UK: Routledge.

Wardhaugh, R. (2010). *An introduction to sociolinguistics* (6th ed.). New York, NY: Wiley-Blackwell.

Soviet Anthropology

Technically, Soviet anthropology is taken to have encompassed the time span of 1917–1992, although at its beginnings it was in a multitude of ways an extension of the earlier Russian imperial anthropological project and its dissolution, whether institutional or discursive, was a process that stretched well into the early 21st century. The development of Soviet anthropology as a field of knowledge was at times in sync and at times at odds with the development of the discipline in major Western traditions; however, due to reasons stemming from the isolationist stance of the Soviet state, the discipline assumed a specific institutional shape and intellectual trajectory in the Soviet context.

Defining the Field

A caveat to keep in mind is that the term *anthropology* (*antropologiia*) never came to be used in Soviet scholarship as a rubric for the wider domain of inquiry into human culture. It remained restricted by and large to physical anthropology. The research area roughly corresponding to that of cultural/social anthropology was termed *ethnography* (*etnografiia*). This was the official institutional designation of the discipline from the mid-1930s through the early 1990s. During the 1910s–1920s, the term *ethnology* (*etnologiia*) had also been in use on par with *ethnography*, and there had been heated debates over which one should be accepted as the formal disciplinary title. Propositions for seeing "ethnology" as more theoretical and comparative and "ethnography" as more descriptive were typical of the time; but a clear consensus over the meaning was not reached. As a result of the ideological cleansing campaign of 1929–1932 in Soviet academia, the idea of ethnology was eventually censured as an ersatz social science conflicting with Marxism. "Ethnography" remained a valid designation, but its scope was narrowed down, and it was de facto downgraded to the status of "supplementary historical discipline," which it would carry through the end of the Soviet period. The 1929 Conference of Moscow and Leningrad Ethnographers and the 1932 All-Russian Archaeology-Ethnography Conference were important events instrumental in setting the direction for this particular development of the discipline.

For the reasons above, institutionally, Soviet anthropology was shaped nearly from the outset as a branch of the humanities (rather than the social sciences, as was the case with the discipline in the United States, Great Britain, and France at the time). It also inherited much of the ethos of 19th-century Russian anthropology, which had been heavily

affected by German scholarship and had already developed in many ways as *Kulturwissenschaft* (i.e., an emphasis on historical, linguistic, and geographical connections rather than on biological [*Naturwissenschaft*] or social [*Sozialwissenschaft*] ones). Additionally, there was a focus on peasants, their vernaculars, and folklore as bearers of the "cultural spirit" and "national roots," similar to the German *Volkskunde*. The early conceptual and ideological split between ethnography and physical anthropology in Russia of the latter half of the 19th century contributed to the divergence of these fields in the Soviet period. Although there were attempts to bring *etnografiia* and *antropologiia* into more integral contact, such as in Dmitrii Anuchin's activities at Moscow University in the 1910s–1920s, physical anthropology was subsequently (in 1930) institutionalized as part of the biology division within the Soviet university structure.

The 1920s and 1930s

The decade of the 1920s is often credited as the most pluralistic period in the development of Soviet anthropology, when learning established in the institutional centers of the former Russian empire coexisted with new Soviet educational and research initiatives. Older centers, such as the Academy of Sciences, the Ethnographic Division of the Russian Geographical Society, and the Ethnographic Department of the Russian Museum in Leningrad (Petrograd before 1924), or the Society of Devotees of Natural Science, Anthropology, and Ethnography in Moscow, still continued to provide intellectual guidance. The newer ones, such as the State Academy of the History of Material Culture or various commissions instituted under the auspices of the Academy of Sciences (Slavic Commission, Commission for the Study of Tropical Countries, etc.), developed bolder and more innovative research initiatives.

Courses in anthropology were rather widely taught across the country during the 1920s, even though there were but a few dedicated anthropology units in universities. Teaching at the Department of Geography and Ethnography, which had been established at St. Petersburg University in 1887, was supplemented in 1919 with a newly institutionalized ethnographic department at the State Geographic Institute (in 1925, it merged with Leningrad State University). At Moscow University, where the discipline had been previously taught within the confines of the Faculty of Geography, there occurred a series of reorganizations; as a result, the Department of Physical Anthropology, chaired by Anuchin, branched off in 1919, while the teaching of ethnography was moved in 1922 to the new Ethnological-Linguistic Division, which formed the ethnological faculty in 1925 (later closed down in 1930). The Department of Ethnography would be reestablished at Moscow State University in 1939, with Sergei Tolstov as chair, now as a subdivision of the Faculty of History. The teaching of ethnography at Leningrad State University would be likewise confined to the Faculty of History later in 1949 with the launch of the Department of Archaeology and Ethnography (Department of Ethnography and Anthropology since 1968; headed by Rudolf Its). The two departments would basically remain the principal centers of anthropological education throughout the Soviet period. During the decade of the 1920s, however, anthropology was still taught beyond these institutions by a plethora of talented scholars, such as Sergei Shirokogorov at Vladivostok University, Vladimir Arseniev at Vladivostok Pedagogical Institute, Sergei Rudenko at Tomsk University, and Bernhard Petri and Georgii Vinogradov at Irkutsk University.

From the earliest days of the anthropological discipline in the Soviet context, its applied aspect was brought to the fore. The Soviet state faced the tasks of managing the multiethnic landscape of the former Russian empire, forging a new nation, consolidating it ideologically and culturally, and modernizing it. Ethnographic knowledge took on a new relevance. A number of organizations—such as the Commission for the Study of the Tribal Composition of the Population of the Borderlands of Russia (also known as KIPS, 1917), the Central Ethnographic Bureau (1922), or the Committee for the Assistance to Peoples of the Northern Borderlands (1924)—were established to provide expert knowledge in matters related to social and administrative policies, political and geopolitical decisions, population census and statistical research, nationality and ethnic minority issues, and cultural advocacy. Many prominent anthropologists of the time took an active part in these organizations. The impact of knowledge paradigms produced as a result of the activities of these organizations was in fact more profound than the influence of research and teaching units, and

it had more enduring effects on the ways in which the goals of ethnography would be conceptualized throughout the Soviet period.

The focus on classificatory issues, nationality and minority rosters, and the predicaments of "primitive," "classless," or "precapitalist" cultures that was characteristic of Soviet anthropology of the 1920s and early 1930s gradually gave way to the preoccupation with research on so-called ethnogenesis (*etnogenez*)—that is, the study of the origin and historical development of peoples and cultures. This turn, on the one hand, was theoretically prepared by Nikolai Marr's ambitious program of fusing linguistics, ethnography, and archaeology into a universal discipline for inquiry into human history. On the other, it was ideologically propelled by the political goal of demonstrating the historical authenticity of peoples and cultures making up the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics. Although initially, the most important rationale behind the ethnogenesis studies was to scientifically substantiate the priority of Slavic roots and the foundational role of the Russian nation, eventually, during the 1950s–1970s, the scope of applicability of *etnogenez* methods in anthropology was expanded onto the wider cultural map of the world. *Etnogenez* was essentially the first major theoretical paradigm developed within Soviet anthropology, and it never lost its currency up to the formal end of Soviet academic scholarship.

The 1940s and 1950s

Studies of cultural development within the ethnogenesis paradigm led to the elaboration in the 1940s–1950s of the second significant theoretical model in Soviet anthropology—that of *economic-cultural types* (*khoziaistvenno-kul'turnye tipy*) and *historical-cultural areas* (*istoriko-etnograficheskie oblasti*). Maksim Levin and Nikolai Cheboksarov were among its principal initial proponents, but the general idea was further followed and developed by other scholars, such as Gennadii Markov at Moscow State University, up through the 1980s. This model was an attempt at building a universal explanatory framework combining cultural, historical, economic, and geographical criteria. It classified the known human universe into sets of economic-cultural types (patterns of economy and culture historically formed in particular geographical environments) and historical-cultural areas (regions marked by shared cultural traits and cultural continuity). Although innovative in the Soviet context, the model carried various similarities to the culture area concept in early-20th-century U.S. anthropology and the cultural ecology ideas of that time. It also drew intellectually on the earlier German *Anthropogeographie* tradition. The prominence of the model diminished in late Soviet anthropology as it began to be contested by the newly introduced *ethnos* theory.

The theoretical paradigms of ethnogenesis and economic-cultural types in a sense complemented each other and rounded off the synthesis of Marxist evolutionism and geographical-spatial mapping that was characteristic of mid-century Soviet anthropological thought. Diversity was conceptually understood as present and positioned both on the lateral plane, as a distribution of ethnic groups in geographical space, and along the vertical axis, as their progression in time on the ladder of Marxist historical formation stages. The theory of economic-cultural types was designed to explain that there was a reason for an ethnic group to exist in this or that particular space; just as the ethnogenesis theory was meant to prove a reason for an ethnic group to be in this particular social time and not another. Physical anthropology was ethnography's ally in this research endeavor as it elaborated the evolutionary and geographical taxonomy of humankind's races. The 18-volume grand series "Peoples of the World" (*Narody mira*) published in the 1950s–1960s was a testament to the flourishing of these approaches in Soviet anthropology. Despite their shortcomings, studies in ethnogenesis and economic-cultural types were helpful in bringing ethnography in close collaboration with history, archaeology, linguistics, and geography.

The 1960s and After

The late 1960s–1980s are often informally referred to as the "Bromley era" in the history of Soviet anthropological knowledge. The postwar Soviet Union witnessed the centralization of academic research and the rise of the institutional importance of the Academy of Sciences. Consequently, the Institute of Ethnography at the Academy of Sciences gradually emerged as the leading institution setting research objectives and trends in Soviet anthropology. Yulian Bromley, who directed the institute for nearly a quarter of a century (1966–1989), having replaced Tolstov, made

both intellectual and administrative contributions that essentially resulted in the change of dominant research paradigms in the discipline. Bromley is usually credited with the introduction of the concept of *ethnos* into the theoretical vocabulary of Soviet anthropology. The concept, which had been actually developed by Nikolai Mogilianskii and Sergei Shirokogorov in the 1910s–1920s, was reintroduced and reworked by Bromley and his collaborators to become the key idea in anthropological discussions of the 1970s–1980s. *Ethnos*, in its most general definition, was taken to mean a historically formed community of people who possessed common and relatively stable cultural traits and who were aware both of their unity and of their difference from other similar communities. A shared territory and a common language were usually stipulated as the necessary criteria for the existence of ethnos; and it was held to be a unit capable of self-reproduction. In a sense, ethnos was a unified concept meant to replace rather freely and interchangeably used notions such as "people" or "ethnic group."

The reintroduction of ethnos into the anthropological discourse had many far-reaching consequences. It resulted in a variety of theoretical and rhetorical shifts, as it displaced, devalued, or at any rate contested the notions of culture, people, or society in anthropological analysis. It also led to the intellectual and administrative branching of the discipline, which witnessed the emergence of an array of research subfields during the 1970s–1980s ("ethnosociology," "ethnodemography," "ethnopsychology," "ethnoecology," etc.). Most of these subfields were intellectually fashioned after the corresponding research areas in Western anthropology, such as psychological anthropology, ecological anthropology, and the like, but they employed terminologies recast or modified in accordance with the new ethnos language.

The part that the ethnos concept played in shaping late Soviet anthropology was equivocal. On the one hand, the concept helped the discipline reinvent its academic vocabulary. It essentially allowed it to enter the theoretical domain of political science. It opened the discipline toward other social sciences and stimulated theoretical debates generally. On the other hand, as the concept gradually acquired the status of foundational notion and basically turned into a required starting point for any anthropological analysis, it began constricting the scope of anthropological inquiry in the 1980s. By inertia, it still kept severely constricting it during the first post-Soviet decade. All in all, the major strengths of Soviet anthropology lay not so much in theoretical formulations as in empirical research on the culture and lifeways of ethnic groups residing within the political borders of the USSR, with the school of studies of the North and Siberia being arguably its consistently strongest branch.

Alexei Elfimov

See also Cultural Ecology; Culture Area Approach

Further Readings

Alymov, S. (2006). *P. I. Kushner i razvitiie sovetskoi etnografii v 1920–1950-e gody* [P. I. Kushner and the development of Soviet ethnography 1920-1950]. Moscow, Russia: IEA RAN.

Bertrand, F. (2002). *L'anthropologie soviétique des années 20–30: Configuration d'une rupture* [Soviet anthropology from 20–30 years: Configuration of a rupture]. Pessac, France: Presses Universitaires de Bordeaux.

Bromley, Y. (Ed.). *1974 Soviet ethnology and anthropology today.* The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

Cadiot, J. (2007). *Le laboratoire imperial: Russie–URSS 1870–1940* [The imperial laboratory: Russia-USSR 1870–1940]. Paris, France: CNRS Éditions.

Elfimov, A. (1997). The state of the discipline in Russia. *American Anthropologist, 99,* 775–785.

Gellner, E. (1977). Ethnicity and anthropology in the Soviet Union. *European Journal of Sociology, 18,* 201–220.

Hirsch, F. (2005). *Empire of nations: Ethnographic knowledge and the making of the Soviet Union.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Kan, S. (2009). *Lev Shternberg: Anthropologist, Russian socialist, Jewish activist.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Slezkine, Y. (1991). The fall of Soviet ethnography, 1928–1938. *Current Anthropology, 32,* 476–484.

Tumarkin, D. D. (Ed.). (2004). *Vydaiushchiesia otechestvennye etnologi i antropologi XX veka* [Outstanding domestic ethnologists and anthropologists of the 20th century]. Moscow, Russia: Nauka.

Spencer, Herbert

Herbert Spencer (1820–1903), British philosopher, sociologist, social theorist, and anthropologist, was

one of the most prominent and influential propagators of evolutionary theory in the 19th century.

Biography and Major Works

Herbert Spencer was born in Derby, the eldest and only surviving son of a headmaster. Clearly influenced both by his father and, more generally, by the stimulating nonconformist culture of Derby in the early 19th century, with its emphasis on the importance of radical reform, free trade, technical skill, scientific exploration, and a rational approach to religion, he also reacted against both of these influences. In particular, despite a clear and continuing interest in what he called "the Unknowable" throughout his life, Spencer rejected his father's more conventional belief in God and was only partially influenced by Derby's experimental culture, preferring theorizing over practical experiment. This was a preference to which he constantly adhered, despite a wide-ranging education under the tutelage of his uncle the Rev. Thomas Spencer, which included studying Latin, Greek, French, algebra, chemistry, physics, and political economy, and the practical experience of working as a civil engineer for various rail companies. Although he possessed considerably more genuine practical experience than many of the London intellectuals with whom he became associated, including John Stuart Mill, Thomas Henry Huxley, and Harriet Martineau, Spencer, from early on, tended to use information to confirm his initial hypotheses, rather than being genuinely open to empirical correction.

After refusing a permanent post on the Birmingham-Gloucester railway in 1841, Spencer drifted for several years, interesting himself in everything from phrenology to political economy, although his ambition was increasingly to become a journalist and an influential commentator. This he began to achieve after his appointment as subeditor of *The Economist* after 1848, and especially after he published "The Development Hypothesis" and "A Theory of Population" in 1852. The former article in particular, allegedly produced in reaction to Charles Lyell's claim in *The Principles of Geology* (1830–1833) that species were essentially fixed, and praised by Charles Darwin, marked an important moment in Spencer's career, since it was the first influential statement of Spencer's belief in evolution. Important, too, was his second book, *The Principles of Psychology* (1855), which argued that the workings of the mind could all be explained by fixed material laws associated with evolution, and which caused considerable controversy among the London intelligentsia, even before the publication of Darwin's *The Origin of Species* in 1859. But it was only in 1860 that Spencer was able to settle down to developing the implications of what he called his "synthetic philosophy" on a full-time basis—namely, the attempt to explain systematically how materialist laws could explain not only the nature of evolution and the workings of the mind but also how societies developed, how morality operated, and even how political life should be organized. Before he could do so, however, Spencer had to recover from a shattering nervous breakdown in 1855, which meant that he could only ever work for 3 hours a day at most. Spencer's breakdown might have resulted in considerable financial difficulties, but he was fortunately saved by the intervention of an American admirer, Edward Youmans, who successfully marketed Spencer's writings in the United States and hence secured him a regular income for the rest of his life. An important popularizer, Youmans not only encouraged the reading of Spencer's existing works but also commissioned him to write more than 90 articles for his magazine, *Popular Science Monthly*. Ultimately, Spencer's work was to be translated into a wide variety of other languages, including French, German, and Russian.

The next 40 years, then, from 1860, were to see Spencer tenaciously working on his synthetic philosophy. During this period, he worked only in the mornings, before retiring to his club, the Athenaeum, and then dining alone or with friends—including John Tyndall, the well-known physicist, and the positivist G. H. Lewes. Given his rather selective use of evidence, which was generally cited only to support his arguments, it was perhaps not surprising that he avoided contact with those who disagreed with him, and tended to avoid public controversy—although he did join other liberals, including Mill, Huxley, and John Bright, in trying to convict Governor Eyre for his brutal suppression of the Morant Bay rebellion in Jamaica in 1865. But Spencer's main focus was clearly his work, and in 1862, he produced the influential *First Principles*. In the first part, he sought to prove that the burning contemporary conflict between science and religion essentially rested on false premises, while, in the second, Spencer drew

on a variety of sources, including the idea of the "persistence of force," Darwin's theory of natural selection, and Jean-Baptiste Lamarck's theory of use inheritance, among others, to claim that all progress could be explained by viewing it as the reorganization of currently existing matter into structures of greater complexity and heterogeneity. This theory was applied by Spencer to most aspects of human life in the 1860s and 1870s. His books *The Principles of Biology* (1864–1867), *The Principles of Psychology* (1870–1882), *The Principles of Sociology* (1875–1885), and *The Principles of Ethics* (1879–1893) enjoyed considerable popular and critical success. In these years, he declined many honors, including many honorary degrees and a probable fellowship of the Royal Society, at least in part because such recognition would have compelled him to defend his views more publicly, a prospect Spencer detested. But the last years of his life were to be ones of struggle and disappointment, particularly due to developments in biology, which raised serious questions about whether acquired characteristics could be directly inherited in the way Spencer (and before him Lamarck) had claimed. Given Spencer's general refusal to debate and to conduct empirical laboratory research, he was ill equipped to respond to the many criticisms made of his work by leading evolutionary theorists such as Huxley, A. R. Wallace, and D. G. Ritchie, and he died a disappointed man in 1903.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology and Sociology

Spencer's contribution to anthropology and sociology was both influential and controversial. Spencer attempted to combine Lamarckian and Darwinian insights to produce an entirely comprehensive system. This work can be divided into three parts: an argument (1) for a particular conception of evolution, (2) for how human minds evolve, and (3) for how society in general operates.

The Nature of Evolution

Influenced early in his career by Karl von Baer's claim that an analysis of embryos showed that heterogeneous structures arise from more homogeneous ones, Spencer sought to develop this insight into a more general law. Thus, already in the 1857 essay "Progress," published in the *Westminster Review*, Spencer claimed that the "law of organic progress" showed that all development, whether it be physical, biological, or social, including that of language, literature, science, and art, exhibited a tendency to develop from the homogeneous to the heterogeneous, and under the influence of Coleridge's essay "The Theory of Life," he increasingly equated this tendency with a move toward greater coherence and integration. Ultimately, by the time he wrote *First Principles*, Spencer claimed that this tendency was based on three physical laws. First, the "persistence of force" ensured the disruption of the equilibrium of the universe, since forces were acting unequally at different points within it. Second, because each force has more than one effect, the effect was a multiplication of effects and hence a tendency to heterogeneity. Finally, the "rhythm of motion" meant that progress was not uniform, so that within the overall evolutionary trend to greater sophistication and complexity, retrogressions could occur. Such processes were bound to continue, Spencer maintained, until a final "equilibrium" was achieved, and thus (he argued), there was always a tendency to equilibrium in any situation. On this basis, he argued not only in favor of a Lamarckian process whereby organisms directly adapted to their environment to promote such "equilibrium" but also, somewhat reluctantly, in favor of Darwinian natural selection after the publication of *The Origin of Species*. Natural selection or "indirect equilibration" was explained by the variations that occurred in organisms due to the secondary and tertiary effects that occurred due to adaptation to a new environment—so that when the environment changed, those members of the species the least well adapted to the new circumstances would fail. Direct adaptation, therefore, according to Spencer, explained the modifications of individual organisms; natural selection explained the modification of species. Given his reluctant adoption of the Darwinian side of the process, it is somewhat ironic, in these circumstances, that the single phrase Spencer is most associated with is "the survival of the fittest"—a term he first coined in *The Principles of Biology* and that sounds thoroughly Darwinian. For rather than explaining the nature of evolution with reference to the production of random variations, as Darwin does, Spencer insisted that *in fact* such variations were only apparently "random" and could be explained as the reverberating effects of distant primary causes in the evolutionary system, alongside the effects of direct (Lamarckian) adaptation. His position was thus importantly distinct from Darwin's.

The Nature of the Human Mind and Race

Having formulated his conception of how evolution works, Spencer then sought to apply it to the workings of the human mind, especially in *The Principles of Psychology*. Essentially, he argued that the mind operates as a means by which an organism can better adapt to its environment, which gradually increases in sophistication in accordance with evolutionary laws. Thus, reflex action, instinct, memory, and reason simply represent the increasing sophistication with which human organisms can adapt to the world around them. Key to Spencer's conception of human development was the idea that although human minds were subject to immediate external pressures—to which they adapted—they were also heir to an evolutionary tradition of adaptations. This meant, Spencer claimed, that rather than individuals having to learn everything anew from experience, each generation began with an inherited set of predispositions and indeed ideas. And this was important, because it implied that for Spencer, the fundamental category for anthropological analysis was the *race*, not the individual—with the result that, like his contemporaries Huxley and John Lubbock, he was insistent on the superiority of the "higher" European races over the "less developed" African ones. In particular, he claimed that increased heterogeneity within a race implied a lower birthrate, so that the lower fertility rates among Anglo-Saxons compared with Africans was clear evidence of their racial superiority. This was because, Spencer argued, greater individuation implied a lower birthrate—not the least because more developed races were better able to make more abstract and far-sighted decisions. However, he also rejected straightforward accounts of evolutionary development, such as that given by the contemporary anthropologist Edward Burnett Tylor, which posited a simple hierarchy of stages through which all races had to pass. Rather, due to the Lamarckian side of his thought, he stressed the interplay between biological and cultural factors in human development, which rendered his account of human development considerably more subtle—and indeed led to him supporting the rights of the "lower races," as at Morant Bay.

The Nature of Society

Beyond the contrast between "races," Spencer's conception of mind and race had implications for his analysis of both past and contemporary societies. Although in his early work, such as *Social Statics* (1850), he advocated liberal feminist positions, including giving women the right to vote, and criticized the "tyranny" of marriage, his increasing stress on the biological sources of mental development led him to more illiberal conclusions in his later work. Key to understanding the nature of women, he argued latterly, was their role in bearing children, which meant that they achieved maturity earlier and hence had a smaller nervo-muscular system, resulting in a lower capacity for the most recent evolutionary achievements, namely, a capacity for abstract thought and for setting aside personal dislike in favor of justice. More generally, Spencer also sought to draw wider conclusions about the nature of primitive and modern societies. In particular, he argued that social evolutionary pressures would cause a progressive differentiation of functions, so that primitive "militant" societies (where the only real differentiation is between rulers and ruled) gradually give way to "industrial" ones, where the component parts have become increasingly heterogeneous but are held together by a spontaneous cooperation founded on an elaborate division of labor. If, according to Spencer, in militant societies, the social structure is characterized by a strong emphasis on social status, heredity, rigidity, control, and lack of respect for private property, in industrial societies, he maintains, it is characterized by equality of opportunity, democratic institutions, a minimal state, and a respect for others characterized by the strong upholding of abstract conceptions of justice. The result, which Spencer fervently hoped for, was not atomic individualism but rather a society where the possibility of voluntary social cooperation was maximized as much as possible.

Edmund Neill

See also Comparative Method; Darwin, Charles; Lubbock, John; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Tylor, Edward Burnett; Utilitarianism

Further Readings

Bowler, P. (1986). *Theories of human evolution: A century of debate 1844–1944*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Offer, J. (Ed.). (2000). *Herbert Spencer: Critical assessments* (4 vols.). London, UK: Routledge.

Peel, J. D. Y. (1971). *Herbert Spencer: The evolution of a sociologist*. London, UK: Heinemann.
Taylor, M. W. (2007). *The philosophy of Herbert Spencer*. London, UK: Continuum.

Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen

Walter Baldwin Spencer (1860–1929) and Francis James Gillen (1855–1912) are the most famous Australian anthropologists of the 19th-century. Their disparate backgrounds as university scientist and administrator and as post office official, respectively, did not hamper their equal partnership and their work among the Arrernte of central Australia.

Biographies and Major Works

Spencer was born in Lancashire, England, in 1860 and studied at Owens College (Victoria University of Manchester) and the University of Oxford, where he read natural sciences under Henry Nottidge Moseley (1844–1891). After graduating, he worked as Moseley's assistant; one of his principal tasks was to organize the transfer of the famous Pitt-Rivers collection to the University of Oxford from London, which fed his nascent interest in anthropology.

In 1886, he became the founding chair of biology at the University of Melbourne, a post he held for the rest of his working life. In 1894, he was invited to take part in the Scientific Exploring Expedition into central Australia funded by William Austen Horn (1841–1922), acting as its biologist. When the expedition's camel train reached Alice Springs, he met Francis James Gillen for the first time.

Frank Gillen was born in South Australia to a family of Irish immigrants; he entered public service in 1867 as a postal messenger, after a limited education. He later worked as a telegraph operator and studied in the evenings at the South Australian School of Mines and Industries. His first trip into the outback was in 1875, during which he wrote a journal about his work and encounters with Aboriginal people (for his own pleasure) and created vocabulary lists to help his communication with them. These activities can be seen, with hindsight, as the beginnings of his anthropological investigations. Gillen continued to work at remote telegraph stations until 1892, when he was appointed telegraph station master at Alice Springs, in the very center of Australia.

On the surface of things, Spencer and Gillen were very different people: Spencer was trained at one of the foremost universities in the world and was witty, urbane, polished in manner, and well connected to the metropolitan center and intellectual elites. Gillen was the de facto ruler of a small but incredibly remote European settlement in the center of a large, arid, little explored continent. He, too, was quick-witted and funny, but ill educated, modest, and untraveled outside Australia. However, the two men rapidly became very close friends: Their professional partnership flourished from the first day they met, when they collaborated on the preparation of anthropological data for the Report of the Horn Expedition, until 1912, when Gillen died prematurely after a long illness.

The pattern of their partnership was set early. Gillen was, in effect, engaged in permanent "fieldwork" (as later anthropologists would call it) as he was able to fit in daily investigation alongside his job as stationmaster. He compiled long notes on specific topics, often suggested by Spencer, with the help of his local informants. These "budgets" of notes were sent back at frequent intervals across thousands of miles to Spencer in Melbourne, who would use them as the basis from which to craft their early monographs. Gillen's relations with the local Arrernte were particularly close and friendly, which greatly helped their endeavor.

Spencer's major contributions to the joint endeavor were his wide readings in 19th-century anthropology, his understanding of scientific methodology, and his ability to write in a style suitable for publication. Gillen's letters to Spencer, published in 1997, make it clear that he too was a gifted writer, but, sadly, his lack of confidence in academic matters (despite Spencer's encouragement) meant that Spencer was always seen as the lead partner in their publications. However, the bulk of their field observation can be attributed to Gillen. He brought more than 20 years of knowledge and experience of central Australian life to the partnership, a crucial contribution and a nice balance to Spencer's skills.

Gillen and Spencer were fortunate enough to be present at a lengthy series of then rarely held Arrernte ceremonies, close to the Alice Springs Telegraph Station in the winter of 1896–1897,

which the anthropologists called the *Engwura*. Gillen facilitated the arrangement for this series of ceremonies (a huge drain on the limited food and raw material resources of the area) and attended almost all the ceremonies. Spencer traveled back to the geographic center of Australia to witness some of the action during his Christmas long vacation. This rare opportunity was the central event in their first major publication, *The Native Tribes of Central Australia* (1899), an instantly successful monograph that was to prove very influential on many metropolitan anthropological thinkers, including James G. Frazer (who had helped proofread the monograph) and Émile Durkheim.

In 1901, the partners traveled north from Adelaide in South Australia to Borroloola in the Northern Territory for an entire year, investigating all the way. During their travels, they recorded wax cylinders of song and speech and shot films of reconstructed ceremonies with local groups' consent (using light levels at night and camera technology not allowing the actual ceremonies, which they also attended, to be recorded). They noted data about material culture, kinship patterns and social organization, and religious beliefs and ceremonial practice for all the peoples they met along the way. This work was published in their second monograph, *The Northern Tribes of Central Australia* (1904).

They carried out a further short period of fieldwork near Lake Eyre in 1903. This was an attempt to test one of their theories regarding increase ceremonies and other religious beliefs, and it was their last period of joint fieldwork. Gillen reluctantly moved to become postmaster in several places in southern South Australia in 1899, for the sake of his growing family, who needed a larger income and better access to education. This effectively put an end to Spencer and Gillen's fieldwork. After many years of ill health, Gillen died in 1912 from a neurological disorder.

Spencer continued to use the copious field notes that Gillen had sent from Alice Springs between 1894 and 1899 and the notes from their joint field investigations to prepare a series of further publications, under their joint names or Spencer's alone, that, without Gillen's deep knowledge of Aboriginal culture and society, became increasingly questionable. In particular, it has become apparent that although Gillen was not entirely fluent in Arrernte (or any other Aboriginal) language, he was much more familiar with it and had a deeper understanding of it than has been appreciated heretofore. His language lists and those published in the first two monographs (largely reflecting his own understanding) are much more accurate and nuanced than Spencer's later orthographies in publications after Gillen's death.

Spencer became one of Australia's most eminent scientists and university administrators in the early 20th century. He traveled back to central and northern Australia in 1912, when he was appointed chief protector of Aborigines in Darwin for a year, and in 1923 to prepare a government report on Aboriginal welfare. In 1927, he returned to England. His final anthropological fieldwork took place in Tierra del Fuego in 1929, and he died and was buried in Punta Arenas during this last expedition.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Spencer and Gillen carried out the first long-term fieldwork in Australia and were also the first to introduce several technological innovations in fieldwork practice in that country. These included recording ceremonies on film and glass photographic slides and recording sound on wax cylinders. Taking place at a time when fieldwork methodology had not yet been worked out, their techniques were exemplary. Data were sought from key informants, checked and rechecked with other informants, and recorded first into rough field notebooks, then transcribed into fuller accounts at the end of the day, before being analyzed and presented in their published monographs. Their joint fieldwork methodology was (and is) unusual: carried out by two equal partners, sometimes working in unison (e.g., when recording, photographing, and filming ceremonies) and sometimes independently when separated by many thousands of miles and dealing with the complicated (and hideously slow) communications technology of the 19th and early 20th centuries. Many of their fieldwork practices are discussed in more detail in the edited volume of their letters, *My Dear Spencer* (1997), and in John Mulvaney and J. H. Calaby's *So Much That Is New* (1985). Their fully collaborative partnership used both of their strengths to full advantage and has ensured that their fieldwork and publications have remained of interest to the present day. They disseminated their findings not only through

published monographs but also in public lectures that they both gave throughout Australia, which did much to introduce 19th-century urban Australians to their Aboriginal countrymen.

Their two major publications in 1899 and 1904 were extremely influential for early-20th-century anthropology. They are credited with being the first to start to understand and explain the importance of Aboriginal cosmological and religious beliefs. The full significance of their field notes, photographs, letters, and journals is still being investigated today.

It has been claimed that Gillen and Spencer amassed what is perhaps the most influential collection of Australian ethnographic material ever assembled. Because they were very seldom geographically proximate, they were forced to carry out their thinking and data exchange by correspondence. This collection of data was, in the main, fortuitously retained and transferred to the care of at least 20 institutions worldwide, meaning that their methodology and raw data are particularly clear and accessible. An unusual aspect of these field records is that they range from the immediate field jotting to more worked-up text in their journals and notes. Taken together with the large number of photographs and field recordings, the collection gives a wide-ranging view of Arrernte, Anmatyerr, Kaytetye, Warumungu, Luritja, and Arabana lives in the late 19th century.

They also made extensive collections of material culture at a time when European influence on Aboriginal culture in central Australia was still minimal. These collections are now also dispersed throughout the world and include some of the most important artifacts ever to be collected from central and northern Australia. Their collections of material culture may have led to one of the more interesting digressions of Spencer's professional career, when he was appointed honorary director of the National Museum of Victoria in Melbourne in 1899.

Gillen and Spencer's immediate contribution to world anthropology was the delineation of "facts" about Aboriginal life and social organization that revolutionized anthropology at the time. Émile Durkheim, for example, based much of his *Elementary Forms of Religious Life* (1912) on the data they had presented in *The Native Tribes of Central Australia*; Frazer used their data to augment his own work on totemism. Their publications even had strong influences beyond anthropology, with Sigmund Freud being inspired by their work in writing his book *Totem and Taboo*.

Spencer and Gillen's Legacy

Perhaps the most important element of Spencer and Gillen's work was their systematic recording of field data on a very wide range of topics. Australian anthropology is fortunate that so many of the earliest European residents to live in "the outback" were interested in anthropology. Gillen was one such, but he was helped in his endeavor by his extraordinarily close relationships with the local Arrernte. This in turn fostered close relationships with other Aboriginal groups, coming out of his humane and friendly treatment of local people and his courageous decision to stand up against the harshly punitive treatment of locals by the South Australian police force. This led to a much wider disclosure of restricted information than would have been possible for most investigators. However, Spencer and Gillen's conclusions and theorizing from their field data have perhaps had less lasting impact than their raw data.

Subsequent changes in outback administration and the consequent deleterious effects on Aboriginal life make their early field records and material collections exceptionally useful historical records for local communities and anyone interested in 19th-century Australia, and also as anthropological raw data. They are also a vital cultural record for the descendants of the Aboriginal people with whom Gillen and Spencer worked in central Australia.

Perhaps a legacy that should be recognized by anthropologists today is Spencer and Gillen's approach to team anthropology. The sum of their contributions was so much greater than either man could have achieved on his own.

Alison Petch

See also Durkheim, Émile; Frazer, James G.; Freud, Sigmund

Further Readings

Batty, P., Allen, L., & Morton, J. (2007). *The photographs of Baldwin Spencer.* Melbourne, Victoria, Australia: Miegunyah Press.

Gibson, Jason. (in press). Addressing the Arrernte: FJ Gillen's 1896 Engwura speech. *Australian Aboriginal Studies, 1,* 57–72.

Gillen, F. J. (1968). *Gillen's Diary: The camp jottings of FJ Gillen on the Spencer and Gillen expedition across Australia 1901–02*. Adelaide, South Australia, Australia: Libraries Board of South Australia.
Gillen, Francis James. (n.d.). In *Australian dictionary of biography*. Retrieved from http://adb.anu.edu.au/biography/gillen-francis-james-6383
Mulvaney, D. J., & Calaby, J. H. (1985). *So much that is new: Baldwin Spencer (1860–1929)*. Melbourne, Victoria, Australia: Melbourne University Press.
Mulvaney, J., Morphy, H., & Petch, A., (Eds). (1997). "*My dear Spencer": The letters of F. J. Gillen to Baldwin Spencer.* Melbourne, Victoria, Australia: Hyland House.
Reconstructing the Spencer and Gillen Collection Project. (n.d.). Retrieved from http://spencerandgillen.org/
Spencer, Sir Walter Baldwin. (n.d.). In *Australian dictionary of biography*. Retrieved from http://adb.anu.edu.au/biography/spencer-sir-walter-baldwin-8606
Spencer, W. B. (1928). *Wanderings in wild Australia*. London, UK: Macmillan.
Spencer, W. B., & Gillen, F. J. (1899). *The native tribes of central Australia*. London, UK: Macmillan.
———. (1904). *The northern tribes of central Australia*. London, UK: Macmillan.
———. (1912). *Across Australia*. London, UK: Macmillan.
———. (1927). *The Arunta*. London, UK: Macmillan.

Sperber, Dan

Dan Sperber (1942–) is a French anthropologist and cognitive scientist who has made major theoretical and empirical contributions to anthropology, linguistics, psychology, and philosophy. These contributions are varied and often discipline specific—ranging from a major and highly influential reframing of linguistic pragmatics, to a large body of innovative experimental studies in cognitive psychology, to a pioneering reconstrual of anthropology as a cultural epidemiology. Still, common throughout Sperber's work is an abiding concern with the nature and natural history of cultural environments.

Early Life, Education, and Professional Positions

Sperber was born in Cagnes-sur-Mer in 1942, in the Southern Zone of France prior to its occupation by German troops. His mother, Zenija Zivçons, born in Latvia, and his father, the German-language essayist and novelist Manes Sperber, born in Galicia (then part of the Austrian Empire), met in Paris in the mid-1930s, which they fled ahead of German occupation in 1940. A few weeks after Dan's birth, by which time deportations of Jews had begun in the Southern Zone, they again fled, this time to Switzerland, where they remained for 3 years as refugees. At the end of the war, they returned to Paris, where Sperber has lived ever since, except for temporary absences for fieldwork and while holding visiting positions abroad.

Sperber studied sociology at the Sorbonne, earning a Licence ès Lettres in 1962. He then began doctoral studies (which he never completed) with Georges Balandier on African political anthropology. In 1963, he was awarded a studentship at Nuffield College, Oxford, where he studied anthropology first under the supervision of Godfrey Lienhardt and later under Rodney Needham. In 1968, he was awarded a BLitt in anthropology by Oxford—his highest degree. By 1965, he had returned to Paris and was appointed to the Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique, where he spent his entire career until mandatory retirement in 2008. Sperber was initially attached to Georges Balandier's Laboratoire d'Études Africaines. In 1968, he moved to the Laboratoire d'Ethnologie et de Sociologie Comparative at the University of Paris X; in 1988, he joined the Centre de Recherche en Epistémologie Appliquée at the École Polytechnique; and in 2001, he moved to the Institut Jean Nicod, which is jointly sponsored by the École des Hautes Etudes en Sciences Sociales and the École Normale Supérieure. Sperber is currently emeritus research professor at the CNRS in Paris and is also recurrent visiting professor in the departments of philosophy and of cognitive science at the Central European University in Budapest. In addition to these permanent posts, Sperber has held visiting positions at Cambridge University, the British Academy, University College London, the London School of Economics, the Van Leer Institute in Jerusalem, The Institute for Advanced Study in Princeton, Princeton University, the University of Michigan, the University of Hong Kong, and the University of Chicago.

Critique of Symbolic Anthropology

Sperber conducted 18 months of fieldwork among the Dorze of southern Ethiopia between 1968 and 1974, focusing on their complex system of taboos and on related ritual practices. Although he has

published only a few ethnographic articles based on this fieldwork, the analytic conundrums he encountered during the fieldwork have surfaced tantalizingly, albeit briefly, in later writings. To date, the bulk of Sperber's writing remains theoretical, focusing on the common foundations of the social and the cognitive sciences. Sperber attracted sustained attention with the appearance of *Rethinking Symbolism* in 1975. In it, he argued against the classical view of cultural symbols as signs conveying a meaning. *Rethinking Symbolism* challenged the emerging symbolic turn in anthropology championed by, among others, Clifford Geertz, David Schneider, and Victor Turner, who interpreted cultural forms as symbolic systems meant to be "read" as texts. Rather, Sperber suggested, the function of cultural symbolism is to elicit a cognitive response of evocation that varies with individuals and contexts. The very success of cultural symbols, he argued, is linked to the fact that they allow this variety of responses. In *On Anthropological Knowledge*, where Sperber argued for a naturalistic approach in anthropological theory, he expanded this critique of interpretive approaches, arguing that the seeming irrationality of many cultural forms (e.g., belief in ghosts) should be analyzed and reduced not so much through the ethnographer's reinterpretation but rather by discovering the cognitive mechanisms that the people who hold these beliefs actually employ and by identifying the social mechanisms of their acceptance and propagation. Among the cognitive mechanisms involved, he claims, is a cognitive attitude to these apparently irrational beliefs that treats their content not as mere facts but as shared representations open to reinterpretation, ensuring that the belief is shared even while its interpretation is not.

Sperber's theory of symbolism and his admonitions for a naturalistic and theoretical anthropology represented a direct challenge to the increasingly dominant symbolic turn in American anthropology of the 1970s and 1980s. The symbolic turn itself was a response to the long-prevailing conviction that anthropology's principal concern was the analysis of social structures and their imbrications into myriad cultural realms. Symbolic anthropologists, led by Geertz, snidely derided this approach—imbued as it was with an admiration for the natural sciences—as "social mechanics." To a significant degree, the symbolic turn was carried in the wake of a renewed, deep, and more reflective commitment to cultural relativism. Unsurprisingly, Geertz's highly influential statement was titled *The Interpretation of Cultures*, not "The Interpretation of Culture." Geertz and others sympathetic to his position were not proposing a theory that accounted for culture but rather a strategy for faithfully and persuasively conveying the particular experiences of a particular cultural tradition by decoding the meanings encoded in cultural symbols. Sperber's challenge to this program was unsurprisingly controversial; indeed, Geertz, in his Distinguished Lecture to the American Anthropological Association (published as "Anti Anti-Relativism" in 1984 in the *American Anthropologist*), explicitly attacked Sperber's call for a naturalistic anthropology.

Metarepresentation, Modularity, and Communication

After *Rethinking Symbolism*, and partly under the influence of Noam Chomsky's proposal for an innate language faculty and Jerry Fodor's *The Modularity of Mind* (1983), Sperber began exploring the notion that, rather than relying on a single, general learning ability (for social learning), the acquisition and transmission of culture exploited many domain-specific mental mechanisms, or modules. The extensive work of Scott Atran on naive biology and Lawrence Hirschfeld on naive sociology well illustrates this type of approach. Sperber himself focused on one type of mechanisms, metarepresentational mechanisms, which specialize in representing representations, in particular mental representations that are apprehended through metapsychological or "theory of mind" modules. Metarepresentations play a crucial role, Sperber argued, in human communication, an area to which he has devoted a great part of his work in collaboration with the British linguist Deirdre Wilson.

In 1986, Sperber and Wilson published *Relevance: Communication and Cognition*, which outlined a comprehensive and innovative approach to linguistic pragmatics. In it, as well as in numerous subsequent articles and most recently in a collection of essays titled *Meaning and Relevance*, Sperber and Wilson developed a cognitive approach that rejects the conventional wisdom that human communication is primarily a process of coding and decoding. Instead, they argue that communication is an inferential process: The communicator provides evidence of his or her meaning, and the addressee infers this

meaning on the basis of the evidence, the context, and considerations of relevance. The role of language in this perspective is not to encode the speaker's meaning but to give rich and precise evidence of it. Relevance theory, as their position has come to be known, is simultaneously the most influential and among the most controversial theories in linguistic pragmatics. It has stimulated a now considerable body of research not just in linguistics but also in psycholinguistics and in philosophy of language. The book *Experimental Pragmatics*, edited by Ira Noveck and Sperber, has been a launching pad for much experimental research in the area, to which Sperber himself has extensively contributed.

Building and expanding on both the modularist approach to mental mechanisms and relevance theory, Sperber has developed a naturalistic approach to cultural phenomena. Beginning with his Malinowski memorial lecture in 1984, "Anthropology and Psychology: Towards an Epidemiology of Representations," and greatly elaborated in his 1996 volume, *Explaining Culture*, Sperber proposes to reframe anthropology as an epidemiology of representations. Rather than interpreting cultural environments in terms of the purported meaning (or more accurately perhaps, the significance) of their (again purportedly) interwoven elements, Sperber suggests exploring the nature, scope, and causes of the distribution of cultural phenomena. In a number of articles, Sperber explores how viewing communication as an inferential process and viewing the human mind as richly modular gives substance to the epidemiological approach to culture.

A Naturalistic Approach to Cultural Environments

In *Explaining Culture: A Naturalistic Approach* and a large number of subsequent recent articles, Sperber expands the notion of an epidemiological approach to cultural representations, tackling at once and explaining (a) how representations are distributed in a cultural environment and (b) how best to characterize culture. On this approach, a human population can be seen as inhabited by a much wider population of mental representations. Most of these are fleeting (the weather in New York at 1:33 p.m. on December 28, 2012), narrowly distributed (the time my daughter managed to get out of bed this morning), and of little interest to most members of the population (what my family had for breakfast today). Cultural and noncultural representations (and productions) differ in that the former are just those representations (and productions) that are widely and stably distributed within a particular population. Cultural analysis, on this view, consists of understanding why some representations become widely and stably distributed—that is, why some beliefs (and practices) are catchier than others. Crucial to such analysis is the realization that there are complex causal chains where mental representations and public productions alternate.

Sperber argues that imitation-based processes function to produce a rough fidelity in content in these complex causal chains, so that widely and stably distributed representations share a *similarity in content* among the productions of various members of a community (two tellings of Little Red Riding Hood are similar enough to be recognized as versions of the same narrative despite the many differences in detail between them). In short, neither communication nor imitation is a replication mechanism through which representations are faithfully copied over time and between individuals. The human ability to understand and to reproduce or adapt another person's action or utterance involves relevance-guided inferential processes of reconstruction as much as processes of decoding or copying.

Not surprisingly, Sperber argues against applying the Darwinian idea of natural selection to explain the relative stability and development of cultural traits, as suggested by the biologist Richard Dawkins and pursued in "memetics." He finds this argument to be based on too simplistic an understanding of the causal processes involved in communication. However, Sperber does argue that the evolution of the psychological dispositions that enable the individual formation and social distribution of representations, namely, domain-specific evolved mechanisms or "modules," is to be explained in straightforward Darwinian terms. (Thus, e.g., Little Red Riding Hood may be widely and stably distributed among many cultural environments because its narrative structure and ontological commitments and their manipulation in the story are more resonant with human cognitive architecture than other similar but less catchy tales.) Several of Sperber's more recent essays are intended as direct contributions to evolutionary psychology.

Collaborations

Sperber's approach powerfully influenced a small group of anthropologists—Scott Atran, Pascal Boyer, and Lawrence Hirschfeld—with whom he has maintained a loose association for more than 3 decades. Their work, on folk biology (Atran), supernatural beliefs (Boyer), and human kinds (Hirschfeld), provides empirical illustrations of Sperber's epidemiological approach; their empirical projects seek to account for specific arenas of cultural life—that is, the broad and often stable distributions of these cultural forms—by focusing on the cognitive mechanisms, particularly special-purposes devices, that seem to have evolved to treat specific kinds of information.

More recently, Sperber has been a cofounder and active member of the Institut Jean Nicod in Paris, a unique research institution at the interface of analytic philosophy and the social and cognitive sciences, which is playing an important role in giving a greater place in French intellectual life to a more analytic approach to philosophy and a more naturalistic approach to psychology and the social sciences. In this institute, Sperber had headed an interdisciplinary group of younger researchers and has collaborated in particular with Christophe Heintz in studying the socio-cognitive basis of scientific culture, with Nicolas Baumard in studying the evolution of morality, with Nicolas Claidière in studying models of cultural transmission in nonhuman animals, with Olivier Mascaro in studying the development of trust and "epistemic vigilance" in young children, with Hugo Mercier in developing a theory of human reasoning as essentially social, and with Olivier Morin in studying the interplay of imitation and communication in cultural transmission. In collaboration with the Department of Anthropology at the London School of Economics, Sperber launched and continues to direct a web forum, the International Cognition and Culture Institute, which maintains several scientific blogs, hosts web lectures, and sponsors webinars.

Honors and Awards

Numerous institutions have recognized and honored Sperber's unique scholarship. Among others, these include appointment as corresponding fellow of the British Academy, foreign honorary member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and member of the Academia Europaea. In 2009, Sperber was named the first laureate of the Claude Lévi-Strauss Prize.

Lawrence A. Hirschfeld

See also Chomsky, Noam; Evolutionary Psychology; Geertz, Clifford; Schneider, David M.; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Bloch, M., & Sperber, D. (2002). Kinship and evolved psychological dispositions: The mother's brother controversy reconsidered. *Current Anthropology, 43*(4), 723–748.

Claidière, N., & Sperber, D. (2010). Imitation explains the propagation, not the stability of animal culture. *Proceedings of the Royal Society B, 277*(1681), 651–659. doi:10.1098/rspb.2009.1615

Mercier, H., & Sperber, D. (2011). Why do humans reason? Arguments for an argumentative theory. *Behavioral and Brain Sciences, 34,* 57–111.

Noveck, I., & Sperber, D. (Eds.). (2004). *Experimental pragmatics*. London, UK: Palgrave.

Sperber, D. (1975). *Rethinking symbolism*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1985). *On anthropological knowledge*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1996). *Explaining culture: A naturalistic approach*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

———. (Ed.). (2000). *Metarepresentations: A multidisciplinary perspective*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Sperber, D., & Hirschfeld, L. (2004). The cognitive foundations of cultural stability and diversity. *Trends in Cognitive Sciences, 8*(1), 40–46.

Sperber, D., Premack, D., & Premack, A. J. (Eds.). (1995). *Causal cognition: A multidisciplinary debate*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Sperber, D., & Wilson, D. (1986). *Relevance: Communication and cognition*. Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Wilson, D., & Sperber, D. (2012). *Meaning and relevance*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Spiro, Melford

Melford Spiro (1920–) is a psychological anthropologist best known for his work on the psychodynamics of cultural differences. One of the main interlocutors in debates surrounding cultural universalism and

relativism in the mid-20th century, Spiro advocated for the presence of universal processes informing human nature. He saw cultural practices as culturally constituted coping mechanisms that provide a socially acceptable shape to human needs. In a series of ethnographic and theoretical works, he argued against a split between the implied universalism of psychology and the implied relativism of anthropology, arguing instead for what he saw as shared motivational and cognitive structures underlying cultural variation. A lay psychoanalyst, Spiro conducted fieldwork in Micronesia, Israel, and Burma. He is presently professor emeritus at the University of California, San Diego, where he founded the university's Department of Anthropology in 1968.

Spiro was born in 1920 in Cleveland, Ohio, and received his PhD from Northwestern University in 1950. He grew up intellectually in an anthropological climate of cultural relativity, in which culture was seen to mold the psychological structures of human beings, and he became interested in anthropology because he was intrigued by this claim and its implications for social structure. While a student of A. I. Hallowell at Northwestern University, Spiro encountered neo-Freudian psychoanalytic learning theory and became inspired by what the study of deep motivations could offer to the understanding of human behavior.

In 1947, Spiro began his first ethnographic fieldwork project for his dissertation on aggression in Ifaluk, a Micronesian atoll. The topic emerged from his observation that there were few acts of aggression in the atoll, much less than he had expected. During fieldwork, Spiro uncovered hostile impulses at the psychological level, however, that countered the assumption that the lack of violence reflected a lack of thinking about violence. He found hostility present in the answers to his psychological measures and also in folk tales, myths, and religious beliefs, all of which he came to call projective expressions of personality dispositions. He also noticed early-childhood rearing behaviors that seemed to shape behavioral practices of nonaggression. He concluded that universal motivations are displaced (or "projected") onto religious beliefs, narratives, and rituals, where they can be discharged in culturally appropriate ways according to the functional requirements of the society. Spiro's doctoral dissertation demonstrated that nonaggression at the behavioral cultural levels did not reflect nonhostility at the psychological personality level. He found that such hostility was very much present but that it was shaped and elaborated over the course of human development. This provided the first piece of evidence for his theoretical commitment to a universal human nature.

For more evidence, Spiro turned to a new ethnographic project that could provide a comparative perspective. In 1950, he began research on a kibbutz in Israel to study socialization in a quite different kind of society. At the kibbutz, children were raised apart from their parents, in large cooperative social groups. If personality was culture writ small, he thought, the nonaggressive, cooperative learning environment of the kibbutz would produce adults with little hostility. And yet this was not the case: Rivalry and competition emerged instead of, or along with, cooperation. These findings, and their implications, ran counter to Spiro's earliest commitments to psychological relativity, and he began to speak out against theories of cultural relativity in his work on gender and socialization in *Children of the Kibbutz* (1965) and in energetic debates at conferences, in theoretical articles, and at university campuses. And yet if people share psychological similarities everywhere, he continued to wonder, what then explains behavioral differences?

This question led to a long-term interest in religion and to Spiro's third ethnographic project, on Buddhism in Burma. Buddhism served as an intriguing religion for Spiro because of its apparent rejection of ideals common in Western religions. Western scholars had characterized Buddhism as focusing on life as suffering, the rejection of desires, and an absence of selfhood. These ideas were all suggestive of the markedly different cognitive structures orienting human psychology. To study these ideas "on the ground," Spiro conducted ethnographic research in Upper Burma in 1961 and 1962. Surprisingly, he found that instead of living as if desire was to be avoided and that there was no self, people overwhelmingly believed in the self and attempted to have their desires fulfilled rather than eliminated. From this work, Spiro proposed in *Buddhism and Society: A Great Tradition and Its Burmese Vicissitudes* (1971) that people in Burma follow a kind of Buddhism based on either gathering good karma or warding off misfortune, rather than the one based on the elimination of desire and the search for nirvana. This once again confirmed his ideas of a universal psychology.

Spiro's ethnographic research has provided evidence in support of a theory of universal human nature rooted in individual human needs. In the 1966 work "Religion: Problems of Definition and Explanation," he argues for the universal belief in supernatural beings as the basis of religion; in "Postmodernist Anthropology, Subjectivity, and Science: A Modernist Critique (1996)," he points (critically) to the Culture-and-Personality school's subjectivist turn as a precursor to postmodern anthropology; and in "Is the Western Conception of the Self 'Peculiar' Within the Context of the World Cultures?" (1993), he argues against Clifford Geertz's claim of cultural diversity in conceptions of the self. In each piece, universality trumps relativity.

Because of his distinctive position on cultural diversity, his insights into shared human psychological processes, and his commitment to comparative ethnographically based analysis, Spiro's work continues to exert extensive influence in the fields of social, cultural, and psychological anthropology.

Julia Cassaniti

See also Culture and Personality; Freud, Sigmund; Hallowell, A. Irving; Human Universals; Psychological Anthropology; Religion

Further Readings

Kilborne, B. (1990). Mere worldlings: An interview with Melford E. Spiro. *The Psychoanalytic Study of Society, 14,* 1–15.

Langness, L. L., Kilborne, B., & Spiro, M. E. (1987). *Culture and human nature: Theoretical papers of Melford Spiro.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Spiro, M. E. (1987). *Culture and human nature: Theoretical papers of Melford E. Spiro* (B. Kilborne & L. L. Langness, Eds.). Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Srinivas, M. N.

M. N. Srinivas (1916–1999) was trained at the University of Bombay under G. S. Ghurye and later under A. R. Radcliffe Brown and E. E. Evans-Pritchard at Oxford University. He returned to India in 1951 and joined the Department of Sociology at Maharaja Sayajirao University, Baroda, where he overhauled the syllabus and trained students in fieldwork methods for sociocultural research. He was invited in 1959 to join the University of Delhi to head a new Department of Sociology at the Delhi School of Economics. The department became the premier department of sociology, recognized both nationally and internationally for giving a new direction to sociology and anthropology in India. Srinivas returned to his home state (Mysore) in 1972, where he first joined the Institute for Social and Economic Change as joint director and later, in 1979, the National Institute of Advanced Study, where he established a separate unit for sociological and anthropological research. He devoted as much energy to institution building as he did to his own research and writing.

Srinivas left a distinct mark on the practice of sociology and anthropology in India. The following sections consider his contributions with respect to (a) the anthropology of Hinduism, how to understand the unity and multiplicity of Hinduism; (b) the village community, the texture of relations and the functioning of caste hierarchy at the local level; (c) caste in historical and contemporary contexts (how was mobility made possible in the caste system, and what role did caste play in democratic politics?); and (d) studying one's own society, and its implication for the economy of knowledge.

Anthropology of Hinduism

Srinivas's classic study of religion among the Coorgs, a tiny distinctive group located in the Kodava district (previously known as Coorg) in South India, brought out the importance of purity and pollution as the fundamental opposition underlying Hinduism. He privileged rituals and everyday practices over belief for understanding Hinduism as a lived religion. Srinivas connected local forms of Hinduism with civilization-wide concepts by using the notion of "spread," arguing that some features of Hinduism could be found all across India while others were local and specific but could only be understood through the context provided by the all-India categories and concepts. Srinivas's conception of Hinduism had a major influence on Louis Dumont, who famously argued that the opposition of purity and pollution, rather than the distinction between the sacred and the profane, was the defining feature of Hinduism and that the religion of caste was primary while the religion of gods was secondary.

Village Community

On the basis of his study of Rampura, a village in Southern India, Srinivas proposed the concept of the *dominant caste*, which he defined as a caste that was numerically preponderant in a village, commanded economic and political power, and was not too low in the ritual hierarchy. Srinivas wanted to signal the importance of the peasant proprietor castes, who were lower than Brahmins in the ritual hierarchy but enjoyed considerable power over lower, previously untouchable castes, whose members supplied the necessary agricultural labor. Srinivas demonstrated the subtle relation between power, solidarity, and mutual interdependence across castes that gave texture to everyday relations in the village. He has been criticized for neglecting the forces of caste oppression endured by Dalits (the name used by the previously untouchable castes to refer to themselves) and for ignoring agrarian classes in favor of caste. Many scholars writing on Dalit history have argued through testimonial literature that patron-client relations did not offer protection to Dalits against the everyday forms of humiliation and exclusion that marked Dalit biographies. Arguably, there is a tendency to homogenize the past in these accounts and a commitment to modernist ideas that underplay the attachments that many Dalit castes had to their own village deities, to ritual roles that conferred power over occult forces, and to the performance genres in which they specialized. However, there is no question that the critiques offered by Dalit scholars have led to a reorientation in scholarly accounts of caste.

Caste in Historical and Contemporary Context

Srinivas made a sharp distinction between the "book view" and "field view" of Indian society, arguing that although the authoritative texts of the tradition presented a fourfold classification of caste in terms of a rigid hierarchical structure, social mobility for lower castes was in fact possible through a process he named as Sanskritization. Essentially, Sanskritization entailed the adoption of practices, such as vegetarianism or a ban on widow remarriage, that corresponded to prestigious Brahmanical values by lower castes to claim a higher status for themselves. It is interesting that Srinivas refused to consider these practices "Brahmanization"—the idea seems to have been that such castes do not imitate Brahmins but rather adopt practices that were considered more "refined" within a worldview in which Sanskrit had already made a break from being primarily a ritual language to expressing the aspirations of a cultural and literary elite. There is an interesting question as to who accorded the higher status to the castes that had successfully Sanskritized? Sometimes, Srinivas seemed to suggest that this acceptance was signaled by changes in the transactional economies of local societies; at other times, he suggested that these claims were presented to local kings and even to census commissioners, who were entrusted with the charge of recording caste status. Srinivas conceded that the path of Sanskritization for achieving upward mobility was not available to the untouchable castes, and he thought that greater opportunities were available to these castes through participation in electoral politics and Westernization, a process that diverged from Sanskritization.

Srinivas's decisive contribution to the understanding of democratic politics in India was to show the important role that caste-based mobilization played in electoral politics. Though he was initially ridiculed in the 1950s by Marxist scholars who thought that class had replaced caste in Indian politics, his understanding of grassroots politics turned out to be much more sound than that of armchair theorists. Research across the social sciences now vigorously engages the question of how electoral politics has enabled the lower castes to play a significant role in national and regional politics, while also being attentive to the changes in the nature of caste itself from a ritual entity to a political formation.

Importance of Studying One's Own Society

Srinivas theorized on the conceptual and methodological importance of studying one's own society long before the so-called reflexive turn in American anthropology. He propagated the view that there was no strict dividing line between sociology and anthropology that would correspond to the study of complex versus simple societies. Srinivas was acutely aware that his own position as a Brahmin opened some doors for him in his fieldwork but closed other opportunities of getting to know the castes that were considered polluting because of the tight surveillance exercised by the headman of the village over his movements. This persuaded him that greater diversity in the social

sciences was necessary because unless marginal groups themselves entered the knowledge institutions, their concerns could not be well represented by others. Srinivas's ambition for Indian sociology to be open to knowledge produced in metropolitan centers while maintaining a fierce autonomy of its own projects has been inherited by the following generations of Indian scholars and gives the discipline a distinct flavor in intellectual life in India.

Veena Das

See also Dumont, Louis; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Oxford University; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.

Further Readings

Das, V. (2012). *Structure and cognition: Aspects of Hindu caste and ritual*. Delhi, India: Oxford India Perennials.

Dirks, N. B. (2001). *Castes of mind: Colonialism and the making of modern India*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Dumont, L. (1970). *Homo hierarchicus: The caste system and its implications*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Srinivas, M. N. (1952). *Religion and society among the Coorgs of South India*. Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

———. (1966). *Social change in modern India*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1970). *Caste in modern India and other essays*. Delhi, India: Asia Publishing House.

———. (1976). *The remembered village*. Delhi, India: Oxford University Press.

Steward, Julian

Julian H. Steward (1902–1972), an American ethnologist, archaeologist, and theorist, developed a theoretical perspective termed *cultural ecology*, which he viewed as a scientific approach to the study of cultural change.

Life and Professional Career

Steward's strong identification with science and scientists began early in life. He was born in Washington, D.C., where his parents had met while working for the federal government. His mother's brief career as a federal employee in Washington ended with their marriage. His father, a lawyer by training, had a long career with the U.S. Patent Office. He eventually served as chief of the Board of Examiners, which reviewed applications for patents. This work required not only an understanding of patent law but also a grasp of the scientific basis of new technologies and other inventions for which patents were sought.

Steward's maternal uncle, trained in the science of meteorology, became chief of the U.S. Weather Bureau. Both he and Steward's father belonged to the Cosmos Club, a private club with an exclusively male membership; it included many government scientists and others from Washington's intellectual elite. The founder of the Cosmos Club, John Wesley Powell, was a geologist and anthropologist and was himself a high-ranking government scientist. He served as an early director of the U.S. Geological Survey and as the founding director of the Smithsonian Institution's Bureau of Ethnology, later known as the Bureau of American Ethnology (BAE). Steward would eventually join "the family business" of government science: in his case, as a federal employee of the BAE for about a decade.

Steward attended public schools in Washington until he was 16 years old. In 1918, along with the sons of several government scientists, he was recruited to attend a new and unusual college preparatory school in eastern California. He left the East for the West, and spent the next 3 years living at the school in Deep Springs Valley. Located in a remote corner of the desert north of Death Valley, the private boarding school was also a working ranch. Some 20 male students spent mornings in class and afternoons working outside on the ranch. They often assisted the hired ranch hands, some of them Paiute Indians from the surrounding area, whose immediate ancestors had been living as hunter-gatherers at the time of American conquest and settlement of their lands, just 50 years before Steward arrived in eastern California. Paiutes would figure in his earliest work as an anthropologist and in what became an enduring interest in hunter-gatherers.

During his years in Deep Springs Valley, Steward had other experiences that also influenced some of his later research and theoretical ideas. Unlike most men of his social class and urban origins in the East, he worked outdoors, and with his hands, on a daily basis. He spent half of each day using tools as he helped manage the ranch's irrigation system, make repairs to equipment, and take care of livestock.

Memories of his experiences at Deep Springs seem to have guided some of his later thinking about cultural ecology: specifically, about the links among natural resources, technology, the organization of work, and the size and structure of groups. Whether or not he ever understood the importance of those memories, he did come to see his 3 years at the school as *the* defining and transforming juncture in his life.

In 1921, Steward left Deep Springs and entered the University of California at Berkeley. During his freshman year, he happened to take an introductory course in anthropology jointly taught by Alfred L. Kroeber, Robert H. Lowie, and Edward W. Gifford. He had no further training in anthropology as an undergraduate student because in 1922 he transferred to Cornell University, where many of his classmates from Deep Springs had enrolled. The curriculum at Cornell, like many universities of the time, did not include anthropology. Steward earned a bachelor's degree in geology and zoology, and he considered a professional career in law, history, or a natural science. After seeking advice from Cornell's president, Livingston Farrand—who had trained in medicine but then turned to teaching anthropology at Columbia University—Steward finally decided on anthropology. He returned to Berkeley for graduate studies in 1925.

During the next 3 years, Steward studied with Kroeber, Lowie, and others, including the geographer Carl Sauer. In the summer of 1926, he undertook his first archaeological fieldwork, at sites along the Columbia River in Oregon. During the summers of 1927 and 1928, he completed his first ethnographic fieldwork, with Owens Valley Paiutes, who lived just 30 miles west of his old school in Deep Springs Valley.

His dissertation drew on library research, as was then common, rather than on fieldwork. In the fall of 1928, before completing his dissertation, he began to teach at the University of Michigan as an instructor. After earning a PhD in 1929, he resigned from the University of Michigan in 1930 to accept a position as an associate professor at the University of Utah, where his fiancée, Dorothy B. Nyswander, an educational psychologist, was one of the few women on the faculty. They had met 5 years earlier in Berkeley, while Nyswander was a student of the well-known psychologist and neo-behaviorist, Edward Chace Tolman. For 7 years, from 1925 until 1932, Nyswander—a rigorously trained experimental scientist and a committed behaviorist—was Steward's intellectual companion. The two shared some mutual interests in human behavior and why it changes, and they collaborated briefly in field research with Ute Indians.

The couple married in 1930 but separated 2 years later. In the interim, Steward worked primarily in archaeology, investigating a variety of sites in Utah. His active work in archaeology ended after just 3 years. In 1933, in the midst of the Great Depression, he resigned from the University of Utah and married a young woman named Jane Cannon, who belonged to a prominent Utah family. They spent the next year in Berkeley, California, where Steward located a series of temporary positions in teaching and research and his wife found steady employment as a secretary.

A year later, they left Berkeley for fieldwork in the Great Basin, a vast region of high desert stretching between the Sierra Nevada Mountains in California and the Wasatch Range of the Rocky Mountains in Utah. Steward knew a great deal in advance about the region because he had already spent nearly 7 years living in the Great Basin, first in eastern California at Deep Springs and then in Utah. For about 6 months in 1935, he pursued fieldwork with Paiute and Shoshone Indians in eastern California and in Nevada, interviewing elders. His questions centered on how they and their immediate ancestors had lived as hunter-gatherers before American conquest and settlement in the mid-19th century. In 1936, he spent several months in Idaho and Utah, completing his Great Basin research. It constituted the lengthiest and most significant fieldwork of his career.

Steward saw his fieldwork as a step in what he called his "twenty-year plan" for research: a plan that called for studying cultural change in a systematic and scientific way, starting with small societies of hunter-gatherers and then moving on to larger societies based on agriculture. In 1938, he traveled to Andean South America with his wife and their young son, planning to do fieldwork in Chile with Araucanian Indians. His family soon returned to the United States, and discouraged by illness and loneliness, he gave up on the project before reaching Chile. Two years later, he carried out brief field research on his own with Carrier Indians in western Canada.

Those 6 weeks with the Carrier people in 1940 marked the end of his active research on hunter-gatherers and of his fieldwork. He drew largely on

secondary sources—the research findings of archaeologists from sites in the Americas and elsewhere in the world—as he began to develop and refine his theoretical ideas about the causes of cultural change: specifically, the emergence over time of larger and more complex societies from hunter-gatherer antecedents.

In 1935, Steward had accepted a permanent position with the BAE as a research ethnologist. In 1939, he was appointed editor of the *Handbook of South American Indians* (1946–1959), a seven-volume work sponsored by the BAE and funded by Congress. Eleven years later, in 1946, he left Washington, D.C., and the BAE for a professorship in anthropology at Columbia University. He remained there for 6 years. Beginning in the late 1940s, while at Columbia, he undertook work for the federal government in the Indian Claims Commission trials. Steward served as an expert witness for the federal government but not for tribes seeking redress for the loss of their lands. Perhaps because of Steward's previous employment as a government scientist and his firm belief that science is value neutral, he readily agreed to serve as a witness for the federal government; but his role in the trials aroused enduring antagonism within anthropology, where he was widely viewed as having assisted the wrong side in the litigation.

During his years at Columbia, Steward worked with male graduate students who were World War II veterans, attending college on the G.I. Bill. Many were drawn to materialist perspectives, and they were influenced in various ways by Steward's theoretical approach. Some of them—notably Stanley Diamond, Morton Fried, Sidney W. Mintz, Robert F. Murphy, Elman R. Service, and Eric Wolf—went on to achieve prominence in academic anthropology. Another postwar student at Columbia, Marvin Harris, later promoted Steward's materialist and nomothetic approach—the attempt to formulate general laws—in an influential book, *The Rise of Anthropological Theory*. Steward largely avoided working with female graduate students.

In 1952, Steward moved to the University of Illinois, Urbana, where he spent 17 years—the longest portion of his career—before retiring in 1969. During those final years of his professional life, he published *Theory of Culture Change*, his best known work. He also oversaw a large-scale, collaborative project that he had initiated as the culmination of his ambitious 20-year plan—although it did not mark a highly successful end to it. Controversy surrounded the project, which centered on contemporary non-Western societies—mainly former colonies of Western powers—and the process of cultural change that some scholars of the time termed *modernization*. To Steward's dismay, when *Contemporary Change in Traditional Societies* finally reached print in 1967, the most outspoken critic was Eric Wolf, his former student at Columbia University.

Major Works and Contributions

Steward created a theoretical perspective that was distinctive in mid-20th-century anthropology. His environmental perspective on culture was unusual, as was his synthesis of comparative, secondary data from archaeological and ethnographic research. Both were essential to his goal of understanding the causes of cultural change by charting the course of change in the past. He did share a broadly historical orientation with archaeologists and many American cultural anthropologists of his time. But he departed sharply from the cultural historicism of Franz Boas and his American students, who included Steward's own teachers, Kroeber and Lowie.

Steward's theoretical perspective, in contrast to theirs, was materialist, environmentally oriented, generalizing, and concerned with causality. It was also thoroughly behaviorist. His theoretical ideas were the antithesis of humanistic and relativistic trends in cultural anthropology at the time. The work of Ruth Benedict—his colleague at Columbia University and a student of Boas—perhaps best represented those prevailing trends, which Steward always rejected.

Unlike Benedict, and in keeping with behaviorist principles, Steward consistently focused on what was external and observable. He gave priority to environmental resources, primarily those most important in human subsistence, such as edible plants, animals, and water; to technology, especially the tools used in procuring food and water; and to behavior, above all, subsistence-related work. These elements constituted what he eventually termed the *cultural core*, a key concept in his thinking about the causes of cultural change.

Another, earlier foundational concept was what he termed the *patrilineal band*. Steward developed this concept in an essay that he called his "first

theoretical work," a 1936 essay on types of bands (later divided into two essays and republished in *Theory of Culture Change*). He defined the patrilineal band as an exogamous and politically independent group of male kin who own land and defend exclusive rights to that territory. Patrilineal bands, he hypothesized, developed in arid regions and others where food resources were scattered and limited and where hunting centered on the pursuit of nonmigratory game animals. These were causal factors that limited the size of bands and kept population density low. Steward thought of this type of band as a particular *cultural type*, or *cross-cultural type* as he termed it. He argued that the patrilineal band occurred under certain ecological conditions, while different conditions produced—that is, caused—other types.

Steward drew his first evidence for the patrilineal band from published, but fragmentary, accounts of hunter-gatherers written by explorers, missionaries, and early anthropologists. He set out to find firsthand evidence through his own ethnographic fieldwork in the Great Basin in 1935 and 1936, but his search for the patrilineal band did not succeed. Steward found no evidence that hunter-gatherers in the Great Basin of western North America had formerly lived in patrilineal bands. In his 1938 ethnography, *Basin-Plateau Aboriginal Sociopolitical Groups*, he instead documented the diversity he had found. He focused on how environmental resources and conditions in different localities varied, how people in each place had adapted culturally, and how this resulted in differences in the size and structure of local groups. The concept of *cultural adaptation*, which Steward sometimes termed *cultural ecological adaptation*, provided a conceptual framework for the monograph. Over time, it became a unifying concept in American anthropology, spanning several subfields.

Steward's search for the patrilineal band also motivated his two subsequent efforts at fieldwork with hunter-gatherers: the failed effort in South America in 1938 and his final fieldwork with Carrier Indians in Canada in 1940. In Canada, as in the Great Basin, he found no evidence of patrilineal bands. He never succeeded in documenting this type of band structure in his own fieldwork.

During a 20-year period, between the mid-1930s and the mid-1950s, Steward wrote and published the series of articles that he later included in the collection titled *Theory of Culture Change*. One of the most important was "Cultural Causality and Law: A Trial Formulation of the Development of Early Civilizations," first published in 1949. Using secondary data from published archaeological reports, Steward argued that the earliest civilizations developed in arid and semiarid environments and shared a uniform sequence of development, including the use of irrigation in agriculture. As the telling title suggests, "Cultural Causality and Law" addressed one of Steward's central questions: What causes cultural change such as the independent development of civilization? A central premise came from the natural sciences. Steward believed that just as there are natural laws, discovered through scientific inquiry, so are there cultural laws that can likewise be discovered.

Steward came to call his approach cultural ecology, having used the terms *ecology* and *ecological* in print since the 1930s (e.g., "Ecological Aspects of Southwestern Society," first published in 1937 and later reprinted in *Theory of Culture Change*). In the early 1950s, he finally wrote an essay on the concept and method of cultural ecology; it appeared in print as a chapter in *Theory of Culture Change*. There, he explicitly named and defined the cultural core, a concept implicit in his previous writings about patrilineal bands, lineage- and clan-based societies, and early civilizations. A few years later, he quietly abandoned the concept of the cultural core—which was arguably the linchpin of cultural ecology—but he never questioned the concept of the patrilineal band, despite the lack of empirical evidence to support it. This foundational concept, inspired in part by experiences at Deep Springs, held deeply personal as well as intellectual meaning for him.

In the 1950s, Steward began to be linked with Leslie White as a fellow cultural evolutionist. White's brand of cultural evolution differed in many ways from Steward's ideas about the causes and the course of cultural change, and Steward adopted the term *multilinear evolution* to distinguish his approach from what he called White's *universal evolution*. Despite its name, the basic ideas of multilinear evolution came from cultural ecology. Steward consistently focused on environmental resources, technology, and the organization of work in analyzing cultural change. To analyze change in sociopolitical structures and complexity, a topic of perennial interest to him, he developed a concept he termed *levels*

of sociocultural integration. He included a chapter on that topic in *Theory of Culture Change*.

Steward always preferred the name *cultural ecology* for his approach, a set of ideas that he complained had been hard to "sell." That name proved to be the one that endured, and his theoretical ideas began gaining ground after the publication of *Theory of Culture Change*. Steward's environmental perspective helped stimulate a range of ecological approaches later in the 20th century, including human behavioral ecology, which has drawn adherents from biological anthropology, archaeology, and cultural anthropology. Cultural ecology's influence on three of the four subfields of American anthropology is undeniable but perhaps not widely appreciated.

Steward has become a figure of controversy among cultural anthropologists and Native scholars for his role in the Indian Claims Commission trials and the way in which he represented Great Basin Indians in his testimony and in his published writings; for his conviction that anthropology was a value-neutral science; and for his notable preoccupation with men's labor but his near silence about women's, despite having learned in fieldwork as early as 1935 that women had made the larger contribution to subsistence in much of the Great Basin.

Many archaeologists, among others, continue to find great heuristic value in Steward's cultural ecology. His founding role in environmental anthropology also continues to receive favorable attention. The Julian Steward Award, launched in 2002 and given periodically by the Anthropology and Environment Section of the American Anthropological Association, recognizes what is judged the best new book in ecological/environmental anthropology.

Virginia Kerns

See also Columbia University; Cultural Ecology; Harris, Marvin; Human Behavioral Ecology; Kroeber, Alfred L.; White, Leslie; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Blackhawk, N. (2006). *Violence over the land: Indians and empires in the early American West*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Clemmer, R. O. (2009). Pristine aborigines or victims of progress? The Western Shoshones in the anthropological imagination. *Current Anthropology, 50,* 849–881.

Crum, S. (1999). Julian Steward's vision of the Great Basin: A critique and response. In R. Clemmer, L. D. Myers, & M. E. Rudden (Eds.), *Julian Steward and the Great Basin: The making of an anthropologist* (pp. 117–127). Salt Lake City: University of Utah Press.

Janetski, J. C. (1999). Julian Steward and Utah archaeology. In R. Clemmer, L. D. Myers, & M. E. Rudden (Eds.), *Julian Steward and the Great Basin: The making of an anthropologist* (pp. 19–34). Salt Lake City: University of Utah Press.

Kerns, V. (1999). Learning the land. In R. Clemmer, L. D. Myers, & M. E. Rudden (Eds.), *Julian Steward and the Great Basin: The making of an anthropologist* (pp. 1–18). Salt Lake City: University of Utah Press.

———. (2003). *Scenes from the high desert: Julian Steward's life and theory*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

———. (2010). *Journeys West: Jane and Julian Steward and their guides*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Pinkoski, M. (2008). Julian Steward, American anthropology, and colonialism. *Histories of Anthropology Annual, 4,* 172–204.

Steward, J. H. (1938). Basin-plateau aboriginal sociopolitical groups. *Bureau of American Ethnology Bulletin, 120,* 1–346.

———. (1955). *Theory of culture change: The methodology of multilinear evolution*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

Strathern, Marilyn

Dame Anne Marilyn Strathern (1941–) is a British social anthropologist, Melanesianist, and an ethnographer of British society, kinship, reproductive technologies, and intellectual property.

In her 1994 William Wyse inaugural lecture, Marilyn Strathern brought center stage the question of the relations between anthropologists and those whom they study. Anthropology routes its knowledge through persons, she observed, gesturing to the specificity of the anthropological method of fieldwork. It would not be too much to say that Strathern's pioneering works on the social and cultural dimensions of a range of technological and ethical changes in our times have had a defining, that is routing, role in articulating the stakes of a number of current research projects across the humanities and social sciences. Strathern's take on analytical categories in ethnography famously tends

to dislocate them, introducing incommensurabilities of time, place, and size between tokens of the same socially current meaning. Her uneasiness with congealed explanations itself partly explains why Strathern has won esteem as one of the most innovative and respected anthropologists of the latter half of the 20th century.

Despite the fact that Strathern's original fieldsite was Melanesia, her intellectual projects equally excavate western Euro-American (i.e., her own) society. She recounts the inception of her interest in the classifications mediating between objects and meaning in her fascination with her father's cabinet of curiosities, a case of drawers holding various butterflies, stones, and minerals. As a schoolgirl at Bromley High School, she became interested in the archaeological ruins of lost civilizations. As a Girton College undergraduate in 1963, Strathern felt her curiosity taking a reflexive turn, away from the sheer phenomenality of the past and toward the problematic of research itself, insofar as research practices necessarily embed epistemological uncertainties and failures of resolution in specific institutional dilemmas. Rather than inquiring what objects might mean, Strathern came to ask, "What does it mean anthropologically to ask after them?" How do attributions of sense, and especially effects of size and scale, lie between cultures and the analytical procedures that reconstruct them? After finishing her doctoral work, Strathern became curator in the ethnographical section of Cambridge's Museum of Archaeology and Anthropology, and a ready theorist of her own practice. She later returned to Papua, family in tow, and after stints at the Australian National University and 9 years at Cambridge and in California, took up a chair in social anthropology at the University of Manchester in 1985. She subsequently held the William Wyse Professorship of Social Anthropology at Cambridge from 1993 to 2008.

Strathern's Papuan research concerns self-decoration, urbanization and migration, and decision making in both Hagen clans and their overlapping political organizations. In her later research in England, she examined questions of how the English middle classes understand traditional kinship patterns. Her writings also consider different perceptions of the relations between English towns and villages, of gender, of new procreative technologies, and of contemporary legal interventions in intellectual property and patents. Her work further analyzes how concepts of nature, biology, and genetics constitute contemporary understandings of personality and consumption. Always placing her subjects in cultural and social formations, such as the idea of professional accountability, her most recent writing has displayed a growing preoccupation with bioethics, a topic straddling disciplinary boundaries and especially amenable to interdisciplinary inspection.

Strathern's work is exceptionally innovative in terms of language, ethnography, methodology, and theory. Her inductive reasoning from observed phenomena is frequently counterintuitive, daring, subtle, and demanding. Her most imposing book, *The Gender of the Gift* (1988), offers a foundational account of Melanesian society, exploring how Melanesians represent their gender relations to themselves as fundamental to their sociality. In this work, as elsewhere, gender and feminist identification are not merely givens, or motivating principles for activist political projects, but also objects of serious theoretical investigation. Even while examining the different (and at times incommensurable) power dynamics between men and women, Strathern refuses to rehearse the themes of oppression and domination, preferring rather to understand gender as a multivalent categorization of persons, artifacts, things, events, and sequences. In Melanesia, for instance, a sense of male and female distinctiveness is secured through sexualized imagery. A person's gender identity is specified through his or her management of objects, especially tools, so that the question of gift exchange becomes connected to the form that domination (including patriarchal domination) takes in a certain society. Gender serves as an analytical concept and an aesthetic form, permitting the conceptualization of certain social exchanges, which, in turn, underwrite certain social conceptions and norms. This reconceptualization of gender throws down a challenge to fundamental assumptions in the social sciences. Strathern's implication is that little separates the presuppositions around gender of the Papuan Hagen people and the Western feminist anthropologists who study them. *The Gender of the Gift* is thus doubly admonitory. It first warns anthropologists against restricting their research to certain presumed features (gender, Melanesianness, and Englishness) and then insists on the historical, social, and situational specificities of the constructs they investigate, reminding

readers that these are constructs only. Constructs do things; they are just not already done things to be approached.

Another work, *Partial Connections* (1991), generally acclaimed as an anthropological classic, was received on publication as an equally daring, dauntingly complex text. The book is an experimental treatise on anthropology's epistemological frameworks, setting out with precision what we do when practicing the discipline or thinking of ourselves as its adherents. How does anthropology structure our representation and documentation of others? Reflecting on the premises of anthropology's means of collecting, segmenting, categorizing, and ordering its data, *Partial Connections* works with mainly Melanesian details to construct a nonregionally specific study of meaning making. Besides making use of her own fieldnotes and readings of others' theories, Strathern launches her disciplinary reflections by reading a selection of metaphors put forward by anthropologists as conceptualizations of their research. The Melanesian material is taken out of its context to serve not as *interpretatum* but as *interpretans*—that is, as an analytical tool—throwing into relief Euro-American practices of sense making. Anthropologists, for Strathern, always interpret others according to their own perspectives or prerogatives. "Native" concepts are thrown into relief by the logic of the Western thought that organizes, and then presents, them.

Strathern argues that the ways in which anthropologists organize material cannot then aspire to any kind of status as objective anthropological tools. Methodological themes and principles must remain constructs. Yet "constructs" or "constructed" is not opposed to "objective" or dealing with objects; rather, a measure of methodological self-consciousness sharpens a concern with the form and scale of the artifacts anthropologists use in symbolizing their field sites. In particular, anthropologists must beware of too easy an assumption of the commensurability of image-artifacts across explanatory contexts. A cautionary example for anthropologists of the commendably restrained use of explanatory induction in the use of objects is, for Strathern, provided in much of experimental natural science; and in *Partial Connections*, science becomes a constructive model for the analysis of Melanesians' techniques for understanding their own social forms.

Partial Connections is thus simultaneously the document of its own analysis and a palimpsest of postmodern attitudes in the production of what, somewhere, passes as knowledge. Positions that would be broadly accepted by most symbolic anthropologist and actor network theorists, for example, interpretive feminist readings in a plural frame or a postcolonial search for neo-Marxist explanatory totalities in censuring colonial ethnography (i.e., statistical practices of counting or measurement), are understood by Strathern only as variants in the field of constructs. These constructs are further taken ceaselessly to relate to, or articulate with, each other in producing complexity, diversity, and difference. The anthropologist gains her vantage on these complexities (i.e., Strathern's own), she argues, through changes of observation and perspective. While this could mean switching to a more "scientific" idiom, it could also mean seeking a purchase on contemporary society's distinctly managerial relationship to knowledge(s). This differs from noninstrumental anthropological knowledge, which, even if quantified, retains a certain suppositional character, as a kind of *controlled fiction*. Once again, little distinguishes the epistemological bases or validity of anthropological knowledge from the "knowledge" claimed by Melanesians in interpreting their culture. For *Partial Connections*, then, knowledge production is fictional, but these fictions can enable contestatory thought.

Some people find Strathern's writing complex and elliptical. The final effect, though, of her strategic, almost programmatic, emancipation of the language from the habitual terms of academic anthropological discourse is to spur the reader into thought. This is always enriching, if sometimes unsettling. For Strathern, field sites, professional-academic language, and modes of organizing data and even ethnographic descriptions all present themselves as aesthetic forms and potential analytical tools. The effect is to redirect attention both to the meaning of words, images, and acts (as interested symbolic anthropologists) and to their work—which she characteristically describes as what "they set in motion."

Strathern's thinking and writing keeps the relations between their descriptive and critical concepts in a constant state of flux. Her readers likewise find themselves unsettled by her problematization of the temporal dimension of anthropological writings, as she points out how often the authority of

ethnography is vested in its organizational time scheme, which lays down the writer's own analytical framework and projects the illusion of an "ethnographic present." Yet anthropological analysis evidently "happens" as much during conceptualization and writing up as in data collection. Strathern's insistence on the temporality of research, though, is more than just another version of the critique of ethnocentrism or a reflection on asymmetrical power relations between the studied and the student. In displacing the level of examination, Strathern repositions the anthropologist as bereft of any form of analytical authority other than an awareness of his or her own positionality and the position's resources. At the same time, Strathern's writing does not disavow her own status within the anthropological profession, further tending to make explicit the differences between social fractions. Her analysis of kinship, class, and cultural differences aims at their illumination, not at their dissolution.

Strathern's pioneer work in reframing anthropology so that its objects may include local professional cultures of accountability and professionalism has earned her membership in the British Academy of Science and the honor of damehood. She was awarded the Rivers Memorial Medal in 1976 and the Viking Fund Medal in 2003. Despite her insistence on the context and time frame in which the scholarly work was produced, her writings remain fresh, inspirational pieces of literature and are key texts in the philosophy of contemporary anthropology.

Strathern retired in June 2008 after 14 years of chairing the Department of Social Anthropology in Cambridge. She was also Mistress of Girton College. She still lives in Cambridge and is currently active in writing new studies of bioethics and transdisciplinarity in academic research.

Maja Petrović-Šteger

See also Cambridge University; Feminist Anthropology; Gift Exchange; Public Sphere; Social Studies of Science

Further Readings

Strathern, A., & Strathern, M. (1971). *Self-decoration in Mount Hagen*. London, UK: Duckworth.

Strathern, M. (1981). *Kinship at the core: An anthropology of Elmdon, Essex*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1988). *The gender of the gift: Problems with women and problems with society in Melanesia*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1992). *After nature: English kinship in the late twentieth century*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (1995). *The relation: Issues in complexity and scale* (1994 inaugural lecture by the William Wyse Professor of Social Anthropology). Cambridge, UK: Prickly Pear Press.

———. (1999). *Property, substance and effect: Anthropological essays on persons and things* (Collected essays, 1992–1998). London, UK: Athlone Press.

———. (2000). Introduction: New accountabilities; Afterword: Accountability and ethnograph. In Strathern, M. (Ed.), *Audit cultures: Anthropological studies in accountability, ethics and the academy* (EASA Series in Social Anthropology) (pp. 1–18, 279–304). London, UK: Routledge.

———. (2004). *Commons and borderlands: Working papers on interdisciplinarity, accountability and the flow of knowledge*. Wantage, UK: Sean Kingston.

———. (2005). *Kinship, law and the unexpected: Relatives are always a surprise*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

———. (2006). A community of critics? Thoughts on new knowledge. *Journal of Royal Anthropological Institute, 12,* 191–209.

Structural Functionalism

Structural functionalism is a theoretical approach in social anthropology whose origin is especially associated with A. R. Radcliffe-Brown (1881–1955). It was dominant during the first three quarters of the 20th century in British social anthropology and had offshoots in South Africa, the United States, Australia, and elsewhere. Its name reflects two key concepts, that of social structure and that of social function. The origin of these concepts lay ultimately in biological theory and more proximately in 19th-century social theory, and they are dominant in the forms of social explanation offered by structural functionalism. The approach also dominated sociology during the same period, associated particularly in the United States with Talcott Parsons and Robert Merton. Structural functionalism provided a guide both to the writing of ethnography and to explanation.

During the second quarter of the 20th century, social anthropology in Britain became dominated by two varieties of functionalism: (1) the version promulgated by Bronisław Malinowski, who taught at the London School of Economics, and (2) the structural functionalism of Radcliffe-Brown, who was professor of social anthropology at Oxford University from 1937 to 1946. In his theoretical writings, Malinowski tied the concept of function to a universal set of social "needs" (akin to the idea of functional requisites). These needs are met by institutions, which have in turn their own organizational "needs." In Radcliffe-Brown's version of functionalism, the function of an institution is the part it plays in the maintenance of the social system as a whole. The two functionalisms displaced evolutionism, the dominant paradigm in the later decades of the 19th century, and they effectively merged through the 20th century, although anthropologists trained by Malinowski were among those who challenged some of the precepts of structural functionalism. The approach drew particularly on the sociology of Émile Durkheim, but practitioners were also influenced by the sociology of Max Weber and other social theorists.

The rise of structural functionalism and Malinowskian functionalism coincided with the increasing emphasis in anthropology on long-term fieldwork conducted by professionally trained field-workers. A. W. Howitt and Baldwin Spencer had carried out field research in Australia in the late 19th century, when the evolutionist paradigm remained current, and the biologist and anthropologist A. C. Haddon and colleagues, including W. H. R. Rivers, conducted fieldwork in the Torres Straits Islands. The traditions of social anthropology, however, credit Malinowski with being the great innovator in introducing long-term intensive fieldwork in a single community in which the anthropologist is a "participant-observer," ideally working in the local language. Radcliffe-Brown's own fieldwork in the Andaman Islands (1906–1908) and Western Australia (1910–1912) was less significant, and his major contributions lay in synthesis, anthropological theory, and teaching. Radcliffe-Brown's American student W. Lloyd Warner published one of the first structural-functionalist monographs based on an extended period of fieldwork.

The Colonial Context

The data for evolutionist anthropology were reports (from many kinds of sources) of cultural "traits," which could be arranged in hypothetical evolutionary sequences. Social anthropologists inherited from the evolutionists a concern with "primitive" societies, even though they were embedded at the height of the structural-functionalist paradigm in the colonies and former colonies of European states. These societies tended to be treated as isolates and as functioning societies independent of any colonial context. The observational data of structural functionalism (and Malinowskian functionalism) led to holistic and "synchronic" accounts of social systems. Structural functionalism was thus ideally suited to intensive fieldwork in particular localities, and with the task of reporting or reconstructing "traditional" modes of life in what were then British colonies. In the United States and the settler colonies such as Canada and Australia, anthropologists studied the social lives and culture of the indigenous subjects of "internal" colonialism.

If social anthropology was not quite the handmaiden of colonialism, then it certainly sheltered in its shadow. The social lives and institutions of colonized peoples, categorized as "primitive," constituted the main subject matter of social anthropological research, which was largely made possible by colonial conditions. The relations between colonizer and colonized were at most a minor aspect of anthropological research and writing, however. The main aim was to construct comprehensive ethnographies of the social lives of relatively small-scale communities, as if they remained independent of colonial rule. "Bracketing" the wider political and economic context in this way had considerable advantages in the pursuit of the aim of describing and making sense of indigenous customs.

System, Structure, and Function

At the heart of structural functionalism is the idea of a social system, inherited from the sociology of Auguste Comte, Herbert Spencer, and Émile Durkheim. In an organic analogy made famous by Spencer and incorporated into structural-functionalist thought, the idea of a system is based on the idea of a body, in which each organ (such as the heart, lungs, and liver) performs a particular function

(or functions) in the maintenance of the life of the body as a whole. In an analogous way, structural functionalists saw the functioning of institutions such as government, law, and religion as contributing to the maintenance of the social system as a whole. In Durkheimian thought, system maintenance was conceptualized in terms of social cohesion or "solidarity." To maintain the idea of a society as a system, it needs to be treated conceptually as having definite boundaries.

The concept of function is intimately bound up with the concept of system, for the function of a part of a social system is its contribution to the maintenance of the whole. "Maintenance" in the social context meant the persistence of social integration and order. This kind of explanation became the dominant form of explanation in structural functionalism.

In describing a particular social structure, social anthropologists describe the *kinds* of social roles, social groups, and social practices that make up the whole. The idea of a structure of "social relations" remains a key concept in social anthropology. Social anthropologists writing within the structural-functionalist paradigm classified and described social units such as lineages, clans, tribes, age sets, castes, and so on; varieties of social roles, especially those based on kinship; and institutions including the economy, religion, law, and government.

The Jural Bias

Structural-functionalist anthropology conceived of social roles and relations as primarily jural in nature—as "bundles" of rights and duties. Concepts of social status, rights, and duties (as aspects of social structure) were adopted into social anthropology from 19th-century legal history, notably the work of Henry Maine, which provided an important source of many social anthropological analytical concepts. Descriptions of social structure and social relations often comprised descriptions of the norms governing conduct.

Subdisciplines

One of the strengths of structural functionalism was its pluralism. Social anthropology encompassed a wide field of subdisciplines, including political and legal anthropology, kinship, the anthropology of religion, and economic anthropology, against a background of intensive field research. The subfields were united in having social structure as a central concern.

Kinship in particular became a central topic in teaching and research. So-called primitive societies were conceived of as kin based, and were often characterized by features of the kinship system, as in the idea of "matrilineal societies," for example. Edited books such as Radcliffe-Brown's and Daryll Forde's *African Systems of Kinship and Marriage* (1950) brought together studies of the kinship systems of the societies of a region, the theoretical articles that discussed the nature of kinship and the varieties of systems. By the same token, social anthropologists treated political systems as subsystems, and they were subject to similar overviews, such as Meyer Fortes's and E. E. Evans-Pritchard's 1940 volume *African Political Systems*. Apart from religion as a subdiscipline, social anthropologists took "ritual" to be a distinct object of study, and many devoted monographs to particular rituals (e.g., Audrey Richards's *Chisungu*). Witchcraft and magic also formed a focus of study, and Evans-Pritchard's monograph on Azande witchcraft remains one of the best known monographs in social anthropology.

Regional Biases

Colonies and former colonies provided the main theaters for social anthropological research, introducing strong regional traditions in research. British anthropologists focused strongly on Africa and the Indian subcontinent, while anthropologists in the United States concentrated on Native American societies from the perspective of structural functionalism—in the work of Fred Eggan, for example. Similarly, social anthropology in Australia, initially under Radcliffe-Brown's tutelage, was concerned predominantly with indigenous studies, as well as research in Melanesia and Oceania. The latter region also provided the main theater for anthropologists living and working in New Zealand. In the later phase of structural functionalism, there developed an anthropology of "complex" societies, mainly studies of rural regions in, for example, Britain and Europe.

Relation to Structuralism

Lévi-Strauss cited ethnographic writings of the broad functionalist tradition in his overviews of kinship, myth, and totemism. Functionalist

anthropologists in turn incorporated structuralist ideas into their own analyses. The main channel for structuralism in Britain was through Edmund Leach (who had studied under Malinowski); in Australia, Kenneth Maddock played this role, while W. E. H. Stanner devised his own version of structuralist analysis of Australian Aboriginal myth and ritual. Pierre Maranda among others imported structuralism into North American anthropology.

Approaches to Explanation

As mentioned, one mode of explanation in structural functionalism was in terms of function—a practice or institution was "explained" as contributing to the maintenance of the system or structure as a whole. More sophisticated versions of this mode of explanation posited some kind of mechanism, as in Émile Durkheim's theory of the effects of totemic "force" in his *Elementary Forms of the Religious Life*, which provided a model for anthropological explanation. Victor Turner, for example, argued that Ndembu religious symbols served as a mechanism that reinforced the norms underlying matrilineal kinship relations.

In a second mode, features such as the forms of religious beliefs (the explanandum), were explained in terms of forms of social structures (the explanans). In this way, E. E. Evans-Pritchard explained the shape of Nuer beliefs about *kwoth* ("spirit") as "refractions" of the social structure. Mary Douglas elaborated this approach by looking for correlations between forms of belief and forms of social structure, while Ioan Lewis's approach to religious action was more pragmatic—actors shaped beliefs as instruments for political action. Comparative studies, in which two or more cases about the same topic but from different regions were compared, provided a common method for exploring hypotheses about the factors underlying or explaining social phenomena.

Some structural-functionalist research transcended the tendency to treat communities as small social isolates. Studies of plural societies by Leo Kuper and M. G. Smith, for example, encompassed relations between the dominant society and an indigenous sector. An aspect of structural functionalism that has now been all but forgotten is the attempts at formalism by some of its practitioners. Edmund Leach, for example, adopted some Lévi-Straussian structuralist ideas in his quasi-mathematical models of social structural variables. S. F. Nadel and M. G. Smith attempted formal representations of social roles and of processes of social change in the structures of roles, respectively.

Scientism

The system concept in structural functionalism was associated with scientism or "naturalism"—the view that social anthropology is a "natural science of society," in Radcliffe-Brown's phrase. The two main stages in this enterprise were supposed to be the classification of features of society and of social systems—types of kinship and political systems, and so on—and the search for social "laws." Naturalism was by no means universally accepted within the discipline. Evans-Pritchard famously expressed an opposing view (having earlier accepted Radcliffe-Brown's position), arguing that social anthropology was a humanist discipline in search of significant patterns rather than social laws.

Need for a Special Theory of Social Change

A difficulty with a systems approach to human social life lies in representing social processes and explaining social transformations. There is a tendency to represent social systems as static or tending to homeostasis. Because structural functionalism took social systems to be isolates (at least for the purposes of analysis), and because of the assumption of a self-reproducing social system, social change needed to be a distinct topic rather than being incorporated into the very idea of society as in structural-Marxism and practice theory. Nevertheless, some analyses incorporated processes of both short- and medium-term social change. Edmund Leach posited that Kachin villages oscillated between two modes of polity: relatively hierarchical, based on neighboring Shan societies, and relatively egalitarian. Victor Turner made intensive studies of social processes and village dynamics among Ndembu people of what is now Zambia, described in what he called "social dramas." In the context of nonliterate societies, the construction of long-term history was eschewed as "speculative" in early structural functionalism, although a school of anthropological history later developed within the paradigm.

Revisions to Structural Functionalism

Structural-functional anthropology was never uniform, of course, but through the mid-20th century into the third quarter, stronger divisions developed. Most prominent was the "Manchester school" of anthropology, under the guidance of Max Gluckman at Manchester University. Gluckman's own brand of anthropology emphasized conflict and division, but interpreted in functionalist mode as ultimately contributing to social cohesion. Social process was a dominant theme in the school, notably in the ethnographic analyses of Victor Turner, mentioned above, and this emphasis shifted to social transactions in the 1970s. The Malinowskian tradition also contributed to a broader palette of analytical concepts. Raymond Firth, who had been Malinowski's doctoral student, complemented the concept of social structure with the idea of "social organization," denoting the processual component of social life. This conceptual distinction foreshadowed some aspects of structuration theory. The study of language has never been a strong component in British social anthropology, but there were some moves toward a linguistically informed anthropology in the work of Edwin Ardener at Oxford University, and there have been short-lived attempts to found a "semantic anthropology."

Paradigm Shift

The broad political context of the practice of social anthropology changed profoundly in the decades following World War II, with the accelerating rate of independence for former colonies. While giving the appearance of radical difference, the structural Marxism derived from the writings of Louis Althusser was sufficiently similar to structural functionalism to be readily incorporated into social anthropology by younger scholars, and it suited the radicalism following the protests against the Vietnam War in the late 1960s. The idea of a social system was modified to distinguish between the economic base and the superstructure, with explanatory priority being given to the base rather than to social structure as a whole. Scholars such as Maurice Godelier wrestled with reconciling these categories with the concept of institution and with the meaning of economic determinism. One of neo-Marxism's more productive offshoots was the theory of internal colonialism, applied to race relations in southern Africa and in settler colonies such as Australia.

The development of feminist anthropology and gender studies within social anthropology also began in the 1970s, and it radically challenged the male bias of structural-functional and cultural anthropology, in terms of both the predominant gender of the researchers and the reports skewed toward male perspectives. In the writings of Marilyn Strathern, this stream was to question many of the ontological assumptions of social anthropology and its approach to translation. At the level of "grand theory," younger anthropologists were increasingly influenced during the 1980s by the "practice theory" of Pierre Bourdieu and the structuration theory of Anthony Giddens. These theories sought to radically modify the concepts of social system and social structure to incorporate individual agency into the models, and an inherent tendency to social transformation. The poststructuralism of Michel Foucault would also have a profound influence on younger anthropologists.

Attitudes both to field research and to the writing of ethnography changed as well. Postcolonial critiques of the 1970s had depicted anthropology as the "handmaiden" of colonialism. The later postmodern critiques challenged the objectivist stance of structural-functionalist and cultural anthropological ethnography and the scientific gaze of the field-worker. So too have the kinds of cultures and societies that anthropologists study changed. First, communities in the former colonies underwent radical social and economic change through the 20th century, which anthropologists have been at pains to record. Second, to an increasing degree, social anthropologists have studied communities within Western industrial societies, so that there is now a thriving community of researchers into the societies of Europe.

The Legacy of Structural Functionalism

Structural functionalism was an outstandingly successful paradigm in social science. Approaches to explanation regularly change, however, rendering earlier theoretical writings essentially obsolete. The main legacy of structural-functionalist anthropology, therefore, is a vast body of ethnography of societies of many parts of the world. Nevertheless, there is a strong continuity between the anthropology of the structural-functionalist era and today's eclectic fields of social and cultural anthropology, namely

the emphasis on ethnography, which, in the view of many, is not merely a method but remains at the heart of anthropology as its main concern.

Ian Keen

See also Althusser, Louis; Asad, Talal; Bourdieu, Pierre; Comte, Auguste; Douglas, Mary; Durkheim, Émile; Evans-Pritchard, E. E.; Firth, Raymond; Fortes, Meyer; Gluckman, Max; Godelier, Maurice; Leach, Edmund; Malinowski, Bronisław; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Richards, Audrey; Spencer, Herbert; Strathern, Marilyn; Structural Marxism; Structuralism; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Asad, T. (Ed.). (1973). *Anthropology and the colonial encounter.* London, UK: Ithaca Press.

Douglas, M. (1969). *Purity and danger: An analysis of concepts of pollution and taboo.* London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (1937). *Witchcraft, oracles and magic among the Azande.* Oxford, UK: Clarendon Press.

Fortes, M., & Evans-Pritchard, E. E. (Eds.). (1948). *African political systems.* London, UK: Oxford University Press (for the International African Institute).

Gluckman, M. (1955). *Custom and conflict in Africa.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Kuper, A. (1983). *Anthropology and anthropologists: The British School.* London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Kuper, L., & Smith, M. G. (1969). *Pluralism in Africa.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Radcliffe-Brown, A. R. (1952). *Structure and function in primitive society.* London, UK: Cohen & West.

Radcliffe-Brown, A. R., & Forde, D. (Eds.). (1950). *African systems of kinship and marriage.* London, UK: Oxford University Press (for the International African Institute).

Richards, A. I. (1956). *Chisungu: A girl's initiation ceremony among the Bemba of Northern Rhodesia.* London, UK: Faber & Faber.

Turner, V. (1957). *Schism and continuity in an African society: A study of Ndembu village life.* Manchester, UK: Manchester University Press (for the Rhodes-Livingstone Institute).

Warner, W. L. (1937). *A Black civilization: A social study of an Australian tribe.* New York, NY: Harper & Row.

Structural Marxism

The expression "structural Marxism" is a paradoxical one in several senses. Its emergence reflected an intellectual fashion—structuralism—an identification denied by many of those to whom it was attributed. Furthermore, it is closely associated with a notion of "Western Marxism," viewed as a departure from the Soviet orthodoxy of the time (post–World War II), yet one of its major theoreticians, Louis Althusser, remained a member of the Communist Party. A further paradox was the association of an explicit scientism—Althusser's "structuralism"—and, by most reckonings, the undeniable historicism of Marx, young or mature.

In anthropology, structural Marxism represented the convergence of two tendencies. One of these was the demand that anthropology include within its analytical framework the recognition of the fact that research took place within a historical and geopolitical landscape rather than being merely the technical study of "societies out of history." This demand for the relevance of anthropological study not just to researchers, but to their subjects—and their shared conditions of existence—was framed in disciplinary terms by two edited collections in particular (Dell Hymes, 1974, and Talal Asad, 1973). The other tendency was represented in the rising explanatory value of an economic anthropology that focused on the ways in which noncapitalist forms of economy (increasingly conceptualized as modes of production) were articulated with capitalism (and, in overlapping formulation, within the capitalist world economy). The idiom of the substantivist/formalist debate was substantially revised by a discussion of value invigorated by the attention paid to Marx's *Capital* and to elaborations of the labor theory of value and the concept of "reproduction" in and of the relations of reproduction.

The structuralist underpinnings of structural Marxism reflect as much a vogue for a unified social science as they do a widely shared theoretical model. In the work of Althusser and Nicos Poulantzas, for example, what was substantively shared with other structuralism-associated scholars of the time (Claude Lévi-Strauss, Michel Foucault, and Roland Barthes) is often hard to discern. Although Althusser was celebrated as the cardinal theoretician, his structuralism referred more to his assertion that the "mature" Marx's break with his younger, Hegelian self produced a scientific (structural) Marxism (for an acerbic critique, see Kolokowski, 1971).

While there is no question about the galvanizing impact of the structural-Marxist synthesis in terms of a model-building-within-history outlook, the unity of the project declined as the differences among those grouped under the label became more apparent (a process itself complicated by the time lag of translation from French to English, and hence the dissemination of stances already abandoned or modified by the primary authors, as in the case of Foucault). Lévi-Strauss, a prominent candidate for supreme structuralist, was, following harsh critique from Sartre, little concerned with reconciling Marxism and structuralism. While Althusser's theoretical prominence was enhanced by the reputations of his many distinguished students and colleagues including Poulantzas, his personal fall from grace following psychiatric hospitalization for having killed his wife during a bout of mental illness overshadowed much of his scholarly legacy.

While the U.K. and, to a lesser degree, the U.S. anthropology's connection with structural Marxism was largely inspired by the work of French anthropologists working within a Marxist tradition, differences in the scale and institutional composition of the two national anthropologies influenced impact and reception. In the United Kingdom, the smaller scale of the academic community and the fact that New Left Marxism was more evident in the academy than in mass politics may partially account for the fact that structural Marxism seemed better defined there. Additionally, the impact of the Birmingham school's cultural studies provided a more generic social science footing. This critical mass may account for the intensity of (to some, arcane) theoretical output (see, e.g., Hindess & Hirst, 1975).

Structuralism's importation to U.S. anthropology was much more skeptically received than was the case in the United Kingdom; the association with Marxism would hardly have been an enhancement, and the already established tradition of anthropological Marxism rooted in a materialist-evolutionist tradition was similarly resistant to the French version (although Marshall Sahlins, notably, was less resistant).

In the broader setting of academe, the massive expansion of higher education in the United States (and elsewhere, though more modestly) made possible the oddly twinned hypervalorization of science and the tendency in the humanities and social sciences toward highly abstract theorizing. In anthropology, the relative impact of the structuralist and the Marxist elements oscillated, but Marxism was soon overwhelmed by the mutation of structuralism into poststructuralism. Additionally, the analytic strength of structural Marxism was based in studies on the periphery, far from the hyperactive metropolis, and within very specific national versions of the colonial apparatus. By comparison with the "theoretical" ferment in the core, structural Marxism in the anthropological study on and of the periphery was quite restrained, directed most to the area of economic anthropology and to those tendencies of a markedly materialist and substantivist character. While dependency theory shared with structural Marxism a closely related theoretical framework, it was more situated within the anthropo-colonial framework of Latin America, while structural Marxism had a strong but nonexclusive Africanist orientation, a feature that likely enhanced its association with social anthropology and work based in the former French colonies. Among the earliest widely known anthropological work that fed into the emergent structural-Marxist literature was Emmanuel Terray's *Marxism and "Primitive" Societies* (1972), which was influential not only because of its substantive contribution but also because of its rapid translation (first published in French in 1969). The revival of interest in the concept of mode of production was no doubt spurred by the English-language publication of the *Grundrisse* (translated and with a foreword by Martin Nicolaus), and in the context of Africanist anthropology of the time, field-based elaborations of the concept of the *articulation of modes of production* gained enormous theoretical prominence, and a so-called lineage mode of production encapsulated the structural-Marxist configuration. The work of Claude Meillassoux (1975) was particularly important in consolidating a revived economic anthropology of the era. The Africanist focus in his exploration of the dynamic relationship between capitalism and precapitalist forms was enhanced with the publication, in 1980, of *The Articulation of Modes of Production*, edited by Harold Wolpe. Pierre-Philip Rey (with limited exposure via publication in English) is another notable contributor of that era, as is Maurice Godelier (albeit not in an Africanist context).

In the United Kingdom, a collection edited by Maurice Bloch included contributions less focused on the specific changes to the subfield of economic anthropology, although that was directly relevant, than to the broader implications for anthropology of a rigorous application of the "mature" Marx. It is noteworthy that all the contributors (apart from the late Raymond Firth, whose presence in the volume was in part to provide a disciplinary validation) continue to be affiliated with a critical anthropology significantly consolidated during this period.

A major literature review and analysis ("Marxist Approaches in Anthropology") by Bridgett O'Laughlin in 1975 offered a trenchant critique, mainly from a social anthropological perspective. A decade later, William Roseberry provided an overview in the same series (*Annual Review of Anthropology*), the title of which, "Political Economy," indicated, if only nominally, a degree of domestication of some of the more abstract theorizing that had emerged in the 1970s. Barry Hindess and Paul Hirst's *Pre-Capitalist Modes of Production* was the centerpiece of intense discussion that wrested much analytic work away from fieldwork-based material and into domains of high rhetoric. By comparison, debates conscious of the discipline's limits and ambitions were less concerned with scoring Marxiological points than in generating a broader scheme of understanding that reflected the political realities of ex-colonial and peripheral social formations for which questions of articulation had more than just academic agendas. The collection by Kahn and Josep Lloberra, *The Anthropology of Pre-Capitalist Societies*, published in 1981, was a major stocktaking and revealed the divergence between structural Marxism and Marxist anthropology as adequate labels for work to date.

The very pronounced French influence on the structuralist-Marxist synthesis, as configured by the contemporaneous impacts of Lévi-Strauss, Althusser, Poulantzas, and others, appeared to offer the opportunity in anthropology to reproduce, in general terms, a holistic approach in which idealism and materialism were complementary rather than mutually intolerable. However, the idealism of Lévi-Straussian structuralism had little staying power once marshaled in the name of historical-materialist analysis. In light of what came to be published (and mainly in the form of article collections rather than monographs [see, e.g., Seddon, 1978]) under the nominal heading of structural Marxism, it was difficult to see more than a formal acknowledgment of notions of system and structure that had come to be associated with structuralist scientism. Lévi-Strauss's project may have been set out with appropriate nods toward cybernetic systems theory, modern linguistics, cognitive theory, and computing, but they were idiosyncratic formulations that few others could realize. The term *structural Marxism* came to stand as much, if not more, for a nondogmatic Marxism as for a viable synthesis, and the movement of structuralism as part of the literary turn in anthropology (consolidating the explicit antiscience associated with Clifford Geertz) as well as in an expansionary poststructuralism indicated fundamental, and perhaps fatal, incompatibilities with the originally proposed, historical-materialist synthesis.

Stephen Nugent

See also Althusser, Louis; Bloch, Maurice; Dependency Theory; Godelier, Maurice; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Marx, Karl; Marxist Anthropology; Meillassoux, Claude; Structuralism

Further Readings

Asad, T. (1973). (Ed.). *Anthropology and the colonial encounter*. London, UK: Ithaca Press.

Bloch, M. (1975). (Ed.). *Marxist approaches in social anthropology*. London, UK: Malaby Press.

Hindess, B., & Hirst, P. Q. (1975). *Pre-capitalist modes of production*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Hymes, D. (Ed.). (1974). *Reinventing anthropology*. New York, NY: Vintage Books.

Kahn, J. S., & Llober, J. R. (Eds). (1981). *The anthropology of pre-capitalist societies*. London, UK: Macmillan.

Kolakowski, L. (1971). Althusser's Marx. *The Socialist Register, 8,* 11–28.

Meillassoux, C. (1975). *Femmes, greniers et capitaux* [Women, attics and capital]. Paris, France: Maspero.

O'Laughlin, B. (1975). Marxist approaches in anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 4,* 341–370.

Roseberry, W. (1988). Political economy. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 17,* 161–185.

Sahlins, M. (1972). *Stone-age economics*. Chicago, IL: Aldine-Atherton.

———. (1976). *Culture and practical reason*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Terray, E. (1972). *Marxism and "primitive" societies: Two studies*. New York, NY: Monthly Review Press.

STRUCTURALISM

Anthropological structuralism developed from linguistic structuralism. However, despite some similarities, and despite the anthropological version's claim to linguistic ancestry, the two were quite different. In fact, the claim to ancestry depended on a misreading of Saussurean linguistics. The past tense is by way of indicating that the anthropological version is now largely defunct, while the linguistic version still lives. At the same time, it is important to note that the influence of linguistic structuralism within anthropology predated anthropological structuralism and still continues; this continuing influence is conceptual, methodological, and theoretic, and it spans a number of anthropological schools.

Linguistic Structuralism

The idea of structuralism came from the phonological structures identified by the Franco-Swiss linguist Ferdinand de Saussure (1857–1913). Saussure is commonly seen as the founder of modern synchronic (and descriptive) linguistics, but others such as Franz Boas in the United States and Bronisław Malinowski in Great Britain share that honor. Saussure's unique contribution concerned the specific nature of those synchronic systems.

Saussure

Linguistic structuralism began with Ferdinand de Saussure's explicit realization that the sound units of a language varied according to the system of that language, and that the sound values were not absolute but were relative to other sounds in the system. The sound units came, shortly after Saussure's work, to be called *phonemes*. He distinguished paradigmatic oppositions among entities (whether sounds, words, or other) from their syntagmatic relations of co-occurrence. The sound system of a given language was organized as a system of oppositions (or contrasts) based on attributes such as voicing (versus not), the articulator (tongue, lips, etc.), the point of articulation (lips, alveolar ridge, velum, etc.), and the nature of articulation (stop, fricative, sonorant, etc.). Syntagmatic structures (or rules) specified for a given language how phonemes could be strung together to make signifiers and how different signs could be strung together to make larger speech units (syntax). Saussure himself was a historical linguist interested in diachronic change. His key insight was that diachronic change was not to be understood—as it previously had been seen—as a matter of changes in individual items or features but instead as changes in a synchronically functioning system. In his view, synchronic linguistics was not opposed to diachronic linguistics but was an essential contributor to diachronic understanding.

Saussure described a semiological science of "signs" and "symbols." Signs were meaningful entities formed from the combination of a "signifier" (mental sound image) and a "signified" (concept); the combination was arbitrary in the sense that there was no intrinsic nonsocial motivation for it, whereas for symbols (e.g., a drawing for what it represented, or smoke for fire), the combination was motivated. He saw language as a system of signs wherein the arbitrariness enabled the differentiation of languages from one another. He distinguished the system of language (*langue*) from its observed realizations in speech (*parole*). *Langue* was a collective mental structure that was passively received from a speech community; *parole* was physically present and actively created by individuals. The collective mental structure only existed in the individually held representations of it that speakers inferred from their interaction with members of the relevant speech community; language was thus a Durkheimian "collective representation."

Saussure's discussion was only programmatic, though based on his brilliant and pathbreaking analysis of the Indo-European vowel system. Major advances in understanding the systemic role and psychological nature of the phoneme were made by Edward Sapir (a student of Boas). The definitive development of the Saussurean structuralist approach to phonology came in Nikolai Trubetzkoy's *Principles of Phonology*. Trubetzkoy clarified how regularities in phonological systems (i.e., their structures) were shaped by the interaction of the substance of articulatory systems with the functional role of phonemes within a speech community's varied voices (i.e., they distinguish Saussurean "signs" from one another).

Prague: Trubetzkoy

The Prague school founded by Trubetzkoy (1890–1938) and Roman Jakobson (1896–1982) provided one major elaboration of the Saussurean

paradigm. It emphasized phonological substance (and, later, other kinds of linguistic substance); in it, Trubetzkoy's phonological insights were applied more widely to language in general. These insights notably included the conceptualization of "marked" versus "unmarked" categories; marking theory has subsequently been considerably extended by Joseph H. Greenberg. Prague's focus was on the application of rigorous analytic systems to known languages.

Yale: Bloomfield

The other major elaboration was in the Yale (or American) school of Leonard Bloomfield (1887–1939), who, though he was not his student, was much influenced by Boas. Bloomfield's approach, in response to the great number of undescribed, unanalyzed, and dying Native American languages at the time, had a descriptive and inductive focus, and it has often been spoken of as "descriptive linguistics." Bloomfield's approach began with basic raw phonetic entities (phone types), which were grouped by the analyst of a particular language into the phonemes of that language and then analytically organized as the phonological system or structure of that language; the phone types that belonged to a given phoneme were the allophones of that phoneme. Bloomfield laid out a systematic extension of his phonological approach to the structure and semantic content of other linguistic forms including morphology and syntax. This approach was based on raw etic (i.e., observed and defined outside the given system) entities grouped as allo-units into emic (defined and meaningful within the system) entities (e.g., morphemes, sememes, tagmemes, etc.) of the given language. Several of Bloomfield's students attempted to elaborate and fill in his larger structure, but it has since seemed to most observers that the quantitative, functional, and qualitative differences among phonology, morphology, lexicon, syntax, and so forth made such strict analytic parallels inappropriate and often misleading.

In an attempt to keep linguistics clearly scientific, Bloomfield opted to ground his later presentation in the regnant psychology of the day, behaviorism (whereas he had earlier offered a totally nonbehaviorist approach to the same analytic process). Many of his students joined in this tack. This grounding turned out to be a bad move for several reasons. First, behaviorism came rapidly to be discredited in psychology. Second, there was nothing intrinsically behaviorist in Bloomfield's linguistics, and so there was no intrinsic necessity for it to have shared in behaviorism's discrediting. Third, the strongly inductivist pragmatic behaviorist approach of Bloomfield's students got them into complex and unnecessary analytic culs-de-sac.

Among Bloomfield's major students were Charles Hockett, Kenneth Pike and Eugene Nida (who developed an extended version of Bloomfield's approach, tagmemics, which is much used for the recording and basic analysis of previously undescribed languages), Martin Joos, and Zellig Harris.

More Recent Developments

Harris was Noam Chomsky's teacher and provides a clear bridge from Bloomfieldian syntax to Chomsky's transformational-generative grammar. However, at the same time, Chomsky distanced his linguistics from the descriptive emphasis of the Bloomfieldians—toward something more like the analytic thrust of Prague—and he strongly rejected the Bloomfieldian grounding in behaviorist psychology in favor of a deductive approach rooted in a kind of Cartesian innatism. Consonant with these shifts, Chomsky tried to move American linguistics from its traditional comparative affinities with anthropology—which went back to Boas—toward a combination of philosophic bases with psychological concomitants.

While Bloomfieldian structural/descriptive linguistics has lost its dominant role in American linguistics, it remains important in a number of ways:

- Especially in its tagmemics form, developed by Pike and Nida, structural/descriptive remains the preferred approach for descriptive linguistics—that is, for the description and basic analysis of previously undescribed languages. Its methodology has had a lasting influence on anthropological field methods, especially those aimed at describing, explicating, and understanding cultural conceptual systems, as in ethnoscience and cognitive anthropology.
- Bloomfieldian sociolinguistics remain anthropologically important.
- Prague phonology, in one or another guise, remains the dominant phonological approach.

- Saussure's conception of language as a system of "signs" has continued modern relevance because of its focus on meaning and its emphasis on the collective, mental, and passively received (i.e., codelike) nature of language, as distinct from speech. In its focus on "signs" as the union of the signifier and the signified, it foregrounds linguistic meaning (i.e., semantics), where most subsequent linguistics has focused on the structure of systems of signifiers.

Anthropological Structuralism

The founder of anthropological structuralism was the French anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss, and major subsequent anthropological participants were the English anthropologists Edmund Leach and Rodney Needham.

Lévi-Strauss

Lévi-Strauss (1908–2009) started his career studying kinship in ways that echoed Durkheim while focusing on more specific anthropological data—particularly marriage patterns with some attention to kin terminologies. Some of the structural aspects of the British structural-functional approach showed up in both the focus and the content of this work, since that school had been much influenced by Durkheim (while the First World War had largely killed off his direct French academic descendents). But, unlike the British approaches that typically emphasized actual relations in actual systems, Lévi-Strauss's kinship analysis emphasized the systemic implications of whatever pattern some given combination of unit definitions and marriage rules would produce; his models thus were more abstract and ideal.

In 1941–1942 (the last year of Boas's life), during World War II, Lévi-Strauss and Roman Jakobson, in New York as escapees from Nazi Europe, had a series of meetings with Franz Boas. These meetings exposed Lévi-Strauss to Jakobson's variant of linguistic structuralism and to several aspects of Boas's work, including, significantly, his sense of the importance of linguistics for anthropology, his interest in both mythology and physical culture, and his approach to the analysis of conceptual systems. Boas, while a founder of American descriptive linguistics, was not a structural linguist. Boas's approach to the analysis of conceptual systems became—in Lévi-Strauss's hands—the structural analysis of myth, and indeed, it is Boas's study of Alaskan needle cases that can be taken as an illustration of the Lévi-Straussian approach to the analysis of conceptual entities. Lévi-Strauss's work abruptly changed after his encounter with Boas and Jakobson. His focus shifted to the structural analysis of systems of myth (a topic taken from Boas) and to a theoretical focus on structure (as he had come to understand it from Jakobson). His analyses of myth were based on patterns of analogous oppositions and on the kinds of equivalences that emerged from similarities in oppositional relations. The analytic point was often to use successively narrowed equivalence patterns to transform apparently irreconcilable oppositions into bridgeable ones. He credited his structuralism to the founder of linguistic structuralism, Ferdinand de Saussure, but there is no evidence that he ever read Saussure's *Course in General Linguistics* with any care; rather, his understanding seems to have come from Jakobson's loose attempts to generalize the Trubetzkoyian version of Saussure's approach. The richness of Lévi-Strauss's material, the breadth of his purview, and the issues of content and diffusion that he raised were breathtaking, but his tours de force were never duplicated. In spite of the excitement he generated and the new vistas he opened, Lévi-Strauss left behind no method that anyone else seemed capable of using in any way that resonated with the anthropological community, and so his actual analyses of myth never led to new understandings of the target cultures or to usable new insights into the functioning of myth.

Boas never had a particular theoretical school associated with him. His contributions spanned anthropology's traditional four fields (cultural anthropology, linguistics, archaeology, and physical anthropology), and our modern understanding of how the four fit with one another comes directly from his contributions as does our related substantive understanding of how human biology, language, and culture do and do not relate to one another. His was a broad conception of anthropology and one that influenced Lévi-Strauss.

Additionally, Lévi-Strauss was influenced by Boas in another very different but very important way. It was Boas who institutionalized anthropology in the American academic system. There had been anthropologists in the United States before him, but there were no departments of anthropology. Boas had

started by creating such a department at Columbia University, and then his students (e.g., Alfred Kroeber, Robert Lowie, Edward Sapir, Alexander Goldenweiser, Leslie Spier, Melville Herskovits, Paul Radin, Ruth Benedict, Margaret Mead, and many others) created departments at other major universities (e.g., the University of California at Berkeley, University of Pennsylvania, University of Chicago, and Northwestern University). After the war, Lévi-Strauss returned to France with the aim of accomplishing a similar institutionalization. The very different structure of French academic institutions and their interrelations necessitated a different plan; ties of French universities to the fixed curricula of the Lycée system precluded basing the discipline in departments focused on undergraduate education as had been the U.S. pattern. Instead, Lévi-Strauss moved to institutionalize the discipline within the French research establishment, through the vehicle of the Laboratoire d'anthropologie sociale. Lévi-Strauss used his status within the Left Bank intellectual scene (as the "savant" who came after Jean-Paul Sartre) to leverage the recognition of the discipline and of its importance. And, interestingly, as that goal came to be accomplished, he gradually withdrew from the savant scene.

Leach and Needham

Edmund Leach (1910–1989) and Rodney Needham (1923–2006) described themselves as followers of Lévi-Strauss, but in each case they seemed to use aspects of his approach more as a basis for fighting their own battles within the British anthropological establishment than to pursue or elaborate Lévi-Strauss's agenda. In part, they aimed at broadening social anthropology to include more of culture, though with a more structurally oriented kind of analytic emphasis than one saw in American cultural anthropology.

Needham developed what he saw as an application and explication of Lévi-Strauss's work on marriage systems to embark on new analytic generalizations. But his analyses remained rooted in the substance of particular systems in a way that Lévi-Strauss's never were. A key distinction for him was prescriptive versus preferential marriage systems—which he assimilated to Lévi-Strauss's elementary versus complex systems. The trouble was that—as Floyd Lounsbury's review (in the *American Anthropologist*) of Needham's *Structure and Sentiment* made clear—his definitional standards were intuitive and inconsistent. Both the (claimed) empirical groundedness and the inconsistency were antithetical to Lévi-Strauss's approach, and so, especially in light of Lounsbury's review, Lévi-Strauss very publicly distanced himself from Needham's version, which in turn led Needham to withdraw his allegiance to Lévi-Strauss.

Leach rooted his work in Lévi-Strauss's study of mythological and symbolic systems. Where Lévi-Strauss depended on finding patterned regularities across a wide corpus of examples and used that recurrence as evidence for the empirical reality of his analytic claims, Leach focused on particular cases and relied much more on his own intuitive or critical reading to identify key elements and relations. Leach's narrower data purview did allow him to be more careful and rigorous in his actual analytic arguments. Those of Leach's analyses that were Lévi-Straussian were often careful and explicit enough in their claims to allow independent evaluation; the problem was that, while always stimulating and thought provoking, their actual conclusions too often turned out to be in error. For example, Frederick C. Gamst showed in 1975 that Leach's analysis of traffic light colors doesn't hold up; John Halverson in 1976, similarly undermined Leach's exciting and creative analysis of animal categories and terms of abuse; and Michael Carroll in 1977 did something similar regarding Leach's analysis of the biblical Genesis story.

David B. Kronenfeld

See also Bloomfield, Leonard; Boas, Franz; Cognitive Anthropology; Descriptive Linguistics; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Greenberg, Joseph; Jakobson, Roman O.; Leach, Edmund; Lévi-Strauss, Claude; Lounsbury, Floyd; Needham, Rodney; Sapir, Edward; Saussure, Ferdinand de

Further Readings

Bloomfield, L. (1933). *Language*. New York, NY: Henry Holt.

Greenberg, J. H. (1968). *Anthropological linguistics: An introduction*. New York, NY: Random House.

Joos, M. (1958). *Readings in linguistics* (2nd ed.). New York, NY: American Council of Learned Societies.

Kronenfeld, D. B. (1996). *Plastic glasses and church fathers: Semantic extension from the ethnoscience tradition.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Kronenfeld, D. B., & Decker, H. W. (1979). Structuralism. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 8,* 503–541.

Lévi-Strauss, C. (1963). *Structural anthropology* (C. Jacobson & R. G. Schoeph, Trans.). New York, NY: Basic Books.

———. (1969). *The raw and the cooked: Introduction to a science of mythology* (Vol. 1; J. Weightman & D. Weightman, Trans.). New York, NY: Harper & Row.

Saussure, Ferdinand de. (1959). *Course in general linguistics.* (C. Bally & A. Sechehaye [with A. Reidlinger], Eds.; W. Baskin, Trans.). New York, NY: Philosophic Library. (See also the critical edition by T. de Mauro, 1973, Paris, France: Payot)

Trubetzkoy, N. S. (1969). *Fundamentals of phonology* (C. A. M. Baltaxe, Trans.). Berkeley: University of California Press. (Original work published in German as *Grundzü ge der Phonologie*, 1939)

Subaltern Studies

A school of critical scholarship developed in India beginning in the early 1980s, subaltern studies initially focused on a broad critique of the dominant historical narratives of the colonial and postcolonial era. Key to the critique is the recognition that the dominant narratives of both colonialist and nationalist historical writing fail to acknowledge the innumerable ways in which vast numbers of socially and politically marginalized people—peasants and urban poor primarily, but also indigenous people, women, and subordinated caste groups, among others—resisted and articulated forms of politics distinct from, and sometimes at odds with, those associated with the nationalist elites. Led by the historian Ranajit Guha, the original core collective included scholars who have gone on to become major figures in postcolonial studies. Partha Chatterjee, Shahid Amin, David Arnold, Gyanendra Pandey, David Hardiman, Dipesh Chakrabarty, and Gayatri Spivak are some of the prominent intellectuals associated with the early phase of subaltern studies.

The term *subaltern* itself is associated with the Italian Marxist Antonio Gramsci, and it refers to an individual in a position of social subordination to hegemonic power. Gramsci used the term interchangeably with at least two other terms that taken together convey the nuanced sense that subaltern studies seeks to capture within its scope. *Subaltern* refers to nonhegemonic groups being "subordinated" but also "instrumental" within the scheme of power. In other words, marginalization is as much about exclusion as it is about the lack of autonomy of action. This dual facet of subordination characterizes subaltern groups as being unwitting participants in their own subordination—marginalized by their own consent.

Subaltern studies radically shifted the focus of investigation and analysis and had powerful implications for historiography, but it also profoundly influenced anthropology. Subaltern scholars criticized colonial anthropology not only for its complicity in colonialism but also for its essentialist and reductionist depictions of subalterns. Furthermore, through critical engagements with the works of anthropologists such as James Scott and Benedict Anderson, subaltern studies scholars raised useful questions for anthropologists regarding issues such as the relevance of class in social conflict and the presumed universality of the idea of the nation-state. Subaltern studies also counts within its ranks several anthropologists whose contributions include studies of the construction and silencing of gender in anticolonial nationalist discourse, of the "primitive" in the colonial institution of indentured servitude, and of the relevance of liberal democratic ideas such as "tolerance" in the context of ethnic conflict. Such anthropological works also helped add clarity to ongoing debates within the discipline around the viability of some long-held assumptions, most significantly the assumption that premodern societies were static and unchanging in comparison with Western societies, which, through colonialism and capitalism, embodied the dynamic and universalizing tendencies of modernity.

Historical Particularism and Incorporation

In the early 1980s, anthropologists led by Eric Wolf mounted a profound challenge to the historical particularism that dominated anthropological approaches to the study of non-Western cultures. They argued forcefully for a holistic perspective that made it possible to see why it was problematic for anthropology to view cultures as hypothetical isolates when in fact they were already incorporated to varying degrees into a global capitalist system

of production, exchange, and consumption. The conquest of the Americas, trans-Atlantic slavery, and colonialism had rendered much of the world "global" far before 20th-century anthropologists set about studying it. Wolf and others were intent on showing that an understanding of the interconnectedness of the world would enable us to view particular cultures as being actively involved in constituting global modernity, instead of being static, unchanging isolates that were affected by it. However, despite the force of this analytical shift, there remained a problem that continues to concern anthropologists especially in the contemporary era of globalization. When the focus is on incorporation into a global system, do we not run the risk of ignoring how the specificities of particular societies may shape politics and history? How then may we account for the agency of those being incorporated into the global capitalist system?

Challenging the Incorporation Hypothesis

It was also in the early 1980s that subaltern studies emerged, questioning the dominant view that politics in large parts of the colonized world could only be understood in terms of the incorporation of these parts into an expanding capitalist world system. It argued that the incorporation hypothesis essentially reduces vast populations into static subjects of Western domination and fails to account for the actual complexities and contradictions of the outcomes of colonialism. At the same time, the focus was not so much on dismissing the reality of capitalism or colonialism as on establishing a basis for reconstructing history by viewing changes through the myriad experiences of those marginalized by conventional historiography as "people without a history." In this sense, the efforts of subaltern studies were immensely helpful to ongoing debates within anthropology and helped shape a generation of intellectual work that paid greater attention to the lives of marginalized people, silenced voices, and subordinated memories.

Most significantly, the incorporation hypothesis renders invisible and silent the lives of the vast majority of colonial subjects. This is especially significant for the fact that silencing masks the conflicts and confrontations that lay at the heart of the colonial encounter. Thus, the recovery of the history of subalterns is primarily about reconstructing the history of colonialism in terms of conflict and confrontation between the colonial system and its subjects. Though largely focused on specific groups of subalterns such as peasants, women, or indigenous people, subaltern studies is not merely an effort to fill the gaps of history by writing their histories. What subaltern studies offers is an analysis of the active role of socially marginalized groups located within particular contexts of class, caste, and gender relations in constituting the colonial encounter. In this sense, it is also close to the tradition of British social history exemplified by the scholarship of Edward P. Thompson, especially in the sense that it concerns itself with the processes by which subordinated people actively participate in their worlds simultaneously as subjects of power and as autonomous human beings who may sometimes mount spectacular efforts to resist domination. Thus, an early figure of subaltern studies that drew a lot of attention was the insurgent, the recalcitrant subject of colonial power, who was at the same time also a marginalized social subject. Also important to subaltern studies is the emphasis on recognizing subaltern politics as deriving from autonomous sites that encompass culture and identity as much as they do political economy. This facilitates a deepened consideration of culture as a domain where ideas are not just produced and transmitted but also contested, fought over, and mobilized in practical politics.

Insurgents and Nationalist Elites

As a striking counterpoint to the long-held assumption that subaltern populations are steeped in unchanging ties to tradition and social stasis, subaltern scholars have provided ample evidence of tumultuous political activity in agrarian and nonagrarian landscapes in the colonial period. Peasant insurgencies took on a variety of forms utilizing idioms that spanned religion and linguistic-ethnic identity. Most important, insurgencies often challenged the colonial apparatus but were also directed against local power holders such as landlords, moneylenders, and merchants. For instance, in those parts of colonial India with large indigenous populations, frequent revolts also broke out against exploitative Hindu social groups that increasingly settled on foothills adjacent to forest lands. Such insurgencies often appropriated anticolonial idioms and reframed them to mobilize against locally exploitative forces.

The tendency among nationalist historians to frame insurgencies as episodic though formative instances of an assumed national consciousness is problematic precisely because it denies the relevance of localized politics in shaping insurgencies. Yet subaltern studies scholars remind us that the subaltern insurgent must also be considered as a product of contradictory tendencies, often embodying within its politics both the possibilities and the limitations of localized forms of political struggle. Insurgencies often involved the transformation of class struggles into communal/religious militancy and vice versa and could sometimes take on forms that jar with modernist notions of revolutionary practice.

The incorporation hypothesis also becomes untenable when considering the dynamics of anticolonial politics by nationalist movements. For instance, in colonial India, the key figures of Indian nationalism, the colonized elites, were conventionally, in colonialist and nationalist writings, viewed as both subjects and agents of the incorporative processes of colonialism, especially in terms of their success in instituting and consolidating "modern" political structures and practices. Yet subaltern studies shows how the role of colonized elites in the colonial system was much more ambiguous and reflective of their uneasy position in relation to *both* their colonial overlords and the colonized populations they oversaw. Nationalism in the colonial world was thus not the result of the adoption and modification of a Western prototype, but it was something distinctly developed within the context of colonial society. Yet colonial nationalism was never an effort to return to some assumed "traditional" past but was to build a nation-state that was authentically "traditional" even as it embraced "modernity."

Yet subaltern studies also argues that the quest for hegemony by the colonial state and its postcolonial successor has always remained an incomplete and somewhat failed enterprise. This view contradicts the assumption by colonial and nationalist historiographies that national elites won the consent of colonial subjects in staking their claims to a leadership role in the anticolonial struggle. There is an impressive body of evidence marshaled by subaltern studies scholars that show how even in the most momentous anticolonial mobilizations, subaltern groups transformed struggles by framing them into codes specific to traditions of popular resistance and phrasing them in idioms derived from the communitarian experience of working and living together. The colonial state as such is characterized by a form of dominance lacking in hegemony, a condition that some scholars like Partha Chatterjee argue continues into the present era, as national elites stake and defend claims to leadership by asserting authority derived only partially from consent. This incompleteness of power corresponds to the construction of the "subaltern" as simultaneously a construction of power (excluded and subordinated) and a figure of resistance to that power (incompletely and sometimes fragmentarily immersed in relations of consensual hegemonic power).

Methodology and the Problem of Representation

In attempting to reconstruct the history of nationalism as a history of domination and resistance, instead of as a hagiographical account of nationalist leaders or as the trajectory of capitalist incorporation, subaltern studies has to contend with a body of knowledge that is vastly different from that marshaled by the dominant narratives. Simply put, subalterns rarely left behind written records documenting their experiences, aspirations, and struggles. In most cases, subalterns find mention as subjects of the colonial regime, positioned in these documents as peasants, tribals, criminals, prisoners, and so on. So the methodological strategies of subaltern studies scholars included a strong emphasis on interpreting administrative texts, legal documents, court testimonies, prison records, biographies, novels, and so on. In some cases, scholars also made extensive use of oral testimony, reconstructing socially shared knowledge about past experiences, events, and actions. Reconstructing history from fragmentary sources and producing coherent narratives that try to represent the subaltern raises a host of methodological questions—key among them being the question of authorship. Most forcefully represented by the writings of Gayatri Spivak, subaltern studies has developed a fine-tuned attentiveness to the positionality of the scholar in the course of producing authoritative textual representations of subalterns. Nevertheless, scholars such as the historian Sumit Sarkar critique the turn toward literary theory and postmodernism as an indication of a shift away from concerns with subaltern histories and politics. As such, subaltern studies is seen to have shifted

away from its "dissident left milieu," where subalterns figured prominently in contexts of rebellions, struggles, and political conflict, to an enduring focus on Eurocentrism inspired by the work of Edward Said. Yet this shift did not prevent several subaltern studies scholars from deepening their analyses of the subaltern as the locus of domination and resistance. Drawing on and extending the insights of Western scholars such as Michel Foucault for instance, studies of colonial and postcolonial power relations examine the intimate and the micropolitical aspects of power in the making of subaltern subjects.

Subaltern Studies Beyond South Asia

A Latin American subaltern studies group came into existence as a collective response to the intensification of neoliberal policies in Latin America and to the perceived collapse of leftist political initiatives after 1990. Despite the vast differences in context, Latin American scholars find in subaltern studies useful tools with which to theorize the place of insurgency in reconstructing histories of domination and resistance. More broadly, scholars are also attracted to subaltern studies' critique of the idea of a single narrative whereby modernity prevails as premodern forms succumb to its universal power. As such, the subaltern studies attends to a set of theoretical questions similar to those addressed by Latin American critics of development. Subaltern studies, however, can also facilitate the extension of such critiques of development and modernity by offering theoretical tools to engage with questions of identity, culture, and autonomous action, particularly in the context of struggles by women, indigenous peoples, and Afro-Latin American/Caribbean populations.

Raja Swamy

See also Foucault, Michel; Gramsci, Antonio; Postcolonial Theory; Said, Edward; Wolf, Eric; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Amin, S. (1995). *Event, metaphor, memory: Chauri Chaura, 1922–1992*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Chakrabarty, D. (2002). *Habitations of modernity: Essays in the wake of subaltern studies*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Chatterjee, P. (1993). *The nation and its fragments: Colonial and postcolonial histories*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Chaturvedi, V. (Ed.). (2000). *Mapping subaltern studies and the postcolonial*. London, UK: Verso.

Gramsci, A. (1987). *Selections from the prison notebooks of Antonio Gramsci* (Q. Hoare & G. Nowell-Smith, Trans.). New York, NY: International Publishers.

Guha, R. (1983). *Elementary aspects of peasant insurgency in colonial India*. Delhi, India: Oxford University Press.

———. (1997). *A subaltern studies reader, 1986–1995*. Minneapolis: University of Minnesota Press.

Guha, R., & Spivak, G. C. (1988). *Selected subaltern studies*. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Ludden, D. (2002). *Reading subaltern studies: Critical history, contested meaning and the globalization of South Asia*. London, UK: Anthem.

Rabasa, J. (2010). *Without history: Subaltern studies, the Zapatista insurgency, and the specter of history*. Pittsburgh, PA: University of Pittsburgh Press.

Rodriguez, I. (2001). *The Latin American subaltern studies reader*. Durham, UK: Duke University Press.

Spivak, G. C. (1988). Can the subaltern speak? In C. Nelson & L. Grossberg (Eds.), *Marxism and the interpretation of culture* (pp. 271–313). Champaign: University of Illinois Press.

SUBJECTIVITY

Subjectivity is a contested term within anthropological theory, with little agreement about how it should be defined, studied, or theorized. Since its entry into the anthropological lexicon in the 1970s, anthropologists have used this term to refer to seemingly disparate concepts such as intimate emotional experiences and structural categories of labor systems. These wide-ranging engagements with subjectivity derive from different philosophical traditions regarding the concept of "the subject" and its relationship to epistemology, agency, and the relationships of power.

Philosophical Groundings

Anthropological views on subjectivity historically have diverged along two main lines of intellectual thought: (1) Continental philosophy and (2) postmodern/poststructuralist critiques. The Continental tradition takes the subject as the focus of analysis and is concerned with how subjects create the reality of the world around them. Postmodern

and poststructuralist critiques read the subject as a product of structural forces and relationships of power and focus on these broader dynamics through which subjects are brought into being. Although few contemporary anthropologists fall neatly into these categories and many have worked to develop more integrative approaches (discussed below), these two intellectual traditions continue to structure the field.

Subject as Agent

The Continental tradition (including German idealism, phenomenology, existentialism, and some forms of psychoanalytic theory) emphasizes the subject as a locus of experience and agency. "Subject" in this view refers to a person who is doing, feeling, thinking, or sensing some action, even the action of being. In this usage, the subject is differentiated from the object, which is defined as anything that is not experienced by the subject as being part of himself or herself, including other people. In other words, it is the subject's own consciousness and perceptions that define the parameters of objects in the world and the conditions through which they can be known and understood. Although some theorists emphasize reciprocal relationships between subjects and their environments, the primary focus of analysis is the subject for whom the environment becomes useful. The subject in this view houses the locus of agency and control from which it extends out into the world.

Anthropologists who understand subjectivity from this perspective are interested in how people make meaning in ways that are culturally shaped but are not identical within a social group. People even in very small societies do not think, act, feel, believe, or desire in exactly the same ways. To understand how cultural processes and subjective experience interact, anthropologists take a subject-centered perspective; they spend time getting to know people on very intimate levels, learning how they engage with culturally available meanings, symbols, and values in making sense of their own experiences. By studying near-experience topics such as suffering, healing, spirituality, and mental illness in different cultural contexts, anthropologists seek to better understand interactions between culture (broadly defined) and individual somatic, emotional, cognitive, existential, and relational experiences.

Subject as Position

The postmodern or poststructuralist perspective (advanced by scholars such as Louis Althusser, Pierre Bourdieu, Judith Butler, Simone De Beauvoir, Jacques Derrida, Michel Foucault, Martin Heidegger, Jacques Lacan, Julia Kristeva, Karl Marx, and Ferdinand de Saussure) takes a very different view, emphasizing the subject not as a unique locus of experience and agency but as a product of discourse and structures of power. In this usage, "subject" refers to a *point of view* rather than a specific individual: a point of view that is thought to be intrinsic to (and continually reproduced within) a given structural position. This kind of subject is bound by the social meanings attached to his or her position within a structure (e.g., mother, factory worker, person of color), and these meanings constrain experience to the extent that one cannot easily experience the world in any other way. Proponents of this view often refer to *subject positions* rather than subjects, to retain the analytical focus on structural dynamics that constrain and enable ways of being.

Anthropologists who study subjectivity from this perspective tend to focus on how social and cultural dynamics generate categories of acceptable subjects and how individuals within a particular system are then induced to inhabit them. Which subject positions are sustained depends on the overall dynamics of the system and the existing structures of power. Anthropologists who adopt this perspective generally start with an examination of structural categories and the different subject positions within them, and then they consider the cultural practices through which people learn to inhabit those positions in ways that feel natural and indisputable.

Debates and Divisions

Clearly, different ways of thinking about the subject lead to very different, and sometimes conflicting, understandings of subjectivity. In the former (what might be called the "inside-out" view), subjectivity is closely tied to ideas about the uniqueness of individual experience. Each subject is assumed to have an idiosyncratic engagement with the world that is his or hers alone. While there may be a great deal of resonance with others who have shared similar life experiences, subjectivity in this usage refers to the special lived experience of a person that makes him or her different, at least in some ways, from everyone else. The

works of Georg W. F. Hegel, Sigmund Freud, Paul Ricoeur, Daniel Stern, Edith Stein, and Emmanuel Levinas are good examples of this perspective.

In the latter (what might be called the "outside-in" view), subjectivity is tied to ideas about commonalities of human experience based on how people are positioned within structures of power. In this view, subjectivity is not a unique, idiosyncratic experience of the world but is, instead, a sort of structural lens through which people are induced to see and engage with the world irrespective of their own individual inclinations. So primary is structure in this view, in fact, that there are thought to be no such things as individual inclinations outside the structures of subjectivity. If one does stray outside these sanctioned positions, social mechanisms come into play to correct this "deviance" and to reorient the individual toward the "proper" subjectivity for his or her structural station. Foucault, Butler, Lacan, De Beauvior, and Bourdieu are prominent theorists known for taking this position.

These differences have led to tensions within anthropological theory. Proponents of the outside-in view find fault with the inside-out model for being too focused on the experiences of individual people while discounting the importance of the structures of power that constrain and enable those experiences. Proponents of the inside-out view find fault with the outside-in model for reducing all human experiences to products of discourse and for failing to take seriously the lived realities of being in the world that people contend with in everyday life. They caution that emptying the ideas of "self" or "subjectivity" of their affective, developmental, and individual elements erases our ability to theorize any forms of agency that do not fit within the existing subject positions. If subjectivity is produced by structure, how do we account for deviance? Or resistance? Or change? The outside-in proponents might respond that subjectification (the process of becoming a subject) occurs through multiple competing discourses. From within these webs of differentially charged power relationships, individual people might be able to leverage certain concepts against others or arrange them in idiosyncratic or creative ways that undermine or alter their proscribed subject positions in some way. The inside-out proponents might respond by asking, "Who is it that is doing the leveraging or creating if there is no core subject who holds agency?" And the debate continues.

Integrative Approaches

Although these approaches to subjectivity appear to be quite distinct, they are equally necessary for understanding the lives and experiences of real people. Anthropology is unique within the social sciences in that it attends to macro-, meso-, and microcultural processes simultaneously. Because of this, contemporary anthropologists often struggle to find or develop concepts of subjectivity that adequately capture both its inside-out and its outside-in aspects. Three major areas of recent development have moved toward more integrative models of subjectivity: (1) studies of intersubjectivity, (2) embodiment, and (3) what might be called the mastery of submission. In each of these domains, anthropologists have worked to dislodge theories of subjectivity from debates about structure versus agency or subject versus object (colored as these dualities are by Western philosophical traditions) and to focus instead on locally meaningful categories for understanding human experience that capture both inside-out and outside-in dynamics.

Intersubjectivity

The concept of intersubjectivity, coming to anthropology through both philosophy and psychology, challenges the subject-object division in that it refers to the relationships *between* people, all of whom are considered "subjects" of an encounter. Intersubjectivity involves a concern with theorizing empathy and how self and other cocreate in the process of interaction. Anthropologists interested in intersubjectivity have explored topics such as phenomenologies of experience and theories of mind as cultural processes, attempting to tease out how subjective experience is inextricable from social interaction and cultural meanings. Key theorists of intersubjectivity who have been influential for anthropologists include Mikhail Bakhtin, Martin Buber, Walter Benjamin, Edmund Husserl, Levinas, Ricoeur, Stein, Stern, and Ludwig Wittgenstein.

Embodiment

Another language for collapsing dualities has been that of embodiment. Anthropologists interested in embodiment challenge the subject/object distinction not only in social interaction but also as a ground for existential and metaphysical being.

Immediate human experience, theorists of embodiment argue, is fully integrative, with no a priori distinction between "mind" and "body." Categorizing some experiences as "thought" or "cognition" and other experiences as "sensation" or "somatic" is a second-order process that is entirely cultural and is not endemic to human ways of existing and knowing. Careful and sensitive ethnographic work enables a deeper understanding of locally salient understandings of embodiment and how these relate to other domains of social and cultural life. Philosophers such as de Beauvoir, Heidegger, Hegel, Husserl, Luce Irigaray, and Maurice Merleau-Ponty have been particularly influential in the anthropology of embodiment.

The Mastery of Submission

A third area of challenge to more traditional models of subjectivity comes from an arena that might be described as the mastery of submission. Resonant with important developments within critical feminist theory in the 1980s and gaining traction in anthropology through studies of religious discipline (but extending from there into discussions of race, gender, sexuality, political economy, psychiatry, and a number of other realms), studies of willing submission note that the whole idea of "subjugation" itself is premised on a liberationalist ideal that takes individual freedom and self-determination as the ultimate good. Drawing on Foucault's ideas of "technologies of the self," these studies examine the ways in which subjugation can be a desired or even cultivated state, as when a young woman chooses to join a Catholic convent or adopt Muslim veiling practices. Western scholars have tended to read such actions as either expressions of individual internal conflict (inside-out) or as evidence of structural oppression that induces women to feel that they "must" make such choices (outside-in). Ethnographic studies have shown, however, that such practices are often much more complicated and that they do not fit easily within dominant understandings of agency, freedom, and choice. In this vein, studies of willing submission have worked to disrupt and challenge accepted understandings of processes of subjugation, implicitly (and sometime explicitly) calling into question the entire academic discourse of subjectivity itself. Talal Asad, Bourdieu, Benjamin, de Beauvoir, Foucault, and Kristeva have been important theorists for anthropologists studying willing submission.

Future Directions

Despite—or perhaps because of—the difficulties of studying and theorizing subjectivity ethnographically, it continues to be a vibrant and exciting area of emergence within anthropology. Cultural anthropology is concerned with questions about how people understand the world and why people do what they do. Implicit in the very practice of ethnography, then, is a presumption that human subjectivity, however construed, is a critical feature in the generation, transmission, and transformation of culture. Continuing to develop ethnographically grounded models of subjectivity is therefore not only necessary for successful anthropological work but is foundational to the anthropological endeavor itself.

Rebecca J. Lester

See also Althusser, Louis; Asad, Talal; Benjamin, Walter; Bourdieu, Pierre; Derrida, Jacques; Foucault, Michel; Hegel, Georg W. F.; Husserl, Edmund; Lacan, Jacques; Marx, Karl; Saussure, Ferdinand de

Further Readings

Biehl, J., Good, B., & Kleinman, A. (Eds.). (2007). *Subjectivity: Ethnographic investigations*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Lester, R. J. (2005). *Jesus in our wombs: Embodying modernity in a Mexican convent*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Mahmood, S. (2011). *Politics of piety: The Islamic revival and the feminist subject*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Mansfield, N. (2000). *Subjectivity: Theories of the self from Freud to Harraway*. New York, NY: New York University Press.

Ortner, S. (2006). *Anthropology and social theory: Culture, power and the acting subject*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

SUSTAINABILITY

Sustainability, whose etymological roots are Anglo-Norman and Latin, implies a state that is maintainable, supportable, or bearable. In the abstract, its place in anthropology is as ancient as those swayed by Thomas Malthus and others contemplating the impact of the nexus of population, economics,

and resource use on carrying capacity: the impact of human beings on the environment. For them, changes in the material remains of the past were explained as the beginning or end of a people by extirpation, replacement, absorption, or some other process connected to human agency, climate, or the environment. For decades, the presence or absence of conservation became a particular focus; in the late 19th and early to mid-20th centuries the analysis coincided with major declines in forest and faunal resources in North America and elsewhere.

Coupling these processes specifically to ecological or environmentally maintainable (or degrading) activity under the rubric of sustainability, as well as the deliberate, self-conscious use of the concept of sustainability, emerged quite recently in time. Not until the 1980s did sustainability come into common use in anthropology, other disciplines, and the public consciousness. The floodgates opened especially wide in the years 1987–1995, when suddenly sustainability was on everyone's lips, where it has remained ever since.

The emergence of sustainability in anthropology and related fields such as sustainability science and sustainable development is linked to the 1987 publication of the Brundtland Report (World Commission on Environment and Development) and to the 1992 United Nations Conference on Environment and Development, also known as the Rio or Earth Conference. By "sustainable" (as regards development), Brundtland meant the ability to meet one's needs in the present without negatively affecting the ability of future generations to meet theirs. Neither this nor any other definition of sustainable or sustainability is easily made concrete; indeed, the very slipperiness of the concept of sustainability has plagued efforts to make it operational. Nevertheless, in the wake of Brundtland and Rio, interest in sustainability quickened considerably. As with conservation, the broader context influenced its growth: the vastly expanding global context of deep concern for the environment, biomes, species, biodiversity, and climate change—the concern, no less, for the future of life itself.

While the focus on sustainability in post-Brundtland anthropology is undeniably presentist, it unfolds into spheres that look backward for evidence of sustainability success and failure or into the present for behavior in which sustainability is a goal. Both past-looking studies and studies of the present reference the link to sustainable global futures—in the hope either that we, as human beings, learn from and not repeat history's unsustainable courses or that we develop ways that prove to be sustainable. In both, sustainability is at times conflated with conservation; yet simply because a society or resource use exhibits sustainability does not mean that human beings have acted with conservation as a goal.

The backward-looking cluster consists largely of the analysis, by archaeologists, environmental historians, and historically minded anthropologists, of evidence for societal sustainability or collapse or for the sustainable or nonsustainable exploitation of resources. It has attracted the most attention, with the lion's share going to societal sustainability or collapse, thanks mainly to Jared Diamond's provocative *Collapse: How Societies Choose to Fail or Succeed* (2005), which attributed the disappearance of Easter Islanders, temple-building Mayans, the Anasazi, and others elsewhere in the world to environmentally unsustainable habits and lives—all framed in the belief that the world today is on an unsustainable course. The debate over the thesis is robust, with many arguing that with a long view, specific cases exemplify not collapse but the resilience of a people or language, even if a particular societal course (political structures, monumental architecture, etc.) or particular use of resources (forests, fauna) appeared unsustainable as the society changed due to as-yet poorly understood systemic causes. The resilience of a societal system—its absorption of perturbation and retention of basic underlying structural elements—plays an important role in these reformulations.

Many have lowered their sights from societies to specific resources. Increasingly nuanced and fine grained, their work is likely to conclude that the data will remain partial, or that a story of extirpation, extinction, or hunting down trophic levels (from larger to smaller prey) will remain open to change. This work eschews global generalization. It takes the position (e.g., in the ancient harvest of maritime resources) that if the record is sufficiently long, it is marked by both success (resilience, continuity) and failure (extirpations, unsustainability); that climate surely played a significant role that often remains obscure; and that human impact was the least in ancient times, greater as populations increased and technology became more sophisticated, and the greatest in contemporary industrialized society. Yet in specific ancient cases, the exploitation of shellfish,

fish, sea turtles, birds, and seals and other mammals led to depletions, extirpations, and extinctions; that is, in place and time, these harvests were unsustainable.

Persistent problems in the analysis of sustainability are spatial and temporal scales (from local to global, from short to long term—the long view); the uneven nature of evidence for a postulated unsustainable human footprint on the land or the resources; and the lack of clarity on the degree to which climate or other environmental factors complicated or obscured human behavior. Nevertheless, with The United Nations Conference on Sustainable Development (known as Rio +20) in 2012, the framing of sustainability will no doubt continue and so should sustainability studies, including the analysis of sustainability within anthropology.

Shepard Krech III

Further Readings

Bettencourt, L. M. A., & Kaur, J. (2011). Evolution and structure of sustainability science. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences, 108,* 19540–19545.

Braje, T. J., & Rick, T. C. (Eds.). (2011). *Human impacts on seals, sea lions, and sea otters: Integrating archaeology and ecology in the northeast Pacific*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Costanza, R., Graumlich, L. J., & Steffen, W. (Eds.). (2007). *Sustainability or collapse: An integrated history and future of people on earth*. Cambridge: MIT Press.

Diamond, J. (2005). *Collapse: How societies choose to fail or survive*. New York, NY: Viking Penguin.

Goodland, R. (1995). The concept of environmental sustainability. *Annual Review of Ecology and Systematics, 26,* 1–24.

Krech, S., III. (2005). Reflections on conservation, sustainability, and environmentalism in indigenous North America. *American Anthropologist, 107,* 78–86.

McAnany, P., & Yoffee, N. (Eds.). (2010). *Questioning collapse: Human resilience, ecological vulnerability, and the aftermath of empire*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Redman, C., James, S. R., Fish, P. R., & Rogers, J. D. (Eds.). (2004). *The archaeology of global change: The impact of humans on their environment*. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Books.

Rick, T. C., & Erlandson, J. M. (Eds.). (2008). *Human impacts on ancient marine ecosystems: A global perspective*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Tainter, J. (2006). The archaeology of overshoot and collapse. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 35,* 59–74.

World Commission on Environment and Development (The Brundtland Commission). (1987). *Our common future*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Swadesh, Morris

Morris Swadesh (1909–1967) came of age when American linguistics was a wholly owned subsidiary of American anthropology. The founders and early disciples—Franz Boas, Edward Sapir, Alfred Kroeber, Leonard Bloomfield, and Robert Lowie—were firmly in control of the directions that anthropology and linguistics would take in North America.

Swadesh was born in Massachusetts to immigrant Jewish parents. As with his teacher the great Edward Sapir, Yiddish and other Eastern European languages swirled about in the family ether, a fact that disposed him toward anthropology and linguistics.

Precocious, slightly insufferable, Swadesh attended the University of Chicago, where he came under the influence of Sapir's charm (Sapir, whom Leonard Bloomfield called "the witch doctor"), following Sapir to Yale in 1930. He completed his PhD dissertation (*The Internal Economy of the Nootka Word*) under Sapir's supervision in 1933.

Swadesh had what we would call today an "attitude." This complicated things throughout his life. Trying to help Swadesh get a teaching position at Berkeley, Sapir wrote to A. L. Kroeber saying that he recommended him highly despite a "certain asperity of temperament." Swadesh eventually got a position at City College of New York, which he lost in 1949 as America moved into what now is called the "McCarthyite" period. Swadesh, whose politics were well left of center, emigrated to Mexico, where he finished out his career at the Universidad Nacional Autónoma de México and the National School of Anthropology and History.

In Swadesh's formative years, the 1920s and 1930s, linguistics was a "big tent" discipline in which all kinds of the "scientific study of language" flourished, something that is no longer true. If it had anything to do with language, it was fair game for the linguist. And since social constructs are language bound, anything in anthropology was fair game as well.

Swadesh, following the master's lead (Sapir wrote elegant poetry and became seriously involved in psychoanalysis and the movement for an international auxiliary language), luxuriated in the freedom and anarchy of the early days. His range of interests and research remains remarkable even today. The bibliography of his published works comes to some 234 items. (This bibliography is taken from the most useful account of Swadesh's work in anthropology and linguistics we have: Morris Swadesh, in *The Origin and Diversification of Language*, edited by Joel Sherzer.)

Fieldwork was the ruling ethos in early American anthropology and linguistics, and Swadesh worked either firsthand or secondhand on scores of American Indian languages: Nootka, Chitimacha (Louisiana), Northwest Sahhaptin, Tarasca, Inuit, Unaalic, Zapotec, and Otomi, and on and on. In addition, he published on Mandarin, Basic English, the phonology of American English, translation, semantics, and (again) on and on.

Swadesh's great triumph in the early days was his missionary dissemination of the then revolutionary concept of the *phoneme*—the idea that a sound could have "meaning" quite apart from its phonetic structure. Swadesh's early article "The Phonemic Principle" (1934) helped put the phoneme on a theoretical pedestal where it remained until the 1960s.

What Swadesh remains best known for, however, is the subject of his last book, *The Origin and Diversification of Language* (1971). When did spoken language arise, and how did languages become different? *When* did they split off from each other? Swadesh believed that that *when* could be quantified, and to that end he invented what is known as *glottochronology*: the study of the rate of change occurring in the vocabularies of languages for the purpose of calculating the length of time (time depth) during which two related languages have developed independently.

To conduct a glottochronological analysis you start with a list of culturally neutral universal words (known now as the "Swadesh 100-Word List" or for greater precision the "Swadesh 200-Word List"). On either list would be *man*, *woman*, *bird*, *one*, *all*, for example, words almost always present as lexical items in any language. *Computer*, *nerd*, and *mosh pit* would not be on the list. Take two languages that you believe to be genetically related, calculate the percentage of cognates they share from either of the Swadesh lists, and apply a formula similar to the one devised for Carbon-14 dating, and in principle you will get a number that tells you when the two languages diverged.

There are too many problems with glottochronology, both mathematical and practical, for it to be relied on in the way an archaeologist can rely on Carbon-14 dating. For example, varieties of spoken Arabic remain lexically close because of the authority of the *Qur'an*, and Afrikaans is farther from Dutch than we know it to be—there was all that borrowing in South Africa from the languages on the ground. Swadesh's assumption that basic vocabulary is replaced at a constant rate—about 19% per 1,000 years—is shaky. But glottochronology works about as well as many things taken for granted in linguistics, and if you have nothing else to use to establish time depth of divergence and not a lot of time to take a trip to the field, you could do worse than start with glottochronology.

Glottochronology is in its particulars flawed, but its underlying questions about the origins and diversification of languages seem eerily prescient at a time when historical linguistics has been revolutionized by DNA. We know more now than ever before about the prehistory of languages, thanks to mitochondrial DNA. We know, for example, that everything started out in Africa. We know how and when language traveled from Africa to Australia. We know that Etruscan had origins in the Middle East. Pre-DNA, we could only guess at such things.

When the history of the modern revolution in historical linguistics is written, Morris Swadesh will have a well-deserved if modest footnote in the early goings-on of that history. He didn't get everything right, his enthusiasms knocked him off the rails again and again, and DNA wasn't available, but he deserves credit for asking the right questions. And he asked the most interesting question there is: "When and why did *Homo sapiens* start talking?"

Not, on the whole, a bad legacy!

Robert D. King

See also Bloomfield, Leonard; Boas, Franz; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Sapir, Edward

Further Readings

Campbell, L. (1998). *Historical linguistics: An introduction* (chap. 6.5). Edinburgh, UK: Edinburgh University Press.

Crowley, T. (1997). *An introduction to historical linguistics* (3rd ed., pp. 171–193). Auckland, New Zealand: Oxford University Press.

Hymes, D. (1960). Lexicostatistics so far. *Current Anthropology, 1,* 3–44.

———. (1971). Morris Swadesh: From the first Yale school to world prehistory. In J. Sherzer (Ed.), *The origin and diversification of language*. Chicago, IL: Aldine Atherton.

Newman, S. (1967). Morris Swadesh (1909–1967). *Language, 43*.

Renfrew, C., McMahon, A., & Trask, L. (2000). *Time depth in historical linguistics*. Cambridge, UK: McDonald Institute for Archaeological Research.

Swadesh, M. (1952). Lexicostatistic dating of prehistoric ethnic contacts. *Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society, 96,* 452–463.

———. (1971). *The origin and diversification of language* (J. Sherzer, Ed.). Chicago, IL: Aldine Atherton.

Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

The school of thought known as symbolic and interpretive anthropology emerged in the 1960s and 1970s in opposition to materialist, scientific approaches to the study of culture. The symbolic and interpretive theorists believed that the interpretation of cultural phenomena, in their multiplicity of forms, must begin and end with the analysis of symbols and their multivalent meanings. They were interested in how local people in a variety of settings used symbols to render their social worlds meaningful. Like the British structural functionalists who preceded them, they emphasized long-term fieldwork based on close interaction with the "natives" as the best, if not the only, way of understanding culture. Like Franz Boas, the father of American anthropology, and his students, symbolic and interpretive theorists believed that symbols were best analyzed within the specific cultural contexts in which they were found.

Early Influences

Symbolic and interpretive theorists were influenced heavily by the French sociologist Émile Durkheim, in that they tended to view cultures primarily as coherent systems. Even if they first appeared unintelligible, symbolic systems would eventually make sense once trained anthropologists succeeded in cracking their code and ascertaining their internal logic. This could be accomplished only through careful observation and analysis of a people's symbols and rituals, which symbolic anthropologists believed constituted a people's culture and shaped their worldview.

Symbolic and interpretive anthropologists also borrowed their basic approach from psychoanalysis, specifically Sigmund Freud's interpretation of dreams, although Freud's influence on this school of thought is often forgotten. Before Freud, scholars believed that dreams were too bound up with primal emotion and animalistic drives to be approached scientifically and understood. Freud argued instead that a trained analyst could make sense of dreams: that their logic and coherence could eventually be determined through rigorous analytical work. The symbolic and interpretive theorists applied this general orientation and approach to the study of symbols and rituals. Although they took from Freud the notion that symbols contained deep cultural meaning, they rejected the universal meanings that Freud allocated to symbols, such as the phallic symbolism of elongated objects, and instead insisted on culturally specific meanings of symbols.

Many symbolic and interpretive anthropologists were also influenced by Claude Lévi-Strauss's theory of structuralism, such as the British anthropologist Mary Douglas in her work on food taboos and on "natural symbols" in the Hebrew Bible (known in Christianity as the Old Testament). The symbolic and interpretive theorists also borrowed from the field of linguistics, especially the work of Ferdinand de Saussure and Edward Sapir, and from philosophy, for example, the work of Paul Ricoeur, Ernst Cassirer, and Wilhelm Dilthey.

Topics of Study and Basic Approaches

Although scholars do not normally identify specific "schools" within symbolic and interpretive anthropology as a whole, there are two basic approaches that, although overlapping, differ slightly: a British version, exemplified by the work of Victor Turner, Mary Douglas, and Raymond Firth; and an American version, including Clifford Geertz, David Schneider, and Sherry Ortner. The first group was influenced by Durkheim and structural functionalism, in that they were interested in how societies remained cohesive, even in the face of social change

and conflict. The latter group shared Max Weber's concern for how ideas shaped individual subjectivities and actions. Although Turner was trained by Max Gluckman at Manchester and Geertz by the Harvard sociologist Talcott Parsons, an important synergy developed between Turner, Geertz, and David Schneider when their careers overlapped for a time at the University of Chicago. Because of this, the United States is usually considered symbolic and interpretive anthropology's specific place of origin.

Borrowing from the field of linguistics, symbolic and interpretive anthropologists defined "symbol" as something that stands for something else, where there is no intrinsic relation between the symbol and its meaning. From this general starting point, individual theorists developed more specialized, idiosyncratic definitions. For example, Turner referred to symbols as "the building blocks of ritual." Raymond Firth defined the symbol as a device enabling abstraction with some end in mind. What exactly that end was, however, varied depending on one's basic orientation. For Turner and the British theorists, symbols performed certain functions in a society, for example, they might heal an afflicted person or transform young neophytes into full-fledged adults. The American theorists, in contrast, saw symbols more as vehicles of meaning that shaped people's worldview. For example, in her chapter "Gods' Bodies, Gods' Food: A Symbolic Analysis of a Sherpa Ritual" (1975), Ortner argued that the ceremonial food offerings for the gods were a key symbol for understanding social hospitality among the Buddhist Sherpas in Nepal. In both cases, analyzing a people's symbols was key to understanding the culture itself.

British symbolic anthropologists diverged from the American theorists in their basic orientation toward culture. Influenced by Boas, the American theorists viewed culture as an autonomous entity. For the British theorists, however, culture did not exist apart from social structure and, more specifically, apart from its instantiation in social action. This basic contrast shaped these theorists' orientations toward the study of symbols. These two groups of theorists also differed in the emphasis they placed on emic, or "insider," interpretations of symbols, and on etic, or "outsider," ones. While capturing the native's point of view was key for the American theorists, for the British theorists, this was but one of many things the anthropologist needed to consider. Turner, for example, outlined a basic methodology for interpreting ritual symbols, combining observation, native meanings, and the anthropologist's interpretation. Turner thus acknowledged that anthropologists' interpretations differ from native ones, due to the former's scholarly training, to which the latter are not usually privy. This is reminiscent of the structural anthropologist Claude Lévi-Strauss's earlier distinction between conscious (native or "home-made") and unconscious models of social structure. Lévi-Strauss argued that, although they are different, both hold value to anthropologists in the field.

Symbolic and interpretive theorists varied in the extent to which they considered behavior in their works. While Douglas and Schneider tended to emphasize the rules and structures of symbolic systems as abstracted from actual behavior, Geertz and Turner paid more attention to how these rules and structures were played out, upheld, or even subverted in social action.

Beyond defining symbols and exploring their basic roles in society, symbolic and interpretive anthropologists also identified different kinds of symbols. Douglas was interested in the universality of certain symbols, such as those pertaining to the human body: for example, hair and blood. She described such symbols as microcosms for understanding society: Systems of symbols were, in short, a kind of native social theory. Turner and Ortner identified what they called "dominant" and "key" symbols, respectively. These symbols, they argued, could be understood apart from a culture's wider symbolic system. They stood alone, representing a culture's most important values and even the culture itself. Turner described three properties of dominant symbols: condensation of meanings, unification of disparate meanings, and polarization of meanings, the latter infusing symbols with the power to engage both societal principles and emotional states. Turner contrasted dominant symbols with "instrumental"symbols, or worker symbols, which could only be understood in their relationship to other symbols and which served to meet specific goals.

Major Theorists and Their Contributions: The British Approach

Victor Turner focused on the symbols and rituals of the Ndembu people of Zambia. Turner argued that at the heart of Ndembu society was a central conflict

between matrilineal descent and virilocal residence. That is, although the Ndembu traced their descent through the mother, women resided with their husbands after marriage, thus dividing the matrilineal kin group. Turner explained that enacting this irresolvable conflict through elaborate rituals or "social dramas" enabled the Ndembu to live with this paradox rather than be torn apart by it.

In *The Ritual Process* (1969), Turner built on the Belgian folklorist Arnold van Gennep's work on *rites de passage*, which he defined as rituals that accompany all changes of state in social life. In *The Rites of Passage*—originally published in French in 1909 but not translated into English until 1960—van Gennep argued that rites of passage exhibited a universal tripartite structure, consisting of (1) "separation," or the physical removal of subjects from their normal state; (2) "limen," where subjects are in-between states; and (3) "aggregation," where subjects are reintegrated into society as changed beings. Turner focused on the limen phase, describing its unique attributes. "Liminal" subjects, according to Turner, were "betwixt and between": They were egalitarian, ambiguous, and stripped of property and power. According to Turner, the liminal phase exhibited especially rich symbolism that expressed the neophytes' ambiguity. Turner explained that precisely because of their ambiguous state, close bonds developed between liminal subjects, what Turner referred to as "communitas" or "anti-structure." In Turner's model, social life everywhere consisted of alternating periods of structure and anti-structure—periods in which social principles were emphasized and periods in which they were temporarily suspended, even subverted.

Douglas also dedicated her career to the analysis of religious symbols. She conducted fieldwork among the Lele of the Belgian Congo (present-day Democratic Republic of Congo), focusing specifically on animal symbolism. She eventually extended her analysis beyond the Lele, however, to explore cross-culturally topics such as table manners, jokes, and ideas about risk.

Douglas is known most for her work on taboo and pollution, concepts she argued all religions exhibited. In *Purity and Danger* (1966), she defined dirt as "matter out of place," arguing that it could only be understood in relation to wider ideas about society. In particular, ideas about purity were related to a society's classificatory system or to the ways in which members categorize and, thus, make sense of their social world. For Douglas, ideas about pollution and taboo were actually clues to understanding a particular culture's established ideas about order and disorder.

In devising an anthropological interpretation of Old Testament food taboos, for example, Douglas argued that the early Israelites deemed animals "unclean" when they did not conform wholly to their classification system—that is, when they did not fit into the tripartite classification of the universe as outlined in Genesis: four-legged animals walk or hop on the land, scaly fish swim in the water, and two-legged birds fly in the sky. Because shellfish crawl rather than swim in the water, they threatened the order of things and were rendered a taboo food.

In *Symbols: Public and Private* (1973), Raymond Firth reflected on the scope and meaning of symbols, outlined the development of anthropological interest in symbolism, and contrasted public and private symbolization. Firth wrote that symbolic anthropologists were interested in how people in other societies think about symbols, how they behave symbolically in daily life, and how they consciously interpret the meaning of symbols. He described symbols as instruments of expression, communication, knowledge, and control, and identified symbolic action as one of the key domains through which anthropologists can explore the dissonance between statements or actions and their underlying meaning.

Firth explained that anthropologists have emphasized "public symbols," those collectively upheld in myth and ritual. But there are also "private symbols," or symbols held by individuals that correspond to personal concerns. Examples include dreams and prophetic revelations. Firth argued that anthropologists should pay more attention to the relationship between public and private symbols: how they affect or even contradict one another in the contexts of everyday life.

Major Theorists and Their Contributions: The American Approach

David Schneider was one of the most influential American symbolic anthropologists. In *American Kinship: A Cultural Account* (1968), Schneider was concerned with the internal logic of the symbolism of kinship in America. He identified the logical relationship among the central symbols, such as

"person," "relative," and "in-law." He outlined how the constituent parts created the system of meaning of American kinship, including what made a person a relative and, similarly, what made a relative a person. He outlined the categories of relatedness in American kinship: people who are thought to share "blood" and are thus joined by nature, and people related by marriage—those who were joined by "law" and characterized by the absence of "blood." At the core of the system, Schneider argued, is the act of sexual intercourse within marriage, which unifies the "nature" and "culture" opposition and provides the foundation for both forms of relatedness.

Schneider was concerned less with patterns of behavior than with culture as a set of idealized units and rules that may or may not be upheld in everyday practice. He believed that anthropologists should separate "patterned behavior," what people do or even what they say they do, and "culture," a second order analysis that allocates meanings to practices.

Sherry Ortner wrote a seminal work titled "On Key Symbols" (1973), in which she defined the concept of "key symbols" and outlined a methodology for their identification and analysis. Similar to Victor Turner's notion of dominant symbols, according to Ortner, symbols are "key" when people identify them as important, when natives are emotionally aroused by them, and when these symbols appear in a wide variety of contexts. Key symbols also have a greater elaboration surrounding them, and there are more restrictions governing their use as well as sanctions regarding their misuse. Ortner explains that anthropologists can use two basic methodological approaches to identify key symbols. First, they can analyze a culture or symbolic system for its most basic value orientations and then look for the symbol that best represents these. Second, anthropologists can observe a symbol that seems "key" and then analyze it for its cultural meanings.

Ortner identifies two basic types of key symbols: (1) "summarizing" and (2) "elaborating." Summarizing symbols sum up or represent for participants what their culture means to them. These are often sacred symbols or objects of worship, and they do not tend to inspire much reflection. The American flag is one example. "Elaborating" key symbols, in contrast, sort out complex ideas and emotions so that these can be understood, communicated to others, and acted on. There are two types. First, there are "root metaphors," which order the world by providing basic orientations—for example, Dinka cattle herders in Sudan speak about various social relationships in symbolic terms related to cattle. Second, on the Northwest coast, ceremonial feasting and gift giving (Potlatch) provide a key scenario for understanding social action.

The most influential figure in the American branch of symbolic and interpretive anthropology was Clifford Geertz. In *The Interpretation of Cultures* (1977), Geertz searched for a theoretically more powerful concept of culture than those established by the early evolutionists (in particular, E. B. Tylor's "complex whole" definition) and outlined a basic methodology for the study of culture. Geertz proposed a semiotic theory of culture—that is, culture dealt with symbols and their complex meanings. Following Weber, he argued that human beings were suspended in cultural webs of significance of their own creation.

According to Geertz, what anthropologists "do" is ethnography, and they do this in the field, through establishing rapport, by selecting informants, and through the act of writing. Ethnography entailed, Geertz argued, "thick description," deciphering layers of meanings as they unfold in the contexts of everyday life. The anthropologist's goal, according to Geertz, was to understand a situation and then explain it to others through writing. Whereas the British symbolic anthropologists never explicitly broached the subject of writing in their work, Geertz identified it as central to the anthropological endeavor. This was a crucial insight as Geertz proposed that ethnography involved the creation of written works that were better approached with the tools of literary criticism than with those of the natural sciences.

One of Geertz's most important contributions to symbolic and interpretive anthropology was his discussion of the location of culture: It is not located inside people's heads but is, in contrast, public, and it can be observed firsthand. Cracking the code of culture and communicating this in ethnographic writing for Geertz, however, inevitably involved interpretation. Indeed, he argued that anthropological writings constitute "second-order interpretations," which are removed from the first-order interpretations that only natives can make. Ethnographic writing is thus fictional, in that it is fashioned or made; it is imaginative, incomplete, and indeterminate. For Geertz, the analysis of culture was not, therefore,

an experimental science in search of laws but an interpretive one in search of meaning.

The most famous example of Geertz's approach is his analysis of a Balinese cockfight. Although cockfighting was illegal at the time of Geertz's fieldwork, cockfights were common and held deep significance for the Balinese people. Geertz argued that the cocks symbolized masculinity and animality: In identifying with his animal, a Balinese man confronted both his ideal and gendered self, and also what most repulses and fascinates him. Geertz identified the structure of the cockfight, interpreting it as a mirror of the hierarchical Balinese society, a playing out of conflict, and a form of art. Most important, the cockfight is, like all cultural phenomena, a "text" that can be read. In the same way that a person may have a strong identification with a football team, may organize his life around the season, and may be very affected by the outcome of the team's matches, the cockfight is a story the Balinese tell about themselves: about who they should be, who they could be, and who they actually are.

Critiques and Contemporary Status

One of the most common critiques of symbolic and interpretive theorists is the lack of specificity in their interpretations. It is not always clear, according to critics, to what extent a particular symbolic interpretation is due to the anthropologist's own training or unique positionality (e.g., his or her ethnicity, gender, training, and specific life experiences), and to what extent it may be attributed to the "natives" themselves, who are equally positioned subjects.

Symbolic and interpretive anthropologists have also been criticized for downplaying, or ignoring altogether, political and economic realities, particularly the notion of power. Critics have accused them of ignoring, for example, how dominant groups endow symbols with meanings that contradict the meanings attached to them by subordinate groups. Along these lines, many have been accused of being antihistorical in their analyses, of neglecting the historical processes that give rise to a particular symbol's meaning. Finally, symbolic and interpretive theorists have been accused of overly romanticizing the cultures they study, downplaying how meaning is created through engagement with a wider world of globalization and conflict.

Although symbolic and interpretive anthropology is generally defined as a historical period within the discipline, contemporary anthropologists were either trained by major figures in this field or simply use symbolic or interpretive analyses in their work. Those who work under this designation today have retained a focus on long-term fieldwork and the pursuit of local meanings, and in their research and writing, they tend to emphasize religion over political economy. But these two topics are not mutually exclusive in the contemporary period, and many who work with political and economic issues, such as Arjun Appadurai, John and Jean Comaroff, and David Kertzer, adopt symbolic and interpretive approaches.

Michelle C. Johnson

See also Appadurai, Arjun; Douglas, Mary; Firth, Raymond; Freud, Sigmund; Geertz, Clifford; Manchester School; Ortner, Sherry; Religion; Schneider, David M.; Structural Functionalism; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Dolgin, J. L., Kemnitzer, D. S., & Schneider, D. M. (Eds.). (1977). *Symbolic anthropology: A reader in the study of symbols and meanings*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Douglas, M. (1966). *Purity and danger: An analysis of the concepts of pollution and taboo*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

———. (1975). *Implicit meanings: Selected essays in anthropology*. London, UK: Routledge & Kegan Paul.

Firth, R. (1973). *Symbols: Public and private*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

Ortner, S. (1973). On key symbols. *American Anthropologist, 75,* 1338–1346.

———. (1984). Theory in anthropology since the sixties. *Comparative Studies in Society and History, 26*(1), 126–166.

Schneider, D. M. (1968). *American kinship: A cultural account*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Turner, V. (1967). *The forest of symbols: Aspects of Ndembu ritual*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

———. (1969). *The ritual process: Structure and anti-structure*. Chicago, IL: Aldine.

Turner, V., & Bruner, E. M. (Eds.). (1986). *The anthropology of experience*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
Willis, R. (Ed.). (1975). *The interpretation of symbolism*. New York, NY: Halsted Press.

Symbolic Interactionism

Symbolic interactionism is a micro-sociological perspective. Its proponents view human society as the product of everyday interactions based on shared meanings. Meaning is constructed through the use of symbols in a fluid process in which social roles emerge through conscious or subconscious negotiation. This perspective has been influential among sociologists and social psychologists. While relatively less frequently referenced by cultural anthropologists, its major assumptions are similar to those of qualitative and interpretive anthropology.

History and Basic Concepts

George Herbert Mead (1863–1931), a major figure in the pragmatist school of American philosophy, believed that humans are dynamic actors for whom knowledge is an instrument for problem solving. They are not, in other words, puppets of unseen, deterministic forces of history, economics, social class, or the environment, and their behavior can be understood in terms of shared subjective meanings or *significant symbols*. His contemporary, the sociologist Charles Horton Cooley (1864–1929), suggested that we become who we are based on how we think others see us, a concept he called the "looking-glass self." Another key piece of the conceptual landscape of symbolic interactionism was provided by William I. Thomas (1863–1947) and Dorothy S. Thomas (1899–1977), whose eponymous theorem holds that if one defines a situation as real (whether or not it is objectively so), then there will be real consequences, since people act on what they *think* is happening rather than on what is objectively happening.

These basic insights were codified by Mead's student Herbert Blumer (1900–1987), who coined the term *symbolic interaction*. Blumer came to believe that significant symbols are shared in the process of social interaction, which is based on our ability to interpret and define the actions of others. We do not react to others' actions (as the behaviorist psychologists of his era suggested) but rather to the meaning that we attach to those actions. Words and gestures are the most commonly deployed symbols, but the human symbolic repertoire also includes body language, clothing, religious or patriotic artifacts, architecture and landscaping, artistic expressions, and choice of recreational activities, all of which can be used by people to define themselves. These symbols may be modified depending on how others choose to interpret a person's *presentation of self*, a concept closely associated with Erving Goffman (1922–1982), who developed an understanding of social roles through a dramaturgical analogy: Human social behavior follows a kind of script, and individuals are role-playing actors. Despite the presence of a script, however, roles always have an improvisational quality, which introduces a measure of uncertainty to the social process. We must interpret the cues provided by others, and so we are creative participants in our environments, not passive players of prearranged parts.

As human beings use symbols in meaningful ways in the process of interaction, they become conscious, self-reflexive, and active shapers of their own behavior. A social act is one in which one's behavior takes others into account and is shaped by others' perceived reactions. It is thus the basic unit of analysis. Culture is the system of shared meanings that make social acts possible. The most significant interactions are usually those that characterize intimate relations among family members and/or members of the peer group, but people can and do interact in meaningful ways with larger reference groups and, increasingly, with vast and unseen "virtual" communities. Symbolic interactionists do not contend that economics or the other large forces play no part in shaping the world, but they pay particular attention to the way people interpret the world and how they respond to those interpretations.

The process of interaction leads to temporary, socially constructed, and negotiable relations. Stability comes not from a fixed set of institutions, statuses, and roles but from a consensual agreement about the nature of the social process itself. A useful analogy might be to a football game. Each game has its distinct characteristics, depending on the lineup of players, the conditions of the field, and so forth. Each game is, of course, governed by a set of rules that everyone acknowledges, but we cannot predict

the outcome of any given game simply by memorizing the rule book. The game will certainly follow the rules, but its outcome will depend on how particular players interact with one another under the particular conditions that obtain at the time of the game.

Interactionists' interest in symbols, negotiated reality, and the social construction of the self is expressed through an analysis of the roles people play. Humans take on acceptable roles to the extent that they are capable of entering into the perspective of others and of trying to figure out what their actions might mean to those with whom they interact. Interaction, however, also depends on our ability to make new roles for situations that are ambiguous or unfamiliar.

Research Methods and Affinities With Cultural Anthropology

Blumer's followers in sociology and social psychology have relied on qualitative ethnographic research methods. As such, they have made common cause with many cultural anthropologists, although the latter do not typically label their theoretical perspective "symbolic interactionism." There is, however, an underlying conceptual link with symbolic or interpretive anthropology as espoused by Clifford Geertz (1926–2006), who famously adopted Max Weber's image of humans as beings suspended in webs of self-spun significance. Geertz championed the study of culture as an interpretive process rather than as one based on experimental science.

Microlevel social research dealing with interpersonal interactions and the social construction of self-identity has often been conducted using the participant observation stance commonly associated with anthropology. Interactionist research requires close contact with the people being studied, as well as immersion in the everyday activities of those people, the better to understand the meanings of actions and the processes by which those people construct encounters. As anthropologists have long recognized, this sort of immersion necessarily involves a degree of subjectivity that some sociologists, bred in a tradition of value-neutral research, have tended to resist. Symbolic interactionists in sociology and social psychology thus share epistemological ground with many cultural anthropologists rather than with quantitatively oriented members of their own disciplines.

Symbolic interactionists use participant observation–based ethnographic techniques to study socialization, which leads to their understanding of that process as a reciprocal one in which the identities of parents (and other caregivers) are shaped through interaction with children almost as much as the children's self-concepts are formed by the training they receive from their elders. Such research has also clarified the idea that socialization is not simply something associated with childhood; each person is constantly being socialized and resocialized as he or she enters into new relationships in new interactive settings.

Ethnomethodologists in sociology and ethnolinguists allied with anthropology share with symbolic interactionists a commitment to small-scale, face-to-face, and immersive research. Ethnolinguists have been interested in the way language both shapes and is shaped by cultural contexts. Ethnomethodologists have made significant contributions to the study of basic conversations, revealing how turn taking and alternative conversational maneuvers are developed and deployed in social situations. They have, however, tended to view meaning as intrinsic to the minds of individuals, who impose it on social life through individual practices; symbolic interactionists, by contrast, have understood meaning as behavioral and collective, arising out of the processes of communication.

A variant strand of symbolic interactionism is represented by Manford Kuhn (1911–1963), a quantitative sociologist. Kuhn and his associates (the Iowa school) were critical of Blumer's Chicago school and its focus on the particularities of interactions, at the expense of seeking broad generalizations about human behavior. Contemporary interactionists have effected a rapprochement between the two schools, but they are in general still relatively more committed to qualitative research. They have focused on studies of the self and the dynamics of the interactive encounter in settings as varied as schoolrooms, public restrooms, mental hospitals, street gangs, and monasteries. Studies of virtual communities have demonstrated how language can be used to authenticate identities in the absence of standard visual and aural cues. Social identities in cyberspace, no less than in "real" space, are not objectively defined roles to be assumed but are the result of specific, ongoing, emergent, and negotiated social interactions.

Because of their continuing interest in socialization and the self, symbolic interactionists have also contributed to modern gender studies. Gender, like other elements of one's social identity, is seen as a construct arising out of the exchange of significant symbols in the process of interaction. This perspective has also influenced studies in the sociology of deviance and the anthropology of disability through the development of labeling theory, which emphasizes the ways in which people label behaviors or attributes that violate norms. Labeling theorists argue that what we call deviant or disabled is the result of how we respond to the labels (which carry symbolic weight) rather than to the behaviors as objectively defined. Interactionists prefer to see both deviance and disability in relativistic rather than absolute terms.

Interactionists have also made important contributions to the study of social movements by developing resource mobilization theory, which holds that a social movement is not likely to emerge and spread—even when the economic or social conditions seem to provide fertile ground—unless a group of individuals are willing to interact with one another in such a way as to accumulate the resources (both material and symbolic) needed to sustain the movement. People are likely to join a social movement when they are part of an existing social network that provides an established system of contacts and communication through which individuals can be recruited into the movement.

Criticisms and Conclusions

Symbolic interactionism began as a response to positivistic social science. Its adherents tend to favor descriptive accounts of particular encounters over macrolevel theories involving overarching social institutions or abstractions like social class. Like other social researchers who use qualitative ethnographic methods, symbolic interactionists are sometimes criticized for being untheoretical and hence of representing a humanistic rather than a scientific perspective. Interactionism has generated generalizing, explanatory theories, such as labeling theory and resource mobilization theory, but the emphasis remains on detailed accounts of how those general factors work in particular situations. It is certainly true that the emphasis of interactionist research has been on the micro level of the social encounter, but interactionists do acknowledge macro forces to the extent that they form part of the context in which personal encounters develop.

Another criticism of symbolic interactionism has been that it has had limited impact on social policy. Interactionists' research, which is often relativistic and reliant on subjective analysis, tends to favor narrative description over statistical analysis. This makes it difficult for policymakers to use it. It should be kept in mind, however, that the roots of interactionism are in the pragmatic movement in American philosophy. There is no inherent reason why interactionist research cannot contribute to policy, although it is probably most effectively applied at the local level concerning particular programs.

Symbolic interactionism is a distinctive perspective on social life. It emphasizes meaning and the personal encounter and looks to evolving social process rather than to fixed structures as the basis of human socialization and group life. Studies of the self, emotion, social roles, and negotiated order, all of which are important to modern sociology, social psychology, and cultural anthropology, have been influenced by the symbolic interactionist perspective.

Michael Angrosino

See also Ethnomethodology; Face-to-Face Interaction; Geertz, Clifford; Goffman, Erving; Mead, George Herbert; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Blumer, H. (1969). *Symbolic interactionism: Perspectives and method.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Charon, J. M. (2010). *Symbolic interactionism: An introduction, an interpretation, an integration,* (10th ed.). Boston, MA: Prentice Hall.

Goffman, E. (1958). *The presentation of self in everyday life.* Edinburgh, UK: University of Edinburgh Social Sciences Research Centre.

Prus, R. (1996). *Social interactionism and ethnographic research: Intersubjectivity and the study of human lived experience.* Albany: State University of New York Press.

Reynolds, L. T., & Herman-Kinney, N. J. (Eds.). (2003). *Handbook of social interactionism.* Walnut Creek, CA: AltaMira Press.

Sandstrom, K. L., Martin, D. D., & Fine, G. A. (2003). *Symbols, selves, and social reality: A symbolic interactionist approach to social psychology and sociology.* Los Angeles, CA: Roxbury.

Systems Theory

For decades, in one form or another, systems theory has permeated multiple fields of study. Its purpose is a simple one—to facilitate the examination of why there is order in our world. It is more than a specialized disciplinary construct that directs observations and structures analysis; it is a *way* of doing science that (a) creates a framework for articulating complex observations in a coherent manner, (b) facilitates an understanding of the interrelationships between the various elements of analysis, and (c) forms a bridge spanning disciplines that encourages intellectual cross pollination.

Overview

Looking at our world, both natural and social, there are two characteristics everyone can agree on: It is both (1) complex and (2) ordered. Science is a methodological and conceptualizing process that attempts to simplify the observed complexity and to understand the mechanisms behind the order. There are two basic approaches one can use in this process. The most common and traditional option is to identify a single element of study and to analyze it largely in isolation from its context. We can label this approach reductionist or bottom up—going from the specific to the most general. For example, a biologist studies the frog as an organism, or an anthropologist studies a culture's kinship terminology as a cultural construct. The second option is to study these objects within a more complete natural and cultural context. This approach is more top down—from the most general to the most specific. For frogs, one would study their interactions within their habitat or environment—an ecological approach that recognizes that the frog has an impact on, and is in turn affected by, its environment. For kinship networks, one would study the familial relationships as they articulate within higher social and political systems. In each case, the initial object of study is viewed as an element in a network of subsystems that interact to create the ordered whole we ultimately are most interested in understanding. Systems theory is a formalization of the latter approach.

Inherent in any definition of *systems* is the idea of some whole composed of interacting parts (subsystems). The recognition that all aspects of our world can be conceptually decomposed into sets of interacting parts spawned a paradigm in which the world is seen as a matrix of discrete subsystems connected by mechanisms that exchange information or energy. This exchange process has the ability to either maintain or transform the "state" of the subsystems and, subsequently, the whole. Although the ancient Greeks, the Romans, and later thinkers expressed some systems concepts, it was not until 1937 that a formal definition of general systems theory was presented by the Austrian biologist Ludwig von Bertalanffy, at a University of Chicago conference.

Bertalanffy's argument contrasted the tendency of sciences, especially biology, of mimicking physics' (i.e., the ultimate science's) atomistic focus on the smallest or singular element as the primary analytical unit—the reductionists' approach noted above. In biology, one studied the cell in great detail without regard to its existence in a much larger context of the organism, which, in turn, existed and interacted within a larger ecological realm. Organisms are more than just cell aggregates. The sum of the parts does not equal the whole. Anthropologists likewise often focused their studies on individual cultural elements, such as kinship, language, technology, material items, and so on, to the exclusion of their collective roles within a much larger and complex matrix of human interactions and behaviors. Culture, then, is more than a collection of human constructs.

Although, for centuries, reductionism was the predominant norm of science, Bertalanffy noted that every science, social or physical, had theoretical components that recognized the place of interacting elements within a larger whole. He argued that for the sciences to be useful they must broaden their analytical scope to encompass the relationships between the elements with the goal of understanding how these interactions define the whole. Implicit in this view is the recognition that all sciences share a framework commonality that at the highest philosophical level links them together as science. One outcome of this perspective is the expectation that science should be a multidisciplinary reasoning process, given this shared framework and the fact that the components of systems often span disciplinary specialties. Furthermore, analogies should exist between disciplines that might enhance their

research methodologies—that is, disciplines should be able to (cautiously) borrow tools from other disciplines. For example, the incorporation of open system thermodynamic principles borrowed from physics might serve the study of human cultures by anthropologists. In this way, systems theory became a method of abstraction that spanned all disciplines.

Following Bertalanffy's recognition of interacting components, the focus of systems research shifted away from the reductionist's elements of analysis in favor of the interchange of information and/or energy between subsystems. William Ross-Ashby, in his explication of the mechanism of this interchange, incorporated the concept of *homeostasis*—the ability of a system to maintain itself at or near equilibrium by means of feedback mechanisms between subsystems. Norbert Weiner and others formalized the study of the structure of this process as the field of *cybernetics*. In simplest terms, systems theory applies a worldview that what we observe is composed of subsystems that interact via structured feedback mechanisms in a way that either maintains the current state (negative feedback or first cybernetics) or alters that state (positive feedback, second cybernetics, or multiplier effect) into a new form, preserving the whole in a new way.

In the late 1940s and early 1950s, a group of multidisciplinary researchers met in what became known as the Macy Conferences to discuss and develop the concept of systems theory as it applied to the human mind. William Ross Ashby and Weiner were key participants along with two anthropologists, Gregory Bateson and Margaret Mead. Bateson became the leading proponent of systems theory within anthropology as he applied the theory to understanding the workings of the mind. For Bateson, systems theory provided a framework for placing the brain (i.e., an individual) within the context of a greater whole (i.e., the cultural system). The mind was not seen as separate or independent from the various subsystems it was an active part of. Archaeologists, however, have been anthropology's loudest incorporators of the approach, and it is their application that will be used here to delineate an anthropological application of systems theory.

Systems Theory in the Social Sciences

Archaeology in the 1960s and 1970s witnessed a theoretical revolution referred to as *processual archaeology* or *new archaeology*. At its most basic level, the movement attempted to recreate archaeology as a "science" that concentrated on the "processes" empowering culture change. In the spirit of systems theory's multidisciplinary approach, processual archaeologists heavily borrowed research analogs from other disciplines. This was especially true of their incorporation of the systemic mindset of systems theory. Many of these archaeologists used the systems view to organize their observations, but one in particular, Kent Flannery, best articulated its value to processual studies.

Flannery's application examined the development of agriculture in Mesoamerica. Prevalent views on the origin of agriculture tended to focus on singular causes like climatic change, population pressure, and so on, forcing societies to adopt a sedentary lifestyle supported by domesticated species. Archaeological remains suggested such explanations were inadequate largely because the change slowly took place over centuries of time. Flannery viewed cultures as integral components of their immediate ecological surroundings. These ecological systems included the plants, animals, physical conditions, and weather/climate impacts, each conceptualized as a dynamic subsystem. For centuries, Mesoamerican subsistence systems (another subsystem) developed protocols to extract resources designed around seasonality (When are the plant foods ready for harvest and the animals most easily hunted?) and scheduling (At any given time, where do people need to be to take advantage of seasonality?). Changes to the subsistence subsystem could sufficiently alter the population dynamics of animals and plants necessitating a concomitant adjustment in the subsistence system to maintain the needed supply of these resources. This back-and-forth interaction is a classic example of systems theory's concept of negative feedback—responses designed to maintain the status quo.

Flannery argued that the shift to domesticated resources was a slow one, as demonstrated in the culture chronologies. He envisioned subtle, probably accidental, changes in the genetics of plant resources that slowly shifted their value within the subsistence base from low to high. The changes could have been the result of random mutations or human interaction encouraging the reproduction of some characteristics (like maize kernel size and row number) over another. These minute alterations over time accelerated in a positive feedback process

eventually creating a dependence on these domesticated species of plants. As the shift toward more controlled and predictable resources occurred, there was a concomitant change in the scheduling and seasonality constraints. Population size increased under reduced nutritional stress leading to an increasing aggregation into larger sedentary groups, which in turn subjected social and political systems to change. For Flannery, systems theory provided a process-driven conceptualization of culture as an integrating component within a larger system of interacting and dynamic subsystems. Accepting this view shifted archaeology away from the specific (i.e., the oldest, the biggest, the first, etc.) in favor of the general (i.e., the processes involved in cultural evolution).

During the same period, ethnographers conducting research under the paradigm of cultural ecology—the study of societies within their environmental context—were also inclined to organize their observations around Systems Theory perspectives. Roy Rappaport became ethnography's most eloquent prophet of systems thinking in the presentation of his research on New Guinea societies. Systems theory, born out of biology's ecological paradigms, was a natural fit for ethnographers doing ecological research. Rappaport's application focused on the adaptive value of the interacting cultural components within their environmental context and not on their more traditional functional aspects. He was particularly interested in delineating how subsystems exhibited system maintenance qualities as they worked to stabilize the flow of critical elements, such as protein intake, within a society's limitations (e.g., technology, climate, land resources, etc.). This form of homeostasis was not, however, changeless in form. Maintenance in the face of external changes would require internal adaptations to the system components as well as their interactions. Homeostasis did not equate to a formal status quo.

Additionally and perhaps most important, Rappaport emphasized the potential of cultural systems to become destructive in nature as they reacted to feedback. What might best serve the homeostatic balance could eventually be system-destroying. Ideally, cultural elements must exist to minimize this effect. Rappaport saw New Guinea rituals as serving this purpose. The *kaiko*, or yearlong pig festival, served to systematically cull the herds in order to maintain pig populations below their environmentally destructive levels. Rituals evolved to buffer the long-term negative impact of the system's success in maintaining critical protein resources (pigs). The function of rituals could only be defined within the broader context of subsystem interactions. Rituals, in a sense, are the control mechanisms of systems on the edge of self-destruction.

Critics

Critics of systems theory judged its viability based on their perception of social science goals. Their tone was more one of disinterest in this avenue of research than a denial of the systems argument that elements of study are part of a network of interactions. Many postmodernists were quick to associate the concept with a mechanization of culture when, often explicitly, the role of the individual was ignored (e.g., R. L. Ackoff, C. W. Churchman, and N. Luhmann). The individual appeared to be a pawn in some programmed environment. Such criticisms were amplified by the postmodernists' emphasis on the individual, which contrasted with the processual generalists' denial of the role of individuals in the grander scheme.

During the early developmental period of systems theory, the emphasis of social science was shifting away from smaller units of analysis in favor of understanding the individual(s) in his/her/their context. But the further one steps back, the smaller the individual can become. Eventually, culture can be described as a "black box" with inputs, outputs, and hidden mechanisms of interaction. Since the 1980s, there has been a shift back to the individual in what are collectively referred to as "agency studies." However, the individuals or agents are often viewed within a larger whole or system. Agents are seen as simultaneous creators and consumers of their cultural structure. Examples can be found in the recent and extensive social network research. Systems Theory's framework concepts are still useful in representing agent interactions. Today, General Systems Theory may be nearly axiomatic in its conceptual usefulness. Research arguments implicitly accept the interconnectedness and instead focus on the nature of interactive mechanisms. Integrated with complexity theory, game theory, and information theories, systems theory is still the "skeleton of science."

William W. Baden

See also Bateson, Gregory; Cultural Ecology; Rappaport, Roy

Further Readings

Bateson, G. (1972). *Steps to an ecology of mind: Collected essays in anthropology, psychiatry, evolution, and epistemology*. San Francisco, CA: Chandler.

———. (2002). *Mind and nature: A necessary unity*. Cresskill, NJ: Hampton Press.

Bertalanffy, L. von. (1950). An outline of general systems theory. *British Journal for the Philosophy of Science, 1*(2), 134–165.

Boulding, K. (1956). General systems theory: The skeleton of science. *Management Science, 2*(3), 197–208.

Buckley, W. F. (1967). *Sociology and modern systems theory*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Flannery, K. V. (1968). Archaeological systems theory and early Mesoamerica. In B. Meggers (Ed.), *Anthropological archaeology in the Americas* (pp. 67–87). Washington, DC: Anthropological Society of Washington.

Rappaport, R. A. (1968). *Pigs for the ancestors*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Smith, J. A., & Jenks, C. (2006). *Qualitative complexity: Ecology, cognitive processes and the re-emergence of structures in post-humanist social theory*. New York, NY: International Library of Sociology.

Tambiah, Stanley

Stanley Jeyaraja Tambiah (1929–), a Sri Lankan anthropologist, is mostly known for his performative theory of rituals; studies of the interrelations among Buddhism, politics, and society in Thailand and Sri Lanka; and explorations of ethnic violence in South Asia.

Early Life and Influences

Stanley Jeyaraja Tambiah was born in 1929 into a Tamil Christian family. He received his primary and secondary education at Saint Thomas College in Colombo, a colonial institution modeled after English public schools. At the University of Ceylon, he studied economics, with sociology and anthropology as secondary fields. There he met the American sociologist Bruce Ryan, who first introduced Tambiah to the practices of fieldwork, organizing weekend research trips to local villages. These experiences had a lasting impact on Tambiah's young mind and fostered his interest in local culture and villages, which would direct much of his intellectual trajectory. In 1951, Tambiah went on to do his PhD in sociology in Cornell University, with anthropology and social psychology as secondary subjects. There he worked under the supervision of Robin Williams, a former student of Talcott Parson and Robert Merton, strengthening Tambiah's engagement with the work of Max Weber and Émile Durkheim. After graduating from Cornell in 1954, Tambiah went back to his alma mater, where he taught sociology. In 1957, Tambiah initiated his first long-term participant observation in collaboration with Gananath Obeyesekere. Concurrently, Tambiah entered into conversation with Edmund Leach, who recognized the promise of the young sociologist but harshly critiqued his use of quantitative surveys. It was Leach who convinced Tambiah to abandon this approach and to adopt more qualitative methods.

The "Thai" Years: Myth, Ritual, and Histories

In 1960, Tambiah was invited to become the leading anthropologist of a United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization/Thai research unit on rural education. This assignment generated three monographs and established Tambiah in the field of anthropology. The first text, published in 1970 with the title *Buddhism and the Spirit Cults in Northeast Thailand*, explored how Buddhism as a civilizational force structured the social life of a Thai village. For the most part written in Cambridge, where Tambiah began teaching in 1963, the book revealed the influence of Edmund Leach, who introduced him to structuralism and Claude Lévi-Strauss. After this first project, Tambiah decided to further his analysis of Thai Buddhism by approaching it as a totality, examining its connections with larger social, political, and state formations. The outcome, *World Conqueror, World Renouncer*, was completed in 1976, the year in which he moved to Harvard University, after teaching for 3 years at the University of Chicago. In this text, he analyzes the historical oscillations, a theme dear to Leach, in the structural

relations between Buddhist monks as renouncers of worldly life and Buddhist kings as righteous rulers and protectors of Buddhism. Tambiah, influenced by his conversations with Marshall Sahlins in Chicago, proposed a rethinking of the relation between history and anthropology, through Sartre's critique of the anti-historicism of structural anthropology. While *World Conqueror, World Renouncer* followed rural monks moving to urban centers to gain education and social mobility, Tambiah's third monograph, *The Buddhist Saints of the Forest and the Cult of Amulets*, published in 1984, focused instead on the monks who remained at the periphery of state power. In it, Tambiah explored the Weberian theme of charisma, its transferal to relics and amulets, and their uses in manipulating economic, political, and historical processes.

Theoretical Engagements

After the Thai trilogy, Tambiah condensed his more theoretical reflections into two books, which are often celebrated as his main contributions to anthropological theory. The first, *Culture, Thoughts, and Social Action*, published in 1985, dealt with two classic themes of anthropological inquires: rituals and cosmologies. In the first part of the book, Tambiah proposes, through a mix of structural analysis, J. L. Austin's pragmatics, and Charles Sanders Peirce's reflection on indexes, a reading of rituals as performative acts, enactments of cultural conceptions that generate social reality. A similar attempt to study these totalities animates the second part of this book, which analyzes the relation between cosmologies and social structures in Southeast Asia.

It was again an interest in totalities that oriented Tambiah's second theoretical intervention, *Magic, Science, and the Scope of Rationality*, published in 1992. In the text, Tambiah reconstructs a cultural history of the categories of magic, religion, and science in Western thought and anthropological theory. While he individuates two modes of human thought, one concerned with causality, logic, and classification and the other concerned with participation and experience, he refuses to separate them and sees them as both operating in science as well as in magic.

Return to Sri Lanka: Ethnic Violence in South Asia

Following the violent anti-Tamil riots in Colombo in 1983, after years of estrangement from Sri Lanka and its tumultuous politics, Tambiah went back to his native land to explore collective violence in its relation to ethnic and religious dimensions. Another trilogy was the result. The first book, *Ethnic Fratricide and the Dismantling of Democracy*, published in 1986, examines the genesis of the 1983 violence and its underlying political dynamics, showing ethnic conflict and the demise of democracy as two sides of the same coin. In the second text, *Buddhism Betrayed?* Tambiah explored the historical development of political Buddhism in Sri Lanka to solve the dilemma of how such heinous violence could be possible in a country largely dominated by a religion that teaches nonviolence. Starting from this question and an engagement with Gustave LeBon's and Émile Durkheim's discussions of collective ritual, effervescence, and crowds, Tambiah published in 1996 his last monograph, *Leveling Crowds*, which focused on ethnonationalist conflicts and violence as a means to conduct democratic politics in South Asia. Tambiah is currently the Esther and Sidney Rabb Research Emeritus Professor of Anthropology at Harvard University and now resides in Boston.

Claudio Sopranzetti

See also Bloch, Maurice; Cambridge University; Leach, Edmund; Sahlins, Marshall; Structuralism; Weber, Max

Further Readings

Aulino, F., Goheen, M., & Tambiah, S. J. (Eds.). (2013). *Radical egalitarianism: Local realities, global relations.* New York, NY: Fordham University Press.

Peirano, M., & Tambiah, S. J. (1997). Continuity, integration, and expanding horizons. *Serie Antropologia, 230*. Retrieved from http://www.marizapeirano.com.br/entrevistas/stanley_tambiah.pdf

Tambiah, S. J. (1985). An anthropologist's creed. In *Culture, thought, and social action* (pp. 339–358). Boston, MA: Harvard University Press.

Tax, Sol

Although most widely remembered today for his organizational contributions, particularly the founding of *Current Anthropology*, Sol Tax (1907–1995) was also an experienced and innovative scholar and an influential teacher and mentor. His contributions to Robert Redfield's project in Mesoamerican

economic development were significant at the time, but his "action anthropology" is increasingly relevant as the discipline rediscovers collaborative and applied approaches and internationalist perspectives.

Biography

Tax was born in Chicago on October 30, 1907, the third of four children of Russian Jewish immigrants, who were secular and socialist leaning despite a rabbinical ancestry. Shortly after his birth, the family moved to Milwaukee, then one of the centers of progressivism in the United States, where the family's political inclinations were reinforced by the local milieu. Small and shy as a child, Sol nevertheless dreamed of somehow saving the world from its troubles. His entrepreneurial aspect was also evident early: By the age of 12, he was active in the Newsboys' Republic—a local organization of paper carriers, with their own publication (which Tax went on to edit). He also served as chief justice of their "supreme court" and lost a closely contested election to be president.

After graduating high school in 1925, Sol and his older brother went to Florida, working to make money for college as assistant circulation manager at the Miami *Daily News*. Sol then spent one quarter of his money at the University of Chicago, before transferring to the University of Wisconsin due to financial pressures; there, he continued to be quite active in political and organizational causes—sometimes to the detriment of his studies. He began by intending to major in political science and economics, but a chance reading of Robert Marrett's *Anthropology* (1912) led him to sign up for Ralph Linton's first anthropology course at Wisconsin, and he quickly decided that anthropology's relativist appreciation of human diversity was the best fit with his interests and philosophy.

In 1930, Tax went to Algeria with Beloit College's Logan Museum expedition. The anthropology he was learning was Boasian four-fields in approach, and the archaeological focus of that project would provide field experiences and supplement the other areas he was studying in the classroom. The expedition crew lived and worked closely with the local people, and Tax spent Passover there with a family of Algerian Jews; he wrote about that experience for his first anthropological publication. His bachelor's thesis sought to integrate the cultural and biological aspects of anthropology, and he insisted that "therapeutic science" (applied anthropology) must rest on a foundation of "pure science." Tax then participated in Ruth Benedict's Summer Ethnology Program with the Mescalero Apaches, before beginning graduate work at the University of Chicago.

At Chicago, Tax worked with A. R. Radcliffe-Brown and Robert Redfield, but he continued his connection with Linton and always considered him as his main influence. Radcliffe-Brown supervised Tax's fieldwork in 1932–1933 with Central Algonquian groups (in 1933 accompanied by his new wife, Gertrude Jospe Katz Tax) and then in 1934 with the Fox (Meskwaki) Indians in Iowa, which formed the basis for his dissertation. During this work, Tax developed an "egoless" kinship diagram, using color-coded bars to show all terms of address between charted individuals, not just tracking through a designated "ego"—and taking advantage of a color-printing process developed by his brother.

Following his defense in 1934, Tax left for Guatemala with his wife to join Redfield's Middle American ethnographic project. That commitment, intended to complement Redfield's research in Yucatan, continued over the next 8 years and led to the publication of *Penny Capitalism* (1953) as well as the edited volume *Heritage of Conquest* (1952). The economic studies of this project were widely influential, although limited by delays in publication from the time of their original preparation. The project, and Tax in particular, also explored cultural persistence in a context of change, an early effort to qualify the more dominant models of acculturation and to recognize agency for all participants.

In 1940, Tax was given a research appointment at Chicago, and in 1942, he began teaching anthropologists in Mexico, including a 6-week field program in Chiapas. Those students, including liberal students exiled from Spain by Franco as well as Mexicans, raised again for Tax the necessity of considering the relationships between anthropological science and social problems. Also during this period, Sol and Gertrude's two daughters, Susan and Marianna, were born. Both spent much of their infancy in the field with their parents, and Susan later followed her father into the profession, as an anthropologist of Spain.

In 1945, Tax joined the faculty of the University of Chicago as associate professor; he was promoted to professor in 1948, served as assistant dean in the Division of Social Sciences in 1948–1953, and

chaired the anthropology department in 1955–1958. His initial charge had been to develop a new graduate curriculum in anthropology, which became the 3-year sequence of comprehensive training that characterized the Chicago program for more than a decade. He remained in Chicago for the rest of his career, retiring from teaching in 1976 but remaining active in campus life into the 1990s—including attending thesis defenses for many candidates working in Native American communities. Sol Tax died of a heart attack after a short illness on January 4, 1995.

From Field-Worker and Theorist to Organizer, Facilitator, and Editor

With his promotion in 1948, and the subsequent assumption of institutional obligations, Tax effectively shifted from a role as an active field-worker and anthropological theorist to one as an organizer and facilitator—although in his formulations, these roles were not as distinct or separate as many tend to see them. The many students who came to the university after the end of the Second World War needed teaching and training, and the discipline (from Tax's perspective) needed institutions and orientations to study and to seek to improve the problems facing so many people in the postwar world. Tax sought to contribute on both fronts, through the development of an applied field training program, on the one hand, and professional organizations and venues for publication, on the other.

In early 1948, Tax began plans to train graduate students in fieldwork methods with a specific focus on working with local communities to define social problems and develop possible solutions, returning to his earlier field site in Iowa to work with the Meskwaki Indians in a project that continued for more than a decade and came to be known as "The Fox Project." This was the origin for "action anthropology," a collaborative approach involving anthropologists with a group of people united around a project of solving some problem or problems. This approach is explicitly distinct from the more common modes of applied anthropology that work in the service of some particular agency or group. The distinctive quality of action anthropology was to explicitly demand that the anthropologist's scientific desire to learn something and the community's desire to solve problems were equally significant and neither could be inferior to the other. This approach was one of the first to insist on the agency of all participants, which was fundamental to the need for inclusivity. The project began with concerns around acculturation and assimilation but quickly recognized the importance of alternative value systems, the inevitability of conflict—both within the community and within and among the scholars—and the necessity of a dynamic, pragmatic, and dialogic approach to theory, grounded in the social realities of the field situation. Consensus building as used among the Native societies themselves was one of the models employed in the attempt to move away from hierarchical, paternalistic structures. Eventually, Tax came to view the ideas of assimilation and acculturation themselves as coming from colonialist sets of values that cast progress against preservation—regardless of which was valued positively—and are thus counter to fundamental rights of self-determination.

Concurrently with these developments, Tax pursued institution building for the discipline not just at Chicago but nationally and internationally. He was involved in the reorganization of the American Anthropological Association in 1945–1946 and served as associate editor (1947–1952) and editor (1953–1955) of *American Anthropologist*. He also edited three volumes of selected papers from the 29th International Congress of Americanists, *An Appraisal of Anthropology Today* (1953) from a Wenner-Gren Symposium (with Loren Eiseley, Irving Rouse, and Carl Voegelin), and *Evolution After Darwin* (1960) from the Darwin Centennial conference at the University of Chicago. In 1958, with support from the Wenner-Gren Foundation, Tax founded *Current Anthropology* as an explicitly internationalist journal with a holistic vision of the field and dedicated to scholarly dialogue, and he served as its editor until 1974. He also edited the Viking Fund Publications in Anthropology series from 1960 to 1968. These activities sought not only to develop and structure the discipline but also to encourage and facilitate the dissemination of anthropological methods, approaches, and findings to others within and beyond the discipline and the academy.

The two strands, action anthropology and institution building, came together in the 1961 American Indian Chicago Conference. Planning began in 1960 with the recognition that the time was ripe for a reconsideration of federal Indian policies in light of

the issues and problems in the Native communities. Tax attended the Denver convention of the National Congress of American Indians to pitch the idea, and it was met with strong support—including an offer of funding. Further funding was obtained from the American Anthropological Association and others. Tax defined his role as that of a coordinator rather than a "leader," and he worked with the Native scholar and activist D'Arcy McNickle in planning the event, seeking to draw in all possible factions and perspectives. In the end, about 600 people participated—more than 450 of them Indians, representing close to 100 tribes—plus several hundred members of the Chicago Native community who joined some of the events. In addition to plenary sessions and open debate, there was feasting and dancing on the Chicago Midway late into the night, contributing not only a social atmosphere but also the community spirit necessary for consensus building. The formal result was a Declaration of Indian Purpose that sought more active participation and self-rule in tribal–federal government relationships, but perhaps more important, the gathering helped develop personal and tribal networks that contributed to Pan-Indian political activism over the next decade and a half.

Beyond Native concerns, in the 1960s, Tax also was involved in more general issues of social conflict in the United States, including urban conflict and the war in Vietnam and its draft, and he organized conferences and edited publications in these areas as well. His last major professional activity was presiding over the Ninth International Congress of Anthropological and Ethnological Sciences in 1973 (where he also attempted a nonhierarchical, dialogic structure) and editing the 90+ volumes of papers in the *World Anthropology* series that ultimately came out of it. Along with *Current Anthropology* (and its dialogic "CA" treatment"), this can be seen as the foundation for today's projects of engaged, collaborative, and world anthropologies.

Frederic W. Gleach

See also Applied Anthropology; Benedict, Ruth F.; Linton, Ralph; Nash, June; Radcliffe-Brown, A. R.; Redfield, Robert; Wenner-Gren Foundation

Further Readings

Ablon, J. (1979). The American Indian Chicago Conference. In R. Hinshaw (Ed.), *Currents in anthropology: Essays in honor of Sol Tax* (pp. 445–456). The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

Blanchard, D. (1979). Beyond empathy: The emergence of an action anthropology in the life and career of Sol Tax. In R. Hinshaw (Ed.), *Currents in anthropology: Essays in honor of Sol Tax* (419–443). The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

Daubenmier, J. (2008). *The Meskwaki and the anthropologists: Action anthropology reconsidered*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Gearing, F., Netting, R. McC., & Peattie, L. R. (Eds.). (1960). *Documentary history of the Fox Project, 1948–1959: A program in action anthropology, directed by Sol Tax*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Department of Anthropology.

Rubinstein, R. A. (1991). A conversation with Sol Tax. *Current Anthropology, 32*(2), 175–183.

Smith, J. (2010). The political thought of Sol Tax: The principles of non-assimilation and self-government in action anthropology. *Histories of Anthropology Annual, 6,* 129–170.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (2000). "Do Good, Young Man": Sol Tax and the world mission of liberal democratic anthropology. In R. Handler (Ed.), *Excluded ancestors, inventible traditions: Essays toward a more inclusive history of anthropology* (pp. 171–264). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

Tax, S. (1988). Pride and puzzlement: A retro-introspective record of 60 years of anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 17,* 1–21.

Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis

Barbara Tedlock (1942–) and Dennis Tedlock (1939–), referred by those in the field as "the Tedlocks," are a team, one rarely found in academia, whose lives and research are as intertwined as they are separate. Having met at Berkeley with the discovery of a mutual interest in 1960s poetry and performance, they set on a course of study and publication remarkable for its insights into the poetics and aesthetics of society and culture. Early in their professions, they coedited *Teachings From the American Earth: Indian Religion and Philosophy* (1975), which was an international success, reissued in 1992, 2000, and 2007 and adopted as the main text in Native American studies around the world. *Teachings* heralded the Tedlocks' lifelong commitment to engaging students in the understanding and appreciation of Native American cultures. From 1993 to 1998,

the Tedlocks were editors-in-chief of the *American Anthropologist*, and they were awarded the 1997 American Anthropological Association President's Award for their distinctive leadership in forging a new vision for the journal—emphasizing anthropology's scientific *and* humanistic approaches.

Barbara Tedlock's scholarship covers a wide range of topics, from shamanism to dreaming, aesthetics to historiography, yet throughout she has shown a consistent commitment to understanding the cultural workings of symbols. Early in her career, she questioned the objectivity of the participant-observer and, along with like-minded colleagues, set out to reconfigure ethnographic epistemology with an alternative approach that combined the "participant as observed" and "narrative ethnography." Both the observed participant (the anthropologist as observer *and* observed) and narrative ethnography address the nature of the relationship between Self and Other, not only as it develops in the field but also as it plays out in the writing later. Tedlock made the scientific and moral claim that ethnographic data are coproduced, gathered in conversation with others, and filtered by the life experiences of the interlocutors within an interactive Self-Other dialogue. Reliable data arise from "intersubjective" rather than (intra-)objective field experiences. Tedlock countered her critics, who accused her of devaluing the objective goals of science, by arguing that social science could only advance if it combined, rather than segregated, the empirical orientation of science with the analytical, critical, and exploratory approach of the humanities.

In her book *Time and the Highland Maya* (1982), Tedlock turned the tables on traditional ethnography by introducing a problem-oriented approach to a genre that more characteristically organized its data into discrete categories—the economy, the household, religion, and the like. Wanting to understand how the Quiché Maya of Guatemala comprehended time, she soon discovered that timekeeping permeated all sectors of life in such a way that compartmentalization of the topic into a discrete chapter would be impossible. Debunking the accusation that "going native" meant risking one's claims to scientific insights, Tedlock, the granddaughter of an Ojibwa herbalist and midwife, gained direct access to timekeeping wisdom by apprenticing to a shaman, an expert in calendrical knowledge. After 4½ months of intense training that culminated in an indoctrination ceremony, she gained insight into how the highland Maya divine not only quantities but qualities of time, especially as they concern human affairs.

In *Dreaming: Anthropological and Psychological Interpretations* (1987), an edited volume, Tedlock wrests the discussion of dreams from the hands of Jungian and Freudian analysts, with their focus on the individual dreamer, universal archetypes, and the unreal nature of dreams. Noting that reality itself is "an indeterminate concept influenced by imaginative and symbolic processes" (p. 1), she posits the thesis that dreams in many cultures have complex communicative processes and social realities, and enjoy a status as high as or higher than other experiential memories, including those drawn from waking states. In *Dreaming*, Tedlock pushes the methodologies of the observer-observed out to include the Self, suggesting that there is value in having an awareness of one's own dreams and filters on reality while studying those of others.

In *The Beautiful and the Dangerous: Encounters With Zuni Indians* (1992), Tedlock takes on Western philosophy with the introduction of "ethnoaesthetics," a bold attempt to move discussions of beauty from the academy to the village: Just how does the Other see, create, and discuss it? She found that the Zuni do so with two terms, *tso'ya* ("beautiful") and *attanni* ("dangerous"), creating a dynamic that influences the composition of most designs, including the sacred Shalako wall designs. In *The Beautiful*, Tedlock, an artist herself, continues to explore the Self-Other relationship by bridging memoir to ethnography and by writing herself into the narrative. In *The Woman in the Shaman's Body: Reclaiming the Feminine in Religion and Medicine* (2005), Tedlock steps back from specific cases to scrutinize the historiography of shamanism and reshape the discussion of the worldwide phenomenon, long dominated by scholars (e.g., Géza Róheim, Mircea Eliade, Norman Whitten, and Robert Torrance) who claimed that shamanism was a predominantly male practice. Rereading earlier scholarship, while assembling her own field notes from Guatemala and Mongolia, other ethnographies on shamanism, and the mounting archaeological and paleontological evidence, Tedlock reaches the unorthodox conclusion that women were most likely the original shamans, not men, thereby challenging

more than 100 years of "objective" social science claims to the contrary.

Dennis Tedlock's scholarship has focused on language, particularly the literary complexities of Native American stories. Shifting the focus away from what he saw as the limitations of literary criticism, especially with its preference for printed texts and its Eurocentric notion of "great literature" (i.e., written and read in Indo-European languages), Tedlock's analysis of Native American storytelling has focused on the fluidity of prose in performance. In Tedlock's scenario—much like Barbara Tedlock's—truth is dialogical and intersubjective.

A published poet and the son of an English professor, Tedlock draws on Charles Olson, who in his essay "Projective Verse" (1950/1966) argued that poetic verse is best if it responds less to the traditional, poetic conventions of meter, rhyme, syntax, and semantics and more to the qualities of sound and the physics of breath. Native narratives, Tedlock argues, ask for different kinds of mindfulness when they embed formulaic genres of prayer, oratory, and poetic recitation within their shape-shifting figures. They raise the breath, voice, gestures, intonations, incantations, pauses, and silences of the raconteurs to an essential level, as they do the temporal and spatial layering of enactment, including audience engagement. Yes, the who, what, when, and where of the plot are critical to the meaning of a story, but their existence depends on the performance.

As early as the 1970s, Tedlock's treatment of storytelling challenged the structuralist assertion that myth, the core of many Native American tales, is a method of overcoming time. As Tedlock describes in *The Spoken Word and the Work of Interpretation* (1983), after listening to his recordings, a method distinct from the reading of transcripts, he discovered that the "*internal* timing of the performance . . . not only in its sequences but also in the proportions of its durations" (p. 5) and the syncopation of storytellers conversing with their characters, audience, and ethnographers were used in an effort to expand, explore, honor, and journey with time. For Tedlock, translation has been the key challenge. Not only do Native American stories originate in languages that are unrelated to English, but the multisensory and multitemporal aspects of their production must be turned into written notation, if it is to be replicable by readers.

Throughout his career, Tedlock has radicalized practices of translation by attending to performance as constitutive of both medium and message. His most notable achievement in this area is his edition of *The Popol Vuh: The Mayan Book of the Dawn of Life* (1985), recognized by critics as a *tour de force* in the interpretation of ancient texts and awarded the PEN Translation Prize in 1986. In it, Tedlock engages in *ethnopaleography*, a term he coined and introduced in *The Spoken Word and the Work of Interpretation.* Ethnopaleography refers to a practice of translation that takes a text (e.g., *the Popol Vuh*'s post-European contact, in alphabetically written form) back in time via contemporaneous resources (e.g., archaeological) to its possible original production (which, for *the Popol Vuh*, was likely enacted, as suggested by the narrator within the text). It does this while looking for clues in contemporary spoken arts to aid in the process. The result is Tedlock's reconnection of a two-dimensional written (500-year-old) text to its far older, presumably spoken, origin and to its multidimensional reconstitution into a breathing document.

For Tedlock, the art of translation is not only academic but political, a sentiment that was sown in his first publication, a magazine for poets, *Alcheringa/ Ethnopoetics: A First Magazine of the World's Tribal Poetries* (1970–1980), coedited with the poet Jerome Rothenberg, in which he reached out to contemporary Western poets to engage in experimental translation of works by marginalized artistic communities. In addition to a series of books that are as much *festschrifts* ("fixed scripture") as academic exegeses of native poetics, Tedlock has published a collection of his own poems, inspired by non-Western poets in content, meter, and metaphor, and a book of photographs, which examines the narrative of architecture and its quotidian uses. The sum of Tedlock's efforts in translation, while introducing new ethnographic data, methods, and theories to a scholarly readership, has, above all, been to honor the storytelling of Others, by placing it on an equal footing with Indo-European or Western literature.

The sum of both Dennis and Barbara Tedlock's efforts might be found in one of the missions of *Alcheringa/Ethnopoetics: A First Magazine of the World's Tribal Poetries*: "To combat cultural genocide in all its manifestations."

Liza Bakewell

See also Geertz, Clifford; Hymes, Dell; Róheim, Géza; Turner, Victor W.

Further Readings

Olson, C. (1966). Projective verse. In R. Creeley (Ed.), *Selected writings* (pp. 15–26). New York, NY: New Directions. (Original work published 1950)
Tedlock, B. (1982). *Time and the highland Maya.* Albuquerque: University of New Mexico.
———. (1987). *Dreaming: Anthropological and psychological interpretations.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
———. (1992). *The beautiful and the dangerous: Encounters with the Zuni Indians.* New York, NY: Viking.
———. (2005). *Woman in the shaman's body.* New York, NY: Bantam.
Tedlock, B., & Tedlock, D. (Eds.). (1975). *Teachings of the American earth: Indian religion and philosophy.* New York, NY: Liveright.
Tedlock, D. (Ed.). (1972). *Finding the center: Narrative poetry of the Zuni Indians.* New York, NY: Dial Press.
———. (1983). *The spoken word and the work of interpretation.* Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press.
———. (1985). *The Popol Vuh: The Mayan book of the dawn of life.* New York, NY: Simon & Schuster.
———. (2003). *Rabinal Achi: A Mayan drama of war and sacrifice.* Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.
———. (2010). *2000 years of Mayan literature.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Thick Description

Thick description is an approach to cultural analysis popularized by the anthropologist Clifford Geertz in the introductory essay of his 1973 book *The Interpretation of Cultures*. This method involves densely textured descriptions and explanations of social acts and activities, which strive to uncover the layers of cultural significance underlying them. This effort by social researchers to construct actor-oriented understandings of meaning is necessarily interpretive. Geertz's position that ethnography (cultural anthropology's principal method of inquiry) is fundamentally a project of thick description and his definition of culture (anthropology's chief organizing concept) as interconnected webs of significance render thick description a more or less complete explanation of what anthropologists should do—that is, endeavor to identify and represent the cultural contexts in which behaviors and the meanings behind them are embedded in order to figure out what people are *really* up to. Cultural anthropologists today recognize Geertz's articulation of thick description as a seminal moment in debates over the discipline's position as closer to either the social sciences or the humanities. Geertz's work also helped usher in the next generation of ethnographers who championed more literary approaches to ethnographic writing and analysis. The remainder of this entry expands on the notion of thick description through (a) a brief overview of its initial articulation by the philosopher Gilbert Ryle, (b) a discussion of the debates and criticisms surrounding Geertz's application of thick description, and (c) an elaboration on its significance and legacy.

Gilbert Ryle and Thick Description

Although Geertz introduced thick description as an important concept in anthropology, he in fact borrowed both the term and the best known example for explaining it from the Oxford philosopher Gilbert Ryle. Through a series of thought exercises, Ryle juxtaposed the idea of a "thin description"—that is, a surface-level explanation of a directly observable act—with a "thick description," which additionally presents the intentions of social actors as well as the reasons for and meanings behind their behavior. The most famous of these exercises considers the thinly described contracting of an eyelid as either an involuntary twitch or an intentional wink. Ryle demonstrates that a contracting eyelid only becomes recognizable and understood as a wink with an awareness of the cultural context and circumstance—both the social codes through which a wink takes on meaning and the various situations that might prompt its use. Methodologically, this distinction highlights the importance of ethnographic embeddedness. In other words, simply being present to observe and record an act will not suffice—any video camera can document a contracting eyelid; the researcher must be familiar enough with the social environment to (at least attempt to) understand the meanings that actors attribute to their actions.

Criticisms of Thick Description

Criticisms of thick description primarily come from two camps. Anthropologists committed to more

objective social scientific principles see Geertz as attempting to thrust social inquiry into an interpretive quagmire. For example, positivists such as Paul Shankman and materialists like Marvin Harris view thick description's lack of systematic analytical rigor as a form of anything-goes relativism and regard Geertz's thickly descriptive writing as excessively wordy ivory tower musings that don't say much of anything and make little to no effort to address the pressing issues facing contemporary society. On the other hand, researchers predisposed to an interpretive approach, including postmodernists like Vincent Crapanzano and Graham Watson, cite a number of ambiguities and/or contradictions in Geertz's explanation of thick description and how to go about doing it. One common source of confusion concerns the relationship between describing and explaining. Although scholars frequently reference "thick description" to mean the former, as an approach to cultural analysis it is incomplete without the latter. Explaining the circumstances, intentions, and meanings behind a wink may seem straightforward enough. However, for more elaborate cross-cultural situations—including most of the concrete examples of thick-description-at-work offered by Geertz—sorting out the layers of significance underlying different actors' actions and motivations involves a considerable imaginative leap. While Geertz appears comfortable in moving from descriptive accounts of cultural contexts to diagnostic understandings of the frames of interpretation that guide social actors' behaviors, critics such as Crapanzano argue that his explanations are often too neat to account for the inherent contradictions and tensions of lived reality and, furthermore, lack sufficient evidence for how he reaches his interpretive conclusions. To this end, Crapanzano characterizes Geertz's writing as deliberately illusive and perpetually inconclusive. Another ambiguity surrounds the difference between describing/explaining particular situations and generating knowledge about either the broader society or social life on the whole. Geertz clearly promotes thick description as an effort toward cultural theory building rather than a means of studying particular places. Yet, as such, he advocates for the intrinsically unfinished nature of cultural analysis, arguing that the aim of (interpretive) anthropology is to progressively refine what are inevitably unresolvable on-the-ground debates regarding the nature of social life.

Thick description, which came of age during a particularly acrimonious moment in anthropology, was unquestionably introduced in response to the scientific models that dominated the discipline during the 1950s and 1960s. It in turn influenced a generation of social researchers—within anthropology and beyond—suspicious of hard (social science) facts and dedicated to more literary approaches to ethnographic representations. This postmodern turn in anthropology, which reached its apex in the mid- to late 1990s, moved from a Geertzian understanding of social life as a text to be read and interpreted by researchers to the position that ethnographers not only describe/explain but, in fact, construct culture through the process of writing about it—advocating for a cultural anthropology that is very much akin to literary scholarship. Such attention to issues of writing and representation marked a monumental shift that, in chorus with important critiques coming from feminist and native anthropology, transformed the discipline during the final decades of the 20th century. As such, many contemporary anthropologists view Geertz's articulation of thick description as a turning point in repositioning anthropology closer to the humanities.

Anthony Kwame Harrison

See also Geertz, Clifford; Hermeneutics; Humanistic Anthropology; Postmodernism; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures*. New York, NY: Basic Books.

Hammersley, M. (2008). On thick description: Interpreting Clifford Geertz. In M. Hammersley (Ed.), *Questioning qualitative inquiry: Critical essays* (pp. 52–68). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

Ryle, G. (1971). The thinking of thoughts: What is "Le Penseur" doing? In G. Ryle (Ed.), *Collected papers: Vol. 2. Collected essays 1929–1968* (pp. 480–496). London, UK: Hutchinson.

Torres Straits Expedition

The 1898 Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to the Torres Straits was an important turning point in the development of British anthropology,

establishing fieldwork by trained observers as the central methodology for the nascent discipline. Several of its members played a leading role in the professionalization of anthropology in the United Kingdom and beyond.

The expedition was designed and led by Alfred Cort Haddon, a Cambridge-trained natural scientist, part-time lecturer in comparative anatomy at Cambridge, and professor of zoology at the Royal College of Science in Dublin. Haddon's anthropological interests developed during his 1888 field trip to the Torres Straits to study marine biology. Working closely with Islander assistants, he became fascinated with their culture and was concerned that traditional beliefs and practices were under threat.

Within a paradigm of salvage ethnography, Haddon returned as leader of the 1898 Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to the Torres Straits. The goals and expertise of the expedition members reflected an unprecedented comprehensive vision of anthropology. Haddon researched local customs, physical anthropology, and decorative art and oversaw the collection of artifacts. William Rivers, a medical doctor trained at St. Bartholomew's Hospital and a Cambridge lecturer in the physiology of the sense organs, focused on experimental psychology and physiology with an emphasis on vision. Rivers was assisted by Charles Myers, who had just completed his medical studies at Cambridge, and William McDougall, a physician at Saint Thomas's Hospital in London. Myers, a skillful musician, concentrated on hearing and music, while MacDougall studied tactile sensation. Charles Seligman, a specialist in tropical diseases at Saint Thomas's Hospital, researched native medicine and local pathology. Sydney Ray, a schoolteacher in East London, noted for his self-taught expertise on Oceanic languages, became the expedition's linguist, compiling word lists, constructing grammars, and assisting with translations. Haddon's student, Anthony Wilkin, took photographs under Haddon's direction and investigated house construction and land tenure.

The expedition members brought with them the latest equipment, methods, and skills developed in natural history, laboratory, and medical practice. The testing and recording apparatus included a color wheel, Holmgren's wool test for color blindness, eye charts, Francis Galton's whistle for testing aural perception, the two-point discrimination test for tactile sensitivity, visual perception diagrams, a recording wax cylinder phonograph, a magic lantern projector, two or more cameras, and a cinematograph. The expedition members' perceived ability to record, analyze, and disseminate the results of their research depended crucially on the adaptation of these objects and related techniques to the field.

The research agenda was comparative, with fieldwork divided between Mer in the far-eastern islands and Mabuiag in the western islands. Expedition members also conducted short stints of research in the Central District and Papuan Gulf regions of New Guinea. Following more than 7 months' fieldwork in the Torres Straits, the expedition was extended to Sarawak for 3 months at the invitation of District Resident Charles Hose. They returned to England in April 1899.

With the assistance of Islanders, the expedition's work generated an enormous corpus of information and materials, supplemented by correspondence with Islanders and other specialists for more than 20 years. The results included the six volumes of *The Reports of the Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to Torres Straits* (1901–1935), numerous scholarly and popular publications, a collection of approximately 1,000 artifacts, more than 500 photographs, 400 indigenous drawings, several short sequences of moving film, sound recordings, and genealogical charts. The sources of the expedition's data were acknowledged in the *Reports*, with named Islanders and other informants quoted verbatim.

The expedition's main contributions to anthropology were its methodological advances, consolidated by the "Cambridge school," Haddon, Rivers, Myers, and Seligman, in the 1912 British Association for the Advancement of Science edition of *Notes and Queries in Anthropology*. The expedition marked a clear break between the amateur and antiquarian of the 19th century and the development of the professional anthropologist who would combine field-based observation with theoretical analysis. A central concern was the diversity, complexity, and distribution of "racial" and cultural groups throughout Melanesia, with analysis based on a comparative study of the distribution of physical characteristics, languages, sociocultural traits, and material culture. The 1912 guidelines promoted "the intensive study of limited areas" and outlined how best to collect and record anthropological "facts" for comparative study and analysis. Photography was an essential tool, and the edition included a long appendix on

photographic techniques. A major innovation was Rivers's development of the "genealogical method," originally intended as a means of determining the influence of inherited traits for medical research; it became the basis for kinship studies well into the 20th century. Crucially, the results of the psychophysiological research indicated that the Islanders' capacities were similar to those of British test subjects, including the expedition members. Their claims that variants within a test group were greater than those between different groups demonstrated that there was no evolutionary hierarchy of sensory aptitudes. Ray's farsighted linguistic research included the local version of Pacific Pidgin English as well as a detailed study of the two indigenous languages of the Torres Straits, Meriam Mir and Kala Lagaw Ya. While Pidgin was generally scorned by his contemporaries as inferior English, it was later transformed into the creole Torres Straits Broken, which became the modern lingua franca of the region.

The expedition had a significant impact on the careers of some of its members, and they played leading roles in the institutionalization of anthropology within the United Kingdom and beyond. Haddon was appointed the first university lecturer in ethnology at Cambridge in 1901 and reader in 1909; in 1910, Seligman became the first lecturer and then, in 1913, professor of ethnology at the London School of Economics; and Rivers contributed to anthropological teaching in Cambridge alongside his psychological and physiological work. Haddon continued his Melanesian research throughout his lifetime, conducting fieldwork in the Papuan Gulf in 1914. Rivers developed his work on anthropological method and kinship during his Indian field research with the Todas, noted for their practice of fraternal polyandry. Seligman's coastal survey during the Cook Daniels Expedition to New Guinea in 1904 and Rivers's research through the islands of the New Hebrides and the Solomon Islands aboard the mission ship *The Southern Cross* in 1908 led to major monographs on Melanesian history. Seligman went on to conduct fieldwork in Sri Lanka in 1907–1908; and from 1909, his research with his wife Brenda focused on the Sudan.

Throughout their careers, the veterans of the Torres Straits Expedition energetically advocated for the professionalization of the discipline and its wide-ranging public value. Haddon, Rivers, and Seligman became fellows of the Royal Society; held leading positions in the main British learned societies, such as the Anthropological Institute and the British Association for the Advancement of Science; and published extensively. Along with Henry Balfour and Robert Marett at Oxford, they taught the first generations of professionally trained anthropologists in Britain, who were encouraged to undertake solitary intensive fieldwork and went on to establish a distinctive form of British social anthropology. Their most famous students included Alfred Reginald Radcliffe-Brown, Bronisław Malinowski, Edward Evan Evans-Pritchard, and Gregory Bateson.

The results of the expedition's work remain foundational for scholars working in the region and continue to be of great interest to Torres Straits Islanders. Information from the expedition's *Reports* has been used as crucial legal evidence in the Islanders' struggles for self-determination, leading to the landmark successes of the 1992 Murray Island Land Case, which overturned 200 years of *terra nullius* and marked the first time the Australian government recognized the prior ownership of land by an indigenous group. In 2010, the determination of the Torres Straits Regional Sea Claim established native title over 42,000 square kilometers of sea.

Anita Herle

See also Cambridge University; Diffusionism, Hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise*; Haddon, Alfred C.; Rivers, W. H. R.; Seligman, Charles Gabriel

Further Readings

Haddon, A. (Ed.). (1901–1935). *Reports of the Cambridge anthropological expedition to Torres Straits* (Vols. 1–6). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Herle, A. C., & Rouse, S. (Eds.). (1998). *Cambridge and the Torres Strait: Centenary essays on the 1898 expedition.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1995). *After Tylor: British social anthropology 1888–1951.* Madison, WI: Athalone.

Turner, Victor W.

Victor Witter Turner (1920–1983) was a Scottish-born British anthropologist and an innovative thinker. A prolific contributor to the anthropology

of ritual, symbol, and performance, Turner had a prodigious impact across a spectrum of disciplines from anthropology, religious, and theological studies to cultural, literary, and performance studies.

Life and Work

The son of Captain Norman Turner, an electronics engineer, and Violet Witter, founding member and actress of the Scottish National Theater, Turner was born in Glasgow, Scotland, on May 28, 1920. He studied poetry and classics at University College, London (1938–1941) and, as a conscientious objector, joined a noncombatant bomb disposal unit during World War II. In 1943, he married Edith Turner (with whom he had five children), who eventually became a respected anthropologist in her own right and was, according to Barbara Babcock, the "subjunctive mother" of his work. He completed a BA in social anthropology at University College in 1949, after which he studied for his doctorate under Max Gluckman at Manchester University (completed in 1955). Turner's theory of "social drama," forged in ethnographic research conducted among the Ndembu tribe in Northern Rhodesia (now Zambia), was introduced in his dissertation published as *Schism and Continuity in an African Society* (1957), which gained recognition as a unique entry in political and processual anthropology. After earning his doctorate, Turner became Simon Research Fellow, lecturer, and senior lecturer at Victoria University of Manchester (1957–1963), though he soon cut a path beyond the Manchester school and neo-Marxist analysis. In 1963, he left England with his family to take up a position as professor of anthropology and chairman of the Committee on African Studies at Cornell University in Ithaca, New York (1964–1968), having been previously (1961–1962) appointed a fellow at the Center for Advanced Studies in the Behavioral Sciences at Palo Alto, California. He later took up professorial positions in anthropology at the University of Chicago (1967–1977) and the University of Virginia in Charlottesville, where he was R. Kenan Professor of Anthropology and Religion and a member of the Center for Advanced Studies and the South Asia Program, until his death from a heart attack in 1983 (Turner also served as visiting professor of American studies at the University of Minnesota in 1980).

Turner's influences include, most directly, the process anthropology of Max Gluckman, with Émile Durkheim and Arnold van Gennep, Wilhelm Dilthey, and Mihaly Csikszentmihalyi offering foundations for conceptual innovations on ritual. Turner's ethnographic method—what he called "comparative symbology"—was shaped by the drama theorists Kenneth Burke and Erving Goffman, as well as by a uniquely poetic sensibility. Prospero, Rainer Maria Rilke, Herman Melville, Søren Kierkegaard, and others informed his theories, and he taught Blake and Dante alongside anthropological theory. A tireless interdisciplinarian and iconoclast, Turner was instrumental in the formation of the field of ritual studies. While carrying forward the Durkheimian understanding of "ritual" as an efficacious socio-religious phenomenon serving to transfer individuals/groups from the "profane" to the "sacred," Turner understood symbols, ritual, and indeed religion as processes in which individuals and collectivities were wholly engaged—where symbols possess ontological value.

While the literary and dramatic arts provided fertile conceptual material for Turner, he promoted anthropological models of ritual to assist comprehension of theater and other performance genres. This dialogue was critical to the formation of performance studies under the guidance of the performance theorist and experimental theater practitioner Richard Schechner, who was especially influenced by Turner's approach to ritual and performance. Turner's approach is outlined in numerous research articles and anthologies of essays and lectures, including those (re)published posthumously by Schechner in 1987 in *The Anthropology of Performance* and by Edith Turner in *On the Edge of the Bush: Anthropology as Experience* (1985) and *Blazing the Trail: Way Marks in the Exploration of Symbols* (1992). In particular, the article "Are There Universals of Performance in Myth, Ritual, and Drama?" offers a rare condensation of Turner's ideas on ritual and performance.

From his earliest and most memorable work on Ndembu ritual to later investigations of performance genres in postindustrial society, Turner pursued a processional understanding of society and culture. From cultic symbols to theater and leisure genres, the chief objective was to understand the ways in which symbolic units, social "fields," and aesthetic genres condense, evoke, and channel

meaning and emotion. While diverse in its scope, the entire corpus of Turner's work illustrates a fascination with the way sociocultural "structures" are re/produced—the formed, the performed. And rather than pursue structural-functionalist or depth psychological analyses of such processes, Turner proposed an "anthropology of experience" (with Edward Bruner). In this approach, meaning would be found in temporalized "structures of experience" (the *Erlibnise* of the German philosopher Wilhem Dilthey) rather than formal categories of thought, such as the "dualistic rigor mortis" of Lévi-Strauss's structuralism.

Ndembu Ritual Symbolism

Turner gained a reputation through his early immersion in the social and semantic complexity of rituals, largely through his ethnography of the Ndembu. His path-breaking analysis of the sensory and ideological character of symbols in his 1967 essay "Symbols in Ndembu Ritual" is a primary example of this process and led to a better understanding of how rituals are effective and transformative. This and other essays published in *A Forest of Symbols* (1967) clarified the method of analysis. Turner identified seasonal and contingent ritual, with the latter including "life crisis" rituals and "rituals of affliction." Symbols in these rituals were identified to possess several attributes: *multivocality or polysemy* (possessing multiple referents), *unification of apparently disparate significata* (disparate, even contradictory meanings are interconnected by analogy or by association), and *polarization of significata* (symbols possess two poles of meaning: the ideological and sensory). Turner also sought to understand the various properties (i.e., manifest, latent, and hidden meanings) of symbols—the observation of which demonstrated influence from Freud's *The Interpretation of Dreams*—and approached the study of symbols employing three "analytical frames": (1) *exegetical*, where meaning is supplied by those inside the ritual system; (2) *operational*, where meaning is derived from the use made of the symbol; and (3) *positional*, where meaning derives from the relationship of the symbol to other symbols in the total ritual system. Essays found in *The Forest of Symbols*, such as "*Mukanda:* The Rite of Circumcision" and "*Muchona*, the Hornet" are richly detailed analyses of the complex symbolic life among the Ndembu. Another essay in that volume, "Color Classification in Ndembu Ritual: A Problem in Primitive Classification," introduced the black-white-red triad fundamental to the semiotics of color and the pattern of color mediations that came to be known as "the Turner effect."

In the 1960s, Turner earned world renown as a symbolic anthropologist. Perhaps his greatest achievement remains the early monograph *Chihamba, the White Spirit: A Ritual Drama of the Ndembu*. Originally published in 1962 (and republished in 1975), this classic analysis of the symbolic significance of the "ritual of affliction," *Chihamba*, offers, with assistance from the likes of Melville's *Moby Dick*, Turner's key theological statement on religion and the beginnings of his "comparative symbology." Providing further evidence of Turner's method, *The Drums of Affliction* (1968) analyzed divination, rituals of affliction, and female initiation ritual in terms of the wider field of social and kinship relations, demonstrating Turner's ongoing interest in the total political field in which individual actors are implicated.

Liminality, Drama, and Redress

As outlined in essays in *The Ritual Process* (1969) and *Dramas, Fields and Metaphors* (1974), society is the product of the dialectical historical relationship between "structure" (society's status and role differentiation, behavioral norms, and cognitive rules) and "antistructure" (those regions of experience in culture—outside, in between, and below structure). In this dialectic, "fixed" and "floating worlds" correspond with "indicative" and "subjunctive moods." This dramatic scheme reveals a structural processualism, with such "worlds" or "moods" deemed to be necessary sources of *resolution* (or redress). The explorations in later work blazed trails across the margins and vital thresholds of dissolution where cultural order is said to be re/constituted. These moments were "liminal," a term rooted in the Latin *limen* ("threshold"), used by Arnold van Gennep to describe the central phase in his tripartite (separation, transition, and reincorporation) rites-of-passage model, and richly outlined in Turner's 1967 essay "Betwixt and Between: The Liminal Period in *Rites de Passage*."

Liminality, a universal condition of growth and potential novelty in which individuals, societies, and

cultures are periodically implicated, would become the leitmotif in Turner's philosophy. Significantly, liminal conditions are both provisional of a cultural means of generating variability and facilitate the continuity of proved values and norms. Thus, the limen would be a protostructural vehicle of cultural re/creation. Since liminality is essentially an arena of recombinant indeterminacy, "a storehouse of possibility," it was understood to be "the realm of primitive hypothesis." Turner's career became an exercise in enunciating and unpacking this realm, elaborating on the limen's diverse manifestations and implications for diverse audiences, among them psychologists and neurobiologists. Later in his life, Turner strove to include studies of the brain in a holistic approach to culture. In his 1985 essay "The New Neurosociology," he passed conjecture on the dramatic—and evolutionary—significance of tensions between the brain's hemispheres.

Throughout his life, then, Turner identified the "form" of social process as agonistic or "dramatic." Based on his research on the role of ritual in Ndembu conflict resolution and in affliction cults, Turner argued that the redressive nature of such social processes found cultural form in the spectrum of performance genres (or "cultural dramas"). And these performances—from rites and festivals to sports events, theater, film, and television, and indeed literature—in turn provide fuel for renewed social drama. Life and art would imitate each other according to a perpetual cultural feedback mechanism. Like Gregory Bateson's "ritual frames" or Clifford Geertz's "metasocial commentaries," Turner argued that social performances facilitated collective inquiry into the historical and daily exigencies and contradictions of social existence. For Turner, variant fields of performance from tribal ritual to global leisure genres demonstrate the perennial reliance of culture on frameworks of meaningful action where subjects may become the object of their own awareness. Performances may then themselves be "designs for living" and active agencies of change. They may also be contexts in which tradition is installed in a community of believers, creating what Turner called "communitas," as is the case with pilgrimage, to which the Turners, as practicing Catholics, devoted considerable attention in the 1970s.

Turner embraced a "comparative symbology" involving interdisciplinary analyses of traditional ritual and the emergent symbolic genres of postindustrial societies, as evidenced by the essays in *From Ritual to Theatre: The Human Seriousness of Play* (1982). In this endeavor, "liminality" itself underwent a conceptual transition, one aptly characterized by uncertainty. While the concept had been applied to illuminate the central phases of transition rites common to small-scale and agrarian societies, gazing on the "floating worlds" of industrial and predominantly capitalist societies with a complex social and economic division of labor, Turner detected the presence of "quasi-liminal," or "liminoid," elements in performance. While liminal cultural phenomena reveal the collective, integrated, and obligatory ritual action of premodernity, shaped by new media technologies, rationalization, and bureaucracy, liminoid leisure genres are voluntary, plural, fragmentary, and experimental.

Turner's liminal/liminoid distinction, was provocative and insightful, albeit speculative and contradictory. These somewhat confusing categories are illustrative of the legacy of Durkheim and the complex fate of the sacred in modernity. On occasion, Turner appears to have recognized the loss, or attenuation, and at other times, the resilience, or rebirth, of *the sacred* as expressed in ritual form. In the former narrative, the decline of ritual, or "deliminalization," is the tragic consequence of secularization. In modern times, where societies have grown in scale and complexity, as the division of labor has increased and as work and leisure spheres became more clearly demarcated, ritual's power and potential for transformation is said to have been denuded. It is largely the perceived shift from collective, obligatory social bonds—as seen in rites of passage—to individual voluntary association that has foreshadowed and accompanied the emergence of aesthetic, fragmentary, and liminoid genres. However, Turner was also keen, especially in later writing, to demonstrate that the symbolic action of premodernity could be observed in his time—albeit through a miasmic ensemble of magnifying and distorting lenses such as film and sports events. But not only was liminal ritual residual, strong pockets of revival were detected in the liminoid genres (especially the new theater, to which the Turners themselves were committed). In this project, the tragic *decline* of ritual (the sacred) remains a key intellectual investment, forming the necessary background to its *resurgence* in performance genres. For Turner, the depiction of modern secularization became a

strategic narrative—a condition out of which the sacred (the authentic liminal) was rediscovered or relived. While modern history appeared to be the stage for an epic drama of the kind where performance itself was performing tragic and heroic roles, in Turner's ontohistorical melodrama, in one way or another—in fragmented and/or resurgent forms—the sacred lingered.

The problem with this historical perspective (from liminal to liminoid) is that by comparing contemporary ritual performance with genuine and presumably premodern "liminal" actions, of which they may represent a remnant, contemporary symbolism may be deprived of significance, "religious" or otherwise. This circumstance has required rethinking in light of the development of digital, virtual, and communication technologies and of new spiritualities and alternative religions. As global media technologies (from satellites and mobile/smart phones to virtual digital media) have transformed the lives of global populations, enabling and enhancing immediacy, social spontaneity, and belonging across distances, new models have been sought. Contemporary cultural theorists have indeed jettisoned the liminal/liminoid distinction. Inspired by Turner, Michel Foucault, and Gilles Deleuze and Félix Guattari, in *Perform or Else: From Discipline to Performance* (2001), Jon McKenzie reconfigures liminality in the digital age. Within this perspective, the work/play and labor/leisure distinctions are recognized to have dissolved. McKenzie's work also addresses the imperative power of the liminal and thereby attempts to correct the tendency within American performance studies whereby the conflation of liminality with resistance or liberation led to its representation as that discipline's "metamodel" of cultural performance, at the expense of research into the ways individuals and societies are disciplined. Attention to the ways rituals—from ceremonies of state to cinema—control or manage hegemonic, patriarchal, or disciplinary power returns us to the re/creation pivotal to Turner's thesis.

Legacy and Contemporary Relevance

Turner was a cultural theorist occupying an ambiguous place between modern and postmodern thought. The work the Turners performed among the Ndembu remains landmark ethnography, but his later work with the semiotic, subjunctive, and reflexive characteristics peculiar to ritual, festival, theater, and narrative genres helped shape the fields of performance studies and literary criticism. Furthermore, his contention that religion has moved into the leisure sphere attracted students of religion, tourism, popular culture, and media.

Scrutiny of Turner's work not long after his death demonstrated his critics' mistrust of transcendental principles and universal absolutes. But while the utopian concept of "communitas" attracted controversy and the resolutionary process implicit in "social drama" contrasts with instances where rituals fail or become illogical, or where meaning remains elusive, observers have returned to Turner to retrain the anthropological gaze on, for instance, the office workplace, family therapy, rave and other dance cultures, queer cultures, tourism behavior, and emergency structures arising in the wake of natural disasters. And with varying faithfulness to or comprehension of the intended logic, researchers have located an almost ephemeral liminality: in sex, illness, consulting activity, narrative genres, media events, and sites of media production; in consumption behavior and shopping malls; in transpersonal states of consciousness; in "cyborg" subjectivities; and in the cybercommunication of digitally virtual spaces. It is also apparent that, in the United States and elsewhere, new ritual practitioners have adopted the conceptual architecture provided by Turnerian universalisms to legitimate their own ritualized inventions.

Graham St John

See also Bateson, Gregory; Durkheim, Émile; Geertz, Clifford; Gennep, Arnold van; Gluckman, Max; Symbolic and Interpretive Anthropology

Further Readings

Ashley, K. (Ed.). (1990). *Victor Turner and the construction of cultural criticism: Between literature and anthropology.* Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Babcock, B., & MacAloon, J. J. (1987). Victor W. Turner (1920–1983): Commemorative essay. *Semiotica, 65* (1–2), 1–27.

Deflem, M. (1991). Ritual, anti-structure, and religion: A discussion of Victor Turner's processual symbolic analysis. *Journal for the Scientific Study of Religion, 30*(1), 1–25.

Engelke, M. (2004). "The Endless Conversation": Fieldwork, writing, and the marriage of Victor and Edith

Turner. In R. Handler (Ed.), *History of anthropology: Vol. 10. Significant others: Essays on professional and interpersonal relationships in anthropology* (pp. 6–50). Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

St John, G. (2008). *Victor Turner and contemporary cultural performance*. New York, NY: Berghahn.

Turner, E. (Ed.). (1985). *On the edge of the bush: Anthropology as experience*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press.

———. (Ed.). (1992). *Blazing the trail: Way marks in the exploration of symbols*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press.

———. (2006). *Heart of lightness: The life story of an anthropologist*. New York, NY: Berghahn.

Turner, V. (1967). Betwixt and between: The liminal period in *rites de passage*. In *The forest of symbols: Aspects of Ndembu ritual* (pp. 93–111). Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

———. (1967). *The forest of symbols: Aspects of Ndembu ritual*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

———. (1969). *The ritual process: Structure and anti-structure*. Chicago, IL: Aldine.

———. (1974). *Dramas, fields, and metaphors: Symbolic action in human society*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

———. (1975). *Revelation and divination in Ndembu ritual*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

———. (1977). Symbols in African ritual. In J. L. Dolgin, D. S. Kemnitzer, & D. M. Schneider (Eds.), *Symbolic anthropology: A reader in the study of symbols and meanings* (pp. 183–194). New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

———. (1982). *From ritual to theatre: The human seriousness of play*. New York, NY: Performing Arts Journal.

———. (1985). Are there universals of performance in myth, ritual, and drama? In E. Turner (Ed.), *On the edge of the bush: Anthropology as experience* (pp. 291–301). Tucson: University of Arizona Press.

Tyler, Stephen A.

Stephen A. Tyler (1932–), the American anthropologist, linguist, and rhetorician, is among the most important figures of contemporary American anthropology.

Biography and Major Works

Tyler was born in Hartford, Iowa. He is married to Martha G. Tyler and has a daughter, Alison Elisabeth Tyler. After serving in the Air Force during the Korean War, Tyler enrolled at Simpson College and later received his master's and doctorate degrees from Stanford University. His early influences came from Asian studies and the culture and personality approaches of the anthropologists Douglas Haring, Ruth Benedict, and Gregory Bateson. He taught at the University of California, Davis; University of California, Berkeley; and Tulane University. In 1970, he joined the faculty at Rice University and later held the Herbert S. Autrey endowed chair in anthropology and linguistics. He retired in 2011.

Tyler conducted fieldwork among the Koyas of India. This work is detailed in *India: An Anthropological Perspective* (1973) and *Koya: An Outline Grammar* (1969). The former is an ethnological overview of the people and cultures of India and the latter an extensive descriptive linguistic study of the Koya (Gommu dialect). During this period, he also undertook a formal study of kinship, with emphasis on the Koya and Dravidian kinship systems. Tyler was a participant in the School of American Research seminar that led to the publication of *Writing Culture* (Clifford & Marcus, 1986), and he was famously pictured on the cover of the same text in an image from his 1963 fieldwork among the Koya.

In 1969, Tyler edited *Cognitive Anthropology*—a collection that would become one of the definitive texts of the field called cognitive anthropology that Tyler helped to popularize. His book *The Said and the Unsaid: Mind, Meaning, and Culture* (1978) challenged formalist approaches to language and argued for linguistic and hermeneutical understandings that emphasized the context of language. His most influential work is *The Unspeakable: Discourse, Dialogue, and Rhetoric in the Postmodern World* (1987)—a text that established a theoretical foundation for notions of postmodern anthropology. Tyler also was associate editor of *The Annual Review of Anthropology* (1973–1992), associate editor of *American Ethnologist* (1973–1976), associate editor of *Journal of Anthropological Research* (1981–2010), associate editor of *Cultural Anthropology* (1984–1993), and editor (with Ivo Strecker) of Volumes 2 and 3 of *Rhetoric and Culture*. He has published widely in numerous journals on topics including ethnographic method, kinship, rhetorical theory, and linguistics.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Tyler's contributions to anthropology are significant and especially relevant in popularizing the subfield of cognitive anthropology and, much later, stimulating the critical, sometimes called postmodern, wing of contemporary anthropology.

Cognitive Anthropology

In 1969, Stephen A. Tyler edited the collection *Cognitive Anthropology* and helped popularize the influential theoretical approach known as cognitive anthropology. This collection offered a sampling of the various methods of the approach—folk typologies, ethnosemantics, formal analysis, componential analysis, ethnoscience, and sociolinguistics—and suggested a new trajectory for achieving the emic, or insider's, view of culture. Tyler argued in the book's introduction that anthropologists until then had been more concerned with the culture of anthropology than with the actual cultures that were being studied. Cognitive anthropology sought to understand how people conceptualize their own cultures by focusing on the organizing principles that underlie behavior and reside in the mind. Tyler encouraged anthropologists to ask what phenomena are important for people of a particular culture and how these people organize these phenomena. Cognitive anthropology offered substantial reworkings of the concepts of culture and ethnography, and its methods were distinctive for their formal scientific use of mathematics and logic.

Critique of Cognitive Anthropology

In a manner appropriate to a good postmodernist, Stephen A. Tyler helped found a school of anthropological thought—cognitive anthropology—that he subsequently, many years later, helped to critique and partially dismantle. Following a close reading of Ludwig Wittgenstein's *Philosophical Investigations* (1953), Tyler discovered major flaws in many of the fundamental principles of cognitive anthropology. Ultimately, he felt that the cognitive anthropology movement had become too concerned with a one-dimensional, referential notion of language that discounted the many complexities of language and culture. Tyler also posited that cognitive anthropology had become narrow, specialized, and focused solely on lexical fields and, over time, had become co-opted by cognitive studies.

Hermeneutics, Linguistics, and Rhetoric

As a linguistic anthropologist, Tyler published important work on Dravidian language and in the philosophical aspects of language and rhetoric. Many of his philosophical ideas in this area—including the middle voice (in which the subject is neither the agent nor the acted on, instead the subject actively and reflexively acts on itself), the idea of pictorial and performative communication, the critique of realist means of communication, and the idea of parody as a critical and textual device—have influenced the contemporary understandings of anthropological fieldwork and textuality. His explicit attention to issues of discourse, interpretation, and representation provided important innovation in the discussions of ethnography associated with *Writing Culture*.

Thought Picture

A common element in Tyler's teaching and, especially his academic publications, is the use of what he called the *thought picture*. For Tyler, the thought picture represents a critical yet playful use of what could be called traditionally a diagram or illustration. He has stated that the use of the thought picture serves two vital purposes. One is to offer a critique of the prevalence of the visual as the primary mode of representation and understanding in Western thought. The second is to suggest a form of writing that takes seriously the idea of the picture. In his 1995 essay "Prolegomena to the Next Linguistics," Tyler argues for an approach to language that moves away from alphabetic writing to picto writing (the hierogram, rebus, etc.). For Tyler, the thought picture is a mechanism that has both methodological and epistemological purposes.

Postmodern Ethnography and Evocation

Tyler's criticisms of Western scientific methods and modernist discourse resulted in one of the most significant concepts of contemporary postmodern anthropology—evocation. His notion of evocation draws on the Latin root "voc-" which means to voice, speak out, or speak for. According to Tyler, the foundation of evocation is not trying to get a reader to do something, not trying to describe something, and not making claims about knowing something. Instead, evocation hinges on the idea of moving ethnography beyond representation. Evocation

is foundational to one of Tyler's most provocative contributions to contemporary anthropology—his notion of postmodern ethnography. The foundations of his ideas appeared first in Tyler's essay "Post-Modern Ethnography: From Document of the Occult to Occult Document" in *Writing Culture*. Of the many chapters that appeared in the monumentally influential *Writing Culture*, only Tyler's suggested a practical and applicable future for postmodern ethnography. In fact, he has suggested that many of the texts that have purported to be postmodern in their approaches are only simple reworkings of modernist ethnography that retain a modernist orientation. According to Tyler, a postmodern ethnography is a cooperative document that contains fragments of speech and discourse that aim to create an evocative and therapeutic effect in the mind of the reader. Tyler has not specified specific exemplars of postmodern ethnography, but he has argued for a number of qualities that would move ethnography in a postmodern direction. These include a crosscutting of textual genres (including a merging of forms of scientific writing with forms of poetic writing); the use of nonlinear textual forms (including electronic means); the advocacy of pictorial writing, the use of the middle voice; explicit attention to the audience of ethnographic texts; the development of reflexivity and self-conscious textual forms, cooperative texts, countertexts with critical responses, polyphonic texts, and fragmentary writing approaches; an emergent holism; and restorations of the commonsense world. While these ideas are fragmentary, they are inspirational in terms of the current (and future) impacts on ethnography. As Tyler said in his 1987 book *The Unspeakable: Discourse, Dialogue, and Rhetoric in the Postmodern World*, postmodern ethnography is a vehicle of mediation, not a map of knowledge.

Tyler's Legacy

Tyler's work has offered profound and provocative inspirations for cultural anthropology. Tyler is among a small group of anthropologists who have inspired changes within the discipline that range from the extremes of scientific method to humanistic and aesthetic postmodernism. Tyler's critics have been many. Many of the reviews of his influential "Post-Modern Ethnography: From Document of the Occult to Occult Document," for example, have focused on his appeal to poetics, his denial of an explicit political voice for ethnography, his linguistic and theoretical complexity, and his rejection of the many foundations of modernist ethnography. To these critics, Tyler has envisioned a postmodern approach to ethnography and anthropology that necessitates the rejection of the classical methodological and representational approaches of the discipline and the adoption of entirely new and disturbing approaches. Especially for students new to the discipline and to graduate students in search of a provocative stimulus for their ethnographic projects, Tyler's work will perhaps have the most lasting influence.

Scott A. Lukas

See also Clifford, James; Cognitive Anthropology; Marcus, George; Postmodernism

Further Readings

Clifford, J., & Marcus, G. E. (Eds.). (1986). *Writing culture: The poetics and politics of ethnography.* Berkeley: University of California Press.

Goode, S. (1993, March 15). The decline and fall of anthropology: Controversy over the quantitative and qualitative measure of societies. *Insight on the News, 9*.

Lukas, S. A. (1996). Beyond alphabets: An interview with Stephen A. Tyler. *POMO Magazine, 2*(1), 11–30.

Tyler, S. A. (Ed.). (1969). *Cognitive anthropology.* New York, NY: Holt, Rinehart, & Winston.

———. (1969). *Koya: An outline grammar (Gommu dialect)*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

———. (1973). *India: An anthropological perspective.* Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland.

———. (1978). *The said and the unsaid: Mind, meaning and culture*. New York, NY: Academic Press.

———. (1987). *The unspeakable: Discourse, dialogue, and rhetoric in the postmodern world.* Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

———. (1994). Mneme critique of cognitive studies. *Language Sciences, 16*(1), 139–159.

———. (1995). The middle voice: The influence of postmodernism on empirical research in anthropology. In K. Geuijen, D. Raven, & J. de Wolf (Eds.), *Post-modernism and anthropology.* Assen, Netherlands: Van Gorcum.

———. (1995). Prolegomena to the next linguistics. In P. W. Davis (Ed.), *Alternative linguistics: Descriptive and theoretical modes.* Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

———. (1998). Them others: Voices without mirrors. *Paideuma, 44,* 31–50.
Wittgenstein, L. (1953). *Philosophical investigations.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell.

Tylor, Edward Burnett

Sir Edward Burnett (E. B.) Tylor (1832–1917) is widely considered to be among the founders of anthropology.

Brief Biography

Tylor was the fifth child and third son of Harriet Skipper and Joseph Tylor. His parents were well-off industrialists, the owners of a brass foundry in London and coal mines in the Rhondda valley of Wales. The Tylors were members of The Society of Friends (Quakers), and since, at that time, attending Oxford or Cambridge required a student to sign the "thirty-nine articles" of faith of the Anglican Church, education at these institutions was not available to them or their children. Instead, Tylor attended Grove House, a Quaker boarding school in London (Tottenham). At the age of 16, Tylor apprenticed in his father's brass factory, which was managed by his older brother Alfred. Alfred, 10 years older than Edward and also educated at Grove, became a noted geologist. Elected a fellow of the Geological Society, in 1851, Alfred Tylor was a juror at the Crystal Palace exhibition, where copper coal scoops produced by the family firm were also displayed. George Stocking speculates that E. B. Tylor's interests in both progressive evolutionary change and the wide variety of human societies may well have been stimulated by his attendance at this exhibition.

Tylor worked in the family business for only 6 years. In 1854, he was diagnosed with tuberculosis and sent to the southern United States to recuperate. In 1856, in far better health, he traveled to Havana, Cuba, where by chance he met Henry Christy, a wealthy fellow Quaker, who was Tylor's senior by more than 20 years. Christy was interested in archaeology, hunter-gatherer societies, and amassing collections of ethnographic artifacts. Christy had traveled to southwest Asia, Scandinavia, and the Americas building his collections, and he now invited Tylor to join him on a 4-month tour of Mexico. This trip formed the basis for Tylor's first book, *Anahuac: or Mexico and the Mexicans, Ancient and Modern* (1861). Tylor's association with Christy continued until the latter's death in 1865, and it was important as Christy was involved in critical archaeological discoveries in Europe in the 1860s, particularly in the caves in the Dordogne, in southern France.

Returning to England, he married Anna Fox in 1858. Support from his older brother, who was by now extremely wealthy, allowed Tylor to devote himself to his interest in the development of human society and the progress of civilization. This resulted in the 1865 publication of *Researches Into the Early History of Mankind and the Development of Civilization* and, in 1871, *Primitive Culture: Researches Into the Development of Mythology, Philosophy, Religion, Language, Art and Custom*. *Primitive Culture* is generally considered Tylor's most important work.

Tylor's scholarship was well received, and in 1871, he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. Oxford University awarded him an honorary doctorate in 1875 and appointed him keeper of the University Museum in 1883. He was appointed a reader in anthropology in 1884 and became the first person to hold a professorial chair in anthropology at Oxford in 1896.

Through much of this era, Tylor remained extremely active. He investigated spiritualists around London in 1872 and traveled again to the United States in 1884. He published an introductory textbook, *Anthropology: An Introduction to the Study of Man and Civilization*, in 1881, as well as numerous journal articles on diverse topics including marriage customs, religion, Native American games, and Tasmanian stone implements. Tylor was also the most important voice on the British Association for the Advancement of Science committee that, in 1874, produced *Notes and Queries on Anthropology*, a work designed to allow researchers as well as colonial administrators, missionaries, and travelers to collect ethnographic data. *Notes and Queries* was widely used over the next half-century, and this was one factor that gave Tylor's ideas far-reaching impact. Between 1889 and 1891, Tylor also gave the prestigious Gifford Lectures in Aberdeen; however, though he worked at preparing these for publication for a decade, they never appeared in published form.

Tylor retired in 1909, and though he was knighted in 1912, he was largely inactive. He seems to have

been increasingly ill and perhaps confused (sources speak of failing mental capacities). He died in 1917 and was survived by his wife of almost 60 years. They had no children.

Tylor's Contributions

The remainder of this entry examines several aspects of Tylor's work. It begins with a discussion of Tylor's understanding of evolution and continues with sections on psychic unity, comparative method, and survivals; animism and the evolution of religion; Tylor's definition of culture; Tylor and fieldwork; and critiques of Tylor. It concludes with a brief assessment of Tylor's contribution to anthropology and his idea of anthropology as a "reformer's science."

Tylor and Evolution

George Stocking has noted that issues concerning the nature and antiquity of humanity were central intellectual concerns in Europe in the 1860s. Although ideas of human progress had played a strong role in European intellectual currents since the mid-18th century, the older notion of degenerationism was still strong. Degenerationists held that the variety of human societies was explained by differential historical degeneration from a more perfect state. The publication of *On the Origin of Species* not only raised the profile of the debate between degenerationists and progressivists but also revived the possibility of polygenesis, the idea that different groups of humanity had different biological origins. In this intellectual context, Tylor stood as a firm supporter of monogenesis and progressivism. The first of these may well have been inspired by his humanitarian and Quaker background, particularly the Quaker notion that "there is that of God in every person." The second seems to have had numerous sources, including his reading of German social evolutionism, his friendship with Christy, also an ardent progressivist, and his understanding of new archaeological discoveries. Tylor's social milieu probably played a key role as well: As the scion of a family that was involved in industry and had become wealthy within the past two generations, Tylor was probably predisposed to believe in progress. Many supporters of degenerationism came from the aristocracy or clergy, or sometimes both.

Tylor's ideas of evolution should be clearly distinguished from Darwin's. In the preface to the second edition of *Primitive Culture*, Tylor claims that his ideas were developed without reference to Darwin, and there is no reason to doubt him. While Darwinian evolution is based around competition and reproductive success, these elements are almost totally lacking in Tylor's work. Instead, Tylor follows Auguste Comte and other progressivist philosophers in seeing evolution as the sum result of human intellectual experiences. These drive humanity through a series of fixed states to ever greater degrees of rationality. Tylor argued that humanity had begun in a state of primitive savagery and progressed to civilization. Although Tylor believed that his own society was the most highly evolved and most civilized of its day, he thought that it still contained many irrational elements that progress would eventually eliminate.

Psychic Unity, Comparative Method, and Survivals

Tylor's belief in monogenism meant that he believed that all human brains followed the same course of development, an idea often referred to as psychic unity. Tylor, following the thinking of the German ethnologist Adolf Bastian, believed that the widespread presence of similar material artifacts in diverse areas of the world proved the uniform nature of human thinking. He argued that all humans would solve in similar ways the problems their societies and environments presented to them. Each new social order presented problems that had to be solved with increasing rationality. Differences between societies resulted from the fact that some societies had progressed farther along this pathway than other societies. However, the fact that humanity was a single species and that human thinking ran along predictable pathways meant that all societies would follow the same course of progress. Thus, for Tylor and other scholars of his era, such as Lewis Henry Morgan, psychic unity was based in biology but tied to the idea that humanity had to follow a single course of progressive social development.

Given Tylor's belief in psychic unity and evolutionary progress, the general goal of anthropology seemed clear: Using examples from currently existing societies as well as those recorded in the literature, particularly ancient texts, anthropologists should strive to show examples of every stage of human development. The comparative method was the key tool for doing this. The traits and characteristics of

societies could be compared with one another to determine where each fit on the evolutionary scale. A clear path from savagery to civilization could then be delineated. Note that the comparative method is different from simply comparing one society with another; it assumes a single path of progress followed by all societies and ranks societies as more or less evolved depending on their position relative to one another. In this view, indigenous societies were considered to be living fossils. They were examples of earlier stages of social evolution.

Tracing the history of social customs was critical to reconstructing the evolutionary pathways of humanity. Tylor recognized the importance of diffusion, famously writing that "civilization is a plant much oftener propagated than developed"; however, independent invention and inheritance were far more critical to his argument. Although he focused on diffusion in *Researches into the Early History of Mankind* and in some later work, *Primitive Culture* emphasized both independent invention and the doctrine of survivals.

The notion of survivals is particularly critical to Tylor's methodology. A "survival" is a material trait or a social custom existing in a society that had no clear, logical use and necessity within that society. For example, in *Anthropology* (1881), Tylor describes the ways in which the specific styles of the formal fashions of his day had practical origins, largely in the demands of horsemanship. He writes that the formal evening dress coat had its origins in "the old-fashioned practical coat in which a man rode and worked." For Tylor, such customs were relics of earlier stages of society. On the one hand, since they were irrational, they would eventually evolve out of society, but on the other, they provided information about the society's earlier stages and could be a key tool in reconstructing its evolutionary history and in determining its place in the evolutionary hierarchy.

Animism and the Evolution of Religion

Much of *Primitive Culture*, including the final third of Volume 1 and all of Volume 2, is devoted to a discussion of mythology, animism, and religious ritual. Tylor defines animism as "the general belief in spiritual beings" and refers to it as the "groundwork of the Philosophy of Religion." It is the most basic form of religion. According to Tylor, animism has two elements: (1) the continued existence of the individual soul after death and (2) the existence of spiritual beings, who affect or control events in the world. Tylor proposes that these beliefs probably came into existence for practical intellectual reasons: Primitive people invented them to provide a reasonable explanation of death and of dreams. Thus, he understood this element of religious belief as a kind of primitive science.

Tylor argued that as human rationality progressed, religion moved from the animistic belief in spirits of the dead and of inanimate objects to polytheistic belief and then to monotheistic belief. The progress of religion thus moved along with the general progress of humanity: Animistic belief in spirits of the dead and spirits of inanimate objects was associated with the most primitive societies, more advanced societies were associated with polytheism, and the most advanced societies practiced monotheism.

Ultimately, for Tylor, human progress would take the form of more materialistic and dependable ways of explaining the world as scientific observation and thinking developed. Consequently, religion would increasingly become a system of morals rather than a method of explanation. Although Tylor believed that his own society had made strong advances in this direction, he was also stridently anticlerical and believed that much of the religion of his era, particularly Catholicism, had not yet made the transition from irrational explanation and ritual to rational morality. This is evident in his critique of Spanish and Catholic actions in Mexico in *Anahuac*. It may not be incidental in this regard that the Quakerism of Tylor's own religious background had very minimal ritual elements.

Tylor's Definition of Culture

One of the most famous aspects of Tylor's work is his definition of culture as "that complex whole which includes knowledge, belief, art, morals, law, custom, and any other capabilities and habits acquired by man as a member of society" (1920, p. 1). Particularly, in the first half of the 20th century, American anthropologists saw this idea as similar to their own understanding of culture as a holistic pattern including all material possessions, behaviors, and ways of thought. However, as Stocking has pointed out, Tylor's meaning was different from

that of American, and indeed virtually all modern, anthropologists. Tylor saw culture as a universal possession of humanity. There was a single human culture. Different societies simply possessed more or less of it (or were positioned differently with regard to it). Thus, for example, Victorian Englishmen had the same culture as Australian Aborigines; they just had a different piece of it and very much more of it. This understanding of culture is consistent with Tylor's belief in psychic unity and comparative method as well as the use of survivals (in fact, it is a strong implication of them).

Tylor and Fieldwork

Although Tylor did travel to the United States and Mexico and visited archaeological excavations and sites in France, he is best known as an "armchair anthropologist." This is accurate, since almost all the sources he used in his work were based on existing ethnographic reports and classic European literature. However, Tylor encouraged the fieldwork of others and guided the content of that fieldwork through his central role in the publication of *Notes and Queries* in 1874 as well as several other guides to collecting ethnographic information. *Notes and Queries* formalized and expanded on earlier questionnaires developed by the British Association for the Advancement of Science. Contributors included Augustus Henry Lane-Fox (later Pitt Rivers), Francis Galton, and John Lubbock, though Tylor's contribution was larger than these others. James Urry notes that Tylor not only wrote questions but also provided specific instructions on how they should be asked, as well as advice on objectivity. The questions also tended to reflect Tylor's research interests. Urry notes that there are 49 questions on "social relations" but almost 250 on religion. Tylor was chairman of the committee that wrote the second edition of *Notes and Queries* in 1892 and the third edition in 1899, and he again contributed heavily to these editions. However, when the fourth edition came out in 1912, Tylor's contribution was very much diminished.

Critiques of Tylor

Although Tylor was widely revered within the anthropological community, as his small contribution to *Notes and Queries* of 1912 shows, even within his lifetime, his ideas and style of anthropology were succeeded by other approaches. Several critical problems marred his work. First, as Franz Boas and his students repeatedly noted, Tylor and other evolutionary anthropologists, particularly Morgan, took cultural traits out of context as they built their evolutionary model. Therefore, although they could place societies on an evolutionary scale, they could not show that the development of these societies had followed the same evolutionary pathways. It was an assumption only and, given their style of argumentation, one that could not be proven. Second, Tylor had a difficult time distinguishing between cultural traits that were the result of a society's independent historical development and those that were the result of borrowing or the fact that two societies might have a common origin. This critique, first voiced by Francis Galton in 1888, has become known as "Galton's Problem" and is also found in current-day opinion polling and survey research (though various statistical solutions minimize its effect). Third, Tylor's reasoning often seems tautological. For example, in the first chapter of *Primitive Culture*, Tylor argues that the pathways of human social evolution are so well established that he is able to determine the accuracy of ethnographic reporting. If the reported traits do not fit the known patterns of evolution, then the reporting must be in error. Of course, such filtering of the data can only result in confirmation of Tylor's theory. This problem was particularly egregious because it undermined the use of survivals, which was key to Tylor's method. Tylor often saw cultural traits as both survivals of earlier forms of society (e.g., matrilineality, which he believed to precede patrilineality) and confirmation of the existence of these forms, again assuming what he set out to prove. For these and other reasons, by the early 20th century, almost all anthropologists had abandoned research on demonstrating a single evolutionary sequence for humanity.

Tylor's Legacy: A "Reformer's Science"

Although Tylor's understanding of anthropology and his research methods are not shared by current-day anthropologists, he was critical to shaping the emerging discipline. His intellectual and organizational talents began the institutionalization of anthropology in Great Britain. His promotion of fieldwork and of younger scholars ensured its future. His books were essential reading for anthropology students for

much of the half-century following the publication of *Primitive Culture*. His work on religion acted as a spur to scholars such as William Robertson-Smith, Robert R. Marett, James G. Frazer, and many others.

Reading Tylor today can be difficult. His evolutionary perspective and his certainty that his own society was the most advanced of its era make his work ethnocentric, even racist to the modern reader. However, born in 1832, Tylor was certainly not a modern person. Within his own context, he was a humanitarian and believed that, ultimately, all humans were equal. He concludes *Primitive Culture* by calling anthropology a "reformer's science." However, here too, his interests were different from those of current-day anthropologists. Current-day reformers may be concerned with oppression and social justice. For Tylor, reform meant finding irrational practices and superstitions and "mark[ing] these out for destruction."

Richard L. Warms

See also Bastian, Adolf; Boas, Franz; Comparative Method; Lubbock, John; Morgan, Lewis Henry; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology

Further Readings

Dawson, H. J. (1993). E. B. Tylor's theory of survivals and Veblen's social criticism. *Journal of the History of Ideas, 54*(3), 489–504.

Leopold, J. (1980). *Culture in comparative and evolutionary perspective: E. B. Tylor and the making of "Primitive Culture."* Berlin, Germany: Dietrich Reimer Verlag.

Ratnapalan, L. (2008). E. B. Tylor and the problem of primitive culture. *History and Anthropology, 19*(2), 131–142.

Stocking, G., Jr. (1963). Matthew Arnold, E. B. Tylor, and the uses of invention. *American Anthropologist, 65*(4), 783–799.

———. (1965). "Cultural Darwinism" and "philosophical idealism" in E. B. Tylor: A special plea for historicism in the history of anthropology. *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology, 21*(2), 130–147.

———. (1971). Animism in theory and practice: E. B. Tylor's unpublished "Notes on Spiritualism." *Man, 6*(1), 88–104.

———. (1987). *Victorian anthropology.* New York, NY: Free Press.

Tylor, E. B. (1909). *Anthropology: An introduction to the study of man and civilization.* New York, NY: D. Appleton. (Original work published 1881)

———. (1920). *Primitive culture: Researches into the development of mythology, philosophy, religion, language, art, and custom* (2 vols.). London, UK: John Murray. (Original work published 1871)

Urry, J. (1972). "Notes and Queries on Anthropology" and the development of field methods in British anthropology, 1870–1920. *Proceedings of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, London, England, 1972*, 45–57.

U

University of California, Berkeley

The University of California at Berkeley is home to one of the world's most important anthropological programs. The Department of Anthropology and the Hearst Museum, both located in Kroeber Hall, are the core; additional facilities also serve archaeology, physical anthropology, and linguistics. The faculty has garnered national and international recognition for their innovative research, while producing BA and PhD students who have gone on to make important careers in academia, government, nongovernmental organizations, and the private sector.

Early History

Founded in 1901 by the University's Board of Regents, the department and museum were created in response to archaeological and ethnological activities funded by Mrs. Phoebe Apperson Hearst, wealthy patron of the arts and member of the Regents. The department and museum were initially directed by an executive committee, chaired by Frederick Putnam, who became head in 1903. The field staff consisted of the geologist John Merriam, the archaeologists George Reisner and Max Uhle, and the ethnohistorian Zelia Nuttall. In addition, two instructors—Alfred Kroeber (PhD, Columbia, 1901) and Pliny Goddard (PhD in linguistics, Berkeley, 1904)—did fieldwork among California Indians, the most famous of whom was known as Ishi. During the first decade, a treasure trove of artifacts overwhelmed the storage space at Berkeley, requiring their removal to San Francisco.

The teaching program trained professionals while providing undergraduates with general knowledge. Kroeber taught courses such as General Introduction to Anthropology, North American Ethnology, North American Languages and North American Archaeology and conducted seminars on ethnology and languages. Goddard offered courses such as Experimental Phonetics, the Athapascans of the Pacific Coast, and Religions of Non-Literary Peoples.

The first dissertation, *Pomo Indian Basketry*, was accepted, and the PhD was awarded in 1908 to Samuel Barrett. The second PhD followed in 1911, for *The Ethnology of the Salinan Indians* by John Mason. Following Putnam's retirement in 1909, Kroeber took charge. One of his early acts was to bring the independent department of linguistics (founded in 1901) into anthropology, where it remained until 1953.

Anthropology Between the Wars

Trained by Franz Boas, Kroeber was well prepared to develop a department and a museum. Growth required additional faculty. Robert H. Lowie—also a student of Boas—joined the faculty in 1921. For years, he and Kroeber shared the main teaching and graduate-training responsibilities, with the assistance of Edward W. Gifford and Ronald L. Olson (PhD, Berkeley, 1929). Their success led Kroeber to publish his *Anthropology* textbook in 1923, followed in 1924 by the *Sourcebook for Anthropology* (with T. T. Waterman).

While teaching undergraduates, Kroeber, Lowie, Gifford, and their colleagues continued their research and graduate programs. The department's third dissertation did not appear until 1926, when William Duncan Strong submitted *Analysis of Aboriginal Society in the Southwestern United States*. Subsequently, there was steady doctoral production; through the 1930s, more than 20 had been produced, all but 3—Charles Voegelin on linguistics (1932), Waldo Wedel on archaeology (1936), and Theodore McCown on physical anthropology (1939)—dealing with aboriginal populations or comparative cultural analysis. The graduates of the Berkeley program before 1940 included Julian Steward, Ralph Beals, Isabel Kelly, Laura Thompson, Cora DuBois, Harold Driver, Margaret Lantis, Homer Barnett, and Omer Stewart. Several worked in the Great Basin and the Southwest on Kroeber's "culture element survey," which reflected the departmental emphasis on ethnographic fieldwork and comparisons.

Thus, during the 1920s and 1930s, anthropology became well established on the Berkeley campus. The museum and its collections were moved back to the campus in 1931, even though there was no space for public exhibitions. Although four-field training was required of graduate students, the program focused on North American aboriginal studies. Thompson's 1933 dissertation, *Trade in South Eastern New Guinea*, was the first one based on fieldwork beyond Native North America.

Transforming the Department and the Museum: 1940–1959

World War II slowed the production of dissertations and faculty research, as many faculty and graduates became involved in the war efforts. For example, both Steward and Beals participated in government programs focused on ethnological research and training in Latin America. Two immediate products of their work were the creation of the Institute of Social Anthropology within the Smithsonian Institution and the publication of the *Handbook of South American Indians.*

After spending the period from 1944 to 1953 working for the Institute of Social Anthropology in Mexico and in Washington, D.C., the ethnologist George M. Foster (PhD, Berkeley, 1941) returned to Berkeley in 1953, becoming head of the museum when Gifford retired in 1955 and then department chair in the late 1950s. He played a key role in designing a new building—honoring Kroeber, who had retired in 1946—as the new home of the department and the museum.

By the 1950s, with Kroeber, Lowie, Gifford, and Olson, all retired or deceased, a second generation was taking charge of the department and the museum. Foster, the archaeologist Robert Heizer (PhD, Berkeley, 1941), and the physical anthropologist Theodore McCown (PhD, Berkeley, 1939) held faculty positions. Other key faculty at that time included William Bascom, an Africanist who served as museum director from 1957 to 1979; David Mandelbaum, a specialist on India; and John Rowe, a Harvard-trained Andeanist archaeologist. Sherwood Washburn left the University of Chicago and brought the "New Physical Anthropology" to Berkeley in 1958, where he directed projects related to human evolution and behavioral primate studies.

Faculty growth was driven to a great extent by an increase in enrollments, due in part to the desire of returning veterans to pursue work in anthropology. The number of PhDs granted doubled from 20 during the 1940s to 40 during the 1950s. Faculty and graduate student research expanded from North American aboriginal populations to indigenous peoples outside the United States, as well as to contemporary nonindigenous communities within the United States. This transformation is reflected in articles appearing in the *Kroeber Anthropological Society Papers*, established in 1950. By 1959, the Robert H. Lowie Museum of Anthropology (so renamed when it moved into Kroeber Hall) had more than 417,000 catalogued specimens in its collections, only half of which were related to California ethnology and archaeology.

Expansion Through Research and Training Grants: 1960–1979

After moving into their new facilities, the department and museum were positioned for major growth. Fortunately, external funding for supporting field research and the training of graduate students was increasing. For example, Foster received a 3-year National Science Foundation grant in 1958 to return to Tzintzuntzan, Michoacán, where he had done fieldwork during 1945–1946 while with the Institute of Social Anthropology in Mexico.

His grant supported four dissertations. Through his initiative, the department received three consecutive 5-year National Institute of General Medical Sciences training grants, lasting from the mid-1960s until Foster's retirement in 1979 and supporting more than 100 graduate students for research on medical and social topics. This success led to the creation in 1972 of the joint UCSF-UCB (University of California at San Francisco and Berkeley) program in medical anthropology, initially directed by Foster's first doctoral student, Margaret Clark (PhD, Berkeley, 1954).

New faculty members brought to Berkeley their distinctive contributions. Laura Nader came in 1960 as an assistant professor. She received major funding for her Berkeley Village Law Project (1965–1975), through which 10 students did dissertations on the disputing process in diverse communities around the globe. Eugene Hammel (PhD, Berkeley, 1959) rejoined the department in 1961 after a brief stint at the University of New Mexico. Alan Dundes brought his wide-ranging interest in folklore in 1963. Elizabeth Colson, known for her work in eastern Africa, came as a professor in 1964, bringing with her what would become the long-term Gwembe Tonga Relocation Project. Other senior professors included Burton Benedict, Gerald Berreman, George DeVos, and John Gumperz. In the 1970s, two more Berkeley-trained anthropologists were added: Stanley Brandes, who would become well-known for his work in Spain and Mexico, and John Ogbu, who would become a leader in anthropology and education.

During the 1960s, more than 70 PhDs were granted in cultural anthropology alone, plus another 20 or so in the other subfields. These numbers more than doubled during the 1970s. By 1979, the collections of the museum had grown to half a million catalogued specimens, with most recent acquisitions coming from far beyond California and Native North America.

Building for the Future: 1980–1999

In 1980, the faculty consisted of 17 cultural anthropologists, 6 archaeologists, 4 physical anthropologists, and 4 linguists. In addition, 3 emeritus professors in cultural anthropology and 1 in archaeology were still active in teaching and research. Eight other anthropologists were located in other units on the campus. By 1999, the faculty had a different profile: 13 full-time cultural anthropologists plus 10 with emeritus status, 8 archaeologists and 4 emeritus individuals, no full-time physical anthropologists but 4 with emeritus status, 1 linguist and another with emeritus status, and 15 anthropologists located in other campus units.

The tradition of having a core of faculty members who had received their doctorates at Berkeley was sustained when Nancy Scheper-Hughes (PhD, Berkley, 1976) returned in 1982 to become a leader of the medical anthropology program. Other important additions to the departmental faculty included Margaret Conkey, Patrick Kirch, and Ruth Tringham in archaeology and Aihwa Ong and Paul Rabinow in cultural anthropology.

Anthropology at Berkeley moved in directions that Kroeber could never have imagined. Capitalism and colonialism, conflict and inequality, critical medical anthropology and biotechnology, cultural symbolism and modernity, gender and sexuality, and globalization and transnationalism became topics of everyday conversation in the second-floor student-faculty lounge (known as the Gifford room), as well as subjects of faculty research and doctoral dissertations. The more than 350 dissertations submitted between 1980 and 1999 represented a 50% increase over the 1960–1979 period, even though funding for graduate studies and dissertation research had shrunk considerably. The historical midpoint in the number of dissertations from 1908 to 2011 came in 1990.

The 1990s also witnessed two important institutional changes. In 1997, the Anthropology Library was renamed, amid great celebration, in honor of George and Mary Foster, longtime benefactors of anthropology at Berkeley and other institutions. The Lowie Museum was renamed, with considerable controversy, in honor of Phoebe A. Hearst in 1991. By 1999, its collections had grown to more than 600,000 catalogued items, representing about 3.8 million individual objects, accessible through Delphi, the museum's online collections browser.

The Centennial and Beyond

The department and the museum jointly celebrated their centennial in 2001. Exhibits, conferences, and colloquia marked 100 years of accomplishments in conducting ethnographic and archaeological

fieldwork, studying primates and human evolution, understanding languages in social contexts, and collecting artifacts from everywhere.

Although economic challenges have plagued California since 2000, anthropology has been able to retain senior faculty, promote and grant tenure to junior faculty, and make new hires—although none had a Berkeley PhD. By 2011, the full-time faculty had grown to 28, with 17 in cultural anthropology, 9 in archaeology, and 2 in physical anthropology. Fifteen faculty members were emeritus, and 11 anthropologists were in other units on the campus. The 1st decade of the 21st century saw more than 250 dissertations submitted to the department.

Over more than a century, the diversity of faculty research and that of hundreds of Berkeley graduates has expanded far beyond the original visions of Mrs. Hearst and Professor Kroeber. Because of their accomplishments, numerous Berkeley anthropologists (and those who were trained there) have been elected to the National Academy of Science and the American Academy for Arts and Sciences, have received prestigious Guggenheim and Fulbright Fellowships, and have served in high offices in professional organizations. The first 110 years of Berkeley anthropology have witnessed significant contributions to the development of theories and methods and to the growth of the discipline in the United States and beyond.

Robert V. Kemper

See also Foster, George M.; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lowie, Robert; Nader, Laura; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Foster, G. M. (1976). Graduate study at Berkeley, 1935–1941. *Anthropology UCLA, 8,* 9–18.

Jacknis, I. (1993). Museum anthropology in California, 1889–1939. *Museum Anthropology, 17,* 3–6.

Kemper, R. V., & Brandes, S. (2007). George McClelland Foster, Jr. (1913–2006). *American Anthropologist, 109,* 427–433.

Kroeber, A. L. (1908). Progress in anthropology at the University of California. *American Anthropologist, 8,* 483–492.

McCown, T. D. (1969). Teaching anthropology at Berkeley. *KAS Papers, 40,* 82–92.

Steward, J. (1961). Alfred Louis Kroeber, 1876–1960. *American Anthropologist, 63,* 1038–1087.

University of Michigan

The Department of Anthropology at the University of Michigan has grown into a department internationally recognized for its teaching, graduate training, scholarship, cutting-edge research, and the contributions its faculty and students have made to the four subfields of anthropology and especially to anthropological theory. Indeed, the faculty at Michigan have been some of the leaders of theoretical developments in American anthropology. The department has been ranked first (or tied for first) in the three most recent National Research Council rankings, in 1982, 1995, and 2010–2011. Michigan's commitment to four-field anthropology has been one of the reasons why it has maintained that ranking over the decades.

Background

The University of Michigan's Department of Anthropology was established in 1929 by Carl E. Guthe (1922–1946 at Michigan), aided by Julian H. Steward (1928–1930). The department initially occupied one room in the Museum of Anthropology (established in 1924). Guthe and Steward were joined in 1930 by Leslie A. White and in 1936 by Misha Titiev. Steward left the department in 1930 for the University of Utah (a move he would come to regret). After World War II, as was true elsewhere in the United States, the department expanded rapidly, reflecting the postwar increase in the student population and a growing awareness of the importance of understanding different cultures and world areas.

Michigan's PhD program in anthropology, established in 1948, was the second in the Midwest, following the University of Chicago. In 1954, to accommodate a growing faculty that now included 15 members, the department moved from the museum to Angell Hall. In 1963, Norma Diamond, a China specialist, became the department's first female assistant professor. By 1965, there were 24 faculty members, rising to more than 30 by 1970. (This author joined the department in 1968, remaining there for 42 years through 2010.)

In 1981, the departmental headquarters and most of the faculty moved again, this time to the first and second floors of the College of Literature, Sciences, and the Arts building—just down the hall

from the dean's office. The department's archaeologists (along with the paleoanthropologist C. Loring Brace) stayed in the museum, where they still have their offices, even after the department's most recent move, to more spacious quarters in West Hall in 2004. Michigan's Department of Anthropology currently boasts more than 60 faculty members, offering more than 250 courses at the undergraduate and graduate levels. The department now trains more than 200 graduate students, graduates some 100 majors annually, and attracts more than 5,000 student enrollments per academic year.

The Four-Field Approach to Anthropology

The hallmark and major strength of the department has been its commitment to a classic four-field approach. Michigan anthropologists are well-known for their scholarly contributions in sociocultural anthropology, anthropological archaeology, biological anthropology, and, most recently, linguistic anthropology. Basic training in the four subfields is required for graduate students and undergraduate majors. About 2,000 undergraduates annually take Anthropology 101, which surveys the four subfields. Reflecting and helping spread the Michigan tradition, Conrad Kottak's four-field textbook *Anthropology: Appreciating Human Diversity* entered its 15th edition in 2013.

Among the subfields, sociocultural anthropology is the largest. (Biological anthropology, however, has been particularly attractive to Michigan undergraduates.) Nine of the 16 department chairs have been sociocultural anthropologists (Leslie White, 1944–1956; Elman Service, 1962–1963; William Schorger, 1965–1966 and 1967–1970; Eric Wolf, 1970–1971; Richard Beardsley, 1971–1972; Roy Rappaport, 1975–1980; Sherry Ortner, 1986–1989; Conrad Kottak, 1996–2006; and Tom Fricke, 2009–present).

The department's contributions to theory have been particularly significant, with the name of Leslie White among the most prominent in the history of anthropological theory. White, who remained at Michigan for 40 years (1930–1970), trained influential anthropologists such as Robert Carneiro, Gertrude Dole, and Beth Willingham. In the 1950s and early 1960s, White, Elman Service, and Marshall Sahlins (along with Steward at Columbia University) championed a resurgence of cultural evolutionary studies in anthropology. The high points included White's *The Evolution of Culture* (1959), Sahlins's and Service's *Evolution and Culture* (1960), and Service's *Primitive Social Organization* (1962). During the 1960s, Michigan had so many Columbia PhDs—including Wolf, Sahlins, Service, Roy Rappaport, Niara Sudarkasa, and Conrad Kottak—that people talked of a "Columbia-Michigan axis" made up of anthropologists interested in evolution, ecology, and social change.

Besides his evolutionism, White was an equally strong advocate for the importance of culture as an autonomous field of study. Laying out his case in *The Science of Culture* (1949), White saw cultural anthropology as a science that he called culturology. He disputed what was then called the "great man theory of history," the idea that particular individuals were responsible for great discoveries and epochal changes. White looked instead to the constellation of cultural forces that produced great individuals. During certain historical periods, such as the Renaissance, conditions were right for the expression of creativity and greatness, and individual genius blossomed. At other times and places, there may have been just as many great minds, but the culture did not encourage their expression. As proof of this theory, White pointed to the simultaneity of discovery. Several times in human history, when culture was ready, people working independently have come up with the same revolutionary idea or achievement at the same time. Examples include the formulation of the theory of evolution through natural selection by Charles Darwin and Alfred Russel Wallace and the rediscovery of Mendelian genetics independently by three different scientists in 1917.

Joining the Michigan faculty in 1961 and remaining there for 10 years, Wolf became a key figure in the anthropology of complex societies and was known especially for his studies of peasants in Europe and Latin America. As White, Sahlins, and Service were reviving interest in cultural evolution by focusing on ancient and nonindustrial societies, Wolf chose to study more recent changes—historical processes in societies clearly formed within or influenced by the post-Columbian world system. Because of his interest in cultural history, the world system, and colonialism, and his penchant for interdisciplinary collaboration with social historians like Charles Tilley and Sylvia Thrupp, Wolf was a key figure in Michigan anthropology's historical turn. The focus

on social and cultural history, and the comparative approaches that Wolf helped inspire, is embodied today in Michigan's outstanding joint doctoral program in anthropology and history.

Rappaport (hired in 1966) drew international attention to the Michigan department with his work in ecological anthropology and, later, the anthropology of religion. Along with Rappaport, Kent Flannery, Richard Ford, and Conrad Kottak offered training, including a jointly taught course, in ecological anthropology. The ecological approach at Michigan today is represented by Tom Fricke and Stuart Kirsch.

Also influential in Michigan's historical turn was Sherry Ortner, who joined the faculty in 1977 and served as department chair between 1986 and 1989. Trained in symbolic and interpretive anthropology at the University of Chicago, Ortner wrote an influential article, "Theory in Anthropology Since the Sixties (1984)," which established her as a prominent voice in theory in sociocultural anthropology (especially practice theory). Ortner worked with Nicholas Dirks (1987–1997 at Michigan) to establish the University's Joint Doctoral Program in Anthropology and History, which continues to thrive today. After Ortner and Dirks left Michigan for Columbia in 1995 and 1997, respectively, Ann Stoler, Fernando Coronil, and David William Cohen ably led this joint program.

Ecological and historical anthropology (both particularly suited to a four-field department) continued as departmental foci into the 21st century. Research on complex and contemporary societies has been another traditional departmental strength, ranging from Wolf's studies of peasants in the 1960s to current interests in colonialism, postcolonial studies, globalization, and nationalism. The area studies centers established after World War II at various major American universities have ensured Michigan's continuing expertise in China, Eastern Europe, Japan, and the Middle East/North Africa.

Michigan was not one of the universities granted postwar funding for area studies centers focusing on Africa or Latin America in the late 1940s. Since 1970, however, Michigan's strength in those regions has increased significantly. Michigan's Africanist faculty has grown along with that of the Department (formerly the Center) for African and Afro-American Studies, of which the former Michigan anthropologist Niara Sudarkasa (1967–1986) was a founder and early director. Similarly, the growth of the department's Latin Americanist faculty has accompanied that of the Center for Latin American and Caribbean Studies, led for several years by Bruce Mannheim, who also has been influential in establishing the university's Andean Studies and Quechua training programs.

The theoretical orientations of current department members range from humanistic to strongly scientific. Sociocultural faculty members elected to the National Academy of Sciences include Steward, Sahlins, and Wolf (after they left Michigan), along with Kelly Askew (1971–2004) and Kottak. Michigan anthropologists elected to the American Academy of Arts and Sciences include Flannery, Ford, Kottak, Joyce Marcus, Ortner, John O'Shea, Rappaport, and Katherine Verdery. MacArthur "Genius" awardees have included Wolf and Ortner, along with the current faculty members Ruth Behar, Erik Mueggler, and Henry Wright.

Anthropological archaeology also remains a strong and well-represented subfield at Michigan. Two archaeologists have served as department chair (James Griffin, 1972–1975, and Ford, 1989–1996). Michigan archaeologists are known for their focus on cultural evolution and their contributions to understanding key origins: of human culture, of Neolithic economies, of hereditary inequality, and of chiefdoms and states. Some of this work has involved collaboration with Michigan's sociocultural anthropologists pursuing similar interests—for example, Kelly, Kottak, and Rappaport. Michigan archaeologists elected to the National Academy of Sciences include Griffin, Flannery, Marcus, and Wright. Both Marcus and Flannery have served 3-year terms as chair of Section 51, Anthropology—as, most recently, has Kottak. In 2013, Marcus began a 3-year term as secretary of Class V, Social Sciences, to be followed by a 3-year term as Class V chair. Michigan's anthropology PhDs are particularly well represented among current academy members.

Key figures in biological anthropology at Michigan have included Stanley Garn (1968–1992 at Michigan and a former member of the National Academy of Sciences), Frank Livingstone (1959–1996), John Mitani and Milford Wolpoff (both still active), and the recently retired Loring Brace (1967–2008) and A. Roberto Frisancho (1968–2011). Brace, Frisancho, and Wolpoff have been honored with the Darwin Award, bestowed annually by the

American Association of Physical Anthropologists. Three biological anthropologists (Fred Thieme, 1957–1958; James Spuhler, 1959–1962, 1963–1965, and 1966–1967; and Frank Livingstone, 1983–1986) have served as department chair. Michigan's expertise in biological anthropology encompasses paleoanthropology, primate behavior and evolution, human adaptation, and evolutionary biology and ecology.

Linguistic anthropology has grown substantially at Michigan over the past 2 decades, spurred largely by the vision and efforts of Mannheim, so that Michigan today has one of the nation's preeminent programs in this subfield. Along with Mannheim, Michigan's linguistic anthropologists now include Judith Irvine (department chair, 2006–2009), Alaina Lemon, Barbra Meek, and Michael Lempert. Webb Keane, well-known for his work in semiotics, contributes to this subfield as well as to sociocultural anthropology. Emeritus professor Robbins Burling (1963–1995) served as department chair from 1980 to 1983 and is recognized for his work with linguistic theory, and language and culture.

Inderdepartmental and Interdisciplinary Initiatives; Recent Developments

Michigan's Department of Anthropology has a tradition of working actively with other departments and centers, including joint appointments with several other units. Michigan's anthropologists maintain affiliations with the biological and health sciences, the other social sciences, and the humanities, as well as with geographic area centers, women's studies, Latino studies, and African/Afro-American studies. The Horace H. Rackham School of Graduate Studies offers nationally recognized joint programs in anthropology and social work, and anthropology and history. Michigan's anthropologists have been influential in the establishment and direction of area studies centers and the development of interdisciplinary initiatives, most notably the Evolution and Human Behavior Program and the Program in the Comparative Study of Social Transformations.

By 1975, Michigan was awarding equal numbers of anthropology PhDs to men and women. By the 1990s, more women than men were receiving PhDs from the department. Michigan's anthropology faculty has included well-known senior women in the past (Diamond, Ortner, Stoler, and Verdery) and present (Kelly Askew, Behar, Gillian Feeley-Harnik, Irvine, Alaina Lemon, Laura MacLatchy, Marcus, Elisha Renne, Jennifer Robertson, Gayle Rubin, Carla Sinopoli, and Beverly Strassmann).

The department has been careful to keep up with the changes in anthropology while maintaining its commitment to the four-field approach. Today, various faculty members are investigating issues of globalization, development, gender, race, ethnicity, and environmental anthropology. Studies of colonialism, states, and power relationships, and the analysis of the ethnographic enterprise itself also have been important. Michigan's Department of Anthropology has grown into a large and inclusive academic unit that is remarkable for the diversity of its faculty and students, along with its wide geographic spread and its diverse theoretical orientations. (For current Michigan faculty members and their areas of specialization, see http://www.lsa.umich.edu/anthro/people/faculty.)

Conrad Phillip Kottak

See also Carneiro, Robert L.; Cultural Ecology; Ortner, Sherry; Rappaport, Roy; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Brereton, D. P. (Ed.). (2006). Retrospectives: Works and lives of Michigan anthropologists [Special issue]. *Michigan Discussions in Anthropology, 16*(1).

Griffin, J. B. (1975). Notes on the early history of anthropology at the University of Michigan. *Michigan Discussions in Anthropology, 1*(1), 133–137.

Peace, W. (2006). Introduction: The University of Michigan's department of anthropology: Leslie White and the politics of departmental expansion. *Michigan Discussions in Anthropology, 16*(1), 1–32.

Wolf, E. R. (1964). *Anthropology.* Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

Urban Studies

Some anthropologists do research in cities but without much concern, if any, for the urban context; others are more concerned with the structure of city life and its impact on human behavior locally or cross-culturally; and still others are concerned with the development of international urban systems through

time and space as distinctive social cultural domains. The focus on urban studies by anthropologists is usually on relatively small populations (e.g., people from one village who have migrated to a city, the culture of one ethnic population of one city, female members of one gang in one city). Urban anthropologists then describe and explain why a particular population behaves as it does in the specific setting(s) in which it is located. Thus, urban studies as conducted by anthropologists focus on the cultural systems of selected populations, compare the cultural systems of these populations, and offer contextual explanations for the attitudes and behaviors observed among these populations.

Development of Urban Studies in Anthropology

Although the term *urban anthropology* began to be used widely in the 1960s, earlier anthropologists had started to redefine their field as more than the study of "primitive" peoples living in exotic locales. From the 1930s to the 1950s, cultural anthropologists increasingly turned their attention to the study of peasants, small-scale food producers incorporated into nation-states dominated by cities. Robert Redfield's research in Mexico, especially his 1926–1927 community study of the village of Tepoztlán and his collaborative project published in 1941 as *The Folk Culture of Yucatán*, raised a number of provocative questions about the impact of cities on relatively isolated peasant villages and the contrast between the ideal types of what Redfield called "folk" and "urban" communities. The focus was on the scale of communities, their ways of life, and the degree to which any specific community (and its residents) displayed "urban" characteristics. In taking this approach, Redfield was following the model of his sociological colleagues at the University of Chicago, especially that represented by Louis Wirth in his famous 1938 essay "Urbanism as a Way of Life."

In the 1940s, Oscar Lewis did a restudy of Tepoztlán and concluded that peasant life was far from idyllic. He then turned his attention to the migration of some villagers from Tepoztlán to Mexico City and their lives in the metropolis. His fieldwork led him to challenge U.S.-based models about urban life. His 1959 book *Five Families: Mexican Case Studies in the Culture of Poverty* became controversial because of his attention to what Mexican critics termed the "lurid" aspects (i.e., sexual exploits, criminal activities, and immoral acts) of life in Mexico City. A group of elite Mexican intellectuals accused Lewis of defaming the Mexican national character, but the Mexican courts found him innocent of the charge.

By the 1950s, a number of anthropologists were conducting research on urban phenomena. In 1951, Ralph Beals published the lead article in the journal *American Anthropologist* on the problem of defining and differentiating the terms *urbanism*, *urbanization*, and *acculturation*. In mid-decade, in a manner similar to what Lewis had done for Mexico City, William Bascom offered a test of Western urban theories in an article on urbanization among the Yoruba published in the *American Journal of Sociology*. In the same year, Gideon Sjoberg published a model for what he termed the "preindustrial city," a form of urban place that stood in contrast to the kinds of cities that developed after the European Industrial Revolution. Meanwhile, in Europe and in Africa (especially at the Rhodes Livingston Institute), anthropologists were discovering that social network analysis provided important insights about personal interaction in urban settings.

By the end of the 1950s, anthropologists and other social scientists were combining ethnographic observations drawn from specific case studies with national-level census data to develop new ideas about trends in urbanization in Latin America, Africa, and Asia. For example, the United Nations organized a conference in 1959 on the theme of urbanization in Latin America, at which the Peruvian anthropologist José Matos Mar presented a now classic paper on the *barriadas* (squatter settlements) of Lima. His paper, and others like it, set the research agenda for the following generation of scholars interested in rural-urban linkages, peasant migrants in cities, and squatter settlements as arenas of urban adaptation.

The 1960s

The growing interest in urban studies among anthropologists reflected their recognition that the traditional subjects of anthropological fieldwork were increasingly being integrated into an urban-dominated world. The "War on Poverty" in the United States and the expansion of funding for international development projects—especially in Latin America, Africa, and Asia—greatly increased opportunities for anthropologists and other social scientists to carry out significant urban research.

There was a steady expansion of urban studies by anthropologists during the 1960s, with particular attention given to rural-to-urban migration, urban adaptation, ethnicity, and poverty. The decade of the 1960s ended with the publication of papers delivered at the 1968 Southern Anthropological Society conference on "Urban Anthropology: Research Perspectives and Strategies." Two similar conferences, one held at an American Anthropological Association meeting and the other at the School of American Research in Santa Fe, New Mexico, also took place in 1968. Their joint results appear in the 1972 volume *The Anthropology of Urban Environments*.

The 1970s

By the beginning of the 1970s, urban anthropology came to be defined by most of its practitioners as a distinctive domain within cultural anthropology. The result was a tremendous growth in textbooks, readers, and reviews aimed at students taking new courses in urban anthropology. The journal *Urban Anthropology* was started in 1972 and has continued to the present under the editorship of Jack Rollwagen. The Commission on Urban Anthropology was created in the late 1970s within the International Union of Anthropological and Ethnological Sciences. The commission not only conducts sessions at the congresses of the International Union of Anthropological and Ethnological Sciences, held every 5 years, but it also sponsors international conferences and occasional publications on urban anthropology. Thus, the subfield of urban anthropology took its place among the burgeoning number of specializations within sociocultural anthropology (e.g., educational, legal, medical, political, psychological, and visual anthropologies).

Among the top priorities was working out the similarities and differences between traditional fieldwork and the new urban studies—that is, how anthropologists in cities should do their research and what should be their thematic foci. When Richard Basham published his influential textbook *Urban Anthropology: The Cross-Cultural Study of Complex Societies* in 1978, the essential themes of urban studies in cultural anthropology were becoming clear. He discussed the nature of urban and complex societies; the origin and evolution of cities; rural-to-urban migration and the growth of cities; kinship in the city; migrants and urbanites; class, caste, and ethnicity; and urban ethnology and ethnology.

The 1980s

During the 1980s, a second generation of readers, textbooks, and surveys of the subfield of urban anthropology appeared, as well as a torrent of case studies on specific urban populations and places. In 1980, two readers were published to compete for the market in urban-anthropology courses. The first, *Urban Life: Readings in Urban Anthropology*, edited by George Gmelch and Walter Zenner, contained 30 contributions organized within the domains of urbanism, migration and the adaptation of migrants to city life, family and kin in urban society, ethnicity and class in the city, the urban poor, and urban fieldwork. The second, *Urban Place and Process*, edited by Irwin Press and M. Estellie Smith, had 34 papers arranged under the categories of urbanism, the urban milieu, the development and differentiation of cities, urbanization, units of urban organization, urban places, economic and cultural differentiation in the city, and the urban future.

These and similar volumes set the stage for a decade in which urban anthropologists would raise their sights (and sites) from local, isolated urban communities to the linkages among communities within regional, national, and international sociocultural and political-economic systems. The resultant transformation in the work of urban anthropologists not only involved a change of geographical scale but also meant that more attention was paid to historical issues.

A provocative assessment of the subfield was offered by Roger Sanjek. After a brief history of the field, Sanjek discussed "urban anthropology as anthropology" and then provided coverage of urban ethnography on a region-by-region basis, including the United States, the Caribbean and Latin America, Europe, the Middle East and North Africa, Africa, and East Asia, and Southeast Asia and Oceania. He concluded his review by suggesting that the urban anthropology of the 1980s might offer *all* anthropologists conceptual pathways to practice.

The 1990s

Whereas earlier urban anthropologists had focused on issues (e.g., migration, family and kinship, social networks, poverty, ethnicity, and urban adaptation)

derived from or contrasted with traditional rural-based fieldwork, by the 1990s, anthropologists had expanded their interests to include virtually every dimension of urban life—from individual life stories to city neighborhoods and institutions (e.g., hospitals, schools, and jails) to linkages among places and populations of different scales within a global and transnational urban system. Anthropologists gave attention to class-based models of cities and their contexts, the impact of colonialism on cities, and the integration of cities into a worldwide urban system. As a result, urban anthropology became more integrated into the discourse of other social sciences, and urban anthropologists cited non-anthropological works more frequently and with less hesitation. A marker of this shift in orientation came in 1997 when the Society for Urban Anthropology (established in 1979) became the Society for Urban, National, and Transnational/Global Anthropology.

Another emerging thrust in anthropological urban studies during and since the 1990s was a concern for "space and place." The importance of spatial and symbolic features of community was especially evident in the work of Setha Low, a specialist in cultural and environmental studies. In 1999, she edited a volume titled *Theorizing the City: The New Urban Anthropology Reader*. This volume focused on the divided city, the contested city, the global city, the modernist city, and the postmodern city. The 12 essays, each a case study of specific communities within particular urban settings emphasized "new" perspectives for understanding urban life.

The 2000s

Urban studies is now an important subfield within the anthropological discipline, not just in the United States but also on a global basis. Research and teaching about cities and urban systems has become a standard component of contemporary sociocultural anthropology. Whether anthropologists are dealing with problems such as the destruction of tropical rain forests or ethnic violence in inner-city slums, we are constantly reminded that the global system is tightly tied to metropolitan nodes of power and culture. As the world continues to become more urban—with more than 50% of the world's people living in cities as of 2012—we all are involved in urban studies. Perhaps the current century will witness a time when "urban anthropology" will become the norm and we will create a "rural anthropology" specialization as the marked category within our discipline, as it came to pass with the development of "rural sociology" during the early 20th century.

Robert V. Kemper

See also Globalization Theory; Leacock, Eleanor; Lewis, Oscar; Redfield, Robert; Rhodes-Livingstone Institute

Further Readings

Foster, G. M., & Kemper, R. V. (Eds.). (1974). *Anthropologists in cities*. Boston, MA: Little, Brown.

Gmelch, G., Kemper, R. V., & Zenner, W. P. (Eds.). (2010). *Urban life: Readings in the anthropology of the city* (5th ed.). Prospect Heights, IL: Waveland Press.

Low, S. (Ed.). (1999). *Theorizing the city: The new urban anthropology reader.* New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

Low, S., & Lawrence-Zúñiga, D. (Ed.). (2003). *The anthropology of space and place: Locating culture.* Malden, MA: Blackwell.

Sanjek, R. (1990). Urban anthropology in the 1980s: A world view. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 19,* 151–186.

———. (1998). *The future of us all: Race and neighborhood politics in New York City.* Ithaca, NY: Cornell University Press.

Websites

City & Society (1987–present), the journal of the Society for Urban, National, and Transnational/Global Anthropology: http://sunta.org

Urban Anthropology and Studies of Cultural Systems and World Economic Development, (1972–present), J. Rollwagen, Ed., Brockport, NY: The Institute, Inc.: http://www.jstor.org/action/showPublication?journalCode=urbaanthstudcult

Utilitarianism

Utilitarianism is a moral theory or a family of moral theories. After providing an initial characterization of utilitarianism, this entry briefly discusses the theory's history, some of the ways in which it has been developed recently, and some of its possible implications.

A moral theory attempts to explicate the difference between morally right and morally wrong actions. Utilitarianism belongs to a broader family

of moral theories known as *consequentialism*. In its simplest form, consequentialism states that we are morally obligated to do whatever would produce the best outcome—that is, whatever would have the best consequences. What utilitarianism adds to consequentialism is a particular understanding of what counts as the best outcome. Utilitarians subscribe to "welfarism," the view that only well-being or "utility" has intrinsic value (i.e., is valuable for its own sake). They therefore conclude that producing the best consequences means producing the greatest amount of well-being possible—in other words, *maximizing utility*. So in its simplest form, utilitarianism holds at any given moment we are morally obligated to choose, out of the various actions that it would be possible for us to do, the one that would yield the greatest total amount of well-being. To do anything else would be wrong. This means the greatest amount of *total* well-being, which depends not only on how the different actions that we could perform would affect us but also on how they would affect everyone else to whose lives they might make a difference at any point in the future. Thus, what we should do depends on which of our potential actions offers the optimal balance of costs and benefits. Notice that utilitarians believe that the empirical knowledge that the social sciences provide plays a crucial role in our reasoning about what our moral obligations are, since we need it to predict actions' consequences.

Although one can find historical antecedents for utilitarianism going back to the classical world, the view first really crystallized in 19th-century Britain. Jeremy Bentham (1748–1832) is usually credited with being its founder. Bentham was a hedonist, which is to say that he believed that the only things that are valuable in their own right are pleasure and freedom from pain. This was his definition of "happiness," and for Bentham happiness was identical with well-being. Bentham believed that we are obligated to produce as much of what we might call "total net happiness" as possible, where "net happiness" refers to pleasure minus pain. John Stuart Mill (1806–1873), a utilitarian of the next generation, made a controversial revision to Bentham's hedonism. Mill claimed that a given quantity of a distinctly human pleasure, such as intellectual pleasure or aesthetic pleasure, is more valuable and contributes more to our happiness than the same quantity of a bodily or animalistic pleasure. So Mill believed that maximizing happiness does not simply mean maximizing pleasure (or even maximizing pleasure and minimizing pain), since greater weight must be given to the "higher" pleasures. Other important British utilitarians from this century include Henry Sidgwick (1838–1900) and Herbert Spencer (1820–1903).

In the 20th century, many utilitarians rejected Bentham and Mill's hedonistic conception of well-being. It is not difficult to imagine lives that are full of pleasure and yet seem to involve only low levels of well-being; consider, for example, a person who derives great pleasure from believing that she has a loving spouse and many friends, when in fact she is deceived or otherwise deluded on these points. Today, utilitarians more commonly identify well-being with the satisfaction of one's preferences or of some subset of one's preferences, such as one's preferences about one's own life. This brings the contemporary utilitarian's understanding of utility closer to that of contemporary economists, although utilitarian philosophers generally do not follow economists in insisting that we can know people's preferences only insofar as they are revealed by their choices. Utilitarians also tend to be more sanguine than economists about the possibility of comparing the utility levels of different individuals.

While the simplest form of utilitarianism applies the imperative to maximize utility directly to individual actions, this so-called act utilitarianism is not the only form that the view can take. One alternative is "rule utilitarianism." The rule utilitarian maintains that whether particular actions are right or wrong depends on whether an authoritative moral code or a set of moral rules would permit or forbid them. The utilitarian element of the view comes in its account of this authoritative moral code. According to the rule utilitarian, this is the moral code whose "general acceptance" would have the best consequences.

Peter Singer, arguably the English-speaking world's most prominent living philosopher, has done much to draw out the practical implications of act utilitarianism. According to Singer, utilitarianism requires us to make significantly less use of animals for food or scientific experiments, since it says that we must take into account the well-being of every sentient creature and that many of the harms that we inflict on animals are of greater magnitude than any benefits to us. Singer also argues that utilitarianism requires members of affluent countries to make

considerable personal sacrifices in the interest of fighting poverty in the Third World and to permit abortion and euthanasia when this would prevent unnecessary suffering. Of course, what implications one takes utilitarianism to have will depend not only on what precise version of the theory one considers but also one's empirical beliefs.

Rule utilitarianism's implications are presumably similar to those of act utilitarianism in many respects. It is likely that rule utilitarianism would also demand major changes in our treatment of animals and entail the permissibility of abortion and euthanasia in certain situations. But in some areas, their implications would differ. For example, the moral code whose general acceptance would have the best consequences might require citizens of affluent nations to give approximately 10% of their income to fight extreme poverty, since if everyone gave that much, we could provide food security, clean water, and basic medical care worldwide. That is much more than most people give today, but it is still far less than what Peter Singer takes act utilitarianism to require us to sacrifice. This is because rule utilitarianism requires us to follow rules that should be widely accepted even if in reality they are not, whereas act utilitarianism tells us to do whatever would have the best consequences given what other people are actually doing (or, in the case of contributing to eliminating poverty, not doing).

Dale E. Miller

See also Spencer, Herbert

Further Readings

Shaw, W. H. (1999). *Contemporary ethics: Taking account of utilitarianism*. Malden, MA: Blackwell.

Singer, P. (2011). *Practical ethics* (3rd ed.). New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

V

Vayda, Andrew P.

Andrew "Pete" Vayda (1931), professor emeritus of anthropology and ecology at Rutgers University and senior research associate at the Center for International Forestry Research, has been a leading thinker in human ecology and ecological anthropology for more than half a century.

Biography and Major Works

Vayda was born in Budapest, Hungary, and was taken at the age of 7 by his mother to live in New York City. He completed a BA and PhD in anthropology at Columbia University. His doctoral dissertation, based on library research in New Zealand, described in detail what Maori warfare was like and how it related to environmental, economic, and demographic factors before it was greatly altered by European weapons and ways. Completed in 1956, it was published in 1960 as a monograph, *Maori Warfare*, and formed the basis of a seminal article, "Expansion and Warfare Among Swidden Agriculturalists" (1961).

After completing his PhD, Vayda used a grant from the Social Science Research Council to conduct fieldwork in 1956–1957 on three coral atolls of the Cook Islands in Polynesia. Vayda's first academic position was a limited-term appointment to the Department of Sociology, Anthropology, and Criminology at the University of British Columbia (1958–1960). At the University of British Columbia, he wrote "A Re-Examination of Northwest Coast Economic Systems" (1961), a groundbreaking interpretation of the potlatch ritual of Pacific Northwest Coast Indians, using neo-functionalist (systems) ecology.

Vayda returned to Columbia University as a faculty member in 1960. In the ensuing decade, he conducted fieldwork in Papua New Guinea; wrote articles interrelating war, economics, and ecology; edited two anthologies, *Peoples and Cultures of the Pacific* (1968) and *Environment and Cultural Behavior* (1969); and, with Anthony Leeds, coedited *Man, Culture, and Animals: The Role of Animals in Human Ecological Adjustments* (1965). With his then graduate student Roy Rappaport, he also coauthored "Ecology, Cultural and Non-Cultural" (1968), a highly influential critique of Julian Steward's cultural ecology.

While still at Columbia, Vayda became founding editor of the new journal *Human Ecology*. But by the early 1970s, he had become disillusioned with the neo-functionalist systems thinking and cultural materialism that were then influential among anthropology faculty at Columbia. This contributed in 1972 to his accepting a position at Rutgers University, with a mandate to integrate the biological and agricultural programs of the College of Agriculture and Environmental Sciences with the social sciences and humanities. He subsequently served as dean, played a lead role in the development of interdisciplinary environmental curricula, and founded the Department of Human Ecology. In 1975, Vayda coauthored with his former graduate student and new Rutgers colleague Bonnie McCay the influential article "New Directions in Ecology

and Ecological Anthropology," a critique of the neo-functionalist ecological anthropology that he had previously advocated. His book *Warfare in Ecological Perspective* was published in 1976.

In 1979, Vayda initiated what would become a long-term program of multisited, multidisciplinary research on peoples' interactions with tropical forests in Indonesia. In the following 3 decades, he would work in association with the United Nations Educational, Scientific, and Cultural Organization–Man and the Biosphere program, the University of Indonesia, World Wide Fund for Nature, The Center for International Forestry Research, The Food and Agricultural Organization of the United Nations, the Ford Foundation, and others on a range of topics including the causes and consequences of tropical deforestation and forest fires, local forest use, and integrated pest management. A number of significant publications emerged during this period, including "Progressive Contextualization: Methods for Research in Human Ecology" (1983), "Failures of Explanation in Darwinian Ecological Anthropology" (1995), *Methods and Explanations in the Study of Human Actions and Their Environmental Effects* (1996), and "Against Political Ecology" (1999, coauthored with then graduate student, Bradley Walters).

Vayda retired from formal teaching duties at Rutgers in 2002 but has since continued his field research, teaching, and writing. A Festschrift in his honor, *Against the Grain: The Vayda Tradition in Human Ecology and Ecological Anthropology*, was published in 2008. *Explaining Human Actions and Environmental Changes*, a selection of his essays on explanation and explanation-oriented research in the social sciences and human ecology (spanning the late 1980s to 2008), was published in 2009, and *Causal Explanation for Social Scientists: A Reader*, coedited by him and Bradley Walters, was published in 2011.

Key Contributions to Theory and Methodology

Arguably no anthropologist other than Vayda has had such a large and sustained influence in bringing an ecological perspective to the discipline. Early in his career, Vayda, like most of his contemporaries, concentrated his research on non-Western societies and looked for the "big ideas" that would explain cultural similarities and differences. This way of thinking was manifest in the development (with Marvin Harris, Tony Leeds, Roy Rappaport, etc.) of a "neo-functionalist ecological anthropology" that challenged the cultural ecology of Julian Steward and gave birth to modern human ecology. The neo-functionalist approach situated humans within dynamic ecological systems and made populations, not cultures or societies, the central units of analysis. Cultural phenomena as perplexing as the Northwest Coast Indian potlatch, Melanesian pig feasts, and warfare were explained as adaptations that maintain the stability of the human-environment system over time.

A growing skepticism of holistic, adaptationist, and neo-functionalist analysis led Vayda subsequently to recant the ideas espoused in many of his early writings, despite their wide appeal. In fact, many of Vayda's key intellectual insights emerged through the course of his career as critical responses to preexisting theoretical ideas and research paradigms in anthropology and the wider social sciences, including some of his own making. Notable among these were critiques of cultural ecology, neo-functionalist/systems ecological anthropology, Darwinian ecological anthropology or human behavioral ecology, political ecology, and local knowledge studies.

The analysis of events and human actions had been a concern of Vayda since his earliest research on Maori warfare. Yet it was not until the late 1970s that he came to fully embrace a philosophical position that called into question anthropology's preoccupation with deriving general theory from the description and analysis of cultures and societies. In its place, Vayda argued for a focused, question-based approach to inquiry that makes attention to evidence and the details of human behavior paramount considerations, and causal explanation of events, including actions, the goal.

Vayda's highly eclectic thinking has gradually set him apart from the mainstream of anthropology, although he continues to be widely read and cited within environmental/ecological anthropology and in other disciplines, especially geography. The evolution of his distinctive approach to research and analysis draws from a wide array of influences, including diverse social and natural scientists (T. C. Chamberlin, Fredrik Barth, David Freedman, and Geoffrey Hawthorn) and philosophers (C. S. Peirce, Isaiah Berlin, David Lewis,

Michael Scriven, and Harold Kincaid). Many of his later works are steeped in the philosophy of causation and explanation and focus less on matters of theory per se and more on methodological considerations, namely, the logic and justifications guiding deployment of methods and the interpretation of research results.

Vayda's pragmatic, question-based approach to research and causal explanation was first conspicuously articulated in 1983 as "Progressive Contextualization" but was subsequently refined (in collaboration with Bradley Walters) as "Event Ecology" and, finally, "Abductive Causal Eventism." Given their (still) relative novelty to anthropologists, the full impact of these ideas remains to be seen.

Bradley B. Walters

See also Barth, Fredrik; Cultural Ecology; Harris, Marvin; Human Behavioral Ecology; Rappaport, Roy; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Leeds, A., & Vayda, A. P. (Eds.). (1965). *Man, culture, and animals: The role of animals in human ecological adjustments*. Washington, DC: American Association for the Advancement of Science.

Vayda, A. P. (1969). *Environment and cultural behavior*. Garden City, NY: Natural History Press.

———. (1976). *Warfare in ecological perspective*. New York, NY: Plenum Press.

———. (1996). *Methods and explanations in the study of human actions and their environmental effects*. Jakarta, Indonesia: Center for International Forestry Research.

———. (2009). *Explaining human actions and environmental changes*. Lanham, MD: Alta Mira Press.

Vayda, A. P., & McCay, B. J. (1975). New directions in ecology and ecological anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 4,* 293–306.

Vayda, A. P., & Walters, B. B. (Eds.). (2011). *Causal explanation for social scientists: A reader.* Lanham, MD: Alta Mira Press.

Walters, B. B., Doolittle, W. E., Klooster, D., Rocheleau, D., Turner, B. L., II, & Vayda, A. P. (2011). Book review forum: Explaining human actions and environmental changes [Five reviews of Vayda 2009 and author's response]. *Dialogues in Human Geography, 1,* 370–389.

Walters, B. B., McCay, B. J., West, P., & Lees, S. (Eds.). (2008). *Against the grain: The Vayda tradition in human ecology and ecological anthropology*. Lanham, MD: Alta Mira Press.

Veblen, Thorstein B.

Thorstein Bunde Veblen (1857–1929) was an early-20th-century American social scientist who made his greatest contributions to sociology and economics. However, the foundation of his critical theory of modern society, including his most famous idea of "conspicuous consumption," stemmed from an anthropological perspective on early human cultures. Veblen's theory of the beginnings of the division of labor and the rise of a leisure class emphasized distinctions between "industry" and "exploit." This idea underpinned his later works on modern capitalism, technology, and war in books such as *The Theory of Business Enterprise* (1904), *The Instinct of Workmanship* (1914), *Imperial Germany and the Industrial Revolution* (1915), *The Engineers and the Price System* (1921), and *Absentee Ownership* (1923). Veblen argued that a crucial change in human development occurred in the transition between the earliest phase of human society, peaceable savagery, and its successor, predatory barbarism. Peaceable savagery was an amiable form of industrious anarchy; the more advanced civilization of barbarism stressed patriarchal class rule and glorified power, conflict, competition, and war. For Veblen, later human history produced great gains in human knowledge, especially in science and technology. It also spawned democratic institutions, and savage values of community, equality, and peace survive in the interstices of democracy. But modern societies still celebrate and reward dominant classes at the expense of underlying populations. In Veblen's view, therefore, modernity is not so modern; democracy is not so democratic; and barbarism is anything but passé.

Biography

Thorstein Veblen was the child of Norwegian immigrants. Born in rural Wisconsin in 1857, he grew up on a farm near Northfield, Minnesota. He received his undergraduate degree from nearby Carlton College and a PhD from Yale. After a 7-year hiatus from the academy, he took up the study of history and political science at Cornell, moving to his first teaching post at the University of Chicago, followed by a brief stint at Stanford and a longer tenure at the University of Missouri at Columbia. After working

briefly for the U.S. Department of Agriculture, he helped found the New School for Social Research in New York City and wrote for the radical newspaper *The Dial*. Veblen retired to northern California, where he died in 1929, months before the great stock market crash, whose financial undercurrents he had analyzed so presciently in *Absentee Ownership*.

Industry and Exploit

According to Veblen, contemporary people *think* that they have advanced well beyond the intellectual and cultural limits of aboriginal humans. Veblen was sure they have not. He argued that the distance between humankind's oldest experience and modern-day institutions and values is less than we like to think. Although their habits and practices are wrapped in contemporary garb, modern people still think and behave in ways that adhere to archaic beliefs and values. Veblen's work is an attempt to explain this contradiction anthropologically and to assess its implications for the future of the species.

Building on late-19th-century scholarship, Veblen tried to understand how the earliest forms of human society, preoccupied as they must have been with simply earning a living, changed into seemingly more advanced but warlike forms. His answer centered on a painfully slow transformation of human consciousness.

Early humans inhabited a strange, mysterious, and even enchanted world. Veblen theorized that, gradually, our aboriginal ancestors tried to understand this peculiar environment by developing distinctions between two kinds of phenomena. Many things in their world seemed to lack inner spiritual force; they seemed lifeless, inert. People learned that they could hammer or shape this kind of dead, spiritless stuff into useful objects, things necessary to carry on everyday life. This activity—Veblen termed it *industry*—was calm, uneventful, and invaluable to human survival. This sober industrious attitude—Veblen later termed it "an instinct of workmanship"—would evolve into modern technological rationality, the intellectual basis of today's machine-driven, digital society.

At the same time, early humans experienced other kinds of things in their mysterious environment: These seemed anything but inert. Things such as animals, thunder, or waterfalls appeared to resist human will, regularly evading our ancestors' best-laid plans. Veblen claimed that early people explained such recalcitrance by projecting onto these elusive aspects of their environment human characteristics of will and purpose. Such things must fight or flee from people because they are like people; they must want to be free in some sense. That is why they refuse to allow themselves to be hammered into submission. To capture this more elusive prey, people had to learn how to be hunters, not mere workers. They had to use inner guile and physical strength to defeat and master the animated forces, to make them serve human will and purpose. Veblen called this activity of strategic conquest, *exploit*. Compared with the quiet work of industry, exploit was considerably more dramatic, exciting, and stimulating. It offered a theater for the display of human prowess or power.

Of course, for Veblen, exploit was based on an illusion: the animistic idea that natural phenomena possessed human-like attributes of willfulness and purpose. But no matter, strong cultural pressures to dominate and master continued to evolve. Exploit succeeded more often than not. And as people grew ever more infatuated with their growing sense of power, exploit became a self-reinforcing, self-renewing process. Gradually, infatuation with the hunt, with capture, control, and domination, spread from the environment to other human beings as objects of exploit, especially to women. There seemed no better way to symbolize male power than to subjugate women. Thus, initially, for Veblen, the distinction between "industry" and "exploit" applied to gender: Males charged themselves with the responsibility for exploit. Taking center stage, they imposed what they saw as the drudgery of everyday labor onto women, to be performed in the dark backdrop of culture.

Through time, Veblen insisted, these social patterns hardened into habit and belief, into social norm and expectation. Men came to see exploit as the chief activity worthy of their predatory selves, the activity most deserving of social honor, prestige, and reward. Here lay the roots of what Veblen would call "the leisure class," especially its characteristically barbaric insistence on freedom from industry as the most potent sign of power and honor. Conspicuous consumption developed out of these beginnings. The ability to spend and even waste large sums, after all, was a sure sign of one's insulation from the mundane problems of earning a living.

Early humans thus left us an extraordinary anthropological legacy: Today, we pretend to know

that we must work to live, but we nonetheless continue to honor and reward those most able to avoid actually producing anything. Humans are, for Veblen, the only species in which not only do the most successful members evade activity essential to survival, but these so-called upper classes are also esteemed and rewarded for doing so. Social evolution has thus uplifted barbaric values, practices, and institutions that actually threaten the continuation of human life. This is why, for Veblen, barbaric civilizations keep rising and falling. They fail to remember the chief lesson of peaceable savagery: Work, not power, is the necessary condition of human existence.

Sidney Plotkin

See also Cultural Materialism; Gender and Anthropology; Marx, Karl; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Spencer, Herbert

Further Readings

Veblen, T. (1919). *The place of science in modern civilization*. New York, NY: Huebusch.
———. (1979). *The theory of the leisure class*. New York, NY: Penguin Books.
———. (1990). *The instinct of workmanship and the industrial arts*. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.
———. (1997). *Absentee ownership, business enterprise in recent times: The case of America*. New Brunswick, NJ: Transaction.

Visual Anthropology

Visual anthropology is the area of anthropology that looks at the visual materials that cultures produce, such as art, video, and other visual objects, as well as the documentation of culture through visual forms like film and photography. Because of this splitting of focus between visual representations in films, photographs, and so on, and the visual productions of art, material culture, architecture, and performance, the definition of what visual anthropologists do has led to confusion within the field itself as it continues to struggle to find an identity defined by a single theory or method. Yet as visual signifiers become more prominent in media-saturated cultures, visual anthropology can provide the framework within which to explore cultural products and processes. Recent research by Tim Ingold, Cristina Grasseni, and Bruno Latour examines the idea that people learn how to "see" the world in specific ways. For example, people learn to understand that a map, which is not the world, is a scientific representation of space that they learn to understand as the world. This approach incorporates the ideas that seeing is cultural and that understanding images is actively constructive to an understanding of the world.

Methods

Visual anthropology's methods have focused on the media, employing film and photography in the service of illustrating ethnographic research. Sustained usage of images, as in Margaret Mead's *Balinese Character*, explored the potential of meaning making through images, focusing on an emerging use of photographs as primary-source data. Later critiques engaged documentary forms of filmmaking within a constructivist rather than a positivist model, opening up new areas of exploration in the subject of visual media as cultural document. Using visual material as the source of cultural information, through an examination of visual forms, expanded the methods of ethnographic research, drawing from communication and cultural studies.

The development of the discipline shifted the focus from the use of images and film as method to understanding the signs and pictures produced by cultures in order to understand how individuals and groups used visual objects as means of communication, allowing for the broader analysis of the production and reception of art, performance, architecture, photography, film, and other forms of visual material culture as central to the subject of visual anthropology. This emphasis on the visual aspects of culture created a broader understanding of the experiential nature of culture and incorporated phenomenological approaches that created a recognition of other ways in which culture is understood through the senses.

Reflexivity

The "reflexive turn" in anthropology has been characterized by problematizing the simple distinctions that have been historically presumed between "us" and "them" as well as the very nature of the ethnographer and his or her relation to the ethnography. According to Jay Ruby, to be reflexive is for

anthropologists to systematically reveal their methods and themselves; thereby, they demonstrate the constructed nature of their work. More precisely, the final product is illuminated by insights into the producer and the process.

Critics of postmodernism, such as Marshall Sahlins and Ryan Bishop, contend, however, that revealing too much about the methods or the individual can actually be counterproductive. Indeed, an excessive concern with either the producer or the process (or both) will undermine or even obscure the final product. Given the very fine line between revelation and self-indulgence, the challenge is to incorporate the self deliberately without degenerating into narcissism. But how much revelation is enough, and how much is too much? Ruby calls making this judgment "the most difficult aspect of being reflexive." Perhaps one way of negotiating this tenuous terrain is by not compartmentalizing the ethnographic self and the personal self as distinct or even conflicting but as mutually reinforcing. Rather, the focus should be on how each shapes and influences the other.

Traditional Areas of Inquiry

Art

Beginning with Franz Boas's *Primitive Art* (1927), formal elements in material culture and symbols were explored as central components of culture. Early studies such as Boas's created what has since been recognized as a false dichotomy between the products of anthropological subjects (non-Western, small scale), who create artifacts, and Western industrialized nations, who create "art." Incursions were made in the 1980s as attention was drawn to the construction of primitivism through work in both museology (e.g., the "Primitivism" exhibition at the Museum of Modern Art in 1984 and the "Art/Artifact" exhibition at the Museum for African Art in 1988, both in New York City) and anthropology, culminating in what Shelly Errington in 1998 called the "death of authentic primitive art." This led to a broader understanding of the role of art in sociocultural identities, roles, hierarchies, communicative patterns, aesthetics, and economics in the global world system. A move toward a critical analysis of art, technology, and culture has revealed more nuanced approaches to recognizing artistic practices as an embodied act. More recently, the discussion has moved toward engaging the terrain between art history and anthropology to mine the possibilities of understanding cultural production and reception through the co-construction of artistic works that engage anthropological content. Practitioners working between art and anthropology include Fiamma Montezemolo, Susan Hiller, John Wynne, and Andrew Irving.

Photography

Photographs have occupied a central role in anthropological and ethnographic studies as evidence and are almost always provided as illustrations to "show" aspects of the anthropological subject. They are one of the most pervasive examples of a visual media deployed in anthropological research. Margaret Mead's *Balinese Character* (1942) marked an early attempt to implement photographs as the primary technique for conveying anthropological information. With the shift in the understanding of photography from positivist evidence to subjective representation, early anthropological photographs were mined as products of ideological convention. Photo elicitation (using photographs as the means to get people to talk about culture and what they "see") and home-mode photography (how everyday people used photography in their lives) were added to visual anthropology's methods. These examples provided the earliest explorations into the use of photographs in anthropology. They set the stage for more investigative uses of the medium as a product of culture.

Laena Wilder, following the social documentarian Jacob Riis, deploys cameras on her subjects to generate an emic view (insider's view) of the group, to draw attention to social problems and to transform subjects into collaborators. These insider images, reflecting the home mode, were extended to indigenous self-representations, culminating in more contemporary explorations of photographic practice, as seen in David MacDougall's 1991 film *Photo Wallahs*. This use of photography helped provide a better understanding of the politics of representation (how people construct and how they expect to see particular cultural groups), including analyses of popular images of culture in media forms. These works represent a transformation in the use of photographs as cultural documents, objects that

generate ideologies about culture through their ability to present and re-present cultural realities.

Ethnographic Film

Ethnographic film has played a central role in the development and legitimization of visual anthropology as a subdiscipline. Yet the definition of ethnographic film has been debated and contested over the course of the past 3 decades. While filmmakers such as Karl Heider contend that all films convey ethnographic information, others like Jay Ruby argue for the label to be restricted to only those films with anthropological intent and made by trained, "card-carrying" anthropologists. Largely ignored by both documentary filmmakers and cultural anthropologists, the nebulous terrain of ethnographic film has historically occupied a "no man's land." This is exacerbated by the fact that the best known ethnographic films are made by filmmakers with little or no anthropological training. For these reasons, Ruby has vociferously advocated the transition from ethnographic film (films about culture) to a filmic ethnography (films made with a specific anthropological intent).

In spite of the continuing debate about the theoretical underpinnings and methods that constitute ethnographic film, a canon has emerged that focuses on documentary-style films whose subjects include traditional anthropological subjects. This canon incorporated the early documentary films of Robert Flaherty (*Nanook of the North*, 1922) and Edward Curtis (*In the Land of the War Canoes*, 1914). These examples led to a canonization of ethnographic film that established itself primarily through the vehicle of "observational cinema," as exemplified by Margaret Mead's early work, such as *Trance and Dance in Bali* (1952) and *Bathing Babies in Three Cultures* (1951). Ethnographic film here was assumed to be the objective and detached use of film as documentary evidence, and it was implemented in "salvage ethnography," the purported mission being to visually capture and preserve tribal cultures before they disappeared forever.

The work of Jean Rouch and the influence of cinema verité widened the dialogue to showcase ethnofiction, in an attempt to draw attention to the highly constructed nature of film and the role of the camera and the filmmaker in the production. Robert Gardener began to employ film as a research technique, emphasizing the importance of a filmic record to the ethnographic enterprise. Tim Asch's legacy of pairing filmmakers with anthropologists to capture and create documents for conveying and studying culture influenced the corpus of recent ethnographic work. Asch's work with John Marshall among the Dobe Ju'/Hoansi may be among the most frequently viewed ethnographic films.

Recent work in ethnographic film has become more reflexive, removing observational cinematic techniques and voice-of-God narration in favor of more experimental filmmaking modes, often drawing from Jean Rouch and avant-garde cinema. Harvard University's Sensory Ethnography Lab and the Granada Centre at Manchester University in the United Kingdom have produced many new works exploring a more phenomenological and reflexive approach to ethnographic film, such as Lucien Taylor's *Sweetgrass*.

Indigenous Media

During the past 3 decades, a paradigmatic shift has occurred in the relationship between the filmer and the filmed. Popularly referred to as the "crisis of representation," serious discussion has revolved around who has the responsibility and the legitimacy to represent others. In other words, *who has the right to represent whom?* More specifically, who can represent whom, for what purposes, under what conditions, and for which audiences, and most important, in what ways do these representations matter to those who are being represented?

Ethnographic filmmakers had been grappling with these types of questions for years. Indeed, the "right to film" *preceded* the "right to write." As a result, ethnographic film is no longer the sole domain of the White middle-class male. Other historically oppressed voices are striving for expression, and the opportunity now exists to learn from and engage with the ways in which "women/native/others" choose to represent themselves. Indeed, the emergence of indigenous media is inextricably bound to the processes of decolonization and globalization.

As indigenous groups seize greater control of the visual media, they are invariably altering traditional anthropological representations of themselves and reconceptualizing the relationship between subject and object. One perspective, advanced by Ruby, states that the development of indigenous media

has meant that the era of the objectified film version of someone else's reality has officially come to an end. He argues that indigenous media can be seen as evidence of the inadequacy of the dominant anthropological paradigm and as a challenge that must be met in the reformulation of ethnographic film. To survive, Ruby recommends that ethnographic filmmakers must find a new relationship to the subject, which may entail finding a new subject altogether.

In contrast, Faye Ginsburg argues that indigenous media should not displace ethnographic film. She contends that the two can harmoniously coexist as separate and distinct entities. Ginsburg uses the metaphor of the "parallax effect" to describe the epistemologically positive impact that indigenous media can have on ethnographic film. This parallax is created by the different perspectives in media practices that can potentially offer a clearer vision of the multiplicity of points of view through which culture is "produced, contested, mediated, and reimagined." Instead of displacing ethnographic film, indigenous media resituates it by calling attention to the presence of other perspectives.

The voices of indigenous peoples is a new and growing force in the collective imagination of anthropologists. Although Westerners may not expect such peoples to write anthropological monographs, they have done so, and today, they also present us with visual texts made in film and video. This growing indigenous agency informs the various efforts by indigenous groups, large and small, at self-portrayal and the politics generated as a consequence.

These efforts—born, in part, of the collaboration between anthropologists and local societies as well as the independent activities in different societies—address the practice of producing videos for both internal and external consumption. By looking at these efforts, we are forced to appreciate how different agendas for video production may arise in societies that have different worldviews and social objectives. They also contribute to new alliances between indigenous societies separated by language, continental distances, and differing nation-state regimes and make for new alliances between these Fourth World peoples and First World peoples, especially in domains of ecological and environmental concerns and the sharing of cultural products, primarily music.

The discipline of visual anthropology must embrace this reality as a central recognition of its present subject and endeavor. These voices, primarily from the periphery, from the disadvantaged constituencies of power, and from the shadow of national and international spotlights, are now being heard more frequently and with greater clarity because of the emergence of new and affordable recording video technologies and the dynamic dissemination and distribution platforms of the Internet, in general, and YouTube, in particular.

Emerging Areas of Inquiry

New Media

The advent of the Internet connected users from around the world by enabling instant communication with the click of a mouse. To be sure, technology has reduced the significance of physical distance. With millions of video producers and consumers, user-generated websites are reshaping the way people engage with the media.

Thus far, anthropologists have been slow to seriously investigate what is perhaps one of the most pervasive cultural and technological practices of our time: Youtubification. Youtubification, a cultured technology spawned and sustained by the new media of the Web 2.0 revolution, refers to user-generated video content and its placement on the Internet site YouTube for communication and entertainment. With 2.5 billion videos viewed worldwide and hundreds of millions of hits per day, YouTube is more than just a technology for circulating images. It is an apparatus that is enabling users and groups to short-circuit the cultural and political categories that have been manufactured to contain and domesticate them, contest socioeconomic marginalization, and provide alternate readings of historical and cultural narratives.

YouTube presents central ideas of selfhood, identity, the recognition of social hierarchy, kinship structures, statuses, and power differentials in radically new ways. There are emerging translucent vocabularies of seeing alongside didactic ways of seeing that are comprehensible to varied viewer-consumer constituencies who are domesticators of this stimulus. It is important to understand how the World Wide Web is used by these constituencies to mobilize, advertise, and congregate in the pursuit of common goals. Periscoping above national, impenetrable walls of language and geography to engage in an exchange of ideas with outsiders and engage in trade

in products and services, the audiovisual YouTube holds "power constituencies" accountable in ways that are entirely unprecedented. Empowerment is not to be understood as being limited to access to political power and economic resources only but must also include the visibility garnered by formally invisible peoples. Indigenous authors and producers are increasingly offering their art, music, performances, and rituals to the public and are expecting that they will be appreciated as much as those produced by more mainstream media.

This exchange and communication occurs in novel ways. We must recognize the need for the acquisition of new technological skills and develop new tools and methods for visual anthropologists who wish to study the various new societies and resources of the virtual worlds of the Internet and You Tube, especially the emergence of indigenous authors.

A second issue concerns the already existing media. It is a matter of social justice that ethnographic recordings held in higher education institutions should be made available to the communities whose activities they preserve. With appropriate planning and care by researchers, digitization of research recordings in audiovisual media can facilitate access by remote communities to records of their own cultural heritage. Web 2.0 technology enables the opportunity to utilize digital representations of data to facilitate access by the subjects recorded and their descendants in a way that was not previously possible with analog recordings. Our hope is that this collaboration will serve as a model for our colleagues to follow, as more and more historically marginalized peoples are gaining the skills, technology, and need for a fuller understanding of their own past as well as a means to articulate their present and future.

Museum Anthropology

Over the past 30 years, a debate has developed within anthropology over the analysis and critique of museum displays. This work has focused on the politics of representation, the ethics of collecting cultural property, and debates about museum collections. Within anthropology, this work has attempted to provide theoretical tools to understand the relationship of museums to the cultures represented within the exhibits, as well as museums' relationships to the visiting public, for whom those objects are displayed. Recent work such as that by Mary Katherine Scott, Aaron Glass, and Kate Hennessey looks at the power of museums as sites of authority and agency in identity and community construction in visual anthropology.

Interdisciplinary projects engaging anthropologists, artists, and art historians test the boundaries of exhibition space through recent projects such as Ethnographic Terminalia, a curatorial collective that hosts an annual exhibition of international artists and researchers working at the intersection of art and anthropology. The collective explores the boundaries of anthropology and contemporary art through exhibitions that juxtapose the two. Ethnographic Terminalia exhibitions have been run in tandem with the American Anthropological Association's meetings since 2009 and work to "develop generative ethnographies that do not subordinate the sensorium to the expository and theoretical text or monograph," drawing greater attention to the process of ethnographic display.

Sam Pack and *Stephanie Takaragawa*

See also Latour, Bruno; Mead, Margaret; Rouch, Jean

Further Readings

Banks, M., & Morphy, H. (Eds.). (1999). *Rethinking visual anthropology.* New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

Banks, M., & Ruby, J. (Eds.). (2011). *Made to be seen: Perspectives on the history of visual anthropology.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Collier, J., Jr., & Collier, M. (1986). *Visual anthropology: Photography as a research method.* Albuquerque: University of New Mexico Press.

Engelbrecht, B. (Ed.). (2007). *Memories of the origins of ethnographic film.* Frankfurt am Main, Germany: Peter Lang Verlag.

Grimshaw, A. (2001). *The ethnographer's eye: Ways of seeing in modern anthropology.* Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Heider, K. G. (2006). *Ethnographic film* (Rev. ed.). Austin: University of Texas Press.

Hockings, P. (Ed.). (1995). *Principles of visual anthropology.* The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

MacDougall, D. (1988). *Transcultural cinema.* Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Morphy, H., & Perkins, M. (Eds). (2006). *The anthropology of art: A reader.* Malden, MA: Blackwell.

Pink, S. (2006). *Doing visual ethnography: Images, media and representation in research*. London, UK: Sage.
Ruby, J. (2000). *Picturing culture: Essays on film and anthropology.* Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.
Strong, M., & Wilder, L. (2009). *Viewpoints: Visual anthropologists at work*. Austin: University of Texas Press.

Website

Audible Observatories: Ethnographicterminalia.org

VOLTAIRE

Voltaire (1694–1778), born François-Marie Arouet, was one of the leading *philosophes* of the French Enlightenment. Best known for his caustic wit and his ferocious anti-clericalism, he fulminated eloquently against intolerance. Paradoxically, he was thoroughly anti-Semitic, attributing the roots of Christian intolerance to its Jewish heritage. His most famous works are his satirical novellas, especially *Candide*, although these constituted a very small and, in Voltaire's own eyes, minor portion of his voluminous literary output, which also included poetry, tragedies, works of history, pamphlets, and letters. His contributions as a historian were considerable. His attempt at universal history, *Essai sur les moeurs et l'esprit des nations* (Essay on the Customs and the Spirit of Nations), took serious notice of non-European, especially Asian, nations. At a time when European Sinophilia was definitively on the wane, Voltaire remained a great admirer of Asian societies, especially China. He is often characterized as a relatively superficial thinker compared with some of his contemporaries, notably the Comte de Montesquieu and Jean-Jacques Rousseau. Nevertheless, his work includes very perceptive critiques of these authors.

Voltaire's most famous work, *Candide* (1759), is a ferocious satire condemning the intolerance of the Roman Catholic Church, the brutality and futility of war, and the stupidity and complacency of the aristocracy. The naive hero travels the world, enduring one horror after another, while clinging to the teachings of his companion in misfortune, the philosopher Pangloss (a caricature of Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz), who expounds that all is for the best in the best of all possible worlds. In South America, he stumbles across the hidden utopian realm of El Dorado, very loosely based on the Inca empire of Peru, a kingdom of peace, justice, and order, which contrasts with sordid European realities. In the end, disabused of all his illusions, he decides to withdraw from the world and cultivate his own garden in Constantinople. For Voltaire, Turkey seemed a far more tolerant place than western Europe.

Other novellas and dialogues frequently used non-European settings or characters as foils for European foibles. *The Ingenu* (1767) is the story of a "Huron" (actually the long-lost scion of a Breton nobleman, Voltaire's idea of a European "savage"), who is promptly baptized on his arrival in France, only to fall in love with his godmother, with whom marriage would be considered incestuous. The trope of the "savage" who embodies "natural" wisdom and good sense was hardly original but had been pioneered in dialogue form by the Baron de Lahontan in the beginning of the century before being artfully adopted by Denis Diderot as well as by Voltaire.

Essai sur les moeurs (1756) was a more serious work, a universal history conceived as a retort to *Discourse on Universal History* (1681) by Bishop Jacques-Bénigne Bossuet. Voltaire condemned Bossuet's history not only as theocentric but also as Eurocentric, although Bossuet's account dwells extensively, and by no means derogatorily, on the Egyptian and Assyrian empires. Such places were still considered (relatively) within the European orbit. Rather, Voltaire was incensed by the exclusion of China, whose dynastic annals seemed at the time to date further back than any other known written accounts. The longevity and comparative stability of the Chinese empire eclipsed any European equivalent, even the Romans. Like the Jesuits, from whom he drew most of his information on China, he was a great admirer of Confucian morality. Still, despite Voltaire's attempt to take China and other Asian empires seriously, his history remains only slightly less Eurocentric than Bossuet's.

Voltaire's admiration for Asian empires, along with his visceral distaste for the aristocracy, led him to formulate an elaborate and cohesive critique of Montesquieu, whose work he nonetheless admired. He applauded Montesquieu's defense of liberty, not to mention his anti-clericalism. On the other hand, as a historian, he deplored Montesquieu's cavalier attitude toward his sources, particularly his readiness to distort them to prove whatever point he wanted to make. (Arguably, Voltaire the polemicist, if not the historian, can be accused of comparable distortion.)

Voltaire's most penetrating critique was to call into question the very concept of "despotism" central to the argument of the *Spirit of Laws*. No realm, and certainly no empire, could be subject to the whims of a single individual but instead must rely on an elaborate administrative machinery and, indeed, as Voltaire rightly insisted, on bodies of law to which rulers as well as subjects were bound. China, Persia, or Turkey were certainly not nations without laws. Admittedly, Voltaire conceded, exceptional monarchs in Asia or Europe might manage to exceed their legal authority, but these were exceptions that proved the rule.

Voltaire's critique was predicated on broader political differences with Montesquieu. Montesquieu's depiction of abusive central authority in China or Persia was meant to demonstrate the evils of a system that lacked an aristocracy to hold the monarch in check. Voltaire's contention that these Asian empires were models of orderly government was intended as a demonstration that the aristocracy was superfluous. In the struggles between the monarchy and the aristocracy in 18th-century France, Voltaire and Montesquieu were on opposite sides of the fence. Their debates about Asian societies were, in fact, debates about French politics.

Voltaire was even more dismissive of Rousseau's model of an original asocial humanity, as depicted in *Discourse on the Origins of Inequality* (1755). Humans, Voltaire insisted, were intrinsically social. Any model of "natural" humanity that was not also social was artificial and pointless.

All in all, Voltaire was at his best—and sometimes at his worst—as a critic. His critique of the work of his contemporaries could be very astute and on the mark, but he never devised any original scheme of his own.

Robert Launay

See also Lafitau, Joseph-François; Montesquieu, Comte de; Rousseau, Jean-Jacques

Further Readings

Voltaire. (1963). *Essai sur les moeurs et l'esprit des nations* [Essay on the customs and the spirit of nations] (2 vols.). Paris, France: Garnier Frères.

———. (1990). *Candide and other stories* (R. Pearson, Trans.). New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

———. (1994). *Political writings* (D. Williams, Trans.). New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

W

Wagley, Charles

Charles Walter Wagley (1913–1991), a Boasian-trained American anthropologist, Indigenist, and Brazilianist, is considered a pioneer in Amazonian ethnology and race/ethnic studies in the Americas.

Biography and Major Works

Charles Wagley grew up in Bonham, Texas, and Kansas City in a poor family headed by his mother. Despite many obstacles, including the onset of the Great Depression, he managed to attend the University of Oklahoma and then transfer to Columbia University, where he earned his bachelor's degree in 1936. Continuing his studies for a PhD in anthropology, Wagley took classes with Franz Boas, but it was his mentors Ruth Benedict, Ruth Bunzel, and Ralph Linton who had the greatest influence on him. With support from Bunzel, he conducted dissertation research in the highland Guatemalan community of Santiago Chimaltenango in 1937, leading to his doctoral degree in 1941.

Wagley was also motivated by Linton's interest in acculturation, and for his second ethnographic research, he sought to study a remote group experiencing rapid change. With the support of Heloisa Torres of the Brazilian National Museum and guidance from Alfred Métraux, Wagley journeyed up the Araguaia River in 1939 to study the Tapirapé. Although he published several articles from this research, his 1940 article "The Effects of Depopulation Upon Social Organization, as Illustrated by Tapirapé Indians" stands out as an early exemplar of demographic anthropology.

During his Tapirapé fieldwork, Wagley nearly died of malaria. He lost contact with the National Museum, which sent a team to find him. On the team was a young intern named Eduardo Galvão. The two became friends and developed a professional relationship that lasted until Galvão's death in 1976. As a student of Wagley at Columbia, Galvão became Brazil's first anthropology PhD. Galvão later played a crucial role in developing Brazilian anthropology.

In 1940, Wagley married Cecília Roxa, from a prominent Brazilian family. Through her family ties, he was able to maintain multiple connections with Brazilian intellectuals and literary figures of the era. In 1941, Wagley and Galvão conducted a second study of acculturation among the Tenetehara—resulting in the book *The Tenetehara Indians of Brazil* (1949). With the entry of the United States into World War II, Wagley was recruited to join Serviço Especial de Saúde Pública (the newly formed Brazilian public health organization) to aid efforts to improve the health of rural workers for the purpose of increasing the extraction of key wartime resources. Wagley worked in the Amazon with rubber tappers—setting up health posts and producing culturally appropriate educational materials on health and malaria prevention. His work—one of the earliest examples of applied medical anthropology—proved of such value that the Brazilian government presented him with the prestigious Medal of War and named him to the National Order of the Southern Cross (an honor given to foreigners in recognition of significant service to the nation).

After the war, Wagley resumed teaching at Columbia—eventually becoming the first Franz Boas Professor of Anthropology. He was an important figure in setting up area study programs in the United States (along with Robert Redfield) and became the first director of the Institute of Latin American Studies at Columbia. In 1948, Wagley, Galvão, and both their wives conducted research in one of the communities under Serviço Especial de Saúde Pública's wartime purview—Gurupá. Their collective efforts resulted in Galvão's dissertation and Wagley's classic 1953 ethnography of rubber tappers, *Amazon Town* (still in print at the time of this writing). In 1951–1952, Wagley teamed up with the Brazilian anthropologist Thales de Azevedo to lead the Bahia State–Columbia University Community Study Project. Wagley originally planned the project to parallel the cultural ecology focus of his colleague Julian Steward's project in Puerto Rico, but following a suggestion by Métraux, Wagley focused instead on race relations. The research resulted in the first comparative anthropological study of race relations in Brazil in Wagley's edited book *Race and Class in Rural Brazil* (1952). Building on the Bahian research, Wagley described the cultural area of Plantation America in his 1957 article "Plantation America: A Culture Sphere" (after criticism by Melville Herskovits, Wagley changed the label to "Afro-America"). In 1958, Wagley teamed up with his most prominent student and by then a colleague at Columbia—Marvin Harris—to coauthor the first-ever cross-cultural comparison of minorities—*Minorities in the New World: Six Case Studies*. In 1959, Wagley wrote his influential "Social Race in the Americas"—a foundational piece documenting the cultural construction of "race."

By 1962, Wagley turned his attention to Brazilian national identity in his *An Introduction to Brazil*. He patterned the book on his mentor Benedict's postwar study of Japan, *The Chrysanthemum and the Sword* (1946), although carefully including descriptions of regional, racial, and class diversity in addition to the unifying themes of Brazilian national culture.

In 1971, after being robbed in his New York City apartment elevator, Wagley decided to move to the University of Florida, where he remained for the rest of his life. Also in 1971–1972, he served as president of the American Anthropological Association. During his time at Florida, Wagley published his Tapirapé material (gathered from 1939 to 1965) in *Welcome of Tears: The Tapirapé Indians of Central Brazil* (1977). With the building of the Transamazon Highway, Wagley began what was to be his last project—training students to investigate the massive changes under way in the region. Foreseeing the value of cross-disciplinary research, he encouraged his students to supplement anthropological training with natural science, agricultural, and forestry coursework. His 1974 edited volume, *Man in the Amazon*, reflects this concern, which was also evident in his work to establish what eventually became the interdisciplinary center for Tropical Development and Conservation at the University of Florida.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

Wagley was influenced by—and made important contributions to—a number of emerging theoretical and methodological approaches of the time. These include the aforementioned research on culture change and acculturation in Amazonia, as well as the expansion of the community study method to peasant communities following the lead of Redfield (notably in *Amazon Town*), contributions to Steward's cultural ecology approach—including the comparison of demographic collapse and cultural survival in Amazonia in "Social and Cultural Influences on Population in Two Tupi Tribes" (1951), and additions to the cultural area concept for Latin America through the description of Plantation America and Wagley and Harris's "A Typology of Latin American Subcultures" (1955).

In addition, Wagley's description of social race was a clear statement on the arbitrary nature of racial classifications—which in the Americas could be based on phenotype, descent, language, dress, wealth, social customs, and/or self-identification—and could change depending on the circumstances. His collaborative work with Harris on race relations and minorities, each groundbreaking approaches, greatly influenced Harris's later work on race and racism. Wagley's ecological focus and early demographic work also influenced Harris's conceptualization of cultural materialism—although the two parted theoretical (but not personal) company later on owing to Wagley's "persistent eclecticism," according to Harris. As a precursor to the anthropological turn to globalization, Wagley's works contained insightful discussions of colonial and neocolonial domination and resistance—as seen in his

discussion of *aviamento*, or the debt-peonage system linking European industrial centers to lowly rubber tappers in his *Amazon Town*. Wagley also introduced innovative approaches to the study of kinship, acculturation, cultural ecology, and race/ethnicity to several generations of Brazilian scholars—in many ways matching the influence of his contemporary Claude Lévi-Strauss in Brazilian anthropology. According to some Brazilian scholars, Wagley is considered one of the founders of modern Brazilian ethnology.

Richard Pace

See also Benedict, Ruth F.; Boas, Franz; Columbia University; Harris, Marvin; Herskovits, Melville

Further Readings

Chernela, J. (2002). Antropologia (etnologia amazônica) [Anthropology (Amazon Ethnology)]. In R. Barbosa, M. Eakin, & P. Aleida (Eds.), *O Brasil dos Brasilianistas: Um Guia dos Estudos sobre Brasil nos Estados Unidos, 1945–2000* [Brazil of the Brazilianists: A Guide to Studies on Brazil in the United States, 1945–2000] (pp. 233–268). São Paulo, Brazil: Paz e Terra.

Harris, M. (1990). Charles Wagley's contribution to anthropology. In Looking through the kaleidoscope: Essays in honor of Charles Wagley [Special issue; P. Magee & J. Wilson, Eds.]. *Florida Journal of Anthropology* (6), 1–4.

Pace, R. (Ed.). (2013). Dossiês Especiais: As Legacias de Charles Wagley [The Legacies of Charles Wagley; Special ed.]. *Boletim do Museu Paraense Emílio Goeldi. Ciências Humanas, 8,* 3.

Wallace, Alfred R.

Alfred Russel Wallace (1823–1913), British naturalist, evolutionist, geographer, anthropologist, and reformer, was a central figure in the emergence of the theory of evolution by natural selection, an important contributor to several other natural history and social science subjects, and an influential social critic.

Biography

Wallace was born on January 8, 1823, at Usk, Monmouthshire, Wales, the son of middle-class but not well-off English parents who had moved to Wales a couple of years earlier. They returned to England (Hertford) when Wallace was 5 or 6, and his only formal schooling took place there. A final financial collapse in late 1836 broke up the family, and young Alfred was forced to leave school. For the next 10 years, he worked as an apprentice in the surveying, building, and mapmaking trades, though, during a slow period in 1844–1845, he also taught elementary classes at a private school in Leicester. Meanwhile, he had begun to take an interest in collecting natural history specimens, especially after 1844, when he met Henry Walter Bates, another prominent naturalist-to-be, in Leicester. In 1847, the two decided to mount a natural history collecting expedition to the Amazon River basin.

They arrived in Brazil in April 1848 but soon split up, with Wallace concentrating on birds and insects of the central Amazon and Rio Negro. Wallace was already a committed transmutationist, but after 4 years in the Amazon, he had not recognized a mechanism that could explain evolutionary change. In poor health, he returned to England, but on the way, his ship caught fire and sank, taking 2 years of his collections down with it. Wallace and the crew were rescued 10 days later. Luckily, his collections were insured, and this permitted him to continue on with his researches 18 months later, this time in the East Indies (then known as "the Malay Archipelago").

Starting in Singapore in April 1854, Wallace had fabulous success over the next 8 years, sending home more than 125,000 specimens, again mainly of birds and insects, and recording important details of the region's faunas and peoples. While in the field, he wrote and published three seminal papers: (1) in 1855, "On the Law Which Has Regulated the Introduction of New Species" (an early evolutionary tract considered one of the first modern biogeographical studies); (2) in 1858, "On the Tendency for Varieties to Depart Indefinitely From the Original Type" (the "Ternate" natural selection article that sent Darwin scurrying to complete his *On the Origin of Species*); and (3) in 1859, "On the Zoological Geography of the Malay Archipelago" (outlining his discovery of "Wallace's Line," the most famous biogeographical boundary).

On returning home in the spring of 1862, Wallace settled down to a long career of writing, lecturing, and irritating any social institution that he felt was trampling on the rights of ordinary

people. Until about 1881, his emphasis was natural history, especially biogeography and evolutionary theory. During this period, Wallace wrote four legacy-generating books: *The Malay Archipelago* (1869), *The Geographical Distribution of Animals* (1876), *Tropical Nature and Other Essays* (1878), and *Island Life* (1880). His attention then gravitated more toward social issues, beginning with land reform but eventually extending to political institution reform, monetary policy, anti-vaccinationism, labor problems, and other topics. In 1889, he published the highly successful book *Darwinism*. Later in life, he became interested in astronomy, with his books *Man's Place in the Universe* (1903) and *Is Mars Habitable?* (1907) tackling subjects that are still of interest today.

Wallace married Annie Mitten in 1866, and together they had three children. Except for a few short trips to Europe and a lecture tour around North America in 1886–1887, Wallace stayed close to home after 1862. He remained active to the end, publishing two further social criticism tracts in his final year (at the age of 90). Wallace was well honored during his lifetime with two honorary doctorates, Royal Society membership, several major medals, and the Order of Merit. Wallace died peacefully at his home in Wimborne, Dorset, England, on November 7, 1913, several months before the onset of the First World War.

Wallace's Anthropology Work

As an anthropologist, Wallace is best known for his work in physical anthropology. His observations on Amazon monkeys yielded an important early theory relating speciation to the influence of river barriers; a few years later, he famously studied the field habits of orangutans on the island of Borneo. In 1864, his milestone paper "The Origin of Human Races and the Antiquity of Man Deduced From the Theory of 'Natural Selection'" became the first important treatment relating natural selection to race differentiation. Later, some of his theories on racial origins became influential.

Still, one might argue that his contributions to social and cultural anthropology are just as interesting, if not as well-known. Wallace explored all aspects of evolution, from astronomical cosmology to human social systems. His earliest writings are on subjects such as the uses of varied forms of knowledge, mesmerism, improving library collections and environs, emigration, the perils of national isolationism, and the daily affairs of Welsh farmers—all completed years before his first scientific publication in 1850. Wallace's two books from his Amazon travel days are heavily ethnographic. *A Narrative of Travels on the Amazon and Rio Negro* (1853) includes an appendix of native vocabularies, a separate chapter on aboriginal ethnography, and plentiful accounts of their daily routines, while *Palm Trees of the Amazon and Their Uses* (1853) plies an ethnobotanical course.

Wallace's Australasian studies also had a strong ethnographic side. He paid special attention to residents' spiritual beliefs, local economies and technologies, relations with colonial authorities, racial affinities, moral persuasions, and, once more, vocabularies. Much of this observation is thoughtfully condensed in his *The Malay Archipelago* (1869), one of modern history's great masterpieces of regional description. Later in life, Wallace used his knowledge of tropical peoples to regularly criticize both institutional treatments of them and his colleagues' often racist appreciations. In a 1906 article, for example, he condemned society's selfish treatment of the Polynesians, concluding, "What we have actually done, and left undone, resulting in the degradation and lingering extermination of so fine a people, is one of the most pathetic of . . . tragedies" (p. 182).

It must not be overlooked that Wallace was one of his period's most vocal spiritualists. In a letter in 1866 to T. H. Huxley (the same year Wallace was made the first president of the Anthropology Department at the British Association for the Advancement of Science meetings), he characterized spiritualism as "a new branch of Anthropology." In Wallace's view, material change organized by rote under natural selection was augmented by intelligent spiritualistic influences.

Wallace's Legacy in Anthropology

Having for many years been cited as the "Grand Old Man of Science," Wallace was possibly the most famous scientist in the world in his old age. Wallace's general renown beyond scientific circles would not have been possible without his increasing attention to social issues as he aged. Two early events established this trajectory: (1) at the age of 14, he fell in with a group of followers of the

utopian socialist reformer Robert Owen, who would later inform his approach to social organization, and (2) later, in the 1850s, he read Herbert Spencer's *Social Justice*, which profoundly affected his views on fairness within social institutions. He was also impressed early on by the ideas of George Combe, Robert Dale Owen, John Stuart Mill, and Emanuel Swedenborg.

These influences, added to his middle-class upbringing and years among primitive peoples, gave Wallace a rather unique worldview. He was one of the least racist of all 19th-century investigators, believing that, on average, less technologically advanced peoples' ethical and moral standards were not inferior to those held elsewhere. He also considered aboriginal peoples to be on a par intellectually with Europeans, although lacking the education to optimize those skills. His general philosophical position might be described as "socialist-libertarian": He believed in collective organizing for the common good, but not at the expense of overbearing forms of governmental control.

Wallace had no academic affiliations or students. But, as an engaging and forceful writer in his later years, his opinions on social and moral issues were in constant demand. Many of his diatribes on matters such as militarism, women's rights, eugenics, missionary work, colonial politics, imprisonment, the plight of the poor, immigration, and institutional religion remain fresh sounding even today. Indeed, his positions have been cited as squarely foreshadowing the "liberal agenda" program of the following century. In a 2010 article, K. B. Lowrey went so far as to identify Wallace as an ideal "ancestor figure" for contemporary anthropology.

Charles H. Smith

See also Darwin, Charles; Nineteenth-Century Evolutionary Anthropology; Spencer, Herbert; Westermarck, Edward

Further Readings

Fichman, M. (2004). *An elusive Victorian: The evolution of Alfred Russel Wallace*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Lowrey, K. B. (2010). Alfred Russel Wallace as ancestor figure: Reflections on anthropological lineage after the Darwin bicentennial. *Anthropology Today, 26*(4), 18–21.

Raby, P. (2001). *Alfred Russel Wallace: A life*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Smith, C. H. (2008). Wallace, spiritualism, and beyond: "Change," or "No change"? In C. H. Smith & G. Beccaloni (Eds.), *Natural selection and beyond: The intellectual legacy of Alfred Russel Wallace* (pp. 391–423). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Wallace, A. R. (1864). The origin of human races and the antiquity of man deduced from the theory of "natural selection." *Journal of the Anthropological Society of London, 2,* clviii–clxx.

———. (1865). On the varieties of man in the Malay Archipelago. *Transactions of the Ethnological Society of London, 34,* 196–215.

———. (1890). Human selection. *Fortnightly Review, 48,* 325–337.

———. (1895). The expressiveness of speech, or mouth-gesture as a factor in the origin of language. *Fortnightly Review, 58,* 528–543.

———. (1906). The native problem in South Africa and elsewhere. *Independent Review, 11,* 174–182.

Wallace, Anthony F. C.

Anthony F. C. Wallace (1923–) is a Canadian American anthropologist and ethnohistorian. The author of 10 books as well as numerous articles and technical reports, he is particularly known for his contributions to psychological anthropology, theory of revitalization movements, and other cultural innovations and for his many historical studies of American Indians and the Industrial Revolution in the United States. He was a professor of anthropology at the University of Pennsylvania for most of his career, as well as director of clinical research at the Eastern Pennsylvania Psychiatric Institute. In 1972, Wallace was made president of the American Anthropological Association. In 2013, he was honored with the Lifetime Achievement Award from the Society for Psychological Anthropology.

Wallace was born in Toronto, Canada, and grew up in Pennsylvania, where he collected Pennsylvania Dutch witchcraft stories and visited an Iroquois reservation to interview leaders of the Handsome Lake religion with his father, the folklorist and historian Dr. Paul A. W. Wallace. Following service in the army in World War II, he completed his undergraduate and graduate studies at the University of

Pennsylvania, where he earned his PhD in 1950. As an undergraduate, he studied physics and history; for his graduate studies, he chose the interdisciplinary field of anthropology. His mentors were two students of Franz Boas: Frank G. Speck, an eminent scholar of northeastern Algonquian and Iroquoian Indians, and A. Irving Hallowell, a formative figure in psychological anthropology; he also studied with Loren Eiseley, the author of widely read books on human evolution.

These intellectual influences are evident in Wallace's commitment to grounding human behavior and cultural processes in biology, psychology, ecology, and history. As he writes in the conclusion to his 1961 (second edition, 1970) work, *Culture and Personality*, his approach is "as all scientific explanations must be—unashamedly reductionistic" because "culture is an open system"; he opposes views of culture as a superorganic phenomenon divorced from biology and psychology. Yet, in that work and elsewhere, he also criticizes the type of scientific work in which a single limited method is followed and "the richness of human experience is not savored." Throughout his career, he alternated between detailed narrative histories and systematizing cross-cultural explanations like that of Frazer's *The Golden Bough*, which Wallace read while he was in the army.

Native American Studies

Some of Anthony Wallace's best-known work focuses on interactions between Native Americans and White Americans in the 18th and 19th centuries. His MA thesis, published as *King of the Delawares: Teedyuscung 1700–1763*, initiated a theme he had explored for many years: the psychological effects of White Americans' unscrupulous land grabs and cultural denigration of American Indians. His most widely cited work on this theme is his 1969 book (with the assistance of Sheila Steen), *The Death and Rebirth of the Seneca*. In it he describes the precolonization Seneca society and personality, including their sophisticated psychological understandings of dreams as revealing unfulfilled wishes. He then portrays the demoralizing effects for the Seneca of being confined to reservations and ends with the story of the prophet Handsome Lake, whose visions in 1799 led to personal transformation and a religious movement that initiated adaptive cultural change. An influential early ethnohistorian, Wallace also published *The Long, Bitter Trail: Andrew Jackson and the Indians* in 1993 and *Jefferson and the Indians: The Tragic Fate of the First Americans* in 1999. Anthony Wallace worked for several Indian nations as a researcher and expert witness on land claims in the 1950s.

The only monograph of Wallace's based on field research was his doctoral dissertation, published as *The Modal Personality Structure of the Tuscarora Indians as Revealed by the Rorschach Test* by the Bureau of American Ethnology in 1952. In it Wallace criticizes the then common method of inferring national character from cultural practices instead of objective psychological measures. Rather than averaging the Rorschach scores of his participants, as others had done, he determined the most common profile, the modal personality structure (a term he took from Cora DuBois), which he found in just 37% of his sample—a result that was surprising given some of the uniformitarian culture and personality theories of his time. He concluded that although socialization experiences are influenced by cultural expectations, and hence tend to be similar in a society, individual personality was the result of personal experiences rather than being molded by culture and, like fingerprints, was unique to an individual.

Psychological Anthropology

Wallace made numerous contributions to the field of culture and personality (later known as psychological anthropology). One is his concept of the *mazeway*. Drawing on Edward Tolman's proposal that rats develop a cognitive map of mazes and are not just responding to stimuli, as well as on work by Hallowell and others, Wallace proposes in a 1956 article, "Mazeway Resynthesis: A Biocultural Theory of Religious Inspiration," that every person builds representations of his or her world that include goals, plans for achieving the goals, and ideas about self and other people and objects. His conception of the mazeway as a probability distribution of associated patterns presages more recent neural network models of cognitive schemas. In other articles (e.g., "The Meaning of Kinship Terms," coauthored with John Atkins), Wallace criticizes semantic analyses that predict how terms are applied but lack "psychological reality."

If each person's mazeway is somewhat different from everyone else's, what is the relation among the personalities in a society? In the 1961 introduction to *Culture and Personality*, Wallace proposes that culture can be thought of not as a "replication of uniformity" but as an "organization of diversity," a way for "individuals to organize their strivings into mutually facilitating equivalence structures," which are predictable patterns of behavior among people who have complementary roles. Members of a group do not need to share mazeways in order to meet each other's needs. Wallace seems to be interested in diversity not only due to his study of the differences among personalities in any society but also because of his concern about subordinated groups. In the preface to *The Long, Bitter Trail*, Wallace urges governments to "find ways of organizing diversity instead of trying to remove it."

In the 1956 "Mazeway Resynthesis" article, Wallace also addresses mental illness and religious inspiration. Using the example of the visions of Handsome Lake, Wallace argues that for healthy psychological functioning, an individual's mazeway must try to maintain satisfactory levels of internal communication, consistency, and correspondence with reality, although we abandon old perceptions with difficulty and thus tend to accumulate inconsistent elements in our mazeways. Situational factors such as bereavement, natural disasters, or other social changes can disrupt mazeway adjustment and create stress. Chronic mental illness may be due to physiological breakdown of normal processes of mazeway repair. Changes in adrenalin metabolism could help bring about religious visions, which in turn lead to a rapid reorganization of the mazeway, restoring equilibrium and reducing stress. This account is original among anthropological accounts of its time in taking religious visions to be therapeutic rather than pathological and in giving a biocultural rather than psychodynamic explanation of mental illness.

Wallace continued to use some psychodynamic concepts throughout his career; for example, in his 1987 *St. Clair: A Nineteenth-Century Coal Town's Experience With a Disaster-Prone Industry*, he proposes that 19th-century mine owners scapegoated careless miners as a defense mechanism against their guilt over inadequate mine safety. The psychoanalytic element of his theories diminished over time, however. In the introduction to *Culture and Personality*, he criticizes contemporary Freudian anthropologists for their failure to follow Freud in grounding clinical psychology in neurology, biology, and experimental psychology.

Revitalization and Religion

In 1956, Anthony Wallace also published his most cited work, "Revitalization Movements." He defines revitalization movements as "a deliberate, organized, conscious effort by members of a society to construct a more satisfying culture." The movement could be religious (e.g., the Ghost Dance, early Methodism), political (e.g., Nazism), or a mix of those. Whatever be the type of revitalization movement, it results in rapid cultural change that is deliberately intended, instead of the more commonly observed process of slow, unintended change.

Wallace postulates that a revitalization movement arises when events such as military conquest, cultural and political subordination, epidemics, or economic dislocations create chronic stress. One of the individuals under this stress undergoes mazeway resynthesis and then converts others to his or her new vision for the culture. If they are successful, cultural transformation occurs. The process of mazeway resynthesis is not only a key causal element in revitalization movements, it is also a model that Wallace believes is replicated on the societal level. He uses the analogy of society as a kind of organism that tries to maintain homeostasis by taking special measures "to preserve its own integrity" when under stress. Wallace does not comment on the seeming discrepancy between this organismic view of society and the more loosely coordinated "organization of diversity" view he put forward during the same period.

In 1966, Wallace published *Religion: An Anthropological View*, in which he summarizes leading anthropological theories of religion, proposes fundamental patterns of behavior that are common to all religions, and discusses some of the functions of religion, including mazeway resynthesis through visions and rituals. Unlike structural-functionalists, who highlighted the conservative function of religion in reinforcing social structures, Wallace drew on his work on revitalization movements to stress that religious visions can also lead to sociocultural change.

Cultural Innovation

Wallace extended his interest in ethnohistory and social change to examine the effects of scientific

and technological innovation. Inspired by Thomas Kuhn's discussion of paradigm shifts in science, Wallace investigates the way the solutions to technical problems instigate thoroughgoing change in the culture of a group, just as the fieldwork method changed the discipline of anthropology. *Rockdale: The Growth of an American Village in the Early Industrial Revolution*, published in 1978, uses the anthropological method of a community study as a lens to portray the social effects of the Industrial Revolution. It also narrates a 19th-century struggle between Enlightenment freethinkers and evangelical Christians, a dialectical struggle of opposites that resulted in the distinctively American synthesis of Christian industrialism, which held that proper stewardship of wealth would produce economic growth for all and equalize social conditions. *Rockdale* was awarded the Bancroft prize in American history (in 1979) and was a finalist for a Pulitzer Prize. A companion study to *Rockdale*, *St.Clair*, shows the failure of 19th-century mine owners to respond realistically to coal mine conditions in that Pennsylvania town and draws conclusions about why some organizations are disaster prone. Wallace draws together a variety of case studies in *The Social Context of Innovation: Bureaucrats, Families, and Heroes in the Early Industrial Revolution as Foreseen in Bacon's New Atlantis*. In that work, Wallace describes some of the social and institutional structures necessary for technological innovation. He disputes that Protestantism was a necessary condition. Although Wallace shares Max Weber's concern with the role of religion in social change, the particular conclusions Wallace drew did not replicate Weber's.

In recent years, Anthony Wallace's many contributions to ethnohistory were noted in a lengthy interview published in the journal *Ethnohistory* (1998). Similarly, the influence of his conception of society as an "organization of diversity" was examined in a 2009 special issue of *Ethos* ("The Organization of Diversity: Developmental Perspectives," edited by Ryan Brown and Harold Odden). Wallace contributed an epilogue to that special journal issue, in which he tied together his interest in the diversity of personalities and roles in a society with his interest in intellectual diversity and social change.

Throughout his career, Wallace also contributed to policy discussions and civil rights. In addition to his work on behalf of Native American land rights, he wrote about the negative effects of high-density public housing ("Housing and Social Structure"), analyzed psychological reactions to disasters, and argued early on that homosexuality should not be considered a mental illness. He spoke against anthropological involvement in counterinsurgency intelligence gathering and for human subjects protections for mental patients.

Claudia Strauss

See also Culture and Personality; DuBois, Cora; Ethnohistory; Hallowell, A. Irving; Psychological Anthropology; Systems Theory

Further Readings

American Philosophical Society. (2003). *Anthony F. C. Wallace papers: Background note*. Retrieved from http://www.amphilsoc.org/mole/view?docId=ead/Mss.Ms.C011.64a-ead.xml

Grumet, R. S., & Wallace, A. F. C. (1998). An interview with Anthony F. C. Wallace. *Ethnohistory, 45,* 103–127.

Wallace, A. F. C. (1952). *The modal personality structure of the Tuscarora Indians as revealed by the Rorschach test* (Bulletin No. 150). Washington, DC: Bureau of American Ethnology.

———. (1956). Mazeway resynthesis: A biocultural theory of religious inspiration. *Transactions of the New York Academy of Sciences, 18,* 626–638.

———. (1956). Revitalization movements. *American Anthropologist, 58,* 264–281.

———. (1966). *Religion: An anthropological view*. New York, NY: Random House.

———. (1970). *Culture and personality* (2nd ed.). New York, NY: Random House. (Original work published 1961)

———. (1978). *Rockdale: The growth of an American village in the early Industrial Revolution*. New York, NY: Alfred A. Knopf.

———. (1987). *St. Clair: A nineteenth-century coal town's experience with a disaster-prone industry*. New York, NY: Alfred A. Knopf.

———. (1993). *The long, bitter trail: Andrew Jackson and the Indians*. New York, NY: Hill & Wang.

———. (1999). *Jefferson and the Indians: The tragic fate of the first Americans*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (2009). Epilogue: On the organization of diversity. *Ethos, 37,* 251–255.

Wallace, A. F. C. (with Steen, S.). (1969). *The death and rebirth of the Seneca*. New York, NY: Vintage Books.

Wallace, A. F. C., & Atkins, J. (1960). The meaning of kinship terms. *American Anthropologist, 62,* 58–80.

Wallerstein, Immanuel

Immanuel Maurice Wallerstein (1930–) is one of the most influential social theorists in recent decades. Wallerstein's approach to world history, which he calls the "world-system perspective," has had a wide and deep impact throughout the social sciences and humanities.

Intellectual Development

Wallerstein was born in New York City on September 28, 1930. He earned his BA (1951), MA (1954), and PhD (1959) at Columbia University, where he taught until 1971. Columbia housed outstanding intellectuals such as Karl Polanyi, Lionel Trilling, Richard Hofstadter and C. Wright Mills. Later, Wallerstein's intellectual development advanced from New York City to Paris, Ghana, and the Ivory Coast. While in Paris, he became familiar with the work of the Annales school, a legacy of the historian Fernand Braudel. He also worked with Georges Balandier, a French sociologist, anthropologist, and ethnologist who focused on African colonialism.

As an undergraduate at Columbia, Wallerstein took classes from C. Wright Mills during the period in which Mills was writing *The Power Elite*. Mills was disaffected with the predominant theoretical and methodological approaches in sociology (abstracted empiricism and grand theory). Wallerstein, like Mills, was disaffected, helped create a new way of looking at society, and hoped to renew the possibility of achieving human freedom.

For his dissertation, later published as *The Road to Independence: Ghana and the Ivory Coast* (1964), Wallerstein conducted research on the voluntary associations that led the West African independence movements. The work was based on interviews and surveys that Wallerstein conducted in the Gold Coast (later Ghana) and the Ivory Coast. His studies of the rise and demise of colonial regimes in Africa led him to conclude that one could not understand African history and social change without comprehending the historical and contemporary interactions among Africa, Europe, and the Americas.

Wallerstein was on the faculty at Columbia during the 1960s, an era of international student revolt, including the civil rights movement in the United States, the antiwar movement stimulated by the war in Vietnam, and a countercultural rebellion that made alliances with radical workers in France and Italy. Later, he called these sometimes connected, sometimes independent collection of movements "the world revolution of 1968." In 1971, he moved to McGill University for 5 years, then on to Binghamton University. There, along with Terence Hopkins, he founded the Fernand Braudel Center for the Study of Economies, Historical Systems, and Civilization. In the early 1990s, Wallerstein chaired the international Gulbenkian Commission on the Restructuring of the Social Sciences. In 2000, he became a senior research scholar at Yale. He is a past president of the International Sociological Association and has published more than 30 books and more than 200 articles and book chapters.

At Columbia, Wallerstein came to see intellectual and political projects as two sides of the same coin. He became interested in *dependency theory*, the idea that there is an international hierarchy that underdevelops the Global South. Dependency theory had emerged primarily among Latin American scholars such as Raul Prebisch, Teotonio Dos Santos, and Fernando Henrique Cardozo. It was popularized in the Global North by Andre Gunder Frank. Over the ensuing years, Wallerstein, along with Giovanni Arrighi and Samir Amin, used the concept of an evolving hierarchical global division of labor to analyze African development. Fruitful collaboration and debate among Frank, Amin, Arrighi, and Wallerstein continued throughout their lives.

Formulation of the World-System Perspective

Wallerstein and the dependency theorists argued that core-periphery relations went far beyond formal colonialism. He perceived that similar colonial-like relations had occurred between Poland and western Europe during the 16th century. He discussed this in detail in the first volume of *The Modern World-System*, published in 1974. The world-system perspective explains institutional changes from a focus on entire interpolity systems, in contrast to the usual social science focus on single-nation societies. Wallerstein argued that societies have always existed within larger interaction networks that shaped their histories. Long before globalization became a catchword, the world-systems perspective examined the nature of a world economy that linked a system of interacting polities. Wallerstein defined three kinds

of systems: (1) minisystems based on reciprocity, (2) world empires based on redistribution, and (3) world economies in which a number of states ally and compete with one another. World systems are composed of three components: (1) the core, which contains the most developed societies; (2) the periphery, which is composed of the least developed societies; and (3) the semiperiphery, which is composed of societies intermediate between core and peripheral societies. The relation of core societies to semiperipheral societies and of semiperipheral societies to peripheral societies is similar to the relations between colonizing and colonized states. A key difference is that all the three are part of one overall system. The word *world* means largely self-contained. Only in recent centuries has a single world system become planetary (Earth-wide). In short, it is a world. It is the semiperiphery that helps stabilize the overall system. Often semipheripheral societies are former core states that have been passed by more developed states, or peripheral societies beginning to develop more rapidly. While the core-periphery-semiperiphery structure is more or less constant, the positions of individual societies or states shift over time.

The world-systems perspective has come to encompass a number of bodies of research, historical narratives, and theories that seek to explain world historical social change. In short, it is a knowledge paradigm that contains many competing theories. The key insight of the perspective is that interaction networks (trade, information, and political interactions) have woven polities and cultures together for centuries. Thus, the entire interpolity system, or world system, is the central unit of social evolution. In this approach, what is commonly called globalization is only the latest manifestation of these processes of change.

A world system is a vitally connected interaction network, not merely international relations. The modern world system is a nested stratification system in which core polities (which compete with one another) dominate and exploit dependent peripheral and semiperipheral peoples. A few polities have been upwardly or downwardly mobile within the larger hierarchy, but most stay in the same position.

The evolution of the modern world system has been driven mainly by capitalist accumulation, the struggles among classes, and resistance from peripheral and semiperipheral peoples. The current semiperiphery includes large countries in the Global South (e.g., Mexico, India, Brazil, China, Indonesia) as well as smaller countries that have intermediate levels of economic development (e.g., South Korea, Taiwan, Israel, South Africa). Institutional change has been shaped by both the winners and the struggle of those who resist them. The modern core-periphery hierarchy is an asymmetrical division of labor between core producers of highly profitable commodities and controllers of finance capital, and peripheral producers of much less profitable goods. The semiperiphery is an intermediate zone. Wallerstein's key point is that national development can only be understood and explained by comprehending this core-periphery hierarchy.

Wallerstein argued that the modern world system emerged in the late 16th century (1560–1640), when Europeans first circumnavigated the globe and began colonizing and exploiting other continents. He contends that the Dutch hegemony peaked during the economic and demographic crisis of the 17th century. Then, Great Britain and France contended for hegemony in the 18th century. Britain eventually came to dominate the system in the 19th century. The United States rose to hegemony in the 20th century and is now in a phase of hegemonic decline.

So for Wallerstein, capitalism became predominant in the regional (European) world system in the 16th century. This system then grew larger in a series of cycles and upward trends and is now approaching the upper limits (asymptotes): (a) the long-term rise of real wages, (b) the long-term costs of material inputs, and (c) taxes. These long-term (over centuries) trends lead to a fall in the average rate of profits. Strategies combating these trends—automation, capital flight, acceptance of reduced wages to remain employed, and attacks on the welfare state and unions–slow down but do not eliminate the contradictions of capitalism. This will cause an irreconcilable structural crisis during the next 50 years, which will lead to the emergence of some other system after "The Age of Transition." The results of this transition are far from clear or fixed. Possibilities range from a global fascist state to some form of collectively rational egalitarian and democratic global governance.

Critiques of the World-System Perspective

There have been major critiques of Wallerstein's approach to world-systems analysis:

1. It ignores the particularities of different kinds of capitalism and discounts internal processes in national societies.

2. It neglects class relations and overemphasizes exchange relations.
3. It is too "economistic" and neglects politics and culture.
4. It fails to see a new global stage of capitalism.
5. It neglects the evolution of world systems before the emergence of the modern system.

Wallerstein has answered these criticisms in the prologue to the most recent (2011) edition of *The Modern World-System*, Volume 1.

Later Developments of the World-Systems Perspective

Several groups of scholars have attempted to modify and extend the analysis of the modern world system to precapitalist settings. They have sought to explain how and why the modern system emerged where and when it did in comparative world historical perspective and to understand earlier evolutionary transformations. Initially, Wallerstein was skeptical of such extensions, but more recently, he has come to see their value. Andre Gunder Frank and Barry Gills claimed that the modern capital-imperialist system emerged 5,000 years ago when states and cities came into being in Mesopotamia. Christopher Chase-Dunn and Thomas Hall proposed a comparative and evolutionary world-systems perspective, which contends that earlier regional world systems were usually multicultural networks of competing and allying polities. They also contend that long-term prestige goods exchanges sometimes played an important role in the reproduction of local hierarchies within regional systems. And they also examine the role of political-military interactions and the influences of information exchanges, including ideologies. These extensions have sparked considerable interest in, and new critiques of, world-systems analysis among archaeologists, anthropologists, world historians, and political scientists.

One obstacle to comprehending Wallerstein's argument is the time horizon, which for most people is far less than 50 years. Wallerstein is intentionally vague about what might replace capitalism. He argues that the declining hegemony of the United States and the crisis of neoliberal global capitalism are signs that capitalism can no longer adjust to its internal contradictions. Thus, the world is in a period of chaotic and unpredictable historical transformation. The new system might be an authoritarian global state that preserves the privileges of a global elite or an egalitarian system in which nonprofit institutions serve communities. Wallerstein agrees with those who argue that taking state power will not work, as happened in the Russian Revolution in 1917 and the decolonization movements. Wallerstein has become one of the leaders of the global justice "movement of movements," which emerged around the World Social Forum.

Though there have been many other contributors, Immanuel Wallerstein is the major founder of the world-systems perspective. Wallerstein's outstanding work as a historical sociologist and especially as a public intellectual demonstrates that social theory is not only for academics.

Thomas D. Hall, Christopher Chase-Dunn, and Hiroko Inoue

See also Dependency Theory; Economic Anthropology; Polanyi, Karl; Political Economy; World-Systems Theory

Further Readings

Arrighi, G., & Goldfrank, W. L. (Eds.). (2000). Festschrift for Immanuel Wallerstein. *Journal of World-Systems Research, 6,* 150–945.

Babones, S., & Chase-Dunn, C. (Eds.). (2012). *Routledge handbook of world-systems analysis*. London, UK: Routledge.

Chase-Dunn, C., & Inoue, H. (2011). Immanuel Wallerstein. In G. Ritzer & J. Stepinsky (Eds.), *New Blackwell companion to major social theorists* (pp. 395–410). Oxford, UK: Wiley-Blackwell.

Wallerstein, I. (Ed.). (2000). *The essential Wallerstein*. New York, NY: New Press.

———. (2004). *World-systems analysis: An introduction*. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.

———. (2011). *The modern world-system I: Capitalist agriculture and the origins of the European world-economy in the sixteenth century*. Berkeley: University of California Press. (Reprint of 1974 original work, with a new prologue)

———. (2011). *The modern world-system II: Mercantilism and the consolidation of the European world-economy, 1600–1750*. Berkeley: University of California Press. (Reprint of 1980 original work, with a new prologue)

———. (2011). *The modern world-system III: The second era of great expansion of the capitalist world-economy, 1730–1840s*. Berkeley: University of California Press (Reprint of 1989 original work, with a new prologue).

———. (2011). *The modern world-system IV: Centrist liberalism triumphant, 1789–1914*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Weber, Max

Maximilian Karl Emil ("Max") Weber (1864–1920) was a key founder of sociology whose ideas have had an increasing influence on anthropology as anthropology has shifted away from its previous specialization in nonstate or marginal peoples.

Brief Biography

Max Weber is widely regarded as history's foremost sociologist. He came from a background of merchants and academics and deeply felt in his own being the psychology of the Protestant ethic of hard work that he so famously analyzed. His father was a minor conservative constitutionalist politician and *bon viveur*; his mother came from a line of rich merchants but was deeply committed to plain living and serious morality. Weber's doctoral thesis (1889) was on medieval trading companies, and his Habilitation thesis (1891) was on the agrarian system and laws of ancient Rome. In 1893, Weber married Marianne Schnitger, his father's elder brother's granddaughter, whose inheritance enabled the couple to set up independently of Weber's parents. The couple were devoted to each other and committed to equality of the sexes (in contrast, as they saw it, to Max's parents' relationship). Marianne, with Max's support, went on to become a well-known feminist scholar. They had no children (most Weber specialists assume that the marriage was never consummated).

In 1894, at the age of just 30, Weber became a professor of economics at Freiburg. After 2 years, he moved to a professorship in Heidelberg. Less than a year later, Weber had a major row with his father, which was never resolved. When his father died shortly afterward, Max went into a deep depression, had to take time off teaching, and eventually resigned his professorship in 1903. Following an extended trip to Italy and an influential 3-month visit to the United States, Weber began one of the most productive periods of his life, including writing *The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism* (1904–1905, revised 1919). He only returned to teaching in 1919, shortly before his death.

Weber was very much a public intellectual, deeply concerned with the big political issues of his day (including the First World War and its aftermath). He stood, unsuccessfully, for political office. To the end of his life, he wrestled with the moral questions of exactly how and to what extent a scholar should become involved in political action. Unlike Émile Durkheim, and despite the fact that he founded the German Sociological Association, Weber regarded himself primarily as a legal historian and a political economist rather than a sociologist.

Weber's main interests were the culturally embedded nature of economic action, the history of complex societies, and, particularly, the questions of the origins and uniqueness of the West. Because Weber had relatively little to say about small-scale, nonliterate societies, his influence on anthropology was slight. In more recent times, that has changed, but his influence for the most part has come mediated through the figures of Talcott Parsons and Clifford Geertz and latterly Pierre Bourdieu and Michel Foucault (see further below). A few modern anthropologists, such as Jack Goody and Eric Wolf, have taken up large-scale historical comparative themes of a Weberian sort without being strongly influenced by Weber himself. M. G. Smith was an exception in that he drew explicitly on Weber in his work on Nigeria and the Caribbean.

Major Works

The Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism (*PE*) is arguably the most influential sociological text ever written. It was translated into English by Talcott Parsons and published in 1930. Parsons's is a highly readable, but also unreliable, translation. The famous image of the "iron cage," in which, in Weber's view, modern people are forced to live, seems to have been borrowed by Parsons from Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress* and inserted into Weber's text. In fact, Weber's German wording means "steel-hard casing," an even more depressing, though arguably less poetic, image in that it implies an inability to see out through the bars to alternative ways of living. New English translations by Steven Kalberg (2002) and by Peter Baehr and Gordon Wells (2002), much more careful than Parsons's, are now available and convey more accurately what Weber actually wrote.

Weber published many long essays during his lifetime, including comparative studies of the different

economic ethics of world religions. These appeared in English as the books *The Religion of India*, *The Religion of China*, and *Ancient Judaism* (a further study of Judaism, several studies on Christianity, and a projected volume on Islam were never completed). Some of his most important lectures on historical sociology, law, the state, and social methodology were also not published in his lifetime. His widow brought them together and published them posthumously as the three-volume *Economy and Society*. Parts of *Economy and Society* have appeared as separate books (e.g., *The Sociology of Religion*, *The City*, and *The Methodology of the Social Sciences*). His *General Economic History*, which examines the other (nonreligious) factors necessary for the emergence of capitalism (the rule of law, a relatively free market, a minimum level of scientific technology, free labor, double-entry bookkeeping, etc.,), was also put together from lecture notes after his death. It was the first of Weber's works to be translated in English, coming out in 1927.

The "Weber Thesis"

The "Weber thesis" is a claim about the relationship between Protestantism and capitalism. For a number of reasons, in the Germany of Weber's day, any claim to see a special link between the two was likely to stir up debate: (a) Protestant-Catholic relations in Germany were highly sensitive, and the predominance of Protestants in government and commerce gave rise to political and cultural tensions; (b) Weber's argument drew on and debated with already existing German scholarship on the origins of capitalism; and (c) *PE* also had implications for historical method and debates with Marxism (were religious outlooks simply a reflection of underlying economic relationships as Marx had argued, or could religious ethics have an independent influence on historical developments?).

There was yet another reason why the essay generated an enormous and polemical literature from the outset, a stream of publications that has barely halted to this day. Weber's own style of writing, not to mention his entire intellectual framework, is not easy to come to grips with. His long sentences, with many subordinate clauses and qualifications, are indications of his heroic attempts to do justice to enormous quantities of empirical material. The convoluted style goes with a powerful generalizing thrust that, despite the sheer mass of evidence he marshals, gives a remarkable unity to his thought.

Unfortunately, a considerable portion of the literature attacking Weber's *PE* is based on a fundamental misunderstanding of what Weber actually wrote. In *PE*, Weber begins—as a way of introducing the initial problem—by pointing out that in the Germany of his day Protestants outnumbered Catholics among the mercantile and entrepreneurial classes. Without reading any further, this initial statement of a *problem* has been mistaken for the *thesis* that Protestants make good capitalists and Catholics make bad ones (and this is then generalized by writers in other contexts to the assertion that Hindus, or Chinese, or Muslims [or others] make bad capitalists). Naively, Weber is assumed to be some kind of partisan cheerleader for Protestantism and its benign effects on capitalist growth and an opponent of all other forms of religion. Quantities of paper have been wasted digging up examples of Hindus, Catholics, Japanese, and others who are or were good capitalists, or even (occasionally) examples of Protestants who were poor capitalists. Thanks to this fundamental mistake in the interpretation of Weber's work, "Weberian" for many people means believing that economic change is brought about by cultural, religious, or psychological attitudes. This is quite contrary to what Weber himself thought, which was that most of the time religious ethics and other ideologies do *not* have an independent effect on people's actions. The Protestant ethic was, he believed, an exception in this regard.

What Weber was trying to do was to pinpoint the answer to a very specific historical question: Why did modern capitalism emerge only in northwest Europe, a part of the world that, from many points of view, was not particularly favorable to it? And why did it not appear in China or South Asia (India), which had many advantages that Europe lacked? Thus, evidence advanced about the success of East Asian capitalists in modern times is wholly irrelevant. The fact that particular religious outlooks may be highly compatible with capitalism, once the capitalist system is established "on mechanical foundations," as Weber put it at the end of *PE*, is not germane to the question of how that system emerged when no one knew what it was or could be. East Asian societies with strong Confucian values are evidently very well adapted to capitalist production once the advantages of capitalism are

plain for everyone to see and once state bureaucracies have embarked on deliberate policies to encourage "development." What Weber was interested in was a wholly different problem, namely, the first, unplanned, and endogenous emergence of the modern form of capitalism: That is, could modern capitalism have appeared first in East Asia?

Furthermore, as this implies, Weber was interested in one particular approach to capitalism, and the spirit of endless accumulation and hard work that went with it. Capitalistic activity could be and, he recognized, historically often had been carried out in a very un-Puritan spirit (e.g., "booty capitalism," when merchants invested in expeditions that sought to plunder enemies of the state). Weber undertook his comparative study of different civilizations to discover whether non-Christian religious traditions had the potential to produce analogs of the Protestant ethic, in other words ethics that could motivate economic behavior of a modern capitalist sort. Such behavior had four key features: It was active (not resigned or fatalistic), rational (in the sense of systematizing all areas of life to one end), this-worldly, and ascetic. Weber was highly aware of the paradox that the endless work and accumulation of the ascetic Protestant entrepreneur, banned from ever enjoying the fruits of his labor, was, from another point of view, supremely irrational.

Most religious paths for most of human history have failed to combine all four key characteristics. Buddhism, for example, offers a path that is moderately ascetic and capable of rationalization, but it is otherworldly and nonactive for its fullest adherents (i.e., those who become monks or nuns). In other words, in premodern understandings of Buddhism, those who follow the Buddhist path most fully do not engage in worldly action and are led away from any such involvement. Weber found only one religious tradition that was any kind of functional analog of Protestantism, namely, Jainism in India. It is indeed true that many Jains are highly successful merchants and industrialists. However, because of other aspects of the organization of South Asian society, the spirit of Jainism did not spread more widely (Jains were always a minority in a largely Hindu social field). Other factors specific to South Asia (e.g., the organization of scientific knowledge and the patrimonial state) also militated against the endogenous emergence of capitalism in South Asia, though some historians have argued against Weber's conclusions on this.

How Anthropologists Read Weber

Most anthropologists study Weber only as part of their introductory training in social theory. As a consequence, they associate him with one of two possible positions. In the first interpretation, Weber is thought to be a simplistic, positivist advocate of modernization theory and scientific rationality (contemptuous references to "Weberian rationality" as self-evidently misguided and ethnocentric are common). The second way of pigeonholing Weber is to identify him with Geertzian interpretivism, taking at face value Clifford Geertz's invocation of Weber as the patron saint of hermeneutics in the introduction to *The Interpretation of Cultures*. (Geertz [1973] famously wrote, "Believing, with Max Weber, that man is an animal suspended in webs of significance he himself has spun, I take culture to be those webs" [p. 5].) These two interpretations of Weber differ radically, but most anthropologists are not sufficiently interested to notice that they are radically incompatible. As in the parable of the blind men and the elephant, each interpretation grasps one small part of the complex whole that is Weber's thought and takes it as the master key.

Sometimes anthropologists engage with particular parts of Weber's oeuvre, as when they write about charisma, bureaucracy, or Buddhism. But when they do this, they rarely engage with Weber's major themes of comparative civilizational development, the uniqueness of modernity, the rise of individualism, and the relationship between economy and morality. Ironically, when they do tackle such themes, as was the case with Louis Dumont in his magisterial, if controversial, study of inequality and hierarchy in India, *Homo Hierarchicus*, and his subsequent studies of the economic ideology of Europe, they seem keen to disown any acknowledgment of Weber's influence. Weber belongs to sociology, so anthropologists on the whole avoid invoking him as a major theoretical influence. There are understandable institutional reasons for doing so, but it is none the less a pity that anthropology should retain such a deep imprint of its origin in the study of small-scale societies.

Thus, contemporary anthropology receives Weber's influence indirectly, primarily via two other

thinkers who were themselves deeply influenced by him: Pierre Bourdieu and Michel Foucault. Bourdieu built particularly on Weber's distinction between three different forms of stratification: political power, wealth, and status or prestige. Bourdieu attempted to provide much greater systematic consideration than Weber ever did to different forms of capital (social, economic, and cultural) and the degree to which they could be transformed from one to another. Bourdieu also shared with Weber an interest in combining a full account of external, objective forces constraining action and an understanding and appreciation of the internal, subjective motivations of individuals. Many writers in the social sciences content themselves with inhabiting one or the other side of this big divide. Bourdieu frequently claimed to have transcended it. However that may be, through the influence of Bourdieu and also Anthony Giddens, practice theory in anthropology attempts to encompass the big themes of power, resistance, class, and nationality, while still staying true to grassroots perspectives and ordinary people's conceptualizations. What Sherry Ortner, one of the most articulate exponents of practice theory, fails to realize, trapped as she is in her Geertzian view of Weber, is that these are precisely the themes that Weber himself grappled with in his political sociology and historical works.

Foucault has also had a substantial influence on anthropologists working today, particularly his notions of *governmentality* and *biopower*. (Foucault's term *governmentality* is an abbreviation of "governmental rationality.") Foucault's grand theme of the emergence of modern forms of the state, his interest in the ways in which the new institutions of modernity (the prison, the school, the hospital) oblige people to behave in certain ways and encourage concomitant changes in psychological attitudes and dispositions, can be seen as a development of Weber's interest in bureaucracy and what he called *rational-legal domination*. Weber's focus on the new kind of person brought into being thanks to the legacy of Protestantism has its parallels in Foucault's interest in "self-making" projects. Foucault's emphasis may have been more on *discourses* that are independent of particular agents; Weber thought more in terms of sets of *ideal types* (models, if you will) through which actors engage with and construct social reality. But with all due regard for the differences of the eras in which they wrote, and their different social and political positioning within their respective societies, the overall intellectual thrust of the two sociologists was very similar. They both shared a deep pessimism about the dehumanizing effects of modern rationalized forms of organization, though Foucault's views were perhaps bleaker and less nuanced than Weber's. Those anthropologists who have begun in recent years to engage with the state and bureaucracies or to invoke Foucault in their studies of hospitals or government health campaigns are, usually unbeknown to themselves, recovering many of Weber's themes.

Rationality and Ideal Types

Anthropologists often fail to appreciate that Weber allowed for different types of rationality and that different spheres of life could have their own canons of rational conduct. Civilizations could evolve in accordance with processes of internal systematization that were quite different from those of other cultures. Thus, Weber was unique among late-19th-century and early-20th-century sociological thinkers in breaking loose from the single-path evolutionist thinking ("All societies must pass through the same stages") that was taken for granted by his contemporaries. Furthermore, and importantly, Weber distinguished means-end rationality from value rationality. Thus, actions may be what anthropologists would call expressive, undertaken in accordance with a value and still rational in their way, even if they are not intended to bring about instrumental goals. Despite these relativizing moves, Weber was clear that instrumental rationality, thanks to the triumph of capitalism, was now fated to dominate the entire globe; an inevitable consequence was the gradual and inexorable disenchantment or "de-magicking" (*Entzauberung*) of the worlds in which ordinary people live.

Philosophically, Weber was deeply indebted to the German neo-Kantian philosophers of the second half of the 19th century, such as Wilhelm Windelband and Heinrich Rickert. All scientific enquiry is about developing adequate models of an ultimately unknowable reality; there is a fundamental difference, however, between natural science, with its universal laws and purely externalist attempt to grasp phenomena, and the historical sciences, which must combine model building with the attempt to understand the values, subjective

experiences, and viewpoints of the people being studied. It is in this context that his notion of *ideal type* must be understood: "ideal" not in the sense of "recommended" but meaning "abstracted" and "constructed." Actual historical and ethnographic cases will approximate more or less to the model or ideal type (e.g., of bureaucratic organization). Such a gap is entirely to be expected and does not, of itself, demonstrate that the model has no utility. Only the demonstration that, in the situation described, the ideal type also wholly fails to capture the worldview, values, or expectations of the actors would show that the model was inadequate.

David N. Gellner

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Dumont, Louis; Durkheim, Émile; Foucault, Michel; Geertz, Clifford; Goody, Jack; Ortner, Sherry; Parsons, Talcott; Practice Theory; Wolf, Eric

Further Readings

Bendix, R. (1977). *Max Weber: An intellectual portrait*. Berkeley: University of California Press. (Original work published 1960)

Brubaker, R. (1984). *The limits of rationality: An essay on the social and moral thought of Max Weber*. London, UK: Allen & Unwin.

Collins, R. (1986). *Weberian social theory*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures: Selected essays*. New York: Basic Books.

Gellner, D. N. (2001). *The anthropology of Buddhism and Hinduism: Weberian themes*. New Delhi, India: Oxford University Press.

———. (2009). The uses of Max Weber: Legitimation and amnesia in Buddhology, South Asian history, and anthropological practice theory. In P. Clarke (Ed.), *The Oxford handbook of the sociology of religion* (pp. 48–62). Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Gerth, H. H., & Wright Mills, C. (Eds.). (1970). *From Max Weber: Essays in sociology*. London, UK: Routledge. (Original work published 1948)

Gordon, C. (1987). The soul of the citizen: Max Weber and Michel Foucault on rationality and government. In S. Whimster & S. Lash (Eds.), *Max Weber, rationality and modernity* (pp. 293–316). London, UK: Allen & Unwin.

Gorski, P. S. (2001). *The disciplinary revolution: Calvinism and the rise of the modern state in early modern Europe*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Keyes, C. F. (2002). Weber and anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 31,* 233–255.

Marshall, G. (1982). *In search of the spirit of capitalism*. London, UK: Hutchinson.

Ortner, S. B. (1994). Theory in anthropology since the sixties. In N. B. Dirks, G. Eley, & S. B. Ortner (Eds.), *A reader in contemporary social theory* (pp. 372–411). Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press. (Reprinted from *Comparative Studies in Society and History, 26,* 126–166, 1984.)

Schroeder, R. (1992). *Max Weber and the sociology of culture*. London, UK: Sage.

Wenner-Gren Foundation

The Wenner-Gren Foundation for Anthropological Research, Inc., one of the major funders of anthropological research internationally, has played an important role in the discipline's development since the end of World War II. A private, operating foundation, it is dedicated to the support of all branches of anthropology, including biological, archaeological, linguistic, and social/cultural research on humanity's origins, historical trajectory, and contemporary diversity.

History

In 1941, the Swedish industrialist Axel Leonard Wenner-Gren established the Viking Fund as a charitable organization incorporated in the United States, funded with $2 million of stock in his company, the Electrolux Corporation. He appointed Paul Fejos, a Hungarian-born medical doctor, film director, and self-taught archaeologist/ethnographer, to manage its activities, and through Fejos's influence, the Fund in 1942 defined its focus as the field of anthropology. In 1951, its name was changed to honor the founder and reflect its mission. Fejos was the architect of the programs and approach of the foundation, and he led it (under the nominal oversight of a board of directors) until his death in 1963, when he was succeeded by his wife and associate, Lita Binns Fejos (later Osmundsen).

After a relatively inactive period during the war years, the second half of the 1940s saw the development of a wide array of activities. The core program provided small grants to individuals and organizations of any nationality. The guiding principle of

the program then and thereafter was to support whatever research expenses were deemed necessary but were not covered by other funders, offering grantees maximum flexibility and minimal bureaucratic requirements. In 1945, a town house in New York City was acquired, which soon functioned as a research institute, housing laboratories, technical equipment available for loan, a library, and space for visiting scholars. The house was also the setting for biweekly "Supper Conferences," important scholarly gatherings that continued for 35 years. In addition, occasional large international symposia were sponsored and held off-site. New programs were devised, among them the Viking Fund Publications in Anthropology monograph series, Summer Seminars in Physical Anthropology, and the Viking Fund Medal.

In the 1950s, when large public and private agencies were providing more ample grants for anthropology, the foundation decided to concentrate a part of its modest endowment on fostering communication and collaboration among scholars worldwide. Two initiatives addressed that goal: (1) the acquisition in 1957 of Burg Wartenstein, a castle in Austria, to serve as an international conference center and (2) the founding in 1959 of the journal *Current Anthropology*. There followed a period of prosperity for both the anthropological profession and the foundation. All programs flourished, and new ones were developed, notable among them a casting program (Anthro-Cast), which pioneered the production of high-quality casts of fossil specimens for research and teaching.

In 1969, a new tax law in the United States imposing more stringent spending and monitoring requirements necessitated some changes in the foundation's operations. The early 1970s brought added financial difficulties: inflation, a poor investment climate, and erosion in the value of the dollar. As the endowment declined, the board was faced with the decision to spend the foundation out of existence or to continue it at a much reduced level. They took the latter course, terminating several programs and, in 1979, selling both Burg Wartenstein and the New York house. The sale of the properties and the moving of the offices to modest rental space meant a severe reduction in in-house projects and a greater emphasis on grant making; in effect, Wenner-Gren no longer functioned as a research institute. Eventually, the board sought new management more suited to the current situation. Lita Osmundsen retired, and after a search, Sydel Silverman was appointed as president in 1987.

A time of reinvigorating programs and instituting new ones, regularizing management, and repairing relationships with the anthropological community followed. This progress was aided by an increase in the endowment, which grew to more than $100 million by 2000, when Silverman retired. Richard G. Fox was named president, and in 2005, he was succeeded by Leslie Aiello. In 2011, the endowment stood at more than $150 million, providing an annual program budget of approximately $6 million.

Current Programs

The principle of maintaining a range of programs that complement one another guided the foundation at its inception and continues to do so today. The largest funding initiative supports individual research of doctoral students and established scholars. In addition, grants are made for write-up of completed research, for the enhancement of research resources and scholarly exchange, for the preservation of anthropology's historical record, and for the organization of conferences and workshops. The foundation's special interest in the international advancement of anthropology is furthered through fellowships for the doctoral training of students from less developed countries, multiyear grants to support anthropology departments in countries where the discipline is underrepresented, and grants for international collaborative research projects. The International Symposium Program, which organizes intensive working conferences on the model developed at Burg Wartenstein, is ongoing; about 145 have been held to date (2012). *Current Anthropology* continues as a highly regarded journal, covering all branches of anthropology worldwide. The foundation remains attentive to the needs of the discipline and ready to devise new initiatives wherever it can make a meaningful impact.

Significance for Anthropology

Although the foundation has always had comparatively modest resources, its diverse programs, including the more than 7,000 grants awarded over its history, have had an inestimable impact on research in anthropology. There are many cases where the

direction of a field was changed, for example, the key role played by the foundation in the application of carbon-14 dating to archaeology, its influence on the transformation of an "old" (typological) physical anthropology into one based on a new synthesis of genetics and evolutionary theory, and the numerous international symposia that charted innovative approaches to a field of inquiry or opened up new ones, such as the politics of reproduction and transnational migration. The foundation's achievements derive from its long-standing close relationship to anthropology, which has enabled it to assess and respond strategically to current needs and promising research directions and thereby provide leadership at the forefronts of the discipline.

Sydel Silverman

See also Bateson, Gregory; Lewis, Oscar; Tax, Sol

Westermarck, Edward

Edvard (Edward) Alexander Westermarck (1862–1939), the Finnish social anthropologist and philosopher, is known for his studies on the evolution of human marriage and morality, as well as for his fieldwork in Morocco. At the London School of Economics, he was a teacher of the first generation of professional anthropologists in Britain.

Biography and Major Works

Westermarck was born in Helsingfors (Helsinki), what was then the Russian Grand Duchy of Finland, to upper-middle-class parents with university connections. An elder brother of his died of tuberculosis, and Edward, too, had early health problems. Due to asthma, he was frequently cut off from school and social life, although he passed his matriculation exam on schedule in 1881. It was only in 1886, during a spell of strenuous mountaineering in Norway, that he gained confidence in his physical fitness. Westermarck never married. He was not outgoing, but he was friendly and got along with people, regardless of culture and class background. He had some lifelong good friends.

In 1881, Westermarck enrolled at the Imperial Alexander University at Helsingfors (today the University of Helsinki). He graduated with a thesis in philosophy in 1886. The naturalistic tendencies of European thought in the 1880s made a lasting impact on him. He was skeptical of German idealism, and he dismissed Christianity as untenable both philosophically and ethically. At 24, inspired by Darwin's views on the early development of humans, he learned English to study the reports by colonial administrators and missionaries that were kept at the British Museum Library.

Westermarck spent the academic year of 1887–1888 in London, writing his doctoral thesis. His friendship with the psychologist James Sully (1842–1923) proved crucial at this time. They had met in Norway 2 years earlier, and it was Sully who introduced Westermarck into his academic network. Sully also presented Westermarck to the Couplands, with whom Westermarck lodged and who also had connections with leading British intellectuals.

Westermarck defended his thesis at Helsingfors in 1889, and E. B. Tylor recommended the work to Macmillan Publishers. Macmillan published an extended version, with a preface by Alfred Russel Wallace, in 1891, *The History of Human Marriage*. The book and the huge publicity it received were, according to Westermarck, the turning point of his career.

After this tour de force, Westermarck embarked on a work of even more encyclopedic dimensions: a general, comparative account of the development of morality. *The Origin and Development of Moral Ideas* was published in two volumes in 1906 and 1908.

The year 1898 saw the beginning of Westermarck's lasting connection to Morocco. At first, he intended his trip to be just one leg of a comprehensive research journey. However, he soon realized that Morocco alone presented enough material for his research. Even in general, the interests of social anthropologists at the time were shifting toward the intensive study of geographically limited areas. Westermarck's active field research covered 6 years, on and off from 1898 to 1913. He traveled widely, even in regions considered out of bounds not only for Europeans but also for Moroccan government officials. After 1923, he again regularly spent some part of the year in Tangier, where he bought a house. Shereef Sîdi Abdessalam el-Baqqâli (1876–1942) was Westermarck's crucial contact and friend in Morocco. El-Baqqâli was employed as Westermarck's guide and the head of his staff,

but he also gave Westermarck language instruction and collected fieldwork data. El-Baqqâli is explicitly acknowledged as the coauthor in *Wit and Wisdom in Morocco* (1930), a collection of proverbs. In 1926, Westermarck published the main results of his Moroccan research in his two-volume *Ritual and Belief in Morocco*.

In 1904, Westermarck was enrolled as Appointed Teacher of Sociology (in effect, social anthropology) at the London School of Economics. In 1907, the 3-year appointment was converted to a professorship, which Westermarck held until his retirement in 1930.

At Helsingfors, Westermarck sought the chair of philosophy. The university senate voted in his favor, but the appointment was blocked for reasons connected with language policy. The university was bilingual, with Finnish and Swedish as the media of instruction. Westermarck's first language was Swedish, but he refused to sit the required exam for Finnish. The chair was given to a Finnish speaker, but in compensation, a new professorship was created for Westermarck in 1906. It was agreed that Westermarck could also keep his job in Britain and spend part of the year there.

At the turn of the 20th century, Finnish bourgeois politics was dominated by two central concerns: (1) relations to the Russian central government and (2) the rivalry between ethnic Finns and ethnic Swedes. Nationalist politicians in Russia hoped to dismantle the constitutionally guaranteed Finnish autonomy. Westermarck made use of his international contacts to gain sympathy for the Finnish cause. In Finnish domestic politics, Westermarck stressed Swedish language rights. After Finnish independence, he was part of the Finnish delegation to the League of Nations, sent to represent Finland in a dispute with Sweden over the Aaland Islands. He advocated Swedish cultural autonomy within a territorially unified Finnish state.

Westermarck's work for the Academy of Åbo (today, Åbo Akademi University) must be seen in this context. In 1918, the academy was founded as a private university, with Swedish as its language of instruction. Westermarck was appointed to the chair of philosophy, which he held until 1932. He was also elected the first rector for 1918 to 1921. As head of the new university, he was active in recruiting staff and securing donations. He hoped to foster a modern research university with a strong profile for the social sciences. No doubt he had the London School of Economics in mind as a possible model. However, the senate failed to renew Westermarck's rectorate for another 3-year period. Westermarck's friends saw this as a power grab by the vice rector and his retinue in the science faculty.

The outcome was probably a blessing in disguise, as it left Westermarck with more time for research. His years at Åbo saw the completion of many long-term projects. There were three volumes on Morocco and some new work on sex and marriage. In 1932, he finished *Ethical Relativity*. His very readable memoirs, *Memories of My Life*, were published in 1929. Westermarck's very last book, *Christianity and Morals*, sums up his various moral objections to Christianity.

On September 1, 1939, Nazi troops crossed the Polish border, plunging Europe into war. Westermarck, on hearing the news on the radio, reacted with a severe attack of asthma and died on September 3.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

At the turn of the 20th century, the boundaries between anthropology and moral philosophy were sometimes vague. Westermarck's research spans both. He addressed three major themes: marriage and sexuality, the nature of morality, and popular religion in Morocco.

Marriage and Sexuality

In *The History of Human Marriage*, Westermarck's main finding was that monogamy was the original form of human conjugal life. The theory of original promiscuity, which had been the received view, was refuted with a wealth of evolutionary argument and historical data. Westermarck explained monogamy and prohibition of incest in terms of instincts, which in turn had biological explanations.

Westermarck's explanation of incest aversion between siblings is known as the *Westermarck hypothesis*. It is sometimes seen as his most important contribution to modern research. He claimed that the physical proximity of two individuals during childhood activates in them an inborn disposition to avoid sexual contact. What activates aversion is cohabitation, not genetic relatedness per se. This still makes evolutionary sense. It reduces inbreeding, because individuals who grow up together are for the most part also genetically related.

Sigmund Freud rejected Westermarck's theory. Famously, he believed that the earliest human sexual impulses are directed toward the child's immediate family members. There would be no reason for the incest taboo unless humans were actually tempted to commit incest, something that Westermarck's theory would deny. Westermarck responded in a revised edition of his book in 1921. He pointed out that activities that humans instinctively avoid may *also* be prohibited by law and custom. But Westermarck did not describe exactly how incest aversion, as a psychological propensity of individuals, gives rise to social norms and institutions relating to incest. The final assessment of Westermarck's hypothesis perhaps depends on whether it is taken to explain only incest aversion or also the social prohibition against incest.

Theory of Morality

Westermarck presents his theory of morality in *The Origin and Development of Moral Ideas.* The bulk of this study consists of historical and anthropological data. But it also develops a philosophical position. Morality is based on emotions of a particular kind, called retributive emotions. Higher animals, including humans, have a natural propensity to react to each others' behavior by paying back in kind, for good or ill. Moral emotions appear when retributive emotions acquire a universal, impartial, and disinterested character. During cultural evolution, moral judgments increasingly target the agents' motives instead of external behavior. Their range of application extends beyond the individual's immediate surroundings, while increasingly excluding animals, children, and the mentally ill as subjects of moral evaluation.

Ethical Relativity reiterates Westermarck's theory, with a focus on philosophical argument. He argues that a normative science of ethics is impossible. Ethical systems that claim rational grounds, such as utilitarianism and Kantianism, in fact reach their conclusions on the basis of emotions. In the last analysis, moral judgments are generalizing claims about emotions that the relevant actions would normally evoke in impartial observers. But Westermarck sometimes just makes the more modest claim that moral concepts are "ultimately based" on emotions.

Westermarck believes that moral emotions give rise to mores and customs, which are later codified into laws. However, he is not very specific about the process or about the role of society in it. Westermarck is sometimes accused of reducing social phenomena to psychology. This is not quite true, but his main emphasis nevertheless lies on shared human nature, not on the social dynamics that influence moral outlook.

In his broad anthropological syntheses, Westermarck shows himself an adherent of evolutionism and comparative method. He hoped to uncover the instincts or emotions that lay at the bottom of various customs and beliefs. Thus, by their "origins," he did not simply mean their beginning in the prehistoric past but, more important, the emotional background that supports them at the present moment.

Fieldwork in Morocco

In Morocco, Westermarck studied popular religious ideas such as holiness (*baraka*). Holiness could be inherited, acquired, and lost. Westermarck found its sensitivity to external influences to be its socially most important characteristic. He considered his result to be at odds with Émile Durkheim's theory of primitive religion.

Westermarck's ethnographic material from Morocco is a valuable and accurate historical source. It sheds light on popular beliefs that were unknown to other Westerners and ignored or suppressed in the existing scholarship by Moroccan authors on Islamic law and religion. In his presentation and analysis, Westermarck followed the conventions of comparativist anthropology. He did not attempt to relate native ideas and practices to the general dynamic of society. Nevertheless, he divulged valuable data that make such analysis possible.

Westermarck's Legacy

Westermarck's importance was widely recognized in the early 1900s. However, his fame declined rapidly as the comparative method lost ground. Westermarck, who was criticized by Durkheim, developed an antipathy toward French sociology and functionalism. Westermarck freely acknowledged his intellectual debt to James G. Frazer, Edward Burnett Tylor, and other comparativists of the previous generation. What is less often remembered is that he both trained and helped materially to support the next generation of scholars, many of whom

eventually embraced functionalism. Westermarck was among the first to stress the importance of extended fieldwork and of becoming fully conversant in the native languages. By this, he set the standard for subsequent anthropology.

Westermarck's appointment at the London School of Economics was a crucial step in the professionalization of anthropology in Britain. At the London School of Economics, Westermarck became the teacher of an entire generation of British and international researchers, including E. E. Evans-Pritchard, Raymond Firth, Morris Ginsberg, Ian Hogbin, Lucy Mair, Bronisław Malinowski, Ashley Montague, Talcott Parsons, Hortense Powdermaker, Isaac Schapera, and Gerald Cambden Wheeler. In the 1920s, Westermarck and Malinowski conducted their seminars together.

Westermarck's Finnish students included the anthropologists Hilma Granqvist, Rafael Karsten, Gunnar Landtman, and Ragnar Numelin; the ethnologists Uno Harva and K. Rob. V. Wikman; and the philosopher Rolf Lagerborg. Due to Westermarck's influence, social anthropology was taught relatively early at Finnish universities. The Westermarck Society, founded in 1940, became the professional association of Finnish sociologists.

The last few years have seen a rise of interest in evolutionary approaches to human behavior, including Westermarck's incest theory. Empirical research appears to support his explanation of incest aversion. In moral philosophy, *Ethical Relativity* is known as a carefully developed statement of a relativist and emotivist position.

Olli Lagerspetz

See also Comparative Method; Cultural Relativism; Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; London School of Economics; Malinowski, Bronisław

Further Readings

Allardt, E. (2000). Edward Westermarck: A sociologist relating nature and culture. *Acta Sociologica, 43*(4), 299–306.

Bourquia, R., & al Harras, M. (Eds.). (1993). *Westermarck et la société Marocaine*. [Westermarck and Moroccan society]. Rabat, Morocco: Université Mohammed V.

Ihanus, J. (1999). *Multiple origins: Edward Westermarck in search of mankind*. Frankfurt, Germany: Peter Lang.

Lagerborg, R. (1953). The essence of morals: Fifty years (1895–1945) of rivalry between French and English sociology. *Transactions of the Westermarck Society, 2,* 9–25.

Pipping, K. (1984). Who reads Westermarck today? *British Journal of Sociology, 35*(3), 315–332.

Stroup, T. (Ed.). (1982). Edward Westermarck: Essays on his life and works. *Acta Philosophica Fennica, 34,* 1–27.

Suolinna, K., af Hällström, C., & Lahtinen, T. (2000). *Portraying Morocco: Edward Westermarck's fieldwork and photographs 1898–1913*. Åbo, Finland: Åbo Akademis förlag.

Wolf, A. P. (1995). *Sexual attraction and childhood association: A Chinese brief for Edward Westermarck*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.

White, Leslie

Leslie A. White (1900–1975) is among the world's most cited anthropologists. White was a controversial figure who was schooled in Boasian anthropology but went on to forcefully inject social evolutionary theory into the discipline during the 1940s through the 1960s.

Early Years and Education

White was born in Salida, Colorado, on January 19, 1900. He was the second of three children. White and his siblings (Helen, born 1898, and Willard, born 1902) were the children of Alvin Lincoln White, a civil engineer, and Mildred Mae Millard. White's father was a brilliant man who had little time for anything other than work. White's mother, 12 years younger than her spouse, fell in love with another man, and his parents divorced in 1905. White's father got custody of the children and briefly lived in Kansas City, Missouri, and Greeley, Kansas. White's father gave up his engineering career to purchase a farm in Lane, Kansas, where he and his children lived between 1907 and 1914. White's childhood memories were dominated by farm life. It was a lonely and unhappy existence for White and his siblings. White's limited social life revolved around a one-room schoolhouse dominated by a wood-burning stove and weekly trips to Lane. White hated the drudgery of farm life, but his life abruptly changed in 1915 when his unmarried sister became pregnant. White's father was devastated by

his daughter's pregnancy, and the family moved to avoid the social stigma attached to her condition. The constant moving and White's father's obvious shame over his daughter's pregnancy caused a major rupture in the family. The Whites eventually moved to Zachary, Louisiana, where White graduated from high school.

White was an outstanding student, and all his teachers noted that he had marked ability. Despite his academic success, his relationship with his father remained troubled, and on the day he graduated, he left home on foot with a single small suitcase. White worked as a bookkeeper until he enlisted in the navy in 1918. Although he never explained why he joined the navy, the experience was life changing. All who have written about White's academic career have stressed this point. In the navy, the stark contrast between the idealistic new recruits and the war-weary, seasoned veterans led White to believe that all he had been taught about the "American way of life" was nothing more than propaganda and folklore. After White was discharged from service in August 1919, he entered Louisiana State University. He abandoned his idea of studying physics or astronomy and instead majored in history. Two professors at Louisiana recognized White's abilities and strongly suggested he transfer to Columbia University.

White studied psychology at Columbia and received a BA in 1923 and an MA in 1925. Although he took no anthropology courses as an undergraduate or graduate student, he did take classes at the New School for Social Research, where he was exposed to anthropology for the first time. White began reading the work of Franz Boas, Alexander Goldenweiser, Alfred L. Kroeber, Elsie Clews Parsons, and Clark Wissler. At the urging of his close friend Harry Elmer Barnes, White decided to attend the University of Chicago, convinced that Chicago had the best program in anthropology and sociology in the nation. He was drawn to the interdisciplinary nature of the program and its outstanding reputation, but his tenure at Chicago was turbulent and controversial. Sociologists such as Ellsworth Faris did not like White, and at one point, he was encouraged to leave the department. There is no question that White was a polarizing figure, a lightning rod who made already existing tensions in the department much worse. According to White, in May 1927, matters came to a head when he took a written and oral examination. White had published an article critical of the work of some of the sociologists, and quarrels among different departmental factions erupted during his examination. White believed that this examination led the joint department to split apart, and his views on the separation of the department have become part of the folklore of Chicago anthropology.

Professional Career

Entering the field of anthropology held great appeal for White, who wanted to prove to anyone who doubted it that the social sciences were relevant. He believed that they were tools that could enhance equality and promote positive cultural evolution. White's first anthropological field trip was to Acoma in May 1926. His dissertation, "Medicine Societies of the Southwest," was very much within the Boasian framework. For young scholars such as White, few sources of financial aid were available. Thus, White was fortunate to work with Elsie Clews Parsons, who became not only a mentor but also a significant source of financial support. Parsons's academic and financial support had a deep impact on White, as evidenced by their voluminous correspondence. Without Parsons's support, White, perpetually short of money, could not have produced the monographs he wrote. Parsons and White used a "secretive method" in which they perceived the ethnographer's task to be to seek out knowledgeable informants who would be willing to divulge forbidden or hidden information. Parsons and White were gifted at finding informants and went to great lengths to keep their identities secret. By today's standards, White's fieldwork methods were unethical or, at best, questionable. No current ethnographer would consider using the clandestine research methods White employed. But at the time White was doing fieldwork, his methods were common. According to Don Fowler, a historian of Southwestern ethnology and archaeology, scholars of White's era assumed the role of "ethnologist as high grade detective."

Between 1928 and 1957, White's ethnographic fieldwork received uniformly high praise from Southwestern experts. White wrote five monographs: *The Acoma Indians* (1932), *The Pueblo of San Felipe* (1932), *The Pueblo of Santo Domingo* (1935), *The Pueblo of Santa Ana*, and the *Pueblo of Sia* (1962). All were published as Memoirs of the

American Anthropological Association or by the Bureau of American Ethnology. None of White's monographs gave a hint that he would become a champion of evolutionary theory and that he would become deeply antagonistic to Boas and his students. For White, the attraction of fieldwork was twofold. First, he wanted to arouse in his readers a deep appreciation of, and interest in, American Indian culture and to illustrate why the Indians believed and acted as they did. White's work thus went beyond the mere collection of facts, for he showed that American Indian culture was rich in symbolic content and that it deserved careful analysis in its own right. In so doing, he wanted to prove that Indian culture in the broadest sense of the term was not inferior, as racists maintained. Second, White wanted to demonstrate the power of cultural systems in a particular setting—that is, to prove that Indians and their manner of living was every bit as important and "normal" as white, middle-class American culture. In White's estimation, all cultures trap their members in complex webs and exact a heavy toll on those who live within them. Accordingly, White wanted to understand culture's inner workings, so that rather than being constrained by culture one could be liberated.

The dichotomy between White's fieldwork with Native Americans in the Southwest and his forceful advocacy of cultural evolutionary theory has struck many anthropologists as startling. This ignored a basic fact: Without an appreciation of White's political commitments, it is not possible to appreciate the reasons why he embraced evolutionary theory and forcefully argued that it had a place in the discipline. It was White's political commitment to the Socialist Labor Party (SLP) that shaped the corpus of evolutionary work for which he is so well-known. Accordingly, the development of White's thought during the Depression era is most clearly seen in his largely unknown contributions under the pseudonym John Steel to the *Weekly People*, the official organ of the SLP. Within the pages of this socialist paper, White honed the arguments on cultural evolution that appeared in various anthropological journals in the 1940s. During the 1930s, White developed the concept of cultural evolution because he believed that it could function as both a science and a principle of action consistent with his Marxist views. Anthropology's significance and importance for him, therefore, was that it provided a self-conscious, rational, and humane way of understanding the transition from one type of society to another.

The period 1927–1930 had a tremendous impact on White's life and career. In 1927, he accepted his first teaching position at the University of Buffalo, where he had access to the papers of Lewis Henry Morgan. In 1929, he was among the first American scholars to visit the Soviet Union, participating in a 6-week trip sponsored by a Communist Party front organization called The Open Road, and in 1930, he accepted a faculty position at the University of Michigan. The first material published by White that indicated the importance of evolutionary theory appeared shortly after he returned from his trip to Russia in 1929. In 1930, White delivered a paper at the combined meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, the American Folk-Lore Society, and the American Association of Physical Anthropologists. The paper, "An Anthropological Appraisal of the Russian Revolution," was very different from other presentations, and the language used was provocative. In his presentation, White argued that the Russian Revolution was the most significant event in modern history. Taking exception to the various ways in which it had been discussed by political pragmatists, White argued that it was not a revolution at all but a cultural mutation resulting from centuries of cultural development. Thus, for White, the Russian Revolution was not a model "social experiment"—that is, a planned human intervention in the social process designed to raise the welfare of people—or the realization of an idea created in the mind of some radical thinker. For White, the Russian Revolution and the political unrest that was shaking the world was evidence that the world's social and political problems needed to be reconsidered. In White's estimation, the Russian Revolution proved that society was evolving culturally. Its significance was that it ushered in a new social order that was an evolutionary development beyond capitalism. It dissolved vertical class stratification and the exploitation of the worker, characteristics of the capitalist system.

White's paper made headlines nationwide. Archival records indicate that he was seriously considering abandoning anthropology for a career in socialist politics. Why he did not change careers is unknown. What is known is that his fledgling career in anthropology at the University of Michigan

almost came to an abrupt halt. As a recent hire, he had little job security, and the university administrators were furious. Radicalism had no place on the campus, and one administrator told White that he believed that his tenure at Michigan would be short. White had joined the SLP in Buffalo in 1929, but now, shaken, he became increasingly secretive. He ceased writing anything remotely provocative under his own name. He also employed a number of other precautions. He used post office boxes in Detroit and Cleveland for socialist mailings and never spoke to a socialist audience near Ann Arbor. What White could not hide was that his conception of the evolutionary development of modern society was organized along radical materialist lines. In essence, White was attempting to describe the SLP's theory of evolution in anthropological terms. White had no doubt that an anthropologist without a materialistic conception of history was akin to a mariner without a compass. He had reached this conclusion from the commonsense assumption that the basic element of any culture is the business of living or the problem of survival.

By the end of the 1930s, White wanted to branch out from evolutionary writings for the SLP. White was well aware that anthropologists would be skeptical, if not hostile, to his views, but he felt that he had a moral and scientific obligation to change their minds. He committed himself to waging battle with the entire discipline if necessary, for he was convinced he knew the truth. His work was not simply an intellectual exchange of ideas but a call to arms. White first presented his ideas in 1939 at a meeting of the American Anthropological Association. He was strongly encouraged to discuss evolutionism by Ralph Linton, who had organized a session titled "Theory and Method in Ethnology." Apart from White, other presenters included Bronisław Malinowski, Adam Kardiner, George Murdock, and George Herzog. Looking back, White recalled that he had blasted the antievolutionists with considerable vigor. According to Esther Goldfrank, White spoke with fervor, and the audience was visibly upset, with the lone exception of Franz Boas, who was unmoved by White's words. It was on this day that White became an iconoclast within the field of anthropology. However, it was not until several years later, in 1943, that the article most often identified as heralding the revival of evolutionary theory ("Energy and the Evolution of Culture") was published in *American Anthropologist*. This was White's first article solely concerned with evolutionism and intended for professional anthropologists. It was here that he proposed the thermodynamic law $E \times T = C$ (energy times technology equals culture). This article was quickly followed by a steady stream of others published in *American Anthropologist*, *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology*, and several other academic journals.

The pointed exchanges White had with Alfred L. Kroeber, Robert Lowie, Julian Steward, and many others took place in print and via heated correspondence. By the end of the 1940s, harsh words had become the norm. The polemical debates that were waged were widely discussed, and there is no question that White almost single-handedly reinjected evolutionary theory into anthropological discourse. Despite the harsh words exchanged, White and those he most vigorously attacked, such as Lowie and Steward, had a grudging respect for each other. In the succeeding years, White would elaborate on many of his ideas as they concerned the theory of cultural evolution, the science of culture, the career of Lewis Henry Morgan, and ethnological theory—especially Boas's contribution. With the publication of *The Science of Culture* and *The Evolution of Culture* in 1959, White had won the battle to revive evolutionary theory. Unfortunately for White, he needlessly alienated scholars sympathetic to his work. In some ways, after 1959 he became his own worst enemy. The Plains anthropologist Bernard Mishkin had earlier characterized White as being pugnacious and believed that he wielded his pen as if it were a tomahawk.

Post-1960 and White's Legacy

White's contribution as an important anthropological theorist ended around 1960, for two reasons. First, his wife, Mary, died in June 1959. Her death started a downward spiral in White's professional and personal life. Many who knew White were convinced that he was never the same after Mary's death. For more than 30 years, Mary had organized White's professional life. She had typed all his papers, prepared his manuscripts for publication, and accompanied him on field trips to the Southwest. Second, after Mary died, White became an alcoholic. This led to a disastrous second marriage and numerous embarrassing incidents. Finally,

in 1966, White, driving while intoxicated, crashed his car into a tree. He was arrested and taken to a county jail, where he was photographed and fingerprinted. Two days later, he went to his first Alcoholics Anonymous meeting, and for the rest of his life, he attended at least two meetings a week.

After 1960, White published significantly less than he had in the past. The two books he published, *The Ethnography and Ethnology of Franz Boas* (1963) and *The Social Organization of Ethnological Theory* (1966) were roundly criticized by his peers. These works were not just unwarranted polemical attacks but ill-tempered diatribes against Boas and his followers. Even as White's own career declined, he profoundly influenced the careers of his students at the University of Michigan. Many scholars within the discipline readily acknowledge White's influence on their thought. For instance, Robert Carneiro, Lewis R. Binford, and Betty Meggers have all explicitly stated that White had a profound impact on their careers. Other students had a far more complex relationship with White. For example, Elman Service did not like to discuss the influence White had on his thought as he did not want to be too closely aligned with his mentor. Likewise, Marshall Sahlins moved very far from his early interest in evolutionism and does not consistently mention White.

More generally, White was instrumental in creating one of the best departments of anthropology in the United States in the post–World War II era. Hired in 1930 to replace Julian Steward, White transformed the anthropology department at the University of Michigan into the powerhouse it is today. For 25 years, White chaired the department in his own unique style. As chair, White is remembered both fondly and negatively. On the one hand, he was criticized for extreme frugality, and the pay structure in the department was chaotic. On the other hand, he always put the greater good of the department ahead of his own interests and concerns. For instance, he hired scholars whom he believed were a good fit for the department even if he did not like them. He firmly believed that it was in the best interests of the department and the university to discourage the development of schools of thought. To this end, he did his level best to prevent an ingrown "Michigan school" of anthropology. White believed that such schools of thought fostered a hermetic quality that inhibited intellectual growth and new ideas.

White retired in 1970, but after all his years of service, there was no fond farewell ceremony, party, or recognition of any sort. White had ambivalent feelings about the department and made very different statements to his friends and colleagues about his retirement. The reality is that the final years of his life were sad and lonely. His former students actively tried to help White. He taught part time at Rice University, San Francisco State University, and the University of California at Santa Barbara. At the time of his death, White was working on his magnum opus, *Modern Capitalist Culture*. He compared this manuscript to the La Brea tar pits—he quipped that like the dinosaurs, once he put his foot in he was never able to reemerge. Thus, the majority of White's work written later in his career is unpublished and voluminous. Thanks to Robert Carneiro, Ben Urish, and Burton Brown, *Modern Capitalist Culture* was published in 2008. Another full-length manuscript, "The Fuel Revolution," remains unpublished. For White, like many other influential anthropologists, the discipline was not merely a social science but a way of life.

William J. Peace

See also Boas, Franz; Carneiro, Robert L.; Kroeber, Alfred L.; Lowie, Robert; Murdock, George Peter; Parsons, Elsie C.; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; University of Michigan

Further Readings

Beardsley, R. (1976). An appraisal of Leslie A. White's scholarly influence. *American Anthropologist, 91,* 986–999.

Carniero, R. (1980). Leslie A. White. In *Totems and Teachers* (pp. 208–252). New York, NY: Columbia University Press.

Dillingham, B. (1976). Bibliography of Leslie Alvin White. *American Anthropologist, 78,* 620–629.

———. (1983). The Leslie A. White papers. *History of Anthropology Newsletter, 12,* 4–5.

Flueher-Lobban, C. (1986). Frederick Engels and Leslie A. White: The symbol versus the role of labor in the origin of humanity. *Dialectical Anthropology, 11,* 119–126.

Guksch, C. (1990). Leslie A. White. In Marschall Wolfgang (Ed.), *Klassiker der Kulturanthropologie, von Montaigne bis Margaret Mead* [Classic of cultural anthropology, from Montaigne to Margaret Mead] (pp. 277–294). Munich, Germany: C. H. Beck Verlag.

Hatch, E. (1973). *Theories of man and culture*. New York, NY: Columbia University Press.
Kopytoff, I. (1995). L. H. Morgan, mechanistic materialism and the contradictions of the capitalist system: The Soviet response to Leslie White, c 1932. *History of Anthropology Newsletter, 22*(1), 7–8.
Peace, W. J. (1993). Leslie A. White and evolutionary theory. *Dialectical Anthropology, 18,* 123–151.
———. (2004). *Leslie A. White: Evolution and revolution in anthropology.* Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.

Whorf, Benjamin Lee

Benjamin Lee Whorf (1897–1941) was an American linguist best known for the development and exemplification of a principle of linguistic relativity.

Life

Whorf came from a New England family with both artistic and scientific interests. He trained in chemical engineering, graduating from Massachusetts Institute of Technology in 1918, and soon after was hired as a fire prevention engineer at Hartford Fire Insurance, a position he held for the rest of his life, with time off for research. Whorf had theosophical connections, and he remained interested in spiritual questions and the relation of science to religion. But from an early age, his central fascination was in languages and their basic elements. In the 1920s, he started working on Aztec (Nahuatl) and Mayan languages, presenting scholarly papers and coming into contact with major figures in the field. In 1930, he obtained funding for research in Mexico, including fieldwork on Nahuatl as spoken in a village outside Mexico City. Whorf's work on Mexican material led, among other things, to a prescient proposal for the interpretation of the Mayan script as involving an important phonetic element. This view, dismissed for decades, turns out to have been essentially correct.

Whorf's thinking was transformed through contact with Edward Sapir, who moved to Yale in 1931. Whorf attended Sapir's classes and joined the PhD program under his supervision. Sapir urged Whorf to undertake the long-term study of a language very different from those of the Indo-European and Semitic families. Already familiar with Nahuatl, Whorf began years of work with Ernest Naquayouma, a New York–based native speaker of Hopi, another Uto-Aztecan language. Over the next 10 years, Whorf was an active participant in what has come to be called the first Yale school of linguistics. He was recognized by Sapir as "one of the most valuable American Indian linguists that we have at the present time" and taught one of Sapir's courses in 1938. In the summer of that year, Whorf visited the Hopi reservation in Arizona. Whorf died in 1941, at the age of 44.

Theory

From the time of his "conversion" via Sapir, Whorf was an exponent of Boasian linguistics, which denies assumptions of the superiority of some languages over others and of the universality of Western grammatical categories. Boasians showed that "primitivity" lay in the ear of the listener, since any language can seem chaotic and bizarre, and either excessively vague or excessively narrow in focus—both are used as criteria of "primitivity"—if judged by the standards of another. For this reason, holders of the Boasian view argued that it was inappropriate to start from the categories of traditional Western grammar, assume that they were universal, and then seek to find how they were expressed in non-Western languages. Instead, one should interrogate the forms themselves as they are used, something that will often require new terminology that more adequately reflects the actual patterns of the language. Basic elements of this linguistic program, as Boas himself recognized, had been laid out by Wilhelm von Humboldt (1769–1835) early in the 19th century. Much of Whorf's work was a drawing out of its implications.

Whorf himself, with his background in the natural sciences, seems to have assumed three operational "levels" in his thinking about science and linguistics.

Level 1: This level is that of the actual physical structure of the universe. Through most of modern Western history, this appeared to be adequately represented by Euclidean geometry and Newtonian physics. But developments in 20th-century science—Whorf cites relativity theory, quantum mechanics, and non-Euclidean geometry—reveal a very different universe, one that does not correspond directly either to our lived experience of the world or to our conceptualization of it. In this, Whorf was a scientific

discontinuist very much like his older contemporary Gaston Bachelard (1884–1961), and like him was interested both in critiquing and in understanding "common sense."

Level 2: Whorf accepted that there were universals of human experience, potentially offering "a canon of reference for all observers," beyond the diversity of languages and cultures. He saw Gestalt psychology as a science likely to uncover such a general frame.

Level 3: While lived experience may be universal, conceptualizations of this experience depend to a large degree on language and culture, and so vary. Although Whorf never claimed that all thinking is linguistic, he did maintain that we think to some degree in language and that insofar as this is the case, the traits of given languages can orient the subject to attend to differing aspects of experience. This point had been made by Boas and formulated by Sapir, citing Einstein, as "a kind of relativity"; Whorf wrote of "a new principle of relativity, which holds that all observers are not led by the same physical evidence to the same picture of the universe, unless their linguistic backgrounds are similar, or can in some way be calibrated" (Whorf, 2012, p. 214). The references to Einstein make it clear that this is a heuristic principle: Just as the observer must take his or her position and velocity into account when measuring someone else's, so the observer must take the patterning of his or her own language into account when considering another one. Just as there is no unmoving point in the Einsteinian universe, so for the Boasians, there is no language or group of languages that provides the measure for all others. Measurement, or calibration, is possible, but it can only be mutual, taking the specifics of both participants into account.

Boas and Sapir had insisted that one's language posed no limit to the potentialities of what one *could* conceive, yet both gave examples in which language did influence conceptualization. Whorf resolved this apparent contradiction by introducing a distinction between the (unlimited) possibilities of thought and the limits of what he called habitual thought—unforced everyday thinking that tends to follow the easiest associative pathways, those laid down by languages and cultures. The idea that habituation creates easy, but not inescapable, paths to follow is clear in the very analogies used by Whorf (and earlier by Sapir) to characterize the influence of linguistic patterns: tracks, paths, roads, grooves—it is always possible, with effort, to get off the beaten track and lay down a new one. This is an important point in reading some of Whorf's apparently deterministic statements, which are always referring to habitual thinking; and it is why there is no contradiction in Whorf himself feeling that it should be possible, for instance, to use English to give a presentation of concepts implicit in Hopi grammar.

The relativity principle operates for all levels of language. Phonetics and phonemics provide a model ("Phonemics is a relativity principle" [cited in Lee, 1996, p. 88])—it was Whorf who introduced the term *allophone* to indicate a positional variant of a phoneme. Vocabulary is pertinent insofar as words are related or unrelated, thus showing a conceptual linkage between referents. But the aspect of language on which Whorf concentrated most of his attention was that of pervasive grammatical categories. These categories, such as gender, tense, number, or, in some non-Western languages, shape or data source, are constantly used in constructing sentences and are not easily accessible to conscious reflection. As a result, as Boas had indicated, they are likely to guide attention to some aspects of a situation rather than others, and to do so unconsciously or semiconsciously. These categories could be explicitly marked (overt) or not (covert); Whorf was a pioneer in the identification of covert categories or *cryptotypes*.

Hopi and Standard Average European

Whorf offered an extended reflection on the conceptual implications of grammar in a series of articles on Hopi. His approach is always through contrast, as exposure to a very different system makes our own assumptions explicit. Whorf introduces the idea that in important ways modern western European languages share underlying grammatical semantics: Instead, then, of talking only about English, Whorf contrasts Hopi with what he calls Standard Average European (SAE), a category that has come to be recognized as a distinctive linguistic area, or *Sprachbund*.

- In SAE, plurality applies both to real plurals, items that can appear together, and "imaginary plurals," items that can never appear together to form a group. So English treats "ten men" and

"ten days" in the same way. Hopi, on the other hand, only has real plurals. This has a first implication for concepts of time: The universal human experience of duration (Level 2 above) is conceptualized differently in the two cases. In SAE, units of time are treated as things that can be counted using cardinal numbers; in Hopi, time relations are treated with ordinals: "on the tenth day" rather than "ten days."

- SAE languages have both count and mass nouns ("three bottles" vs. "some water" or "a glass of water"). This distinction, Whorf argues, leads to conceiving imaginary masses of substance, notionally infinite extents of water, or bread, or bone, out of which "a glass of water," "a loaf of bread," or "a bone," respectively, are notionally cut. This extends to time, which is treated as a limitless uniform substance of which years, days, and minutes are chunks of differing size. Hopi, on the contrary, only has count nouns. "In specific statements, 'water' means one certain mass or quantity of water, not what we call 'the substance water.'" And time, which in human experience never takes the form of a thing with a shape, is not treated with nouns at all in Hopi but with "a kind of adverb, to use the nearest SAE analogy."
- One class of Hopi verbs can appear either using the unmarked stem, which gives the meaning of a single occurrence, or in a form indicating repeating action. Unlike SAE verbs, however, this distinction operates equally over what we call time and what we call space: Just as the punctual verb "It gives one slosh" has a segmentative form "It is tossing in waves," the punctual "It forms a sharp acute angle" has the segmentative "It is zigzag."
- A Hopi verb can either be unmarked or carry one of two suffixes that indicate distinctions that most of the literature (including Whorf's earlier formulations) labels as tenses but that Whorf—on second reading, as it were—came to conceive of as "validity forms," which he called "assertions": the unmarked reportive, formerly called past-present; the expectative, formerly called future; and a third form that indicates general truths. Whorf argues that the first two are not tenses in the SAE sense but distinctions between what is already known, including both the past and the objective aspect of the present, and what is coming into being, including both what we call the future and the transformative aspects of the present. SAE, by contrast, has a three-part division of past, present, and future, which, in accord with the treatment of mass substance discussed above, are conceptualized as virtual "spaces" to be filled with events. This corresponds to the modern Western conceptualization of "time" (Level 3), but it is only one of many possible constructions accounting for the general human experience of time as duration (Level 2)—the Hopi "assertions" offer another.
- Whorf thus claims that Hopi conceptualizes (Level 3) human spatiotemporal experience (Level 2) differently than does SAE. In particular, it does not separate empty uniform space from a domain of uniformly flowing one-dimensional time. This is why, in an often cited manuscript passage, Whorf (2012) writes that Hopi contains

> no words, grammatical forms, constructions or expressions that refer directly to what we call "time," . . . or that even refer to space in such a way as to exclude that element of extension or existence that we call "time," and so by implication leave a residue that could be referred to as "time." (pp. 73–74)

- This has often been taken to mean that the Hopi are either primitives incapable of conceiving time or mystics living outside time: On the contrary, what Whorf is saying is that our own constructions of space and time (Level 3) are "recepts from culture and language."

Whorf After Whorf

At the time of Whorf's death, he had published only a small number of articles. During the following 15 years, these were reprinted along with manuscripts discovered after his death, culminating in 1956 in the publication of the volume *Language, Thought, and Reality: Selected Essays of Benjamin Lee Whorf*, which is still the main source for Whorf's writings.

In the 1950s, researchers interested in testing for linguistic variation in cognition first mentioned a "Whorfian hypothesis" or "Sapir-Whorf hypothesis" that language influences thinking in a way that should be amenable to the kind of testing psychologists are comfortable with. Note the difference between such a "hypothesis" and Whorf's *principle*

of linguistic relativity requiring the specific characteristics of one's language to be taken into account. The psychologists carried out testing primarily on vocabulary, not on grammatical categories, and the favorite domain was that of color. It was argued that since Whorf believed that language, which could be reduced to vocabulary, determined thinking, and therefore perception, he must have held that the number of color words should determine color perception. Since, in fact, human physiology affects color perception, such experiments generally failed to show significant language-based differences.

With the rise of the cognitive sciences from the 1960s, with their project of discovering how thinking works regardless of linguistic and cultural differences, Whorf became a convenient straw man: Philosophers, psychologists, and linguists regularly took his name as a label for extreme linguistic determinism ("the famous Sapir-Whorf hypothesis of linguistic determinism," as Steven Pinker puts it), which they then proceeded to disprove or dismiss, over and over again. One particularly influential critique came in 1981 from the linguist Ekkehart Malotki, who argued that many Hopi forms can best be translated into English using tenses and the whole SAE "metaphysics" of time. The method here is the opposite of Whorf's (and of Boas's and Sapir's): It asserts universal (which happen to correspond to SAE) meanings for forms and then notes exceptions, leaving them as exceptions. In this, it confuses what I have called Level 2 and Level 3, taking SAE conceptualizations as equivalent to human experience in general.

Although some scholars had continued to draw on Whorf's ideas throughout the period (e.g., Dell Hymes, Paul Friedrich, Michael Silverstein, and George Lakoff), the 1990s saw a snowballing of interest. This was due both to more serious exegeses of what Whorf actually said in the work of John Lucy and Penny Lee and to more sophisticated psychological testing, often based on grammatical categories (e.g., number, animacy, space and time categories, gender), which began to find "Whorf effects." There is even talk of a "neo-Whorfian renaissance." So far, this rediscovery bears mainly on cognition. But the principle of linguistic relativity as Whorf formulated it is open-ended: We do not know the implications that using a given language may have not only for cognition but also for broader conceptualization and imagining, for everyday social interaction, or for the exploitation of linguistic potentialities in verbal art.

John Leavitt

See also Boas, Franz; Culture and Personality; Descriptive Linguistics; Ethnoscience/New Ethnography; Mead, George Herbert; Sapir, Edward; Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis and Neo-Whorfianism

Further Readings

Boroditsky, L. (2011, February). How language shapes thought. *Scientific American, 304*(2), 63–65.

Darnell, R. (2006). Benjamin Lee Whorf and the Boasian foundations of contemporary ethnolinguistics. In C. Jourdan & K. Tuite (Eds.), *Language, culture and society: Key topics in linguistic anthropology* (pp. 82–95). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Leavitt, J. (2011). *Linguistic relativities: Language diversity and modern thought*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Lee, P. (1996). *The Whorf theory complex: A critical reconstruction*. Amsterdam, Netherlands: John Benjamins.

Lucy, J. A. (1992). *Language diversity and thought: A reformulation of the linguistic relativity hypothesis*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

_____. (1997). The linguistics of "color." In C. L. Hardin & L. Maffi (Eds.), *Color categories in thought and language* (pp. 320–346). Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Malotki, E. (1981). *Hopi time: A linguistic analysis of the temporal concepts in the Hopi language*. Berlin, Germany: Mouton.

Reines, M. F., & Prinz, J. (2009). Reviving Whorf: The return of linguistic relativity. *Philosophy Compass, 4,* 1022–1032.

Stocking, G. W., Jr. (1974). The Boas plan for the study of American Indian languages. In D. H. Hymes (Ed.), *Studies in the history of linguistics: Traditions and paradigms* (pp. 454–484). Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

Whorf, B. L. (2012). *Language, thought and reality: Selected essays of Benjamin Lee Whorf* (2nd ed.; J. B. Carroll, S. Levinson, & P. Lee, Eds.) Cambridge, MA: MIT Press. (First edition published 1956)

Wilson, Edward O.

Edward Osborne Wilson (1929–), a Harvard professor for more than 50 years and one of the world's most eminent entomologists, is best known for his

role as a prolific communicator about science to the general public. While some of his books express his deep love for nature and concern for life on earth, others are ambitious syntheses attempting the seemingly impossible: the biological understanding of morality and religion; the mathematical modeling of the relationship between genes, mind, and culture; or the unification of the natural and human sciences.

Early Work: *Island Biogeography, The Insect Societies,* and *Sociobiology*

In the early 1950s, after earning a BS and MS in biology from the University of Alabama, Wilson became a graduate student at Harvard. At Harvard, he discovered the "superorganism" concept promoted by the eminent Harvard entomologist W. M. Wheeler (the adviser of Wilson's own PhD adviser, C. M. Carpenter). Wilson was fascinated by Wheeler's discussion about the cooperation and division of labor in insect societies and, in his own research, identified the crucial role that pheromones played in insect communication. In 1958, Wilson's pathbreaking contributions earned him a position on the Harvard faculty.

Wilson liked to structure and synthesize scattered information, creating new "tractable" scientific subfields. An early example was his *Island Biogeography*, written together with Robert McArthur (1967). His next large overview was *The Insect Societies* (1971), a big coffee-table book, in which the last chapter contained the blueprint for his next big step: an overview of the vertebrates. That was *Sociobiology: The New Synthesis* (1975), the leading goal of which was to extend the modern synthesis of Mendelism and Darwinism in the 1930s and 1940s (which used the newly invented mathematical population genetics to "translate" evolutionary processes into changes of gene frequencies in a population) to encompass social behavior. As a new comparative discipline, sociobiology was intended to deal with all aspects of social behavior, including human. To fit with the prevailing neo-Darwinian paradigm, however, sociobiology needed to be formulated as a branch of modern population biology. Wilson believed that this would also help boost the position of evolutionary biology as a worthy competitor to the ascendant molecular biology at Harvard. More philosophically, Wilson also hoped that sociobiology would be capable of unifying the natural and human sciences.

The idea that social behavior could be treated as an evolutionary trait (similar to, say, morphology) was completely new to science at the time. W. D. (Bill) Hamilton, who in 1964 started the sociobiological revolution (while not using the term *sociobiology*), kept the discussion at a universal theoretical level. However, Wilson's explicit treatment of humans as a biological species in the last chapter of *Sociobiology* and his discussion of the probable genetic basis of many traits typically regarded as cultural or uniquely human (such as sex roles, or moral and religious beliefs) triggered the fierce sociobiology controversy in the fall of 1975. For the critics, including Wilson's own colleagues at Harvard, Richard Lewontin and Stephen Jay Gould, sociobiology was not new and exciting but an old and ideologically tainted "bad" science.

Wilson's Sociobiological Paradigm

While Wilson was accused of being a biological determinist, as a modern evolutionist he took pains to emphasize the *interaction* of genes and environment with regard to behavioral traits, contra Konrad Lorenz's view of aggression as an inflexible instinct. The adaptive nature of human traits also meant that there had been enough time for us to have changed our nature since the Stone Age. "Man makes himself genetically" was a phrase Wilson used. He admitted that evolution by natural selection in general was a slow process compared with culture and that the genetic differences between human populations were quite small, but he suggested that "multiplier effects" could affect these small differences and help speed up evolution. For Wilson, this pointed to the need for a new anthropological genetics. For the critics, committed "culturists," this was anathema.

There is no doubt that *Sociobiology* has had a great impact, not only as an encyclopedia of accumulated new theory and research but especially as a breaker of the post–World War II taboo on a biological explanation of human behavior. However, when it came to his own theoretical paradigm for sociobiology, Wilson did not work within the game-theoretical framework and core ideas exemplified by Bill Hamilton, George Williams, John Maynard Smith, Robert Trivers, and others (i.e., the way of thinking that would later be identified with "sociobiology" as a research paradigm). His own theory building rather aimed at capturing and quantifying

the full richness of the evolutionary process. This is why Dawkins's *The Selfish Gene* (1976), pedagogically focusing on "strategies" of "selfish genes" to explicate Neo-Darwinian reasoning, was such a different book from *Sociobiology*—a point largely ignored by political critics.

The Gene-Culture Connection

One aim of *Sociobiology* was to deliberately provoke the social sciences and humanities to consider biology, even suggesting that they would "shrink to specialized branches of biology." Later, however, Wilson totally reconsidered the relationship between genes and culture. In 1981, he produced a new version of sociobiology together with Charles Lumsden in their heavily mathematical *Genes, Mind, and Culture*.

According to Lumsden and Wilson, behavior is not explicit in the genes; rather, the genes prescribe a set of "epigenetic rules," but these are meanwhile influenced by the physical and cultural contexts, in fact "feeding" on them. The epigenetic rules are responsible for the architecture of the human mind. And this is how we get to culture. For the authors, culture equals the epigenetic rules translated into mass patterns of mental activity and behavior.

This is because the epigenetic rules affect individuals' choices of cultural behaviors or artifacts—"culturgens," isolated units that can be either chosen or discarded. (Obviously this meant a dismissal of any holistic conception in favor of a view of culture as simply an outcome of a mass of individual choices.)

But maybe the transformation of sociobiology was not so total. *Genes, Mind, and Culture* can rather be seen as the attempt to demonstrate mathematically what Wilson had earlier famously verbally declared in *On Human Nature*: "The genes hold culture on a leash." The book is full of models demonstrating how the mind (i.e., cognitive development) is directed by the genetically influenced epigenetic rules toward certain culturgens rather than others. This is how the genes hold culture on a leash. One of the prime examples of an epigenetic rule is avoiding mating with someone you grew up with (for more discussion, see below).

The idea of a coevolutionary process, with or without the mind, stimulated other researchers at the time (although the mathematical models from *Genes, Mind, and Culture* were not used). Social scientists used to regarding culture as a complex whole strongly disagreed with the depiction of culture as a "sum of mental constructs and behaviors, including the construction and employment of artifacts." Edmund Leach wrote a dismissive review in *Nature*. In *Promethean Fire* (1983), Lumsden and Wilson discussed the gene-culture connection in popular, verbal form.

Biophilia, The Diversity of Life, and the Science Wars

Biophilia, published in 1984, represented a transition between sociobiology and Wilson's next immediate project: the protection of the environment and the defense of the world's biodiversity. The book dealt with one particular postulated "epigenetic rule"—that of biophilia, our love for nature—while it emphasized the need to preserve nature.

Soon a new generation of university students got to learn about Wilson the environmentalist, rather than Wilson the sociobiologist. To demonstrate the acute danger of species extinction, Wilson used a model from his early book on island biogeography, which showed how the destruction of even a limited area had unforeseen repercussions for a much wider area. Later, Wilson's popular book *Diversity of Life* (1992) argued compellingly for saving the species-rich rainforest. In the meantime, he had published the magisterial and Pulitzer Prize–winning book *The Ants* (1990) together with his friend Bert Hölldobler, with whom he also later coauthored *Journey to the Ants* (1994).

In the meantime, in the wake of sociobiology, the new field of evolutionary psychology had emerged. With its emphasis on the evolved human mind and its active attempts to distance itself from sociobiology, evolutionary psychology may have appeared as a new paradigm. For Wilson, however, evolutionary psychology was just the same as his "revised" genes-mind-culture version of sociobiology, featuring the epigenetic rules.

Soon again, Wilson, highly visible at Harvard, was pulled into academic politics. In the mid-1990s, he joined the cadre of proscience activists in the so-called Science Wars, following Gross and Levitt (1994) in attacking the new "cultural left" in academia: postmodernists and social constructivists, who argued (and taught students) that science had

no special claim to truth. In his 1994 autobiography *Naturalist*, he even retroactively interpreted the attacks on sociobiology as early manifestations of postmodern "anti-science." (Ironically, as pointed out by Ullica Segerstrale, his 1970s critics were, rather, old-fashioned "defenders of the truth," believing in "good" and "bad" science.) Wilson's next book, *Consilience: The Unity of Knowledge* (1998), might be seen as, in part, his response to the Science Wars.

Later Themes: Consilience, Eusociality, and Religion

In *Consilience*, Wilson presented gene-culture coevolution as the shining solution to the quest for the unity of knowledge. The tools needed for connecting the social and the natural sciences and the arts were the epigenetic rules. They made it possible for us to perceive the world consiliently as a "seamless web of cause and effect." (Science, meanwhile, would continue accumulating epigenetic rules. Already existing candidates were now universal color terms, genetic control of behavior-affecting medical conditions, and biological constraints on aesthetic preferences).

In the 2000s, Wilson was ready for yet another update on his favorite creatures, the social insects (especially ants), written again with Bert Hölldobler. The focus in *The Superorganism* (2009) was on the explanation of the origin of insect eusociality. The authors wanted to play down the role of genetic relatedness and emphasize instead other factors (e.g., intercolony competition) as important for the emergence of cooperation, arguing for an explanation in terms of group or multilevel selection instead of kin selection. Meanwhile, the "fall" of kin selection and its substitution with group selection was, surprisingly, militantly announced by Wilson in articles from 2005 onward, creating a major controversy. He made this point also in his popular 2012 book *The Social Conquest of Earth*. (Ironically, Hamilton himself had already in 1975 developed a multilevel selection model that demonstrated the equivalence of kin and group selection explanations. See Segerstrale, 2013, for Hamilton's actual views.)

The Social Conquest is a richly textured overview of human cultural evolution and particular turning points and their causes. It is also an examination of human nature and the human condition, and our special role as stewards of the earth. Without reneging on the genetic foundation of the epigenetic rules, Wilson identifies human ultrasociality as crucial for our success as a species (which in turn invites comparisons with other successful eusocial species—his beloved social insects).

One theme preoccupying Wilson throughout his academic life has been the relationship between science and religion. Brought up as a Southern Baptist but leaving the church and becoming an avid naturalist, Wilson was suspicious of religious preachings and earlier wanted to explain away religion with the help of science. Later (in *Consilience*), admitting that our metaphysical quest is part of human nature and that we have an innate need for beliefs and myths, he (rather surprisingly) suggested that evolutionary biology should provide the answers to our "why" questions, because evolutionary biology was the "best [i.e., most adaptive] myth we ever had." By now, he could also explain religion scientifically: The submission to a perceived higher power was just an expression of a more general, adaptive biological tendency. Wilson also attempted reconciliation with religious leaders, and in 2006, in *The Creation*, he even reached out to the creationists, inviting them to help him protect "the creation"—that is, all life on earth—as he continued raising global ecological awareness.

A unique feature of Wilson as a scientist is his tendency to operate in two modes, an objectivist and a normative one. In his objectivist mode, he treats evolutionary biology as a regular descriptive and explanatory science and defends it from political critics. In his normative mode, he feels free to derive values for mankind directly from evolutionary biology—a license not necessarily appreciated by his fellow scientists in evolutionary biology (and for them, it is beside the point that his explicit suggestions are typically liberal). At the same time, Wilson's many scientific contributions, synthetic efforts, and beautiful writing style have resulted in great acclaim both scientifically and in the public realm—among other things, the National Medal of Science, the Crafoord Prize, many other awards, and numerous honorary doctorates, as well as two Pulitzer Prizes.

Ullica Segerstrale

See also Evolutionary Anthropology; Evolutionary Psychology; Gene-Culture Coevolution

Further Readings

Abbott, P., Abe, J., Alcock, J., Alizon, S., Alpedrinha, J. A., Andersson, M., . . . Zink, A. (2011). Inclusive fitness theory and eusociality. *Nature, 471,* E1–E4. (Response to "The Evolution of Eusociality," by M. A. Nowak, C. E. Tarnita, & E. O. Wilson, 2010, *Nature, 466,* 1057–1062)

Dawkins, R. (1976). *The selfish gene*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Lumsden, C., & Wilson, E. O. (1981). *Genes, mind and culture: The coevolutionary process*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Nowak, M. A., Tarnita, C. E., & Wilson, E. O. (2010). The evolution of eusociality. *Nature, 466,* 1057–1062.

Segerstrale, U. (2000). *Defenders of the truth: The battle for science in the sociobiology debate and beyond*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

———. (2013). *Nature's oracle: The life and work of W. D. Hamilton*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Wilson, E. O. (1975). *Sociobiology: The new synthesis*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (1994). *Naturalist.* Washington, DC: Island Press.

———. (1998). *Consilience: The unity of knowledge*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

———. (2004). *On human nature* (Rev. ed.). Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press. (Original work published 1978)

———. (2012). *The social conquest of earth*. New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

Wilson, E. O., & Hölldobler, B. (2009). *The superorganism*. New York, NY: W. W. Norton.

Wilson, Monica

Monica Hunter Wilson was born on January 3, 1908, into a Presbyterian mission family at Lovedale, Eastern Cape, South Africa; she died a mere 20 miles away at her botanical garden on October 26, 1982. Between these two events, Wilson had a distinguished career as a social anthropologist and historian, focusing on issues of social change, family life, and religion among the Pondo, Xhosa, Nyakyusa, and Ngonde peoples of what are now South Africa, Tanzania, and Malawi, respectively.

Wilson received her university education at Fort Hare (a missionary institution serving African students) and Cambridge in history and anthropology. She also participated in Bronisław Malinowski's famous seminar at the London School of Economics; there she interacted with many of the great Africanist anthropologists of the time and strengthened her dedication to the study of social change. At the Rhodes-Livingstone Institute in Northern Rhodesia (now Zambia), she collaborated with her husband, the anthropologist Godfrey Wilson, until his tragic suicide in 1944 in reaction to the horrors of World War II. She became the first woman to be awarded a full professorship—in social anthropology—in not one but two South African universities—Rhodes University, Grahamstown (1947) and the University of Cape Town (1952). When she left Rhodes for the University of Cape Town in search of equal pay for equal work, Wilson succeeded Isaac Schapera as chair of the department.

Wilson maintained close ties with the people and places she had researched since the 1930s, including returning to Tanganyika (now Tanzania) in 1954 for additional fieldwork among the Nyakyusa. Her books include five ethnographies on the Pondo (*Reaction to Conquest*, 1936) and Nyakyusa (starting with *Good Company*, 1952, and ending with *For Men and Elders*, 1977). Wilson also coauthored *The Analysis of Social Change* (with Godfrey Wilson, 1945) and *Langa* (with Archie Mafeje, 1963), coedited the two-volume *Oxford History of South Africa* (with Leonard Thompson, 1969, 1971), and edited, completed, and wrote a memoir-epilogue, *Freedom for My People* (1981), on Z. K. Matthews, the Black South African anthropologist, lawyer, African National Congress leader (who first proposed the Freedom Charter), and diplomat. Among some 30 published articles, chapters, and distinguished lectures, Wilson's most influential pieces include the comparative "Witch Beliefs and Social Structures" (1951) and "Divine Kings and the Breath of Men," the Frazer Lecture of 1959. After her retirement in 1973, she continued a life of astounding anthropological contribution.

Critical Contributions to Anthropology

The Study of Social Change

Monica Wilson pioneered the analysis of social change and studied the effects of contact, conquest, missionization, and land scarcity at a time when most social anthropologists portrayed African societies as relatively static entities concerned with the social structure of "traditional" societies. Having moved from studying history to anthropology, she

was motivated to set the record straight by writing a less biased, more evenhanded account of the histories and people of her homeland. For Wilson, it was the anthropologists' duty to confront the full reality of the life of Blacks in South Africa. Her first book on the Pondo of the Eastern Cape, *Reaction to Conquest*, did just that, addressing life on Black reserves, White-owned farms, and towns. It is an extraordinary study on sexual socialization, love, marriage, and adultery in the context of social change and economic deprivation. More than 75 years after its publication, the book is remarkably relevant to the AIDS epidemic that has since engulfed South Africa.

With her husband, Godfrey Wilson, she wrote a book-length theoretical essay *The Analysis of Social Change*. They developed the concept of scale, exploring the implications for central and southern African peoples of changing from living in a small-scale society to a large-scale society. One aspect of the increase in scale was an increasing range of choices, affording both opportunities and challenges. She would return to these ideas 20 and 30 years later in subsequent essays investigating the zigzag nature of social change.

Wilson wrote four books on the Nyakyusa of what is now Tanzania, which focused on age-village systems, kinship, and ritual. The final book, *For Men and Elders*, combines her interest in history with the anthropological study of changing societal institutions. It spans a century of transformations in African family life, examining classic anthropological topics such as kinship, marriage, and inheritance. Sensitive to both social structure and emotions (e.g., in the role of friendship), Wilson investigates relations between generations (especially fathers and sons), genders (men and women), and age-mates.

Comparison, Conflict, and Coherence

Wilson was a professional observer; she stressed the importance of documentary evidence, whose value would endure even if modes of interpretation changed. Comparison across points of view and societies and drawing connections among different aspects of society, were likewise at the center of her work. "Divine Kings and the Breath of Men"—on Nyakyusa notions of vitality, cooperation, and conflict—illustrates her systematic way of proceeding from the intellectual climate, in which a set of ideas flourish, to the practical aspects of a particular institution, to historical context, and from the particulars of one society to comparative materials from other societies and eras. Analyzing "the breath of men," or public expression of anger, as a prelude toward the resolution of conflict, she wrote of the danger in South Africa of the absence of occasions on which Blacks can speak their minds to Whites.

Political Context

The political context of racially segregated South Africa and British colonialism produced challenges and fodder for Wilson's work. Opposition to her husband's pacifism during World War II as well as to their uncovering of unpalatable facts regarding urbanization at African mines led to Godfrey Wilson's resignation from the Rhodes-Livingstone Institute. Monica Wilson used evidence to dispute the notion that Afrikaners had arrived in an unpopulated land. She used comparison to demonstrate that tensions inherent in the social structure shape the form witch beliefs take, linking lessons from the Pondo and Nyakyusa to political witch hunts in the McCarthy era. With Mafeje, she studied a township whose residents launched protests against passbook requirements that severely limited Blacks' mobility outside their homelands. She spoke out against the establishment of Black homelands, migrant labor's effect on African family life, the increasing segregation in South African universities, and colleagues who had been banned via apartheid laws. Remaining in South Africa due to her commitment to offering liberal teaching in a repressive environment, she disliked and was suspicious of power but was not afraid to stand up to it. As a young widow, she raised her two sons in similar values. As her son Francis, a renowned labor economist, wrote, this remarkable anthropologist was a woman with a shadow, dignity, and the authority that derives from an integrated personality.

Pamela L. Feldman-Savelsberg

See also Cambridge University; Rhodes-Livingstone Institute; Richards, Audrey; Schapera, Issac

Further Readings

Brokensha, D. (1983). Monica Wilson, 1908–82: An appreciation. *Africa, 53*(3), 83–87.

Ellison, J. G. (2008). Monica Hunter Wilson: Anthropology and social justice. In M. Hunter (Ed.), *Reaction to conquest* (2nd ed., pp. 27–46). Berlin, Germany: LIT Verlag/International African Institute.

West, M. E. (1984). Monica Hunter Wilson: A memoir. *Transactions of the Royal Society of South Africa, 45,* 205–210.

Wilson, F. (2008). Monica Hunter Wilson: An appreciation. In M. Hunter (Ed.), *Reaction to conquest* (2nd ed., pp. 1–26). Berlin, Germany: LIT Verlag/International African Institute.

Wittfogel, Karl

Karl August Wittfogel's "hydraulic" theory strongly influenced anthropological theories of state formation during the 1950s and 1960s. Though his theory of the hydraulic state was partly derived from Karl Marx's and Friedrich Engels's writings, his theories had broad epistemological and political roots. Wittfogel studied Chinese history and developed a materialist theory accounting for the development and character of hydraulic societies that drew on Marxian materialist analytical principles, while critiquing communist societies as despotic social formations. His 1957 book *Oriental Despotism: A comparative study of total power* influenced a generation of mid-20th-century archaeologists and evolutionary cultural anthropologists, who drew on his work to explain the rise of pristine riverine states (e.g., that of ancient Egypt) and to develop a variety of ecological anthropological theories.

Karl Wittfogel was born in Woltersdort, Germany, on September 6, 1896. He was a member of the Communist Party from 1920 up to the early 1930s, and he studied critical Marxist theory at the University of Frankfurt's Institute for Social Research. In Frankfurt, he developed a traditional Marxist theoretical critique while specializing in the study of Chinese history. He expanded on Marx's and Engels's scant writings on the Asiatic mode of production to account for the formation of pristine and secondary nonfeudal despotic states throughout the world. His later writings became so mired in his personal anticommunist crusade that it can be difficult to disentangle his antitotalitarian vehemence from his theoretical contributions.

In his 1929 essay "Geopolitik, Geographischer Materialismus und Marxismus" (Geopolitics, Geographical Materialism, and Marxism), Wittfogel separated irrigation societies into three categories: the Egyptian type, the Japanese type, and the Indian type. The Egyptian type represented the classic, centralized hydraulic state with a large despotic, bureaucratic managerial base allowing hydraulic operations stretching for hundreds of miles. These massive irrigation works required the development of extensive centralized, often despotic, bureaucratic organization to coordinate distant hydraulic activities. The Japanese type represented small-scale—often limited to a single valley system—irrigation systems that cannot be intensified and expanded with centralized hydraulic management. The Indian type was characterized by independent, decentralized irrigation networks that must occasionally rely on a unified moderate- to large-scale labor force to construct and maintain the irrigation infrastructure.

In 1931, Wittfogel attended a conference in Leningrad, where he clashed with his hosts after the Soviet Communist Party denounced Marx's and Engels's theory of the Asiatic mode of production. Wittfogel interpreted the party's condemnation as a protective move designed to eliminate critiques within the party that the Soviet Union had become a despotic state. He returned to Germany, bitter over the Soviet rejection of the Asiatic mode of production, and though he resigned from the Communist Party in 1931, he was arrested as a communist after the Nazi administration came to power. He was imprisoned in several camps, including Esterwegen, from which Western scholars helped arrange his eventual release. He left Germany in 1934 for England, later traveling to China, where he conducted research from 1935 to 1937, before immigrating to the United States.

In 1940, Wittfogel married the anthropologist Esther Goldfrank and took research positions at Columbia University and the University of Washington, writing on the development of Chinese society. As the Cold War's American anticommunist fervor developed, he provided testimony to the U.S. Senate's International Security Subcommittee in an executive session and identified scholars whom he believed were communists or were spreading communist propaganda in the classroom. He testified against his colleague and former friend, Owen Lattimore, claiming that Lattimore was likely a communist. Among those whom Wittfogel named as communists were the historian Moses Finkelstein, a

former student at Columbia, and Herbert Norman, who committed suicide after Wittfogel publicly named him as a communist. After Norman's suicide, Wittfogel found himself increasingly isolated from the Columbia faculty, and he spent an increasing amount of time at the University of Washington. During the 1950s, Wittfogel and Goldfrank were repeatedly contacted by the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI), and FBI documents indicate that they provided the FBI with information on acquaintances whom they believed to hold views aligned with communism.

While maintaining an explicitly anticommunist critique, Wittfogel developed an explicitly materialist ecological theory exploring the similarities of pristine hydraulic states. David Price has argued that Wittfogel's unique position as an anticommunist cooperating with the FBI while undertaking Marxist-linked analysis provided a space in which he was one of the few openly materialist social scientists writing during the McCarthy period. During this period of isolation, Wittfogel increasingly worked on *Oriental Despotism* (1957), a work combining his interest in Chinese history with materialist conceptions of history.

Wittfogel's hydraulic theory sought to explain why the primary pristine states in world history emerged from societies located along massive river systems. *Oriental Despotism* presented a synthetic theory, drawing on historical examples from Egypt, Mesopotamia, and the Indus and Yangtze rivers to argue that the ecological, demographic, and technological conditions historically arose in the societies developing along these river systems, favoring the development of centralized bureaucratic systems that were initially needed to meet the administrative tasks required to manage dams, hundreds of miles of canals, and other elements of irrigation systems needed to increase the productivity of large irrigation systems stretching across large regions. These hydraulic societies developed intense, centralized bureaucratic governmental systems that highly concentrated state power.

Wittfogel argued that despite the obvious differences in local histories, technologies, language, religion, and other specific ideologies, the hierarchical bureaucratic structure of each of these hydraulic societies was remarkably similar—having arisen as solutions to the same ecologically based administrative needs.

Wittfogel's hydraulic theory did not claim that all irrigation-based societies would develop into centralized despotic systems. It recognized that small, localized irrigation systems would not increase productivity if they developed organizational structures reaching beyond local environments. He labeled such localized irrigation societies as hydro-agricultural societies. He argued that the scale and complexity of the massive irrigation systems (stretching for hundreds or thousands of kilometers) inevitably led to the rise of hydraulic oppressive states.

Wittfogel's contribution to a session at the annual meeting of the American Anthropological Association in 1953, organized by Julian Steward, was instrumental in bringing his work to the attention of anthropologists. In 1955, Steward organized a small conference at the University of Illinois, whose attendees included a core group of anthropologists whose work would later grapple with hydraulic theory or incorporate materialist forms of analysis. Robert McCormick Adams, Stanley Diamond, Morton Fried, Marvin Harris, Robert Murphy, and Eric Wolf were among the participants. Wittfogel's *Oriental Despotism* directly influenced the development of ecological anthropological approaches in the 1950s and 1960s.

Karl Wittfogel died in New York City on May 25, 1988.

David H. Price

See also Columbia University; Cultural Ecology; Fried, Morton; Marxist Anthropology; Steward, Julian

Further Readings

Price, D. H. (2008). Materialism's free pass: Karl Wittfogel, McCarthyism, and the "bureaucratization of guilt." In D. Wax (Ed.), *Anthropology at the dawn of the Cold War* (pp. 37–61). London, UK: Pluto Press.

Steward, J. (Ed.). (1955). *Irrigation civilizations: A comprehensive study*. Washington, DC: Pan American Union.

Ulmen, G. L. (1978). *The science of society: Toward an understanding of the life and work of Karl August Wittfogel*. The Hague, Netherlands: Mouton.

Wittfogel, K. A. (1931). *Wirtschaft und Gesellschaft Chinas* [Economy and society in China]. Leipzig, Germany: C. L. Hirschfeld.

_____. (1957). *Oriental despotism: A comparative study of total power*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

_____. (1985). Geopolitics, geographical materialism, and Marxism (G. L. Ulmen, Trans.). *Antipode, 17*(1), 21–72.

Wittgenstein, Ludwig

Ludwig Wittgenstein (1889–1951), the Austrian/British philosopher of logic, mathematics, language, and mind, was one of the most important voices in philosophy in the 20th century.

Wittgenstein was born in Vienna to a wealthy Austrian family. After studying engineering in Berlin and Manchester, he moved to Cambridge, United Kingdom, at the recommendation of the logician Gottlob Frege, to study with Bertrand Russell and G. E. Moore. Recognized as a genius by both Russell and Moore, his first book, *Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus*, was accepted for a PhD degree in Cambridge in 1929 so as to enable him to take up a teaching position there. He became a professor of philosophy at Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1939 but resigned in 1947 to concentrate fully on his writing. Wittgenstein's work is usually divided between two different phases—the first providing a theory of language and its relation to the world on the model of logic and the second providing a philosophical therapy for puzzles that falsely arise in the quest for an ideal language.

This essay focuses on topics in Wittgenstein's later texts, especially *Philosophical Investigations* (*PI*) and the notes from a file box compiled in the book titled *Zettel*. Many social scientists are attracted to Wittgenstein's concept of "forms of life," taking its main contribution to be the recognition of the social character of human beings: But if we allowed the argument to rest at this point, there would be nothing original in Wittgenstein's philosophizing on the human. To do justice to the complex issues that Wittgenstein gathers under this concept, we must pay attention to both "form" as well as "life" in this expression.

To Have a Life in Language

The notion of life has recently reemerged in sociological and anthropological thought, often under pressure from new developments in the biological sciences. For Wittgenstein, though, the notion of life is not limited to biological or natural life, though it absorbs these notions of life. The fundamental questions for him seems to be the following: What can we say about the kinds of creatures we are, given that we have a life in language? How does the human use of language differ from the way signs are attributed to animals or plants? Consider the following remark (among many others):

> The dog *means* something by wagging his tail. What grounds would one give for saying that?—does one also say: "By dropping its leaves, the plant means that it needs water"? (*Zettel*, p. 521)

The intuition here seems to be that not everything that can be interpreted as a sign is imbued with meaning. For Wittgenstein, meaning occurs within a form of life in which intentions and expressions, the inner and the outer, the soul and the body are stitched or lined with each other. Thus, while we can imagine expressions such as "Oh, the plant is dropping its leaves; it is asking for water," this construction of the natural is evidence of how the natural might be absorbed in the social—it is not evidence of the plant's intention to convey a meaning to us. Two crucial aspects of our life with language follow. First, for Wittgenstein, words themselves have lives and can be robbed or emptied of life—becoming frozen, numb, and lifeless. Second, one indication that words have life is that they can be projected into new situations. Thus, Wittgenstein says (*Zettel*, p. 143) that what one means by "thought" is what is *alive* in a sentence, that a sentence would be a mere sequence of sounds or written shapes without this quality of life that animates it. He makes an analogy between circulation of words and circulation of money, suggesting that words that have gone dead are like paper money that cannot be used in the way in which real money can be used because there is no one to receive it. Another way in which Wittgenstein suggested that something is *alive* in words is contained in his remarks that our ability to project words in new contexts reveals something about their physiognomy. For instance, a word such as *ball*, he says, already contains shadows of other uses of this word, which makes it possible to use it in other sentences. But this quality of projection cannot happen independently of someone else's ability and willingness to receive words as meaningful when they are thus projected in new contexts.

The notion that words have life then relates to my acknowledgment of the presence of the other (to whom does it look like that?) who must be able

to receive my words and of a context that is in place (under what circumstances?). Words become dead when the contexts in which they could be received disappear. A speaker might utter the words, but life has been drained out of them.

Consider now the importance of projection for understanding our life with or in language. In his book titled *Claim of Reason*, Stanley Cavell offers the example of the word *feed*. I might "feed the cat" or "feed the lion," but I might also "feed the meter" or "feed your pride." What allows me to project the word in this manner? What does Wittgenstein mean when he says that the shadows of other uses of a word are already contained in its first (literal?) use? The thought here is that, first, such projections allow contexts to be stitched together and, second, they embody our grammatical sense of what anything, a machine or an emotion, might be. When I say that it is not easy to feed his pride, I give expression to the idea that pride is the kind of emotion that can be made to grow by flattery. This is a grammatical statement in the Wittgensteinian framework, in that it lays out the criteria for emotions such as pride. While other languages might not have the same verb-and-noun combination, the idea that some emotions can grow might be expressed through other grammatical forms—such as those of duration and physiognomy of emotions. Thus, one might say that grammar tells us what kind of object something like an emotion is. This, for Wittgenstein, is the difference between philosophical grammar and linguistic grammar.

If words have variance in their use, they also have internal constancy. This internal constancy is achieved within forms of life and not by some mechanical application of rules. It rests on collective and individual imagination, creativity, as well as natural disposition. Thus, for instance, one would not say "light as a stone," except in irony, because our experience of the natural is woven into the forms of life we lead with language.

Forms of Life

Two passages of crucial importance on the concept of form of life for our discussion are as follows:

> "So you are saying that human agreement decides what is true and what is false?"—It is what human beings *say* that is true and false; and they agree in the *language* they use. This is not agreement in opinions but in form of life. (*PI*, p. 241)

> What determines our judgment, our concepts, and reactions, is not what *one* man is doing *now*, an individual action but the whole hurly burly of human actions, the background against which we see any action. (*Zettel*, p. 567)

As these citations formulate it, human forms of life are defined by the fact that they are forms created by and for those who are in possession of language. Yet we must ask what Wittgenstein means by agreement being agreement in *form of life* and not simply an agreement in *opinions*. Let us take as our guide Stanley Cavell, who suggests a distinction between what he calls the ethnological or horizontal sense of form of life, emphasizing "form," and its vertical or "biological" sense, emphasizing "life." The first captures the notion of human diversity—the fact that social institutions, such as marriage and property, vary across societies. The second refers to the distinctions captured in language itself between the so-called lower or higher forms of life—between, say, poking at your food, perhaps with a fork, and pawing at it or pecking at it. However, it is important to understand that the biological is not taken here as something "given"; rather, we show our agreements in what might be considered natural from within our form of life by not only *what* we say but *how* we say it. The limits of the human body or the human voice are not given in advance, but neither is it purely a matter of opinion as to whether a slave is human or whether a man committing acts of atrocity is human or a machine. Cavell (1976) expresses this thought by saying that in our everyday actions, we show that we understand slaves to be humans:

> When he wants to be served at table by a black hand, he would not be satisfied to be served by a black paw. When he rapes a slave . . . he does not feel that he has by that fact itself, embraced sodomy. When he tips a black taxi driver . . . it does not occur to him that he might more appropriately have patted the creature fondly on the side of the neck. (p. 377)

Cavell's understanding of the concept of form of life shows that we are not simply socially conditioned but that our criteria go deeper than official representations of who counts as a person and who counts as a slave. The injustices and oppression inflicted by the social order through its laws or

through its commercial practices that fix the jural status of slaves as nonhumans do not completely socialize one into their treatment as nonhumans, which is what makes it possible for criticism to emerge. The point is that the source of criticism lies not simply in rational deliberative forms in which one would debate opinions about whether a slave is a human being or not but in the manner in which a certain history of the natural is embedded in everyday gestures of the kind that Cavell describes, which show that I relate to this person as a human being. This view of forms of life has a significant impact on what we might call Wittgenstein's picture of culture.

If one were to take away the nuances that come from a step-by-step development of the idea of culture in Wittgenstein, then, he argues, culture is not given once and for all but is rather continuously made in the act of individuals trying to imagine the paths of their lives in light of the lives of the words, concepts, and practices of their cultures. *PI* opens with a paragraph from Augustine, in which he describes how a child learns what is the proper use of language:

> When they (my elders) named some object, and accordingly moved toward something, I saw this and I grasped that the thing was called by the sound they uttered when they meant to point it out. . . . I gradually learnt to understand what objects they signified; and after I had trained my mouth to form these signs, I used them to express my own desires.

The signal importance of these opening lines in Wittgenstein lies in the fact that he gestures toward the idea of culture as the scene of both inheritance and education. The figure of the child that haunts this text and the various scenes of instruction (of learning to read and of learning to project numbers) show the limits of thinking of culture as simply a set of rules or of shared values that have to be imbibed—they gesture powerfully toward the processes through which people learn not only to make words of their cultures their own but also to confront what they regard as their culture with their imagination of their own words and their lives. The essential point here is to see that for Wittgenstein, the process of coming to own one's experience is neither a simple act of resistance to the norms of one's culture nor an act of simple acceptance; rather, it is through education that people learn and create the shape of agreements and attunements to their cultures. It follows that, against the claims that Wittgenstein was a conservative, a deeper reading of *PI* suggests that claims to one's culture rest on being able to find one's voice within it, both as a gift and as a rebuke.

Wittgenstein's Influence on Anthropological Theory

Wittgenstein's influence on anthropological theory might be seen in three main areas. First, his argument against the possibility of private language led to an understanding of meaning as social and public rather than individual and private and inaugurated the interpretive turn in cultural anthropology. Second, his remarks on Frazer have been productive for rethinking the question of not only what made rituals efficacious but also what gave them depth within a form of life. Wittgenstein's demonstration of the difference between the first-person and third-person perspective on the category of belief led to a serious critique of the anthropological modes of rendering beliefs of other societies as simply collective representations. Finally, Wittgenstein's radical reformulation of everyday life as both a site of trance and illusion, and a cure for metaphysical emptiness opened up new ways of thinking about the everyday as more than the site of routine and habit. Earlier, impoverished readings of Wittgenstein, which interpreted *PI* as endorsing the view that different languages, cultures, and communities were like hermetically sealed units, have fortunately been discarded through readings of his texts that are more attuned to the multiplicity of voices in his texts (especially *PI*) as well as through attention to form, tone, and pitch in his writing.

Veena Das

See also Asad, Talal; Cambridge University; Ethnomethodology; Geertz, Clifford; Lyotard, Jean-François; Needham, Rodney; Social Constructionism; Tyler, Stephen A.

Further Readings

Cavell, S. (1976). *The claim of reason: Wittgenstein, skepticism, morality and tragedy.* New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

———. (1989). Declining decline: Wittgenstein as a philosopher of culture. In *This new yet unapproachable*

America: Lectures after Emerson after Wittgenstein (pp. 29–77). Chicago, IL: Chicago University Press.
Das, V. (1998). Wittgenstein and anthropology. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 27,* 17–95.
———. (2007). *Life and words: Violence and the descent into the ordinary.* Los Angeles: University of California Press.
Geertz, C. (1973). *The interpretation of cultures.* New York, NY: Basic Books.
Needham, R. (1972). *Belief, language and experience.* Oxford, UK: Blackwell.
Wittgenstein, L. (1953). *Philosophical investigations* (G. E. M. Anscombe, Trans.). London, UK: Macmillan.
———. (1967). *Zettel* (G. E. M. Anscombe & G. H. von Wright, Eds.; G. E. M. Anscombe, Trans.). London, UK: Basil Blackwell.

Wolf, Eric

Eric R. Wolf (1923–1999) was a leader among anthropologists seeking to address new problems following World War II: restive peasantries, nation-state coherence, the turmoil of capitalist and colonial expansion, and the role of power in culture. Ecumenical in approach, he lamented the specialized trajectories that had drawn history and the social sciences away from political economy, as well as the boundaries that separated the subfields of anthropology. This discipline, Wolf maintained, is the most scientific of the humanities and the most humanist of the sciences; it requires an ongoing dialogue between the rationality of the Enlightenment and the emotion-laden tenor of everyday life.

A principled and politically engaged scholar, Wolf was sympathetic to Marx's vision of political economy, with its emphasis on labor and production. Boyhood exposure to the ravages of the Great Depression in a textile factory managed by his father; his youthful escape from the Nazi subjugation of Vienna, where he had grown up in a secular Jewish household; and his encounter with the German sociologist Norbert Elias in an English internment camp contributed to this sensibility, as did his eventual immigration to New York and combat experience with the U.S. army in fascist Italy. Pursuing a PhD from Columbia University under the G.I. Bill, Wolf was among a cohort of student veterans who rejected anthropology's then reigning paradigm, according to which each people has "a" culture—coherent, bounded, and outside history. Together, they discussed historical texts influenced by Marx and welcomed the arrival of the cultural ecologist Julian Steward. A member of Steward's Puerto Rico project, Wolf explored the vulnerability of struggling coffee growers in the Central Highlands to world commodity prices.

Early Work

Wolf's subsequent work focused on nation-states and peasantries, new territory for anthropology. In a 1953 essay, Wolf reflected on the ecological bases of European states, shown to be riven not only by ethnic claims but also by divisions between industrial and agrarian complexes. The cultural integration of such states into single "nations" was necessarily fraught and often violent, a case in point being Germany. Turning to Mexico, Wolf found that "interstitial power brokers" were pivotal contributors to national coherence. His 1956 article on "group relations in a complex society" examines cliques of sometimes violent "politician entrepreneurs" who, manipulating patron-client relations, transformed Mexico's Institutional Revolutionary Party into a holding company for local interests. A 1958 essay analyzes how mainly mestizo brokers propagated the myth of the Virgin of Guadalupe as a unifying national symbol. *Sons of the Shaking Earth* (1959), Wolf's first book, taps archaeological and historical knowledge to reconstruct Mexico's indigenous polities, their differential subjugation to Spanish colonizers, and their differentiated participation in the Mexican Revolution. The book reveals Wolf's signature method: comparative study of carefully chosen empirical cases so as to analyze the effects of convergent, divergent, and interactive historical processes on culture change.

Comparison informed Wolf's pioneering work on peasants. "Closed Corporate Peasant Communities" (1957) juxtaposes peasants in central Java with those in highland Mesoamerica, whose villages alike exhibited communal land jurisdiction, restrictive membership, and wealth-leveling institutions. These patterns, Wolf theorized, constituted responses to similar experiences of land and labor appropriation by the colonizing Europeans. *The Hidden Frontier* (1974, coauthored with John Cole) presents two villages in south Tyrol that shared the same Alpine ecology but exhibited different languages and a different ideology of inheritance. Here, historical subjugation to contrasting (specifically Austro-Hungarian and Italian) political regimes led to contrasts in ethnic identity and in the uses to which ethnicity was put.

Besides comparison, Wolf's early work displayed his interest in "culture-as-historical process"—a theoretical orientation opposed to the "culture-and-personality" school taught by Ruth Benedict at Columbia. Against her claim that whole societies, like the Kwakiutl, the Zuni, or the Dobu, and even whole nation-states, like Japan or Russia, could be characterized by discrete clusters of traits reproduced through the psychological conditioning of children, Wolf promoted Anthony Wallace's 1961 proposition that culture is about "the organization of diversity" rather than "the replication of uniformity." An extended essay of 1964, "Anthropology," elaborates on Elias's insight that in 19th-century Germany there had emerged a lay understanding of *culture* as different from, and in tension with, *civilization*. The first term meant something down home and "ours," the second something cosmopolitan and "theirs," for example, the French. Boas, Wolf argued, had imported an understanding of culture forged through pushback against the Enlightenment into American anthropology, where it found a home among the psychologically oriented next generation of Boasians, including Benedict.

For Wolf, ever wary of nationalism's excesses, the romantic view of culture as interior and "ours" had come to the fore in Europe at a time when some European nations were contending for dominance while others had yet to achieve separate identities and political independence. The idea that each "nation" was animated by a distinctive emotional profile shored up the aspirations of nations becoming states. Charting a different course, Wolf's 1966 essay, "Kinship, Friendship and Patron-Client Relations in Complex Societies" reconsiders Mexico's power brokers as an instance of the "upward circulation" of "interpersonal sets," as contrasted with the "downward circulation" of courtly manners in France or public school manners in England. Although the models of etiquette characteristic of each case are particular, they do not define national character so much as point to different "parallelograms of social forces."

Peasants and *Peasant Wars of the Twentieth Century*

Not surprisingly, Wolf criticized Robert Redfield for depicting peasant culture as value saturated, timeless, and homogeneous. In *Peasants*, his landmark 1966 book, he defined peasants rather as "rural cultivators whose surpluses are transferred to a dominant group of rulers" and whose culture is formed out of complex interactions with wider fields of power. Households, usually patriarchal, committed the energy and emotions of their constituents to provide for subsistence, the required surpluses, and an annual round of ceremonies necessary to ensure their reproduction—and reputation—over time. In a theoretical move that anticipated gender studies, Wolf attributed men's dominance over these imperatives to the social support they received from external (ceremonial and economic) contexts. In addition, he theorized why the family looms large in peasant communities: Small in scale, flexible, and self-exploiting, it is an ideal institution for confronting the unpredictable pressures that peasants face.

Beyond the family, peasants generate both "horizontal" and "vertical" sociocultural groupings. Comparing horizontal forms—for example, mutual aid and burial societies, labor exchanges, Latin American fiesta systems, or southeast Chinese *tsu* or clans—Wolf reveals how they contribute to the ongoing viability of households, only episodically and contingently diverting energy from them. He also compared vertical forms connecting households with the landlords, urban elites, and state officials who collect their rents. Among them, Wolf found networks, spun from relations of kinship, friendship, co-god-parenthood, and patronage, to be especially salient. Capable of bridging highly unequal social positions, such "webs" (as he also called them) engage the powerful and powerless in habits of exchange. Whether horizontal or vertical, peasant sociocultural forms participate in wider histories, shielding cultivators from erratic prices, new demands on their surplus, or appropriations of their land, all the while lending cultural content to national integration.

In the second half of the 1960s, Wolf researched six cases of peasant revolution, examining the historical engagement of rural cultivators with capitalist markets and colonial overlords and their stratification into landed, landless, and "middle" or "small-holding" peasants. In each case, the middle category, together with indigenous intellectuals and professionals, contributed disproportionately to revolutionary activity. In *Peasant Wars of the Twentieth Century* (1969), Wolf discusses this finding in terms of the greater sociocultural stability of middle peasants; especially in peripheral regions, the cushion of horizontal and vertical groupings reduced the risk

to middle peasant families of fighting for the cause. The book appeared shortly after Wolf's seminal leadership in the first teach-in against the Vietnam War in 1965 and on the eve of his role, with Joseph Jorgensen, in the American Anthropological Association's Ethics Committee's investigation into the use of ethnographic data for counterinsurgency purposes in Southeast Asia.

Europe and the People Without History

A commitment to comparative methods, an approach to sociocultural forms that privileges open-ended webs of connection over discrete and bounded wholes, and an insistence on analyzing these forms in relation to large-scale historical processes were foundational for Wolf's major opus, *Europe and the People Without History* (1982). The book uses Marx's mode of production concept to illuminate three ways of mobilizing social labor—kin ordered, tributary, and capitalist. Eschewing the typological fixity of the French structural Marxists, Wolf views each as internally varied and dynamic, replete with its own engines of power and wealth accumulation, structures of social inequality, and ideological justifications. Kin-ordered and tributary modes, alone and in interaction, are shown to change and grow no less than restless capitalism, although the comparison dramatizes capitalism's far greater impact. Turning land, labor, and capital into commodities (Wolf followed Karl Polanyi here), forever pulling up stakes in one place to penetrate others, in love with technological innovation, the capitalist mode even threatens the capacity of power holders to wield and maintain power. Most important, through the imperial projects of competing European nation-states, capitalism's churning effects overflowed the world. Ironically titled, *Europe and the People Without History* analyzes the histories of Native Americans on the "commodity frontier" of the fur trade, slaves and indentured servants coercively recruited to toil on plantations, and uprooted peasants migrating to swell an industrial proletariat.

Europe and the People Without History constitutes a tour de force of world histories, and at the same time, it clarifies how Wolf conceptualized culture in relation to power. Note his ambivalent use of the word *structure*, an architectural metaphor that is sidelined in favor of metaphors from physics such as *vectors* and *forces*. Nor do forces come across as abstract or disembodied; like a good historian, Wolf is specific about the agendas of particular militarized chiefdoms, merchant and industrial companies, banking houses, political regimes, revolutionary cabals, and so on. Clearly for him, it is human projects emerging from fields of political-economic-ideological competition that move and shake the world. A subsequent essay, "Facing Power" (1990), delineates four kinds of power—individual potency or capability, the imposition of one's will on others, the tactical operations of more or less organized groups, and power that, through strategically deployed ideology, organizes the political economy.

Unlike many who have followed Marx, Wolf does not treat ideology as superstructure; rather, he brings to light how dominant power holders work tirelessly to ritualize and disseminate power-laden messages across all levels of society. Through what he called "acculturation," but later acknowledged could be labeled "hegemony," holders of power both institutionalize their positions and relegate challenges to a realm of disorder and chaos. Ideology, a rigid manifestation of culture, is thus implicated in the very operations of power, its task being to forestall erosion and keep alternatives at bay. But resistance to power also rests on culture building, including emotionally laden bodily and aesthetic dimensions reinforced through ritual. Although skeptical of oppositional agency, Wolf closely observed how contrary mobilizations such as "peasant wars" unfold: how they elicit participation, retain commitment, and sometimes actually reshape cultural repertoires and images. In the "rough and tumble" of social life, states a well-known passage in *Europe and the People Without History*, groups exploit inherited forms, perhaps imparting new meanings to them. They borrow forms that better express their interests or create entirely new forms that answer to new circumstances. Cultures are in effect processes that "construct, reconstruct, and dismantle" cultural materials in response to "identifiable determinants."

Europe and the People Without History appeared just as anthropologists were charting their postmodern turn, a rupture that not only relegated Marx, so important to Wolf's intellectual trajectory, to a secondary place in the widening firmament of critical theorists but also subjected him to close reading as the author of a "Euro-centric master narrative." The reception of Wolf's major work was inevitably shaped by this unfolding paradigm shift. According

to the critics, he had dwelled in the material world at the expense of appreciating the autonomy of ideas; had treated capitalism as a steamroller, obliterating all in its path; had pursued causality as if a predictive science of society were possible; and had failed to acknowledge the desire for, and magic of, commodities because of a "productionist" bias.

Envisioning Power

In answering these criticisms, Wolf defended an epistemological empiricism and commitment to explanation—to the comparative reconstruction of historical trajectories to answer big questions—while also considering the role of ideation in human interactions more deeply. His last book, *Envisioning Power: Ideologies of Dominance and Crisis* (1999), reiterates his earlier criticism of anthropology's romantic approach to culture. But it also charts new ground. It had been Wolf's lifelong project to analyze Nazism, which had so marked his youth in Europe. In *Envisioning Power*, he juxtaposes the Third Reich with other instances familiar to anthropologists, in which economic, demographic-ecological, and military collapses produced severe anxiety about future viability, leading people to succumb to cosmic and frenzied ideologies—specifically Aztec human sacrifice, extreme Kwakiutl potlatching, and, more broadly, nativist movements like Cargo Cults and Ghost Dances.

As *Envisioning Power* makes clear, "interested" groups are not expressions of narrow economic positioning; each is rather a complex, internally differentiated, and erratically bounded formation embarked on creating and maintaining a semblance of order in the midst of destabilizing interactions with the outside world. Because some of these interactions rattle the very foundations of people's livelihoods, cultural processes invariably address deeply potent themes: social reproduction (family roles, gender relations, and personhood), precedence and hierarchy (descent, authority, rank, rulership, class, and race), and existential insecurity (the spirit world). Material elements and the "free-floating zig-zags" of the mind are alike involved. Among the "identifiable determinants" that call forth such themes are mayhem-inducing natural disasters, epidemics, reconfigured trade routes, imperialist intrusions, technological innovations, and the devastating crack-ups of capitalism.

In many respects, this power-saturated theory of culture resonated with the theories of Antonio Gramsci, Michel Foucault, and Pierre Bourdieu, who superseded Marx for many anthropologists (and whom Wolf credits for contributions to his thinking in *Envisioning Power*). All were skeptical that commonalities of language and custom, traditions and ways of being, automatically signal sentiments of identity and social solidarity, viewing them rather as held in place by discourses and practices of vastly unequal power. All, especially Foucault and Bourdieu, shared Wolf's caution with regard to "agency." Yet, with the partial exception of Gramsci, Wolf was uniquely obsessed with *how* diversity gets organized, that is, with the social agents who "install and defend institutions and organize coherence." In *Envisioning Power*, "ideological managers" from charismatic shamans to Nazi communicators are shown to use performative skills to bestow meanings, name things, and energetically overrule contrary interpretations.

Wolf as a Theorist of Culture and Power

Although Bourdieu wrote evocatively about North Africa, he, and Gramsci and Foucault, took as their objects of analysis the complex societies of the capitalist West. So, too, did Wolf. Ever the anthropologist, however, he also wanted to know how culture and power interact in small-scale societies, past societies, even "pre-historical" societies as revealed by archaeology. Other theorists would not so easily compare the cosmic excesses generated by the Kwakiutl, the Aztecs, and the Nazis during their respective encounters with terrifying societal meltdowns. This raises another respect in which Wolf stands out among theorists of culture and power. He was haunted by the ever-lurking possibility of chaos. Such a dark understanding of culture—otherwise appreciated for creativity and beauty and, indeed, for ordering and giving meaning to life—comes across especially strongly in "Perilous Ideas: Race, Culture, People" (1994), an essay honoring Sidney Mintz, which assimilates cultural essentialism with racism and ethnic cleansing. That Wolf had a theory of culture centered on process and power—that the theory embraced all of the world's peoples, drew attention to charismatic communicators, and took account of the hugely destabilizing effects of unforeseen crises—makes it a salient framework for our time.

Jane Schneider

See also Bourdieu, Pierre; Columbia University; Foucault, Michel; Gramsci, Antonio; Marx, Karl; Polanyi, Karl; Redfield, Robert; Steward, Julian; Wallace, Anthony F. C.

Further Readings

Friedman, J. (1987). An interview with Eric Wolf. *Current Anthropology, 28*(1), 107–118.

Ghani, A. (1987). A conversation with Eric Wolf. *American Ethnologist, 14,* 346–367. (Available on film with the Wenner-Gren Foundation for Anthropological Research)

———. (1995). Writing a history of power: Eric R. Wolf's anthropological quest. In J. Schneider & R. Rapp (Eds.), *Articulating hidden histories: Exploring the influence of Eric R. Wolf* (pp. 31–50). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Gledhill, J. (2005). Some histories are more possible than others: Structural power, big pictures and the goal of explanation in the anthropology of Eric Wolf. *Critique of Anthropology, 25*(1), 35–57.

Heyman, J. M. C. (2005). Eric Wolf's ethical-political humanism, and beyond. *Critique of Anthropology, 25*(1), 13–25.

———. (2012). Eric R. Wolf. In J. L. Jackson (Ed.), *Oxford bibliographies in anthropology*. Oxford, UK: Oxford University Press.

Roseberry, W. (1988). Political economy. *Annual Review of Anthropology, 17,* 161–185.

Schneider, J. (1995). Introduction: The analytic strategies of Eric R. Wolf. In J. Schneider & R. Rapp (Eds.), *Articulating hidden histories: Exploring the influence of Eric R. Wolf* (pp. 3–30). Berkeley: University of California Press.

Wolf, E. R. (with Silverman, S.). (2001). *Pathways of power: Building an anthropology of the modern world*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Wolf, E. R., & Jorgensen, J. C. (1971). Anthropology on the warpath, an exchange. *New York Review of Books, April 8,* 45–46; *July 22,* 38.

World-Systems Theory

The world-systems perspective is a strategy for explaining institutional change that focuses on whole intersocietal systems rather than single societies. The main insight of the world-systems perspective is that important interaction networks (trade, information flows, alliances, and fighting) have woven polities and cultures together since the beginning of human sociocultural evolution. These intersocietal interaction networks were rather small when transportation was mainly a matter of hiking with a pack. However, globalization, in the sense of the expansion and intensification of larger economic, political, military, and information networks, has been increasing for millennia. The world-systems perspective explains institutional change with regard to these intersocietal systems (world systems).

The idea of the *whole system* means that all the human interaction networks, both small and large, from the household to global trade, constitute the world system. It is not just a matter of "international relations" or global-scale institutions, such as the World Bank. Rather, at the present time, the world system is nearly all the people of the earth and all their cultural, economic, and political institutions and the interactions and connections among them. The world-systems perspective looks at human institutions over long periods of time and employs the spatial scales that are required for comprehending these whole interaction systems. Interaction networks have become larger with the development of technologies of transportation and communications, and so small, regional world-systems have expanded and merged to become the earthwide system of the present. In their 1997 *Rise and Demise: Comparing World-Systems*, Christopher Chase-Dunn and Thomas D. Hall adapted the concepts that have been developed for studying the modern world system for use in the comparison of the modern system with earlier systems and for the study of long-term sociocultural evolution. Archaeologists have also used world-systems concepts for studying premodern systems. In their 2011 work, Hall, Nick Kardulias, and Chase-Dunn review the research and debates that archaeologists have contributed.

The intellectual history of world-systems theory has roots in classical sociology, Marxian political economy, geopolitics, and anthropological theories of sociocultural evolution. But in explicit form, the world-systems perspective emerged only in the 1970s, when Samir Amin, Andre Gunder Frank, and Immanuel Wallerstein began to formulate the concepts and to narrate the analytic history of the modern world system.

A System of Stratification

The modern world system can be understood structurally as a stratification system composed of dominant core societies (themselves in competition with one another) and dependent peripheral and

semiperipheral regions, a few of which have been successful in improving their positions in the larger core-periphery hierarchy, while most have simply maintained their relative positions.

This structural perspective on world history allows us to analyze the cyclical features of institutional change and the long-term patterns of development in historical and comparative perspective. Human economic, political, social, and cultural institutions are socially constructed, so this entry uses the term *social* as shorthand for all of these. By "sociocultural evolution" is meant a process of patterned change that is distinct from biological evolution because it is based on the intergenerational transmission of information by means of language instead of genetic inheritance.

Core and Periphery

We can see the development of the modern world system as driven primarily by capitalist accumulation and geopolitics, in which businesses and states compete with one another for power and wealth. Competition among states and capitals is conditioned by the dynamics of struggle among classes and by the resistance of peripheral and semiperipheral peoples to domination and exploitation from the core. In the modern world system, the core is Europe, the United States, and Japan, while the semiperiphery is composed of large and powerful countries in the Global South (e.g., Indonesia, China, Mexico, India, and Brazil) as well as smaller countries that have intermediate levels of economic development (e.g., Taiwan, South Korea, South Africa, Israel, Venezuela). It is not possible to understand the history of institutional change without taking into account both the strategies and technologies of the winners and the strategies and forms of struggle of those who have resisted domination and exploitation.

World-systems scholars contend that leaving out the core-periphery dimension or treating the periphery as inert are grave mistakes, not only for reasons of completeness but also because the ability of core capitalists and their states to exploit peripheral resources and labor has been a major factor in deciding the winners of the competition among core contenders. And the resistance to exploitation and domination mounted by noncore peoples has played a powerful role in shaping the evolution of global governance. Thus, world history cannot be properly understood without attention to the core-periphery hierarchy.

A hegemon is the most powerful state in a system of states, and as made clear by Antonio Gramsci, hegemony must be based on a combination of coercion and consent. In the modern world system, the hegemons (the United Provinces of the Netherlands in the 17th century, the United Kingdom of Great Britain in the 19th century, and the United States in the 20th century) have been capitalist core states that have succeeded in getting ahead of the competition in profitable new lead industries as well as providing stability and global leadership.

It is also difficult to understand why and where innovative institutional change emerges without a conceptualization of the world system as a whole. New organizational forms that transform institutions and lead to upward mobility most often emerge from societies in semiperipheral locations. Thus, all the countries that became hegemonic core states in the modern system had formerly been semiperipheral (The Netherlands, England, and the United States). This is a continuation of a long-term pattern of sociocultural evolution that Chase-Dunn and Hall have called "semiperipheral development." Semiperipheral marcher states and semiperipheral capitalist city-states had acted as the main agents of empire formation and commercialization for millennia. This phenomenon arguably also includes organizational innovations in contemporary semiperipheral countries (e.g., Mexico, India, South Korea, Brazil, and Venezuela) that may transform the now global system.

This approach requires that we think structurally. We must be able to abstract from the particularities of the constantly changing situations that constitute uneven development to see the structural continuities. The core-periphery hierarchy remains, though some countries have moved up or down. The interstate system remains, though the internationalization of capital has further constrained the abilities of states to structure national economies. States have always been subjected to larger geopolitical and economic forces in the world system, and as is still the case, some have been more successful than others at exploiting opportunities and protecting themselves from liabilities.

Understanding Globalization

In this perspective, many of the phenomena that have been lumped under the term *globalization* correspond to recently expanded intercontinental trade,

financial flows, and foreign investment by transnational corporations and banks. However, globalization is more than just an economic process. Cultural, political, and social interaction networks and shared discourses have also become more integrated on a global scale. Much of the globalization discourse assumes that until recently there were separate national societies and economies and that these have now been superseded by an expansion of international integration driven by information and transportation technologies. Rather than a wholly unique and new phenomenon, globalization is primarily international integration, and as such, it is a feature of the world system that has been oscillating as well as increasing for centuries. For example, the great chartered companies of the 17th century played an important role in shaping the development of world regions 400 years ago, and there was a great wave of international economic, political, and cultural globalization in the 19th century. Certainly, the transnational corporations of the present are much more important players, but the point is that "foreign investment" is not an institution that only became important since 1970 (or since World War II). Giovanni Arrighi has shown that finance capital has been a central component of the world system since the 14th century. The current floods and ebbs of world money are typical of the late phase of very long "systemic cycles of accumulation." In their 2000 study, Chase-Dunn, Yukio Kawano, and Benjamin D. Brewer empirically demonstrated the cyclical nature of these waves with time-series data on international trade globalization.

Phillip McMichael has studied what he calls the "globalization project" that emerged in the 1980s—the abandoning of Keynesian models of national development and a new (or renewed) emphasis on deregulation, privatization, and opening of national commodity and financial markets to foreign trade and investment. The term many prefer for this turn in global discourse is *neoliberalism*, but it has also been called "Reaganism/Thatcherism" and the "Washington Consensus." The worldwide decline of the political left predated the revolutions of 1989 and the demise of the Soviet Union, but it was certainly also accelerated by these events. The structural basis of the rise of the globalization project was the new level of integration reached by the global capitalist class and a crisis of overproduction and lower profits when Japan and Germany finally caught up with the United States in manufacturing. The internationalization of capital has long been an important part of the trend toward economic globalization. And there have been many claims to represent the general interests of business before. Indeed, every modern hegemon has made this claim. But the real integration of the interests of capitalists all over the world has very likely reached a level greater than at the peak of the 19th-century wave of globalization.

Recent Developments and Future Challenges

The world system has now reached a point at which both the old interstate system, based on separate national capitalist classes, and new institutions representing the global interests of capital are powerful simultaneously. As William Robinson has argued, in this light each country can be seen to have an important ruling class faction that is allied with the transnational capitalist class. The big question is whether or not this new level of transnational elite integration will be strong enough to prevent competition among firms and national states from turning into warfare, as it has always done in the past, during a period in which the hegemon (now the United States) is declining and economic growth is slow.

The insight that capitalist globalization has occurred in waves, and that these waves of integration are followed by periods of de-globalization, has important implications for the immediate future. Capitalist globalization increased both intranational and international inequalities in the 19th century, and according to Volker Bornschier, this process has continued in the late 20th century and early 21st century. Growing inequalities and slow economic growth have caused world revolutions in the past and are causing another one now.

Early skirmishes of the current world revolution occurred in the anti–International Monetary Fund riots in the 1980s, followed by the Zapatista revolt in 1994 and the so-called Battle of Seattle in 1999. There was a short hiatus caused by the terrorist attacks on the United States in 2001, but this was followed by the huge meetings of the World Social Forum, the Pink Tide populist regimes in Latin America, the Arab spring, the European anti-austerity summer, and the Occupy movement that began in the fall of 2011.

There is a tension between those who advocate de-globalization and delinking from the global capitalist economy and the building of stronger, more cooperative, and self-reliant local and national social relations, on the one hand, and those who seek to build new, or reformed, institutions of democratic global governance, on the other. Self-reliance is an understandable reaction to exploitation and insecurity, but it is not likely to solve the major problems that will confront humanity in the 21st century: ecological degradation, rising levels of conflict, and huge North/South inequalities. The great challenge of the 21st century is the building of a democratic and collectively rational global commonwealth. World-systems theory will be an important contributor to this project.

Christopher Chase-Dunn

See also Dependency Theory; Globalization Theory; Gramsci, Antonio; Marxist Anthropology; Mintz, Sidney; Postcolonial Theory; Subaltern Studies; Systems Theory; Wallerstein, Immanuel

Further Readings

Amin, S. (1997). *Capitalism in the age of globalization*. London, UK: Zed Press.

Arrighi, G. (1994). *The long twentieth century*. London, UK: Verso.

Bornschier, V. (2010). On the evolution of inequality in the world system. In C. Suter (Ed.), *Inequality beyond globalization: Economic changes, social transformations, and the dynamics of inequality* (pp. 39–64). Berlin, Germany: World Society Studies.

Chase-Dunn, C., & Hall, T. D. (1997). *Rise and demise: Comparing world-systems*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Chase-Dunn, C., Kawano, Y., & Brewer, B. (2000). Trade globalization since 1795: Waves of integration in the world-system. *American Sociological Review, 65*(1), 77–95.

Chase-Dunn, C., & Niemeyer, R. E. (2009). The world revolution of 20xx. In M. Albert, G. Bluhm, H. Helmig, A. Leutzsch, & J. Walter (Eds.), *Transnational political spaces* (pp. 35–57). Frankfurt, Germany: Campus Verlag.

Hall, T. D., Kardulias, P. N., & Chase-Dunn, C. (2011). World-systems analysis and archaeology: Continuing the dialogue. *Journal of Archaeological Research, 19*(3), 233–279.

McMichael, P. (2000). *Development and social change: A global perspective*. Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage.

O'Rourke, K. H., & Williamson, J. G. (2000). *Globalization and history*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Robinson, W. I. (2008). *Latin America and globalization*. Baltimore, MD: Johns Hopkins University Press.

Shannon, T. R. (1996). *An introduction to the world-systems perspective*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.

Wallerstein, I. (2000). *The essential Wallerstein*. New York, NY: New Press.

Wundt, Wilhelm

Wilhelm Wundt (1832–1920) was one of the important precursors of cultural anthropology in the German-speaking countries. His research and lectures at Leipzig University were inspiring for anthropologists all over Europe, including eminent anthropologists like Franz Boas, Émile Durkheim, and Bronisław Malinowski, who visited Leipzig and attended his lectures.

Born in Mannheim, Germany, Wundt studied medicine in Heidelberg and Berlin. After professorships at Heidelberg and Zurich, he was appointed professor of philosophy at Leipzig in 1874. One year later, he received an honorary degree of doctor of philosophy at the same university. In 1879, he founded the Institute of Experimental Psychology at the University of Leipzig, and he may thereby be acclaimed as one of the founding fathers of psychology. However, his particular interest was in *Völkerpsychologie*, a term first used by Wilhelm von Humboldt and subsequently, in 1851, by Moritz Lazarus, who even founded a journal with the title *Journal for Völkerpsychologie*. For Wundt, this term provided the fundamental concept for a new science that was related to the cultural anthropology of that time (called *ethnology*) but distinguished, as Wundt claimed, in its objective: to explain the variety of peoples and cultures not only by their features and geographical emplacement but also through people's "physical and spiritual habitus." Wundt considered cultural anthropology a historical science, whereas his interest was in the natural foundation of cultures and their mental prerequisites. Wundt first published on the topic in 1888, in a short article titled "Ways and Aims of Völkerpsychologie." From 1900 to 1920, he published his monumental 10-volume work titled *Völkerpsychologie*. Starting with his most basic argument, which assumes that

the physiology and psychology of man are united through the unity of experience, his approach includes an evolutionary perspective, assuming that the core elements of culture develop in accordance with the psychological dispositions of people. Thus, language, mythology, customs, and religion differentiate in tandem with the increasing complexity of mental faculties. For each of these domains, Wundt identifies stages of complexity—for example, from simple clauses to relative clauses or from ideas about the soul to more complex religious practices.

Wundt's original approach was the association of man's mental-psychological properties with culture. He believed that culture and history were considered ephemeral, whereas psychological explanations revealed the proper causes of cultural development. Wundt attracted many scholars during his lifetime. The integration of the mental and the cultural were very appealing in the world of 19th-century philosophy, and his background in experimental psychology seemed to provide a solid empirical foundation for his theories. However, after his death, the idea of *Völkerpsychologie* lost its appeal. One reason for its rejection was its inherent evolutionism. A second reason was the mixing together of the mental and the social. On this point, Durkheim insisted that the sphere of the social should be separated from the mental sphere. Wundt's ideas were unacceptable because they questioned the autonomy of the social and cultural sciences.

The relation between Malinowski's ideas and those of Wundt is much less clear. We know that Malinowski's stay in Leipzig played a crucial role in his turn toward anthropology and that he attended Wundt's lectures. But there is no record indicating how he evaluated Wundt's approach. Perhaps Malinowski's conception of rituals functioning to relieve stress can be related to Wundt's association of the mental with the social. This may be concluded from Bernhard Streck's assumption that Malinowski's concept of need is based on Wundt's emphasis on volition as key to human character. It had also been claimed that Wundt was a forerunner of the Culture-and-Personality school, although eminent authors like Margaret Mead never referred to Wundt. In spite of its unanimous rejection even among German-speaking anthropologists, there have been racist psychologists, like Ludwig Ferdinand Clauss, who used *Völkerpsychologie* as a basic concept for their arguments about the character of races and became promoters of the Nazi ideology.

Hans Peter Hahn

See also Boas, Franz; Durkheim, Émile; Malinowski, Bronisław; Mead, Margaret

Further Readings

Blumenthal, A. (1975). A reappraisal of Wilhelm Wundt. *American Psychology, 30*(11), 1081–1088.

Bunzl, M. (2003). Völkerpsychologie and German-Jewish emancipation. In H. G. Penny & M. Bunzl (Ed.), *Worldly provincialism: German anthropology in the age of empire* (pp. 47–85). Ann Arbor: University of Michigan.

Diriwächter, R. (2004). Völkerpsychologie: The synthesis that never was. *Culture & Psychology, 10*(1), 85–109.

Greenwood, J. D. (2003). Wundt, Völkerpsychologie, and experimental psychology. *History of Psychology, 6*(1), 70–88.

Hofstede, G. H., & McCrae, R. R. (2004). Personality and culture revisited: Linking traits and dimensions of culture. *Cross-Cultural Research, 38*(1), 52–88.

Streck, B. (2001). Wilhelm Maximilian Wundt. In C. F. Feest & K.-H. Kohl (Ed.), *Hauptwerke der Ethnologie* [Classic works of ethnology] (pp. 86–90). Stuttgart, Germany: Kröner.

Wundt, W. (1916). *Elements of folk-psychology* (E. L. Schaub, Trans.). London, UK: Allen & Unwin.

Chronology of Theory in Anthropology

300s BCE	Plato's and Aristotle's works are published.
1090s CE	Oxford University founded.
1209	Cambridge University founded.
1651	Thomas Hobbes publishes *Leviathan*.
1748	Comte de Montesquieu publishes *The Spirit of the Laws*.
1755	Jean-Jacques Rousseau publishes *Discourse on the Origin and Basis of Inequality Among Men*.
1767	Adam Ferguson publishes *An Essay on the History of Civil Society*.
1776	Adam Smith publishes *The Wealth of Nations*.
1798	Thomas R. Malthus publishes *An Essay on the Principle of Population*.
1818	Georg W. F. Hegel becomes chairman of philosophy at the University of Berlin.
1851	Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace), London.
1859	Charles Darwin publishes *On the Origin of Species*.
1861	Johann J. Bachofen publishes *Das Mutterrecht*.
	Adolf Bastian travels in Southeast Asia.
1865	John Lubbock publishes *Prehistoric Times*.
	John McLennan publishes *Primitive Marriage*.
1867	Karl Marx publishes the first volume of *Capital*.
1869	American Museum of Natural History founded.
1871	Anthropological Institute (after 1907 The Royal Anthropological Institute) founded.
	Edward Burnett Tylor publishes *Primitive Culture*.
1875–1885	Herbert Spencer publishes *The Principles of Sociology*.
1877	Lewis Henry Morgan publishes *Ancient Society*.
1879	Wilhelm Wundt founds the Institute of Experimental Psychology at the University of Leipzig.
1881	Death of Lewis Henry Morgan.
1882	Death of Charles Darwin.
1884	Edward Burnett Tylor appointed Reader at Oxford University.
	Pitt Rivers Museum founded at Oxford University.
1890	First publication of James G. Frazer's *The Golden Bough*.
1893	Chicago World's Columbian Exposition.

1895	Émile Durkheim publishes *The Rules of Sociological Method*.
1898	Alfred C. Haddon leads the Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to the Torres Straits.
	L'Année Sociologique begins publication in Paris.
	Leo Frobenius publishes "The West African Culture Circle."
1899	Franz Boas appointed Professor of Anthropology at Columbia University.
	Sigmund Freud publishes *The Interpretation of Dreams*.
	Thorstein B. Veblen publishes *The Theory of the Leisure Class*.
1900	Alfred C. Haddon becomes university lecturer in ethnology at Cambridge University.
1901	Anthropology department and museum founded at University of California, Berkeley. Alfred. L. Kroeber hired as assistant professor.
1902	American Anthropological Association founded.
	Émile Durkheim becomes chair of education at the Sorbonne.
1903	Death of Herbert Spencer.
	W. E. B. Du Bois publishes *The Souls of Black Folk*.
1904	Edward Westermarck becomes first lecturer in anthropology at the London School of Economics.
1909	Arnold van Gennep publishes *The Rites of Passage*.
1910	Lucien Lévy-Bruhl publishes *Les fonctions mentales dans les sociétés inférieures* (How Natives Think).
1912	Émile Durkheim publishes *The Elementary Forms of the Religious Life*.
1915	Bronisław Malinowski makes his first trip to the Trobriand Islands.
1916	Edmund Husserl becomes professor of philosophy at the University of Freiburg.
	Edward Sapir publishes "Time Perspective in Aboriginal American Languages: A Study in Method."
	Elsie Clews Parsons makes her first field trip to Zuni.
	Ferdinand de Saussure's students publish *Cours de linquistique general*.
1917	Death of Edward Burnett Tylor.
	Death of Émile Durkheim.
1918	Laura Spelman Rockefeller Memorial established.
1922	Bronisław Malinowski appointed lecturer at the University of London.
1923	Frankfurt Institute for Social Research founded (generally associated with the Frankfurt School).
1925	Institute of Ethnology of the University of Paris founded.
	Marcel Mauss publishes "An Essay on the Gift: Forms and Reasons of Exchange in Archaic Societies."
	Margaret Mead does her first fieldwork in Samoa.
1926	Paul Radin publishes *Crashing Thunder: The Autobiography of an American Indian*.
	Prague Linguistic Circle founded.
1928	Paul Rivet elected professor of Museum Anthropology.
1929–1935	Antonio Gramsci writes his prison notebooks.
1929	University of Michigan Department of Anthropology founded.
1930	Robert Redfield publishes *Tepoztlan, A Mexican Village: A Study of Folk Life*.

1931–1937	A. R. Radcliffe-Brown teaches at the University of Chicago.
1931	Edward Sapir becomes Sterling professor at Yale.
1934	Ruth Benedict publishes *Patterns of Culture*.
1936	A. R. Radcliffe Brown appointed professor of anthropology at Oxford University.
	Walter Benjamin publishes "The Work of Art in the Age of Mechanical Reproduction."
1937	E. E. Evans-Pritchard publishes *Witchcraft, Oracles and Magic Among the Azande*.
1938	Benjamin Lee Whorf visits the Hopi reservation in Arizona.
	Paris Museum of Mankind (Musée de l'Homme) opens.
1939	George Peter Murdock and colleagues publish *Outline of Cultural Materials*.
1940	E. E. Evans-Pritchard and Meyer Fortes publish *African Political Systems*.
1941	Axel Leonard Wenner-Gren establishes the Viking Fund (after 1951, the Wenner-Gren Foundation).
	Melville Herskovits publishes *The Myth of the Negro Past*.
1942	Death of Bronisław Malinowski.
	Death of Franz Boas.
	Kenneth Pike becomes president of the Summer Institute of Linguistics.
1943	Leslie White publishes "Energy and the Evolution of Culture."
1944	Karl Polanyi publishes *The Great Transformation*.
1946–1952	Julian Steward teaches at Columbia University.
1947	Max Gluckman founds the Department of Social Anthropology at the University of Manchester (Manchester School).
1949	Claude Lévi-Strauss publishes *The Elementary Forms of Kinship*.
	Human Relations Area Files (HRAF) founded at Yale University.
1950	Death of Marcel Mauss.
1951	Jacques Lacan begins to give seminars in Paris. The seminars continue until 1980.
	Niko Tinbergen publishes *The Study of Instinct*.
1954	Edmund Leach publishes *Political Systems of Highland Burma*.
	Harry Hoijer coins the term "Sapir-Whorf Hypothesis."
1955	Death of A. R. Radcliffe-Brown.
	Julian Steward publishes *Theory of Culture Change*.
	Noam Chomsky publishes *Logical Structures of Linguistic Theory*.
1956	Ward Goodenough publishes "Componential Analysis and the Study of Meaning."
1957	Karl Wittfogel publishes *Oriental Despotism*.
1958	*Current Anthropology* founded.
1959	English version of Karl Popper's 1935 *The Logic of Scientific Discovery* is published.
	Leslie White publishes *The Science of Culture*.
	Oscar Lewis publishes *Five Families; Mexican Case Studies in the Culture of Poverty*.
1960s	Formalist/Substantivist debate.
1960	Jean Rouche films and produces *Chronique d'un été*.
1961	Franz Fanon publishes *The Wretched of the Earth*.
1962–1963	Roy Rappaport conducts fieldwork among Tsembaga Maring in Papua New Guinea.
1962	Claude Lévi-Strauss publishes *The Savage Mind*.

1962 Jürgen Habermas publishes *The Structural Transformation of the Public Sphere*.
Pierre Bourdieu's first published use of the term *habitus*.
1963 Erving Goffman publishes *Stigma: Notes on the Management of Spoiled Identity*.
1966 Louis Dumont publishes *Homo Hiarchicus*.
Marvin Harris publishes "The Cultural Ecology of India's Sacred Cattle."
Mary Douglas publishes *Purity and Danger*.
1967 Jacques Derrida publishes *Of Grammatology*.
1968 David Schneider publishes *American Kinship: A Cultural Account*.
Marvin Harris publishes *The Rise of Anthropological Theory*.
Roy Rappaport publishes *Pigs for the Ancestors*.
1969 Michel Foucault publishes *Archaeology of Knowledge*.
Victor Turner publishes *The Ritual Process*.
1970 Roland Barthes publishes *S/Z*.
1972 Death of Julian Steward.
Eleanor Burke Leacock publishes an introduction and notes for Friedrich Engels's *The Origin of the Family, Private Property, and the State*.
René Girard publishes *Violence in the Sacred*.
William Labov publishes *Language in the Inner City*.
1973 Clifford Geertz publishes *The Interpretation of Cultures*.
Death of E. E. Evans-Pritchard.
Ethos, flagship journal of the Society for Psychological Anthropology, commences publication.
Marshall Sahlins publishes *Stone Age Economics*.
Sherry Ortner publishes "On Key Symbols."
1974 Immanuel Wallerstein publishes the first volume of *The Modern World-System*.
1975 Death of Leslie White.
Death of Max Gluckman.
Edward Osborne Wilson publishes *Sociobiology: The New Synthesis*.
1977 Paul Rabinow publishes *Reflections on Fieldwork in Morocco*.
1978 Edward Said publishes *Orientalism*.
1979 June Nash publishes *We Eat the Mines and the Mines Eat Us*.
1980 Pierre Bourdieu publishes *The Logic of Practice*.
1981 Michelle Zimbalist Rosaldo publishes *Knowledge and Passion: Ilongot Notions of Self and Social Life*.
1982 Eric Wolf publishes *Europe and the People Without History*.
1983 Benedict Anderson publishes *Imagined Communities*.
Death of Victor Turner.
Paul Rabinow and Hubert Dreyfus publish *Michel Foucault: Beyond Structuralism and Hermeneutics*.
1984 Death of Michel Foucault.
Neil Smith publishes *Uneven Development*.

1985	Marshall Sahlins publishes *Islands of History.*
	Sidney Mintz publishes *Sweetness and Power.*
1986	George Marcus and Michael M. J. Fischer publish *Anthropology as Cultural Critique: An Experimental Moment in the Human Sciences.*
	James Clifford and George Marcus publish *Writing Culture: The Poetics and Politics of Ethnography.*
1987	Death of Eleanor Leacock.
	Stephen Tyler publishes *The Unspeakable: Discourse, Dialogue, and Rhetoric in the Postmodern World.*
1988	Gayatri Chakravorty Spivak publishes "Can the Subaltern Speak?"
1989	David Harvey publishes *The Condition of Postmodernity.*
	Renato Rosaldo publishes *Culture and Truth: The Remaking of Social Analysis.*
1990	Arjun Appadurai publishes "Disjuncture and Difference in the Global Cultural Economy."
	Judith Butler publishes *Gender Trouble: Feminism and the Subversion of Identity.*
1992	Barbara Tedlock publishes *The Beautiful and the Dangerous.*
	Jerome Barkow, Leda Cosmides, and John Tooby publish *The Adapted Mind: Evolutionary Psychology and the Generation of Culture.*
	Nancy Scheper-Hughes publishes *Death Without Weeping: The Violence of Everyday Life in Brazil.*
1993	Lila Abu-Lughod publishes *Writing Women's Worlds: Bedouin Stories.*
	Partha Chatterjee publishes *The Nation and Its Fragments.*
1995	Death of David Schneider.
1997	Death of Roy Rappaport.
1998	Christopher Chase-Dunn and Thomas D. Hall publish *Rise and Demise: Comparing World Systems.*
1999	Death of Eric Wolf.
	Setha Low publishes *Theorizing the City.*
2000	Death of Kenneth Pike.
	Maurice Godelier becomes the founding director of the Musée du Quai Branly.
2001	Death of Marvin Harris.
2002	Death of Pierre Bourdieu.
2003	Death of Edward Said.
2004	Death of Jacques Derrida.
2006	Death of Clifford Geertz.
	Sherry Ortner publishes *Anthropology and Social Theory: Culture, Power and the Acting Subject.*
2007	Death of Mary Douglas.
2009	Death of Claude Lévi-Strauss.
2012	Edward O. Wilson publishes *The Social Conquest of Earth.*

Index

Note: Entry titles and their page numbers are in bold.

AAA. *See* **American Anthropological Association**
AAE. *See* African American English
Abedi, Mehdi, 1:267
Aborigines' Protection Society, 2:598
Abortion, 1:148
Absentee Ownership (Veblen), 2:891
Absolute spirit (Hegel), 1:389
Abstract right, 1:389
Abu-Lughod, Ibrahim, 1:1
Abu-Lughod, Lila, 1:1–3
"Abyssinian Games" (Griaule), 1:367
Accent, language, 2:793
Accidental Ethnography (Poulos), 1:37
Accompaniment: Assembling the Contemporary (Rabinow), 2:671
Acculturation, 2:544, 2:884
Accursed Share, The (Bataille), 1:56
Acéphale (Bataille),1:57
Acoma Indians, The (White), 2:922
Actes de la Recherche en Science Sociales (journal) (Bourdieu), 1:90
Action Anthropology. *See* **Applied Anthropology**
Actor-network theory, 2:789–790
Adaman Islanders, The (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:509, 2:679
Adaptation, 1:246–247, 2:596, 2:614
Adapted Mind, The (Barkow, Cosmides & Tooby), 1:248
Adjacency matrices, 2:596
Adjective class, 1:186
Adorno, Theodor, 1:280–283
Adumbration, 1:379
"Adventure, The" (Simmel), 2:770
Adventures of Mr and Mrs Sandboys (Mayhew), 1:362
Aesthetic truth, 1:300
"Affirmative Character of Culture, The" (Marcuse), 1:282
Africa: Its Peoples and Their Cultural History (Murdock), 2:567
"Africa Archive" (Frobenius), 1:295
African American English (AAE), 1:451–452
African Diaspora, 1:416
African Homicide and Suicide (Bohannan), 1:86
African People in the Twentieth Century, An (Mair), 2:505
African Political Systems (Forte & Evans-Pritchard), 2:679, 2:821
African social organization, 1:3
African Survey (Hailey), 2:700
African Systems of Kinship and Marriage (Radcliffe-Brown & Forde), 2:679, 2:701, 2:821
After the Death of the Primal Father (Róheim), 2:713
After the Fact: Two Countries, Four Decades, One Anthropologist (Geertz), 1:307
Aftermath (Frazer), 1:285–286
Afterology, 1:333
"Against Political Ecology" (Vayda & Walters), 2:890
Against the Grain (Vayda), 2:890
Against the Tranquility of Axioms (Needham), 2:586
Agamben, Giorgio, 2:731
Age grading (Labov), 1:450
Agency, systemic vs. conjunctural, 2:734
Agonistic attention, 1:156
Agricultural economics, nutrition and, 2:701
Agricultural Involution (Geertz), 1:304
Albert O. Hirschman Prize, 1:19
Alcheringa/Ethnopoetics (Tedlock & Tedlock), 2:859
Aleatory materialism, 1:9
Alexander the Great, 1:31
Algeria, French resistance in, 1:7–8
Alibis of Empire (Mantena), 2:504
Alliance theory, 1:4–5. *See also* **Alliance-descent debate**
Alliance-descent debate, 1:3–7
Allomotifs, 1:213
Alternative modernities, 1:22
Alters, 2:596
Although Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies, 2:544
Althusser, Charles-Joseph, 1:7

Althusser, Louis, 1:7–10
ideology of, 1:52
Marxist anthropology and, 2:523
on poststructuralism, 2:647–648
Amazon Town (Galvão & Wagley), 2:902
America (Baudrillard), 1:63
America, diffusionism in, 1:190–191
American Anthropological Association, 1:10–15, 1:27
conferences, 1:11–12
internal groupings and sections, 1:14–15
policy, 1:14
presidential addresses, 1:13
prizes, 1:13–14
professionalism, 1:11
American Anthropologist (journal), 1:15, 1:351, 1:380, 1:423, 1:443, 1:494, 2:576, 2:589, 2:687–688, 2:769, 2:884, 2:924
American Anthropology, 2:858
American Beaver and His Works, The (Moran), 2:559–560
American Dilemma, An (Myrdal), 1:393
American Ethnologist (AAA), 1:15, 1:332, 1:386, 2:530, 2:868
American Indian, The (Wissler), 1:162–163
American Indian Life (Parsons), 2:610
American Journal of Sociology, 2:884
American Kinship: A Cultural Account (Schneider), 2:760, 2:843–844
American Museum of Natural History, 1:15–18
American Negro, The (Herskovits), 1:393, 1:394
American Quarterly, 1:129
American Scholar, 1:66, 1:68
American Social Science Research Council, 1:19
Amin, Shahid, 2:636–637
Anahuac: or Mexico and the Mexicans, Ancient and Modern (Tylor), 2:601, 2:871
Analysis Concerning Passive and Active Synthesis (Husserl), 1:420
Analysis of Aboriginal Society in the Southwestern United States (Strong), 2:878
"Analysis of a Specimen Dream" (Freud), 1:289
Analysis of Social Change, The (Wilson & Wilson), 2:933, 2:934
Anatomy of Criticism (Frye), 2:555
Ancestor's Tale, The (Dawkins), 1:170
Ancient City, The (Coulanges), 2:502
Ancient Ethnography of Ecuador, 2:709
Ancient Judaism (Weber), 2:913
Ancient Law (Main), 1:496, 2:501–503
Ancient Monuments of the Mississippi Valley (Davis & Squier), 2:781
Ancient Society (Morgan), 1:133, 2:524–525, 2:531, 2:561, 2:601
Andaman Islands, 1:3
Anderson, Benedict, 1:2, **1:18–20,** 2:638
Animal forms, development of, 1:32
Animal motion (Hobbes), 1:402–403
Animism, animatism, 1:20–21, 1:133, 2:873
Ankermann, Bernhard, 1:189
Annals of the American Academy of Political and Social Sciences, 1:67
Année Sociologique (magazine),1:216, 1:240, 2:533
Annual Review of Anthropology, The, 2:868
Anomie, 1:215
"Anthropological Appraisal of the Russian Revolution, An" (White), 2:923
Anthropological Futures (Fischer), 1:268
Anthropological Knowledge (Sperber), 2:806
Anthropological linguistics, 1:184
Anthropological Society of London, 2:598. *See also* **Royal Anthropological Institute**
Anthropological structuralism, 2:829–830
Anthropologies and Histories (Roseberry), 2:630
Anthropologist's Life in the Twentieth Century, An (Foster), 1:274
Anthropology (Kroeber), 1:442
Anthropology and Apartheid (Gluckman), 1:340
Anthropology and Development, 2:506
Anthropology and Education Quarterly (AAA), 1:15
Anthropology and Humanism Quarterly (quarterly), 1:414, 1:415
"Anthropology and Its Evil Twin" (Ferguson), 1:180
Anthropology and Modern Life (Boas), 1:414
Anthropology and Public Interest (Reeves), 2:739
Anthropology and Social Change, 2:505
Anthropology and the Colonial Encounter (Asad), 2:636
Anthropology: An Introduction to Primitive Culture (Goldenweiser), 1:350
Anthropology: An Introduction to the Study of Man and Civilization (Tylor), 2:871
Anthropology: Appreciating Human Diversity (Kottak), 2:881
Anthropology as Cultural Critique (Fischer & Marcus), 1:266–268, 2:516, 2:642
Anthropology From a Pragmatic Point of View (Kant), 1:278, 2:592
Anthropology News (AAA), 1:13
Anthropology of Everyday Life, An (Hall), 1:379
"Anthropology of Global Systems" (Friedman), 2:530
Anthropology of Performance (Turner), 2:864
Anthropology of Poverty: Five Families (Lewis), 1:482
Anthropology of Pre-Capitalist Societies, The (Lloberra & Lloberra), 2:826
Anthropology of Urban Environments, The, 2:885
Anthropology Today: An Encyclopedic Inventory (Kroeber), 1:443
Anthropometry, The (Herskovits), 1:393, 1:394

Anthropos Today: Reflections on Modern Equipment (Rabinow), 2:671
"Anti Anti-Relevatism," 2:806
Anti-Oedipus Papers, The (Guattari), 1:175, 1:177
Anti-Politics Machine (Ferguson), 1:180
Anti-rationality thesis, 2:667
Ants, The (Hölldobler & Wilson), 2:931
Apologies to Thucydides (Sahlins), 2:733
Appadurai, Arjun, 1:22–24, 1:325, 2:753
Applbaum, Kalman, 1:221
Applied Anthropologist, The (High Plains Society), 1:28
Applied anthropology, 1:25–28
  domains of application, 1:26
  history of, 1:25–26
  impact of, 1:26
  organizations, 1:27–28
  role of theory, 1:27
  training requirements, 1:26–27
Applied Anthropology (Foster), 1:276
Appraisal of Anthropology, An, 2:856
Appropriation (Hegelian), 1:221
Arab Border Villages in Israel, 2:513–514
"Arapesh Warfare" (Fortune), 1:272, 1:273
Arcades Project, The (Benjamin), 1:71
Archaeological and Ethnohistorical Investigations of Cultural Diversity and Progressive Development Among Aboriginal Cultures of Coastal Virginia and North Carolina (Binford), 1:73
Archaeology
  evolution and, 2:600
  of human sciences (Foucault), 1:278
  of the mind, psychoanalysis as, 1:290
  prehistoric, ethnology and, 1:189–190
Archaeology as Anthropology (Binford), 1:73
Archaeology of Knowledge, The (Foucault), 1:193–194, 1:278
Archaeology Perspectives (Binford), 1:73
Ardener, Edwin, 2:607–608
Ardener, Shirley, 2:608
Are We Civilized? (Lowie), 1:414, 1:494
Area studies, 1:28–31
Argonauts of the Western Pacific (Malinowski), 1:117, 1:159, 1:323–324, 2:507–509, 2:532, 2:555, 2:582–584
Aristotle, 1:31–33, 2:745
Armstrong, W. E., 1:87
Art
  modernist currents in, 2:554–556
  visual anthropology and, 2:894
Articulation of Modes of Production, The (Meillassoux), 2:825
Asad, Talal, 1:33–36, 2:636, 2:696
Asiatic mode of production (Godelier), 1:344
Aspects of the Theory of Syntax (Chomsky), 1:115, 1:318
Assemblage, 1:177
Assortative interactions, 1:302
Atlantic Monthly, 1:66
Atlas of North American English (Ash, Boberg, & Labov), 1:450
Augé, Marc, 2:643
Austin, John, 1:194
Australia in New Guinea (Mair), 2:505
Australian Journal of Anthropology, The, 1:129
"Author as Hero in Aesthetic Activity, The" (Bakhtin), 1:43
Authoritarian Personality, The (Adorno), 1:282
Autoethnography, 1:36–37
Available Light (Geertz), 1:303, 1:307

Bachelard, Gaston, 1:90–91
Bachofen, Johann J., 1:39–40
Bacon, Francis, 1:402
Baden, William W., 2:849–851
Bailey, Frederick G., 1:41–42
Bailey, Robert, 1:145
Baird, Spencer Fullerton, 2:782
Bakewell, Liza, 2:857–859
Bakhtin, Mikhail M., 1:42–45, 1:129, 1:194–195
Balinese Character (Bateson & Mead, M.), 2:544–545, 2:894
Balinese Worlds (Barth), 1:48
Bally, Charles, 2:749–750
Baloma: The Spirits of the Dead in the Trobriand Islands (Malinowski), 2:507
Barham, Eve, 1:169
Barkow, Jerome H., 1:248
Barnes, John A., 2:594
Baron, Paul A., 1:178
Barret, Samuel, 2:877
Barth, Fredrik, 1:45–49, 1:301, 2:647–648
Barthes, Roland, 1:49–52
Bascom, William, 2:884
Basham, Richard, 2:885
"Basic Assumptions of Boasian Anthropology, The" (Stocking), 2:588
Basic personality structure, 1:159, 1:206, 1:435, 2:658
Basin-Plateau Aboriginal Sociopolitical Groups (Steward), 1:143–145, 2:815
Bastian, Adolf, 1:52–55, 1:496, 1:162
Bastian, Hermann Theodor, 1:52
Bataille, Georges, 1:56–57, 2:569
Bateson, Gregory, 1:57–61, 1:272, 2:544–545
Bateson, Mary Catherine, 1:58
Bateson, William, 1:57
Bathing Babies in Three Cultures (Mead, M.), 2:895

Battle on the Great River (Rouch), 2:721
Baudelaire, Charles, 1:69–72
Baudrillard, Jean, 1:62–64
Bauman, Richard, 1:44, 1:225
Beamtimes and Lifetimes (Traweek), 2:789
Beautiful and the Dangerous, The (Tedlock), 2:858
Beck, Ulrich, 1:491
Becoming (Retsika), 1:177
Bedouin society, 1:1–3
Behar, Ruth, 1:37, 1:260
Behavior
  cultural determination of, 2:734
  derivation of prosocial, 1:317
  observation of, 1:235
Behavior-based interaction, 1:302
Behemoth (Neumann), 1:282
Being and Time (Heidegger), 1:297
Belief, Language, and Experience (Needham), 2:586, 2:607
Belief in Immortality, The (Frazer), 1:285
Bemba Marriage and Present Economic Conditions (Richards), 2:702
Benedict, Ruth F., 1:64–68, 1:76
  Franz Boas and, 1:125–126
  Margaret Mead and, 2:543
  on myth, 2:573–574
  on national character studies and, 1:160
Benedict, Stanley, 1:65
Benjamin, Walter, 1:69–72, 1:282
Bennett, William, 1:150
Bentham, Jeremy, 2:887
Berens, William, 1:380–381
Berger, Lucienne Marthe, 1:7
Berger, Peter L., 2:785
Berlin Childhood (Benjamin), 1:69–72
Berlin Key, The (Latour), 1:462
Berlin Society for Anthropology, Ethnology, and Prehistory, 1:53
Bernard, H. Russell, 2:597
Bernese System for annotation of body postures (Frey & Pool), 1:236
Bernstein, Basil, 1:198
Bersani, Leo, 2:667
Between Facts and Norms (Habermas), 1:371
"Betwixt and Between" (Turner), 2:865
Beyond Culture (Hall), 1:379
Beyond the Rainbow (Kluckhohn), 1:438
Bibliography of Native North America (HRAF), 1:409
Biehl, João, 1:177
Binding mechanism, 2:596
Binenkorb, Aaron L., 1:18–20
Binford, Lewis R., 1:72–75, 1:190–191
Biography/life writing, 1:75–77
Biophilia, diversity and, 2:931–932
Biopower, 2:915
Biosociality, life science and, 2:671
Bird-David, Nurit, 1:21
Birth of the Clinic (Foucault), 1:277
Bite of Hunger (Kuper), 1:447
Black Folk Then and Now (Du Bois), 1:203
Black Jacobins, The (James & Mintz), 2:549, 2:550
Black Reconstruction in America (Du Bois), 1:202
Black Skin, White Masks (Fanon), 1:255–257
Blazing the Trail (Turner), 2:864
Blind Watchmaker, The (Dawkins), 1:170
Blob, The (Bloch), 1:79
Bloch, Maurice, 1:77–79, 2:826
Bloomfield, Leonard, 1:80–81, 1:114, 2:828
Bloor, David, 2:789
Blumenbach, Friedrich, 2:599–600
Blumer Herbert, 2:846, 847
"Boas, Darwin, Science, and Anthropology" (Lewis), 2:589
Boas, Franz, 1:76, **1:81–86**
  AAA and, 1:11
  American Museum of Natural History, 1:15–16
  anthropological structuralism and, 2:829–830
  Columbia University tenure, 1:124–126
  comparative method, 1:134
  on culture and personality, 1:158
  on C. DuBois, 1:203
  ethnography of speaking, 1:224
  historical particularism, 1:163, 1:397–401
  humanistic anthropology, 1:413
  influence of Bastian on, 1:55
  neo-Boasianism and, 2:587–590
  neo-Kantianism and, 2:592
  structuralism, 1:194
  on vocabulary, 2:745
"Boasian trilogy," 1:186
Bodies That Matter (Butler), 1:99, 2:666
Body language, 1:236
Body Multiple (Mol), 2:790
Body of Power, Spirit of Resistance (Comaroff), 1:180
Bohannan, Laura, 1:86
Bohannan, Paul, 1:86–89, 1:324–325
Bolle, Kees, 1:20–21
Book of Numbers, The (Douglas), 1:200
Borderlands/La Frontera (Anzaldúa), 2:719
Bork, Robert, 1:150
Borneman, John, 2:730
Bossuet, Jacques-Bénigne, 2:898
Boundary maintenance, 1:46
Bounded rationality, 2:689

Bourdieu, Pierre, 1:89–94
on habitus, 1:374–376
on neo-Kantianism, 2:590
on practice theory, 2:649–653
Bourgois, Pierre, 2:631
Brahmanization, 2:811
Brain, cultural schemas and, 1:123
Brandram, Eleonora Anne, 2:537
Breathless (Godard), 2:721
Brecht and Method (Jameson), 1:434
Breckenridge, Carol, 1:22
Brenneis, Don, 1:13
Breton, André, 1:56
Bricmont, Jean, 1:463
Bricolage, 1:173
Brief History of Neoliberalism, A (Harvey), 1:386
British anthropology, 1:264
British Journal of Psychology, 2:707
British School of Social Anthropology, 1:101
Broca, Paul, 2:751
Brodkin, Karen, 2:674
Bromley era, of Soviet anthropology, 2:797
Bronze Age, 1:162
Brown vs. Topeka Board of Education, 1:417
Brundtland Report, 2:838
Buck, Pem Davidson, 2:676
Buckmaster, Celia, 1:466
Buddhism and Society (Spiro), 2:809
Buddhism Betrayed? (Tambiah), 2:854
Buddhism and the Spirit Cults in Northeast Thailand (Tambiah), 2:853
Buddhist Saints of the Forest and the Cult of Amulets, The (Tambiah), 2:854
Buffon, Comte de, 2:598
Bühlermm, Karl, 1:431
Bulter, Judith, 2:666
Bunzel, Matti, 2:589
Bureau of American Ethnology, 1:26, 2:782–783
Burke, Kenneth, 1:94–96
Burners of Men (Griaule), 1:366
Burnett, James, 2:598
Butler, Judith, 1:96–99, 1:174
Butler, Nicholas Murray, 1:126

Cage, John, 2:640
Call (Bloomfield), 1:80
Callon, Michael, 1:462, 2:789–790
Cambridge University, 1:101–104
"Camera and the Man, The" (Rouch), 2:721
Campbell, Joseph, 2:573
"Can the Subaltern Speak?" (Spivak), 1:183
Candide (Voltaire), 2:898
Canguilhem, Georges, 1:277
Cannibals and Kings (Harris), 1:384
Cannon, Jane, 2:813
Capital (Marx), 1:385, 2:519, 2:520–521, 2:824–826
Capital, four forms of, 2:651
Capital volume, 1:93
Capitalism
Marx on, 2:520–521
Mintz on, 2:550
moral distance from, 1:220
one-world, 1:221–222
Capitalism and Underdevelopment in Latin America (Frank), 1:178
Caribbean Transformation (Mintz), 2:550
Carmichael's Manual of Child Psychology (LeVine), 1:471
Carneiro, Robert L., 1:17, **1:104–106**
Carnivalesque, 1:44
Cartesian Meditations (Husserl), 1:419
Caste, historical/contemporary context of, 2:811
Categories, Mauss on, 2:535
Categories of understanding, 2:592
Causal Explanation for Social Scientists (Vayda & Walters), 2:890
Cavalli-Sforza, L, 1:188
Cavell, Stanley, 2:938–939
Cavendish, William, 1:402
Center for Training in Ethnological Research, 1:427
Centers for International Business Education, 1:30
Central Eskimo, The (Boas), 1:82
"Central Park" (Benjamin), 1:72
Centralization, 2:594
Centricity, 1:191
Centrifugal force, 1:44
Centripetal force, 1:44
Certeau, Michel, de, 1:376
Césaire, Aimé, 1:255
CFRE. *See* Center for Training in Ethnological Research
Chambers, Robert, 1:166
Chance, Michael, 1:156
Change, patterns of, 2:750
Changing Culture of an Indian Tribe (Mead, M.), 2:544
Changing Structure of a Ganda Village, The (Richards), 2:700
Character studies, national, 1:160
Charcot, Jean, 1:288
Charles Baudelaire (Benjamin), 1:72
Charlesworth, William C., 1:234
Cheboksarov, Nikolai, 2:797
Chicago World's Columbian Exposition (1893), 1:106–107
Chihamba, the White Spirit: A Ritual Drama of the Ndembu (Turner), 2:865
Child, Julia, 1:204

Child socialization, 1:159–160
Childe, V. Gordon, 1:189
Childhood, 1:108–111
  age grades and, Benedict on, 1:66–68
  anthropology of, 1:110–111, 7:13
  culture and personality stage of, 1:108–109
  ethnography of speaking and, 1:109–110
  evolutionary psychology and, 1:249–50
  Freud on, 1:288–289
  globalizing, 1:110
  habitus and, 1:374–375
  incest aversion and, 2:919
  and language (Boas), 1:84
  LeVine on, 1:471–472
  Marquesan myth and, 1:436
  nonaggression and rearing behaviors, 2:809
  psychological anthropology and, 2:660
  rites of passage and, 1:322, 2:704
  socialization and (Mead, M.), 159
  symbolic interactionism and, 2:847
Children of Sánchez (1961), 1:482
Children of the Desert (Róheim), 2:713
Children of the Kibbutz (Spiro), 2:809
Chinese Communist Party, 1:8
Chisungu (Richards), 2:701
Chodorow, Nancy, 1:111–113
Chomsky, Noam, 1:113–116
  generative grammar, 1:224, 1:318–320, 1:364–365
  on grammar, 2:750
  on sociolinguistics, 2:791
Christianity, religion and, 1:34–35, 2:697
Christianity and Morals (Westermarck), 2:919
Christinia religio, 2:693
Christy, Henry, 2:601
Chronicle of a Summer (film) (Rouch), 2:721
Chronotope, 1:44, 1:45
Chrysanthemum and the Sword, The (Benedict), 1:65, 1:67, 1:160, 1:400, 2:658, 2:902
Circumcision (Rouch), 2:721
Circumstantial Deliveries (Needham), 2:586, 2:587
Civil society, 1:389
"Civilisation and Cerebral Development" (Dunn), 2:599
Civilization, comparative study of, 1:444
Civilization and Its Discontents (Freud), 1:291
Claim of Reason (Cavell), 2:938
Class, Marxism and, 2:526–529
Class conditions, lifestyle and, 1:92
Classical Age, 1:279
Classification
  comparative method of, 1:102–103
  Mauss on, 2:535
  Soviet anthropology and, 2:797
Cleft habitus, 1:92–94
Clifford, James, 1:117–120
  deconstruction and, 1:174
  feminist anthropology and, 2:644
  on mobility, 2:552
Clifford Geertz (Inglis), 1:307
Climbing Mount Improbably (Dawkins), 1:170
Clinical anthropology, 2:662
"Closed Corporate Peasant Communities" (Wolf), 2:940
Closed Systems and Open Minds (Gluckman), 1:338
CoEvolution (journal), 1:58
Cognatic love, 2:760
Cognition, 1:79
Cognitive anthropology, 1:120–124, 1:352–353
  cognitive science and, 1:122
  contemporary trends, 1:123–124
  cultural models/schemas, 1:122–123
  linguistics and, 1:120–122
  paradigms/taxonomies, 1:121–122
Cognitive Anthropology (Tyler, ed.), 2:868, 2:869
Cognitive science
  evolutionary psychology and, 1:247
  influence of, 1:122
  religion and, 2:697
Cohen, Abner, 2:513–514
Coin, as money, 1:221
Cold War, 1:28–30
Collaboration, A (Marcus), 2:517
Collaborative anthropology, 1:104
Collado, Diego, 1:185
Collapse: How Societies Choose to Fail or Succeed (Diamond), 2:838
Collected Writings (Benjamin), 1:69–72
Collective representations, 1:215, 2:592
Collective thought, 2:592
Collins, Harry, 2:790
Colonial change, 2:702
Colonial context, of structural functionalism, 2:820
Colonial Inscriptions Race, Sex, and Class in Kenya (Shaw), 2:674
Colonialism, 1:34, 2:503–504
"Color Classification in Ndembu Ritual" (Turner), 2:865
Colson, Elizabeth, 2:879
Columbia University, 1:124–128
Comaroff, Jean, 1:490–491
Comaroff, John, 1:361, 1:490–491
Coming of Age in Samoa (Mead, M.), 1:159, 1:161, 1:310, 2:543, 2:545
Commodity, money as, 1:221
Commodity fetishism, 2:521
Communication, Sperber on, 2:806–807
Communitas, 1:128–129
Communitas: Means of Livelihood and Ways of Life (Goodman & Goodman), 1:128

Comparative anthropology, 1:353, 2:562
Comparative linguistics, 1:129–132
automated aids, to, 1:132
borrowing, 1:130–131
chance similarities, 1:132
genetic relationship, language and, 1:130
universal tendencies, 1:131–132
Comparative method, 1:133–134
of classification, 1:102–103
Frazer on, 1:287
Main on, 2:502–503
Tylor on, 2:872–873
"Comparative Method in Social Anthropology, The" (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:680
Comparative symbology, 2:866
Comparison, 2:934
Competence, language and, 1:115
Componential analysis, 1:121, 1:233. *See also* **Ethnoscience/new ethnography**
"Componential Analysis and the Study of Meaning" (Goodenough), 1:233
Computer vision, 1:236
Comte, Auguste, 1:135–137, 2:599
Conatus, 1:91–92
Concept of Number, On the (Husserl), 1:417
"Concept of the Guardian Spirit in North America, The" (Benedict), 1:65
Concepts, Durkheim on, 1:217
Consilience: The Unity of Knowledge (Wilson), 2:932
Condition of Postmodernity, The (Harvey), 1:386
Condorcet, Jean-Antoine Nicolas de Caritat, 1:138–139
Configurations of Culture Growth (Kroeber), 1:442
Conflict and Change (Rivers), 2:708
Conjecture, structure of, 2:733–734
Conjectures and Refutations (Popper), 2:632
Conjuctural agency, 2:734
Conjugal love, 2:760
Conscience, human, 1:215
Consequentialism, 2:887
Consciousness, historically effected, 1:299–300
Constructing Frames of Reference (Binford), 1:74
Constructing and Reconstructing Childhood (James & Prout), 1:109
Consumer Society, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Contact zones, 1:119
Contemporary Change in Traditional Societies (Steward), 2:814
Contemporary Paganism, 1:21
Contesting Sacrifice (Strenski), 2:731
Contesting the Sacred (Eade & Sallnow), 1:129
Context and Metaphor in Ilongot Oral Tradition (Rosaldo), 2:714
Contextual particular approach, to religion, 2:694
Contextualization cues
frame analysis and, 1:346–347
semiotics and, 2:765–766
Continental tradition, 2:835
"Continuities and Discontinuities in Cultural Conditioning" (Benedict), 1:66
Contradictions, Mintz on, 2:550
Contrast set, 1:120
Contribution to a History of the Songhay (Rouch), 2:721
"Contribution to the Collective Representation of Death" (Hertz), 1:460
"Contribution to the Perception of the Color of Water, A" (Boas), 1:82
Contributions to Indian Sociology (Dumont & Pocock), 1:207
Contributions to Knowledge, 2:781
Controlled fiction, 2:818
Conversation analysis, 1:230–231, 2:786
Conversations With Ogotemmeli (Griaule), 1:367
Cook, James (Captain), 2:696, 2:732
Cooley, Charles Horton, 2:846
Cooperation and Change (Goodenough), 1:353
Coral Gardens and Their Magic (Malinowski), 2:509
Cosmides, Leda, 1:248
Cosmos Club (Washington D.C.), 1:12
Counterpoints (Needham), 2:586
Cours de Philosophie Positive (Comte), 1:135, 1:137, 2:537
Course in General Linguistics (Saussure), 1:173–174, 1:192, 2:749–750
Covering Islam, 2:737–738
Covert categories, Whorf on, 2:927–928
Cows, Pigs, Wars, and Witches (Harris), 1:382, 1:384
Crafts in the World Market (Nash), 2:577
Crapanzano, Vincent, 2:643
Crashing Thunder (Radin), 2:684
Crazy Masters, The (Rouch), 2:721
Creation and Evolution in Primitive Cosmologies and Other Pieces (Frazer), 1:286
Creativity/Anthropology (Lavie, Nirayan & Rosaldo), 2:718
Creolization, Mintz on, 2:550
Cressman, Luther, 2:543
Crime and Custom in Savage Society (Malinowski), 2:508
Crisis, The (magazine), 1:202
Crisis of the European Sciences and Transcendental Phenomenology (Husserl), 1:419
Critical Inquiry (journal), 1:434
Critical junctions, 2:528
Critical theory, 1:139–142
critiques of, 1:145
emergence of, 1:139–140

future of, 1:145–146
trends, 1:141–142
20th century, 1:140–141
Critique (Bataille), 1:57
Critique of Judgment (Kant), 2:590
Critique of Practical Reason, The, (Kant), 2:590
Critique of Pure Reason, The (Kant), 2:590
Critique of the Study of Kinship, A (Schneider), 2:761
"Cross-Cultural Anthropological Analysis of a Technical Aid Program, A" (Foster), 1:275
Cross-Cultural Research (journal), 1:409
Cross-cultural studies, 1:408–410
Cross-Cultural Survey (Murdock), 2:566
Cross-cultural type, 2:815
Crossing the Border With Esperanza (Behar), 1:37
Cruising Utopia (Muñoz), 2:667
Crystal Palace, 1:361–363
"Cult of the Dead, The" (Hocart), 1:406
Cultural acquisition, 1:157
Cultural adaptation, 2:815
Cultural Analysis of Kinship, The (Feinberg & Martin), 1:7
Cultural and Natural Areas of Native North America (Sauer), 1:442
Cultural Anthropology (AAA), 1:15, 2:516, 2:868
Cultural Background of Personality, The (Linton), 1:488
Cultural capital, 2:651
"Cultural Causality and Law" (Steward), 2:815
Cultural change, schismogenesis and dynamics of, 1:59
Cultural Citizenship in Island Southeast Asia (Rosaldo R.), 2:719
Cultural core, 1:144, 1:146
Cultural critique, anthropology as, 2:517
Cultural crossing, 1:440
Cultural ecological adaptation, 2:815
Cultural ecology, 1:142–146, 2:816
Cultural diffusion
Kroeber on, 1:187
Rivers on, 2:707–708
See also **Diffusionism, hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise***
Cultural evolution, 1:242
Cultural holism, 1:159
Cultural imaginaries, 1:22
Cultural inheritance systems, gene interaction and, 1:315–316
Cultural Lands of Ancient America, The (Bastian), 1:53
Cultural materialism, 1:147–149
Cultural Materialism (Harris), 1:147, 1:383, 1:384
Cultural models, 1:122
Cultural niche construction, 1:316–317
Cultural property, 1:119
Cultural relativism, 1:149–154, 2:556
in anthropology, 1:150
dangers of, 1:150–151
epistemology, 1:152–154
ethics and, 1:151–152
Cultural schemas, the brain and, 1:123
Cultural transmission, 1:154–157
grandparents and, 1:154
mass media and, 1:154–157
multilevel approach to, 1:157
theorizing continuity and change, 1:155
Cultural Turn, The (Jameson), 1:434
Cultural type, 2:815
Culture
causality and, 2:769
cognition, memory and, 1:79
diffusionism, 1:189
ethnic groups and, 1:46
ethnography, psychology and, 1:83–84
evolutionary psychology, 1:247–248
evolutionism, race and, 1:83
Fischer on, 1:268
Frobenius on, 1:294–295
hyperdiffusionism, 1:189
impact of personality on, 2:744
interpretation of, 1:305–306
intolerance of cultural pluralism, 1:68
Kroeber on, 1:443
Kulturkreise and, 1:189
material, 1:221–222
national, 1:66–67
naturalistic approach to, 2:807
Ortner on, 2:603–605
personality, childhood and, 1:108–109
psychoanalysis and, 1:439
public, 1:23
race and, 1:161
as symbol system, 2:759–760
truth and, 2:718–719
Tylor on, 2:873–874
women in society and, 2:715–716
Culture (Kluckhohn & Kroeber), 1:304, 1:441
Culture, Behavior, and Personality (LeVine), 1:471
Culture, Language, and Society (Goodenough), 1:352
Culture, Thoughts, and Social Action (Tambiah), 2:854
Culture Against Man (Henry), 1:414
Culture and Class in Anthropology and History (Sider), 2:528
Culture and Conquest (Foster), 1:275
Culture and Imperialism (Said), 2:737
Culture and Mental Disorders (Linton), 1:488
Culture and personality, 1:158–161

child socialization and, 1:159–160
criticism of, 1:160
cultural holism, 1:159
development of, 1:158
impact on anthropology, 1:160–161
Linton on, 1:487–488
national character studies, 1:160
school of, 2:545
Culture and Personality (Wallace, A.), 2:906, 2:907
Culture and Practical Reason (Sahlins), 2:590–591, 2:732
Culture and Truth (Rosaldo), 2:718–719
Culture area approach, 1:161–164
Culture Behavior and Personality (LeVine), 1:471
Culture capital, habitus, social space and, 1:375–376
Culture change (Goodenough), 1:353
Culture circle, 1:357, 1:162, 1:187, 1:293–294
"Culture Circles and Culture Layers in Africa" (Graebner & Ankermann), 1:189
"Culture Circles and Culture Layers in Oceana" (Graebner & Ankermann), 1:189
Culture core, 2:814
Culture Element Distribution Survey (Kroeber), 1:442
Culture history, to ethnohistory, 1:190
Culture of Poverty, The (Leacock), 1:470
"Culture of the Army Clerk, The" (Schneider), 2:759
Current Anthropology, 1:177, 1:331, 2:758, 2:854–857, 2:917
Curtis, Edward, 2:895
"Custom and Conflict in Africa" (Simmel), 2:772
Custom and Myth (Lang), 2:564–565
Cutting Down Trees (Richards), 2:701
Cybernetics, 1:60–61, 2:850

Daedalus (Kluckhohn), 1:441
Dahomey (Herskovits), 1:393
Dahomey and the Slave Trade (Polanyi), 2:626
D'Alembert, Jean-Baptiste le Rond, 1:138
Dalton, George, 1:270
Dance of Life, The (Hall), 1:379
Darwin, Charles, 1:165–168, 2:537
human behavioral ecology and, 1:406–407
impact on evolution theory, 2:600–601
On the Origin of Species, 1:162, 1:166, 1:168, 2:599
social Darwinism, 1:167–168
uniformitarian geology and, 2:599
Darwin, Erasmus, 1:165
Darwin, Robert Waring, 1:165
Darwinism (Wallace), 2:904
Das, Tarak Chandra, 1:6
Dasein, 2:616
Davie, Edwin Hamilton, 2:781
Dawkins, Juliet, 1:169
Dawkins, Richard, 1:168–171
De Cive (Hobbes), 1:402
De Corpore (Hobbes), 1:402
De Homine (Hobbes), 1:402
Dean, Tim, 2:667
Death, Property and the Ancestors (Goody), 1:354
Death, Sex, and Fertility (Harris), 1:384
Death and Rebirth of the Seneca, The (Steen & Wallace, A.), 2:906
Death and the Labyrinth (Foucault), 1:277
Death and the Regeneration of Life (Bloch), 1:79
Death and the Right Hand (Hertz), 1:461
Death Without Weeping (Scheper-Hughes), 1:180, 2:756–757
Debating Muslims (Fischer & Abedi), 1:267
Deceit, Desire and the Novel (Girard), 1:327
Decentered subjectivity, 2:649
"Deciphering a Meal" (Douglas), 1:198
Decline of the West, The (Spengler), 1:295
Decolonizing anthropology, 2:583–584, 2:637–639
Deconstruction, 1:171–175, 2:648
anthropological/cultural applications of, 1:174
Husserl's phenomenology and, 1:172–173
negative definition of, 1:172
Of Grammatology and, 1:173–174
theory of, 1:172
Deficit hypothesis, 1:451
"Definition of Man" (Burke), 1:95
"Definition of Totemism, The" (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:680
Degeneres, Ellen, 1:253–254
Deictic shifters, 1:431
Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari, 1:175–177
"Deleuze and the Anthropology of Becoming" (Biehl & Locke), 1:177
Deliminalization, 2:866
Demands of the Day (Rabinow), 2:671
Demic diffusion, 1:188
Density, 2:594
Dependency theory, 1:178–181, 2:909
anthropologists and, 1:179–180
development of, 1:178–179
political economy and, 2:629–630
Derrida, Jacques, 1:181–183, 1:298
on deconstruction, 1:171–174
legacy of, 1:183
on poststructuralism, 2:648
on queer theory, 2:666
on social thought, 1:182–183
structuralism and, 1:194
Descartes, René, 1:138, 1:402, 2:598
Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex, The (Darwin), 1:167, 2:537, 2:538, 2:601

Descent theory, 1:3–4. *See also* **Alliance-descent debate**
Description and Comparison in Cultural Anthropology (Goodenough), 1:353
Descriptive linguistics, 1:184–187, 2:828
Deshen, Shlomo, 2:515
Desiring-production, 1:177
Destruktion, 1:172173
Deterritorialized, 1:23–24
Detribalization, 1:340
Development, race and, 2:675
"Development Hypothesis, The" (Spencer), 2:799
Development of Marriage and Kinship, The (Needham), 2:586
Developmental Cycle in Domestic Groups (Goody), 1:103
Devil's Chaplin, A, 1:170–171
Dewey, John, 2:589
Dewey, Susan, 2:663–664
Diachronic patterns of change, 2:750
Diachronic perspective, 2:764
Diachrony, 1:192
Diagnostic and Statistical Manual of Mental Disorders, 2:658, 2:661
Dial, The (paper), 2:892
Dialectic of Enlightenment, The (Adorno & Horkheimer), 1:281, 1:282
Dialectical materialism, 1:149, 2:520
Dialects, 2:793
Dialogic Imagination (Bakhtin), 1:43
Dialogic principle, dialogism, 1:43, 1:45
Dialogue and Deconstruction (Derrida & Gadamer), 1:298
Dialogues (Galileo), 1:402
Diamond, Jared, 2:838
Diamond, Norma, 2:880
Diary in the Strict Sense of the Term (Malinowski), 2:507–508
Diatronic, 1:448
Dickens, Charles, 2:537
Diderot, Denis, 2:598
Différance, 1:172
Difference and Repetition (Deleuze), 1:175–176
Differend: Phrases in Dispute, The (Lyotard), 1:497
Diffusion of Culture, The (Smith, G. E.), 2:777
Diffusionism, 2:601, 2:776–777
Diffusionism, hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise,* 1:162, **1:187–191**
Dilthey, Wilhelm, 1:299
Dioptrics (Descartes), 1:402
Direct historical approach, 1:74
Direct reciprocity, 1:245
Direct transmission, 2:595
Directions in Sociolinguistics (Hymes & Gumperz), 1:423
Discipline and Punish (Foucault), 1:278–279
Discourse, Figure (Lyotard), 1:497–498
Discourse on Inequality (Rousseau), 2:724
Discourse on the Origin and Foundation of Inequality (Rousseau), 1:413, 2:899
Discourse on Universal History (Bossuet), 2:898
Discourse theory, 1:191–196
  double-voiced, 1:43
  poststructuralist approach to, 1:193–196
  structural linguistic theory and, 1:192–193
"Disjuncture and Difference in the Global Cultural Economy" (Appadurai), 1:22, 2:753
Dispositionalist approach, habitus and, 1:91–92
Dispositions, 1:92–94, 2:652
Disputing Process, The (Nader), 2:576
Dissertation on the Primitive Vowel System in the Indo-European Languages (Saussure), 2:748–749
Distinction: A Social Critique of the Judgment of Taste (Bourdieu), 1:90, 1:92, 2:590, 2:649–653
Diversity of Life (Wilson), 2:931
"Divine Kings and the Breath of Men" (Wilson, M.), 2:933, 2:934
Divinity and Experience (Lienhardt), 1:484, 2:607
Division of Labor in Society, The (Durkheim), 1:214–216, 1:458
"Doctrine of the Similar" (Benjamin), 1:69
Documents (magazine), 1:365, 2:569
Domains, 1:233
Domestication of the Savage Mind, The (Goody), 1:354
Dominant caste, 2:811
Dorward, D. C., 1:87
Double blind, 1:60–61
Double Cross (Harden), 2:676
Double movement, 2:626–627
Double-voiced discourse, 1:43, 1:45
Douglas, Mary, 1:196–200
  on consumption, 1:221
  religious symbol analysis, 2:843
  structuralism theory influence on, 2:841
Downie, R. Angus, 1:285–286
Doxa, 1:90–93
Dragon and Dragon Killers (Róheim), 2:712
Drama, Turner on, 2:865–867
Dramas, Fields, and Metaphors (Turner), 1:128
Dramas of Nationhood (Abu-Lighod), 1:1
Dramatism, 1:96
Dreaming (Tedlock), 2:858
Dreams, Freud on, 1:289–291
Dreyfus, Hubert, 1:279, 2:617
Dreyfus, Louise, 1:214
Drums of Affliction, The (Turner), 2:865
Drums of the Past: Tourou and Bitti (film) (Rouch), 2:722
Du Bois, W. E. B., 1:201–203

Dual-inheritance theorists, 1:156
Dual transmission research, 1:242
Dublé, Josie, 1:255
DuBois, Cora, 1:159–160**, 1:203–206**
Dumont, Jean-Paul, 2:643
Dumont, Louis, 1:203–210
  alliance-descent debate, 1:3
  holism, hierarchy and, 1:208–209
  on *homo hierarchicus* and *homo aequalis*, 1:207–208
  reflexive epistemology, 1:209–210
Dunbar, Robin, 2:608
Dundes, Alan, 1:210–213, 2:879
Dundes, Maurice, 1:210
Dunn, Robert, 2:599
Durham, Beatrice, 1:57
Durkheim, Émile, 1:214–218, 1:458–462, 2:586
  alliance theory, 1:4
  ethnomethodology of, 1:229–230
  on neo-Kantiansm, 2:591–592
  on religion, 2:694
Dust Tracks on a Road (Hurston), 1:37
Dwyer, Kevin, 2:584, 2:643
Dyadic level, 2:594
Dying Colonialism, A (Fanon), 1:255, 1:257
"Dying king" concept, 1:286–287

Eade, John, 1:129
Early American Anthropological Linguistics (Pike), 2:619
Early Civilization (Goldenweiser), 1:350
East African Chiefs (Richards), 2:700
East in the West, The (Goody), 1:354
Eastern Ojibwa (Bloomfield), 1:80
"'Eating' Young Men Among the Zafimaniry" (Bloch), 1:79
École Normale Supérieure (ENS), 1:7–8
Ecological anthropology, Rappaport on, 2:686–687
"Ecology, Cultural and Non-Cultural" (Rappaport & Vayda), 2:889
Ecology, Meaning, and Religion (Rappaport), 2:686
Ecology and the Sacred (Lambek), 2:687–688
Economic anthropology, 1:219–224
  classification of discipline, 1:220
  formation of, 1:219–220
  future of, 1:223
  Herskovits on, 1:394
  informal economy, 1:220–221
  Marx on, 2:522
  money and financial crisis, 1:222–223
  one-world capitalism, 1:221–222
Economic Anthropology (Herskovits), 1:394
Economic capital, 2:651
Economic Change in Southeast Asia, c. 1830–1980 (Geertz), 1:305
Economic defensibility, 1:244
Economic development theory, 2:522
Economic Development and Tribal Change (Richards), 2:700
Economic Life of Primitive Peoples, The (Herskovits), 1:394
Economic-cultural type, of Soviet anthropology, 2:797
Economics, Polanyi on, 2:626–628
Economics of a Mexican Market System (Malinowski), 2:509
Economist, The, 2:799
Economy, political. *See* **Political economy**
"Economy as Instituted Process, The" (Polanyi), 2:626
Economy and Society (Weber), 2:591, 2:913
Edelman, Lee, 2:667
Edge, David, 2:789
Editing, cultural transmission and, 1:157
Eggan, Fred, 1:6
Egocentric approach, to social network analysis, 2:596–597
Egoism, psychological (Hobbes), 1:402–403
Egypt, Bedouin society in, 1:1–2
1870 Ghost Dance, The (DuBois), 1:204
Einbahnstrasse (Benjamin), 1:71
Ekman, Paul, 1:236
El Filibusterismo (Rizal), 1:19
Elaborating key symbols, 2:844
E-language, 1:116
el-Baqqâli, Shereef Sîdi Abdessalam, 2:918–919
Elementary Forms of Religious Life, The (Durkheim), 1:4, 1:216–217, 1:321–322, 1:458, 2:536, 2:591, 2:789, 2:822
Elementary idea, folk idea and, 1:54
Elementary Structures of Kinship, The (Lévi- Strauss), 1:4, 1:273, 1:309, 1:454, 1:474, 2:586, 2:759
Elements of Law (Hobbes), 1:402
Elements of Semiology (Barthes), 1:50
Elements of the Philosophy of Right (Hegel), 1:387
Eliade, Mircea, 2:573
Elias, Norbert, 1:374–376
Elicitation, 1:186
Eliot, George, 2:537, 2:555
Elites: Ethnographic Issues (Marcus), 2:516, 2:517
Ellis, Carolyn, 1:37
Embodiment, 2:836–837
Emergent Forms of Life and Anthropological Voice (Fischer), 1:268
Emics and etics
  approach, 1:149, 1:232
  categories, 1:186
  See also **American Anthropological Association; Cultural materialism; Pike, Kenneth**
Emics and Etics (Headland, Pike & Harris), 2:620
Emmons, George T., 1:15

Emotions, social life and, 2:716
Empire of Signs (Barthes), 1:51, 2:647
Empirical diversity, 1:90
Empirical generalizations, 1:75
Encountering Development (Escobar), 1:180
Enculturation, 1:155
Encyclopaedia of the Philosophic Sciences (Hegel), 1:387
Encyclopedia of the Negro (Herskovits), 1:394
Encyclopedia of Religion, 2:729
Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences, 1:349
Endogamy, 2:538
"Energy and the Evolution of Culture" (White), 2:881, 2:924
Enga, Mae, 1:146
Engaged anthropology, 2:687
Engelke, Matthew, 1:129
Engels, Friedrich, 2:531–532
  on cultural materialism, 1:149
  on wealth formation, 2:628–629
Engineers and the Price System, The (Veblen), 2:891
Enlightenment
  anthropology and, 1:373
  religion and, 2:693–697
Ensminger, Jean, 1:220
Environment and Cultural Behavior (Vayda), 2:889
Environmental circumscription, 1:105
Envisioning Power (Wolf), 2:943
Epigenetic rules, 2:931
Epistemology, cultural relativism and, 1:152–154
Epistemology of the Closet (Sedgewick), 2:666
Epochs of Nature (Buffon), 2:598
Equality of the Human Races, The (Firmin), 2:672
Equilibrium, 2:800
Eribon, Didier, 1:98
Eroticism (Bataille), 1:56
Escobar, Arturo, 1:180
Essay of the History of Civil Society, An (Ferguson), 1:262
Essay on the Customs and the Spirit of Nations (Voltaire), 2:898
"Essay on the Gift" (Mauss), 1:460–461
Essay on the Inequality of the Human Races, An (Gobineau), 2:672
"Essay on the Nature and Function of Sacrifice" (Hubert & Mauss), 1:460
"Essay on the Origins of Languages" (Rousseau), 1:174, 2:724, 2:725
Essay on the Principles of Population, An (Malthus), 1:166, 2:511–512
Essays on Cultural Transmission (Bloch), 1:79
Essays on the Depopulation of Melanesia (Rivers), 2:708
Essays in the History of Linguistic Anthropology (Hymes), 1:424
Essays on Individualism (Dumont), 1207–208
Eternal Ones of the Dream (Róheim), 2:713
Ethical plateaus, 1:268
Ethical relativism, 1:151–152
Ethical Relativity (Westermarck), 2:919, 2:920
Ethico theory (Aristotle), 1:32–33
Ethiopian Tale, An (Bakhtin), 1:44
Ethnic boundaries, 1:46
Ethnic Fratricide and the Dismantling of Democracy (Tambiah), 2:854
Ethnic Groups and Boundaries (Barth), 1:45–148
Ethnicity
  Barth on, 1:45–48
  language and, 2:794–795
Ethnocartography, 2:667
Ethnocentrism (LeVine), 1:471
Ethnoecology, 1:146
Ethnofiction, 2:721
Ethnogenesis, 2:797
Ethnographic Atlas (Murdock), 1:146, 1:354, 2:567
Ethnographic Bibliography of North America (Murdock), 2:567
Ethnographic data collection, 1:54–55
Ethnographic film, visual anthropology and, 2:895
Ethnographic I, The (Ellis), 1:37
Ethnographic present, 1:154
Ethnographies as Texts (Marcus), 2:518
Ethnography, culture, psychology and, 1:83–84
Ethnography, Linguistics, Narrative Inequality (Hymes), 1:424
Ethnography, new. *See* **Ethnoscience/new ethnography**
Ethnography and Ethnology of Franz Boas, The (White), 2:925
"Ethnography of Communication, The" (AAA), 1:422
"Ethnography of Law" (Nader), 2:576
Ethnography of speaking, 1:109–110, **1:224–226**
Ethnography Through Thick and Thin (Marcus), 2:516
Ethnohistory, 1:190, **1:227–228**
Ethnohistory (journal), 1:228, 2:908
Ethnological Notebooks (Marx & Engels), 2:524
Ethnological Society of London, 2:598, 2:599. *See also* **Royal Anthropological Institute**
"Ethnologie" (Graeber), 1:357
Ethnology, as science, 1:53–54
Ethnology of the Salinan Indians, The (Mason), 2:877
Ethnomethodology, 1:229–231, 2:786
Ethnopoetics, 1:423
Ethnos, 1:229
Ethnoscapes, 1:23
Ethnoscience/new ethnography, 1:120, 1:229, **1:232–234**
Ethology, human, 1:234–236
Ethos, 1:158

Ethos (journal), 1:15, 1:58, 2:660, 2:908
Etic. *See* Emics and etics
Etnogenez, 2:797
Europe and the People Without History (Wolf), 1:146, 1:179, 1:445, 2:526, 2:528, 2:532, 2:630, 2:673, 2:942
European Enlightenment, 1:281
Evans-Pritchard, E. E., 1:237–241
  gender anthropology, 1:310
  influence at Oxford, 2:606–607
  origin of religion, 1:20
Everyday Language of White Racism, The (Hill), 2:674
Evidence as to Man's Place in Nature (Huxley), 1:167, 2:601
Evoked culture, 1:248
Evolution
  anthropology and, 2:598
  archaeology and, 2:600
  Darwin and, 2:600–601. *See also* **Darwin, Charles**
  Dawkins and, 1:169
  ethnologists and, 2:599–600
  gene-centered view of, 1:169
  Goody and racist evolutionism, 1:354–356
  human behavioral ecology and, 1:406–407
  historians/social philosophers on, 2:598–599
  natural philosophers, contributions of, 2:598
  orthodoxy of, 2:601
  of religion, 2:873
  Spencer on, 2:800
  Tylor on, 2:872
  uniformitarian geology, 2:599
  See also **Evolutionary anthropology; Evolutionary psychology**
Evolution After Darwin, 2:856
Evolution and Culture (Sahlins & Service), 2:732, 2:881
Evolution and Human Behavior and *Human Nature* (journal), 1:407
Evolution of Culture, The (Lippert & Murdock), 2:566, 2:924
Evolutionarily stable strategy, 1:302
Evolutionary anthropology, 1:241–245
  cultural evolution, 1:242
  evolution of cooperation, 1:245
  evolutionary psychology, 1:242–243
  human behavioral ecology, 1:241–242
  reproductive strategies, 1:244–245
  resource ecology, land use and, 1:243–244
Evolutionary game theory, 1:302
Evolutionary psychology, 1:242–243, **1:246–250**
  areas of study in, 1:248–249
  culture and, 1:247–248
  as empirical study, 1:247
  incest and, 1:249–250
Evolutionary theory, 1:235
Ex oriente lux, 1:189
Excitable Speeds (Butler), 2:666
Exegetical frame, 2:865
Exemplars (Needham), 2:586
Exhibiting Cultures (Karp & Lavine), 2:784
Exogamy, 2:538
Expanding Class (Kalb), 2:529
"Expansion and Warfare Among Swidden Agriculturalists" (Vayda), 2:889
Experimental Pragmatics (Sperber), 2:807
Explaining Culture (Sperber), 2:807
Explaining Human Actions and Environmental Changes (Vayda), 2:890
Explorations in the Ethnography of Communication (Bauman & Sherzer), 1:225
Explorations in the Ethnography of Speaking (Bauman & Sherzer), 1:225
Explosion of Indigenous Communities in Chiapas (Nash), 2:577–578
Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals (Darwin), 1:167
Expressionism in Philosophy: Spinoza, (Deleuze), 1:175
Extended Phenotype, The (Dawkins), 1:169–170
Extended-case study method, 1:339, 2:513–514

Fabian, Johannes, 2:648, 649
Fabric of Chinese Society (Fried), 1:292
Faces in the Crowd (Guthrie), 2:565
Face-to-face interaction, 1:251–254
Facial Action Coding System (Ekman & Friesen), 1:236
Facing Mount Kenya (Kenyatta), 2:583
"Failures of Explanation in Darwinian Ecological Anthropology" (Vayda), 2:890
Familial mode of production, 2:526
Families We Choose (Weston), 2:667
Family, The (Parsons), 2:609
Family Among the Australian Aborigines, The (Malinowski), 2:507
Fanon, Frantz, 1:255–258
Fantasy of the Perfect Mother, The (Chodorow & Contratto), 1:112
Farmer, Paul, 1:180
Farrand, Livingston, 1:124
Fatal Strategies (Baudrillard), 1:63
"Fate of 'Culture,' The" (Ortner), 2:603
Fate of Rural Hell, The (Anderson), 1:19
Fear of Small Numbers (Appadurai), 1:22
Feather Cult of the Middle Columbia, The (DuBois), 1:204
Federal Writers Project, 1:415
Feedback process, 1:60–61
Feinberg, Richard, 1:7

Fejos, Paul, 2:916
Female Power and Male Dominance (Reeves), 2:739
Feminine mystique, 1:148
Feminine Mystique, The (Friedan), 1:310
Femininities, Masculinities, Sexualities (Chodorow), 1:113
Feminism and Anthropology (Moore), 2:644
Feminist anthropology, 1:258–261
  Chodorow and, 1:111–113
  postmodernism and, 2:644–645
Ferguson, Adam, 1:262–263, 2:598
Ferguson, James, 1:180
Ferry, Jules, 1:137
FFI. *See* **Face-to-face interaction**
Fides et Ratio (Pope John Paul II), 1:150
Field, 1:90
Fieldwork, 1:102–103
Film, ethnographic, visual anthropology and, 2:895
Financescapes, 1:23, 2:753
Financial crisis, money and, 1:222
Financialization, Marxist anthropology and, 2:529–531
Firmin, Joseph Anténor, 2:672
First Principles (Spencer), 2:799, 2:800
Firth, Raymond, 1:76, 1:87, **1:263–266,** 2:843
Fischer, Michael, 1:266–268
Fitzhugh, William, 2:784
FitzRoy, Robert (Captain, HMS Beagle), 1:165
Five Families (Lewis), 1:482–483, 2:884
Flaherty, Robert, 2:895
Flannery, Kent, 2:850–851
FLAS. *See* Foreign Language and Area Studies program
Fleck, Ludwik, 2:788
Flow, 1:23, 24
Fodor, Jerry, 2:806
Folk Culture of Yucatán, The (Redfield), 2:884
Folk idea, elementary idea and, 1:54
Folk Ideas in Building a Science of Man and Their Grounding in Ethnological Collections, The (Bastian), 1:53
Folk system, 1:89
Folklore, 1:211–213
Folklore in the Old Testament (Frazer), 1:285
For a Critique of the Political Economy of the Sign (Baudrillard), 1:63
For Marx (Althusser), 1:7, 1:8
For Men and Elders (Wilson, M.), 2:933
Foreign Language and Area Studies program, 1:29
Forest of Symbols, The (Turner), 2:70, 2:515, 2:865
Forest People, The (Turnbull), 1:17
"Form of Polyandry Among the Lele of Kasai, A" (Douglas), 1:197
Formal freedom, 1:388
Formal linguistics, 1:184
Formalism/Substantivism, 1:269–270
Formalists, in anthropology, 1:219, 2:626
Formations of the Secular (Asad), 1:35
Forms of life, 2:937–939
Forms of Talk, (Goffman), 1:345
Fortes, Meyer, 1:270–272
Fortnightly Review (McLennan), 2:537, 2:538
Fortune, Reo, 1:272–274, 1:392, 2:543–544
Foster, George M., 1:274–276, 2:878–879
Foster, Mary LeCron, 1:274
Foucault, Michel, 1:277–280
  on discourse, 1:193–194
  neo-Kantianism and, 2:592
  postcolonialism, poststructuralism and, 2:648–649
  on queer theory, 2:666
  on subjectivity and truth, 1:279
  writings on, 2:670–671
Foundational knowledge, 2:769
400 Blows, The (Truffaut), 2:721
Four-field approach, to anthropology, 2:881–883
Fourth Dimension in Architecture: The Impact of Building on Behavior (Hall), 1:379
Fox, Anna, 2:871
Fox, Augustus Henry Lane. *See* **Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox**
Fox, Richard G., 2:589
"Fox Project, The" (Tax), 2:856
Frame analysis, Goffman on, 1:346–347
Framing, metacommunication and, 1:59–60
France
  Algeria's independence from, 1:255
  neo-Marxists in, 2:521–522
  poststructural theories of discourse in, 1:192–193
Frank, Gunder, 1:178
Frankfurt school, 1:280–283
  critical theory, 1:280–281
  exile of, 1:282–283
  influences on, 1:281–282
  relevance, 1:283
Franklin, Karl, 2:620
Fraternity Gang Rape (Reeves), 2:740
Frazer, James G., 1:283–287
  at Cambridge, 1:101
  comparative method, 1:102–103, 1:287
  evolutionist ideas, 2:601
  modernism and, 2:555,
  myth-ritual theory and, 2:572
  on religion, 2:694
  on sacrifice, 2:729–730
Frazer and the Golden Bough (Downie), 1:286
Free market, 1:221
Freed, Stanley A., 1:17
Freedman, Maurice, 2:607

Freedom and Civilization (Malinowski), 2:509, 2:634
Freedom for My People (Wilson, M.), 2:933
Freeman, Derek, 2:542, 545
French Communist Party, 1:7
French Enlightenment, 2:722, 2:898
French Marxism, 1:78
French Modern (Rabinow), 2:670
French Review (Dundes), 1:210
French Revolution, 1:136, 1:138
French social positivism, 1:3
French structuralism, neo-positivism religion and, 2:695
Frequency-dependent, 1:155–156
Freud, Sigmund, 1:288–291
Fried, Morton, 1:292–293
Friedan, Betty, 1:310
Friedrich, Paul, 1:37
Friesen, Wallace, 1:236
Frobenius, Leo, 1:293–296, 1:189
From Blessing to Violence (Bloch), 1:79
From Working Daughters to Working Mothers (Lamphere), 1:458
Frontiers of Democracy, 1:66
"Fuel Revolution, The" (White), 2:925
Fulbright-Hays, Title IV program, 1:29
Full rationality, 2:688–689
Functional Analysis of Present-Day English on a General Linguistic Basis (Mathesius), 2:654–657
Functionalism, 2:776–777
Fundamentals of Language (Jakobson & Hale), 1:430
Future of Culture as Fact, The (Appadurai), 1:22

Gadamer, Hans-George, 1:297–301, 1:390
Gaga Feminism (Halberstam), 2:667
Galison, Peter, 2:790
Galvão, Eduardo, 2:901–902
Game theory, 1:301–303
Gandhi, Mahatma, 2:638
Gardener, Robert, 2:895
Garfinkel, Harold, 1:225, 1:229, 1:230, 1:251
Geertz, Clifford, 1:2, 1:34, **1:303–307**
  culture and, 2:603–604
  culture as text, 1:174
  description, method of, 1:61
  on economy, 1:220–221
  human universals, 1:411
  on Mary Douglas, 1:199
  on symbolic interaction, 2:847
  symbols, discourse and, 1:193
  on thick description, 2:860–861
  on Weber, 2:914
Geffray, Christian, 1:307–308
Gellner, Ernest, 1:104, 2:634
Gender and anthropology, 1:76, 1:259–260, **1:308–312**
  alliance theory and, 1:4
  autonomy of women and, 1:470
  cultural materialism, women and, 1:148
  as cultural system, 2:604
  culture and, 1:68
  language and, 2:794
  race and, 2:674
  women in culture and society, 2:715–716
  See also **Feminist Anthropology; Queer theory**
Gender Advertisements (Goffman), 1:345
Gender and Kinship (Collier & Sylvia), 2:715
Gender diversity, 1:313–314
Gender of the Gift, The (Strathern), 1:98, 2:816–819
Gender performativity, theory of, 1:96–98
Gender studies, 1:309–311
Gender Trouble (Butler), 1:96, 2:666
Gene-centered view, of evolution, 1:169
Gene-cultural connection, sociobiology and, 2:931
Gene-culture coevolution, 1:155–156, **1:315–318**
Genealogical method, 2:706
Genealogies of Religion (Asad), 1:34
Genealogy
  Foucault and, 1:278–279
  tradition and, 1:35–36
Genealogy of Morals, The (Girard), 1:327
"General Review of Recent Theories of the Division of Labor" (Bouglé), 1:460
General Theory of Magic, The (Mauss), 1:461
General View of Positivism, A (Comte), 2:599
Generative grammar, 1:318–320
Genes, Mind, and Culture (Lumsden & Wilson), 2:931
Genes, phenotypes and, 1:236
Genesis and Development of a Scientific Fact, The (Fleck), 2:788
"'Genesis and Structure' and Phenomenology" (Derrida), 1:181
Genetic inheritance, 1:315–316
Gennep, Arnold van, 1:320–323
Geodesic distance, 2:594
Geographical Distribution of Animals, The (Wallace), 2:904
Geographical mobility, 2:553
Geopolitical Aesthetic, The (Jameson), 1:434
Geopolitics, 1:188
"Geopolitics, Geographical Materialism, and Marxism" (Wittfogel), 2:935, 936
German Ideology (Dumont), 1:207–208
German Ideology, The (Marx), 1:8, 2:524
German People, The (Lowie), 1:494
Germany, historical ethnology of diffusion in, 1:188–189
Germs of thought, 2:561
Ghost Africa (Leiris), 1:366

Giddens, Anthony, 1:491
Gide, André, 2:667
Gift, The (Mauss), 1:56, 1:323–324, 2:534, 2:586
Gift exchange, 1:323–326
Gillen, Francis James. *See* **Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen**
Gilman, Carolyn, 1:17–18
Ginsburg, Faye, 2:896
Girard, René, 1:326–328
Give and Take of Everyday Life, The (Schieffelio), 1:109
Glee or the Torments of Religious Speech (Latour), 1:463
Global city, 1:491
"Global Ethnoscapes" (Appadurai), 1:22
Global flows, five dimensions of, 1:23
Globalization, 2:945–946
  Marxist anthropology and, 2:529–531
  postcolonial theory and, 2:637–639
  race and, 2:675
Globalization (Appadurai), 1:22
Globalization and Identity (Meyer), 1:332
"Globalization and the Research Imagination" (Appadurai), 1:23
Globalization theory, 1:328–336
Glottochronology, 2:840
Gluckman, Max, 1:336–340, 2:514–515
Gmelch, George, 2:885
Go Tell My Horse (Hurston), 1:417
Goal attainment, 2:614
Gobineau, Joseph Arthur Comte de, 2:672
God Delusion, The (Dawkins), 1:171
Godelier, Maurice, 1:340–344, 2:526
Goffman, Erving, 1:344–348, 2:666
  on ethnography, 1:225
  on interpersonal interaction, 1:195
  on symbolic interaction, 2:846
Golden Bough, The (Frazer), 1:285, 1:286–287, 1:287, 2:506–507, 2:507–508, 2:555, 2:572, 2:729
"Golden Bough or Gilded Twig?" (Leach), 1:467
Goldenweiser, Alexander A., 1:348–350
Goldenweiser, Alexander Solomonvich, 1:348
Goldfrank, Esther, 2:935
Goldschmidt, Walter, 1:13
Goldstein, Lynne, 1:12
Gonzales, Elian, 2:733
Good Company (Wilson, M.), 2:933
Good Neighbor Policy, 1:28
Goodenough, Ward H., 1:233, **1:351–353**
Goodman, Paul, 1:128
Goodman, Percival, 1:128
Goodwin, Marjorie Harness, 1:109–110
Goody, Esther, 1:354
Goody, Jack, 1:103–104, **1:354–356,** 1:490
Gordon, Deborah A., 1:260
Gorer, Geoffrey, 2:658
Governmentality, 2:915
Graebner, Fritz, 1:189, **1:357–358**
Grammar of Motives, A (Burke), 1:96
Grammatical principles, 2:551
Gramsci, Antonio, 1:358–361, 2:831
Grandparents, cultural transmission and, 1:154
Grant, Madison, 1:17
Great Cat Massacre, The (Darnton), 1:306
Great Debate, 1:269
Great Depression, 1:26, 2:940
Great Exhibition of 1851 (Crystal Palace), 1:361–363
Great Transformation, The (Polanyi), 1:219–220, 2:625–627
"Greater Southwest Culture Sphere" (Steward), 1:126
Greatest Show on Earth, The (Dawkins), 1:170
Greenberg, Joseph, 1:363–365
Griaule, Marcel, 1:365–368, 1:427
Grid, rules, 1:198
"Grief and a Headhunter's Rage" (Rosaldo), 2:642
Group
  as social unit, 1:198
  in sociolinguistics, 2:792
Grove, Charles Baylee, 1:285
Grove, Elizabeth (Lily Frazer), 1:285–286
Grove, Madeline, 1:382
Growing Up in New Guinea (Mead, M.), 2:543–544
Growth of Plato's Ideal Theory (Frazer), 1:284
Grundrisse (Marx & Engels), 2:524
Guardians of the Flutes (Herdt), 1:310–311
Guattari, Félix. *See* **Deleuze, Gilles, and Félix Guattari**
Gudeman, Stephen, 1:220
Guha, Ranajit, 2:636–637
Gulf War Did Not Take Place, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Gumperz, John J., 1:195, 1:225, **1:368–369,** 1:423
Gusii Infant Study (LeVine), 1:472
Guthe, Carl E., 2:880
Guthrie, Stewart, 1:21, 2:565

Habermas, Jürgen, 1:283, **1:371–374,** 2:663
Habilitationsschrift (Benjamin), 1:70
Habitus, 1:374–376
  defined, 2:674
  dispositionalist approach and, 1:91–92
  practice theory and, 2:651–652
Haddon, Alfred C., 1:377–378
  at Cambridge, 1:101
  fieldwork, 1:102–103
  Seligman and, 2:762
  Torres Straight Expedition and, 2:862–863
Hailey, William Malcolm (Sir), 2:700

Halberstam, J. Jack, 2:667
Hale, Charles, 2:676
Hale, Morris, 1:430
Hall, Edward T., 1:378–380
Hall, G. Stanley, 2:543
Hall, Mildred Reed, 1:379
Hall, Robert, 1:81
Hallowell, A. Irving, 1:380–381
Hamilton, William D., 1:406
Hammel, Eugene, 1:276
Handbook of American Indian Languages (Boas), 1:84, 1:399, 2:784
Handbook of South American Indians (Steward), 1:163, 2:782, 2:814, 2:878
Handbook of the Indians of California, (Kroeber), 1:442
*Handbook of Tswana law and Custom (*Schapera), 2:755
Handelman, Don, 1:129
Harden, Jaclyn, 2:676
Hargrove, Melissa, 2:674
Harlemworld (Jackson), 2:674–675
Harris, Marvin, 1:382–384, 1:401
  on anthropological theory, 1:146
  cultural materialism, 1:147–148
  emics/etics and, 1:13
  on historical particularism, 2:588
  on materialism, 2:673
  on postmodern ethnography, 2:644
  religion and, 2:695
  on typology, 2:902
Hart, Keith, 1:269
Hartigan, John, 2:676
Harvey, David, 1:385–386
Harvey, Graham, 1:21
Hawk-Dove model, game theory and, 1:302–303
Headland, Thomas, 1:145
Headman and I: Ambiguity and Ambivalence in the Fieldworking Experience, The (Dumont), 2:643
Hearn, Elizabeth G., 1:405
Hearst, Phoebe Apperson, 2:877
Heath, Shirley Brice, 1:110
Hedonic attention, 1:156
Hegel, Georg W. F., 1:386–389, 2:598–599
Hegel Variations, The: On the Phenomenology of Spirit (Jameson), 1:434
Hegemony
  Gramsci and, 1:358–359
  Marxism and, 2:526–529
  oriental discourse and, 2:635–636
Heidegger, Martin, 2:641
  on deconstruction, 1:172–173
  as Gadamer mentor, 1:297–301
Heliolithic School, 2:776–777
Henry, Joseph, 2:781
Henry, Jules, 1:414
Herbert, George, 2:745–746
Herder, Hohann Gottfried, 2:598
Herdt, Gilbert, 1:310–311
Heritage of Conquest (Tax), 2:855
Hermeneutics, 1:299, **1:389–392**
Heroic gift exchange, 1:223
Herskovits, Melville, 1:392–395
Hertz, Robert, 1:396–397, 2:586
He-Said-She-Said (Goodwin), 1:109–110
Heteroglossia, 1:44, 1:45
Heterosexuality, 1:311–312
Heyerdahl, Thor, 1:190
Hidden Differences (Hall & Hall), 1:379
Hidden Dimension, The (Hall), 1:379
Hidden Frontier, The (Cole & Wolf), 2:940
Hierarchy
  holism and, Dumont on, 1:208–209
  of social units, 1:3
High context cultures, 1:379
High Plains Society for Applied Anthropology, 1:27
High Religion (Ortner), 2:605
Hill, Jane, 2:674
"Hill Tribes in India" (McLennan), 2:538
Hindess, Barry, 2:826
Hippocrates' Latin American Legacy (Foster), 1:275
Hirst, Paul, 2:826
Historic area approaches, 1:162–163
Historical linguistics, 1:184
Historical materialism, 1:140
Historical particularism, 1:162–163, **1:397–401,** 2:588
Historical-cultural areas, Soviet anthropology and, 2:797
History, Psychology and Culture (Goldenweiser), 1:350
History and Class Consciousness (Lukács), 1:281
History and Traditions of Tikopia (Firth), 1:265
History of Anthropological Thought, A (Evans-Pritchard), 1:239
History of Ethnological Theory (Lowie), 1:494
History of Human Marriage, The (Westermarck), 2:918
History of Melanesian Society, 2:707
History of Sexuality, The (Foucault), 1:278, 1:279, 2:666
Hitlerjunge Quex, 1:58
HMS Beagle, voyage of, 1:165–166
Hobbes, Thomas, 1:402–405, 2:734–735
Hocart, Arthur M., 1:405–406, 2:586
Hockett, Charles, 1:81
Hodgkin, Thomas, 2:599
Holism, 1:208–209. *See also* Cultural holism

Holmes, William Henry, 2:783
Homans, George, 1:5–7
Homo aequalis, 1:207–208
Homo duplex, 1:215
Homo economicus, 1:223, 1:199
Homo hierarchicus, 1:207–208
Homo Sacer (Agamben), 2:731
Homogeneity, 2:595–596
Homos (Bersani), 2:667
Homosexuality
  gender and anthropology and, 1:311–312
  See also **Queer theory**
"Hoodoo in America" (Hurston), 1:417
Hoover, J. Edgar, 1:205
Horkheimer, Max, 1:72, 1:139, 1:280–1:281
Houses and House Life of the American Aborigines (Morgan), 2:560
How Europe Underdeveloped Africa (Rodney), 1:178
How Institutions Think (Douglas), 1:198, 1:199
How Natives Think (Lévy-Bruhl), 1:478, 1:479
"How Social Forms Maintain Themselves" (Simmel), 1:460
How War Began (Otterbein), 1:133
HRAF. *See* **Human relations area files, cross-cultural studies,**
Hrdy, Sarah, 1:244
Hughs, Thomas, 2:790
Human, All Too Human (Nietzsche), 2:641
Human behavioral ecology, 1:241–242, **1:406–407**
Human Ecology (journal), 2:889
Human ethology. *See* **Ethology, human**
Human evolution
  Darwin on, 1:167
  See also Evolution
Human in History, The (Bastian), 1:52
Human mind, race and, 2:801
Human nature
  predictability and, 2:774–775
  western theories of, 2:734–735
Human Organization (SfAA), 1:27
Human Pyramid, The (Rouch), 2:721
Human relations area files, cross-cultural studies, 1:408–410
Human Types (Firth), 1:265
Human universals, 1:372, 1:373 **1:410–413**
  behavior and, 1:235, 1:251–252, 2:613, 2:705
  and cognitive anthropology/psychology, 1:121, 1:123, 1:247–248, 1:289, 1:438, 2:508, 2:572, 2:568, 2:808–810
  comparative anthropology and, 1:287, 1:353, 1:397–398
  and cultural evolution, 2:531–532, 2:601, 2:815, 2:831, 2:834, 2:920
  diffusionism and a universal history, 1:188–190, 1:455
  economics and, 1:219–220, 1:223, 1:325, 1:342–343, 2:529–530, 2:774–775
  gender and, 1:309, 1:310, 1:313, 1:457, 1:469–470, 2:604, 2:665, 2:715–716, 2:739
  phenomenology and, 1:387, 1:389, 1:419–420
  hermeneutics and, 1:391–392
  and language, 1:121, 1:131–132, 1:184, 1:364–365, 2:748, 2:791, 2:926–929 (*see also* Universal grammar)
  neo-Kantianism and, 2:590–593, 2:771–772
  and religion, 2:564, 2:693, 2:696–697
  and Soviet anthropology, 2:797
  structuralism/functionalism on, 1:431–432, 1:467, 1:476, 1:647, 2:510, 2:820, 2:822
  symbols and, 2:841–843, 2:864–867
Humanistic anthropology, 1:413–415
Humanistic research, Sapir-Whorf hypothesis and, 2:747–748
Humanities approach, of Evans-Pritchard, 1:238–239
Hunger and Work in a Savage Tribe (Richards), 2:700
Huntington expedition, 1:16
Hurston, Zora Neale, 1:37, **1:415–417**
Husserl, Edmund, 1:417–421
  Derrida and, 1:181–182
  on empathy, 1:420
  on phenomenology, 1:172–173, 1:419–420, 2:615–616
Hutton, James, 2:599
Huxley, Thomas Henry, 1:167, 2:601
Hybridity, 1:331
Hydraulic theory, 2:935, 2:936
Hymes, Dell, 1:224–226, 1:195, **1:421–424**
Hyperdiffusionism, 1:190. *See also* **Diffusionism, hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise***
Hysteresis, 1:90, 1:92–94
Hysteria, Freud on, 1:288–289

I Spent My Life in the Mines (Nash), 2:577
Iconoclash (Latour & Weibel), 1:463
Ideal types, 2:915–916
Ideal *versus* real, 1:47
"Ideas and Institutions in American Anthropology" (Stocking), 2:588
Ideas for a Pure Phenomenology (Husserl), 1:418
Identification, concept of, 1:96
Identity, ethnic, 1:46–47
Identity politics, 1:346
Ideological communitas, 1:128
Ideologies, in language use, 1:45
"Ideology and Ideological State Apparatuses" (Althusser), 1:9

Ideoscapes, 1:23, 2:753
I-language, 1:115, 116
Illuminations (Benjamin), 1:70
Illusion of the End and Events on Strike, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Ilongot Headhunting, 1883–1974 (Rosaldo, R.), 2:717–718
Imaginary, symbolic, and the real (Lacan), 1:454
Imagination, in material agency, Godelier on, 1:342–343
Imagination and Proof (Needham), 2:586
Imagined Communities (Benedict), 1:18, 2:638
Immediate Struggles (Narotzky & Smith), 2:528–529
Immigrant Voters in Israel (Deshen), 2:515
Immoralist, The (Gide), 2:667
Immortality and the Worship of the Dead (Frazer), 1:285
Imperial Germany and the Industrial Revolution (Veblen), 2:891
Imperialism (Lenin), 1:178
Implicit Meanings (Douglas), 1:198
Impossible Exchange (Baudrillard), 1:63
In Search of Lost Time (Proust), 1:71
In the Country of Wise Black Men (Rouch), 2:721
In the Land of the War Canoes (Curtis), 2:895
In the Metro (Augé), 2:643
In the Mirror (Anderson), 1:19
In the Realm of the Diamond Queen (Tsing), 2:643
In the Shadow of the Silent Majorities of the End of the Social, 1:63
In the Wilderness (Douglas), 1:199, 1:200
"*In Vain I Tried to Tell You*" (Hymes), 1:424
Inca and Aztec States, 1400–1800 (Rosaldo, R.), 2:718
Incest, evolutionary psychology and, 1:249–250
Incorporation hypothesis, 2:831–832
Indexical relationships, 2:765
India: An Anthropological Perspective (Tyler), 2:868
Indian People in Natal (Kuper & Kark), 1:447
Indigenous history. *See* **Ethnohistory**
Indigenous media, visual anthropology and, 2:895–896
Indigenous religion, Freud on, 1:290–291
Individual and His Society, The (Kardiner), 1:435, 1:436
Individual selection, game theory and, 1:302
Individualism, rational choice theory and, 2:689
Individualizing Gender and Sexuality (Chodorow), 1:112
Indology, of Mauss, 2:535–536
Inductive reasoning, 1:53–54
Industrial Revolution, 2:552, 2:628
Information states, 1:347
Ingenu, The (Voltaire), 2:898
Inglis, Fred, 1:307
Inhuman, The (Lyotard), 1:497, 1:498
Initiation to Possession Dance (Rouch), 2:721
Inner Experience (Bataille), 1:57
Inquiry Into the Nature and Causes of the Wealth of Nations, An (Smith), 2:773–774
Insect Societies (Wilson), 2:930
Instinct of Workmanship, The (Veblen), 2:891
Institut d'Ethnologie (Paris), 1:425–428
Instrumental rationality, 2:591
Insult and the Making of the Gay Self (Eribon), 1:98
Insurgents, subaltern studies and, 2:832–833
Integration, 2:614
Intellectual Impostures (Bricmont), 1:463
Intellectual level, of organism, 1:31
Intellectual praxis, 1:280
Intellectual property, 1:222
"*Intellectual Self-Portrait*" (Mauss), 2:534
Intelligence of Evil or the Lucidity of Pact, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Intelligence practice, 2:539
Intelligence Tests of Italian and American Children (Mead, M.), 2:542
Intentionality, phenomenology and, 2:617
Interaction ritual, Goffman on, 1:346
Interactional sociolinguistics, 1:368–369
Interactions, game theory and, 1:302
Internal Economy of the Nootka Word, The (Swadesh), 2:839–840
International Journal of American Linguistics (Boas), 1:84, 2:709
International Psychoanalytic Association (IPA), 1:453
International Research and Exchanges Board, 1:29
International Surrealist Exhibition, 1:56
International Women's Anthropology Congress, 1:470
Interpretant, 2:765
Interpretation of Cultures, The (Geertz), 1:305–306, 2:844, 2:860, 2:914
Interpretation of Dreams, The (Freud), 1:289, 2:865
Interpretive anthropology. *See* **Symbolic and interpretive anthropology**
Interpretive Social Science (Rabinow), 2:670
Intersexuality, 1:314
Intersubjectivity, 2:836
Intertextuality, 1:43, 1:45
Introduction to Brazil, An (Wagley), 2:902
Introduction to Kant's Anthropology (Foucault), 1:278, 2:592
Introduction to Social Anthropology (Mair), 2:506
Introduction to the Study of Language (Bloomfield), 1:80
Inventing Accuracy (MacKenzie), 2:790
Invention of tradition, 1:119
"Invisible Colour" (Lóftsdottir), 2:675

Involution, 1:304
Iran (Fischer), 1:267
Iron Age, 1:162
Iroquoian Morphology, 1:492
"Is Female to Male as Nature Is to Culture?" (Ortner), 2:604
"Is It Simple to Be a Marxist in Philosophy?" (Althusser), 1:8
Is Mars Habitable (Wallace), 2:904
"Is the Western Conception of the Self 'Peculiar' Within the Context of the World Cultures?" (Spiro), 2:810
Isherwodd, Baron, 1:198
Ishi in Two Worlds (Kroeber), 1:119
Island Biography (McArthur & Wilson), 2:930
Island Life (Wallace), 2:904
Islands of History (Sahlins), 2:732
Iterability, 1:194

Jackson, John, 2:674–675
Jacobs Tears (Douglas), 1:199, 1:200
Jaguar (Rouch), 2:722
Jakobson, Roman O., 1:429–432, 2:827–828
  on ethnography, 1:225
  on neo-Kantianism, 2:592
James, Allison, 1:109–110
Jameson, Frederic, 1:432–434
Jargon, language and, 2:793
Jargon of Authenticity, The (Adorno), 1:282
Jasanoff, Sheila, 2:790
Jefferson, Thomas, 1:413
Jefferson and the Indians (Wallace, A.), 2:906
Jesup North Pacific Expedition, 1:82
Jim Crow laws, 1:202
John Paul II (Pope), 1:150
Joking relationship, 2:680
Jonatis, Aldona, 1:18
Jones, Andrew, 1:24
Jones, Delmos, 2:583
Jones, Dough, 1:411–412
Jones, Rashida, 1:254
Jones, William, 2:501
Josiah Macy Jr. Foundation, 1:58
Journal and Remarks (Darwin), 1:166
Journal Asiatique (journal), 1:365
Journal de la Société des Américanistes de Paris, 2:710
Journal for the Society for Cultural Anthropology, 2:516
Journal of Anthropological Research, 2:868
Journal of Ethnology (Bastian), 1:53
Journal of Ritual Studies, 1:129
Journal of the Anthropological Society of Oxford, 2:608
Journal of the Polynesian Society, 1:263
Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland, 1:406, 2:725
Journey to the Ants (Hölldobler & Wilson), 2:931
Joyce, James, 2:555
Jukebox metaphor, 1:248
Jumping scale, 2:779
Jural bias, in structural functionalism, 2:821
Just Gaming (Lyotard), 1:497
Justice and Judgment Among the Tiv (Bohannan), 1:86

K. L. Pike on Etic vs. Emic (Franklin), 2:620
Kafka (Deleuze & Guattari), 1:176
Kalb, Don, 2:528, 2:529
Kalela Dance, The (Mitchell), 2:513, 2:699
Kant, Immanuel, 1:137, 2:590
  cultural relativism and, 1:153
  neo-Kantianism and, 2:590–593
  Simmel and, 2:770–771
Kardiner, Abram, 1:435–438
  on basic personality structure, 1:159, 1:206
  C. DuBois and, 1:204
Kark, Sidney, 1:447
Karp, Ivan, 2:784
Kendall, Lauren, 1:17
Kenyettam Jomo, 2:583
Kerns, Virginia, 1:76
Key relationships, 2:526
Khoisan People of South Africa, The (Shapera), 2:755
Khun, Manford, 2:847
Khun, Thomas, 2:788
Kierkegaard, Søren, 2:641
Kin, Property, and Community in Truk (Goodenough), 1:351
Kin-based interaction, 1:302
King, Richard, 2:599
King of the Delawares (Wallace, A.), 2:906
Kings and Counselors (Hocart), 2:586
Kinship
  alliance theory and, 1:4–7
  American, 2:760
  destruction of, as cultural category, 2:760–761
  Evans-Pritchard on, 1:240
  evolution and, Morgan on, 2:560–561
  Fortes on, 1:271
  Goodenough on, 1:351–352
  Goody on, 1:354–355
  incest and, 1:249–250
  Lounsbury on, 1:492–493
  matrilineal, 1:273
  reciprocity and, 1:245
  Schneider on, 2:759

social organization and, 1:444
studies, Cambridge, 1:103
"Kinship, Friendship and Patron-Client Relations in Complex Societies" (Wolf), 2:940
Kinship, Networks, and Exchange (Schweitzer & White), 2:689
Klages, Ludwig, 1:40
Klemm, Gustav, 2:783
Kluckhohn, Clyde, 1:414, **1:438–441**
Knowledge and Passion (Rosaldo), 2:716
Knowledge and Social Imagery (Bloor), 2:789
Kohler, Robert, 2:789
Koppers, Father Wilhelm, 1:189
Kossinna, Gustaf, 1:189
Koya: An Outline Grammar (Tyler), 2:868
Kracaw Brown, Theodora, 1:443
Krackowizer, Marie, 1:82
Krafft, Friedericke Augusta Christine, 1:52
Kroeber, Alfred L., 1:76, 1:119, **1:441–445**
on DuBois, 1:204
culture areas and, 1:163
diffusion and, 1:187
Kroeber, Theodora, 1:119
Kroeber Anthropological Society Papers, 2:878
Krushchev, Nikita, 1:8
Kruyt, A. C., 2:586
Kubler, George, 1:445
Kuhn, Thomas, 2:640–641, 2:786
Kulick Don, 2:667
Kulturkreise, 1:162. *See also* **Diffusionism, hyperdiffusionism, *Kulturkreise***
Kuna Ways of Speaking (Sherzer), 1:225
Kuper, Hilda B., 1:446–447
Kuper, Leo, 1:446
Kuwayama, Takami, 2:584

La Critique Sociale (journal), 1:57
Labor, female, 1:148
Laboratory Life (Latour & Woolgar), 1:462, 2:789
Labov, William, 1:195, **1:448–452**
Lacan, Jacques, 1:452–455, 2:646–647
Lafitau, Joseph-François, 1:40, **1:455–456**
Laguna, Frederica de, 1:12
Lakoff, Robin, 2:794
Lamarck, Jean-Baptiste, 1:166, 2:598
Lamphere, Louise, 1:13, 1:259, **1:456–458**
Land, Labour and Diet in Northern Rhodesia (Richards), 2:700, 2:701
Land use, resource ecology, 1:243–244
Landes, Ruth, 1:76
Landscapes and Labscapes (Kohler), 2:789
Lang, Andrew, 1:287, 2:564–565
Langa (Mafeje & Wilson), 2:933
Language
African American English, 1:451–452
acquisition, 1:115–116
anthropology of, 1:69–70
automated aids, to comparison of, 1:132
Benjamin's theory of, 1:69–70
body, 1:236
borrowing, 1:130–131
chance similarities, 1:132
cultural holism and, 1:159
culture and, 1:83–84
deconstruction theory and, 1:172
dialectic, 1:387
discourse theory and (*see* **Discourse theory**)
ethnicity and, 2:794–795
ethnographic inference from, 2:742–743
ethnography of speaking, 1:109–110,
gender and, 2:794
generative grammar, 1:318–320
genetic classification of, 1:364
genetic relationships and, 1:130
grammar, place of, 2:746–747
linguistics and, Kreober on, 1:444–445
Noam Chomsky on, 1:113–116
nonpoetic, 1:430–431
nonstandard, 1:451–452
notion of life and, 2:937–938
operating, 1:96
origin of, (Rousseau), 2:723–724
phonemes/morphemes, 1:114
reconstruction, protolanguages and, 1:131
Sapir-Whorf hypothesis, 2:745–748
semiotics and, 2:764–766
social foundations of, 1:42–43
speech act theory, 2:716
status and, 2:794
structure of interaction and, 1:254
studies on, Native American, 1:80–81
as symbolic action, 1:95
theory of (Lacan), 1:453–454
universal tendencies in, 1:131–132, 1:364–365
variation sociolinguistics and, 2:793–794
vocabulary, 2:745–746
See also **Descriptive linguistics; Linguistics**
Language (Bloomfield), 1:80, 81
Language (Pike), 2:620
Language (Sapir), 2:743
Language (journal), 1:80, 1:352, 1:493
"Language, Anthropology, and Cognitive Science" (Bloch), 1:79
Language, Thought, and Reality (Whorf), 2:928
Language and Power (Anderson), 1:19
Language as Symbolic Action (Burke), 1:95
Language faculty, 1:115

Language games, 2:786
Language in Culture and Society (Hymes), 1:422, 1:423
Language of the Kathlamet Chinook, The (Hymes), 1:422
Languages of the World, The (Rivet), 2:709
Langue, parole and, 2:750, 2:765, 2:827
***L'Année Sociologique*, 1:214, 1:239, 1:425, 1:458–461**
l'Anthropologie (magazine), 1:365
Last Wali of Swat, The (Barth), 1:46
Late Marxism (Jameson), 1:434
Latham, J. H., 1:87
Latino Cultural Citizenship (Rosaldo R.), 2:719
Latour, Bruno, 1:461–464, 2:789
Launay, Robert, 2:663
Laura Spelman Rockefeller Memorial, 1:711, 2:710
Lauretis, Teresa de, 2:665
Lavine, Steven D., 2:784
Law, anthropology of, 2:576
Law, John, 1:462, 2:789–790
Law in Culture and Society (Nader), 2:576
Law of organic process (Spencer), 2:800
Leach, Edmund, 1:465–468
  alliance-descent argument and, 1:3, 1:5
  on anthropological structuralism, 2:830
  and Barth, 1:45
  at Cambridge, 1:103–104
Leacock, Eleanor, 1:468–470
Leader, The (journal), 2:537
League of the Iroquois, The (Morgan), 2:559–561
Leclerc, Georges-Louis, 2:598
Lectures on the Religion of the Semites (Smith, W. R.), 2:780
Leenhardt, Maurice, 1:117
Legotien, Hélène, 1:7
Lehman Brothers, 1:221
Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm, 2:598
Lele of Kasai, The (Douglas), 1:197
Lenin and Philosophy (Althusser), 1:9
Lenneberg, Eric, 2:747
Lesser, Alexander, 2:589
Lessons on the Analytic of the Sublime (Lyotard), 1:497
Leveling Crowds (Tambiah), 2:854
Levels of sociocultural integration, 2:815–816
LeVine, Robert, 1:471–472
Lévi-Strauss, Claude, 1:473–477
  alliance theory, 1:4, 1:5–6, 1:474
  Althusser on, 1:9
  on anthropological structuralism, 2:829–830.
  on Compte, 1:137
  on deconstruction, 1:173
  Elementary Structures of Kinship, 1:273
  on gift exchange, 1:324–325
  on identity and alterity, 1:477
  myth, structural study of, 1:474–476
  neo-positivism, French structuralism and, 2:695
  on symbolic function, 2:646–647
  on wild thinking, 1:476–477
"Lévi-Strauss in the Garden of Eden" (Leach), 1:467
Leviathan (Hobbes), 1:402
Levin, Maksim, 2:797
Leviticus as Literature (Douglas), 1:199, 1:200
Levy, Robert, 2:661
Lévy-Bruhl, Lucien, 1:69, 1:137, **1:478–480**
Lewis, Herbert S., 2:589
Lewis, Oscar, 1:77, 1:470, **1:480–483,** 2:884
Lexemes, 1:233
Lexical Insertion Rules, 1:319
Liber: Revue internationale des livres (Bourdieu), 1:94
Liberation theology, 1:10
Libidinal Economy (Lyotard), 1:497
Lienhardt, Godfrey, 1:484–485, 2:607
Life, The (Lewis), 1:483
Life and Death on Mount Everest (Ortner), 2:603
Life in a Haitian Valley (Herskovits), 1:393
Life in a Mexican Village (Lewis), 1:482
Life writing. *See* **Biography/life writing**
Life-Giving Myth (Hocart), 2:586
Liminal rites, 2:703
Liminality, Turner on, 2:865–867
"Limitations of the Comparative Method of Anthropology, The" (Boas), 1:134
Linderberg, Siegwart, 2:689
Linguistic anthropology, 1:195, 1:352–353
Linguistic diversity, mapping, 2:742
Linguistic ideologies, 2:767
Linguistic Pilgrimage (Pike), 2:621
Linguistic relativity hypothesis, 1:185, 1:423
Linguistic sign, 2:751
Linguistic structuralism, 2:827–828
Linguistic synchronicity, 1:19
Linguistic typology, 1:184
Linguistic units, 1:192
Linguistic variable, 1:451
Linguistics
  cognitive anthropology and, 1:120–122
  ethnoscience and, 1:232–233
  formal/social orientation of, 2:791
  Iroquoian, Lounsbury on, 1:492
  Labov on, 1:448–452
  Pike on, 2:619–620
  poststructuralism and, 2:646–647
  See also **Comparative Linguistics; Generative grammar; Prague School of Linguistics; Sociolinguistics**
Linguistics and Poetics (Jakobson), 1:431
Linnaeus, Carl, 1:161

Linton, Ralph, 1:485–487
Lion Hunters, The (film) (Rouch), 2:722
Listener, The (journal), 1:237
Literacy and Mothering (LeVine), 1:472
Little by Little (film) (Rouch), 2:722
"Little History of Photography, A" (Benjamin), 1:71
Littré, Emile, 1:137
Lived experience, 1:299
Lived Temporalities (Mahler), 1:177
Lives in Trust (Marcus), 2:516, 2:517
Living space, 1:162
Lloberra, Josep, 2:826
Lloberra, Kahn, 2:826
Locke, Peter, 1:177
Lóftsdottir, Kristin, 2:675
Logic (Hegel), 1:388
Logic of Practice, The (Bourdieu), 1:90, 2:649–653
Logic of Scientific Discovery, The (Popper), 2:632, 2:788
Logic of Sense, The (Deleuze), 1:175
Logical Investigations (Husserl), 1:418
London Review of Books (journal), 1:434
London School of Economics, 1:489–491
Long, Bitter Trail, The (Wallace, A.), 2:906, 2:907
Lounsbury, Floyd, 1:492–493
Low, Setha, 2:886
Low-context cultures, 1:379
Lowie, Robert, 1:16, 1:125, 1:398, **1:493–495**
Lubbock, John, 1:495–496, 2:600
Luckmann, Thomas, 2:785
Lucy, John, 2:747
Lukács, Georg, 1:281
Lumsden, Charles, 2:931
Lyell, Charles, 1:166, 2:599, 2:799
Lyotard, Jean-François, 1:497–499, 2:639–640

MacDougall, David, 2:894
MacFarlane, Alan, 1:104
Machiavelli, 1:41
Mackay, Robert W., 1:109
MacKenzie, Donald, 2:790
Macy Conferences, 2:850
Madame Edwarda (Bataille), 1:56
Madness and Unreason (Foucault), 1:277
Magic, Science, and the Scope of Rationality (Tambiah), 2:854
"Magic and Individual Right" (Huvelin), 1:460
Magic and Religion (Lang), 2:565
Magic of Reality, The (Dawkins), 1:171
Magic of the State, The (Taussig), 2:643
Magicians of Wanzerbe, The (Rouch), 2:721
Mahler, Julia, 1:177
Main, Henry James, 1:496, **2:501–504**
Maine, Henry (Sir), 1:40
Mair, Lucy, 2:504–506
Making Gender (Ortner), 2:604–605
Making of Religion (Lang), 2:565
Making of the English Working Class, The (Thompson), 2:528
Making Things Public (Latour & Weibel), 1:463
Melanesians of British New Guinea, The (Seligman), 2:762
Malay Archipelago, The (Wallace), 2:904
Malay Fishermen (Firth), 1:265
Malinowski, Bronisław, 2:506–511
on cultural belonging, 2:634
ethnography, 1:225
on formalism, 1:269
on gift exchange, 1:323–324
on Kula trade, 2:532
on motivation, emotional conflicts, 1:159
on native anthropology, 2:582–584
participant observation, 1:265
on sexuality, gender roles and, 1:310
single-site research, 2:707
Malthus, Thomas R., 1:166, **2:511–512**
Man, Culture, and Animals, 2:889
Man in the Amazon (Wagley), 2:902
*Man and His Works (*Herskovits), 1:395
Man and Woman Among the Azande (Evans-Pritchard), 1:239
Manchester School, 2:513–515
Mankind, psychic unity of, 1:54
Manning, Frederick, 1:263
Manning, Philip, 1:346
Man's Place in the Universe (Wallace), 2:904
Mantena, Kuruna, 2:504
Manual of Ethnography (Mauss), 2:534, 2:536
Manus Religion (Fortune), 1:272, 1:273
Maoism, 1:8
Maori Warfare (Vayda), 2:889
"Mapping the Social Field of Whiteness" (Hargrove), 2:674
Marcel, Griaule, 1:365–367
Marcus, George, 2:516–518
deconstruction and, 1:174
on fieldwork, 2:642–643
on writing culture, 1:117
Marett, R. R., 1:20–21
Margaret Mead (Lutkehaus), 2:543
Mark of Oppression (Gardiner), 1:435, 1:437
Markets in Africa (Bohannan & Dalton), 1:88, 2:627
Marking Time (Rabinow), 2:671
Marr, Nikolai, 2:797
Marriage
alliance theory and, 1:4–6
Geffray on, 1:308
Goody on, 1:354–355

strategies, games and, 2:605
systems in Burma, 1:5
Westermarck on, 2:919–220
Marriage (Mair), 2:505
Marriage, Authority, and Final Cause (Homans & Schneider), 1:5–6, 2:759
"Marriage and Divorce" (McLennan), 2:538
Marriage and Inequality in Classless Societies (Collier & Rosaldo), 2:715
Married Life in an African Tribe (Schapera), 2:755
Martin, Jacques, 1:7
Marx, Karl, 2:519–523
on capitalism, 2:520–521
on critical theory, 1:140
on cultural materialism, 1:149
on economic anthropology, 2:522
on economic development, 2:522
on false consciousness, 1:43
French neo-Marxists and, 2:521–522
Hegel and, 1:389
on historical materialism, 2:520
on wealth formation, 2:628–629
Marxism
Althusser contributions to, 1:8–10
Antonio Gramsci, 1:358–361
David Harvey and, 1:385
French, 1:78
Harris on, 1:383
race and, 2:673–674
Soviet anthropology and, 2:795
in Soviet Union, 1:8
See also **Structural Marxism**
Marxism and Anthropology (Bloch), 1:78
Marxism and Form (Jameson), 1:432
Marxism and "Primitive" Societies (Terray), 1:9, 2:825
Marxist Analyses and Social Anthropology (Bloch), 1:78
Marxist anthropology, 2:523–531
Más que un Indio (Hale), 2:676
Mascarenhas, Fernando, 2:643
Masks, 1:42
Mason, John, 2:877
Mason, Otis T.
on classification schemas, 2:783
on culture areas, 1:163, 1:190–191
ethnographic artifacts, 1:134
Masques Dogon (Griaule), 1:366–367
Mass media, 1:154–157
Material production, theories of, 2:531–532
Materialism
Marx on, 2:520
race and, 2:673–674
social biology religion and, 2:695
Mathematics, Plato on, 2:624
Mathesius, Vilém, 2:656
Mating systems, evolutionary models of, 1:244
Matrilineality, 1:40, 2:701–702
Matthews, Z. K., 2:933
Maturana, Humberto, 2:786
Maupertius, Pierre Louis, 2:598
Mauss, Marcel, 2:533–536
Gift, The, 1:56, 1:220
on gift exchange, 1:323–324
on habitus, 1:374–376
at *L'Année Sociologique,* 1:459–462
society as historical project, 1:223
Maximizing utility, 2:887
Mayan hieroglyphics, 1:493
Mayan Visions (Nash), 2:578
Mayhew, Henry, 1:362
"Mazeway Resynthesis" (Wallace, A.), 2:906, 907
McCarthy, Joseph, 1:205, 2:521
McCay, Bonnie, 2:889–890
McClaurin, Irma, 1:260
McClenaghan, Jean Victoria, 2:741
McCulloch, Mary Bell, 2:537
McDonaldization (Ritzer), 1:330
McDougall, William, 2:862
McGee, William John, 1:11
McLennan, John, 2:537–538
McMichael, Phillip, 2:946
Me, a Black Man (Rouch), 2:721
Mead, George Herbert, 2:539–541, 2:846
Mead, Margaret, 2:542–545
American Museum of Natural History and, 1:16–17, 1:126
on childhood, 1:108
cultural holism, 1:159
Gregory Bateson and, 1:272
hermeneutics and, 1:392
humanistic anthropology and, 1:414
photography and, 2:894
Reo Fortune and, 1:272
See also Coming of Age in Samoa
Meaning and Relevance (Sperber), 2:806
Media, visual anthropology and, 2:895–897
Mediascapes, 1:23, 2:753
Medical Anthropological Quarterly (journal), 1:15, 1:276, 1:458
"Medicine Societies of the Southwest" (White), 2:922
Meillassoux, Claude, 2:546–548, 2:825
Memetics, 2:807
Memoire (Sassure), 2:749
Mémorandum (Bataille), 1:56
"Memorandum for the Study of Acculturation" (Linton, Herskovits, & Linton), 1:486
Memories of My Life (Westermarck), 2:919

Memory, 1:79
Memory culture, 1:401
Men and Elders (Wilson, M.), 2:934
Menghin, Oswald, 1:189
Menomini Language, The (Bloomfield), 1:80
Merdock, George Peter, 1:133
Merton, Robert K., 2:788
Metacommunnication, framing, play and, 1:59–60
Metalinguistic, 2:767
Metapragmatic function, 2:767
Metarepresentation, Sperber on, 2:806–807
Method and Theory in Ethnology (Radin), 2:683
Method of Ethnology, The (Graebner), 1:189, 1:357
Methodologia, 1:229
Methodological individualism, 2:689
Methods and Explanations in the Study of Human Actions and Their Environmental Effects (Vayda), 2:890
Michelson, Truman, 1:81
Middlemarch (Eliot), 2:537
Migration, 1:187
Migrations to Ghana (Rouch), 2:721
Mill, John Stuart, 1:137, 2:887
Millar, John, 2:598
Millard Mae, Mildred, 2:921
Mille Plateaux (Deleuze & Guattari), 1:176
Mills, C. Wright, 2:909
Mind and Nature (Bateson), 1:58
Mind in Sleep, The (Fortune), 1:272
Mind of Primitive Man, The (Boas), 1:83, 1:85
"Mindful Body" (Sheper-Hughs & Lock), 2:757
Minima Moralia (Adorno), 1:282
Minorities in the New World (Wagley), 2:902
Mintz, Sidney, 2:548–551
on capitalism, contradictions and the Caribbean, 2:550
on sugar use in history, 2:551
traditional culture, history and, 2:589
Mirror for Man (Kluckhorn), 1:414, 1:440, 1:441, 2:575
Mirror of Production, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Mirror stage theory (Lacan), 1:453
Missing Persons (Douglas & Ney), 1:199
Mitchell, Clyde, 2:513, 2:699
Mitla: Town of the Souls (Parsons), 2:611
Mitten, Annie, 2:904
Mixed equilibrium, game theory and, 1:302
Moala (Sahlins), 2:732
Mobility, 2:552–553
Modal personality, 2:658
Modal Personality Structure of the Tuscarora Indians as Revealed by the Rorschach Test, The (Wallace), 2:906
Mode-of-protection model, 1:146
"Models for the Methodology of Mouthtalk" (Service), 2:769
Modern Capitalist Culture (White), 2:925
Modern Mythology (Lang), 2:565
Modern Quarterly, The (magazine), 1:349
Modern thinking, Lévy-Bruhl on, 1:478–479
Modern Times (Sartre), 1:62
Modern World System, The (Wallerstein), 1:179
Modernism, 2:553–556
Modernist Papers, The (Jameson), 1:434
Modernites, postcolonial theory and, 2:637–639
Modernity
reason and, 1:34–35
Simmel on, 2:771–772
Modernity at Large (Appadurai), 1:22, 1:24, 2:753
Modernization theory, 1:178
Modes of production, in Marxist anthropology, 2:524–527
Modularity, Sperber on, 2:806–807
Modularity of Mind, The (Fodor), 2:806
Mogilianskii, Nikolai, 2:798
Mol, Annemarie, 2:790
Money
financial crisis and, 1:222–223
Simmel on, 2:772
Money and the Morality of Exchange (Bloch & Parry), 1:78
"Money Objects and Money Uses" (Polanyi), 2:627
Monochronic cultures, 1:379
Monoglossic trend, 1:44
Monroe Doctrine, 1:28
Montagnais "Hunting Territory" and the Fur Trade, The (Leacock), 1:469
Montesquieu, Comte de, 2:557–558, 2:899
Mooney, James, 2:783
Moore, Henrietta, 2:644, 2:754
Moral psychology, Adam Smith, 2:775
Morality, Westermarck on, 2:920
Morality and Expediency (Bailey), 1:41, 42
Morgan, Lewis Henry, 2:558–562
on ancient society, 2:524–525, 2:531
comparative method and, 1:133
on evolution, 2:601
on the Iroquois, 2:560
on kinship and evolution, 2:560–561
on religion, 2:694
on social evolution, 2:561–562
Morgenstern, Oscar, 1:301
Moroccan Dialogues (Dwyer), 2:584, 2:643
Morton, Samuel George, 1:83
Moses and Monotheism (Freud), 1:291
Mother Camp (Newton), 2:666
Mother Right (Bachofen), 1:39

"Mother's Brother in South Africa, The" (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:680
Motifemes, 1:213
Mountain People, The (Turnbull), 1:17
"*Muchona*, the Hornet" (Turner), 2:865
"*Mukanda:* The Rite of Circumcision" (Turner), 2:865
Mules and Men (Hurston), 1:416
Müller, Max, 2:563–565
Multilinear evolution, 2:815
Multilisted ethnography, 2:518
Multiple equilibria, game theory and, 1:302
Multisited ethnology, 2:551
Multivocality, 2:865
Munn, Nancy, 2:713
Muñoz, José Esteban, 2:667
Murdock, George Peter, 1:264, 1:408, **2:565–568**
Musée de l'Homme, 2:568–571
Museum anthropology, 2:897
Mute Dreams, Blind Owls, and Dispersed Knowledges (Fischer), 1:267
Muyard, Jean-Pierre, 1:175
My Analysis With Freud: Reminiscences (Kardiner), 1:435
My Pilgrimage in Mission (Pike), 2:621
Myer, Brigit, 1:332
Myers, Charles, 2:862
Myres, John Linton (Sir), 2:726
Myth, Ritual and Religion (Lang), 2:565
Myth, theories of, 2:571–574
  Müller and Tylor and, 2:564
  and Lévi-Strauss, 1:474–476
"Myth and Tale Titles of the Lower Chinook" (Hymes), 1:424
Myth of the Framework, The (Popper), 2:632
Myth of the Negro Past, The (Herskovits), 1:393, 1:394–395
Mythemes, as contrast components, 2:764
Mythologies (Barthes), 1:51, 2:647
Mythologiques (Jakobson), 2:592
Myths and Legends of Australia (Gennep), 1:321
Myths of Male Dominance (Leacock), 1:470

Nader, Laura, 1:276, **2:575–576,** 2:879
Naked Science (Nader), 2:576
Name generator questions, 2:596
Name interpreter, 2:596–597
Nanook of the North (Flaherty), 2:895
Narayan, Kirin, 2:583–584
Narotzky, Susana, 2:528–529
Narrative inequality, 1:424
Narrative interaction, 1:347
Narrative of Travels on the Amazon and Rio Negro, A (Wallace), 2:904
Nash, June, 2:577–578
Nash equilibrium, 1:301
Nation, The (magazine), 1:349
Nation, The (Mauss), 2:535
National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP), 1:201
National Association for the Practice of Anthropology, 1:27
National Association of Colored Women, 1:201
National character, 2:658
"National Character Studies" (Kluckhohn), 1:440
National cultures, 1:66–67
National elites, subaltern studies and, 2:832–833
National Resource Center, 1:29, 1:30
Nationalism, transnationalism, 2:578–581
Nations, postcolonial theory and, 2:637–639
Nations Unbound, 2:675
Native Anthropology (Kuwayama), 2:584
Native anthropology/native anthropologist, 2:582–584
Native Tribes of Central Australia, The (Gillen & Spencer), **2:803**
Natives of Mailu, The (Malinowski), 2:507
Natural Histories of Discourse (Geertz), 1:193
Natural History (Buffon), 2:598
Natural History (magazine), 1:382
Natural History of Man (Prichard), 2:600
Natural philosophers, 2:598–599
Natural Science of Society, The (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:679, 2:681
Natural Symbols (Douglas), 1:198, 1:199, 1:200
Naturalist (Wilson), 2:932
Nature of Cultural Things, The (Harris), 1:382
Nature of Culture, The (Kroeber), 1:443
"Nature of Field Work, The" (Makkai), 2:620
Naven (Bateson), 1:57
Needham, Claudia, 2:586
Needham, Rodney, 2:585–587
  alliance theory, 1:4, 1:6
  on anthropological structuralism, 2:830
  at Oxford, 2:607
Negara (Geertz), 1:306
Negritude, 1:255
Negro Family, The, 1:483
Neo-Boasianism, 2:587–589
Neo-Kantianism, 2:590–593, 2:770–771
Neo-positivism, 2:695–696
Neo-Whorfianism, 2:594, 2:745–748. *See also* **Sapir-Whorf hypothesis and neo-Whorfianism**
Neoliberalism
  globalization and, 2:946
  race and, 2:675–676
Neolithic, 2:600
Nerve regeneration, 2:707

Network level, 2:594
Network society, 1:330
Network theory/social network analysis, 2:594–597
Neur, The (Evans-Pritchard), 2:606
Neur Religion (Evans-Pritchard), 1:240
Neuroanthropologies, 2:662
New Africa, The, 2:506
New Age Movement, 1:21
New archaeology, 2:850
"New Archaeology, The," 1:149
New Deal, 1:26
"New Directions in Ecology and Ecological Anthropology" (McCay & Vayda), 2:889–890
New Jersey Dreaming (Ortner), 2:605
New Left Review (journal), 1:333, 1:434
New media, visual anthropology and, 2:896–897
New Nations, 2:506
"New Neurosociology, The" (Turner), 2:866
"New Physical Anthropology," 2:878
New Republic, The (magazine), 1:349
New York Tribune, 2:519
Newcomers in the Workplace (Lamphere), 1:458
Newsletter (SfAA), 1:27
Newton, Esther, 2:666
Ney, Steven, 1:199
Ngaju Religion (Schärer), 2:586
Nicholls, Ioma Heaton, 1:237
Nietzsche, Friedrich, 2:641
Nietzsche, On (Bataille), 1:56
Nineteenth-century evolutionary anthropology, 2:597–601
No Access to Law (Nader & Todd), 2:576
No Future (Edelman), 2:667
Nobility and the Chiefly Tradition in the Modern Kingdom of Tonga (Marcus), 2:517
Node level, 2:594
Noema, 1:418
Noesis, 1:418
Noli Me Tangere (Rizal), 1:19
Nonpoetic language, 1:430–431
Nonverbal communication, 1:60
Normative communitas, 1:128
North British Review (journal), 2:538
Not Hollywood (Ortner), 2:605
"Note on Law and Caste in India" (Bouglé), 1:460
"Note on Some Forms of Kinship Structure, A" (Fortune), 1:273
Notes and Queries on Anthropology, 1:378, 2:507, 2:706, 2:726, 2:862, 2:871
Notes on Zuñi (Parsons), 2:610
"*Now I Only Know So Far*" (Hymes), 1:424
Nuer Religion (Evans-Pritchard), 1:479
Nutrient level, of organism, 1:31
Nutrition, agricultural economics and, 2:701
Nyswander, Dorothy B., 2:813

Obeyesekere, Gananath, 2:696, 2:732
Objective Knowledge (Popper), 2:632
Objective spirit, 1:388–389
Objectivism, 1:91
  practice theory and, 2:650–651
Observation, of behavior, 1:235–236
Ocasião (Marcus & Mascarenhas), 2:516, 2:517, 2:518, 2:643
Oceania (journal), 2:678
Oecology, 1:239
Oedipus complex, 1:5, 1:176, 1:437–438, 1:476
Oeuvres Complètes (Bataille), 1:57
Of Grammatology (Derrida), 1:172–174
Office of War Information (OWI), 1:67, 1:68
Official nationalism, 1:19
O'Laughlin, Bridgett, 2:826
Old New Zealand (Manning), 1:263
Old Testament in the Jewish Church, The (Smith, W. R.), 2:780
Olson, Charles, 2:859
Omaha Secret Societies (Fortune), 1:272
On Being an Anthropologist (Hallowell), 1:381
"On Key Symbols" (Ortner), 2:603, 2:844
"On Lévi-Strauss," (Althusser), 1:9
On Paranoid Psychosis and Its Relations to the Personality (Lacan), 1:453
"On Some Primitive Forms of Classification" (Durkheim & Mauss), 1:460
"On the Definition of Religious Phenomena" (Durkheim), 1:460
On the Edge of the Black Waxy (Lewis), 1:481
On the Edge of the Bush (Turner, E.), 2:864
On the Genealogy of Ethics (Rabinow & Dreyfus), 1:279
"On the Law Which Has Regulated the Introduction of New Species" (Wallace), 2:903
"On the Mimetic Faculty" (Benjamin), 1:69
On the Modern Cult of the Factish Gods (Latour), 1:463
On the Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection (Darwin), 1:162, 1:166, 1:168, 2:599
"On the Principle of the Economy of Thought" (Malinowski), 2:506
On the Soul (Aristotle), 1:31
"On the Tendency for Varieties to Depart Indefinitely From the Original Type" (Wallace), 2:903
"On the Vicissitudes of the Self" (Rouch), 2:721
"On the Zoological Geography of the Malay Archipelago" (Wallace), 2:903
One Dimensional Man (Marcuse), 1:282
Oneida Verb Morphology, (Lounsbury), 1:492
Ontogenesis, culture and, 2:714

Ontological, 1:182
Open Society and Its Enemies, The (Popper), 1:490, 2:632, 2:634
Operational frame, 2:865
Operational levels, Whorf on, 2:926–927
Optical consciousness, 1:71
Order of Things, The (Foucault), 1:193–194, 1:278
Ordinary Affects (Stewart), 2:643
Organisms, causal factors, 1:31
Organization of diversity, 2:659–660
Oriental Despotism (Wittfogel), 1:292, 2:935
Orientalism (Said), 1:174, 2:648–649, 2:736–738
Orientalism, postcolonial theory and, 2:635–637
Origin and Development of Moral Ideas, The (Westermarck), 2:918, 2:920
Origin and Diversification of Language, The (Swadesh), 2:840
Origin and Function of Culture, The, 2:714
Origin of Civilization and the Primitive Condition of Man (Lubbock), 1:496
Origin of Geometry (Husserl), 1:181–182
Origin of German Tragic Drama, The (Benjamin), 1:70
"Origin of Human Races and the Antiquity of Man Deduced From the Theory of 'Natural Selection,' The" (Wallace), 2:904
Origin of the Family, Private Property, and the State, The (Leacock), 1:469
Original Affluent Society, The (Sahlins), 2:732
Origins of American Man, 2:710
Origins of Culture, The (Taylor), 1:20
Origins of the Family, Private Property and the State, The (Engels), 2:531–532, 2:562
Ortner, Sherry, 2:603–605, 2:844, 2:882
Osborn, Henry Fairfield, 1:17
Oscar Lewis: Anthropological Essays (Lewis), 1:483
Ottenheimer, Martin, 1:7
Our Mutual Friend (Dickens), 2:537
Our Seas of Islands (Sahlins), 2:735
Ouroussoff, Alexandra, 1:222
"Outline of a General Theory of Magic" (Hubert & Mauss), 1:460
Outline of a Theory of Practice (Bourdieu), 1:98, 2:649–653
Outline of Cultural Materials, 1:408, 2:566–567
OWI. *See* Office of War Information
Oxford English Dictionary (Garfinkel), 1:229
Oxford History of South Africa (Thompson & Wilson), 2:933
Oxford University, 2:606–608

Paelolithic, 2:600
Pagan Tribes of the Nilotic Sudan (Seligman), 2:762–763
Paideuma, Frobenius on, 1:295
Palm Trees of the Amazon and Their Uses (Wallace), 2:904
Pan-Africanism, anthropology and, 1:202–203
Pandora's Hope (Latour), 1:463
Panofsky, Erwin, 1:374–376
Paradigms, 1:121, 1:233
Parallax effect, 2:896
"Paris of the Second Empire in Baudelaire, The" (Benjamin), 1:71
Parker, Ely, 2:560
Parole, 1:453, 2:827
  langue vs., 2:750, 2:765
Parrhesia, 1:279
Parry, Jonathan, 1:78, 1:79
Parsons, Elsie C., 2:609–611, 2:922
Parsons, Herbert, 2:609
Parsons, Talcott, 2:612–615, 2:912
Partial Connections (Strathern), 2:790, 2:818
Participant objectivation, 1:91
"Past and the Present in the Present, The" (Bloch), 1:79
Pasteurization of France, The (Latour), 1:462
Pataphysics (Baudrillard), 1:62
Pathologies of Power (Farmer), 1:180
Patria potestas, 2:502
Patriarchal family, 2:503
Patriarchal theory, 1:40
Patrilineal band, 2:814–815
Pattern maintenance, 2:614
Patterns of Culture (Benedict), 1:64–66, 1:159, 1:349, 2:545, 2:658
Patterns of Race in the Americas (Harris & Wagley), 1:383
Pausanias's Description of Greece (Frazer), 1:285, 1:287
Peacock, James, 1:13
Peacock, Nadine, 1:145
Peasant Life in China (Xiaotong), 2:583
Peasant Wars of the Twentieth Century (Wolf), 2:526, 2:941–942
Pedro Martínez (Lewis), 1:482
Peirce, Charles Sanders, 2:765
Penny Capitalism (Tax), 2:855
People of Alor, The (DuBois), 1:204, 1:159–160
People of Buena Ventura, The (Lewis), 1:483
People of East Asia, The (Bastian), 1:53
People of Puerto Rico, The (Mintz), 2:549
Peoples and Cultures of the Pacific (Vayda), 2:889
"Peoples of the World" (Soviet Anthropology), 2:797
Peregrinations (Lyotard), 1:497
Perfect Crime, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Performance

language and, 1:115
social network analysis, 2:595
Performativity, 1:194
Peri hermeneias (Aristotle), 1:390
Perry, William James, 1:190
Persian Letters (de Montesquieu), 2:557
Persistence of force, 2:800
Person, The (Mauss), 2:534–535
Person, Time and Conduct (Geertz), 1:305
Person and Myth (Clifford), 1:117
Person categories, 1:305
Personal networks, 1:240
Personality
culture and. *See* **Culture and personality**
impact of culture on, 2:744
Personality in Nature, Culture, and Society (Kluckhohn, Murray & Schneider), 1:440, 2:759
Person-centered ethnography (LeVine), 1:471
Perspective by incongruity, 1:95
Phenogenotype, 1:315
Phenomenological anthropology, 2:661–662
Phenomenology, 1:419, **2:615–618**
Phenomenology (Lyotard), 1:497
Phenomenology of Spirit, The (Hegel), 1:387–388, 1:453, 2:670
Philadelphia Negro, The (Du Bois), 1:202
Philosophical anthropology, 1:31–32
Philosophical Investigations (Wittgenstein), 2:786, 2:869, 2:937–939
Philosophie Zoologique (Lamarck), 1:166
"Philosophy and the Spontaneous Philosophy of the Scientists" (Althusser), 1:8–9
Philosophy of Arithmetic (Husserl), 1:417–418
Philosophy of the encounter, 1:9
Phomme total, 2:536
Phonemes, 1:120, 1:186, 1:233, 2:827
Phonetic variation, 1:186
Phonetics (Pike), 2:620
Phonology, 1:120–122, 1:232–233
Photo Wallahs (film) (MacDougal), 2:894
Photography
in anthropology, 2:862–863
visual anthropology and, 2:894–895
Physical anthropology, 1:84–85, 1:394
Pidginization and Creolization of Languages (Hymes), 1:424
Pigs for the Ancestors (Rappaport), 2:512, 2:532, 2:686–687
Pike, Kenneth, 2:619–621
on Christian philosophy, 2:621
emic approach, 1:232
emics/etics and, 1:13
Pinch, Trevor, 2:790
Pitt Rivers, Augustus Henry Lane Fox, 2:621–623
Placing the Dead (Bloch), 1:78, 1:79
Plato, 1:32, **2:623–625**
Plato's Academy, 1:31
Plato's Dialectical Ethics (Gadamer), 1:297
Play, metacommunication and, 1:59–60
Play of Mourning and Tragedy (Benjamin), 1:70
Playfair, John, 2:599
Please Follow Me (Baudrillard), 1:63
Pluralism, structural functionalism and, 2:821
Poehler, Amy, 1:254
Poems on the Praeraphaelite (McLennan), 2:537
Poetry, as discourse, 1:1–2
Poetry of Grammar and the Grammar of Poetry (Jakobson), 1:431
Polanyi, Karl, 1:87, **2:625–628**
on formalism, 1:269
Great Transformation, The, 1:219–220
plurality of distribution mechanisms, 1:223
Polarization of significata, 2:865
Political ecology, religion and, 2:697
Political economy, 2:628–631
Political Economy of Growth, The (Baron), 1:178
Political Language, Oratory, and Traditional Society (Bloch), 1:79
Political Leadership Among Swat Pathans (Barth), 1:47–48
Political Systems of Highland Burma (Leach), 1:5, 1:466, 467
Political theory, Adam Smith and, 2:775
Political Unconscious, The (Jameson), 1:432–1:434
Political Writings (Lyotard), 1:497
Politics (Aristotle), 1:32–33
Polo, Marco, 1:150
Polyandry, 1:244
Polychronic cultures, 1:379
Polyphonic novels, 1:44
Polyphony, 1:45
Polysemy, 2:865
Poot, Robert, 2:641
Popol Vuh, The (Tedlock), 2:859
Popper, Karl, 1:490, **2:631–635,** 2:788
Popular Science Monthly (magazine), 2:799
"Portugal's African 'Wards'" (Harris), 1:382
Position, 1:93, 2:835
Positional frame, 2:865
Positivism, religion and, 2:693–694
Postcolonial theory, 2:635–639
Postcolonialism, poststructuralism Foucault and, 2:648–649
Postliminal rites, 2:703
Postmodern Condition, The (Lyotard), 1:497, 1:499
"Postmodern Ethnography?" (Pool), 2:641
"Post-Modern Ethnography" (Tyler), 2:643
Postmodern ethnography, evocation and, 2:869–870

Postmodern Fables (Lyotard), 1:497
Postmodernism, 2:639–645
  Jameson on, 1:434
  modernism and, 2:556
  race and, 2:674–675
  religion and, 2:696
Postmodernism, or, the Cultural Logic of Late Capitalism (Jameson), 1:433
"Postmodernist Anthropology, Subjectivity, and Science" (Spiro), 2:810
Postscript to the Logic of Scientific Discovery (Eccles & Popper), 2:632
Poststructuralism, 1:50, 1:51, **2:645–649**
  Althusser on, 2:647–648
  approach to discourse, 1:193–196
  gift exchange and, 1:325
Potts, P. H., 2:586
Poulos, Christopher, 1:37
Poverty of Historicism, The (Popper), 1:490, 2:632
Poverty of Theory, The (Thompson), 2:528
Powell, John Wesley, 2:742, 2:782–785
Power, Marxism and, 2:526–529
Power Elite, The (Mills), 2:909
Power of Feelings, The (Chodorow), 1:112
Practice of Everyday Life, The (Certeau), 1:376
Practice theory, 2:649–653
  habitus and, 2:651–652
  reflexivity and, 2:653
  role of dispositions, 2:652
  structure, agency and, 2:652–653
  subjectivism/objectivism and, 2:650–651
Practicing Anthropology (SfAA), 1:27
Practicing Ethnography in a Global World (Nash), 2:578
Pragmatic relationships, 2:765
Pragmatism, 2:539
Prague school, 2:827–828
Prague School of Linguistics, 2:654–657
Praxeological mode of knowledge, 1:91
Prayer to Spider Woman/Rezo a la mujer araña (Rosaldo R.), 2:719
Preanimism, 1:20
Pre-Capitalist Modes of Production (Hirst), 2:826
Precarious Life (Butler), 1:99
Predicament of Culture, The (Clifford), 1:117, 2:642
Predictability, human nature and, 2:774–775
Pre-Historic Times, as Illustrated by Ancient Remains, and the Manners and Customs of Modern Savages (Lubbock), 1:495–496, 2:600
Prejudice, rehabilitation of, 1:299
Preliminal rites, 2:703
"Present Social Situation of the French Writer, The" (Benjamin), 1:71
Presentation of Self in Everyday Life (Goffman), 1:345, 2:666
Press, Irwin, 2:885
Prestige bias, 1:156
Pre-understanding, 1:391
Prey Into Hunter (Bloch), 1:79
Price, Richard, 2:550–551
"Primacy of the Ethical, The" (Sheper-Hughs), 2:758
Primates, rank and, 1:156
Primitive Classification (Durkheim & Mauss), 1:460, 1:461, 2:534–536, 2:586, 2:592
Primitive Culture (Tylor), 1:21, 1:133, 1:284, 2:556, 2:561, 2:592, 2:871
Primitive Economics of the New Zealand Maori (Firth), 1:264
Primitive Family in Its Origin and Development (Starcke), 2:586
Primitive Government (Mair), 2:506
Primitive Man as Philosopher (Radin), 2:682, 283
Primitive Marriage (McLennan), 2:537, 2:538
Primitive Mentality (Lévy-Bruhl), 1:478
Primitive Polynesian Economy (Firth), 1:265
Primitive Religion (Lowie), 1:494
Primitive Social Organization (Service), 1:133, 2:881
Primitive Society (Lowie), 1:494
Primitive thinking, Lévy-Bruhl on, 1:478–479
Primordial Characters (Needham), 2:586
Prince, The (Machiavelli), 1:41
Princes of Naranja, The (Friedrich, Paul), 1:37
"Principle of Limited Possibilities in the Development of Culture, The" (Goldenweiser), 1:349–350
Principles of Biology, The (Spencer), 2:800
Principles of Ethics (Spencer), 2:800
"Principles of Exchange and Investment" (Bohannan), 1:87
Principles of Geology, The (Lyell), 1:166, 2:799, 2:801
Principles of Linguistic Change (Labov), 1:450
Principles of Phonology (Trubetzkoy), 2:827
Principles of Psychology, The (Spencer), 2:799, 2:800, 2:801
Principles of Sociology, The (Spencer), 2:800
Prison Notebooks (Gramsci), 1:358–361
Prison-House of Language, The (Jameson), 1:432
Prisoner's Dilemma, game theory and, 1:302
Pritchard, James Coles, 2:599–600
Problems of Dostoevsky's Poetics (Bakhtin), 1:43, 1:44
Processual archaeology, 2:850
Production and Reproduction (Goody), 1:354
"Production of Locality, The" (Appadurai), 1:22
Production of nature, 2:779
"Progress" (Spencer), 2:800
Progress: Its Law and Cause (Spencer), 1:168

"Progressive Contextualization" (Vayda), 2:890
"Prohibition of Incest and Its Origins, The" (Durkheim), 1:460
Projection
  folklore and, 1:211–212
  supernatural and, 1:436–437
"Projective Verse" (Olson), 2:859
"Prolegomena to the Next Linguistics" (Tyler), 2:869
Property
  real/intellectual, 1:222
  transmission, Goody on, 1:354–355
Prophets of Israel and Their Place in History to the Close of the Eighth Century (Smith, W. R.), 2:780
Protestant Ethic and the Spirit of Capitalism, The (Weber), 2:612, 2:912
Protolanguages, 1:131
Prototype theory, 1:122
Proust, Marcel, 1:7q
Prout, Alan, 1:109–110
Proxemics, 1:379
Psyche, 1:32
Psychedelic White (Saldhanha), 1:177
Psychic Life of Power, The (Butler), 1:98–99
Psychic unity, 1:54, 2:872–873
Psychoanalysis
  as archaeology of mind, 1:290
  structuralism and, 1:212–213
Psychoanalysis and Anthropology (Róheim), 2:713
Psychoanalytic theory, Freud, 1:288–289
Psychological anthropology, 2:657–662
Psychological Anthropology (LeVine), 1:472
Psychological Frontiers of Society, The (Kardiner), 1:435, 1:437
"Psychological Reality of Phonemes, The" (Sapir), 2:592
Puar, Jasbir, 2:667
Public culture, 1:23
Public Culture (journal), 1:22, 1:331, 1:490
Public health, Foster on, 1:275
Public sphere, 2:663–664
Public symbols, 2:843
Pueblo Indian Religion (Parsons), 2:610
Pueblo of San Felipe, The (White), 2:922
Pueblo of Santa Ana, The (White), 2:922
Pueblo of Santo Domingo, The (White), 2:922
Pueblo of Sia, The (White), 2:922
PUKAR. *See* Partners for Urban Knowledge, Action, and Research
Pul Eliya, a Village in Ceylon (Leach), 1:466–467
Purity and Danger (Douglas), 1:197, 1:199, 2:843, 200
Purum, analysis, 1:6
Putnam, Frederic W., 1:15–16, 1:106
Pythagorean-Neoplatonist-Gnostic tradition, 1:40

Queer theory, 1:96, **2:665–668**
Qu'est-ce qu'une nation? (Renan), 1:19
Question of Palestine, The (Said), 2:737–738

Rabelais and His World (Bakhtin), 1:44
Rabinow, Paul, 2:669–672
  deconstruction and, 1:174
  on fieldwork, 2:643
  Foucault and, 1:279
Race, 2:672–676
  African American English and, 1:451–452
  black culture, 1:437
  cultural evolutionism and, 1:83
  culture and, 1:161
  determinism and, 1:85
  Du Bois on, 1:201–203
  evolution and, 1:354–356
  human mind and, 2:801
  Jim Crow laws, 1:202
  laws in Germany, 1:419
  materialism and, 2:673–674
  neoliberalism and, 2:675–676
  Pan Africanism and, 1:202–203
  physical anthropology and, 1:394–395
  political context, Wilson on, 2:934
  postmodern/poststructuralist perspective, 2:674–675
  pre/post war attitudes on, 2:673
  race and ethnicity, 2:676
  scientific racism and, 2:672–673
  transnationalism and, 2:675
Race: Science and Culture (Weltfish & Benedict), 1:65
Race, Culture, and Evolution (Stocking), 2:587
Race and Class in Rural Brazil (Wagley), 2:902
Race and Ethnicity in Latin America (Wade), 2:676
Race and History (Lévi-Strauss), 1:474, 1:477
Race in the 21st Century (Hartigan), 2:676
Races et Racisme (journal), 2:710
Races of Africa (Seligman), 2:763
Racial Groups in Greater New York (Goldenweiser), 1:349
Racial Paranoia (Jackson), 2:675
Racial Representations in Asia (Takezawa), 2:675–676
Racial Situations (Hartigan), 2:676
Racial uplift, 1:201–202
Racism, scientific, 2:658, 2:672–673
Radcliffe-Brown, A. R., 1:101, 2:607, **2:677–681**
Radical constructionism, 2:786
Radin, Paul, 2:681–685
Rancière, Jacques, 1:8
Ranco, Darren, 2:584
Random interaction, 1:302
Rank and Religion in Tikopia (Firth), 1:265
Rapp, Rayna, 2:644

Rappaport, Roy, 2:685–688
on cultural ecology, 1:145–146
pig husbandry and, 2:512
on ritual in material production, 2:532
on systems theory, 2:851
RAT, The (Harris), 1:383
Rational choice theory, 2:688–689
Rationality, Weber on, 2:591
Rational-legal domination, 2:915
Ratzel, Friedrich
Anthropogeographie, 1:188–189
culture circles, 1:293–294
living space, 1:162
Reaction to Conquest (Wilson, M.), 2:933, 2:934
Read, C. H., 1:25
Reading Capital (Althusser), 1:8
Real Black (Jackson), 2:675
Real property, 1:222
"Real Race Problem, The" (Du Bois), 1:203
Realm of the Supernatural Among the South-Eastern Bantu (Gluckman), 1:337
Reason, Evans-Pritchard on, 1:239
Reason and Revolution (Marcuse), 1:282
Reasonable dialogue, 1:372
Reassembling the Social, an Introduction to Actor-Network-Theory (Callon, Law & Latour), 1:462
Rebel Destiny (Herskovits), 1:393
Reconciling Social Science and Cognitive Science Notions of the "Self" (Bloch), 1:79
"Reconsidering the Ancestors" (Stocking), 2:589
Reconstruction, language and, 1:131
Recovering Voices (Smithsonian), 2:784
Redbook magazine, 2:543
Redfield, Robert, 2:690–692, 2:884
Redress, Turner on, 2:865–867
Reflections on Fieldwork in Morocco (Rabinow), 1:174, 2:643, 2:669
Reflexive epistemology, Dumont on, 1:209–210
Reflexivity
practice theory and, 2:653
visual anthropology and, 2:893–894
Rehabilitation of prejudice, Gadamer on, 1:299
Reification, 1:281
Reinach, Adolf, 1:418
Reinventing Anthropology (Hymes), 1:424, 2:575
Reiter, Rayna Rapp, 1:259
Relationships, social network, 2:595 (table)
Relativism. *See* **Cultural relativism**
Relevance: Communication and Cognition (Sperber & Wilson), 2:806
Religion, 2:693–697
anthropology of, Rappaport and, 2:687
Buddhism, 2:809, 2:853–854
Christianity, 1:34–35, 2:697
cognitive science and, 2:697
communitas and, 1:128–129
contextual particular approach, 2:694
cultural materialism and, 1:149
Evans-Pritchard on, 1:240
evolution of, 2:873
French structuralism and, 2:695
functional approach to, 2:694
Hinduism, 2:810
indigenous, Freud on, 1:290–291
Islam, 1:34, 35
Mary Douglas on, 1:196–200
materialism, social biology and, 2:695
medieval Christianity, 1:34
neo-positivism and, 2:695
Pike, on Christian philosophy, 2:621
political ecology and, 2:697
positivism and, 2:693–694
postmodernism and, 2:696
Pueblo Indian, 2:609–611
religious life, forms of, 1:217–218
Rhodes-Livingston Institute and, 2:694–695
science and, 2:932
science of, 2:563–564
semiotic materialism and, 2:696–697
social ecology and, 2:695
structural approach to, 2:694
theories of origins of, 1:21
tradition, genealogy and, 1:35
William Smith on, 2:779–781
"Religion: Problems of Definition and Explanation" (Spiro), 2:810
Religion, An Anthropological View (Wallace, A.), 2:907
Religion of China, The (Weber), 2:913
Religion of India, The (Weber), 2:913
Religion of Java, The (Geertz), 1:304
Remarks and Inventions (Neeham), 2:586
"Reminiscences of Anthropological Currents in America Half a Century Ago" (Lowie), 1:125
Renan, Ernest, 1:19
Report on Knowledge, A (Lyotard), 1:497
Reports of the Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to Torres Straits, The, 2:862
Representamen, 2:765
Representing Capital (Jameson), 1:434
Reproduction of Mothering, The (Chodorow), 1:112
Reproductive strategies, evolutionary anthropology, 1:244–245
Republic (Plato), 2:624
Research imaginary, 2:518
Researches Into the Early History of Mankind and the Development of Civilization (Tylor), 1:496, 2:601, 2:871, 2:873

Researches Into the Physical History of Mankind (Pritchard), 2:599–600
Resisting Racism and Xenophobia (Harrison), 2:675
Resource concentration, 1:105
Resource ecology, land use and, 1:243–244
Restricted and elaborated codes, 1:451
Rethinking Anthropology (Leach), 1:467
Rethinking Kinship and Marriage (Needham), 2:586
Rethinking Symbolism (Sperber), 2:806
Retsika, Konstantino, 1:177
Returns: Becoming Indigenous in the Twenty- First Century (Clifford), 1:119
"Revitalization Movements" (Wallace, A.), 2:907
Rhetoric and Culture, 2:868
Rhetoric of Motives, A (Burke), 1:96
Rhetorical theory, 1:96
Rhizomes, 1:331
Rhodes-Livingstone Institute, 2:694–695, **2:698–699**
Rhythm of motion, 2:800
Richards, Audry, 2:699–702
Rickert, Heinrich, 2:915
Ricouer, Paul, 1:390
Riddle of the Sphinx or Human Origins (Róheim), 2:713
Right and Left (Kruyt), 2:586
Ripley, Sidney Dilllon, II, 2:784
Rise and Demise (Chase-Dunn & Hall), 2:944
Rise of Anthropological Theory, The (Harris), 1:146, 1:147, 1:382, 2:588, 2:673, 2:814
Risk Acceptability According to the Social Sciences (Douglas), 1:199
Risk and Blame (Douglas), 1:199
Risk and Culture (Douglas & Wildavsky), 1:199
Riss, Jacob, 2:894
Rites de passage, 2:702–705
Rites of aggregation, 2:703–705
Rites of margin, 2:703–705
Rites of Passage (Gennep), 1:322–323, 2:843
Rites of separation, 2:703–705
Ritual
  power and, in Madagascar, 1:79
  socialization and, 1:702
  Turner on, 2:866–867
Ritual, History and Power (Bloch), 1:79
Ritual and Belief in Morocco (Westermarck), 2:919
Ritual and Knowledge Among the Baktaman of New Guinea (Barth), 1:45, 1:48
Ritual and Religion in the Making of Humanity (Rappaport), 2:686
Ritual Process, The (Turner), 1:128, 2:515, 2:843
Ritual to Theatre, From (Turner), 2:866
Ritzer, George, 1:330
River Out of Eden (Dawkins), 1:170
Rivers, Augustus Pitt, 2:601
Rivers, W. H. R., 1:101, **2:705–708**
Rivet, Paul, 1:425–427, 2:571, **2:709–710**
Rizal, José, 1:19
Road to Independence: Ghana and the Ivory Coast, The (Wallerstein), 2:909
Robots and Gods (Goldenweiser), 1:350
Rockdale (Wallace, A.), 2:908
Rockefeller, John D., 2:711
Rockefeller Foundation, 1:490, **2:710–712**
Rodney, Walter, 1:178
Róheim, Géza, 2:712–714
Rojas, Juan, 2:577
Rollwagen, Jack, 2:885
Romantic hermeneutics, 1:390
Romanticism, 1:76
Roosevelt, Franklin D., 1:26
Rosaldo, Michelle Zimbalist, 1:259, 2:642, **2:714–716**
Rosaldo, Renato, 2:717–719
Roseberry, William, 2:630, 2:826
Ross-Ashby, William, 2:850
Rothschild, Helen, 1:210
Rothschild, Henrietta, 1:443
Rouch, Jean, 2:720–722, 2:895
Rousseau, Jean-Jacques, 2:722–725, 2:899
  Derrida deconstruction of, 1:174
  humanistic anthropology, 1:413
  on origin of language, 2:723–724
Routes, 1:119
Routes (Clifford), 1:118
Roxa, Cecília, 2:901
Royal Anthropological Institute, 2:725–727
Rubin, Gayle, 1:308–312, 2:666
Ruby, Jay, 2:893–894
Rule utilitarianism, 2:887–888
Rules of Sociological Method (Durkheim), 1:215, 1:229–230, 1:458, 1:216
Russell Sage Foundation, New York, 1:198

Sacred Books of the East, 2:563
Sacrifice, 2:728–731
Sacrifice (Hubert & Mauss), 1:461, 2:535, 2:730
Sahlins, Marshall, 1:269, 1:333, **2:731–735**
  criticism of, 2:526
  neo-Kantianism and, 2:590–591
Said, Edward, 2:648–649, **2:736–738**
  on deconstruction, 1:174
  on orientalism, 2:635–637
Said and the Unsaid, The (Tyler), 2:868
Saints, Scholars and Schizophrenics (Scheper-Hughs), 2:756–757
Salaman, Brenda Z., 2:762
Saldhanha, Arun, 1:177
Sallnow, Michael, 1:129

Sanday, Peggy Reeves, 2:738–740
Sanjeck, Roger, 2:885
Sanskritization, 2:811
Sapir, Edward, 1:125, **2:740–744,** 2:827
descriptive linguistics, 1:185
ethnoscience, 1:232–233
on neo-Kantianism, 2:592
on psychological anthropology, 2:658–660
Sapir-Whorf hypothesis and neo-Worfianism, 2:745–748
culture and personality and, 1:158
descriptive linguistics and, 1:185
ethnoscience and, 1:232–233
Hymes and, 1:423
misinterpretation of, 2:743–744
psychological testing and, 2:928–929
Sarkar, Sumit, 2:833
Sartre (Jameson), 1:432
Sassen, Saskia, 1:491
Saturday Review of Literature, 1:68
Sauer, Carl O., 1:143, 1:442, 1:163
Saussure, Ferdinand de, 2:748–752
binary analysis of, 1:173–174
Cours de linguistique générale, 1:192
on structuralism, 2:827
theorization of descriptive linguistics, 1:185
Savage Mind (Lévi-Stauss), 1:137, 1:173, 1:476–477, 1:479
Scale, theory of, 2:779
Scapes, 1:23, **2:753–754**
Scene-act ratio, 1:96
Schapera, Isaac, 2:754–756
Schärer, Hans, 2:586
Schema, cultural, 1:122–123
Schemata, 2:660
Scheper-Hughes, Nancy, 2:756–758
on childhood, 1:110
on "structural violence" of poverty, 1:180
Schieffelin, Bambi, 1:109
Schildkrout, Enid, 1:17
Schism and Continuity in an African Society (Turner), 2:513, 2:698–699, 2:864
Schismogenesis, 1:59
Schizoanalysis, 1:176
Schliemann, Heinrich, 1:290
Schmidt, Father Wilhem, 1:189
Schneider, David M., 2:758–761
alliance theory, marriage and, 1:5–7
symbolic anthropology and, 2:843–844
Schneider, Mary Jane, 1:17–18
Schnitger, Marianne, 2:912
Schoolcradt, Henry Rowe, 2:781–782
Schools Against Children, the Case for Community Control (Leacock), 1:470
Schriften (Benjamin), 1:70
Schweitzer, Thomas, 2:689
Science
Gadamer on limitations of, 1:298–299
of religion, 2:563–564
Science (journal), 1:84, 1:105, 2:783
Science, Technology and Human Value (journal), 2:788–791
"Science, Technology and Society in 17th Century England" (Merton), 2:788
Science in Action (Latour), 1:462
Science of Culture (White), 2:532, 2:881, 2:924
Science of Man in the World Crisis, The (Linton), 2:685
Science wars, Latour and, 1:463
Scientific American, 1:482
Scientific Monthly, The, 1:482
Scientific racism, 2:658, 2:672–673
Scientific Theory of Culture, A (Malinowksi), 2:510
Scientism, 2:822
Scottish Enlightenment, 1:262, 2:607, 2:774
Screened Out (Baudrillard), 1:63
"Seal and Her Younger Brother Lived There" (Hymes), 1:424
Searle, John, 1:174
Seasons of Life (Pike), 2:619
Sechehaye, Albert, 2:749–750
Second Manifesto of Surrealism (Breton), 1:56
Second Sex, The (Beauvoir), 1:309
Second-order interpretations, 2:844
Sedgwick, Eve Panofsky, 2:666
Seduction (Baudrillard), 1:63
Seeds of Time, The (Jameson), 1:434
Segmentary lineages, 1:103
"Segmentary Opposition and the Theory of Games" (Barth), 1:47–48
Segmentary societies, 1:3
Self, G. H. Mead on, 2:540–541
Self, The (Róheim), 2:713
Self and Its Brain, The (Eccles & Popper), 2:632
Selfish egoists, 2:689
Selfish Gene, The (Dawkins), 1:169
Seligman, Charles Gabriel, 2:761–763, 2:862–863
Semantic anthropology, 2:608
Semiotic materialism, religion and, 2:696–697
Semiotic mediation, 2:766
Semiotics, 2:763–767
history of, 2:764–766
modern anthropology and, 2:766–767
Seligman on, 2:763–764
Semi-Scholars, The (Gennep), 2:586
Senghor, Leopold, 1:295
Sentences, 1:192
Sentient level, or organism, 1:31

Service, Elman R., 1:133, **2:768–769**
Sex and Class in Latin America (Nash & Safa), 2:577
Sex and Morality (Kardiner), 1:435
Sex and Repression in Savage Society (Malinowski), 2:508, 2:713
Sex and Temperament in Three Primitive Societies (Fortune), 1:273, 2:545
Sex ratios, gene-culture coevolution and, 1:317–318
Sexual Life of Savages in Northwestern Melanesia, The (Malinowski), 1:310, 2:508–509
Sexual Meanings (Ortner), 2:604
Sexuality, Westermarck on, 2:919–220
Shamanism, Colonialism and the Wild Man (Taussig), 2:643
Shapes of Time, The (Kubler), 1:445
Shapiro, Harry L., 1:17
Shared beliefs, 1:92
Shaw, Carolyn Martin, 2:674
Shell shock, 2:708
Sherratt, Andrew, 1:191
Sherzer, Joel, 1:225
Shifters, Verbal Categories and the Russian Verb (Jakobson), 1:431
Shirokogorov, Sergei, 2:798
Shockley, William, 2:739
Shreds and patches, 1:398
Shweder, Richard, 1:151
Sider, Gerald, 2:528
Sign vehicle, 2:765
Significance of Tombs and Ancestral Villages for Merina Social Organization, The (Bloch), 1:78
Significant symbols, 2:846
Signifier, language and, 2:750–751
Signs
  relations among, 2:752
  study of, diachronic/synchronic, 2:750
  value of, 2:751–752
Silent Language, The (Hall), 1:379
Silverman, Sydel, 2:589
Silverstein, Michael, 1:195
Simmel, Georg, 2:770–773
  on modernity, 2:771–772
  neo-Kantian social philosophy and, 2:770–771
  social theory and, 2:772–773
Simon, Herbert, 2:689
Simulacra and Simulation (Baudrillard), 1:63
Singer, Peter, 2:887
Singular Modernity, A (Jameson), 1:434
Situated Lives (Lamphere), 1:458
Skepticism, 1:23
Sketch for a Historical Picture of the Progress of the Human Mind (de Caritat), 1:138
Skin of the Bear, The (Griaule), 1:366
Skinner, B. F., 1:114
Slang, language, 2:793
Slavery, Aristotle on, 1:33
Slouching Towards Gomorrah (Bork), 1:150
Smith, Adam, 2:773–775
  on evolution, 2:598
Smith, Estellie M., 2:885
Smith, Gavin, 2:528–529
Smith, Grafton Elliot, 1:190, **2:776–777**
Smith, John Maynard, 1:406
Smith, Neil, 2:778–779
Smith, Robertson, 1:101
Smith, William Robertson, 2:572, 2:599, **2:779–781**
Smithson, James, 2:781
Smithsonian Institution, 2:781–785
  Department of Anthropology, 1:26
Social acts, G. H. Mead on, 2:540–541
"Social and Cultural Influences on Population in Two Tupi Tribes" (Wagley), 2:902
Social Anthropology (Lienhardt), 1:485
Social capital, 2:595, 2:651
Social change, Wilson on, 2:933–934
Social Change in Tikopia (Firth), 1:265
Social circumscription, 1:105
Social Conquest of Earth, The (Wilson), 2:932
Social Construction of Technological Systems (Hughs & Pinch), 2:790
Social Constructionism, 2:785–787
Social Context of Innovation, The (Wallace, A.), 2:908
Social Contract, The (Rousseau), 2:724
Social Darwinism, 1:167–168
Social disequalibrium, 2:699
"Social Dynamics of Physical Disability in Army Basic Training, The" (Schneider), 2:759
Social evolution, Morgan on, 2:561–562
Social evolutionary theory, 20th-century. *See* **Carneiro, Robert L.; Comparative Method; Fried, Morton; Murdock, George Peter; Sahlins, Marshall; Service, Elman R.; Steward, Julian; White, Leslie**
Social fields, 1:92–94
Social Forces in Southeast Asia (DuBois), 1:204
Social History of an Indonesian Town, The (Geertz), 1:305
Social Justice and the City (Harvey), 1:385
Social life, emotions and, 2:716
Social Life of Things, The (Appadurai), 1:22, 1:325
Social morphology, 1:460
Social Movements (Nash), 2:578
Social network analysis. *See* **Network theory/social network analysis**
Social network relationships, 2:595 (table)
"Social Organization and Social Change" (Firth), 1:265

Social Organization of Australian Tribes, The (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:678
Social Organization of Ethnological Theory, The (White), 2:925
Social origin, 1:92
Social patterning, linguistic behavior and, 1:448–451
Social preferences, 2:689
"Social Race in the Americas" (Wagley), 2:902
Social rationality, 2:689
Social relations, Godelier on, 1:343
Social Rule (Parsons), 2:610
Social science
  hermeneutics and, 1:390–392
  systems theory in, 2:850–851
Social Science Theory and Method (Leacock), 1:469
Social space, 1:92–94, 1:375–376
Social Statistics (Spencer), 2:801
Social Stratification in Polynesia (Sahlin), 2:686, 2:732
Social Stratification of English in New York City, The (Labov), 1:450
Social structure, 1:103, 2:567
Social Structure (Murdock), 2:567
Social studies of science, 2:788–791
Social Studies of Science (journal), 2:788–791
Social System, The (Parsons, T.), 1:303, 2:613
Social Test (journal), 1:463
Social thoughts, 1:54
  Freud on, 1:289–291
  Girard on, 1:327
Sociality, phenomenology and, 2:617–618
Socialization, 1:155, 2:702
Society
  G. H. Mead on, 2:540–541
  language in, 2:792–793
  nature of, Spencer on, 2:801
  reorganizing, social order and, 1:135–136
  sociolinguistics as communication in, 2:791–792
  superstructure of, 1:147
  women and culture in, 2:715–716
Society for Applied Anthropology (SfAA), 1:26, 1:27
Society for Humanistic Anthropology, 1:414
Sociobiology, 2:791
  gene-culture connection, 2:931
  Wilson on, 2:930–931
  See also **Evolutionary anthropology; Evolutionary psychology; Gene-culture coevolution**
Sociobiology: The New Synthesis (Wilson), 2:930
Sociolinguistic interview, 1:450
Sociolinguistics, 1:184, **2:791–795,** 2:794
"Sociology of Conflict, The" (Simmel), 2:772
Sociology of the Sense, The (Simmel), 2:770
Socrates, 2:624
Some Aspects of Contemporary Theory in Cultural Anthropology (Kluckhohn), 1:438
"Some Points of Agreement Between the Mental Lives of Savages and Neurotics" (Freud), 1:290
"Some Remarks on Prostitution in the Present and the Future" (Simmel), 2:770
Songhay, The (Rouch), 2:721
Songhay Religion and Magic (Rouch), 2:721
Sonorant coefficients, 2:749
Sons of the Shaking Earth (Wolf), 2:940
Sorcerers of Dobu (Fortune), 1:272, 1:273
Souls of Black Folk, The (Du Bois), 1:201–202
Sourcebook for Anthropology, 2:877
Southern California Applied Anthropology Network, 1:27
Southern Cross, The, 2:863
Southwestern Journal of Anthropology (journal), 2:769, 2:924
Soviet anthropology, 2:795–798
Soviet Union
  Cold War and, 1:28
  Communist Party, 1:8
Space on the Side of the Road, A (Stewart), 2:643
Spain, Foster fieldwork in, 1:275
Spanish-American War, 1:28
Spatiality, phenomenology and, 2:616–617
Speaker-hearer language, 2:791
Special purpose money, 1:87
Specimens
  dreams as, 1:289
  theoretical understanding of, 1:31
Speech
  ethnography of speaking, 1:224–226
  standard form of, 2:792–793
Speech act theory, 1:97, 2:716
Speech acts, 2:752
Speech and Phenomena (Derrida), 1:173
Speech communities, 1:448
Speech genres, 1:43–45
Speech Genres and Other Late Essays (Bakhtin), 1:43–44
Spencer, Herbert, 2:798–801
  on evolution, 2:599, 2:800
  on nature of human mind and race, 2:801
  on nature of society, 2:801
  Progress: Its Law and Cause, 1:168
Spencer, Walter Baldwin, and Francis James Gillen, 2:802–804
Spengler, Owsalt, 1:295
Sperber, Dan, 2:805–808
Spheres of exchange, 1:86, 87
Spier, Matthew, 1:109
Spirit of Laws, The (Montesquieu), 2:557–558, 2:899

Spirit of Terrorism and Requiem for the Twin Towers, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Spiro, Melford, 2:659–660, **2:808–810**
Spivak, Gayatri Chakravorty, 1:174, 1:183, 2:636–637
Spoehr, Alexander, 1:13
Spoken Word and the Work of Interpretation, The (Tedlock), 2:859
Spontaneous communitas, 1:128
Spreading activation, 2:751
Squier, George, 2:781
Srinivas, M. N., 2:810–812
St. Clair (Wallace), 2:907
"Stages of Economic Growth, The" (Rostow), 1:178
Stains on My Name, War in My Veins (Williams), 2:674
Stalin, Joseph, 1:8
Stamp, Marian, 1:169
Stanford Linear Accelerator, 2:789
Starcke, Carl Nicolai, 2:586
State, Evans-Pritchard on the, 1:239–240
Status, language and, 2:794
"Status and Role" (Linton), 1:487
Steinschneider, Malvine, 1:418
Stephens, Sharon, 1:110
Steps to an Ecology of Mind (Bateson), 1:58
Stereotype, cultural transmission and, 1:154
Stevenson, Matilda Coxe, 2:783
Steward, Julian, 1:76, 2:532, **2:812–816**
  at Columbia, 1:126–127
  on cultural ecology, 1:142–146
  on religion, 2:695
Stewart, Kathleen, 2:643
Stigma (Goffman), 1:346
Stocking, George, 1:66, 1:399, 2:587–590, 2:712
Stone Age, 1:162, 2:600
Stone Age Economics (Sahlins), 2:732
Stone Men of Malekula (Malinowski), 2:707
Story of the Eye (Bataille), 1:56
"Stranger, The" (Simmel), 2:770
Stratagems and Spoils (Bailey), 1:41, 42
Strathern, Marilyn, 1:220, 2:790, **2:816–819**
Stratification, systems of, 1:46, 2:944–945
Strenski, Ivan, 2:730–731
Stringer, Martin, 1:21
Strong, William Duncan, 2:878
Strong Program of the Sociology of Scientific Knowledge, 2:789
Structural equivalence, 2:594
Structural functionalism, 1:238, **2:819–824**
"Structural Implications of Matrilateral Cross-Cousin Marriage, The" (Leach), 1:5
Structural individualism, 2:689
Structural linguistic theory, discourse in, 1:192–193
Structural Marxism, 2:824–826
Structural Transformation of the Public Sphere, The (Habermas), 1:283, 1:371
Structuralism, 1:429, **2:827–830**
  anthropological, 2:829–830
  in British Anthropology, 1:78
  deconstruction, contextualizing, 1:173
  gift exchange and, 1:324–325
  linguistic, 2:827–829
  psychoanalysis and, 1:212–213
"Structuralist Activity, The" (Barthes), 1:50
Structuralist revolution, theorization of descriptive linguistics, 1:185–186
Structure, agency, practice theory and, 2:652–653
"Structure, Sign, and Play in the Discourse of the Human Sciences" (Derrida), 1:173
Structure and Function in Primitive Society (Radcliffe-Brown), 2:679
Structure and Sentiment (Needham), 1:6, 2:586, 2:607, 2:759
Structure of Scientific Revolutions, The (Kuhn), 2:640–641, 2:786, 2:788
Structure of Social Action, The (Parsons, T.), 2:613
Structures Elémentaires de la Parenté, Les (Lévi-Strauss), 1:4
Structuring Diversity (Lamphere), 1:458
Stucco Angel, The (Baudrillard), 1:62
Studies in Applied Anthropology, 2:505
Studies in Ethnomethodology (Garfinkel), 1:229
"Studies in Ethnoscience" (Goodenough), 1:233
Studies in the History of Linguistics (Hymes), 1:424
Study of Anthropology, The (Fried), 1:293
Study of Geography, The (Boas), 1:397–398, 2:588
Study of Man, The (Linton), 1:486, 1:488
Study of Slum Culture, A (Lewis), 1:483
Study of Social Organization of the Lele of Kasai, A (Douglas), 1:197
Sturtevant, William, 1:233, 2:784
Style and Civilizations (Kroeber), 1:442
Subaltern studies, 2:635–637, **2:831–834**
Subject positions, 2:835
Subjectivism, practice theory and, 2:650–651
Subjectivity, 2:834–837
Submission, mastery of, 2:837
Substantial freedom, 1:388
Substantivism, 1:269–270
Suicide, Durkheim on, 1:216–217
Suicide (Durkheim), 1:214, 1:458
Sullivan, William, 2:670
Summarizing key symbols, 2:844
Summer, William Gale, 1:408
Sunbelt Working Mothers (Lamphere), 1:458
Superorganic, 1:443
Superorganism, The (Hölldobler & WIlson), 2:932

Superstructure, of society, 1:147
Survivals, 2:872–873
Sustainability, 2:837–839
Swaddling hypothesis, 2:658
Swadesh, Morris, 2:839–840
Swazi (Kuper), 1:447
Sweetgrass (Taylor), 2:895
Sweetness and Power (Mintz), 2:551, 2:630
Symbolic and interpretive anthropology, 2:805–806, **2:841–845**
Symbolic capital, 2:651
Symbolic Classification (Needham), 2:586
Symbolic connection, 2:765
Symbolic Domination (Rabinow), 2:669
Symbolic Exchange and Death (Baudrillard), 1:63
Symbolic interactionism, 2:846–848
Symbolic violence, 1:92
Symbols
  culture as system of, 2:759–760
  linguistic structuralism and, 2:827
  ritual, 2:865
  See also **Symbolic and interpretive anthropology; Symbolic interactionism**
Symbols (Firth), 2:843
"Symbols, Song, Dance and Features of Articulation" (Bloch), 1:78
Synchrony, 1:192, 1:448
Syntactical Structures (Chomsky), 1:115
Syntagmatic/paradigmatic relations, among signs, 2:752
Synthèse Subjective (Compte), 1:136
Synthesis, 1:172
Synthetic philosophy, 2:799
System of Logic (Hegel), 1:387
System of Objects, The (Baudrillard), 1:62, 1:63
System symbol, culture as, 2:759–760
Systema Naturae (Linnaeus), 1:161
Système de Politique Positive (Comte), 1:135–137
Systemic agency, 2:734
Systems of Consanguinity and Affinity of the Human Family (Morgan), 2:559–561
Systems theory, 2:849–851

Tableaux Parisiens (Bauldelaire), 1:71
Taboo, totemism and, Frazer on, 1:286
Taboo and Totemism in Madagascar (Gennep), 1:321
Takezawa, Yasuko, 2:675–676
"Taking the Biscuit" (Douglas), 1:198
Talented tenth, 1:201–202
Tambiah, Stanley, 2:853–854
Tanala, The (Linton), 1:486
Tannen, Deborah, 2:794
Taranga fakatikopia ma Taranga Fakainglisi (Firth), 1:265
"Task of the Translator, The" (Benjamin), 1:71
Taussig, Michael, 2:631, 2:643
Tax, Sol, 2:784, **2:854–857**
Taylor, Lucien, 2:895
Teaching and Learning in City Schools (Leacock), 1:469–470
Teachings From the American Earth (Tedlock & Tedlock), 2:857
Techniques of the Body (Mauss), 2:535
Techno-environmental determinism, 1:401
Technoscapes, 1:23
Tedlock, Barbara and Dennis, 2:857–859
Tel Quel (journal), 1:56
Teleological cause, of organisms, 1:32
Temporal, 1:182
Temporal styles, 1:444
Temporality, phenomenology and, 2:617–618
Tenetehara Indians of Brazil, The (Galvão & Wagley), 2:901
Tepoztlán (Lewis), 1:482
Terministic screens, 1:95
Terray, Emannuel, 1:9, 2:825
Terrell, Mary Church, 1:201
Territoriality, 1:244
Terrorist Assemblages (Puar), 2:667
Their Eyes Were Watching God (Hurston), 1:415
Theoretical eclecticism, 1:27
Theoretical unity, 1:90
Theories of Culture in Postmodern Times (Harris), 1:384, 2:644
Theories of Primitive Religions (Evans-Pritchard), 1:20, 2:607
Theorizing the City (Low), 2:886
Theory, chronology of anthropological, 2:949–952
"Theory in Anthropology Since the Sixties" (Ortner), 2:604, 2:882
Theory of Business Enterprise, The (Veblen), 2:891
Theory of Communicative Action, The (Habermas), 1:371, 1:373
Theory of Culture Change (Steward), 2:532, 2:814–816
Theory of Games and Economic Behavior (von Neumann & Morgenstern), 1:301
"Theory of Life, The" (Coolridge), 2:800
Theory of Moral Sentiments, The (Simmel), 2:773, 774
"Theory of Play and Fantasy, A" (Bateson), 1:59
"Theory of Population, A" (Spencer), 2:799
Theory of scale, 2:779
They Studied Man (Kardiner), 1:435
Thick description, 2:860–861
Things Hidden Since the Foundation of the World (Girard), 1:327, 1:328

Thinking in Circles: An Essay on Ring Composition (Douglas), 1:200
"Thinking Sex: Notes to a Radical Theory of the Politics of Sexuality" (Rubin), 1:311, 2:666
Third World, The (Worseley), 1:179
Thompson, Edward, 2:528
Thompson, Laura, 2:878
Thomsen, Christian Jürgensen, 1:133, 1:162, 1:496, 2:600
Thought collectives, 2:788
Thought picture, 2:869
Thought statistic, 1:53
"Three-Age System" (Thomsen), 2:600
Three Ancient Colonies Caribbean Themes and Variations (Mintz), 2:549
Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality (Freud), 1:113
Threshold of Religion, The (Marett), 1:20–21
Tikopia Ritual and Belief (Firth), 1:265
Tikopia Songs (Firth), 1:265
Time, change over, 1:46–49
Time and the Highland Maya (Tedlock), 2:858
Time and the Other (Fabian), 2:648–649
Time Perspective in Aboriginal American Culture (Sapir), 1:125
Times Literary Supplement (journal), 1:237, 2:585
Tinbergen, Nikolas, 1:235–236
Title VI of the National Defense Education Act, 1:29
Tiv of Central Nigeria, The (Bohannan & Bohannan), 1:86
Tiv Economy (Bohannan & Bohannan), 1:86, 1:87
To the Foot of the Rainbow (Kluckhohn), 1:438
Todas, The (Rivers), 2:706–707
Token, money as, 1:221
Tolman, Edward, 2:906
Tooby, John, 1:248
"Topics in the Theory of Social Systems" (Parsons, T.), 2:612
Torres Straits Expedition, 2:706, 2:762, **2:861–863**
  Haddon on, 1:377–378
Totem and Taboo (journal), 1:290, 2:712–713
Totemica (Frazer), 1:286
Totemism (Frazer), 1:284
Totemism (Lévi-Strauss), 2:586
Totemism: An Analytical Study (Goldenweiser), 1:349
Totemism and Exogamy (Frazer), 1:285, 1:286
Totems and Teachers (Silverman), 2:589
"Toward a Native Anthropology" (Ranco), 2:584
Toward an Anthropology of Women (Reiter), 1:259, 2:644
Toward the African Revolution (Fanon), 1:255–256
"Towards a Native Anthropology" (Jones), 2:583
Town and Country in Brazil (Harris), 1:382
Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus (Wittgenstein), 2:937
Trade in South Eastern New Guinea (Thompson, L.), 2:878
Tradition, genealogy, 1:35–36
Tradition, Technology and the State (Goody), 1:354
"Traditional and Critical Theory" (Horkheimer), 1:139, 1:280
Traditional Cultures and the Impact of Technological Change (Foster), 1:276
Traditional Societies and Technological Change (Foster), 1:276
"Traffic in Women, The" (Newton), 2:666
Trance and Dance in Bali (Bateson & Mead, M.), 1:57–58, 2:544–545, 2:895
Transactionalism, 1:46, 2:675
Transactions (journal), 2:599
Transcendental ego, 1:420
Transcendental intersubjectivity, 1:420
Transformation of Subjects Into Objects in Warlpiri and Pitjanjara, The (Róheim), 2:713
Transformational generative grammar, 1:319
Transforming Anthropology, 2:674
Transitional space, 2:714
Transmitted culture, 1:248
Transnationalism. *See* **Nationalism, transnationalism**
Transsexuality, 1:314
Traumatic Neuroses and War, The (Kardiner), 1:435
Travesti (Kulick), 2:667
Traweek, Sharon, 2:789
Treasons, Stratagems and Spoils (Bailey), 1:42
Tree of Culture, The (Linton), 1:486–488
Tribal Innovators (Shapera), 2:755
Tribe, Caste and Nation (Bailey), 1:41
Trickster, The (Radin), 2:684
Trinidad Village (Herskovits), 1:393
Tropical Nature and Other Essays (Wallace), 2:904
Trouble With Normal, The (Warner), 2:667
Trubetzkoy, Nikolai, 2:827–828
Trugill, Peter, 2:794
Truth and Method (Gadamer), 1:298, 1:299
Tschopick, Harry, 1:17
Tsing, Anna Lowenhaupt, 2:643
Tuhami: Portrait of a Moroccan (Crapanzano), 2:643
Turel, Adrien, 1:40
Turgot, Anne-Robert-Jacques, 1:138
Turn taking, 1:251–252
Turnbull, Colin, 1:17
Turner, Edith, 1:129, 2:864
Turner, Victor W., 2:513, 2:515, **2:863–867**
  on communitas, 1:128–129
  on conflict, 2:698–699
  humanistic anthropology and, 1:414–415
  on religion, 2:694–695
Twitter, 1:155
Tyler, Martha G., 2:868

Tyler, Stephen A., 2:643, **2:868–870**
Tylor, Edward Burnett, 2:592, **2:871–875**
on animism, 1:20–21, 1:133
on evolution, 2:601, 2:872
on religion and myth, 2:564, 2:694
Types of Social Structure in Eastern Indonesia (Wouden), 2:586
"Typology of Latin American Subcultures, A" (Harris & Wagley), 2:902
Tzintzuntzan to the "Image of Limited Good," From, 1:276

Über Sprache überhaupt und über die Sprache des Menschen (Benjamin), 1:69
Ultrecht, Ernst, 1:305
Ulysses (Joyce), 2:555
Unconscious selection, 2:599, 2:600
Understanding Cultural Differences (Hall), 1:379
Undoing Gender (Butler), 2:666
Unended Quest (Popper), 2:632
Uneven Development (Smith, G. E.), 2:779
Uniform of Colour, The (Kuper), 1:447
Uniformitarian geology, evolution and, 2:599
Unilineal descent group, 1:271
Unilineal evolutionism, 2:562
United States
military training, Human Terrain System Program, 1:30
as world power, 1:28
Universal grammar, 1:115, 1:320, 2:745
Universals. *See* **Human universals**
University of California, Berkeley, 2:877–880
University of Michigan, 2:880–883
Unlimited Intimacy (Dean), 2:667
Unsociable sociability, 2:771
Unspeakable (Tyler), 2:642, 2:868, 2:869–870
Unweaving the Rainbow (Dawkins), 1:170
Up From Slavery (Washington), 1:202
Upstreaming, 1:228
Urban anthropology, 2:884
Urban Anthropology (journal), 2:885
Urban Anthropology (Basham), 2:885
Urban Life, 2:885
Urban Place and Process, 2:885
Urban studies, 2:883–886
Urbanism, 2:884
Urbanization, 2:884
"Urbanization Without Breakdown" (Lewis), 1:482
U.S. Bureau of American Ethnology, 1:11
Use and Abuse of Sociobiology, The (Sahlin), 2:734–735
Use of Computers in Anthropology, The (Hymes), 1:424
Utilitarianism, 2:886–888
Utterance, 1:43, 1:192

Valences of the Dialectic (Jameson), 1:434
Value-rationality, 2:591
Values orientation method (Kluckhohn), 1:439–440
van Gennep, Arnold, 1:76, 2:586, 2:703–704
van Wouden, F. A. E., 2:586
Varela, Francisco, 2:786
Variable rule programs (VARBRUL), 1:451
Variationist sociolinguistics, 1:448
Variations in Value Orientations (Kluckhohn), 1:439–440
Vayda, Andrew P., 1:145, 1:146, **2:889–891**
Veblen, Thorstein B., 1:95, **2:891–893**
Veddas, The (Seligman & Seligman), 2:762
Veiled Sentiments: Honor and Poetry in a Bedouin Society (Abu-Lughod), 1:1–2
Verbal Art in San Blas (Sherzer), 1:225
Vernacular, 1:450
Vesterling, Veronica, 1:498
Vestiges of the Natural History of Creation (Chambers), 1:166
Vico, Giambattista, 2:745, 2:785–786
Village Communities East and West (Maine), 2:502, 2:504
Village Diviner, The (Rousseau), 2:723
Village Life in Northern India (Lewis), 1:482
Violence in the Sacred (Girard), 1:327
"Vision in Plains Culture, The" (Benedict), 1:65
Visual anthropology, 2:893–897
art and, 2:894
ethnographic film and, 2:895
indigenous media and, 2:895–896
museum anthropology, 2:897
new media and, 2:896–897
photography and, 2:894–895
reflexivity and, 2:893–894
Vital Illusion, The (Baudrillard), 1:63
Vocabulary, 2:745–746
Voice, 1:43, 1:45
Voices (journal), 1:261
Volkisch movement, 1:190
Voltaire, 2:898–899
von Bertalanffy, Ludwig, 2:849, 850
von Glaserfeld, Ernst, 2:786
von Humboldt, Wilhelm, 2:589, 2:745
von Neumann, John, 1:301
Voyage of the Beagle, The (Darwin), 1:166

Wade, Peter, 2:676
Wage Labor and Capital (Marx), 2:521
Wagley, Charles, 1:126, 1:383, **2:901–903**
Wahrheitsgehalt, 1:70
Waiting for Foucault (Sahlins), 2:732
"Waiyautitsa" (Parsons), 2:610

Wallace, Alfred R., 1:166, 2:600, **2:903–905**
Wallace, Anthony F. C., 2:905–908
Wallerstein, Immanuel, 1:179, 2:909–911, **2:909–911**
Walters, Bradley, 2:890
War: The Anthropology of Armed Conflict and Aggression (Harris), 1:384
War neuroses, 2:708
"War on Poverty," 2:884
Ward, Lalla, 1:169, 1:170
Warfare in Ecological Perspective (Vayda), 2:890
Warner, Michael, 2:667
Warren, Kay, 2:578
Washburn, Sherwood, 2:878
Washington, Booker T., 1:201–202
Washington Association of Professional Anthropologists, 1:27–28
Waste Land, The (Eliot), 2:555
Watkins, Joe, 2:676
Way of the Masks, The (Lévi-Strauss), 1:473
"Ways and Aims of Völkerpsychologie" (Wundt), 2:947–948
Ways With Words (Heath), 1:110
We, the Tikopia (Firth), 1:264, 1:265
We Eat the Mines and the Mines Eat Us (Nash), 2:577
Weaving Women's Lives (Lamphere), 1:458
"Web of Group Affiliation" (Simmel), 2:772
"Web of Kinship Among the Tallensi, The" (Forte), 2:772
Weber, Donald, 1:129
Weber, Max, 2:912–916
  on neo-Kantianism, 2:591
  on rational enterprise, 1:221
Wedgwood, Emma, 1:167
Weekly People, 2:923
Weiner, Annette, 1:13
Weiner, Norbert, 2:850
Welcome of Tears (Wagley), 2:902
Welfarism, 2:887
Weltfish, Gene, 1:65, 1:126
Weltgeschichte der Steinzeit (Menghin), 1:189
Wenner-Gren Foundation, 2:916–918
Wernicke, Carl, 2:751
West of the Thirties (Hall), 1:379
Westermarck, Edward, 2:918–921
  on incest, 1:249
  on marriage and sexuality, 2:919–220
  on morality, 2:920
Western Marxism, 1:281
Westminster Review, 2:800
Weston, Kath, 2:667
What Is Philosophy (Deleuze & Guattari), 1:176
What Kinship Is . . . . And Is Not (Sahlins), 2:733
"What's Race Got to Do With It?" (Brodkin), 2:674
When Work Disappears (Wilson), 2:581
White, Douglas R., 2:689
White, Leslie, 1:13, 2:532, 2:588, **2:921–925**
  American Museum of Natural History and, 1:17
  at University of Michigan, 2:881
Whitely, Peter M., 1:17
Whorf, Benjamin Lee, 1:185, 1:411, **2:926–929**
  convert categories, 2:927–928
  ethnoscience, linguistics and, 1:232–233
  operational levels, 2:926–927
Why Counting Counts (Anderson), 1:19
Why Hasn't Everything Already Disappeared? (Baudrillard), 1:63
"Why Religion Is Nothing Special but Is Central" (Bloch), 1:79
Why We Fight (Bennett), 1:150
Wierzbicka, Anna, 1:412
Wikan, Unni, 1:45
Wild thinking, Lévi-Strauss on, 1:476–477
Wildavsky, Aaron, 1:199
Wilder, Laena, 2:894
"Will the Real George Foster Please Stand Up?" (Hammel & Nader), 1:276
Williams, Brackette, 2:674
Williams, George, 1:406
Williams, Raymond, 1:360
Wilson, Edward O., 2:929–932
  biophilia, diversity and, 2:931–932
  on gene-culture connection, 2:931
Wilson, Gilbert, 1:18
Wilson, Godfry, 2:933, 2:934
Wilson, Monica, 2:933–934
Wilson, William Julius, 2:581
Windelband, Wilhelm, 2:915
Wissler, Clark
  American Museum of Natural History and, 1:16–17
  diffusionism and, 1:190–191
  ethnohistory and, 1:227
  historic culture areas, 1:162–163
Wit and Wisdom (el-Baqqâli & Westermarck), 2:919
"Witch Beliefs and Social Structures" (Wilson, M.), 2:933
Witch in My Heart, A (Kuper), 1:447
Witchcraft (Mair), 2:506
Witchcraft, Oracles, and Magic Among the Azande (Evans-Prtichard), 1:239, 1:479
With Heart and Mind (Pike), 2:621
Wittenstein, Ludwig, 2:786
Wittfogel, Karl, 1:292, **2:935–936**
Wittgenstein, Ludwig, 1:34, 2:869, **2:937–939**
Wolf, Eric, 2:940–944
  mode of production application, 1:146
  on comparative civilizatoins, 1:445
  Marxist anthropology and, 2:527–532

on political economy, 2:630
on Service, 2:768–769
at University of Michigan, 2:881–882
See also Europe and the People Without History
Wolpoff, Milford, 2:882–883
Woman, Culture, and Society (Rosaldo & Lamphere), 1:259, 1:457
Woman in the Shaman's Body, The (Tedlock), 2:858
Woman Scorned (Reeves), 2:740
Women, anthropology of, 1:259
Women, Culture, and Society (Rosaldo), 2:715–716
Women, Men, and the International Division of Labor (Kelly & Nash), 2:577
Women and Change in Latin America (Nash & Safa), 2:577
Women at the Center (Reeves), 2:739
Women Writing Culture (Behar & Gordon), 2:556
Women's Anthropological Society of America, 1:11
Woolgar, Steve, 2:789
Work of the Gods in Tikopia, The (Firth), 1:265
Worked to the Bone (Buck), 2:676
Worker in the Cane (Mintz), 2:549
Works and Lives (Geertz), 1:306
Works and Reports of the Institute of Ethnology (Institute d'Ethnologie), 1:425
World Conqueror, World Renouncer (Tambiah), 2:853–854
World of Goods, The (Douglas & Isherwood), 1:198
World systems, political economy and, 2:629–630
World-system perspective, 2:909–910
World-systems theory, 2:944–947
World War II, 1:26
World Wide Web, 2:896–897
Worseley, Peter, 1:179
Wretched of the Earth, The (Fanon), 1:255–256
Writing Culture (Clifford & Marcus), 1:117, 1:174, 1:266, 1:381, 2:516, 2:517–518, 2:556, 2:642, 2:643, 2:644, 2:670, 2:718
Writing Women's Worlds (Abu-Lughod), 1:1–2
Writings (Lacan), 1:454
Wundt, Wilhelm, 1:458, **2:947–948**

Xiaotong, Fei, 2:583

Yale school, of structuralism, 2:828
Yoga and Yantra (Potts), 2:586
Youmans, Edward, 2:799
Young Grammarians, 2:749

"Zafimaniry Debt and Credit" (Bloch), 1:78
Zeitschrift fur Sozialforschung (Adorno), 1:282
Zenner, Walter, 2:885
Zettel (Wittgenstein), 2:937
Žižek, Slavoj, 1:333
"Zones of Theory in the Anthropology of the Arab World" (Abu-Lughod), 1:2
Zoology of the Voyage of the HMS Beagle (Darwin), 1:166
Zoonomia (Darwin), 1:165
Zoroastrian Iran Between Myth and Praxis (Fischer), 1:266
"Zuñi Pregnancy and Conception Beliefs" (Parsons), 2:609–610